ENGLISH BOOKS 1475-1640

P & R 23041 *21770 Speed, John. The theatre of the empire of Great Britain, presenting an exact geography of England, Scotland, Ireland, etc. fol. [col.:] W. Hall a. J. Beale, f. J. Sudbury a. G. Humble, 1611.

University Microfilms, Ann Arbor, Michigan





THE BRITISH EMPIRE

AND HATH NOVV IN ACTVALL possession, those many, and renovened KINGDOMES, and PRINCIPALITIES
DESCRIBED IN THIS OVR

THEATRE:

THE KINGDOME OF $E\mathcal{NGLAND}$, anciently containing feuen famous Kingdomes:

1 The Kingdome of Kent.

2 The Kingdome of South-Saxons.

3 The Kingdome of West-Saxons.

4 The Kingdome of East-Saxons.

5 The Kingdome of Northumbrians

6 The Kingdome of East-Angles.

7 The Kingdome of Mercia.

THE KINGDOME OF SCOTLAND anciently containing these three Kingdomes:

1 The Kingdome of Scots. 2 The Kingdome of Pitts.

3 The Kingdome of the Fles.

THE PRINCIPALITIE OF WALES, anciently containing these three Kingdomes:

1 The Kingdome of North wales.

2 The Kingdome of Powys-land. 3 The Kingdome of South-wales.

1 The Kingdome of Mounster.

THE KINGDOME OF FRELAND, anciently containing these fine Kingdomes:

2 The Kingdome of Leinster.

3 The Kingdome of Meth.

4 The Kingdome of Connaught. 5 The Kingdome of Viller.

THE KINGDOME OF MAN, 1 with the Jles adioining.





TO THE MOST HIGH, AND MOST POTENT MONARCH, IAMES,

OF GREAT BRITAINE, FRANCE, AND IRELAND KING, THE MOST CONSTANT AND MOST LEAR-NED DEFENDER OF THE FAITH; INLARGER AND VNITER OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE, RESTO-

RER OF THE BRITISH NAME; ESTABLL SHER OF PERPETVALL PEACE, IN CHVRCH, AND COMMONVEALTH, PRESIDENT OF AL PRINCELY VERTVES AND NOBLE ARTS;

IOHN SPEED. HIS MAIESTIES MOST lovely and most loyall Subject

and Seruant, confectateth these his labours, though vnworthy the aspect of so high an Imperial Matelia.



THE CONTENTS OF THE CHOROGRAPHACALL PART

THE FIRST BOOKE.

Describing the whole Kingdome in generall, with those Shires, Cities, and Shire-townes, which are propry accounted for English.

	perly accounted;	or English.	
	fel. I	Countries and Counties.	fol.
Countries and Counties.		Man island	91
		Middlefex	29
Degratera.		Mounmouth-shire	107
	am-shire43	Northampton-shire	55
Cambrid		Norfolke	35
Chefshi			81
Cornew		North & East Ridings	89
Cumberl		Northumberland	65
Darby.0	hire 67	Nottingham-shire	
Deuon.shite	19	Oxford shire	45
Porcefter-shire	17	Rutland-shire	. 59
Durham-Bilhoprick	83	Saxons Heptarchie	3
	- 1	Shrop-shire	71
England Generall	5	Somerfet-shire	23
effex	31	Stafford-shire	69
Slocester-shire	47	Suffolke	33
Great Britaine	1	Surrey	11
Hant-shire	13	Suffex	
Hertford-shire	39		9
Hereford-shire	49	Warwicke-shire	53
Huntington-shire	57	Westmorland	85
flands	- 1	West-Riding	79
Kent	93	Wight Island	15
Lanca-fhire	7	Wiltlhire	25
Lanca-mire Leicester-shire	75	VVorcester_shire	51
	61	Yorke-fhire	77
Lincolne-shire	63	1	
TH	E SECC	ND BOOKE.	
Con	staining the C	ounties of VV ales.	
Countries and Counties.	Fol.	Countries and Counties.	Fol.
Anglefey Island	125	Glamorgan-shire	105
Brecknock-shire	109	Merioneth-shire	117
Caermarden-shire	103	Mountgomery-shire	115
	123	Penbroke-shire	. 101
Caernaruon-shire	- 1	Radnor-shire	111
Cardigan-shire	113	Wales generall	99
Denbigh shire	119	Traits general	<i>"</i>
Flint shire	121		
TI	HE THIE	D BOOKE.	
Scotla	nds Kingdome	in one Generall. 131	
		TH BOOKE.	
	Fol		Fol.
Countries and Counties.	. Fel.	1 10 1	143
Ireland Generall		1	145
Mounster	135		. ***/
Leinster	14:	1 1	тне
			I II E

THE CONTENTS OF THE HISTORICALL TART.

THE FIFTH BOOKE. 5 The Gouernment of Great Britaine 170
6 The Gouernors of Great Britaine 172 The Site & Circuit of Great Britaine 155 2 The names attributed to Great Britaine 7 The pictures & attires of the ancient Bri-3 The ancient Inhabitants of Great Britaine taines; as also of the Picts and their originals. 4. The manners of the ancient Britains 166

		of Great Britaine vader the Romans.	
Chap. 1 Caius Iulius Cæfars first comm	ning into	Chap.	2
Britaine.	183	31 Iulius Philippus	2.
2 Cæfars fecond expedition into C		32 Traian, Decius	2.
taine.	185	(Trebonianus Gallus?	_
3 Octanius Cefar Augustus.	188	33 Vibius Volusianus	2.
4 Tiberius Nero	130	* to #10.10	2.
5 Caius Caligula	191	13T	2.
6 Claudius Drufus	193	35 Licinius Valerianus 36 Licinius Galienus	
7 NeroClaudius	197		2.
8 Seruius Sulpitius Galba	201	37 Flamus Claudius 38 Aur. Quintilius	2.
9 The Gospels first plantation in C			
taine	202	39 Claudius Tacitus	2
10 Marcus Saluius Otho	202		2
11 Aulus Vitellius		Tal-mus machus	2
12 Flauius Vespasian	209	T" M Annalina Carna	2
man and a f	210	143. Dio defien Louiss	2.
13 Titus Flauius 14 Flauius Domitian	212	CConfigurius Chlorus 2	2
14 Flaulus Dolliniau	213	45 Val. Maximianus	2
16 Vulpin Traian	216	Constantinus Maximus ?	
16 Vulpin Fraian 17 Ælius Hadrian	217	46 Licinius Licinianus	2.5
18 Antonius Pius	218	Fla. Val. Conftantinus	
18 Antonius Pius 10 Marcus Aurelius	220	701 110 0 1	24
20 Commodus Antoninus	221	47 Fla. Val. Contrantius	2.0
21 Heluius Pertinax	224	01 * 1 1 1 1	
21 Fieldus Pertinax 22 Didius Iulianus	225	46 El- Indames	2.0
	226	49 CFla. Valentinianus 2	24
23 Septimius Seuerus	227	Fla. Valendinanus	2.0
Septimius Gera	231	CFla. Gracianus	
		51 Fla. Valentinianus	2
25 Opilius Macrinus	233	1 C	2
26 Antonius Heliogabalus	234	52 Fla. Incodonus CArcadius 2	. ~
27 Alexander Seuerus	235		2
28 Caius Verus Maximinus	236		
SPupienus Maximus Z	237	54 STheodosius 2.	2
- Clodius patoinus 3	,	TH BOOKE.	4111

		TH BOOKE. and English Monarches.	
Chap. 1 The downefall of Britaine 2 The Saxons originall 3 The manners of the ancient Saxons 4 The Saxons fifth arrivage into Britain 5 The Kingdome of Kent 6 The Kingdome of the South Saxons 7 The Kingdome of the Weft Saxons	289 293 295	6th, The Kingdome of the Eaft-Saxons 30 5 The Kingdome of Northumberland 30 10 The Kingdome of Mercia 30 11 The Kingdome of the Eaft-Angles 36 12 Britaines withflanders of the Saxons 31 13 Hengift the first Saxon Monarch	2 6 9 4 - 2 4

The Contents of the Historicall parts.

1	Chap.	Fol.	Chap.	Fol.
i	14 Ela	325	30 Kenwolfe	347
ı	15 Cherdik	326	31 Egbert fole Monarch	348
	16 Kenrik	327	32 Ethelwolfe	350
	17 Cheuline	328	33 Ethelbald	352.
	18 Ethelbert the first christian Saxon	329	34 Ethelbert	353
			35 Ethelred	354
		332	36 Elfred	356
	20 Edwin	333	37 Edward the elder	360
	21 Ofwald	336	38 Ethelftan	363
	22 Ofwy	337	T	365
	23 VVIfhere	339	77 71 1	367
	24 Ethelred	340	1 1 2	368
	25 Kenred	341	41 Edwy	
	26 Chelred	342	42 Edgar	369
	27 Ethelbald	343	43 Edward the Martyr	. 373
	28 Offa	544	44 Ethelred	375
	29 Egfrid	346	45 Edmund Ironfide	381

THE EIGHTH BOOKE.

Chap.	Fol.	Chap.	Fol.
1 The Danes originall	385	4 Harold	394
2 The Danes first attempts for	or Eng	5 Hardicanut	395
land	387	5 Edward Confessor	398
3 Canut the first Danish King	390	7 Harold	402

THE SHAFFIL DOOPE

Chap,	Fol.	1	Chap.	Fel
I The Normans originall, and Dul	cs 411		13 Richard the second	59
2 William Conqueror	415		14 Henry the fourth	61
william Rufus	427		15 Henry the fifth	62
4 Henry the first	434		16 Henry the fixth	650
5 Stephen	445		17 Edward the fourth	67.
6 Henry the fecond	455	١	18 Edward the fifth	69
7 Richard the first	472	1	19 Richard the third	71
8 Iohn	483		20 Henry the feuenth	72
9 Henry the third	508	1	21 Henry the eight	75
10 Edward the first	541	1	22 Edward the fixt	80
11 Edward the fecond	554	1	23 Mary Queene	81
12 Edward the third	565		24 Elizabeth Queene	83

THE TENTH BOOKE.

#AMES, our dread Soueraigne.

A l'honneur de l'autheur et son oeuure

T Etrespuissant ouurier de la ronde machin Pour (on chief d'auure teint cest' Iste Separce : Et quoy que des plus grands threfors du cièl parce Son lustre assuiettit au temps et aruine. Sontufire affuertit au tempe et arume.
D'un Demidieu ouurier d'une fabriq diuine,
Par la plume se void la breschereparée,
La rume dresse, et la force asseurée Contre la mort, que tant de beautes a sassine.

La police, le nom, l'inuincible courage, Les Princes, Provinces, et tout qu'est d'auantage Du Breton belliqueux, luisent en son Histoire: Pour un ouurage dong a touts tant admirable, Faisons, faisons, Brettons, d'un burin memorable, Graver le nom de SPERD au temple de Memoire.

T. BARKHAM

HENR. SPELMAN Mil. Lectori

Non leue, nec temer à laudo tibi feria, lector Giatum opus & dignum confulc(crede) vides. Noster hie Ortelius, sie nostrum hune exhibet orbem.

Vires emineat tota Britanna fimal. Ora, finus, fluny, portus, nemus, oppida, tractus. Regna, duces, populi, fædera, bella, quies.

Rich. Saint George Norrey King at armes, in fauour of this worke.

It is faire from my purpoß, to commend without cause, or by our curious-florish to make a shadow scene shalloner, this works needs no such deseptis-offs; The subject is of it selfs shoonable, and able to shad without sich weak proppes. The slopy of our nation being almost buried in the piet of olicitary, is therein reuised, the continuance of Christianity raced from age to age, the suncting van discussion of our Townes, Castles, Religious Houles, Mobility, and all other memorable matters foliacly potraticle, as in a gladie we may Cattles, Reingious Froutes, Noomey and an other memorator matters of more y portraited, as in a gaine we may rightly different better (a hape, a quality and condition of each of them in particular. This worke therefore heiring now brought you not he publike flagge and view of the world, may in my poore cenfure give fainthfactor to the learned fleader, and ablot the touch of the malignant oppoler; which being effected without hope of gaine or wine otheration with furgreat cite both of body and mind, is the more precious, for, difficulting we pull. chra. Wherein Gods power is made knowne in this his weake, but worthy instrument : and the glory of Great lears. Wherein some power is made knowne into in wear, we wormy interument: and the glory of Great Britains made more famous to the world as well in the Geographical Genemion of the Land flustions as in the historical relations of her molt famous monarchand glorious actions; no Kingdome hisherts to particu-larly defenbed, nor nation History by true record more faithfully penale. In honor whereof I facilitee the lines of my loweyon the Altarof this worke, and celebrate the Authors remembrance to future polerities.

Tomy friend M'. IOHN SPEED, being very ficke.

Great love, and little skill may cause me to missay. But certainly this ficknes cannot make thee die: sut certains the lieunes cannot make thee die: Though crueil f imptomes, and these thirteene yeeres assay For thy deare country, dash thy health & stringth desay. Yet sith thy toylsome labour, and thy industrie. Is for thy Countries sake, her fame on hie to raise: is for 107 commerces take, our same on the torsage: Shee (ball thy temples crowne with exertafting bayes, And in defpite of death, (ball cause thy memorie To line in endles fame with all posteritie.

Now may shee see her beauty, and her riches store, What erst shee was in curic age, and change of state, What erje foce was in curre age, and a course of frace, And prefent greatnes fuch as neuer heretofore, Since thu great Monach rul d from North to foutherne And fith thy life is to thy country dedicate, ([hore, Anaftothy use ut injountry accusts, (port, Let none prefume thy lawrell from thy bead to reaue For this hir flory, which thy skilfull hand did weaue: But liue, & wearest [Speed] ontil the worlds great fate Shall bring all earthy things onto their otmost date. ALEX. GILL.

In exactifiimi huius operis Authorem, Eulogium Tho. Barkham.

Vineta dis, rumpat despetta filentia lingua, Culmina ot immensi memorem superata laboris Speide tui :insuetà iactor licèt, (optime,) curà, Quam tibi pro merito possim circundare palmam Qui cocant populi, quacunque fun orbe Britanno Dignarefers, vno affectiu, feriptoque locoque, Sanguineas signas, atauorum bella, palestras ;

Nobilitan que aptà patriam compagine, rerum, Ad nostra exactum deducis tempora filum. Ergő erit has magnimerces non parua laboris, ergorum pariumt hac quod monumenta decorem Egregium pariumt hac quod monumenta decorem Ipfafibi, ventura quod hac mirabitur atas, Totag, perpetuas debet Refpublica grates.

To the right well deserving M. IOHN SPEED the Author of this worke.

N this Books, (Bibliothec, or Booke of Bookes; TIMES Library, PLACES Geographie) All that is sherone for which the curious Touching this LAND, for Place, or Historie.

in which, thou half with paine, with care, and skill, Surveid this I and more neere then ere it was : For which, thy Wit thou strain'd hast to thy Will, That wils as much as Witte can bring to paffe.

The faire Hibernia that Westerne Isle likewife, In every Member, Artire, Nerue, and Veine, Thou by thine Arte doft fo anatomize, That all may see each parcell without * paine.

Heere Time, and Place, like friendly foes doe warre Which should show most defir'd Particulars; But Place gives place, fith Time is greater farre; Yet Place, well rang'd, gets glory by these warres.

No helps thou hadft nor no afifting asde In this attempt: but, Vertue gave thee might That we'l to doe, that well thou hast assade which fall (in grace) out-line immortall fright.

Hadft thou among the Romanes liv'd when they Did figniorize the World; A Signiory Should then (at least) have guerdon'd thy Survey, Thy Mappes, Descriptions, and thine Historie.

But, then dost line when all Arts sane the eight (Illiberall-liberall Arts) a begging goe; That Arts alone, with her true friend Deccipt, Gets allithen all seekes but that Arts to know.

Adulation

But, by thy Arte though nought be purchased But emptic Fame(that seeds, but satten not) Tet shall it seed thy Name till Daarn be dead; While emptie noble Names away fhall rot.

The Leaves this Booke contains, and Maps here gran'n, Are fill as Feathers to thy Fames faire Wings, To fame fresh Aire upon the face of Heauen; And, raife the same above all ending Things: That when Consuston wrack; this double Farme; A Spirit (ball mone on CHAOS Call'd thy Fame

> The vnfained louer of thy person, Io. DAVIES

> > 4 2





For none the like hath brought about; Or equaliz'd in any fort. The Shafts of his endewors . Shot At Gaine, and Pleafure; both have bit ; His Observations have begot On private, publicke Benefit. Thiefe Cities, Townes, and Countries many (Which this vast Globe of Earth affords) I oft have vie'wd; but, neuer any So well described by Mappes and Wordes, His traveld Body, toiled Mind (To bring this VV orke at last to rest

In Climes, and Realmes remote throughout,

His merits merit varereport:

Period which his Plot design'd) Should now rest famous with the best. he Romans fuch Deserts did Crowne With Lawrell, which their Soile brought forth; But I, of Branches farre off growne, Bring Wreaths to this worke, more of worth, The Palme (wherein rare versues bee,

And, for a Conquest, Crowness King)
The Oliuc, and the Cedar Tree, Faire, fat, and fruitfull; thefe I bring. n Egypt, Syria, and the Land

Of Promise, (named by boliest High) could not fee, nor understand, For vertue, any Trees come nigh. s these (worth praise) are profitable, They being of the worthiest kinds:

in best sence, bath Speed beene able, To please (worth praise) the worthiest Minds. Inshort, to give him then his due, This Arte his better never knew.

Io. SANDERSON.





TO THE WELL-AFFEC-TED AND FAVOURABLE

READER.



Ogreat was the attempt to assay the erection of this large and laborious THEATRE, whose onely platforme might well have expected the readiest hand of the best Artist, that even in the entrance of the first draught as one altogether discouraged, I found my selfe farre in-fit and infurnished both of matter and meanes, either to build, or to beautifie to stately a project. But how the Lord then composed my mind for the worke, or rather how his owne great power would be feene in my weake-

nes, is now in some measure made manifest by raising the frame thereof to this height: which here from the Preffe sheweth his aspect unto the world . But with what content to thy eye (gentle Reader) I fland in suspence, so many Maister-builders bauing in this subject gone before me, and I the least, not worthy to hew (much lesse to lay the least stone in so beautifull a Building; neither can I for my heedlesse pre-Sumption alledge any excuse, unlesse it be this, that the zeale of my countries glory fo transported my senses, as f knew not what f undertooke, untill f faw the charges thereof (by others bestowed) to amount so high as I held it a conscience to frustrate their designements; wherein albeit, it may be obietted that I have put my sickle into other mens corne, and have laid my building upon other mens foundations (as indeed who can do otherwise, especially in a subject of this nature, seeing that the wifest of Kings witnesset, that there is nothing new vnder the Sun) ret let this " Eeda ? part suffise for my defence, that in the worke of the Tabernacle there was more mettals vied then the orient gold, and more workemen imployed then Aholiab & Bezaleel; neither did al the Ifraelites offer to that most glorious work, Gold, Silver, Onix-stones, Purple, Scarlet, and fine Linnen: but some of the, Brasse, VV ood, Goates-haire, Rams-fels, and Badgers skins, as necessary implements in their severall services. If then, with the poore widdow f cast in my mite, and by my owne trauell adde some what more then bath bene alreadie divulged, let me crave thy acceptance, where I have done right, and thine a sistance to correct where I misse, which I trust may as well be hoped as requested, thy love with mine being alike obliged unto this our native land. VV hose beautie and benefits, not a farre off, as Moles sam Canaan from Pilgah, but by my owne travels through every province of England and Wales mine eyes have beheld: and whose (limate, Temperature, Plentie and Pleasures, make it to be at the very Eden of Europe (pardon me f pray if affection paffe limits) for the store of corne in the champian, and of Pasturage in

TO THE READER.

the lower Grounds, presset the cart under the sheaues to the barn, and filleth the coffers of their possessors. Neither are the faces of the Mountaines and Hils onely spread over with infinite heards and sorts of cattell, but their intralls also are in continuall trauell, and continually delivered of their rich Progenies of Copper, Lead. and Iron, Marble, Cristall, let, Alablaster, yea the most wonder-working Loadstone to say nothing either of Cannol and Sea-coale as rich for profit and as needfull for vie, or of the goodly Quarries of choisest stone, as necessary for strength, as estimable for beauty. Her Seas and Rivers fo stored with Fish, and her Fels and Fens so replenished with wild foule, that they even present themselves for ready prey to their takers; briefly, every soile is so enriched with plenty and plea-Jures, as the inhabitants thinke there is no other Paradice in the earth but where theselues dwell. The true plos of the whole land, & that again into parts in severall Cards are here described as likewise the cities and shire townes are inserted, whereof some have bene performed by others, without Scale annexed, the rest by mine owne travels, and unto them for distinctions sake the Scale of Paces, accounted according to the Geometricall measure, fine foote to a pace I bane set; but in this imployment I am somewhat to excuse my self from wrongs conceived done unto more beautifull and richer corporatios, which in this survey are in silence over passed, and places of leffe note & frequency described. For satisfaction wherof (good Reader) understand my purpose, according to the title presixed, which in this lland (besides other things) is to shew the situation of every city and shire town onely. So that without iniury to all, I could not infert some, though oftentimes it greeued me much to leave such beautifull places untouched: which notwithstanding being wel knowne So to be, giveth no little glory to the land in generall, so to be replenished with store es choise, as hardly can be indged which may be omitted. The Shires divisions into Lathes, Hundreds, VV apentakes and Cantreds according to their ratable, and accustomed manner f have separated and onder the same Title that the record bea-Tables to find all reth, in their due places distinguished; wherein by the helpe of the Tables annexed, any Citie, Towne, Burrough, Hamlet, or place of note may readily be found, and whereby safely may be affirmed that there is not any one kingdome in the world so exactly described, as is this our Hand of Great Brittaine, that onely excepted which Ioluah conquered and into Tribes divided. The armes of Such Princes and No-Armes of the G bles as have had the dignities, and borne the titles either of Dukes, Marquesses, or Earles, in the same Province, City or Place: and finally the Battels fought either by the forraine or home-bred Conspirators, I have also added. VV here we from under our owne vines without feare may behold the prints of indured miseries, fealed with the blood of those times, to the losse of their lines, and liberties; our selues (as in the reigne of Augustus, when the Temple, of Janus stood thut, and Mars his hands bound with chaines of Braffe as Virgill speaketh) heare not the found of the Alaru in our Gates, nor the clattering of armor in our campes, whose swords are now turned into mattockes and speares into sithes, as Micah sheweth the peaceable times under Christ. In shewing these things I have chiesty sought to give satisfaction to all without offence to any, wherof if I faile, yet this to my felf have I gained, that whilest I set all my thoughts and cogitations hereon, I had small regard to the bewitching pleasures, and vaine enticements of this wicked world, neither had I leafure to be led by an ambitious defire to raife my statio aboue the levell of my equals, or with base flattery to follow, and fill the eares of Fortunes Deputies, therains of the fe intents checking the bit of affection into another way. And applying my felfe wholely to the frame of this most goodly Building, have as a poore labourer carried the carned stones and polished Pillars from the bands of the more skilfull Ar-

TO THE READER.

chirects to be fet in their fit places, which here f offer upon the altar of lone to my country, and wherein I have held it no facrilege to rob others of their richeft iewels to adorn this my most beautiful Nurfe, whose wormbe was my conception, whose breaks were... my nowishment, whose bosome my cradle, and lap (I doubt not) shall be my bed of sweete.

rest, till Christ by his trumpet raise
me thence.

t. CHRON. 28. 8.

Therefore in the fight of the congregation of the Lord, and in the audience of our God, let 15 keepe and leeke for all the commandements of the Lord sur God, that we may poffessel this good and, and leaue it for an inheritance for sur Children after vs for euer.

Thine in Christ Fesius,

IOHN SPEEDS



THE BRITISH ILANDS, PROPOSED IN ONE VIEVV IN THE ENSVING MAP.

WITH A GENERALL DESCRIPTION OF GREAT BRITAINE VNDER THE ROMANS.

CHAPTER I.



He State of euery Kingdome well managed by prudent gouernment leems to me to represent a Humane body, guided by the foueraignty of the Reasonable Soule: the Country and Land it self

from it all other Hands, and Hets, which doe featteredly enuiron it, and shelter themselues (as it were) vnder the shadow of Great Albion (another name of this famous Iland) are alfo accounted Britannish, & are therefore here described altogether. are therefore here electroned altogether.

(4) Britaine thus feated in the Ocean hath her praifes, not onely in the prefent fenfe, and vie of her commodities, but also in those honorable Eulogies, which the "learneds of Antiquaries" hath collected out of the noblest Authors, that here featere fermeth representing the one, the Actions and flare affaires

better faid.

to haue left any gleanings : neither will we transplant

them out of his flourishing Gardens, but as necessity compels, fith nothing can bee further or otherwise

vpon the North; the Hebrides vpon the West, and

(5) That Britaine therefore is the Scas High Admirall, is famoufly knowne: and the Fortunate I fland supposed by some, as Robert of Auesburie doth shew: whose aire is more temperate (saith Casar) then France; whose Soile bringeth forth all graine in abundance, faith Tacitus; whose seas produce orient pearle, faith Suetonius; whose Fields are the seate of a Summer Queen, saith Orpheus; her wildest parts free from wild beasts, saith the ancient Panegyricke, and herchiefe City worthily named Angafta, as faith
*Ammiann: So as wee may truly fay with the royall Pfalmit, Our lines are fallen in pleafant places,
yea wee have after enfortience. Which what foeuer
by the goodnes of God, and induftry of man it is

now, yet our English * Poet hath trulie described vnto vs the first face thereof thus; The Land which warlike Britaines now possess

The Land which was the trianet sum policies And sherin has te her melgin Famper estale.

In suction time was falsage winderselfe.
Freepele, amount was problem to support the content of t opinion Spenfer farther alluding thus closeth his Stanza.

Ne was it Iland then ne was it paifd Me was triana inen ne was st payla Amid the Ocean waves, ne was st fought, Of Marchants far for profits therein praisde, But was all defolate, and of fome thought, o Ey Sea to have bir from the Celticke Mainland brought.

Which as a matter meerely conjectural (because it is not plain that there were no llands nor hils before Noaks floud) I leane at large: Virgil furely (of all Poets the most learned) when describing the Shield which Fulcan forged (in Firgils braine) for Aneas, he cals the Morini (people about Callia) * the outmost men, doth onely meane that they were Westward, the furthest Inhabitants upon the Continent, figni the turthet inhabitants you the Contiment, igni-fying withall that Britaine as being an lland, lay out of the world: but yet not out of the knowledge of men, for the commodities thereof innited the fa-mous Greeke Colonies of Merchants which dwelt at Maffiliain Fraise to venter hither as hath beene well observed out of Strabs.

(7) And as Iulius Cafar was the first Romane which euer gaue an attempt to conquere it, so will

The diffribut

Parts is defectine, our intendment is to take a view as well of the outward Body, and Lineaments of the now-flourishing British Monarchy (the Ilands) King domes, and Prouinces thereof in actuall possession, for with others, no leffe infly, claimed in the Con-tinent wee meddle not) which shalbe the content of unent we measure not winten mable the content of our first or: Chrographicall Tome, containing the foure first bookes of this our Theater, as also of its fuccessing government and vitall actions of State, which shall bee our second or Hyspericall Tome, containing the fiue last bookes. And here first wee will (by example of best Anatomists) propose to theview the whole Body, and Monarchie intire (*as far as conueniently wee could comprise it) and after will diffcet and lay open the particular Members, Veines, and Ioints, (I meane the Shires, Riuers, Cities, and Townes) with fuch things as shall occurre most worthy our regard, and most behouefull for our vie.

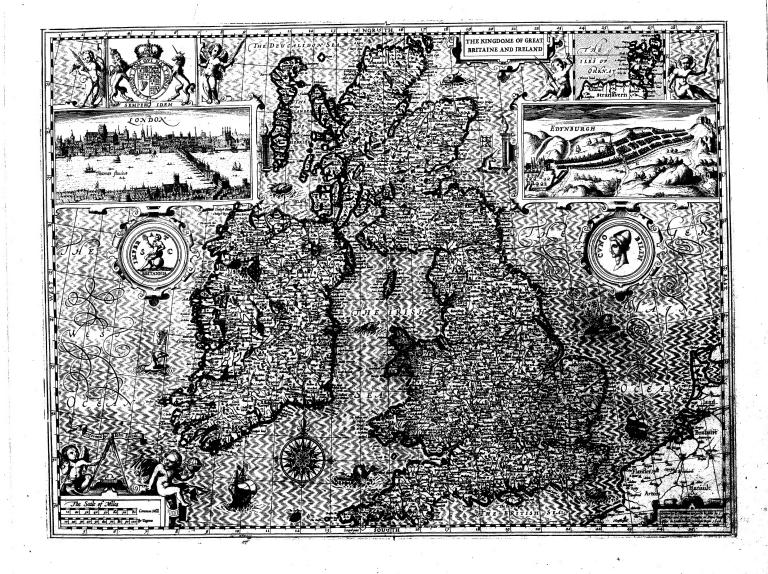
the other. Sith therfore the excellencies of the whole

are but unperfectly laid open, where either of these

(2) The Iland of Great Britaine (which with her adioining Isles is here first presented) containers the Kingdoms of England and Scotland, and is of many accounted the greatest Island in the World, though *Iuftus Lypfius gives that praise to Cuba in America, as the Orientall Navigators doe vnto Sumatra (taken for Ptolomees Taprobana) or to Madagafear, the Island of S. Laurence, both which are neere vnto, or vnder the Equino Ciall line; In which wee will not conrendies pleating our felices with her other praifes greater then her offentessy yet with his honour allo, that it was (without queltion) the greatest filland of the Remanse Weal, and for any thing yet certainful known, of all the relt. Concerning whole Politure in refeech of the amount Fasterian (Ferical Ferical Feri tend:as pleafing our felues with her other praifes

In which, oy a certain crone comparino, ne oppolech wo blees againft two vinities, britains and Footus againft Egypt and Gades. But to fecke into profound Antiquity, rather then prefent practife, for matter, in which Vie makes perfections, were to affect the giuing light by fladowes, rather then by Sun-fhine.

(3) It is by experience found to lie included from the Degree fifty, and thirty fcruples of Latitude, & for Longitude extended from the 13, degree, and 20 minutes, vnto the 22 and 50 Minutes, according to the observation of Mercator. It hath Britaine, Normandy, and other parts of France vpon the South, the Lower Germany, Denmarke, and Norway upon the East; the Isles of Orkney and the Deucaledonian Sea,



and CALEDONII, and now by the Seets are into Heghlandmen , and Lawlandmen But that Northerne clime being more piercing for the Roman confituti-ons, & *leff profitable of fruitful, they fee their bounds not farre from Edenburgh, and altogether neglected the other parts more northward.

(13) This neerer part of Britain they then divi-ded into two parts; for the more Southern tract together with Wales, Die termeth the Higher, and that more Northward the Lower, as by the feats of their Legions doth appeare; for the second Legion Augu-fia (which kept at Caerleon in South-Wales) and the twentieth called Victrix (which remained at Chefter) he placeth in the HIGHER BRITAIN: but the fixth Legion furnamed alfo Victrix, relident at Yorke, ferued (as he writeth) in the LO VVER BRITAINS which division as seemeth, was made by Severus the Emperour, who having vanquished Albimus General of the Britaines, and reduced their State under his obedience, divided the government thereof into ficence, that the Prouinces brought in golden Crownes of great weight, the Gouernours commaunded to attend, and the very Captines permirred to bee present at the same: A Nauall Coronct was fixed vpon a pinnacle of his pallace Arches, and Trophees, were raifed in Rome, and himselfe on his aged knees mounted the staires into the Capitoll, supported by his two sonnes in Law: so great a joy conceined hee in himselfe for the Conquest of some small portion of Bri-

(18) How the Romans found it, held it, and left it, as times ripened and rottened their fucceffe, with the Names, the Inhabitants, Manners and Relifters, I leaueto be purfued in the following histories and will onely now thew thee these three kingdomes that are (in present) the chiefe Bodies of GREAT BRITAINES MONARCHIE; two of which (Scotland and Ireland) fhall in their due places have their farther and more particular descriptions.

THE TYPE OF THE SAXON HEPTARCHIE.



the weight of her owne Greatnes, and the Prouin cesready to shake off subicction, by the Ambition of their Prefects : Britain. then wanting her fouldsers (taken thence to ferue in forraine wars) and aban-

doned by the Romans, who were wont to proteether was now laid open and naked to her Enemies, who had long waited an opportunity to lay her wast. Among whom, the PiEts and Seets, casting a couetous eye vpon fo rich a prey, dailie with inrodes mole fting the wearie, and now-weakened Britaines, enforced them to call in, to their assistance, the Saxons fure, that thereupon in successe of time they transformed the fabricke of this one Prouince, into a feasen-fold State, which as feasen erowned Pillars frood vpon the Bafes of Kent, South-Saxia, West-Saxia, East-Saxia, Northumberland, Mercia, and East-Anglia; gouerned by so many several Kings; whose Limits are in this Map distinguished by their several

Armer, and circumscribed Lines; but for all the particular Counties vnder each of their commands, wee will referre you to the Table in the 4. Chapter of our 7. Booke : in which Booke, the Historie of that

growing Heptarchie, and its selling agains into one Monarchie, is contained at large.

(2) Neither may weethinke, that the Limits of

The Pide wa

Hen the Roman Empire began to be vnweldy by

who in short time, of aiding friends became oppref-sing enemies, and supplanting the Natiues of this land, laid the foundation of their aspiring hopes so

the whole Heptarchie, or of each particular Kingdom, were at their first raising apportioned, as afterwarde they were; but that (as all other States doe) by fleps and degrees they came to their fetled bounds. Their vtmost Northern Border was at first no other (in all likelihood) then that, wherewith the Romans had formerly seuered this their Province from Scotland. being that famous partition called the Picts Wall (which therefore in our Map you shall find descri bed with battlements) girding the wast (or narrow-est place) of the whole sland, from sea to sea, and reaching twist the Bay of *Eden on the one coast, & the mouth of Time on the other; though afterward the Northumbrians extended their Marches beyond that Wall. The Romans had no other partition but onelie this Northern: the Saxons (who had made the Britaines also their enemies) added two others (both in the Weft) to fireighten them, & firengthen them-felus. The first was desired by off a the Mercins king, who made a Trench of admirable worke & charge, called Offa-Dike, running about one hundreth miles o uer mountaines and hils, from the mouth of Deein Flintshire, to the fall of Wye in Glocestershire, therwith encircling the remainder of the difpossessed Britains in those westerne and barren parts; which oppres-

inthole weterned and barren parrs; which oppre-fon King Harold further aggranaced by a law; That if any Welfman were found with any weapon on the influent and the found for think hase his righ that disch, found for think hase his righ that of eff. The fecond partition was of King Athelfand deutics, who finding that the Britishnes did fill inha-bite those other welfern parts, from the Landt End of Cornwall, even vnto Exceller in Denonshire, he not onely thrust them out of that City, fortifying the fame with vaft trenches, and a ftrong wall of fquared ftone, to preuent their attempts : but further orde red that they should containe themselues within the riner Tamar, whence that Promontory came to be named Corn-wall; of the shape thereof like a Horne which they call Copp, and of the * Inhabitants which

the Saxons called pealrh, fignifying Strangers.
(3) The like may be faid of the particular King ses, that they attained not to those their certain bounds, and Kingh Titles, but by degrees: the whole Saxon State being anciently deuided, not into Shires, but into fundry small Regions, and those agains into

Hides (a Hide being foure yeard land, or, as others thinke, as much as a Plow can till in one yeare) as by . M. rate. an ancient Fragment preserved and disulged by McGerescatta *two most iudicious Antiquaries, may bee seene; wherin all the land lying on this fide Humber, is thus parred.

HIDES

Pec-feina 1200.bides. Elmed-feina 600 bides. Lindes farona 7000 bides Suth Gyrna 600 bides. Verst Gyrma 600 bides East-Gyrwa 600 bides. East Wixna 200 bides. West Wixna 600 bider. Spalda 600 hider. Vezesta 900 bides. Sweetdern 200, bides Eyfla 300.bides, Wight-gara 600, bides.

Myronacētainetb 20000, Hides Nexgaga 5000, Hides, Wekse-fena 7000 hides.
Western 7000 hides, Huyaca 7000 hides, Gilern 1200 hides, Gilern 1510a 4000 hides Hendrice 2000 hides Freenve-ga 1200.bidet. Arofeatna 600 bides. Fearfinga 200 bides. Belmig a Gov.hides Wieberigga 600.bides, Eaft-Willa 600.bides, West Willa 600 bides East Engle 30000 bides. East Sexena 7000 bides. Cant Warens 1 5000 bide Sub-Sexena 7000, bides. Weß-Sexena 100000, bides

K. Elfred fieft to a Monarchy, and the Kings from Pagans to be Chriflian professors, Elfred (that mirror of Kings) for the feeling of his kingdom and subjects, under a due and certaine course of suffice and covernment, did forst di-stribute his kingdominto severall Countries called Shires (of the Saxon word Seype, to cut or divide), and into other under-Governmeits, of which let vs hear Malmf-bury; By occasion (laith he) and example of the barbarous (he meanesh the Danes) the naturall inhabitants also were addicted to robberies, 6 that none could pase in lafe-ty without weapons for defence. Elfred therfore ordained Centuries, which they terme is undreds, and Decimes, Centwries, which they term thundreds, and Decemes, which they all things, that fewer You, Whimma himm which they all things, that fewer You, Whimma himm worder haw, flowld her within some Hundred and Tithing, and if a man were excelled as you rengifeel flow he had for think the him in some of that flow it have a man from the him, that would be pelagte for its appearance and from the law, and here that could not find fust to favor, should be the country of the him and the that could not find fust to favor, should be the country of the him and the should not find fust to favor, should be the country of the him and the should be the should b inc un, ann nee insi comia noi pua juen a jurety, floodia abide the feuerity thereof. But in cafe any man flanding this accused, either before or after fuely fueriffity did file, then all that Hundred and Téthing incurred a mulét imposed by the King (50 s. By this deuice hee brought peace into the Country, so as in the very high waies, hee commanded Bracelets of gold to be hanged up to mocke the greedy passengers, whiles none wa

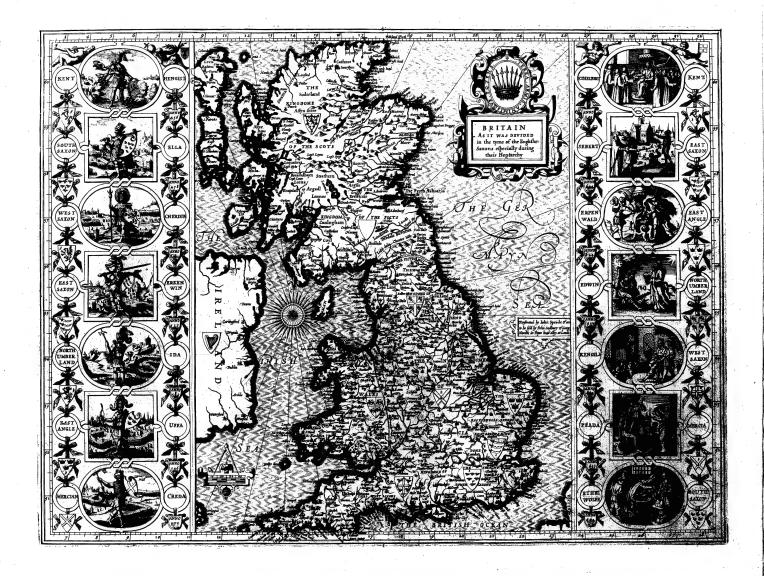
(4) But when that seven fold Heptarchy was brought

found fo hardy as to take them away,

(5) This Custom K. Elfred might borrow from the vie he saw in Militarie Gouernment, where the Ge-nerale directions found easiest successe by help of vnder-rulers, Centurions and Decurions; or hee might der-ruers, Centurons and Decurions; or nee might haue it from the Germans, who kept Courts of Inflier in curry Territorie, hauing a hundred men out of the People, as affiltants to performe their Lap-dayes. By which his Partition, and industrious care, Peace and true dealing so flourished, that a Way-fayring man loofing in his journey any fumme of money might a moneth after returne to the place, and have

(6) Those fore-mentioned Tithings contained each to Perfons, whereof every one was * Piedge for a-nothers good bearing, for which caute in *fome pla-cesa Tithing is yet called a Boron, of the Saxon Boph a Pledge) who had one chiefe, called the Tithingma, or Bopber-ealbop: fo that therewas no one man in all the Kingdome, who in his rancke had not the eyes of many to observe his life. Each Hundred had vnder their verge 10.fluch Tithings, and when any was cholen the chiefe of the Handred, at the yfuall place of their meetings, after from kind of reuerence, euery one with their Lances touched a Spear, which he held vpright in his hand, and by that fign vowed to be peaceably ordered, Whence, fuch a fociety was called also a Wapentake, of the Saxon pepua cac,a tou-

Exica Ed. Conf.



fome change; for what their number was, An. 1016

in the raign of King Ethelred, Malmesbury sheweth.

West Saxon law were the Counties of Kent, Suffex

(7) So that hereby we see, both the Saxons di-fiributing of this Country (in their highest glory) & also the gouernment thereof, from the King(whom they called their Conning (either of his skill or power) to the lowest in the land. Other intermediate Gouernors throughout the land, next to the Kings Counfellors, were (it feemeth) those which the Saxons alled then Ea benmen (thogh a name now more hu-Parlet. *C415.p.20. b bled)& the * Danes, Eorles; the chiefe Magistrates in bled JOI the - Danes, Lorser; the chiefe Magnitudeshi Cities, the Poptgeperan, Partgreues: and Bupglys-pen, Burghefet. For touching the name of lapops, (whence wee contract Lord) it may feeme rather a is a Saxon tith

name of honor or reuerence, then of civil authority, Them Paderthsine * Lunh.p.50 fo likewise Dein, a ftile for men of the better rank, as anben Dein a note of feruice, and Ceorle or Churle, of their Yeomanly condition, who were also called gemen, the Teomany.

(8) Since that first most politicke distribution of K. Elfred, the number of the said Shires haue found

in the raight of Aning attention, the aimseasing ineventi-The Danes (laith he) at this time when there were reckne-med in England thirty two Shires, insuaded no leffe then fixteene of them: yea and afterwards also there were no more in number, at what time the land received a new threefold distribution, according to the three fortes of lawes by which it was gouerned; that is, west-Saxons Law, Danishand Mercian. First to the

ngh Saon Ian were the Counties of Rent, Suffex, Sauria, Burflier, Handling Hilling, Sammer Jehbre, Davig Her Landling, Hilling, Sammer Jehbre, Davig Her and Denflier in time in number. To the land land was to obedient fifteen other Turbling, Consistent, Oneshipter, Nation Jean-Hilling, Leichellerline, Landshafter, Northunghur, Belle fuller, Leichellerline, Landshafter, Northunghur, Belle fuller, Leichellerline, Letterfredfür, Effex, Oxidalder, Northunghur, Her Character, the Cheerian Lawes ruled the eight Counties remaining, which were claused freiers, Wenzellen har, the effective with the Character of the Char (9) But when william the Conquerour had got the English Diadem vpondis head, & taxed the kingdom engujo Diadem y pomins nead, at axed the kingdom with a generall furuey, we find in that publike Record of the Domef-day Booke, thirty foure named, befides those of Durham, Lancalhire, Northumberland, 11/6fmerland and Cumberland; the three last lay expofed to the Scots, and the other two freed from taxe, to maintaine the Borders; which five Counties being

warrant I know not) reckons thirty fix thires & an half at the Conquerors furuey: wherin, faith he, were found fifty two thousand and fourescore Townes; fortie fine thou fand & two Parish Churches; seventy fiue thousand Knights-Fees, whereof twenty eight thousand and fifteene were of Religious order; and yet among these hee accounteth no part of Cornewall: But from this report it may well be, that Roffee Warwicanus complaineth of the depopulation of the Land, which with Town-ships (he saith) ancientlie had stood so bestrewed, as a goodly Garden eueric

added to the other, their number arifeth to thirtie nine: and the thirteene Shires of Wales, added to both, make fifty two Counties, as wee haue at this

(10) But the author of Polychronicon (vpon what

THE TYPE OF THE SAXON HEPTARCHIE. where garnified with faire flowers.

(11) King Elfred (the first divider) instituted a prefett or Lieutenant in every of these Counties, which then were called Custodes, (and afterwardes which then were called Cuftodes, (and atterwardes Camb.

Earles, faith Higdon) who kept the Country in 0- Highert bedience to the King, and suppressed the outrages of notorious Robbers. But Carutus the Dane,

when successe had set him vpon the English throne, divided the care of his kingdomes affaires into a foure-fold subjection; to wit, West-Sex, Mercia, Northumbre and East-England; himselfe taking charge of the first and the greatest, making three Tetrarches of especiall trust ouer therest, namelic, Edrich ouer Mercia; Trius ouer Northumbre; and Turkill ouer East England. Wales neither in this diuision, nor that of King Elfred, was any waies lyable, it being cut(as wee haue said) from England by King offa: but those remnants of the ancient Bretaines divided likewife that Westerne Province into Kingdomes, Cantreds and Commots, * as more

largely wee will flew in the plot of that Principali-ty. And this shall suffice for the division of Eng. land under the Saxons, who enioved it the space of 567. yeeres, from their first entrance vnder Hengist, vnto the death of Edmund Ironfide, and againe vnder Edward Confessor the terme of 20.yeeres.

(12) Now if any shall bee so minutely curious asto enquire the meaning of the Emblematicall com partments, bordering the Mappe: the right fide conraineth the feuen first Kings of that feuenfold-State. their Names, their Kingdomes, their Escocheons, their yeeres of first aspiring: the left side doth pormen yeeres or nira aipring: the left lide doth por-traid the like of the 7. firth Kings in ech of those king doms, which by Christian Baptisme aspired to the hope of a Kingdom eternall, 1. Ethelbers (of Kent) receiuing Austine instruction 2. Sebers (the East Sex-though as it feemeth Edwine himfelfe for a time deferred his owne Baptime) and was therefore marryred by his Pagan Subbetts. 4. Edwin (the Northumbrian) fittred vp by a vision, both to exeet the Kingdome, and to receive the Faith, which he did by the preaching of Paulinus, whom he made Archbishoppe of rorke. S. Kingill (the West Saxon) converted by the preaching of S. Berinus, whom he made Bishop of Dorchester, neere Oxford. 6. Pedda 6116-9.2.20\$5 (the Mercian, receiuing Christian faith, by perswafion of ofmy King of Northumbers , was murthered by his owne mothers (fome fay his wives) procurement. 7. Ethelwolfe (the South-Saxon) baptized at Oxford by S. Berimu, where Wulpherus King of Mercia, was his Godfather at Font.

(13) And fith these Saxons first gaue to this Iland the name of England, we will here affix (for a close of all) an ancient Epigram, touching both this Country and her Name; the rather, because * of late a principall part and praise therein, is surreptitiously (aainst * Lex Plagierie) taken from England, and ascri-sed as proper to France. A sertain Author (saith* Bar-holomeus de proprietatibus rerum, thus in verse descri-

Anglia,terra * ferox,& fertilis, Angulus Orbis Infulapradiues, qua toto vix eget Orbe, Et cuius totus indiget Orbis ope:

Anglia plena iocis, Gens libera, & apta iocari, * Libera Gens cui libera mens, & libera lingua, Sed linoud melior liberior and Manus.

A fourefuld

15.74.11.5

2 Lib. 2 & 6 \$. 2 \

In Ind. Honds

This verie H

ENGLAND, fierce Land, Worlds Angle, fertile art; Rich Ile, thou needs no other Countries Mart, Each other Country yet thy succour needs: ENGLAND, loyes Land, be free and loyous long, Free Race free Grace-free Kind free Mind & Tong, Tet Hands passe Tongs, for free and glorious deeds. THE TYPE OF THE FLOVRISHING

KINGDOME OF ENGLAND, VVITH THE

GENERALL DESCRIPTION OPIT, AS IT WAS FROM THE TIME OF THE NORMANS.

CHAPTER III.



He Saxons glory now need to expire, by his appoint-ment who holdeth both times and Kingdoms in his all-ordering hand; their owne fwords being the in-ftruments, and the *Danes* the maules that beat their beautifull Diademe into eces:the Normans, a stiring nation, (neither expe-

Duke, and encouragement of the Romane Bifhop(a viu-all promoter here of broken titles) made hither fuddenly into England, who in one onely battaile, with the ti-tle of his fword and flaughter of Harold, fet the Emperi-all crowne thereof ypon his owne head; which no fooall counce thereoff you his to one head, while no merciner was done, but the Explish was downe, and the
Norman stocking it, became mover of holp Center which
themfoliare same hall spiffed the his prospect a which they
note plantify the only of his his with which they mare had
the should be only of his his with which they mare had
the should be only of his his with the same had
when they are the should be the compare had
the his should be should be the compare had
the his should be should be the form of the his
to great a should be should be the same had
the should be should be the should be to be
a state land whereagon the Lard fe his top, easy from the
beganing to the sould the house of the his should be the
trafficient of the should be the should be the
trafficient of the should be the should be the
trafficient of the should be the should be the
the should be the should be the should be
the should be the should be the should be
the should be the should be the should be
the should be the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be
the should be the should be
the should be the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the should be
the shou Sec. 22. thoughts were not contented with conquering the Na-tion and their Land, vallefile hee also ouercame their ve-ric Cufamer, Lawr, and Language.

(2) Touching the diffinition of the Kingdome, whereas other kings before him made vsc of it, chiefile

ched, nor much feared) vnder the leading of William their

for good of the people, and better ministring of instice, hee made vie of it, to know the wealth of his Subjects. hee made vie of it, vo know the wealth of his Sublects, and to outside his offers for he easily a disprise is obe made of all England, how much handwarp and of his Breast polificial, how must handwarp and of his Breast polificial, how must handwarp and plant handwarp and handwa former) when thyusting the English out of their possessions, bee distributed their Inheritances to his Souldiers; yet so, that allshould be held of the King, as of the onely true Lord that allowable intelligible Kingsa gibe only your Lord and yelfife.

(3) For the Lawes by which he resent to gouetne, he haddone excellent rule and purpole, which was, that a haddone excellent rule and purpole, which was, that a characteristic content of the haddone with the ha

needes p.343. here they are were in the land, Merchenlage, West-Saxon lage, Dane-lag; hee had preferred these last, (himselfe and people being anciently derived from those Northerne people) being anciently derived from those Northerne people) and not all the Barons, bewailing to the king, show grienaus it was for a land as he studged by shot leaves which we have land as he studged by shot leaves which we have land to the trange formes of Norman Processes, we in bringing in the strange formes of Norman Processes, but leading in the Ferné tongue (which continued till Edwardste thirds time) than grienance was but senderly greenened. So likewise did he much alter the old Courts

Den. 1.v.12.

Des.8.v.7.

of Inflice, where thefe lawes should bee ministred; but whereas the ancient kings of England, according to Mo-fes his example, fate in person in the seat of justice. to If its example, fate in person in the sea of instice, to right the greater affaires of their Subicets, as William Lambers showed in king Asfred, Edgar, Cansum, &c. and proues out of the kings Oath, out of Braslon, Bretton, Saxon laue, &c. King William not onelly continued this jubu besides erected some other Courts of institute, as the Exchequer, and certaine Courts and Sessions to bee the Exchequer, and certaine Courts and Settions to bee held fourt times euery years; appoint ting both Tudges (fome to heave causes, others to whom appeales thould bee made, but none from them) and also Prefests to looke to good orders. Those last Polyder callects Influence of Peaces; at their institution seemes to bee farre later: and no leffe is his errour on the other fide, in faying the Con-querour first instituted Sheriffes, and the trial by Twelse

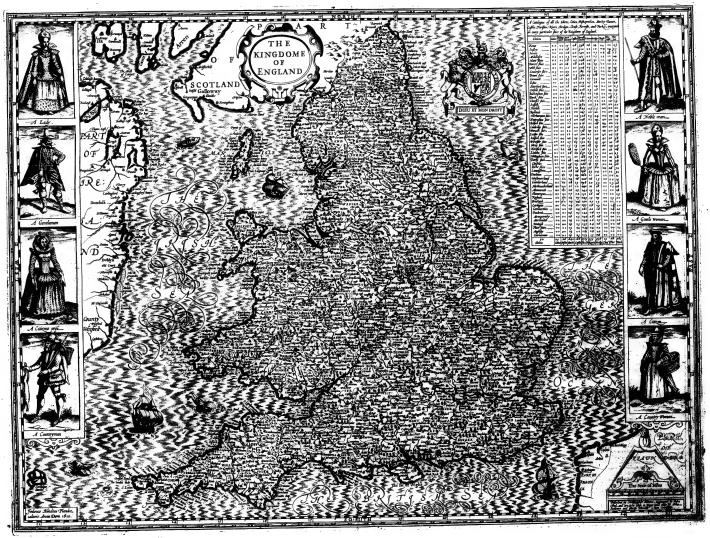
men, which were both ancienter.

(4) And because the Conquerour, for honour of Bi-shops, caused them to remoue from small obscure places to Cities of more renowne; wee haue therefore re-ferued to this last place that dission of this kingdome serate to this satisface that distinct of this kingdome, which is according to Inrigition Epigengli. Formerly in the year of faluation, 636. However the fift Archbi hop of Controlory fit distilled England into Partifles, which at this day are contained wader their feuerall Diserciast, and these agains wader which their two Metropolismans, (Constrbuty and Torke) in manner following.

CANTERBYRIE.

Bishopricks	Counties,	Parifhes,
Canterbury. Rochester.	{Kest.	} 257. \$ 98.
London.	S Effex. Middlefex. Herefordfbire part.	ξ ₆₂₃ .
Lincolne.	Lincolnsbire. Leicestersbire. Huntington. Bedfordsbire. Buckinghamsbire. Hersfordsbire part.	2255.
Chichefter,	SHertferdfbirepart, Suifex.	} 250,
Winchester.	Hantsbire, Surrey, Wight Isle, Gernesey Isle, Iersey Isle,	}
Saliebury.	Swiltsbire. Bark shire.	} 248.
Exefter.	S Dononsbire.	} 604
Bath and Well	es, Sommer fer fhire.	3 388.
Gloucester.	¿Gloncestersbire.	267.
Worcester,	SWorcestersbire, Warwickesbire.	} 24I,
Lichfield and Conentry.	Staffordfbire, Staffordfbire, Derbyfbire, Sbropfbirepart,	} 157.
Hereford.	Shropshire part. Herefordshire.	} 313.
Ely.	SCambridgesbire. Ely Islo.	} 241.
Norwich,	SNorfolke. Suffolks.	} 2222

Gerirof. Regis Curia inqua epf in propria perfo iura decemia



7

5am. j. 4.

rein King and his enewere med,

1

KENT.

z Sam. + 4.

Bishoprickes.	Counties,	Parishes
<u> </u>	·	·
Oxford.	{Oxfordshire.	} 195.
Peterborow.	SNorthampton, Ruslandshire,	} 293·
Briftow.	Dorcestshire. Glamorgan.	} 236.
Landaffe.	Glamorgan, Monmonthfhire, Brecknockshire, Radnorshire,	} 177.
S.Danid.	S Pembrokeshire. Caermarden.	} 308.
Bangor.	Caernaruonshire. Anglesey Isle. Merioneshshire. Denbighshire.	} 107.
S. Afaph.	S Denbighshire part. Flintshire part.	} 122.
	TORKE,	
Torke.	STorkesbire. Nostinghamsbire. Chesbire.	} 2824
Chifter_	Richmondshire. Cumberlandpart, Lancashire. Flint part.	} 250
Carlile.	S Cumberland part, Westmortand,	} 93.
Durham,	SDurham, Northumberland,	} 135
1	Man Iland,	

(c) To speake nothing of these twenty eight Flamins the Priests of Idolatry, & the three Arch-Flamins, whose feases were at Louinn, Caretina, and Tork; all of them consurred by king Lawier into Christian Bissipos Seess; Let va onely insist you the three half, by the same king appointed to be Metropollianes ouer the rest; among whom Landows is slided to be chiefe: whose shift Christian Archbishop was Thean the builder of S. Peters Church Archolino was I seem the builder of S. Ferer Chirch in Cornebilitor his Carbeatrail, as by an ancient Table there lately hanging, was affirmed, and tradition to this day doth hold. Our British Historians doe bring a fuccifion of fifteene Archbithoppes, to have fare from his time wroth the comming of the Saxons, whose last was Todas flaine by king Vortiger, for reprehending his hea-thenith mariage with Romen, the daughter of Hengift. At what time began the mility of the land, and of holy religon, both which they laid wall vndertheir prophane feet: vntill Ethelbert of Kent, the first Christian Saxon king, aduanced Christianity, and Augustine to the Arch-bishopricke of Canterbury, when London vnder Melitus ecame fubiect to that See

(6) At Caerlion vpon Vske, in the time of great Ar-

thur, fate Dubritius a man excellently learned, and of an holy conuerfation: he had fate Bishop of Landaffe 2 an holy contuerfation: he had fate Bishop of Lundaffer al long time, and with Germanus and Lunyar, two French Bishops, greatly impugued the Velagian herefite, infec-ting archart time the Hand very farre, whose fame and integrity was fisch, that he was made Archbishop of all integrity was tuch, that he was made Actionino of all *Pales: but growne very old, her enfigned the fame vn-to *Danid his Difciple, a man of greater birth, but grea-ter aufferity of life, who by content of king. Arthur, re-moued his Archbifthops See vnto Menuals a place verie folitarie, and meet for meditation: the miracles of the man (which are faid to bee many,) changed both the name of the place into his owne, and robbed Caerlines of the Archivologal fact: This Sec of S. Danid (as in an ancient Register belonging to that Chutch is record, which were Execute places and the second of the Chutch is record, which were Execute places, Indigot, Landady, Bangare, S. Alfaph, and Ferenci in Tecland: notwithflanding, cyther for want of Pal, caried time Brismay by Archbidghos Samplen, in a dangerous infection of fix India, eyether by pourcy or negligence, is to that is unfoldition, and in

the daies of king Henry the first, became subject to the See of Canterbury.

(7) Torke hath had better successe then either of the

(7) Fork hath had better success the energy though much former, in rectaining her originall fonours, though much impaired in her circuit, challenging to have been formatime Metropolitane ouer all the Bishops in Scotland: & lathough it was made equal in honour, and power with Canterbury, by Pope Gregory, as Beds relateth, and had twelue Suffragan Bishopricks that owed obedience, onely foure now acknowledge Yorks their Metropolionery route now action with a state of the s

other titrike it off; left. I orge to be a Primate, but Canter-bury onely the Primate of all England.

(8) That Liebsteld was made an Archiepiscopall See by Pope Hadrian the fust, at the fusic of Offia the great king of Moreia, is manistelled by Mathow of Westmirsher vato whose inridiction were alligned the Bishopricks woo whoic institlation were aftigned the Bithopickes of branching. Hereful Lescality, Sudsetter, Hithahum, and Domenté, and whole first and last Archbithop variance, and whole first and last Archbithop of Department of the Board of the Boa pianathy whose Promines that were made this Diocelle, which were Winderfor Oxford, Louene, Salukowa, Bris flow Willet, Liebford, Loubra and Exceptions and the first Bishop of this greed Circuit, Brisman was called the Apostle & Bishop per of the west Saxons: which his next locatefor was admitted into two parters, Princefor and Durchoffer, and not long fafter into Liebford, Sakonsoffer, and and Legeoffernous lithy, this See tensored from Durchoffer of Louendays now this, and thus time for the dulpfore of Louendays now the Loud than time for the dulpfore of Louendays now the Loud than time for the dulpfore of Louendays now the Loud than time for the dulpfore of Louendays now the Loud than time for the dulpfore of Louendays now the Loud than time for the dulpfore of Louendays now the Loud than time for the Loud than the it hath flood, and flands at this day,

(9) But the whole Hands distifion, by most certains

y) Just the whole anima dimition, by most certaints Record was aniently made, when Islais Agricola drew a Trench or fortification typo in hat narrow space of ground betwink Edenbrough First, and Danbrotton Bay, making the Southernepart a Province vinto the Romane Empire. Afterwards Hadrian the Emperour sering perhaps the Province too spatious to be well gouerned without great expense, drew backe these li-mits almost sourcore miles shorter, even to the mouth of the river Tyne, whence hee fortissed with a wall of of the meet 1916, whether her fortend with a wall admirable workevanto (arteil, which flood the lands border, while it flood as a Remane prouince: yet the conquering Saxons did fpread again ouer thoic bounds and (as feemeth) enlarged their gouernement to that first Track, as by this infeription in a flone-Croffe, flanding youn a Bridge ouer the water of Frith, sp-

I am a free March, as Paffengers may ken, To Scots, to Britaines, and to Englishmen.

(10) But afterward William the Conquerour, and Malcolme king of Scotland, falling to an agreement for their limits, arreared a Croffe vpon Stanemore, where on the one fide the portraiture and Arms of the where of the one one one portraintre and a time orine king of Eugland was feulptured, and of the king of Scots on the other; a peece where of is yet remaining there neere to the Spittle) thence called the Rey-Croffe, there creded to be a Meare-frome to either Croffe, there erecked to hee a Mezar-dione to either kingdom.elh sizections allo sholling the two partitions in the Well, whereby the Wellh became one nation and kingdome with the English. It is allow a state of the state of t

(1) The laft known borders were from the Safway in the Welf-Bay, along the Cheution libt, wrone twaver of I week by America in the Eaft, to maintain which, on each part many lawes have been made, and many inroades, robberies, and frewdes practified all which by the hand of God sinow cut off, and by the rightful facceffion of King I AM ES our Sourcinges, who hash borken downet be particion of this great I fland, and made the extreme of two Kingdomes, the very middle of the core to write I fland. ofhis great united Empire

An.D. 765

tiding of York

å

antas. Lamb.Peram

Eibelbert, Edbal l.

Withred. Edelhers

Book. I.

ENT, the first Province ap-pearing in the South of this Kingdome, is bounded upon the North with the famous River Thanifis : on the East, with the German Ocean : on the South, with Suffex and the narrow Seas; and upon the West, with Sulley and Sur rey. The length thereof, ex-

Weft, vnto Ramfgate Eastward in the Isle of Thanet, is about 53. English miles. From Rusher in the South, vnto the Isle of Grains Northward, the bredth is not much about 26, and he whole circumference about 160. miles. (2) Informe it somewhat resembleth the head of a ham

The name. As M, William Lambard conectureth.

The length of

Kewt. The bredth,

The form

The foile.

The Cor

The Cinque

Tab. Stowe.

ner of Battle-axe, and lieth corner-wife into the Sea : he Strabe, Cafar, Diederm and Ptelemie, called Cantium, o Cant or Canton, an Angle or Corner : either of Caine a Bristi word, which fignifieth Bafest or Woods, whereof that Coun The fite of Ken

word, which in the control that countries in the former times was plentifully from:

(3) The sire, though not very cleare, because of the vapours arising from the Sea, and Rivers that environ the fame, is both wholefome and temperate, a selact decreef to the Egomodical, and the furthell from the North Pole, not

touched with cold, as the other parts of the Land are.

(4) The Soile towards the East is vineuen, rifing into little hils, the West more levels and woody, in all places fruitfull, and in plenty equals any other of the Realine, yea and in fome things hath the best esteeme: as in Broad-cloathes Fruits, and feedings for cattle. Only Mines (excepting Iron are wanting: all things elfe deliuered with a prodigall hear dities. Will. Lambard. fel-248. Riuer of Kent.

(5) Sundry natigable Riters are in Kent, whereof Med
mey, that divide the the thire in the midft, is chiefe to in who ome securely rideth his Maiesties Name Royall, the wals of the land and terrours of the Seas, befides ten others o of the land and retrours of the Seas, belides ten others of name and account, that open with twenty Creekers and fa-uens for Ships arriunge into this Land, four of them bea-ring the name of Cinque Parts, are places of great strength and priutieges, which are Dower, Sandwick, Rummer, and Winchelfer: among which, Doner with the Callle is accounted by Matthew Paris the Monke, the locke and key to the eed by National Fair the Monke, the locke and key to the whole Realme of England 3 and by John Ruff and Lidgars is faid to be built by Inlum Cafar, fatall only for the death of King Stephen, and furrender of King Inlum that papering. (5) A conceit is, that Guedwin Sand verefunke for the linnes of himfelfe and formes. Shelues indeed that dange-roully lie on the North-eaft of this County, and are much

feared of all Namigators. These formerly had beene firm ground, but by a sudden inundation of the Sea were swa Silvell Giralda lowed up as at the fame time a great part of Floriders and the Lear Construence: and the like allo arthe fame time beld in Sociales, at 18th Bestia which Higher Spate where like higher pages were look of Angel, in this Countie, as Medistrybas at Founce ight miles from Leades, fuddenly the ground beganne to finde, and three great Binest steron gooding, were carried to deep into the bowels of the earth, the no part of them could any more befores, the hole left in compalifications and all the great before the county of the c Lawo fol tot. Heffer Bretim

[Gore yards about, and aline of fifty fadomes plummed isso to do thin den obstorone. In Conference of the Conference (2) The Kennith people in Conference of the Conference (3) The Kennith people in Conference of the Conference o Lucius the first Christian British King in this Iland, built a Church to the name and service of Christ, within the Castle Lam: Peram. le

Church to the name and fertice of Christ, within the Calle of Dewr, rationing it with the Toll of the fame Hunt.

(8) This County is enriched with two Cities and Billiops Sead froughted with a Called space of the Called Space wcalled Caier-Kent, wherein (as M. Lambard faith) wa s praculaci Cairr-Ken, wherein (as M. Lambodalith) was exceled the first Schoole of profelde Arts and Sciences, and the lame a patemer with Styleber King of the Egil-Ac-gler, for this foundation at Camering's notwithfunding by the computation of time, this Styleber was faile by Peada King of Mersus, so yeters before that Teader the Gresses was billop of Canterbury, who is failed to beet netcher of that Academic. But certainer is, that Aufore the Monke had made this Citic famous before that time, by the conuc fion of these Saxons write Christianitie, and in building a most magnificent Church to Gods service, wherein eight

of their Kings have been einterred, but all their Monuments fince overfladowed by the height of *Beeters* Tombe, that for glory, wealth, and superstrictors worships, equalized the Pyramides of Egyp, or the Oracles of Delphos, yet now with Dagon is fallen before the Arke of God.

This Citie hath beene honoured with the prefence and Cotonations of King Isbuand Queene Ifabet his wife, with the mariages of King Henry the Third, and of King Edward the First, and with the interments of Edward the blacke Prince, King Henry the Fourth, and of Queene Jean his wife: as Fourtham is with the burials of King Stephen, and of Mandhis Queeneand wife. But as in gloty, so in aductifite hath this Citic borne a part, being diuers times afflicked by the Danes, but most especially in the daies of King Ethelred. who in that revenge of their mailacre, made havocke of all. who in that reuenge of their malitare, made hauocke of all, and hererin lies forty threc thousdan and row hundred perfons, the tight befides referred to line. Afterwards it recovered breath and beauty, by the liberalitie of Billion Lawford; the control that the liberalities of Billion Lawford; the liberalities of Billion Lawford; the Chairers and privileges by King Homy the Third; the notifications from King Riebard the Second: and lattly, walles for her defentle by Simon Sudhers de contra and surry, wanter for ner derente toy samen some bury Archbilhop of that Sec : whose Graduation is placed for Latitude 51.35, and parallelized for Longitude 22.8. her silter Revieller differing not muchin either degree.

(5) Which Citte (as Boda faith) was built by one Ref.

of the fame, though fome after the foundation of Lord of the fame, though iome ateribe the roundation of the Caffleto Indian Caffer, and hashbeen of enr uninated by the iniuries of warre, both in the times when the Saxons flroue for fuperioritie among themselves, wherein this City was laid walke, Anno 80s as laid ion the allustro of their common enemie the Dawes, who about the yeere 82s, from mon chemic the Daest, who about the yeere \$84. from Frastee failed yeth River Mediary, and belieged the fame, to that had not King Elfraflycedily come to the refere, it had been out-throwne by those Pagans. And again in An. 999, the Daest milerably foolied this Citie in the time of King Elsbards - neither hath it flood fairfrom danger fance (though not defaced to much by warre for twice hath it beene fore endammaged by chance of fire : the first was in the raigne of King Him? the First, Amou 1220, himself heing present with most of his Nobilitie, for the confectation of the Cathedrall Churchof S. Andrew: And agains almost wholly confumed about the latter end of the raigne of King Homy the Second, Anno 1177. Yet after all thefe ca-lamities it recovered fome ftrength againe, by the bountie of King Homy the Third, both in buildings, and in ditching her about for defense.

(20) Givill broiles and diffensions hath this Countie

(10) Guill broises and difficilions hath this Countie been burdened with, and that not onely vader the Sassus and Danes, whose desolutions were many and grieuous, but also by other rebellions fince the Narmanse Conquest, both in thase infamous insurrections, cilled The Barons Warres, in this infamous inturrections, culted The Beaus Warrst, in the raign of King Heavy the Third, wherin much harme was done; as also vader King Richard the Second, when War Han, Capistoc of a deadful commotion all dembled at Black, beats, Nation—and and in London doing many our trage, where in Smidyfuld hee was lastly strucke downe by William Walwarts them Palsor of the Cities, and worthlijs likine for

where in Swinjohalber was lally frunke downed by Million Pallower than Manor of the Clife, and worthly like for the Pallower than Manor of the Clife, and worthly like for the International English of the Cliff and Confession and Co in which indection is those whill the time of the Nameson. Then was it given reder the title of an Barledone, by the Conquerour, vato Orlos Bithop of Royaris his half-o-brother, who fe toccellouris in that displicit were their most financiars whose Armes and Names within this plot are blazed and experience. It is distilled principally just to be Lather, fubbluided into 66. Hundreds, and them against into 308. Parifhes: and wherin had beene feated twenty thre

Polyd.Biff.Arg.



Booke 1. SVSSE X. Chap.50 shop of that name reedified and built anew. And now pounded of the fire thereto augment the honour of this place, the Case had home the Title of an Endome, whereof they of Frankeld were formetimes follied. Whole Graduation for Lattice, is remounded from the Equator to the degree fiftie, strengound from the Equator to the degree fiftie, fiftie fitte minutes; and for Longitude, Obleruing the fine point in the Welt, wheree Mereate hath mediated, are twente degrees. (?) With whom for frequencie, bigneffe, and tent, building, the Towne Lewe Sement to contend, where King Allelds appointed the minings of his Moneyes, and William All travens built aftering Calife, whereas the diddingly Basson Selfs, for sort pitching in waithe manner reforred, and fought a green Bartle against their owns Concessing can the Sone, wherein the King hads his torie failuse wader him, Reland King of the Romas (Universited and Auton and Wild-mill and a Wild to augment the honour of this place, the Citie hath of Southward; and of the Saxons, whose Kingdome was the fecond in their Heptarchie; is written by them subjex, and by ve suffex, lieth firetched a ong the British Seas. The North confronts voon Surrey & Kent, and the West butteth voon Hamphire (2) For forme it lieth long and narrowe, so that all her Rapes do runne quite through the Shire, and conteyneth from Westharting in the West, to Kent Ditch that divides it from Kent in the East, fixty foure Miles, but in the broadest part little aboue twenty, the whole in Circumference, about one hundred fifty of the Romans Surprized and taken in a Wind-mill, and cight miles. Prince Edward deliuered vnto them vpon vnequall (3) The aire is good, though somewhat clouded with mists, which arise forth of her South bordering conditions of peace. But a greater Battle was fought at Battle, when the hazard of England was tried in one The sire. with mitts, which arile forth of her South bordering Sea, who is very prodigall vnto her for Fifih and Sea-fowle, though as fparing for Harbours or Ships ariuage, and thole which fibe hath, as uncertaine for continuance, as dangerous for entrance. (4) Rich is the Soile and yeddeth great plenty of all things neeffary, but very ill for trauellers, efpeci-ally in the winner, the land lying low and the wayes all the winner. daies fight, and Harold the King gaue place to his Condais fight, and Hardduk King gaue place to his Car-querary by lofing of his lift, among lifts; Yeuen thou-land, nine hundred fearenty foure English-men be-fletes; whole blood fooling tase mance to the place, in French, Sanguelar. And the loile naturally after raine-becomming of a reddish colour, cuted William of Newbery vanturly to write. That if there fill any final freet flowers in the flace where is great a laughter of the Englishmen was made, projectly freatably forting the blood ause of the earth, at if the endheathers of the flash declare the voice of blood there flest, and cried fill from the earth was to the The foile very deep, whose middle tract is garnished with mea-dows, pastures, and Corn-fields: the Sea-Coast with Hilles which are called the Downes, abundantly yeel. ding both Graine and Graffe, and the North fide ouer-shadowed with pleasant Groues and thicke Woods, declares the outce of bland there fleet, and cried fill from the earth was the Lard.

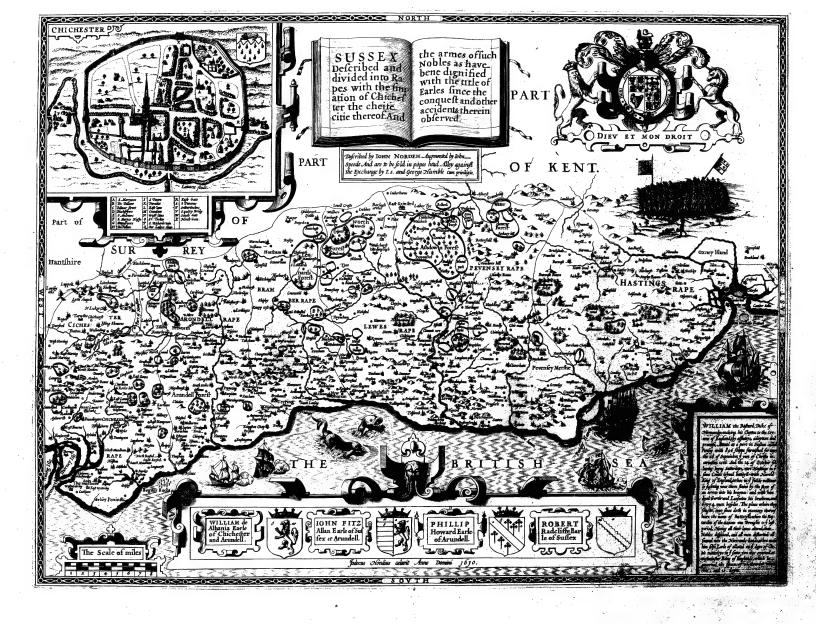
(8) But places of other note in this Shire are thele: From Bafban, Earle Harreld Kaing the Sex for his de-light, in a finall boat was driven upon the Coast of Normandie, where by Duke Prillion the was restained, till here had foremer om take him King after Zahnard Confession death; which on the bump broken, the Ba-comfession death; which on the bump broken, the Ba-comfession death; which on the bump broken, the Ba-than Periarie. A tweet-twittering allo Ella the Garen be-lease him had banded for the connecting of the same bear had banded for the connecting of the same where sometimes stood the famous wood Andrads wald, containing no leffe then an hundred and twen-tie miles in length, and thirtie in bredth, taking the name of Anderida a Citie adioining both which were An.Do.478. wonne from the Britaines by Ella the first Saxon King of this Prouince, and the place made fatall to Sigebert King of the West-Saxons, who being deposed from his Royall Throne, was met in this Wood by a Swineheard, and flaine in reuenge of his Lord, whom Sige that Persures. At West-Wittering also Eus the Saxon be-fore him had landed for the conquering of those parts, and gaue name to the shore from Cimen his son. But with greater glory doth Gromebridge raise up her head, where Charles Duke of Orleannes, father to Lewes hert had murdered (f) The ancient people in the Romans time were the Regui, of whom wee have fooken, and who were flubdued by Vehafian the Leader of the fecond Legion vnder Asian Flatinu Licurant in Britishe for Classian the Emperour. But after the departure of the The ancient Inthe Twelfth, King of France, taken prisoner at Agin court, was there a long time detained. (9) The Commodities of this Province are ma-137 Less Commouters or tens Frontine are major and duera, both in Ceme, Catell, Woods, 1970, and dudy of the world in the County of Woods, whole want will bee found in agesto the Woods, whole want will bee found in agesto (10) Great has been the decrotions of religious Perfons to building and conferrating many houfewns on the wild world in the County of Woods and the Woods of the Romans, this with Surrey was made the South-Saxons ny and divers, both in Corne, Cattle, Woods, Iron, and Roman, this with Surrey was made the Nonth-Saxons Kingdome: yet that giuing place to the Weft-Saxons, as they in time to the Normans, it became a Pronince vnder the Conquerours power, who gaue to his folvaluer the Conquerous power, who gaue to his tol-lowers much Land in thele parts.

(6) The place of most account in this Shire is Chichester, by the Britaines called Caercei, and by the Sacons Cippan-Caspoep, a Citic beautiful ad large, and very well walled about, first built by Cissa the Chiefe places Palace was kept. And when King William the first had enacted that Bishops Seas should bee translated out of small Towns vanto places of greater refort, the Refidence of the Bishop (vntill then held at Selfer) wasre dence of the Bildop (wall lithen held at \$elfp) wasre-moused on this Ciric, where Bildop Raufe Degame a molg goodly Cathedrall Church: but before it was fully initified, by aidden michance of fire was quite condiuncd. Yet the fame Bildop, with the helping li-beralitie of King Horny the Fifth, Sogan it againe, and faw it wholly finished; whole beauty and greameste-ter fatall enemie full enuying, againe cast downen the dates of King Richard the First, and by her raging, fames confumed the buildings both of it and the Bi-sthops Palace adioning, which \$session Bi-

of Lewes into thirteen, of Peuenley into scuenteen, and of Hallings into thirteen, in al, fifty sixe, wherin are sea-

ted tenne Castles, eighteen market Towns, and three hundred and twelue Parish-Churches, as in the Table

following appeareth.



	Book 1.			SVSSE	Χ.			Chap.V
ΙO	Book 1.			0 4 0017				Confi
. T J.	reds and Rapes	Afhefould, Arand.	Capiway Arund	Etons, Bramb.	Horneroffe, Arund. HORSHAM, Era.	Merden } Chich.	Prefton, 2	Stotouer, Chich.
	SVSSEX.	Afburit, Brand. Aflington, Brand.	Cattleagy, Arund. Cattlefield, Haff. Cattlefield, Haff. Cateffret, Peuen.	Etchingfold, Bram. Excete, Peuen.	HORSHAM, Era.	Merden roper, chi.	Preston, Arand. east, Arand. Pulborough, Aran.	Stoughton, Chick,
111	JYJJEA.	Aylworth, Chich.	Catterneso, Hajs.	Eyes, Lewes.	Cayns, Penens	Merden Chich.		Stretham, Eramb.
		B	Catelires, Pegen, Cawdershaw, Arm. Celley, Chieb, Celley Peninsu, Ch. Chamcis Lewes, court, S	F	Horsted Penen, Cayns, Horsted Penen, Intile, Horston, Bramb.	Welt, Juston	Pyppenford, Pcuss.	Strettenton, Chic Sulion, Arwad.
	ewellborne hand. Eailborne hund.	•	Celley Peninfu, Ch.	•	Horton, Bramb.	Merden North, Chich.	R	Sutton, Penen.
		Badworth Arand, parke, Arand, Balcombe, Lewes.	Chamcis } Lewes.	Farat, Penen. Farmehurft, Chich.	Howcourt, Bramb. Howicke, Arwad.	Merth, Hafting. Merthon, Chich,	Racton Chich.	Swanhoro, Lewer. Sydny, Lewer.
Thicheffer	Bolban bund.	Balcombe, Lewes.		Farze, Arund.	Hunfton, Arand.	Michelham, Pores.	Radmill, Lewes. Rallingdeane, Lew.	
•	Box and Stockbridge		North ? Arend	Fawmer, Lewes. Fawhurft, Bramb.	Hunfton, Arand. Hurft, Arand.	Michelham } Arun.	Rallingdeane, Lew.	. т
	bund. Alfweekbund.	Barcellow Haft.	Charleton Chich-	Fawhurft, Haft,	Harlt 7		Ranmer Chick.	Tablehu: ft, Peues
		Barcomoc. Lawes.		Fawhurft, Lewes,	Harft perpoint, Lew. Hurftmonleux, Ha.	Miching, Lewer.	Ringmer, Penen.	Tangmer, Click. Telekombe, Law.
	Rotherhider hund.	Barlaungton, Ar.	Chayligh, Leves. Chelworth, Bremb.	Fayrhegh, Haft. Felpham, Araud.		Miching, Lewer, Middleton, Pewn, Middleton, Annd, MIDHVRST, Chic. Midlauant, Chic.	Ripe, Penen. Riuer, Chich.	Terring, Power. TERRING, Bram
krandell lage.	Rotherbridge hund. Polong bund.	Barlugh } 1 cmes.	CHICHESTER C.		Hyneleap, Pener.	MIDHVRST, Chie.	River 3 chi.b.	TERRING, Bram Filgate, Leives.
organ.	Augsford hand. Bury bund.	Barnham, Arund, BAT ILE, Haft,	Chilgroue, Chich. Chiltington, Bramb.	Ferring, Arand.	1 .	More, Arand. Morehale, Hafting.	Rogate, Chich. S-Rooks - Chich. hill, - Chich. Roffey, Bramb,	Tilington, Aread Tilebuilt, Haft,
		Baylies Arund,	Chiltington, Lewes,	Finden, Bramb, Fifbborne, Chick, Fitleworth, Arund,		Morchale, Hafting. Monfcombe, Lewe.	S-Rooks Chieb.	Tifehuift,Haft. Thakam,#ramb.
	(Wefigrenflead bund.	The Beach, Peyer	Chaman, Peren.		Inpton, Arend. Ibernowe, Arend.	Mountharry, Lewe.	Roffey, Bramb.	Themens, Aread.
	Stenung hund, Brightford bund,	Beawbuth. Branch	Chittingle, Posen. Chydham, Chieb.	Fletching, Pours, Flymwell, Haft,	Ichnor } 6 bich. Ichnor } 6 bich. Eaft, 6 bich.	Mountharry, Lewe. Mundferld, Hafting.	Roffey, Bramb, Rother Flo Rother bridge? Abbey.	Tho:ney Ifle, Chi
	Eafterwrith hand, Eurherch hand	Backley, Hafting.	Chydham, Chich. Clapham, Arend.	Forde, Ayund	Ichnor?	Mundham Chich.	Abbey, H.	Thorney, Chub.
Brambte Lape.	Terring band.	Bedingham, Peners, Bedingstreat, Eram.	Clasham, Bramb.	Foundington, chie.	Ealt, 5 Chich.	Mundham Chich.	Rotherbridge, Haft.	Torton, Arandia
		Bentley, Pours, Bepron, Chubeft,		Founton, Pewer.	Ickefnam, Hafting. Iden, Hafting. Iemington, Peace.	Muchelham Penus	Rotterbridge, Ar.	Tottington, Bran
	Topmohe bund. Windcham bund.	Berifted 2 and a	Clayton, Lewes. Cliffe Peass. Climping, Arand.	Franchis Hell	Iemington, Peren.	Mychelham, Peace. Myll-place. Lew.	Rowdell Bramb.	Tratton, Chich
	Shinglecroffe bund.	Berfted } Chicheft.		Friston, Peves. Frogfurle, Peves.	Ifeild, Framb. Ifeild Bramb.	N	Rowdant, I sweet. RYE, Hall.	Trefort, Chieb.
	Barkbam and Ham-	Berfted } Chich.	Cocking, Chich,	Furle, Penen.	Court Framb.		Rudgwyke, Arund.	Turwick, Chich. Tuftons, Haff.
	for hand.	Bernyke, Pesen, Bexill, Hafting, Bidlington, Framb.	Cocking, Chich, Coldwaltham, Ar. Coleworth, Chich.	G	Iffeeld, Lewes, Hord, Lewes.	Nash, Bramb.	Runckton, Chich.	Tuftons,Haff
	Swanberen hund, Holmeftrough hund,	Bidlington Berms		1	Iford, Lewes. Iffiam, Arand,	Neland, Lewes. Nenfield, Haff.	Rusper, bramb. Rustington, Arund.	Twineham, Leap Tyes, Leaves,
	Teonelmare band,		Combes. Bramb.	Gatewike, Bramb.	Imberhurne, Peses.	Nenfield, Haft. Neiherfield, Haft.	1	
	Whalesbone band.	Bignor, Arand, Billinghurft, Arand,	Compton, Chech. Concreald, Bramb.	Gate, Haft.	Ifting, (bich. Itchingham, Haft,	Newbridge, Arnud.	S.	v
cwee	Hoones preflen bun, Piftereate bund,	1 Billon, Arund.	Cowding, Haft.	Gestling, Hall. Glaschoule, Arand		Newnd parke, Feu- Newtimber, Lewes.	Sand, Arund.	Vekfeild, Peres,
Lewes Rape.	Posnings bund. Buttinghill North bund.	Binderton, Chich. Binfted, Acund.	Cowdry, Chich. Crabbet, Lewes,	Glatting, Arusal. Glyne, Peues.	K		Salchurft, Hafting. Salomons bridge, C.	Vdymere, Haft, Vertwood, Pener
	hund.	Bishophurit, Bramb.	Crawburft, Haft.	Goodwood, Chick	Kent ditch, Hafting,	North chappell, Arun.		Vpwaltham, Ara
	bund. Buttinghill South bund.	Bishophurit, Bramb. Blackdowne Chic, beacon. Chic,	Crawley, Lepte.		Kenward, Lewes.	North wood, Arun.	Scall, Syamb. Scaford, Pearn.	w
	hund. Wynchem hand.	Blackhoufe Pouts.	Crawle, Haff. Crockfted, Penes.	Greatham, Arund. Greneley, Pewer. Grasham, Chich.	Kingfton, Lewes. Kingfton, Arund.	Nordy chappell, Haft, Nordinam, Haft;	Sedle(combe, Lew.	1 "
	Streat North part.	Blackfton, Byano.	Cromble Pener.	Grasham, Chieb.	Kingfton, Framb.	Nordiham, Haft.	Sedwick, Bramb.	Wadehurft, Pen
	Streat South part.	Bletchington, Lew. Bletchington, Per-	Crowboro 2		Caftle,	Nortington, Pewen. Norton, Pewen.	Selham Chich. Selharft, Chich.	Wakehurst, Less. Walberton, Ara
	Eastgrinsted bund.	Bognor rocks, Chic. Bodgsham, Haft.	Crowbozo Pesen, hill, Pesen, Cuckfeild, Lewer,	Greene, Arund. GRIN- 2 p.	Kymer, Lewes.	Nutborne, Arand.	Schnefton, Peacet.	Walderne, Peres Walderton, Chi
	Herifeild band.	Bodgiham, Haft. Bolb: oke, Pewer,		GRIN- Pe STEAD caft, Pe Grinitead, Eremb.		Nuthorne, Chich. Nuthurft, Stanb.	Selfcombe, Haft. Siddleham, (bish.	Walderton, Chia Walebech, Penen
	Rotherfeild bund.	Bolney, Lawer.	hauen.	Grombridge, Pene Gulford, Haft,		Nutley, Penen.		Waltham, Chick
	Lox field Kings bus. Linfild and Buclie	Bolney, Erwes, Bonyck, Bramb.	Cuckmere Proces.	Gulford, Haft,	Laborcye, Penen.	1	Singleton, Chich, Siffabury Eramb.	Wamingore, Let Wapinghor, Bran
		Boreham Haft.	D.	н	Languey, Peace.	٩	hill. Eramb.	Wanshurne Le
	Ringemer bund. Isfeld bund.	Bormer, Lewes. Borfill, Haft.	1 -		Lausnt } chich.	Offern, Aread.	Sheffeild, Paren.	Warbleton, Heft
Pevensey Raye.	Rufhmonden hund.	Botfill, Haft, Borftye, Lewes,	Dallington, Haftin. Dalingtig, Pours.	Hadhurft, Lewe, Halneck, Chich.	Esff, 5	Offington, Bramb. Okehurfl, Arund,	Shelbred, Chich. Shermanbury, Bra.	Warminghurft, Warmingcampe
Kaje.	Danebil herstedben, Danebill Sheffeild	Boscham, Chich.	Dallington ? ues	Hampnet } chich.	Weft Chich.	Oldbury, Chich. Ouingdcane, Low.		
	Sheplake bund,	Bolgraue, Chich.	Dallington Haft.	Weft, Scottine	Laughton, Penen. Laughton, Penen.	Ouingdeane, Low.	parke, f	Wateling, Haft, Washington, Bi Water downey forrest,
	Differed	Bowley, Chich.	Dallington, Haftin. Danny, Lewes.	Eaft, Chich.	Launling 2 Erank	Oute, Haft, Outmouth, Chich.	SHOREHAM?	Wasinington, E.
	Longbridge bun, Willington bund,	Bowley, Chich, Bramber, Bramb, Bramble, Penens,	Darum } Hafting.	Hampnet Chieb.	North, Frank	Owning Chieb.	Shipley, Bramb, SHOREHAM Br. Shorkers	forreft,
	Eastboome band.	Bramble, Pewent,	Detne 3	Hamfill bridge Rea	Launfing ? Bramb.	P		Waynway channell, H
	Allifton bund.	Brantinap, Loves. Breed, Haft.	Deane 3 Penen.	Handerofe, Eramb Hardham, Arand.	Laythorne, Chich.		Shortfeild, Bramb.	Weeke, Arund.
	Flexiorens band.	Brightling, Heft. BRIGHTHEL MERSTON H.	Deane 3 chichift.	Hardham, Arund.	Leckford bridge (b	Pagham, Chich.	Shripny, Chieb. Shullington, Arend.	Wellingham, Pa
	(Foxeall bun,	MERSTON. H.	Deane } chiebeft.				Shullington, Bram, Sidly, Haft,	Wellbarne Chi
	Shewfwell ban.	Broadwater, Bramb. Brodhill, Lewes.	Deane 3	Harlings, Penen, Harmar, Haft, Hartfeild, Penen,	S.Leonards } Byam Foreft, } Leugnerfte, (hich. LEWES, Lewer	Pangden, Lewes,	Sidly, Haft,	Westerton, Chie Westerton, Chie Westfeild, Haft,
	Golde (pare hund.	Brodhurft, Peace	Welt Peuen,	Hartfeild, Peum.	Leugnerihe, Chich.	Parham, 4143d.	Slaugham, Lewer, Slindon, Arand,	Welterion, Can
	Goldelpare bund. Staple bun.	Brodfton, Peres.	Delfham, Brass.	Harting Chich.	LEWES, Lewes	Parke, Peuch,	Slowhouse, Lewes,	Weffgate,Chick
t-flings	Hawksberough bun Nethersfield bund.	Bromehill H.	Dento, Penen. DICHELING, Le.	Harring 7	Linchemere, Chich. Lindfield Lewes	Patcham, Lewer,	The Sluce, Haft. The Sluce, Arand.	Wellham, Pener Wellmillon, Le
Kape.	Bexhill bund.	Broneham, Haff.	Didlesford Anual	Harring South, Chick.	darches Lewes	Patching Bramb.	Slynford Syemb.	Westwouldes. &
	Balflot band. Geflling bund.	The Broyle, Pewer. Broylehoe, Pewer.	Didling, Chich.	Fag Chich.	Lindfeild Lewes	Patebam, drund,	Smythawe, Arand, Snowting, Bramb.	Whilden, Leve Whiteden, Peus
	i Gallyowe hun.	Buckingham, Bram.	Forest,			Paines, Lewes, Pearching, Lewes, Peafmerthe, Haft,	Socknyes, Half.	Wickem, Brewi
	Nepu'll hand. Henburg band.	Bruckimale, Haff.	Dounly, chich.	parke, chich.	Lodeiworth, Chris.	The Pell, Haft.	South, Peren. Southes, Lewes,	Wiggenhoult, a Wigfill, Haff,
	Cerement's passer	Buckhult, Haft, Buckhurft, Penen,	Downton, Anual. Drayton, Chich.	Haftines?		Pemicy,Peuen.		Willington Pe
		Buckfled Peurs.	Drungwick, Arund, Dunhurft, Arund,	Haftings] Hafting.	Lordings, Arand. Louell Croffe, Lew.		Southquer, Lewes,	Willington, Pa Winchelfey H
	A top drawd	Buckstepe, Haft,	Dunhurit, Arend,	Housen Penen.	Louest Crotte, Lew.	Penharft, Haft.		Winchelley } H
Adrinos		Budditon (hich. Bugfil, Haft.	Dunnington, (bich. Duddleswell, Perc.	Hauen Penen. Haughton, Arun.	Ludley, Peier.	Peppleiham, Haft, Peppering, Arand,	Soweton Peyer.	WINCHEISE
Adringt Alberto	on,6ramb.		Dumpford, Chich.		Ludiham, Peuen S. Lukes, Chieb.	wood Haff.	Stamer Ram, Bram. Scanmer, I ewes.	Windeham, Br. Winton, Penes.
Adringt Alberto Alborn	c Eramb.	Buluerhyth, Haft,		HAYLSHAM, Per	Lychoufe, Lewes,	Pett, Haft. PETWORTH, Ar.	Stanfled, Chich.	
Adringt Alberto Alborn Adingb Adrings	e,Frank ootone, (ich, 10n.Lewer	Burdham, Cinco. Burpham, Arund,	Dyke, Peuen,					Wittering
Adringt Alberto Alborn Adringb Adringt Almani	e,lramb, corone, [ich, ton,Lewes, incton, Chu.	Burdham, Cinco. Burpham, Arand. Burton, Arand.	Durrington, Bramb. Dyke, Peuen,	Hayfbott, Chich.	Lychouse, Lewes,	Personforman C - 7	heren Heff.	
Adringt Alberto Alberto Adingb Adringt Almani Aldfrift Alfiftor	e,Framb, potone, (ich, non,Lewes, ington, Ches, tan, Pewes, n. Pewes.	Burcham, Coco. Burpham, Arand, Burton, Arand, Burton, Arand, weft, Arand,	E	Hayton, Pewen, Hearthfeild, Pewen,	Lydley, Chieb.	Peuensey mershe, P Piddinghoe, Lewes.	Stapley Heft. Stedham, Chieb.	Wittening?
Adringt Alberto Alberto Adingb Adringt Almani Aldfrift Alfrift Amber	c.Frank. cotone, Cich, ton, Lewes, inston, Ches, tao, Penen. n, Penen.	Burdham, Coco. Burpham, Arand, Burton, Arand, Burton, Arand, weft, Arand, Burweth beacon, H.	E Eartham, Chich.	Hayton, Pewen, Heathfeild, Pewen, Heathfeild, Pewen,	Lydley, Chieb.	Piddinghoe, Lewes. Pigions, Arand.	Stedham, Chieb.	Wittering }-Ci
Adringt Alberto Alberto Adingb Adring Almani Aldirift A'fiftor Amberi Amerila	c, frank, otone, fish, ton, fewer, inston, chue, tan, Pewer, n, Pewer, inston, chue, tan, Pewer, ilie, drand, sam, Chieb.	Burdham, Cuco. Burpham, Atund. Burton, Arand. Burton, Arand. weft, Arand. Burwash beacon, H. Burwash, Heft.	E Eartham, Chich.	Haytnott, Cour. Hayton, Pewen, Heathfeild, Pewen, Heene, Bramb	Lydley, Chib. Lymitter, Arand. Lythe Chieb.	Piddinghoe, Lewes, Pigions, Arand.	Stedham, Chieb. STENNING, Bra. Stoake Chieb.	Wittering Ci eaft, Ci Winelsfeild, Li Wodmancore.
Adringt Alberto Alberto Adingb Adring Almani Aldirift A'fiftor Amberi Amerila	c, frank, otone, fish, ton, fewer, inston, chue, tan, Pewer, n, Pewer, inston, chue, tan, Pewer, ilie, drand, sam, Chieb.	Burcham, Cuco. Burpham, Atund, Burton, Arund, Burton, Arund, weft, Jarand, Burwath, beacon, H. Burwath, Haft, Bury, Arund, Bury, Arund, Butham, Arund,	E Eartham, Chich. Eaftergate, Ayund. Bafton, Chich.	Haytnott, Cour. Hayton, Pewen, Heathfeild, Pewen, Heene, Bramb	Lydley, chieb. Lymitter, Arand, Lythe chap. Lyttle, Arand,	Piddinghoe, Lewes, Pigions, Arand.	Stedham, Chieb. STENNING, Bra. Stoake Chieb.	Wittering Ci eaft, Ci Winelsfeild, Li Wodmancore.
Adringt Alberto Alberto Adringb Adring Aldrift Aldrift Amber Amerth Angleo Angne	cylramb oontone, Cich, ton, Lewes, incton, Chue, tan, Paten, n, Paten, ille, Arand, sam, Chich, on, Lewes, ting L.	Burcham, Cuco. Burpham, Atund, Burton, Arund, Burton, Arund, weft, Jarand, Burwath, beacon, H. Burvath, Haft, Bury, Arund, Bury, Arund, Butham, Arund,	E Eartham, Chich. Eaftergate, Ayund. Bafton, Chich.	Hayton, Pewen, Hayton, Pewen, Heathfeild, Pewen, Heene, Bramb, Heild, Bramb, Hellingle, Pewen, Hemfted, Pewen, Henftild, Bramb	Lydley, Chib. Lymitter, Arand. Lythe Chieb.	Peuchicy merihe, P Piddinghoe, Leves, Pigions, Arand. Playflove; hich. Playflower; chap. Arand	Stedham, Chieb. STENNING, Bra. Stoake Chieb. Stocke Annal.	Wittening Ci eaft, Ci Wittelsfeild, Li Wodmancote, Wogham, Lenn Wolleding Ci
Adringt Alberto Alberto Adringb Adringd Almani Aldfrift Afflor Ambert Amerth Angleo Angme weft.	c_frambotone, fich, ton,Lewes, ington, chu, tan,Peuen, n,Peuen, ile, Arando, sam, chich, con,Lewes, filing } M. xing } M.	Burcham, Cuco. Burton, Arand. Burton, Arand. Burton Yarand. Burwall, Arand. Burwall, Haft. Burwall, Haft. Bury, Arand. Butham, Arand. Butham, Arand. Buthopfton, Penes. Buttolphe, Branb.	E Eartham, Chich Eaftergate, Arand, Bafton, Chich, Eawood, Haft, Eborne, Chich, EBO VR N. Prace.	Haytnott, Cour. Hayton, Peren. Heathfeild, Pentn. Heene, Bramb. Heild, Bramb. Heild, Bramb. Hemfield, Penen. Henfield, Bramb. Herringham, Aramb.	Lydley, Chieb. Lymiter, Arand. Lythe Chieb. Lyttle, Attend. M The Manhode. Chie	Peuchicy merihe, P Piddinghoe, Leves, Pigions, Arand. Playflove; hich. Playflower; chap. Arand	beacon, Frag. Stedham, Chieb. STENNING, Bra. Stoake Chieb. Stocke Arand. Stocke Arand.	Wittesing Ci east, Ci Winelsfeild, Le Wodmancote, Wogham, Lew Wollsding, Ca Wollading, Ca Wollading, Ca
Adringt Alberto Alberto Adringb Adringd Almani Aldfrift Afflor Ambert Amerth Angleo Angme weft.	c_frambotone, fich, ton,Lewes, ington, chu, tan,Peuen, n,Peuen, ile, Arando, sam, chich, con,Lewes, filing } M. xing } M.	Burcham, Cuco. Burpham, Atund, Burton, Arund, Burton, Arund, weft, Jarand, Burwath, beacon, H. Burvath, Haft, Bury, Arund, Bury, Arund, Butham, Arund,	E Eattham, Chich Eaftergate, Arund, Bafton, Chich, Eawood, Haft, Eborne, Chich, E B O V R N, Peue, Edducton, Dramb, Ellited, Chich	Haytnott, Cour. Hayton, Peren. Heathfeild, Pentn. Heene, Bramb. Heild, Bramb. Heild, Bramb. Hemfield, Penen. Henfield, Bramb. Herringham, Aramb.	Lydley, Chieb. Lymiter, Arand. Lythe Chieb. Lyttle, Attend. M The Manhode. Chie	Pendinghoe, Lenes, Pigions, Anand, Piayttoe, Chieb. Playttoe, Chieb. Playttoe, Anand Pleaden, Haft, Plefter J Pentn. Playttoe, Lenes	beacon, Frag. Stedham, Chieb. STENNING, Bra. Stoake Chieb. Stocke Arand. Stocke Arand.	Wittesing Ci east, Ci Winelsfeild, Le Wodmancote, Wogham, Lew Wollsding, Ca Wollading, Ca Wollading, Ca
Adringt Alberto Alberto Adringt Adringt Almani Alfiften Amerth Angleo Angme weft. Angme eaft, Angme	eytramb, ponderet, pondere	Burcham, Guco Burpham, Arand, Burton, Arand, Burton, Frand, Burwah, Hafi, Buryah, Hafi, Buryah, Hafi, Butham, Arand, Buthopfton, Paese, Buttophen, Bramb, Byworth, Arand,	E Eattham, Chich Eaftergate, Arund, Bafton, Chich, Eawood, Haft, Eborne, Chich, E B O V R N, Peue, Edducton, Dramb, Ellited, Chich	Haytnott, Cour. Hayton, Peren. Heathfeild, Pentn. Heene, Bramb. Heild, Bramb. Heild, Bramb. Hemfield, Penen. Henfield, Bramb. Herringham, Aramb.	Lydley, Chib, Lymiter, Arand. Lythe Chieb, chap, Chieb, Lyttle, Arand, M The Manhode, Chi, Marlepofte, Bramb, Marsheld, Feare,	Penentey merthe, P Piddingboe, Lenves, Pigions, Arasid, Playftoe, Chich, Playftoe, Chich, Playftoe, Chich, Playftoe, Chich, Playftoe, Penent, Playftoe, Penent, Playftoe, Penent, Playftoe, Arasid, Playftoe, Penent, Playftoe, Arasid, Playftoe, Aras	beacon, France, beacon, France, Stecham, Chieb. STENNING, Bra. Stooke West, Chieb. Stocke Stocke Arand. Stocke Arand. Stocke Stocke Parand. Stockey hill.	Wittening Co east, Wielsfeld, Le Wodmancote, Wogham, Lew Wolbeding, Ch Wollamington, Worthm, Hoff Worth Lew Worth State
Adringt Alberto Alberto Adringt Adringt Almani Alfiften Amerth Angleo Angme weft. Angme eaft, Angme	eytramb, ponderet, pondere	Burcham, Guco. Burtham, Arund. Burton, Arund. Burton, Arund. Burton, Arund. Burwah, Hafi. Burwah, Hafi. Buryah, Hafi. Burham, Arund. Buham, Arund. Buthopfton, Praus. Buttophes, Braus. Byrac, Braus. Byrac, Braus.	E Eartham, Chich. Eaftergate, Arund, Balton, Chich. Eswood, Maff. Eborne, Chich. EBO V R. N. Peet. Edburton, Bramb. Ellited, Chich. Emilys, Chich. Enform. He. Chich. Enform. He. Chich.	Hayton, Fesen, Heathfeild, Pesen, Heathfeild, Pesen, Heidl, Syamb, Heilligle, Pesen, Hemfield, Framb, Herringham, Aram Hichfeld, Lever, Highdown, Aram, Hoadleigh, Lever, Hoadle Edt, Pesen,	Lydiey, chieb. Lymiter, arand. Lythe chap. Chieb. Lyttle, Attand. M The Manhode, Chi. Matlepofte, Bramb. Marnfeld, Peacn. Marthall, Peacn.	Petientey merthe, Piddinghos, Lewes, Pigions, Arand. Piayttoe, bich. Playttoe, chieb. Playttoe, chap. Arand Pleaden, Half. Plether; Pantes, Peant, Plampton, Lewes, Pooling, Arand, Poonings, Lewes, Ponchol, Court, Ponchol,	beacon, Fragr. Stedham, Chit b. STENNING, Brd. Stocke Chitch. Stocke Arand. Stocke Jarand. Stocke Jarand. Stockey Penen. Hill, Penen. Sconecham, Penen.	Wittening Co east, Wielsfeld, Le Wodmancote, Wogham, Lew Wolbeding, Ch Wollamington, Worthm, Hoff Worth Lew Worth State
Adringt Alberto Alberto Alberto Alberto Adorgo Adringt Adringt Almani Aldfrift Affiltor Amerih Angleo Angme west Angero Angme Angme Angrot Angrot Angrot Ardrye Appled Ardring	cylramb, promone, (ich, promone, (ich, promone, (ich, promone, pro	Burcham, Guco. Burtham, Arund. Burton, Arund. Burton, Arund. Burton, Arund. Burwah, Hafi. Burwah, Hafi. Buryah, Hafi. Burham, Arund. Buham, Arund. Buthopfton, Praus. Buttophes, Braus. Byrac, Braus. Byrac, Braus.	E Eartham, (bich. Eaftergate, Arund. Rafton, bib. Eawood, Haft. Eborne, Chich. E BO V R N, Peuc. Edwarton, Bramb. Elikted, (hich. Emfworth, Chich. Emfworth, Chich. Enfworth, Raftire.	Hayton, Fessen, Heathfeild, Fessen, Heathfeild, Fessen, Heild, Stamb, Heild, Stamb, Hellingle, Fossen, Hemfield, Fessen, Henfield, Fessen, Henfield, Lover, Highdown, Arson, Hoadleigh, Lover, Hoadleigh, Lover, Hollington, Hadles, Hessen, Hollington, Hadles,	Lydley, chieb. Lymider, Arand. Lythe Chap. Lytte, Attord. M The Manhode, Chi. Matlepofte, Bramb. Marshell, Feace, Mawling, Pewer, Marshell, Haffing, Marshell, Haffing, Marshell, Haffing,	Petientey merthe, P Piddinghoe, Leve, Pigions, Anuad, Playthoe, Shieb, Playthoer Anuad Pleaden, Haff, Plefther Peatr, Plumpton, Lewer, Poling, Arvad, Pooning, Lewer, Popholl, Sith, Pootellade, Lover,	beacon, Fragr. Stedham, Chit b. STENNING, Brd. Stocke Chitch. Stocke Arand. Stocke Jarand. Stocke Jarand. Stockey Penen. Hill, Penen. Sconecham, Penen.	Wittesing Co eaft, Winelsfeild, Le Wodmancote, Wogham, Len Wollauington, Wortham, Heff Worth & Worth, Lenet, Worting, Bram Wotton, Penen
A dringt Alberto Alberto Alberto Alberto Aldering Almani Aldfrift Alfrift Amerih Angleo Angne weft Angne	cylram, souther, sout	Burcham, Gwo- Burpham, Armad, Burton, Armad, Burton, Armad, Burwash beacon, H. Burwash, Hafi, Buryash, Hafi, Busham, Armad, Busham, Busham, Busham	E Eartham, (bich. Eaftergate, Arund. Rafton, bib. Eawood, Haft. Eborne, Chich. E BO V R N, Peuc. Edwarton, Bramb. Elikted, (hich. Emfworth, Chich. Emfworth, Chich. Enfworth, Raftire.	Hayton, Fesen. Hayton, Fesen. Heathfeid, Fesen. Heathfeid, Fesen. Heilingle, Posen. Heilingle, Posen. Heringham, Aram. Herinfeid, Sramb. Heringham, Aram. Hickfied, Lover. Highdown, Aram. Hoadleigh, Lover. Hollington, Haffin. Holmfdale, Posen. Holmfdale, Posen.	Lydley, chisb. Lymiter, at and. Lymbe Chieb. Chieb. Lyttle, Attand. M The Manhode, Chi. Matlepofte, Brams. Marsfield, Feeen. Marthall, Peten. Mawling, Peter. Markleld, Hafting, Mondhurth Attand.	Petientey merthe, P Piddinghos, Leves, Pigions, Arand, Playthos, bich, Playthos, arand Pleaden, Hell, Plefher; Pears, Palmpton, Leves, Poling, Arand, Poomings, Leves, Popholi, Sith, Pottellade, Leves, Pownfu, Pears,	beacon, Fragr. Stedham, Chit b. STENNING, Brd. Stocke Chitch. Stocke Arand. Stocke Jarand. Stocke Jarand. Stockey Penen. Hill, Penen. Sconecham, Penen.	Wittesing Co eaft, Winelsfeild, Le Wodmancote, Wogham, Len Wollauington, Wortham, Heff Worth & Worth, Lenet, Worting, Bram Wotton, Penen
A dringt Alberto Alberto Alberto Adringt Adringt Aldfirlk Aldfirlk Ameth Ameth Angroe eaft, Angroe eaft, Angroe	eytramb, ponderet, pondere	Burcham, Guco. Burtham, Arund. Burton, Arund. Burton, Arund. Burton, Arund. Burwah, Hafi. Burwah, Hafi. Buryah, Hafi. Burham, Arund. Buham, Arund. Buthopfton, Praus. Buttophes, Braus. Byrac, Braus. Byrac, Braus.	E Eartham, Chich. Eaftergate, Arund, Balton, Chich. Eswood, Maff. Eborne, Chich. EBO V R. N. Peet. Edburton, Bramb. Ellited, Chich. Emilys, Chich. Enform. He. Chich. Enform. He. Chich.	Hayton, Fessen, Heathfeild, Fessen, Heathfeild, Fessen, Heild, Stamb, Heild, Stamb, Hellingle, Fossen, Hemfield, Fessen, Henfield, Fessen, Henfield, Lover, Highdown, Arson, Hoadleigh, Lover, Hoadleigh, Lover, Hollington, Hadles, Hessen, Hollington, Hadles,	Lydley, chieb. Lymider, Arand. Lythe Chap. Lytte, Attord. M The Manhode, Chi. Matlepofte, Bramb. Marshell, Feace, Mawling, Pewer, Marshell, Haffing, Marshell, Haffing, Marshell, Haffing,	Petientey merthe, P Piddinghoe, Leve, Pigions, Anuad, Playthoe, Shieb, Playthoer Anuad Pleaden, Haff, Plefther Peatr, Plumpton, Lewer, Poling, Arvad, Pooning, Lewer, Popholl, Sith, Pootellade, Lover,	beacon, France, Stedham, Chieb. StenNing, Bra. Stoake Chieb. Stocke Arand. Stocke Arand. Stockey Power. Stockey Power.	Winelsfeild, Let Wodmancote, Wogham, Letv. Wolleding, Ca Wollatington, Wortham, Heft Worth

Booke 1.

SVRREY.

Chap.VI.



The length.



VRREY, by Beda called Suthri, and by the Saxons written subpea, lieth leparated vpon the North from the Counties of Buckingham and Middlesex by the great River Thamiis ; vpon the East Kent doth inbound it; vpon the

South is held in with Suffex and Hampfhire : and her West part is bordered vp-

on by Hampshire and Barkshire The forme.

(2) The forme thereof is somewhat square, and lieth by North and by East, whereof Redrith and Frensham are the opposites, betwirt whom are exten-ded thirty soure miles. The broadest part is from Awfold fouthward, to Thamifis by Stanes, and them afunder twenty two: the whole in circumference is one hundred and twelve miles.

(3) The Heauens breathing aire in this Shire is most sweet and delectable, so that for the same cause many royall Palaces of our Princes are therein feated. and the Countrey better flored with game then with graine, infomuch that this County is by fome men compared vnto a home-spunne freeze-cloth, with a costly faire lift, for that the out-verge doth exceed the corry raire int, for that the out-verge doth exceed the middle it felfe. And yet is it wealthy enough both in Corne and Pafturage, especially in Holmessale, and towards the River of Thamists.

The ancient In-

(4) In this Shire the Regni (an ancient people mentioned by Ptolemie) were seated, whom he brancheth further thorow Suffex and some part of Hampfbire. And in the wane of the Romans government, when the Land was left to the will of Inuaders, the South-Saxons vnder Ella here erected their Kingdome, which with the first was raised, and soonest found end. From them no doubt the County was named Suthrrom them no doubt the County was named suti-rey, as feated vpon the South of the Riner; and now by contraction is called surrey.

(5) And albeit the County is barren of Cities or

Townes of great effate, yet is shee stored with many princely Houses, yea and fine of his Maiesties, so magnificently built, that of some shee may well say, no Shire hath none such, as is None-such indeede. And were not Richmond a farall place of Englands beft Prin-ces, it might in effeeme be ranked with the richeft for therein died the great Conqueror of France, King
Edward the Third, the beautifull Anne daughter to Charles the Fourth, Emperour, and intirely beloued wife to King Richard the Second; the most wise Prince King Henry the Scuenth, and the rareft of her Sexe the Mirrour of Princes, Queene Elizabeth, the worlds

loue, and Subjects joy.

(6) At Merton likewise Kenulph King of the Well-Saxons came to his vntimely end : and at Lambeth the hardie Canute, and last of the Danish Kings, died among his Cuppes. But as these places were fatall for the last breath of these Princes, so other in this County have beene graced with the body and beginning of other worthy Monarkes: for in Chertfey Abbey King Henry the Sixth, who was deposed and made away in the Tower of London, was first interred without all funerall pompe, but for his holy life was imputed a Saint, and lastly translated, and intombed at Windfore: At
Kingston likewise stood the Chaire of Maiestie, wherin Athelftan, Edwin, and Ethelred fate at their Corona tion, and first received their Scepter of Imperial Power. Guildford likewise hath beene farre greater then now it is, when the Palace of our English-Saxon Kings was therein fet, And feeing it is the midft of the Shire, the graduation from hence shall be observed, where for Latitude the Pole is raifed from the degree CI. 22. fcruples: and her Longitude from the West in the

22. terupies: and a fer Longitude from the Welt in the degree 20 and 2 feruples.

(7) Neither can we account Okam and Ripley, two small villages, the least in this shire, which haue brought foorth the well knowne men william de Camba Okam, that deepe Philosopher and admirable Scholar, and George de Ripley, the ring-leader of our Alchy-milts and mysticall impostors; both of them borne in milts and myficiall importors; both of them borne in its County, and very neere together. But why speake I of these, sith a place neerer to sight, and greater for imme, cuent Lambeth; sith the light Sear of Excelesticall Gouernment, Pietic, and Learning, and palace of Control Activation, and control to the place of the control Archives Archives, the Merophysic to Merophysics of England-First, exceed by Archives, and cours fince hastine been the residuo of all those worthy Prelaters of our formation of the Control Prelaters of our formation of the Merophysics Church, who in a long succession (even from Anne 5 96.) have continued to him that now most worthily fits at the Churches sterne, Richard by Gods prouidence Lord Archbishop of that See, a most faithfull and prudent Counfellor vnto King James, and a most learned and provident Guide of our most flourishing Church: whose gracious fauour vndeseruedly conferred vpon me, hath beene a great encouragement to

red vpon me, hath beene a great encouragement to thefe my poore endeauors.

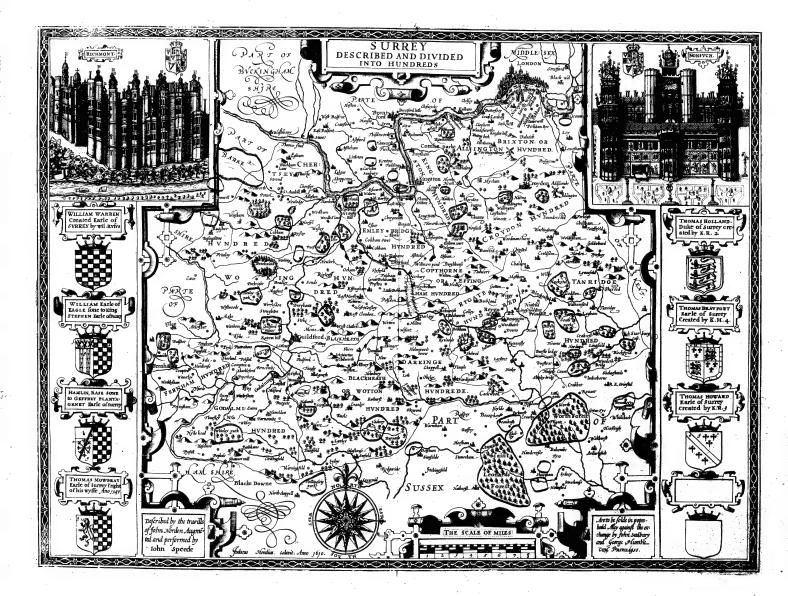
(8) Memorable places for Battles fought before the Conquelt, were Hembledom, where (when the full-neffe of prospertice burth foorth into Ginill Dissipping among the Saxon a bloudy Battle was fought between the two for the same and young Birshbert of Kent, wherin he was discomitted, and two of his pinicipal Leaders faine about the years of Christ, 60. and three hundred thirty three yeeres after, King Elfred with a small power ouercame the Danes with a

fred with a imall power ouercame the Jonnes with a fragreat flushers at Femham in this. County, which iomewhat quelled the courage of his flusage enemie.

(9) Religious housies ereded in this Shire by the deuocion of Princes, and ske apart from publike view to Godo Dinine Seruice, and their owne Saltansion, as then was tanght, the best in account wire: Shore, Cherrical Course of the Cherry of the Saltansion of the Sa fer, Merton, Newarke, Rygate, Wauerley, Horsleg, and in Southwarke, Bermundfey and S. Maries, These all flou-rished with increase, till the ripenesse of their fruit was to pleasing in fight and taste vnto King Henry the to bearing in light and take vitto king Heart the Eighth, that in beating the boughes he brake downe body and all, ruisating those houses, and seazing their rich possession into his owne hands. So jealous is God of his honour, and so great vengeance followeth

the finne of Idolatrie. the inne or idolatile.

(10) In this Shire have flood eight faire and firong Caffles: fuch were Addington, Darking, Starburg, Rygue, Guilford, Farshum, Gofford, and Brensbingles but of greater State are Oxing, Ollands, Mon-Juch, and Richmond, his Maietties royall Maunor. And for feruice to the Crowne or Common wealths imployments, this Counties diuision is into thirteene Hundreds, wherein are seated eight Market Townes, and one Hundred and forty Parish-Churches, as in the Table following is inferted.



12 Book.1.		SVRREY.		Chap.VI.
	Chaldon, Croyd.	Guildford 1	Mounsted, Black,	Slyfield, Cop.
Hundredsin	Charte, Fern.	Guildford Waking.	Mylford, Godal.	Smalefield, Tan.
SVRREY.	Charttwood, Rese.	Gumfhall, Black,		South Parke, Tan.
	Cheame, Crondon.		N	SOVTHWARKE, Brix. Stanesborne, King.
CHertley.	Chelisham, Tan.	н	Newarke, Wok.	Starburg, Tan.
Woking.	Chergworth, Emley.	Hackstall, Tanr.	Newchappell, Tax.	Stenellrecte, Dark
Woking.	Chertley, Chert.	Hackitall, 1 anr. Haling, Croydon.	Newington, Brix.	Stockwell, Brix.
Fernham.	Chefyington, Cop. Chiddingfold, Godal, Chilworth, Black,	Ham, Regg.	Newlodge Chert.	Stoke Wale
Godalming.	Children Plant	Hambledon, Godal.	Newlodge, Cherr. Nonfuch, Croyd.	Stoke Emley. dauborne, Emley. Stowghton, Wak,
Emley.	Chindend Rese	Hamhawe, Chert.	Norbury, Cop.	dauborne, S Emily.
Kingston.	Chipsteed, Royg. Cleagate, Kingft.	Harrmere, Godal.	Nore, Black,	Stowghton, 190k.
Brixton.	Clandon	Hafcombe.Black.	Nudigate, Reve.	Stretnam, Brie.
Croydon.	Clandon } Waking.	Hafilmere, Godal.	Nuttheld, Reig.	Stroud, Chert.
Tanridge,	Clandon ? Woking.	Hatcham, Brixt.	_	Sutton, Croyd.
. Reygate,	caft, Woking.	Haw, Dark.	0	Sydney, Black,
. Copthorne.	Clapham.Brix,	Hedley, Cop.		
. Darking.	Cohham, Emley,	Henley } Woking.	Ockham, Wok.	Т
. Blackheath.	Cobham, Chert.	parke,	Ockley, Dark.	_
) i Dimenticuliii	Cobham } Emley,	Hindhead, Godal.	Ognersh, Black,	Tadwort, Cop.
	ftreat, 1 Lines,	Hodge } Tan.	Okeley, Dark, Okelted. Tan.	Talmonto
A	Combe Brin.	court,	Okewood, Black,	COURT King#.
	parke,	Holmbury, Black, Holmwoodborow, Dar.	Orlands, Emler.	Talworth King#. Court, S King#. Tangley, Black.
oinger, Dark,	Combe Kingft.	Hotley, Reg.	Oxenford, Godal.	Tanridge, Tan.
oroke.Emley.	Neuill,	Horstell, Chers.	1	Tatesfield, Tan.
ofcourt, Emley.		Horfley ?	l p	Temple, Dark,
ldington, Croydon,	little, Cop.	Horsley } Woking.	1 -	Thorpe, Chert.
llefton, Chert.	Cookham } Cop.	Horfley 1	Peckham, Brin.	Thursley, Godala
idicombe, Croydon.	great, Colley, Reyg.	Horsley Weking.	Peckham L P	Tilford, Fern.
bury, Black.	Compton, Fern.	Horton, Cop.	Ryc, SBrix.	Titting Waking.
Annes } Chert.	Compton Cadalin	Hourne, Tan.	Penfgreene, Brix.	Tittefley, Tan.
Hill. Jenn.	Compton, Godalin, Consford, Black,	Trouning	Pennerhatrow. Godal.	Tongham, Form.
nuvall, Fern.	Cranley, Black	K	Petterfham, Kingft.	Towting 2 Rein
tington, Godall.	Crowhurst, Tan.	1 7	Pirford, Chere. Pittfall, Godal.	Towting Brix.
the, Woking. Thted, Copiborno.	CROYDON, Croyd.	Katerham, Tan.	Pittfall, Godal.	Towting Brix.
wfold, Black,	Culfdon, Craydon.	Katern } Waking.	Polfdon, Copther. Polfted, Godal.	becke, S Brix.
WIOIG DIMERS	Cuitablijariyari	hill, Swaging.	Polited, Godal.	Trotworth, Chert.
В	D .	Kennington, Briz.	Pophole, Godal.	ı
ь	1 ~	Kewe Kinglt.	Potnol, Chert.	N/
adfhott, Farme.	DARKING, Darking.	Kings Brix.	Poundhill, Tan.	
actions Waking.	Deddington, Crayd.	hill, Farix.	Poyle, Ferm.	
agfliott,Woking. anfled,Croydon	Douers, Rogg.	KINGSTON & King	Prefton,Cop.	Vachery, Black,
atne,Brix.	Dulwich, Brix.	KINGSTON King.	Purbright, Wak,	Vnsted, Black,
arnelmes,Brixt.	Dunsfold, Black,	Kingfield, Tan.	Purtenham, Godal.	1
stingstone, Woking.	Dytton 3 Pineff	Knole, Black,	Putney.Briss.	w
arrerley Brist.	thames, 1 Kings	Kynneriley, Regg:	R	1
	Dytton Kingft.		į k	Walkamsted, Tan.
cachworth } Dark,	long, Langie	L	Redrith, Bring.	Wallington, Croyd.
well, SDAIR		1- 1	REYGATE, Regg.	Walton, Cop.
eachworth L P.	E	Lagham, Tan.	Pausets 3	Walton, Emley.
call, Sherg.	1	Lambeith, Brin.	Reygate Reyg.	Walworth, Briz.
ledington, Croyden. Sinfcombe, Godalm.	Ebbesham, Cop.	Lambeith 1 Brix.	Pergate 3	Wanborow, Wek,
infcombe, Godalm.	Ebbelham } Cop.	Lambeith } Briz.	Reygate Regg.	Wanfworth, Brox.
ifley,Chert.	Court,	marth, Brix.	Richmond, Kingft.	Warlingham, Tan.
court, Tant.	Effingham, Cop. Egham, Chert.	Lathefley, Godal.	Ripleyff Wek.	Warmingfold, Black.
court,	Egham, Chert.	Layftrete, Regg.	Robarns, Wok.	Wanteley, Fern.
		Leighe, Regg.	Rowhampton, Brix.	Waybridge, Emley.
Bletching Tawid.	Embhams, Godal.	Leth, Dark	Runfold, Fern.	Waybridge, Emley. Welcot, Dark.
Forrein,	Enton, Godal. Ether, Emley,			Welton, Black,
Bletchingleigh, Tan. Blockfield, Tan.	Ether 3	Lingfield, Tan.	Runwick Fern.	Weltwood, Wok.
SIOCKREIG, I AM.	Efter } Emily. Efting, Godal.	Lingfield Ln	5	Whelet ftreete, Godd.
great, Copther.	Finner Gadal	Lingfield } Regg.	i s,	Whitley. Godal.
great,		Littleton, Godel	1	Wiggy, Reyg. The Wild, Godal,
Bokham } Copehore	Ewhurst, Black	Loxley, Black, Limsfield, Tarrid.	Sanderste, Croyd.	The Wild, Godal.
Bradley, Woking.	Eywood, Dark	Limsfield, Tamid.	Salton vpon Emley.	Willmore Cop.
Branley, Wating. Branley, Black,	12,222.2		Thamelis,	pound, Say.
Brockham Rese	F	M	Salton on the?	Willy Keys.
Brockham, Reyg. Brookwood, Woking.	1	1		Wimbledon, Brie.
Brookwood, Woking. Buckham } Chere.	Farley, Tan.	Malden, King.	Sansted, Cop. Scotfland, Black	Windlesham, Wok, Winsham, Chert.
lane, Chert.	Farnecombe, Godal.	Martin Brix.	Scotlland, Black	Wintham, Chert.
Buckland, Reygat,	FARNEHAM, Ferm.	Neuill, 3 Drive	Scale, Fern.	Wifley, Chert.
Burgate, Godal,	Fawell Cop.	Martins 3 Risch	Send, Word Shakleford, Godal.	Witley, Godal.
	Fetcham, Cop.	Martins Black,	Shakletord, Godal.	Wodham, Chert.
Burghouse.Cont	Flanchford, Royg.		Shalford, Black,	Wodham & Chert.
Burghoufe, Copel.		Merrowe, Wek.	Shelwood. Regg. Shere, Black	Voking, Waking.
Burghoufe, Copel.	Frentham, Fern.			i Woking Warms.
Burghouse, Copel.	Frensham, Fern.	Meritham, Royg.	ancie, and	7.00
Burghouse, Copile. Burghants, Woking. Burstow, Regg. Burstow Rathe, Ten.	Frentham, Fern. Frimley, Chert.	Meritham, Royg. Mickleham, Coptie.	Shipley 3 Tan.	
Burghouse, Copile. Burghants, Woking. Burstow, Regg. Burstow Rathe, Ten.	Freniham, Fern. Frimley, Chert. G	Meritham, Royg. Mickleham, Copth. Milton, Dark.	Shipley Z Tan.	Woodcocke 2
Burghouse, Copile. Burghants, Woking. Burstow, Regg. Burstow Rathe, Ten.	Frentham, Fern. Frimley, Chert.	Meritham, Roys. Mickleham, Costs. Milton, Dark, Mitcham, Croydon,	Shipley Z Tan.	Woodcocke Trans
Burghouse, Copile. Burghants, Woking. Burstow, Regg. Burstow Rathe, Ten.	Frensham, Fern. Frimley, Chert. G	Meritham, Roys. Mickleham, Costs. Milton, Dark, Mitcham, Croydon,	Shipley Z Tan.	Woodcocke Trans. bride, Trans. Woodhatch.Reve.
Burghoule, Coptb. Burphants, Fredowg. Burftow, Rerg. Burftow Rarke, Tan. Burftow \(\) Tan. Byflet, Chert.	Frensham, Fern. Frimley, Chert. G	Mickleham, Copth. Mickleham, Copth. Milton, Dark, Micham, Croydon. Molfey } Emley.	Shipley & Tan. bridge, Start. Shipley & Regg. bridge, Shooland Godaf.	Woodcocke Tom. bride. Tom. Woodhatch, Rogg. Woodmanftone. Cross.
Burghoule, Copth, Burphants, Friday, Burthow, Retg. Burthow Rarke, Tan. Burthow } Lodge, Byfier, Cherr. C Camerwell, Brise.	Freniham, Fern. Frimley, Chert. G Gatton, Reig. S. George S. Hill: } Emley.	Mickleham, Copth. Mickleham, Copth. Milton, Dark, Micham, Croydon. Molfey } Emley.	Shipley Tan. bridge, Tan. Shipley & Regg. bridge, Shooland, Godal. Shotouer & Godal.	Woodcocke Tomo bride: Woodhatch, Regg. Woodhatch, Creyd. Woodhigham, Tomo
Burghants Hotoge, Burghants Hotoge, Burthow, Rorg, Burthow Rarke, Tan, Burthow } Tan, lodge, Jan, Camerwell, Brix. Cancil, Dark.	Freniham, Fern. Frimley, Chert. G Gatton, Reig. S. George & Emley. Hill, Glaffbouse, Black.	Meritham, Reg. Mickleham, Copth Milcon, Dark, Mitcham, Creydon, Molfey 3 Emley. Well, Molfey 1 Kingf.	Shipley Tan. bridge, Shipley bridge, Skepg. Shooland, Godal. Shotouer Godal.	Woodcocke Transbride, Woodcocke Transbride, Woodhatch, Rerg. Woodmanflorne, Crept, Wooldingham, Tans, Worplefdon, Frons
Burghoufe, Copth. Burghoute, Produce, Burthow, Reng. Burthow Ranke, Tan. Burthow Burkey, Iodge, Fran. Byfler, Chers. C Camerwell, Bris. Capell, Dark. Carthalton, Crept.	Frensham, Fern. Frimley, Chers. G Gatton, Reig. S. George \(\) Embry. Hill, Glathouse, Black. GODALMING, Godal.	Meritham, Roge. Mickleham, Coptb. Mitcham, Crythan. Molley } Emley. well; } Emley. Molley } Kineft. all, Greydon.	Shipley Z Tan. bridge, S Shipley Regg. bridge, S Shooland, Godal. Shotouer Godal. mill, S Shine Kine R.	Woodcocke Transbrides Woodcocke Transbrides Woodhatch, Roye. Woodhatch, Roye. Woodhatch, Roye. Woodhatch, Roye. Woodhatch, Roye. Worpledon, Flok. Worpledon, Flok.
Burghoule, Copth, Burphants, Fridge, Burthow, Rerg. Burthow Rarke, Tan. Burthow } Tan. lodge, Byfier, Cherr. C Camerwell, Briss.	Freniham, Fern. Frimley, Chert. G Gatton, Reig. S. George & Emley. Hill, Glaffbuse, Black.	Meritham, Reg. Mickleham, Copth Milcon, Dark, Mitcham, Creydon, Molfey 3 Emley. Well, Molfey 1 Kingf.	Shipley Tan. bridge, Shipley bridge, Skepg. Shooland, Godal. Shotouer Godal.	Woodcocke Transbride, Woodcocke Transbride, Woodhatch, Rerg. Woodmanflorne, Crept, Wooldingham, Tans, Worplefdon, Frons

Book.1. HANT-SHIRE.

> Ant foire by the Sexent written Hanberchyr, lying vpon the welt of Englad, is bordered vpon the North by Barkshire, vpon the East with Surrey and Suffer, vpon the South with the British Seas, and He of Wight, & vpon the West, with Derset and Wils-foires.

(2) The length thereof from Blackwater in the North

bredth of Hampvpon Surrey, vnto Bafcomb in the South vpon the Sea, extended in a right line, is fifty foure English miles: and the breadth drawne from Petersfield in the East, vnto Tidworth

ty and fiue.

The sire of Hampthire. The folle.

Creeks.

New Forrest,

fhire,

(3) The aire is temperate, though fomewhat thicke by reason of the Seas, and the many Rivers that thorow the Shire doe fall, whose plenty of fish and fruitfull increase, do manifoldly redeeme the harmes which they make. (4) The Soile is rich for corne and cattle, pleafant for

in the west, and confines of Wilt-fore, is little lesse then thir

ty miles, the whole Gircumference about, one hundred fif

pasturage, and plenteous for woods; in a word, in all com modities either for Sea or Land, bleifed and happy.

(5) Hauens it hath, and those commodious both to let

in, and to loofe out thips of great burthen in trade of Mer chandife, or other imploiments: whereof Portfmouth, Tich field, Hamble and Southampton are chiefe; belides many o-ther creekes that open their bosomes into those Seas, and the Coast strengthned with many strong Castles, such as Hurst, Califor, South hampton, S. Andrewes, Worth, Porche fer, and the South Castle, besides other Bulwarkes, or Block-houses that secure the Country: And further in the Land, as Malweed, Winchefter, and Odiam, fo ftrong, that in the time of King Ichn , thirteene Englishmen onely defen ded the Fort for fifteene daies against Lewis of France, tha with a great Holl affaulted it most hostly. (6) Anciently it was possest vpon the North by the Se

gontians, who yeelded themselves to Inline Cafar, & whose

gentians, who yeelded themselves to institute Cojars, & whote chiefective was Frandamus, Care Segonts, now Sitesfiers, and vpon the South by the Beiga, and Kegas, who were subduced by Plausius and Fespasians the Romans, where Tiesus rescuing his father, strainly belieged by the Britainer, as Dio and Forestulus do report, was grafped about with an adder, but no hurt to his person, and therefore taken for a signe of good lucke. Their chiefe Towne was Rincewood, as yet founding the name : and more within Land inhabited the Manures, as Beda calles them, whose Hundreds also to this

cap.13.

day giue a relish of their names,
(7) Neere Ringwood, and the place once Y T 5 ME, from
God and peoples service, to Beast and luxurie, thirty sixe Parish Churches were converted and pulled downe by the Conquerour, and thirty miles of circuite inforrestred for his game of Hunting, wherein his Sons Riebard and Rufus, with Honry the second fonne to Duke Robert, his first, selt by hafly death the hand of Iustice and Reuenge: for in the same Forrest, Riebard by blasting of a pestilent aire, Rusus by shot taken for a beast, and Henry as Absatom hanged by a bough, came to their vntimely ends. At fo deares rate the pleafures of dogs, and harbour for beafts were bought in the blood of these Princes.

(8) The generall commodities gotten in this Shire, are woolls, Cloths and Iron, whereof great store is therein wrought from the Mines, and thence transported into all parts of this Realme, and their Clothes & Karfies, carried in to many forrain Countries, to that Countries great benefit, and Englands great praife. (9) The Trade thereof with other prouisions for the

The City Win whole, are vented through eighteen Market Townes in this Shire, whereof Wincheffer, the Britaines Case Gwens, the Ro-mans Venta Belgarum, & the Saxons Windanear Der is chiefe, ancientenough by our British Historians, as built by King Rudhudibras, nine hundred yeeres before the Nativitie of Lib. Notitie Christ: and famous in the Romans times for the weauings and embroderies therein wrought, to the peculiar vies of Zofimu their Emperours owne persons. In the Saxons time, after two Calamities of confuming fire, her walles were raifed, & the Citie made the Roiall feate of their Welt Saxons Kings, and the Metropolitan of their Bishops Sea, wherein Egber and Elfred their most famous Monarchs were Crowned & Honry the third, the Normans longest raigner, first tooke breath: And here king Aethelflane crefted fixe houses for his mint; but the Danish defolation over-running all, this circ test their turie in the daies of king Ethelbright, and in the Normans time, twice was defaced by the misfortune of fire, which they againe repaired and graced with the trust

of keeping the publike records of the Realme. In the Ci-

uill warres of Mand and Stephen, this City was fore facked, but againereceiung breath, was by King Edward the third, appointed the place for Mart of wooll and cloth. The Cathedrall Church built by Kennolf king of the Well Saxons that had beene Amphibalus, S. Peters, Suythus, and now holy Trinuy, is the Sanctuary for the affices of many Eng-lish Kings: For herein great Egbert, Anno 836, with his fonneking Erbelwolfe, 857: Here Elfred, Oxfords founder, 901, with his Queene Elfonth, 904: Here the first Edmund you, with the Queene Lymn, you; that the fift Lamman, before the Conquest, 9.14, with his somes Essed, and Essemand: Here Edved, 955, and Edwy, 966, both kings of England: Here Emma, 1052, with her Danife Lord Canner, 1035, and his fonne Hardicanute, 1042: And here laftly the Normans, Richard and Rufus, 1100, were interred; their bones by Bishop Fox were gathered and shrined in little guilt co-fers fixed vpon a wall in the Quire, where still they remain carefully preferued.

This Citres lituation is fruitful and pleafant in a vally vnder hilles, having her River on the East, and Castle on the Vyinchester west, the Circuite of whose walles, are well necre two Englifhmiles, containing one thouland eight hundred and eightte paces; thorow which openeth fixe gates forentrance, and therein are feuen Churches for divine fernice, belides the Minfter, and those decaied fuch as Callender. Ruell Chappell, S. Maries Abbey, & the Friers, without in the Suburbes, and Sooke; in the Ealt is S. Peters, & in the North Hyde Church and Monafterie, whose ruines remaining, shew the beautie that formerly it bare. The Graduation of this Citie by the Mathematicks, is placed for Latitude in the de-

gree 51 10 minutes, and for Longitude 19,3 minutes. (10) More fouth, is South hampton, a Towne populous, rich and beautifull, from whom the whole Shire derineth hername, most strongly walled about with square stone, containing in circuit, one thousand and two hundred pa ces, having feuen Gates for entrance, and twenty nine Towresfor defence, two very flately Keies for Ships arri-uage, & fiue faire Churches for Gods diuine seruice, besides an Hospitall called Gods house, wherein the vnfortunate Richard, Earle of Cambridge, beheaded for treason, lyeth interred. On the well of this Towne is mounted a most beautifull Castle, in forme Circular, and wall within wall, the foundation vpon a hill so topped; that it cannot be ascended but by flaires, carying a goodly prospect both by Land and Sea, & in the East without the walles, a goodly Church sometimes stood, called S. Maries, which was pulled down: for that it gaue the French direction of course, who with fire hadgreatly endangered the Towne: in flead thereof, it now newly erected a fmall and vinfinished Chappell. In this place, faith learned Cambden, flood the ancient Claufen istan, or fort of the Romans, whole circuit on that fide extended it selfe to the Sea: this suffered many depredations by the Saxon Pirates, and itt Anno 980, was by the Danes almost quite ouerthrowne. In king Edward the thirds time, it was fired by the French, under the Conduct of the king It WAS DEED OF THE FEBRUARY PRICE THE COUNTY MAN INCOUNTED AND OF Sields frome, whom a Country man incountred and flrucke downe with his Club, He crying Rancon, that is, Ran-firms: but he neither underflanding this language, nor the law that Armes dash billow, laids more flowed; figures; I kyow there are rancon, and therefore that thou die: and in Richard the feature of the reason of the rea

condstime it was somewhat removed, and built in the place where now it standeth. In this Classenium, Cannut to e

uich his flatterers, made triall of his deitie, commanding the

feas to keepe backe from his feate: but being not obeyed, he

acknowledged God to be the onely supreame Gouernor

and in a religious denotion gaue vp his Crowne to the root at Winchester. More ancient was Silcefor built by Conflan ting great Confinuines fonne, whole monument (they fay) Sikeffer, was seene in that Citic, and where another Confinuine put on the purple roabe against Honorine, as both Nimits and Germefe of Canterburie doe witnes, Herein by our Hilto rians record, the warlike Arthur was crowned. Whose great-

nelfefor circuite contained no leffethen fourescore acres Ger, case of ground, and the walles of great height, yet standing two miles in compasse about. This Citic by the Danish Rouers suffred such wracke, that her mounted tops were neue since seene, and her Hulk (the walles) inmured to their mid-

(11) Chiefe Religious houses within this Countie ere- The chiefe reli (11) Unicke Religious Boules within this Countie creThe child reliRed and again clupper field were their (E. Gull's Cheen's, Budge, Budge)
lan, Whensell, Ramfer, Relaiving, Winsteller, Phys., Saule,
thampsen, and Tripfeld. The honour of this fibre: a dignifield with the high Titles of Marques, and them Eastes of
Winsteller and South-Hampson, who learnest of families are
as thou teel, and her diution into thirry feure Hundreds, and those againe into two hundred fiftythree Parifies, as in her Table shall appeare.

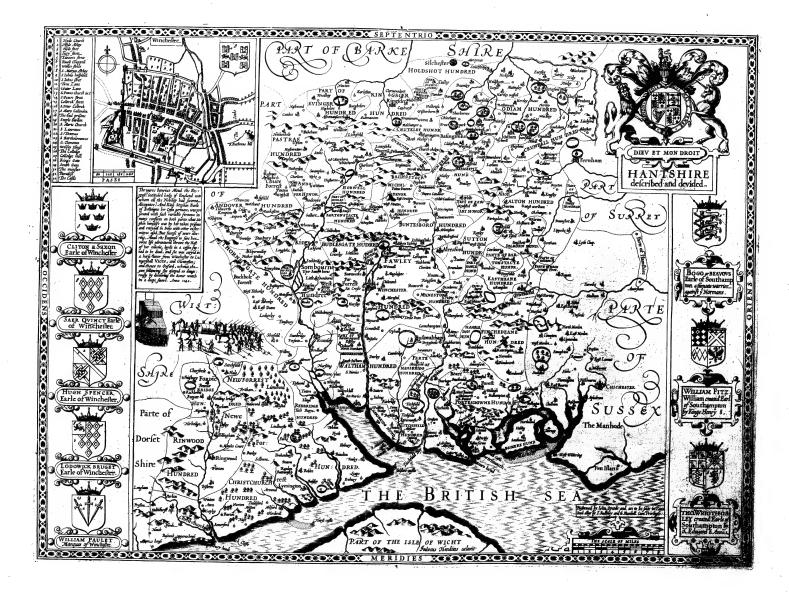
dle in the earth, which the rubbish of her owne desolations

D a

Chap. VII. Fol. 12

Kings buried in Watchefter

The ficuation



Cattle,
Anports, And.
Anno little, Wher.
Aple shaw, And
Annewood, Christin.
Ashe. Ouert.
Ashele, Christin.
Ashlie, Kingfen.
Ashmanswor h, Euis.

Athton, Wolh. Auen, Chrifteh.

Fackham, Paff. FARHAM, Tichf.

Faringdon, Scherne. Farley, Kings. Farley, Barmanf.

arlington, Perif.

Fortham, Farth.

Farnborrow, Craud. Farnbamideanc, Pajl.

Horbridge, Ford.

Howghton, Bud. Hownd, Manf. Hunton, Bud.

Hurton, Christeh.

Hurne, Chrifteb. Hursboorne, Paft. Hursboorne, Euing.

Morrall, Odi. Mortymer, Held. Mottesfont, Thern.

Moyles Ring. Courr, Ring. Munkefton, And.

Mynley, Held.

Rochcourt, Tich.

Rowner, Tub. Rumburdge , Redbr. RVMSEY, Kingf. RVMSEY, Redbr.

Kyc, Odibam.

Ropley, Sut. Rotherweek Odioum,

Tithefeild, Thb.
Tifted Selb.
Esft, Selb.
Weft, Suit.
Tockington, Wher.
Toothill, Manf.

¥

Yabington, Favole,

Faft. Pher.

Weft, Weer.

С

Cadland, New.

Cafton, Familey.

Catcombe, Part.

Cauchurfl, Kirgf. Chalton, Finch.

THE DESCRIPTION OF THE VVIGHT ILAND.

The ancient

The foile,



Ight Iland was in times \ past named by the Romans Vetta Vettis and Vittelis. by the Brittains, Guith, by the English Saxons, Wurt. land, & Wicy- fea (for an Hand they termed Lea) and in these daies visually called by vs , The Ifle of Wight. It belongeth to the

County of Southampton, and lieth out in length ouer

against the midst of it southward. It is encompassed round with the Brittish seas, and seuered from the Maine-Land, that it may feeme to have been conjoined to it,& thereof it is thought the Brittish name (Guyth) hath been given vnto it, which betokeneth feparation, euen as Scieily being broken off.& cut from Italy, got the name from Secundo (which fignifieth cutting)
(2) The forme of this Isle is long, and in the mid-

The length. dest far more wide then at either end : from Binbridge He in the east to Hurst Castle in the west, it stetcheth out in length 20.miles, and in breadth from Newport hauen northward, to Chale-bay fouthward, 12. miles. The whole in circumference is about fixty miles.

(3) The aire is commended both for health and delight, wherof the first is witnessed by the long continuance of the Inhabitats in the state of their bodies before they be decaied, and the other for quantity

giues place to no neighbouring Country.

(4) The ground(to fay nothing of the fea, which is exceeding full of fifth) confifteth of foile verie ruitfull; yet the husbandmans labour deferues to truttuil yet the hispanamans iapour deternes to bee thankfully remembred, by whose paines and industry it doth not onely supply it selfe, but af-fords corne to be carried forth to others. The land is plenteously stored with Cattle and Graine, and breeds euery where store of Conies, Hares, Par-tridges and Phesants, pleasant for medow, pasturage, and Parkes; fo that nothing is wanting that may fuffice man. The middeft yeeldes plenty of The delectable pasture, and forrage for Sheepe; whose wooll the Clothiers esteeme the best; next vnto that of Leinfer and Cotteswold: If you cast your eyes towards the North, it is all ouer garnished with Meadowes, Pastures and Woods: If towards the south side, it lyeth (in a manner) wholy bedecked with Cornefieldes enclosed, where at each end the Sea doth so incroch it selfe, that itmaketh almost two Ilands besides, namely, Freshwater Isle, which loo-keth to the West, and Binbridgessle, answering it to

> (f) The Commodities of the whole chiefly confift of Cattle, Sea-fowle, Fish, and Corn, wherof it hath fufficient: Woods are not here very plentifull; for that it is onely stored with one little Forrest; yet the Country of Hantshire for vicinitie of Site, is a friendly neighbour in that behalfe; fo (as it were being tied together in affinity) they are alwayes ready, and propenfe to adde to each others wants and defects by a mutuall fupply.
>
> (6) The ancient Inhabitants of this Island were

the Belga, spoken of in the seuerall Provinces of Sommersetsbire, Wiltsbire, and Hantsbire. Such as did then possessieit, were called Lords of the 1ste of wight , till it fell into the Kings hands, by Roger (Sonne to William Fitz Osburne flaine in the warre of Flaunders) that was driven into exile. And Henry the first King of England, gaue it vnto Richard Ridwers, with the Fee or Inheritance of the towns of Christ-Church, where, (as in all other places) hee

built certaine Fortreffes.

(7) The principall Market Towne in the Isle is Newport that Newport, called in times past Aredona, and Nouns Burgus de Meden, that is, the new Burgh of Meden, Burgus de Meden, that is, the new Burgus of section, whereof the whole Country is divided into East-Meden, and West-Atedon. A towns well feared, and much frequented; vnto whose Burgesses his Maiesty hath lately granted the choise of a Maior, who with his Brethren, doe gouerne accordingly. It is populous with Inhabitants, having an entrance into the Isle from the Hauen, and a passage for vesinto the Hierrom the Flauen, and a pailage tor ver-fels of finall burden vnto the Key. Not faire from it is the Caftle Carestroke, whole founder is faid to have beene Whitgar the Saxon, and from him called white-Garesburgh: but now made shorter for easier pronuntiation; the graduation whereof for latitude, is in the degree 50. 36. minutes: and herlongitude in 1 9. 4. minutes, where, formerly hath stood a Priorie, and at Quarre a Nunnerie; a neceffary neighbour to those penitentiaries, And yet in their merry moode, the inhabitants of this Iland doe boaft, that they were happier then their neigh-bour Countries for that they neuer had Monke that ever wore hood, Lawyers that cavilled, nor

The text work most, Lawyers that caulled, nor Foxes that were crafty.

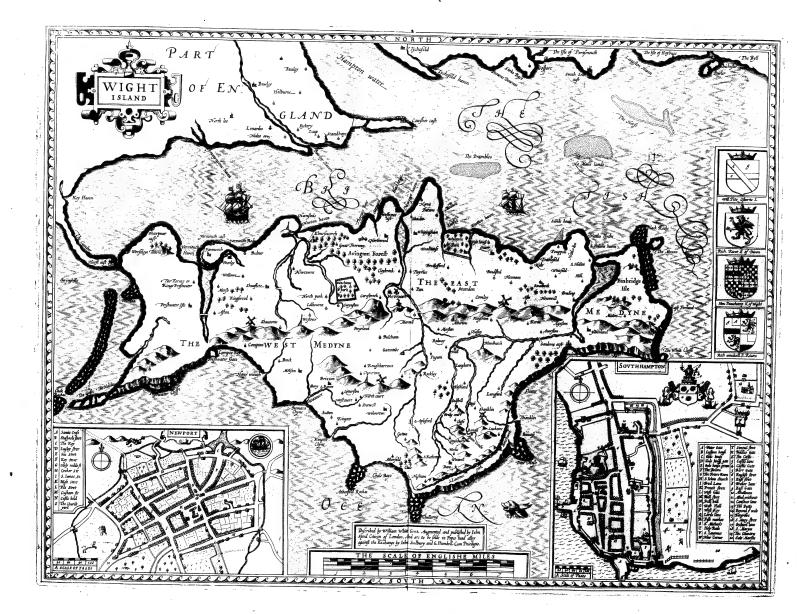
(8) It is reported, that in the yeere of mans faluation, 17-26, and twenty three of King Henrie A thourse of the feeond, that in this lland it rained a flower of blood. bloud, which continued for the space of two howers together, to the great wonder and amazement of the people that beheld it with feare.

(9) This Isle of wight is fortified both by Are and nature; for besides the strength of artificiall Forts and Block-houses (wherewith it is well furnished) it wants not the assistance of natural Fences, as being enriched with a continuall ridge and range of craggy Cliffes, and Rockes, and Bankes very dangerous for Saylers, as the Needles, fo cal-led by reason of their sharpenes: The Shingles,

Mixon, Brambles,&c. (10) Vespassan was the first that brought it to the subjection of the Romans, whilest he served as a prinate person volter Comans, which are terted as a prinate person volter Claudius Cafar. And Cerdic was the first English Saxon that subdued it, who granting it votto Stuffe and Whitgir, they iointly together slew (almost) all the Brittish Inhabitants, (being but few of the, there remaining) in the Town aforefaid, called of his Name Whitgaresburgh. Wolpher King of the Mercians reduced this Iland afterwards Ning of the Meritans reduced this land afterwards wider his obedience, and at that time when hee became Godfather to Edelwalch King of the South-Saxons, and answered for him at his Baptisme; hee assigned it ouer vnto him, with the Province also of the Menuari. But when Edelwalch was flaine,& Aruandus the petty King of the Hand was made a-way, Cadwalls King of the West-Saxons annexed it to his Dominion, and in a tragical and lamentable

maffacre put to fword (almost) cuery mothers child of the in-borne Inhabitants. The thing that is best worthy note and observation on is this, That Bishop Wilfrid was the first that in-structed the Inhabitants of this Iland in Christian religion, and brought them from that Idolatrous fuperstition, with the which (vnto that time) they were obscurely blinded

For Ecclefiafticall Iurifdiction, this Country be-For Externational Intriduction, tinis Courty pe-longeth to the Biftop of Winshefter, and for civiling o-uernment to the County of Sauthampton. It is forti-ticd with the firength of fixe Calilles, traded with three Market Townes, and hath 36, Parisi Churches planted in it. C 2



reester from her ancient

people DVROTRIGES, is

most likely to haue recei-

ued that name: by the Bri-

taines called DWRGWEIR, and by the Saxons Dop-

eooap, lieth bounded vpon the North fide with Somerfet and Wiltsbires pon the West with De-

uonshire, and some part with Somerset; yvpon the East altogether with Hamp-shire: and her South part is wholly bounded with the British Seas.

(2) The forme growes wider from the Weft, and fpreads herfelfe the broadelf in the midfl, where it extends to rewrit our emiles, but in length is no leffe then forty foure: the whole in circumference about

tient norry four : the whole in circumference about is one hundred and firty miles.

(3) The aire is good, and of an healthful confliction the foliolis is far, affording many commodities, and the Countrey most pleasant in her fituation; for the In-land is warred with many fivest and fresh running fightings, which taking passing thorow the plaine Walles, do lastly in a louing manner vitre themselves. together, and of their many branches make many bigge bodied streames: neither doth the Sca denie orige contentrants: hether doth the Sea denie them entrance, but helpeth rather to fill up their Bankes, whereby Veffels of burden difcharge their rich Treasures, and herfelfe with open hand diftribu-teth her gifts all along the South of this Shore.

(4) Anciently it was possess of the by the Durotriges, whom Ptolemic placeth along in this Track, who being subdued by the Romans, yielded them roome, and viwilling subjection. After them the Saxons set and vanuing undection. Attention the Saxon ict froot in thele parts, whereof Paritand Secunds from that Part to take name, who in this place arrived in e-stone 70; and did forely infect and annoy all the South Track. And as sindow before him Kingglith King of the Wigh-Saxons, in the yever of Christ fel in a doubtfull and dangerous Battle vanquished the paritains. Neither were the Saxon for Jurely herein feated, but that the Danes fought to defeat them therfeated, but that the Danes iough to oterat them ther-ofs for twice thefe bold Rosers landed at Chartmouth, the first was in Anno 831. and raigne of King Ephorts; and the other eight yeeres after, when Ethelmusse was King, in both which they went away Visiors. Yet when the Iron-side wore the English Diademe, and these ficree people fought to plucke it from his Helmet, he met them at Pen-ham in Gillimpham Forest, and with a small power obtained a great Victoric, causing their King Canute with discourage to retire,

(5) Commodities arising in this Countie are chiefly Wools and Woods in her North, where the For refs are flored with the one, and the pleafant greene Hilles with the other. The inner-part is outerfired both with Corne and Graffe, and the Sea yeeldeth the Is the constitution of the Durnouaria, fituated upon the South fide of Frome and the Roman Cauffee called roff-wey, wherein fome of their Legions kept, as by the Rampiers and Coines there daily digged up is probably coniectured; at which time it feemeth the Citie was walled, whereof fome part yet flandeth, especially upon the West and South sides, and the Tract and Trench most appasouth nices, and net I race and I refer most apparent in a Quadrant-wife almost meeters the River, containing in circuit one thousand and seven hundred pales, but were east downe by the Danes, whose trampling set editorical things wheresoener they came, and hands heere razed the Trenches Maudhury. and Poundbury, the feales of their Siege, and fignes of times milerie. About three hundred pafes South-ward from hence, standerh an old Fortification of Earth, trenched about, and mounted aboue the ordi-

narie plaine, thirty pales, containing some five acres of ground; wherein (at my there-being) plentie of

Corne grew. This the Inhabitants call The Maiden-Caftle, having entrance thereunto only vpon the East and West. This is thought to haue beene a Summer-Campe or Station of the Romans, when their Garrisons

Campe or Station or the Romans, when their Garrisons kept the Frontiers of this Proince.

The gouernment of this Citie is yearely committed to two Busliffes, elected out of eight Magistrates or Alderman, a Recorder, Towne-Clerke, and two Sergeants attending them : whence the North-pole is cleuated 50. degrees 48. minutes in Latitude, and for Longitude is remooued from the first West-point vnto the

Meridian of 18. degrees.

(6) Other places also are memorable through the (6) Other places allo are memorable through the adtons therein happening, or antiquities there yellower remaining: flich is Bulbury, now nothing but a Troofs and decated Calife, hardly feen, though flometimes it was the Court of the Useft-Saxons King. Such allo is Corne., where Angelijae the English Apolite brake down the Atlars and Idals of the Saxons God Ital. whom they deuoutly honoured as the only conferuer of their health. Shaftesbury also, wherein one Aquila (whether a Man or Eagle I know not) by our Hillorians report, is faid to have prophecied the future times of this our Empire, and that after the raignes of the Saxons and Normans it should againe returne vnto the gouernment of the British Kings. But with such vaine predictions our Nation is more then once taxed by Philip Comineus the famous French Writer. In this Philip Comineus the famous French Wrter. In this City Edwards the Same of the Englishmen, was interred, being murdered at Corfe a Calife Gared in the Ile of Parbett, by his Step-mother. Asplith, to make way for her fonne to enity his Crowne: in repentance hands to a readine Hearing for his bload. thee whereof, and to pacifie Heauen for his bloud, shee built the Monasteries of Ambresbury and whorwell, in the Councie of Wilt-shire and South-hampton. In the former of which with great penitencie fiee frent

the rest of her life.

(7) As vpon the like occasion the Monastery of As vpon the like occasion the Monastery of Ariddeton was laied in this shire by king Ethelfan to appeale the Chost of Edwine his innocent brother, and appear to Confin Daniel in Indicent Drother, and to expiat the blood of that in Prince, whom most vniuslie hee caused to die : and with the like deuotion though not to fatishe for the like bloodie Sinnes, did <u>Quene Cathery a</u> sine a <u>Disnere from hir</u> second husband the <u>Northumber-</u> lands King, and at Winburne built her a Nunnery wher-of her lelfe became Abbesse, where afterwardwas raior not refre became xvoejje, where atterwardwas rajed a most statelje Minster, which added not onely more glory to the place, but withall enlarged the name, and made it be called Wimburmminster, where King Ethelred, a most vertuous Prince, after much disquietnesse had with the Danes, in peace heere resteth. with his Tombe and Inscription, as in his Historie (Christassifting) shall bee further seene. Neitheramong these may I omit Sherburne, which in the yeere of grace 704. was made a Bishops See, in whose Ca-thedrall Church were interred the bodies of Ethelbild and Ethelbert brethren, both of them Monarkes of

the English men. (8) Seuen more belides thele were let apart from worldly imploiments, confecrated only to God and his service in this Shire ; which were Camestern, Crannisteracem ents once; which were cametern, or un-born, Abbotteibury, Bindon, Sturmisfer, Tarrant, and Warham. These with the others came to their full period vinder the hand of King Henry the Eighth, which lay with fuch waight vpon their faire buil-dings, that he cruilled the inice thereof into his owne Coffers,

(9) Calles for defense in repaire and decaied, were at Sherburne, Dorchester, Brankfey, Portland, Corfe, Shite.

Review, Woodford, and Wareham. So that with these and others the County hath beene strengthned with twelne Religious Houses, their poore relected, with eighteene Market Townes at this day is traded, and orincipally into five diufions parted, fitbditided in-torthirty foure Hundreds, and them agains into two hundred forty eight Parifhes, as in the Mappe and Table adioining is to be feerte.

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and memorable places mentioned in VVight Iland.

The partition of	Bulner, W. Med.		Kinghton, E. Med.	Northparke, E. Med.	Standen, E. Med.
WIGHT Hand.	_	Fresh sater gate, W. Me.	Kinglword, W. M.	Northwood, E. Med.	Steynburro, E. Med.
WIGHT Hands		Freihwater cliff:, W.M.	_	Nounwell, E.Med.	Sutton, W. Med.
West-Medine.		Forgeland, W. Med.	L	_ 1	Swynston, W. Med.
	Calhourne, IV. Med.	Eaft 3 E. Med.		P	_
	Caresbrok, W. Med.	Forland 5 2,222	Langford, E. Med	/	T
. 19	Chak-Rocks, W. Med.		Langhorne, E. Med.	Pan, E. Med	
A	Chale, E. Med.	G	S. Lawrance park, E.M.	Pagan, E. Med.	Thorley, W. Med.
	Chale-bay, W. Med.		Limertion, W. Med.	Pouppoll, E. Med.	Thorney great, W Me
Agefton, E. Med.	Challotne, E. Med.	Garnard, W. Med.	Luckome, E. M.	_	Thornay bay, W. Med.
Ap cford, E. Med.	Cheuerton, W. Med.	Gatcomb, W. Med.		9	Trablefeld, E. Med.
Apton comb, E. Med.	Cleybrok, W. Med.	Godfhill, E, Med.	M	Quart, E. Med,	
	Cliffe, E. Wed.	The 3 W. Med.	Maruell, W. Med.	Quart, E. Mea.	w
Alten, W. Med.	Cliffe whit, E. Med.	Goffe, S	Medhole, E. Med.		Wachingwy park 19.1
Atherfeld, W. Med.	Comley, E. Med.	Gotton, E. Med.	Merfh, W. Med	r.	Waitcourt, W. Med.
Atherfeld 3 W. Me.	Compton 3 w. Med.	,	Merston, E. Med. Mitton, E. Med.	Redway, E. Med.	Warden Rocks W. Ma
Rocks, 5	Bay, S	n	Mountion, W. Med.	Ride, E. Med.	Weeke, E. Med.
Atherton, E.Med.	Compton, W. Med.	Hall, E. Med	nut .	Rockley, E. Med.	Wellow, W. Med.
Auerfton, E. Med. Auintonforreft, W Me.	Couluer cliffes, E. Med,	Hamfteds, W. Med.	Myxon, } E. Me.	Roughbatrow, W. Med.	Westcourt, W. Med.
Auntoniorieu,		Harry-mouth, W. Med.	myxon,	Roxall, E. Med.	Westcow castle, W. Ma
	ע	S. Helen, E. Med.	N N	Roxali, D. Mass.	Westouer, W. Med.
P	Dane, E. Med.	S. Helens hauen, E. Me.		2	Whipingham, E. Mes
Bannofe, E. Med.	Dane, E. Med.	Hill, E. Med.	The C		Whitfeild, E. Med.
Barton, E. Med.	Done-mone, D. 2724	11111, 2-172144	Needles. W.Me.	Sande head, E. Med.	Whitwell, E. Med.
Bery Baron, W. Med.		1 1	Nettlefton, E. Med.	SANDON caft c. E.Me.	Wolverton, W. Med.
Binbridge Ille, E. Med.	4	1 -	Nettles hithe, E. Med.	Sandon bay, E. Med.	Wodhoule, E. Med.
Bindfled, E. Med.	Elmefworth, W. Med.	Iacmans 7 w see	20. 20.4	Shankling, E. Med.	Workleys Towre,W
Black, W. Med.	Etthetworth,	chin, w. Mo.	Newtowne, W. Med.	Shankling, E. Med.	Wotton hauen, E. Mes
Biack Rock, E. Med	p	C.11.13	Newtown hauen, W. M.	Sharpnor caltle, W. Me.	Wotton parke, E. Med
Bonechurch, E. Med.	•	K	NEWPORT, W. Med.	Shaucome, W. Med.	
Bradney, E. Med.	The 5	_	Newport hauen. W. Med.	Shaufleete, W Med.	Y
	Farme or Kings &w.M.	S. Katherins, E. Med,	Newportcaftle, W. Med.	Shauler, E. Med.	YARMOVTH, # M
Brixton, W. Med.	Freshwarer, 5	Kerne, E. Med.	Newchurch, E. Med.	Shofler, E. Med.	Yarmouth hauen, W. 1
	Faytlee, E. Med.	Kinget, W. Med.	Nighton, E. Med.	Shorwell, W Med.	Yarmouth callie,W. N
	Fish-house, E. Med,	Kinget } W. Med.	Norris, E. Med.	Slutter, E. Med.	Yarmouth tode, W. M
	Flesh-land, E. Med.	chyne, Fr. 2028a.	North Court, E. Med.	Smalbrok, E. Med.	Yauerland, E. Med.



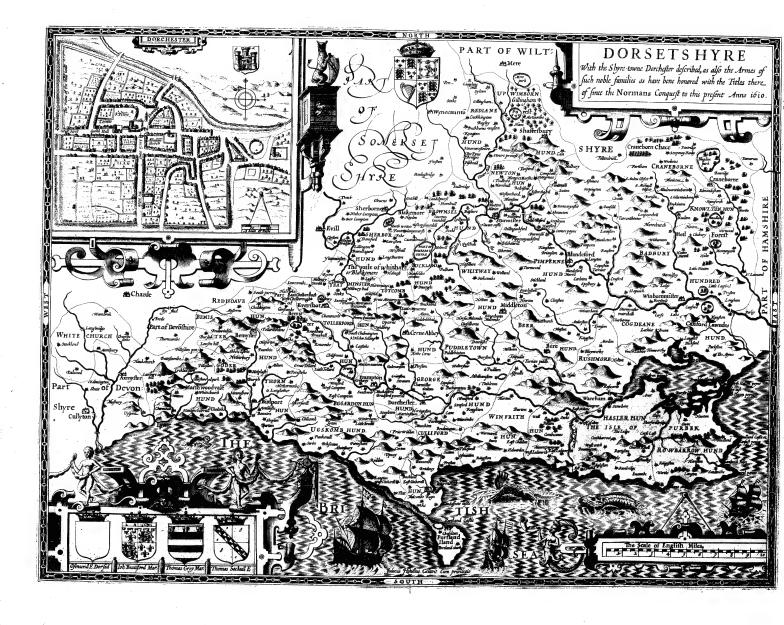
The bounds or

The forme and measure of it.

The Magistració

Maiden-Caftle.

The graduation



Okeford Fitz pain, Newton, Orchard East, Newton, Orchard West, Newton.

Olmington, Callif.

Blanford S. Mary, Camb

ochampion, Georg.

owridge, V pov. a.

BLANFORD, Fund

Dalwood, Velcimb.

Kritchell long, Knowi Kunbridge, H. fler.

Danufh, Euckl. Deuelith Flu. Deuelith, Pimp.

Stower proneft, Whit. Straford, Pud.

Stratton, George Studland, Rowe

Wraxhall, Seger.

Yetminfler,Yeste

Book.1. The bounds of The length and The Aire, The Soile Ports and hauer Bruses reported The Desers field An.Do.787. Sir Francü Drak The comm Cloth. Kerlies. Lead. Siluer. Load-Stone. simps into the Land, and to longer them of great nurmen in their Bosomesor Falls: whereof Tomas, Tane, and Ex, are the faireft and most Commodious.

(6) Vpon which last the chiefe City and Shire-Towne of this Counter is seated, and from that Riuer hath her same The City Ex-Excefter : this Citie by Ptolemie is called Ifca, by the Itmerary of Antoninus Emperour, Ifca Danmoniorum, by the Interest Of Amenium Empersur, 16th Dammonarum, by the English-Sawn Exnocarpora, and Manketon & by the Well Pencaer. It is pleafantly leated upon the gentle alcert of an hill, foliately for building, for the build his thickness, for frequent for Commerce and Concourse of transpers, that a more an define nothing but there is to be had, faith William of Malmesbury.

DEVON-SHIRE. EVONSHIRE, by the Cornill Britaines called Deninan : by the English Saxons, Devenprhype, and by contraction, of the vulgar, Denfire, is not derived from the Daner, as ome would have it, but from the people Daymony, the ame wee have spoken of in 4 Cormeall, and whom Ptolemic hath feated in these Westerne Borders. (2) The Well of this County is bounded altogether by the River Tamar : the East is held in with the verge of So-merfer Bire: and the North and South sides are washed whollie with the British and Senerne Seas. Betwixt whose shoares from Cunfere in the North, vnto Salcombe Hauen entering in at the South, are fiftee five miles : and from the Harriana Point Well, to Thorncombe Ealt, are fifty foure : the whole circumference about two hundred and two miles. (3) The Aire is sharpe, healthfull, and good: the Soile is hilly, wooddy, and fruitfull, yet so as the hand of the Manurer must neuer be idle, nor the purse of the Farmer neuer fall thut, especially of them that are farre from the Sea, whence they fetch a fand with charge and much trauell, which being spread vpon theface of the earth, bettereth the leannesse thereof for graine, and giueth life to the Glebe learness tensor to season, and participates with great efficacie.

(4) As Commall, to this hath the fame commodities that arise from the Seas: and being more inlanded, hath more arise from the Seas: and being more inlanded, and the season of the season o commodious Hauens for shippings intercourse, among whom Totnes is samous for Bruces first entrance, if Geffry say true, or if Hanillan the Poet tooke not a poeticall libertie when speaking of Brute, he wrote thus: which peaking on orms, he wrote thus:
The Gods disk guide his faile and courfe; the winds were at comand:
And Tone; was the happy Shage where first he came on Land,
But with more credit and lamentable cuent, the Danes at Teigne-mouth first entred for the invasion of this Land, a. bout the yeere of Christ 787, vnto whom Brightrik King of the West-Saxons sent the Steward of his houseto know their intents, whom refultantly they flew; yet were they forced backe to their ships by the Inhabitants, though long they backet otheir flipsby the Inhabitants, mongh nong they flaid onto, but aggregately purfued their begun enterprifies. With more happy facetle hath Plimstath let fourth the Durchiters of fame, and flopped the entrance of Englant Insuders, sain the risign of that externized Queene, the mirror of Princes, Elbacketh of currellating memories to from this Port, Sir Princis Drinke, that potent man at facetime furth hand, were in his flavored from years and design of the princip flavoy exerce and the princip flavoy exerces are the princip flavoy exerces and the princip flavoy exerces and the princip flavoy exerces and the princip flavoy exerces a rnder the name of Cornelius Never. from this Fort, Sir Francis Drang, that potent man at ica, fetting forth Anno 1577; in the [pace of two yeers and ten moneths did compatie the circle of the earth by fea. And the Lord Charlis Howard. Englands High Admirall, did not only from hence impeach the entrance of the proud intuits. knowledge of Christ. only from nearest measurement and the proud manufactible Spanial Nany, intending inuation and fubuerfion of State, but with his Bullets for figned their paffage, that their fides did well flow in whose hands they had beene, as seales of their owne shame, and his high honour, (5) The commodities of this Shire confift much in Wools and Cottoniountees or this Shire contilt much in Wools and Cottonings, wherethe beft and finelk Kerfles are made in the Land. Corne is most plenteous in the fruitfull Vallies, and Cattle Ipreading upon the topped Hilles, Seafish, and Fowle exceedingly abundant. Veines of lead, yea and forms of filter in this Shire are found: and the Load ftone (not the least for vicand esteeme) from the rocks vpon Dart-more haue beene taken. Many fresh forings doe bubble from the Hills in this prouince, which with a longconfidence for fuccette. ing defire of Society fearch out their Paffage, till they meet and conjoine in the vallies, and gathering flil ftrength with more Branches, lastly growe bodied able to beare Ships into the Land, and to lodge them of great Burthen in

The walles of this Citie first built by king Athelfans, are in a

maner circular or round, but rowards the Ew, rangeth al-

most in a straight line, having six Gates for entrance, & ma-nie watch-Towers interposed betwixt, whose compasse

conteineth about fifteene hundred pafes : vpon the Eaft part of this Citie flandeth a Caffle called Pugemont, fome-times the palace of the Weft-Saxon kings, & after the of the timestine paiace or the regrousen kings, is after the of the Earlest of Cornaul, wholeprofiped is pleafant vito the Sea and ouer against it a most magnificent Cathedrall Church founded by king Athelst an also in the honor of S. Peter, and by Edward the Confessor made the Bishops Sca, which he remoued from Crediton or Katon in this Countie vnto the Citie of Exceller (as faith the privat historic of that place:) whose dilapidations the reuerend father in God William now Bishop of the Diocesse with great cost hath repayred; whom I may not name without a most thankefull remem brance for the great benefits received by his carefull prouidence towards mee and mine. This Citie was fo ftrong & Undence towards mecand mine. I INSCIRCE was to through the fowell thore of Britaines, that they held out against the Saxons for 465 yecres after their fiftentrance, and was not abfolutely wonne, vntill Athelfan became Monarch of the whole, who then peopled it with his Saxons and enriched the beautie thereof with many faire buildings: but in the times of the Danish defolations this Citie with the rest felt times of the Danillactolations this time with the reit left their deltroying hands; for in the yeere 875, it was by them fore affilied, Jpoyled, and flaken, and that most gree-nously by Sware in the yere of Christ Lefus 1003, who raced it downe from East to West, so that searly had it gotten breath before William the bastard of Normandy besseged it, against whom the Citizens with great manhood ferued, till a part of the wall fell downe of it selfe, and that by the hand of Gods prouidence, faith mine Authour: fince when it hath been three times befieged and with valiant refiftance euer defended. The first was by Hugh Courtney Earle of Desonfire in the Civill broyles betweet Lancalter and Torke, manybre in the culin broyies betwix Lancatire and Lore, then by Prink Warbeck, that counterficied Richard Duke of Tork and lailly by the Cornith Rebelsywherein although the Citizens were grieuoully pinched with Carlitic, yet continued they their faithfull allegeance with King Edward the fixt; and at this day flourisheth in Tranquillity and Wealth, being gouerned by a Maior, twenty foure brethren, with a Recorder, Towne Clerke, and other Officers their attendants. This Cities graduation is fet in the degree of Latitude from the North Pole 50.and 45. feruples, and for Longitude from the Welf, to the degree 16.and 25.fcruples. Neither is Iofeph that excellent Poet, whose birth was in this City, the least of her Ornaments, whose writings have so great Credit that they were disulged in the Germane language

vnder the name of Corneums 1/1907.

The like Credit got Crediton in her birth-child Winefred the Apollic of the Helflans, Thiringers, and Fresans of Germany, which were connected by him vnto the Gospell and

7. Places memorable in this County remaining for fignes of Battles, or other antiquities, are thefe: vpon Exors certaine monuments of Antick worke are erected which are stones pitched in order, some triangle-wise and fome in round compatle: these no doubt were trophies of victories, there obtained either by the Romans, Saxons, or Danes, and with Danife letters one of them is inscribed, giuing direction to fuch as should trauell that way, Hubleston likewife, neere vnto the mouth of Tame, was the burial place of Hubba the Dane; who with his Brother Hangar, had harried the Englis in divers parts of the Land : but laftly, was there encountred with, & flaine by this Shires Inhabitants, and under a heape of copped stones interred, and the Banner Reafen there and then taken, that had fo often bin foread in the Danes quarrell, and wherein they repoled no finall

(8) A double dignitie remaineth in this Countie, where Princes of State haue borne the Titles both of Desonfbire and Exceller : of which Citic, there have beene intituled Dukes, the laft of whom, namely Henry Holland, Grand-child to Iobn Holland, halfe-brother to King Richard the fectond, fiding with Lauselfer against Edward the fourth, whose Sister was his Wife, was druen to fuch miserie, as Phi-Comineus reporteth, that he was feene all torne and barefooted to beg his liuing in the Low Countries: & laftly, his body was call upon the shore of Kest, (as if he had perished by Shipwracket) fo vncertaine is Fortune in her endow-ments, and the state of man, notwith standing his great birth (9) Religious houses in this Shire built in denotion and

for Idolatry pulled downe, were at Exceller, Torbaye, Tanton Tanestoke, Kirton, Ford, Harrland, Axmister, and Berstable. (Io) And the Counties divisions are parted into thirty three Hundreds , wherein are feated thirty feuen Market Churches, Townes, and three hundred ninety foure Parish Churches, whose names shall appeare in the Table following.

Chap.10.

Rugemant a Kings

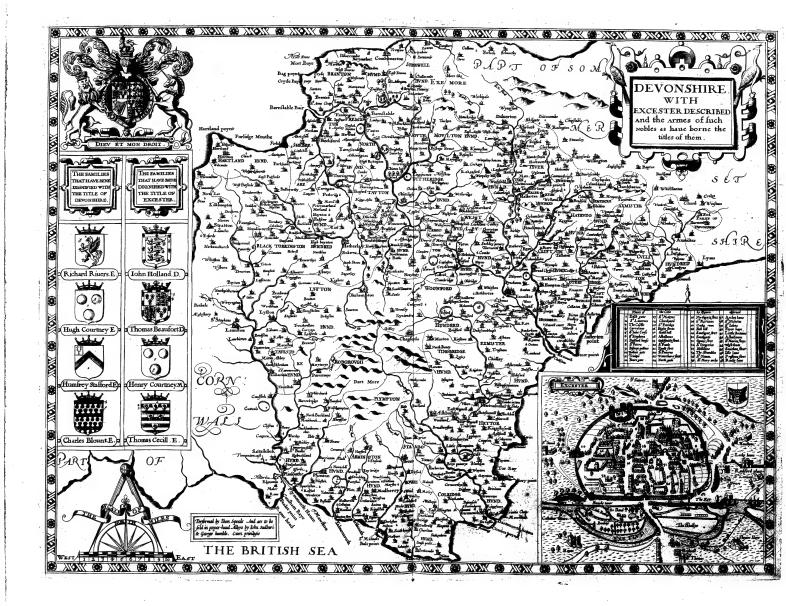
Hugh Coursey.

An.D. 1497 An.D. 1549

The Cities cli.

An.Do.878 Affering Mene

Dukes and Earles



7. Fremington, 8. Hartland. 13 Crediton. 15. Halberton. 16. Hemyoche. 17. Axmifter. 18. Cullington. 19. Hayrudge. 21. Clifton. 22. East Budley. 24. Tingbridge. 25. Exmifter. 26. Heyear. 27. Lifton. 28. Taueflock

29. Roberough

20. Plympion

31. Armington,

33. Coliidge. Α Abbotetham, Sheb. Agelfort well, Hopen Alesbeare, Eafth. Alhalowes, Hayrid. Aifhe raphe, Withr. Allington eaft, Stanb. Allington weft, Stan. Alme flu. Alphington, West. Aluerdiscott, Fre. Alwington, Sheb Anfley mary, With Annary, Sheb.

Budleigh eaft, Eafth. S.Budox, Reberer. S. Annes Brant. chappell, Southm. Antic caft, Southm. Bult poynt, Stanb. Bundley, Norths. Burrinton, Plimp Apeley, Frem. Apledon, Sheb. Arlington, Sher. Arme, flu. Armington, Arm. Cadbery, Hayr. Armington, Arm. After, Brant.
After kings, Norths.
After kings, Norths.
After Kings, Norths.
ASHBERTON, Tim Afhbright, Bam. Caue, Tywert. Cauerleigh, Tywert, Athford Brant Afhford,Bam. Ashprington, Cal. Ashregny, Northt. Ashron, Wath. Afhtor, Exm. Afhwater, Black Atherington, No Audley, Sheb. Aucton gifford, Arz

AVTRE, Mary-01. Cherfton, Heyt. Ax flu. Axmilter, Axm. Axmouth, Axm. Bag-point. BAMPION, Bam. BARNSTABLE,Br. Barnestable, Bair. Bathe, Northtan. Beatord, Shebb. Bear, Clifton. Beare ferris, Roborn. Reere / ullaton Bediford. Shib. Bed fton, 1 yft, Feliton, Mick Bery point, High. Bery Callle, Hertor. Bery pomety, Heyter.

Beworthie, Flack.

Austerston, Sheb.

Cliffe honiton, Ea?b. Bickeley, Hayrid. Cliffe Brode, clif. Cliffe Bithops, Eastb. Cliffe hiedon, clift. Bicklinh, Robermy, Bickington, Tingbr. Bickington North. Clouelly, Hart. Cockatre, North!. Abbots, Black. Cockington, Hey. Bicton, East-Bud. Colbrooke, Cred. Bigbury, Arming. Bittedon, Brant. Collaton, Arm. Blakauton, Col. Blakdon, Heytor. Bofingfale, Colr. Bofingfale, Colr.

Bratton flemyng, Bra.

Braye highe, Sher. Brendon, Sher.

BRENT Starb.

Brentor, Taueft.

Briddiftow, Lifton.

Bridgford, Wenford, Bridgreuell, Black.

rightley, Southm.

Brixton, Plump. Brodwood kelly, Blace

Brodwood wigier, Li. Brushford, Norths. Buckland east, Brant.

Buckland west, Brant. Buckland north, Rob.

Buckland towfan, Co.

uckland bruer, Sheb.

Buckland in Hept, the moore, Hept, Buckland fylly, Sheb. Buckfaftleigh, Stan.

Buckerell, Hem.

ulkworthy, Hart.

Burrington, Northt. Burlescombe, Bamp.

c

Butterly, Clift.

Cadbury, wellb.

Cadle, Hayrid.

Chareles, Sherw.

Charles fouth, Mew

Charleton, Calrid.

Challeigh, North and

Chanon, Wonf. Chaveley, Waherid.

HEGFORD, Won

Chekstones, Eastbu

Fitz-paine Well.

Cheriton } wonf.

CHIDLEIGH, Exm

Chylinleigh, With.

Chilehampton, Son

Chittenholt South.

Chymley, Sher.

Citington, Hey.

Clayhaydon, Hem.

Clayhanger, Bampe

Clawton, Elack.

Clannaborough, No.

Cliffe S. Mary, Eafth.

Chffe S.George, Eaft

Cliffe S. Larence, Cli

Cheldon, With.

Cheriton

Callaton, Northtant, Cannanleigh, Bamp,

luckland Monachop, Rob.

Buxham, Hey,

Bray flu.

Collaton Zeafib; Gaymton,Hey. Columb Wan, George hame, Bran. Germans weeke, Life Columb Hem. Gidley. Wor. . Giles, Frem. BOWE, Northt. Bradford, Black. Columbton Flu the heath, Black COLVMPTON, Ha. Gilleftiam, Cul. BRADIN VCH, Ha Colruge, Northt. Gittifham,Eaftb. Goodleigh, Bran. Bradworthy, Black. Conberry, Black. Combe, Wellb. Greneway, Hey. Brampford | Won. Ipeke, | Won. Branicombe, Call. combe, Fre. н Combe, Call. Combs poynt, Calr. Combe in tem, Hey. Branton, Eran. Bratton louelly, Lift

tynhed } Wort.

Combyne, Axm.

Conlafton, Cred.

onnsbury,5her.

Cornewood. Arm.

Corleigh, Cull. Cullacombe, Lyf. Cullyford, Cul.

CVLLITON,Call

Curriton, Lift,

Credy flu.

Crecombe.With.

Crekerwell, Won.

D

Dalwood. Axm

Denbery, Hey. Denbero, Black.

Dipford, Samp. Dipford, Stan.

Directham /al.

Downe

Dowlton. Warth

Downish Wellh

Exceller.Wa

Ex flu.

xmifter, Exm,

F

Faringdon, Eaftb.

Fenantive. Eafth.

Farwaye, Cul. Fleer, Arm.

Fenton, Hay.

Darrfla

Cryde, Brant. Cryde baye.

Comb martine, Bra. Compton, Hey.
Compton, Reb.
gyfford, J. Reb.
Comranley, Axm.

Lue North, Black Lewtrenchard, Lift Jache, Ston. vd Flu Lydford, Lift, Hackpendown, Hem. Halberton, Arm. Lymfon, Eaft, Lynam, Plimp. Halberton, Hal. Lynton, Sher iftleigh Ting. Hallwell.Black Hallwell, Col. Hamford, Black Lifton, Life Littleham, Sheb Hampton high, Elack. Harberton, Col. Littleham, Eaft Loddefwell, Stan Harehorne flu. Loxbeare, Tiner. Harforde, Arm. Harford, Eaftb. Harrow bridge, Rab. Hartland, Hart. Loxhome, Sher. Luckham, Wellb. Luffencott, Elach Luppit, Arm. Hattland point, Har HARTON, Hart Harberland, Tixor HATHERLEY, Els. Maker, Rebor. Malborough, Ston, CREDITON, Cred. Hayes, Eastb. Hayne, Life.

DEVON-SHIRE.

Kenton, Exm. Keiweli Kings, Hay.

Ke[well Abbots, Hey.

Killmyngton, Axm.

Kingstanton, Ting. Kingston, Arm.

Kingfwer Caftle, Hey. Kirftow, Wan.

Knowfton, Sewilims

Lamerton, Lift.

Langtree, Sheb.

Lapford, North

Lee North, Black

Leigh North, Cull

eigh fouth, Call.

м

on fouth, Stan

Leman Flu.

T.

Kinglwere, Hey

NGSBRIDGE,SI.

Fylieigh, Bran.

Fremington, Frem. Frithelflock, Sheb.

Frobrian.Hev.

Fulford, Wat.

Ford, Axm. Forton flu.

Manhedd, Exm. Hayne, Wellb. Manton, Ting. S. Maries, Hey High Black. S. Maries, S. Mary O. Manstowe, Lift, Mariedon, Hey. Cruse morchard, 1916 Hele.Rol Helwell, Black. Hembury broad, Hay. Marthe, drm. Marton, Sheb. Martynhoe, Shr. Hemiock, Hem. Hempfton broad, Hey. Hempfton little, Hey, Hennocke, Ting. Marwood, Bran. DARTMOVTH Col. Dartmouth castell Co. Dartmouth hauen Membury, Axm. Memland Arm. Mere, Tiuer. Hethberton,Wen. Merland, Sheb. Dart moore, Robor. Heuitree, Won Merland Peters, Shel Hewithe, Sheb. Dartington, Stanbe. Dawligh, Exm. ewishe fouth, Stan. Methewe, With. Meth, Sheb. Meuychurch, Rob. Hewishe north, St. Highley, With,
Highweek, Ting,
Hittefley, Won,
S. Hob.poole, Wefth.
Hocworthie, Bamp. Deane prior, Stanb. Delbridge, 1911b. Mewflon, Tlmp. Mewflon, Hey. S. Michaell, Stan. S. Michaell, Cull. Holberton, Arm. Holcomb, Mary Ot. Mill. With. Dodbrooke, (of. Doddescombleigh.E Milton damere, Blas Holcomb 1 1991.

burnell, 5 1991.

Holdworthy, Black. Milton Abbots, Tes MODBVRY, Arm. S.Mary, Norths. Molland, Saut. Holle, Stan. Hollacomb, Black-Morehard } Cred. HONITON AXM More hayes, Hay.

Mooreley, Stan. MORETON, Ting. Dunekswell old He Horwood, Frem. Moreton ? Ting. luckham, Hey. Dunsford IVen. Huckefham, Won. Hunichusch, Black Mortftone, Eran. Dunfland, Black, Mort Bay, Bran. Morthoue, Eran. Dunretton, Life. Huntelham, Tiuer. Hunthory, Frew. Moul Flu. F Moulton north, Sout. MOVLION SONT τ Eastdowne, Eran. Edc.Exm Iscobflowe, Eleck Mountfantic, Ax. Edeford, Ting. Egdcombe, Rob. Iddelleigh, Sheb. Muckenfeild, Narib Idford, Ting. Munckleigh, Sheb. Edmelton, Arm. Eford. Rob. Murbathe, Eamp. Ilton,Stan. Illington, Ting. Illington, Ting. Ingerley, Black-ipplepen, Hey. Iufton, Frem. Eggbuckland, Rob. Musbery, Axm. ury, Hart Exe more, She Exe mouth, Eafth. lvybridge, Arm. ridge,8am. Exborne, Black

Nemett Kings, With. Nemert BifbcDs.Bif. ĸ S. George, Sour. Kawton blacke, Cal. Netherex, Hay. Newneham, Plimp. Kegbeare, Black. Kellye, Lift. NEWTON? Hey. Kenne, Exm. Newton petrock, She, Newton tracy, Frem Kenne flu. Kenford, Exm Newton ferris. Arm. Newton fryers, Cred. Kentisbear, Hay.

S Nicholas Ile, Rob. Northlue, Black. Northam, Soch. Northbonie, Ting. Northcott, Black. North Ewe F.u. Norton Dawney, Col. Norwell court, Eailb Nymett tracye, Nor-Nemett Rowland, Norths.

Sheewell Sher. Shildon, Hay. Ω Shillingford, Exm. Ockment Flu. Shobrooke, 11'eff. Shute, Call Sidbury, Fallb Oewell caft. H'ouf Ogwell weft, Fun Okeford, Futb. Sidmouth, Eaflb. Sidnam ? Lift. OKEHAMPTON.L. Sidnam } L ft. Moneks. Stack. Oldridge, Cred. Orcharaton. Arm. Slade Plm. Slapton, Col. Otterford, Hem.

Pinhawes Won.

Pyworthie, Black.

Plymouth, Rob.

Plymouth Flu.

Plymouth ? Reb.

Plympton? Plim,

Plympton Plim.

Plymtree, Hay.

Pongill, Wellb.

Poole fouth. Col.

Portlecomb, (el.

Portlidge Har.

Portefton .. Arm.

otheridge, Shek

Powderham, Exm.

Pulland, Plim.

Putford Hart.

Putford } Elack.

R

Raley, Fran.

Rafbley-North

Redford, Plim.

Rew. Wen. Rinmore, Arm. Rockbrare, Esfib.

Reuelifloke, Plim.

Romanfley, With.

Rofe alhe, With.

Rowborowe, Fre.

Salcombe, Stan.

Salcombe, Fallh

Salterne, Ealib.
Sampford Hal.

Sampford Rob.

Sampford Black

Sangford, Cred.

Salcombe Col.

Prefton, Ting. Puddington, Wah. Punchardon, Bram.

Oughorough, Arm. Sourton, Lift. Ounwell, arm. Ouerton, Esfib. Spurlefton, Pinn. Oxton, Exm. Stauerton, Hey. Stockley LVefth P Stockley Fresh Padflow, Sheb. Stockland, Axm. Pancralweek, Elizeb Storkley, VVeflb. Stoforde, Arm. Parkham, Sheb. Stoke, VV on Parkham, Hart. Gabriell Hey. Paracombe, Sher. Pauington, Hey. Stoke Church, Axm Peamont, Exm Pehembury, Hay. Stoke Inters, Socr. North, Black. Damerell Rob. Petrockflowe, Sheb. Stoken } Work Petron, Bamp. Pilton, Bran Stokenham, Col. Stokflewing, Cal. Pines, mon.

Santon, Bran.

Scale, W.n.

Seaton, Cull.

Shaue, Plump,

Shebbeare, Sbrb.

Sherford, Col. Shepwaihe, Sheb

Shepiftor, Keb.

Saterleigh, Southon. Sauldon, Black,

Stonehonie Rab Store saftb.
point, stowford, Lift. Streehlev. Arm PLYMPTON PER Stret point, Cel. Stretwood } Eafth. Studley, VVith. Sutcomb, Black. Swimbridge, San т

Tallaton, Hay, floliet, Rob. }Exm. Tanftock, Fre. TAVESTOCKE.TA Tauye Mary, Lift, Tauye Peter, Rob. Taue Flu. Taunton South. Taunton north, Next.

Taunton north, Nort.
Taunton fouth, VVo.
Tawridge, Cred.
Tedborne, VVonf.
Teyntondrewe, Won. Templeton, VViib. TEVERTON, Teve. Rackenford, With. Thelbridge, UVith. Theruerton, VVeftb. Thomas, VVon. Thorncombe. Axm. horneton, Hay. Throuley, UVon. hrushell Flu. Thrushelton, Lift. Thurleftow, Stan Tidwell, Eastb.

inge Flu ingmouth } Exm. Tingmouth } Exm. Fingrale, Ting. Tor-bay, Hey. Tormoham, H.y. ermount.He Forrington land, Fre. Torrington } Sheb. Torrington } Black Zaelmonaco, Ner:bi

TORRINGTON F IOTNES.col. ownstall, Col. Fowridge flu. Trawbridge, Cred, Trebox, Elseh. Trenthoe, Bran. Trinitie chappell, Hey. robtian,Hey. Trufbam.Ever

Tuchyn, Southur, Twitching, Souther. Venottery, Eagli-Vener flu Vicombe, Eamp, Vebrocke, Tine irginftowe, Lift Viber, Hey. Vowelfcombe, Arm Voantre, dem. Vpcote, Skeb. Vplyme, dxm Vpton pyne, I 'ea. Vpton } wefib.

Vynny ton, Hemw Walkhampton, Rob. Wallopitt, Stan. Ware Sheb Wareley, Rob Warkeleigh, Southw. Warpfley beacon, W. Warpfley hill, Wieb. Wathfeild, Twer. Wathefeild, Weftb. Washford pyne," ub. Wayton, Hey. Weare Shep. gifford, Shep. Welland, Hal.

Welcombe, Hart. Wenbery, Plm. Were, Wan. Westcoore, Eran. Westdowne, Eran. Weltleigh, Frem. Velton Rob. tchurch, Rob. Whitefton.Wan. Widworthie, Call. Willworth, Lif.

Wimple.Clif. Winckley Norths. Wynfton,drm. Wytheridge,With. Withycombe,Stan. Withycombe. Her. Withycombe } Eaft. Withycombe } East. chappell, } East. Wognell } Hay. east, } Hay.

Wognell Hey. Wolfardifwotth, Ha Volley, Sheb. Wolefworthy, With. Wood, Hay, Woodland, Hey. Woodland, Arm. Woodley, Stan. Worlington, Black,
Worlington, Black,
Worlington
west,
Worlington
VViib.
Worlington
VViib.

Wortley, Souther Yalme },4me. moth. },4me. Yalme flu.

Vaneton Red Yaneton } Bran. Yarckcombe, Axm. Yealmpton, Plim. Yernelcombe, Harr. Youlfton Sher. Z

Ornwall (as Massbew of West minfter affirmeth) is fo named partly from the forme, and

Flores Biffor.

Geffry Monm.

Lib.6.ces.8.

The Borders

The Forme and

Lib.5.cap.2. Michel.Cora The ancient

neopie and a

Book.I.

partly from her people : for shooting it selfe into the Sea like a Horne (which the Bri saines call Kerne) and inhabi ted by them whom the Sax ons named Wallian of thefe two compounded words it became Cormvallia. Not to trou-

ble the Reader with the Fable of Corinens, coulin to King Brute, who in free gift received this County in reward of his proweise for wrastling with the Giant Gogmagog, and breaking his necke from the Cliffe of Doner, as hec of Monmonth hath fabuled.

Richard Carew. (2) Touching the temperature of this County, the aire thereof is cleanfed as with Bellowes, by the Billows that ever worke from off her enuironing Seas, where-thorow it be commeth pure and fubtill, and is made thereby very healthfull, but with all so piercing and sharpe, that it is apter to pre-ferue then to recouer health. The spring is not so early as in the more Easterne parts ; yet the Summer with a tempe rate heat, recompenseth his flow follering of the fruits, with

their most kindely ripening. The Autumne bringeth a formewhat late haruest: and the Winter, by reason of the Seas warme breath, maketh the cold milder then elfewhere Notwithstanding, that Countrey is much subject to stormy blafts, whose violence hathfreedome from the open waves to beat upon the dwellers at Land, leaving many times their houseswaconered. (3) The foile for the most part is lifted vp into many hilles, parted afunder with narrow and short valles, and a

The Soyle. shallow earth doth couertheir outside, which by a Sea-weede called Orewood, and a certaine kinde of fruitfull Sea-food they make so ranke and batten, as is vncredible. But more are the riches that out of those hilles are gotten from the

Mines of Copper and Time , which Country was the first, and continues the best stored in that Merchandize, of any in the world. Timans the Hifferian in Pliny reporteth, that the Britaines fetched their Tinne in wicker beats, flitched about with Lether. And Dioderns Siculus of Augustus Cafars time writeth, that the Britaines in this part digged Time out of ftonie oround, which by Merchanes was carried into Gallia, and thence Tinne Mines. to Narborne, as it were to a Mart. Which howfoever the Englife Saxons neglected, yet the Normans made great benefit thereof, especially Richard brother to King Honry the third who was Earle of Commall, and by those Time works became exceedingly rich : for the incursions of the Moores having Stopped up the Time mines in Spainer and them in German not discourred before the yeere of Christ, 1240, these in Printleges of Tinne Works Corswell supplied the want in all parts of the world. This Earle made certaine Time-Lawes, which with liberties and printleges were confirmed by Earle Edmund his fonne. And in the daies of King Edward the Third, the Commonweale of Time-workes from one body was divided into

foure, and a Lord Warden of the Stamiers appointed their (4) The Borders of this Shire on all parts but the Eaft. is bound in with the Sea : and had Tamer drawne his courfe but foure miles further to the North, betwixt this County and Denon foire, it might have beene rather accounted an Iland. then flood with the Mayne, Her length is from Launffen to the Lands and containing by measure 60 miles and the brodest part, stretching along by the Tomer, is fully fortic, les sening thence still lesser like a horne.

(5) The ancient Inhabitants known to the Romans, were the Danmony, that spread themselves further into Denon bire alfo, by the report of Diederm Siculus, a most current and civilipeople: and by Michael their Poet extolled for wa-low and firength of limmes: nor therein doth he take the libertie that Poets are allowed, to adde to the fubicet whereof they write, but truly reporteth what we fee by them perfor

med, who in Actiuitic furmount many other people.

When the Heathen Saxons had feated themselves in the heft of this Land, and forced the Christian Britains into thefe rockie parts, then did Cornwall abound in Saints, vnto whole honor most of the Churches were erected, by whose name they are yet knowne and called. To speake nothing of Frfula that Counties Dukes daughter, with her companie of canonized Virgin-Saints, that are now reputed but to trou-ble the Calendar. These Britains in Commalis for send the Countrey, and defended themselves, that to the raigne of King Athelftane they held out against the Saxons, who subduing those Westerne Parts, made Tamar the Bounder betwixt them and his English, whose last Earle of the Bruish Rland was called Candorus

(6) But William the Baffard created Robert (his halfe-The Earles of (6) But Wallam the Daylora Created Assort von Daile brother by Herlotsa their mother) the first Earle of the Nor-mans race: and Edward the Blacke Prince, the ninth from him, was by his Father King Edward the Third inuested the first Duke of Cornwall, which Title euer fince hath continued in the Crowne, and now remaineth in the person of Englands great Hope, and full-rising Sunne, HENRY Prince of Wales, and Heire apparent to King I AM E s, our Soueraigne

Lord, and Great Britaines Manarch (7) The Commodities of this Shire, ministred both by The Cômodities. Sea and Soile, are many and great: for befides the abundance of Fife that doe fuffice the Inhabitants, the Pilchard is taken, who in great Skulles (warme about the Coast; whence being transported to France, Spaine, and Italie, yeeld a yeerely re-uenew of gaine vnto Commall: wherin also Copper & Tinne so plentifully grow in the vtmost part of this Promonsory, that at a low water the veines thereof lie bare, and are seene: and what gaine that commoditie begets, is rulgarly knowne. Neither are these Rockes destitute of Gold nor Salars, yea and

Diamonds shaped and pointed Angle-wife, and smoothed by Name her felfe, whereof some are as bigge as Walnuts, inferiour to the Orient only in blacknetle and hardnetle. Many are the Ports, Bayes, and Hamens that open into this Shire, both lafe for arrivage, and commodious for transports whereof Falmont b is to copious, that an hundred Ships may therein rideat ancour apart by themselues, so that from the

tops of their highest Maststhey shall not see each other, and lie most fafely under the winder. (8) This County is fruitfull in Corne, Caste, Sea-Fift and Fools : all which, with other prouifions for pleasures and life, are traded thorow twenty two Market Towner in this Shire, whereof Launfton and Bodman are the best a from which last, being the middle of the Shire, the Pole is eleusted to the degree of Latitude 50.35, minutes, and for Longitude from the first West Point, 15,12, minutes, as Mercater hath

meafured them, (9) Memorable matters both for antiquity and strange-(9) memorane maners out nor annuary and thange-netic of light, are thefe: At Basksmas ypon the South-well of her Promosters, is a Traphy erceced, which are eighteene Stones placed round in compatie, and pitched twelue foot each from others, with another farre bigger in the very center. These doe shew some Victorie there attained, either by the Remans, or elfe King Arbelffane. At the foot of the Reeks neere vnto S. Michaels monne, in the memory of our fathers,

were digged up Speare-beads, Axes, and Swerds of Braffe, wrapped in linnen, the weapons that the Cimbrians and ancient Britaines anciently vied. At Camelford likewise process of Armours both for Horse

and Man, are many times found in digging of the ground, imputed to be the figures of that Fight wherein Morared was flaine, and wherein great Arthur received his deaths wound. And at Cafile-Demys are the Trenches wherein the Daniel lodged when they first minded to subdue the Land. In the Parish S. Clare two Stones are pitched, one of them inscriber with a strange Character, and the other called the other halfe fore : the formes whereof we have expressed in the Mappe, The Harlers alfo, fabuled to bee men metamorphofed into flones : but in truth flew a note of force victorie, or elfa are fo fet for Land-markes Bounders. There also the Wring-shofe doth thew it selfe, which are huge Rockes heaped one vpon another, and the lowest of them the least, fashioned vpon another, and the lower or trent the least, namened like a Chose, lying preffed under the reft of those Hilles, which feemeth very dangerous to bee passed under Bus necre to Ponsau, and unto Mounts bay a farre more strange

ypon others of meaner fize, with fo equall a counterpoize. hat a men may move it with the push of his finger, but no trength remove it out of his place. (10) Religious houses built, and suppressed within the limits of Cornwell, the fairest and greatest for account. were Leanifum, S. Wester, S. Burism, S. Michaels Mount and S. Gramson a Bishopa See: so was Bodown also, from whence King

Rocke Standeth, namely Main-Amber, which lieth mounted

Edward the Confessor removed at vnto the City of Excelle (11) The diuition of this Shire is into nine Hundreds wherein are leated twenty two Market Townes, and 161. Pa rith-Churches, whose names are Alphabetically gathered in the Table of this Chapter annexed.

Market Towner



Pose

rd.

Pas,

en. eft. erry.

rvd.

vvep

en.

rek.

	1 010 22							
١						Bankala Bid	n.c. v.	Transmit Did
١.	Hundreds in	Bynnaviy, Strat.	F	Person Cres.	Church C	Penkenell, Psuud.	Ruferew, Kerry.	Trenowith, Pid. Frentwith, Per.
ľ	Cornwall.	c	Fawey Flu.			Penlenc, Lejne.	5	Treragger, Trig. Trerene, Pen. Trettle, Pid.
١	Сотпина				Martherderna, Pen. S. Martins, 1993.	Penlett Saft.	SALTASH, E.A.	Trettle, Pid.
١		Calftocke, Eaft.	hauen, Powd. Fentongalion, Powd.	S. Keuerne, Kerry.	Martyn, Kerry. S. Martyn, Well.	Penpont, Trig. Penros, Pen.	Sancred Pen.	I rerole, Keny.
1	. Penwith.	Camborne, Pen. CAMELFORD, Lef.	Feocke, Powd.		S. Martyn, Well. Maugan, Pid.	Penros, Pen.	S.Saujours, Pid, S.Saujour, Well,	Trefilian Poved
ľ	2. Kerryer.	Canalegie, Pid. Canylock, Penn.	Forybery, Lefnew.	Kilguth, Pen.	Mawgan, Kerry. Mawla, Pen.	Penros, Kerry. PENKYN, Kerry.	Scales, Pen.	Trefilian, Povod.
	3. Pider.	Caradon } Eaß.	Foy Vell. Lefnew.	Kilguth, Pen. Killiow, Peov. Kilkamton, Stratt.	Mawla, Pen.	Penfand, Lef. PENSANS, Pen.	Senan, Pen. Sener Caffle, Pen.	Treimere, Trig. Treimere, East,
	T 0	Beacon, Saap.	FOYE, Powd.	Killegath, Well.	Mawnan, Kerry. The Meere, Strate	Penthere, Trie.	Chaminala Faff	
	y. West.	Carantack, Pid. Cardynham, Well.	Foye weft.	Killigrew, Povva.	Melooke, Lefnevu.	Penfiguance, Kerry.	Shillingham, East. Sithny, Kerry.	Trefunger, Trig. Trefulus, Kerry.
	6. Leinewth.	Cardynham, Well. Cargallomb, Well.	Frific, Kerry,	Kilmart, E.S. Kickleo, Kerry.	S.Mellyn, Eafl. Menchille, Povod.	Pentuan, Pavid. Pentuane, Pavid.		Treswithin, Pen.
1	 Trigge. Stratton. 	Cargern, Saft.	G		Merin, Pid.	Penuole, Trie.	Skey, Povud.	Tretallock, Pid.
1	9. Eaft.	Carmyono, Kerry. Carnonbigh, Pers.	_	Armed Pers,	Merthen, Kerry. Merther, Povud.	Penwarne, Povod. Penwarren, Kerry.	Skyberio, kerry.	Trethcag Flu. Tretheuy Stones, Trethilly, Psoud. Trethune, Pid.
١	9. Latt.	Carnon, Pid. Carock paffage, Well	Garlyn, Pen. Gennis, Lefnew.	Kuigiii, 3	Merther } Kerry.	Penwarren, Kerry. Peran in the Pid. Sands, Pid.	Sicuen, Pen. Southill, Eaft,	Stones, }
1		Carraglowic, Pen.	S. Germans, 84/h.	L	Vuy, Sarry	Peran Pen	Spargor, Kerry. S.Stephens, Eaft.	I rethune, Pid.
1		Cary Bay, Pond.	Germow, Kerry. Gerrance, Pand.	Ladocke, Povod.	Meuagelie, Pevud. Meynamber, Keny.		C Stephene Raff	Trethurfe Paned
١	Α	Cafthorne, Pesw.	Gillet, Leinew.	Vny Pen.	Michael Trig. Chap. Trig. S. Michaels Pen. Chapell, Pid.	Peram Arwothall, Ker. Peramthno. Per.	S.Stephens Prov.	Treuabees, Kerry. Treuacus, Popul.
١		Cayne bridge, Well.	Gluvyns, Kerry. Glyman, Pid.		S.Michaels 7 non	Persenthno, Pos.		
1	Abarrows, Kerrye. Aduen, Lefnew.	Chasfrench, Eaft. Chefweing, Eaft.	Glynford, Weff.	Lamchan, Well.	Chapell, S Prins		Stoke clymfland, Ea.	Treualgy, Lef. Treualus, Povod.
1		Clayper 3 maff.	Gnarnack, Powd.	Lamorram, Pouvd.	Michaell 2 -	little. Pid.	Stow, Strat. STRATION, Strat.	Treuegay, Trig. Treuegay, Trig.
1	S. Alian, Powd.	Clayper } Eaft. bridge, } Eaft. Cleader, Lefnew.	Godolphyn, Kerry. Godolphyn Kerry. hall, Kerry.	point, Pen.	Michaell Peoud.	Petherick Pid. little, Petherwin South, East. Phillacke, Pen.	Stratton Stratt.	Treuerne, Pid.
1	Alan flu Trig. Allercombe, Street.	S. Cleere, Well.	hall, Skerry.	Lanbren, Pid. Lanbrigan, Pid.	S.Michaels } #eft.	Phillacke Des	Stuppert point, Pid.	Treuena, Pid.
ì	Alternon, Lefnew.		Golden Powd.	Landew, Eatt.	S.Michaels 7 p			Treuenner, Pid
1	Caftle ? Pid.	S.Clements Perm	Golden, Powd. Goon hilly 7 downes, 7 Kerry.	Landewenak, Kerry.	S.Michaels Pen, Mount, Pen, S. Michaels, Pouvd,	Pill, Petud. Pillaton, E. ft.	Sythy } Weft.	Treuers, Pid. Treuethock, Kerry
	Anowtham, Per.	Clition, Eaft.	downes,	Landilpe, Raft,	Michelflowe, Leine.	Pincheley Well		Treutler Lef.
	Anitell, Powa.	Clowans, Penn. Cober Flu.	Golfury, Pen. Grade, Kerry.	Lands Per,	Michelflowe, Lefne, MILBROOKE, Eaft.	Pleft bridge, Eaft, Plinte, weft. Poffill, Street.	T	Treuill, Pen.
	Anthony ? F. 6	Colan Lpid.	GRAMPOVND, Po.	Lancaste, East. Langdon, Strat.	S. Minyer, Trig. Moarer, Kerry, and	Poffill, Street.	Talland, Well.	Treuilleck, People Treuins, Kerry.
	Eaft, S Zaji.	Cober Flu. Colan Pid. Co L V MB Pid. great,	Grefton, Eaft,	Langford, Stat.		Pokenhorn Pee	Talland \ point, \ meff. Taluar, Per.	Treuitly, Ped. Treuitly, Ped. Treuitlick, Pervel Treuona, Pervel. Treuona, Pervel.
	Anthony } Eaft.	great, Pid.	Gudreny } Pen: Ifle, } Pen: Gulnail, Pen. Gullrock, Pen.	Lanhadern, Pevval, Lanhidrocke, Pid.	Moorekinflow, Strat. Moran, Paund.	Polgrene, Pid. Polharma, Powd.	Taluar Per	Treusthick, Pauva
	S. Anthony 3 Ken	Columb Pid.	Outhan, Pra.		Moris, Strat. Morua, Pen.	Polkeries, Popul.	Taluern, Poutd.	Treuona, Perud.
	Antron, Kerryer.	Colquite, Powd.	Gunhaskyn, Pid. Gunwalow, Kerry-	Lanlyuerrye, Povod.	Morua, Pen.	Polmere, Petvd.	Tamar Flu, Tamerton, Serat.	Treuoura, Ped. Treuonth, VVeft. Trewardinock, Pe
	Arthurfhall, Trig.	Combe, Pawd.	Gunwalow, Kerry-	Lanno, Trig.	Moruall, Weft.	Polmatique, Pid. Polnan, Well.	Tamuli Lafe	Trewardinock, Pa
	Arthurshall, Trig.	Conftenton, Kerry.	Gunwallow } Kerry Mount, } Kerry Grendron, Kerry.	Lanreit, Weft.	Morusie, Weff. Morusth, Per.	Polomaweon.Weft.	Tamiquyte, Trig. S.Teath, Trig.	
	Arwanack, Kerryer. Arwathall, Kerrye.	Corbullock Eaft. Parke, Eaft. Cornelie, Pond.	Grendron, Kerry.	Laniarlios, Weft. Lanteglas, Lefnews.	Mounts Pen. Bay, Pen. MOVSHOLE, Pen	Pelpetrye, Walt. Peliuddon, Perud.		
	Afalt, Eaft. Athfeild, Powd.	Cornelie, Pend.	Gwindrath 2	Lanteglos, Weft. Lanvarnock, Weft.	MOVSHOLE, Per	Poltstworgy, Trig. Polwheie, Pauva.	Temple, Trig, Terladinas, Pen.	Trewargon, PV.
		Correther, Weft.	S.Gurran, Pend, Gwindrath Bay, Pond.	Lanyumock, #1f.	Mowan, Popul.	Ponallom, Laf.	Terladinas, Pen. Tewedneke, Pen.	Trewen, Haft.
	В	Court, Powd.	Gwinier, Pen. Gwithson, Pen.	Launce, Pavad.	S. More, Perud. S. Morces, Perud.	Ponde, Eaft,	Theram, Kerry.	I rewerueneth, P
	Bake, Eaff.	Cousham } East.	Gwyn Pod	Launcells, Stratt, LAVNSTON, Eaf	Mudgian, Kerry. Mullian, Kerry.	Poole, Eaft. Porkellyes, Kerry.	Thereck, Povod. S.Thomas, Raft.	Trewnard, Per. Treuins, Kerry.
	Barlyn, Pid.	Crackington, Lefter Creed, Powd.	Rocke, 5 Feet, Gwynap, Kerry,	S. Laurence, Trig. Lawannicke, Eaf.		Port 7 - 4	Thurleber, Stratt, Tintagell, Lef.	Trewino, Pound.
	Barrete, Powd. Bedeue, Trig.	Cromere Pid.		Lawhitton, Eaft.	Myler Kerry. Mynherious Est	Port Hiot, } Esf.	Tincagell, Lef.	Trewino, Pound. Trewindle, Trig. Trewolfe, Pen.
	Bedwyn, Trig. Beeds hauen, Stras	Cancadon Eaff	н	Lawreth Well.	Mynheniott, Eaft,	Porreluno, Pen. Portluny, Perval. Porthilly, Trig. Portiflee, Perval. Portiflick, Trig.	Tintagell Lef. Caffic, Lef. Tophowies, VVeft.	Treworean, Pen
	Benallock, Pond.	Crofthole, Eaft. Crowan, Penw.	Hacton, Eaft,	Lee, Stratt. Lean } Haft.	Mynther, Lefnevu.	Porthilly, Trig.	Tophowies, VV of.	Treworgan, Prot Treworgans, Pro Treworgae, VV
	Benallock, Kerry.	Cubye, Powd.	Hale Flu.		N	Portillye, Povd.	Toplendycon, Trig.	Treworgye, VV
	Benallock, Kerry. S.Benet, Pid.	Curye, Powd. Curye, Kerry. Culwath, Pid.	Hall, Weft. Ham, Stratt.	Lelant, Pen. Lepperry, Pin.				
	Berye, Lefnew. Bere, Stratt. Berio bridge, Eaft.	Cuttcall, Eatt.	Harlyn, Pid.		Nans, Pen.	Coue, Trig.	Tragardon, Petrod. Trebasteall, Lefa.	Trewynon, Pid. Trimguenton, Pe
	Berio bridge, Eaft.	Courbert, Pid.	Haye, Eaft.	Lefnewth, Lef. Lefterman, Povud.	Nantgiffallcoue,Per	Portquyn, Trig.	Trebe Pid.	Trincow, Pid. Trinitie, Powd,
	Berole, Trig. Befill, Lefnew.	The ruines } Pes.	Helegan, Trig. Helford 3 Kerry.	Leuan, Pen.	point, herry.	Portquyn, Trig. Poughill, Strat; Pounflocke, Lef.	Treberock, Trig.	Trinitie, Powd,
	Betonet, &aft.		hauen, Sacrey.	Leuethan, Trig. Lezante, East.	S.Neott #1/8. Newbridge, #48.	Predanner 2		Trithall, Kerry.
	Bickton, East. Bindon beacon, #2	, D	Helland, Trig. Hellan ? min	Lezard Kerry.	Newhers, Saft. Newics, Pid.	Predanner } Kerry. Premadart, Weff.	Treburget, Trie. Trecarrell, Eafl.	5. Tudy, Trig.
	Binerton, Kerry		bridge Carre	Lezard } Kerry. Linkynhorne, Haft.	Newies, Pid. Newlin, Pen.	Premadart, Weff.	Trecarrell, Eafl,	S. Tudy, Trig. S. Tue, Paryd. Tuis, Kerry.
	Blackbittle? a	S. Daye, Kerry. S.Dennis, Powd.	Hensbery, Powd. Heliet, Laftew.	Linkynhorne, Haff.	Newlyn, Pid.	Pridiaux Prid. Pridiaux Prid. Pridiaux Prid. Pridiaux Pri	Tredegy, Lef. Treduneck, Pid.	
	Point, Powd.	Denmer 3 min			Newport, Esft. Newton, Esft.	Pridiaux 3 Poved.	Tredruston, Pid. Trefrew, Stratt.	Tyninghouse, V
	Biiflond, Trire	Denmer Trigg bridge, Trigg Dewloe, Weft. S Dominick, Baft	Helftonford, Haft. Hillary, Pen.	Looburg weft.	S. Nighton, Weff.		Treming, Keer	v
	Bloftenim, Eaft.	S Dominick, Beff	Hilton, Stratt.	The Lowe, Kerry,	S. Nighton, Weft. Northill, Eaft.	Pulfath, Stret.	Tregarden, Trig. Tregare, Pound.	Valle Flu.
	Boconock, Well.	Dounftocks, Left	downe,	Loo Flu.	Norterbridge, Eaft.	S.Pynnock, Weft.	Treganethaw, Povod. Treganyan, Povod.	S.V dye, Trig.
	Bodregan, Powd. BODMAN, Tr	ig. Doimer Well. poole, Permit.	Hurlers, Esf.	Lowe weft.	0	Q	Treganyan, Povud.	i. S.V dye, Trig. S.V cepe, VVch Verrian, Powd.
	Bodrigy, Pen.	Driffe, Penvieb.		LOWE Well.	1	Quethiocke, Esft.	Tregarget, Trig. Tregenno, Pes.	Vgboroe, Strat,
	Bolifto, Per.	Duckpoole, Strate	' -	Ludgnam, Per.	Otterham, Lefe.	C	Tregernon, Lef. Tregenock, East.	Vuy, Pen.
	Borden, Stratt.	Dudman Powd	Iacobstowe, Strat.	I nogen. Per.	P	R	TREGONEY, Par	. w
	Barrow, Strat.	Dulo, Well. Dunacombe, Stre	licombe, Strat.	Lugion, Pen. Luland Ifle, Trig.	1 -	Rame, Eaft.	Traggingon, Pappal.	1
	Botadon, Eaft. Botalicck, Pen.	Dunheuid, 2	S. Iohns, Krrry.	Ifle, 3 Ing.	PADDESTOW,P	d. Rame head, Eaft.	Tregoodock, Eaft,	Wadefaft, Strat
		Dunheuid, alids Launceston,	oft. S. Ichns, Eaft. S. Iffue, Pid.	Port } Povvd.	Paditow Pid.	Reduch, Pen. Relubas, Pen.	Treguit, Trig. Treguli, East.	Warlegon, PV Warpflowe, Lej
	Boscattle, Lefter. Boskenna, Per.	Dyzarde, Lefnen		Luxulian, Powd.	Paffage, Kerry. Paulchurch, Pest.	Repryn, Trig. Refcola, Pavud,	Tregunnon, Powed Trehan, Powed.	Wecke S.Maries, }
	Boffaffill, Pen.	1 '	S. Ithics } Per.	Port Pound, Luny, Luxulian, Pound. LYSKERD, We LYSTWITHIEL,	Pawton, Pid.	Reicola, Pavod,	Trehatrew, Lef.	Wenne, Pid.
	Boluergus, Pen. Boyton, Stratt.	E	S.Iuc, Eaft,	1		Reskymer, Kerry. Roche, Pavvd.	Trehattew, Lef. Treiffick, Povod.	Wenne, Pid. WESTLOE, J
	Breage, Kerr. Breland Ile, Pen.	S. Earth, Eaft.	Kerna	м	Pellamontayne, P Pellers, Pid.	id. The Rocke, Kerry.	Trekene, VVeft, Trelaffe, Trig.	Weftnarth, VV Whalsborow,
	Dames Did	S.Eartham, Penn	sith. luis, Pen. S.Iuft, Pend. S.Iuft, Pen.	Mabe, Kerry,	Pelyn. Parnel.	Rofland, Pouval, Roskeftall, Pen,	Trelaske, Eaft.	Whitfand 2 m
		chapell, Trig	S.luft, Pen.	S. Mabyn, Trig.	Pelynt, Weft.	Rofmoran,Pen.	Trelaure, Eaft. Trelaun, VVeft.	Baye, S
	Breward, Trig. Bridgrule, Strate	Edgcombe, Eaft, Ettorde, Stratt.	K	S. Mabyn, Trig, Madern, Pen. Madern, Pen.	Pelynt, Weft. Penerek, Weft. Pender, Pen.	Roystore, True, Royston, Pid,		Whitfand 2 Pe Baye, 3 Pe Whitflone, Stri Wicke, Kerry, Windfot, Pid.
				Madern Pen,	Pendenys, Kerry	Russ Pid.	Treliffick, Pid.	Windfot, Pid.
	Broungelly, Weft,	Egloskerry, Esfi Endellion, Trig.	Karnufack, Pen. S. Keave, weft.	Well, 5	Penden Pen.	Ruan Isnihorne Pope	" Tremaire, VVell.	Wotton Sell
	Buckelly, Trig.	Enis, Kerry.	Kellington, East, Kennegy, Pen.	Chapell, Kerry	Penden 3 Per	Ruan Keny.		Wulfton, Lef.
	Budacke, Kerry,	Enis, Kern. Enedor, Pid. Erme, Powd.	Kennegy, Per.	Magdalen Kerry Chapell, Kerry Maker, Eaft. Malader, Potval.	Penden } Pen.	Ruan 3 v.	Trembrole, Ker. Tremfly, Pid. Tremene, Eaft.	Wulfton, Lef. S.Wynnow, V. Wynnyton, Ke
	Burgus, Pid. Burian, Perm.		Kenwyn, Powd. Kergoe, Psd.	Manacka, Kerry.	Pendre, Trig. Pengertick, Kerry.		Tremene, Eaft.	
	S.B. rien, Penw,	Fruan, Pid.	Kern Bridge, Baff. Kernbray, Pen,	The Mana- 2	Penewenyon ?		Trenellos, Lef.	z
			Kernbray, Pen.	cles, Kerry Manicon, Eaft. Manyng, Stratt.	Penhall, Eafl. Penhall, Trig.	Penketiii, J	Trensigo, Lef. Treneglos, Lef. Treneglos, Veft. Trenowth, Porod.	Zenor, Per.
	Putnere, Trig. Byseth wood, E.	Eus, Poud. Eusli, Pid.	Kernbray, Pen, Kerneth, Powd,	Manyng, Stratt,	Penhall, Trig.	Ruicarrak, Trig.	Trenowth, Pered.	Zwallock, Trig

The bounds of Sampler fee-fh.re.

The Soyle,

Lead.

The chiefe Ci-

Ommerfet-fhire is both af rich and spacious Country, having the Seuern-Sea beating yoon it on the Northfide, the South-part bordering vpon Denon & Dorfer-foires, the West confinde with De uenfbire, and the East, and North-East vpon Wilishire, & Glencestersbire. It tooke the name of Sommerton (fortime

the chiefe Town of this Shire) whence in the ancient Historian Afferim, this County is called Sommertunenfis, that is, umertun shire,

(2) The forme thereof is large, bearing it felfe still wider as it stretcheth into the middle part therof, and containes in The length. length from Brackley neere vnto Frome-Selwood Eastward, to Ours in the West, Miles fifty flue. In breadth from Par-But-Point in the North, to Chardton: hward, is somewhat aboueforty Miles. The whole Circumference is about 204.

(3) The Aire is mild and pleafing and for the most part subject to such temperate dispositions, as the Sommer-lea-son affordeth, whence some have erroneously conceited, The Aire that the Region borrowed her name from the nature of her Clime : yet how delightfull fo euer it is in the time of Sommet; with change of the feafon it may well change her plea-fing name, and borrow some winterly denomination; fo full of wet, so mirry and moorish it is; informuch as the Inha-bitants can hardly trauell to and fro without their great

(4) Howbetthey paffe ouer this with all patience, know-ing their enfuing feafonable profits farre to exceed any pre-fent detriments and difpleafures: foras it is foul, so it is fruitfull, which makes them comfort them elues with this Prouerb, that What is worft for the Rider is best for the Abider the Soyleand Glebs thereof being very fertile, and euery fide garnished with Pastures and delightfull Meadowes, and beautified with Mannor houses both many and faire; and (in a word) hath everything in it to content the purfe, the hart, the Eye, at home, and fufficient Ports to give entertainment to commodities from abroad.

(5) The ancient Inhabitants that possessed this Province were the Beigs, who spread themselues farreand wide as well here, as in Williams, and the inner parts of Hamphire; who being branched from the Germans, conferred the names of those places from whence they came, v pon these their Seats where they relided.

(6) The Generall profits of this Province are Corne & Cartle, wherewith it is so plentifully stored, as it may challenge any neighbouring Country for the Quantity to make ingeany neignoouring country for the Quantity to make how of Cattle for far or grayine for riche Some places are peculiarly enriched by Lead-Mines, as Missiphile (perchance localled of the deep Mines) by Lead-aply tearmed Minsway, Minsrall hill, which yeeld plenty of Lead, the most Marchantoble commodity that is in England, and wented into all parsof the World. Some are beautified with Diastle of the Minsrall hill which would be some are beautified with Diastle of the World. Some are beautified with Diastle of the Minsrall hill with Diastle of the World. Some are beautified with Diastle of the World. monds, as Saint Vincent Rocks, whereof there is great plenty, and so bright of Colour as they might equalize Indian Dia-monds, if they had their hardnes: yet beeing so many and so common, they are leffe fought after or commended. (7) This Country is famoused by three Cities, Bath, Wels, and Brifton. The first takes name of the hot Baths, which

Antonino called Aqua Solis, The maters of the Sunne , Stehansu Badiza; we at this day Bathe; & the Latinists Batheplace of continual concourfe for persons of al degrees mana place of continual concourte for persons of al degrees, and almost of all discases (whence it was sometimes called Akeman-cester) who by divine Providence doe very often find relecte there, the Springs thereof by reason of their Missault and the Springs thereof by reason of their and recretence. the springs mercor by reason or mea. Minerall and fluphrous parlage, being of fuch exceeding power and medicinable hears that they cure & conquer the rebellious flubbornnes of corrupt humora-in refpect of which admirable vertues fome haue fabled, that they were first conusied by Magick art. To testifie the Antiquity of this place, many Images and Romain inscriptions are found in the walls, which can now be hardly read, they are fo worm and eaten into by age. Wels (as Leland reporteth) was forn-times called Theodoredunum, but from whence it had that denomination he makes no mentio: The name it now bearet nomination the muses no mention in manuse, move occurrent is take (as found the fluir of the fluir three, which King Kissewijk in his Charter An. 766. calleth Wilms, or (as others) from the Web or fixings which there break forth: & where up o that fee(vader whose larifdictho is also the city of Bash) hath bin anciently called Fontanenfis Ecclefia, the Fountaine Church: wherethe Cathedrall built by King Inat to the me-mory of S. Andrew is very beautifull and richly endowed.

The City is likewife well replenished both with Inhabitant and feemly buildings. Whose gouernment is managed by a
Maior yeerly elected, a Recorder and seuen Masters, haung the assistance of 16 Burgesses, Towne Clerke, and two Sergeants at Mace. Whole latitude is 51.20.minuts, & longitude geants at Macc. Whose lateruper 15,1,30 minuts, & Longitude 17,31 minuts. Briffor is not fo ancient, as it is fair, & well feated? The beauty of it being fuch, as for the bigness therof, it feared gues place to any City of England, and doth worthily defertee the Saxon name Bright-fluid: whose pleasanticility. is the more , by reason that the River Aum scowres through the midft of it, which together with the be-nefit of Somes under all the streets cleers the city of all notfome fileh, and vncleanneffe. It is not wholly feated in this County of Sommerfet, but one part thereof in Glomesfer.
Bire; but because it is an entire County of it selfe, it denies fubicction vinto either, having for its owne government both a Bishop with a well furnished Colledge, and a Major with a competent affiltance of Aldermen, and other officers for Civill affaires.

(8) This Province hath beene the Theater of many Tragicali euents and bloody Battels:the Danes did greenously afflict Porlock by cruell Piracies, in the yeare eight hundred amer route of creat riscos, in the year engine in union-ciphy fines? Center vino Per a little village netighbouring Polock, you North-Calhain, Edmand (unamed from July gaue the notable foil, as he was purfung Committee for place, for vitriping the Crown of England, And Keninable Well-Saxes) in the fame place had fuch a day again the Britains, Saton) in the same place had such a day against the Britains, that they cuer after flood in awe of the English Satons prowes. Marians relaxed that no rofa from Bridge metra at he
Don't were flragling abroad, Euffan Bilhop of Sherburne
did of folle their flooten in the year 884, as their minds were
to foll the saton and the saton are stressed with the Sherburne
the saton and the saton are stressed with the Marian
the saton and the saton are stressed with the Marian
the saton and the saton are stressed with the Sherburne
the saton and the saton are stressed with the saton are
the saton and the saton are the saton are
the saton are the sa utal o roice their roices in the yeare 445, as their minos were much discomined and their powers verient didabled. Notion allo writes that King Arthur did to defeat the English Saxons in a battail as Cabburg, that it defensed to be made perpetuously memorable. Neither is Mont Bathuricus (now Jac. perdounly memorante. Neutrer is France assessment, now a medium) citle famous for Arthurs victories, And King Elfred in another Battaile notfar from hence gaue the Dasses such an ouerthrow, as hee forced them to submission, and industrial court in the submission, and industrial court in the submission. ced Godrus their King to become a Christian, himselfe being Godfather to him at the font. So happy is this Region, and so beholding to Nature and Art for her strengths and fortifications, as fice hath alwaies beene able to defend her

fortifications, as incentain atwaits occurs about the following fells and offend the enemies.

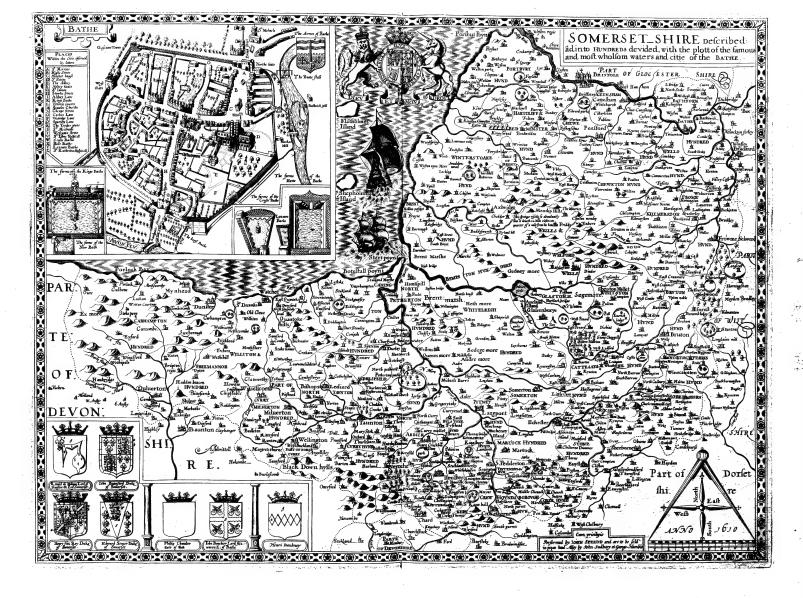
(9) Neither hathitize in lefts honoured with heauteous houses confectated to religions fluch was that of Black-Classians at Barchineb in the first limit of this shire Westward and neu 12 Berlineb in the intillimit of this hive Welsard and ing. Absilbe book a nonalley in an Illand called Andreh. 197(this iso of by the great land, which is between the River Isoland Peterd, running to gooden, where the deficed walls, and ruines thereof are yet to be feen. King Heary the third also redecked Numery at Whose, which was siterated to the state of the third which with the state of the third which the state of the third which the state of the Antiquity, gloy, and beauty wasthe Abberg of Classification, whole beginning is frethe even from Infath of Attanation, which Dass Bithop of S. Dassid: repaired, being fallen to ruine, and King Man I afthy built a faire and fately Church in this Monaftery, should be now made even with the ground the ground of the state of the sta this Monafery, shough it be now made cuen with the grould the runner only five wing, how great and magnificent a Seat it shall not not seen that a section of the control o

thetop whereof are feen the lineauens of a large and an either Carlo White he Inhabitants reports to have been the Palace of King Arisan Jikulin and which at the somming of the Norman want op populous that is that int an hindred and seem Bergelles, and it appear to be coff great Antiquity by the Roman Capier Copy and eithems found therein the Church-yard of Analesia or Gildfesbury, white King Arisan Sequicher was feenth for by the command of King Hamys, which was found worder a flone, within Infeription you in thin Chaptan in the great Lady doctated of her Fundand Go much pulme great Lady doctated of her Fundand Go much pulme great Lady doctated of her Fundand Go much pulme great Lady doctated of her Tunedand Go much pulme great Lady doctated of her Tunedand Go much pulme great Lady doctated of her Tunedand Go much pulme great Lady doctated in the Chaptan and the great Capier Ca

ling of outines needful to the State thereor, wheth are pia-ced 33. Marker Townes fit for buying gast felling and other affaires of Commerce. It is fortified with four Callles, and planted with 38.parithes for concourfe of Dinine fertice, at is denoted in this Table following.

Tie Magiftracy

Laffane Riftop of



				1	1	1	1.	
1	1	1		DULL MERCON MAKE	Hockombe, Tease.	Marke, Beng.	Parland 2 Taner. S. Braftrofe, S Taner. Pyll-bridge, Marsock; Pyll-bridge, Marsock; Pyllog, J Samp. Pyllog, Parsoy, Pyllog, Taner.	Thurlotton, Navelpe,
17.7	VNDREDS ;	tarrington, Southpe.	Chedley, Northan			Marito, Strat. Escades Hearter, Mariton, MARIOCKE Morec.	S. gratervie, S	Thurletare, Nerthy, Trotteribuil, Torres.
n	A MADILEDO	tord 3 cares	Chellingron Soutipe. Chelton Work.	Dunkerton Welly.	Hollt ed Trans.	Broader & Harethr.	berney Sames	1. bridge, Lanue. Tottand, Taxes.
l is	Sommerfet-	Sartow.	Chelworth Kryw.	DVNSTER,Collan.	Courtley, 5	MARIOCKE Meser.	Pytaey, Paney,	Tolland.Taxes:
1	thire.		Cheriton Hereibers.	Dunite Aid. Dunite Aid. Dunite Aid. Duniten, Whit. Duniton, Nettys. Dyptord, Teast.	Hole on Jak. Holle of Tane. Country, Tane. H. liford, Whole. Hollmaye, Tane.	Meare puole, Glef	Pyrmiter, Tavat.	Tont fla Malar.
1	21	Lathford Britis	Chesterblade, t'elli-	Derborrow, vvius,	Hollwaye, Taue. Holwall, Harether.	Meare Glaf.	a	The Tor, Guy.
1_		Bachw.ek Eath.	Chefterblase, 1 ells. Chrueley of Bod. Chewton hund.	Duriton, Netrota	Hotaberne Wally.	Mells,Kyll	4	Totnock-Sree
-	~	SATH CJIJF, Sate.	Chewron 2	Dyptore, Tanst.	Houweeke.Brat.	Mendip hills it ear.	Queenes more, Whith.	nakes Lo.
1.	CHove.	hatch Resudiampe, \$B.46.			Homberte van. Homberte van. Homberte van. Homberte van. Welt Welts. Hority, Northe.	MARIE DOCKE Movee. Meare poole, Glef Meare Gilf Meare Gilf Meare Gilf Mende Gilf Mende Mis Xya Mende hall Media Meri Me By gord-rema Meri Me By gord-rema Meri Me By gord-rema Meri Meri Me By gord-rema Meri Meri Meri Meri Meri Meri Meri Meri	Eaft Quarrextead, Waly. Wift Quarrextend, Wally. Quarrextend, Wally.	Tone Bushleher, The Tor, Golf, The Tor, Golf, The Tor, Terre, Tomos, Bong, wakes by Dark Towns, Town
12.		Beckington,France Be imiliar,Bed	Chewtoun, (buress. Chewlock Chris.		Horrisgron, SWells.	Merrott,Comp.	Quantexpead, 5 ''my.	Tiebur, Vally,
1.	Bathforme.	Be irmHer, Bed.	Chewftock Cons.	Eafton, Wells. Eafton, Christen.	Horfey, Northpe.	Modforner 3-Chrossen	Ousecorberd, SWify.	Trend . Tract.
15.	Keynsham.	Betre Canng, Belliston Ryn, Benger, Koher, Benger, Koher, Berragen, of Brent Banderd J. Wister, Brond, Brown, Brow	Chilcompton/Christon. Chilcon of History, Baywick hand.	Eafton, Christen.	Horfugen-Hereto. Horfugen-Hereto. Houtford Teart. Houtford in Taint band. Vally. Hungrode,Per. Hundre,Sime RVNTSPILL,Neebyr.	Norton, 5	O nantoke hills. Vell.	North L
14	E C TO TO THE PARTY OF THE PART	Benzeer, Kilmer	Barwick hand. SHaret.	Eafton Christes. Eafton Pert, ingordan Pert, Eaten Wing. Eddingroup Cassing.	Houseon Lawr.	Michaelchurch, Norsky.		Trendle,
15.	Bruton,	B-rrington, ')	Chilton Nor Age.	Engeralin, S	in Taunt band, S Walty	Missilefey, What y.	к (Troller Morrison
6.	Castefaylbe.	of Brent Swisser.	Chilton Nor hips.	Eddingrom, Canage	Hungrode,Pert.	Milberne, Here lar.	Raddon Free.	fuller, Norton. full, Naster. Tuckerton, Nortop. Tummet, Haretbern.
17.	Norten Ferris.	hundred. 3	Chilton dummer Steet.	Edungton, Wastie.	Huncley, S:ane	Mileon, White-	Radnett ck, Velle	Tuckerton, Nortage.
16	Frame.	South 3	Chinerk, S Howards,	Phiffoke Canag.	HVNTSPILL, Namey.	Milton Wells	Raditock, Kall.	Tunetet, Hurethern.
10.	Wello.	Brent, Firem.	Middle Z Hayre/b.	Eaters West. Eddington, Camer. Eddington, Whitie. Philloke Camer. Egarley, Glef. Elline, Frem.	Huntweith, Northpe. Hurt, Mariek. Hurton, Somr. Hutton Wint,	Milton, Wells. MILVERTON, Miluer.	Raddon Frees. Radnith ch, Velli. Radnith ch, Velli. Radlock, Kill. Radlock, Xell. Radlock, Yell. Radlock, Tell. Radlock, Tell. Radlock, Tell. Radlock, Tell. Radlock, Tell. Radlock, Tell. Roddock, Frees. Roddock, Frees.	Twentron, Pets. Tycham, Pers. Tymbrifcombe, Cer. Tymbrigon, Ohrp.
19.	Wello.	Bicknaller, Wally	Chinock, S	Elion Frant.	Hercox, Somer.	Miluerton mannor, Mal. The Mineries, Wells.	S Rune bill Com	Temperation who Cor
110	Kilimerfdon,	Brekneelly-Article	Well Elleunis.	Elwarthy, Willy.	Hutton Wint;	The Mineries, Weits.	Reddier on Walls.	Tymfharow.Chru.
170	.Glaston.	Billiam, Greet.	Chinitable Wally.	Elioe, From. Eliouthy, Willy. Entourow, Chesten. Entourow, Assirf. Efreas, Gid. Esseriche, Wells. Esseriche lodge, Whas.	Hynros Kell, Hyghe Wast,	More, Bray. North Some. More, More	Redlynch, Brar.	
133	. Horethorne.	Billionion Tentes	Chillon, VV and	Ennore, Anierj.		More. Somer.	Ratcliffe,Winter.	v 1,
1 .		B fport, Bed.	Clear fla, Cleste	Englishe Wells	1 1	Mothuch, White.	Roade,Fram.	
13	Wells & Welford.	Bittelcombe Wil'y.	Bishops & Conv.	Burriche lodge, Wher.		TV ett Stringley.	Robellyrides Rest	Vhirish Chare
11.	4 Whitfton.	Blackford, system.	Chilton dumber Joses. Bati Canorek, Jibouli, Chinotik,	Eurlion, Sower.	S.Ismes, Taweri Jibruers, Backing.	Monthern, White. West Whiteley. Mouchton, Monthern Transf.	Rounam pullage, Bed, Rowberrowe, Wagi. Runton, Miler.	Vbleigh.Clemer Vphill,Whee, Vptor,White,
11	5.Танпоп.	Riackford, Car-	Churchill IPim.		Il constant Mariette of Tintinkul Mariette handred.	Mountecut, Tynica. Mounte filett, Wally.	Rowberrowe, Wage.	Vptor,Why.
1.	6. North Curry.	Blackdon, Wist.	Cluster mend p Cienter.	Ex.more, Carbana, Ex. ard, Carbana, Exten, Welly.	of Tintinkul > Marreck.	Mounck filett, Wally.	Runton, McLory, Ryfton, Teast.	poble, Brut.
1:	7 Miluerton.	Blandon, Least,	Clasworthy Dr. ye	Extord,Cerbane.	handred. S Hebrare, Taust. 1LM/STER, Abbick.		Kytton, i east.	nocie,
1	7.20211407100.	Blackwell, 866	Chargeon, Charges.	Exton, Wally.	Hebrare, Tavat.	Muchensy Printy.		w
1 2	8.Carbampton.	Rencation Berly	Charchill IPAss, Charchill IPAss, Classor mend.p. Clearter, Classor the 1922's Classor frame, Classon, Charles, Classon, Charles, Classon, Charles,	-	liene didete	Muchensy Pring. Illian, Pring. Mutford Stear. Mullarne Teast.	•	1 " 1
1.1	2.Wyllicon and	Bolin; to II, Careliatti.	Old Little		Ilton parke, disket.	Mellarne, Tesset.	6-17 - 1	WATCHET,Willy.
i	Freemannor,	Blackwon, Prov. Blackwoll, Bod. Bleydon, West. Booker, to in, Carolom. Bower, North fit. Bower, North fit. Bower, North fit. Bradford, Tavar,	Old } :: 'B'y. Cicue. } Clausan, Perr Clausader, B. sc.	Fariye Caffle Wells.	Jiton, Ableke. Ilton parke, Ableke. Ingle Combe . Wells. Justbotne, Wells.	Mylton, Marrack, Mynchesd, Tauer,	Salford, Keyne Samford, Milwer. Samford, Northye. Samford oriciss, Herebur. Samford Bret, Welly.	
1-	o Whiteleigh.	Bradles Wist.	Churden, B.ac.	Farmburo, Kryw. Farrenton Corneges,	Justhorne, Wale.	MYNUEAD Colors	Samford, Norther.	Walten ? p.
		Bradler, Glef.	Clopton Pert.	Partenton Cornses,	*	Myflemon_Crew.	Samfordoncias, Heretwe.	parke, Sewe-
2	1 Cannington.	North L. ALE-L.	Clution, Cor.y.	Fayiano, Part.	•		Sandord Bret, Wally.	Walton White
12	2 North petherson.	Bradler, Tawar, Bradler, Flef. North Bradon, Seff. South Majo. Bradon, Majo.	Coatts Martic.	Payland, Pert. Fel: on Bed. Fiddwicke, Tawe.	K:lwefton, Barb.	N	Scaborough.Cress. Stuedge more, Whitey, Segemore, Glaf. Selwood forgelf, Brut.	Walton, Pers. Walton Sport. Walton, WhitL Walles, From. Wantrow, From.
12	2. Anderfield.	Paston Shuje.	wolt } Coher. Coher, } Coher. Ealt } Coher.	Fifthead Bailen. Fillwood parke, Chem. Fitzheard Northearry.	Kenne Wiet. Killefton North enerry.	National V	Sepemore, Glaf.	Wandraw, Brat. Wayford, Crew. Wedmore, Beny.
- 12	4. Hunt pil &	Brayne, Bont.	Esft Zour	rigwood parke, Ches.	Killmerikan Kull.	Navietav. Not.	Salwood forgelf, Brat.	Wayford, Creur.
12	Parnon.	Brenham. örur.	Coker, Stages		Killnington, Nergest.	Nayle Borowe, Taunt. Nayle Lay, Bol. Nemner, Chester. Neroch forcet, Abliche.	Scuington abbet, Senting	Wedmore, Beny.
- 1	FAFRON.	Eradon, Sorge, Brundel, Brunde	Coldhenton,	Frany Kall. Frethord, Bath.	Killin erfton, Kill. Killin ington, Nerpes. Killion, Wally.	Neroch forreft, Abdiche.	Strington michael, Joerh	Weeke, Wist.
2	5. Abdicke.	Brent Brent.	Cole, Brat. Coleve, Knings. Combe, 1377.	Freihord, Barb.	Kiluc, Waly Kinge flon, Tamer. Kington, Wane. Kintton, T. wen.	Netherham, W.dy. Nettlecombe. Waly. Well Lands	Senington michael, Joseph Senington mary Joseph, Seymour: Cherrest, Shapwick, Whiele, Sharpham parke, Whitel SHEPTON maller, White Shepholm Jiland, Brent, Shepholm Jiland, Brent,	Weeke, Weeke, Caming. Weeke, Caming. W Bl. LS citie, Well. Welleflord, Milaer. WELLINGTON of Northca. Mil.
· 12	G. Bulfton.	well?	Combest 1777	Frome flu. Kall.	Kingelion, Tank.	Wernecombe way.	Shapwick, Whiele.	W BL LS citie,Well.
- 1 -	y.Kingsbury.	Beent, Pareet.	Temple ? Heather.	Salmand From.	Kinthen Tower	N. wron. North:	Sharpham parke, Wantel	. Welleflord, Milaer.
1:	8. South Perberton,	Bow bridge, Hause.	Combe, Wally. Combe S. 2 view	North 7	Kingfton, Ablet.	Weft North: Newton S. Lowe, Welle, Newton Court, Welle,	SHEPTON mallet, White	ot Norther Zwid
		BRUDGEWATER, Nation	Combe S. 2	Fulford,	Kingtton, Cheusen.	Newton Court, Wells.	Shepton 2	bundled.
12	g. Crewkerne.	Brimpton, Stone. Brillington, Keyn. BR ISTO L L & City,	Nicholas Carre	Frethord, Bath. From flu, Kull. FROM E From. Schwood. North Fulford, North Fulford. Tanet. Fulford. Fulford. Fulford. Fulford. Fulford.	Kinglion of Bul.	Newton pitey, 1921y.	Monugue, Nortes.	of Northcu. bundred. Wello, Wells.
- 1:	o.Sommerten.	BRISTOLL , City,	Combe, 8et 6.	Furlong,Crew,	Kingflary Heether,	Northoner of ?	Shepton Z.Southe	Welton,Christen Wendon,North
13	1.Ругнеу.	Brockley of Land	Combe, Set 6. Combefory, Trant. Combehav, Wells.		Kirthury Kour.	Tinteshill SMarteck	Bearchamp, S	Werndon, North
- 1:	2.Stone.	Brockley of Bod, Cheweton han. Brockley, Chemen		G	KingGon, Soner.	hundred, 5	Che felbaroush Hand	
- 13	3.Tintinbull.	Brodward South of Abdick hun. South Brodweldon, Brd. Browne Carbam, Benhan, Brat. Brumbield, Ambrel.	Compton Castol, Kers. Compton Danis, Kers. Compton dando, Wwi.j		Kinfton, The rea Kinfton, Ablet, Kington, Chessen, Kington of Chewron hun. S Kington of Kington, Searc, Kington, Searc, Kington, Searc, Kington, Searc, Kington, Searc, Kington, Atlant, Kington, Atlant, Kington, Atlant, Kington, Milarr, Kington, Milarr, Kington, Milarr, Kington, Milarr,	Newton Court, West, Newton placy, 1916y. Northearry, Yarskur, Northoner of Tineachill hundred, Northleime, Chew, Northleid, Glass, Northleid, Glass	Monague, S. Carrino, Shepton B. Searchamp, S. Southy. Chefibon, Nerrig. Chefibon, Nerrig. Chefibon, Wast. Shatton, Comeg. Siddingson, Coming. Sidging, Wally. Smildon wood, Wint. SOMMERTON, Somers. Someron Ethy Search.	WESTON, White. WESTON, White. Welton, Carref. Welton, Port. Welton Sistem. Typon Marc. Sistem. Welton Marc. Welton Marc. Weltombe 35° als.
- 13	3.1 mimonii.	of Abdick hun. Joseph	Compton dando, Www.ly	Gibington, 1 amer.	Kingwellon Cettel	Norton Chem.	Shutton, Canag	Welton, Carrel.
- 13	4. Houndsberough	Brodweldon, Bed.	Compton . Coatre	Gablington, Tanne. Gedney Benep. nore. Senep. Gedney, Glaf.	Kittelford, Milut.	Norton Cher. Norton, Heast Norton, Taux.	Siddington,Caving.	Wellern, Port.
- 13	5.Barwicke.	Browne Carbam,	Paustroia, S	Gedney, Glaf.	Knippe, Northeury.	Notton,Taur.	Smaldonnerd Wins	TOO Mary Elling
- 13	6. Caker.	Brumfield Andref	Martine, Chesten.	Georges & Teams.	Knightslie, Taum.	Norton, 3-chem.	SOMMERTON, Somer.	Wellbury Wells.
			Compton Z.	Well 3	Wannie Cham	Norton Berrie Merten		Wellcombe.West.
- 1:	7.Martock.	Raffe, Walyf.	Rilboot, Strate.	S.Grerge, Part.	Knowle,Chew.	Norton, Malreward, John, Norton Ferris, Norton, Numary, From,	Southarpe, Souteper	Weftholme, Gief.
1	8.Winterfloake.	Raffe, Wallyf.	Rilbon, Strat.	Grorges Z Tasset. well, S Tasset. S.Grorge, Port. GLASTONS V RY, Gla Gottbattl. Asserf.	Knighton Loew. Knowle Lhew. Knowle, Petroy. Knowle, Santyr.	Norton Ferris, Norton, Nummye, From, Nyland hall, Wells,	Southarpe, Southper, Sparkford, Cattef.	Wetholme, Gid, Wethinkly sily,
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 20.Portbury.	Ratie. Wallyf. Kings Brumpeon, States	Bishops, Street. Conwedge,Cassing, Congreibury Wist.	S.Greege, Part. GLASTONS V RY, Gla Gotebattl Anderf. Grebill Here here.	Knowie, Chew. Knowie, Pstwy. Knowie, Saathys. Kylleidon, Northewy.	Norton Ferris, Norton, Numere, From, Nyland hall, Welle, Nylahead, Teast,	Sombarpe, Southper, Sparkford, Cattef. Spark for Cattef. Spark on Caster, Spark on Caster,	Wethird J. Aly. Whatlye, From. Wheathill Whinte.
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 20.Portbury.	Raffe, Waltyf. Raffe, Waltyf. Kings Brumpeon, Waltyf, BRY TO N, Beat. Weft	Bishops, Street. Conwedge,Cassing, Congreibury Wist.	S.Grorge, Port. GLASTONS V RY, GLa Gotebatil Anderf. Greenham, Malarr. Greenham, Malarr.	Knowle, Chew. Knowle, Statepe. Knowle, Satehpe. Kylleidon, Northerny. Kymetun, Havette.	Numye, From. Nyland hill, Welle, Nynhead, Teast.	Somerton eny, comer, Sombarge, Seatiger, Sparklend, Cattef, Sparkon Caning, Scaffeedel, Norton, Standerweeke, France,	Wethird J. Aly. Whatlye, From. Wheathill Whinte.
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempfton.	Ratie. Swalyf. Kings Brumpeon, Stating BRY TO N. Beat. Weft Buckland of 7	Bishops, Street. Conwedge,Cassing, Congreibury Wist.	S.Grorge, Port. GLASTONS V RY, Gla Gotebatil Addry. Grenham, Malars. Greenham, Malars. Greenware, Chros.	Knowle, Chew. Knowle, Pitray. Knowle, Sanchpe. Kylleidon, Northewy. Kymetun, Hersibr.	Norton Ferris, Norton, Numnye, From. Nyland hall, Wells, Nyland hall, Wells, Nynhead, Teast,	Someron eny deer. Somharpe, Southers, Sparklord, Catef. Sparon Caning, Stafferdel, Norton, Standerwecke, From, Scauten prior, Keyn,	Wethird J. Aly. Whatlye, From. Wheathill Whinte.
	37, Martock. 38. Winterfloake. 39. Portbury. 40. Bempfton.	Raffe, Walyf. Kings J. Pallyf. Brumpeon, J. Pallyf. BRY TO N. Beat. Weft Buckland of Z. Milaur.	Bishops, Street. Conwedge,Cassing, Congreibury Wist.	S.Gronge, Part. GLASTONS V RY, Gla Gotebath, Adderf. Guthill Here have. Greenham, Malarr. Greenware, Chew. Gregorie-toke hamer. Gregorie-toke hamer.	Kylicidon, Nersbrary, Kymetun, Havestr.	Numye, From. Nyland hill, Wellz, Nynhead, Tease.	Southerps, Southerps, Sparklord, Catef. Sparklord, Catef. Sparcon Coning. Stafferdel, Norce, Stafferdel, Norce, Stafferdel, Norce, Stafferdel, Tym, Stafferdel, Tym, Stafferdel, Tym,	Wethird J. Aly. Whatlye, From. Wheathill Whinte.
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempflon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartoliff, and	Raffe, Walyf. Kings J. Pallyf. Brumpeon, J. Pallyf. BRY TO N. Beat. Weft Buckland of Z. Milaur.	Bishops, SWist. Comwidge, Cassing. Congrebusy Wiss. Coste Tasus. Coripote Sassing. Coripote Sassing. Corton, Marchare. Cotton, Harchare. Collon, Bath.	Gotebatti, Asterj. Geethum, Maars. Geetmure, Chees. Gregorie-toke Samer. Greinton, Whatey.	Kylleidon, Northway, Kylleidon, Northway, Kymetun, florativ.	Numye, From. Nyland hill, Wellz, Nynhead, Tease.	Southarpe, Southper, Spanklord, Castef, Spancon Gening, Scaffeedel, Nortee, Scandereecke, From, Scanton prior, Kryn, Stanton drew, Kryn, Stanton drew, Kryn, Stanton drew, Kryn,	Wethird J. Aly. Whatlye, From. Wheathill Whinte.
	37, Martock. 38. Winterfloake. 39. Portbury. 40. Bempfton.	Raffe, Walyf. Kings J. Pallyf. Brumpeon, J. Pallyf. BRY TO N. Beat. Weft Buckland of Z. Milaur.	Bishops, SWist. Comwidge, Cassing. Congrebusy Wiss. Coste Tasus. Coripote Sassing. Coripote Sassing. Corton, Marchare. Cotton, Harchare. Collon, Bath.	Gotebatti, dottej, Guchill Hereform, Gerenham, Malarr, Greenware, Chewe. Gregorie-toke boom. Greanton, Whatey. H	Kylleidon, Norrheary, Kylleidon, Norrheary, Kymetun, Heveribe. L Lambroke, King.	Nutarye, From. Nyland hill, Welke, Nyland hill, Welke, Nyland A. Tasse. O Obridge, Tasse. Odcombe, Hound.	Southarpe, Southper, Spanklord, Castef, Spancon Gening, Scaffeedel, Nortee, Scandereecke, From, Scanton prior, Kryn, Stanton drew, Kryn, Stanton drew, Kryn, Stanton drew, Kryn,	Wethindly stay. Whatlye, From Wheathill, 34 hartle, Whit Rament Seache, Whitell, 35 hart. Whitell, 35 har. Whitell, 36 hart. Whitell, 36 hart. Whitell, 36 hart. Whitell, 36 hart.
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempflon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartoliff, and	Raffe, Walyf. Kings J. Pallyf. Brumpeon, J. Pallyf. BRY TO N. Beat. Weft Buckland of Z. Milaur.	Bishops, Striet. Convenience, Congrebusy Win. Coste Tawer. Coste Tawer. Coste Casesing. Coston, Wells. Coston, Harciberer. Cothe, Bario. Costolidon Tawer. Coxlen, Brio. Coxlette, Norther. Coxlette, Norther.	Gotebatti, dottej, Guchill Hereform, Gerenham, Malarr, Greenware, Chewe. Gregorie-toke boom. Greanton, Whatey. H	Kylleidon, Norrheary, Kylleidon, Norrheary, Kymetun, Heveribe. L Lambroke, King.	Nutarye, From. Nyland hil, Welke, Nylahe di, Welke, Nynhead, Tasser, O Obrioge, Tasser, Odcombe, Hound, Oke, Tasser,	Somharpe, Southers, Sparklood, Cattef, Sparklood, Cattef, Sparklood, Cattef, Sparklood, Norton, Stanton pros, Kynn, Stanton drow, Kynn, Stanton drow, Kynn, Stanton drow, Kynn, Stanton drow, Kynn, Stanton drow, Kynn, Stanton, drow, Control, Stanton, Control, Stanton, Control, Contro	Wethindly stay. Whatlye, From Wheathill, 34 hartle, Whit Rament Seache, Whitell, 35 hart. Whitell, 35 har. Whitell, 36 hart. Whitell, 36 hart. Whitell, 36 hart. Whitell, 36 hart.
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portburg. 40.Bempflon. 41.Brent. 42.Hartcliff.and Bedminster.	Ratie. Walry. Kings. Strumpcon. BRWTON, Strus. Weft Buckland of Method. Buckland & Miller. Buckland & M. Buckland & M. Buckland & M. Buckland Buckl	Bishops, Striet. Convenience, Congrebusy Win. Coste Tawer. Coste Tawer. Coste Casesing. Coston, Wells. Coston, Harciberer. Cothe, Bario. Costolidon Tawer. Coxlen, Brio. Coxlette, Norther. Coxlette, Norther.	Gotebatti, dottej, Guchill Hereform, Gerenham, Malarr, Greenware, Chewe. Gregorie-toke boom. Greanton, Whatey. H	Kylietdon, Norsheny, Kymetun, Havatir, L Lambroke, King, Lamvat, Wikit, Langford & Phinny, buduile, Spanya	Nutarye, From. Nyland hil, Welke, Nylahe di, Welke, Nynhead, Tasser, O Obrioge, Tasser, Odcombe, Hound, Oke, Tasser,	Somharpe, Southers, Spanklend, Catter, Spanklend, Catter, Spanklende, Notice, Standernecke, Frans, Stanton drew Rejne, Stanton Marier, Stanton Marier, Stanton Marier,	Wethindly stay. Whatlye, From Wheathill, 34 hartle, Whit Rament Seache, Whitell, 35 hart. Whitell, 35 har. Whitell, 36 hart. Whitell, 36 hart. Whitell, 36 hart. Whitell, 36 hart.
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempfon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartcliff, and Bedminster.	Raffe, Whyf, Kimge J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Bockland et Maluer, North Cu. hundred. Buckland & M. Burcontbe lodge, Braz. Burcontbe lodge, Braz.	Bishops, Striet. Convenience, Congrebusy Win. Coste Tawer. Coste Tawer. Coste Casesing. Coston, Wells. Coston, Harciberer. Cothe, Bario. Costolidon Tawer. Coxlen, Brio. Coxlette, Norther. Coxlette, Norther.	Gotebatti, dottej, Guchill Hereform, Gerenham, Malarr, Greenware, Chewe. Gregorie-toke boom. Greanton, Whatey. H	Kylietdon, Norsheny, Kymetun, Havatir, L Lambroke, King, Lamvat, Wikit, Langford & Phinny, buduile, Spanya	Nutarye, From. Nyland hil, Welke, Nylahe di, Welke, Nynhead, Tasser, O Obrioge, Tasser, Odcombe, Hound, Oke, Tasser,	Somharpe, Souther, Sparklend Catter, Sparklend Catter, Sparkon Cassing, Stafferde, Norten, Standersvecke, From, Stanton prior, Kryn, Stanton drew Kryn, Stanton drew Kryn, Stapleton, Kanne, Stapleton, Kanne, K	wennome_ctal_ wethindlysub_ wethindlysub_ whattle_from Wheathli_general whintellysub_ whintellysub_ lackington, Whitebaseb_Well_ lackington, Whitebaseb_Well_ whitebaseb_Great winden_from wick_Breat winden_from wick_Breat winden_from wick_Breat winden_from wick_Breat winden_from wick_Breat winden_from wind
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempfon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartcliff, and Bedminster.	Raffe, Whyf, Kimge J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Bockland et Maluer, North Cu. hundred. Buckland & M. Burcontbe lodge, Braz. Burcontbe lodge, Braz.	Bithops, Strine. Commodized maning. Congretionsy Wiss. Cost Tenure. Costroots descript. Costroots descript. Coston, Wells. Coston, Harriburne. Cothan, Barth. Coston, Harriburne. Costroots, Norther. Veelt Cramons, Estl. Zulie.	Gotebatti, dottej, Guchill Hereform, Gerenham, Malarr, Greenware, Chewe. Gregorie-toke boom. Greanton, Whatey. H	Kylietdon, Norsheny, Kymetun, Havatir, L Lambroke, King, Lamvat, Wikit, Langford & Phinny, buduile, Spanya	Numary Frees, Nyland hill, Welks, Odcombe, Jinsuel, Odcombe, Jinsuel, Orband, Caudeg, Orchand, Frees, Orchand, Frees, Orchand, Frees, Orchand, Frees, Orchand, Server, Orchand, Serve	Somharpe, Souther, Sparklend Catter, Sparklend Catter, Sparkon Cassing, Stafferde, Norten, Standersvecke, From, Stanton prior, Kryn, Stanton drew Kryn, Stanton drew Kryn, Stapleton, Kanne, Stapleton, Kanne, K	Wennoune, Graf, Wethhall, Stab, Whatly, From Wheathal, Stanta, White Manager White Manager Hackington, Jakkington, Whiteharch Strate,
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempfon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartcliff, and Bedminster.	Raffe, Whyf, Kimge J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Bockland et Maluer, North Cu. hundred. Buckland & M. Burcontbe lodge, Braz. Burcontbe lodge, Braz.	Bithops, Strine. Commodized maning. Congretionsy Wiss. Cost Tenure. Costroots descript. Costroots descript. Coston, Wells. Coston, Harriburne. Cothan, Barth. Coston, Harriburne. Costroots, Norther. Veelt Cramons, Estl. Zulie.	Gotebatti, dottej, Guchill Hereform, Gerenham, Malarr, Greenware, Chewe. Gregorie-toke boom. Greanton, Whatey. H	Knower passings. Kylletdon, Northemy, Kymetun, Hwente. Lambroke, King, Lamrat, Whit. Langford Phinay. bodule, Langford Phinay. Langradge, Whit, Langradge, Reth. Lautron, Free.	Numnye, Frow. Nyland hill, Wells, Nyland hill, Wells, Nylands, Teaser, O Obridge, Teaser, Ode, Teaser, Orthard, Teaser, Orthard, Carsing, Ortherdy, From, Ortherdy, From, Ortherdoy, From, Ortherdoy,	Somharpe, Souther, Sparklend Catter, Sparklend Catter, Sparkon Cassing, Stafferde, Norten, Standersvecke, From, Stanton prior, Kryn, Stanton drew Kryn, Stanton drew Kryn, Stapleton, Kanne, Stapleton, Kanne, K	Wennoune, Graf, Wethhall, Stab, Whatly, From Wheathal, Stanta, White Manager White Manager Hackington, Jakkington, Whiteharch Strate,
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempfon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartcliff, and Bedminster.	Raffe, Whyf, Kimge J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Bockland et Maluer, North Cu. hundred. Buckland & M. Burcontbe lodge, Braz. Burcontbe lodge, Braz.	Bithops, Strine. Commodized maning. Congretionsy Wiss. Cost Tenure. Costroots descript. Costroots descript. Coston, Wells. Coston, Harriburne. Cothan, Barth. Coston, Harriburne. Costroots, Norther. Veelt Cramons, Estl. Zulie.	Gotebatti, dottej, Guchill Hereform, Gerenham, Malarr, Greenware, Chewe. Gregorie-toke boom. Greanton, Whatey. H	Knower passings. Kylletdon, Northemy, Kymetun, Hwente. Lambroke, King, Lamrat, Whit. Langford Phinay. bodule, Langford Phinay. Langradge, Whit, Langradge, Reth. Lautron, Free.	Numnye, Frow. Nyland hill, Wells, Nyland hill, Wells, Nylands, Teaser, O Obridge, Teaser, Ode, Teaser, Orthard, Teaser, Orthard, Carsing, Ortherdy, From, Ortherdy, From, Ortherdoy, From, Ortherdoy,	Somharpe, Souther, Sparklend Catter, Sparklend Catter, Sparkon Cassing, Stafferde, Norten, Standersvecke, From, Stanton prior, Kryn, Stanton drew Kryn, Stanton drew Kryn, Stapleton, Kanne, Stapleton, Kanne, K	Wennoune, Graf, Wethhall, Stab, Whatly, From Wheathal, Stanta, White Manager White Manager Hackington, Jakkington, Whiteharch Strate,
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempfon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartcliff, and Bedminster.	Raffe, Whyf, Kimge J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Bockland et Maluer, North Cu. hundred. Buckland & M. Burcontbe lodge, Braz. Burcontbe lodge, Braz.	Bildony, SWeet. Converted Conservation Converted Conservation Control Teams, Corify Conservation Corfor, Walley Corron , Harrishme, Corton Bellow Corton , Bellow Corton b	Gottbattl Josep; Gottbattl Josep; Green He Josep Green He Josep Green He Josep Grein He Josep Grein He Josep Hallon Haddon Joseph Hallon Joseph Hallon Hallo	Knower, pasteger, Kylletdon, Novelenry, Kymetun, frierite. Lambroke, King, Lamvar, Wikir. Langford, budule & Pirmy. LANG PORT, PRM Langridge, Willy. Langridge, Rand. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Face. Laure	Numye, From, Nyland hall, Welle, Nyland hall, Welle, Nylandes, Tanne, Odcombe, France, Odcombe, France, Orband, Tanne, Orband, Tanne, Orband, France, Outcrifeed, France, Outc	Southarpe, Santéper, Spatkerd, Catef , Standard, Catef , C	wentome, t-rig. Wenhull, t-rig. Whenhull, st-rig. Whenhull, st-rig. Whenhull, st-rig. Whenhull, st-rig. White start, see by. Wike, star
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempfon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartcliff, and Bedminster.	Raffe, Whyf, Kimge J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Bockland et Maluer, North Cu. hundred. Buckland & M. Burcontbe lodge, Braz. Burcontbe lodge, Braz.	Bildony, SWeet. Converted Conservation Converted Conservation Control Teams, Corify Conservation Corfor, Walley Corron , Harrishme, Corton Bellow Corton , Bellow Corton b	Gottbatt Joseph Gerham Janes Grein Hare John Green Green and John Green Green and Joseph Green G	Knower, pasteger, Kylletdon, Novelenry, Kymetun, frierite. Lambroke, King, Lamvar, Wikir. Langford, budule & Pirmy. LANG PORT, PRM Langridge, Willy. Langridge, Rand. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Face. Laure	Numye, From, Nyland hall, Welle, Nyland hall, Welle, Nylandes, Tanne, Odcombe, France, Odcombe, France, Orband, Tanne, Orband, Tanne, Orband, France, Outcrifeed, France, Outc	Southarpe, Santéper, Spatkerd, Catef , Standard, Catef , C	Westhould yearly. Weshbull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White yearly. White yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Williams yearly.
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempfon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartcliff, and Bedminster.	Raffe, Whyf, Kimge J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Bockland et Maluer, North Cu. hundred. Buckland & M. Burcontbe lodge, Braz. Burcontbe lodge, Braz.	Bildony, SWeet. Converted Conservation Converted Conservation Control Teams, Corify Conservation Corfor, Walley Corron , Harrishme, Corton Bellow Corton , Bellow Corton b	Gottbatt Joseph Gerham Janes Grein Hare John Green Green and John Green Green and Joseph Green G	Knower, pasteger, Kylletdon, Novelenry, Kymetun, frierite. Lambroke, King, Lamvar, Wikir. Langford, budule & Pirmy. LANG PORT, PRM Langridge, Willy. Langridge, Rand. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Face. Laure	Numye, From, Nyland hall, Welle, Nyland hall, Welle, Nylandes, Tanne, Odcombe, France, Odcombe, France, Orband, Tanne, Orband, Tanne, Orband, France, Outcrifeed, France, Outc	Southarpe, Santéper, Spatkerd, Catef , Standard, Catef , C	Westhould yearly. Weshbull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White yearly. White yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Williams yearly.
	37.Martock. 38.Winterfloake. 39.Portbury. 40.Bempfon. 41.Brent. 41.Hartcliff, and Bedminster.	Raffe, Whyf, Kimge J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Birwycen J. Whyf, Bockland et Maluer, North Cu. hundred. Buckland & M. Burcontbe lodge, Braz. Burcontbe lodge, Braz.	Bishops, SiVeet, Converted Cameric, Congression What Contained Cameric, Congression What Contained Contain	Gottbatt Joseph Gottlebutt Joseph James Greenham, Johnson Greenham, Norskeny, Halfen, Johnson, Norsea, Halton, Norsea, Halton, Norsea, Halton, Norsea, Halton, Cheman, Greenham, Greenham, Hampton, Cheman, Hampton, Cheman, Hampton, Cheman, Hampton, Greenham, Hampton, Cheman, Hampton, Johnson, Hampton, Hampton, Linken,	Knower, pasteger, Kylletdon, Novelenry, Kymetun, frierite. Lambroke, King, Lamvar, Wikir. Langford, budule & Pirmy. LANG PORT, PRM Langridge, Willy. Langridge, Rand. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Face. Laure	Numye, From, Nyland hall, Welle, Nyland hall, Welle, Nylandes, Tanne, Odcombe, France, Odcombe, France, Orband, Tanne, Orband, Tanne, Orband, France, Outcrifeed, France, Outc	Southarpe, Santéper, Spatkerd, Catef , Standard, Catef , C	Westhould yearly. Weshbull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White yearly. White yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Williams yearly.
	17, Martisk, 18, Winterlinake, 19, Portbury, 40, Bemylon, 41, Hanchiff, and Bedminfler, Abbas Humbana, Gombo, Albotton, Albott	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gontbatt Joseph Gontbatt Gontbatt Joseph James Jones Gontbatt Joseph Gontbatt Gregories College Joseph Halica Gontbatt Gontbatt John John John John John John John John	Knower, pasteger, Kylletdon, Novelenry, Kymetun, frierite. Lambroke, King, Lamvar, Wikir. Langford, budule & Pirmy. LANG PORT, PRM Langridge, Willy. Langridge, Rand. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Frees. Laureton, Face. Laure	Numary e, From, Nyland hai, Welle, Nyland hai, Welle, Nyland hai, Welle, Nyland hai, Welle, Obringe, Innam. Odcom be, Manuel. Octom be, Manuel. Ork, Tansur, Orkende, From, Orchard, From, Orchard, From, Orchard, From, Orthology, From, Orthology, From, Outer Control of the Control Outer Control Ou	Southarpe, Santéper, Spatkerd, Catef , Standard, Catef , C	Westhould yearly. Weshbull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White yearly. White yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Williams yearly.
	17, Martisk, 18, Winterlinake, 19, Portbury, 40, Bemylon, 41, Hanchiff, and Bedminfler, Abbas Humbana, Gombo, Albotton, Albott	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gonzbertt Johnson Gonzbertt Johnson Gentlitten State Gregorie-toke been Gregorie-toke Haddon, Norma Hamton, Norma Hamton, Chennan Hamton Chenn	knower, passing in Kyllerdon, Norriker, Kyllerdon, Norriker, Lambroke, King, Lamrat, Wider, Langred & Piteny, Langred & Piteny, Langred & Piteny, Langredge, Bank, Laureton, Free Laureton, Free	Numary e, From, Nyland hai, Welle, Nyland hai, Welle, Nyland hai, Welle, Nyland hai, Welle, Obringe, Innam. Odcom be, Manuel. Octom be, Manuel. Ork, Tansur, Orkende, From, Orchard, From, Orchard, From, Orchard, From, Orthology, From, Orthology, From, Outer Control of the Control Outer Control Ou	Sombary, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Sipaikard, Catarf Spyrkon Cassing, Sunderteekee, Fram, Sausteen prion, Jiyar, Sausteen prion, Jiyar, Sausteen dewar, Sausteen dewar, Sausteen dewar, Sausteen dewar, Sausteen dewar, Sausteen dewar, Sausteen deward, Cassing, Sausteen deward, Sausteen dewar	Westhould yearly. Weshbull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. When bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White bull yearly. White yearly. White yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Wide yearly. Williams yearly.
	17, Martisk, 18, Winterlinake, 19, Portbury, 40, Bemylon, 41, Hanchiff, and Bedminfler, Abbas Humbana, Gombo, Albotton, Albott	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gonzbertt Johnson Gonzbertt Johnson Gentlitten State Gregorie-toke been Gregorie-toke Haddon, Norma Hamton, Norma Hamton, Chennan Hamton Chenn	Notice passes of the control of the	Neury, From, Nyinad hai, Yedia, Odeonise, Jiamad, Odeonise, Odeonise, Newith Monad, Parret, Bin.Northys, North Monad, Parret, Parret, Jiamad, Parret, Jiamad, Parret, Jiamad, Ji	Sombary, Sawlyn, Sawly	westenhale of one was a constraint of the was a constr
	17, Marish, 28, Winterlinke, 39, Porthury, 40, Bempfen, 41, Brett, 41, Harschiff, and Bedminfter, 45th, Abbas 2 Herminns, Allicaton Mysty, Advisord Williams, Allicaton Wysty, Advisord Wysty, Allicaton Wysty, Allicaton Wysty, Allicaton Geograph, Allicaton Wysty, Allicaton Geograph, Alli	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gonzbertt Johnson Gonzbertt Johnson Gentlitten State Gregorie-toke been Gregorie-toke Haddon, Norma Hamton, Norma Hamton, Chennan Hamton Chenn	Notice passes of the control of the	Neury, From, Nyinad hai, Yedia, Odeonise, Jiamad, Odeonise, Odeonise, Newith Monad, Parret, Bin.Northys, North Monad, Parret, Parret, Jiamad, Parret, Jiamad, Parret, Jiamad, Ji	Sombary, Sawlyn, Sawly	westenhale of one was a constraint of the was a constr
	37, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Porthury, 40, Bempfen, 41, Brent, 41, Harreliff, and Bedminfer, 41, Harreliff, and Bedminfer, 41, Harreliff, and Abbash & Humbara. Alloha Catter, Marcan Wood, 13, Marish Langung, 14, Marish Lang	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gonzbertt Johnson Gonzbertt Johnson Gentlitten State Gregorie-toke been Gregorie-toke Haddon, Norma Hamton, Norma Hamton, Chennan Hamton Chenn	Anomy Janes Bernery, Rymeinen, Hernite Lament, King, K	Nonpry, From Manda Ling Wilde, Nyinden Ling Wilde, Nyinden Ling Wilde, Nyinden Ling Wilde, Nyinden Ling Wilde, O Obninge, Tanni O October James P Paret Bis Northipe, Paret Bis Northipe, Paret Bis Northipe, Paret Bis Northipe, Paret James	Sombary, Sawlyn, Sawly	Westlands Soil, Whally French Whally French Whally French Whend John Whend Jo
	37, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Porthury, 40, Bempfen, 41, Brent, 41, Harreliff, and Bedminfer, 41, Harreliff, and Bedminfer, 41, Harreliff, and Abbash & Humbara. Alloha Catter, Marcan Wood, 13, Marish Langung, 14, Marish Lang	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gundenti Joseph Greenham, Malare Greenham, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Hadeon Lagrily, beauton, Jordan, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, H	A Control and Cont	Nestry, From Market Nestry, From Market Nestry, From Market Nestry, Nestry, From Market Nestry, From Marke	Sconbary, Sawiyar, Sa	Weshinds of the Whole of the Weshinds of the W
	37, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Porthury, 40, Bempfen, 41, Brent, 41, Harreliff, and Bedminfer, 41, Harreliff, and Bedminfer, 41, Harreliff, and Abbash & Humbara. Alloha Catter, Marcan Wood, 13, Marish Langung, 14, Marish Lang	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gundenti Joseph Greenham, Malare Greenham, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Hadeon Lagrily, beauton, Jordan, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, H	A Control and Cont	Nestry, From Miller Nytherd, Trans. October Odcombe, Minad Oler, Trans. Oler, Trans. Oler, Minad Oler, Trans. Part. P	Sconbary, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiya	Weshinds of the Whole of the Weshinds of the W
	37, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Marish, 13, Porthury, 40, Bempfen, 41, Brent, 41, Harreliff, and Bedminfer, 41, Harreliff, and Bedminfer, 41, Harreliff, and Abbash & Humbara. Alloha Catter, Marcan Wood, 13, Marish Langung, 14, Marish Lang	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gundenti Joseph Greenham, Malare Greenham, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Hadeon Lagrily, beauton, Jordan, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, H	A Control and Cont	Nestry, From Miller Nytherd, Trans. October Odcombe, Minad Oler, Trans. Oler, Trans. Oler, Minad Oler, Trans. Part. P	Sconbary, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiya	Weshinds of the Whole of the Weshinds of the W
	37, Mariok (2), 37, Mariok (2), 37, Mariok (2), 39, Porthwry, 40, Henricht (2), 37, Porthwry, 41, Henricht (2), 41, Henr	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gundenti Joseph Greenham, Malare Greenham, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Hadeon Lagrily, beauton, Jordan, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, H	A Control and Cont	Nestry, From Miller Nytherd, Trans. October Odcombe, Minad Oler, Trans. Oler, Trans. Oler, Minad Oler, Trans. Part. P	Sconbary, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiyar, Canaga, Sawiyar, Sawiya	Weshinds of the Whole of the Weshinds of the W
	37, Mariok 8, 38, Winterlinke, 39, Forthury, 40, Bempflen, 41, Brent, 41, Brent, 41, Brent, 5, and Bedminfler, 41, Brent, 5, and Bedminfler, 41, Brent, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gundenti Joseph Greenham, Malare Greenham, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Hadeon Lagrily, beauton, Jordan, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, H	A Control and Cont	Nestry, From Miller Nytherd, Trans. October Odcombe, Minad Oler, Trans. Oler, Trans. Oler, Minad Oler, Trans. Part. P	Sconburg, Sawiyar, Sa	Weightight 2003. While I was a series of the
	37, Mariok 8, 38, Winterlinke, 39, Forthury, 40, Bempflen, 41, Brent, 41, Brent, 41, Brent, 5, and Bedminfler, 41, Brent, 5, and Bedminfler, 41, Brent, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gundenti Joseph Greenham, Malare Greenham, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Hadeon Lagrily, beauton, Jordan, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, H	A Control and Cont	Nestry, From Miller Nytherd, Trans. October Odcombe, Minad Oler, Trans. Oler, Trans. Oler, Minad Oler, Trans. Part. P	Sconburg, Sawiyar, Sa	Weightight 2003. While I was a series of the
	37, Mariok 8, 38, Winterlinke, 39, Forthury, 40, Bempflen, 41, Brent, 41, Brent, 41, Brent, 5, and Bedminfler, 41, Brent, 5, and Bedminfler, 41, Brent, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gundenti Joseph Greenham, Malare Greenham, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Hadeon Lagrily, beauton, Jordan, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, H	A Control and Cont	Northery, From Man. Northery, From Man. Northery, From Man. Northery, Trans. Other States and Man. Northery, From Orcherley, From Penalter, From Penalte	Sconburg, Sawiyar, Sa	Weightight 2003. While I was a series of the
	37, Mariok 8, 38, Winterlinke, 39, Forthury, 40, Bempflen, 41, Brent, 41, Brent, 41, Brent, 5, and Bedminfler, 41, Brent, 5, and Bedminfler, 41, Brent, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61, 61	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gundenti Joseph Greenham, Malare Greenham, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Hadeon Lagrily, beauton, Jordan, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, H	A Control and Cont	Northery, From Man. Northery, From Man. Northery, From Man. Northery, Trans. Other States and Man. Northery, From Orcherley, From Penalter, From Penalte	Sconburg, Sawiyar, Sa	Weightight 2003. While I was a series of the
	13, Mest eight, 24, Mest eight, 25, Mest eight, 25, Mest eight, 26, Mest eight	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Gundenti Joseph Greenham, Malare Greenham, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Greenbam, Malare Hadeon Lagrily, beauton, Jordan, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, Hadeon Lagrily, H	A Control and Cont	Northery Journal, Synthesis, Journal, October, Journal, Other, Journal, Journal, Other, Journal, Journal, Other, Johnson, Othe	Sconbarry, Cambry, Tambry, Tam	Weightight 2003. While I was a series of the
	3, Mest eight, and a state of the state of t	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Guedenit "Geberg. Greenban, Aldur. Haddon J. Sprijk, Ha	According to the control of the cont	Northery Journal, Synthesis, Journal, October, Journal, Other, Journal, Journal, Other, Journal, Journal, Other, Johnson, Othe	Sconbarry, Cambry, Tambry, Tam	Weight Jacob A. Wheeler J. Common J.
	3, Mest eight, and a state of the state of t	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Condensity of the Control of the Con	Schlieden Australian Schrieben	Symbol James. Symbol James. Ohiologe, Tames. Parket, Tam	isoulteps; familyon; famil	Weight Jacob Wheel Committee Committ
	3, Mest eight, and a state of the state of t	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Condensity of the Control of the Con	Schlieden Australian Schrieben	Symbol James. Symbol James. Ohiologe, Tames. Parket, Tam	isoulteps; familyon; famil	weightlijd of he was a state of the state of
	3, Mest eight, and a state of the state of t	Reinfe, Johnson, S. Weinfe, Mings, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Brampeco, S. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, Branchen, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David, C. Weinfe, David	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Condensity of the Control of the Con	Schlieden Australian Schrieben	South Part Man, South Part Man	analyses, leadings, leadin	Weight Jacob Weigh
	3, Mest eight, and a state of the state of t	Rufer - March	Bishops, SiVeet, Converged, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Congressor, Cameria, Corfoon, Wells,	Condensity of the Control of the Con	Sylvation, James P. Sylvation, John S. Sandari, S. San	Street Street,	analyses, leadings, leadin	Weight Jacob Weigh
	13, Mest eight, 24, Mest eight, 25, Mest eight, 25, Mest eight, 26, Mest eight	Marie J. Mary	Thirting, 2 lively, and the control of the control	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances His Station His His Station His His Station His	Sylvation, James P. Sylvation, John S. Sandari, S. San	Street Street,	analyses, leadings, leadin	Weight Jacob Weigh
	3, Mest eight, and a state of the state of t	Marie J. Mary	Thirting, 2 lively, and the control of the control	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances His Station His His Station His His Station His	Sylvation, James P. Sylvation, John S. Sandari, S. San	Street Street,	analyses, leadings, leadin	Weight Jacob Weigh
	7, Advantable, 28, Warnerfalle, 28, Warnerfalle, 28, Warnerfalle, 29, Warnerfalle, 20, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Emp	Marie J. Mary	Thirting, 2 lively, and the control of the control	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances His Station His His Station His His Station His	Sylvation, James P. Sylvation, John S. Sandari, S. San	Street Street,	analyses, leadings, leadin	Weight Jacob Weigh
	7, Advantable, 28, Warnerfalle, 28, Warnerfalle, 28, Warnerfalle, 29, Warnerfalle, 20, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Emp	Marie J. Mary	Thirting, 2 lively, and the control of the control	Continuation of the contin	Sylvation, James P. Sylvation, John S. Sandari, S. San	Street Street,	analyses, leadings, leadin	Weight Jacob Weigh
	7, Advantable, 28, Warnerfalle, 28, Warnerfalle, 28, Warnerfalle, 29, Warnerfalle, 20, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Errent, 24, Empfen, 41, Emp	Marie J. Mary	Thirting, 2 lively, and the control of the control	Continuation of the contin	Sylvation, James P. Sylvation, John S. Sandari, S. San	Street Street,	analyses, leadings, leadin	Weight Jacob Weigh
	7, Advantabaye, 3, Warnerlandy, 3, Warnerlandy, 4, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 6, Warnerlandy	Rufer - March	Tarkon, 2 Percentago de la competito per activa de la competito del competito de la competito del c	Continuation of the contin	Sylvation, James P. Sylvation, John S. Sandari, S. San	Street Street,	analyses, beautings, and analyses, analyses, and analyses, and analyses, and analyses, and analyses, analyses, and analyses, and analyses, and analyses, analyses, analyses, and analyses,	www.inhilator.jo. www.inhilato
	7, Advantabaye, 3, Warnerlandy, 3, Warnerlandy, 4, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 6, Warnerlandy	Rufer - March	Tarkon, 2 Percentago de la competito per activa de la competito del competito de la competito del c	Continuation of the contin	Sylvation, James P. Sylvation, John S. Sandari, S. San	Street Street,	analyses, beautings, and analyses, analyses, and analyses, and analyses, and analyses, and analyses, analyses, and analyses, and analyses, and analyses, analyses, analyses, and analyses,	www.inhilator.jo. www.inhilato
	7, Advantabaye, 3, Warnerlandy, 3, Warnerlandy, 4, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 6, Warnerlandy	Rufer - March	The first of the control of the cont	Continuity and the continuity an	Sylvation, James P. Sylvation, John S. Sandari, S. San	Street Street,	analyses, beautings, and analyses, analyses, and analyses, and analyses, and analyses, and analyses, analyses, and analyses, and analyses, and analyses, analyses, analyses, and analyses,	www.inhilator.jo. www.inhilato
	7, Advantabaye, 3, Warnerlandy, 3, Warnerlandy, 4, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 6, Warnerlandy	Rufer J. Sarby, S. Sarby,	Thirtim, 2 lively, and the control of the control o	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Included To the Cons	Sylvinian James P. Symman Jame	Street of the control	analyses for all some services of the services	Weight Jacob Weigh
	7, Advantabaye, 3, Warnerlandy, 3, Warnerlandy, 4, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 5, Warnerlandy, 6, Warnerlandy	Rufer J. Sarby, S. Sarby,	Thirtim, 2 lively, and the control of the control o	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Included To the Cons	Sylvinian James P. Symman Jame	Street of the control	analyses for all some services of the services	Weight Jacob Weigh
	7, Advanced Labor. S. Warnerfold Labor. S. Warnerfo	Rufer J. Sarby, S. Sarby,	Thirtim, 2 lively, and the control of the control o	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Included To the Cons	Sylvinian James P. Symman Jame	Street Street,	analyses for all some services of the services	www.inhilator.jo. www.inhilato
	7, Aderstein Age S. Wanterfacky S. Wanterfack S. Wanter	Rufer J. Sarby, S. Sarby,	Thirtim, 2 lively, and the control of the control o	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Included To the Cons	Sylvinian James P. Symman Jame	Souther French and State of the Control of the Cont	analyses for all some of the control	weightlijzeig. Weight
	7, Aderstein Age S. Wanterfacky S. Wanterfack S. Wanter	Rufer J. Sarby, S. Sarby,	Thirtim, 2 lively, and the control of the control o	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Included To the Cons	Sylvinian James P. Symman Jame	Souther French and State of the Control of the Cont	analyses, bendings, bendin	weightlijzeig. Weight
	7, Advanced Labor. 28, Wannerfunder, 28, Wannerfunder, 20, Brangfunder, 21, Brant, 21, B	Rufer J. Sarby, S. Sarby,	Tarkon, Silver, Corporation State of Control	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Included To the Cons	Sylvinian James P. Symman Jame	Souther French and State of the Control of the Cont	analyses, bendings, bendin	weightlijzeig. Weight
	7, Advanced Labor. 28, Wannerfunder, 28, Wannerfunder, 20, Brangfunder, 21, Brant, 21, B	Rufer J. Sarby, S. Sarby,	Tarkon, Silver, Corporation State of Control	Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Constitution Advances Included To the Cons	Sylvation Authority (Symmetry Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Symmetry Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority Authority (A	Souther French and State of the Control of the Cont	analyses, facility, and a service of the property of the prope	weightlijzeig. Weight
	7, Aderstein Age S. Wanterfacky S. Wanterfack S. Wanter	Rufer - March	Thirtim, 2 lively, and the control of the control o	Continuity and the continuity an	Sylvinian James P. Symman Jame	Street Street,	analyses, leadings, and a second property of the property of t	Weight Jacob Weigh



yea and that with varietie.

reuenew to their owners.

Ilt-shire, in the ancient English-Saxon written wilreco, is enclosed upon the North with Glocellerfbire, vpon the East is bounded with Bark-fbire, vpon the South with Dorfet and Hamp-fbire, and vpon the West is confronted against partly

VVILT-SHIRE.

by Glocester, and the rest by Somer set-shires. (2) The forme thereof is both long and broad; for from Inglesham vpon Thamists in the North, to Eurgat Damarum in the South, are thirty nine miles: the broadest part is from Buttermer Eastward, to the Shire-flones in the West, being twenty nine; the whole in circumference is one hundred thirty nine miles. (3) For aire, it is seated in a temperate Climate,

both sweet, pleasant, and wholesome; and for soile

(faith Iohn of Sarisbury) is exceeding fertile and plentifull,

of sheepe, whose sleeces and flesh bring in an yeerely

(5) Anciently this County was pofferfed by the

future greatnesse were in these parts first laid by his many victories ouer the Britaines. And herein furely the Romans Scated; for besides Yanesburie Trench, by

Tradition held to be his, in many other Forts in this

Shire the tract of their footing hath beene left, and

the stamped Coines of their Emperours found, an

(6) After them the West-Saxons made it a part of

their Kingdome, whose border was Auon, as witnes-

feth Athelward, though the Mercians many times en-

apparant testimonie of their abode,

The sire. In his Polycra-

The ancient

(4) The Northerne part, which they call North-Wilt-fire, rifeth vp into delectable hilles, attired with North-Willhire. large Woods, and watered with cleere Rivers, wherof Ifs is one, which soone becommeth the most famous in the Land. The South part is more euen, yeelding abundantly graffe and corne, and is made the more fruitfull by the Rivers Well, Adder, and Auon. The midst of this County is most plaine, and thereby is knowne and commonly called Salesburie Salesburg Plaines. Plaines; and lie so levell indeed, that it doth limit the Horizon: for hardly can a man see from the one side to the other. These Plaines grase an infinite number

The ancient Belg., who are feated by Ptolemie in Hampfhire, Somer-fet-fbire, and in this Tract; and they (as it feemeth by people. . Cafar) were of the Belga in Gaul. Their (as some hold) were fubdued by Velpajian, Lieutenant of the second Legion under Claudius, when the foundations of his Velbellen Lieus

Wanfdike.

King Ceaulin.

King Ina.

King Elfred.

Calite. A Synod about

croched vpon them, whereby many great Battles, as Malmesbury tels vs, betwixt them were fought, when in the young yeeres of their Heptarchie each fought to enlarge his, by the leffening of the next : but growne vnto more ripenesse, they assigned their limits by a great and long dirch crossing thorow the middest of these plaines, which for the wonder thereof is suppofed by the vulgar to be the worke of the Divell, and is called of all, Wan dike, vndoubtedly of woden, the Saxons Ancestor and great reputed God, where a little village yet standeth, and retaineth to name Wodensburg. At this place in Anno 590. Ceaulin the West-Saxon received such a foile of the Britaines and his Country-men, that he was forced to forfake his kingdome, and to end his daics in exile, becomming a piti full spectacle euen vnto his enemies, And in this place In a the West-Saxon joined battle with Ceolred the Mereian, whence both of them departed with equal losse. The like was at Bradford by Kenilwach and Cuthred; at Wilton, betwixt Egbert and Beornwolfe ; at Edindon where King Elfred was vanquisher of the Danes; and at Wilton, where the Danes wonne the day against him. With as bloudy successe, though not happening by fword, was the iffue of that Synod affembled at Calne a finall Towne in this County, in the yeere of Christ Icsus 977. where being hotly debating for the single life, and against the mariages of the Clergy, what wan-

ted by the word to proue their divorce, was supplied by a Stratagem, and that very bloudy; for fuddenly A pitiful mithap. the maine timber brake, and downe fell the floore with the Nobles and Prelates, the Gentlemen and Commons, whereby a great number were hurr, and many more flaine, onely Dunflan the Prefident and Dunflan Prefimouth for the Monkes, escaped vntouched, the joist des whereon his Chaire food remaining most firme: which confirmed the fentence of their feparations, whom God had conjoined, and became the fall and fnare of much incontinencie in both Sexes,

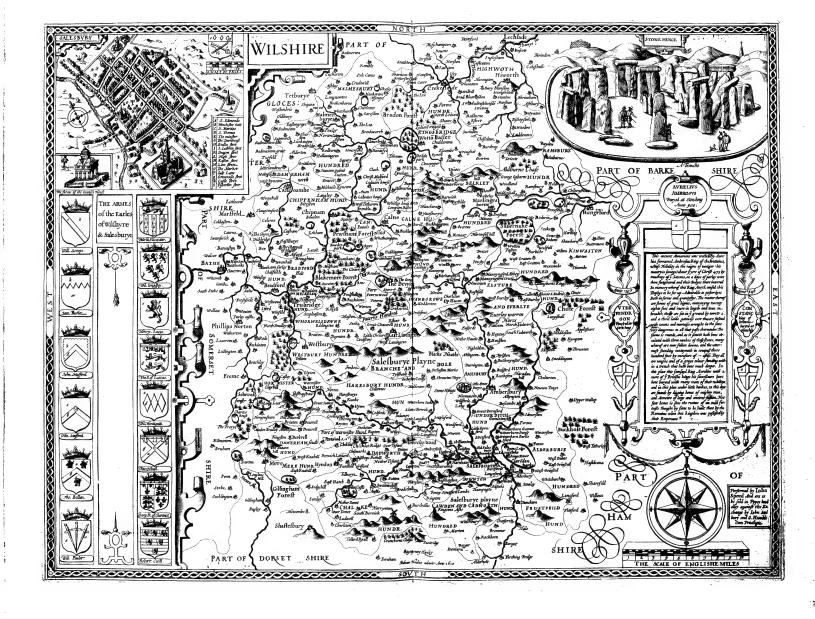
(7) The chiefest City of this Shire is Salesburie, Salesbury the remooued from a higher, but a farre more convenient chiefe Towne. place; whose want of water was not so great in the morker, as is supplied and replenished in the daughter, every fireet almost having a River running thorow her middeft; and for sumptuous and delicate buildings is inferiour to none. The Cathedrall, a most rich magnificent Church, was begun by Richard Church Poore Bishop, and with forty yeeres continuance was raised to her perfect beauty: wherein are as many windowes as there are daies in the yeere, as many cast pillars of marble as there are houres in the yeer, & as many Gates for entrace as there are monthes in the yeere Neither doth this City retaine true honor to her felfe. but imparteth hers, and receiveth honor from others. who are intituled Earles of Salesbury, whereof eight noble Families have beene dignified fince the Normans Conquest, and now is enjoied by that most wife and loyall Counsellor Robert Cecill, Lord High Trea- The Earle of furer of England, and the worthy Patron of the place whereof my felfe am a member. This Cities fituation is in the degree of Latitude 51.10. minutes, and from the first west-point observed by Mercator, 18. degrees and 31. minutes of Longitude.

(8) Ouer this, old Salesbury fleweth it felfe, where old Salesbury Kenrik ouercame the Britaines, and where Canuin the An Do. 553. Dane did great dammage by fire. This formerly had An.D. 1003. beene the Scat of the Romans: as likewife was Lecham, Lecham, by their Coines digged vp is apparant: fo were Brokenbridge and Colham, the Courts of the Saxon Kings. But fortune long fince hath turned her face from all thefe, as lately sheed did from many ancient and religious foundations. and religious foundations planted in this Prouince. whereof Malmesbury was the most famous. I will not with Monmouth ayouch the foundation thereof vnto Mulmutius, but by true Records from Maiculph a Scot, a man of great learning, that therein built a Cell, and lead an Hermits life, whereof Beda calleth it the City of Maidulph, and we by contraction, Maimf-bery. Adelme his disciple and successour, built heere a faire Monasterie, which Athelftan the Monarch richlie endowed, and left his body after death there to reft. Neither hath any graced this more then William her Monke, in recording to posterities the Chronicles of our Land, concerning both the Church and Common-weale, wherein himfelfe lived and wrote those

(9) Ambresburie for repute did second this, built by Alfritha, King Edgar his wife, to expiate the finne of murder which the committed youn young Edward her sonne in law, that hers might bee King. In this place Queene Eleanor, widow to King Henry the Third, renounced all royall pompe, and denoted her felfe vnto God in the habit of a Nunne, Other places erected for pietie, were at Salesburie, Lacock, Stan- Places of Relia lege, wilton, Inichurch, Farnleg, Bradftoke, Briopune, Bion and Bromhore. These grafts growne to full greatnesse, were cut downe by the Pruiner, lest the cankers thereof should infect the whole body, (as by them was alleged)and their Reuenewes bestowed voon farre berter vies, both for the bringing vp of youth, and the maintenance of estate.

(10) With eight strong Castles this County hath beene garded; in nineteene Market Townes her commodities are traded: into twenty nine Hundreds for bufineffe is divided, and in them are feated three hundred and foure Parish-Churches.

William of Mal.



The forme.

The measure,

Theaire.

The Inhabitan

26

Hundreds in

Wilt-flure.

Birchamflock, Swan.

Bluntdon brode, High

Blakemore forrest, Mele

Black heath, Blan.

The } Brad. Cleare, } Brad. Cleac, Pot.

Cleuerton, Mal

Codfords Har.

Compton, Amil

Conocke, Sinda.

Coffey great Was

Crokwood, Pot. Crofton, Kin. Crudwell, Mal.

Cumpton, Care.

Deuen, Bran, Deuerell

kingflon, I Deuerell Iangbridge, I

Deuerell, Hill

Deucrell,

Dillton War.

Ditton, Day.

Dracott, Swan.

Eafton, Por.

Elfton, Bran

Effect, High.

D

Blantdon S. Andrews, High. 1. Highworth. Boreham, War. Kingsbridge. Mangaringe. Boftombe, amef. Boftombe, amef. Bottombe, amef. Chippenham. Roudon parke, Chip. Pottern. Boxe, bip. 7. Calne. Bremble, Chip . Selkley. radicild Mal 9. Ramshury. BRADFORD, Bras 10 Knwarfton. Bradley north, Il bar. Maiden | Mer. Bradley, | Mer. Bradon fo: reft, High. 11. Eiftube. 12. Swanborne 2 Meikelham. Bratton, Well. Brembleham, Mal. Brenkworth, Mal. 14 Bradford. 15. Whorwelfdov Brigmillon.dmcf. 16, Westbury. Beixit in } Hart. 17. Warmifter. 18. Haresbury. Brockenborowe, Mal. 19. Branche. Brooke, Wift. Broughton, Brad. Brumhall, Surve. 20. Amesburyar Voderdisch Buckland, Cal. Buckland, Cal. Buckminfter, Amel. 22. Alderburie. 23. Fruftfeild. Bulford, Amsf. Bupton, Por. Eurbiche, Kin. 24. Downton. 25 Cawden-26. Danworth Burcombe Cam.
Burcombe Burcombe Burcombe Burchalke, Cam.
Burchalke, Cam.
Burdrope, King. 27 Damerhamfouth 28 Merc. 29. Chalke. Burgat } (aw. Burtford, Ald. A Abbotfton,Fr# Ablington, 4mf. Burthall, Challe. Burton hall, Males Affernnynges, Swan. Bury High. Alderbury e, Ald. Alderburne chafe, Selle Buthopfton,Ram. Alderston Frus. Butternere, Kits, Bydfton, Chip. Bynoll, Kits, Bynopiton, Deer Alderson, Chip. Alton, Amf. Alton barnes, Swan, Aluerston, Challe. Albeorth, Brad CALNE, Cal. AMBERSBURY Amesbury little, Amef. Califon Cal Calwaies houses, Dan Anfley, Dan. Afrilay, Malm. Cannaings | Pot. bishop, | Castle Excon, High. EASTI ECOMBE, Chip Afhington, Swan.
Afhton gifford, Hart.
Afhton keynes, High.
Afhton well, Wher. Cattrombe, Self. Chaldenton, King. Chaldfeld, Brad. Brode Loulke. Athton, For. Afton, Elft. Eur. } chalk. Chalke, } chalk. Chapmanflade, weft. The Chapell } chip. Afton, Mal. Attord Chip. AVBV RNE, Rem. Auon, Dem. Auon flu. Axford, Rem. Charleon Swar. Charleon, Swan, Charleon, Dow, Charleon, Mal, Cherleon, Dau, Charnhamittee, Kin. Baberfloke,Care. Badbury hil, gam. Badhampton, Srass. Badhampton, Hart. Bagúon hill, Pos. Chawdenwich, Mer. Chekefgroue, Dau. Chekerington, Amef. Cheffworth, Higo. Barbury hill, Selly. Barbury hill, Selly. Cherrington, Swam, Cherroll, Cal. Chelelbury, Elft. Cheuerell little, Swam. Barwicke } cal. Baffer, } cal. Baycliff., Hart. Cheuerell great, Swan. Chicklat, Dow. Chicklet ridge, Dan. Baydon, Rem. Baydon, # ber. Beach, Amel. Chilhampton, Braz-Beckhampton, Selk Chilmarke, Daw. The Chilternes, Har The B: acon hill, } Dass. Bedborough, Per. Bedwin great, Kin. Chilton follor, Kirt. CHIPNAM, Chip CHIPNAM, Chip, Chicken, King, Chickenye, Pot, Choldington, Amef. Cholon, Amef. Chrift malford, Dam, Bedwin little, Kin. Bemerton, Evan. Bemmerton, I'nd. Benecaz, Melk. Betwick } Bran. S. Lumes, } Bran. Chue Kw.

S Leonards Dan, Berwick 2

S Johns, 3 Challe.

Sertford Care.

Chut forrest, King.

Claringdon parke. Ald

Clack, Dam.

Clatford, Scie.

(bap.14. VVILT-SHIRE. Patney Standoth in 7 Scurron, Mer. Fifterron Ifferm Sutton benger, Mal. Sutton little, 1747, canning hund Penligh, #eff. Fisherton, Bran Fittleton, Eift. Langley burrell, chip.
Langford little, Bran. Pertwood, Wac. Sutton great, Par. Flamfton, Down,
Flittinberfton, Down,
Ford, Kin.
Fount, Cowd.
Foxley, Otal.
Freden, High.
Froxfeild, Kin. Pewfer, K. a. Pewiham forest, Chip. Swallow cliff Den Cleeuepepper, King. Steple Bran. Langtord, Fruit. Swindon, Kis. Pinnells, Por. Pitton, Ald. Platford, Ald. T
Nother | Dau.
Tefunt, | Dau.
Tefunt, | Dau.
Tefunt, | War.
great, | War.
Tetherton lucas, Chip.
Titheno Dau. Collerne Chip.
Collingborne, Kin.
Collingborn dukes, Elli. Latton, High. Lauerfloke, Ald. MARKET 3 Drefton, Selle Poole canes, Mal. Compe baffer, Care, Comerwell, Brad. Funtell geford, Dan. Funtill befrops, Mer. Fyfeild, Self. Lauington Pet. Poternewood, Pat Postern, Par. Poulthot, Melk. Powlton, High. Compton ballet, fal.
Compton chamberlaine, D.fa Lea. Mal Les, High. Lekham, Chip. Liddiard treygoze, King Garldon, Mal. Grafton welt, Kin. Punton, High. Tilbury, Dau. Tinhead, Fior, Titcombe. Kin. Thamelis flu. Liddiard High. north, High. Lighe, Brad. Lighe, Weß. Linecoton, Brad. Corlington, Hart. Corfton, M.I. Cofley little, Way. Grafton coft, Ken. The Greene, Swan. Greencham, King. Grinfteed weft, Ald. Queenes Aid. Thetherington, Har. Tokenham, King. Tollard Ryall, Chal. Querc, Care. Grinsteed east, Aid. Grittleton, Dam. Littlecote, Ramf. Littleton, What. Couldon, is her. Comefeild, Frust. CREKELADE, Hig Crowle, Bridd Groueley wood, Day. Littleton, 57947.
Littleton, 57948.
Littleton drew, Chip.
Lockering, Seile.
Longford, Salef.
Long lear, Hartef. Ramsbury, Rama RVBRIDGE, Mille Grundwell, High. Gumbledon, Ald. The Rey flu. Rodborne, High, Rodborne, Mal. North } Elf. Tudyrorth, } Elf. Tylthcad, Bran. Haifton, Dav. Rokeley, Seik. Long test, Harrey, Longnewton, Mel. Luckington, Chip. Luddington, King. Ludwell, find. Lurgefhall, Amef. Rowdon } chip. Ham, E/ft, Ham, Kin. Hampton nether, Can. Vafterne,King. Leigh Chip. Royaden, Smatt. Vicot, King. Vgford, Care. Vpton lottel, Har. Vicheiont, Swan. Rowley, Erad. Ruchefen, Amef. dampton turuyle, High. damiton, High. Dallamore, Journal Dames South.
Dantiey, Mal.
Welt Ald.
Desne, Suld.
Welt Ald.
Desne, Suld. Langford Bran. Hanging, Mal. Lushall, High. Lyncham, Kin. Lynt, High. Rundwaye, Pot. Ruihfall, Swan, Wanborowe, King, Hankeridge, 1916. Hannington, High. Haradon hill, Amef. Salesbury 7 Bram. Plaine, F Sal. SALES BVRY. М Warder caftell.Day Maddenton, Bran. Harding, Krs. Haresbury, Haref. MALMESBURY, Mal Vecke, Male. Weeke, Down, Weeke, Pot, Weeke, Pot, Weeley, Bran, Welton, Caw. WESTBVRY, Weft, alesburie, } Ald. Surron Cerv. Harnam eath, Care Manteld, J.
Mannyngford, S. Swan.
Mannyngford; S. Wan.
Mannyngford; S. Wan.
Mannyngford; S. Wan.
MARLINGS-1, Sell.
BORCE,
The Marth, Well.
Marton Dam. Sanh.
Marten Dam. Sanh. Harnam west, (am. Hartham, (bip. Hatch, Daw. Salthorp, Kis. Sauemake forest. Selle Munkiton | Dam. Sauernake toreft Sedghyll, Dau. Seene, Meik. Segarye, Mal. Semble, Chal. Westropp, High.
Westropp, High.
Westwood, Elf.
Westwood, Brad.
Westwellowe, Amef.
Wexcombe, Kin.
Whaddon, Ald. Hafelbury, Chip. Nether Eift. Brixton }Har.
Deuerell, }Har.
DEVIZES, Swan. hampton High-Vp Hauen, Savan. Haven, 5 Haxton, Elft. Heddington, Cal. Heldropp, Ramf. Helmerton, King. Seuington, Wher. Shaloome, Kis. Sharacore, High. Dichbridge, (hip. Diddingham, Amef. Didmeton, Chip. Whaddon, Ald. Whaddon, Melly. Whelpley, Frag. Whethampton, Swan. Whichbury, Gav. Marceniali hill, Swan Sharfton, Chip. S. Martin, Carp. Matton, Selle, Martyn, Kin. Mafton, Pot. Melkefam, Melle, Merden, Swan. M.E.R.E., Mer. Heynthe, Sman Shawe, Melk. Shawborne, Kit. Our; Chal. Nether Chal. Donet, Chal. Shawborne, Kin.,
Shawe, King.,
Shawe, King.,
Sheperidge J. Amef.,
Sheperidge J. Amef.,
Sherington, Hart.,
Sherington, Hart.,
Sherington, Hart.,
Sherington, Bram.,
Sherinon greas, Chip.,
Shirkhones, Chip.,
Shirkhones, Chip.,
Shawborn, Bram.,
Voton J. T. Whitchurch Ald. Highwaye, Pot. HIGHWORTH, High. Whiteliffe, Hart. Whiteliffe, Hart. Whitteley, Melle, Whitteley house, Pos. Whittenditch, Ass. Hilperton, Melle. HJN TON, Mer. Downton caft, Dow Hinshe, Swan. Hinton brode, Sille. Whitendisch, Man. Widhill, High. Wilcot, Sman. Willey-boutne flu. Wilsford, Swan. Wilsford, Vnd. Merston meny, is Middenhall, Self-Milborne, Mal, Milson, Srad. Milson, Ames. Hinton brode, Self Draycott cerne, Mal. Great 7 Pnd. Drenford, 7 Pnd. Hinton harch, Amel Hioton Oades, Amel Hinton pipard, Amel. Wilton, Rim. Wilton, Kim. Winckfeild, Brads Milton, Km. Drenford. Vnd. Horningtham, Hart. Horton, Pet. Houlston, Eff. Mounton, Brad. Munckton, Cal. Drienford, J Dricote, Raw J. Dunckton, Town, Dunhed, Daw Durnford, Amel. Vpton War. Deuereil Dam. Winfley, Brad. Winterborne mounton, Selle. Hu cott, Swan. Slangtenford, Chip Hullauington, Mal. Hunnington, Care. Mulford, Vad. Winterborne Stoke, 8r. Winterborne baffet, Sell Durrington, Amef. Myntye, Mel. Spy, Melk. Somerford little, Mal. Somerford great, Mal. Hymon, Kam. N Nettleton, Dani Newton fouth, Bram Winterborne gunner, A Winterborne Earles, Al. Eaft } Elf.
Eucrley, } Elf.
Eaftmanitret, Cals.
Eafton, Kon. Idford, Ald. Somerford High. Winterflowe eaft, Amef. Winterflow well, Ald. Idmerflon, Ald. Idouer bridge, Mal. Iford, Brad. lesten Toney, Amef. Winterflow wett, Ald.
Winterflow & Ald.
Winterflow & Ald.
Winterflow & Ald.
Winterflow & Ald.
Winford peat, Bress.
Winford, Bress.
Winford, Daw.
Wooddenton, Swas.
Wooddord little, Fad.
Woodford erea, Fad.
Woodford erea, Fad. Sopworth, Chip. Long Mal. standley Newton, Small. Newmon, Small. Normation, Amel. Norridge, War. Norton, Gal. Notton, Mal. Norton Douant, War. Eaftongrey, Chip. Eaftre p. High. Ebbesborne wake, Chal. ford, Eif. Imber, Haref. Ingleiham, High. neth Stanton, Melle, Stanton Mal, Quinton, Stanton Stanton Stanton Stanton Stanton Swan, Stanton Swan, liey, High. Inichurch, Ald. Echilhamten, Swag, Eddington, Whor. Elcombe, Kus. Remble, Mal. Kennet flu. Kennet weft, Self-Nuneston, High. Nunton, Dow. Nufteed, Pot. Woodford great, Vad. taunton, High. Woodland, Mer. Woodland, Remf. Woodland, King. Stocke, Caln. Stocktod, Elf. Eaft } Elff. Kennet esft, Selle Kennet esth, Self. Keuyll, 160er. Yeatton Keynell, Chip. West Keynton, Chip. 0 Woore Swee Odftoke, Care.
Ogborne S. George, Selle
Ogborne
S. Andrew Worten, Pet,
Wotton rivers, Kin.
WOT 1 O N
BASSET,
King. Effridge, Romf. Well Eurly, Stoell, Etf. Stoke, Kim. Stoke Weer. Stoke, Brad . Stoke estle, Afel. Euerley warren Eff. of hares, Euiston, Syan, Keynton S.Michaels, Dam. Okefey, Atal. Wraxhall, Brad. Stoke vereine, Chal Oldbury hill, Selle-Orcheston S.George, Her. Stocketon, War. Stocketon, War. Stocketon, War. Stocketon, Fruff. North } Chip. Kings maner, Ald. Kingfwood, Chip. Kington, Down. Orftons } Bran Wroughton, King. Wroughton, Eift. Wulfall, Kinn. Fallerfdon, Dow. Kington, Down. Kingtons afte, Com. Knahill Biftops, Mer. Knahill eaft, Mer. Knahill weft, Mer. Studley, Cel. Stratford comon, Und Farleigh, Frad. Querton, Kim Dueston eaft.EI Stratford deane, Vnd. Wyly,War. Farley, Ald, Failey hill, Amer. Failbury, Kin. Failon, Kin. Faicild, £19. • Fighilton, Amer. Ouerton weft, Selk. S. Margarets, High Knuk, Har. Streat Swan. Yatesbury, Cal. The little & Kin. Lacock, Chip. Fenny Dew

Parke,

Zeales, Mere.

ARKE-SHIRE, by the BONGER WAY English - Saxons written Repporreigne, whether of the Box Woods there lited. according to the censure of Asserius Meneuensis, or from a naked and bearelesse oke-tree, whereunto the people viually reforted in troublesome times. to conferre for the State, I determine not : onely the County a long time hath beene so called, and bounded with other in manner as followeth: The Northpart is parted by Thamifis from Buckingham and Oxford-sbires; the South neere Kennet doth tract upon Hampshire; the East is confined with the Countie of Surrey, and the West with Wiltsbire and Glocester-Shire is held in. (2) The forme of this Shire doth somewhat refemble a Sandale for a mans foot, lying longwife from East to West, in which part shee is broadest, the middle most narrow, and then spreading wider like to the heele : though for her rich endowments and flately magnificence, it may bee well accounted the heart of the whole. (3) The length thereof, from Inglesham in the West, to old windfor in the East, extendeth vnto for-

tie miles; from Inkpen to Wightham, the broadest part from South to North, are twenty foure; the whole in circumference, about one hundred and twenty. (4) The Aire is temperate, fweet, and delightfull, and prospect for pleasure inferiour to none; the Soile is plenteous of Corne, especially in the Vale of White-horfe, that yeeldeth yeerely an admirable increase. In a word, for Corne and Catrie, Waters and

Woods, of profit and pleafure, it giues place vnto (5) Herancient Inhabitants, by Ptolemie and Ca-The ancient In far, were the Attrebaty, and them of those that descended from Gallia, among whom Comius (conquered by the Dictator) was of good respect, and could doe much with the Britaines, who (as Frontinus reporteth) vsed this Stratageme, though it prooued nothing at laft : he flying before Cafar to reconer aid of thefe Attrebatians, light bedded upon a shelfe in the Sea, rontinus whereupon hoifting his failes, as before a fore-winde. gaue shew to his pursuer that they were in swift slight; so that hopelesse to hayle them, hee gaue ouer the chase: yet no sooner had Cafar made our among Cal.Com. lib.s. them, but that some of these people, by name the

of Bray Hundred in the Eaft of ruine of all former libertie, But when the Romans had rent their owne Empire, and retired their Legion into a narrower circuit, the Saxons let foot, where their forces had beene, and made this County a parcell of their Westerne Kingdome. The Danes then fetting their defire youn fooiles.

Bibroces, yeelded him fubication, which proued the

An.Do.866. from their roauing Pinnaces pierced into these parts. and at Redding fortified themselues betwixt the Riuers Kennet and Thamifts, whither after their great ouerthrow received at Inglefeild by the hand of King Ethelwolfe, they retired for their further fafetie. (6) This Towne King Henry the First most state-Henry the First built Redding.

where, in the Collegiate Church of the Abbey, him-felfe and Queene (who lay both veiled and crowned) with their daughter Mand the Empresse, called the Lady of England, were interred, as the prinate Historic of the place auoucheth, though others befrow the bodies of these two Queenes elsewhere. The Castle King Henry the second raced to the ground, because it was the refuge for the followers of King Stephen: From whence the North-pole is raifed in Latitude 5 1, degrees and 40. minutes, and in Longitude from the first West-point observed by Mercator 10 degrees and 2 c. minutes.

lie beautified with a rich Monasteric and strong Castle.

(7) A Caltle and Towne of greater strength and antiquitie was Wallingford, by Antonine and Ptolemie called Gallena, the chiefest Citie of the Attrebatians,

whose large circuit, and strong fortifications, shew plainly, that it was a place of the Romans abode, and fince in a conceiued fatetie bath made many very bold, especially when the sparkes of Englands civil diffensions were forced to flame in cale of the Growne betwixt Mand the Empreficand King Stephen, whither her felfe and affociates reforted as their fureft de-

(8) But of farre greater magnificence and flate is

(bap.14:

the Castell of Windfor, a most Princely Palace & Manfion of his Maiestie. I will not with felf ey affirme it to be built by King Arthur; but with better authority fay, it was fo thirsted after by the Conqueror, that by composition with the Abbat of Westminster, whose then it was, he made it to be the Kings Possession, as a Place befides the Pleatures, very comodious to entertaine the King. In this Called that victorious Prince King Edward the third was bornegand herein after he had fubdued the French and Scots, held be at one and the same time as his Prisoners, tohn King of France, and Danid King of Scotland. Neither was it euer graced with greater Maicfty then by the inflitution of the most honourable Order of the Garter, a signall Ornament of Martiall Prowefferthe invention thereof fome afcribe to be from a Garter falling from his Queene, or rather from Ioan Counteffe of Salisbury, a Lady of an incomparable beauty, as the danced before him, whereat the by-flanders finiling, he gaue the impreffe to checke all cuill conceits, and in golden letters imbelished the Garter with this French Poelic. HONY SOIT QUI MALY PENSE. Andyct that worthy Clarenceaux alleging the book of the first Inftitution, findes the inucrition to be more ancient, as when King Richard the First warred against the Turkes, Saracens, Cypres, and Acon, hee give the legs of certaine choice Knights with a tache of leather, which promifed a future glorie to the wearers. The most princely Chapell thereof is graced with the bodies of these two great Kings, Henry the Sixth and Edward the Fourth, whom the whole Kingdome was too little to containe, the one of Lancaster, the other of Torke, where they rest now united in one mould, with a branch of both those Houses, euen King Benry the Hong the Eight Eighth, who there lieth also interred, and rests in the Lord.

(9) Other places of note in this Shire are Sinodum Sindum in the North, and Watham in the East, both of them Watham places of the Romans refidence, as by their Monies there oftentimes found appeareth. Neither was Sunning the leaft in this Tract, that had beene the Scat of eight Bilhops before the See was translated thence vnto Shirburne, or that to Salisbury. Wantage also is not wanting of honour, in bringing to life that learned and most valiant King Ealfred, the scourge of the Danes, and great Monarch of the English. And Finch- Finchansted. hamsted for wonder inferiour to none, where (as our Writers doe witnesse) that in the yeere a thousand 106,500m. one hundred, a Well boiled vp with streames of bloud, and fifteene daies together continued that Spring, whose waters made red all others where they came, to the great amazement of the beholders.

(10) The riches and fweet feats that this Coun- The commoditie affoordeth, made many denout persons to shew their deuotions vnto true pietie, in creeting places for Gods diume feruice, and their exemptions from all of the people. worldly businesse: such were Abington, Redding, Fy-Cham, Bromball, Hernley, Hamme, and Wallingford, whose Votaries abusing the intents of their Founders, ouerthrew both their owne Orders and places of Professions; all which were disfolued by att of Parliament, and given the King to dispose at his

This Shires division is into twenty Hundreds, and The division of hath beene ftrengthned with fix ftrong Caftles, is yet this Shire. graced with three of his Maiesties most princely houles, and traded with twelue Market Towns, and is replenished with one hundred and forty Parish-Churches, all whose names are further inserted in the Table following,

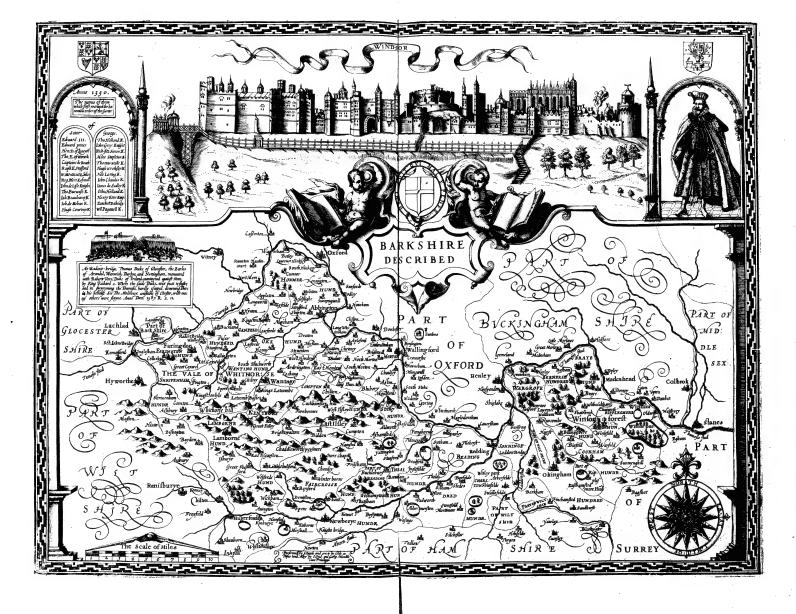
Wen the Con querost cópode ded for Wantfor

27

An. Do. 1312

of the mod ha norable Order of the Garter.

Henry the Sixth



The vale of shrin.

WALLINGFORD, Mo.

Valtham Zwor. Waltham

WANTAGE, Want,

Whit Ber.

Warfeild, War.

Wafinge, Fair. Welford, Fair.

Whitley, Read.

Whithorfe? Shriu. hill, Shriu. Wickham. Kent.

WINDSOR, Rip.

Windfore } R.p.

Windfore Rip.
Windfore Rip.
Old
Windfore,

Winckfeld,Rep.

Witham, Hor. Witham, Charl.
Wisley Charl.
Withham Oke.

Yattington, Fair.

Winterborne Fair.

Wargroue, War. Watchfeild, Shrin.

Wellbroke, Kent.

Whetflon, Tynef.
Whifley
in huft, Charl.
Whitley, Hor.

Vffington, Shrin. Vnton, Mort.

Viton, Thel.

Wadley, Shrin.

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and Places mentioned in Bark-shire.

Inglefeild, Thel.

Inglifham, Fari,

S. Johns bridge, Far.

Kingfton bagpuze, Oke. Kingfton on lile, Shrin.

LAMBORNE.Lam

Letcombe kings, Kent. Letcombe ballet, Kent.

Kennington, Hor. Knight bridge, Fair.

Langford, Far.

Leuetton. Kent

Loddon Flu.

Longcott, Shrin.

Littleworth, Shrim,

Locking well, Want.

Locking call, Want.

oddon bridge, Sun.

м

Inkpen, Kent.

Isbury,Lam. K

Kennet Flu.

Kinburye, Kent.

HVNDREDS Beifelflighe, Hor.

in Bark-fbire.

1.HOrmer.

Farrington. 4. Shriuenham. . Wanting. 6. Compton.

7. Morton. 8. Lamborne. 9. Fairccroffe, Io. Theale.

11.Reading. 12. Charleton. 13. Sonnynge. 14. Wargroue.

15. Bernerlhe. 16. Braye. 17. Ripplemore.

18. Cookham. 19.Okc. 20. Kentbury.

A ABJNGTON, Hor. Aldermerston, Theal. Aldworth, Compt. Apleford,Oke. Apleton, Oke. Arberfeild, Son. Ardington, Want. Afhbury, Shri. Af on vpthorpe, Mort. A contirrold Mort. A uington, Kent.

bagnor, Fair. Balking, Shrin. Barkham, Charl. Barrington, Far. Barton, Hor. Ballelden, Mort Baywotth, Her Benham vale, Kent. Berneham, Read,

Biddon, Fair. Billingesbere, War,

Bifham, Ber, Blubery, Read. Borton, Shrin, Botley, Hor. Bourshill, Hor. Boxford, Fair, Bradfeild, Thel. Braye, Bray. Bright Fair.
Brightwell, Mort.

Brimpton, Fair. Buckland, Gan. Bucklebney. Read. Burfeild, Thel. Burwesket, Shrin. Bynfeild, Cook, Calcot,Kent.

Catmer, Kont.
Chaddleworth, Kent. Chalie, Hor. Chalow well, Kent. Charlton, Want. Charney, Gan. Chaufey, Mort. Cheucley, Fair.

Cumner, Hor.

Childry, Want. Chilton, Comp. Cholfey.Read. Churchipene, Kent. Cleworth, Rip. Clopcott, Mors. Hardwell, Shrin. Hartly donnex, Thel. CookehamCook. Compton, Compt. Hatford Gan. Cothy Flu. Hendred east, Read Coxwell little Far. Hendred well, Wang. Coxwell great.Far. Hendred east, Want. Cuckhamfley hill. Come Hillend Hor.

Demyston cattell,Fair. Hinckfey fouth, Hor. Denchworth Want. Hinton, Gan. Hobcott Kent Donnington, Fair, HVNGERFORD. Ken Draiton,Oke. Hurley, Ber. Draycott more, Oke, Hurft, Son.

Dudcot, Mort.

Earlie,Charl, Eathamited, Rip. Eaton,Oke. Edington, Kent. Enborne, Kent. Falley.Kent.

Falowe, Shriu. FARRINGDON Far. Farrington little,Far. Farnebrough, Comp. Fernisham, Shrin, Frilford,Oke. Frilfham, Fair. Fyfeild,Oke. Fynchamited, Charl.

Garford.Oke. Gariton east, Lana Ginge cast, Want. Gooley, Oke. Grampond, Hor. Greenham, Faire. Groue,Want.

Hagborne cast, More, Longworth, Gan, Hagborne welt, Mort. Lyford,Oke. Hampsted morryes, Fa Lech } Fair. MADENHEAD, Bray Marcham. Obe. Hamswell, Want, Markney, Mort. Hams caft, Want. Martlefton, Fair. Hamfted Kent Merthall, Kent. Midgham, Fair. Hanney cast, Oke.

Millon,Oke. Mortimer 3 Thel. Morton north, Mort. Morton fouth, Mort. Moulsforb, Mort. NEWBERY, Fair. New bridge, Oke. Norcott, Hor. Hinckfey } Hor.

Oke Flu. OK JNGHAM, San, Owre chappell, Fair.

Padworth, Thel. Pangborne, Read.

Peyfmore, Fair. Iller welt, Compt.
ILSLEY EAST, Com. Purley, Thel. Pulay, Gan.

Radcott bridge, Faring. Radley, Hor. READING, Read. Remneham, Ber, Ruscombe, Son.

Sandenfoe, Kent. Sandford, Hor. Sandhurft, Surt. Satwell, Mort. Shallington, Gan. Shattesbrooke.Ber Shawborne, Kent. Shawe Fair. Shelford great, Lamb Shelford little Kent. Shellingford, Gar. Shilton, Far. Shinfeild Charl. Shipton, Her. Shriuenham, Shrin. Silham, Thel,

Slancler, Shrin. Sonnyngwell, Hor. Sperfholt; Wans. Spene, Fair. Spinhamland, Fair. Stanford.Gan. Standford dingbie, Fair Stedes, Thel. Steuenton,Oke. Stretley, Mors. Stronde, Hor, Sulhamfted & Thel, Sulthamfted Abbots, R

Sunyng, Sun, Sunninghall, Cook, Sutham, Thel, Sutton courtney, Oke. Swallowfeild, Charl.

little, Soke, Withham Soke, Wolfton, Shriu. Woodhay, Kent. Woodspenc, Faire, Woolley, Kent. Woolhampton, Thel. Wotton Her Wyuersley in hurst, Son,

Thatcham, Road Thele, Thel. Thorpe, Hor. Trup, Shrin. Twyfott,War. Tydmerihe, Thel. Tylehurft.Read

Booke 1.

The formt,

The ancient

Cafars com.

Anno 306. London walled

Iddiefex, so called in regard of the fituation, as feated betwixt the west-Saxons and East-Angles, was sometimes together with Effex and Hartfordshire, that part & portion which the East-Saxons enjoyed for their kingdome : it lieth

MIDDLESEX.

bordered vpon the North. with Hartford-share, vpon the West by Colne, is seuered from Buckingham, the South, by Thamesu, from Surrey and Kent; & on the East from Esfex, by the River Lea.

(2) The length therof extended, fro stratford in the East, to Morehall, vpon Colne in the West, is by mea-fure nineteene English miles, & from South-mines in the North, to his Maiesties Manor of Hampton-court in the South, are little about 16 miles, the whole circumference, extending to ninety.
(3) In forme it is almost square, for ayre passing

temperate, for foile abundantly fertile, and for pasturage & graine of al kinds, yeelding thebest, so that the wheate of this Countie hath served a long time, for the Manchet to our Princes Table.

(4) It lieth feated in a vale most wholsome and rich. hauing some hilsalfo, and them of good ascent, from whose Topsthe prospect of the whole is seen like vnto Zoar in Egypt, or rather like a Paradile and Garden

(5) The ancient Inhabitants known to Cafar, were the Trinobants, whom hee nameth to bee the most puissant in the land; whose chiefe citie and State yeelding him fubiection, made the whole, with leffe losse to the Romans, to beare the yoke of their own bon-dage, & to come in vnder termes of truce. But when their forces in these parts were spent, & the Empire shaken by intestine warres, the Saxons setting their eics vpon so faire a soile, made their footing as sure

herein; which laftly with Hariford and Effex, was the portion of the Eaft-Saxens kingdome.

(6) Fine princely house, inheritable to the English Crowne, are feated in this Shire, which are, Enfield, Hariford. worth, Whitehall, S. Iames, & Hampton Court, a citie ra-ther in show then the Palace of a Prince, and for stately Port & Gorgeous building, not inferior to any in Eu-rope. At This leworth once stood the palace of Richard K.of the Romans, E.of Cornwal, which the Londoners in a tumultuous broile, burned to the Ground: many other stately houses of our English Nobility Knights Searchemenas also of the worthpful citizens of Lo-don, are in this Shire so fumptuoully built & pleasant-ly seated, as the like in the like circuite, are no where else to bee found. Nere vnto Thamesis entrance into this county, is kept the remebrance of Cafars entrance ouer Thamesis, by the name of Comay stakes, stucke fast in the Bottome to impeach his delignes; and further at Stanesa Maire-Stone once stoode, for a marke of

Iurisdiction that London had so farre vpon Thamesis (7) Which city is more ancient the any true record beareth, fabuled from Brute, Troynouant, fro Lud, Lud Stone : But by more credible writers, Tacitus, Ptolemy & Antonine, Londiniu, by Aminianus Mercellinus for her CA anisonic, consumity of aminimate laceteening for net funcessive prosperity, Anaptha, the greatest fulle that can be given to any: by Britaines, Londayn, by the Saxons, London Ceapen, by Strangers Londay, and by the Saxons, London. This city doth flow as the Cedaryanog other trees, being the seare of the British Kings, the chamber of the English, the model of the land, & the mart of the world: for thither are brought the filk of Asia, the spi-ces from Africa, the Balmes from Grecia, & the riches of both the Indies East and West: no city standing so long in fame, nor any for divine and politick government may with her bee compared. Her wals were first fet by great Conflantine the first Christis Emperor, at the fute of his mother, Q. Helen, reared with rough stone & British Bricke three English miles in compasse. row which are now made 7. most faire gates, besides three other passages for entrace. Along the Thamesis

this wall at first ranged & with two gates opened, the

receptable for Ships. In the midft of this wal was fet a mile-marke (as the like was in Rome) from whence were measured their stations; for cariage or otherwise; the same as yet standeth, and hath bin a long knowne by the name of London stone. Vpon the East of this City, the church of S. Peters is thought to be the Cathedral of Reflitutus, the christian Bishops See; who liued in the Raigne of great Constantine; but fince 5. drallchurch, Pauls in the west part, from the Temple of Diana, asfumed that dignity, whose greatnes doth exceeds any other at this day, and spires so high that twice it hath bin consumed by lightning fro Heauen. Besides this cathedral. God is honored in one hundred twentyone churches more, in this city: that is, ninety fix within the wals; fixteene without, but within the Liberties; & nine more in her Suburbs : 86 in Fitz-Stephens time. thirteene Conuents of religious Orders. It is divided into tweety fix Wards, gouerned by fo many grave Alderme, a L. Maior & two Sherifs, the yeerly choice wher-of was granted them by Patent fro K. John; in whose time also a Bridge of stone was made ouer Thames, vpon nineteene Arches, for length, bredth, beauty, and building, the like againe not found in the world. (8) This London (as it were) disdaining bodage, hath set her selfe on each side, far without the wals, & hath left her West-Gate in the midst, from whence with continuall buildings (ftil affecting greathesse) she hath continued her streets vnto a Kings Palace, and ioined a second . Citie to her self, famous for the Seate. and Sepulcher of our Kings; and for the Gates of Infice, that termely there are opened, onely once a Bithops See, whose title died with the man. No walls are set about this citie, & those of London are left, to thew rather what it was, then what it is : Whose Citizens, as the Lacedemonians did, do impute their firegth in their men, and not in their wals, how firong focuer, Orelse for their multitude, cannot be circulated, but as an other Ierusalem is inhabited without walles, as Zacha. 3.4 Zachary said. The wealth of this Citie (as Isai once Isay 23.3. spake of Nilus) grows from the Reucnewes and Har-uest of her south-bounding Thames; whose traffique for merchandizing, is like that of Tyrus, whereof Eze-kiel speaks, & stands in abundance of Siluer, Iron, Tyn & Lead, &c. And from London her chanell is nauigable, straitned along with medowing borders, vntill she taketh her full liberty in the German Seas. V pon this Thamesis the Ships of Tharsis seeme to ride, and the Nauy, that rightly is termed the Lady of the Sea, fpreds her faile. Whence twice with lucky successe hath bin accomplished, the compassing of the vniuerhath bin accomplified, the compassing of the vniuer-fall Globe. This time Cansus, Juying fiege again! London, fought by digging to diuert, & before him the Danes had done great Harmes in the citic yet was their State recoured, by K. Elfred, and the riuer kept her olde course, notwithstanding that cost. In the times of the Normans, Some citill broises have been

one Doure-gate, now Dowgate, & the other Billinfeate, a

tude 20. degrees 39.minutes. (9) In this county at Barnet, vpo Easter day, a bloudy battell was fought, betwist Henry 6. and Edward 4. wherein were flaine one Marques, one Earle, three Lords, and with them ten thousand Englishmen.

attempted in this citie as in the daies of K. John wher-

(10) The divition of this Shire is into feuen Hundreds, wherein are seated two Cities, foure market Townes, and scuenty three Parish churches, besides them in London; where in the church of Gray-friers, now called Christ-church, three Queenes lie interred, which were Queene Margaret, the Do of Phil the har-dy, King of France, fecond wife to King Edward 1. the fecond was Queene 1 fabel, wife to King Edward 2. and D. o Philip the faire King of France, and the third was Queene Ioan, their daughter, maried to Damid King of Scotland,

mile-marke, S.Peters in Cont

Chap. XV . 29

The number of

The Wards of

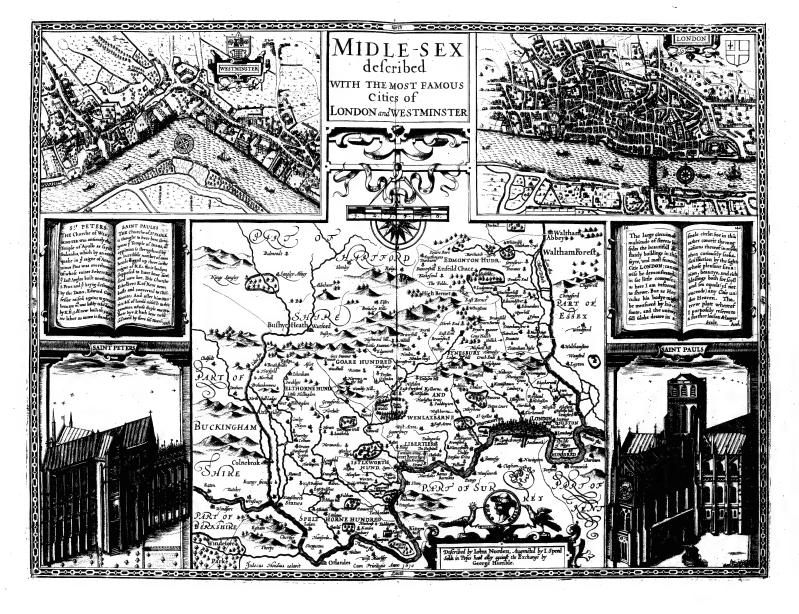
London laus-

into his Barons entred, and the Towre yeelded vnto Lewis. And again, Wat Tiler herein committed outragious cruelties, but was worthily strooke downe by the Maior, & slain in Smithfield. This cities graduation for Latitude is the degree, \$ 1.45. min. and in Longi-

Barries in Mid-defex . The 14. of April Asno 1 471, and

Margaret wife to Edward 1. Ifabel wife to Jams Queene





ESSEX. 31 S fex, by the Saxons, writthis County, that they shore the grasse to the verie rootes, and so tainted the same with their venemous John Store. ten Ear v. reaxa and Ear v. rex-rope, by the Normans teeth, that a great Murraine fel vpon the Cattle which Exses, and by the vulgar grafed thereon, to the great loffe of their owners. (7) The chiefest City for account at this day, in Colleger the Effex; is a County large in compaffe, very popu-lous, and nothing inferithis Shire, is Colchefter, built by Coslus the Britis chiete Cite. Prince one hudred twenty foure yeres after the birth of our Saniour Christ (if he of Monmonth fay true) our to the best of the Land wherein his fon Lucius, Helena, and Constantine, the (2) The forme therefirst Christian King, Empresse, & Emperor in the world, of is somewhat Circular excepting the East part, were borne; which made Necham for Conflantine to which thooreth her felfe with many promontories fing as he did, into the Seas; and from Horfey Iland to Haidon in the From Colchester there rose a starre, The Raies whereof gave glorious light, Throughout the world, in Climates farre, West (the broadest part of the Shire) are by measure The length and breadth. forty miles; and the length from East-Ham vpon Thamilis in the South, to Sturmere vpon the River Stow Great Conflantine, Rome: Emperour bright, And the Romans to the great honor of Helena, inferi-bed her, Pijisma Venerabilis Angula. But of these wee shalbe occasioned to speak more hereafter. This city is in the North, are thirty fine; the whole in circumference one hundred forty fix miles. (3) It lieth bounded upon the North, with Suffalke and Cambridge-Shires, vpon the West with Hert-ford & Middlesex, vpon the South by Thamisis, is par-ted from Kens; and the East side thereof is altogether fituated ypon the fouth of the River Coln; fro where it hath the name. & is walled about raifed vpo a high trench of earth, though now much decaied, having fix gates of entrance, & three posternes in the West wall, washed with the German Sea. (4) The aire is temperate and pleasant, only tobelides nine watch Towers for defece; & containeth wards the waters somewhat aguish the soil is rich and in compaffe 1 9 8 o. pafes: wherein fland eight faire Churches and two other without the wales for Gods fruitfull, though in some place (andy and barren; yet duine feruice: 3. Tenants and the Blacke Friers decai-ed in the fuburbes; Mary-Magdelins, the Numeric, S. Johns and the Crouched Friers, all suppressed: within fo that it neuer frustrates the husband-mans hopes, or fills not the hands of her haruest Labourers : but in fome part fo fertill, that after three yeres globe of Saffron the Land for 18. more, will yeeld plenty of Bartowards the East, is mounted an old Castle, and elder ley, without either dung or other farning earth.

(5) Her ancient inhabitants knowne to the Roruines vpon a trench, containing two Acres of groud where as yet may bee seene the prouident care they mans, were by Cafar called the Trinobantes, of whom in the former chapter we have spoken, and in our hihad against all ensuing assaults.

The trade of this Towne standeth chiefly in maftory shall speake more at large. But this name periking of Cloth & Bares, with Saies, & other like stuffes, thing with the age of the Empire, the Saxons prefently 'daiely inuented; and is gouerned by two Bailiffes, 12. ramed a new; and with Hertford, and Middle fex, made it their Eaft-Saxons Kingdome, until that Egbert brought this and the whole, into an entire and abso-Aldermen, al wearing Scarlet; a Recorder a Towne-Clerke, and foure Sergeants at Mace. Whose position for latitude, is in the degree 52.14. minutes; and for lute Monarchie: The Danes after them laide so sore longitude, in the degree 2 1, and 50, minutes, for this Prouince, that at Beamfleet and Hauenet (now Shobery) they fortified most strongly; and at Barklow, (8) Places of antiquity & memorable note in this County, I observe the most famous, to be Camalodunum, by the Saxons Maleoune, by vs Malden, which was the Roial Scat of Cunobelin King of the Trinobantes, as K Cunobeline. (belides the hils mounted for their Burials) the Danewort with her red Beries, so plentifullie grow, that it by his money therein minted appeareth, about the is held and accounted to fpring from the blood of the Danes which in that place was spilt, and the hearbe as time of our Saujours birth: which City afterwards Clauyet is called from them the Danef-blood; neither yet were they quelled to furcease that quarell; but at Albdins won from the Britaines, & therein placed a Colonie of fouldiers, which were called Victricenlis. This City Queene Boduo in revenge of her wrongs, raced to the ground, what time the stirred their people against downe abode the Ironfide in fight, wherein so much blood of the English was spilt, that Canutus their King in remorse of coscience, built a Church in the place, Nero, with the flaughter of feuenty thousand of the in removie of collected, built a Chiter in the place, to pacifie God for the finnes of his people: But when the Normans had got the Garland of the whole, many of their Nobles here feated themselues, whose Poste-Romans. Of some later & leffer account, was Ithanche Kemani, Ottome later & tenter account, was innance-fer, now 8. Peters you the wall, where the Fortenfe, with their Captaine kept, towards the declination of the Reman Empire. In the Eaft promontorie of this County, in the Raigne of Richard the Second, the teeth rities fince, both there & elfe-where, are spred further abroad in the Realme. of a Giant were foud (if they were not of an Elephant) of a maruellous fize, (faith Ralph Coggelball) and not farre thence, in the Raigne of Elizabeth, more bones (6) The Commodities that this Shire veeldeth, are many and great, as of Woods, Corne, Cattle, Fish, Forests & Saffron; which last groweth with such gaine to the like wonder were digged up.

(9) I purposely omit the message of a pilgrime from S. roles Baptis, by whom he letter a ring to King Edward Confessor, for which cause his house tooke the name & increase, vpo her north parts, that from a split cloue much like vnto Garlick, a white blewish Flowre shortly pringeth, from where Fillers of Saffron are gathered before the Sunne, and dried, are fold as spice with great gaine. From the Ilands Canuey, Merfey, Hurfey, Conjegor; for which cance in stonic took ene made no great dainty daily to forge matter for their owne advantage; who in this Shire so swarmed, that they had Northly, Ofey, Wallot and Foulnesse, great store of Fish and Fowle are daily gotten: and so from their Cattle uantage: who in this Shre to Iwarmoc, that they had Houise creeked at Walham, Prilewell, Tile, Dummen, Levy, It afrial Pawerall, Chelmasford, Coggoffull, Madlam, Earl-caine, Chelpfer, S. Offito, Saffron-Waldi, It afrield-per and the state of the Chelmasford of the State Produced and more, with great Reuenews thereto be-longing, all which felt the Axes and Hammers of de-frenchion, when the reft of fuch foundations fel vnder. haue they continuall increase, which men and boies milke, aswel the Ewe, as the Kine; whereof they make great and thicke Cheefe, fold abroad in the Land, & much thereof transported into other Countries Their Oifters which we call Walfleete, the best in efreeme; and are thought from Plinie to haue ben fer ued in the Romans Kitchins. But left wee should exthe flaile of King Hemy the eighth, who with Ezeklah brake downe all these Brasen Serpents. ceed measure in commending, or the people repose (10) This Shire is divided into twenty Hundreds, their trust in the Soile; behold what God can doe, to wherein are seated 2 1. Market Townes, 5. Castles, 5. frustrate both in a momet, & that by his meanest crea-Hauens, 2. of his Maiestics Manours, & foure hundred tures: for in our age and rememberance, the yeere of and fifteene Parish-Churches : all which are expressed Christ 1 5 8 1. an armie of Mice so ouerran the Marthes in Dengey Hundred necre vnto South-Minster in in the Table annexed to this Countie following.

Chap.16.

Book.t.

The name of

The forme of

The Inhabit Cafar, Comment.

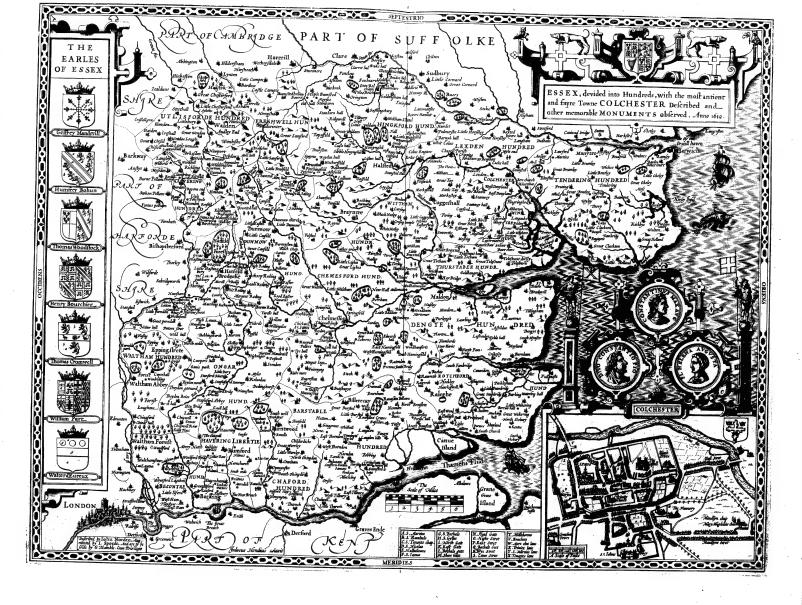
The sire. The Soile,

Dane Gblond.

The comme

Mice devonte lone part of

Oyfters



32 B	ook. 1.		ESSE	X.		:	(bap.1
	Borch im, Chelm,	Colne wake, Lexil.	Goldingham hall, Hi.	Lamborne, Org.	Okeley great. Ten	Shelley, Ong.	Tylbury, Hinek.
Tunined's in	Bureley, Hinch.	Colne white, Lexi.	Goofes, Haver.	Lamerth Hine	Okeley great, Ten. Okeley little, Ten.	Shellow bowels. Don.	Tylbury Hinel.
Ellex.	Bouyli, Tea.	Colne Earles, Lexd.	Goofes, Haver. Gosteild, Hinck	Langdall bill, Ear.	Old hall, Himely.	Shenfeild, Barit.	hall, frames.
	Bowcers, Lex.	Colne flu,	Gouldhanger, Towns.	Langdon, Est.	Old holt, Lex.	Shenfeild, (bel.	Tyld Dong.
	Bowers enford, 8arft.	Coine Engame, Lexd.	The Grange, Fresh. Greensted, Osger,	Langford, Thur. Langham, Lex.	ONGAR, Jong.	Shering, Hav. Shopland, Rock.	Tylrie, Danie.
T 7 Felestord.		Conford Level	Greensted, Lexil.	Langhenhoo,#/18.	Orfers Revit	Showberry .	Twhorn 3:
V Hinckford	Bowtehers Thurst.	Copford, Lexd, Coptehall, Walib.	Gubbins, Hever.	Langley, Ciza.	Orfett, Eavit. Orwell hauen, Ten.	Showbery Roch,	Tythorp Der
. Lexden.		Coringham, Barit.	Gunficete, Ten. Gyldabbs, Bart.	Latton, Har.	The Ofe end, Ten.	Showbery } Recb.	
. Tendring.	Boxted, Ltx.	Cotes, Ten.	Gyldabbs, Eart.	Laston priory, Her.	Ofeth He, Deng.	fouth, f	v
	Boy don hall, Chelm. Bradfeild, Ten.	Couers, Organ. Cowpers hall, Ongan.	S. Gyles, Walib.	Lauer little, Ong.	S.Ofythes, Tes. Ouington, Hintle.	Skrenes, Chel. Smytes hall, Chel.	Valens, Hower,
. Dengie. . Witham.	Bradiend, 1 to.	Cranham, baff.	и	Lauer high, Ong. Lauer Magdaline, Os.	Oulting, Wit.	Spection, Walt.	Verley, Wing.
. Chelmesford,	Bradfeild Fresh. Saling, Fresh. Bradfeild little Fresh.	Creffing With	n	Lawford, Tex.	Outding, "".	South churh, 7(060.	Vgle, Claver.
. Donmow.	Bradfeild ittle Freft.	Crefling, Wath. Crefling Temple, Wit.	Hackwell, Rech.	Lawling Den.	P	South end, Hev.	Vinnee, Wale.
. Clauering.		Crickiev. Dese.	Hafton, Chaff.	S. Lawrence.Dru.		Spaines, Harch.	Vammiter, Chaf.
o Harlowe.	Bradwell, Deng. Bradwell, Milb. BRAIN TRIE, Hinch.	Crickley ferey, Roch.	Hadleigh, Roch. Hadleigh Caltle, Ro.	The Lea, Har.	Paggleiham, Roch.	Springfeild, (bel.	Vpflaire, Walib.
1.Waltham.	Bradwell, With.	Cripping, Lexd, Critiall, Vetlef.	Hadleigh Caltle, Ro.	Leadon roding, Day.	Panfeild, Hinch.	Springteild, (bel. Stambridge } Rock.	Vpton, Becent.
	BRAINTRIE, HMCC.	Critiall, Vitlef.	Haditocke, Fresh.	Lee gardens, Heu.	Paringdon great, Ha. Parndon little, Har.	Stambridge Rock, Stambridge Rock, great,	w
2. Hanering.	Bramfton, Down. Braxted great, With.	Cristall great, Vittef.	Hallifeild, Walib. Ham east, Becont.	Leigh, Roch.	Patefwicke, Lex.	great. Roch.	W
3. Becontree-	Braxted little, With.	Cuftridge, Ten.	Ham well Recome	Leighes great, Chel.	Pebmerihe, Hinge.	Stanborne, Hinch.	Walbury, Harl.
4 Freshwell.	The new } Becont.	Cuffe hall, Hinck.	Ham welt, Secons. Haningfeild calt, Che.	Leighes prior / bel.	Peldon, Wmft.	Stanborne hall, Hine.	WALDEN, V
5. Chafford				Leigh hall, Roch.	Pentlowe, Hinch.	Stanford rivers, Ong.	Wallor, or 7
6. Barltable.	Brentific, Organ. BRENTWOOD, Ch.	D	Haningfeild fouth Cb.	Lexden,Lex.	Perches, Hinck. S. Perers chapell D. on the wall, D.	Stanigate, Den.	Wallor, or Wallifeete Ile,
7. Ongar.	BRENT WOOD, J.	D	Harlows, Har.	Littleberrie, Vtile].	S. Peters chapell 3 n	Stanford ie hope, Bar.	Waltham } Che
8. Thurstable.	Brettes, Tes. Bretton layer, Wynjt.	Dagenham, Becent, Dagenham little, Che.	Harlow ftreet, Harl.	Littlebury, Ong. Loughton, Ong.	Petiwell, Ongar.	Stanfted hall, Hinch.	Waithana
9. Rotchford.	Brickelfey, Ten.	Danbury, Cheime.	Harlowbury, Hari. Harrolds wood, Hav.	Loughton, ung.	Pickrels, Ongar.	monfices. Vul.	Waltham? chel
o.Winstree.	Brides greene, Davis.	Darwardes, Hinch.	Harrolds parke, Walt.	Lyndfell,Don.		Stanway hall day	WALTHAMS
	Brittens, Becont.	Debden 7titlef.	HARWICH. Tes.	Lyfton, Hinc.	Pirgo, Hau. Piflingford Onger. bridge,	Stanwaye, Lex. Stapleford 2 0.15:	ABBEY,
		Dedham, Lexd.	Hafeley, Deng.	Lyfton hall, Hist.	Piffingford 1	Stapleford 2	
Α	Brokehall, Hinch.		Haffobu: y, Clauer.	1	bridge, Ongar.	tavniye, 5 "E"	Waltham Bere
Abbey Roding, Ong.	Browfeild, Chetm.	Dengye, Deng, Dewes, Ongar,	Haftings wood, Harl.	M	Pitfey, Earft. Plaiftowe, Bec.	Supleford } ong.	Foreit,
Aberton,#yuft.	Brontend, (sem.	Dewes, Ongar.	Hastingbury } Hart.	MALDON, Dev.	Pledgden, Clauer.	Stebbing, Hinch.	Walton, Tor. Wanfled, Becom
Abrey hatch, Becont.	Broxted, Daum.	Dodughuist, Ongar. Donmowlittle, Dat.	Moricy,)	Manenden,Cla,	Plefhy, Down.	Steple, Deng.	Warley 2
Aldham, Lex.	Brumley little, Ten.	DONMOW Dom.	Haftingbury? Harl.	MANINGIREE.	Pores hall, Wir.	Stifford clay, Chaff.	Warley } (be
Allisford.Ten.	Brumley great, Ten.	great, Don.	Hatfeildforeft, Harl.	Maplefteed great, Hi.	Porters, Rach.	Stifford, cheff.	Warley 7
Alphamfton, His.	Brunden, Hinck.	Donyland west, Lex.	Hatfeild peuerell, 371.	Maplefteed little, Hi,	Porters, Fraft.	Stocke, Chil.	
Althorne, Deng.	Brunden, Hist.	Donyland cast, Lexd.	HATFEILD >	Maplefteed hall, Hin.	Portets, Ber.	Stondon, Ongar.	Watering
Aluethiye,(o)ff. Ammadon hall,Vul.	Brunden hall, Hmck.	Douer court, Ten.	BROADOCKE,	Margaret roding, De.	Potters ftreet, Har.	Stowe Maries, Deng.	Watering } Rec
Antinagon nail, v ii s.	Brunshobury, Donn. Brunshall, Hinch.	Dowington } Barft.	Maueting, Hau r.	Marget Inge, Chel.	Potter rowe, Thur.	Stowrefle.	Watering } Roc
Ardicyghe, Ten. Arkeiden, Vislef.	Buckivare, Daum.	Downe, Harl.	Hauering, Haw r. HAVLSTEED Hi.	Markets, Hou. Marke Tey, Lex.	Pretons,Chel.	langthorne,} Bee.	Merenne 2
Arnolds, Ong.	Bulmer, Hime.	Downham, Barft.	Hamilton Her	Markethall, Lex.	Prittlewell, Roch.	Strete,Den.	Watering Rec
Athdon Freib.	Bulpham, Barf.	Duke Frest	Helthall,Oug.	Marney Layer, Fys.	Purleighe, Deng.	Strettal Pit.	
Afhden, Hinck,	Bumfted helion, Fre.	Dunmow church, De.	Hempftede, Freft,	Marfey cast, wyn.	-	Sturmer, Harch.	hall Cons
Affieldon, Ten.	Bumfred } Hinch	Dunton, Barit.	Hellhall, Ovg. Hempstede, Fresh. HEMYNGHAM CASTLE,	Marfey weft, "ys.	1 Q	Styffced, Hinek.	Weald Low
Afhefeeld, Him.	fleeple, J	Dynes hall, Hinch.	CASTLE, S	Martins,Tev.		Suiticete, Ten.	Weald Che
Aftengdon, Ret. Audley end, Uttl.	Burbrooke, Hinch, Bures mont, I ex.	E	Henham, Val.	Mathberie, Don. Matching, Her.	Quenden, Pit. Quickbury, Hark	Sucton great, Roch.	Weald } on
S. Ayleths, Villa	Burneham, Deng.	-	Hennigham fible, His Hennye little, Hinek.	Mayland, Den.	Quickoury, mark	T	Menden 3
	Burfted little, Barft.	Eaftbury, Recout.	Hennye great, His.	Maymards, Don.	R	-	Wenden Pi
В	Burfted great, Barft,	Eather good, Denw.	Herne,Bar,	Maytors, Hau.		Takeley, Vit.	Wenden } 1
	Butsbery, Che. Byamhall, Hinck.	Easterford, Wab.	Herons, Dun,	Medles mede, Wit.	Radley hall, Wit.	Tendering, Tex.	little, 5
Baches, <i>Roch.</i> Baddowe Intle, <i>Chel.</i>	Byam hall, Hinck.	Bafter high, Donm.	Heybridge, Thur.	Meredich, Bec.	Radwinter, Frefb. RAILIGHE, Roch.	Telling,Wat.	Wenden] Vul
Baddowe great, Lbel.	C C	Eafthorpe, Lexd. Eafton little, Dann.	Heybridge,Org.	Mefling, Lex.	RAILIGHE, Roch.	Terrells, Frefb.	great,
Ballingdon, Have.		Eafton great, Denas	Heydon, Vtilej. Hipford, Hing,	Melling hall, Lex. Midlemeade, Den.	Ramidon craye Berft Ramidon	Tey little, Lex.	Wennington (
Barrington ball, Har.	Campions, Deng.		HIGH ONGER ON.	Middleton, Hise.	bellouse Charge	Tey great, Lex.	Whellers, Ten.
BARKING, Bec.	Compions Hall	Edwards hall, Chelm.	Hockiev, Rack.	Milton,Recb.			Well-houle. 84
Barling, Rech.	Canewdon, Rach.	Elmden, Tulef. Elmeltede, Ten.	Hockley, Rack. Hol'and grear, Ten. Holland little, Ten.	Minfter fouth, Den.		Thorndon west, Ber.	White hall Bay
Barnith Roding, Don. Barnyk hall, Lex.		Eimeltede, Ten.	Holland little, Ten.	Moll hall, Vul.	Rawreth, Roch.	Thorndon caft, Ber.	Wickes Tes.
Barrow hall, Ret.	Canfeild great, Den. Canteild little, Denm	Elfenham, Vtilef. Engaynes, Ten.	Holl hauen, Bar.	Monhall, Fresh. Morchell, Hari,	Rayne little, Hinch.	Thornewood, Har.	Wickford, Bar.
Barweck parker, Chaf.	Canue Hand, Berft.	EPPING 2	Horeham hall, Day. Hornedon on Bar.	Moreton, Oeger.	Raynham, Choff.	Thorpe, Ten. Thorrocke west / ha.	Wickeham, The
iallets, Den.	Chaldwell, Baril.	STRETE.	the hill.	Mole, Ten.	Rettendon, Chel.		Wickham } Ho
Baffildon, Berf.	Chapple, Lex.	Epping towne, Wale,	Hornedon eath, Bar.	Mountnating, Chelm.	Richell, Har.	Thorrocke Chaff.	Wickham ?
Ballingborne, Vetlef.	The Chapell, Heur	Eythorp Roding Don	Hornechurch, Haw.	Mowitham, Chelta.	Rie hall, Vit.	great, Straff.	Wickham } V
Battle bridge, c bel. Battle hall, Clau.	Chatley, With,	F	The Hooe, Lex.		Rickling, Vat.	Thoyden 2 com-	Widdington, V
Bay on end, cla.	Chawdwell, Becant, Chelmer flu.	F	Horfeley great, Lex. Horfeley little, Lex.	Mucking, Barff. Mucking hall, Recb.	Rickling, Vit. Ridg(well, Hinck. Rindl), Deng.		Widford, Chel.
The Beacon, Lex.		Falrefteed, With.	Horfey Hand To-	Mundon Dene	Ripple, Bee.	Charnon, Ongar.	Wigborow?
Beamonte, Ten.	Cheiterford Vinely	Falkborne, With,	Horsey Band, Ten. Horsingbroke, Ber.	Mundon, Deng. Myle end, Lexd.	Rivers hall, Lex.		Wieherow ?
Beacham roding, Os.	preat, South	Fambridge } Deng.	Weft } Bar.	Myles, Ongar,	Rockells, Vit.	Mount Conger.	Wigborow }
Beches,Bar.	Chefterford?	North, 5 Deng.	House, Sar.	Myfley, Ten.	Roding morrell, Oze	Thremnolt Vittef.	: Wilbores / law
Belchamp water, Hin.	little, State	Fambridge } Recb.	Hull bridge, Rech.	1	Roding high, Don. Roding white, Don.	priorie, 5" mej.	Willingsle, Dat
S.Paul, Hinch.	Chefterford, Vat.	Fangye, Barg.	Hull, Roch.	N	Roding white, Don.		Willingale D
Belchamp otten, Hi.	Chickney Dours	Farnham, Cleuer,	Hatton, Ber.	The Nate, Ten.	ROMFORDE, Haw	Thundershe, Roch. Thundersey, Barft,	Wilton towre,
Belhoufe, Her.	Chickney, Doum. Chignall S.lames, Chelm.	Famhain, camer.	1	Nation Halth.	Rooding beacham, 0		Wilton towre,
Bellowes, Daw.	S. lames. Chelm.	Feering, Lex.	_	Nating, Walth. Naueltocke, Ongar.	Rooding Abbey. One	Tilburve?	Witham, Wit.
Benfeild, Clauer.		Feering, Lex. Felfteede, Himily.	Ienkins, Bec.	Nelmes, Hauerine.	Rooding Abbey, Ong Rotchford, Rock.	alt, Barft.	Wiuenhoo, Le
Benfitt north, Barff.	fmely, } (be). Chigwell, Onger.	Fellowes hall, With.	lenkins, öar.	Nelmes, Hauering. Nether hall, Harl.	Roughhedg, Lex.	Tilburye Berft.	Woodford
Benflitt fouth, Earft.	Chagwell, Ongar.	Femings Chelm.	Icruis hall, Bar.	Nettelwell, Harl.	Roxwell, Chel.	west, S Bargt.	Woodford B
Bently little, Tex.		Fidlers, Chelm.	Hord little, Bre.	Neuendon, Bard.	Royden hall, Hinch.		Woodford, Bei
Benche hall, Osgar.	Chigwell dewes, One	Finehingteild, Hinch	Hiord great, Beg.	Newvarke, Donn.	Roydon, Har.	Tiptree, Tou-ft.	Wood-hall,Vt
Berdon priory, Claus.	Childerditche, Chaff.	Fingringhoo, Wynft, Flamberds, Deng.	Indy wall, Bar.	Newbery, Becont. Newball, Dones.	Royden, Ten.	Toobye, Chelm.	Wood-hall, Ca
Berden, Claver.	China hall, Walth, Chingeford, Walth,	Fobbing, Barit.	Ingerftone, Chel.	Newhall, With.	Roydon hamlet, Wat Royes hall, Hinth.	Topesfeild, Him t.	Woodham } C
Berechurch, Lex.	Chipping 2	Fordham, Lexd.	Inworth, Lex. Infelyn, Don.	Newhall, Hark	Ruckward, Ongar.	Torells } Doom.	Woodham "
Bernes Roding, Dan.	Chipping 7 Ongar.	Fowlnes, Rech	z-ciyii,Dea.	Newhall, Hart.	Rumwell, Chel.	Totham 7	Woodham 21
Bertholt, Lex.		Forestth Hinds	ĸ	Newlandhall, Cheim.	Fyuenchall, Wit.	Totham Therif.	Woodham }
Bettolls, (beff.	Chaffell great, Vetlef.			Newport, Vitlef.	Rye, Walth.	Totham 3 Thurst.	

Frating, Ten.

Fyfeild, Oagar.

Frinton, Ten. Fryerning, Chelm.

G

Gaines, Chaff. Gains parke, Onger. Garndes, Donn.

Geillingthorpe, His Giddie hall, Hauer.

Co.dingham, Hinck

Gingraue, Earft.

Clackton great, Ten. Clackton little, Ten. Clarret hall, Hinte

laucting, Claure

Claybury, Erense Cockrells, Chaff, Codham, Hinek,

Coccethail wash.

COGGISHALL,L

COLCHESTER

Cold hall, Chelm,

Collier row, Hau-

Toperficited, Him. 1.
Torcells Dearm.
hall, Dearm.
Totham Thurft.
Totham Totham, Thurft.
Intic, Tourshount; Thurft.
Knight, Tourshount; Thurft.
Toulthount; Thurft.

Toulfhount? Thurst.

Direye, Toulfhount? Thurst.

great, Tremmall, Earst.

hall, } cheim.

water, Den. Woodriding, Wal. Wormyngford, Lex. Wrabnes. Tex.

Writtle parke, Che

Wyley, Tex. Wyuenboo, Lex.

Ŧ

Yealdam } Hine. hell, } Yealdam litele, Hirel

Yealdam great, Him

Writtle,Chel

s

Safforn garden, Barf

Salcot, ii yuft. Saling ould, Hinek. Samons, iter.

Samptord great, Fre.
Samptord little, Fre.
Sandon, chel.
Shackstones, Chel.
Tuttes, Desg.
Twinsteed, Hinch.

Sabretta Chel

Kantis, Far.

Keluedon, Ang.

Kentes, Roch. The Kings place

Kirkby,Ten. Knoli hill,Ong.

T.

Lachingdon, Den

Laighton flone, Bec.

Kickby. Hisc.

Newport, Vitlef. Neweran, Vitlef.

Nokehill, Haser. North end, Hauer

Northey Ile, Deng.

Norton ? Org.

Notley white, wit. Notley blacke, wit.

Ochenden Gush Che

Ockenden north, Ch. Shalford, Hinch.

0

Norton, Drug.

Bernes Roding, Dan,
Bertholt, Lex.
Bettolls, Chaff.
Beweres Hinck.
Bicknesse, Chelm.
Bilefsen, Onger.
ELLERECAY, Ba.

Buch great, Lex. Firch little, Lex.

Blockwater flu.

Bucking, Hinch.

Birchanger, Vittes. Placke Chapell, Dun. Blackmore, Civile.

Blockhoule, 11)m/l Bobi: gworth Organ

SVFFOLKE. Booke 6. The name of Iffolke, by the Saxons called Sub-pole, in regard of then which were feated in Norfolk is a countrey most plenteous The bounds o and pleafant for habitation. It is (eparated from Norfolke, by the Rivers of the letter Oute and Waueney, whose heads meete almost in the midst of her Verge, and that very neer together: the one taking course East, and the other full West. V pon which part Camridge foire doth wholly confront, the South-fide is feuered by Stoure from Effex, and the East together washed with the Germane Seas. (2) The Aire is good, (weet and delectable, and in form parts of fome of our best Physitians, held to be the best in the Land: the Soile is rich, fruitfull, and with all things wel replenished, in a word nothing wanting for pleasure or pro-The forme. (3) The forme thereof is somewhat Cressant, shooting vp narrower into the North, & fpreading wider towards the Some b, whole broadelf part is about twenty miles: but from East to West much more; for from East or point (the furthest of this Shire, yea of all Britains into the Sea) vnto great Onse River, her Welterne bounder, are fortie five miles, and the whole in circumference, about one hundred forty fix. The old Inha-(4) Anciently this part of the Iland was possessed by the (4) Anciently mis partor the zana was postericed by the fresh, who as it feemeth by Taessus, joined in Amitie with the Romans, a mighty people (faith hee) and metter flushes with marres before the Raigne of Claudius, but then by Offerius were vanquiffed, though not without great flaughter of the Romans, and in a Battleagainst them M. Offerius the some Remains and in a Barteagaint retit. 22. Operand the Council of the Generall, wonne great Honour in Jailing of a Roman citizens life; fo ready were they to giue and received Honous to themselves, but sleightly to passe our and to smoother farre greater exploits of the Britaner; which notwithssan. ding long in these parts they could not do , for the wrongs of the leenians growing intolerable, who by the Roman fol diers were put out of their rightfull possessions, their Princesaccounted no better then Slaues, and their Queen whip-ped in most ignominious manner : vnder Bodwo they wrought their reuenge, as in the Hiftory (Chrift assifting) hälthe further related. "Next to their lenniors, were the Savens that got their footing into their parts," and of them, this with New 1964. "Related their states," and of them, this with New 1964. "Related their states, and the Hot 162, was made their Ed." And 164 king of the Marian states that the Marian, of the the King of Kaut: whole of furing ending in S. Edwissed the Marrys, after the Down risk all the most defootback. Edwird the Black globaled it write in his did it most defootback. West Saxon Monarchy : and that likewife ending in King Edward the Confeilor, many noble Normans got their pol fessions in these parts, whose Of spring are plenteouslie re plenished in this Shire to this day. The Com (5) The commodities of this Shire are many and great, whereof the chiefelt confifteth in Corne, in cattle, cloth, pa flurage, woods, Sea-fift and Fowle; and as Abbo Flories. tunage, wounts, nea-min must o wit; and as Asso territories, it hat he painted this Committee of a great of painting field supply splenished with Orchards, Gardons and Cromes: thus hee defetibled it about 6 is hundred yeers fince, and now the finde as hee hath faid to which wee may adde their gaine from the Paile, whose cheeses are traded not only through out England, but into Germany, France, and Spaine, and are highly commended by Pantaleon the Phylitian, both for colourand tafte.

pales, and from S. Helens in the East, to S. Mathews church

Tacitus Agrico.

Suffolke.

The Aire.

The length and breadth of

(6) And had Issues (the onely etc) of this Shire beene as fortunate in her Surname, as shee is bleffed with Commerce and buildings, thee might worthile have borne the title of a Citie : neither ranked in the lowest rowe, wwhole trade, circuite, and feat, doth equal most places of the Land

It feemeth this Towne hath been walled about, both by a Rampire of carth, mounted along her North & Weft parts, and places of entrance where gates have floode; which no and piaces of entrance where gates naue (1000e; which no doubt, by the Danes were call downe, in the yeare of Confidence). When they facked with fpoile at the Seea-coalts: and againe in the yeare one Thouland, laid the Streets defoller, and the house on hears: yet afterwards recovering both breath and beauty, her buildings from Stake-charech in the South, to S. Magarets in the North, now conteine 1900.

in the West, are no leife then 2120. full of Streets plenteoufly inhabited, wherein are twelue parish churches scated, betides them suppressed; such were Christ-church, S. Georges, S. Sames, the White, the Blacke and Gray Friers. The Site of this Towne is removed from the Equator, vnto the degree 22-25, minutes and by Marcators observation from the fift Well-paint 22, degree 9. Minutes: and is yeerely go-uerned by two Bailifs, and ten Port-men, all wearing Scar-let, with wenty foure of their Common Counfell uppurple: a Recorder, a Towne-Clerke, fine Sergeants, whereof one is for the Admiraltie, a Beadles and Common Crier, all

in blew with the Townes Armes on their Sleeues.

The other Eye of this Shire is the Saxons Beospic-S. Edwards-bury.

Chap. XVII. | Fol. 33

gueoro. By Abbo the Royall Towne, wherein at the day-breake of the Saxons conversion, Sigebers King of the East Angles founded a christian Church: and vpon one occasion of King Edmands burial (who at Haren was short of death) for King Edmands bury, where was a manife that faired Monatheries in the dometic more than faired Monatheries in the dometic more world, begunne by King Canate, much affrighted with the feeming appearance of that Marryrs Ghoft, who to expiate the Sacrilegious imprette of his Father Suenus, enriched the place with many endowments, and offred up his owne Crowne vpon the holy Martyrs Tombe. For the beauty & buildings of this Abbey and Towne, let Leyland for me declare: The funne (faith he) bath not feene a citie more finely fea. ted, so delicately upon the easie ascent of an Hil, with a Riverrun-ning on the East-side, nor a more Stately Abbey, cither for Renenewes or incomparable mornificence in whose prospect appearesh rather a Cityshen a Monastery so many Gates for entrance and ratuer a City tom a Nonojiery, je many Cate; fer extrance, and feme of them palle, je many Tomers, and a most few sour Church, upon which attend three others, flanding all in the fame Church yard, all of beam pafing flue, cft of a currious workman-flop. Who for Ruines lie in the duth, lamenting sheir fall, mouing the be-

holders to pitie their cafe, Neere vnto this Towne a great Battle was fought by Re bere Boffu Earle of Leicester, against his Soueraigne King Henry, 2. But was worthily our come by Richard Lucy, the Kings high Iuflice, himfelfe and wife taken, with many

Flemings and Englishmen flaire.

(7) Other places worthy of remembrance this County affords, such is Essaing in the Ptoff, formerly famous for the birth of S. Andery, daughter to King Ama, onco of the three names of the Shires distifion. Rendiffson in the Enfl, where Redwald the first Christian in this kingdome held his Court: and Hadley in her South, where Guibrum the Dane whom Elfred baptifed, was buried. And things of stranger Note are the limits of the East-Angles Territories, running along New.market heath, vulgarly called the Duals-disches the like fable is formally told by Nubrigensis, that at Walpet the list and as following the same and the same as the and for fixe moneths was kept in the Castle, whence after

he escaped agains to the Sea.

As strange, but most true, was a crop of Pease, that without tillage or lowing grew in the Rockes, betwirt this Or-ford, and Aldebrough, in the yeere 1555. When by vnfcslona-ble weather a great dearth was in the Land: there in August were gathered about one hundred Quarters, and in blofforming remained as many more: where never graffe grew, or earth ever feene, but hard folide Rock; three yards deep

or earn terrectic, quintinuouse anequine y ausucept wider their Rootes.

(8) Places[oparted from compon v[c], and deutote to God and his fertice by religious Princes, were at S. Ed-mands, Infritch, Infrareth, Blubberre, Clere, LeItan, Burgh Leit, wherein Sigoberr Ring of the East-Angles entered the Profession of a Monke; but was thence forced by his people to fight against the Mertians: in which Battle hee
was staine. And Dunnies where Fair founded his Episcopal Ses. These with many others in this County were suppressed in the fall of the Monasteries, and their Reuenewes assu-

med by King Hoory the eight.

(9) This Shire is principally divided into three parts, which are called the Celdable, S. Edmands, and S. Ambrys. iberties, fubdinided into twenty two Hundreds, and them The Market gaine into 575, Parish Churches, wherein are seated seuen agame into \$75, Parith Churches, wherein are leated feuen Caffles, and twenty eight Market Townes. Whose names are in the Table annexed.

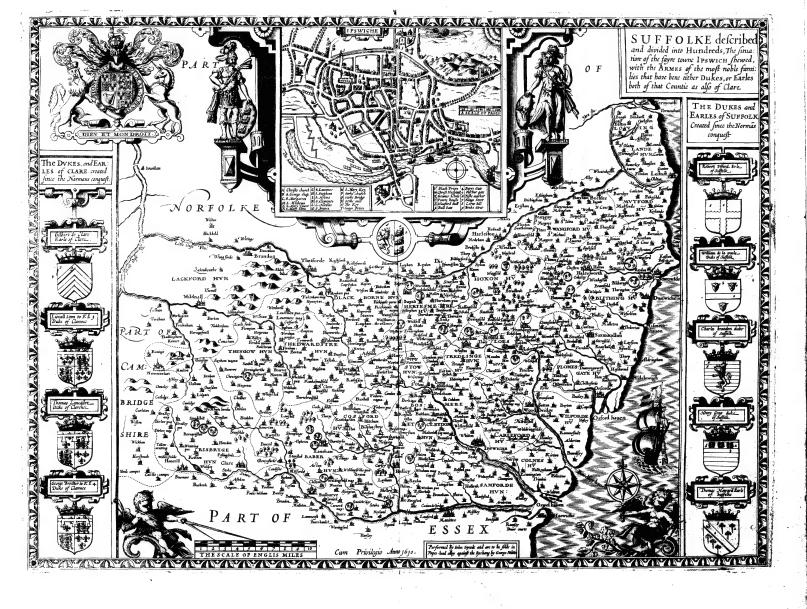
Leplandhis co mendation of S. Edmunds-burg.

in the Hiftury,

Anno 1173.

Attno 626.

Ī t.



Book. 1

Content.

Name

Aire.

Soile.

At Removesio

Marrai h.

Leon. Tarmonth,

L Ackford. 3. Risbridge. 4. Baberghe. Thedwastrie. 6. Blackborne. 7. Stowe. S. Cosforde g. Bolemere. 10.Sampford. 11.Colneis, 12.Carleforde 13.Thredlinge 14 Hartelmere. 15.Hoxone #6.Lones. 17.Wilforde

18.Plumefgate.

To.Rlithing.

27 Murford.

20.Wangford.

22. Lothingland. Acton, Babergh. Akenham, Bolmer ALDEBVRGHE, Plan Aldham, Cosford, Alderton, Wilford, Aldringham, Bitth. Allington, Hexen. Ampton, Thed. S. Andrewes, Wang. All Saints, Wang. Arwetton, Sam. Afhbye, Lothing. Afbe, Loses, Afte Bocking Bofme
Aftefeild, Thred,

Afhetesid, Black, Afhetesid, Black, Afpall, Hartef, Affington, Baberg, Aye, Hartef. Backton, Hartef. Bad'ey, Eofmer. Baddingham, Hoxon. Badwell, Black. Bairon, alias Thed. Beighton, Stacke Bargham, Elack-Barham, Bofmer-Barkinges, Bofmer. Barnbye, Mat. Barningham, Black Barrowe, Thingse. Bartham, Wang. Barton, Thed, Barton little, Lack, Batisford, Bofmer. Baudiye, Wilford. Bawdiey hauen, Caln. Baylcham, Bofmer. Bealings great, Carlef, Bealings little, Carlef. BECKLES, Wang, Bedfeild, Hoxon, Bedingfeild, Hoxon, Bellftead, Samp. Beneker, Blith. Benhail, Plum, Bentley, Samo Bernerdifton Withridge Bildefton, Cosfor, Bildefton ftrere, Cosf. Blakenham great, Bofmer. Blakenham little, Bofmer. P'axhall Plum. BLIGHRORVGHE, Blid Blithford, Elith. Blith Flu. Blundefton, Lething. BONGEY, Ware. FOTYSDALE, H Boxford, Baterg. Boxton, Will. Boyfcott, Wang. Bradfeild That. Combutham,

Bradfeild Thed. Downham, Lack Dunnyngworth, Plum. Dunftall, Rishr. Drinckston, Thed, Bradfeild S.George, Thed. Bradfeild S.Cleere, Thed.

Bradley great, Rif. Bradley little, Rish. Bradwell, Loth.

Bramford, Bolmer

rampfeild, Blath.

Brantham, Samp. Brafiard, Plum.

Brent Ely, Babergh.

Breiworth, Hartel. Breton Flu. Breton flu. Brettenham. Cosfor.

Brightwell. Carlef. Brocklie, Things. Brockford, Hartef.

Brome, Hartef. Brom(wall, Wilf.

Roundithe, Harest.

Bryfett, Bofmer. Bucklefham, Coln.

Bures, Baberg. Burgate, Hartef.

Burghe, Carlef. Burch Caffle, Lathing

Burstall, Samp. Burstall, Bo(mer.

BVRYE, Thinge.

Lones. Loves.

Cohdocke- Sami

Cockfeild, Bakerg.

Coddenham, Raimer

Combes, Stow. Coniwelton, Black.

Cornerd great, Baberg.

Cookelve. Bhth

Corton, Lething.

Cotton, Harter.

Cone hish Rlith.

Coue North, Wang, Coue South, Blith,

Cowling, Risby. Cranesford, Plum.

Cretingham, Loces, Crofeild, Bolmer,

S.Croffe, Wang.

Creating S.Oliue, Bofmer. Creating all Saints, Bofm.

Craffeld Rlith. Creating Well, Stow. Creating S.Mary, Bolmer.

Buxall, Stowe.

Bredfeeld Wil

Earleftonham, Bofin, Earletham, Loves, Earlwell, Lack, Eaftoa Gosbek, Bofm, Easton, Lover. Easten bauen, Blith. Brampton, Blitb. Brandeston, Loves, BRANDON, FERRIE, Edwardftor, Baberg. Edwarditor, Baberg Eiken, Plum. Ellowe, Wang. Elmefwell, Black. Elmefeth, Cosford. Elucden, Lack. Ewiton, Black. Erwarton, Samp. Eftberdgholt, Samp. Exninge, Lack. Exte, Hartef. Eyke, Leous,

Fakenham great, Black, Fakenham little, Black, Falkenham, Cola. Felfham, Thed. Felixflowe, Coln.
Flempton, Thing.
Flixton, Wang.
Flixton, Lething.
Flonton, Bolmer. Fordlye, Butbe. Fornham genefele, Thed. Fornham's Martins, Thed. Fornham all Saints, Thing. Foxall, Carlef. Framelden, Thred. Catwade bridge, Samp, FRAMLINGHAM, Loses, Capell, Wilf. Capell, Samp. Carleton coluite, Mat. Frekenham, Lack.

Frefingfeild, Hoxon, Frefton, Samp.

Frifton, Plans,

Fritton Flu.

Cariton, Hoxan, Carley, Cosford, Cauendithe, Baberg, Fritton, Lathing. Froftenden, Blith Cauenham, Lack. Clare Flu. Fynbarrowe great, Stawe, Fynbarrowe little, Stawe, CLARE, Risbr. Claydon, Bojmer. Fyningham, Hartef. Clopton, Carlef. Chatisham, Samp. Charfeild, Loves. Gafelye, Rishr. Chedburghe, Ristr. Chelmondston, alias Gedding, Thed, Gifleam, Mut. Giflingham, Hartef. Chempton, Cosford, Gipping, Stowe. Glemham great, Plum. Glemham little, Plum. Chefton, Blitis. Cheuingcon, Things, Chillesford, Plum, Glemsforde, Baberg. Glemsforde, Baberg. Gorlfton, Losbing. Grondesburghe, Carlefs Growton, Baberg. Chilton, Risby. Chiuley, Risbr. Cleydon, Bofm Clopron, Carlt.

Gunton, Lething. Hachelton Lores HADLEIGH, Conferd. Hankdon, Risbridg. HALLESWORTH, BA Hardwicke, Thingo. Hargraue, Thingo, Harkefteade, Samp. Harlefton, Stowe, Harrethe, Baberg. Haskeron, Carlef. Haflewoode, Plum. HAVERILL, Rist. Haughley, Stow. Hawited, Things.
Hedgeffer, alids } Thed.
Heffer, Thed.
Heigham greene, Lack.
Helmingham, Bofmer.
Hemington, Bofmer. Icmley, Cols. Hengraue, Thingo. Henham, Blith. Henfted, Blitb. Hensted, Blub.
Hepworthe, Black,
Heringsteet, Lothing,
Heringswell, Lack,
Heucyngham, Blith,
Higham, Samp.
Hinderelaie, Black.

Culphoe, Carlef. 5 Dagworth, Stone. Dalinghus } Laver. Dalingeo, wilf. Dariham, Blub. Hintlesham, Samp, Hitcham, Cosford, Holebrooke, Samp, DEBENHAM, Thred. Holesley, Wilf, Holton, Blith, Holton, Samp. Denham, Riche. Denington, Hoxos, Depden, Risbr. Desmilden, Bolim. lomersfeild, Wang, Hoo, Loors, Hopton, Black, Hopton, Lathing, DONWICHE, Blith,

Horningtherth great, Thingo. Hoxone, Hox. Huluerstrer, Wang. Hundon, Riste Hunington, Black. Huntingfeild, Blith. S. lames, Wang. Icklingham, Lack.

Horham, Hoxon,

Ickworthe, Thing. Ingare, Wang. Ingam, Black. S. Iohns, Wang. I PSWI CHE, Bofmer. Ixworthe, Black. Ixworthorpe, Black.

Kedington, Rishr. Kedlythall, Hoxon. Kenford, Lach. Kentford, Rishr. Kenton, Loser. Keffingland, Mut. Keigraue, Carlef. Ketleberfton, Corfer. Kettleburghe, Loses, Knadishall, Blath, Knatlefhall, Black. Kufhmere, Mus. Kyrkley, Mut. Kyrton Cola.

Lackford, Things.

Laigham, Cofford. Lakingheath, Lact.

angerfton Cole.

LAVENHAM RAL S. Laurence, Wang. Laxfeild, Hox. Layfton, Rlith LAYSTOST, Lothing. Leuington, Cols.
Leuheringham, Loses,
Lidgate, Ritb.
Linley, sofford,
Linfted great, Blitb.
Linfted intle, Blitb. Liuemer great, Thed. Liuemere little, Black. Longham, Thed. Lophamford, Black. Lownde, Lothing. Luchinge Mere, Met.

S. Margarets, Wang. S. Margarets, Wang. Marlesford, Loves. Martlesham, Car. Melles, Hartef. Mellford, Beb. Mells, Blith. Melson wilf Mendham, Hoxen. MENDLESHAM, Hartef. MENDLESHAM, i Metfeild, Hoxon. Mettingham, Wang. S. Michaels, Wang. Midleton, Blath. Mikefeild, Bofmer. MILDENHALL, Lack Mifmer hauen, Blith, Monckes Ely, Baberg, Monkefoham, Hozon, Moulton, Rejoridg, Mourden, Looer, Mutford, Mut. Mutford bridge, Mut. Nacton, Colv.

Naughton, Cosford.

NEEDHAM, Bofwer,
Nedginge, Cosford,
Neiland, Baierg.
Nettleftead, Bofwer. NEWMARKET, Lack Newton, Baberg. Newtowne, Store Newton, Stone, S. Nicholas, Wang, Norton, Black, Nothalls, Blith, lowghton, Thing. o Ockold, Harref. Okeley, Harref. S.Olaues, Lathing. One-house, Store.

Onfe Flu, Or Flu. OR FORD, Plent. Orford hauen, Waf. Orwell Flu. Ofton, Bafmer Otley, Carlef. Oulton, Lorbing, Owlden, Risbr.

p Pakefeild Afer Pakenham, Thed. Palgraue, Hartef. Parham, Plam. efinghall, Hittb. S. Peters, Wane S. Peters, Wang.
Petelre, Walg.
Petenghe, Tored.
Playford, Carl.
Phlemton, Toing.
Polited, Baberg.
Pollingtord, Kubr.
Prefton, Baberg.

Ramsholte, wif.

Ratleiden, Thed.

Redgraue, Hartef. Redtham, Wang. Redungicild, Hartel Recde, Thingo. Rendhams, Plum. Rendletham, Lover. Rickinghall, Harte Rickinghall, Hartef, Rickinghall grew, Black, Rickinghall little, Black, Ringfeld, Wang. Ribbe, Thingo. Riffangles, Hartef, Rombrughe, Elvib. Rougham, Thed, Beatles, Blith. Roydon, Blith. Roydon, Samp. Ruthbroke, Thed. tulimere, Carlef. Ryngthall, Belmer.

Sapiston, Black, Satham great, Thing, Satham little, Things, SAXMONDHAM, Plum. Saxftede, Hexon, Saylehome, Hexo seamer, Conford, Seamer, Coupers, Sekford, Carl, Shaddingfeild, Wang, Shanfeild, Wang, Shalley, Samp.
Shellond, Stamp.
Shellond, Stamp.
Shepemedowe, Wang.
Shimpling, Baherg.
Shotley, Samp.
Shottetham, Wif.
Sibron, Elip. Sibton, Blit Smalebridge, Baber. Sifewell . Blish. Sape bridge, Plam. Somerleto, Lething. Somerton, Bahrg. Somersham, Bosmer. Sotherton, Blub. otterley, Wang. SOVTHOVLD, Blick. Southolt, Hexen Southtowne, *Lething*, Spexhall, *Blith*, Stansfeild, Risbr. Stansfeild, Baber. Stanton, Bleck,

Steake Afthe, Hartef,
Stocke, Risbridg,
Stocke, Risbridg,
Stoke, Samp,
Stoke, Baberg,
Stonham afpoll, Bofmer,
Stonham little, Bofmer,
Stonham little, Bofmer, Stouen, Blitb. STOWE, Stone. Stow langtoft, Eleck, Stowe vplane, Stow, Stowe weft, Black, Stradbrooke, Hexen, Stradifhall, Risbr, Stratford, Plum. Stretford, Sam. Sturston, Hartef. Stutton, Samp. Sudborne, Thum. SVDBVR1E, Babere. Sutton, Wif. Swefling, Plum.

Chap. XVII. Swillond, Bofmer,

Tadingfton, Samp. Tattington, Hexen, Thebarton, Blith. Thelneshum Black Thornham great, Harref, Thornham little, Harref, Thorpe, Baber. Thorpe, Blub. Thorpe, Thred.

Thorpe | Cosford. Thrandelton, Hartef. Thurlowe great, Ribridg. Thurlowe little, Rubrid. Thurrington, Blab. Thurston, Thed. Thwayte, Hertef. Toftocke, Thed. Trimlye S. Martine, Cola. Trimlye Coin. .
S. Mary, Coin. .
Trofton, Black.
Tuddenham, Leek.
Tuddenham, Carles. Tunstall, Plan

Tymworthe, Thed. Vibbelton, Blish. Vfforde, Wif. Vggfball, Elith. Walberfwicke, Blith, Waldingfeild } Raberg. great, } Baberg, Waldingfeild Baberg, little, } Baberg, Waldringfeld, Carl, Walpoole, Birth. Walhebrooke, Samp Waltham in the Willowes, Walcon, Coln.
Wangford, Blith.
Wangford, Lack.
Wannelden, Plam.

Watlesfeild, Black

Wattisham, Cosf. Wenham; Semp.
great; Semp.
great; Semp.
Wenham; Semp.
little; Semp.
Wenhalton, Blith.
Wefterfeild, Beforer.
Wethall, Blith.
Wettleton, Blith.
Wettleton, Blith. Wettherpe, Hartef Wetther, Things, Wetton, Harte, Wetton, Wang, Wetterden, Stew, Wetterden, Stew, Wetteringfort, Hartef, Weybread, Haren, Whatfield, Losford, Whatfield, Losford, Wheltham Thed.
Wheluetham Thed. Whethertham Third little, Thirdy Whepftead, Things. Wherftead, Samp. Whitton, Boffmer. Whixoe, Risbridg.

Wickham, Wilf. Wickham Risbr. brooke, J Wickham Bartef, Skeyth, J Wilbye, Hoxon. Willingham, Wang, Willifham, Bofmer, Wingfeld, Hoxon, Wintton, Thred. Wifton, Baberg. Wiffer, Blith. Withefdale, Harry. Witheldale, Hower,
Witherfeild, Ribridg,
Witeefloon, Black,
Wittensham, Carlef,
Wolverstoon, Samp,
WOOLDBRIDGE, Loots, WOOLPIFT, Theat, Worlingham, Weng, Worlingworth, Hexe Worlington, Lack. Wortham, Hartef. Wortham, Harrey. Wratting great, Risbridg. Wratting little, Risbridg. Wratting tallow, Risbridg Wrentham, Blirb.

Wynerston, Hertef. Yaxley, Harref. Yoxlord, Blith.

Orthfolie is an Iland inclining to an Oualt forme, closed on the South and the leffer Quic which dinte it from Suffolfe, On the Eaft and North with the German-Ocean ; or the West toward Cambridge-shi with some branches of the greater that part of the New which paf-feth from Wishith into the Miffbes.

It conteineth in length (fro Tarmouth to Wishiten) about fiftie miles. In breath (from Theifind to Well about thirtie. The whole Circuit is about 243, miles.

The Name arifeth from the fituation of the People, who being the
Notther most of the Kingdome of East-Angles, are therefore called the

Norther moft of the kingdome of Espt-Angier, are inertence caused in Northfolic, at the Souther. most Santhfolic.

The Ayre is thatpe and piercing, especially in the Champion, and necre the Sea: therefore it delaieth the Spring and Harueft, the fitua-tion of the County inclining thereto, as being yuder they; degree of

neete che Sea: therefore it delisted the Spung and Frared, the first some of the County lessing altered as the Grown of the County lessing altered as the Grown of the County lessing altered as the Grown of the County less of the County less

fearch both of and otherwife.

commend their discretifiers, in a state and for 1 of 10 their course Country and Relevant contents them. Since the entry of the Normans, they have been commed candil analogorous, are to good to sense. They have been commed candil analogorous, are to good to state of the hard the state of the present behind or the large beam cales and former of the country are about Copini usua, by vaccination, and the state of high technical beam the state of the state of

Fainnings, 8c, ca ride dallaws, Painness, and R. det warmant Feelings, who to Throsphan themsidese (seconding set the first distance) with the learning and ferrite or former tensions; so that the learning set that the second of the second s

three of them being of that worth and qualitie, as no one thire of England hath the like, Norwith, Lem, and Tarmouth; to which for ancient reputation (as having beene a feat of the Kings of Engl-Angles) I may

adde Therford, knowne to Antonius, Prolemic, and older ages by the name of strongary, when the other three were yet an their infancie, and older ages by the mame of strongary, when the other three were yet as their infancie, and on ordiceme. For I accept northe Relations of the Annuquire and State of Narwish in the time of the britishes and Stazes, though Alexander Neath Bath will greated them. Hervety name abridgeth ther Antiquite, as basing no other in hilliost but Narwish, which is merce Sazwa of Daugh, and figurate the Naria-Tawas or Giffle. It feemether con or Daudh, sind figuidatch he North Towas or Galle. In Elementh, to the me trian out of the decay with renighbour Until, now called (Afre, any of the Dauth, who has been to the control of the Dauth, who londle yeter tooq. Writer breach this Captain, any of the Dauth, who londle yeter tooq. Writer breach this Captain, any of the Dauth, who londle yeter tooq. Dauthgell. He manutation of the Captain of the C treme plagues; whereof one in Anno 1348, was so outragious, as 57104 are reported to haute died thereof between the Calends of January and of July. By misery of warre, as sacked and spoiled by the Earle of Flaurical Confession of the Earle Office Confession of the E At Neuil. oliuly. By milery of warer, as lacked and fpoided by the Earle of Flamo-ders and right planed, An. 114, In yeekling to Lewis the French-pagainst their naturall Lord King Jobn, Amor 2 16. By the distinctived Barons, Anno 1166, By tumulat and indirection between the Chizcens and Church-men : once about the yeere 186, which if Henry the Third had not crosses in perform to appeals, the Citie was in hazard to be cruined: Church-ment sonce about the yeare 18st youthed it Henry the Third had necroosing perion to yopine, the Carlo was inhanced to be remind in the content of the period of the content of the

argenies Leon Regio.

(7) Termouth is the Key of the Coaft, named and feated by the Termouth.

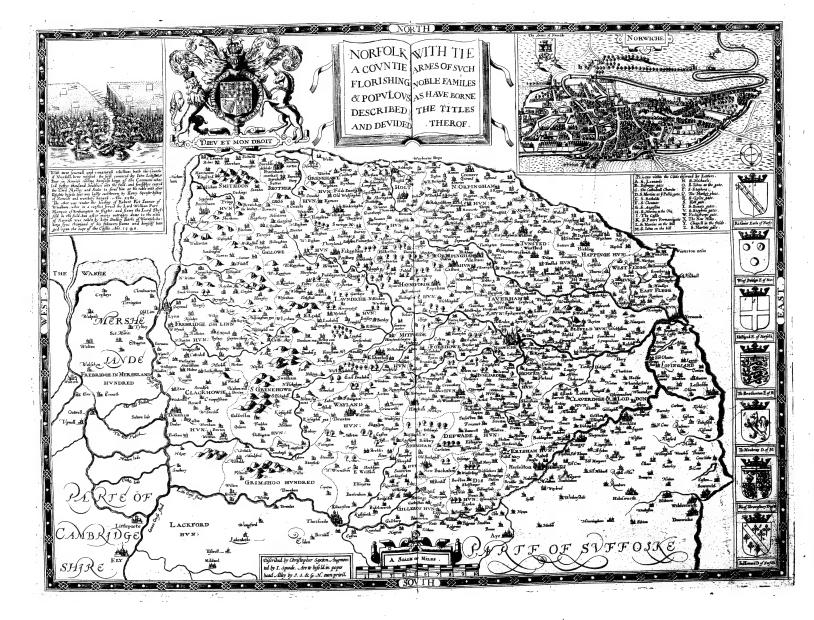
conteged that states, room house or surgiving a test supports, contained content of the content of the River Tern. Begins in the time of the Tern, Rby final test content of the River Tern. Begins in the time of the Tern, Rby final test content of the River Tern. Begins in the time of the Tern, Rby final test content of the River Tern. Begins in the time of the Tern, Rby final test content of the River Tern. Begins in the time of the Tern. Begins the River Rby and the Grinder, based only on the Christian test and taggs little state of the River Rby and the River Rby and the River Rby and the River Rby and the Rby and the River Rby and the Rby and

Ingenio & populi cultu Norfolcia clara est : Hinc sluuys, illinc Insula clausa mari ; Quaratis, & vellus, frumenta, cuniculus, agaus, Lac scatet, & piscis, pabula,mella,trotus. There are in this Countie two and thirty Hundreds, thirty Market owner, and fix hundred fixtie Parith Churches.

This Description of Northfolke, I received from the Right Worthipfull, Sir HENRY SPELMAN Knight.

Malmef fol. 10s.

The Rithoprick



Slingham, Henft.

Smalbroughe, Tan. SNETESHAM, Sm

The antient

Saxon-name of

this thire. The bounds of

The length.

The Soile.

Cambridge the

cumference.

Hundreds in Bicham well, Clack, Bidleiworth, Gylt, Norfolke.

Smethday.

6, Tuvftad.

7. Happing. 8. Hel-Flerg 9. Blowfeld.

Bilauche, Syaf. Billingford, Earfo, Billingford, Eyaf, Bilney eaft, Laure, 3. North-Gressbaw. 4. Helfe. Battering lattle, Law s. North-Erpingham Bixley,Htaft. Bixton, Fore. B'ackeney, Holt. Blickling, Southerp. Blingham north, Elo. Blingham fouth, Elo. CROMER Northern oskeys, Freebrid. Crofton, Gallow, Blownerton, Gyls, Blowfeild, Blow, Croftwicke, Tauer. Croftwicke, Tweft. Bodham Helt. Crownerborne, Fare.

10.Tauaream. Li. South Erpingha 11.Eyesford. 14.Gallewe 14.Freebridge Marl. Bodney, Souther, Booton, Souther, 15 Freebridge Lea. 16.Laundiche. Borowgh, Southerp. Bowth tope, Forc. Bowton, Clac. 17. Mitforde. 19.Humblesarde 10.Henfleade. Bracenathe, Hamb Bradfeild, Tunft. Bradden- 2 21. loddow. ham eaft, Southe 21. Clau. ring. 23. Earfbain. 24. Depwarde. ham west. Southg 25.Dyffe. 26.Gylferoffe. 27.Strophsm. 28 W.ylovd. Brancafter Smeth Brandon little Fore Branfton, Syn! Bramerton, Henft, Brampton, Southerp. Breckles, 11 ay! 39. South Gren 31. Clack loffe. Breifton, Elew, Breifingham, Diffe, Brettenham, Shrap Accle,#12w. ridge..... ridon, Helt. Alleiwythorpe, Freb Aloy, Southerpe, Aloureough, Northep. Briftlye, Laund Brockdifte, Earlh. Broke, Clane.

Alburghe, Ezifo, Aldeby, Clas. Alderford, Eynf. Rome.Fere. Alpington, ci.su Althorpe, Gal. Broneithorne. Gal. Brynton, Hele. Brundali, Blow. Annuer Freb. Antingham, Novi Buckenbam litle.Gr Buckenham old, Shr Armingale, Henft.
Armingale, Henft.
Albby, Fleg.
Albby, Clau.
Alball, Wayl. NEW BVCKENHAM. Button, Tauft. Eunwell, Desm rcham great, Smet, Affacton, Dep.
Attlebridge, Tauer. Burcham Smeth, rnham depdale,Br. AYI.ESHAM,S.Eri Burnham thorpe, Bro. Avimenton, Northern Burnham Sutton, Bro. Burnham Norton, Sr. Baconsthorp, Souther Burnham wefteate. R. Bogthorpe, Gal. OVEIOY, Proth. Banham, Gyl. Baningham, Sauthers Barford, Fore, Burningham, Helt. Barmer Gel Burrowe, Halt. Barney, Northgr. Buriton, Diffe, Burtos, West-fleg, Burron, Tunsted. Barncham, Perc. Barningham Northwood, } N.E Buxton, Southerp. Bylaugh, Southerp. Ra-nineham, Nartha

Barningham, Souther Bylney west, Freebr. Bylockby, West-sleg. Bynham, Northgy. Barrow, Stat. Barrowe, (law. Barron blendah, Clas Barwicke in she brakes, \$ sme.
Barwicke, Fore. Coifter, Eaft-fleg. Calthorpe, Southerp. Cantley, Blow, Carbrocke, Wyland. Carleton, Humb. Baftam north Gal. Carleton, Clauer. Carleton, Fareho. Batham cait, Gal Baffingham, Norther Baffwicke, Flog. Bachely, Holt. Carleton wood, Dep. Caller, East fleg. CASTLEACKE, Fr. Bawburgh, Fore. Bawdefwell, Eynf. Caftor, Healled. Bawley, Freb. Bayleild, Holt. Bech. 18 well, South Catfeild, Hap. CAWSTON Santher Beckham eaft, N. Ere Chappelgate, Fatho Beddenham , Clau, Beefton, Laund Chetgraue, Clauer. Claxion, Clauer. CLAYE, Helt. S. Laurence, Tun-Clave, Souther. Clenchwhatton, Fr. Leigton, Flow, S Renet Trang Chippinby, Hell fleg. Benfted, Hap. Berningham, See Colbye, Southerp Colkirke, Laund, North Berningham, N.E. North Coliney, Homb. Colishall, Southern Berningham N. Er. winter, N. Er. Berrowe, Mit.

Corpuflie, Southerp.

Collettic, Forther

Cofton, Farches. Cottnell, Clark.

Cougham, Freebr

Concrine Hu. Couliton, Gijmfh.

Beftho:pe,Shrap. reiton Warkerp.

Bernell, Clark.

Coulton, Ferthe Crandworth, Mir. Seift, Eyni Cranwiche, Grum? Genftwick Frof Creike North, Broth. Creike South, Frothe. Creffingham } South, Creffingham } South. great, South Crimplesham, Clac. Cringlesord, Hamb.

wood } sysf.

Denton, East. Depeham, Fore,

DEREHAM Mit.

Derfingham, Freebr. Dilham, Tunft,

Indlington, Tang.

Didlington, Sculbg. Dillington, Launa

Ditchingham, Clauer Docking, Smeth.

oveneham, Foreho

OOWNEHAM, Cla.

Drayton, Tauer. Dunham little, Laun.

Dunham great, Lean. Dunstonne, Hamble.

Dunton, Gellow, Dykleburgh, Diffe,

DYSSE, Diffe.

Eafton, Forebe.

Eafton, Waylan.

Edingthorpe, Tunft, Edecfeild, Holt.

S.Edmond, Smeth.

Ellingham, Claser

Elling, Eyaf. Emneth, Freeb.

Engham, Hap.

Eritham Eviffe

rleham, Humbl

hflington, Frebri.

Felchorpe, Taner. Filbye, Eaft.fl.g. Fincham, Cue.

Flitchim, Freebrid.

lordon, Hamb.

Fondet peter, De Fordham, Clac.

Forchooe, Fore.

Foulitham, Eyil

Foxley, Eye/.

Frense, Dalle,

Fringe, Smeth,

Frytton, Depre. Fulmer fron, Gallo.

Fundenhall, Depor

Garnelfton, Mit.

Goffhorpe, Gyl.

Gate ye, Laund

Gatelend, Gellow,

Garton, Frebridge

Cayron Frebrid.

G Garboitfiliorpe, Clr.

rettenham, Tauer.

Fifhley, Blow

Eton, Morrvich.

Eccles, Shrop.

Ecles, Happ.

Denber, / lac.

Gelfton, Claueving, Germans, Freebrid Gillington Class Gillingham Clauer, Mary, Clauer, Glamford, Hole, Godwicke, Laund. Kubic bedon, Henfl Gooderston, South Greffham, Norther Kyrby, Clauer. Kirlted, Clauer. Greffenhall, Laure Knapton Northern. Grympfton, Free'r Kylucriton, Serep. nton, Warthern Laister, Henst. Gunthorne Hali Gymingham, New Gyffing, Diffe, Denham west, Clas. Hackforth, Foreiso, Hackford, Eyoj, Haddescoe, Clauer, Hales, Claury. Halvergate, Elev. ercham Weft, Clac

NORTHFOLKE.

Langford, Souther. Langhall, Clauer. Langham, Holt. Langley, Clauer, angmer, Ea fr. efiat, Frebridg. Hanworth Narther Leffingham, Hase Hapsburgh, Hap. Hardingham, Mit. Letheringlett, Hole. Hardwick, Dep. Lexham eaft. Launa Hardwick, Dep.
Harleing & Gyle.
well,
HARLEING & Gyle.
EAST,
HARLESTON, Ear. Lingwood, Blow. impenhoe. Rlow LODDON, (laus Longham, *Laund*. Lopham north, Gylt Harpley, Fre. Lopham fouth, Grit, Haffingham, 810w. Hayham, Nor. Ludham, Happ. LYCHAM, Laund. Hayham, Hap. ynge, Eysf. YNNE Free REGIS, Free Heatherlet Hum Hecham, Smeth. Heckingham, Clau, Heddenham, Clau Lyrlingford, Sbrop. Mandlen, Freebr. Helgaye Clack. Helleiden, Tav. Manington, South Mantby, East fleg.

Hellington, Clau. Helloughton, Gal. Hemlington, Blow. Hempnoll, Depw. Hempftead, Polt. Hempton, Gallow, Hemflead, Happ, Hemysbye, East fleg, Henlond, Eyrof, Henvonaham, Souther Egmer, Norther. Ellingham little, 17'ay. Ellingham great, Sbr. Finham north, Laur. Henyngham, Sou Hesingby, Fleg. Heydon, Souther. Elmerton, Narsberg. HICKLING, Happ. Matihall, Mir. Meadham, Earth. Hier Flu. Hier Flu, Hilderston, Eynf. Hilderston, Freebrid, Hillington, Freebrid, Hindringham, North, Hobbies little, Southe. Melton great, Hemi Melton little, Humi Melton little, Hun Meifton, Holt. Methwold, Grymfo. Metton, Northerp. S. Michael, Eafl-fle. Hobbies great, Sau

Eipingham, Souther Eflington, Depor FAKENHAM, Galle, Hockening, Shrop.
Hockwold, Grynn C.
Hoo-cum Leun.
delington Leun.
Hoffton S. John, Tangs. Midleton, Freebr. Farfeild, Differ. Feildalling, Northgr. Morley, Forebo. Morningthorpe, Dep. Moulton, Depm. Moulton, Biom. Moundeford, Granf Felmingham, Tunft, Felmingham, Tunft, Felmell, Grymft. Heffton 7 Tunft, S.Peter, 7 Holt. Mulberton, Humb. Mundham, Clauer. Munflye, Northerp Holkham, Norther, Holme, Clee. Holme, Smeth

Murcon, Eyrsford, Mylcham, Laund. Myntlyn, Freebrid. N Holmhall, Souther, Homingham, Fore Narborough, South Narford, Souther. Honinge, Traft. Hopton, Depte. Hormingtolt, Laur Necton, Souther, Nedham, Earth. Netifheard, Tunft, Francingham? Heaft. Newton, Taver. Newton, Freebrid. Earle, S. Framingham Henft. Horsford, Taxer Newton, Freeby,
Newton well, Freeby,
Newton, Hend.
Newton, Spathgr.
Newton Botman, Hu
Northwold, Grymf. Horthan pigott, Straythes, S.Faythes, S.F Fransham great, Lau. Freeshorpe, Elaw. Houeston, Henst. Houghton, Gallow, Houlton, Gallow,

Wood } Eyns. Houlton, Norther. Norton fuper Eynf. Norton, Clauer. NORWICHE, Nor. Howlton on Southe Howe, Claver. Hunstanton, Smeth Hunworth, Helt. Hyndford, Grymfh. Oby, well-fleg, Ormesbye, Eaft-fleg, Ormesby S. Michael Eaft-fl. Garbolosfisam, Gylt. HYNGHAM, Foreb Ickborowe, Granth. rmans, Frebridg. Ofmondston, Diffe. Ouington, Hay. Ingalithorpe, Smeth. Ingworth, Southerp.

Gaywoode, Freebrid. Itteringham, Souther Owwell Alach Oxborough, Southg. Celling, Hole. Oxner.Southern. empiton, Laund. (eningall, Gylt. Oxbrand, Northerp. Oxwicke, Laund. Kelwicke, Tunfled Palling, Happ. Kefwicke, Humb. Ketheringham, Hum Ketlefton, Gallow. Patton, Taviled imberley, Fareba

Snoring | Norther. great, Norther. Snoring little, Gal. Pattefley, Laund. Pentney Fre. enithorpe, Gal. Pickenham ? Souther Pickenham | Southy fouth, | Southy Plumfted, Norther,

Plumpfled great, 81s.
Plumpfled fittle, Els.
The old Clark.
Podick, Spixford, Tau. The new } clack Podick, St. Postwick, Blow. Presthouses, Clark. Prumíted, Hap. Prudding norton.Ga Pulham mary, Eurfb Pulham market, Ear Q Quiddenham, Gylt, Rackey, Tau. Ramgate, Fore. Raueringham, Cleu. Raynham fouth, Ge

aynham eaft, Gal. Raynham weit, G*al.* Rednell, *Earfh*. Redham, Blow. REPEHAM, Eym/ Reppes fouth, North Reppes Northerp. Marketfled, Forebo, Marketfled, Forebo, Markingford, Forebo, Martham, Southerp. Martham, Well fleg. Reppis, Wellfleg, Riborough little, G Riborough Britie, wat. Riborough great, Ga. Ringsland, Eyaf. Ringstead, Smeth. Rockland, Shop. Rockland, Heaft. Rockland, Way. Rollisbye, Welf feg. Martyn, w.pl.

S. Maryes, Freeb.
Maffingham | Freeb.
Maffingham | Freeb.
great,
Mathaske, Nouber. Rougham, Laund. Roughton, Northern Rowdham, Shrap.

Roydon,Dif. Roxam, Clash. Rudham weft, Gal Rudham eatt Get Rungton, Clack. Runham, East fire. Runhall, Fore. Runton, Northerp Runton north.Fre Rushall, Earf. Rufbforth Galt.

Rufton, Clas.
Rufton, Clas.
Rufton Eaft, Happ.
Rifing Caftle, Freek
S
Saham, Wayland.
Salhoufe, Tauer.
Salthoufe, Helt. Saltorn lode, Freb. Sandringham, Freb Saull, Eynf.

Saulingham, Hols. Saulingham, Hols. Saulingham, Henst Sauthorpe, Souther Scarning, Lound.
Scorniton, Souther,
Scorniton, Tunfee
Scrottby, East fleg. edeford.Smeth. Sething, Clau. S.ftcad, Northerp. Sharington, Halt, Shelfanger, Dif. Sherborne, Smeth, Shereford, Gal. Sheringham, North Shimpling mull, Dij Shingham, Clack, Shipdham, Mis. Fompion, Wayl. Toffe, Wayland. Toffes weft, Gryn often Gallow. Shotteflam,Heaft Showldbam,Clack Toftes, Smeth.

Shropham, Shrop. Skeyton, Southerp

Skukhorpe, Gal.

skortough Seather

Swinfthorpe, Humb. Sydeftroude, North Syfland, Clever-Cacolneston, Deps artham, Farth Fashorowe, Depus Tatterfer, Gallow. Fatterford, Galler auerham, Tauer. I etrington, Freb. Testerton, Gallow. Tharne, Fleg. Theriton, Depw. Thelueton, Diffe. Thospe, Forebo. Thospe, (lauer. Thospe Noswich, Bl. Thorpe Marker, Nor Thornage, Holt. Thorneham, Smeth. horpland, Gallew. Threaton, Wayl.
Thrickby, East fleg.
Thurgarton, Nariber
Thurgarton, (lawer,
Thurning, Eynfferd. hursford, Nersbg. hursten, Clauer. Thuxton, Mit. hwate, Clauer. Thwayte, Southern Tichwell, Smeth. I ichwell, Smeth.
I itrington, Freth.
I ittleshall, Laund,
I itshall Marget, Diff
I stshall Marie, Diff

Tudderham? Mit. North, Sam. Tuddenham Myr. Eaft, JM Tunftall, Blow. Tunftead, Tunf.

Tustington, Southerp Twyford, Eynfford. welt, melf. Tybenham, Denw. Tylney, Frebrug.
Tyuetihall Diff.
Margoret Diff.
Tyuetihall Diff. viney, Frebridg.

ommerton Wefff.
east,
othery Clack.
oowode, Elan. outhacre. Souther Southbridge, Ma. Sperham, Eynf. Vpton, Blow. Vpwell, /luk. Vrsted, Tung. W Sporle, Sauther. Sprowfton, Tax. Walcott, Happ. Wallington, Clark, Walpoole, Freebr, WaLSHAM? NORTH, Tun. Walfram fouth, Flow WALSINGHAM? GREAT Stalham, Hap. Stanfeild, Laund. Stanfeild, Fore, Stanford, Grim, Stanhow, Smeth Staninghall Tax. tarfton Earfh. GREAT, Walfingham North. tibard, Gal. Stifkey Norther

Walton, Depw. Walton welt, Freb. Waltoneaft, Freb. tockton,Class tokesbye, Eafifleg. ooke,Clack Stowe, Way. Stowe, Clack Stradictt, Clack Straton mille, Dapw. Watham, Norther. Waterden, Brother Watlington, Clack. Wattlefeild, Forebe WATTON, Wash Waueney Flu. Strumpfhawe, Else Sturfton, Grymfo. Waxham,Hap. Waybornehope, Hole. Wayborne, Hole. Suddye, Hole. Suffed, Northerp. Wearham, Clack. Weeting, Grymlb. Weting, Grymin, Welborne, Forebo, Welles, Norther, Wellingham, Laund, Wendling, Laund, Welenham, Laund, Sutton, Happ. SWAFFHAM.Se

morley, Westacre, Freebr. Westeild, Mis. Weston, Eynff. Westwicke, Tunft. Abbots, Southe wardfronney, Hun Swayfeild, Tunged. Swenington, Eyof. Whetaere, Clauer. Whetacre 3 Clause borrowe, 3 Clause Whitwell, Egysf.

Whynbourgh, Mit. Wickhamton, Blow. Wicklewood, Fareho Wickmer, Southerp. Wighton, Norther, Wightlingham, Hensi Wignell peters, Free Wikin, Free Wilcon, Grymfh. Winfder Flu.

Winterton, Weft-flee Winterton } west-ste nelle, Themishorpe, Epsf.
THETFORD, Sbrop.
Thorpe, Expf.
Thorpe, Expf.
Thorpe, Firtho.
Thorpe, Firtho.
Thorpe, Clear.
Thorpe, Clear.
This is the strength of t

little, f Eyo, Woluerton, Freb. Woodrifing, Mit. Woodbafwick, Blow. WORSTEAD. To Worthing, Laund. Wortwell, Earlb.

Wottonfouth, Freb. Wotton north Freit Wramplingham, Fe Wromingham, Hum Wrettham weft, Shra rettham eaft, Shr. Wretton Clack. Wretton, Lack. Wroxham, Tan. Wrungey, Freb. Wylby, Sbrep. WYMONDHAM, Wynche west, Freb. Wynche eaft, Freb. Wyndall, Clau. Wynfarthing, Dif.

Wytton, Tun. Foftmonachorum, []. Wyuerton, Hall. Tottington, Way!. Towne greene, Fore. Trowle, Henft. YARMOVTH EARS Yardley, Class runche, Northerp. Trymingham, Northe, Yeluerton, Henft.

written by the Englift-Saxens, Gnent-bpig-reype lieth bounded vpon the North with Lincolne-fbire and Norfolke; vpon the East with Norfolke and suffolke; vpon the South with Hartfordfhire and Ef-

CAMBRIDGE-SHIRE.

Ball Line fex; and vpon the West

with Bedford and Huntington-Shires.

(2) This Province is not large, nor for aire greatly to bee liked, having the Fennes so spread vpon her North, that they infect the aire farre into the rest: From whose furthest point vnto Ratson in the South are thirty five miles; but in the broadest is not fully twenty: the whole in circumference, traced by the compasse of her many indents, one hundred twentie and eight miles. (3) The foile doth differ both in aire and commo-

dities, the Fenny furcharged with waters : the South is champion, and yeeldeth Corne in abundance, with Meadowing-pastures upon both the sides of the River Came, which divides that part of the Shire in the midft, vpon whose East-banke the Muses have built their most facred seat, where with plenteous increase, they have continued for these many hundred yeeres. (4) For from ancient Grantcester, Camboritum by

Antonine, now famous Cambridge, the other breft and Nurse-mother of all pious literature, haue flowed full ftreames of the learned Sciences into all other parts of this Land and elsewhere : ancient indeed, if their Story bee rightly writ, that will haue it built by Cantaber Spaniard, three hundred feuenty fiue yeeres before the birth of our Sauiour, who thither first brought and planted the Muses. This City Grantesser by the Tyrannie of time, loft both her owne beauty and her professed Athenian Students, so that in Bedaes daies, feuen hundred yeeres after the Word became flesh, it is described to lie a little desolate Citie, and as yet retaineth the name, without any memorie of circuit by

Monke of Burton doth report, nine Scholars received their Baptisme, and became Preachers of the Gospel among the Britaines, which (as he faith) happened in the raigne of Hadrian the Emperour. But when the Picts, Scots, Hunnes, and Saxons had laid all things wafte, and with their fauage fwords cut out the leaves of all civill learning, this (as the reft) yeelded to deftru ction, and fo lay forlorne till the Saxons themselues became likewise civill; when Sigebert the first Chrifian King of the East-Angles, from the example of France, whither he had beene banished, built Schooles in his Kingdome, and heere at Grantcester the cheife, recalling thither the Professors of Arts and Sciences, as the Story recordeth, and Traditions doe hold.

Of this City, in the yeere of Christ Iclus 141, as the

King.6.1.

Sigebert.

Cambridge, hov it came to be c led Grant bridge.

But afterwards, as it seemeth, their increase being Straightned, the Students complained (as the Prophets did to Elisha) that the place was too little for them to dwell in, therefore enlarging more North-ward, feated themselves neere vnto the Bridge, whereupon the place began to be called Grant-bridge, though others from the crooked River Came will have it named Cambridge. This place (though facred and exempted from Mars, as Sylla once spake, when hee spared Athens) the Danes in their destructions regarded no whit, wherein they often wintred after their spoiles, and left the scarres of their sauage fores euer behinde them. And in the yeere 1 0 10. when Suen in his fiercenesse bare downe all before him, this place was no place for Scholars to be in : Warres loud Alarums ill conforting the Muses milde Harmonies. Yet when the Normans had got the Garland on their heads, and these Danish stormes turned into Sun-shine daies, Giflebert the Monke, with Odo, Terricus, and William, all three of the like Monasticall Profession, in the raigne of

King Henry the First, resorted vnto this place, and in a

publike Barneread the Lettures of Grammar, Logicke,

& Rhetoricke, and Gillebert Distinitie vpon the Sabbath and Festivall daies. From this little Fountaine (faith Peter Blessensis) grew a great River, which made all England fruitfull, by the many Masters and Teachers proceeding out of Cambridge, as out of a holy Paradife of God. The first College therein endowed with Possessions was Peter-house, built by Hugh Balsham Bilhop of Ely, in Peterhouse the the yeere of Grace 1284, whole godly example many others followed, so that at this day there are fixteene most stately Colleges and Halles, for building, beautic. endowments, and store of Students so replenished, that vnleffe it be in her other fifter Oxford, the like are not found in all Europe.

But at what time it was made a Vninersitie let Robert de Remyngton tell you for me. In the Raigne (faith he) of King Edward the First, Grantbridge of a Schoole by the Court of Rome was made a V niversitie, such as Oxford is. Lastly, the Meridian Line cutting the Zenith ouer this ding to Mercator, 20. degrees 50. fcruples, and the

Citie, is distant from the furthest West-point, accor-Arch of the same Meridian, lying betweene the Aequator and Verticall-point, is 52.degrees 20.fcruples. (5) Another City formerly in great fame is Elie, by the Saxons Eliz, had in account for the repute and holinesse of Votarie Numes, there residing; built first

by Audrey wife to one Tombret a Prince in this Pro- Saint Audrey. uince, who had this place as a part of her Dowry fhee having departed from her fecond husband Eebert King of Northumberland, denoted her felfe to the scruice of God, and built heere a Monasterie, whereof the became the first Abbesse. This in the Danish deso-folations was destroiced, but soone after recdified by Ethelwold Bishop of Winchester, who stored it with Monkes, vnto whom King Edgar granted the inridi-ction ouer foure Hundreds and a halfe, within these Fennes and the East-Angles limits, which to this day are called The Laberties of S. Audrey : after whose example, many Nobles to enriched it with large Renenewes, that as Malmesbury faith, the Abbat therof laid op yeerely in his owne Coffers a thou and foure hundred pounds. And of latter times the Monks therof became fo wealthy, that their old decaied Church they renued with new and most stately buildings, which is now the Cathedrall of the Discesse, and for beautie giueth place to no other in the Land. Eight other foundations fet apart from fecular vie in this Prouince, were at Thorney, Charteres, Denny, Elfey, Beach, Barnwell, Swafey and Shenger, all which in the daies of King Henry the eighth came to the period of their furpassing wealth, and left their Lands to the dispose of his Will.

(6) The generall commodity of this Shire is Corn. which in the South, and Champion-part doth abundantly grow, as also Saffron, a very rich spice. Some Woods there are, and Passure both pleasant and profitable. The North part thereof is Fenny, but withall fruitfull, whereof Henry of Huntington and William of Malmesbury thus doe write : This Fenny Country is pal fing rich and plenteous, yea and beautifull also to behold, wherein is fo great store of Fish, that strangers doe wonder and water-foule so cheape, that fine men may therewith be satisfied with lesse then an halfe-penny.

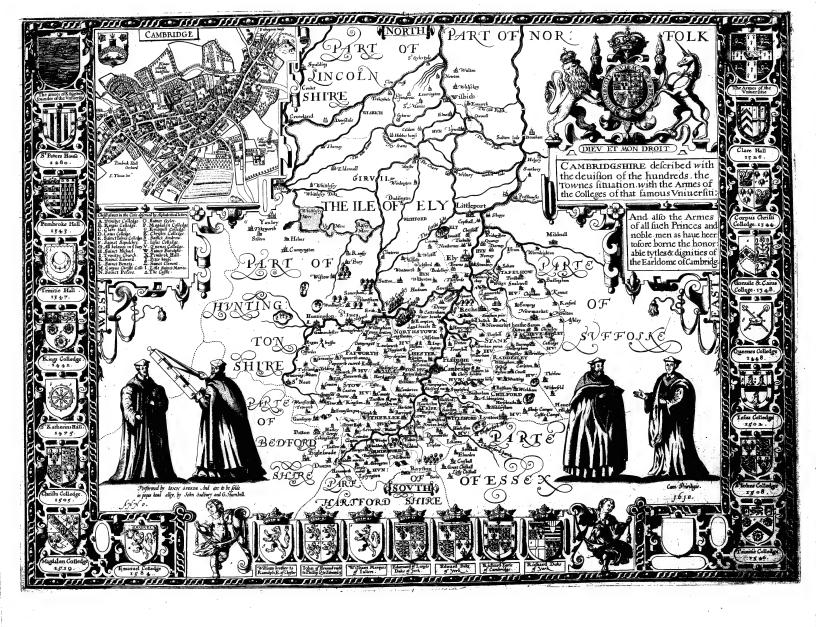
(7) Places of ancient note in this Shire are these, the Erminstreet-way, which vpon the lower West parts of this County thorow Roisson runneth forthright vnto Huntingdon, And from Reach, a Market-Towne stan ding neere to the River Came, a great Ditch and Trench is cast all along New-market-heath, which for the wonder conceined thereat, is of the Vulgar called The Diuels Ditch, being in truth made for a defense against the Mercians, by the East-Angles, whose Kingdome it inuerged. The Gogmagog Hils neere Cambridge retaine the remembrance of the Danift Station, where as yet on their tops is seene a Rampier strengthned with a three-fold Trench, whereof Gernafe of Tilbury telles vs

many a prety Tale. (8) This Shire is divided into feuenteen Hundreds. wherin are scated eight Market Towns, and hath beene strengthned with seuen Castles, and God divinely honoured in one hundred fixty three Parish-Churches. K 2.

The Cirie of El

The Comm

Market To Parith-churche





An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and places mentioned in Cambridge-shire.

Hundreds in Cambridge-shire.

1. Wisbich. 2. Wichford.

3. Ely. 4. Staplehoo. 5. Cheuelie.

6. Stane. 7. Northflowe. 8. Papworth.

9. Chefterton. io.Flendishe, 1 LR adfeild. 12.Chilford.

Weston 2 Rad. Coluill, 5 Rad. Comberton, Wether. 13.Wittlesford. 14. Thryplow. 15.Wetherley. Conyngton, Pap. Copthall, Ely.

Cottenham, Cheff.

Crawden, Arming.

Wood 3 Chene.

Courney, Wich.

Croxton, Stow.

Ditton Fleud

Forton, Trip.

The Frith dike Wich

Fulburne little, Flend

Cottenham, North,

16.Stowe. 17. Armingford.

Abington, Arming. Abington 3 Chil. Abington Schil, Arrington, Weth.

Dixford, Wit. Afhley, Chen. Denny, North. Audre, Wich. Doddington, Wich, Audrey cauley, North. Downham, Ely. Dowfdale, Wif. Badburham, Chil. Drayton fenne, Pap. Bad ingham, Staple. Dry drayton, Cheff. Balfnam, Rad. Dullingham, Rad. Barrington, Wether,

Bartlowe, Chil. Eaft great. Stow. Barton, Wether. Eldernall, Wich. Baffingborne, Arn Elme, Wif. Pedelthey, Ely. Elfworth, Pap. Brame, Ely, Eltifley, Stow. Brinckley, Rad. ELY, Ely. Erith causey, Wich. Bottifham, Stane, Bourne, Stowe. Euerfden great, Ston. Euerfden little. Ston. Boxworth, Pap. Burrowe, Rad Burwells, Staple, Fordham, Stap.

Cam Flu. Caldecort.Stop CAMBRIDGE, Flend,

Castle & Chil. Fulburne great, Flend. Camps, 5 Shady & Chil. Gamlinghey, Stome. Gaton, Cheft Camps, 5 Carleton, Rad. Girton, North. Catlidge, Chew. Gogmagog hils, Flend. Caxton, Stow. Granceter, Wesher, The Wich. Granfden Z Store parua, Chatteris, Wich. Granfden? Store. magna, Store. Graueley, Pap.

Chetcham, Ely. Cheuclie, Chesse. Gyherne, Wif. Childerley, Cheft. Chippenham, Stap. Haddenham, Wich Clopton, Wether Hardwick Stone. Clowcrofe,Wich. Harimere chap. Wich. Colham, Wich. Harliton, Trople Harlton, Werb. Hastingfeild, Werb.

Hatley cast, Arming. Hatly S. George, Stow. Hawxton, Triple. Hilderfram, Chil. Hinxton,Wit. Hobbes Wif.

Hogginton, North. Hormingley, Flend, Hormeathe, Chil, Chery? Flend. Hynton, Flend. Hystons, Cheft.

Ickleton,Wit. Impington, North Ifellham, Staple.

Kennitt, Stap. Kingfton, Stow. Knapwell, Pap. Kneleworth, Arming. Kyrtling,Chem.

L Landbeach, North, Landwade, Stap. New Brich. Waterfey Wif. Leuerington, Wif. Litlington, Armi Listington, Arming. LITTLEPORT, Ely. Lowleworth, North. LYNTON, Chil.

M Maddingley, North, Maden lode, Ely, Maney, Wieb. S. Maries, Wif. Melborne, Arming. Melreth, Arming. Mepole, Wich.

Merthe, Wich, Milton, North, Gilden Arm.

Morden, Arm.

Steple Arm.

Morden, Arm.

Newbernes, Ely. NEWMARKET, Ches. Newmarket heath, Chen. Newton, Trip. Newton,Wf. Norney, Ely.

Oufe Flu. Owre, Pap. Owtwell.Wif. Oxwell, Wesh.

Pampisford, Chil. Papworth Euered, Pap. Papworth Agnes, Pap. Persondroue, Wil. Prickwillow, Ely.

Quancy, Ely. Rampton, North, Ramfey mere Wich, RECHE, Wich. ROYSTON, Arms

Sawfton,Wa. Saxum, Chem. Shelford little, Trip. Shelford great, Trip. Shengey, Arm. Sheperheth, Weth, Snaylwell, Stap. Soham Stap. Soham mere, Stap. Stachworth, Rad.

Stanton long, North Stapleford, Trip. Stontney, Ely. Stowe, Stow. Stowe Quire, Stane, Streatham, Wieb.

Streatham merc, North. Sutton, Wich. Swaffham prior, Stane. Swaffham bulbeck, Stane. Swauefcie, P. p.

Tadlow, Arm. Teuersham, Flend, Thetfort, Wich. Thorney, Ely. Thorney, Wich. Thryplowe, Triple. Trokenhole, Wif. Trumpington, Trip. Turbulley, Ely. Fydd S.Gyles, Wife Tydd

Vg-mere, Wich. Pware, Wich. Vpwell, Wab. Walton, Weeb.

Waterbeach, North.

Welney, Ely. Wendy, Arm. Wentworth, Wich. Westwick, Cheft. Westley, Rad. Whaddon, Arm, Whittlefey Wich Whittlefey dike, Wich. Whittlesey & Wich. mere, Whitwell, Werb. Wicham, Wich, Wichford, Wich. Wicken, Stap. Widford, Trie. Wilberham Stane.
Wilberham Stane.
Wilberham Stane.
Wilberton, Wieb.

Willingham, Papa Willingham, Rad, Willington, Wich. WISHBICH, Wif. Witcham, Wich. Wittlesford, Wit. West Rad.

Wimlpe, Weib.





HERTFORD-SHIRE

CHAPTER XX.

The bounds of Hertford fhis

The forme.

The length.

Afferius.

The warres.

S. Albert.

A Towne indov

uileges of Rem

ib,14.cap.10.

Book.I. (hap. XX.

Ertford-sbire is bordered vpon the North with Bedordand Cambridge-fbires; vpon the East, is altoge-ther bounded by Estex vpon the South, is confined with Middlefex; and her West butteth vpon Buckingham and Bedfordshires

(2) The formethere of is fomewhat circular, with many indents to fetch in those Townes that are dispersedly stragled into her next shire: whereof Roiston and Totteridge are the two extremes from North to South, betwixt whom in ftrait drawne line are twenty feuen English Miles, and from Putnam westward, to Cheston Nunnery in the East, are twenty eight; the whole circumference, a-bout an hundred and thirty miles.

(3) The aire is temperate, fiveet, and healthfull, as seated in a Climate neither too hot, nor too cold: the foile is rich, plentious, and delightfull, yeelding the lone is rich, pientions, and dengittent, yections abundance of Corne, Cattle, Wood, and Graffe, defititute of nothing that ministreth profit or pleasures for life, which are more augmented by the many Rivers that arise and run thorow this Shire, watering her owne

and others, till they empty themselues into the Sea. The ancient In (4) Her ancient Inhabitants in the time of the Romans were the Cattieuchlanians, or Cassijans, and the Trinobantes, as their Writers declare, and in the Heptarchy was possessed by the East-Saxons, excepting some small portion therof that the Mercian Kings enioied. The Danes also in their ouer-runnings, sought to stay themselues in this Shire, and at Ware (then Weare) pitched downe their rest and hope: for passing the Les in their light Pinnaces and Shallops, raised therin a Fort, which maugre the English they kept, vntill that by the wife policie of King Elfred, that River was parted into more running streames, whereby their Ships perished, and they intercepted both of prouisi-

on and further supplie. (5) The Romans before them had made Verolanium in this Shire their greatest for account, which in Neroes time was a Municipial, as Ninius in his Catalogue of Cities doth cal it, or as Tacitus, a Free Towne; lacked by Boduo that euer eternized Queene of the Icenians, when feuenty thousand of the Romans and Confederates by her reuenging fword perished: the site and circuit whereof, in this Card we have fet according to our view and measure there taken : whose magnificence for Port and stately Architecture, were found by her large and arched V aults in the daies of King Edgar, which were digged into and cast downe by Elred and Edmer, Abbats of S. Albanes, for that they were the receptacles and lurking-holes of Whores and Theenes the ruines of which, have raifed the beauty of her furuiuing and faire Saint Albanes, where Offa the great

Mercian, in great denotion, built a most stately Mona-

fterie, whose Church yet standing, retaineth the ashes of many Nobles, there flaine in the quarrell of Yorke and Lancafter; and a Font of folid braffe brought out of Scotland by Sir Richard Lea, from the flege of Leeth. (6) Many other Townes, both for Commerce, Market Townes stately Buildings, and of ancient Record, this Shire

affoordeth, whereof Hertford, though the Shire-Tenne, is not the richest; the passage thorow Ware hath left her waies to vntrodden: to preuent which, in former times that River at Ware was chained vp, and the Bailiffe of Hertford had the custody of the Key: which howfocuer they have loft, yet hath the Towne gotten her Governour to be preferred from the name of a Bailiffe, vnto a Maior, assisted with nine Burgesses, a Recorder, and two Sergeants their Attendants. Hererian Caffle, for lituation pleafant, for Trenth, Walles, and River, furficiently fenfed, was lately scene; but marked to destiny, as the Towne to decay, hath found the hand of Fortune to ouermatch her strength and to ruinate the Priorie, S. Nicholas, and S. Maries Churches, belides a Cell of S. Albans Monkes, that therein were feated. The like fate fals vnto Hemfted, and Hemfted. herfaire Caftle, wherein Richard King of the Romans left his life. Yet Langley is graced both in the birth of Prince Edmund the hifth sonne to King Edward the Third, and the buriall of Richard the second that vnfortunate King, who in the Cell of Friers Preachers was there first buried, but afterwards remooued and enshrined at Westminster. And in another Langley, necre

Fredericke the Emperour) whose breath was lastlice (7) The civill Battles that in this Shire have been this Shire. fought, in the Map it selfe are inserted, and therefore heere omitted, but the more ancient remembred vnto vs by Oister-hill neere S. Albans, whom the iudicious Cambden supposeth to have beene the Campe of Ofterius the second Lieutenant, and Subduer of great Caractaem; as also seuen small round Hilles betwixt Steuennedge and Knebworth, in which are supposed some Roman Souldiers to lie buried.

and East from thence, was born that Pontificall Break-

Speare, Bishop of Rome, known by the name of Hadrian the fourth, (and famous for his stirrup-holding by

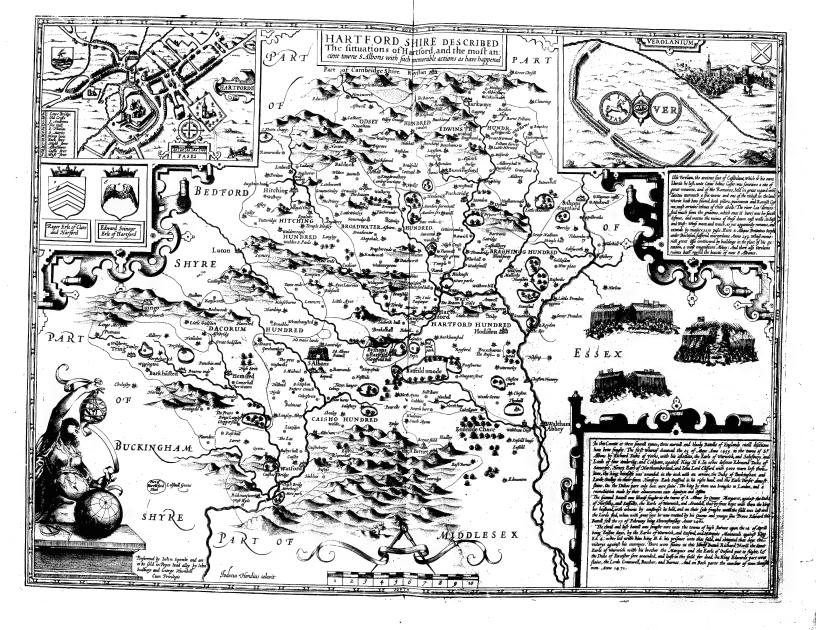
(8) Religious Houses built and suppressed, the chiefest for account in this Shire, were S. Albans, Roiflon, Ware, Sopwell, Langley, befides them at Hertford, whom Beda cals Herudford: which Cities graduation is diftant and remooued from the Equator, 5 2 degrees minutes of Latitude, and fet from the first point of The fire of the West, according to Mercater, in the 20 degree 29.

Minutes of Longitude. The Earledomes whereof, were

The Barles. enjoied only by those two honourable Families, whose archieuements we have also therein expressed.

(9) This Counties division is into eight Hundreds, wherein are feated eighteene Market Townes, and one hundred and twenty Parifb-Churches, as in the Table inserted by their Alphabet are easily to be found,

Religious house erected and sup



Book . I.

The bounds of

Bedford fbire

The forme

The sire.

The faile.

The ancientin

Cafar, Com lib.s

The River Out

Hundreds in Hertford-fbire.

Diey. Hund. Edwinstree, Hund. Branghing, Hund. 4. Brodewater, Hund. Buckland, Edworff. 5. Hitching, Hund. BUNTINGFORD, Edwinft Burley, Brodes. 6. Dacor, Hund. Burwells Brodw.
greene, Bufhey
Hall. Dacor. 7. Hertford, Hund. 3. Caifho, Hund.

Abbotsbury, Edwisft. Affley, Hitch. S. ALBANS, Cailb. Aldbury, Dacor. Aldbury, Edwinft. Aldbury } Edwinft. Fiell Aldenham, Cash. Alfwick, Edwinft. Amwell | Hen.

Angabury, Hitch. Annables, Dacor. Anftye, Edmaf. Albwell, Odley. Afpenden, Edwinft Afton, Brodw. Laurence, Brod. Ayott Bred.

В

The Beacon, Brod. The Beacon, Odfey. BALDOCK, Brod. BARKHAMSTED, DA Barkhamsted, Hert. BARKWAY, Edwinft. Barley, Edwinst. Bartrams, Brang.

Beamonds Cash. Beche Dacer. Bedmont, Caifb. Beawell Hert.

Bedwell Here. Bell } Caifb. Benington, Bred. Benington, Hert. HIGH HIGH . Caifb.

Bernet } Caife. Berfted, Dacor. Berwick, Brang, Bibswell, Hitch. Bleak(waye, Brang, Bouington, Dacor. Hall, Caifb, Bourne

Bourne } Dacor. Box-wood, Broad. Bradfield, Odfey. Bragherend, Brodin, Bramfefield, Carlo Branfield, Hert Branghing, Brang. Brickenden, Hers

} Edwinff. great, Hadham little,

nath, } Edwinft. Hadham Halmicy, Brod. Haly, Hert. Harding, Dacor. Harpsfield } Brod.

HATFIELD Bishops, Bred. Haulwicke, Brodw. Helihams } Edwinft.

Henxworth, Odjer. Hexton Caib. Hide } Odfor. Hall, Hidehall, Brang. Highouer, Hitch. Highffreetc Docor Hillend, Caife,

Hormead | Edwin. How End. Hitch. Holwell Brodw.

Kelifhull, Odfer. Kempton, Huch. Kinfwoodbury, Odfey Kinsburne, Dacor,

Knebworth, Brodw. Ladwell, Hitch. Lailton, Edwinst.

No mans } Caifb. f and. Kings Dacor.
Langley, Dacor.
Langley Abbey. Caib. Langley, Huch. The Lea, Caife. Lechworth, Broder, Lenmere, Dacor. Leuesden, Caife. Ludwick Brod.

Lullie , Hitch. Mallocks, Brang. S. Margets, Hare. Maiden.Croffe, Hitch. Meefden, Edwinft. Merden, Here. Merflon long, Dasar. S. Michael, Caifb. Milford, Edwinft.

Nasthide, Caife. Newbarne, Carfo. Newenham, Carlo Newcoham, Od'er. Newgatefreete.Hart. Newhall, Brang. New place, Brang. Nimbali. Northaw, Caife. Northel:urch, Dacor. Norton, Carlo. Norton, Odfey.

Nimhall, Caft. Odfey grange, Odfey. Owghton } Huch. Owley, Edwinft.

Pansanger, Hart. Parkeward, Cash, Parmer Hall, Edwinft. Pelham | burnt , Edwinft .
Pelham Furneux , Edwinft .
Pelham flocking , Edwinft . Penley, Dacor. Periton, Hitch. Pellebery, Brang. Potters crouch, Caife. Pottrells bare, Carfe. Pottrells, Caifs. Popes, Hart. The Pree, Cail. Preston, Hitch. The Priorie, Brodw. PVCKERIDGE. Brang. Punchin end, Dacor,

Punsburne, Hart. Putnam. Dacer. Putteridge, Huch. Quenbery, Edwinft. Quickfwood, Odfey.

Radwell, Odfer Redborne, Caife. The Ree, Brang. Recd, Odey. Redgwells, Edwinft. Reuels , Bred. Reyford, Hart. RICKMASWORTH,

Caift. Rickneffe, Brang. Ridge, Cash. Rofe Hall , Cash. Rufhden, Odfey.

Sabiworth, Brang. Salesbery, Caife. Sandon,Odfey. Sarret, Caife, Satridge, Brang. Sauntridge, Caife. Sawcombe, Bred. The Scale, Hert. Shenley, Caife. Sheepehall, Brode

Shinglehall, Brang. Sinkles, Caife. Sleape, Caife. Smalford, Caife. Sopwell, Caif. Spelbrooke, Brang. Standen, Brang. Stanfied Brang. Stantheele, Brang, Stapleford, Hart. S. Stephens, Carlo Steuenage, Brodo.

Tannis, Edwinft. Tednambury, Brang. Temple, Brediv. Temple dinfley, Hitch. Thyobald, Herr. Titten hanger. Cash. Totteridge, Broder, Totteredge, Cash, TRING. DAGOT. Tunwell, Brodw.

Wadefmill, Brang. Wakerley, Edminst. S. Pauls, Hitch; Walden Walden } Hach. Walkerne, Broder. Wallington, Odfey. Waltham } Here. Walfworth, Hitch. Ware Parke, Brung.

WATFORD, Caife. Watton, Brodm. Waymer Castle, Brang. Welbery, Huch. Welde, Caife. Wellwin, Brodm. Welthide, Caifb. Westmill, Brang. Weston, Brodw. Whitebarnes, Edwin. Whitebarnes, Earn.
Widboro hill, Brang.
Widford, Brang.
Wiggington, Dacor.
Willesborne, Dacor. Willion, Brod. Windridge, Cash. Withiall, Edwinft. Wood greene, Hert. Woodhall, Brods.

Civill Warres

...

CHAPTER XXI. Edford-flire, seated in the South-east of this Iland, is a plaine and champion Country, and lieth bounded upon the North with Huntington-Shire; VDon the East, with Cam-bridge and Hartford-shires; vpon the South, with

Hartford and Bucking ham-

fhires; and vpon the West, with Buckingham and Northampton-foires.

(2) The forme thereof is somewhat ouall, and not very large: for from Tilbroke in the North, vnto Studham in the South, are but twenty foure English miles; and from Turny in the West, vnto Hatley Co-king in the East, are not fully fourteene; the whole in circumference, about seuenty three miles.

(3) The aire is temperate, and the soile bountious, especially the North, whose Borders the fruitfull Onfe with her many windings watereth. The South is more leane, and with greater industry bringeth forth Barley, no better elsewhere. Generally, this County is Champion, though some places belprink-led with Pasturage and Woods.

(4) The ancient Inhabitants, knowne to the Romans, that held in this Shire, were part of the Cattieuchlani, a front and warre-friring people; and yet vpon the report of Cefars proceeding, fent him their fubication for peace. But when that conquering Nation had brought Eritaine into a Province vnder Rome, their Legions lay at Selenae and Magintum, which are their Legions say at Selente and Deagnium, which are now Sendy and Dunflable, places of memorable note in this Shire. After them, the Sacons coucting for so faire a Seat, first dispossession the Britaines, under the leading of Custowulfe the West-Sacon, about the yeere of Grace 572. who making it their owne, was laftly enjoyed by the Mercians, as a part of their Kingdome.

(5) In the yeere of Christs Incarnation 1399 im-mediately before those ciuil!! !! area, that rent in pee-ces the peace of this Land, betwixt the Princes of Lanrafter and Torke, the Riner Oufe, necrevnto Harwood. flood fuddenly ftill, and refrained to paffe any further; so that forward, men passed to pane any dir-ther; so that forward, men passed three miles toge-ther on foot in the very depth of her Channell; and backward, the waters swelled vnto a great height: which was observed by the indicious, to foretell some vnkinde divition that fhortly fhould arife.

(6) This Countie, among the common calami-(6) I has Counte, among the common caramites of the Land, when it lay trampled water the feet of the Daner, furlained a part: and after that, in the time of King Stephen, when the Cinill Warres thundred betwith Maul the Empire and hintleffe; the Shire-Towne was fore walked, with great flaughter of many control of the Counter of King. So when the Barons for looke their allegeance to King John, the Towne and Castle were rendred up vnto

their hands : and laftly, by King Henry the Third, laid leuell euen with the ground, fome ruinous walles appearing towards the Oufe, but not a stone left vpon the Mount where stood his foundation. (7) This Towne by the Britaines was called Let- Bedford.

tidur; by the Saxons, Became po; and of vs, Bedford: being the chiefest in the County, from whom it taketh the name, and is most fruitfull, and pleasantly feated, having the Oufe running thorow the Towne in the middelt, and a faire Stone-bridge built over the fame, whereon are two Gates to locke and impeach the paffage, as occasion shall serve. At the first entrance flandeth S. Leonardi Hospitall for Lazars : and trance transcent second as reputation to Zenes and the truther inwards, Saint Islans and S. Maries Churches; Churches smite-within the Towne, S. Pauls, a most beautiful Church, ligious boists in S. Cuthberts, and S. Peters: without the Towne standesh the Friers, S. Loves, Alhallomes, and Candwell Abbey: not farre whence, fometimes flood a Chapell vp-on the Banke of Oufe, wherin (as Florilegue affirmeth) the body of Offa the great Mercian King was interred, but by the ouer-fwelling of that River, was borne downe, and swallowed vp: whose Tombe of Lead (as it were some phantasticall thing) appeared often Tombe. to them that feeke it not, but to them that feeke it (faith Roffe) it is invisible. This Towne is governed 7-bn Roffe. yeerely by a Maior, two Bailiffes, two Chamberlaines, a Recorder, a Towne-cierke, and three Sergeants with

(8) A tale of vaine credit is reported of Dunftable, Dunftable. that it was built to bridle the outragioulnes of a theefe named Dun, by King Henry the first : but certaine it is the place was formerly held by the Romans, whose Legions there lay, as appeareth by the Coines there v-fually found, which from Magintum are corruptly called Madning-money.

called Madning money.

(a) Calities in this Shire are Woodhill, Estem, Temfford, and Amphill, an honour now apperraining to the
ford, and Amphill, an honour now apperraining to the
ford the Magnitude
former. And places of Religion, built by decoust for
former, And places of Religion, which by decoust for
former to the form of the Magnitude
former to the Magnitud like, felt the hand of Henry the Eighth tolic fo heavie vpon them, that they were not able to sustaine the waight, but were crushed to peeces, and fell to the

(10) The Graduation of this Countie, taken for the Shire-Towne, is placed from the Equator in the degree of 52 and 30 minutes for Latitude, and is remooued from the first West point of Longitude, 20 degrees and 16 minutes.

(11) Whose Princely Families that have borne The Dukes and he Titles both of Dukes and Earles, within the Mappe t felfe by names, and their Armes are inferted, as thou feeft; and whose Counties division are into nine Hun dreds, wherein are feated ten Market Townes, and one hundred and fixteene Parish-Churches.

High Caife. Bridge, Brang. Brodwater, Brang. Gorchambury, Cash. Graueley, Brodw. Grauefend, Edwinst. Minhall, Cash. Shepeflude, Caiffe. Minfingbery, Edwinft. Monden frewell, Brad. Groue, Cash. Monden furniuall, Bred. More Parke, Caifb. Brokell Broden. H Morehouse, Cash. Broxbourne } Hert. North Myms, Caife. Hadham Wood. Broxborne, Herr.



BEDFORD-SHIRE.

С Caddington, Dacor. Caifhoe, Caifh. Caifhoe Bridge, Caifb. Caifhoburie, Caifb. Calkott, Odfey. Camberlow 3 Odfey. Greene. Prang.

Bushie, Caist.

Bygraue, Odfey.

Chandofe, Ducor.

Cheisfield Brodw.

Chellon, Hart.

Chepperfield, Dacor.

Cheston Parke, Hert.

Chefton Nunnery, } Hert.

D

Clothall, Odfey.

Amwell } Hert.

Coddicott, Caife, Cokenhatch, Edwinft. Colliers End, Brang. Colfhill, Dacor. Colney, Caifb. Coringley, Edwinft.

Corner } Dacor. The Beacon, Hert. Hall, Cottered, Odfer. High Brang. Cudicott, Hitch. Cuholigate, Caife.

The Bale, Herr. Beachams, Edwinst. Beaches, Edwinst.

Dane } Dator, End, Dane Brode. Darnels, Broder. Datchworth, Bred. Digfwell, Bred. Dogshead, Edwinst.

Eastwicke, Brang. Elstree, Cash. Epalletts, Hitch. Eifenden, Hert.

> Fincher end, Brodie. Flampsteed, Dacor. Flaunden, Dacor, Fresden, Dacor. Friers, Brang. The Friers, Dacor.

> > G

Gabbins, Hert. Gabbins, Caile, Gadiden Dacor. Gadiden } Dacor. great, } Dacor. Geldeiden, Brang. Gigging, Edwinft. } Exwinft.

HARTFORD, Hert. Hartingfordbury, Hert. Hatfield Hert.

Newfels, Edwin. Nuthamsted, Edwin, HEMPSTEED, Dacor.

HITCHING, Hitch.

HODDESDON, Hert. Horkerell, Brang. Holey, Hert. Hormead great, Edwinft.

Hunidon, Brang. Hyde, Calb.

Ickleford, Hack. Heltrey, Caifb.

ROISTON, Odfey.

STORTFORD Bring. Bishops. Studham, Dacor.

Sullemaca, Caife. т

Thoracy, Huse,
Thoracy, Huse,
Thomas Chappell, Huse,
Thoreley, Brane,
Thoreking, Edwinft,
Thundrick, Brane.

Two waters, Dacor.

Vphall, Brang.

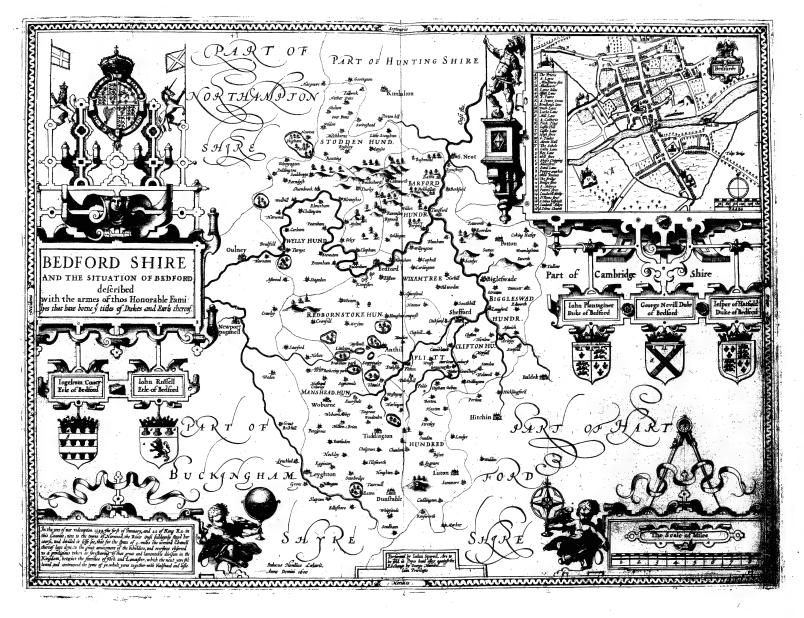
WARE, Brang. Watford Hall, Hert.

Westwich, Caife. Wheathamsteed, Dator.

Wormley, Hers. Wulmer Brode Wymley Brod.
Wymley Brod.
little, Brod.

Y

Yardley, Odfey.



Stanbridge, Manfo.

Stando Clifton.

Standen Clifton,

Stanford, Wixam.

Steuenton, Willy,

Stopfeley, Flut.

Stratton, Biggle. Stretley, Flur.

Studham, Mans.

Sundon, Clift.

Summers, Flat.

Sutton, Biggie.

Taternall, Manh.

Tempsford, Biggle, Tettworth, Biggle.

lenkicke, Redborne,

Thorncott, Wixam.

Thurlye, Willy, Tilefworth, Mans.

Tylbroke, Stod. Tylworth, Manife.

Turucy, Willy.

Werdon old, Wixam.

Tyngratic, Manh.
TVDDINGTON, Manh.

Steppinglev, Redborne.

Stoughton, Stodden

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Tovvnes,

Rivers, and places mentioned in Bedford-shire.

Hundreds in Bed- Cambleton, Clift. fordpire.

STodden, Hund. 3. Wylly, Hund. 4. Wixamtree, Hund. 5. Bigglefwad, Hund. 6. Redbornestoke, Hun. 7. Flitt. Hund. 8. Clifton Hund. 9. Manshead, Hund.

ANTHIL, Redborne. Arlefey, Clife. Afcotts, Wixam. Alpeley | Mans. guile, Mans. Alwicke, Biggle.

Barford, Barford, Barkmaw Parke, Redbor Battledon, Manfb. Beckring Parke, Manfb., BEDFORD, Welly. Beefton, Wixam. Bletfoe, Willy. Bictioe, Way.
Berkford, Biggle,
Berton, Flit.
BIGGLESWADE, Biggle. Billington, Manfb. Farndish, Willy. Bilcott, Flitt. Flitton, Flist. Blunham, Wixam. Bolnhurft, Stod.

Bushmead, Barford. Byddenham, Willy . Caddington, Flitt. Calmworth, Barford,

Brome, Wixam.

Brumham, Willy.

Cardington, Wixam, Carleton, Willy. Caylooe, Stodden. Chalgraue, Mansh, Chaulton, Flitt. Chellington, Willy. Chickfend, Wixam, Clapham, Stodlen.

Claphill, Flitt. Clifton, Clifton. lipfon, Manfo. Cranfield, Redborne. Crawley | Manfo. Cuphull, Wixam.

Deane & Stadden oucr. Deane" Stodden. DVNSTABLE, Manfe. Dunton, Biggle.

Eaton, Marile. Eaton Sotton, Barford, Edworth, Biggle, Eggington, Manh, Elmertham, Wily, Elftowe, Redberne, Euerdon, Biggle. Euersholt, Manse Eyworth, Biggle.

Faldo, Flitt.

Goldington, Barford, Grauenhurst & Flitt. Grauenhurft? Flies,

Harwood, Willy. Harlington, Manft. Hatch, Wixam. Hatley Port, Biggle. Hatley coking, Biggle, Hawnes, Flitt. Haxton, Flitz.

ileath, Manjh. Henlowe, Clifton, Hide Flate. Hide Flin. Higham Selitt.
goben, Flitt.
Hill, Wixam.
Hockecliffe, Mans.
Holcott, Mars.

Holme, Biggle. Houghton Redborne. Houghton Manfe, Howell, Clifton.

Radwell, Willy. Kempfton, Redborne, Knotting, Stodden. Rylcly, Stodden.

Langford, Biggle. LEIGHTON? buzard. Ligraue, Flitt. Limbene, Flitt. Littleton, Redborne,

LVTON, Flut. M Mauldon, Redborne, Margatt, Mansb. Melchborne, Stodden Mepshall, Clifton. Meriton LRedborne. morton, Milbrooke, Redborne. Milhoe, Biggle.

Milton Manh. Mograrige, Wixam. Milton ernes, Stodden.

Newneham, Willy, Norhill, Wix.m.

Ocley, Willy. Ockley, Stodden. Oufe, Flu.

Patenham, Willy. Peggifton, Flire. Pertenhull, Stodden. Poddington, Willy. Potefgraue, Manfo. POTTON, Biggle. Pullox hill, Flitt.

Rauenidon, Barford, Reynold, Barford, Ridgemond, Redborne. Rokkefdon, Barford, Ruche, Manis.

Westning, Mansh. Whipsand, Mansh. Sandey, Biggle. Sawford, Mansh. Scotfield, Clifton. Wildon, Barford. Willhamstead, Redborne. Willington, Wixam. Segnowall, Manth. WOBORNE, Manife, Sharnbrocke, Willy. Woborne Abbey, Manfe, Wodhill, Willy. Woodenden, Manh. Wotton, Redborne. Sharpenho, Flitt. SHEFFORD, Clefton, Shelton, Stadden. Shidlington, Clifton Womnleighton, Biggle, Shillington, Flut. Wraft, Flitt. Siluifao, Flit. Sondon, Flit. Wrestingworth, Biggle. Wynyngton, Willy. Souldroppe, Willy. Southill, Wixam.

Y Yeldon, Stedden,





BVCKINGHAM-SHIRE.

CHAPTER XXII.

The forme.

The limits,

Length.

Book.1.



Vekingham, for the plenty of Becch-trees there growing, and those in the elder times of the Saxons called Bucken, may well be fupposed from them to have the name, as afterwards the whole Shire had hers from this Towne Buc-

kingham. (2) In forme it somewhat resembleth a Lion Rampant, whose head or north-point toucheth the Counties of Northampton and Bedford, whose backe or eastpart is backed by Bedford and Hertford-fbires : his loines or fouth-borders rest vpon Bark-shire, and his breast the west side is butted vpon wholly by Oxfordfbire. The length thereof from Waisbury in the fouth, to Bradfeld in her north, are thirty nine miles: the bredth at the broadest, from Afridge in the East to Brenwood Forest in the West, are eighteene; the Circumference. whole in circumference one hundred thirty eight

> (3) The aire is passing good, temperate, and plea-fant, yeelding the body health, and the mind content. The foile is rich, fat, and fruitfull, giving abundance of corne, graffe, and marle. It is chiefly divided into two parts by the Chiltren hilles, which run thorow this Shire in the middeft, and before time were so pestred with Beech, that they were altogether vnpaffable, and became a receptacle and refuge for theeues, who dailie endammaged the way-faring man; for which cause Leoftan Abbat of Saint Albans caused them to bee cut downe: fince when those parts are passable, without any great incombrances of trees; from whose tops, a large and most pleasing prospect is seene. The Vale beneath is plaine and champion, a clayie-foile, fulfe, and rough, but withall maruellous fruitfull, naked of woods, but abounding in medowes, paflures, and till lage, and maintaining an infinite number of fheepe, whose soft and fine fleeces are in great esteeme with

the Turkes as farre as Alia.

The ancient

Cutbonalfe.

The Thones.

(4) The ancient Inhabitants that were feated in this Shire, were the Cattieuchlani mentioned by Ptolemie, and them difperfed thorow the Tract of Bedford, Hertford, and this. These yeelded themselves with the first to Cafar vnder the Romans subjection, whose ouer-worne Empire ending in Britaine, the Saxons by strong hand attained this Prouince, and made it a part of their Mercian Kingdome: yet was it first subdued vnto them by Cherdike the West-Saxon, Cherdike the West. whose memorie is in part continued in the Towne Chersey, you the West of this County, where in a tharpe and bloudy battle he was Victor ouer the Britaines. So also Cuthwulfe a West-Saxon at Alesbery in the yeere of Grace 592. Ouercame the Britaines, and bare downe all things before him; yet no fooner was their Heptarchie wained, and their Monarchie able to stand alone, but that the Danes, before their strength and growth was confirmed, waxed vpon them; and they not able in so weake a hand to hold fast that weight of greatnesse they had so grasped, gaue place to their Conquerours, who did many harmes in this Province : for in the yeere of 4. the Danes furiouslie raged as farre as Brenwood, where they destroied the City Burgh, the ancient feat of the Romans, afterwards

royall house of King Edward the Confessor, which

(5) The Shire-towne Buckinghams, fruitfully fea- Buckinghamthe ted vpon the River oufe, was fortified with a Rampire, and fconfes on both bankes, by King Edward the elder, faith Marianus the Scotish Writer; where in the heart of the Towne hath stood a strong Castle mounted vpon an high hill, which long fince was brought to the period of her effate, now nothing remaining besides the signes, that there she had stood. The River circulates this Towne on every side, that only on the North excepted, ouer which three faire stone-bridges lead, and into which the springs of a Well run, called S. Rumalds, a child-faint borne at Kings Sutton, cano- S. Romalds Well. nized, and in the Church of this Towne enfhrined. with many conceited miracles and cures ; fuch was the happe of those times, to produce Saints of all ages and sexes. This Towne is gouerned by a Bailiffe and twelve principall Burgesses, and is in the degree remooned from the first point of the West for Longi-

tude 19.33. furuples; and the North-poleeleused in Latitude for the degree of 5.2. 18. furuples.

(6) A Towne of ancienter note is Stany-Streeford, the Romans Lactorodum, being built upon that ancient Caufey-way which is called Watting-freet, where remaine the markes thereof even vnto this day. Arthis place Edward the elder stopped the passage of the Danes, whiles he strengthned Torcester against them ; and heerein, King Edward the eldest fince the Con-quest, reared a beautiful Crosse in memory of Eleanor his dead Queene, as he did in every place where her Corps rested, from Herdby in Lincolne-shire, till it was

received and buried at Westminster. (7) Places intended for Gods true worship, built Places of Relia by deuout persons, and sequestred from worldly imby detious persons, and requestred from worsely im-ploiments, were at Launden, Luffeld, Bidlefden, Brad-well, Nether, Ankerne, Missens, Teckend, Partren-dune, Astridge, and Alesburie: Astridge in great repute for the Lloud (supposed out of Christs sides) brought out of Germanie by Henry the eldest sonne of Richard King of the Romans, and Earle of Cornwall, whereunto reforted great concourse of people for denotion, and adoration thereof, But when the funne-shine of the Gospell had pierced thorow such clouds of darknes, Colpetinal piercea enrows usen closus of carknes, it was perceived apparantly to be only hony clarified and coloured with laffron, as was openly shewed at Pauls Cross to the Bishop of Reviellers, the twentie fourth of Februarie, and year of Christ 15,38. And classbury for the holinesse of Saint Edith was much fre-

light in the right of fuch Lords as made them their owne for wreacks indeed. (8) With foure Castles this Shire hath beene Castles. firengthned, and thorow eleuen Market Townes her Burkengban. Commodities traded; being divided, for service to Evences. the Crowne and State, into eight Hundreds, and in Harflept. them are seated one hundred fourescore and fine Parish-churches, as in the Table annexed alphabe-tically are expressed.

taking vpon her the veile of denotion, and in that

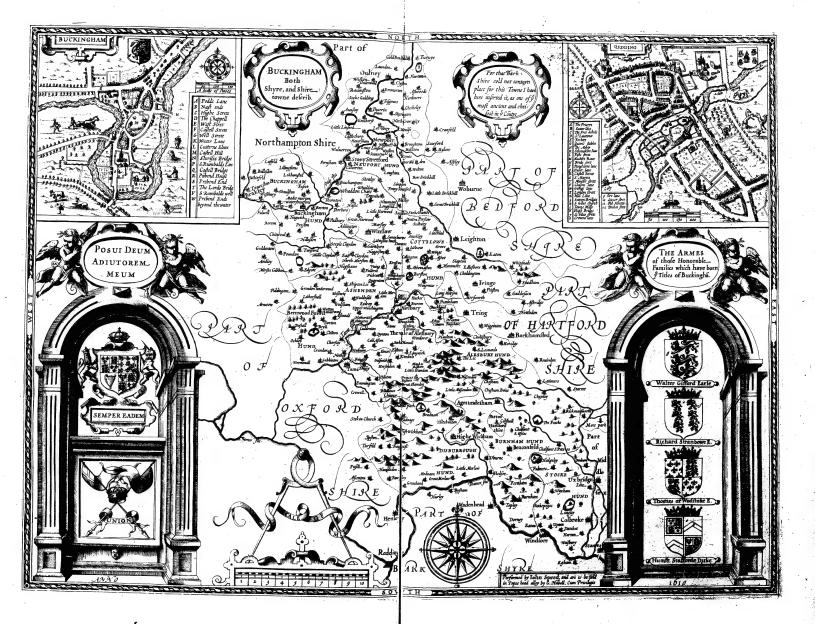
fruitfull age of Saints became greatly renowned, euen as farre as to the working of miracles. These all in the

that from those turmoiled seas their merchandize

quented, who having this Towns allotted for her S. Edith.

Dowrie, bade the world and her husband farewell in

formes and rage of the time, fuffred fuch fhipwracke,



Thornton, Buck.

Thurringham, New.

Tingwicke, Buck,

Tinweston, Buck,

Topley, Burn, Tottenhoo, Coll.

Touley, Alb.

Turfeild, D.f.

Turuye,New.

Vpburne phurne 2 Dif.

Twyford, Buck,

Vpton, Stock,

Waddoldon, Alb.

Wamden, New,

Warrington, New.

Waysbury, Stock

Wendouer Al., florence, Alef.

Westbury, Buck,

Weston vnderwood, Ne.

Weston turuill. Alef.

Wexham, Stock. Whaddon chafe, Col.

Weltcote, Al.

Whaddon, Col.

Whitchurch, Col.

Weeden, Col.

Walton, Alef.

Walton, New,

Vuing, A/h.

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and Places mentioned in Buckingham-shire.

HVNDRED SI Broughton, New BV CKINGHAM, Back in Buckingham-Buckland, Alef. Shire. Burnham, Burn. East 2 Burn. Burnham, 5 Burn.

I. N Ewport. Buckingham

Collitowe. Alhenden.

Caldecott, New. Alesbury. Castlethorne, New. Disburrough. Caueley Buck Cauersfeild, Buck. Burnham, Stocke. Chalfont S. Peters, Burn

Chalfont S. Gyles, Burn. Chalwey, Stock, Checkmore, Buck. Chechely, New. Achenborowe, Buck. Cheddington, Coll. Chepping 2 Dif. AGMONDSHAM, But Chepping Disb.

Burfton, Coll.

Caluerton, New.

AYLESB VRY, Alej Valeof Alof. Apflone, Dif. Athbridge, Call Afhendon, Afh. Afton clinton, Alef. Afton abbotts, Coll.

Acheley, Buck. Addington, Buck. Addrocke, Buck.

Cold? Alef. Aunflop, New. Barton, Buck, Clifton raines, New. Reach hammon Buch Colbrocke in & Stock BEACONFEILD, BM horton, Store,
COLBROCKE S

Bearton, Alef.
Bernwood forrest, Alb. Bidlefden, Buck. Blechley, New. Bledlow, Alef. Boreney, Burn. Boreton, Buck Boftall, Afb.

Bradfeild, New. Bradnam, Dif. Bradnam parke, Dif. Bradwell New. Brickhill little.New. Brickhill great New. Brickhill, New.

Brill, Aften. Broughton, Alef.

Denham, Stock Dorney, Burn. Dorton, Alb. Drayton beauchampe, Coll. parflowe, } Coll. Dunton, Coll.

Cold-afton, Alef.

North Now. Crowly, Now. Cublington, Coll.

Cuddenton, Alef.

Datcher, Stock

Crandon, Alb.

Dynton, Alef. Eaton, New. Eaton, Stock.

Edgcott, Buck Edlesburrough, Coll. Elsborough, Alef. Emmerton, New, Eydroppe, A/b. Farnham royall, Burn Fawly, Dif. The Feath, Burn.

Filgrane, New. Fingerft, Dif. Folcott, Buck, Fulbrok.Coll. Fullmere,,Stock Garnboro, Aft. Gawcott, Buck,

Merfhe? Buck. florens, S Gotchurft, New. Cherflie, 4/b. Grendon long, Alb Chesfham, Burn, Greneland, Dif. Chelliam boyes, Burn. Groue,Coll. Cheyneyes, Burn. Hadnam, Alef. Hambleden, Dif. Chilton, Alb.

Chitwood, Buck, Cholesbury, A.of. Little Alef. Choldesbury, Coll. Great Alef.
Hamden, Salef.
Leck Buck, Claydon Afb. Steeple 7 Buck. Claydon caft, Alb.

Hanflope, New. Hardmere, New. Hardwick, Coll. Hardwood great, Coll. Hardwood little, Coll. Hardwell Alef Hauersham New. Haulton, Alef.

Hawridge, Coll. Hedgeley, Stock, Hedltor, Dif. Hillefden, Buck. Hitchendon, Dif Hoggefton, Col. Hogshawe, Alb. Horidge, Alef. Horienden, Alef. Horingdon, Afe.

Newington } New. NEWPORT, New. Horton, Stock Nothey, Alb. Hucket, Alef. Ockley, Alb. Ilmere, Afb.

Ipfton, Dif. Iuer, Stock. IVINGOE, Coll.

Lynford little, New

Lynford great, New,

Marlowe little, D.f.

Marlowe great, Dif. Marlowe florrens, Dif.

Marshe gibbon, Buck, Mayes morten, Buck,

Mednam, Dif.

Mentmore, Coll.

Little } Alla.

North Merston, A.

Merfworth, Coll.

Middleton keynes, N

Great Alef.

Little Miffenden, } Alef.

Morton, Dif.

Moulfo, New.

Mursley, Coll,

Nafhe, Coll.

Nettleden, Coll.

Newington } New.

Padbury. Buck. Kimbers, Alef. Penne.Burn. Kingley, Alb. Pichcote, Af. Pitfton, Coll. Langley marishe, Stock, Langwicke, Alef. Prefton, Buck, Latimers. Burn. Quainton, Alb. Laundon New. Lec, Alef.

Shipton Ab. Radnage, Dif. Ratley, Buck. S. Leonards, Alef. Rauentton, New. Lillingflondayrell, Buck Linchlad, Col. Ouer } Afb. Lither (hall. Alba Rickman(worth.Burn. Littlecott, Coll. Princes Risborough, Alef. Lothbury, New. Loughton, New,

Oulfwick, Alof.

Poundon, Buck

Prebend end. Buck.

Oule flu.

Monks 7 Risborough, Rowsham, Col. Sabbinton. Alb. Sanderton, Dif.

Afton 3 Aft. Saulden, Cel. Shaulfton, Buck. Shenley, New. Shenley brooke end, C Sherington, New. Shipton, Col. Sinckleburrow, Col. Sipnan, Burn,

Tame flu.

WICKHAM, Same, West Wickham, Dif. Slapton, Col. Staunton, New, Nether, Nether, Winchington, Stoke golding, New, Stoke poges, Stock, Vpper, Stoke manuil, Alef. Stoke hamond, New, Wing, Col. Wingraue, Col. WINSLOWE, Col. Stone, Alef. STONY STRATFORD,

heath, & Cel. Winflow Stowe, Buck, Fenny New. Wolfton little, New, Wolfton New. Stratford, Buck, Woluerton, Now. Stucklye, Coll. Woodsham, Alb. Wormenall, Alb. Sulbury, Coll. Swanburne.Coll. Wotton Sympion,Nov.

Votton ? Alb. Woughton, Now. Wyllyne, New. Thornborowe, Buck.

Book. Chap. XXIII.

name from that famous I'm werfers and most beautifull Citie Oxford, and this of the Foord of Oxen, fay our English Saxons, though Leiland upon ground of conjecture will

haue it Ousford, frothe River Oufe(by the Latins called Ifi which giueth name likewife to the adjoining Had Oujney The North point of this Shire is bordered your, by the

Countees of Warwicks and Northampton: the East with Buck, ingham, the Well by Gloncefter Gire, and the South altogether is parted from Bark-fibre by Thamsfis, the Prince of Bri)2) The bleffings both of the fweet-breathing heavens.

and the fruitfull lite of this Counties (oile, are fo happy and fortunate, that hardly can bee faid whether exceeds. The aire milde, temperate and delicate; the Land fertile, pleafant and bounteous; in a word both Heasen and Earth accorded to make the Inhabitants healthfull and happy: The hilles The Soile. loaden withwoods and Cattle, the vallies burthened with Corne & pasturage: by real6 of many freshspringing Rivers which sportingly there thorow make their pailage; wheref The Rivers. Euenlod, Charmel, Tame, & Ifis are chiefe: which two latt making their Bed of Marriage nere vnto Dorchefter, run thence together in one channell and name.

(2) The length of this Shire is from Clerdon in the North west, vnto Canersbam in her South-East, neere vnto Thamis

and amounteth almost to forty miles; the broadest part i in her Westerne Borders, which extending from the said Cleydon in the North, vnto Faringdon feated vpon the River Ifis in the South, are fearcely twenty fixe; and thence grow ing narrower like vnto a Wedge , containing in Circumfe rence about one hundred and thirtie miles. (4) The ancient Inhabitants knowne to the Roman

A Battle.

were the Dobuni, part whereof policifed further westernely were the Dooma, part whereor potential turner wettering into Oleselfer-pine, and neare Eaftward, betwite the bowing of Thamilis, were leasted the Anealtes, who fent their fubmiffion vinto Islina Cafar, when report was made that the Trendontes: had purthenfelues under his procedion; where of followed the Britaines feruitude vnder the proud yoke of the All-coucting Romans: yet afterwards this Counties people, being very puissant, (as Tacitus termes them) and vnshaken by warres, withstood Offerius Scapula the Romane Lieutenant, chooling rather to yeeld their liues in Battle then their persons to subjection. Of later times it was posfelied by the Marcina-Jacons, as part of their kingdome, though fometimes both the Welf-Jacons, and the Northwest both the dipole of fome partition for 18 and arthrefine that king Official guar the the-flourishing Civic Dorokefler, vnto Berinus the Well-Saxons Apolle, to be his Episco. pley vinto Devinus the web-saces Applies, to one Explice pall Seas whence the good Billiop comming to Oxford and preaching before Wulpherus the Mercian King, (in whole Court Athelmold the SombSacous heathenish king was then pre-sent, be with all his Nobles were courted to the faith of Christ, and there haptised, whereby Berinus became the Apostle also of the South-Saxons.

(5)Otherplaces of memorable note, either for actio therin happening, or for their owne famous efficeme, are the Relie-rice-flower flanding neere vnto Enifem in the fouth of this thire: a monument of huge flones, ferround in compaff, in maner of the Stonehenge: of which fabulous traditio hath reported forfooth that they were metamorphifed fro menreported forflooth, frattery were measured process of the but intruth were there ereded woon form great victory obtained, either by, or againfl Rolle the Done, who in the year 876 entred England, and in this flitte fought two Battels, one necrevate Hoeb-Norton, and a fecond at the Scien-Stone.

(6) Rodest likewise remaineth as a monument of Oxfords high-stiled Earle, but vnfortunate Prince, Robert De Vere, who belides the Earledome was created by king Richard the fecond, Marquelle of Dublin, and Duke of Ireland: but at that Bridge, discomfited in fight by the Nobles, and forced to swimme the River, where began the downefall of his high mounted fortunes; for being driven forth of his Countrie, laftly died in exile and diffrested effate.

But more happy is this County in producing farre more glorious Princes, as King Edward the Confessor, who in Ifup was born, Edw, the victorious black Prince, in Woodflock; hp was born, Law, the victorious black Printer, in some set, and in Oxford that warlike Casa da Lian, King Richard the first, the sonne of King Henry the second, first tooke breath.

(7) Which Citie is, and long hath beene the glorious seat of the Majer, the British Albans, & learnings wellpring, from of the awages, the Drittin Albura, or carmings well prings testing whose living fountainethe wholsome waters of all good literature ficeaming plents (orly, have made fruitful all other parts of this Realime, and gained glory among ft all Nations abroad. Antiquitie auoucheth, that this place was confedent and the confedence of the conf

crated vnto the facred feiences in the time of the old Bri

eaines, and that from Greeke-lad, a Towne in VI ile flore the Academy was translated voto Oxford, as voto a P, ant-plot, both more pleating and fruitfull, wherto accorde th the an-Otterfor Steelein cient Burleaus and Necham, this laterallo alleaging Merlin. But when the beauty of the Land lay under the Saxons prophane feete, it full ained a part of those common calamities. haut g littlere ferued to v phold its former glory, faue only the famous monument of S. Fridefunds Virgin-Conquest, no other knows into internet in a remainant of signal conjusts, no other ichoole then left if noting befuse her Monallery et thole great blalls to gether with other Davids fromes, being well blowne ouer, king Elfred, that learned & religious monarch, recalled the exiled Maferto their facred place, and built therethree goodly Colledges for the ftudies of Dining y,Philofophy, and other Arts of humanity, fending thither his owne fonne Ethelward, and drew thither the yong No-bles from all parts of his kingdome. The first reader thereof was his supposed brother Neore, a man of great learning by whose direction king Elfred was altogether guided in his his goodly foundation. At which time alfo, Afferia Moneuenfis, a writer of those times affaires, read the Grams mar and Rhetoricke, and affirmeth that long before them,

Gild.es., Melkin , Ninius , Kensigern , S. German and others, spent there their lives in learned studies. From which time that it continued a Seed plot of learning till the Norman co quest, Ingulfus recordeth, who himselfe then lived. No mar ell then if Mathew Paris calleth Oxford the second schoole of Christendome, and the very chiefe Pillar of the Catho-like Church. And in the Councest holden at Vienna, it was ordained, that in Paris, Oxford, Bononsa, and Salamanea (the only Vniuerlities then in Europe) flould be erected schooles for the Hebrew, Greeke, Arabick, and Chaldean tongues, and that Oxford should be the generall V niuerstie for al Englad, freland, Stotland & Wales: which point was likewife of such weight with the Connell of Constance, that from this Precedence of Oxford Vniuerlitie, it was concluded, that the Englifb Nation was not onely to have precedence of Spaine in all generall Councels, but was also to bee held equall with France it felfe. By which high prerogatives this of ours fiath Councel printer alwairs so flourished, that in the dais of king Henry the third at Laran, 1317thirthic thousand students were therein resident, as Arch bishop Armachanus (who then lived) hath writt and Rishange (then also liuing)theweth, that for al the Civill warres which hindred fuch places of quiet studie, yet 15000 studentswere there remaining, whose names (saith he) were entred in Ma-rricula, in the Matriculation Books. About which time, John

Balis! (the father of Balis! king of Scots) built a Colledge,

yet bearing his name, Anno 1269 : and Walter Merton Bi

thop of Rochester, that which is now called Merton Colledge, both of them beautified with buildings, and enriched with lands,and were the first endowed Colledges for Learning in all Christendome. And at this present there are fixteen Col VV adham Colledges (befides another now in creeting) with eight Halles, & many most faire Collegiat Churches, all adorned with most stately buildings, & inriched with great endowmets, noble Libraries, and most learned Graduates of all Profession ons, that vnielle it be her fifter Cambridge, the other nursing breaft of this Land, the like is not found agains in the world.This City is also honoured with an Episcopall See. As for the fire therof, it is removed from the Equator in the degree 52, and one minute, and from the West by Mercaters

(8) As this Countie is happy in the profession of so far (8) As this Countie is happy in the proclion of to Issue an Audiony, losi tigraced with most princely Palaces apperaining to the English Crosse, when the Audion of the English Crosse, when Issue furprised and poisoned by Queene Eleanour his wife, & was Interpreted and postioned by <u>Material Learners</u> with 5 c. was first buried at Goodfaw Numers, in the midst of the Quire vader a Hearscof filke, serabous with lights, whom Hogh Bissinop of Limediae (thinking it an vasit object for virgins deutotion) caused to be remoued into the Church-yardibut those chaste listers liked so wel the memory of that kind La-

neafure 19 degrees, and 20 minutes.

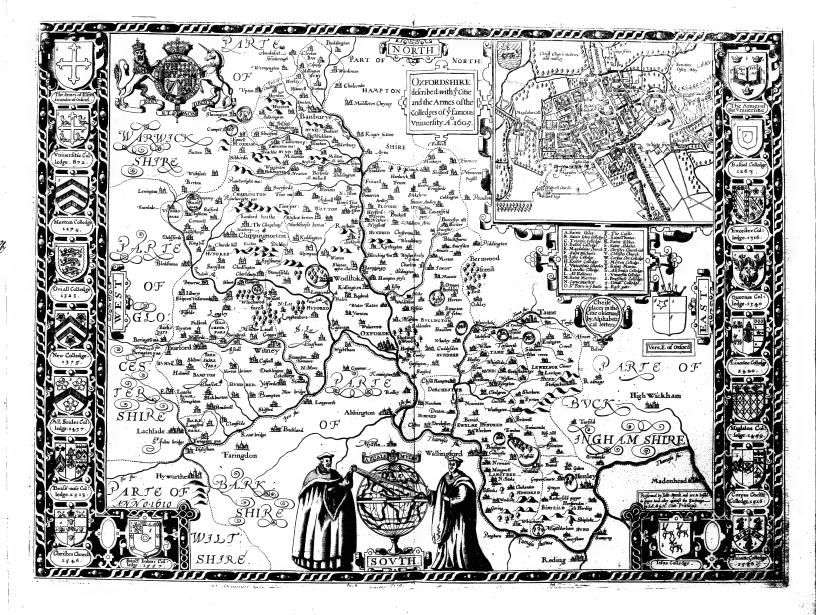
dy, as that her bones they traflated again into their Chapell.

Benshipten is another of his Maiesties Mannors, built by
William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke, but now in neglect thorough the amoiance ariling from the waters or marishe dioining. Houles built for denotion & for abule suppres fed and againe put downe, the chiefe in account were Enifoam, Ofur, Bruern, Godfton, Burcheffer, and Tame, befides S. Fridefwides, and very many other stately Houses of Religion in the Citie.

The Division of this Shire is into fourteene Hundreds, wherein are feated ten Market Townes, and two hundred and fourefcore Parish Churches, whose names are Alphabetically inferted in the Table enfuing.

rum Lb.z

Abbey of Win-



Hundreds in Ox-Britwell Priory, Emelm. ford-fbire. Baldwin, Ewelm Britwell Fulham, Lowk, 1. BAnbury. Broken, Chad. Chadlington. Hampton } Ewelm Brooke Wotton. 5. Ploughley. Broughton, Blox. 6. Bullington. Broughton Bamp.
Poges, Bruerne, Chad. 7. Bamton. 8. Tame. Bucknell, Plough. 9. Lewknor, Burcefter, Plough 10. Pirton. Burcefter Kings, Plough. 11. Dorchester. 12. Ewelme. Burcott, Dor. BVRFORD, Bamp. 13. Langtree. 14. Binfeild. Burton Ban. Burton Ban. Α

Fol. 46.

Adderbury, Blox. C Addington, Florg. Carbridge, Bamp. Adwell, Lenk. Cassington, Wort. Alnefcott, Ramp. Cafuell, Bamp. Cauerfeild, Plough. Ambelden, Builing, Ardeley, Plough. Arnecott, Bulling. Cauerfham, Bmf. Chackenton, Lang. Chadlington, Chad. Afcott Ched Afcott, Tham. Chalgraue, Ewelm. Atlenton, Pat. Chapell on the 3 Chad Aftoll, Bam. Heath, Aftoil Bam.
Lyc, Bam.
Afton, Steple Wett. Charleton, Plough. Charfwell, Wore. Charwell Flu. Chaltleton, Chad. Chawfer, Lewk. Afton, Bam. Alton, Wot. Cherlbury, Ban. Chefferton, Plough. Afton } Lenk Chilfon, Chad. Chillworth, Bulling. Aulkerton, Blox. Chinner, Lewb. CHIPPING Cha

Chiffehampton, Dor. Bampton, Bampt. BANBVRY, Ban. Church Bulling. Balfcott, Blox. Churchhill, Chad. Barford S.Johns, Blox. Chymney, Bamp. Clanfeild, Bamp. Barford S-Michael, \Wett. Clarc, Pirt. Steple } west. Clatercott, Ban. Cleydon, Ban. Clifton, Dor. March Bulling. Clifton Walt. Coddington, Plough. Cogges, West. Toot Baulden, Bulling. Baynton, Plong. Cokethorpe, Bamp. Long SiVots. Combe, Sulling. Beckley, Bulling. Backley | Bulling. Begbrocke, Watt. Cote, Bampt. Cottesford, Plough. Benfington, Ewelme, Cotten, Ban, Berington Bamp.

Temple? Bulling. Berwicke | Ewelm. Cowthorpe, Ban. Crawley, Bamp. Berwicke Sulham, Ewelm, Cromith Ewelm, Bix brand, Binf. Cromith ZLang. Gifford, ZLang. Cornewell, Chad. Bix Gebon, Bisf. Blacke Bamp. Blackthorne, Bulling, Cropredic, B.w. Bladon, Wett. Crowell, Lenk. Bletchington, Flough. Cuckham. Ewelon Cuddefdon, Bulling. Bloxom, Blox. Cullam, Dor. Blunt Lenk. Bodicott, Blax. Bolney, Bin. Bradwe, Bamp.

Brickenton, Bamo

Britemotion, Bamp.

Bridfett, Bulling.

Bricht Humpton, Bampt. Deane, Chad, Deddington, Wort. Denton, Bulling. Dickley, Worr. Deschefter Day Dracot, Ewelm.

Drayton, Blox, Drayton, Dor. Ducklington, Bamp. Dunfe Wort. Dunfden, Bin.

Ibfden, Lang. Idbury, Chid.

Ificy, Bulling. Ingelton, Lenk.

Ipwell, Dor,

Hilipp, Plongb.

Kellmifcott, Bamp.

Kiddington, Wott,

Kidington, Chad.

Kidlington, Wott.

Kingham, Chad.

Langley, Chad.

Lashbrooke, Bin.

Ledwell, Wott.

Lefeild Chad

Lewe, Bampt. Lewkenor, Lewk.

The Lye, Ban.

Lye, Wait.

Lyncham, Chad.

М

Mangwell, Lang. | Mappleduram | Bin.

Gurney,

Chawes, 5' Mar(ton, Bulling.

Lyc, South Wors.

Kencott, Banny,

Nether

Elffeild, Bulling, Emington, Lewk Enefham,Wote, Enfton, Chad. Epwell, Blox. Elington, Ewelm Euenclods Flu. Ewcline, Ewelm. Eye, Bonf.

Faringdon little, Bam Fauller, Ban. Fencot, Bulling. Fifcild, Dor. Fifeild, Chad. Finmore, Ploneb. Finfcot, Ban. Forefthill, Bulling, Fringford, Plongh Fritwell, Plough. Fulbrooke Chad. Fulwell, Plough. Fylkins, Bamp.

Garlington, Bulling. Gatchampton, Lang. Glimpton, Wott. Godington, Plough, Godflow, Watt. Goldar, Part. Goring, Lang. Golfard, Wort. Grafton, Barrin Grayes-Court, Binf. Grayes, Binf. Greenfeild, Pirt.

н Merton, Bulling. Middle Barton, West. Hampton, 3 Chad. Middle Afton, Wors. Hampton Plough Middleton Stony, Plong. Hampton Plongh. Milcombe, Blox. Hanboro, } West. Milton, Blox. Milton, Chad. Long 1"6 Hanwell, Blox. Minster Louell, Chad. Hardwick, Ploush. Mixbury, Plongh. Harccourt, Work, Harwicke, Bamp. Moccott, Bulling, Mollington, Blox.

Hafeley Ewelm. More, Chad. Haleley | Errelm Morecott, Plongh. Haulton, Bulling, Morton, Tame. Hayley, Bamp. Mylton Tame. Heath, Plough. Heathorpe, Chad-Heddington, Bulling, Mylton Zame, Hempton, Wess. HENLEY.

N Neithorpe, Ban, Hentington, Work Heyford, Plough. Nettlebed, Ewelm. Newbridge, West. Heyford warren, Plongh Vewinton, Ewelm. Hinton, Lenk Newnham Lang. Holcombe English Hollwell, Bamp. Newnham Balling. HOOKE NORTON } Chad. cwton, Blox. Hordly, Wort. Horley, Chad. Hornton, Chad.

South Wett. Horfpath, ban, Horfpenden, alias Newton Purfell, } Plough. Noke, Plough. Norton-brimer, Bamp Harding, S. Horton, Bulling. Norton, Chad. Huddon, Bamp. Nusfeild, Ewelm.

Odington, Plough. Otmore, Bulling. Chapell } Chad. OXFORD, Westen.

Piddington, Bulling. Pirton, Pirt. Pille Pit. Poscombe, Lenk Prestend, Tame. Priorate, Bamp. Pudlicott, Chad. R

Kirtlington, Plough. Ramfden, Chad. Ricot, Tame, Rocot-bridge, Bamp. Rotherfeild Bin.
Rotherfeild Bin. I archford, Enelm. Lawnton, Plough. Pepper, Rouffiam, Watt. Roll-rich-flones, Watt Rowlwright Chad.

Rowlwright Chad.

Rowlwright Chad. Lillingston Plough. louell, Spling. Littlemore, Bulling.

little, S Sallford, Chad Sandford, Bulling. Sanford Heath, Chad.

Sarefdine, Chad. Scadham, Tame. Sewcott, Plough Shellfwell, Plongh. Sherborne, Pirt. Mappleduram 3 Lang. Shilton, Bamp. Shifford, Bamp. Shiplake, Bin Shipton vpon Mott. Shipton

Vinderwood, Chad. Shotouer Bulling. Shutford, Ban. Sidenham, Lenk, Sommerton, Plough Souldren, Plough Southorpe, Chad Spilesbury, Chad. Stanford, West. Stanlake, Bamp.

Stanton Bulling. Staunton Harecourt, Watt. Steple Afton. West. Stodham, Der. Lyne, Plough Stoke Lang. Stoke Stoke Stolemag, Pirt. Stoke, Lang. Stoke, South } Der.

Stoken Lewk Stonsfeild, Wett. Stratton Audley, Plough. Swacline, Bant. Swerford, Chad. Swinbrooke, Chad. Swincombe, Ewelm, Sybberds Blox.

Symberds | Blox. Synett, Bamp.

T Tackley, Wess. Tadmerton } Blox. Tadmerton } Blox. great, 3 com. Tadilfthorpe, Chad, Tamerton Z Blox. great, S Blox. Tangley, Chad. Tetfworth, Tame, Teynton, Chad. THAME NEW, Tame. Thame } Tame.

Thame } Tame. Thorpe, West. Thorpe, Lang. Thoughford, Lang. Fiddington, Bulling. Tive | Work. great, } Wott. ulmore. Plough. Tythorpe, Lenk.

Vpton, Bamp.

Walcott, Chad, Warbotro, Ewelm. Wardenton, Ban, Warrant, Plough. Warton, Wott. WATLINGTON, Pirt. Water Eaton, } West. Waterpery, Bulling.

Waterstoke, Tame, Weald, Bamp. Wendlebury, Piough, Westall hill, Chad. Westcott Barton, } Wete. Wellon, Tame.

Welton, Tame. North , Wellon on the } Plangh. Westwell, Bamp. Whatley, Bulling. Whichwood } Chad. Vhitfeild, Pirt.

Whitchurch, Lang. Wickam, Ban. Wigginton, Blox. Wightill, Wore. Willcott, Watt. Williamfcott, Ban WITTNEY, Bamp. Witch, Chad. Wiue old, Ewelm. Woodcott, Lang. Woodcaton, Bulling. WOODSTOCKE, Wort. Worton Wott. Worton Wort.

Wotton, West. Wroxstone, Blex. Wuluercott, West. Yarnton, Wast.

Yellford, Bamp.

GLOCESTER-SHIRE.

Chap. XXIV. Fol. 47

Saxon tongue, Gleaucer-bep-rchype, lieth bordered vpon the North with Worcefler and Warwicke fores; vp. Wilt-fire; vpon the South, altogether with Somer fet Bire; and vpon the West, with the River Wye and Herefordbire.

The length The bredch

The bounds of Glocefler-fbire.

Book . I.

(2) The length thereof extended from Brifton vpon the River Aum in her South, vnto Clifford vpon another Anon in her North, are about forty eight miles: and her broadeft part from East to West. is from Leeblad unto Prefees, containing twenty eight : the whole circumference about one hundred thirty eight miles.

The forme, (3) The forme whereof is fomewhat long and narrow

Wil.Malmef. The Gile.

(3) The forms whereoft formewhat long and narrow: the charact thereoft is pleasant, force, and delectable: and for fruitfulnelle of folicy, heave Malmersbury, and not me: 7 the grand of this third rehormous (linth by yealth planty of crust, and brings is furth absolutes of fruits; the not through the deal good of the state of th can in force version to the French Frience to hone for ear immer-table, the Contraspelling flares, and the Tenner flanding very thirty. But that which addit vents all good grift (a fixed all the 'yer's lette. But Sources, then wholehere us us any is all ste-tes) which flares showed to the flares of the fill better flowed. Tone is in the addity of granting of unters, which the new whother I may rad a Culy's or Florida good to Source from eyes to the Source from the bestower, which may not be some eyes to the source of the source of the source of the source to the source of the source of the source of the source to the source of the source of the source of the source to the source of the source of the source of the source to the source of the source of the source of the source of the takes of full Upon the file is the the Fixerroom wallowed the source of the wintship for the Highe a common years the full follower. when they fee that Hydra comming turns the Veffell upon it, and cas thereon the midft of it, whereby they checke and assid her vilence and danger.

(4) The ancient people that possessed this Prouince, were the Dos v NI, who spread themselves further into Oxford fire. But betwitt the Senerme and Wye were seated part The Inhabitants of SILVES, or Inhabitants of South water, And, vpon what ground I know not, let Lawyers dispute it, the Inhabitants in some part of this Shire enjoy a private custome to this day, that the Goods and Lands of Condemned Persons fall vnto the Crownebut only for a Yeere and a Day, and then returne to the next heires, contrary to the cultome of

all England befides.

(17) The generall Commodities of this Shire, are Corns, 1600, and West, all passing fire, besides Passing of Frans, and West, all passing fire, besides Passing of Iron, the only banc of Oake, Elme, and Beech.

Thecome

(6) Thefe, with all other Prouisions, are traded thorow twenty fine Market Townes in this County, whereof two are Cities of no fmall import: the first is Gloseffer, from whom the Shire taketh name, feated upon Senerae neere the mid-dest of this Shire, by Auronine the Emperour called Glamm built first by the Romans, and set as it were vpon the necks of the Silares, to you've them, where their Legion called Co Ionia Gienna, lay. It hath beene walled about (excepting that part that is defended by the River) the ruines whereo that part that is defended by the Riuer) the runner when the inany places appears; an fine meant yet flanding, doth well winted their flrength. This City was first women from the Britaints by Chealism the first Ring of the PR/S. Seews, about the year of Christ 370. and alterwards under the American is flounded with great honour, where Off-Ring of Northwards and the Charlest of th tounded a most tractly Memograph of Number, whereor Ruis burg, Eadburg, and Euse, Queenes of the Advainus, were Pri-arefer funcefluely each after other. (7) Eduffed a most renowned Lady, sister to king Ed-ward the clder, in this City built a faire Church, wherein

herfelfe was interred; which being ouerthrowne by the Danes, was afterwards rebuilt, and made the Cathedrall of that See, dedicated vnto the honour of S.Peter. In this

Church the vnfortunate Prince, King Edward the Second vnder a Monument of Alablaster, doth lie; who being murdered at Barkley Caffle, by the crueltie of French Habell his wife, was there intombed. And not farre from him, another Prince as vnfortunate, namely Robert Curibofe the eldelf fon of William the Conqueronr, lieth in a painted woodden Tombe in the middeft of the Quire : whole cies were plucked out in Cardiffe Calle, wherein hee was kept prifoner twenty fixe yeeres, with all contumelious indignities, vntill through extreme anguish he ended his life. And before any of these, in this Citie, lay our British Hifterians, the body of Lucius our first Christian King was interred : and before his daies the

Britaines Arnirague,
The graduation of this County I observe from this Citie, The Cradostia whence the Pole is eleuated in the degree of Latitude 52 and 14. minutes, and in Longitude from the West 18. and

5. minutes.

(8) The other City is Brillow, faire, but not very ancient, built vpon the Rivers Amon and Fromes, for trade of Merchandize a fecond London, and for beauty and account next vnto Torke. This City flandeth party in this Countie, and partly in Sommerfer thre: but being a County of it felfe, will acknowledge subjection to neither.

(9) A Citte more ancient hath beene Circeffer, by Ptole- Circeffer (g) A Citic more ancient hat been Ciresper, Dy Petei-mic called Con Livi y slyy Mensins, Dy No co SNO NY 1 NI by Giriddian, Pafferson Frieston, The Sparrouset Citic 1 ypon a flying report, that Genesuad 1 Tyrant from Mifrigh belie-ging this City, tied fire vnto the wings of Sparrours, who lighting in the Towne vpon light matter, fee flame vpon all. The circuit of whole waller extended two milesabout, where in the Confular Port or waies of the Romans met and crof in the Concluse Port or wises of the Remone met and croid-cle echodner. This Ciece was women from the Britisher by J Gelechodner. This Ciece was women from the Britisher by J Gelechodner of the Conclusion of Rebied Office of the Conclusion of th

lifh, and Cameras the Dane, after many battles and bloud guin, and Cammune Lane, arreer many Darties and sique, foughtin fingle combat hand to hand alone, vntill they compounded for the Kingdomes partition: Barklyr Cuffle, where King Edward the Second was thorow his fundament runne into his bowels with a red burning Spit: 1 Tankerbury runne into his bowels with a red burning Spit : 1 magents, the fatall period of King Henry the Sixth his gouernment, and the wound of the Langalfrian Caule; for in a Battle therefought in Ames 4.71. Prive Edward. He onely found of King Henry, had his braines dashed out in a most flame full manner, the Queene his mother taken priforer, and most of their fauorites listine and beheaded. And at Addarley, a little Towne standing eight miles from the Semene, vpon the hilles to this day are found Cookles, Perminekles, and Onflers of folid stone: which whether they have beene

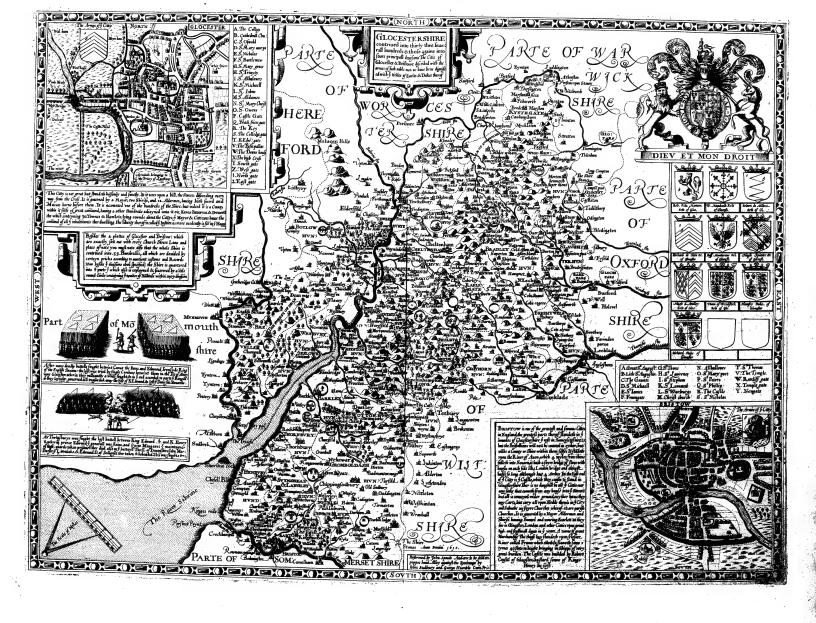
and Ophers of folial tome: which whether they have been \$\sheel. filter and luting Creatures, or elfe the foots of nature in her works, let the natural! Philophers diffuse of and indge. (\$1) The places of pietic, fetpart from other worldly fernices, and dedicated to religious vies by the detuctions of Gruices, and dedicated in Celigious viraby the decuolator of Princes, erecked in this Shire, we ree "Towleylawy, Develoy!", Glaselps, Alanchen, Bardjoy, King'head, Crestfor, Alanchen, Bardjoy, King'head, Crestfor, Alanchen, Ender College, Stage of Corwands, King of the Reames, wherein himstleft and his Durbra were interred. Their fon Ear be Edmand brough unto Gramssuich eich boul of Edman, (upported and did to be part of that which Christ like of you his Croffic. In this place with great confidences and decuoines of Pilgrinnage it was with great confidences and decuoines of Pilgrinnage it was

with great confluence and devotions of Pilginnags is was flought to and workspeed, dill time ground it a merce councerfeit, when the glorious light of the Goffeel resulted to eligificity facility is desired to the configuration of the confi

or Soo was cut our in native by Aing Frency the Seventia.

(3) This Shires distilline is principally into four parts,
fubdisided into thirty Hundreds, and them again into two
hundred and eighty Parith-Churches 1 whose names are inferted in the Table vyon the other part of this Card.

Shell fifteen



Lancante, Wellb.
Lanborow, Langtre.
Latington, Dudlaw,
Laterige, Therebury.
Lauerton, Kiffg.
Lea, Briavell.
Leaden Flu.
Leaden Court, Glave,
Leaden 2

Leaden Dudfien. highr. Dudfien. Leach Flu.

Leckbampton, Chelte. Lecombe, Slauguser. Leighterton, Grant.

the leffe, Tewx.

Lilcon, Dadfton. Litcleton, Granb.

Littleton, cramo.
Littleton vpon Laugh.
Scuerne, Laugh.
Longborough, Kift.
Longford, Dudfien.
Longbope, Estio.

Pincek, Kidget.
Pirten 3 St.deffs.
paffedgs.
Pirt heombe, Dadfiss.
Pirt heombe, Dadfiss.
Pott heombe, Dadfiss.
Pott hip, Kiffs.
Palton in 3 Crether
Pilton, Trothers.
Preffour, Dirbnyf.
Preffon, Endfiss.
Preffon, Brath.
Preffon, Brath.
Preffon, Brath.

Queiron, Kiff. Queuinton, Svittle, Quedlley, Wortfon, R

Radburgh, Longire. Rangeworth, Therek. Redwicke, Henkary.

Streatton, Croth. STROVD, Bifley,

3 TRO Y D. Eifer,
Stroud Flu.
Paddington; Croste.
Langley, J. Croste.
Sutton, Gle.
Sutton vides; Profit
brayles; Disples; Pis.
Swill into; Light,
lefter, J. Kingle.
Kefter, J. Swill the; Stauglo.
Kefter, Swill con, Chottan,
Swid. Rapie.

Syde, Repfg. Syde, Repfg. Synwell, Berck. Syfton, Peckie.

Tadilthorpe, Slaught.

Teintons, Estle. TETBVRY, Longite

Woolaften, Pyef.
Woolfton, Day.
Wormington; Kiffg.
Little, Kiffg.
Worth, Berch.
Wotton, Dud.
WOTTON:

Voderedge, 1 700 Wowlfworth, Long.

Wye Flu. Wyke, Pasie. Wythyngton, Bred.

Y

Yartelton } Both.

Yate, Heu. Yate, Grand.

vponcarren, } Tem.

Afton
Someruill, Kyfreat.
Afton
vnderedge, Kifegat.
Atbertton, Kifleg.
Auening, Laugtree.
Audnon, Flu.
Audton

Aultion Tews.
Auliworth, Britile.
Aunabury, Henbu.
Auth, Henbu.

Aut, Bideflo. Awte, Bideflo. Aylberton, Bideflo.

Ayluerton, Laugley.

Badgenden, Croth

Badgeworth, Dudfle.

Chipping Gromb.
Campden, Gromb.
CHIPPING Gromb.
Churcham, Westbu.
Churchbowne, Dudston.
Churchdowne, Dudston.

Churne, Flu. CIRENCESTER, Cros.

Clapton, Slaugh, Cleeue Bifhops, Cleeue Clfford, Kiffget, Clifford chambers, Tew Clifford chambers, Tew

Clurewall } Brianel. beame, } Brianel. Coref-would, hift.

Codrington, Gromb. Coldafton, Pochie.

Coid afton Pacific.

Coates, Crath.

F

Farmecott, Kiffg. Fairefeild, Britle. Falefeild, Thorne.

Fiddington, Tewx.
Fildon, Berck.
Flaxley, Brisnell.
Ford, Kiffg.
Forthampton, Tewx.
Frampton, Biffey.

Frampton } Langley.

Frampion vp. weit.
on Sabrin
Framilode woiffer,
paffage, Woiffer,
Fretherne, VV buffar,

Frome, Flu. Frome, Langley.

Booke.1. The measure an The Climat. The ancient In Hereford the

HEREFORD SHIRE.

(bap.25.

EREFORD-SHIRE. (formerly accounted within the Limits of Wales) lieth circulated vpon the North with Worcester and Shrop-shire; vpon the East with Maluern Hils is par-ted from Glocester-live: vpon the South is kent in

with Monmouth-fbire; and vpon the West in part with the Hatterall Hils is divided from Breknok; and the rest confined with Radner

2) This Counties Climat is most healthfull and temperate, and foile so fertile for corne & cattell, that no place in England yeeldeth more, or better conditioned : fweet rivers running as veines in the body, doe make the corne-bearing grounds in some of her parts rightly to be termed the Gilden V ale: and for waters, wooll, and wheat, doth contend with Nilus, Colchose, and Egypt: fuch are Lemster and Irchenfeild, the banks of Wye, Luge, and Frome.

(3) The ancient People knowne to the Romans.
(whole power they well felt before they could fub-

due them) were the Silares placed by Ptolemie in this tract, and branched further into Radnor, Breknok, Monmoth, and Glamorgan-figures, at this day by vs called Southwales, and by the Welsh Deheubarth. Their Originall, as Tacetus coniectureth by their fite, coloured countenances, and curled haire, was out of Spaine, and as both he and Plinie describes them, were herce, valiant, and impatient of feruitude, which well they shewed under Carataeus their Captaine, & nine yeeres fcourge to the Roman affaulters, for whose onely con-quest, (and that made by treachery) the Victor in Rome triumphed with more then a vivall Afpect; and with so equal an hand bare the Scoale of Resistance. that their owne Writers euermore terme it a dangerous warre. For the Legion of Marius V alens they put to flight, and that with such hauocke of the Associates, that Ostorius the Lieutenant of Britaine for very griefegaue yn his ghoft : and Feranis vonder Nero affailted them in vaine. But when Feljalfas was Emperor, and expert Souldiers imployed into euery Prounce, Julius Frontinus fündude theie Silares vinto the Romans, where continually some of their Legions afterward kept, till all was abandoned in Valentinians

(4) The Saxons then made themselves Lords of this Land, and this Prouince a part of their Mercians kingdome; yea and Sutton the Court of great offa

their King. (5) But Hereford after, raised of the ruines of old Ariconium, (now Kenchester, shaken in pieces by a violent Earth-quake) grew to great fame, through a con-ceiued Sanctitic by the buriall of Ethelbert King of the East-Angles (laine as Sutton by Offs, at what time he came thirther to have elpoused his Daughter; whose Grave was first made at Marden, but afterwards canonized and remoued to this Citie, when in honour of him was built the Cathedrall Church by Milfrid, a num was bunt the Ameeran Church by Meijral, a petry King of that Country, which confish brine of Southwales, and Algar an Englishman rebelling against King Edward Confessor, consumed with fire; bur by Bilhop Reinelin was reflored as now it is, at what time

An.Do. 1055.

the Towne was walled, and is fo remaining in good repaire, hauing fix Gates for entrance, and fifteene Watch-towers for defence, extending in compaffe to fifteen hundred Pales : and whence the North-pole is observed to be raised 52 degrees, 27. minutes in Lati-titude, and is set from the first point of the West in Longitude 17. degrees and 30. minutes, being yeerly gouerned by a Maior chosen out of one & thirty Citizens, which are commonly called the Election, and

hee euer after is knowne for an Alderman, and clothed in Scarlet, whereof foure of the eldeft are Iusti-

the an Scariet, wherever fource of the eldett are Intitices of Peace, graced with a Sword-bearer, a Recorder,
a Town-Clerke, and foure Sergeants with Mace.
The greateft glory that this Citie received, was in
King Athelians dates; where (as Mahmbur) doth report) he caufed the Lords of Nales by way of Tribute, to pay yeerly (belides Hawkes and Hounds) twentie pound of gold, and three hundred pound of filuer by waight; but how that was performed and continued finde not.

(6) Things of rare note in this Shire are faid to be, Bone-well, a fpring not far from Richards Castell, where-

in are continually found little Fishes Bones, but not a fin feene; and being wholly cleanfed thereof, will notwithflanding haue againe the like, whether naturally produced, or in veines thither brought, no man (7) But more admirable was the worke of the Omnipotent euen in our owne remembrances, and veere

of Christ Iesus 1571, when the Marcley Hill in the or Christ feius 1571, when the Markey Hill in the East of this Shirerouzed it felfe out of a dead fleepe, with a roaring noife remoued from the place where it flood, and for three daies together trauelled from Marcley Hill. her first fite, to the great amazement and feare of the beholders. It began to journey vpon the feuenth day

of February, being Saturday, at fix of the clocke at night, and by feuen in the next morning had gone fortic Pales, carrying with it Sheepe in their coates, hedge-rowes, and trees; whereof fome were ouertur-ned, and some that flood upon the Plaine, are firmely growing vpon the Hill, those that were East, were turned West; and those in the West were set in the East; in which remoue it ouerthrew Kinnafton Chappell, and turned two high-wales neere a hundred yards from their viuall paths formerly trod. The ground thus rauelling, was about twenty fix Acres, which opening it lefte with Rocks and all, bare the Earth before it for foure hundred yards space without any stay, leaving that which was Pasturage in place of the Til-lage, and the Tillage overspread with Pasturage, Lastlage, and the 1 mage offers press with transfer, and they experience the lage of the lage laid his hand upon this Rock, whose power bath poi- Esay 40.12. fed the Hils in his Ballance.

whose streame bare downe the Walles of all those foundations, carrying away the Shrines of the dead and defacing the Libraries of their ancient Records

(9) This County before the Conquest being ac-

counted in Wales, was then strengthened with Forts a-

gainft the English and being once made a Province to England, was fortified with Caftels againft the Welfs, wherein we finde no leffe then twenty eight, though many of them now are ruinated to nothing. Such

were Alban, at both the Enysts, Godridg, Grofmond, Herdley, Hereford, Old Castle, Dorston, Brampton, Bred-warden, Sains Biruells, Ledbury, Lenals, Snowdel, Harle-

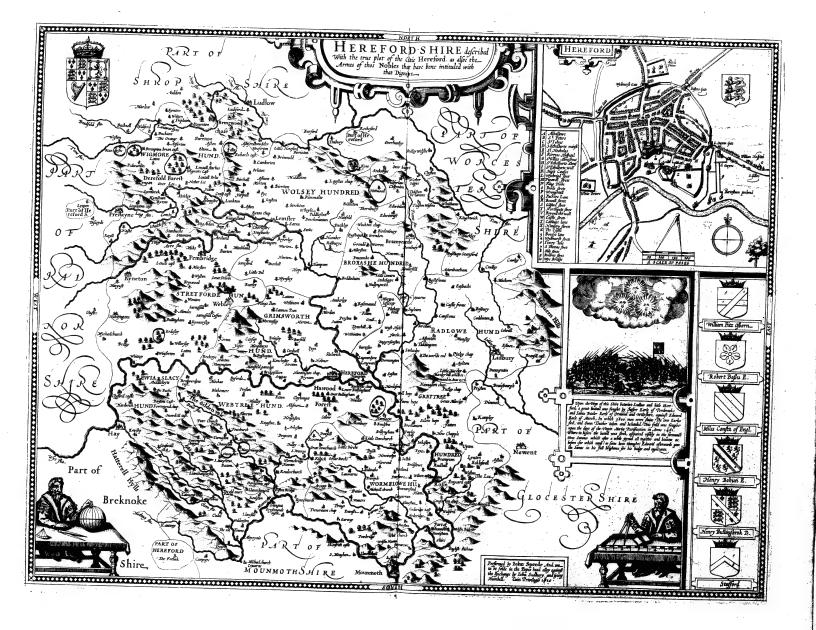
them seated one hundred seventy and six Parish-

Churches, containing in compaffe 102, miles.

(8) Religious houses built by the deuotions of Princes, and stored with Potaries and reuenewes for houses. life, were in this Shire no leffe then thirteene most fweetly seated in the places as followeth: at both the lweety (stated in the places as followeth: a both the Herdford, Barron, Ewaya, Clifford, Alemente, Atome-bury, Lomiter, Linglordet, Peterchurch, Kipeh, Dore, and Wiggemernad dispected of hypocrific, were called in queltion by King Hony the eight, and fo frieldy pur-tised, that fome faults were apparant, whereby they were laid open to the generall deluge of the Time,

was, Huntington, Willow, Wigmore, Richards, Momemue, Corfs, Kilbeck, Clifford, Skenefred, Wittney, Rademyer, and Keneuenleis, and is traded with eight Market-Townes, being divided into eleven Hundreds, and in

NI



Byrdenbury, Brox.

Bylihopton, Granf.

Choricftre, Web.

Delwine, Stret.

Deluin little, Welf.

Chap. 2.6.

HUNDREDS IN Hereford-sbire.

Byton, Wig. 1. Wigmore hund. 2. Wolfey hund. Calowe, Web. Broxash hund. Camberton, Walf. 4. Stretford hund. Canforme, Rad. Carorine, Kan.
Canon peon, Grimf.
Carlop, Grimf.
Cafcob, Wig.
Chaunfton, Web. Radlow hund. Grimfworth hun, Greytree hund. Webtree hund. 9. Ewiaslacy hund. Clayhonger, Web. 10. Wormelow hun. 11. Hunlington hun.

Cledoll, Ewin. Clyfford, Hunt. Coddington, Rad Collington, Brex. Colwail, Rad. Akenbury, Grey Combe, Wig. Alimoore, Web. Couenhope, Street Coughton Chapell, Gr. Cowarne little, Brox. Altyrynis, Emia. Amberley, Brox. Cowarne great, Brox. Arcoppe, Worme, Cowley, Rad. Arcfland, Stret. Coxall, Wig. Cradley, Rad. Arkellon, Web. Arro Flu Craswell Chapell, Emi Afhton, Wolfe. Crednell, Gramf. Croft Callle, Wolf. Afperton, Rad. Alton, Grey. D Afton, Wig. Atforton, Wig.

Deluin folers, Welf. Auenbury, Brown Aylmystree, W.g. Aylton, Rad, Dereford Caftle, Wig. Saint Sweb. Dewchurch, Web. Dewchurch great, Worn Dewchurch little, Worm Backton, Web. Ballingham, Worm, Bartestre, Rad. Dewlas, Web. Dewfall, Worm. The? Ewin. Batch, Hunl. Didley, Web. Dockley, Wolf. Doier Flu. Dormington, Greg. Dorflon, Web. Dounton, Wig. Dowre, Web. Bearley, Stree, Bickleton, Welf. Birchall Wolf. Birrinton, Welf. Druxton, Web. Blackmere, Web. Dunington, Rad. Dynchill, Brox. Boddenham, Brog. Boresford, Wig. Bolhbury, Rad. Dyneder, Web.

Bouldon, Worse Boulhopiton, Grim. Eardisley, Hunling, Brampton, Grey. BRAMYARD, Brex Easbache, Rad, Eaton, Welf. Branstill Castle Rad. Eaton, Grey. Breadwardyne, Web. Baton Bifhops, Sweb. Ecklefall, Grey. Bridge fellars, Grimf. Brierley, Wolf. Brieftowe, Worm Edwin loche, Well Brimmeld, Wolf. Edwin raph, Wolf. Bringewood chafe, Wg. Eiton Chapell, Welf. Bridge, Sweb. Brobery, Grimf. Elftones Brockhanton, Grey, Brockmanton, Welf. Elton, Wig. Erdellay, Street Brodward, Wolf. Brompton, Wig. Eskle Flu. Brompton brian, Wig. Broxwood, Stret. Ellnor, Rad. Brylley, Stree, Euington, Well Brylley, Hunt. Euisbache, Rad Brymsfeild, Wolf. Eye, Welf. Brynlope, Grimf Brynton, Grimf.

Buckton, Wig.

Bullington, Stret. Butfeild, Grimf.

Burrington, Wig.

Bury Stret.

Byforde, Grimf.

yrchelittle, Worm,

Byrchegicat, Worm.

Fatlow, Welf. Bullingham vpper, Web Fawley Grey. Chapell, Grey. Fawnehope, Grey. Bullingham nether, We Felton, Brow. The Fothoke, Ewis Fowchurch, Web. Fowemynd Emia, Fowemend, Ewia. Foyc, Worme.

Frogftreet, Wig. Frome Flu. Frome, Grey. Caffell 2 Rad. Frome, 🔇 Bishops Rad.

G Garner Flu. Garran Flu. Garwaye, Worm Grafton, Web. Grainge, Wig. Granfam, Rad. Grenden Warren. Breze Bishops ? Brox. Glewston, Worm. Gotheridge, Worms, Gotheridge } Worm. Gunarewe, Worm,

Ham, Worm. Ham lacye, Web. Hamneth, Wolf. Hampton, Grimf Hampton, Welf. Hampton, Wolf. Hardwicke, Hunt Harewood, Worm, Hargast, Street. Hargast, Hunl. Harleftewas, Web. Harton, Wig. Hatfeild, Wolf. Hawood Forest, Web. Hennor,*Wolf.* Henteland,*Worm* HEREFORD, Grim Hereford little, Welf. Hide, Brox. Hid hill, Wolf.

West Red. Hyde, S Red. Holmer, Grimf. Hongaston, West. Hope, West. Hoplers greene, Wolf, Horewethye, Worse, Howcaple, Grey. Howton, Web. Hullingwicke, Brow. Humber, Welf. Hunlington, Hunl.

Huntington & Grinnf. Huntyngton, Street, Huntifham, Wormel Hurfley, Wolf.

Ingham, Grey. Ingleton, Rad. Inkelton, Worm.

ĸ Kenbury, Worm. Kenchefter, Growf. Kenderchurch, Web. Keuernall, Worm. Kewstope, Emia, Kilpecke Caftle, Worm Kimmalton, Welf. Kings Caple, Worm. Kings peone, Stret. Kingelland, Street. Kingefland, Wig. Kingsham ouer, Wig. Kingsham nether, Wig. Kingfton, Web. Kinnalton Chapell, Gre Knill, Wig. Kynechurch, Web. YNETON, Hand. Kynnarsley, Stres. Kynton, Wig.

Llancony, Ewia Llandinabo, Worm. Llangarran, Worm. Llanfillo, Ewia. Lianueyno Chapell, Ex Lianwarne, Worm, Lianyhangle, Web. Llanynangleeskle, Em Llattons, Grimf. Lawton, Wig. Laystas Chapell, Wolf. Nether & Wig.

HEREFOR D.SHIRE.

cc, Ouer Ocull, Brox. ₹wig. Ocull pichar, Brex. Lea, Grev. Olcon Flu. LEMSTER, Wolf. Old towne, Emia. Lenals Old court, Ewia. . Stret. caffell (Oney Flu. Lenthall Orleton, Wolf. ₹wg. Earles, Ouer hill, Wolf. Lenthall enthall Starkes, Swig. Lentwardyne, Wig. Leonhalls, Street.

Letton, Wig.

Letton, Sires.

Lingan, Wig.

Logafon, Wolf.

Longward Rad

Luckton Well

Ludford, Welf.

Luntley, Welf.

Lufton, Welf.

Lyde, Grimf.

Lynton, Grey.

Lynton, Brox.

Llytton, Wig.

Madley, Web.

Mansfeild Grim, gamage, Grim, Marcle great, Grey, Marcle little, Rad, Marcle hill, Rad,

Marden, Brox.

S.Margarets, Ewia.

Margalt, Stret. Marlow, Wig. Marstowe, Worm. Marston, Stret.

Marfton, Bress.

Hope Mannfell, 3-Grey.

Mathern, Brex. Michaelchurch, Wer

Middleloyte, Ewia

Middleton, Welf.

Milton, Sires,

Mockas, Web.

Monmo Flu.

Moke, Stres. Monderfeild, Bree

Monington, Grimf,

Monnynton, Web.

Monfill lacy, Grimf. Mordeford, Grey. Moreton Lefferes, Rad.

Moorehampton, Web

Morton vpon } Grim/

Mychaelchurch, Hand,

Mydlewood, Hunl,

lugge, s Morton, Welf.

Mouldley, Wog. Munfley, Rad.

Moukland, Siret.

Lydden Flu.

Lugwardyne, Rad.

LYDBVRY, Rad.

Lydbury Forrein, Rad

Lug Flu.

Longetowne, Ewis.

Loden Flu

Limebrooke, Wig.

Parke, Rad. Patchfeild, Frig. Pedwardyne, Wig. Pembridge } Worm. PEMBRIDGE.Sue Pencombe, Brax. Pencoyd, Worm. Penroffe, Worm. Penyard Caltie, Grey. Pery, Brox. Peterchurch, Web. Peterstowe, Warm, Piddlefton, Welf. Pixley Chapell, Rad. Pofton, Web. Preston, Brox. Prefton Web Putley Chapell, Grey. Putteley, Grey. Pype, Grimf.

Nath, Weg. Nethwood, Brox.

Newchurch, Wolf.

Newcourt W.A

Newton, Emia.

Newton, Rear

Newton, Wolf.

Newton, Wig.

Norton, Grimf.

Norton Brew.

Noke, Street

Newton Welsh, Worm.

o

Caffell Frolf. Risbury, Wolf. Rochford, Welf. Rod, Wig. ROSSE, Grey. Rotle Ferren, Grey, Rofemaund, Brox. Rotheras Web. Rowlfton, Exia Rudhall, Grey.

Salershope, Grey. Ouer Brex.
Sappy, Brex.
Sappy, Brex.
Sappy, Samesfeild, Stree. Sarnesfeild, Wolf. Samesfeild | Stret. Coffen, | Selleck, Worm. Shellwicke, Grim! Shobden, Wig. Shobdon, Street. Shorley, Wig.
Shorley, Wig.
Snowdell Ewia.
Callie, Ewia.
Stanbache, Wig. Stanford Kings, Brow. Bishops, Bren. Staunton, Wig. Staunton vpon Grim,

Stepleton 30%.

Stock lo. Stree

Stockton Well.

Stogbach, Wig. Stogbach, Welf. Stoke, Wolf. Stoke Edye, } Rad.

Chap. 25.

Stoke Lacy, Brox. Stoke

blith. Brox. Stouton, Street. Stratton, Grimf. Stretton, Rad. Stretford, Welf. Streeford, Street. Sugges, Grimf. Sulton, Grey. Sutton, Brex.

Tadington, Rad. Tedfton Dalamer, Brev. Tedfton Wafer, Brox. Tenerauen Chapell, Worm Thornbury, Brox. Tregole, Grey. Trefek, Worm. Tretier, Worm, Trewin, Ema. Triago, Werm. Tripleton, Wig. Tupfley, Gram Turnafton, Web. Twyford, Web. Tyberton, Web. Tytley, Wig.

The gilden | Web. Vpton, Wolf. pton, Grey. Wackton, Brox.

Wadels Flu.

Walderston, Ewia Walford, Wig. Walford, Grey. Watham, Grimf. Warton, Wolf. S. Waynards, Worms The wearesend, Warne WEBLEY, Street. Wellington, Grim. Weobley, Stres. Weston, Stres. Weston begger, Red. Weston subter, Grey. Wethington, Brea. Wheyle, Wolf. Whitborne, Brow, Whitchurch, Worms Whitney, Sires. Whitney, Hund. Wicton, Welf. Wigmor Cattle, Wig. Willersley, Street. Wilton Castle, VVerm Winforton, Hun!, Winforton, Stree. Winkcot, VV off. Winfley, Welf. Winflowe, Brox. Wolhope, Grey. The Worldsend, Red. Wormebridge, FVeb. Wonton, Stree. Wullferlow, Brow Wytton, VVig. arcle Rad.

Yarpoli, PVolf. Yafor, Gringf.

Yatton, Grey.

Yetton, Wig.

The antient Sax on Dame. The bounds

Book ...

ORCESTER-SHIRE. by the English-Saxons called Wip - ceap - pep-reyne is a County both rich and populous, and lieth circulated vpon the North with Stafford-fire; vpon the East, with Warwicke and Oxford-fbires; vpon the South, with Glocefter-fhire

& the West by Maluern hilles is parted from Herefordfbire: the rest lieth confronted vpon, and in part diuided from Shrop-flure by the River Dowles.

(3) The aire in this Shire is of a favourable tom-

perature, that gives an appetite for labour, diet, and

rest: the soile is fertile, and to me seemed inferiour to

none other in this Land : for besides the abundance

(2) The forme thereof is triangle, but not of equall proportion; for from North to South are thir-The length. breadth and cir tic two miles, from South to North-west twenty two, and from thence to her North-East point are twentie eight: the whole in circumference is one hundred and twentie miles.

The Aire

Abundant in

The forme.

of Corne in euery place foread, the Woods and Pa-flurage in her hilles and plaines, sweet Riuers that wa-ter the vallies below, & Cattle that couer the tops of higher ground; the Fields, Hedge-rowes, and Highwaies are beset with fruitfull Peare-trees, that yeeld great pleasure to fight, and commodious vierfor with their juice they make a bastard kinde of wine, called

Perrey, which is both pleasant and good in taste. Many Salt Springs also this County affoordeth, yea and more then are commonly in vie : fuch with the Germans, our ancient Predecessours, were esteemed most facred and holy, fo that (as Tacitus writeth) to fuch they wontedly reforted to supplicate their Gods with their deuout praiers, as to places neerest the heatens, and therefore the fooner to be heard. And Poets in their failtings will have the Nymphs refidence in fla-die greene groues, and bankes of fweet fprings: if fo, then (as Helliem) this Gounty affoords both: fuch are the Forrests of Wire and Feckenham, the great Woods of Norton, and most faire Chase of Maluerne And for Waters, to witnesse what I say, is the Seuerne

that cuts this Shire in the midft, Teme, Salwarp, and Auon, all of them making fruitfull their paffage, and ftored with Fish of most delicious taste.

(4) The ancient people, possessor of this Shire were the CORNAVII, inhabitants of Chesses of the Corna viii, inhabitants of Chesses of the Corna viii. Shrop-shire, Stafford, and Warmick-shires, subdued by the Romans in Claudius Cesars time, and after their departure, made a portion of the Mercian-Saxon Kingdome, and in Bedaes time were called the Wiei whereof it may be this Shire had the name : wnleffe you will haue it from the Salt-Pits, which in old English are named Wiches; or from the famous Forest of Wyre. Howfocuer, true it is that the County doth

hold the name from her chiefe City worsefter. (5) Which is most pleasantly seated, passing well frequented, and very richly inhabited. This was the Branonium, mentioned by Antonine and Ptolemie, called by the Britaines, Caer-wrangen; by Ninius, Caer Guoreon; by the old Saxons, Wipe cearpon, and by the Latines, Vigornia. This Citie is seated vpon the East banke of Severne, and from the same is walled in triangle-wife about, extending in creations the sun of the same swant fenfe. It is thought the Romans built this to reftraine the Britaines that held all beyond Senerne. This City by Hardy Canute in the yeers of Christ 1041, was fore-

lie endangered, and fet on fire, and the Citizens flaine

almost euery one, for that they had killed his Colle-Ctor of the Danish Tribute: yet was it presently repair red and peopled, with many Burgesses, and for fifteenc Hides discharged it felfe to the Conquerour; as in his Domefdayes is to be feene. But in the yeere 1113. a Doomes dales fudden fire happened, no man knew how, which burnt the Castle and Cathedrall Church, Likewise in the civill broiles of King Stephen it was twice lighted into a flame, and the latter laid it hopelesse of recouerie. Notwithstanding from those dead Ashes a new Phenix arose, and her building raised in a more stately proportion, especially the Cathedrall dedicas ted to S. Mary, first laid by Bishop Sexwolfe, in Anno 680, fince when it hath beene augmented almost to the Riuer : In the midst of whose Quire, from his many turmoiles resteth the body of King John (the King John. great with-stander of the Popes proceedings) under a Monument of white Marble in Princely Vestures,

with his Portraiture thereon according to life. And

in the South-fide of the same Quire lieth intombed

uenth, his Monument is all blacke Tette without re membrance of him by Picture. This City is gonerned by two Bailiffes, two Alder- The Magiltrack men, two Chamberlaines, & two Constables yeerely elected out of twenty foure Burgeffes clothed in scarlet, assisted with fortic eight other Citizens, whom they call their Common Counsellers, clad in Purple, a Recorder, Towne-Clerke, and fine Sergeants with Mace their Attendants. Whose Geographicall Position is distant in Longitude from the West-Meridian

18. degrees 10. feruples, hauing the North-Pole ele-uated in Latitude 2. degrees and 3.2. feruples.

(6) Places of further note for memorable antiquitie, is V pton, of great account in the Roman time. where some of their Legions kept, as witnesse their Monies there often found: the admirable Ditch vpon M'gluerne hils, drawne by Gilbert Clare, Earle of Glocefler, to divide his Lands from the Church of Worce fler : the Saxons auguroyner-ace; our Augustines Oke; where he the English Apostle met with the British Bithops for the vniforme celebration of Easter, from whence both parts departed with discontented minds, after many hot words and thwarting disputes.

(7) Neither is it without admiration to me, that many places of this Shire lie farre within the Pre-cincles of other Prouinces, as Aulton, Walbornes, Cuttefden, Paxford, Hanging-Eafton, Northwick, Blockley, Eurlode in Clocefter-fibre, and Goldcote, Aldermerfton, Euriode in Goeegier-Jore, and Goudone ... , Auermerjum, Newbold, Treddenton, Armifoste, Blackwell, Darling-cote, Shipton, Tydminion, Olbarrow, in Warwick-Hire, Dadley in Stafford-five, and Rochford in Hereford-five, whither I must referre the Reader to finde out these

(8) Religious places crected in this Shire, and de-uoted vinto God by deuout perfons, were Briden, Brodlege, Euchholme, Alnecester, Cothell, Fladbury, Mal-uerin, Persport, Stadise, 1991 woods, and Wortester, plentiously produced for, and further secured by many prinileges, both which they abused as were the inditements of all fuch in the daies of King Henry the Eighth, at whole Barre (himselfe being Judge) they were found guilty, and received sentence of their ends and deftruction.

(9) Cafties for defense built in this Countie ruinate, or in strength, were Hartlebury, Holt, Handley, Norton, Elmeley, and Wortester, besides his Maiesties Manour of Tithnell.

(10) This Shires divilion is into feuen Hundreds, wherein are seated ten Market Townes, and one hundred fifty two parish-churches, as in the Table following is expressed. 0 1

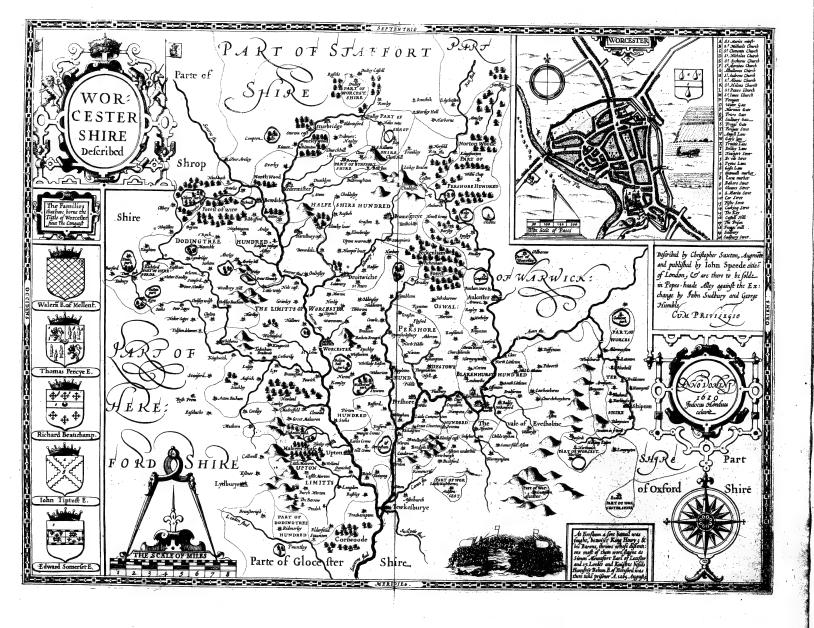
Prince Arthur the eldeft sonne to King Henry the sea- Prince Arthur,

Religious house

Country

The antient in-

Woregler the chiefe Cities



Habury War.

Cleue, Black. Cleuelod, Prem. Worcester-Shire. Clyfton vpon 3 Ded. Comberton & Parfs. Alfe-shire, Hund. great, Parfs.
Comberton Parfs.
Cofton, Half. 3. Worcester, Limits. 4. Parshor, Hund. Cotheridge, Wor. f.Blakenhurst. Hund. Cottenden, Wer. 6.Ofwalderflowe, Hund. Cowley, War. 7. V pton, Limits. Cradley, Half. Crome ? Vpt.

Crome ? Vpr. Aberly, Dodding. Aberley hill, Dod. Crome Sp. Pps. Cropthorne, Ofw. Abberton, Parf. Acton Acton
Beacham, Wer. Lim.
Aidermerston, Pars. Crowle, Haft. Crowle, Wor. Aldington, Black, Cuttelden,Wor Alechurch, Black Cudfoim, Ofw. Cuntfwicke, Dod. Allchurch, Wor. Lim. Alron, Dod. Arciccy Dod. Dailesford, Ofw. Armifcott, Ofwald, Darlingfcott, Of Arrowe Flu Defford, Parfs. Affley, Dod, Dichford Ofw. Ailon Sofwald, great, Sofwald, Aulfton, Ofw. Dichford 20/10.

Aufricke,Wor.Line. Dodenham, Ded. Doderhill Half. Dormelton, Parf Badley,Blak. Douerdale, Half. Balton hall parke, Wer. Draicote, Ofw. DRAIT WICHE, Half. Barrowe, V pron Limits. Barten hall, Wor. Limits. Droue, Ofw. Dubbicott, Viton. Bayton, Dod. BEAWDLEY, Dod. Dudley Half. Belbroughton, Half. Dunklyn, Half. Bell Inn. Half. Bengeworth, Blak, E Eaftham, Dod! Bentley pantefore, Half. Berrington, Ded. Eckinton Parile Besford, Parf. Eldresfeild, Pps. Ely part of Beulcy, Wor. Shropshire, Half. Birlingham, Parft. Bishampton, Ofm. Elmbridge, Half. Blackmore, Vpran. Elmley Half.

caftell, } of.

Eftingten, Vpt. EVESHOLME, Bla.

Feckenham & Wor.

forreft, \$

Fladbury,Ofw.

Frankley, Half.

Grafton, Haif.

Hadfor Half.

Hagley, Half.

of Shropshire, Wer.

Hampton Half.

Hampton Blak

Hampton Blak.

Hallow, Wor.

flawell Parp.

Goldcote park Blak

Grafton ? Parfs.
flyford, ?
Grymley, Wer.

Emloade,Ofw.

Blackwell,Ofm. Blocklic 30fm. Blocklie,Ofw. Bockleton, Ded. Chenchill Wor. Bradicott, 5" Bradlie, Ofwald. Braughton, Parlle Braunsford, Wor. Fecknam } Half. Breedon hill, Ofw. Bretforton, Blak Bricklehampton, Part. Brodwas War Brodwey, Parf.

Brome part Half.
of Staff.
BROMSGROVE, Half. Burfley, Wor. Bushley Fpron. Chaddelike, Half. Chadfley, Half. Charleton Of Chartifley, V pron. Church hill, Half. Claynch, Wor. Cleave 3 Ofm.
Clent part 3 Half.

Clent hill, part Half.

Hanging } Ofw. Hanley 3 Did childes, Hanley 2 Dod. Hanley Syptom. Hardington, Wor. Harkett, Parfis. Harkert Half Hartesbury 2 19 or. Harrington, Ufiv. Heightington, Dod. Henlip,Wor.

Hewell grange, Perfs. Himbleton, Wor. Hobb & Ofw. Holme, Dod. Holt,Wor. Holtfast, Vpt. Church Honibourne, Black Hill,Ofw.

Naunton } Parfs. Hyndlipp,Wor. Hynton,Ofw. Netherton,Ofw. Newbold, Ofw. Newland Wor. Northfeild Half. Icambe,Ofm. Inckbarrowc,Ofw. Northwicke, Of se. Northwood, Ded. Norton, Blak. Norton, Of se. S. Iohns in S. Iohns in Bedwarden Norton Wer. Kemfey,Wor. Kengwick, Wor. Keylhend, Ppt. KIDDERMINSTER Half Odingley, Wor. Offenton, Blak, Oldwinford, Half.

of Shropshire, S Half. Kidder minfter & Half. forren, Kingford Half. Kings Half. Kington, Half. Kokeley, Half. Kyar | Dod.

wicke.

Leigh,Wor.

ittleton Blak.

fouth.

Littleton

middle,

Longdon, Vpt.

Longdon, O/m.

Lulfey, Wer. Lindon, Ded.

Madresfeild, Fprom.

Maluerne ? Prom.

Lyc, Wor.

beacon, Half.

Lindridge, Dod.

Littleton & Blak

EBlak,

Lickey

PARSHOR S. Park. Kyar & Dod. Parshor Saint } Parse. Kyneton,Ofw. Paxford, Ofw. Pedmore, Half. Church & Half. Pendocke, Vpt. Penfham, Parfh. Lench, Lench Pepoleton, Parfe S. Peters, Half. roule. Lenche Pidle,Ofw. Blak. atche, Pidle Parf. Lenche Blak fhriues. Pindfen. Parlle. Lenche Pirton, Parf. Blak

> Poole, Vpt. Queene hill, Ficon. Rea Flu,

> > Rypple, Vps.

Poicke, Wor.

Reddiche Half.
Reddiche Half.
Reddiche Dod.
Roche, Dod.
Russhock, Half. Ruffels, Half. Rybbesford, Ded. Rydmerley, Fps. Rydmerley } Dad. Rydmericy | Ded.

Maluerne Voton.
Maluerne Voton.
great, Voton.
Mamble, Dod. Salwarpe, Half. Salwarpe Flu. Sedgbarrow, Ofw. Seuerne Flu.

abbats, }Blak.

Moulley. War.

Mitton, Half.

Omberfley.Wor.

Orlton, Ded.

Ouerbury, Ofin

Ouerhurgh, Of an

Ouerton, Ofw.

Martley, Dod. Shraley Dod. Marten ? Wor. hongtree, Mathon, Wor. Shelfey } Dod. Chelley Beaucham, Ded. S. Michaels in Bedwarden, SHIPTON VPON } of. Mitton, Dod. STOWER, Mitton, Ofw. Sneade, Dod. Moore, Ofin. More, Dod. Speachley, Wor. Stanford, Dod. Moreton,0/w. Staunton, Vpton. Stildon, Dod. Castle } Vps. Stocke, Ofw. Stokton. Ded. Birch } /pr. Morton,

Stoke, Wor. Stoke prioris, Wer. Stoke Seuerne, Wer. Stome, Half. Storton, Ded. Stoulton,Wor. Strensham, Parft. STVRBRIDGE.Hal. Suckley.Wor. Sudbury,Wor. Sutton Ded.

Tardbick, Half. Tenbury, Dod, Tichnell, Dod. Tidmington,O/m. Throckmorton, Of. Totenham Wer. Tredington } Of Tybberton,Wore

Vifenham, Biok, pron Half. Vpton Inodesbury, Paris. fnodesbury, VPTON VPON Pro. VPTON VPON VPON

Walcot, Parfi. Wallashull, Paris Wanden, Wor. Wareley, Half. Warrenton, War, Walhbornes, Of w. Welland, Vpion. Whitborne, Wor. Whitlady } Wor.

Whittington, Wer. Wichbold, Helf. Wichenford Wer Wicke, Parf. Wicke, Wor. Wickanford, Blak. Widuerton Wor. Wire forrest, Dod. Wier,Ofw.

Witeley Dod.
Witeley Wor. Withon | Wor. Wolbatrowe, Wer. Wolkershill, Ofw. Woluley, Wor.

North } Ded. Wood, } Ded. Woodbery hill, Ded. WORCESTER, Wer.

Yardley,Wor.

Arwick-fbire (fo called from her Shire-towne) is bounded vpon the North with the County of Stafford; vpon

Book I.

The bounds of

The Aire.

The Bantles.

the East, with Watling-streetway is parted from Leicesterfoire, and the rest bordered vpon by Northampton-shire: the South part is butted by Oxford and Glocester-shires;

and all her West with the County of Worcester. (2) The forme therof is not much valike to a Seallop-shell, growing from her Western-head, & spreading her body wider, with many indents. The length therof

from Newton in the North, to Long Compton in the South, are miles thirty and three: and the brodest part of this Shire, is from Hewell grange in the West, vnto Hill-morton in the East, distant asunder twenty five The length miles, the whole in circumference, about one hundred thirty and fine. (3) This Shire is fited neere vnto the heart of all En-

gland, & therfore participates with her in the best both for aire & foile, wanting nothing for profit or pleafure for man, The South part from Auon (that runneth thorow the midft of this County) is called the Felden, as more champion and tractable to bee stirred for corne. which yeerely yeeldeth such plentifull haruest, that the husbandman smileth in beholding his paines, and the medowing pastures with their green mantles so imbrodered with flowers, that from Edg-hill wee may behold another Eden, as Lot did the Plaine of Iordan, be-fore that Sodome fell. The Woodland lieth vpon the The Woodland North of Auon, so called in regard of the plenty of woods:

which now are much thinner by the making of Iron and the foile more churlish to yeeld to the Plough. (4) The ancient people that possessed in the Province, are by Ptolemies description called the Corna viii, wherin after were seated the Mereian-Saxons, a part of

whose Kingdome it was, and greatly sought after by the West-Saxons, whose King Cuthred, about the yeere of Christ Iesus, 749. in battle flew Ethelbald at Seckington neere vnto Tamworth. And not farre from thence, King Edward 4. as vnfortunately fought against that front make-king, Richard Neuill Earle of Warwicke: neere vnto which, vpon Blacklow-hill, Pierce Gaueston (that proud and new-raifed Earle of Cornwall) was be-headed by Guy Earle of Warwicke, assisted with the Earles of Lancaster and Hereford. And surely, by the testimonie of tohn Rosse and others, this Countie hath been better replenished with people, who maketh coplaint of whole town-ships depopulations, altogether laid waste by a pursant Armie of feeding Sheepe.

(5) Notwithstanding, many faire Townes it hath and some of them matchable to the most of England The chiefe thereof is Couentree, a City both stately for building, and walled for defense: whose Citizens hauing highly offended their first Lord Leofricke, had their privileges infringed, and themselves oppressed with many heavy Tributes; whose wife Lady Godina pi tying their citates, vnceffantly fued for their peace, and that with fuch importunacie, as hardly could bee faid whether was greater, his hatred, or her loue: at last ouercome with her continuall intercessions, he granted her fuit, vpon an vnciuil; and (as he thought) an vnacceptable condition, which was, that shee should ride naked thorow the face of the City, and that openlie at high noone-day. This notwithstanding she thankfully accepted, and performed the act accordingly enioned : for this Lady Godina stripping herselfe of all rich attire, let loofe the treffes of her faire haire, which on every fide to concred her nakednes, that no part of her body was vnciuill to fight; wherby the redeemed the forme freedoms. & remission of such heavy Tributes. Whose memory I wish may remaine honorable in that City for euer, and her pitie followed by fuch poffessing Ladies. This City had grant to chuse their veerly Magistrates, Major and two Bailiffes, & to build about and embattle a wall, by King Edward 111. whom Henry v1.corpora-ted a County of it felfe, and changed the names of their Bailifs vnto Sherifs: and the wals then were built as they now stand; thorow which open 13. Gates for entrance; besides 18. other Towers thereo for defense. At Gofford Gate in the East hangeth the Shield-bone of a + wilde fore, . Or rather of an Gate in the East nangern the poetra-vone of a * Table Dore, * Or reference of an entry bigger the the greatest One bone, with whose should not be little as a trad talength. flaine by the famous Guy, if we will beleeue report.

(6) Next vnto this City, in account and commerce, is Warwicke, vpon the North-well Banke of Auon built by Gurgunftus the fon of Beline, as John Roffe Manke of the place faith, 375. yeres before the birth of Christ: by Nineus called Caer-Guarnic and Caer-Leon ; by the Saxons; Wappýng-wýc ; and by learned Cambden iudged to bee PRAESIDIVM, the Roman Garrisons Towne. The situation of this place is most pleasant upon a hil rising fro the River, ouer which is a strong & faire Stone-bridge, & her sharp streame vpon the towne side checked with a most sumptuous & stately Cafle, the decaies whereof, with great cost & curious buildings, the right worthy

me-ward I do acknowledge, in letting this had free fro the daily imploimers of a manuall trade, & giving itfull liberty thus to expresse the inclination of my mind himfelfe being the *Procurer* of my prefent estate.

It seemeth this Towne hath been walled about, as appeareth by the Trench in some places scene, and two very faire Gates, whose passages are hewed out of the Rocke, as all other into the Towne are: ouer whom two beautifull Chapels are built; that towards the East cal-

Knight Sir Foulke Griuell (in whose perso shineth al true

vertue & high nobilitie)hath repaired: whose merits to

led S. Peters, and that on the South-well S. I ames. Two faire Churches are therein feated, called Saint Maries, and S. Nicolas : but these in, and about the Towne suppressed, S. Laurence. S. Michaels, I ohn Baptist & Iohn of Ieru/alem, befide the Nunnery in the North of the Towne: whole North Pole is elevated in Latitude 5 2 degrees & 45 minutes, & is feated fro the first point 12 degrees & 4.5 minutes, & is leated fro the first point in the West of Longitude, 18 degrees & 4.5 minutes, being yearely gouerned by a Baisiffe, twelve Breistren, twenty foure Burgesfee for Common Compill, 3 Recorder, a Towne-clerke, and one Sergeant their Attendant.

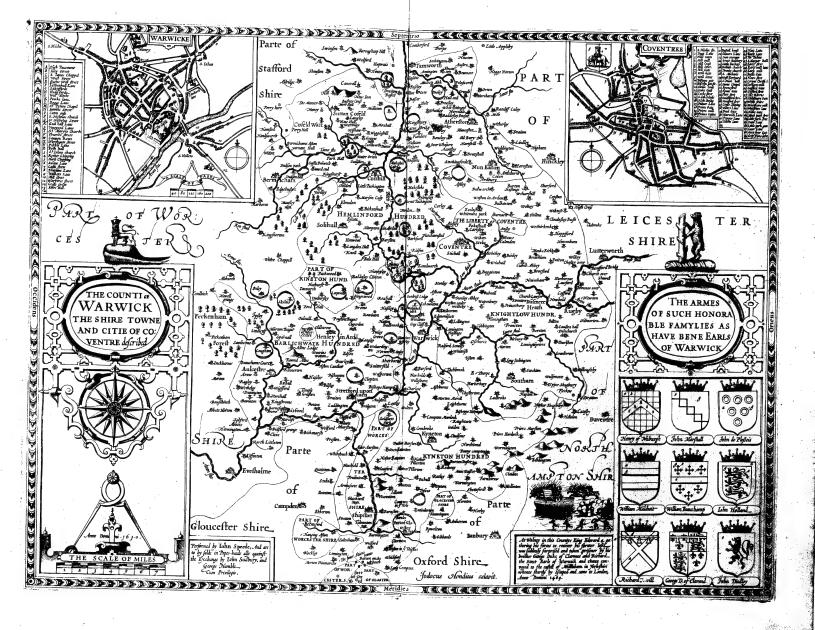
(7) Places of most memorable note observed in this Shire, are Shugbury, where the pretious from Aftroites is found: Of-Church, which was the Palace of great Offa is round: 07-commen, without was the Palace of S. Fremund his fonne: Cheflerton, where the famous Fossers way is feene. At Learnington, so farre from the Sea, a Spring of Saltwater boileth vp : and at Newenham Regis most souc-raigne water against the Stone, Greene wounds, Vicers, & Impostumes; and drunke with Salt looseth, but with fugar bindeth the body; and turneth wood into stone. as my selfe saw by many sticks that therin were fallen, some part of them Ash, and some part of them Stone: and Guy-cliffe, where the famous Earle Guy, after many painfull exploits atchieued, retired, and vnknowne John Rolls. lead an Hermites life, and was lastly there buried.

(8) The chiefest commodities in this County grow ing, are corne, wherof the Red-berfe V ale yeeldeth most abundantly; wools in great plenty; woods and iron, though the producer of the one wilbe the deftruction of the other.

Such honourable Families as have beene dignified with the Earledone of this Shire-towner name fince the Normans Conquest, in the Mappe it selfe are inserted, and by their several names expressed.

This County is strengthned with eight strong Ca-

fles, traded with fifteene Market-townes, inriched with many faire buildings, and by the deuotion of many Nobles, had many foundations of religious Monaferies Nobles, had many tounoastous or resigous Monagerest therein had. The chiefest were at Stoneley, warniske, Theshigford, Rocholl, Balfoull, Killingworth, Commirce, Combic, Nam-cason, Alpy, Atherfon, and Pallefuneths had which came to their period in the taigne of K. Hornie VIII. when their trich Reuenews were alienated to the company of the third of the third of the company of the his vie, and those stately buildings either overturned or bestowed vpon his Courtiers: but yet to Gods glorie, and his divine fertrice, one hundred fifty eight parith-churches therein remaine, dispersedly seated in the nine Hundreds of this Shires division.



5. Kington,

Anker Flu.

Anftic, Course.

Arcley, Kingt. Arrowe, Barlich.

Ashoe, Knight.

Alhow, Knight.

Bewinton, Barlich,

Bickenhull, Heml.

Birminghams, Heml.

Birminghams? Heml.

Bishopton, Barlich.

BITFORD, Barlieb.

Bewfall Barlich

Bilfley, Barlick.

Bilton, Knight.

Binley, Knight.

Afton,

Blithe Flu.

Bolchall, Hem!

Bourne Flu.

Brome, Barl.

Bubnell, Knight.

Bramcote, Hemi

Ladbrocke, Knight.

Langdon hall, Hemi

Langley, Bartich,

Langley, Heml.

Lapworth, King.

Hundreds in War-	Burdingbury, Knight.
wick-shire.	Burnefebrome, Barliel
	Burton Haftings Knight.

t. Hemlingford. Old? Bury, Hemlingford. 2. Couentree. Knightlow. Bynton, Barlich. Barlichwaye,

Calendon, Couent. Canfton hall, Knight. Canwall, Heml. Carelly, Conent. Aine Lodge, Barlich. Caton Bridge, Heml. Cawcot, Heml. Amington, Heml. Alciley, Heml. Chadfhunt, Kington. Charlecott, King. Chafe, Knight. Ardbury, Hemling. Cherinton, King. Chefferton, King. Chefter & Knight.

Chiluers & Heml. Ashborne, Kington,

Afhton Afheon Barlich, Cantlow, Barlich, Afticy, Knight. Atherston, Heml. Church ouer, Knight. Church Knight. Clardon, Barlich. Attleburrow, Heml. Cliffe, Heml. AVLCESTER, Barlick Clifton, Knight Aulfton, Barlich, (.lopton, Barlich. Auftre. Heml. Cloudyelley Knight. Auntley, Heml, Auon Flu. Cobley, Barlich. Awiley, Knight, Cofeld SHeml. Walt, SHeml. Combe Abbey, Knigh

Badgefley Enefot, Heml. Combroke, King. Badgefley Hem! Compton King. Bagginton, Knight, Ballall, Heml. Compton in King. the hole, King. Coleshull, Heml. Barcelton, King. Barford, King. Barkswell, Heml. Compton King. Barmington, Kington Compton Mardock, } King. Barnacle, Knight. Barterley Hemi. Copfon, Knight. Barfton, Hemi. Barron on the King. Cosford, Knight. Coton, Heml. Heath, Kmg. Bailets Croffe, Heml. Coughton Barlich. Baffet, Heml. Counden, Knight. Beauchams Barlieb. COVENTREE Conen. Cubbington, Knight, Curdworth, Heml. Bearlye, Barlich. Bedworth, Knight.

Bensford Bridge, Knigh Bentley, Hemi. D Daffet Auon King. Datlet Datlet Burton, King. Daftell, Hem!, Dracott, Knight. Drayton, Barlich Dudson Parke, Heml Dudson Hall, Heml. Dunchurch, Knight, Dunington, Barlich, Dunfmere Knight. Dunton, Heml.

Boreton vpon Z Knigh Е Eatington | King. Brandon, Knight, Eatington King. Brannot, Knight, Brayles, King. Bretford, Kingbt. Ettlethall, Conen Edgebafton, Hem! Bretthall. Heml. Edmondfoot, Knight. Bridgton, Barlich. Edfon, Bar. Brincklowe, Knight. Elinedon, Heml. Escote Heml. Elenhull, Knight. Bromwich Caftle, Heml, Brownfouer, Knight. Ethorpe, Knight. Exall, Barlich. Budbrooke, Bartich. Exall, Comen.

Farnebrowe, King, Fascley, Heml. Fillongley, Heml. Flanders, Heml. Fleckno, Knight. Fletchamfted, Heml. Fokeshill, Couent. Ford hall, Barlich. Foxcott,King.

Church Knight. Lawford | Knight. Francton, Knight, Freafley, Heml. Lea, Heml. Leame Flu. Leeke Knight. Geydon,King. Glascote, Heml. Lekewotton, Knight. Goldscots, King. Lemington Knight. Goodrell Knight emington | Knight Grafton Temple, Barlieb ighthorne, King. Littington, Knight. Granborow, Knight. Loxley, Barlieb. Graues, Heml. Luddington, Barlich. Grimdon, Heml. Groue, Barlich. M

Guilfdon, Heml. Guy Cliffe, King. Makestoke } Heml. Maney, Hemling, Hallaton, Heml, Maner, Hemi. Halford, King. Hall end, Heml. Manceter, Heml. Marchife, Barlich. Hampton in Arden. Marfon Heml. Hampton Lacye, Barlee darion larion Inbett, } K*night*. Hampton Bilhops, Bard Hampton Curley, Barl. Marfon Burton, Knight Harberbury, Knight. Harborow } Knight. Marion King. Hartshill, Heml. Marion Marfon But lers. King. Harwicke King. priors, King. Hafeley, Barlieb. Marton, Knight, Maxitock, Heml. Haffeller, Barlich, Mercuale, Hemi. Hatton, Barlsch. Meriden, Heml,

Hawford, King. HENLEY in Arden, Barlieb. Miluerton, Knight, Minworth, Heml. Mollinton, King. More-hall, Hemling Henwood, Heml, Hewell Grange, Barlieh High Croffe, Knight, Hill, Heml, Morehall, Rarisch. Morton Menall, King Morton Baggot, Bara Moxhall, Heml. Hill, Knight. Hillmorton, Knight. Mulcote Abbey, Heml. Hodnell, Knight. Holt, Heml Myddleton, Heml. Honington, King. Honyngham, Knight, Mylcotte, Barlich. Hopsford, Knight, Horeston, Hend. Hunnyley, Barlich Napton on the Knight

Hurley, Heml. Idlicott, King. Ilmington, King. Ipfley, Barlich. Itchington Knight. Itchington | Knight

Mount, S. Newbold, King.

Auon, } New-hall, Heml.

New-Inne. Heml.

Newenham: Knight.

Newenham Knight. Kings, Knight.

Newton, Knight.

Northend, King.

Norton Barlieb.

Norton Lynfey, } Barlieb.

Nun-caton, Heml.

Ofchurch Knight.

Water Heml.

Nuthurft, King.

KENELWORTH, Knig. Kenelworth Duchy Caltle \ Knig. Kerby Kngbt. KINETON, King. Knightcore, King. Kingsbury, Hend Kingsbrome, Barlich. Kingshurst, Heml. Kingfwood, Heml. Knowle, Heml. Kynnerton, Barlich,

Oulnail, Barlich. Oxhill, King.

Packington } Heml, great Packington Heml. little, Packwood, Kington. Pailton, Knight. Parke-hall, Heml. Pillerton King. Pillerton King.

Pinley Groue, Barlich. Pretton Bagott, Barlieb. Princethorp, Knight. Poolefworth, Heml. Pooley, Heml. Q

Queenes Parke, Heml, Ŕ

Radford Knight. Radford, Coment. Radway, Kmpton, Ragley, Barlieb. Ratley, Kington, Ridfen, Homling, Riton, Knight. Rowington, Barlich. Rownd Alne, Barlich. Roxall, Barlich. R V G B Y, Knight,

Salford Barlich. Salford Barlieb Samborne, Barlieb. Seckington, Heml. Sherborne Flu. Sherburne, Barlich. Sherford, Knight. Sheldon, Heml. Shilton, Knight. Shyftoke, Hemi. Shotfwell, Kington, Shrowley, Barlich, Shuckborow King.

Shuckborough Knight vpper, jan Shuttington, Heml, Skiltes, Barlieb. Snytterfeild, Barlich. Newbold vpon Knight pernall, Barlich. Solihull, Hemi. Sowe, Knight. Sowe, Knight. Sowe, Conens. Sowe Flu. SOWTHAM, Knight Stiuechall, Conent. Stockingford, Heml, Stockton, Knight, Stoke, Couent.
Stoneley, Knight.
Stoneley Abbey, Knight.
Stratford Barlich.

Stratford vpon Barlie, Auon, 3 Stretton, King. Wyken, Course. Stretton vnder | Knight Studiyffe, Barlich. Ouldbarrow, belonging SVTTON Hem!

Tachbroke Knight Tachbroke Kong. Tame Flu. Tamworth, Hem! Tamworth, King. Temple Barlich Tiddington, Bartech,

Thurlafton, Kniehe Toft, Knight. Tuttweil, Barlich. Tylor, Kington.

Viton, Knight. Vmberfley, Kmg. Vpton, King. w

Walton, King. Wapenbury, Knight, Wardend, Heml Warmley, Heml. Warmington, King. WARWICKE,King. Wasperton, Kmg, Wawins Bar. Weddington, Heml. Wedgenocle Knight. Weethley Barlich. Welfborne King.

Welsborne King. hafting, Weston in Knight. Weston in the thistles, Weston vader Knight. Wethirbroke, Knight. Whatley, Heml. Whatcott, King. Whetaere Hem! Whetacre Heml. Witchurch,King. Whitley,Kmghe.

Whitmore; Conent, parke, Conent, Whitmalh, Knight, Whittington, Heml, Wibtoff, Knight. Wickelsford Ber Wigginshill, Heml. Willey, Knight. Willenhall, Knight. Willin-cote, Heml. Willowbye, Knight, Winderton King. Wishaw, Heml Witchford, King. Witherley, Hem! Withibroke, Knight. Witton, Heml. Wolhamcott, Knight. Wolford, Keng. Woluershill, Knight. Woluctton, Barlich. Wolney, Knight. Woodlaws Knight. Wormleighton, Kmg. Wulfencote, Knight. Wulfton, Knight.

> Y Yarnton Heml.

Orthampton-shire, situated neere vnto the middest of England, by the Saxons was written Nopp-spenponycipe, lieth separated vpon the North from Lincoln-shire by the River Weland; from Huntington-(bire on the East is parted

Book.1.

The name of

Northungton

The forme.

The comm

King lebn.

force

by the water Nene: her South is bounded with Buckingham and Oxfordfbires, and the West from Warwicke with Watling freetway, Auon, and Weland, is divided from Leicefter faire.

(2) The forme of this County is large and narrow, broadest in the fouth-west; and thence shooting ftill leffer like vnto a Horne, nor not much vnlike to the forme of Cornwall: and from the entrance of Cherwell into this Shire, vnto the fall of Weland and Nene necre vnto Crowland, are by measure forty fix The circumfemiles; and the broadest part is from Ouse vnto Auon. which is not fully twenty: the whole in circumference one hundred and nineteene miles.

(3) The aire is good, temperate, and healthfull: the foile is champion, rich, and fruitfull, and fo plenteoufly peopled, that from fome Ascents, thirty Parith-Churches, and many more Windmilles at one view may bee feene : notwithstanding the simple and gentle sheepe, of all creatures the most harme leffe, are now become so rauenous, that they begin to denoure men, wafte fields, & depopulate houses if not whole towne-ships, as one merily hath written (4) The ancient people knowne to the Romans, and recorded by Ptolemie, were the Coritani, who pos-

fessed this Countie, and were branched further thorow Leicester, Lincolne, Nottingham, Rutland, and Darbie-shires: these joining with the Icenians, with them were fettered with the chaines of subjection, when for Claudius, Publius Oftorius Scapula entred his Licutenantship in Britaine, and in battle subdued all betwixt the rivers Nene and Sabrina. But when the Romans were content to let goe that which so long was desired, and had coft so much in the getting, the Saxons, a most warlike Nation, put into these parts, and made it a portion of their Mercian Kingdome : but their gouernmentalfo growne out of date, the Normans feated themselues in these faire possessions, the branches of whose Stemmes are spreadabroad in these parts,

most fruitfull and faire, (5) Commodities arifing in this Shire, are chiefly gotten by tillage and plough, whereby corne so plentifully aboundeth, that in no other Countie is found more, or so much : the pastures and woods are filled with cattle and enery where sheepe loaden with their fleeces of wooll.

(6) The chiefe Towne in this Shire is Northampton, whereof the County taketh name, which for circuit, beautie, and building, may be ranked with the most of the Cities of our Land. It is seated at the meeting and confluence of two Rivers, the greater whereof beareth to name New. This Towne hath beene built all of stone, as by many foundations remaining to this day is scene, and is walled about both ftrong and high, excepting the West, which is defended by a River parted into many streames. In the depredations of the Danes, Suen their King fet this Henr. Hout. Towne on fire, and afterwards it was forely affaulted by the disobedient Barons of King John, who named themselves The Armie of God: but the loyaltie of this Towne flood nothing fo fure vnto King Henry his fonne, whence the Barons with displaced Banners founded the Battle against their Soueraigne. And yet after this a wofull Field of Englands civill division was fought, whence Richard Neuil the floor Earle of Warnieke, lead away prisoner that unfortunate man King Henry the fixth. Vpon the West part of this Towne standerha large Castle, mounted vpon an hill, whose aged countenance well sheweth the beau-

tie that she hath borne, and whose gaping thinkes doe

daily threaten the downefall of her walles. To this

vpon the South the Townes wall adjoineth, and in a round circuit meeteth the River in the North, extending in compasse two thousand one hundred and twenty pales: whose site so pleased the Students of Cambridge, that hither they remooued themselues An.D.1261; vpon the Kings Warrant, in minde to haue made it an Vniuersitie: from whence the North-pole is eleuated 52. degrees 36. scruples for Latitude, and in Longitude is remooued from the West 19. degrees and 40. scruples; being yeerely gouerned by a Maior, two Bailiffes, twelue Magistrares, a Recorder, Towns-Clerke, a Common-Counfell of fortie eight Burges fes, with fine Screeants to execute bufineffe. (7) But the denotions of the Saxon-Kings made

Peterborow more famous, formerly called Meddefwell.

where Wolphere King of Mercia beganne a most statelie Monasterie to the honour of S. Peter, for latisfaction of the bloud of his two sonnes, whom he had murdered in case of Christianitie: but himselfe being for the like made away by his mother, his brother Penda continued the worke, with the assistance of his brother Ethelred, and two lifters Kineburga and Kinefwith. This among the Danish Defolations was cast downe; yet was it againe restored to greater beauty by Ethelwold Bishop of Winchester, with the helpe of King Edgar, and of Adulph his Chancellour, who vpon pricke of conscience, that in bed with his wife had ouerlaid and smoothered an infant their onely sonne, laid all his wealth vpon the reedifying of the place, and then became Abbat thereof himselfe. The Cathedrall is most beautifull and magnificall, where, in the Quire lie interred two vnfortunate Queenes : on the North fide Catharine Dowager of Spaine, the repudiate wife of King Henry the eighth, under an Hearse coursed ger of Spaine. with blacke Saye, having a white Croffe in the midft: and on the fouth-fide, Mary Queene of Stotland, whose Hearse is spread ouer with blacke velues. The Cloister is large, and in the glasse-windowes very cu-riously portraied the Historie of Wolphere the Founder, whose Royall Seat was at Wedon in the street conuerted into a Monasterie by Saint Werburg his holy daughter, and had beene the Roman Station, by Antonine the Emperour called Bannauenna, So likewife Norman-chester was the ancient City Durobrinae, where their Souldiers kept, as by the Monies there

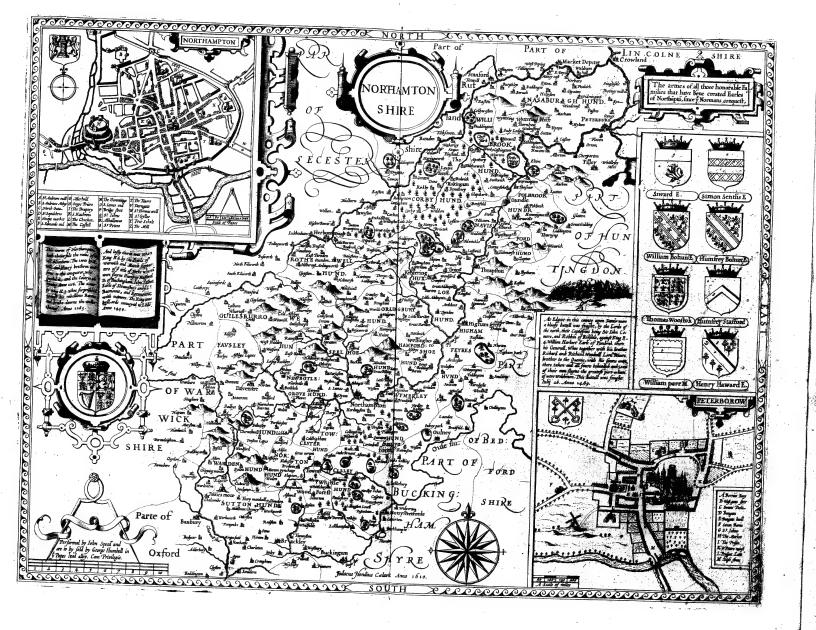
daily found is most apparant.
(8) Houses of Religion deuoted to Gods Scruice by the pious intents of their wel-meaning Founders were at Peterborow, Peakirk, Pipewell, Higham, dets were at Peterboon, Peatre, repeate, ingam, Damitre, Sabh, Salfenber, Sewardelge, Gare, Saint Devry, Saint Michell, Luffeild, Cateby, Bruch, Barkley, Finfload, Fathinghey, weden, and Withref, befiles them in Northampton, all which felt the flormes of their owne destruction that raged against them in the raigne of King Henry the eighth, who dispersed their Reuenewes to his owne Coffers and Courtiers, and pulled the stones asunder of their feeming euer-fure Foundations; and in the time of young Edward, his fonne, whose minde was free King kaward rom wronging the dead, the Tombes of his owne Predecessours were not spared, when as Edward flaine Haward. at Agincourt, and Richard at Wakefeild, both of them Dukes of Yorke, were after death affaulted with the weapons of destruction, that cast downe their most faire Monuments in the Collegiate Church of Fother ringhay Castle.

(9) Eight princely Families have enioted the Ti-tle of the Earledome of Northampton, whereof the laft, Henry Haward now Lord Prime Seale, a most honourable Patron to all learned proceedings (that I may acknowledge my dutifull and humble feruice) hath most honourablie assisted and set forward these my endeuours.

(10) This Shires division, for service to the Crowne, and imploiments of businesses, is into twentie Hundreds, hath beene strengthned with ten Caftles, and is ftill traded with ten Market-Townes, and God honoured in three hundred twenty fix Parish-Churches.

An.Do.960

N 2



Sutton, Nasfab.

Syerlan, Sur,

Syluerton, Nort.

Syluerton, Cle.

Tanfouer, Willi.

Thornebic,

Thingdon, Hux.

Thornhawe, Naffab

Thorpe, Nauf.

Thurnyng, Pol. Titchmarth, Nau.

Titon, New.

Trafford,War.

Twywell, Hax.

Tyffeild, Tow.

Viford, Naf.

Vxton, Naf.

Vpton, New

Waddenhoe, Nau.

Wakenley, Cor.

Walgraue, Orl

Walton, Naf.

Walton, Nat.

Warkton, Hux.

Warkworth, Sne.

Warmington, Wil.

Warmington, Pol,

Weedon beckie Fami.

Watford Gmil.

Weedon Nors.

Weekeley, Cor.

Weldon great, Cor. Weldon little, Cor.

WELLING-

Welton, Fanf. Werington, Naf.

Weston, Nors.

Whilton, New.

Whifton Wim.

Woollafton, High.

Wotton, Wym.

Welton, Cor.

BOROV GH, H

Weland flu.

Walmesford Naf.

Wappenham, Sur.

Thorney mill, Naffab

Thorpe Lubnam, Roth

Thorpe vnderwood, Ro

THRAPSTON, Name

TOWCESTER, Tow.

Truffell marilon, Reth.

Sywell, Ham.

Sutton Batlet, Cor.

HVNDREDS Blakefley, Nor. in Northamp-Blyfworth, Wym

tombire. Boddingtones, War, Botheresthorpe,Wym Boughton, Hux. N Alfaburgh. Willibrook. Bowden & Roth Bozict, High. Corby. 4. Polbrook Nanisford.

Brabrooke, Rorth, BRACKLEY, Sut. Braddyn, Nort. Huxloe. Brampton, Cor. Rothewell. Bramptones, New. Guilesburrowe. Bramiton, Fauf. Braynfeild,Wim. Orlington. Bringtones, New. io. Fausley. Brixtoke, Cor. 11. Newbotlegroue. Brixworth, O.L. 12. Spelhoe. Brockhold, New 13. Hamfordshoe. Bromfeild, High 14. Highamfeyres, Broughton, Orl 15. Wymerfley, Buckby long, Guil 16. Towcester. Buckton Spel Bugbrooke, New. 17. Warden. Bullwick, Cor. 18. Norton. Burecote-Town 19. Cleley. Burghley, Nat 20. Sutton. Burnewell Al-faints, Hux,

Burton

Corby, Cor.

Coughton Sat.

Cofthorpe Naf.

Contestocke, Wal.

Cortingham, Cor.

Cotton end Wym.

Cranford, Has.

Creton, Guil.

Cricke, Guil.

Cranefeley, Orl.

Croughton, Sur.

Culworth, Sut.

Courten hall, wym.

Cottesbrooke, Guil.

Cofgraue, Cle.

Lattmer, 3

Byfeilde, War.

3 Hux.

Abbington, Spel. Achurch, Namsford,

С Addington > Haxl. Addington Huxl. Caldecon, High. Caldecote, Ton. Capes Carleton, Cor. Adtton, Norton. Adthorpe, Tow. Aldrington, Cle. Castle Afhbie, } Wym. Althorpe, Newbot. Apethorpe, Willi. Caftor, Naf. Catesbie, Fauf. Archefter, Hig. Ardingworth, Retb Chalcombe, Sat. Armelton, Polbr. Charleton, Sus. Artleboro Hav Charwell flu. Ashbie cold, Guil. Charwelton, Fauf. Cheluciton, High. Afhbie fibie Nort, Cheney middleton, } Sut. Afbbie Fault Leyors, Shipping } War. Afhbie Mhbie Ham. Clapton, Nau. Afhlic, Cor. Claylaton Guil Cliffe parke, Will Afhton, Pol. Clipftonn, Rath. Cognihey, Wym. Coilingtree, Wym Colliwelton, Wil

Alhton, Naffab Afhton, "ar. Afhtree,War. Aflacil, Sut. Aubery Fault. Auon-well, Reth. Ayner, Sur. Badby, Fauf. Baddington, Naf.

Badfton Sut. Barbic, Faul Barnack, Naf. Barnwell S.Andrewes, Pol. Barton, Ham. Barton Segrave, Hax. Bailett Sutton, & Cor.

Daddington, Ham. Dallington, New. Baynton, Naf. Danes more, War. Beckie Beckie } DAVENTREE, Fauf. Dene, Cor. Benifeid. Pol. Denethorpe, Cor. Billing Spel.
Belling Spel.
little, Spel. Denford, Hax, Denshanger, Cle. Deping \ Naf. Bladerwick, Cor. Desborowe, Roth.

Degnton,Wym, Dingeley, Cor. Dodferd, Fauf. Dodington,Wil. Dowbrige, Guil. Draughton, Reib. Dufton, New.

Eastfeild, Naf.

Easton, Wil.

HIGHAM FERYES, HI. Hifham, Orling. Holdenby, New. Holcott, Ham. Hoothorpe, Rath, Houghton Wym.

Houghton Wym.

Houghton Wym.

Horton, Wym.

Hulcot, Cle. Hynton, Sut.

S Ianes, New.

Islippe, Hux.

Imley, Sut.

Hemmyngton, Pol.

Helpelton, Naffab.

Heryfords, New.

Higham cold, Tow.

NORTHAMPTON-SHIRE.

Eafton High Eaton, Spel Ecton, High. Edgecote,War. Elton, Wil. Emington, Pol. Efton, Cle. Etton, Naf. Euenlie, Sut. Euerdons, Faul. Irlingborough, Hax. Eya, Naf. Eydon,War, Eylclworth, Naf.

Kellemarshe, Roth. KETTER, Hux. Farnedon Reib. Killingburye, New. Fanefley, Faul. Kings, Sut. Farthingston, Faul. Kingelthorpe, Spel. Fauill welton, } Spel, Kingfeliff, Willi. Kirkby, Cor. Faxton.Orl. Killesbie, Fauft, Femingho, Sut. Finshedd, Cor Flackleton, Wym. Langport, Orling.

Flower, New. Laxiton, Cor. Fortherning hav. Wil-Lillford, Hax. Fortherninghay park,19 Lillingston Cle. Further, Cle. Fynford, Sut. Loddington, Reib. Longthorpe, Naffab. G Lubnam Thorpe, } Reth. Gayton, Tow. Geddington, Cor.

Glinton, Naf.

Haddon cast, New

Haddon well, Gul.

Hardingston, Wym.

Hardwick, Orlin.

Hardwyll, Cle.

Hargraue, High.

Harington, Roth

Haringworth, Cor. Harleston, New.

Harrendon 3 Orling.

great, Sorange.

little, Sorling
Hallings
yordley, Wym.

Hatleboche, Rath.

Hauington, Orling.

Hellinden, Fauf.

Helmedon, Sec.

Harpole, New.

Hanging Corling.

Grafton

Luddington, Pal. Luffwick, Fine. Glapthorne, Wil. Lutton, Will. Lyfden, Nanif. vnderwood, Hux. Lyfeild, Nanif. Lylborne, Guil, Lytchbarrow, Fauft.

Grafton } Cle. Greues norton, Nort. Gretton, Cor. Gryndon, Wym. Maidwell, Roth, Grymfcott, Tow. Malfer Thorpe } Roib. Grytworth, War. Mandeuill Sur. Culbries } Cle. Guilesborowe, Guil, Marham, Naffab. Gunthorpe, N4/. Marston Laurenes. 3 Sm.

Truffell, } Roth. Maxey Caffic } Nassab. Maydford, Nort. Middleton Sm. Middleton, Cor. Moulton, Spel. Morton

Pynckney, Nort.

Mylton, Wym. Mylton, Nasfab. Nafebye, Guil. Naffington, Willi Nerboro, *Nasjab*. Newarke,*Nasjab*. Newbottle, *New*. Newbottle, Sut.

Newnham, Faull

Newton, Hig.

Newton, Cor. Newton wood, Willi NORTHAMPTON, N. Northburghe, Nassab. Norton, Fauft. Nyne Flu.

n Ocley great, } Cor. Ocley little, } Cor Oldwinckle, Hux. Orlingburie, Orling. Onlie, Fauft. Orton, Rach Ouercote, Faul. Ouerton, Spel. OVNDLE, Pol. Oxenden Roth.

Panlerspurie Cle Paffengham, Cle. Palton, Nallab. Pattefhall, Ton Peakirke, Nasfab. PETERBURGH, Naffal Pilkton, Nani/ Pillefgate, Naffab. Pipwell, Cor. Polbrooke, Pol.

P

Oxney Naffab.

Potters purie, Cle. Prefton, Wym. Prefton Capes, Fauft. Pyddington, Wym, Pynckney Nort. Pysforde, Spel. Pytchley, Orling.

Quynton, Wym Radfton, Sm. Raunsthorpe, Spel. Raundes, Hig. Ringfted, Hig. Rockingham Cor. Rockingham forest Cor. Rode Cle

Rothewell Rech

Welton > Spel. Rusheden Hig. Rufhton Reth. Whitfeild, Sur. Whirleburye, Nert. Sawcey forest, Wym Whittlewood forrell, N. Scaldwell, Orling. Wicklie,Cle. Sibbertoft Fack Wigesthorpe, Hax. Singlefale, Naffab Wickins,Cle. Slayton, Ners. Wilbee, Ham, Slipton, Hax Wilbafton, Cor. Sowthorpe, Nallab. Wilford, Guil. Spratton, Spel. Winwicke, Pol. Stamford, Willia Wittering, Naf. Stanford, Guil. Wittering heath, Naf. Stanwick, Hig. Woodnewton, Wil. Stanyone, Cor. Wooderoft, Naf. Stauerton, Faul. Woodend Nors. Steane, Sut. Woodford War. Stoke Albony, Cor. Woodford, Hux. Stoke Bruerne, Cle.

Stoke dayly, Nauif.

Stowe, Faul. Wowld, Orl. Stuttesburie, Sut. Wynwick, Guil. Stoyxton, High. Sudborow, Hax. Sulbye, Guil. Yardley gubbens, Cle. Sulgraue, War. Yardley hallings, Wym. Suly lodge, Naffab Suthwicke, Wille Yelucrtoft, Guil.

dune pey pes (part of the leeni vn. der the Romane Monarch , of Mercia in the Saxon Heptarchie is feuered with None, the North bounder from Northampton fire, to bounder from Northampton fire, to which it in part adjoyneth Weft from Eedford and Cambridge, by meering towns on the South, and from Ely, by a fence of water Eaft,

I from Jedynd and centricity, a visit of the contract of the c

fine beliefs the Shire Towns have Market. This of Parthers are metaler by Holes, and Cornels or Plough had, more of elicla, either the Holes of Hol

L. g.Conut. Saxon Telt diver Cover L:b.Dom (day. Rot. Forest in

Chap. 30.

Chro, Saxenica.

Ingolphus Crou-land Regift Ab-bas, de Cherrsey,

Malorb de Reg.

Tigfirum S.Al-

11 H n.7.17.

neceffabler.Scace Lib. Niger m Joh. Tilius

Art. To A. Itimo & Fortila.

The state of the s

Lib.Domefd.pro

de Fred Epr. Lin the chart of the c eap.13 & 42. Et pla aff apud Cant.14 Edw.1 Ex Ret. in .. dre

Lee.Hon.primi. primi Remigio Ep, Lincoln.

print, Qui Deligento fecilissipita sola evolutariana deficienta. The Layper of this lineath in a fort rather Country, and Sheefife Fassen, the Capture of this lineath in a fort rather Country, and Sheefife Fassen, the Capture of the Clerky, and the Clerky, and the Clerky, and the Clerky, and the Country of the Clerky, and the Country of the Clerky, and the Clerky, and the Country of the Clerky, and the Country of the Clerky, and the Clerky, and the Country of the Clerky, and the Country of Executive Office of the Country of t Universa flire, of old Hunder

bor fines to hall post days and in circus, but and it is to uncown, but there is no uncown, and the county of cashing by assual circumpad hash writer to it the County of Cashing.

(1) Heining that force folion fries this in general, next in obstantial balled the Shirt comprehensive Hind and only or the County of Cashing the Shirt comprehensive Hind and only or the County of Cashing and Cashing and the Cashing of Cashing and Cashing an

the result, when rown name, to warrant their integrity in that minimize the Tries of the Bart Advard, but Colling The Chillipped by from the smith of the Bart Advard, but Colling by the bowley of homely of the one of the Bart Advard, but Colling by the bowley of homely of the one of the Colling their states and the single frame of the Colling the states as the bart and the single frame of the Colling their states and the single frame of the Colling the states and the single frame of the Colling the States and the single frame of the Colling the States and the States and

and to Beijliffer (circle damain and Controlle Controlle, 1998).

The Proposition of the Controlle Control his three lemants, Sentlice, Laterale, and Camers,

Hen, Hunningd.

Regift. Prior.de Hunt. Domesiday. Ex nummu enti-

Hen. 2. Excarta original Exicart antiqui Ex ret. de Dua

Ramfey, infula

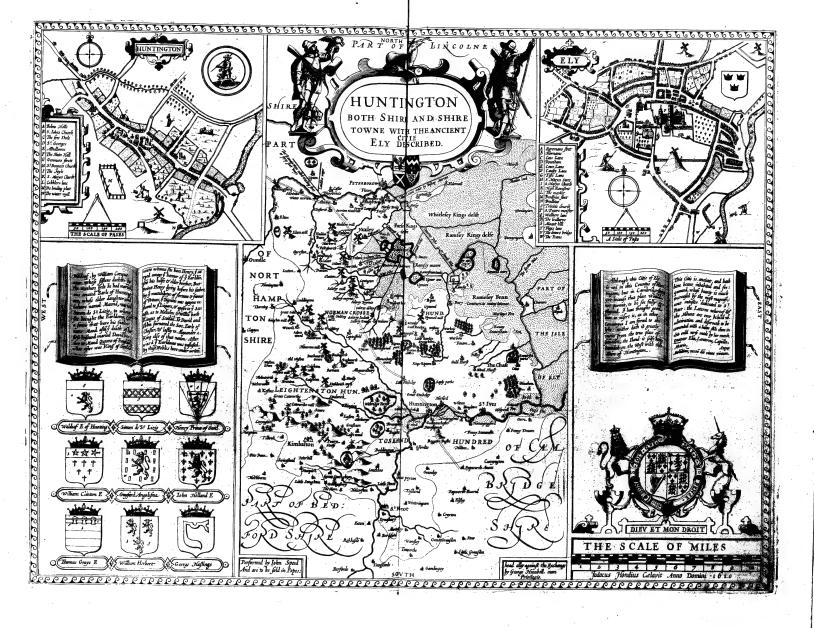
Ram∫.

Math.Paris S. Albani. Ex lsb. de transla

Capgrane Legen Sault Anglia. Ex lsb. translat. S

Ex vita Epifcop Eliens Eccl. Lib Domesday. Regifts Printal.

(8) NOR



Chap.31.

Sweeham Regilte. Monafir S. Perri de Eurgo.

Camden in Com.

Ex carta original Rob, Cetten Ba-Stemat. Lotharia Priorat. Hunting Ex lib Carterum Saltrienfis Monaft mission.semp.Sup preff. An Hen. 8. Regiftr. Movastr. de Thorni vocat. the redbooke. Attellatio Alexa Maufe fub Sigill. temp, regis Ste-phani apudD, Rob.

Domt Gar.

(3) NOR MANS SCRO 20 the next Hunderdasketh name color Croit educations they betweether informer ages this Duffilm on Herest leiter people, whence Wagentsket defensed: I thad not even excee the tirst of deep, now Ziego, founded by the field haboid Kynolwyst the daughter of Produ, and wired Alfrid King of Nor-thermore and the color of the color of the color of the color than being a deep the color of the color of the color of the Must by Stone-bridge, while tunes as enone downed, write the Woman Toward interfaces and no thinked to took the name Dara-tel Woman Toward interfaces and to the following the color of the colors horizonal "Gone-Levelace on Controller Cook for earner Dark-bring, as traiteful as Flambria, But this Nunnery as railed, was also nuncle by the Danes before the Conquelt. The other a Monaftery of cifferian blacke Monie, received in honorof the Virgin Many, by the fectord Simu-blacke Monie, received in honorof the Virgin Many, by the fectord Simu-Backe Monie, received in the Many and the Landy of that name, wife Earl of Hanrier (Bass Sathry Jackets, the land of a Lady of that name, wife of Hanrier Many, daughter to Lambert Earls of Lixin, Neces to the Conquerous by Its different Monbers (% Grandmonter to this Foun-Stemat. Lotherinder, Stateline, and William Kings of Scots, Earls of Huntingdon,
and Heires of this Lady, firengthined by feuerall Charters this pious worke. Many chiefe of that line, as the laft Earle David breater to King wilkiam as Ifabri, the wife of Robert de Brus his daughter heire; and most of the fecond branch, her Progenie making here their Bumit under drie fersone branch, her Progenie making here their Birthy. In his indirection learning with ground, grants and befide table. In his indirection learning the ground, grants and befide table. In the ferson learning the ground grant and the state of the sta the group of the state of the s 8 - Tig. 4.14. [

In the first of the first of the first of the head of the he wo meeters of the section of the sec is. In bylgeries from Washingto by Densys there is to the Bassia an ancient name in this Shire 2 a Mannor defeemed. The reft from Egidius de Markel (who gaue there much to Roystan Priority-politic by Assumaduallo Golsmeller, and to 1974g by exchange, in Elson, the houserich in a beauteous Chappell, from Denham to Septent, and Sawthe Beamer, from the Iurnamed, neet the time of the Conquell (by Lambto carmwallio defeemed as a Basteloving by Gimets, Draysa, Lambto carmwallio defeemed as a second carmwallion defeemed as a s Ex l. Priorat. de Ex Inquifit, in Arch.Tur. London Sx Euiden. Famil. Wet. wata Sherley the now I and

(8) NORMANS CROS the next Hundred, taketh name of a

Bet, wat o Sherley the now Lord.
(9) LETT TYNE STA N HYNDRED hath that name from Leighman towne in the middent of it, given by Earle Waltheof to the Church of Lincular, which after that red it into two Prebendaries, One, the Perforange impropriate, which fill remained the other five Lord.

flups) was refumed by Heavy the eight, an i now by the Heire of Darcy marched to the Lord Clifton, is become the feat of his liatony. This Handred had mit no house of Religion, but Stanly a Priory of season Blacke Chanons, of the order of S. Arquitar, founded by the Bigrames, and at the suppression valued at 62,1125,3 d.ob. It flood within the and as the imprection whole of a 6.11 s. s. d. ob., It flood whim the text of long goar thannow (Southfare Good an Handred) which was the land of Earle Hand like wimpers sider by (Granni te came and to fallen, the one in the contract of the contract of the small to fallen, the one in true of the trainiploses Stream boils there a Function) and loo or Stifford, by whole attributes for the contract for the contract of the side of the contract of the contract for the contract of spatians, the side of the contract of the contract of the contract of spatians, the side of the contract of the contract of the contract of spatians, and the Stiff (color in compensation thront Columnia of 3.0) when and the Stiff (color in compensation thront Columnia of 3.0) when and the Selev(quien in compension of the Charlet of £1), where the control of £2, where the Charlet of £2, which is a selected of £3, which is £4, which is £4,

fecond giaen, by whole their general Ferent, it cames to the late Earle of the fixed and by extended to the Late Late of the Court of the Late Late of the Court of the Late C ot Earle Efred mos a Montlerey of the tele Monkes, which was rated by the Deneyston cost in the Alese of the, raise of the rest in the property of the rest in the Alese of Earle of o 13. August Seria, and an haze opposited: Justiceron mas me by gut a classification of Glassification o name Gmissfort which has forten betreth in econd flappost extending where Ostatown placed his Billoys chiese. But for extension is way, that Bonanetowne Dwingbase of the Biodege mand, for many bands and the betreth of the Biodege mand, for many bands of the Biodege mand, for many bands of the Biodege mand, for many bands of the Biodege mand, for many forten in the state of the Biodege mand, for many forten and property of the Biodege mand for the

Let's not repine that Men and Names do die, Since stone-built Catles dead and rum'd he.

This Description Freezined from a right worthy and learned friend.

Cart. Hen 8. Ex certificat.Com miff.temp. Hen. 8. Domefday,

Cart Regis Iob. Lecel. Exregiftr. S. Ma

ria de Lincola. Rot. Hand de

Leighson Ed. T.

Cart. reg. Ich. Rot Hund Ed.

Ex veta, S. Neoti.

Lik DamaGA Ef.bet. temp. d. uerf. regum. Rot. Hund. temp Edw.t. Frofard. Dome [day. Rot. Hund. de Tauffand.

Chron Saxon. Domesday. Cart. regis 10b. Rot. de Quo Warranto Edw. primi

*Camira

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes, Rivers, and memorable places mentioned in Huntington-shire.

Bruc Calle Nerm.

Buckworth Leigh.

Buckworth Bracon, Leigh.

Buckworth Bracon, Leigh.

Eurton Toff.

Euerton Toff. The Hundrede Norman-Croffe. Bugden, Toft. Bury, Herft. Eyncibury, Toft. Hurflington, Leightenflane, Toffand, c Farfet, Norm. Calcot, Norm. Calio-wood, Leirb. Calutus Dike, or Sword dike. Norm
Great Catworth, Leigh.
Little Catworth, Leigh.
Catworth mill, Leigh. Garmfey.Hurft.
Great Gidding,Leigh.
Little Gidding,Leigh.
Steeple Gidding, Leigh Abottefley, Tofl Agden mill, Leigh, Alerton, Norm. The Chafe, Hurst. Chesterton, Nurm. Colne, Hurst. Alkmundbury wood, He G'atton, No:m. Alkmundbury, Leigh. S.Andrewschapple, North Glatton Fen, Norm. Godmanchefter, Teff Conington, Norm. Conquest Loode, Norm. Great Granfden. Toff. B.
Barham, Lrigh,
Reggers buth, Trifl.
Bigen, Harifl.
Bigen, Harifl.
Billingbrooke, Norm.
Birtholme lodge, Leigh,
Bithorne, Lrigh,
Blauntham-Harifl.
Bouulph Bridge, Norm.
Brampton, Lrigh.
Birthon, Lrigh.
Birk. Merc, Norm.
Bridge, Norm.
Brid Gratham, Leigh. Copinford, Leigh.
Couington, Leigh.
Creungeibery, Toff.
D Dantre, Norm. Denton, Norm Denton and Cal-Diddington, Toff.
Durofiponte, Toff. Faston, Leigh. Ellington, Leigh. Elton, Norm Elton-Parke, Norm.

Hinchingbrooke, Hurft. Holm-lood, Norm. Holywell, Hurft. Holywell fen, Hurft. Horsey Bridge,2(11711. Houghton,Hirst. HVNTINTON, Harft, Ould hurft, Harft. Farlet, Kings delf, Worm. Forton, Harft. Folkesworth, Norm. SIVES. Harft Iues ftreet, Harft. Kefton, Leien

KIMBALION, Leigh, 7 Leighton, Leigh.
Leighton mill, Leigh.
Luddington, Leigh,
Lutton, Worm. Molefworth, Leigh Monkelwood, Herft.

New-dike, Norm

Haddon Becon, Norm. Haddon Norm. Haddon mill, Norm. Hamerton, Leigh, Hamerton mill, Leigh. Morbern, Norm. The Moore, Tell-Hameron mill, Leigh,
Halewelton, Tol.
Heathmangroue, Hurlt.
Hemingford Abbot, Tell.
Hemingford Grey, Tell.
Hemingford, Hurlt.
Highney, Norm.
Highney, Norm.
Highney, Indge, Norm. Myddloe,Teff

Ramley, Hurll. Ramfey Meere, Harft. Ramfey Fen, Harft. Ramfey Moore, Norm. Little Reveley, Hurft Great Reveley, Hurft Ripton Abbots, Hurft. Ripton Parke, Harft. Kings Ripton, Harft. Rowey, Harft. Romerstreeme lood. Ver Nedingworth, Harff, Necn flu, Norm. S.N E O T. Toff S. Salom-wood, Leigh. Saltrey-mill, Norm. Saltrey Abbey, Norm. Saltrey Grange, Norm.

Great Pexron, Toll

Pertenhall, Leigh. Pidley, Hurft.

Pitry, Leigh Pits water, Norm, Porimed, Toft. R

O.
Offord Cluny, Toff.
Offord Dacy, Toff.
Ogerfton, Norm.
Ouerton Longuill, Norm. Saltrey Moynes, Norm. Saltrey Boumes, Norm. Saply parke, Hurff. Sibthorpe, Leigh. Sibthorpe, Leigh. Smal-dike, Norm. Ouerton waternill. Norm. Somerfham ten, Hart. Somersham parke, Harfi South hoo, Toff Spaldwick myll, Leigh apworth Annes, Toft. Little Paxton, Toll, Spaldwick, Leigh.

Feany Teff. Stanton, Teff. Subinton, Norm. Stilton, Norm. Stilton Fen, Norm. Stilten mill. Narm Stongate hole, Leigh. Stonly, Leigh. Stonly Priory, Leigh. Great 7 Scoughton, Teff. Stowe, Leigh.
Stowe, Leigh.
Stranground, Nerm.
Little
Stukeley, Harft.
Great
Stukeley, Harft. Swinethead, Leigh. Tetworth, Teft. Woolly, Leigh, Thurning, Leigh.

Wabridg foreft, Leig. Walton, Norm. Walton mill, Harff. Walton wood, Norm. Warbois, Harfl. Warbois wood, Harfl. Warbois wood, Harfl. Warbois wood, Herft, Warefley, Toft, Washingle, Norm. Water newton, Nor. Walmesford, Norm. Wenington, Harft.
Wenton.groue, Leigh.
Wefton.mill, Leigh.
Wefton old, Leigh.
Willelmere, Norm.
Wiftow, Harft. Winteringham, Toff. Winwick, Leigh. Witton, Herft. Wood husft, Herft. Woodfton, Norm.

YAXLFY, Norm.

Yelling, Tof.

Vgmere Cote, Norm, Vgmere, Norm, Vpton, Leigh, Vpwood, Harft.

Vpwood mill, Harff.

TLAND-SHIRE. the least of any County in

this Realme, is circulated vpon the north with Lincoine-shire; vpon the East and South, by the River Weland, is parted from Northamptonsbire; and the West is altogether held in with Leicester-Shire.

The forme, and

The dimension

Soile.

The Lord Har-

Pork.1.

The bounds of

(2) The forme thereof is round, and no larger in compasse then a light horseman can easily ride about in a day : vpon which occasion some will haue the Shire named of one Rut, that forode. But others from the rednesse of the soile, will have it called Rutland; and so the old English-Saxons called it, for that Roet and Rud is in their tongue Red with vs, and may very well giue the name to this Prouince, seeing the earth doth staine the wooll of her sheepe into a reddish colour. Neither is it strange that the staine of the Many places na. foile gives names vnto places, and that very many: ture of their foile. for have we not in Cheffe-fhire the Red Rocke; in Lancafbire the Red Banke; and in Wales Rutland Caftle? to speake nothing of that famous Red Sea which shooteth into the Land betwixt Errot and Arabia, which gaue backe her waters for the Ifraelites to paffe on

foot : all of them named from the colour of the foile. (3) The longest part of this Shire is from Caldecot in the South vpon the River Ey, vnto Thifleton a small village seated in her North, not fully twelue miles; and from Timwell Eastward, to Wissender in the West, her broadest extant, is hardly nine: the whole circumference about forty miles.

(4) The aire is good both for health and delight, Subject to neither extremitie of heat nor cold, nor is

greatly troubled with foggie mifts.

The foile is rich, and for corne and tillage gives place vnto none. Woods there are plenty, and many of them imparked, hilles feeding heards of Neat, and flockes of sheepe; vallies besprinkled with many fweet springs, Graine in abundance, and pastures not wanting: in a word, all things ministred to the content of life, with a liberall heart and open hand. Only this is objected, that the circuit is not great.
(5) The draught whereof, that I may acknow-

ledge my duty and his right, I received at the hands of the right honourable Iohn Lord Harrington, Baron of Exton, done by himselfe in his younger yeeres. Neere vnto his house Eurley, standeth Okham a faire

Officer toyalty. Market Towne, which Lordship the said Baron enjoieth, with a Royaltic somewhat extraordinary, which is this: If any Noble by birth come within the pre-cinct of the same Lordship, hee shall forfeit as an homage a shoot from the horse whereon hee rideth, vnleffe he redeeme it at a price with money. In witneffe whereof, there are many horse-shooes nailed vpon the Shire Hall doore, some of large size and ancient fashion, others new and of our present Nobilitie; whose names are thereupon stamped as followeth.

Homagers to the Lord Harrington,

Henry Hastings. Roger Rutland. Edward L. Ruffell, Earle of Bedford. Ralphe L. Euwer of Parram. Henry L. Bertley. Henry L. Mordant. William L.Compton, Edward L. Dudley. Henry I. Winfer. George, Earl: of Cumberland.

Philip, Earle of Monte omery.

L. Hillowehby.

P.L. Wharton. The Lord Shandeis.

belides many others without names. That fuch homage was his due, the faid Lord himselfe told me; and at that instant a suit depended in Livalia. Law against the Earle of Lincolne, who refused to forfeit the penaltie, or to pay his fine.

(6) Her ancient Inhabitants knowne to the Ro-

mans, and mentioned in Ptolemie, were the Coritani. and by him branched thorow Leicester, Lincolne, Not tingham, Darby-shire, and this; who with the Icenians were subdued by P.Ostorius under the yoke of Claudius the Roman Emperour : and at their departure, by conquest the Saxons made it a Province vnto their Mercian Kingdome, whose fortunes likewise comming to a full period, the Normans annexed it under their

(7) This County King Edward Confessor bequeathed by his Testament vnto Queene Eadgith his wife, and after her decease, vnto his Monasterie at westmin fler, which William the Conquerour cancelled and made void, bestowing the Lands upon others, the tithes and the Church vnto those Monkes.

That the Ferrers heere first seated, besides the credit of Writers, the horseshooe, whose badge then it was, doth witnesse, where in the Castle, and now the Shire-hall, right ouer the Seat of the Judge, a Horse shooe of iron curiously wrought, containing fine foot and a halfe in length, and the bredth thereto propor-tionably is fixed. The Castle hath beene strong, but now is decaied, the Church faire, and the Towne spacious; whose degree of Longitude is 1 9. 46.scruples. and the North-poles elevation in latitude 53. degrees and 7 minutes.

(8) Let it not seeme offensiue, that I (to fill vp this little Shire) have inferted the feat of a Towne not fited in this County; for belides the conveniencie of place, the circuit and beauty, but especially it being for a time a Vniuerlitie, did mooue much, yea and the first in this Iland, if John Hardings " Authour faile him not, that will have Bladed to bring from Athens certaine Philosophers whom here he seated, and made publike profession of the Liberall Sciences, where (as he faith) a great number of Scholars studied the Arts, and so continued a Vniversitie vnto the comming of Augustine, at which time the Bishop of Rome interdicted it; for certaine Heresis sprung vp among the Britaines and Saxons. But most true it is, that in the raigne of King Edward the Third, vpon de-bate falling betwixt the Southerne and Northerne Students at Oxford, many Schoolemen with-drew themselves hither, and a while professed, and named a College, according to one in Oxford, Brafennofe, which retaineth that name vnto this day. This was fo great a skarre viito the other, that when they were recalled by Proclamation to Oxford, it was prouided by

Oath, that no Student in Oxford, to the protudice of or reade the Arts at Student, to the protudice of Oxford.

(9) As this Shire is the leaft in circuit, to is it with the feweft Market-townes replenished, having onely two. And from Societies that fed vpon the labours of others, was this Land the freeft : for belides Ribell. where Tibbs the Falconers Goddesse was worshipped for a Saint, when superfittion had well-necre put Gods true honour out of place, I finde very few; neither with more Castles strengthned then that at okham, whose raines shew that a Castle hath beene

Divided it is into five Hundreds, and therein are planted forty eight Parish-Churches, as in the Table following shall appeare.

Qı

The ancient

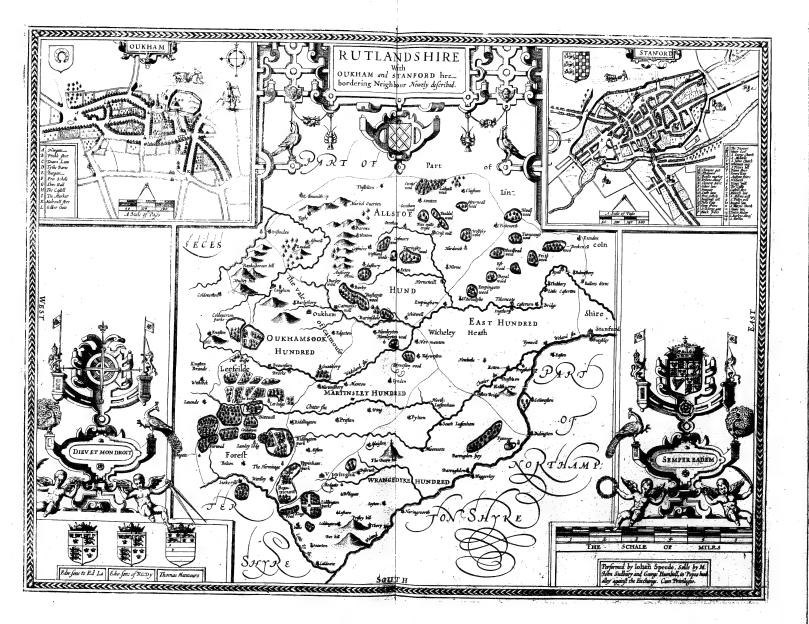
K.Williamshi

Stanford not les

Melia.

Stanford an Vnj-uerfitie vneill Augustines time,

lege in Stanford.



Ar Cole Queera

in Goft-coate

The Aire.

The Soile,

Commodities

RVTLAND-SHIRE.



Tarringley wood, All.

Thorpe, Wrang. Turnecourse wood, Ea.

VPPINGHAM,MA

Vppingham parke, Mar.

Thiffelton, All.

Tholthorpe, East.

Tickencote, East.

Tymwell, Eaft.

Wadeland flu.

Wardley, Oke. Weland flu

Wenton, All,

Westland wood. All.

Tyxouer, Wrang.

Tyghe, All.

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and Places mentioned in Rutland-shire.

HVNDREDS S, Botulphe, Eaff in Rutland-Shire.

Bayal-wood, East.
Bradgate, Wrang.
Braunflun, Oke.
Brokemell wood, East. EAst hund. Brock,Oke. Burley, All. 3. Okeham Sook. Burley wood, All.

Bysbrooke,Wrang.

Cafterton bridge Eaft.

The vale of 2 Oke.

Catmoufe, 5 Oke.

Catmoufe mill, Oke.

Chatter flu.

4. Martinfley hund. 5. Wrangedyke hund

Caldecote,Wrang. Casterton little,East. Affigate,Oke. Affiwell, Allf. Aufthorpe, All. Aufthorpe groue, All, Ayfton, Mart,

Clipsham, Oke. Coldlees, Oke. Cottesmore, All. Barinfdale, All. Barlythorp, Oke. Cottefmore & All, Baroughdon hey, Wran Baroughdon, Wrang. Crefton, Mart. Crotle mill, Eaft. Barrowe, All.

The Beacon hill, Wrang. Beamount, Mart. Deepedale, Mar. Beehill, Wran. Belmethorp, E.f. E East wood, East. Belton, Oke. Bittewell, Oke. Edgeton,Oke.

Ediweston, Mar. Ediwelton wood, Mart. Eleshare, Wrang. Empingham, East. Empingham wood, Eaft. Exton, All. Ezenden, Eaft.

Fauldall ? Eaft. Fregthorp, Wrang. Frithwood, Eaft. Fine mile } Eaft.

. G Geefon, Wrang. Glaston, Wrang. Greetham, All. Greetham word, All, Guath flu. Gunthorpe, Mart.

Hamleyton Mart. Hamleyton Mare. wood, Mare. Hardwicke, Eaft. Hermitage, Oke. Horne mill, E.f.

Ingthorpe, Eaft. Ioftors bridge, Eaft.

Kelfton, Wrang. Kelthorpe, Wrang. Ketton, Eaft. Kilpifham, Eaft. Kings Road, Wran. The Kings lodge,Oke.

Lamley lodge, Oke. Langham, Oke. Leefeld forrelt, Oke. Lee lodge, Oke. Litlehall wood, All. Loue dale, All. North Swrang. South Wrang.
Luffenham, Wrang.
Lyddington, Wrang. Lyddington parke, Wr.

Lynden, Mart. Manton, Mart. Market ouerton, All. Martinsthorpe, Mart. Morecott, Wrang.

Muley hill, Oke. Newbottle, Wrang.

Normanton, Mart. OKEHAM,Oke. Osburnall wood, Eaft.

Pickeworth, E.f.

Prifley hill, Wrang.

Pretton, Mari.

Seyton, Wrang.

Stretton wood, All,

Stirwood, Oke.

Pylton,Wrang. Rankesborowhils,Oke. Redgate, Wrang. Ridlington, Mart. Ridlington parke, Man Rullers frone, Eaft. Ruftpittwood, All. Ryall, Eaft.

Weltonfees,Oke. Whitlenden, All. Whitwell, All. Wicheley heath, Eaft. Winge, Mart. Snewton, Wrang. Wilpe, Wolfoky Stokedrye, Wrang. Stretton, All.

wood, \$ All. Woodhead \$ Eaft.

Zoke.





Eicester-shire(lying borde-red vpon the North with Nottingham-fore, vpon the East, with Lincolne and Rationd, vpon the South with Northampton-shire, & vpon the West with Watlingstreet way is parted fro Warwick-shire, the rest be-

ing boundedwith the confines of Darby)is a countrey Champion, abounding in corne, but spary of woods, especially in the south and eaft parts, which are supplied with pit-coales plente-ously gotten in the North of this Province, & with a-bundance of cattle bred in the hils beyond the River Wreak, which is nothing so well inhabited as the rest.

(2) The Aire is gentle, milde and temperate, and giveth appertie both to labour and reft, wholfome it is, and draweth Mans life to a long-age, and that much without ficknesse; at Carleton only some defect

of pronunciation appeareth in their speech.

(3) The soile thus consisting, the commodities are raised accordingly of Corne, Cattle and Coales; and in the Rockes neere Beuer are sometimes found the Afroites , the Starre-like precious Stone.

(4) The ancient people that inhabited this county were the Coritani, who were spread further into other Shires, but after that the Romans had left the land to it felf, this with many more fel to be vnder the Pofsession and Gouernment of the Mercians and their kings, from whom the English injoyeth it at this day.

(5) In Circular wife (almost) the compasse of this Shire is drawne indifferently spacious, but not verie thicke of In-clofures, being from Eaft to Weft in the broadest part not fully 30, miles, and from North to South but twenty foure, the whole CircumfetemperCitiente Center of the shore. The Pole is cleured of Poles and the Pole is cleured of Poles of the Shire. the Pole is eleuated 53. Degrees and 4. Minutes in Latitude, and for Longitude 19. Degrees, 22 Mi-

(6) From this Towne the Shire hath the Name, The names of though the Name of herself is diversly written as Legecestria, Leogora, Legeo-cester, by Ninius, Caer-Lerion; by Matthew of Westminster, (if we do not mistake him)
Wirall; and now lastly Leicester: ancient enough if King Leir was her builder, eight hundred forty and foure yeares before the birth of our Sauiour, wherein hee placed a Flamine to ferue in the Temple of Janus by himselfe there erected, and where he was buried; it leffrey ap Arthur fay true: but now certain it is, that
Ethelred the Mercian Monarch made it an Episcopall
Sea in the yeere of Christ Iesus 680. Wherein exwulph of his election became the first Bishop : Which fhortly after was thence translated, and therewith the beauty of the Town began to decay; vpon whose de-folations that creekifying Lady Edelfted cast her cies of compassion, and both reedified the buildings & compassed it about with a strong wal, where, in short time the cities trade so increased, that Matthew Paris in his lesser to the canee, that reastron z we will the lesser story reportest as followeth. Lege-sesser (faith he) is a right wealth City, and notably desended; and had the wall a sure foundation, were inseriour to no Citie what-

The wall a jure journalism, were injerious to no citie unni-foeuer. But this pride of prosperity long lasted not vn-der the Normans, for it was fore oppressed with a world of calamities, when Robert Bossu the Crouchbacke Earl of that Province, rebelled against his Soue-raigne Lord King Henry the second: Whereof heare the fame author Paris speake. Through the oblimate shubbornnesse of Earle Robert (faith he) the noble Citic Leicester was besieged and thround down by King Benry, and the walt hat seemed indesselbable, was vitery raced went to the Ground. The peeces of whose fragments so fallen downe remained in his daies like to hard Rockes, through the strength of the Morter Cementing whole lumps together; and at the Kings command the citie was fet on fire and burnt, the Castle raced, and a

heavy imposition laid vpon the Citizens, who with great fummes of money bought their owne Banishgreat tummes of money bought their owne bantan-ments: but were fo yield in their departure, that for extreame feare many of them tooke Sanchuary both at S. Edmunds and S. Albanes. In repentance of these mischiefes the Authour therof, Earle Robert, built the Monastery of S. Mary de Pratis, wherein himselfe be-came a Canon regular, and for fifteene yeeres continuance in fad laments ferued God in continual prais ers: with the like deuotion Henry the first Duke of Lancaster built an hospitall for an hundred and tenne poore people, with a Collegiate Church, a Deane, twelue Canons Prebendaries, as many vicars, fuffici ently protided for with reuenewes, wherein himfelfe lieth buried, and it was the greatest ornament of that citie, vntil the hand of K. Henry the eighth lay out? heavy vpon all the like foundations, and laid their aspired Tops at his own feete.

The fortunes of another Cronch-backe (King Ri- King Richard the thard the viurper) were no leffe remarkable in this citie then the former Robert was, both of them in like degree of dishonorable course of life, though of differentiffue at their deaths, the one dying penitent and of deuout effecme, the other leaving the stench of Tyranny to affice, the Otter reaming the tenent of Tyranny to all following ages; who from this citie fetting forth in one day with great pompe & in battle aray to keep the crowne fure upon his owne He.met, in a fore fought field, yeelded both it and his life, wnto the head, & hands of Henry of Richmond his Conqueror : and the next day was brought back like a Hogge ror: and the next cay was brought back like a Hogge naked and tome, and with contemp without tenters obGardy buried in the Gray-friers of this icitic whole dipperedion hat flipperedid the Biot-place of his Grane, and only the Soone-cheft wherein he was laid (a drinking rough now for Horiesi na Gomo Lnue). retaineth the memory of that great Monarchs Funerall: and so did a stone in the church and chapell of S. Maries, inclose the corps of the proud and pontifi-call Cardinall Wolfey, who had prepared for himself, as was faid, a far more richer Monument.

(7) Other places worthy of remembrance in this Shire were these: In the west, where a high crosse was erected, in former times stoode the faire city Cleycefter, the Romans BENONNES, where their Legions lay, and where their two principall waies croffed each others, as the Inhabitants report; Longhborrow in Marianus See the north-verge, which the Saxons called Leizanbupge, was (as Marianus affirmeth) taken from the Britaines by Cuthwolfe their King, about the yeere of Christ,

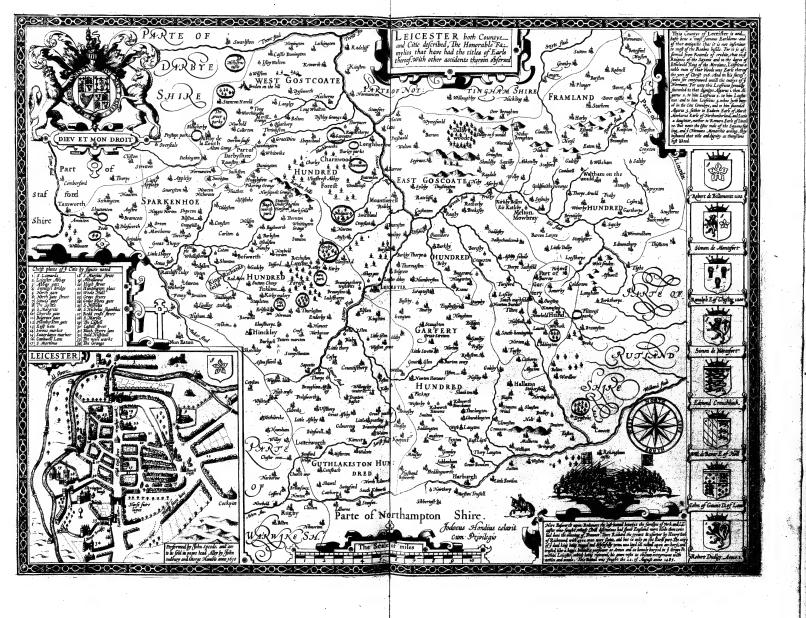
172.

Redmort, neere Befiverth weftward in this County the kingdome of England lay in Inzard of one Battle when king Richard-field was fought, wher the land at once, was freed fro a tyrant & wicked vilurper. Neither may we palfe Lutterworth, as the leaft in account, where the famous them livelifyer. Englands Morning-flarre, differfield the clouds of all Papilitical darknefib by preaching the Coffeel in that his charge; and fille of his pen, to piercing in power, that the man of Sinne cert fince hash beene better known to the world.

(3) Religious Houseby Princes receled and by them deuored to gold and his fertire, the chieffen in laws and the source of the control of the source of the control of the source of the control of the source of the source

(3) Accuspous Fromes by Princes erected and by them deuted to God and his fertice, the chieffelt in this Shire were at Littleffe, Grace-Dien, Kerkly-Beller, better, and ar Barrian 8 spitel for Lacer, addicate from newly approached in this land; for the erection whereof a common contribution was gathered through the Realme: the Patients in this place were not fo much deformed in Ikin, as the other were in the defects for the Soule, whose skirts being turned up to the fight of the world, their Shames were discouered, and those houses dissoluted, that had long maintained such Idolatrous finnes.

(9) This Shires division is into fix Hundreds, and The Shir in them are feated twelue market Townes for commerce, and containeth in her circuit two hundred parish churches: whose names with others are in the table following, to this chapter belonging.



Galbye, Gart.

Grace \ Weft.

Grimfton, Eaft.

Gumley, Gart.

Harby, Fram.

Harston, Fram

Hatherne, Well

Heather, Spark,

Hobie, Eaft,

Hoes, Fram.

Holt, Gart.

Hoofe, Fram,

Hoton, East.

Ibstoke, Spark,

Illefton, Gart.

Keham, East.

Kilbye, Good.

Knotlon, Gart.

н

	e de la Companya de Company
Hundreds in Lei-	Burley parke, Weft.
cester-shire.	Burrow, Gart. Burltali, Weft.
	Burton 7 r
1. West-Goscote.	
	Burton vpon Eaft.
Sparkingho. Goodiaxton.	Burton ouery, Gart.
4. Gartrey.	Bushbye, Gart.
5. East-Goscote.	
6. Framland,	C
	Candwell, Eaft. Carlton, Spark. Carlton Curlew, Gart.
A	Carlton, Spark.
	Cathorpe, Gart.
Abbey gate, West. Affordbie, East. Aiston, Good. Allexon, East.	Charley, West.
Alflon, Good	Charnwood Forest, West Cawdwell, Fram.
Allexton, Eaft.	Clawfon2
Alton grange, West. Anker Flu.	Clawfon Fram.
Ankerriu.	Cleybrooke, Good. Colderton, East.
Andy, Weft. Appleby little, Spark, Appleby great, Spark. Appleby great, Spark. Appleby Good	Collection, West. Cosbye, Good. Coson, Fram.
Appleby great, Spark.	Cosbye, Good.
Arneshye Good.	Colon, Fram.
Arnesbye, Good. ASHBYE Zweft.	Coffington, Eaft.
de la Zouche.	
Ashbyefoluile, East. Ashbye little, Good.	Cottesboche, Good.
Ashbye great, Good.	Cotes, Eaft. Cotton, Spark, Cranoe, Gart. Crawfton, Eaft.
Ashbye great, Good. Aston flamuil, Spark.	Cranoe, Gart.
Atterton, Spark.	Crawfton, Eaft.
В.	Cropfon Well.
	Crofte, Spark. Cropfton, West. Crofton south, East.
Bagraue, Gart. Bagworth parke, Spark,	Croxton Kertiall, Fran
Bagworth, Spark,	D
Barbythorpe, Eaft.	l
Bagworth, Spark, Barbythorpe, Eaft, Baresby, Eaft, Bardonin, Faft,	Dadlington, Spark. Dalbye little, Fram.
	Dalbic Iacombe, Eaft.
Barkfton, Fram. Barlfton, Spark, Barn parke, Spark,	Dalbie Iacombe, East. Dalbie vood, East. Dalbie vood Olds, East.
Barn parke, Spark,	Deane Flu.
Darrow vpon C E .A	Deane Flu.
Zoram, Sarrie.	Desforde, Spark.
Barton, Spark. Barwell, Spark, Beebie, Eaft.	Dishley grange, Weft. Drayton, Spark. Drayton, Gart.
Beebie, East.	Drayton, Gart.
Belgraue, Eaft. Belton, Weft.	Dunton Bailet, Good.
	DVNNINGTON
Bew Zweft	
	Dunington, Spark. DVNNINGTON
Bew Weft. maner Weft. Billefdon, Gart.	CASTLE, Dyseworth, West.
Billefdon, Gart. Billton, Spark.	CASTLE, Profession of the Castle, Profession of the Castle, Profession of the Castle o
Billton, Spark. Bittefwell Good.	E
Bilfton, Spark, Bittefwell, Good, Blabye, Good. Blackbrooke Flu.	E
Bildon, Spark, Bittefwell, Good, Blabye, Good, Blackbrooke Flu. Blangherby, Weft.	E Eaton, Fram. Eattwell, Fram. Eathon, Gart.
Bilton, Spark, Bittefwell, Good, Blabye, Good, Blackbrooke Flu. Blangherby, Weft.	Eaton, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram.
Bilton, Spark, Bittefwell, Good, Blabye, Good, Blackbrooke Flu. Blangherby, Weft.	E Eaton, Fram. Eatwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Edmondforpe, Fram. Eie Flu.
Bilton, Spark, Bittefwell, Good, Blabye, Good, Blackbrooke Flu. Blangherby, Weft.	E Eaton, Fram. Eatwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Edmondforpe, Fram. Eie Flu.
Billton, Spark, Bitten, Spark, Bitter(well, Good, Blabye, Good, Blackbrooke Flu. Blangherby, Weff, Bidion, Gart. borefworth? Gart. bushand Gart. Borhiffon, Spark, BOSWORTH, Spark,	E Eaton, Fram. Eatwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Edmondforpe, Fram. Eie Flu.
Billton, Spark, Bittefwell, Good. Blackbrooke Flu. Blangherby, Well. Bidon, Gost. Borcfworth? Gost. Borbillon, Spark, BOSWORTH, Spark, BOSWORTH, Spark	E Eaton, Fram. Eatwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Edmondforpe, Fram. Eie Flu.
Billton, Spark, Bittefwell, Good, Biackbrooke Flu. Blangherby, Well. Blangherby, Well. Blafon, Gart. Borefworth Gart. hushand Gart. Borbiffon, Spark, BO SW OR T H, Spark BO SW OR T H, Spark BO SW OR T H, Spark BOW BORD SPARM, BOW BOW BORD SPARM, BOW BORD SPARM, BOW BOW BORD SPARM, BOW BOW BORD SPARM, BOW	E Eaton, Fram. Eatwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Edmondforpe, Fram. Eie Flu.
Billion, Spark, Birct(well, Soud, Birct(well, Soud, Blackprock Flu. Blangherby, Wyll, Bidlon, Gart. Bort(Worth) Gart. Bortiffon, Spark, BOS WORTH, Spark, BOS BOWGEN, Wyll, BORTH, Spark, BOS BOWGEN, WYLL, BORTH, Spark, BOS BORTH,	E Eaton, Fram. Eatwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Edmondforpe, Fram. Eie Flu.
Billion, Spark, Birct(well, Soud, Birct(well, Soud, Blackprock Flu. Blangherby, Wyll, Bidlon, Gart. Bort(Worth) Gart. Bortiffon, Spark, BOS WORTH, Spark, BOS BOWGEN, Wyll, BORTH, Spark, BOS BOWGEN, WYLL, BORTH, Spark, BOS BORTH,	Eaton, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram.
Billion, Spark, Birtefvell, Gond, Bilabye, Gond, Borhillon, Spark, Bortiworth? Gont, Bushand; Bos SW OR TI, Spark, Bostiond, Fram, Bradger, Gond, Bradley, G	E Eaton, Fram. Eatwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Edmondforpe, Fram. Eie Flu.
Billion, Some Billion, Some Bildre, Good, Bildre, Good, Bildre, Good, Bildre, Good, Bildre, Good, Bildre, Good, Bouthon, Some, Lo SWORT TH, Spark, Bouthon, From Bowden great Good, Bridging, Good, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging, Bridging	Earon, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathon, Gart. Edmondthorpe, Fram. Eie Flu. Eie Ketleby, Fram. Eilmefflonge, Spark, Eilmefflonge, Spark, Engarsby, Gart. Erdisboroec, Gart. Eiflinton, Spark. Eiflinton, Spark.
Blackbrook Syark, Blickerl, Good, Blabye, Good, Blabye, Good, Blabye, Good, Blabye, Good, Blackbrooke Flu, Blackbrooke Flu, Blangherby, Waff, Blaidon, Goot, Blackworth? Bort Goot, Bort Hander, Bort Hander, Bort Hander, Bort Hander, Bort Bradge, Good, Bradge, Good, Bradley, Good, Bradley, Good, Brantinghorpe, Good, Brantinghorpe, Good, Brantinghorpe, Good, Brantinghorpe, Good, Brantinghorpe, Br	Byteworth, "rem. Eathwell, Frem. Eathwell, Frem. Eathwell, Frem. Eathon, Gert. Edmondthorpe, Frem. Edmondthorpe, Frem. Edmondthorpe, Spark, Elillon, Gend. Elmedthorpe, Spark, Eligendthorpe, Spark, Engariby, Gert. English, Gert. Erdiblorowe, Gert. Erdiblorow, Gert. Erdiblorow, Gert. Fleckneg, Gert. Fleckneg, Gert. Fleckneg, Gert.
Blackbrook Syark, Blickerl, Good, Blabye, Good, Blabye, Good, Blabye, Good, Blabye, Good, Blackbrooke Flu, Blackbrooke Flu, Blangherby, Waff, Blaidon, Goot, Blackworth? Bort Goot, Bort Hander, Bort Hander, Bort Hander, Bort Hander, Bort Bradge, Good, Bradge, Good, Bradley, Good, Bradley, Good, Brantinghorpe, Good, Brantinghorpe, Good, Brantinghorpe, Good, Brantinghorpe, Good, Brantinghorpe, Br	Byteworth, "rem. Eathwell, Frem. Eathwell, Frem. Eathwell, Frem. Eathon, Gert. Edmondthorpe, Frem. Edmondthorpe, Frem. Edmondthorpe, Spark, Elillon, Gend. Elmedthorpe, Spark, Eligendthorpe, Spark, Engariby, Gert. English, Gert. Erdiblorowe, Gert. Erdiblorow, Gert. Erdiblorow, Gert. Fleckneg, Gert. Fleckneg, Gert. Fleckneg, Gert.
Bildton, Syark, Birtcherl, Gond, Birtcher, Gond, Birtcher, Gond, Birtcher, Gond, Borhifton, Spark, Bortifton, Spark, Bradley, Gond, Bradley, Gond, Brantingthorpe, Gond, Brantingthorpe, Gond, Brantingthorpe, Spark, Brantingthor	Byteworth, "rem. Eathwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathon, Gart. Edmondhorpe, Fram. Edmondhorpe, Fram. Editon, Gard. Elifon, Gard. Elimedthorpe, Spark, Elifon, Gard. Engarsby, Gart. Erdibborove, Gart. Erdibborove, Gart. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard.
Bildton, Syark, Birtcherl, Gond, Birtcher, Gond, Birtcher, Gond, Birtcher, Gond, Borhifton, Spark, Bortifton, Spark, Bradley, Gond, Bradley, Gond, Brantingthorpe, Gond, Brantingthorpe, Gond, Brantingthorpe, Spark, Brantingthor	Byteworth, "rem. Eathwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathwell, Fram. Eathon, Gart. Edmondhorpe, Fram. Edmondhorpe, Fram. Editon, Gard. Elifon, Gard. Elimedthorpe, Spark, Elifon, Gard. Engarsby, Gart. Erdibborove, Gart. Erdibborove, Gart. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard. Folton, Gard.
Bildton, Syark, Birtcherl, Gond, Birtcher, Gond, Birtcher, Gond, Birtcher, Gond, Borhifton, Spark, Bortifton, Spark, Bradley, Gond, Bradley, Gond, Brantingthorpe, Gond, Brantingthorpe, Gond, Brantingthorpe, Spark, Brantingthor	Eston, Fram. Estwell, Fram. Ein Charley, Fram. Ein Erlichy, Fram. Ein Erlichy, Fram. Ein Erlichy, Fram. Einderby, Spark, Eillenn, Grad. Einderby, Spark, Einderby, Grad. Einderby, Grad. Einderby, Grad. Einderby, Grad. Einderby, Grad. Fotton, Grad. Fotton, Grad. Fotton, Grad. Frisby-Grad.
Bildton, Syark, Birtefivell, Gond, Borhildon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bradley, Gon, Brantinghorpe, Gond, Brantinghorpe, Gond, Brantinghorpe, Syark, Brantinghorpe, Syark, Brantinghorpe, Syark, Bredon on Yorgh, Brode Midlioner, Syark, Brothillhorpe, Syark, Brothillhorp	Eston, Fram. Estwell, Fram. Fr
Bildton, Syark, Birtefivell, Gond, Borhildon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bortifon, Syark, Bradley, Gon, Brantinghorpe, Gond, Brantinghorpe, Gond, Brantinghorpe, Syark, Brantinghorpe, Syark, Brantinghorpe, Syark, Bredon on Yorgh, Brode Midlioner, Syark, Brothillhorpe, Syark, Brothillhorp	Eston, Fram. Estwell, Fram. Ein Charley, Fram. Ein Erlichy, Fram. Ein Erlichy, Fram. Ein Erlichy, Fram. Einderby, Spark, Eillenn, Grad. Einderby, Spark, Einderby, Grad. Einderby, Grad. Einderby, Grad. Einderby, Grad. Einderby, Grad. Fotton, Grad. Fotton, Grad. Fotton, Grad. Frisby-Grad.
Billion. Spark, Birtefrell, Gond, Bilabye, Good, Bilabye, Good, Bilabye, Good, Bilabye, Good, Bilabye, Good, Bilabye, Good, Bilachye, Good, Bilachye, Good, Bilachye, Good, Bilachye, Good, Bilachye, Good, Bood,	Eston, Fram. Estwell, Fram. Fr

Burbage, Spark

Gadebye, Spark,

Lancton east, Gart. Pickwell, Gart, Sutton chenney } Spark. Garenton, West. Garthorpe, Fram. Lancton welt, Gart. Plungar, Fram. Preftwold, Eaft. Laund, East. Swanington West. Swebston, West. Lawghton, Gart. Lecefter Forest, Spark. Gillmorton, Good. Glenfeild, Spark. Q Swift Flu. Glenn great, Gart. Swinsford, Good. Leefthorpe, Fram. Glenn little, Good. LEICESTER, Eaft. Quarendon, Well, Swithland, Welt. Glowston, Gart. Leicester Abbey, West. Quenby, East. Sylebie, East. Goadbie, Fram. Leire, Good. Quenyborowe, Eaft. Sylclore, East. Goadbye, Gart. Lindley, Spark. Sylonbee, Fram. Goldfiniths Fram Littlethorpe, Good. LITTERWORTH Good Ragdale, East. Lockington, Well. Loddington, East. Rathye, Spark. Temple, Spark. LONGBOROW, West. Ratcliffe | Spark. Theddingworth, Gart. Groobye, Spark Lofeby, Eaft. Thornton, Spark. Lubenham, Gart. Ratcliffe vpon } East. Thorpacre, weft. Lubsthorpe, Spark, Thorpe, Good. Raunston in } West. Thorpe Arnold, Frame. Hachton, Fram. Rearsbie, Eaff. Thorpe fachfeild, Eaft. HALLATON, Gart. Marfeild South Redmore, Spark, HARBOROW, Gart. Redinyle, Fram. Thrinkston, West. Markefeild, Spark. King Richards feeld } Spark, Thurcalton, Weft. Marston Spark.
potters, Spark.
Medburne, Gart. Thurlfton, Spark. Thurmafton, Eaft. Rodeley, Weft. lawlifead, Eaft. Rotherby, Enft Thurnby, Garr. Rowlfton, Gart MELTON Fram Thuffington, Eaft. lemington, Weft. Higham, Spark, High croffe, Good. Merill grange West. Parke, Spark. Misterton, Good. Hincklye bond, Spark Morebarne, Spark, Saddington, Gart. Tonge, Weft. MOVNTSOR-} West. HINCKLYE, Spark Saltbic, Fram. RELL, Mowfeley, Gart. Sapcote, Spark. Tugby, East, Saxbie, Fram Turlancton, Gart. Hogges Norton, Spark Saxulbic, Eaft, Twicrotle, Spark. Twyforde, East. Mullon, Fram. Scallford, Fram. Hollwell, Fram. Seechefley, Spark, Scraptofte, Gars, Horninghold, Gart. Horiepoole } Spark. Boriepoole, Spark. Naneby, Spark Segraue, East. Nelfton, Spark. Sence Flu. Viicithorpe, Good. Newbold | Spark. Sewflerne, Fram Vluescrotie West. Seyfton, East, Newbold Welt. Shakerfton, Spark, Viuefton, Gart. Houghton, Gart Newbold, Gart, Shankton, Gart. V pton, Spark, Hucklescott, Spark Newton, Well. Sharnford, Spark, harcourt, Gart. Humberstone, East. Newton Shawell, Good. Huncott, Spark, Hungerton, East. Shaxton, Spark, Newton burcott, } Gart. Sheepye } Spark. Walcott, Good. on the wowld, Frame Sheepye | Spark. great, | Spark. Shenton, Spark. Newton } East, Walton, Good. Newton nethercote, } Spark, Walton on the wowld } East. Sheepes-head, West. Ingersbye, Gart. Newtowne, Spark. Sheresbye, Good. Wanlipp, West. Shilton, Spark. Shouldby, East. Isbye Walton, Weft. Wartnabie, East. Normanton, Fram. Welbie, Fram. Normanton, Spark, Sibston, Spark, Skeffington, East. Welham, Gart, Welland Flu. Normanton on } Spark, Katthorpe, Good, Slawston, Gart. Welshorow, Spark, Westerby, Gart. Norton, Gart. Smeeto, Gart. Kemington fouth, Eaf Eaft, Eaft. Snarfton, Spark, Wetherlye, Sparke Whalton West. Kerbey muckele, Spark Snibfton, West. Nofcley, Gart. Ketworth, Weft. Snyte Flu. Kibworth Beacham, Gart. Sproxton, Fram Stanton, Spark. Whittington | Spark | grange, | Spark | Whitwike, | Fost | Stanton harold West. Oddeffon, Spark. Kilworth north, Good. Kilworth fouth, Good. Odebye, Good. Stanton wyuell } Gart. Wigfton little, Good. Wigfton Good, great, Good, Wikcham, Fram, Kilworth harcott, Gan Orton vpon Spark, Stanton vnder Spark.

Barton, Stapleford, Fram. Kimcote, Good. Osberston, Spark. Ofgathorpe, Well. bellers, Fram. Wikin, Spark, Willoughbye; waterleffe; Good, Wilfton, West, Kirkbey Spark. Stapleton, Spark, Stathorne, Fram. Ouerton Fram. Knaptoft, Good. Ouerton } Weft. Stoke Stoke 3 Spark, golding 3 Spark, Stokerston, Gare. Knauelton, Gart. Wiston, Gart. Owefton, Gara, Knighton, Good. Withcorke, Frame. Knighthorpe, Weft. Stonesbie, Fram. Winerby, Fram. Woodhoufe, West, Stanton Start Worthington, West. The great Parke, West. Stoure Flu. Wreake Flu. Peatling } Good. Stowghton, Gart. Wykyn, East. Stretton | Gart. Wymondham, Frans Peatling } Good. Langley, Weff. Wymfwold, East. Church | Gart. Stretton | Gart. Peckleton, Spark, Sumerbee, Fram, Thorpe Lanckton Gart. Pickeringe Spark, Sutton, Good. Ybstocke, Spark,

LINCOLN-SHIRE.

CHAPTER X XXIII.



Book.1.

The aire.

The forme.

The foile.

Ic Countie of Lincolne by the English Saxons called Lincollycype, and by the Normans Nicolshire, is confined on the North with Humber, on the East with the German Ocean, vpon the South is parted from Cambridge and Nor-thamptonshire by the Ri-

uer Nyne, and on the West from Not tingham and Yorkfbires by Dun and Trent.

(2) The length of this Province extended from Barton vpon Humber in the North, vnto Stanford vpon the River Nyne in the South, are miles by our Englifb measure fiftic five, and the bredth thereof from Newton in the West, stretched vnto Winthrop vpon her Eaft Sea, containeth 35. The whole in circumference about one hundred and eighty miles.

(3) The Aire vpon the Eaft and South part is

both thickeand foggie, by reason of the Fennesand vnsolute grounds, but therewithall very moderate and pleasing. Her graduation being remooued from the Equator to the degree of 53, and the windes that are fent of her still working Seas do disperse those va-

pors from all power of thurs.

(4) The forme of this Countie doth somewhat resemble the body of a Lute, whose East coasts lie bowe-like into the German Ocean, all along peftered with inlets of falt waters and fands, which are neither firme nor fafe for trauellers, as those in the South proned with King I o H, who marching North-ward from Northfolke against his disloyall Barons, ypon those washes lost all his furniture and carriage by the

fudden returne of the Sea, and foftnesse of the sands. (5) Her Soile vpon the West and North is abundantly fertile, pleafant, and rich, flored with pafturage, arable and meadowing grounds: the Eaft and South fenny and brackish, and for corne barren, but for fowle and fish exceeding any other in the Realm; wherein, at some times and season of the yeere, hath been taken in nets in August at one draught, aboue three thousand Mallards, and other fowles of the like

(6) The Shires commodities confift chiefly in Corne, Cattell, Fish, Fowle, Flax, & Alablaster; as also in a Plaister much esteemed of by the Romans for their works of Imageric; and whereof Plinie in his naturall Works of infagrate, and whereor rame in its natural History maketh mention. And the Afroises, a preci-ous stone star-like, pointed with fine beames or raies, anciently esteemed for their vertue in victories, vpon the South-west of this County neere Bener are found: not far thence in our Fathers memory, at Harlaxton. was ploughed vp a brasen vessell, wherein was inclofed a golden Helmer, of an ancient fashion, set with precious stones, which was presented to Kathren of

spaine, Wife and Dowager to King Henry the eight.

(7) This Shire triumpheth in the births of Beau-cleark King Henry the First, whom Selby brought foorth, and of King Henry the Fourth at Bulling broke born: but may as inftly lament for the death of King John heerein poisoned by Simon a Monke of Swynfted Abby; and of Queene Eleanor, wife to King Edward the First, the mirrour of wedlocke, and loue to the Commons, who at Hardby, neere Bullingbroke his birthplace, ended her life.

(8) Trade and commerce for provision of life is

by Ptolemie and Antonine called Lindam, by Beda Lindam, by the Saxons Linco-collyne, and by the heise Towne.

Normans, Nichol. Very ancient it is, and hath beene more magnificall, as by her many outerturned ruines doth appeare; and farre more populous, as by Domes dates booke is seene, where it is recorded that this Citie contained a thousand and seuen mansions, and nine hundred Burgeffes, with twelue Lage-men, hauing Sac and Soc. And in the Normans time, faith Malmesbury, it was one of the best peopled Cities of England, being a place for trafficke of Merchandize for all commers by Land or Sea. Heerein King Edward the Third ordained his Staple for the Mart of Wools, Leather, and Lead; and no leffethen fiftie Parish-Churches did beautifie the same: but now containeth only fifteene, besides the Cathedrall. Some ruines yet remaine both of Frieries and Nunneries, who lie now buried in their owneashes, and the Cirie conquered, not by war, but by time and very age: and yet hath she not escaped the calamitie of sword, as in the time of the Saxons, whence Arthur enforced their Host: the like also did Edmund to the destroying An.Do.516.
Danes; and by the Normans it suffred some dammage, An.Do.940. where King Stephen was vanquished & taken prisoner; and againe, by the third Henry, that affaulted and wan it from his rebellious Barons. By fire likewise it was fore defaced, wherein not onely the buildings were confumed, but withall many men and women in the violence thereof perished : as also by an Earth-quake her foundation was much weakened and shaken. wherein the faire Cathedrall Church, dedicated to the Virgin of Virgins, was rent in peeces. The gouernmet of this Citie is committed veerly to a Major. two Sheriffes, twelue Aldermen inscarler, a Sword, a Hat of Estate, a Recorder, Sword-bearer, and soure Sergeants with Maces: whose situation on a steepe hill flandeth for Longitude in the degree 20.10. scruples, the Pole elevated for Latitude from the degree 53.

vented thorow thirtie one Market-townes in this

and 50. scruples. (9) Much hath beene the denotion of Princes in building religious houses in this County, as at Duilding Teligions houles in this County, as at Cremland, Lincolne. Markely, Februera, Greyfold, Al-uingham, Neuwershy, Grymmytey, Newfield, Ellians, Strayfield, Syld, Tarleft, prigged, Thomedalme., Numention, Folfs. Henings, Ashabam I.le, Geptervell, S. Mi-chael mere stampford, sympholod, Spalding, Kirkfeld, Sec. (10) Commotions in this Shine were railed (10)

the eight and twentieth of King Henry the Eighth, where twenty thouland making infurredion, violently fware certaine Lords and gentlemen to their Articles. But no fooner they heard of the Kings power comming, but that they dispersed themselves, and fued for pardon. And againe in the third yeere of King Edward the Sixth, in case of Inclosures, Lincolne rose in seditious manner, as did they of Cornwall, Denon-fisie, Yorke-fire, and Norfolke: but after some slaughters of their chiefest men, were reduced to for-

The Shires division is into three principal parts, viz.

Lindfey, Kesteuen, & Holland, Lindsey is subdivided into feuenteene Hundreds, Kesteuen into cleuen, and Hol. Coffee. land into three, containing in all thirty one, wherein are fituated thirty Market rownes, and fix hundred thirty Parish-Churches, as in the Table following are alphabetically expressed.

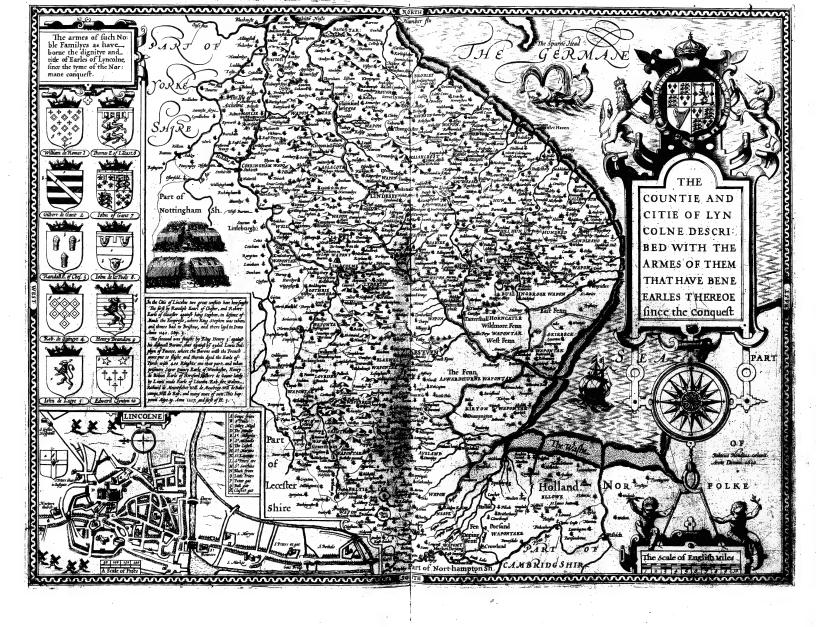
Shire, whereof Lincolne the Counties namer is chiefe, Market Towner

Ann. 1217.

Ann. 1123.

Ann. 1186.

Anno 1536.



Bick raters il ophowe, fuel.

NOTTINGHAM-SHIRE. Book.1.

Chap.XXXIV. Fol. 65



NOTTINGHAM-SHIRE.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Ottingham-shire (from Nottingham her chiefest Town

hath the name, and that,

somewhat softned from

the Saxons Snoodengabam

for the many dennes or

Caues wrought in her

Rocks and vnder ground)

lieth bordered vpon the North and North-west

The name of

The Borders

The forme

with Yorksbire, vpon the East a good distance by Trent is parted from, and with Lincoln-sbire altogether con-

is parter trong, and with Lineous-jove altogether con-fined. The Spath with Lieseler-fiber, and the Welt by the Riuer Erwalb is separated from Darbishire.

(2) For forme long and Oual-wise, doubling in length twice her breadth, whose extreanes are thus extended and distance observed: From Finingley North to Steanford in the South, are thirty eight English Miles; her West part from Tenersall, to Besthory in the East, are little more then nineteene, whose circumference draweth much vpon one hundred and

The avre.

ten miles. (3) The aire is good, whole some and delectable, the soile is rich, sandy and clayie, as by the names of that Counties duils on may appeare: and surely for corne and grasses fruitfull, that it secondeth any o ther in the Realme : and for water, woods and Canell Coales abundantly stored.

Commodities.

Batrailes,

Mattingbam.

(4) Therein groweth a Stone softer then Alabaster, but being burnt maketh a Plaister harder then that of Paris: wherewith they flower their vpper roomes; for betwixt the joyfts they lay only long Bul-rushes, and thereon spread this Plaister, which being throughly drie becomes most solide and hard, so that it feemeth rather to be firme frone then Mortar, and

Internet rause to be arme tone then morear, and is troad upon without all danger.

In the West neere Worksop groweth plenty of Liquories very delicious and good.

(5) More South in this Shire at Stoke, in the Raigne of King Henry the seventh, a great battell was fought by Iohn De-lapole Earle of Lincoln, which Ri-chard the Viurper had declared his Heire apparant; but Richard losing his life, and De-lapole his hopes in seeking here to set up a Lambert, fell downe himselse: and at Newarke after many troubles King Iohn got his peace with the end of his life.

(6) Trade and commerce for the Countries pro-uifion is frequented in eight market Townes in this Shire, whereof Nottingham is both the greatest and best:a Towne seated most pleasant and delicate vpon a high Hill, for buildings stately and number of saire Streets surpassing and surmounting many other Cities, and for a spatious and most faire market place doth compare with the best, many strange vaults hewed out of the rocks in this Towne are seene, and those under the Castle of an especial note, one for the those vited the Called of an especial note, one for the fory of Chrift his pallion engrauen in the Walls, and cut by the hand of *Dauid* the fecond King of *Scots*, whilft he was therein detailed Prifoner: Another Henry He wherein Lord Mortimer was surprised in the Non-age of King Edmard the third, ever since bearing the name of Mortimers hole; these haue their staires and seuerali roomes made artificiallie euen out of the rocks: as also in that Hill are dwelling houses with winding staires, windowes, chimneles and roome aboue roome

traits, windowes, chimneles and roome about froome wrought all out of the folid rock. The Callle is frong, and was kept by the Danes against Burthred, Ethelred and Elfred the Mercian and Weft-Saxons Kings, who together laid their fiege against it: and for the further thrength of the Towne King. Edward firmamed the Elder walled it about, where from part as yet remaines from the Caffle to the West-gate, and thence the foundation may be perceived to the North, where in the midst of the way ranging with this Banke, stands a Gate of Stone; and the same Tract passing along the North part may well be perceived: the reft to the Ri-uer and thence to the Castle are built upon, and thereby buried from fight: whose Circuit, as I tooke it, extendeth two thousand one hundred and twentie (7) In the warres betwixt Stephen and Mand the Empresse, by Robert Earle of Glousester these walls

were cast downe, when also the Towne it selfe suffe-

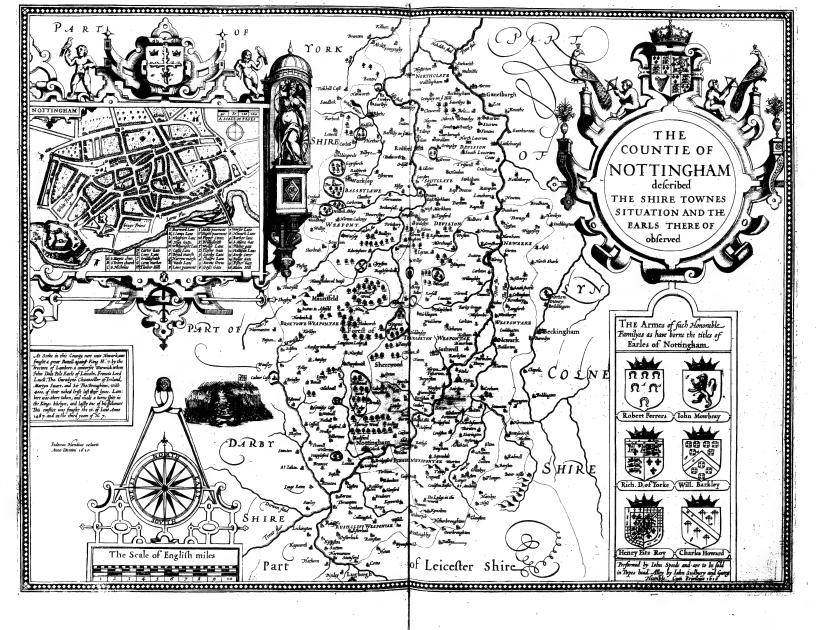
red the calamity of fire: but recourred to her former

estate hath since increased in beauty and wealth, and at this day is governed by a Maior and fix Aldermen clad in skarlet, two Sheriffes, two Chamberlaines, a towne-Clerke, and fix Sergeants with Maces their at-tenders: whose position hath the pole eleuated fifty three degrees, 25 minutes in Latitude, and hath the Meridian nine degrees and 25 minutes. This Towne hath been honored by these Princes titles, and these Princes dignified with the Earledome of Nottingham whose several Armes in the Card it selfe is inserted to sight. Religious houses that have been erected and now suppressed in the compasse of this County, chiefly were Newsseath, Leuton, Shelford, Southwell, Thurgarton, Blith, Welbeck and Radford; in Nottingham, the White and Gray Friers, besides a little Chapell de-dicated to Saint John. All which shew the deuotions of those former times; which their remembrance may moue, if not condemne vs, that have more knowledge

but farre leffe piety. The Shires diuision is principally into two: which the inhabitants terme the Sand and the Clay; but for tax to the Crowne or service for State, is parted into eight Wapontakes or Hundreds, wherein are seated 168. parish Churches.

Places of Religie

R. 1.



Chap.XXXV.

Affectiawe, wea-pontake. Carleton, Baffet. 2. Northclay, Di-wife-Carleton, Thung. Carleton, Thung. uifion. 3. Southclay, Diuision. 4. Newarke weapon.

Carleton, Thurg. S Caunton, Thurg. Broxtow, weapon. Chilwell, Brox. Thurgarton, weapon. Claworth, Northelay. Claerbourgh Northclay 7. Bingham, wcapon.

Clifton North, New. 8. Rushcliffe, weapon. Clifton South, New. Clyfron, Bmg. Clunther, Baffet. Akering Southelay Akley Baffet. Allerton, Baffet, Clipfton, Rufb. Clipfton, Baffet. S.Ambrofe, Bing. Ampton, Southelay. Coddington, New. Codgraue, Bmg. Anfley, Brox. Codlingstock, Raf. Anfley woodhoufe, Brox. Collingham North, New. Arnold.Brex. Collingham South, New. Colwick, Thurg. Ashfield, Brox. Askam, Southelay, Coffall, Brox. Cotes, Northelag. Affakton, Bing. Attenton, Brox. Cotham, Northclay. В Babworth, Baffet, Cotham, New. Coulfton, Bing. Coulfton Bailet, Bing

15

Balderton, New. Bantrec,Baff. Cropwell Bishop, Bing. Bafford Bray Cropwell Butler, Bing. Basing field, Bing.
Barley grange, Thurg.
Barmby in the willowes, New. Crumwell, Thurg. Darleton North Barmby on the more, Baffet. Draiton Welt, Ballet. Barnston, Bing. Draiton East, Southelay. Barton, Ruft. Beckingham Northelay Dorkard, Brex. Dunham, Sombelay. Belam. Northelay. Bellon, Southeley.

Eafter Leake, Ruft. Benall Bront. Eaton Southelay. Bernthorp, New. Edwalton Rafe. Beskwood lodge, Brox. Edwinstow, Baffet. Bestwood parke, Brox. Egmanton, Sambelar Besthorp,New. Elkelley,Baffet. Elfton,New. Belton. Brow. Bilborow.Brex. Elton, Bing. Eperston, Thurg. Bilfthorp, Sombelay, Bingham, Bing. Erwath, Flu. Bircotes, Baffet. Eftwood, Brox. Bleasbie, Thurg. Euerton, Northelay. Blodworth, Breze BLITH,Baffet. Bole, Northelay.

Farindon, New, Boucot, Thurg. Farnelfield, Thurg. Fellie, Brox. Fenton, Northelay. Bothmufall. Reflet. Bradmeere, Rufb. Fiskerton, Thurg. Fledborough, Thurg. Bramcot.Brox. Bridgeford East, Bing. Bridgford West, Ruft. Flintham,Bing. Flixthorp,Ballet, Fymingley, Baffet, Fleet, Flu. Brimfley Brox. Brodham, New. Nether Broughton, Bing. Budly, Baffet. Bulwell, Brox. Gamston, Seatheley, Gaitforth, Ballet. Bunney, Rulb. Girton, New.

Burton, Thurg. Burton West, Northelay, Godling, Thurg. Gonalston, Thur. Bilbie , Baffet, Gotham, Rufb. Granby, Bing. Grefthorpe, Thurg. Caluerton, Thurg.

Greifley, Brox. Gringley on the hill, Northelay Gringley, Northelay. Groue, Southclay. Gunthorp, Thurg. Hablestorp, Northelay. Halam, Thurg. Hallington, Thurg

Hanton, Thurg.

Hardwick, Brox.

Harworth, Baffet.

Hauerham, Thurg. Hawksworth, Bing.

Hawton, New.

Headon Southelay.

Hickling, Bing.

Horringham, Thurg.

Houghton, Baffes.

Idleton, Southelay.

Hucknall, Brox.

Idle,Fls.

K

Keeton, Bing. Kellam, Thurg.

Kerfall, Thurg. Keyworth, Ruft.

Kimberley, Brex

Kingston, Rufb.

Kynolton, Bing. Kynolton, Rub.

Lamley, Thurg.

Laugar, Bing.

Lenton Brox.

Linby, Brox.

M

Manner, Baffet,

Langhton lodge, Brox. Langham, Sombelay. Laxton, Sombelay.

Leuerton South, Northelay. Leuerton North, Northelay.

Lodge in the wowld, Bing.

MANSFIELD, Brox.

Markham East, Southelay.

Markham Well, Southelay.

Marnham, Thurg. Maplebeck, Thurg. Mattersey, Basses.

Lowdham, Thurg. Lyndhurft wood, Brox.

Kirklington, Thurg.
Kirton, Southelay.
Kirton, Southelay.
Kirton, Southelay.
Knefall, Thurg.

Kirkby, Brox.

Hodfokes, Baffet.

Hokdike,Flu.

Holme, Bing.

Heddingley, Thurg. Hexgraue parke, Thurg.

Holbeck Woodhoufe. Baffer.

Hareby, New.

Morton, Thurg. Muscombe South, Thurg. Muscombe North, Thurg. N NEVVARKE, New. Newsted, Brox. Newthorp, Brox. Normanton vpon Sore, Rafe Normanton, Baffet. Normanton, Thurg. Sycriton, New. Norton Cucknie, Baffet, Norwell, Thurg. Terleton, Ruft. NOTTINGHAM, Thurg. Teuerfall, Brox. Nutthall, Brow.

Maun,Flu.

Mering, New.

Millen, Baffer, Millerton, Northelay, Morehouse, Southelay,

O Ordfall,Baffet. Orlton, Bing. Osburton, Baff. Offington, Thurg. Ouldcots, Baffet. Ourney, Baffet. Owthorpe, Bing. Oxton, Thurg.

Paplewick, Brox. Parklathes, Thurg. Plumtree, Ruft. Perlethorpe, B. J. R Radford Bres

Radforth, Baffet. Ragnell Southelay. Rampton Southelay. Ranskill, Baffet. Ratcliffe vpon Sore, Ruft. Ratcliffe vpon Trent, Bing. REDFORD, Northelay. Remiton, Ruft. Rouliton, Thurg. Ruddington, Ruft. Rughford, Baffet.

Saunby Northeler Saxendale, Bing. Scarrington, Bing. Scotton, Baffet. Screueton, Bing. Scrooby, Baffet. Selfton, Brox. Shelford, Bing. Shelford abbie, Bin Sherewood forest, Thurg. Shilton, New. LITTLEBROVGH, North Sibthorpe, New. Skarle South, New. Skarle North, New. Skegby, Brox. Slanford, Ruft. SOVTH VVELL, Thur oueam, Balles, Mansfield Woodhouse, Brez. Spadworth, New. tanford.R##. tapleford, Brez.

Staunton, New.

Staunton, Bing. Stockwith, Northelay.

Stoke, New. Stoke, Thurg. Strelley, Brox. Streeford East, Northelay. Sturrop, Baffes. Sturron, Northelay. Surlby, Baffet. Sutton, Brox. Sutton, Bing. Sutton, Thurg. Sutton vpon Lound, Baffet. Sutton Bonington, Ruff. Sweynton, Thurg.

т

Thornie, New, Thorney wood, Ballet, Thoroton, Bing. Thorpe, New. Thorpe, Baftet, Thowresby, Bafset. Thurmpton, Ruff. Thurgarfton, Thurg. Tilney, Northelay. Tollaston, Bing. Totworth, Bafset. Towto. Brox. Trifwell Southelay, Trent,Flu. Trowell. Brox. Tuxford, Southelay. Tythby, Bing.

Vpton, Thurg. Vpton, Sombolay.

Waerton, Bing. Walcaby, Bafeet. Wallam, Northeley. Walley, Bafset. Walkeringham, Northelay. Wanfley, Brox. Warnham, Thurg. Warlope, Bafses, Watnall Brox. Welbeck Abby, Bafset. Welley, Sombolay. Welter Leak, Rufe. Weltretford, Basses. Welton, Thung. Whatton, Bing. Wheatley North, Northelay. Wheatley South Northelay Whit Water Flu. Widmerepoole, Ruft, Wiest, Northelay, Wiggefley, New. Wilford, Rufe. Willoughbic Rule. Willoughby, Thury, Winkborne, Thurg. Winthorpe, New. Wifall, Rufb. Woldingwels, Bafset. Wollerton, Brex. Woodborow, Thurg. Woodthorpe, Thurg.

WORKS OP. Baffet.



Arby-flure, which the Englifh Saxons called Deophicipe, lieth inclosed vpon her North parts with Yorkfhire; vpon the East with Nottingham-shire; vpon the South with Leicester thire, and vpon the West is parted with the River Doue and Gort from Staf

ford and Cheffe-fhires.

Book.1.

The forme.

The length.
The bredth.

The circumfe

The aire.

The Soile.

The ancient

Tasit, Annal L.

The Commodi

Pliny.

Darly.

Athebrard.

(2) It is in forme somewhat triangle, though not of any equall distance, growing from her narrow South-point still wider, and in the North is at the broadest : for from Stretton neere the head of Mele, to New-Chapellscated neere the head of Derwent, the two extremes from North to South are thirtie eight miles: but from the Shire-Oakes vato the meeting of Merfey and Goyt, the broadest part of all this Shire, is not fully twenty nine; the whole in circumference extendeth to an hundred and thirty miles.

(3) The aire is good, and very healthfull : the foile is rich, especially in her South and East parts: but in the North and West is hilly, with a blacke and mossie ground, both of them fait-handed, to the Ploughers paines, though very liberall in her other gifts : whose natures thus diffenting, the River Derwent doth divide afunder, that taketh course thorow the heart or midst of this County.

(4) The ancient people that possessed these parts in the times of the Romans affaults, were the Coritani, whom Ptolemie disperseth thorow Northampton, Leicefter, Rutland, Lincolne, Nottingham, and this Shire, who were all of them subdued by P. Ostorius Scapula, Lieutenant in this Prouince for Claudius the Emperour. But Romes Empire failing in Britaine, by the intestine warres among themselues, the Saxons (a more sauage and searefull Nation) soone brought it vnder their fubiection, and made this a Prouince vnto their Mercians Kingdome, whom the West-Saxons first wanne, and againe lost to the Normans.

(5) It is stored with many commodities, and them of much worth; for belides woods and carrie. there and corne, every where over-fpreading the face of this County, the Mill-flowe, Cryfall, and Allablafter; the Mines of Pit-coale, Iron, and Lead, are of great price: whereof the last is mentioned in Pliny, who writeth, that in Britaine in the very crust of the Will Willett, that in Britaine in the very crust of the ground, without any deepe digging, is gotten fogreat flore of Lead, that there is a Law expressy made of purpose, for-bidding men to make more then to a certaine slime. Whose stones are plenteously gotten in those Mountaines, and melted into Sowes, to no finall profit of the Countrey. There is found also in certaine veines of the earth, Stibium, which the Apothecaries call Antimo mium, and the Alchymifts hold in great efteeme.

(6) Places for Commerce, or memorable note the first is Darby the Shire-Towne, called in the English Saxon Tongue Nopolywopubis, and by the Danes Devraby, feated upon the West banke of Derwent, where also a small Brooke rising Westward, runneth thorow the Towne vnder nine Bridges, before it meets with her farre greater Riuer Derwest, which presentlie it doth, after the hath paffed Tenant Bridge in the South-East of the Towne. But a Bridge of more beautie, Marier baidon. built all of Free-Stone, is passed over Derwent in the North-eaft of the Towne, whereon flandeth a faire stone Chapell, and both of them bearing the names of Saint Maries : fine other Churches are in this Towne, the chiefest whereof is called Alballow whose Steeple or Bell-Tower being both beautiful

and high, was built only at the charges of young men and maids, as is witneffed by the infeription cut in the same upon every square of the Steeple. Among the miserable desolations of the Danes, this Towne bare a part, but by Lady Ethelfleda was againe repaired, and is at this day incorporated with the yeerely government of two Bailiffes elect out of twenty foure brethren, besides as many Burgesses of Common Counfell, a Recorder, Towne-Clerke, and two Sergeants with Mate: whose Graduation is observed from the Equa tor to be 53. degrees 25. scruples, and from the first point in the West, 19. degrees 2. scruples.

(7) Little-Chefter (by the Romifh Money there dai- Little Chefter: lie found) feemeth to have beene ancient, and that a Colonie of the Roman Souldiers there lay. Yet of farre greater fame was Repandunum, now Repton, where Eshelbald the ninth King of the Mercians, and fifteenth Monarch of the Englishmen, flaine at Seggefwald by the treason of his Subjects, was interred; and whence Burthred, the last King of that people, was expulsed with his Queene Ethelfwith, by the rage of the Danes, after twenty two yeeres raigne. But with a more plea fing cie we may behold Melborne, the memoriall of Englishmens great valour, where in that Castle was kept Priloner John Duke of Burbon, taken Captiuc in the Battle of Agincourt, and therin detained the space of nineteene yeeres,

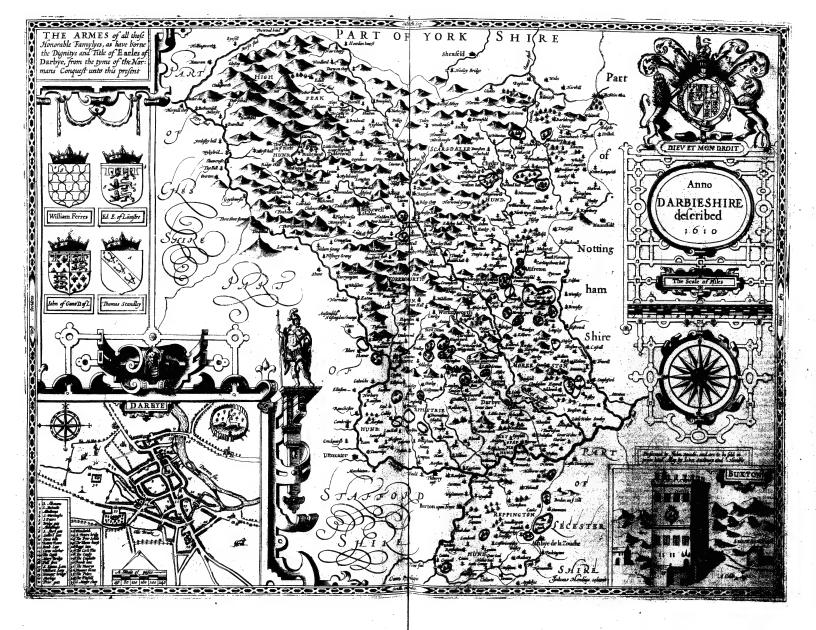
(8) Things of stranger note are the hot Wateriprings, bursting foorth of the ground at Buxtone, Buston well, where out of the Rocke within the compasse of eight yards, nine springs arise, eight of them warme, but the ninth very cold. These run from vnder a faire square building of free-stone, and about threescore paces off, receive another hot spring from a Well, in-closed with source flat stones, called S. Annes; neere vnto which another very cold spring bubled vp. The report goeth among the by-dwellers, that great cures by these waters have beene done : but daily experiby their waters must been could be the construction of the flomacke, and finewes, and very pleafant to bathe the body in.

Not farre thence is Elden hole, whereof firange things haue beene told, and this is confidently affirmed, the waters that trickle from the toppe of that Caue, (which indeed is very spacious, but of a low and narrowentrance) doe congeale into ftone, and hang as ickles in the roof. Some of them were shewed at my being there, which like vnto fuch as the frost cogealeth were hollow within, and grew Taper-wife towards their points, very white, and fomewhat Crystall-like. And feuen miles thence, vpou a mounted hill, frandeth a Caftle, under which there is a hole or Cauc

commonly called The Dinels Arfe in the Peake, where-of Gernafe of Tilbury hath cold many prety tales, and others doe make it one of the wonders of our Lind. (9) As in other Counties the denotions of the religious haue beene made apparem in the erection of places for Gods peculiar fervice; so in this haue been founded eight of that nature, which were Dale, Deretounded eight of that nature, which were Dad, Densell, and Pallwarks whole pace and plenty Road facult of Pallwarks whole pace and plenty froat facult from all danger, all the blothering windes ariting in the raigue of King Henry the Eighth, bleve of the sinacles of their beautions buildings, and fhooke disnote the Researces of those Foundations which never the Researces of the Researce of the Researce

in the ground of a maruellous capacitie, which is

are like againe to be laid (10) This Shire is divided into fix Hundreds, wherein have beene feated feuen Cafiles, and is fail traded with eight Market Townes, and replenished with one hundred and fix Parish-Churches, whose names follow in the Table annexed.



Hundreds in Darby-fhire.

Church Broughton, } Apple. Burbrok Flu. Burton blunt, Apple Burghe, Peake. 1. Highpeak., Hund. Butterley, Mer. 2 Scarfdalle, Hund. Buxton well, Peak. 3.Workefworth,Wap. 4 Morleston & 7 H

Caldwall, Rep. Lvtchurch. Calke, Rep. Calew, Sear. 5. Appletrie, Hund. SReppington 7 A Carlingthwart hall, Sear Carlon,Work Caffleton, Peak.

Castlein the ? Peake. A peake, 5
Catton, Rep.
Cawlow, Work, Abncy, Peake. Alderousley, Apple. Codnor, Merlef. Alderwashley Work Cawner, Peak, Cawton, Peak, Chadefdon, Mort. Chalefworth, Peak, Allestree, Mortef. ALLFRE TON,SO Alfoppe, Work. Aluafton, Morlef. Chamberin ? Peak.
the forreft, ? Peak.
New ? Peak.
Chappell, ? Peak.
THE FRITH. ? Peak. Ambafton, Merlef Amber Flu. Appleby, Rep. Ariafton, Ap. Alton, Peak, Chattefden, Apple. Chattefworth, Scar. Atlowe, Apple.

Aulkmanton, Apple. Chellaston, Rep. Chelmarton, Peak Aulton, Seer, Ashe, Apple. Chefter caton, Mon CHESTERFEILD, Sea Alhford, Peak. Allichay, Apple. Chilcot, R. p. Church broughton, As Ashouer, Sear, Clapwell, Sear. Clinton, Sear. Afton Seer. Afton vpon Trent, Men Clowne, Sear, Clownchurch, Sear, Auton, Apple. Clyfton, Merl. Clyfton, Apple. Codner, Mer.

Bakewell, Peak, Codner caftell, Mer. Ballidon, Work BANKEWELL, Peak, Compton, Mer. Barbrough, Sear. Barley, Sear. Corther Sear. Coton, Rep. Cowdele, Peak. Barowe, Merl. Barwardcote, Mer. Cowlowe, Park Ballow, Peak. Beardhall, Peak. Crawloe Flu. Crefwell Sear. Bechif abby Sear. Crich.Mor. Beighton, Sear. Crich chafe. Mor Belay chappell, Sea Croughon, Work, Beighe Sear. Croxall, Rep. Crumforth, Work, Beipar, Apple. Bentley fenney, Work, Cubley, Apple. Bentley, Apple.
Hungary Apple.
Bentley, Saple. Dalbury lees, Apple. Dale, Morlef.

DARBY, Mer. Blackwell, Sear. Blaugherby, Rep. Darleygh, Mor. Darley, Peak, Darley hall, Sear. Bothmufoili, Peak. Boulouer, Sear. Darwell Flu. Bouther, Speak, Bouteshall, Work, Darwen chapell, Peak Denby, Mer. Bowdon, Peak, Bowdon ? Peak, Middlecall, S Peak, Dethick Work. Doue Flu. Douebridge, Apple. Dower, Sear. Boylfton, Apple Draklowe, Rep. Bradburne, Work Dranfeild Sear. Bradford Flu. Bradley, Apple. Bradfall, Mor. Bradwell, Poak, Braifton Mer. Brakenfeild, Sear Braiesford, Apple.

Bramton, Scar.

Bretbye, Rep Brinington, Sea.

Braffington, Work Bredfall, Apple.

Draycot, Mer. Duckmanton-Scar Duffeild, Apple.
Dunfeild, Mor. Dunfton, Scar. Eaton,Wark, Eaton, Apple. Eaton long, Mer. Eckelsborne Flu. Edall, Peak Edall Peak

Ediafton, Apple.
Ediction hall, Sear. Edynfar, Peak, Egington, Mor. Eham, Peak, Eiflington, Work, Ekington, Sear.

Elden hall Peak Elmeton Sear. Elvall, Apple. Elwallon, Mor. Erewashe Flu. Eucley. Fatters feild, Peak Lea, Work.

DARBY-SHIRE.

Fernhoules, Peak, Finderne Mor. Flaghouses, Peake. Folowe, Peake. Formarke, Ro. Foston, Apple. Foxholes, Peak Frithley, Mor. Furland hall, Scar. Glapwell Scar. Gledles, Sear.

Gloffoppe, Peak Gratton Work, Markworth, Mor. Grefley caftell Rep. Grefley, Rep. Grynlowe, Peak. н Hadden hall, Peak,

Hadden } Peak, Kirke Z Mor. Hallam well, Mor. Hanley, Sear. Hardwick Sear. Hartington Work. Hartley hall, Peak, Hartihorne, Rep. Hartwood grange, Se. Hailep, Peak, Hatherfedge, Peake. Hatton, Apple. Heanor, Mor. Heath Sear. Heathfeild, Peak Hethcote, Work Higham, Sear. Higham, Sear. Hilton, Apple. Hogmafton, Work, Holbroke, Mor.

Holland, Apple. Newton flony, Rep. Norbery, Apple. Hollington, App. Normanton Seer. Hoone, Apple. Normanton, Rep. Normanton fourh. Sear Hopton Work. Hopwell, Mer. Horeston castell, Mer. Horsley, Mer. Houghton, Sear. Hounsfeild, Sear. Hucklow great, Peak, Hucklow little, Peak, Huckney, Sear. Hugh parke, Work, Huffington grange, Wo Hyghlow, Peak.

IbberFlu. Ible,Work. Iheo,Work, Ilkeiton,Mor, Ingleby, Rep. Inkerfell, Sear. Ireton kirk, Work, Padley, Peak Ireton little, Apple

Kedlefton, Apple. Kilmarih, Seer. Knynfynton Work. Knyucton, Work

Parwich, Work.

Pilsbury grange, Work.

Posther wood, Apple

Quarndon, Mor.

Radburne, Apple,

Rauflafton, Rep.

Rawiton, Apple.

Reppington, Rep.

Rewthorp Sear. Ridgehall, Peak.

Ripley, Mor. Rodiley, Apple. Roflend, Apple.

Rowland, Feat,

Rowelley Peak

Ryfley, Mer.

Rowetsley hall Scar.

Rowthorpe, Scar.

Sandeacre, Morles,

carcliffe, Scar.

Scale Rep.
Scale Ouer, Rep.

Sheldon, Peak.

Sherbroke, Sear. Sherley, Apple, Shipley, Morles. Shire Okes, Sear.

Shirland, Sear.

Smethike, Rep. Smisbye, Rep. Snytter, Work

Somercotes, Sear.

Somerfall Apple. Spundon, Aple. Staden, Peak.

Stainton, Peak, Stanclvif, Sear.

Standley, Apple.
The Stand, Sear.

Stancley, Sear.

Suclifon, Apple

Swadlingcote, Rep.

Rother Flu.

R

Pentrich. Mer.

Pinxton, Sear.

Pleasley, Scar.

Pilley Scar

Pilley Peak.

Langford, Apple. Kirk Mor.
Langley, Mor.
Langley Apple.
meanell, Apple. Langley, Mor. Langwith ? Sear. Ouer, Sear. Lasco, Mor. Lees hall, Apple,

Linton, Rep. Lithkell Flu. Longfton, Peak Lullimgton, Rep. Makeney, Mor. Mapperley, Apple. Marketon, Mor.

Saperton, Apple. Sawloe, Merles. Marlocke, Work, Marfton, Apple. Marlton Mar(ton 34). Meafo Flu. Mealam, Rep. Melburne, Rep. Melburne caltell, Rep. Meller chappell, Peak, Merfey Flu. Merih hall, Peak, Middleton, Work Shatton, Peak, Shawcroffe, Peak, Middleton ftonie Per Mircaston, Apple. Morehouses, Sear Morley, Mer. Morley parke. Mar. Morton, Sear. Shotley parke, Apple. Sinfold, Apple. Smalley, Mortes. Mugington, Apple Mylnhoufe, Peak, Myintown,Scar. Mylton,Rep. Nedam grange, Work, Netherthorpe, Sear, Newhold, Sear, Newmedow. Peal

Newton kings, Rep.

Stanley, Merlet. Norton, See. Now Flu. Nowfloole hill. Peak. Stanton, Rep. Stanton ward, Repp. Stanton next Morles. dall, dall, 3 Srapenhall, *Rep.* Starndalle, Pook, Oclebrooke, Mer. Ogfton, Sear. Okefgreene, Apple. Okethorpe, Rep. Kings Peak, Steede, Apple. Ofcote, Work, Offatton, Apple. Steinston, Apple. Stoke hall, Sear. Ofmatton, Apple. Ofmatton, Apple. Ouer great, Mar. Ouer little, Mar. Ounfton, Sear. Stretton,Star. Stretton, Rep. Stubley Sear. Owlerfet.Peak Sturton, Apple Oxcroft See. Sutton vpon Apple Sutton, Sear.

Swanwick, Sear. Swarkefton, Rep. Sydbury, Ap. Taldington, Peak.

Tanfley, Worke. Tanfley, Sear. Tharfethall, Peake. Therlesbouth, Peak, Thornell, Peak Thorpe, Work. Thurlefton, Mor. Thuruafton, Apple. Tibehelf.Sear. TIDDESWEL,Peak Tiffinton, Work, Tiknall, Rep. Topton, Sear. Tottley, Sear. Trinitie Sear. Trufley, Apple.
Tunfted, Peak.
Turndiche, Apple.

Twyford, Apple. v Vigathorp, Scar. Vnderwood, Work, Wadshelfe, Scar.

Wakebridge Sear. Walton vpon Rep. Trent, Skep. Warelowe, Peak, Warmfawdale, Peak, Washington, Sear. Watstanwel } Searbridge, Sear Wedingwell, Peak, Welne 3 Morles.

great, Weine - MorL little, Wentley, Work. Welton vpon 2 Merl Trent, Small wood, Whalay, Sear, Wheatcroft, Sear, Whefton, Peak Whittington, Scar. Whittwell, Scar.

Williams } Scar. Willington, Morl. Wilfley, Rep. Windfall, Rep. Wineley? Apple.

Wingfeild Scar. Wingfeild Sear. South, See. Wingfeild See. Wingerworth, Sear. Wolley, Sear.

Woodhoules, Seer. Woodhoules, Sear, Woodland, Peak, Woodthorpe, See. Woodthorpe, Sear. WORKESWORTH, Wo. Wormehill, Peak, Wulfcote, Work Wyalton, Apple. Wynstre, Wark,

Yednaston, Apple. Yeldersley, Apple. Yolegreaue, Peak,



STAFFORDSHIRE.

CHAPTER XXXVI.



Book. 1

The ancient

name of this Shire.

The confines

The forme and

Ten Riuers.

TAFFORD-SHIRE. which in the English-Saxon is written διεκκορο-γεύρα & whose situation is much about the middle of England, meeteth vpon the North with Chef-shire and Darby, and that in a Triangle point, where three

stones are pitched for the bounds of these Shires; it is parted from Darby-shire on the East with Dowe and with Trent ; the South is confined with Warwicke and Worcester-Spires, and the

West butteth against the County of Shropshire.
(2) The forme thereof is somewhat lozeng-like. that is, sharpe at both ends, and broadest in the midst The length extending from North to South, is by measure forty foure miles; and the bredth from East to West, twenty seuen; the whole in circumference

one hundred and forty miles.

(3) The aire is good, and very healthfull, though ouer-sharpe in her North and Moreland, where the The Aire. The Soile

fnow lieth long, and the winde bloweth cold.

(4) The foile in that part is barren of Corne, because her Hilles and Mores are no friends vnto Til. lage: the middle is more leuel, but therwithall wooddie, as well witnesset that great one, called the Cank.
But the South is most plenteous in Corne and Pastu-

(5) Her ancient Inhabitants were the * C O R CORNAVII NAVII, whom Ptolemie placeth in the Tract that containeth Shropfhire, Worcester-shire, Chesse-shire, and this: all which were possessed by the Mercian-Saxons when their Heptarchie flourished. And Tameworth in this Shire was then held their Kings Court. The Danes after them often affaied herein to have feated, as witneffeth Tetnall, then Theoten hall, by interpretation, The habitation of Pagans, imbrued with their bloud by King Edward the elder. But the Inhabitants An.Do.911 of this Province Beda termes The midland Englishmer because to his seeming it lay in the heart of the Land, which when the Normans had made Conquest of all, many of them fet downe their rest here, whose posterities at this day are fairely and further branched in-

to other parts. The Commodities of this Countie confift chiefly in Corne, Cattle, Alablaster, Woods and Iron, (if the one prooue not the destruction of the other) Pit-coale, Flesh, and Fish, whereof the Riuer Trent is faid to swarme : and others arising and running thosow this Shire, doe so batten the ground, that the Medowes even in the midst of Winter grow greene; fuch are Dowe, Manifold, Churnet, Hunfye, Yenden, Teane, Blith, Trent, Tyne, and Some; whercof Trent is not onlie the principall, but in esteeme accounted the third of this Land.

Stafford the chiefe Towne. Isb.Capgrane. (7) Stafford the Shire-towne, anciently Betheney rom Bertelina reputed holy man that therein lead an Hermits life, was built by King Edward the elder, in-King John. corporated by King Iohn, and vpon the East & South

parts was walled and trenched by the Barons of the place; the rest from East to North was secured by a large Poole of water, which now is become faire meadow grounds. The tract and circuit of these walles extendeth to twelve hundred and forty paies, thorow which, foure Gates into the foure windes have pasfage, the Riucr some running on the South and West of the Towne. King Edward the fixth did incorporate the Burgesses, and gaue them a perpetuall successive. ion, whose government is vnder two Baileffes veerely elected out of one and twenty Alsinanis, allies to Common Counfell, a Recorder, whereof the Dukes of Buckingham have borne the Office, and as yet is kept the second of the American they hold Plea without control of the Control of t elected out of one and twenty Assistants, called the a Court of Record, wherein they hold Plea without limitation of summe; a Towne-Clerke also, (from whose pen I received these instructions) and to attend them, two Sergeants at Mace. This Towne is fited in the degree of Latitude 5 3.2 o.scruples, and of Longitude 18 and 40 fcruples,

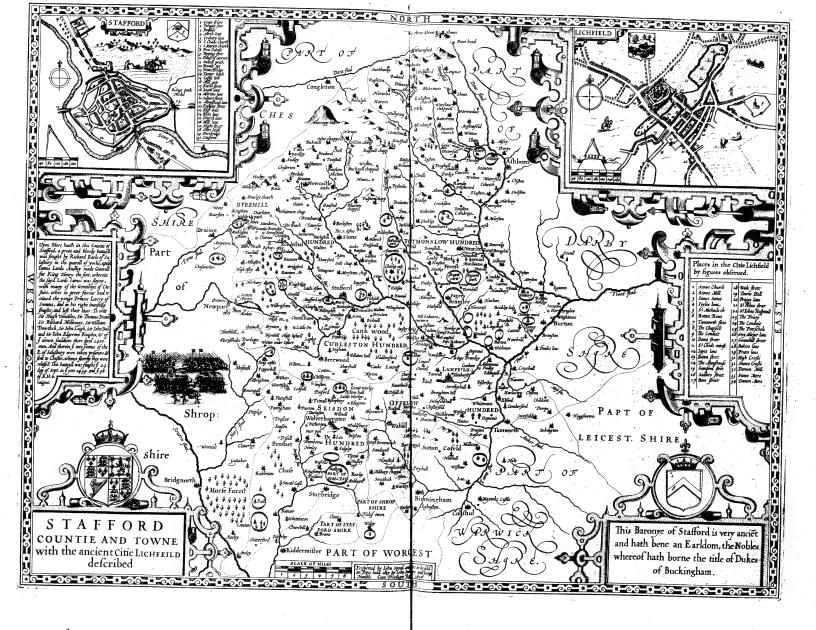
(8) But Leichfield, more large and of farre greater fame, is much her ancient, knowne vnto Beds by the name of Leichfeld, which Rosse doth interpret to be The feldof dead bodies, for the number of Saints vnder the rage of Dioclesian there slaine: vpon which cause the Citie beareth for her Armes an Escocheon of Landskip, with divers Martyrs in divers maner massacred. Here Ofwin King of Northumberland ouercomcreu. Fiere Open King of Northemberland ouercom-ming the Pagan-Mercians, built a Church, and made it the See of Duins the Billiop; whole fucceflours grownerich, with golden realons to ouercame King offa, and he Adrian the Pope, that an Archiepiscopall Pale was granted Bishop Endulph, to the great differace of Lambert Arch-Bishop of Canterbury. In this church were interred the bodies of Walfhere and Celred, both An.Do.676. of them Kings of the Mercians. But when the minds of men were fet altogether vpon gorgeous building, this old foundation was new reared by Roger Clinton, An. Do. 718. Bishop of this See, and dedicated to the Virgin Mary at Saint Chad, and the Clofe inwalled by Biftop Lang-ton. The gouernment of this Citie is by two Bailiffei and one Sheriffe, yeerely cholen out of twenty foure Burgesses, a Recorder, a Towné-Clerké, and two Sergeants

their Attendants. (9) Houses of Religion creeted in this Shire, Houses of Rewere at Leichfield, Stafford, De la Crosse, Cruxden, Trent-ham, Burton, Tamworth, and Woluer-hampton. These Votaries abusing their Founders true pieties, and heaping vp riches with distaine of the Laitie, laid themselues open as markes to be shot at ; whom the hand of the skilfull soone hit and quite pierced, under the aime of King Henry the Eighth, who with such Revenewes in most places relected the poore and the orphane, with Schooles and maintenance for the training vp of youth: a worke no doubt more acceptable to God, and of more charitable vie to the Land. (10) With 13 Castles this County hath bin strength-ned, and in thirteene Market-Townes her commodined, and in thirteene Market-Townes her commodi-ties traded, being divided into five Hundreds, and in them seated one hundred and thirty parish-churches,

as in the Table is alphabetically expressed.

8 2

Ån Do.606.



Chap.36. An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and Places mentioned in Stafford-shire.

	TCIUCIS,	and lacesmen	ioned in Staffor	d-inire.	
HVNDREDS	Bromewich west, off.	Dunfmore flu.	Hunley, Seif.	Oken, Seif.	STONE, Pyr.
in Stafford-shire.	Bromley, } Pyr.	Dunftable,0 ff.	Hunfye Flu. Huntington, Cud. Hyde, Cud.	Okouer, Tet. Oldburie, Off.	Stowe, Pyr. Stranshill. Ter.
	Bromley 2	Dunfton, Cud.	Huntington, Cud.	Oldburie, Off.	Stranthill, Ter. Stratton caftell, Seif.
- TO X7 1 1111	Bagoots, 5 PT	E	Hymore, Off.	Oncot, Tot. Onely, Pyr.	Stretten, Off. Stretley hall, Off.
I.PYrehill. 2.PTottmonflo.	Bagoots, Pyr. BROMLEY PAGETIS, Pyr.	W		Orgraue, Off.	Stretley hall, Off.
2. L Tottmonilo.	Bromley hurst, Pyr. Bromley kings, Off.	Water Cad. Eaton, Cad. ECCLESHALL DEVISOVER, Pyr. Ecclefton, Tot.	1 1	Orton, Seif. Otherton, Cud.	Stretten, Cud.
3. Cudleston.	Bromley kings, Off.	ECCLESHALL Zpan	Ham, Tott.		Stoure flu.
4. Seifdon.	Bromley kings, Off. Bromfaultfe, Tor.	Feel-floor Tel	Ingleton, Cud.	Outley Cud.	Stoure flu. Stubby lane, Off. Sturron caffell, Seif.
5. Ottclowe.		Ecclefton, Tot. Eddingall, Off. Ediall, Off.	Ingleftrie, Pyr. Ipfion, Tost.	bridge, 3	Surron callell, Sef.
	Bruerton, Cud. Brynton, Cud.	Ediall,Off.	-,,	P	Swinford kings, Seif.
A	Bucknell, Pyr.	Elafton, Tet. Elenhall, Pyr.	K	Dainflow Tot	Swinfeld hall, Off. Swinfhead, Pyr.
Acton, fud.	Bule, Cud.	Elford, Off.	Kebulfton, Pyr.	Painfley, Tot. Patkhill, Tot.	
Acton, Pyr.	Burlaton, Cud.	Elford, Off. Elford, Off. Elmhurft Off.	Keele, Pyr. Kington, Tottz	Patiell See	Swynerton,Pyr.
Aculate, Pm.	Burlem, Pyr. BVRTON VPON 3 off. TRENT.	Einfton, Tot.	Kington, Pyr., Kinfare, Seif.	Pattingham, Seif. Pelfalle, Off.	1 .
Adbaftow, Pyr. Alderwas, Off.	TRENT, Joje	Enfton, Pfr.	Kinfare, Seif.	Pelialle, Off. Ouer } Seif. Pen, Seif. Pen, Seif.	Talke, Pyr. TAMWORTHE, Of
	Burton, Cud.	Enueild, Seg.	Kinfley, Tott. Kinuer, Seif.	Pen, Sour	TAMWORTHE, Off
Alton, Tet. Aluerton, Tet.	Burton vnder } off.	Efington fuel. Etill Seif.	Knightley, Cud.	Pen. Seif.	Teane, Tett.
Amblecott, Seife	Bulhbury, Seif.	Euili, Seif.	Knighton Per		
Amerton, Cud.	Butterton, Prr.	F	Knutton, Pyr. Knutshall, Tett-	Pencle, Pyr. Penckirch, Cud.	Terley, pr. Tetrenhall Kings, Seif Tettenhall Clice, Seif Thickbrome, Off. Thorne hill, Tet.
	Butterton, Tata.		Kynnafton, Cad.	Penke flu.	Tettenhall Clice Seif
Anneley, Pyr. Apedale, Pyr. Apeton, Cud. Areley, Scol.	c	Fakefley bridge,		Penford, Seif.	Thickbrome, Off.
Apeton, Cud.	_	Farley, Tor.	L.	Penfer chafe, Seif. Periburie, Off.	Thorne hill, Tet.
Arearch parks ~	Caldon, Tott.	Fauld, Off.	Lapley, Cud. Lea, Seif.	Pervhall OF	
Argarth parke, Ter. Armitage, Off.	Calingwood, Off. Cambrige, Tota	Feild, Tet.	Lea, Seif. Leacroft, Cud.	Perton, Seif: Pelington, Cad.	Thorpe,Off. Throley,Tet.
			Lead, Cad.	Pellington?	Tillington,Pyr. Tipton,Seif.
	Canke, Cud. Canke wood, Cud.	Fenton, Prr.	Lead, Cud. LEEKE, Tota	Pellington Cud, hali, Pipe, Of.	1 Titterfore Day
Afiley, Pyr. Afilton Pyr.	Cannocke.Cud.	Fetherston, cud. Fisherwick, Off.	Leighe, Tast.	Pipe, Off. Placdwick, Cud.	Tixall, Ppr. Treiflie, Seif.
little, Fyr.	Cannocke, Cud. Careiwall, Tor.	Forbridge Cud.	Leu. Seif.	Ponkefia.	Treiflie, Seif.
Afton,Off.	Cafforne, Tot.	Forbridge, Cud. Ford(wall, Pw.	Leu-dall, Cud. L1 CHFIELD, Off. Lighe highe, Cud.	Preftwood, Seif-	Trentfly.
Afton, Pyr., Afton, Pyr., Afton, Pyr., Afton, Cud.	Camell, off. Cauldon, Tot. Cawton, Off.	Forton, Cud. Fauton, Pyr. Foulderley. Off.	LICHFIELD, Off.	Preftwood, Ter-	Trencham,Pyr.
Afton, Pyr.	Cawton, Off.	Foulderley. Off.	Lireleon, Cud.	l R	Trescott, Seif.
Atton, (ind.	Caveton, Tot. Charley, Off.		Longcroffe, off.		Tunffall Court. Per.
Afton 3 off.	Charlton Pyr.	Frodley Off.	Longdon, Off. Longnor, Cud.	Ramfor, Tet. Rannton, Pyr.	Tunftali, Pyr. Tutbune, Off.
Audley, Pyr. Auiston Cud. Ausley, Off.	deuiscouer, \$ Pyr.	Froghall, Tet. Fullford, Pyr.	Longon, Off.	Rannton Zper	Tyne Flu.
Aufley.Off.	Charnes, Pyr. Chartley caffell, Cud. Chardey holme, Pyr.	Fulfton,Pyr.			Typion, Off.
Auftonteild, Tor.	Chardey holme, Pyr.	G	Longton, Pyr. Loxley, Tett.	Ricksricort Per	l
В		-	Loynton, Pyr.	Ridgley, Cud. Ridware, Off.	Voxhall, Off.
	Chebfton, Pyr. Checkley, Tot.	Gayton, Pyr. Gentlefhall, Off.	м		Voxhall, off. VTTOXCETOR, 7
Bagnall Pw. Barr Off		Gnoltill.Cud.			w .
Barr,Off	Chedull, Tot.	Gorfticott, Off.	Madeley, Pyv. Madelenolme, Tett. Msir, Pyr. Msnye Flu. Mattroke, Tett. Marchineton, Tett.	Hill Cad. Ridware, Cad. Robafton, Cud.	
	Chell, Pyr. Cheftall, Off.	Gratwich, Tet. Grinley, Cud.	Mair. Pre.	Ridware,) Robafton, Cud.	Wall, Off. WALLSALL, Off.
Bartton, Pyr. Barton, Cud. Barton Off.	Chefterton,Pyr. Chefterfeila,Off.	Grinley, Cud. Gryndon, Tet.	Manye Flu.	Rolfton.Off.	Walliall forten, Off.
Barton Off.		Gufton, Seif.	Marbroke, Tate,	Rowcester, Tet. Rowley, Seif.	Walton, Pyr. Walton, Cvd.
Balwich, Cud.	Chillington, Cud. Chomeley wood, Off.	H	Marchingdon 7st.	Rowley, Seif.	Walton, Cad.
Baulterley, Pyr.	Church-eate: Cad.	Haddenford, Cud.	Marfton, Pyr. Marfton, Cud.	Rowley, Seif. Rowley, Seif. Rowley parke, Off. Rudiard, Tot. Ruthall, Off. Ruthall, Off.	Warflawe, Tot. Waterfall, Tot.
The Pyr.	Churnet flu.	Haddenford, Cud. Hamberwich, Off.	Mariton, Cud.	Rudiard, 7 ot.	Weddsbury, Seif. Wednesseild, Off. Wednesseury, Off.
Beandefert, Cud.	Claton, Pyr. Clente, Seif Clyfron, Off		Marton great, Cud. Malon, Off. Materfeild, Tots.	Rushton, Tet.	Wednesteild, Off.
Bednall / nd. Bednoll Ced.	Clefton OF	Hampftable off. Ridward, off. Handiworth, off.	Materfeild, Tott.	Ruffeles, Seif, Riddfley, Cud.	Weford, Off.
Bentley Off. Befrote Cod.	Codill, Seff.	Handfworth.Off.	Mauefton } of.	Riddley, Cut.	Welobridge Parke, Pyr. Welton, Pyr. Welton Jones Cud
Belev Per	Collidge, Cud.	Handbury, Off. Handfaker, Off. Hanford, Pyr.	Meare, Pyr. Meare, Cad. Meare, Pyr.	s	Welton Iones, Cad.
Betley,Pyr. Bickforde,Cud.	Colton,Pyr. Colwich,Tet.	Handlaker, Off.	Meare, Cad.	Salte, Pyr.	Weston Iones, Cud. Weston vinder Cud. Lifeard, Cud.
Bicknall, Pyr.	Combertor d, Off.	Hamton, Off. Haracles, Tot.	Milwich, Pw.	Sandon,Pyr.	Lifiard, State.
Bildulphe, Pyr. Billington, Crd.	Compton, Seef. Copinhall, Cud.	Haracles, Tot.	Milwich, Pyr. Mitton, Cad.	Sandwall, Off.	Weston vpon Trent, Pyr. Wharmford, Test.
Bildon, Seif. Bildon, Seif.	Corborowe, Off.	Harborne, Off. Harlafton, Off. Harlafton, Off.	Moretand hilles, Tet.	Sardon great, Cud. Sardon little, Cud.	Whartley? Off.
Bithopbury, Seif.	Coton, Cud.	Harlafton, Off.	Moreland hilles, Tet. Moreland hilles, Tet. Moreton, Cad. Morocopp hill, Pyr. Morfall, Off. Mole Flu.	Sawefin	Whartley off. Hall, off.
Bilhops offey, Pyr. Buliton, Cod.	Cotton,Pyr. Cotten,Lud,	Halellor, Off	Morfall, Off.	Scotleild,Off.	Whirmore, Pyr.
Blakemere, Tet.	Coulton, Cud.	Hatherton, Cud. Haughton, Cud. Hawood, Cud.	Mofeley, Seif.	Seafon, Seif. Sedgeley, Seif.	Whifton, Cad.
Blith flu. Blithfeild,Pyr.	Cowen, (ud.	Hawood, Cud.	Mofeley, Seif. Muckelfton, Pyr.	Seigford, Seif.	Whichnor, Off. Whirmore, Pyr. Whirton, Cad. Whirtendon, Off. Whirtendon, Seif.
Blore,Pyr.	Cowley, cud. Crackmarth, Tor.	Headley caffell Pw.	N	Seigford, Seif. Seidon, Pyr. Sharethuli, Cud.	Whittereene, Pys. Whittington, Of. Wichner, Of.
Blore, Tet.	Crockiden, Tot.	Hearley, Cud. Heath-hill, Cud.	Nedwood?	Shawford, Pyr.	Whittington, Of.
Blore heath, Ppr. Bloxwich, Off.	D	Heliwood, Tot. Hempfled, Off. Hemey, Scif.	Nedwood Tot.	Shene. Tot.	Wiceindon, Off.
Blorron, Pyr. Blymyll Lad.	-	Hempited,Off.	Newborowe, Off.	Sherifon, Off. Sherifhales, Cud.	Wilbrighton, Cad.
Blymyll Lad.	Darlafton,Pyr.		NEW CASTLES -	Shire okes Off.	Wilenhall, Off.
Roblington, Seif.	Darlefton, Seif. Darlefton, Off.	Hickfon, fud.	Newborowe, Off. Newborld, Off. NEW CASTLE; VNDER LYNE, SP.	Shitterford Seif.	Witton, Tott,
Boningall, Self. Bothall, Cud. Bradeley, Cud.	Deluccroffe, Tot,	Highon, f,ud. Hilderfon,Pyr. Hilton hall,Seif.	Newton Cud	Shohnall, Off. Shredicott, Cud.	Wichnor, Off. Wilgrindon, Off. Wilbrighton, Cad. Wilchhall, Off. Wilnall, Seif, Witton, Tott. Wocker, Seif, Wolston, Cad. Wolfton, Cad. Wolfanon, Pw.
Bradeley, Cud.		Hilton hall, Seif.	Newton, Pyr.	Shugborow, Cad.	Woleffon Cud
Bradley, Tot.	Dermington, Pyr. Dolwich, Pyr. Doug for	Hilton abby Pw.	Newton, Pyr. Notbury, Cad. Narrowdale, Tot.	Shugborow,Cad. Skelton,Pyr. Smeftall flu.	Wolffanton, Pyr.
		Hilton, Cud. Hintes, Off.	Norton, Pyr.	Smerkall flu Smerhwick OF	Wolfranton, Pyr. WOLVERHAMPTON,
		II. III.	Norton, Pyr. Norton, Cud.	Streethwick Off. STAFFORD, Ppr.	Womborne, Seif. Worley little, Seif.
	Draicott, Tet.	Hollinton, Tet,			
Bradwall, Pyr.	Deniron Cud	Hepton, Pw.	Norton, Off.		
Bradwall, Pyr.	Draiton, cud. Draiton } off- Eatler, } off-	Hopton, Pyr. Hopwaies. Off.	Norton, Off.	Standon,PW.	
Bradwall, Pyr. Bramhurft, Tet. Bramfton, Off. Branfton, Off. BR E WO O D. Cad.	Draiton, cud. Draiton Bailer, cul- Dreiton, cud.	Hepton, Pyr. Hopwaies, Off. Horborne, Off. Horcrofie, Off.	Norton, Off. Norton, Off. Norton in the 2 Mores, 1 Pyr.	Standon, Pyv. Standon, Tor. Stanton, Tor.	Worley great, Scif. Wotton, Test. Wrottelley, Seif.
Bradwall, Pyr. Bramhurth, Tor. Bramhon, Off. Branton, Off. Bracker, Off. Br E W O O D, Cad. Bridgeford, Pyr. Bricklev ledge. Off.	Draiton, cud. Draiton off- Ballet, off- Draiton, cud. Druyton of off-	Hepton, Pyr. Hopwaies, Off. Horborne, Off. Horcrofle, Off. Horpingle, Off.	Norton, Off. Norton, Off. Norton in the? Mores, \$ Pyr.	Standon, Pyr. Standon, Pyr. Stanton, Tet. Statford, Off. Stoke, Pyr.	Wotton, Test. Wrottelley, Seif.
Bradwall, Pyr.	Draiton, cud. Draiton } off- Eatler, } off-	Hepton, Pyr. Hopwaies, Off. Horborne, Off. Horcrofie, Off.	Norton, Off. Norton, Off. Norton in the?	Standon, Pyv. Standon, Tor. Stanton, Tor.	



SHROP-SHIRE.

The Saxoniff name of this Shire. The limits.

The forme.

Carr.Caradec.

Cornany.

Henry the

Sir Hubbett

Keng Stephen.

HROP-SHIRE, by the incient Saxons written beipýp-reýpe, is both large in circuit, well peopled, and very fruitfull for life. It lieth circulated vpon

the north with the Countie Palatine of Chefter; vp-on the East altogether with Stafford-fhire;vpon the South with Worcester, Hereford, and Radnor-shires. and voon the West with Mountgomery and Denbigh.

(2) The forme thereof is almost circular or round, whose length from Wooferton below Lodlane South, to Ouer necrevato the River Trent in the North, is thirtic foure miles : the broadest part is from Tone in the East, to Ofwestre sited at the head of Morda in the West, twenty and fine; the whole in circuit about extending to one hundred thirty and foure miles.

(3) Wholesome is the aire, delectable and good yeelding the Spring and the Autumne, Seede time and Haruest, in a temperate condition, and afforder health to the Inhabitants in all feasons of the veere

(4) The foile is rich, and ftandeth most vpon a reddish clay, abounding in wheat and barly, pit-coles, iron, and woods, which two last continue not long it league together. It hath Rivers that make fruitfull the Land, and in their waters containe great store of fresh-fish, whereof Seuerne is the chiefe, and second in the Realme, whose streame cutteth this Countie in the middeft, and with many windings sporteth her felfe forward, leaving both pastures and meadowes bedecked with flowers and greene colours, which cuery where the bestoweth vpon such her attendants (5) This River was once the bounds of the North-

Britaines, and divided their possession from the Land of the Saxons, vntill of latter times theirs began to de cay, and the Welfb to increase, who enlarged their lists to the River Dee. So formerly had it separated the Ordonices from the Cornauj, those ancient Inhabitants mentioned by Ptolomie. The Ordonices vnder Carachacus purchased great honour, whilest he a Prince of the Silures remooued his warres thence among them where a while hee maintained the Britaines libertie with valourand courage, in despight of the Romans. His Fort is yet witnesse of his vinfortunate fight, seated neere Clune Caftle, at the confluence of that River with Temd, where (in remembrance of him) the place is yet called Caer-Caradoc, a Fort of his, wonne by

whom we have faid. (6) But when the strength of the Romans was too weake to support their owne Empire, and Britaine, emptied of her Souldiers to resist, the Saxons set foot in this most faire soile, and made it a part of their Mercian Kingdome: their line likewise issued to the Jacket Amgaome: their line likewile future to the last period; and the Normans beginning where these Saxons left, the Welfilmen tooke advantage of all present occasions, and brake over Severne vnto the River. Dee; to recour which, the Normans first Kings often assaid, and Henry the second with such danger of life, that at the fiege of Bridge-north he had been flain, had not Sir Hubert Syncler received the arrow aimed at him, in stepping betwixt that Shaft and his Someraigne, and therewith was shot thorow vnto death, Hemy Prince of Section 4. In the like danger flood Hemry Prince of Seatland, who in the ftrait fiege of Ludlow, begitt by King Stephen,

is yet caucal Care-Caragoe, a Fort or his, wonne by P.Osforius Lieutenant of the Romans, about the yeere of grace 3. The Cornauj were feated upon the north of Seuerne, and branched into other Counties, of

had been plucked from his faddle with an iron hooke from the wall, had not Stephen presently rescued him,

(7) This then being the Marches of England and Wales, was fore afflicted by bloudy broiles, which caused many of their Townes to bee strongly walled, and thirty two Caffles to bee ftrongly built: laftly, into this County the most wife King Hemy the secuenth sent his eldest some Prince Arthur, to bee resident at Ludlow, where that faire Castle became a most Prince Aribus. famous Princes Court. And heere King Henry the eighth ordained the Counfell of the Marches, confifting of a Lord Prefident, as many Counfellors as the Prince shall please, a Secretarie, an Attorney, a Solicitor, and foure Inflices of the Counties in Wales, in whose Court were pleaded the causes depending and termely tried for the most part in presence of that ho nourable Prefident.

(8) But the Shire-towne Shrewesburie, for circuit, trade, and wealth, doth farre exceed this, and is inferiour to few of our Cities; her buildings faire, her streets many and large, her Citizens rich, her trade for the most part in the staple commodities of cloth and freeses; her walles strong, and of a large compasse, ex-tending to seuenteene hundred pases about, besides another Bulwark ranging from the Castle, downe vnto, and in part along the fide of Severne: thorow which there are three entrances into the Towne, East and West ouer by two faire stone-bridges with Towers,

Gates, and Barres, and the third into the North, no leffe strong then them, ouer which is mounted a large Castle, whose gaping chinkes doe doubtlesse threaten her fall. This Towne is gouerned by two Bailiffes, yeerely elected out of twenty foure Burgesses, a Recorder, Towne-clerke, and Chamberlaine, with three Sergeants at Mace: the Pole being raifed hence from the degrees of Latitude 53.16. minutes, and from West in Longitude 17. degrees 27. minutes. (0) Yea and ancienter Cities have beene fer in

this Shire: fuch was Roxalter, or Wroxeester lower vpon Seuerne, that had beene Vriconium, the chiefest Ci tie of the Cornauji, V Joconia, now Okenyate, neere vnto the Wrekin, and vnder Red-cafile the ruines of a Citie whom the vulgar report to have been famous in Arthurs daies: but the peeces of Romish Coines in these three doe well assure vs that therein their Legions lodged; as many other trenches are fignes of war and of bloud. But as fwords have been stirring in most parts of this Prouince, so Beades have been bid for the preservation of the whole, and places creeked for the maintenance of Votaries, in whom at that time was mannersance of votaries, in whom a trust time was imputed great holinefle: in Strensbury many, at Coulmore, Stowe, Dudley, Bromefeld, Wigmore, Hatmand,
Lylefill, Bildau, Bilbop-cafile, and Wenloke, (where
in the raigne of Richard the Good, was likewide a rich
Mine of Copper.) Butthe fame blafts that blew down the buds of fuch Plants, scattered also the fruits from these faire trees, which neuer fince bare the like, nor

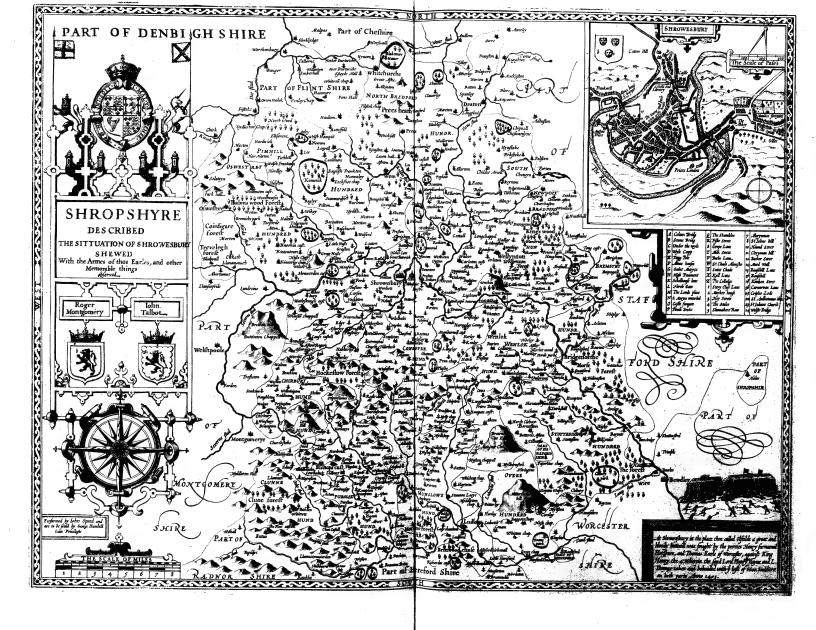
is likely any more to doe. That only which is rare in this Prouince, is a Well at Pithford in a prisace mans yard, whereupon floteth a thicke skum of liquid Bitumton, which being cleere of today, will gather the like againe on the morrow: nor much valike to the Lake in the Land of Lewry. of to day, will gather the like againe on the morrow : not much vnlike to the Lake in the Land of Jewry.

This Shire is divided into fifteene Hundreds, herein are scated fourteen Market Townes; & hath in it one hundred and seventie Churches for Gods facred and divine service: the names of which are in the Table as followeth.

King Heart the

1. Whittenson 2. Ellsfmert. 3. Ofweftres. 1. Wem. 1. Red-coffie. 10. Rowton. 11. Brocard. 11. Caufe. 13. Ponderbach. 14. Atten barnel

15. Carleton, 16. Dalaley,



II. Parliame

Abbatoriet, Cond.

Abton, Wes.

Acleton State

Acton, Parll,

Afton, Stad South,
Afton, Elan,
Afton, Parft,
Afton, Parft,
Afton, Parft,
Afton Butlers, Statt.

Afton Rogers, Chir.

Afton Piggot, Chr.

Church } Br. Sant

Atton, Brad Sourb.

Atherley, Era. North

Attorley, Wevi.

Atton, Ofwest, Atton, Pim.

Aulcafton, Man

Babins wood } 0,50.

Baggotefliop, Ouer. Baggeley, Pim. Balderron, Pim.

Barwicke, 8. South.

Batt'cfeild, Br. South

Bearfton, Er. North.

Relaport, Br. Worth.

Belierdyne, con. Bentall, Hen.

Receil age.

Besford, P.m.

Patrons Con

Beftow, E.South.

Betten, E. Narch

Barrowe, Her.

Baryate, Stat.

Baschurch, Pow

Bechfeild Chir.

Beckley, Pur. Bedfton, Pur.

Beckbury, B'en.

Auldon, Man. B

Aueley, Ster.

Book.I.

The borders of

Cheffe-Shire.

The forme.

The pire and

The Soile.

hibitints,

rap 8.

ROMANS.

SAKONS.

Nic,Trenet.

Ranulph.Ceftr.

lib.1 .cap.48.

Cordigare forest, Of. Hundreds in Berrys, Class Scutton, con, Shrop fore. Beckton Clan Coreley, Star. Coroue flu. BRadford North. Bildas Er South, Corthom Caltle, Mr Bildas little, Br. South Corfton, Man. 3. Era fird South. Billey, Con. Cotes new, Went, Birche Pim Cotton, Brad worth. 4. Brim'try. 5. Wentork Blackemere } B. Nor. manor, 3 B. North. Cofton, Purfl. 6. Condesco 7. O westrey. 8. Forde 9. (brbury.

Cottall, Brad, South. Coulmere, Pist Blodwall, ofir. Bolas little, B. North. Cowbatche, Parft, Creketh, Ofwest, Bolas great, B. South Crouckhill, Cand. Bonyngall, Erym, Boreatton, Stat. Croicmere, Pim. Cructon, Farde. 13. Ouers. 14. Stottefilon. 15. Strewesbury liberty Bocaston, Ofiv. Crudgington, B.Sout. Culhurit, Bra.Norsb. Bracemel, Shrow C. Bradfton,#es. Bradfeild flu. Dalaley caftle, 8.Sou. Darlafton, Br. Nerth. Brampton, chir. Dawley little, Br. Sow. Dawley great, B.Soat. Daywell, Ofwest. Deane Parke, Over. Brampton, Par. Abe,bury, Ford, Abertanocke, Ofiv. Brampron.Cond. Brameroft caftle, Ma Didlefton } ofwell. Bramflowe,Chir. Bratton & South RIDGNORTH, St Broadways Par rocard caftle, Ford. Bruckton, Mun. Brockton, Par. Do ton, Stat. Dowles, Stat. Procton, Chir.

Dodington, Cond. Acton Burnell, Cond Dodington, B. North Dorrington, Br. Nort Dothull, Brad, Seath Acton front, Man. Adont, Pim. Admalton, Br. South. Ainey, Brad South. Dowles flu, Downeisy, Parf. Brockton, G. South Albrighton, Pins. Albrighton, Payn. Bromfeild, Man. Downton, Bra. South Downton, Man. Alderton, Pim, romiche, 0 ju Alkynton, Brs. North. Allerton, Brs. North Bromlowe, Chir. Draton, Cond. Brolely,Wen Draton, Brym. DRAYTON, B.Nor. Alicott, Brym. Alicotin Br. Sev. Brimftry, Br. Sev. Broughton, Pur. Broughton, Pim. Browne cle-hill, #4 Dridfton, Chir. Dufuafton, Ofweft. Alftretton, Cord. Brunfliwe, Par. Dunington, Er South. Alveley, Stott. Bucknell, Par. Burford, Ouer. Dunnyngton, Brym. Dydlesbury, Mon. Dydmafton, 51st. Anchmarch, Coud. Appley, Brad. South Burghall, Br. North. Burlton, Pim. High Brad. Dynchop Mun. Chapell, Mun. Dyncon, went. Burton, Con. Burton, Wen. BVSHOPS? Arcole Br. North. Dytton, Stat. Ar!feot, Forde. CASTLE All.hafton, fr. South Eardington, Stat. Byllinefley Stot. Athbafton, Er. Sauth Synvellon Chir. Eafthop, Mun. Eaton B. S. Athe great, Br. North yrrington,Cond. Bitterley.Our. Athford, Man. Eaton, West. Afhford Man Bondmore Man Caer-caradoc, Pur. Eaton, Frad North, Eaton, Parfl, Eaton, Cond. Calloton, Wen, Afhford, Stat. Afliton, Brac. North. Cantloppe Lond. Ebnall, Q(m/f) Aftanton, Perfl. Cardington, Mun. Carndon hill, Chir. Eddesley, Bra. North. Edgebalton, B. North. Edge, Forde. Afterley, Forde. Aftley, Brad, South. Carleton caftle, B.S. Aftley, West. Afton, Ofwest. Afton, Brad, South, Carlon, Shrewf. Edgmond, Br. See The new Clan. Edgton, Parf. Edicliffe, Ginn.

Caynham, Stot.

Cause, Ford. New 1 Chapel, 1 Clun.

Chatwall Con.

Chaulton Pur

Cheston, Stat.

hirbury,Chir.

Clebury, Sast.

Clunbury, Par.

Cockflue, Pint.

Clunne forest, Clun.

Colimington, Man.

Copts venny, Pim.

Congress, Man.

Cound, Cand.

cram, Oser

Cleue, Pins.

Horton, Br. marth. Ednoppe, Clun. Houndenen, Stote Houghleton, Chir. Egerley, Ofiveft. Ellerton, Brad, Seath Ellelmere, Pim, Howle, Brad North Howgate Caftle, Mr. Hungerford, Wen. Hugford, Mun. Elfton, Pim. Lady } Mun. Emstree, Cond. Huntyton, Bra. feet Hurft, Ford. Enidon, Pare. Ercall great, R. South. Estaston, Br. North. Hylron, Stet. Hynnyton, Br. fouth. Hynton, Brad. north. Chelwardine, E.Nor Effwicke, Pan. Euelyn, Brad.South, Hyffinton, Chir. Cherwyn afton, B.S. Fyton, Read, Sauth Hyne heath, E. north. Eyton vpon 3 B.Se Cherton, spr.
Cheyney
Longerfeild, Par,
Chilton Lov.
Chipnall, B.North. Iaye, Purf. Ightfeild, Brad.meth. Eyron, Forde Eyron, Parfi. Hembridge, Br. fouth. Eyton, Pim. Kemberton, Br. South Chirington, B. South. Chirhill, B. North. Falles Br. North. Kempton, Purf. Kenley, Cond. Farley, Ford. Farton, Stor. Clauerley hall, 8.No. Kenley, Cond. Kenfton, Erad. north. Kenrwicke, Pim. Kenrwicke parke, Pi. Kenrwicke mood, Pi. Keuenkellinge, Pim. Clauerleigh, Brim. Clauerley, B. North. Favrlaw Chapell, Stot. lebury forreine, Sr. Felhampton, Mun. Clebury north, Stat. Clebury parke, Stat. Felton butler, Pins. Ceynton, Brad fouth Fennimeare, Pim-Fernill Dauid, Ofme. Kings wood, Br. Jouth. Kingleford, Brim. Fernill, Ofwelt. Franckton, Pins. Kinnerton, Parf. Clungonas, Par. CLVN CASTLE, Cl.

Welfh

Franckton, Pine.

Franciston, Ofwell. Frodesley, Cand.

Forde, Farde.

Gattaker, Star.

Gatten, Forde.

Porten, Pim. Fynonyaire, Cum.

Gildendowne, (bir. Llancuan, Clum. Langford, Brad, Jouth Langhton, Stun. Langley, Cond. Languill, Went. Gramfton, Bra, Sout. Grauenhonger, B.N. Llanvairwaterden,C. Llanwordan, Ofwell. Greffedge, Cond. Gretton, Munf. Latley, Brad South Laton, Wenlack, Lawley, Brad foutb. Lea ockley, Pur. Haberley, Forde. Tea Porf Hadley, Brad. South. Hadnail, Brad. North, Lea. Forde. Hales core, Rr. South Halefowen, Erym. Haliton, Ofwelt.

Newe chiffe, Pim.

Netley Con. Newcastle Clun.

Newemarton, Pins

Newenham, Ford.

Newood } Br, north.

NEWPORT, Br. for.

OSWESTREY, O/

Otkaynfton Class

Operley Re worth

Owre, Br. worth. Oxenbould, West

Otley,Pim.

Newton, Stan.

Newhall Wes-

Newnes Pint.

SHROP-SHIRE.

Glaseley, Stet.

Goulding, cand.

Greete, Ouer.

Grynfhill, Pin.

Halron, Ofwell,

ampton, Pian

Harton, Mus. Harton, Mus.

lawne, Brym.

Haytons, Ouer.

Hempton, Stat. Henley, Ouer.

Heulley, Ofwest. Hewlye, West. Higford, West.

Hints, Stat. ... Hifland, Ofwell,

Hobbanes, Clun. Hobendred, Clun.

Hopton, Pim. Hordley, Pim.

Kinton, Pan.

Cynlet. Ste

Kricketh, Ofweft.

Kynerley, Ofwell.

Kynerstey, Bra.fauth Kyntontoure, Ofwest

Kynynion, O/well.

Lacon, Erad, North

Lianamonach, Ofive.

K, wilfey, Clan.

on. Forde.

Heath West

Newton, Pim. Newton, I'im. Leston, Pim. Leborwood, Cond. Ledwich flu. Noball Shraw Norley, Fen. Norley, Fen. Northwood, Pins. Ledwitche, Mun. Lee, Tim. Lce, Brad. Narth. Hampton wood Pie-Norton, Wen, Hamond, Brad South Leegunery, Be.fouth Leighton, Br. fouth. Levd. Norton, Sinn. Hanwood, Shrewell. Norton, B. Goth Hardwicke, Pim. Norton, &r north, Hardwicke, Purf. Linlye, Went. Noniley.Pim. Longdon, Ford.
Longdon, Bra. fourb.
Long Chapell, B. fourb.
Longeflowe, B. North.
Longford, Br. fourb. Harnydon Cand. Nunneley, Pim. Nyneton, Stat. Cold Bra. South. Oblev.ciu Ockley parke, Nan, Okenyate, B. Jouib. Hatton, Brad. North. Longford, Er. Worth Okley, Par. Old-church | Par. Hauford Chapell, M. Longnor Cond. Haughton, Br. South. Haughmond, B. Sout. more. Longuill, Parf. Oniburg. Man. Longith, Parj.
Loppington, Pim.
Lowe diches, B.Nort.
Ludford, Manf.
L.V.D.L.O.W., Oxer. Hawketton Rr. North Onflow, Shrow. Orlton, Er fouth

Lutonhope, Clur. Lyddum, Purl.

Llynblis, Ofwell.

Lydbury North Parf. Lyleshill, Br. foutb.

Lyniall, Pim. Lynley, Purf. Llyntidmon, Ofwell.

Parke hall, 6/sv. Partherodricke, Clust Lythe, Pim. Lythes, Cond. Parthloge; Clum. Hockettow forest Pa Patton, Wes. Madely, Went. Paymon, By foutb. Hollyhurft, Br. North Marchamley, B. Nort Pentregayer, 0:0f. Peplewe, E. marib. Home, Park. Hope bowdler, Man Marington, Chir. Marino, Parf. Marine, Ford. Pepper hillt, 817m Peton, Man. Hope, Chir. Hopeicy Purfl. Munck Hopton, Marton, Chir. Petton, Pim. Pickellocke, Br. nor. Picklefcott, Con. Old } Ofwest.
Marton, } Ofwest.
Mastorocke, Ofwest. Hopton, Purf. Hopton wafers, Stat. Pillon, B. morth. Mathlynton, Clan. Pixley, B. north. lopton, Brad, North. Measbury, Ofwest. Ployden, Pim. Medeley, Went orkinton Ofm lords parke, West. Medowton, Chir. Pouderbach } (on. Horley Cond. Horton, Brad Couth. hicele, Ford. Meefon, Brad fanth. Mele flu, Pouderbach } Com. Meriton, Pim, Pousbury, Ford. Meruerley, Ofwest. Middle, Pim. Middleton, Stat. Pousford, Ford. PREES, Br. north. Precs heath, Br. nor Middleton, Must. Middleton, Ofwell. Prenc, Con. Prefcott Pim. Prefton vpon 2 B. far Midleton } seu. Midlehope, Munf. Milborneftoke, We Milford, Pim. Mock tree forest, Me Prefton, E. fouth. Prefthoppe, tren. Priors lighe, E. fouth. Pryfwefton, Chir. Pulley, Cond. cott, Parf. Monford, Pim. Mootton, Ofwell, Morda flu.

Morfe forelt, Stor.

Morton, Ofwell.

Mornith West

Muckley, Wen.

Mynfterley, Ford.

Mynton, Man,

Mytton, Pim.

Nenefalers, Ouer.

Neffe ftrannge, Pim, Neffe ftrannge, Pim,

Nash,Ouer.

Morchouses, Mun. Quarford Stee. Moreson cother R.N Moreton faye, B. 2(er, Moreton faye, Parf. Quat maluerne, Stat Sutton, Ofwell. Quenny flu. Sutton great, Man. Sutton little Man forreft, j Radnell,Onv. Mofton, Br. North. Sybberleon Ford Mucketon, Fr. Nort Rafhton, Brad. for Ratlinghopp, Par. Swyney, Ofwest. luncke wefton, Wen, Rayefley, Stor. Muncke wefton, Wee Munflow, Mun, Myddleton, Chir. Mylly chapell, Wen, Myllon, Guer. Mylton, Stor. Rea flu Red caftle, Br, north, Tafley, Went. Tearme, Br. fouth.
Tearne flu.
Techill, Pim.
Techill, Pim.
Tethull, Pim. Rickton Stat. Rocadyne, 8. fauth, Rodden fu. Roddington, Chir. Roddington, B. Jour L Tewkeffull Stat-Rodon, B. fomb. Thembton, Erim. Tollerron, Purf.
To N G E, Brim.
Trebert, (las.
Trebrodder, clus. Roffall, Shrees. Downe | Shrew.

Rothall chapell, Man.

Rowndatton, Wen,

Rowton, Stot.

Purflage Per

Rowton, Ford Treowarde, Clun. Rowton, B. fourb. Roxslter, B. fourb. Trevelegh forest, Of. Tugf and, Stun. Royton Brim Fucklerron West Royton little, Con Twiford, O well. Royton great, Cau. Tybberton, Br. forth. Royton.Ofe. Tylicy, Br:North. Ruckley, Con. I ymberthe Chie. Tylfopp, Ouer, Tylfock, Br. North. Rudge, Pim. Rugantyn, Club. Ruthbury, Stun, V ckington, Br. feath. Ryclth, Clun. Ryfton, Chir. Venyacton, Ford. Rythin, Class. Vffington, Br. (suib. Vnderton, Wenl. Saint Margarets 3 Vppington, Br. faurb. cle, Sain: Maltin, Ofir. Vpton Crellet, Stot. Saleroffe, Pur Sanford,0/w Wall, Mas. Wallford, Pim. Wallopp, Ford, Walcot, Chir. Walcot, Brad fouth. Sanford. B. worth. Seffeton, Mus. Selley, Clus.

Seuerne flu.

Sclattyn, Ofw.

Shabie, B. worth

Shadwall,Clus.

Sheinall, Brim.

Shelton, Shraw.

Shenton,Con.

Sheue.Chiv.

Skyborra, Clun.

Sned.Clvz.

Sponell, West,

Stanton, Parf

the field,

Stockton, Brim

Stoke, B'ent.

Tearne,

Stowe, Purf. Stradbrok flu.

Trench, br North.

Trench, Pin

Stire, Parf.

Walcot, Parf. Walliborne, Ford. Walton, Chir. Shauington, B. werth Sheinton, Stee. Walton, Br: North; Walton, West. Wambridge, Br.fout. Shelderron, Par. Shelderron, Man. Waters Vpton, B.fov. Shelhake Ofm Watlesburrough, Fo. S'acnton, B. north. Weenyngton, Ford. Welbeche, Cond. WELLINGTON Shipton, "est. Shitterstones hill, Ou Wellington B. fauth Shortlet wood, Wen, WEM, Brad North Wenlock little, Wenl WENLOCK Went Shrawardine, Pim. SHROWESBURY, Shipley, Star. SHYPTON, Par. Wentnor, Par/ Westbury, Ford. Westhoppe, Mun, Westley, Ford. Westley, Cond. Weston, Pim. Weston, B. merth. Weston, Pur Weston, (bir. Weston, Ofw. Westen chapell, Wes Wettleton, Mun. Wheat nafton were Whelbeehe,Can. Whettle Stot.

Sleape, Pim, Smethcott, Con, Snawden flu, Sowton, Er. North. Sponeley, B.North. Stanton, Brem. Stanton, Brad. North. Whichcot chapell, 6 Whitcott kylett, Clu. Whircott yeuan, Clu. Whitbatche, Pur. Stanwardine in Pi, Sranwardine in } Pi. Stappleton, Cond. Stiperstons hill, Chir. WHITCHVRCH, B. Whittinflaw, Pur. Whittington, Ofw. Stockett, Pim. Stockton, Brad. fontb. Whixall Renerth. Wigwigge, Wen. Wikey, O (w. Willaston, B; merth. Stoke vpon 1 B. N Willaston great, Fere Stokeley, Mun. Stotteldon, Stat. Wire forrest, Stat. Withinford great, Box Wobury, Stot. Strethley, & fouth, Stretton little, Mu Wolfton Ofer. Woodcote, Strew. Woodcote, Strew. Woodcote, Strew. Woodcote, Street. erertone, Fard. Church Man. Stretton, Man. Sugdon, Brad foutb. Sughton, Ofwest. Woodhouses,Oss. Old B: no. Woodlands R. warth Woodieues, B:merib. tton maddock Bri Wooferron Mus

Wooffafton, Con.

Wotton, Ofw. Wrekin hill, B: foutb.

Wrentnall, Ford. Wrockerdyne, B:fort Wullerton, Brassh. Wullfon, Mus.

Wigmore, Ford. Wyllmynton, Chir.

Wythington, B./ent

Yernstree parke, Mu.

Wyllye, H'en. Wynsbury, Chin

Wytton,Ford.

Yorkleton, Fard.

Worfe flu.

Worthyn, Chir. Worull, Brim.

,000000000000000 March Contract

HESSE-SHIRE by, the Sawww written Ceroep reine and now the County Pala tine of Chefter, is parted vpon the North from Lancathire with the River Mercey, vpon the East by Mercey, Goit, and the Dane is Separa ted from Darbie and Staf. fordfores; vpon the South toucheth the Counties of

Shrotfire and Flint; and vpon the West with Des is parted from Denbigh fbire. (2) The forme of this County doth much refemble

the right wing of an Eagle, spreading it selfe from Wind, and as it were with her pinion, or first seather, toucheth Torke-shire, between which extremes, in following the windings of the Shires divider from East to West, are 47.miles: and from North to South, 26, the whole circumference about one hundred fortie two miles. (3) If the affection to my naturall producer blinde not

the judgement of this my furuey, for aireand foile it equals the best, and farre exceeds her neighbours the next Counties: for although the Climate bee cold, and toucheth the degree of Latitude 54, yet the warmth from the Infl. Seas meletch the flow, and diffolueth the ice, footest there then in those parts that are further off; and so wholesome for life, that the Inhabitants generally attaine to many yeeres.

(4) The Soile is fat, fruitfull, and rich, yeelding abun-

dantly both profit and pleafures for man. The Champion grounds make glad the hearts of their Tillers: the Medowes imbrodered with diuers (weet-finelling flowers and the Paflure makes the Kines vdders to ftrout to the paile, from whom and wherein the best Cheese of all Europe is made. (5) The ancient Inhabitants were the CORNAVII. The ancient In who with Warnick-hire, Worcefter-hire, Stafford-hire, and Shrep-hire, forcad themselves surther into this Countie.

as in Ptolemie is placed; and the Cangi likewife, if they be the Ceangi, whose remembrance was found upon the shore of this Shire on the fur-face of certaine peeces of lead, in this manner inferibed: IMP. DOMIT. AVG. GER. DE CEANG. manner inferibed; 18 P. D. D. M. T. A. V. O. B. D. B. C. B. N. E. A. M. T. H. C. Gargi vere fluidued by P. O. Dimus Scapula, immediately before his great victorie against Gazalizatu, where, in the mount of Daws, houlita a. Perruffy at the back of the Ordansez, to crefitaine their power, which was great inchoic parts; in the raising of Virfiphee the Emperour. But after the departure of the Rossaus, this Prominen became a protition of the Sassa Moreause Kingdome: nonvinishanding (latin Ran Lighten). Calic in tile was a held by the Drive Acceptance of the Comment of the Co Tacit, Annal

Of the difinalitions of the fince Inhabitants heare Lacie Of the disjointons of the lines Inhabitants, heare Lusian the Mahnife who lined preferred yet ret the Conquell flycake. They are fusual (latith hee) to differ from the refs from the English person parts) better. Anabarus te qualital lines flighting they are friendly, at most chearful, the universalment libertal, from any 7, and from particled, Lumb's moved, impatient of fermitude, mercifical to the affiliated, compliance to the power, kinds to their lindred, force of labour word of diffimulation not greedy in eating, and far from

dangerom prattifes. And let mee addethus much, which Lucian could not namely, that this Shire hath neuer beene stained with the blot of rebellion, but ever flood true to their King and his Crowne: whole loyaltie Richard the Second fo farre found and effeemed, that hee held his person most safe among them, and by authoritie of Parlament made the County to

them, and by authoritie of Parlament made the County to be a Principalitie, and filted himfelfe Prince of Culpfer. King Hunrythe Third gaue it to his eldest fonne Prince Edward, againf whom Lowlys Prince of Wales gathered a mighty Band, and with them did the County much harme, Cheffe-Shire made An.Do. 1255. enen ynto the Cities Gates. With the like fearre-fires it had of times been caffrighted; which shey laftly defenfed with a Wall made of the Wellb-mens heads, on the South fide of Dee in Hanbridge,

The Shire may well bee faid to be a Seed plot of Gentility. The Georificia and the Producer of many most ancient and worthy Famiof theffe-fbire. lies : neither hath any brought more men of valour into the Field, then Cheffe-Shire hath done, who by a generall speech are to this day called The cheefe of men: and for Natures endowments (besides their noblenesse of mindes) may Cheffe-foire chiefe compare with any other Nations in the world: their limmer firait and well-composed, their complexions faire, with a cheerfull countenance; and the Women, for grace, feature, Cheffe-fbire wo-

and beauty, inferiour vnto none. and beauty, interious vision none.

(6) The Commodities of this Province (by the report of Ranulphus the Monke of Cheffer) are chiefly Corne, Cartle, Fifb. Fowle, Sale, Mines, Mesals, Meares, and Rivers, whereof the Bankes of Dee in her Well, and the Vale-Royali in her midft, for fruitfulnetle of palturage equals any other

in the Land, either in graine, or gaine from the Cow.

(7) Thefe, with all other provision for life, are traded

Chefter is the faireft, from whom the Shire hath the name ! A Citie railed from the Fort of Offering, Lieutenant of Bitraine for Clainding the Emperour, whither the twentieth Le- An. Dom. 70: table to Classian the Emperour, whither the twentern Legion(named Kärney were fent by Galbaro reflexine the Britaints: but growne themselves out of order, Jailius Agraeda was appointed their Generall by Fépasian, asappearch by Monies then minted, and there found; and from them (no doubt) by the Britaints; the place was called Carr Leging. by Ptolemie, Dennana; by Antonine, Dena; by the Saxons; Leges cerben, and now by vs Well-Cheffer : but Henry Bradhane will haue it built before Brate, by the Giant Leon. Henry Bradfiant Gauer, a man beyond the Moone, and called by Marine the

thorow thirteene Market Townes in this Shire, whereof

Vanquisher of the Piets. Ouer Desa or Des a faire stone-bridge leadeth, built vp. on eight Arches, at either end whereof is a Gate, from whence in a long Quadren-wife the walles doe incompalle the Citie, high and strongly built, with foure faire Gates opening into the foure windes, belides three Posternes, and feuen Watch-Towers, extending in compatile onethousand

nine hundred and forty pafes.

On the South of this City is mounted a strong and statelie Calle, round in forme, and the base Court likewise inclosed with a Circular Wall. In the North is the Miniter, first built by Earle Leofrice to the honor of S. Werburga the | The Minter Virgin, and after most sumptuously repaired by Hogh the built. first Earle of Cheffer of the Normans , now the Cathedrall of the Bishops See. Therein liefs interred (as report dots relate) the body of Henry the Fourth, Emperor of Allmaine, superior of Henry the Henry the Henry the Fourth, Emperor of Allmaine, where the Henry t

who leaving his Imperial Effate, lead fallly therein an Her-This City had formerly beene fore defaced; first by Egfrid King of Northumberland, where he flew twelve hundred Christian Monkes, resorted thither from Banger to pray. Againe by the Danssit was fore defaced, when their deftroi ing fact had trampled downe the beauty of the Land. But

was againe rebuilt by Ediffeds the Mercian Ledy, who in this County, and Forest of Delamer, built Easter bupg and Easter bupg. Finborow, two fine Cities, nothing of them now remaining Finborow. befides the Chamber in the Forest. Cheffer in the daies of King Edgar was in most flourishing

estate, wherein he had the homage of eight other Kings, who rowed his Barge from S. lobus to his Palace, himselfe holding the Helme, as their Supreme.

This City was made a County incorporate of it felfe by

King Henry the Scuenth, and is yeerely gouerned by a Maior, with Sword and Mace borne before him in State, two Sheriffes, twenty foure Aldermen, 2 Recorder, 2 Town-Clerke, and a Se recent of Peace, foure Sergeants, and ix Temen.

It hath beene accounted the Key into Ireland and great pitiest is that the Port should decay, as it daily doth the Sea

being flopped to scoure the River by a Causey that the artest teth Decarter Bridge. Within the walles of this City are eight Parish-Churches, S. lobns the greater, and lesser, in the Suburbs, and the White-Friers, Blacks-Friers, and Numbery, now suppressed. From which City the Pole is elevated ynto the degree 53.58.minutes of Latitude, and from the first point of the West in Longitude voto the 17. degree and 98. minutes.

(8) The Earledome whereof was possessed from the The Earles. Conquerour, till it fell laftly to the Crowne, the laft of whom (though not with the leaft hopes) is Prince Honry, who to the Titles of Prince of Wales, and Duke of Cornwall, hath by Succession, and right of Inheritance, the Earledone of Chesuccession, and ngm of annothance, the European of Lon-fer annoxed to his other most happy Stilles: Vpon whose Person I pray that the Angels of Leobs God may sucr at-tend, to his great glory, and Great Britaines happine

Trees, floting in Bagmere onely against the deaths of the Heires of the Brerstons thereby feated, and after to linke vntill the next like occasion : or inforce for truth the Propheciewhich Lepland in a poeticall furie forespake of Beeston clewing n. Aplease in a poetical furth foreignace of sections. Capilla, highly mounted wpon a fleepe hill: 1 floudiforging my felie, and wonted opinion, that can hardly beleeue any fuch vaine predictions, though they bee told from the mouthes of criedinas Baymer Trees are, or learned Leyland. for Beeften, who thus writeth :

ror sergen, who thus writeth:
The day will come when it agains feel/means hie head aloft,
If I a Propher may be heard from Serre that (19/6) of:
With eight other Caffees this Shire hath becne ftrengthned,
which were Castle Caffee, Shoetarh, Showins h, Chaffer, Peule fourd, Dunham, Fredefiam, and Hanless; and by the praiers fourth, Doubtom, Freditions, and Hamiton; and by the praiers (as then was taught) of eight Religious Houfes therein fea-ted, preferued; which by King Honry the Eighth were fup-prefied: namely Stantons, libros; blassfeld, Norvan, Banda-rie, Combrowers, Bud-boath, and Yale-Royal, bedies the

When and Blacks Pries, and the Namerie in Cheffer.
This Countes division is into Guen Hundreds. wherein are feated thirteene Market Townes, eighty fix parish Churches, and thirty eight Chapels of Eafe.

TI

John Fit Wil Malmef. Ranulph Higdon. Roger Houen. Alfridus Beueria



Daurcham, Nerth. Breedbury, Mat. Breenbury, Nerth. Brown, Nerth. Bro	Moreton, North, Mutron, Sach, Motton, North, Motton, North, Motton, North, Motton, North, Motton, North, Andrew, F. Odat. Moutram in Longdendale, S. Mat. Moutram in Nantwichte, West. Neff. wys.	Red Rocke, Wyer. Redungs, Basel, Ridge, Mar. Ridge, Eddef, Rungay Flu. Rock Saunge, Basel, Rock-hall, Norto, North Mee. Rode, Hall Mee. Rode, Hall Mee. Rode, Mar. Rondel, J. Rondle, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware,	Thelwell and the control of the cont
brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Azi, with the Committee of the Committe	Mothon, 870x. Motram Andrew, J. Mat. Motram Longdendale, J. Mas. Moulton, North. Mulpaton, Eddef, Mulpaton, But, Vermon, But, Vermon, But, Vermon, Mulpaton, North, Vermon, Mulpaton, North, Vermon, North, N	Red Rocke, Wyer. Redungs, Basel, Ridge, Mar. Ridge, Eddef, Rungay Flu. Rock Saunge, Basel, Rock-hall, Norto, North Mee. Rode, Hall Mee. Rode, Hall Mee. Rode, Mar. Rondel, J. Rondle, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware,	Thorneon "yre. Mayow, "yre. Thurstancen, "yre. Tilthon, Brox, Tircenleigh, Noss. Torkynton, Mac. Torpurley, Edder, Toth, Suck. Tramnole, "yre. Great Troughford, Brox.
brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Nazi, brinderigh, Azi, with the Committee of the Committe	Mothon, 870x. Motram Andrew, J. Mat. Motram Longdendale, J. Mas. Moulton, North. Mulpaton, Eddef, Mulpaton, But, Vermon, But, Vermon, But, Vermon, Mulpaton, North, Vermon, Mulpaton, North, Vermon, North, N	Red Rocke, Wyer. Redungs, Basel, Ridge, Mar. Ridge, Eddef, Rungay Flu. Rock Saunge, Basel, Rock-hall, Norto, North Mee. Rode, Hall Mee. Rode, Hall Mee. Rode, Mar. Rondel, J. Rondle, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware, Ronder, Ware,	Thorneon "yre. Mayow, "yre. Thurstancen, "yre. Tilthon, Brox, Tircenleigh, Noss. Torkynton, Mac. Torpurley, Edder, Toth, Suck. Tramnole, "yre. Great Troughford, Brox.
Wyrchdic Boundly, Mer. Eddecbury- Boundly, Mer. Eddecbury- Boundly, Mer. Eddecbury- Browton. Brown, Mer. Brown, Mer. Browton. Brown, Mer. B	Mottram in Longdendale, State. Longdendale, Moulton, North. Mulneton, Eddef, Mulynton, Buek, Mynshull vermon, North, Church Nouth, Mynshull, Nout, Nynshull, Nout,	Ridley, Eddel, Ringay Flat. Rock Saunge, Ende; Rode-hall, Notio. North & Mee. Rode, & Mee. Chapell, & Mee. Rondite, "yre. Rondite," yre.	Tittenleigh, Nest. Torkynton, Mac. Torpurley, Edder. Toft, Sack. Tramnole, Wyre. Great Troughford, Brex.
VVyrchile, Eddesbury, Eddesbury, Broxton, Northwiche, Bucklow, Northwiche, Bucklow, Roundon, Pere, Bucklow, Nantwiche, Macciesfeild, Macciesfe	Mottram in Longdendale, State. Longdendale, Moulton, North. Mulneton, Eddef, Mulynton, Buek, Mynshull vermon, North, Church Nouth, Mynshull, Nout, Nynshull, Nout,	Ridley, Eddel, Ringay Flat. Rock Saunge, Ende; Rode-hall, Notio. North & Mee. Rode, & Mee. Chapell, & Mee. Rondite, "yre. Rondite," yre.	Tittenleigh, Nest. Torkynton, Mac. Torpurley, Edder. Toft, Sack. Tramnole, Wyre. Great Troughford, Brex.
Eddesbury- Broxton- Broxton- Broxton- Northwiche. Broxton- Bucklow. Nantrwiche, Bucklow. Mantrusche, Macclesfeild. Bawborn- Budeno, Park- Budeno, Park	Longdendale, Some. Moulton, North. Mulpeton, Eddef, Mulynton, Buek, Mynthull 1, North, vernon, Jorth, vernon, Jorth, Mynthull, J. North, Mynthull, J. North, N	Ringay Fint. Rock Saunge, Burk: Rode-holl, Natio. North? Mac. Rode, f Romyleigh? Mac. Chapell, f Rondire, "yre.	Torkynton, Mac. Torpurley, Edder. Toff, Suck. Tramnole, Wyre. Great Troughford, Brox.
BroxXOn. Northwiche. Bucklow. Bucklow. Nantwiche. Macclesfeild. Macclesfeild. Ma	Mulpeton, Eddef, Mulynton, Buek, Mynthull vernon, 5 North, Church Nont, Mynthull, 5 Nont,	Rode-hall, Norto. North? Mac. Rode, f Romyleigh? Mac. Chapell, j Rondire, "yrc.	Tramnole, Wyre. Great Troughford, Braz.
Northwiche, Bucklow, Bucklow, Burklow, Santwiche, Manclesfelld, Bushow, Jave, Bushow,	Mulynton, Suck. Mynthull North. Vernon, North. Church Nent. Mynthull, Nent.	Rode, Mac. Romyleigh Mac. Chapell, Mac. Rondie, Tyre,	Tramnole, Wyre. Great Troughford, Braz.
Duk.Nuw. Branickh.Pyr. Bengreno, Meta. Macclesfeild. Macclesfeild. Bushow. Javet. Bushow. Ja	Church Nent.	Chapell, J. Mac. Ronaire, " yre,	Great Troughford, Brox.
Buddenh, 19/10. Budonnh, Edd. Great 3 Bue 4. Bodoworth, Bue 4. Buglavron, North. Butkeley, 1972. Echelle, Mar. Exten bost, 1982. Exten bost	Church Nent. Mynthull, Nent.	Ronalite, l'yre,	Troughford, 1 Brox.
Buddenh, 19/10. Budonnh, Edd. Great 3 Bue 4. Bodoworth, Bue 4. Buglavron, North. Butkeley, 1972. Echelle, Mar. Exten bost, 1982. Exten bost	N	Ronalite, l'yre,	Bridge 3
Budworth, Eddig, Budworth, Eddig, Great 3 Ease, Bodworth, St. Budlawton, North, Buglawton, North, Eaten host, Pres. Ecchelics, Mass. Kerthingham, North, Kerthingham, North, Kerthingham, North,	1	Poor Port	Bridge Troughford, Hddes.
Great Buck. Budworth, Surk. Budhayron, North. Buglawron, North. Butkete, North. Exten boat, North. Ecchelles, Mex. Ecchelles, Mex.	NANTWICHE, Nant.		Tuffingham, Rear
Rong Addef. Bukkeley, Brox. Ecchelles, Mac. Kerthingham, North.	NANTWICHE, Nant.	Roop, Nant. Rocherstorne, Buck.	Twembroke, North. Twenlow, North.
Ron, Addel. Bukkele, Brax. Ecchelles, Mass. Kerthingham, North. Chon, Alexa. Banbury, E. Léef. Eccletion, Spax. Ecchelles, Mass. Rectlinoulne, Mass. Chon B. Bureton, Nant. Ediation, Nant. Kallingson, Brax. Kugange, Burdand, Nant. Rige, Brax. Kugelisj, Eddef.	Limber	Rudheath, North. Ruffheton, Editf.	Twentow, North.
Ron _s Nent. Rona Busk, Bureton, Nant. Eddefon, Swar. Ryanges, Bureton, Nant. Eddefon, Nant. Kuklington, Swar, Edge, Braz. Kulgefley, Eddef.	Little? myre.	Ruthton, North.	Tydeleston Farnehall, Badder.
grange, Burland, Nant. Bdge, Brox. Ku gelley, Eddef.	Nefton, 3	, s	Tyderington, North, Tymperleigh, Back,
	Nelton, 1	1.0	
dlynton, Mas. Burton, Eddel. Eggerton, Frex. Rissby	Netherton, Eddef.	Sale, Buch	V
dlyncon, Mass. Burton, Eddig(. Burton, Free. Bur	Newbold, sver.	Saighati 7 1879 c.	Vale riall, #ddef.
Nether Mes. Burwardley, Braz. Erdley hall, Mac. Kirkby, Swyre.	Newbold althury, North	Saighalli little, 5 "yre. Saighalli maffy, } "yre.	Vernon, Nant.
	Newhall, North.	Salehron, Bran	Vpton,Mas.
Iderleigh, F. Kynarron, Brox.	Newhall, Nant.	Salghton, Brex. Sandywaye, Eddef.	Voion, Reas
	Newton chappell, Mar.	Secome, Wyre. Shauinton, Nant.	Vrdefleight, Man
Harfay Bross 1 I L	Newton, Erex.	Shilbroke, Narth.	Vekynton, Eddef.
illoitock, North. Caldev, Wyre. Farndon, Brox.	Newton, Euch. Newton, Eddef.	Shokylache, Brow.	w
Alman chall, Brox. Alpram, Eddef. Caldey, Juyee, Finborow, Eddef. Lache, Brox.	Newton, Wye.	Shokylache, Pyre.	Walfeild, Yorth.
Macher Naut. Caldecor Brev. Flanvards Eddel Deneva.	Newton, Brox.	Shotwicke, Ware,	Wellston Edder
	Newton, Norths	Rough 3 mre-	Waliston, Eddef. Walrescore, Eddef.
Alton, B. ddef. Capenhurth, wyre. FRODDESHAM, Eddef. Landccan, wyre. LTRINGHAM, B. Capenfthorne, Mas. Froddesham hill, B.ddef. Lareton, wyre.	Norbury, Mac.	Rough Shotwicke, Shrigleigh, Mac.	Ouer) Buch
duandeley, Eddef. Cardyn, Brox. Fulbrooke Flu. Larketon, Brox.	Norleigh, Eddef.	Shrowcabury Buck.	Walton, Buck.
duafton Nant. Caringham North. Church?		Abbey, Sante	Walton, James.
	Norton priory }	Abbey, Buck. Shuthingeflaw Mat.	Warburton 2
stelydd, North. Chad chapell, Brox. Gayton. Lea, North,	Northerden, Mar.	Smallwood, Nerth.	Warburton } Back. chapell, } Back. Wardley, Eddef.
	NORTHWICHE, Nor Northwiche; &ddef. caffell, &ddef.	Smetenham, North. Smethewick, North.	Wardley, Eddef. Wateton, North.
recey, have defined to the forterly added, to the forterly tree, if ye. Chappell in Back Grayby, when the fireete, the fir	caffell, & Eddef.	Snellefton Mac.	Wareton, Bray.
Chappell in J. Buck. Graysby, Wyre. Lee, Neut. the firecte, Suck. the firecte, Suck. Chelle, Mar. Graysby, Wyre. Lee, Neut. Lee, Neu		Somerford, North,	Warmingham, North,
usheley, 8 ct. Chedle, Mas. Grimfdiche, 8 sth. Lee Flu. Meton, Eddef. Chelford, Mas. Gropenhall, 8 sek. Leddesham, 19 re.	1 -	Sometford, Mac. SONDBACHE, Marth.	Wayleigh, Mac.
Asheron Buck. I W E S T C HE-2 Grynley Brox. Leford, "Tre.	Offerton, Mac.	1 Sound Wave	Webunbers, Nest, Weeuer, Eddef.
Aton grange, Buck. Childer Brown. Godleigh, Mas. Leighes, North. High Buck.	Oggerleighe, Brox. Okehanger Nant.	Spittle, Wyre.	Weener Flu. Welfhrowe, Name
Gor hanvell Buck. Theren (")". Gor hall Mee	mere, Nam.	Spittle, Wyre. Sprafton, North, Spurftow, Edder, Spurfache, North,	Welford, Ruck.
	oldfeild, Wyre. Oldcattle, Brox.	Spurlache, North.	Weston, Back. Weston, Name
Cholesundeflos Nest. David. (Brox. Loflocke Flu.	Ollarton, Buck.	Stackton, Buck. Stanford, Bress.	Weston, Nane,
	Ollarton, Buck. Olton, & ddef. Ouer, Eddef.	Stanford Name,	Wetenhall Eddef. chap. Saddef. Weuerham, Eddef.
B Chorleigh, Mari. Chorleigh, Mari. Chorleigh, Mari. Chorleigh, Mari. Lodocke phra. Lodicock phr	Ouer, Eddel. Ouerchurch, Wyre,		Westerham, Eddef. Whateroft, North.
la keford, Wyre, Chorleton, 8rex. Gowy Flu. Lyme, Mac.	Ouerron, Mese.	Great 3 Wyre. Stanney, 3 Wyre.	Whelocke, North.
aduleigh, Nant. Chorleton, Wyre. Lymme, Back. Raggeleigh, Nant. Chorwiey, Brox. H		Stanney, S	Whelocke Flu, Whelocke Fiu,
Bagmere? Churchenheath, Brax.	Oulefton, Warth, Oufton, Eddef.	Stanthorne, North. Stapleford, Brox.	
	Oxton, Why.	Stapleford, Edder	Ouer ? Buch.
	7, M. P	Stapleleigh, Nant, Staueley, Mac, Stockton, Brox,	Ouer Buck.
Sarndone North Clauchton Have Hampton, Brox. MALPAS, Brox.		Stockton, Brez.	Whiteley, Buck.
Barnifon, I' yre. Clifton, Back Hanley, Brox. Manley, Eddy. Little 2_Eddyf. Clotton, Eddyf. Hancon, Broz. Marbury, Buck. Marbury, Nant.	Partington, Buck. Peckietton, Eddef.	Stockham, Buch. Stoke, Nant.	Whitegate, #ddef. Whitegate, #ddef. Wichehalgh, Brow.
Little 3 Eddef. Clotton, Eddef, Hanton, Stor. Marbury, Buck. Barow, Little 4 Eddef. Clutton, Braz. Happenford, Eddef. Marbury, Nent.	Penneity, Wyre. Pephull, Mac.	Scoke, Wwe.	Wichehalgh, Erau,
		STOP FORD, MAL	Wigland, Brex. Wirnflaw, Mee.
	Pephull, Mac. Nether } Buck. Peuer, } Buck. Ouer Buck. Peuer flu.		
	Ouer Buck.	Stretton ? Buck.	Winyngton, Eddef. Wistanton, Nent.
	Peuer, J		
Parrimleigh West. CONGLETON North Hatrefleigh Mac. Mafefen Brox.	Pickmer, Buck.	Sutton, Mac.	Witton, North. Wollafton, Ware,
	Pickmere, Buch. Pickson, Brix.	Sutton, Buck.	Wollafton, Ware, Wollafton, Nest.
	Plemefloo, Flox,	Sutton, Nerth	Wolftanwood, Nent.
	Plumleigh, Fuck. Plymystd, Wyre.	Sutton, }" yre.	Woodbanke, Fire.
lebynton "yre, Coron, Brax. Hawarden, Brax. Great Wyre, Hellesbyl Hawarden, Brax. Meoles, Wyre, Hellesbyl Hawarden, Brax. Hellesbyl Hawarden, Brax. Great Wyre, Hellesbyl Hawarden, Brax. Hawa	Plymyord, Wyre. Podynton, Wyre.	Great?	Woodcot, Nam. Woodchurch, Wyre.
		Sutton, Swyre, Swanlowe, Edder, Swanlowe, Edder,	Woodford, Mac. Woodhay, Nest,
Secheton, Nant, Cranage, North, torr, Madel, Merpull, Mas. Seclion, Eddif. Hellesby, Eddef. Merp Flu.	Ponyageon, Mac. Portwood Mac. hall, Mac. Poolles, Nant. Neither Myre. Ouer Poole, Byre. Poole, Byre.	Swanlowe, Eddes. Sydenhall, Brox.	Woodhay, Nest,
Section catters, many. Crew, Natt. Heathall News Mickleburft, Mee'	Poolles, Nant.	Sydinton, Mac.	Woodhead, Mec. Woodhoufes, Eddef.
ticketton Brev. Church 7 Henthaw, Mac. Middleton?	Nether 3 myre.	7	Woodhoufes, Sidef. Worleston, Natt.
Beleigh, Norsh, Ciilleton, Erax, Herrford, Eddef, grange, Surkin, Flu. Little Rear Herrholl, Stex. MIDDLEWICHE,	Me. Ouer ?	1 -	
dokenhall Hove. Cuffleron Coroza Higheliffe hill Buck. Milnhoule, Mas.	Poole, Pyre.	Ouer 3 Pack	Wrenbury, Nant. Wrynehill, Nant.
Slakenhall, Neat, Rowe Street, Hokehull, Eddef, Milpoole, Neat. Rayron, Brox. Crificton, Srex. Hoke, Nerth, Mobberley, Sark, Moldworth, Edward, Modworth, Modwort	I ancele	Over Tableigh, Buck. Nether Tableigh, Buck. Tame Flu. Tame Flu.	Wrynehill 2(ent.
Bulyn Mas. Crouchton Ware. Hole, From Moldworth # 144	Pout Chap. Mas. Poulford, Brax.	Tableigh, Buck.	Wymbold ? Eddef.
Pathon Liu Crayron Newth Holford North Press.	Poulford, Brez.	Tame Flu. Tatenhell, Brox.	Wymbold Baddef. ftrongford, S. Wymboldefley, North.
	Poulton, Brez. Poulton, Pyre. Pownell, Mac.	Tatenhall Brox.	WymbolGeiley, North.
Eclynton, Mac. Hotterd, Mac. Molymon Belleville, Malymon Belleville, Mac. D Honore, From. Malymon Belleville, Forth. Hooton, Fyr. Banefire, Belleville, Molymon 2	Pownall, Mac.	heath, 3 broz.	Wynyngton, Eddef. Wynyngham, Euch. Wyceiwall, Nam.
Boteleigh, Mee. D Honore, Brew. Botlock, North. Bonghon, Brew. Dane Flo. Worth. Horton, Eddy. Molymon. North. Horton, Eddy. Molymon.	Prenton, wree,	Taxball . 2000	Wyteiwall, Nam.
Bouchton, Brox. Dane Flu. Worth. Horton, Eddel, Molyaton Form. Dane Flu. Worth. Horton, Eddel, torrend, Froz.	Prefibury, Mac.	Tatton, Suck. Taxhall, Atac. Taxall, Mac. TERVIN, Eddef.	Wyrwyn, Brox. Wythinton, 2446.
	Preftor Ruck.	TERVIN, Eddef. Tetton, Worth,	1
Bondon, Berte Dane North Hough, Name, Monkes Name	71. 2.1. 044		· Y
Powdon, Beth. Dane North, Houlen, North, Moore, Bot, More, March, North, N	Prefton, Buck, The Pyle, Eddef.	Tenerton, Eddef. Thingetwiftee Mac.	Yardiwicke, North

Thangwall, wyre.

Yaton, Mar.

Al

Dornall grange, Eddef.

LANCASHIRE.

(bap.39.

LANCA-SHIRE.



Pock.L.

Forme.

Dimensirie

He Countie Palatine of Lanrafter (famous for the foure Henries , the fourth, fifth, fixth, and feuenth, Kings of England, derived from John of Gannt Duke of Lancaster) is vponthe South confined and parted by the River Merfey, from the Countie Palatine of Cheffer, the faire

Countie of Darbybire bordering vpon the East; the large Country of Torkefibire, to-gether with Westureland and Cumberland, being her kind neighbours vpon the North, and the Sea called Mare Hibernicum imbracing her vpon the West.

(2) The formethereof islong, for it is so inclosed between Yorkefore on the East fide, and the Irifb Sea on the Welf, that where it boundeth vpon Chefine on the South fide, it is broder, and by little and little more Northward it gooth, (confining vpon Weitmerland) the more narrowit groweth. It containeth in length from Brather Northward. to Halwood South-ward, 57. miles; from Donton in the East, to Formby by Alimonth in the well, 3 1, and the whole circuference in compatie, one hundred threefcore and ten miles,

(3) The Ayre is subtile and piercing, not troubled with grolle vapors or fogglemilts, by reason whereof the peo-ple of that Country liue long and healthfully, and are no fubic to firange and vnknowne difeafes,

(4) The Soile for the generalitie is not very fruitfull, ye

produceth such numbers of Cattell of such large propos tion, and fuch goodly heads and hornes, as the whole King-dome of Spains doth scarce the like. It is a Country repleni-shed with all necessaries for the vice of man, yeelding without any great labour the commodity of corne, flax, graffe, coales, and fuch like. The Sea alfoadding her bleffing to the

coales, and fush like. The Sea alloadding het bieling to the Land, that the people of the Promise want nothing that feruse either for the fullenance of nature, or the fatteres of paperiar. They are plentifully furnified with all force of fish, flesh, and fowles. Their principal field in Coale and Tarfe, which they have in great abundance the Gendemon way of the Great ornamentro their stantors and rouses. And unogen twe far from Londone (the capitall Citie of this Kingdome) yet doth it euery yeere furnish her and many other parts of the Land befides, with many thoulands of cartell (bred in this Country) giving thereby and otherwaies a firm zetflimony to the world, of the bleifed abundance that it hath pleafed God to inrich this noble Dukedome withall.

(5) This Counties ancient Inhabitants were the Brigants of whom there is more mention in the Description of tants. Yorkelbire, who by Claudou the Emperor were brought vn-der the Roman Subjection, that so held and made it their Seat, secured by their Garrisons, as hath bin gathered as well by many inscriptions found in walles and ancient monuments fixed in flones, as by certaine Altars erected in fauor of their Emperors. After the Romans, the Saxons brought it under their protection, and held it for a part of their Nor thumbrian Kingdome, till it was first made subjugate to the Inuation of the Dases, and then conquered by the victorious Nermans, whose posterities from thence are branched further into England

(6) Places of Antiquitie or memorable note are these the Towne of Manchester (so famous as well for the Market Mancheller. place. Church, and Colledge, as for the refort vntoit for clo thing Iwas called Maneumium by Amonine the Emperor, and

Lanafter more pleasant then full of people,

was made a Fort and Station of the Romans. Riblechefter (which taketh the name from Rhibell, a little River neere Clithere) though it be a small Towne, yet by tradition hath been called the richest Towns in Christendom, and reported to have beene the Seat of the Romans, which the many Monuments of their Antiquities, Statues, peeces of Coine, and other feuerall inscriptions, digged vp from time to time by the Inhabitants, may give vs sufficient per-

(walion to beleeue. But the Shire-towne is Lancafter, more pleasant in fitua ion, then rich of Inhabitants, built on the fouth of the riuer Lon, and is the lame Longonicum, where (as wee finde in the Notice Proninces) a company of the Longonicarious vnder the Lieutenant Generall of Brasine lay. The beautie

of this Towne is in the Church, Castle, and Bridge: her freets many, and ffretched farre in length. V nto this Town fireets many and firected fairer in length Vino tha Toon
King Edward the Third granted a Motor and two Builty,
which to this day are elected out of reduce Brethere, afte,
field by reventy foure fluggliffel, by whom fix is yet-eyl in
the library to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control of the control of the control
to the control of the control
to the control of the control o ples, and her Longitude removed from the first west point into the degree 17, and 40, fcruples.

(7) This Country in divers places suffereth the force of It is severed in (7) This Country in divers places tunereth the force of the force of the force of the force of the violently rentalunder one part of the shire from the other: as in Fourness, where the Ocean being displeased that the Shore should from thence shoot a maine way into the west, hath not obstinately ceased from time to time to flash and mangle it, and with his fell irruptions and boifterous tides to deuoure it.

Another thing there is, not vinworthy to be recommended to memorie, that in this Shire, not farre from Fourneffe Felles, the greatest standing water in all England (called Winander-Mere) lieth, fretched out for the space of ten miles, of wonderfull depth, and all paued with flone in the bottome : and along the Sea fide in many places may bee feene heapes of fand, upon which the people powre water, until it recouer a faltish humor, which they afterwards boile with

Turfes, till it become white falt. (8) This Country, as it is thus on the one fide freed by the natural refiftance of the Sea from the force of Inualons, fo is it strengthned on the other by many Castles and fortified places, that take away the opportunitie of making Roades and Incursions in the Countrey. And as it was with the first that felt the furie of the Saxon cruelties so was it the last and longest that was subdued under the West-Saxon

Monarchie. (9) In this Province our noble Arthur (who died laden

with many trophies of honour) is reported by Nisius to have put the Saxons to flight in a memorable Battle neers Duglaffe, a little Brooke not farre from the Towne of Wig gin. But the attempts of warre, as they are scuerall, so they are vncertaine : for they made not Dake Wade happie in his are uncertaine: for they made not Dag Wade happie in his fucceffe, but returned him an vinformate conterprise in the Battle which he gaue to Ardulph King of Northumberland, at Billangho, in the yeare 798.50 were the esents uncertaine in the Citili Wares of Yare and Leanedfer: Or by them was bred and brought forth that bloudy division and fatall strife. of the Noble Houses, that with variable successe to both parties (for many yeeres together) molefled the peace and quiet of the Land, and defiled the earth with bloud, in fuch Lanager. violent manner, that it exceeded the horrour of those Cimil Warres in Rome, that were betwixt Marine and Soylla, Pompey and Cafer, Offenium and Automy; or that of the two re-nowned Houles Valoys and Barbon, that a long time troubled the State of Frances for in the division of these two princely Families there were thirteene fields fought, and three Kings

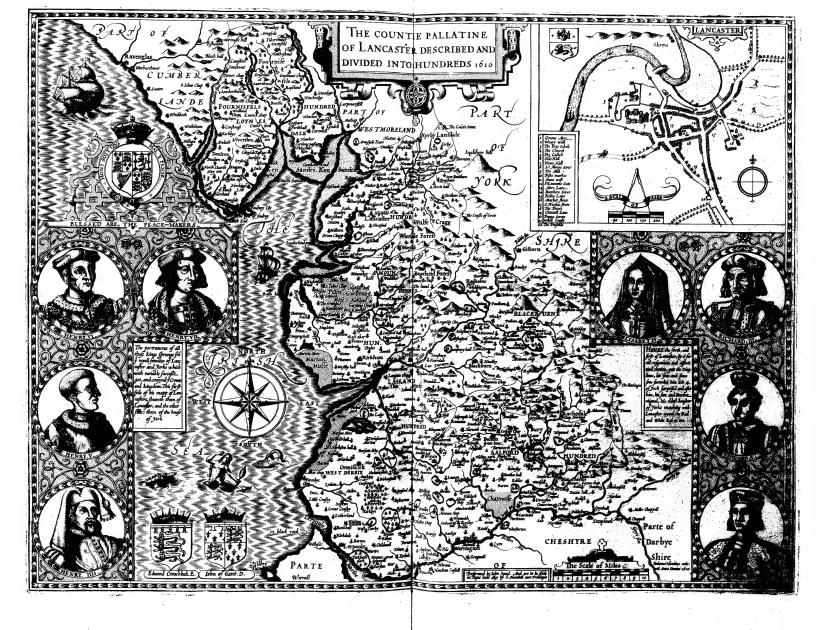
of England, one Prince of Wales, twelve Dukes, one Mar of England, one Frince of ***Aust, weited Dukes, on the red, edge, eightener Earles, one Victorus, and three and weistle Barons, befides Knights and Gentlemen, loft their liues in the fame. Yet attail, by the happier mariage of Hami's the Seizenth, King of England, next heir to price Houle of Leader, with Elasaberth dusplers and heirs to Edward the Fourth, of the Houle of Yorky, the white and red Rofes were continued to the second s onioined, in the happie vniting of tholetwo dittided Families, from whence our thrice renowned Souersigne Lord King James, by faire fequence and function, adott angie Lord, city faire fequence and function, adott worthily entoy the Diademe: by the benefit of whole happy government, this County Palatine of Laurafter is professous in her Name and Greatnetic.

(10) I findethe remembrance of foure religious houses thathaue beene founded within this County (and finee fur preffed) both faire for fructure and building, and rich for lest and fituation: namely, Burfloyb, Whalleis, Helland, and Penneriham. It is divided into fix Hundreds, befides Fourneffe Fells & Lancafters Liberties, that lie in the north part, Je beautified with 15. Market Townes, both faire for fituatio and building, and famous for the concourse of people for buying and selling. It hath twenty fix Parishes, besides Chapels, (in which they duly frequent to dinine Seruice) and those populous, as in no part of the Land more.

lewas laft made lubled to the Well-Saxon

Duke VVade put

The chill warre



Harwood great, Black

Haftingden, Elsek, Haughton weft, Sal, Hauxibead, Leyn,

Haye, weft

Haycoce, Loya. Heapey, Leyl.

S. Helins, Weff

Heskin, Legl. Heskethe, Legl.

poffage,

Heyboules, Black.

Heaton Norris, Sal.

Henrhorne, Bluk.

Hundreds in Lancashire.

r. Loynesdale. 2. Amoundernes. 3. Biackburne.

4. Leyland. 5. West-Darbie, 6. Salford. Abram, Weft. Burneley, Black.

Accrington new, Black Accrington, Black Burrowe, Loys. Burroweh, Weft. Burrout abbey, Weft. Adlungton, Leyl. Aighton, Black. AkrintonChapell,Blace Bn:ton wood, Well Aldingham, Loys. Alham, Black. Alker, Well. Butterwood, Byram, Weff. Burrerworth Sal. Calder flu. Allerton, 19. ft. Calder flu. Ale mouth seed Consteild Lens Althome, Black, Cappull, Leil. Anderconford, #: fl. Carleton, Amend. Carpmaniall, Lops. Cartmell, Lops. Appleton, Welt. Appleton, Welt. Ardwicke, Sal. Cartlone pallage, Loya Castleton, Sal. Caton, Logis.
Catford hall, Amond. Argholme, Lons. Arelath, Logns. Arnefyd, Loyns. Arum, Loyes. Catterall. Amond. Chadgley, Black. Chatmotle, Sal. Afbley, Leiland. Charburne, Elade Chartertonn, Sal Athurft, Weft. Afliton, Lopus, Afhton, Sal. Charnocke Lail. Aftern in Ameg. Charnocke } Lail. Athton Chapell, Weft. Athton vnder lyne, Sa Chawerton Sel.

Afhworth, Sal. Aftley, Lept, Aftley, Salf. Aftley, Weft. Alpull, Sal. Atherton, Sal. Atherton, W.f. Attithwait, Lowe Aughton, 199fl. Aughton, Legat. Aynetree, Weft. Aynetree, Weft.

Cheeton Sal.

Childwell, meft. Childwall, meft.

Chippin, Black.

Chorlton, Sal.

Church.

Chorley Lail.

Claffe, Logn. Claron hall, Sal. Claton in the dale, Blec. Claton in the more, Ble. Claughton, Loye, Claughton, Amend. Clayton, Lail. Bacup, Sal. Baire, Loyn. Balderson, Black. Clegge, Sal. Clifton, Sal. Baley, Black. Bankhall, Well. Clifton, Amend. Clitherowe, Elack. Cloughton hill, Layn. Cocker ham, Loyn. Cockley chap: Sal. Bardley, Loya. Barlosy, Sal. Barnfyde, Blick. Baro head, Land Old Barro Ile, Legus Coker flu. Coker fandals, Loys Barton, Amond. Coldcoats, Black. Barton, Sel. Colder flu.
The Colledge, Sal.
COLNE, Black. Beckenfall, Levil. Beckenfall, Lept, Bediorde, Weft, Bergerode, Among Bewfey, Weft, Bickerflatfe, Weft, Conifton Louis Conyfide pallage, Loys Bigger, Loyn.
Bilesborowe, Arsond. Corney ravve, Ame Cotham, Amend. Billington, Black. Coulton, Logn. Crackford, Logn. Pilling, 11 cft. Birche, 18 eft. Bifpliam, Lail. Bifpham, Amer Cranfurth, Logn. Creftingham, Logn. Crofte, Wolf. BLACKBURNE, Black Crompton, Sal. Blackley, Sal. Blackbrode, Sal. Blackefton coge, Sal. Blackerode, IFell. Crosbie great, Weff. Crosbye intle, 17 eff. Crosholl, west. Croshouse, Lope, Blawithe, Loyns, Blefdaile, Amerd. Croston, Last. Croxtath, Well. Crumfall, Sal. Culcheth, Well. Bolland, Black. Bold, West, Boothe, West, Boorberhall Sal Cunicough, VV eft Curdeley, Weft. Borwicke, Lops. Botton, Leve. Dalton, Lojn. Dalton, Lojn. Dalton, Weft. Darwin flu. BOULTON, Sal Fourh, Leyw. Boyeland forrest, Bradley, Weft. Dau'ton calle, Loye. Dean, Sal. Denaholme, S. I.

Proofbaw, Sal.

Prah y, Lujn.

Brerecutt, Stack.

randlesham, Sal

Brindle, Leif Diddeshare Sal Brinfay, Weft. Dilworthe, Bieck. Brockell Amend Ditton, Wolf. Brotherton Lail. Broughton, Amand Broughton in ? Loin. fournes, Lays, Brandall, Black. Bryn, Weft. Brinynge, Amand, Bulke, Lays. Burcors Love Burgh, Layl. BVRIE, Sal.

Chapell Sal. Dowgles, Legi. Dowles flu. Downham, Black. Down-holland, West. Dulfden, Sal. Heath, Lepl. Heaton, Lopt, Heaton, Sal. Duckley, Black. Duddon flu, Dunkinbalgh, Black Durwen vpper, Black Durwen nether, Place Outton, Black. Duxburye, Leyl. Heft, Loys, Heftbanke Legi, Eatonberg, Leyl, Earton, West, Eccleiten, West, Eccleston little, celefton, Legt. Eckles, Sal. Edgecroffe, Sal. Edgworth, Sal. Edmarth Chapel Egleston, 117 st. Egron, 1091. Elandas, Loys. Elhills, Loyn. Ellynburgh, Sal. Ellwicke, Amond.

Elfton, Amend.

South } Loyn.
North } Loyn.

End, J Loga Extwift, Black.

Failsworth, Sal.

Farleton, Loye, Farneworth, Wolf

Farrington, Leyl

Fawbrigge, Black, Fazakerley, Woft, Fernehead, Weft. Fildefley, Weft.

Fishwick, Amend. Flixton, Sal. Flokeshato, Lopn. Formebye, West. Fosse flu:

Garret, Sal.

Golborne, Wejt, Gorton, Sel.

Grathwat, Loyn,

Greena Amend

Grene, Weft.

Gouinarch, Amend

Gowborne head, Loya The Grange, Amond.

Greeno, Amora. Greeno Castle, Amora Greenoaleh, Amora.

Grefgarth, Loys. Greffingham, Loys. Grimflore, Amand.

Hackinfton, Amand. Hackonfdall, Amand.

Grifedale, Loyn. Gryfehurft, Sal.

Haclelock, Well.

Haclelock, Well. Haighe, Well. Haighton, Amond. Hale, Well. Halewood, Well.

Weff Leyn, Hall, Leyn, Halliwell, Sal,

Halliwell, Sel. Halfall, Well. Halton, Leyn, Hambleton, Amerd. Hamfeild hall, Leyn.

Handley, Elack, Hapton, Black, Hardhorne, Amand, Harrok hall, Leyl, Harricbeck flu.

Hartlebeck flu. Harwich Chapell, Sal. Harwood, Sal. Harwood little, Slack.

Denton, Sal.
Denton hall, Sal.
Detbie welt, Well.

Highterld, Loys, Hindley, Weft. Hodder flu Holland Chanell & Holme, Black, Hollin, VYelt Holme, TUIA. Hoole much, Leyl. Hoole little, Leyl. Hopwood, Sal. Horneby Cafile, Loyn. Horwiche, Sal. Hotherfall Amend Houghton, Leyl. Houghton rowre Place Houghton towre, Elvi, Houghton Chapell, Wel Houghwick, Leyl. Howker, Leyn. Hugh hall, Sal. Hulton parke, Sal. Hulton, Sal. Huncot, Black. Hunderfeild, Sal. Hurleston hall, VVest. Hut, VVeft. Hutton, Loyn, Hutton, Leyl, Hytham, Lays.

Foulney Ile, Loyn. Fournife fels. Loyn. Fournite fels, Loyn,
Fornelle, Loyn,
Foxdenton, Sal.
Freekleton
great,
Frith hall, Loyn, I Ighlenhill park Black. Ince, VV eft.
Ince blundell, Weft. Inkellip, Amond Inskippe, Amond, S. Iohns chapell, Garftrange] Amond. GARSTRANGE, Am Kallamer, Amond. Glafon, Loya. Glasbrooke, Welf. Glayften Caftle, Loya.

Kellet nether, Logs. Kellet ouer, Logs. Ken flu. Ken fandes, Laye. Kenmon, W. ft. Kerman shulme, Sal. Keuerdale, Black. Kilcheth, VVell. Kirkebie, VVeft. Kirkebye Lope. KIRKEHAM, Amend. Kirkland, Amond, Knowefley, VVeft, Knowefley, VVeft, Kulefhill, Black,

Lailand mofe, Lail. Lailand, Lail. LANCASTER, Ley. Langhoo hall, Black, Langton Chapell, Lail, Langtree, Lail, Larbreck, Amand. Larbrike, Amend. Laftok, Sel. Lathome, VVell. Laton, Amend. The Laund, Amend Lawcon, VVeft. Lawe, Black. S. Lawrence, Amend. Lez, Amond. Lecke, Loyn. Lee, Loyn. Leece, Loyn. Leghero, Leyn. Leighe, Weft. Leighe weft, Weft. Lerpoole hauen. Veft. Powlton An

LERPOOLE, VVe.

Little } Sal. cuer. Great } Sal Leuen Sandes, Loye. Leyghton, Loye. Linecar, VVell. Litherland, VVell. Littleburgh, Sal. The Lodge, Larl. The Lodge, Amond Longridge hill, Elack. Longridge Chapell, E

Longton, Lail. Low, VVeft. Lowick, Loyn. Lun flu. Lychate, VVeft. Lydiate, VVeft. Lyndell, Leyn. Lythom, Amond. Lyucley, Elzek. MANCHESTER, Sai

Marton, VVeft. latton mere, VV-A Marton mere, Amond Marihden, Black. Martholme, Black. Malengill, Loya, Meales, VVell. Mearley, Eleck. Meawdifley, La L. Medler, Amond. Medlock flu. Medlock flu.
Melling, Loya,
Melling, Vieß,
Mellor, Elsek,
Michaels church, Au
Middleton, Sal. Middleton, Layu. Mierflough, Amand. Milnerow, Sal. Mitton, Elztk, Morelees, Sel, Mosbarrow, VV eft. Moscroft, VVest, The Mosle, West, Moston, Sal. Mowbricke, Amend.

Nateby hall, Amond. Newbiggin, Logn. Newbridg, Logn. Newburgh, Veft. Newchurch, Veft. Newchall, Tueft. Newhall, Sal. Newhall, Sal. Newland, Lapin, New parke, UVeft, Newton, Lopa, Newton, Amend, Newton, Amenda Newton, Sel. Newton, Logn. Newton in

makerfeild, VViff. Nibthwar, Loyn. Nighull, VV elt-Northmeales, VVeft. ORMESCHVRCH, 194 Orrell, VV eft. Asbaldefton, Elsek. Ofmonderley, Loya. Diwoldtwift. Black Ouerton, Loyn. Ouldham, Sal. Oxecliffe Lean Oxenfeild, Loyn.

Paddynham, Place New } VVeft. Parbold, Lait. Parr, VVeft.
The Pele, Lail.
The Pele, Weft.
Pembleton, VVeft. Pendleton, Flack, Pendleton, Elack, Pendleton, ad. Penketh, VVeft. Pennington, Loga. Penwortham, Lail. Pelkington, Sal.
Pilkington, Sal.
Pilline mole, Amud.
Pillin hall, Amud.
Pleasington, Black.
Plumpton wood, Amu Plumpton, Amend. Plumton, Legn. Poolton, Veff.

Prescott. PVell.

PRESTON, Amond. T-rinker, Amoud. Terlescowood, weil. Preftwiche, Sal. Prifall, Amond. Teruer Layn. Priscon, Amand. Prile.cmand. Thiftleton, Amond. Pulten, Loyn. Thorneles . Plack Thorneton, w #. horneton, Amand. Thurland, Lys. Thurnham, Leye.

Punnington, PVeft.
The Pyle offoudray, Loyn. Q Quernmore, 1.opa. Thurston for Tiberthwat, Leyn. Radeliffe, Sal. Tilley, Sal. Tockholes, Black. Todmerden, Sal. Ramfyde, Love. Ratcliffe, Sal. Rauenton, Leyl. Rauenpik hill, Sal. Torbucke, well. Torkfearth parke, mell Rawcliffe nether, Amon Rawcliffe ouer, Amond, Torner, Lays.
Torneffe, Lays.
Torneffe, Lays. Rayntorde, VVeft. Tottingtonn, S Townley, Black Read. Black Rediche, Sal. Ribchefter, Black. Traford Sal Frawden, Hrok Ribchefter, Black Treales. Amond Ribbie, Amond. Tunffall, Loys. Turton, Sal. Twekefton, Lail. Ribble flu

Ribleton, Amend Rimington, Black. Ritheton, Black. Riuington, Sal. Rixton, UVcff. Roberts hall, Lept. Robie, VVell. Robrindale, Logn. Poburne flu. Roche fle ROCHEDALE, Sal. Roseaker, Amond. Rosse hall, Amond. Rossendale, Elack. Rostendale, Elac Royton, Sal. Ruseland, Loyn, Rusforth, Leyl, Rysley, Tuest.

Rytonn, Sal. Walton, well. Wantree, well. Saleburie, Black. Warton, Layn, WARRINGTON, mell Salford, Sal Sambury half, Eleck. Warton, Amond. Wesfam, Amond. Samlesbury, Black Saterthwat, Lojn. Sauoke flu. Weeton, Among Wennyngton, Loyn. Werdale, Blac. Scale, Loyn. Scale, Loyn. Scale, Loyn. Scals, Loyn. Scaresbrick, weft. Scotfurth, Loyn. Werdley, Sal. Werdon, La l. Weffbie, Amond. Whailey, Blace Scotturth, Loya. Selleth hall, Loya. Sciton, weft, Shakerley, sal. Shay Chapell, Sal. Wheatley, Blie. Wheelton, Lep'. Whicklebwick, Sal. Whitelelwick, Sal.
Whitelen the?
Whitelen the?
Woods, { Leyl.
Whittington, Leyn.
Whittington, Among
Wicoler, Blee.
Widdnes, weft.
WIGAN, weft.

Twifton, 81 mk.

Vp-holland,weft. Vnnfton,Sal.

Vrivick, Loya.

Wastbreck, 4mond.

Waddiker, Amond. Walmefley, Sal.

Walney liand, Loya. Walney chapell, Lora.

Walthwhite, Lail, Walton hall, Lail, Walton in the dale, Black.

VInefwalton, Lail. VLVERSION, Lor

Shay Chapell, Sal.
Sheuington, Lept.
Shirehead, Amend.
Shirehead, Lepn.
Simon(wood)
Forett,
Singleton little, Amend.
Skales, Amend.
Skales, Amend. WIGAN, well.
Wilphire, Black.
Winsnder, Leyn.
Windle, well.
Windle, well.
Windraley, Amoud.
Windraley, well.
Winftenley, well.
Winftenley, well.
Winfterflu. Skarth north, Laye Skelmeridale, VVelt. Skippon flu. Skirton, Leyn. Siyne, Layn. Smethels, Sal. Souckie VVelt Southwate, Laps. Sothworthe, VVeft. Winwick, weft, Winworth, Sal, Wireflu, Wireflu, Wilwall, Black. Sowberthwat, Logo Sowrbie, Amend Speake, VVeff. Spodden flu. Spotland, Sal. Witton, Elack Stalmyne, Amen Starall, Amend. Woodland Loys. Chapell Loys. Woolfton, well.

Standish, Leil. Standish hall, Leil. Voelton little, well. The Stanke, Loys. I he Stanke, Loys,
Stanley, Loyn,
Stanton, Loys,
Staning hall, Amend,
The Countil
Stones,
Loyn. Woolton great, weff. Woorfton, Black. Wordfall, Sal. Worstey, Sal. Worsthorne, Black, Worsthingtou, Leyl, Wotton, west, Wraye, Amand. Stones, Stonyhurft, Black.
Stronyhurft, Black.
Strangwer, Sal.
Stretforde, Sal.
Stubley, Sal.
Sunbrick, Layn.
Sunderland point,
Sutton, VV 2ft. Wraytholme Layn.
Wraytholme Layn.
Wrayton, Layn.
Wrenoffe bill, Layn.
Wrightington, Leyl.

Wulfe crage, Loyn, Wyerfdale, Lyn. Wyerfale forest, Loyn. Tarleton, Last. Tathom, Logis. Yelland, Loya,

Booke.1.

THE DESCRIPTION OF YORKE-SHIRE.

The henclits of Antiquity.

Yorkshire agre

Mancaff. Aio

most fer to mo

How bounded

North

Eaft,

Humber.

The Soile.

Prontace



S the courfes and confluents of great Rivers, are for the most part fresh in memory though their heads & fountaines, lie commonly vnknowne : fo the latter knowledge of great regions are not traduced to oblinion, thogh perhaps their first originals be obscure, by reason of antiquity, & themany revolu-

tions of Times and Ages. In the delineation therefore of this great Province of Torkebire, I will not infift upon the natration of matters neere vnto vs. but fuccinctly runne ouer fuch as are more remote; yet neither fo fparinglie, as I may feeme to diminish from the dignity of so worthy a Country, nor fo prodigally, as to fpend time in the fuperfluous praifing of that which neuer any (as yet) difprai-ted. And aithough perhaps it may feemen labour vanecellarie, to make relation of ancient remembrances, either of the Name, or Nature of this Nation, especially looking into the difference of Time it felfe (which in cuery age bringeth forth divers effects) and the difpositions of men, that for the most part take letse pleasure in them, then in digulging the occurrents of their owne times: yet hold it not vafitte to beginne there, from whence the first certaine direction is given to proceed; for, (euen of these ancient things) there may be such good vie made, cither by imitation, or way of comparison, as neither thereperition, nor the repetition thereof shall be accounted im-

(2) You shall therefore understand: That the County of Yorke was in the Saxon-tongue called Eueppic peypo Yorkshire how Epproc-reyne, and Ebora-reyre, and now commonly Yerkesbire, farre greater, and more numerous in the Circuit of her Miles, then any Shire of England. She is much bound to the fingular love, and motherly care of Nature, in placing her vinder to temperate a clime, that in euerie measure thee is indifferently fruitfull. If one part of her be flony, and a fandy barraine ground: another is fertile & richly adorned with corne-fields. If you here finde it naked, and deftitute of woods, you shall see it there, the dowed with Forrests full of trees, that have very thicke Full of Trees, bodies, fending forth many fruitfull and profitable branches. If one place of it bee Moorish, Mirie, or vnpleafant: another makes a free tender of delight, and prefents

> (3) The Bishopricke of Durbam fronts her on the north side, and is separated by a continued course of the River Tees. The Germain-Sea lieth fore upon her East-fide beating the Shoares with her boifterous waves and billowes. The West part is bounded with Lancashire, and Westmetland. The South-fide hath Chelbire and Darbivectorestand. The South-tide hash Chefisies and Darbi-fiver(friendly Neighbours vnto her) with the which flee is first inclosed: Then with Notingame, and with Lancoloffires, after dinieded, with that samous Arme of the Sea, Humber: Into which, all the Rivers that water this Country, empty themselues, and pay their ordinary Tributes, as into the common receptacle, and florehouse of Neptune for all the waterie Pensions of this Province,

it felfe to the eye, full of beauty, and contentine variety,

(4) This whole Shite (being of it felfe fo spatious) for the more case and better ordering of her civil governement,is divided into three parts, a which according to 2 ment, is amaged into three parts, i which according to 2.

Ridner, and The World are called The Welf-Ridner, The Eaft Ridner, and The North Ridner. Welf-Ridner is for a good space compassed with the River Onle, with the bounds of Weft tiding. Lancabire, and with the South limits of the Shire , and beareth towards the West and South. East-Riding bends is felfe to the Ocean, with the which, and with the River Derwent, thee is enclosed, and lookes into that pare, where Eaft Riding. the Sunne rifing, and thewing forth his beames, make the world both glad and glorious in his Brightnes. North.
Riding extends it (elfe Northward, hemde in as it were, with North-Riding. the Ruers Teer and Dermont, and a long race of the River Onfe. The length of this Shire, extended from Harrhill in the South, to the mouth of Tees in the North, are neere voto 70. miles, the bredth from Flambrough bead to Hora-cafte vpon the River Law is 80, the whole Circumference

308.Miles.
(5 The Soile of this Countie for the generality is reafo nable fertil and yeelds fufficiency of Corne and Cattle with habite that are the state of its particularly made famous by a Quarry of Stone; out of which the stones newly hewen be very soft, but seasoned with wind and weather

of themselves doe naturally becomexceeding hard and solide. Another, by a kind of Lamestone whereof it confifleth, which being burnt, and conusted into the other parts of the Country, which are hilly, and fom what cold,

erue to manure, and enrich their Corne-fields. (6) That the Romans flourishing in military proweffe made their feuerall stations in this Country; is made manifest by their Monuments, by many Juscriptions faitned in the walles of Churches, by many Columnes engrauen with Roman-worke found lying in Churchyeards, by many votice Altars digd vp that were crected(as it should feeme) to their Tutelar Gods (for they had locall and peculiar Topicke Gods, whom they honoured, as Keepers and Guardians of fome particular places of the Country) as also by a kind of brickes which they vied : for the Re mens in time of peace, to avoide and withfland idlenes, (as Bricks. an enemy to vertuous or valourous enterprifes) fill exexcised their Legions and Cohorts, in casting of ditches making of high-waies, building of Bridges, and ma-king of Brickes, which having fithence beene found, and

from time to time digd out of the ground, proue the anti-quity of the place by the Romane inferiptions vpon them.

(7) No lette Argument of the Piette heereof, are the (7) No lette argument of the Piette heereor, are true many Monaferies, Abbeyes and Religious houles, that have been eplaced in this Country; which, whileft they retained their owne flate and magnificence, were great ornaments winto it; but finectheir diffoliution, and that the teeth of Time (which devoures all things) have earen into them, they are become like dead carkafes, leaving onely fome poore ruines and remaines aliue, as reliques to posterity, to show of what beauty and magnitude they have beene. Such was the Abby of Whith, foundedby Lady Hilda, daughter of the grand-child vnto King Edwine. Such was the Abbey built by Bolton, which is now fo razed, and laide levell with the earth, as that at this time it affords no appearance of the former dignity . Such was Kirk flall Abbay, of no small account in time path founded in the yeare of Christ, z147. Such was the renowned Abbay called Sains Maries in Torke, built and endowed with rich linings by Alan the third Earle of little Bracing in Armerica; but fince converted into the Princes boule, & is called the Mannor. Such the wealthy Abbey of Founa uscalled the Mannor. Such the wealthy Abbeyof Famer-spars, built by Tamefin Archbishop of Tamer. Such the famous Monaftery founded in the Primitive Church of the East. Saxons by Wilfrid Archbishop of Tamer, and en-larged (being fallen downe and decated) by Ode Archbilarged (being raten downe and decated) by Oile Archbeil hoppeof Cauterbury. Such was Drass religious house of Chanons. Such that faire Abbey built by King Willi-am the Conquerour at Selby (where his fonne Henry the fifth was borne) in memory of S. German, who happily

times grew to a Serpentine head in Britaine, These places for religion erected, with many more within this Prouinciali Circuit, and consecrated vitto holic purposes, shew the Antiquity, and how they have beene fought vinto by confluences of Pilgrimes in their manner of deuotions: The milts of which superfittious manner or accordant: I he mitt or which injections oblicutities, are finecelected by the purelight of the Gol-pell reuealed, and the akirts of Idolatry vnfolded to her owne finame and ignominy: And they made fabile? to the dididition of Times, feruing onely, as antique monuments and remembrances to the memory of facceeding

confuted that contagious Pelagian herefie, which often-

(8) Many places of this Province are famouled afwell Mes by Name, being naturally fortunate in their fittation, as places, for some other accidentall happines befallen vinto them. Hallifax, famous, alwell for that lohamer de facro Bofco, author of the Sphere, was borne there, and for the law it hath against flealing: as for the greatnesse of the Parish, which reckoneth in it eleuen Chappels, whereof two bee Parish Chappels, and in them to the number of twelve thousand

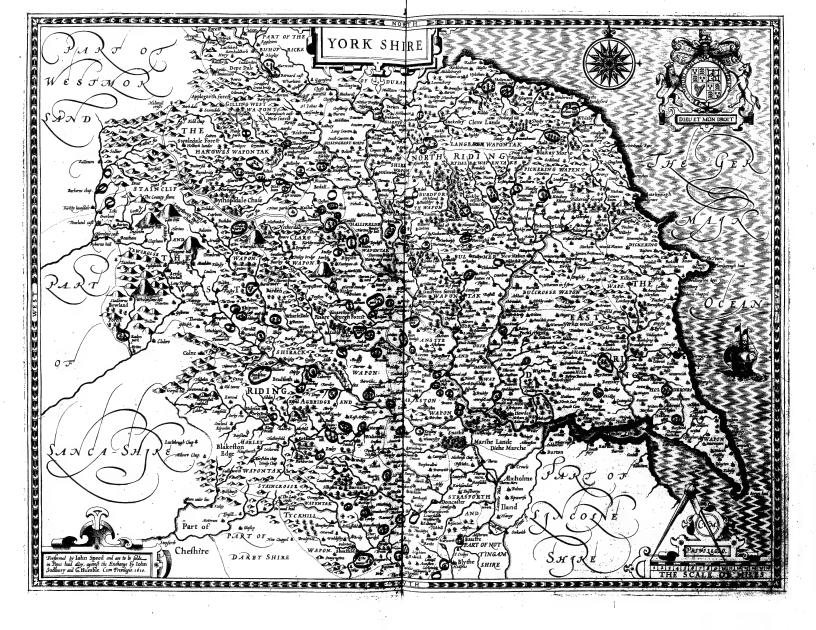
In former times it was called Horton, and touching the alteration of the name, this prety (tory is related of its namely, That a Clerke (for fo they call him) being farre in loue with a maid, and by no meanes either of long praifes or large promises, able to gaine like affection at her hands. when he faw his hopes frustrate, and that he was not like to haue his purpose of her, turnd his lone into rage, & cut off the maides head, which being afterwards hung yoon an Bew tree, common people counted its an hallowed re-lique till it was rotten: And afterward (fuch was the cre-dulity of that time) it maintained the opinion of reusernce and religion ftill: for the people reforted chitcher on pil-

The antiquitie

Kirkftall.

. Maries in

and why the



Pomfiet.

Yorke Citie,

Egbert Arch

Richard the

Heavy the eight

Seserus Empe-

Conflanting for

Osbright and

Athelflan.

Half fax, that is, Holy-bayre,

Pomfret is famous for the Site, as beeing feated in a place fo plealant, that it brings foorth Liquorice and great plentic of Skinimons, but it is infamous for the murther and bloudfhed of Princes: The Caltle whereof, was built by Hildeber

that spread out betweene the Barke and Body of the Ewe

tree,like fine threeds, were the very haires of themaides

head, tiercupon it was called by this name Haligfax, or

Lacy a Norman, to whom William the Conqueror gaue this Towne, after Airick the Saxon was thrust out ofit. (9) But I will forbeare to bee proline or tedious in the

particular memoration of places in a Province so spatious. and onlie make a compendious relation of Torke, the fecond City of England, in Latine called Eboracum and Eburacum. Lity of England, in Latine called Bordenin and Ebbracum, by Ptolame Brigantium (the chiefe Chite of the Brigant). Nonuna Care Ebrace, by the Britan Care Efrac, and by the Saxan Euop-nic, and Eoper-pie. The British Hilloric reports that it tooke the name of Ebrace that founded it; but fome others are of opinion, that Eburacum hath no other deriuation then from the river Ouferunning thorow it: It cuer mafters all the other places of this Countrey for fairenesse, and is a fingular Ornament & (afegard to all the North-parts: anuls a niginar Oriameur existe gara to a tine (north-parts).

A pleafant place, large, and full of magnificence, rich, populous, and not onely firengthened with fortifications, but a dorned with beautifull buildings, as well privat as publike. For the greater digotite thereof, it was made an Epificopal. Yorke a pleafant Citic, For the greater auguste interest, it was insue an episcopas, See by Conflantim, and a Metropolitane Citie by a Pall lent with it from Honorius. Egbert Arch-bilhop of Torke, who flourished about the yeere leven hundred fortie, creeked in it a moft famous Librarie. Richard the third, repaired the Ca filethereof beeing ruinous, and King Howie the eight, ap-pointed a Counfell in the same, to decide and determine all the causes and controuers of the North-parts, according to equitie and confeience : which Counfell confifteeh of Lord Prefident, certaine Counfellors at the Princes pleafure.

> The original of this Citie, cannot be fetcht out but from the Romanes, feeing the Britanes before the Romanes came had no other Towns then Woods fenced with trenches and rampiers, as Cafar and Strabo doe tellific: And that it was a Colonie of the Romans, appears both by the authoritie of Ptolony & Antonine, and by many ancient inscriptions that have beene found there. In this Citie the Emperour Seneral had his Palace, and hoere gaue up his fall breath; which ministers occasion to shew the ancient custome of the Romanes, in th militarie maner of their burialls.

Secretarie, and other under Officers.

His hodie was caried forth heere by the fouldiers to the Funerall fire, and committed to the flames, honoured with the Justs and Turnaments both of the fouldiers and of his owne fonnes : His aftes bestowed in a little golden potte of veffell of the Porphyrat flone, were carried to Rome and thrined there in the Monument of the Antonines. In this Citie (as Spartianus maketh mention) was the Temple of the God deffe Bellona; to which Senerus (beeing come thither purpoling to offer Sacrifice) was erroneouslie led by a ruffical

ngur. Heere Fl. Valerius Constantises, surnamed Chlorus (an Em peror of excellent vertue and charlifan pierie) ended his life and was Deified, as appeares by ancient Coines: and his for Conflantine beeing presentathis Fathers death, foorthwith proclamed Emperour; from whence it may bee gathered of what great estimation Torke was in those dates, when she Roa long time vnder the English-Savons Dominion, till the Danes like a mighty storme, thundring from out the North-East destroied it, and distained it with the bloud of many Baughtered perfons, and wanne it from Orbright and Ella Kings of Northumberland, who were both flaine in their putuite of the Dame: which Alexine in his Epifleto Egelred Kings of Northumberland (terms de operage before, when he faid: What fignifieth that raining down of bloud in S. Peters Church of Torke, even in a faire day, and descending in so violent and threatning a manner from the toppe of the roofe a may it not be thought that bloud is comming upon the Land from the North-parts? Howbeit, Athelftane reconsted it from the Danift Subie

ftion, and quite ouerthrew the Castle with the which they had fortified it; yet was it not (for all this) fo freed from wars but that it was subject to the Times fatallie next following Neuertheleffe, in the Conquerors time, when (after many wo full ouerthrowes and troublefome ftormes) it had a pleasan calme of enfuing peace, it rofe agains of it felfe, and flourishes afreth, having thill the helping hand both of Nobility and Gentrie, to recouct the former dignity and bring it to the perfection it hath: The citizens fencing it round with newe Walls, and many Towers & Bulwarkes, and ordaining good and wholesome Lawes for the Gouernment of the same Which at this day are executed at the command of a Lord Major, who hath the affiftance of twelue Aldermen, many

Chamberlaines, a Recorder, a Towne-Clerke, fix Sergeants at Mace, and two Equires, which are, a Sword-bearer, and the Common Sergeant, who with a great Mace, goeth on of Yorke Citie. the left hand of the fword. The longitude of this Citie according to Mercators account, is 19. degrees and 35. feru-

cording to Comment's account; to 150, acgress and 35, retur-ples, the latitude 54, degrees and 40. feruples.

(10) Many occurrents prefent themselues with sufficient matter of enlargement to this discourse, yet none of more worthy confequence, then were these seuerall Battailes, fought within the compaffe of this County; wherein Fortune had her pleasure as well in the proofe of her love, as in the pursuite of her tyrannie, fometime fending the fruits of fweete peace vnto her, and other whiles fuffering her to talk the wreneile of warre,

At Conisborough (in the Britanes tongue Caer-Conan) was | Conisborough a great Battsile fought, by Hengist Captaine of the English-Saxons, after hee had retired himselfe thirher for his lasety. his men beeing fled and scattered, and himselfe discomfitted by Aurelius Ambrofius ; yet within few daies after hee brought | Aurelius Ambr foorth his men to Battaile against the Bruanes that pursued him, where the field was bloudy both to him, and his; for many of his men were cutte in peeces, and hee himselfe had his Head chopt off as the British History saith; which the Chronicles of the Englis Saxon denie, reporting that hee died in peace, beeing furcharged and our worne with the troubleme toiles, and trauels of watre.

Neere vnto Kirkstall, Ofwie King of Northumberland put Penda the Mercan to flight; the place wherein the Battaile Kitkeftall. was joined, the writers call Winnid Field, giving it the name by the victorie. And the little Region about it (in times pall called by an old name Elmer) was conquered by Eadwin King of Northumberland, the fonne of Aela, after hee had expelled Coreticus a British King, in the yeare of Christ, 620.

um) the Citizens of Yorke flew many of King Ethelreds Armie, and had a great hand against him, infomuch as he that before fate in his throne of maiesty, was on a sodaine daunted, and ready to offer submission.

But the moft worth of memory, was that field fought on Palm-Sunday, 1461, in the quarrel of Lancaffer & Tarke, where England neuer law more puilfant forces both of Getry and Nobility: for there were in the field at one time (partakers on both fides) to the number of one hundred thousand fighting men. When the fight had continued doubtfull a great part of the day, the Lancaffrians not able longer to abide the violence of their enemies, turned backe, and fled amaine, and fuch as tooke part with Torke, ollowed them to hotely in chafe, and kild fuch a number of Noble, and Gentlemen, that thirty thousand Englishnen were that day left dead in the field.

(11) Let vs now loofe the point of this Compaffe & faile into fome other pares of the Province to finde out matter of other memorable moment. Vnder Knanibrongb there Places of other is a Wel called Dropping-wel, in which the waters fpring not out of the veines of the earth, but diffill and trickle downe from the rocks that hang ouer it : It is of this vertue and efficacy, that it turner wood into stone: for what wood focuer is put into it, will bee shortly couered ouer with a ftony Barke, and be turned into Stone, as hath beene of

At Gigglesweke also about a mile from Settle (a market Towne) there are certaine small springs not distant a quaits cast from one another: the middlemost of which doth at enery quarter of the houre ebbe and flow about the height of a quarter of a yard when it is highest, and at the ebbefal-leth solow, that it is not a ninch deepewith water. Of no lelle worthinelle to bee remembred is Saint Wifreds needle, a placevery famous in times past for the narrow hole in the close vaulted roome under the ground: by which womens honeflies were wont to be tried : for fuch as were chaft, did patfethrough with much facilitie: but as many as had plaid falfe, were miraculoufly held faft, & could not

18 That pass sureyweet innecessory returns, eccount one creepethrough. Beleeuit from the Theorems of Conference of Conference when Abbies were pulled downe & suppressed in the Sepulche of Conference with Sepulche. in a certaine Vault or little Chappell vnder the ground, wherein hee was supposed to have been buried, might beget much wonder and admirations but that Lazing confitneth, that in ancient times they had a custome to preserve light in Sepulchres by an artificiall refoluing of gold into a iquid and fatty fubstance, which should continue burning

a long time, and for many ages together.

(12) This Terkefore picture I will draw to no mon ength, left I be condemned with the Sophifter, for infi-Ring in the praife of Hercules, when no man opposed him-felse in his discommendation. This Country of it selse is lightfull. so beautifull in her owne naturall colours, that (without much helpe) shee presents delightfull varieties both to fight and other fenfes.

At Cafterford (called by Antonine Logeolium and Lagett-

THE VVESTRIDING OF YORKESHIRE.

CHAPTER XLI.

The hounds of

The Ayre.

The Soile,

Lead-Oare

Inhabitants.

Richmond the

The occasion o

Ofwy King of

The Magistracy of Richmond.



He other divition, which s called the West Riding of orke-fore, lying towards the North-West, carrieth a great compatie: On the North fide t borders upon part of the North -riding : On the East vpon part of the East Riding and part of Lincolneshire. The West-side is neighboured with part of Lancashire: The South

confinde with Noting ham and part of Darby Shires.

(2) The aire vnto which this County is subject, is for he most pare frigid and cold, much subject to sharp winds, hard frofts, and other intemperate and Winter-like dispositions of weather: Infomuch as the People of this Province, are inured to maintaine a moderate, and ordinary heate in theirbodies, by an extraordinary hardnesse of labour, and thereby become very healthfull, and not fooften affliced with infirmities, as others are that live more eafily.

(3) Although the Soile in the generality be not fruit

full, as lying very high and full of ragged rockes and fwel-ling mountaines, yet the fides thereof floping in some places doe beare good graffe, and the bottomes and vallies are not altogether ynfertill. That part that borders vpon Lancafine is so mountanous and walte, so vnlightly and full of solitarineise, that the bordering neighbours call certaine little rivers that creepe along this way, by a contemptible name, Hell backs. That part againe, where the river Vre cut-teth through the vale called Want date is very good ground where great flocks of sheepe doe pasture, and which, in some places, doe naturally yeeld great plenty of Lead-stones: In other places whereshe Hila are barren and bare of Corne and Cattle, they make a recompence of those wants by the flore of Copper, Lead, and flone, or Pit-cole, with the which they are abundantly furnished. That part where the River Smale running downe East ward, out of the Welt Mountaines (with a violent and fwift ftreame) to villade her felfe into the Riuer Frs, and palling along a large and open vale which deriues the name from her, and is called Smale.dals, hath a rieighbouring placeful of Lead-Oarel and for the lacke of woods which doth heere much pinch the People, they are requited agains with plenty of graffe, which this place yeelds them in great abundance. Thus hath provident nature for every diffeommodity made amends with a contrariety, and furnished the defects of one place with fufficient supply from another.

(4) The ancient Inhabitants knowne vnto Ptalomy, and of whom there is other mention made, as well in the gene-

ral & other particular divisions of Tark fire, as in the Coun tries likewife joining in proximity vnto them were the Brigames lubdued by the Romanes. And because the roome belt fitted for the City of Torke, in this Chard I have placed it, whose description you may finde in the General; so the It who exerciption you may make it the Octable 10 to the North Radam spacious to contain the fittee of the Townes, Hall and Richmonnd are therein charged 1 but waning place there to relate of both 1 am confirmed to speak of the La-ter here defining my Reader to beare with these necessities. Richmond the chiefe Towne of the North-Ridam, seated upon Swale, feemed to have beene fenced with a Wall, whol Gates yet fland in the midft of the Towne, fo that the Suburbs are extended farre without the fame : It is indifferent lie populous and well frequented, the People most implo ed in knitting of Stockings, wherewith euch the decrepi and children get their owns liungs.
(5) Alan the first Earle thereof distructing the strength

of Gilling (a Manor house of his not farre off) called by Bea Geshing) to withfland the violence of the Danes and Eng-life, whom the Norman; had definited of their inheritance, built this Towne, and gaue it the name, calling it Richmond, as one would fay, The Rich Mont, which her fortified with a Wall and ftrong Caffle fet vpon a Rocke For Gilling ouer fince the time that Ofan King of Northam berland being there Gueft-wife intertained was murtherou fly made away, was more regarded in respect of Religion then for any firength it had: in expiation of which mu ther, the Monastery was founded and had in great account among our Ancestors, This Town for the administration of gouernement, hath an Alderman yeerely, chofen out of Twelue brethren, who is affilted by 24. Burgelles, a Recor-der, foure Chamberlaines, and two Sergeants at Mace.

The polition of this place for latitude is fet in the degree 55. 17. minutes from the North-Pole, and for Longitude rom the fift West-point in the degree \$8. and 50. minutes.

(6) Things of rarity and worthy observation in this County, are those hils neere Richmond, where there is a Mine or Delfe of Copper, mentioned in a Charter of King Edward the fourth, having not as yet beene pierced into. Alfo, those Mountaines, on the toppe whereof are found certaine flones much like vnto Sea-winkles, Cockles, and other Sea-fift; which if they be not the wonders of Nature, yet with Orofinia Christian Hiltoriographer) we may dem to be the vndoubted tokens of the generall deluge, that in Noahs time overflowed the whole face of the earth. Also the River Swale (Spoken of before) which among the ancithe Ruler about 150km of before, which among the ancient English was reputed a very facted River and celebrated with an vniuefal glory, for that (the English Society first imbracing Christianity) in one day about tenne Thousand men, befides a multitude of women and children, were therefore. in Baptized voto Christ, by the hands of Paulinus Archbishop of Torke: A holy spectacle, when out of one Rivers Channell fogreat a progeny fprung vp, for the Caleftiall

the Romans, were Bajutbridge, where they in those daies had a Garrifon lying, the reliques whereof are there remaining.

Bowes, in Austiness Itinerary called Lauatra or Louatra (both by the secount of diffance and the fire thereof by the high freet of the Romans) confirmes the antiquity by a large stone found in the Church, sometimes vsed for an Altar ftone, with an inscription upon it to the honor of the Em-perour Hadrian. The first Cohortallo of the Thracians is: here in Garrison, whilest Virine Lupus ruled as Lieutenan Generall, and Proprætor of Britains under the Emperour General, and Propizzor of Intrame voter the Emperous Summu, as appeared by inferiptions from Incec traditated to Commission in Hamsington-fibre. Here also in the decli-ning cliere of the Romane Empire the Band or Company of the Explorators kept their Station, vader the dif-pose of the Generall of Britains, as is witneffed by the Nopole of the Conceasion special as with mine of the con-tice of Protinces. As Spittle on Staumer's is the fragment of a Croffe, by we called Reveryife, by Seat, Reivinfe, as one would (ay, The Kings Croffe, which Helder Bassine (a Seath writer) recorded to chain becne a mere Lone confining England and Septland, And a little lower your the Roma high Street , flood a little Fort of the Romans built four fquare, which at this day is called Maiden-Cofile. At Burgh (in times past called Bracebium) the fixt Cohort of the Norniens lay in Garrison. And not long since the Scattle of Aumier lay in Garrifon. And not long fince the Status of Maritin Commodate the Europeror was digd vey, which Status of Assause, of the Maritin Commodate the Europeror was the Common and of the Common and the Common and the Common and the Common and firme the fame.

firme the firme.

(3) Placeard Denotion, fequefired from other wordly affaires, and confectated or eligious view, were thee, The Monafley builtoneez Riebman. The Albery for Channe, creded at Courskan (now called Corbain). In Courselaid, and the Albery of Cofferines, fifth Gooded at Far, and after cranilated to from on throatile, which is watered by the food of the control of the the datasence of cross was contract and many and in light of holy Faith but fince the operation of Gods Al-mighty grace hath fo wrought in the hearts of the faithfull, that they hauenot onely fourned and troden their Idols widertheir feet, but haue also made the very place; that were their receptacles) to become the ruinous of

(9) This Dusition of Torkelbire called the West-Riding hath beene strengthned with toure strong Castles, is yet traded with twenty one Market Towner, and Gods distine feruice is celebrated in one hundred and foure Parish Churches, besides Chappels, whereof there is an Alphabeticall ches, belides Chappers, w.m. enumeration in the Table following.

A Copper Mine

Cockles on this top of the

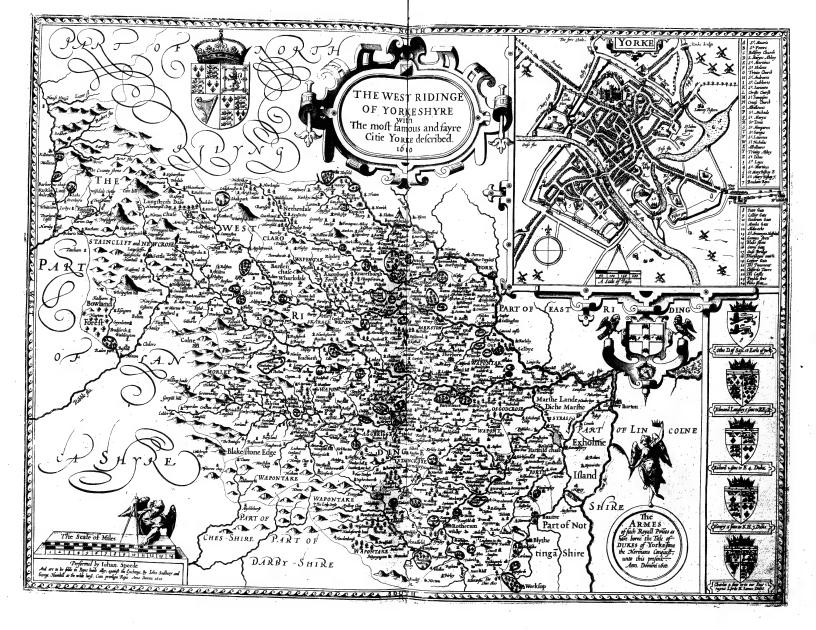
bishop of Terke,

and heavenly City.

(7) Places in elder times had in great estimation with Places of Anti-

Peis.

The Citizens



Book 1. The bounds of

he North and

Eaft-Ridings

The Aire

The foile and

Herrings.

Kingflos vpen

Stockfift.

THE NORTH AND EAST

here adioining, where Geefe flying overfall downefodain-licto the ground, to the great admiration of all men: Bur (uch as are not given to superflitious credulitie, may attri-

Gem, and previous stone of great estimation. At Hunts

Serpents, enwrapped round like a wreath, but most of

was put to flight, and the Englift made a great flaughter of

throw of his owne native Countrey, even at that time, when

bloud, and the Caltle quite difmantelled, to that belide a

ditch exampler, there is no fignor flewleft of a Caffle.

(8) Places of pictic erecked in the leparts, were the Abbey of S. Haldy built neere. Dunnfley. The faire and rich Abbey of Gibburgh, built about the yeter of our falluation.

1110. The priory of Chanons founded at Kirkham. The

Monasterie neere vnto Bewerley, which Beda nameth Deirwaud. The Monasterie of S. Michael by Hull. The two Abbies of Newborough and Biland, The Abbey of Menna,

and an other not farre from Cottingham , which the

them headlelle.

tuch as are not given to upertuitious creamine, may write-bute this wrote a fecter propriety of this ground, and a hid-den diffentbetwix it this Soile and these Gesse, as the like is betweene Wolues and the Squilla rootes. At Skengraus (4)

Ŕ٢

little village) fome secutive yeeres since, was caught a fish called a Sea-man, that for certaine daies together fedde on raw fishes, but espying his opportunitie escaped againe into his waterie Element. At Hunt-Cliffe ate found itones of a

vellowith, others of a reddiff colour of a certaine falt mat-ter, which by their finell and talt make fiew of Coperaffe, Nitre, and Brimflenes. Also great flore of Marquessies in

Nirse, and Brimfess. Allo great throot Marganiar in colour refembling Braile.

Outsidery Hill, befides a pring of medicinable waters for the ciet, is a prognoliteation with other neighbours whose head beeing concred with a cloudy cap, prefageth fone-the control of the colour control of the colour colou

divers bigneffe, so artificially shaped round by nature, in Round fience maner of a Globe, as if they had been emade by the Turners hand. In which (if you breake them) are found frony pents in them,

mem neadence.

(2) Matters for martiall note, are the Bartelica fought at Banthoniage (of which it rakes the name) where Hanald Landsmage. King of England, had a great velocine again the Dasse, who with a fleetee of the obundred faile, greenouffic annoted the fleet Brissans Where Hanaldthe King of Morney was

flain,& Harold of England besides the honor of the field, found a great maile of gold. Also the Battaile commonly called the Battle of Standard; in which Danid King of Scots The Bartle of the

David King of his people.

At Tirruske, Roger Mombray out of his strong Castle dis-plaied his banner, and called the King of Sees to the over-

King Henrie the second, had as it were trashly digd his own grave by inuesting his son King, in equal authoritie with himselfe: But his rebellion was in the end quenched with

Kirkham. and an other not tarre from Cestingfows, which the founder purpolish built for the Monkes of the Classically Order; that the might be released of the row he can did not be suffered to the control of Polymons, to make their advantage of the control of Polymons, to make their advantage in the fide did not polymons, to make their advantage in the fide discolor for the control of the first polymons. The control of the control

the fame places are worthly become the loboects of his ind dipleafure, for worthlyping images and fallecturelar Gods, in flead of the true and cue-lining Saulort.

(3) The parts and distillation of They-first, contining in yound to North and Eafl Raking, contecineth treenty fleat Market Townes for bying and elling, eleven Califeror frength and fortification, and 450, pailhet for Godedition worthly and the tree which bee very many Chappels, for number of inhabitants, equall to very great patifiets.

Borrowbie, Alleni Borrowbie Leng-Boffiki, Balane, Bouthie, Balane, Bouthie, Balane, Bouthie, Balane, Bouthie, Balane, Bouthie, Balane, Ling Bouthie, Balane, Bouthie, Balane, Bouthie, Balane, Bothoupe, Dark Bracklen, Boyston Franciscopin Band. September 1997. Brackley Lengu-Brickholl, Hange, Brackley Lengu-Brackley Lengu-Brackley

Hele parts of the diuition TO VENTO of Yorke fire, the East and North-Riding, are stretched out East-ward even to the

Spurn-head, & on the North . cosft are separated from the Bilhoprick of Durhame, and with the Seathath Westmerland on the West, Humber on the South, and the German

Scavpon the East, being (cparated each from other by the River Derwent, running betwixt them with a long winding courfe,

(2) The aire is subtile and piercing, and not inclined naturally to contagious infections, which caufeth the people liue long and healthfully, and are not fo fubicet to Agues, Fluxes, or other imperfections, as those Countries be, that are more troubled with milles or foggie vapours.

(3) The Soile is generally indifferently fruitfull, for though some part bee craggie, mountainous, and full of though tome part oee craggie, mountainous, and rui or Hills, yetfome others exceeding goodfor the gifts of Na-ture in her delightfome varieties, as of Corne, Cattle, and Pasturage; with veines of Metral, and Iron, besides an Allum-earth of fundrie colours, out of which some haue latelie begunneto try verie good Allum, and Coperasse. And for fish, the Hollanders and Zelanders doe raise voto themselves great profit vpon this coast, having long since obtained licenc, which they keepe ffill by an ancient cufrom : for the English-men granting leave vnto others, referued the honour to themselues, which would bee no doubt farre the greater if they made gaine of their owne

(4) Places for trade and venting foorth of her commodities are many, yet none of fuch conuenience as Kingflowe upon Hull :Which not with flanding, cannot fetch her beginning from any great A nitrojurie (beeting before time called Wet.) King Edward the first, built this Towne, making a Hauren, and granning ditures liberties to the Burgestes; for that it is rifen to great site, both it of state le builtings, and strong Block host (esf or ships, well turnified, and slore of Merchants, and is now become the most samous Towns of that Countrey: whole greatest riches is a scribed

to the gainefull trade they have by Iland fifh, dried and hardened, commonly called Stockfish, This Town is gouerned by a Major(who hath the Sword of State carried before him) twelve Aldermen, that in their affemblies goe clad in Scarlet, one Sheriffe, a water-bailie, a fword-bearer, Chamberlaine, a Recorder, a Towne clerke, and fix Sergeants at Mace. Whose graduation according as the Mathematickes have observed, is for longitude 20. degrees and 30, scruples, and for latitude 54, degrees and 28.

(5) Beuerles in honor of S. lohn Arch-bifhop of Torke by King Athelftane obtained many printledges, whereof a Santtnarie was one, wherein Bankerouts and men sufpected of any capitall crime, might be fafe and free from danger of Law. This is memorable, that the River from Hall, was cut by the Townelmen, fufficient to carrie boats and

Yeadon, Skir.

Benerley a San-

(6) Places of memorable note are Whirly, where are found certaineftones fashioned like Serpents, foulded and wrapped round in a wreath, euen the very pastimes of Nature, who when shee is wearied (as it were) with serious workes, sometimes forgeth and shapeth things by way of (port and recreation: fo that by the credulous they are thought to have beene Serpents, which a coate or cruft of ftones had now couered all over, and by the praiers of S. Heldaturned to ftones : And alfo there are certaine fields

Riding of Yorke-shire.

rt Gillingweft Wapen.	l	Appleton, Long.	Bagby, Burd/.	Bayefdale, Long.
Z Gillingeaft Waters, 3 Allerrow Shire, 4 Langbargh Liber, 5 Whithyfirand Liber, 6 Pichering Watershab.	Abbane Chappell Dyckering.	Appleton Eaft, Horge?.	Baldeniby, Hali.	Bayn on Bayming
Allerion Shire.	Acklam, Language,	Appleton Well, Hangall.	Bainbridge, Hargus.	Bealbie, Haime.
Langbargh Liber.	Ack'am, Buccesse.	Arden, Burdf.	Banny Flo.	BEDALL, House
Languarge Liber.	Agle horpe, Harryseft.	Ardenfide, Bardf.	Barden, Henew.	Beller, House,
S Whithystrand Liber.	Anderty sniers, Hangeaft.	Arke,Plv.	Barforth, Gallonger.	Bella by, Harguelle
6 Pichering Wapentak	Anderby Whershow Hallield.	Arkengarch Dade, Gillinger.	Barbonie, Hauf.	Bellafiffe, Hond.
2 7 Rydall Wapen.		Attel ffe Burdf.	Barleby, Derment.	B.ntley,Hanf.
5 8 Bulmer Wapen.	Ankew, Hangeoft.	Aragill Gillingwell.	Barmley, Heard.	Bempton, Dyck,
e Buimer mapen.	Ankugge Hangue ft.	Armanthwate, Long.	Barmefton, Hold.	Beningbrough, But.
Bulmer Wapen. Buydforth Wapen. Buydforth Wapen.	Atton Dickering	Auran, Held.	Barmingham, Gellinger.	Bemingham, Hold.
10 Hallibeld Wapen.	Aldbrough, Hangel.	Artham, Level.	Barnbie Lau.	Bery-chaple, Sacc,
II Hangeaft Wapen.	Aldby, Succreffe.	A.ke, Gillingw.	Barnloye, Willes.	Beffonby, Dyck.
it Hangias wapen.	Aldmarke Bulm.	Affelby, Hourd.	Barnidele Chap. Specie-	Beffewicke Bayeren,
ta Hangwest Wapen.	Allershorpe Hell-	Armicke Hald.	Barron, Halli.	BEVERLEY. HAT
	Allerthorpe, Walnut,	Auderby, Hangift.	Barton Swim.	Bewdlam, Rydeie,
_ f1 Buctroffe Wapen.	Alleft a, Pier.	Auderby, Heweell.	Berton, Gillinge,	Bewham, risid.
Dichering Wapen. 3 Holdernes Wapen. 4 Oufe & Darwent wa. 5 Howdenfiber Wapen.	ALLERTON, North, Allerten.	Aughton, Helme.	Barton in the Breet, Podel.	Briand old Burd's
2 Dychering Wapen.	Alune, Budmer.	Audburg Gillinger.	Earton youn Yor, Hauts.	. Biland Abbey, Revel.
3 Holdernes Wapen.	Anderby Steev-le, Gillingenit.	Aumond Parke, Bardi.	Barthorpe, Barc.	Bilidale, Rydal,
4 Oufe & Darwent wa.	Amotherby, Ryleir.	Awlbrough, Hold.	Barwicke, Laure,	Billeald Bad.
Howdenfber Wapen.		Amhorae, Hannwill,	Basbie Leer.	Bilton, Held.
os , monatojeti o speni	Ampleforth,Ryde'e.	Avikarth, Hesperil	Battenbis, Lanch.	Birdfall, Bucc.
CWilton Deni.	Aperfide, Hangweft.		Banger Plu.	Birkbie, 4Cer.
Harthil Bayston Deui.	Appleganth Forrest, Gallinger.	Ayfleybye, Lang.	Bauder Dale, Gilling,	Birkdale Hauger.
Below Desi.	Applegant, Mantk, Gillings.		Balderskarth Hill Gilliane.	Blackhoime, Hend
Harthil Bayeton Desi. Wilton Desi. Bayeton Desi. WHolme Desi. Hunfley Desi	Appleton, Radell.	Ayron little, Logi,	Baurghlirele,Rydall.	Blacktoft Head
a compay our	Appleton, Redall.	Kabehorne, Dorment, R	Pourch seems Dadall	Discussion of the same



THE BISHOPRICKE OF DVRHAM.

JOD ONDER OF BUILD

The Bishopricke of Durham.

this Prounce.

Book.1.



and Towne-ships that lie betwixt the River Tees and Derwent, and al along the German-Seas. It is neighbored on the north with Northumberland, and

by the River Derwent: her West is touched by Cumberland, Westmorland, and from Staine-More divided by the River Tees, and by the same water on her South, from Yorke-shire euen vnto the Sea; and the East is altogether coasted by the German-Seas. (2) The forme thereof is triangle, and fides not

much differing; for from her South-east, vnto the

The forme.

well-point, are about chirry miles; from thence to her North-eaft and Tyne-mouth, are likewife as many, and her bafe along the Sea-shore are twenty three; the whole in circumference about one hundred and three

(3) The aire is sharpe and very piercing, and would 13) In care is an apeand very percentigand would be more, were in not that the vapours from the German-Sear did helpe much to diffolue herice & finow; and the flore of coles therein growing and gotten, doe warme the body, and keepe back the cold; which fewell, befides their owne vie, doth yeeld great commodities vnto this Prouince, by trade thereof into

(4) For foile it confifteth much alike of pastures

arable, and barren grounds: the East is the richest and

The foile.

Coalc-pits. Cambden,

most champion, the South more moorish, but well inhabited; her West all rockie, without either graffe or graine, not with fanding recompenceth her possessions of the possession of the po tifully stored, and groweth so neere to the upper face of the earth, that in the trod waies the Cart-wheels do turne up the fame: Some hold their fubflance to bea clammie kinde of clay hardned with heat abounding in the earth and so becomming concocted is nothing else but Bitumen; for proofe whereof, these coles have both the like smell and operation of Bitumen : for being sprinkled with water, they burne more vehemently, but with oile are quite extinguished and put

The privilege

S Cuibbert

(5) The ancient Inhabitants knowne vnto Pto-[5] I ne ancient innabirants knowne white File-lemie, were the Brigantes, of whom we have spoken in the Generall of Torke-shire, they being subdued by the Romans; after whom the Saxons made it a part of their Northumberlands Kingdome: at first a Prouince belong-ing to the Deirians, and eniosed by Ella their first King; afterwards inuaded by the Danes, and laftly possessed by the Normans : whose site being so necre ento Scotland, hath many times felt their furie, and hath been as a buckler betwixt them and the English; for which cause, the Inhabitants haue certaine freedomes, and are not charged with feruice as other Counties are, fo that this with Westmorland, Cumberland, and Northumberland, are not divided into Hun-dreds in those Parlament Rolles whence I had the

reft: which want I must leave for others to supply. (6) Ouer this County, the Bishops thereof haue had the Royalties of Princes, and the Inhabitants haue pleaded prinilege not to passe in service of warre ouer the river of Tees or Tyne; whose charge (as they haue alleged) was to keepe and defend the corps of saint Cuthbers their great adored Saint and therefore they termed themselves, The holy-werk-folkes. And the repute of this Cuthbert and his supposed defense against the Scots was such, that our English Kings in againt the exert was been considered in the first in great decoration have gone in pilgrimage to vific his Tombe, and have given many large possess to his Church: such were King Egfrid, Elfred, and Outterwithe Dane, Edward, and Abbellian Monarch of Endews King his beautiful and the large such as the first his such as the first h gland, and zealous Canute the greatest of all, who came s. Cushert. thither bare-footed, and at Cuthberts Tombe both augmented and confirmed their Liberties. This Saint then, of nothing made Durham become great, and William the Conqueror of a Bifhopricke made it a Countie Palatine: at that time William Careleph Bifhop of the Diocesse pulled downe the old Church which aldwin had built, and with fumptuous coft laid the foun-dations of a new, wherein saint Cuthberts Shrine in the vacancie of the Bishoppes, was the Keeper of

the Caftle-keyes.

In the West of this Church and place called Gallile. the Marble Tombe of venerable Beda remaineth, who was borne at I arro in this Countie, & became a Monk was borne at Tarro in this Countie, of Declaire a results at Weremouth, whose painful industries and light of learning in those times of darknesse are wonderfull. The Monta ide as the volumes which he wrote doe well declare. And neffecthe saufe o had the idle Monks of England imploid their times their observations after his example, their Founders expectations had not beene frustrate nor those foundations so easilie ouerturned. But the reuenge of finne cuer following the actions of finnes, diffolued first the largenesse of this Counties liberties under the raigne of King Edward the first, and since hath shaken to pecces those places herein erected under the raigne of King Henry the eight : fuch were Durham, Sherborne, Stayndrop, Iarro, Weremouth, and Eggleton; all which felt the re-ward of their idlenes, and wrath of him that is icalous

of his owne honour. (7) Things of rare note observed in this Shire are hree Pits of a wonderfull depth, commonly called the Hell-Kettles, which are adjoining neere vnto Dar-i ra-mount maner i mention, whole record is this. On Christmas day at Oxenhallin the Territorie of Der ling-ton, within the Bishopricke of Durham, the ground heaved op aloft like unto an high Tower, and so continued all that wy mejs use vine an mgn 1 over, and premiumed dutingle day, as it were enimoueable until the eneming; and then sell with so borrible a noise, that it made all the neighbor dwel-lers fore afraid: and the earth swallowed it up, and made in the same place a deepe pit, which is there to be seene for a

testimony unto this day.

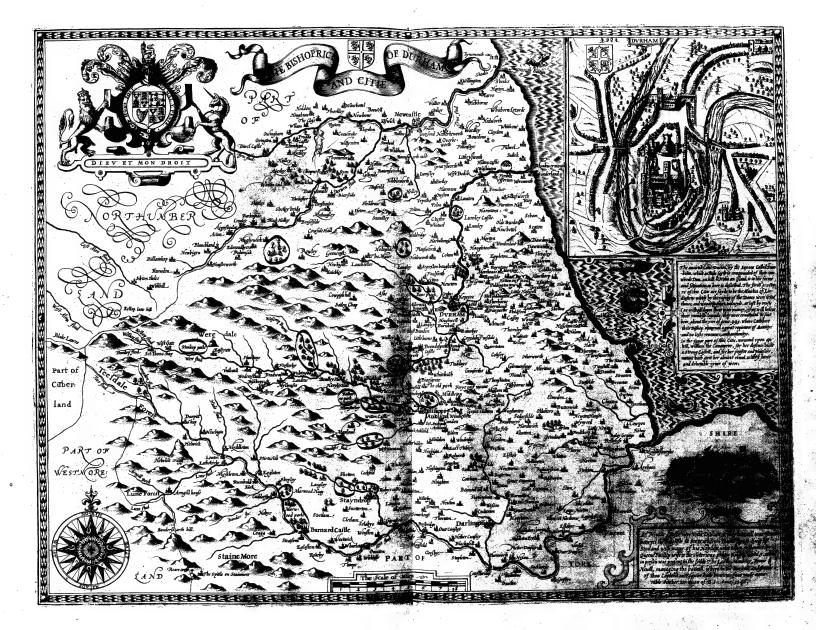
(8) Of no lesse admiration are certaine stones lying within the River tyeere, at Butterbee neere Dur-ham; from whose sides at the Ebbe and low water in the Summer, iffueth a certaine falt reddish water, which with the Sunne waxeth white, and growing in-to a thicke substance, becommeth a necessary salt to

the vie of the by-dwellers.

(9) And places of elder times had in account by hinchefter, the Romans, were Benoulum, now Binchefter, and Condercum, Cheffer in the firet, where their monies have been digged vp, and at Condercum fo much, that Egd-rik Bishop of Durham, was therewith made exceeding-

This Countie hath been strengthened with seuen strong Castles, is yet traded with six Market Townes, Reby. and Gods divine honour in one hundred and eighteene Parish Churches celebrated, whose names in the Table are further inserted.

Beds his Tombe



An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes.

Rivers, and Places mentioned in the B. of Durham.

retacts, and faces mentioned in the B. of Dutham.						
A TABLE OF	Cleydon.	Theorange	Kinchley,	E482	Stokiev.	
all the Townes in	Cockertori,	The grange, Grayiton.	minemey.	Parke. S Pedumfak.	Stokton.	
the Difhotricke	Cockfeild.	Greenecroft.	L	PedumGk.	Stotfeld.	
the Bishopricke of Durham,	Cokon.	Gretham,	Lamton.	Peloo.	Stranton	
oj Darima,	Cokfey:	Grindon.	Lanchefter.	Pelton.	Stretlam.	
	Cotcham.	1	Landew.	Pencher.	Sudick.	
	Cotham:	Н	Langdon flu.	Persbridge.	Sunderland.	
Acle.	Cowpigh hell.	Halam.	Langley.	Piddington towne.	Sunderland,	
Scole 2	Cowpon. Cowfide hall.	Hamiterley. Harburhowies	Langley.	Kirk Piddington, The cole Pits.	Swalwel.	
Acle. 5	Crawcrake.	Hardon.	Langley.	Piddington,5		
Aldernedg.	Croke-hall,	Hardwicke.	Langton,	Plaufworth	T	
West 7	Cromforthe	Hardwicke.	Littleburne.	The old Porke.	Tanfeld.	
Aukland,	Croxdale.	Harintons.	Ludworth.	Preflon.	Tecidale. Thickley East.	
BISHOPSZ	Cundon.	Harpley hill.	Lumley.	Prefton.	Thickley West.	
A VKLAND.	Nether Z	Harroton,	Lumley Callie,	Primrofefide.	Thorpe.	
S.Andrewes 2	Cunfley.	Hartborne Z	Lumiley.	1	Thornton.	
Aukland, 5	Ouer 3 Cunfley. 3	welt, 5	1	0_	Thornley.	
_	Cuntley-5	Harte,	i	Quarrinton.	Thornerict.	
В	D	HARTLEPOOLE	The Manour.	_	Throftons,	
Balam.	Dawdon.	Harton. Haswell little,	Mansforth.	R	Thruflinton.	
Barnetton, BARNARDZ	DARLINGTON.	Halwell great.	Marwood parke.	Raby Caffie. Ramfide.	Trimden.	
CAST LE,	Darwencote.	Haughton.	Marwood hagge.	Ramiide,	Tuddaye,	
Batterby.	Dauton.	Haughton.	Mayland.	Rauentworth 2	Tunffall.	
Beamond hill.	Denton.	Hawthorp.	Medumfley.	Caffic.	Turldalc.	
Bedborne parke.	Derwen flu.	Hebborne.	I wish 5	Rayntons.	V	
Bedik,	Dowton,	Hedlam.	Merington S Middleton.	The?	viferton.	
Bedik well.	Nether Z	Hedley.	Middleton.	The? Raw, 5 Redhugh.	Vnthank.	
Beare parke. Bellotyfe.	Dunfley.5	Hedworth,	Middleton.	Redhugh.	Vnthank	
Bellolyle.	DVRHAM, Durpit chapell,	Heghington. Hellelton hall.	Middleton Ero.	Redmarsham.	Vrpethe.	
Benfeltide. Biartgreene.	Durpit empett.	Munka 2	Middleton ? George, §	Redworth.	Vilhaw.	
Biarigarthe.		Munke 2 Hetfelton, 5 Cold 2	Midlam,	Reliey.	Viworthgreat.	
Biarlide.	East yare.	Cold 7	Milkborn flu.	Riop. Rowley.	Viworth little.	
Bichborne.	Ebchefter.	Heffelton,	Mordon.	Ryton.	l	
Billingham.	Castle	Hett.	Morehoufe.	1.7.01	Wackerfeild.	
Binchefter.	Eden.	Hetton in the?	Morefley.	2	Waldridge.	
Birtley.	Eden little.	hole.	Mortons.	Satley Chapell,	Wardley.	
Bishops.	Edder-akers.	Hetton on the	Morton.	Seaton.	Washinton.	
Bilhopton. Blackhall.	Edmondbyers.	Mount. \$ Heughewell.	Moiton.	Scaton.	Waferon Burne	
Blakhall.	Eggetine.	Neshen 2	Morton.	Sedgefeild.	Wellop flu.	
Blackston.	Eggleton. Eldon.	Nether 2 Heworthe, 5	Muglifwicke- Munkwermouth.	Segeriton haughe.	Werdenlaw hill.	
Blackwell.	S. Ellins.	Ouer ?	Mylhoufes.	Sclabye.	Wereflu.	
Blaydon,	Elmedon.	Heworthe. 5	,	Shadford.	Weredall. Were-mouth	
Bollyop.	Elftok.	Hilton.	N	Sheales.	West gare.	
Bowdens.	Elton.	Hilton 2	Nesbed.	Shepley.	Weffoo.	
Bradbury.	Elwick.	Caltic. S Hollinfide.	Nettleworth,	Sherborne.	Westerton.	
Bradley hall. Bradwood.	Enewood well, Eppleton,	Holinfide.	Newbigin.	Sherborne house.	Westwick.	
Braferton.	Escombe.	Holme.	Newbigin.	Sheroton.	Wherletons	
Brandon caft.	Efington.	Houghton.	Newbigin. New-bottel.	Shildraw. Shildon.	Wheatley hill.	
Brandon weft.	Eflabye,	Hude flu.	Newfeild.	Shillington.	Whikham,	
Branspeth castile.	· ·	Hunsterworth	Newsham,	Shinkley.	Whitborne? lezard, S Whitchurch,	
Brantoste,	, F	Hunwicke.	Newtowne,	Shotton.	Whitehurch	
Brearton.	Farnton hall-	Hurnworth.	Newton.	Shotton.	Whithone.	
Brome.	Fellin.	Hurworth.	Newton.	Shotton,	Whitten.	
Buley-grange.	Fery on the mount. Finkeley.	Huton.	Newton.	Silkefworth.	Whitwell.	
Thorp?	Finkeley.	1	Newton little. Newton long.	Skern flu.	Whitwell.	
Burdon great	Flaske,	Tarro.	Newton long. Newton hanlet.	Skirmingham.	Willington	
Burdon great. Burdon little.	Follonsby.	Iarro. Ingleton.	Norton.	Slingley.	Willynton.	
Burdon old.	Ford.	i S.Johns /	Nunffanton.	Sockborne.	Windgate.	
Burdop flu.	Foulforth .	Chapell 5	Nyfam.	Sodburye.	Wind lefton, Windridge,	
Burnhall,	Foulthorp.	Ifcton.	1	Somerhoufe,	Windridge, Winfton.	
Butterwick,	Foxton.	The 2	0	Spen.	Witton.	
•	Frosteriey.	Isle. 5	Oldakers.	Standley.		
C+ffcm C	Fulwel.	ĸ	Old 3	Stanhope.	Caftie, 5	
Caffop.	G ·	Kellow.	Durham, S Owfton.	Stanhope parke.	Woodcroft >	
Chapwell. Chelter.	Garmaniway.	Kellop flu,	Owton.	Little Staynton.	hall.	
Chilton great.	Gatefend,	Kepeyre.	Caroli,	Great 2	Wulley.	
Chilton little.	Gaunletfe flu.	Ketton.	P	Great Staynton.	Wulfingham.	
Claxton.	Gaynford.	Kibbleworth.	Well	STAYNDROP.	Wulfton. Wynyerd	
Cletlam,	Giblide.	Killerby.	Parke. 5	Stirtwith.	Wyttone	
	1	1	-		1	

VVESTMORLAND.

CHAPTER XLIV.

Chap.44.

Estmortand by some late latine writers is called Westmaria and westmortandia. by fome latter Westmoria, and in our English tongue Westmorland. It came to be thus named in our language by the fituation, which in enery part is fo plenteously full of Moors

and high hils, reaching one to another, that Westmorland (with vs) is nothing else but a westerne moorish Country. Having on the West and Northside Cumberland, on the Southpart, Lancashire, on the East

fide Yorkfbire, and the Bishoprick of Durham. (2) The length therofextended from Burton in her The length. South, to Kirkland in her North part is, 30.miles: the broadest part from East to West, is from the River E-The breadth. den, to Dunbalrafe-flones, containing 24.miles, the whole circumference about 112.miles.

(3) The form thereof is fom what long, and narrow (3) In everth unevertex sometast to tigs, and many the Aire flarp and piercing, purging it lefter from the trouble of grossle foggy milts and Vapors, by reason of which the people of this Prouince are not acquainted with flrange disease or imperfections of body, but liue long and are healthfull, and attaine to the

number of many yeeres.

(4) The foyle for the most part ofir, is but barren, and can hardly bee brought to any fruitfulnesse by the industry and painfull labour of the husbandman, the indutry and patentili about of the musculations being fo full of inferrile places, which the Northeren Englishmen call Moores: yet the more Southerly part is not reported to bee fo sterile, but more fruitfull inthe valleies, though conteined in a narrow roome, be-tweene the river Lone, and Winander-mear, and it is all termed by one name. The Barony of Kendale or Candale, that is, the dale by Can, taking the name of the ri-uer Can that runnes through it.

(5) The ancient Inhabitants of this Country were the Briganies, mentioned in the feuerall Counties of

Tork, Lancaster and Cumberland.

(6) It is not commended either for plenty of Corn

(6) It is not commended either for plenty of Corn of Cattle, being neither Bored with arable grounds to bring forth the one, nor padurage to breed by the cherche principal profit that the people of this protuince raile vinto themselves, is by cloathing.

(7) The chiefeth place of which is Kanddle on Kendele, the Cattle of the Wilder of the Cattle king cloath, so excells the rest, that in regard therofit carrieth a supereminent name aboue them, and hath carrieth a toperemment name aboue treest, and name great vent and traffic for her voilen cloaths through all the parts of England. It challengeth not much glory for Antiquity, onely this taxcounterth a great credit, that it hath dignified three Earles with the title three Chat Lohn Dake's England, when Henry the fift (being his brother) advanced to that honour, John Duke of Sommerfet, & John de Feis, whom King Hen-ry the fixt preferred to that dignity for his honorable and trufty feruices done in the French warres. It is a place of very citill and orderly government, the pateror very cuit and often governments which is managed by an Alderma, cholen euery yeer out of his twelue brethren, who are all diffinguilhed & notified frother eft by the wearing of purple garments. The Alderman, and his Senior Brother are alwaies Iustices of peace and Quorum. There are in it a Town-Clerke, a Recorder, two Sergeants at Mace, and two Chamberlaines. By mathematicall obscruation the fite of this Towne is in the degree of Longitude 17.30. (cruples, from the first West point, and

the Pole elevated in Latitude to the degree 55, and

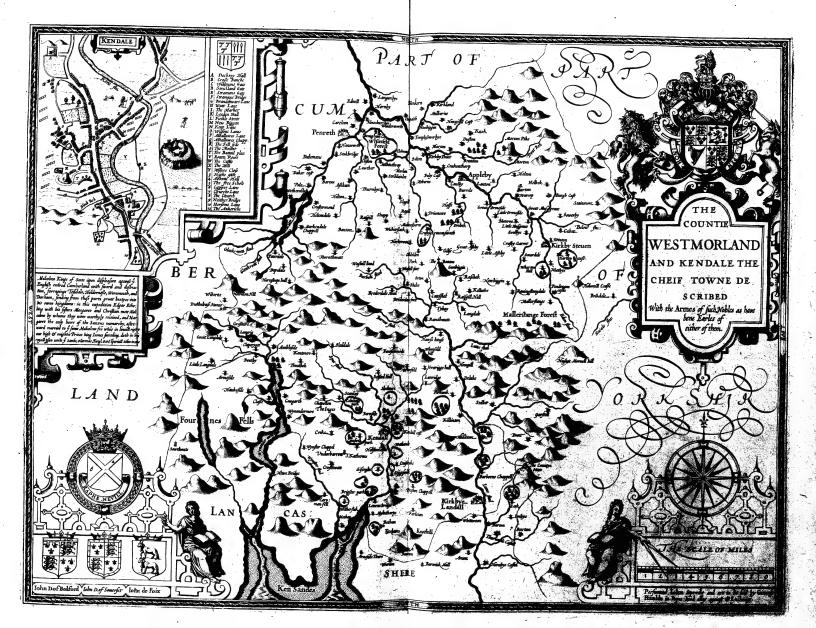
(8) Places of memorable note for Antiquity are, Places of chiefe (8) Places of memorable note for Antiquity are, Peters, mentioned by Antionise the Emperour, and Montales, which we contractly call Apsilp, In the one, the Northern English confipred against Williams the Conquerer, in the beginning of the Norman gouern-ment. In the other, the Anvelian Manre kept a flation in the time of the Romanes, and their high freece is yet apparently to be seen by the ridges therof which leade by Apelby to a place called Brouonacum, menti-oned in the booke of Prouincial notices. The antike peeces of Romane covne, otherwhiles digd vp heerabouts, and some inscriptions not long since found, flew of what continuance they have bene: although Time, which denoureth all things, hath so fed vpon their Carcales many ages together, as it hath almost consumed both houses, and Inhabitants. For Apelly now is bare both of people and building, and were it not for the antiquity that makes it the more efteemable in whose Castle the assissare commonly kept, it would be little better in account then a village. Vern would be intre better in account them a vinage/Fet-ter is long fince decayed, and the name of it changed into Burgh: for it is commonly named Burgh vnder Stanepure. In which it is said, a Romane Captaine made his aboad with a band of Director's in the declining age of the Romane Empire. These two places William of Newborough calleth Princely Holds, & writeth that William King of Scots, a little before hee himfelfe was taken priloner at Alnewicke, furprized them on a fudden; but King John recoursed them after and liberally bestowed them vpon Robert Vipont, for his many worthy feruices.

(9) There is mention made but of one religious house that hath been in al this Country, and that was a little Monastery seated neere vnto the river Leder, built by Thomas the sonne of Gospatrick, the sonne of orms: where there is a fountaine or fpring that ebbes and flowes many times a day, and it is thought that fome notable act of Archieuement hath beene pernome nomine accor extensionen nata beene per-formed there, for that there be huge flones in form of Pyramides, fome nine foote high and fourteen foote thick, raunged for a mile in length directly in a row and equally diffant, which might freme to haue been there purposely pitched in memory theros: But what that Act was is not now knowne, but quite worn out of remembrance by times injurie

(10) Other matters worthy observation are onely (10) Other matters worthy observation are onely their. That are amonglass, now called Ambie-fade, neer the upper corner of Primander-more, there appear earlies day the rules of an ancient City, which by the Strike, Bricke, by Roman money often time found three, by fight-mate panel dealing varoit, and other likelihoods, seeme to have beene a worke of the Romanes. The fortureffer their of the long fenced with addict and ramping that took up in length one than the control of the contr dred thirty two Ells, and in breadth eight. There are also necre Kendalin the river Can, two Catadapa or Waterfall, where the waters descend with such a forcible downefall, that it compells a mighty noise to bee ble downerall, that it compens a mighty note to be heard, which the neighbour Inhabitants make fuch vie of as they fland them in as good flead as Progno-flications: for when that which flandeth North from them foundeth more cleere and with a lowder Eccho in their Eares, they certainly looke for faire weather to follow: But when that on the South doth the like, they expect foggy miss and showres of raine.

(11) This Prouince is traded with foure Market Townes, fortified with the strength of seuen Castles, and hath 26. Parishes in it for the celebration of dinine fernice.

Y 2.



86

87

CVMBERLAND.

CVMBERLAND.

CHAPTER XLV.

The forme

The aire.

Book.i.



mberland, the furthest North-west Prouince in this Realme of England, confronteth vpon the fouth of Scotland, and is diuided from that Kingdome partly by the riner Kirfop, then crofsing Eske, by a tract thorow Solome-

Mosse, vntill it come to the Solwaye Frith, by Ptolemie called the Itune Baye. The North-west part is neighboured by Northumberland, more eastward with westmerland, the South with Lancashire, and the West is wholly washed with the

(2) The forme whereof is long and narrow, pointing wedge-like into the South, which part is altogething wedge-ine to the south, which part is along the peftred with copped hilles, and therfore hath the name of Cop-land. The middle is more leuell, and better inhabited, yeelding fufficient for the fuffenance of man: but the North is wild and folirarie, combred

or man: out rue Novin its wind and oldrame, commore with hilless as Copland is.

(3) The aire is piercing, and of a flar pte temperature, and would be more biting, were it not that thole high hilles breake off the Northerne flormes, and cold falling flowes.

(4) Norwithlanding, rich is this Prouluce, and

with great varieties thereof is replenished: the hilles, though rough, yet fmile vpon their beholders, spread with sheepe and cattle, the vallies stored with grasse and corne sufficient : the sea affoordeth great store of fish, the land ouer-spread with varietie of fowles, and the rivers feed a kinde of Muskle that bringeth forth Pearle, where in the mouth of the Irt, as they lie gaping and fucking in dew, the Country people gather and fell to the Lapidaries, to their owne little, and the buyers great gaine. But the Mines Royall of Copper, whereof this Country yeeldeth much, is for vie the richeft of all: the place is at Kefwick and Newland, where likewife the Blacke Lead is gotten, whose plentie maketh it of no great esteeme; otherwise a com-moditie that could hardly be missed.

(5) The ancient Inhabitants knowne to the Ro mans, were the Brigantes, whom Ptolemy disperseth into westmorland, Richmond, Duram, York-shire, and Lanca-foire. But when the Saxons had ouer-borne the Britaines, and forced them out of the best, to seeke their resting among the vast Mountaines, these by them were entred into, where they held play with those enemies maugretheir force, and from them, as Marianus doth witnesse, the Land was called Cumber, of those Kumbri the Britaines. But when the State of the Saxons was fore shaken by the Danes, this Cumberland was accounted a Kingdome it felfe; for so the tana was accounted a Kingdonie k let; to k out to Flower-gatherer of westminster recordeth: King Ed-mund (suith he) with the helpe of Leoline Prince of South-wales, wasted all Cumberland, and having put out the cies of the two somes of Dunmail King of that Province, gran-ted that King dome onto Malcolm King of Scots, whereof their eldeft sonnes became Prefects. This Prouince, King Stephen to purchase fauour with the Scats, what time hee stood in most need of aid, confirmed by gift vnder their Crowne; which Henry the second not-withstanding made claime vnto and got, as Newbrigensis writeth, and laid it againe in the Marches of

England: fince when, many bickerings betwixt thefe Nations herein haue hapned, but none so sore against the Sectiff side, as was that at Solome Mosse, where their Nobilitie disdaining their Generall Oliver sinclere, gaue ouer the Battle, and yeelded themselues to the English; which dishonour pierced so deepely into the heart of King James the fifth, that for griefe thereof he fhortly after died.

(6) Many memorable Antiquities remaine and haue beene found in this County : for it being the Confines of the Romans Possessions, was continually fecured by their Garrifons, where remaine at this day parts of that admirable wall built by Seuerus: also an other Fortification from Werkinton to Elns Mouth, vpon the fea-thoare toward Ireland, by Stilico raifed when vnder Theodofius he suppressed the rage of the Pitts and Irifb, and freed the Seas of the Saxons Pyrats. Vpon Hard-knot hill, Moresby, Old Carleil, Pap-castle along the Wall, and in many other places, their ru-

ines remaine, with Altars, and Inscriptions of their Captaines and Colonies, whereof many haue beene found, and more as yet lie hid. (7) The chiefest City in this Shire is Carlile, pleafantly feated betwixt the Riucrs Eden, Petterell, and

Cand, by the Romans called Luguvallum; by Beda, Luell; by Ptolemie, Leucopibia; by Ninius, Caer-Lualid; and by vs Carlile. This City flourishing vnder the Romans, at their departure by the furious outrages of the Scott and Piets was dejected, yet in the daies of Egfrid King of Northumberland was walled about : but againe defaced by the ouer-running Danes, lay buried in her owne ashes the space of two hundred yeeres; vpon whose ruines at length Rusus set his compassionate eie, and built there the Castle, planting a Colonie of Flemings to secure the Coasts from the Scots, but vpon better aduisement remoued them into Wales. Af ter him, Henry his brother and fucceffour ordained this City for an Episcopall See: whose site is placed in the degree of Longitude from the first West pare 17. and 2. Cruples, and the Pole thence elevated from the degree of Latitude 55. and 56. Cruples,

(8) West from hence, at Burgh vpon the fand, was the fatallend of our famous Monarch King Edwas the team teat of our famous propagate range de-pared the First, who there leaving his warres vinfinish-ed against scaland, left his troubles and soone milded life, to his varientley and soone lamented death. (9) And at Salkelds upon the Rime Eden, Monu-Callein,

ment of feuenty feuon frones, each of them ten foot 1. Eaw. high aboue ground, and one of them at the entrance fifteene, as a Trophie of Victorie was erected. These are by the By-dwellers called Long Megge and her

(10) This County as it flood in the fronts of affaults, so was it strengthned with twenty sue Castles, and preferued with the praiers (as then was thought) of the Votaries in the houses erected at Carlile, Leneof the Potanes in the nours erected at Cartile, Lene-eoft, Wetherall, Holme, Daker, and Saint Bees. Thele with others were difficulted by King Homy the eighth, and their reuenewes shadowed under his Crowne: but the Province being freed from charge of subsidy, is not therefore divided into Hundreds in the Parlament Rowles, whence wee haue taken the divisions of the rest : only this is observed, that therein are seated nine Market-Towns, fiftie eight parish-churches, besides many other Chapels of case.

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and memorable places mentioned in VVestmorland.

AMbledde. App PL B PY. Great B.Y. Great B.Y		Chappollan,	н	L	Newbiggin.	Sowerby.
A P D LE BY. Great Great Clifton. Great Clifton. Golished Park. Colordia. Golished Park. Contellat. Coulby. Goulby. Goul	A MALIAGIA	Clanervare.		Little 2	Nine Churches.	Sput flu.
Cittles Colabred Park Colabred	A MDIENOC.	Clahorn	Hartfhon 2	Langdale. S	1	
Oddelden Park. Contefflat. Contest Con			hall.	Great 2	1 0	Stainmore.
Lirie 2 Mibry 5 Mibry 6 Mibry 7 Mibry	Great 2	Collaborat Dorle		Langdale C	1	Stanley.
Little 2 highly 5 highly 6 high 7 highly 6 high 7 highly 6 high 7 highly 6 high 7 highly 6 highly 7 hi	lhby. 3				Oddelden.	Stokbridge.
hlby, S. Coolay. Holy, S. Coolay. Hellock. Hellock. Helloch. Lanton. Coolay. Coolay. Helloch. Hellon.					Oddelden narke	
ikhlam. Covegarita. B Crakemhorp. Millerflange. Millerflange. Millerflange. Millerflange. Millerflange. Millerflange. Millerflange. Millerflange. Millerflange. Redrigen. R	shby, S	Coulby.				041101661111
B Cooky Garret, Goody Garret, Goody Raunfsorth, Crofferhoud, Crofferho	kham.					T
B Crofey Gartet, method of the control of the contr	1 4					
inton. Crofty Parents orth. Crofty Raumforth. Crofty Raumforth. Crofty Raumforth. Crofty Raumforth. Crofty Raumforth. Croftwaite. Defeate. D Croftwaite. D D Continuer. The Parent Continuer. The Parent Continuer. Mailerfange. Pertion Chappell. W Vnderbarrot Narederdale. Lanc flu. F Court Bet. Trout Bet. Mailerfange. Mailerfange. Mailerfange. Mailerfange. Mailerfange. Pertion Chappell. Raifgill ball. W Vnderbarrot Waffall S. Methorn. Milborne, Methorn. Methorn. Milborne, Methorn. Methorn. Methorn. Methorn. Methorn. Milborne, Methorn. Methorn. Milborne, Methorn. Methorn. Milborne, Methorn. Methorn. Milborne, Methorn. Milborne, Methorn. Milborne, Methorn. Milborne, Milborne, Methorn. Milborne, Methorn. Milborne,	В					TampleConsults:
inton- thorner Chappell, Coffermond. Coffermend. Coffe		Crofby-Garret.				
whome Chappell, Croferake, Coletermond. Cordinate, Coletermond. Cordinate, Coletermond. Cordinate,	nton.			Lunc ilu.	Orton	
amfale. Croftermond. Holimilleroffe, Howgill Calite. Howgill Calite. Mallerflange Mallerfl	rhorne Channell.	Crofcrake.		1 -	1	
rirrow flu. irrow flu.		Croftermond.		M	Į P	
irtion. The Beacon. clow flu. clow f		Crofthwaire.	Holimill croffe.	1	1	
The Bescon close of the property of the proper		0.00	Howgill Caftle.			Tybay.
elser fla. che		l n			Pendragon Caffie.	
ctham, before the content of the con		1.	1 7	forreft. S	Preston Chappell.	¥
laterure, Dribeke. Driucuere, Dribeke. E S. Chappell. S. Kerberina, S. Kerberina, S. Kelderen, Midderen, Raunflangdale, Waftall S. Kerberina, S. Kelderen, Midderen, M		0 - 11-		Malmelborne.		1
ingers, Driveuers, Dri	Cflights.		The?	Markendale 2	l R	Vnderbarrow.
Tariton. Dullon. Tariton. K K Meborne. Mesille. Mesille. Mullindrorp. Middleron. Midlentorp. Middleron. Melorne. Midlentorp. Morton. S Wafall 2 foote. S Wafall 2 Morton. Morton. S Wafall 2 Mo			1110		1	
ranton, checkedale che			mge.3		Raifeill hall.	w
rederdale 2 hesd 5 hesd 6 hesd 5 hesd 6 hesd 5 hesd 6 hesd 7 hesd 1 hesd 1 hesd 7 hesd 1 hesd 7 hesd 1 hesd 7 hesd 1 hesd 7 hesd 1 hesd 1 hesd 7 hesd 1 hesd 1 hesd 7 hesd 1 hesd		Duiton.				
head 5 cederdale 5 foote, 6 foote, 6 foote, 7 fo	rederdaleZ'					Warcon
rederiale contended of the contended of		E			Panin Genedale	
foote. S. Footh N. Kellather. Mellinthorp. Ronthwates. Store S. Footh N. Kellather. Mellinthorp. Ronthwates. Store S. Footh N. Kendall 2. Kendall 2. Kendall 2. Kendall 2. Kendall 3. Kenda	rederdale?	1 . ~				head E
rigiter parke. Tougham? Caffle. Caffle. Surlev Gattle. Furleton. Farietrood. F	foote 5	Eden flu.			Regil.	
roogshan Caffle, Survey States of St	riofter parke.	!			Kuntuwate.	
Caffle, S. Alleys Caffle, S. A		F				soote. 5
Luley Calle, Ericton. Cattle, S, Morron. Great Seggéwick, Whinfield, Glenkwen flut, Gl					3	
kurbek flu. kurgh Caffle. kraft K K B Y 2 kurten L kraft K K B Y 2 kraft K K B Y 3 kraft K B Y 3 kraft K K B Y 3 kraft K B Y		Farleton.	Cattle, C		1	
lurgh Callle. Exufetoood. Killinton. Millinton. Millinton. Searce and Vinintered as Currell, Unrell, Firbanke. KI R K B Y Z. Steven. S Molgrate. S Shape. Wickerlisk, Unron. G G KI R K B Y Z. Lurdal. S Mylanhorp. Mierghe, Winderwon K Winton. Gleichwen flu. Kirkland. Millinton. N Siegill. Winterlisk, Cleichwen flu. Gleichwen flu. Gleichwen flu. Gleichwen flu. Gleichwen flu. Gleichwen flu. Gleichwen flu. Grarigge hall. Knock. Nane worth. Smirdel. Wynder Ch. Nenby. Smirdel. Wynde		Faricton.	Kentmere.	Great 3	Seggelwick.	
urreit, Firbanke. KI R K B Y Little Z Shalet. Whinheld H Streen. S Mufgrane: S Shape, Wickerflack Jurron. G G K I R K B Y Z Mufgrane: S Shape, Wickerflack Jurron. G Gilfe. Landal. S Mylamhorp. Sledale. Windorson. C Glenkroden flu. Kirkhy Thuet. N Slegill. Winton. Amfuick? Glenkwen flu. Kirkland, Nane worth, Sleelmete. Wynder Glenkroden G Garatgeg hall. Knock. Nathy. Smardale, Wynder Chromodol. Windows Mynder Chromodol. Since Market Mynder Chromodol. Since M		Fawfetwood.		Mulgraue, 3		
lutron. kutron. G KI R K B Y Z Lutdall 5 C Gliehven flu. Clickwen flu. Clickwen flu. Clarmfeick 7 Grarigge ball. Kirkland. Kirkland. Nane worth. Nane wo			KIRKBY?	Little 2		
terron. G KI R K B Y Mylamorp. Gilfe. C Glieskrodes flu. Glieskrodes flu. Kirkly T Duet. Kirkly T Duet. Kirkly M. Kirkly M. Naneworth. Nelemer. Niegil. N Slegil. Winder flu Wynfler flu Sanfwick? Gartigge hall. Knock. Naneworth. Selemer. Wynfler flu Wynfler flu Selemer. Selemer. Wynfler flu Selemer.		1	Steuen, S	Mulgrane. 5		
Giffe. Lindall, 5 Giffe. Lindall, 5 Giffe. M. Kirkly Thuer. Nane worth. Siegill. Witherlisk, 2 Giffe. Giffe. Kirkland, Nane worth. Siegill. Wynder die Amfeick Caraigge hall. Knock. Nathy. Samadale, Wynder die Amfeick Caraigge hall. Knock.		6	KIRKBY>	Mylathorp.		
C Glenkroden flu, Kirkby Thuet, N Slegill. Witherlike, Glenkwen flu, Kirkland, Naneworth, Sleelmete, Wynfler flu Jamfuick? Grarigge hall, Knock, Nathy, Smardale, Wynfler flu	urton-					
Caber, Glenkwen flu, Kirkland, Nane worth, Sleelmere, Wynfter flu, Camwick? Grarigge hall, Knock, Nathy, Smardale, Wynfter Ch. Samwick?				N	Slegill.	
aber. Amfwick? Grarigge hall. Knock. Nathy. Smardale. Wynfter Ch				Nane worth		Wynster flu.
Camiwick? Grangge name Rinder.					Smardale.	Wynster Chappe
Parke. 5 Greimere. Rubilini.	Camlwick 2				Soulby.	Wynandermere
	Parke. 5	Greimere.	Properies.	*** An SP.	1	1





CVMBERLAND.

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and Places mentioned in Cumberland.

A TABLE OF the Townes in Cumberland.

Acton. Aglionby. Alhollowes. Alneflu. Alme. Allonby Alonby. Alwarby. Ancautre Kirk? Ander, S Anftable. Arladon. Armanthwat ? caftell. Armanthwat. Armebath. Artruth. Askerton caftell, S Auftermore. Kirk Z Banton, S Little Banton, C Bardfey half. Barrenwood ?

parke. Balinthauate. Beamont. S. Bees head. S. Becs. Bekermonde Bew-caftell Birtby. Black-band, Black-hall. Blek-hall. Blencongey Bleng flu. Blenkerne. Blyprofet. Blenrake. Bodell. Bolton. Borrodale. Boulnetle. Bowtell. Brakenthwat

Braken hill.

Brathwate

Brathwate.

S. Brides.

Bridgeham.

Bridekirk.

Brodwater.

Bronelfton

Brountig. Brumfeild.

Brifco.

BRAMPTON

Brumfeild. Dereham. Derwentfote hauen. Deuonby. Burgh kirke. Deyn. Diffinton. Bustwath hill-Douthwaite Cambek flu. Kirk 2

Cander, Canda flu-

Cannonby.

Cardew.

Carlton.

Carleton.

Carleton.

CARLILE.

Cattell 2

Caswald howe,

Chappell of 2

the grune,

Caroke. S

Catterley.

Church.

Cladbck,

Clifton.

Coker flu.

Corryhouse

Copeland.

Corno.

Cotchill.

Crokedale.

Croglin,

Crosby.

Crosby.

Crofton.

Concarith.

Culgaith.

Cumrew.

Dacor flu-

Dalemane.

Dalegarth.

Darwent fels.

Darwent flu.

Darwen Hand.

Daufton.

Denok flu.

Denton hall.

Ouer ?

Nether ?

Denton.

Denton,

Dent hill.

Darwen flu,

Dacor caffell.

Croffhate

Combe whitton.

Copeland forrest.

Criftenbury crage

Croglin Church.

P. Drigg. Drumbugh caffell. Dubmill, Dudden flu. Cammerton Dunbairatle flones Eden flu. Eden flu. Ednell.

Eglesfeild. EGREMOND. Eimot flu-Eine flu. Elneboro. Emleton. Emfaugh. Enerdale. Efgill. Esk flu. Eskdale. Fedington.

Fingland.

Flimby. Fornfide. COKERMOVTH Gamlesby. Gamleby. Gargill. The The Gele crag Gelt flu. Gilcroffe. Gilfland. Glasenby. Glasen. Gesforth. The Grange.

> Grinfdale. Grisedale. Hale. Harbybrow. Hard-knot Hareridge hall. Harinton. Harington. Harper hill. Hathewate.

Graftoke caftell

Haton caftell. Haton. Haughton. Hay castell. Helbeck crag. Heffedach. Heskew. Hesket. Highgate. Highyate castella Holme. The Horse head. The Houses TheMote.

Huddleskew. Huthwate. Huton. Huton Iohn.

IERBY. Inglewoodforreit. S. Johns. S. Iohns, Iohnby. Irthing flui Irton ` Jet flu ille.

tenfeild. Itune bay. KESWICK, Kirbek flu. Kirkanders. Kirkby. Kirklop foot.

The Laith. The Lamiford. Lamonby. ampley. Langanby. angnewton Lafen. Lafenby. Lawrence. Legburgh wate.

Limers dale.

Lorton.

The

R Raby-Cotes. Randerfide half RAVENGLAS. ene-croft White & flu. Raughton Raughton 7 head chapeli Leuen 5 Kirk 2 Rawthate. Redmane. Reunok. Black 7 flu Ribton. The Rose castell The Lies. Rotherby, Rowcliff caftell.

Rowcliff. Lowbyer. Saberham. Lowfwater. Lynftoke caftell. Salkeldes. West 2 Sawbarron. Lynton, 5 Scalbye. Scalby Caffle. Scafcall. Seaton. Scaton. Schlofeld.

Stanwix.

Sannborn

Malthorn, Materdale. Old Mawberow. 5 Seemurther. Medohush wood. Silluth. Melmerby. Silverfide, Skelton. S. Michaelschapell. Skiddow hill. Millum caftell. Skinburneffe, Millum caftelle Skirwith. Millum. Milne hill. Skutterby. Staffe. Momaster. Stainton-Moresby. Stangartikfed. Mosedale.

Stapleton. Sollome Moffe. The Mynes Royall, The Mynes, Myterdale. Sowporte. Naworth castell. Netherby. Newbiggen. Newbiggen,

Newby.

Orton.

Pap-caffell.

Penrodok.

Petterell,

Plumland.

Portinskal.

Pottrofeffu.

Puntonby.

Sowerby.

Sowterfeild.

Fallantre.

Tarraby.

Thakthwate.

Thornthwate.

Thurbury flu-

South 3 flu.

Thwate.

Spade Adam. Shire ftones Shire frones 7 Sunderland. Newland chapell, New-lathes. New-more. Newton in Ardale, Nunny. Threlcot. Ouerhall. Thuresbye. Outerbye. Owterfide. Owton, Tomwat hill.

Torpenny. Thenew Towne. PENRETH. Tretermane. Trout Bek. Petterell wrey. Vent flu. Vifay parke. Viics flue Vllok. Vnerigg. Vnthank Vnrhank. Vprightby.

> Wakthwate, Waleton. Wampul flu Wampali, Wardail, Warnell Warton. Warwick Wafdale chapell. Nether 2 Waldale. Watenlath.

Wathermelak Wawburthwat, WERKINTON. Westward. Wellward? forreft. Weffhall. Wetherall Whidbek. Whitridge. Whithauen.

Whitlaton.

Whitelofe.

Widehope.

Wilhorne

Winfgell.

With-hill.

Kirles }

Wulfty Caffell.

Whittyham.

Barwick.

Richard the fe

eona. Hewy the fixt,

cs-picin the old English Saxon tongue, which is the Towne of the Bernicians. Howsever, this is better to bee said then trufted; and whence focuer it hath the name, it is feated

NORTHVMBERLAND.

CHAPTER XLVI.

A STAN STAN

Chap.46.

The bounds of

The forme

The Aire.

The Soile,

Newcallta.

He County of Northumber land, which the English-Saxous called Norp-humber lono hath on the South the Bishoprick of Durham, being thut in with the river Derwent, and with Tyne : the North is confind vpon Scotland, the West vpon part of Scotland and part of Cumberland: The East-side lyeth al-

together vpon the Sea, called Mare-Germanicum. (2) The formethereof is Triangle, and difference much in the fidings for from her South Ealt, vnto the South-Weftpointare neere vnto 40.miles ; from thence to her Northpoint are fixtie Miles, and her bale along the Sea-shoare 45. miles: The whole in Circumference is about one hundred forty five miles

(3) The Ayre must needs be subtle, and piercing for that the Northernly parts are most exposed to extremity of weathers, as great winds, hard frofts, and long lying of frowes, &c.Yet would it be farre more fharper then it is, were not the Germane Seas a ready meanes to further the diffolution of her Ice and Snow, and the plenty of Coales there gotten, a great help to comfort the body with warmth and defend the bitter coldnes.

(4) The Soile cannot berich, having neither fertility of ground for Corn or Cattle, the most part of it being rough and in enery place hard to bee manured, faue onely towards the Sea, and the river Time, where, by the great difigence, and industrious paines of good husbandry that part is become very fruitfull.

(5) The ancient Inhabitants of this Countrey mentioned by Ptolomy were called Ostalini, OTTADENI, & OTTA-DINI, which by an calle alteration (as M'. Cambden (aith) if it had bene called OTTATINI, fignifying about the river Tyne, or on the farther lide of Tyne (for io this people were planted) there would have beene much confonance both with the name of the Juhabitants, and the Polition & Site

of the Province. (6) The Chiefest commodity that enricheth this Countye are those Stones Limbanerases, which wee call Sea-coales, whereof there is fuch plenty and abundance digged vp. as they doe not onely turne a great gaine to the Inhabitants, but procure also much pleasure and profit to others.

(7) No place in this Prouince vents forth formany of thefe Sea-coales into other regions as Newcastle doth, being the very eye of all the Townes in this Countye; for it doth not onely minister reliefe(by such provision) to all other parts of England, but doth alfo furnish the wants of forrain countries with her plenty. By meanes of this, and the intercourfe A rich towne. of Trafficke which it hath, the place is grown exceeding rich and populous. Before the Conquest it was called Monk-chefor: having beene (as it feemed) in the possession of Monker. and Cheffer beeing added, which fignifies a Bulwarke or place of defence, the westhat in ancient time it had beene place of fortification.

a piace of oruncation.

(8) After the Conquest it got the name of Neweastle, by the new castle which Robert the sonne of William the Conqueror built there out of the ground. What it was called in old time is not knowne, yet some are of opinion that it may be thought to have beene Gattosenum, for that Gates-bead, the suburbe (as it were) of the same, expressed in the owne proper lignificatio, that British name, Gatrofentum, le is now most enobled both by the Hauen (which Tyme maketh Jof that notable depth, that it beareth very tall Ships, and is able to defend them from flormes and tempelts. As alfo by many fauours, and honours, wherewith it hath bene dignified by princes:for Richard the fecond graunted that a fword should be carried before the Major: and Henry the fixemade it a County confifting of a Corporation within i selfe.It is adorned with foure Churches, and fortified with ftrong walls that have eight gates. It is diffant from the first West line 2 1. degrees and 30. Minutes, and from the Equi-noctial! line towards the Northpole 34. degrees and 57.

(a) The vemost towns in England and the strongest hold in all Britaine is Barwick. From whence it had the name it not certainely made knowne. Some fetch it from Berengarim a Duke (neuer read of:) some fay it was called Beogni-

octweene two mighty Kingdomes, shooting farre into the Sea, with the which, and the river Tneed, it is alm off encompaffed; and whenfoeuer any difcord fell betweene the two Nations, this place was the first thing they tooke care of .It hath indured the brunts of divers inroades & incursions, & bene oftentimes both poffeffed and repoffeifed of the Scott and English: But since it was reduced under the command of Edward the fourth, our Kings haue from time to time fo ftrengthened it with new works and fortifications, as they cut off all hopes of winning it. The governour of this towne | The Governore is also VVarden of the East Marches against Scotland. The

Longitude of it according to Mathematicall obsetuation is 21. degrees, and 43. minutes: The latitude 55, degrees and 48.minutes. (10) The Inhabitants of this County area warlike people,

and excellent light horsemen, and are made fierce and hardy by the feueral encounters of the Sens; & not much vnlike them in neither, betwixt whom in this County many battailes have beene fought, and the fucceifes of tentimes waved through very doubtfully, the victory formtimes falling to the Seats, formetimes to the English. At Osturburne was one, in which three or four times, it flooddoubtfully in different, till in the end the Score got the vpper hand of the English Howbeit their glory was not made so illustrious by this Conquest, but that it was as much darkned by the foile they received at Annicks, where William King of Seass, was taken and presented prisoner to Heavy the second. As also by that battaile at Brum-ridge, where King Ashelflan fought a pitcht field against Anlaye the Dane, Conflancine King of Scott, and Engenius King of Comberland, and that with such fortunate successes a sit hath left matter sufficient to fill the pennes of Historians. Flodden field also memorable in the leath of lames the fourth, King of Seets, who was there flain

ocatio i samer incloura, ang ed seet, who was three lain and his Army ouerthrowne in a linere fight, as the displaied his banner (in great hope) againt England, when King Heny the cight lay at the flegs of Tamay in France.

(11) Other battoiler in this County have beene, as that as Resam(called by Red England ploy when 1 he Need) Margues Alonsacute, encountred the Leaders of the Lanaghrian faction with much courage, and with greater fuccetle put them to flight, for which he was made Earle of Northumber. land by Edward the fourth. As also that at Diffen (by Bede called Disselfburns,) where Ofwald having the faith of Christ for his defence and armour, slew Codows! the Britaine in a fet Battaile, himfelfe ftraightwaies becomming a pro felled Christian, and causing his people to beeinstructed in Christian religion.

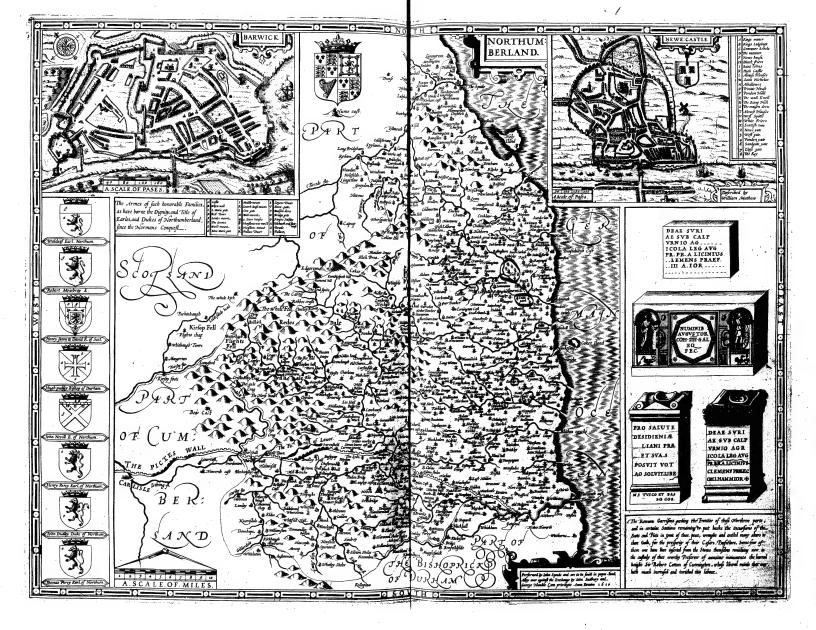
(12) Many memorable antiquities are found in this Country along the wall, and in other places : As peeces o Coyne, inferiptions, broken and unperfect Altars, &c. (the ruines of the wall yet to bee feener) but none that deferues notice to be removed the Med. Town (by Bede called A Mornon) for that Seebert King of the Eaft-Seeon; was in it baptized in the Chitilian faith by the hands of Paulinus: and Hahfen, where the fame Paulinus: and the think that the partized many thousands into the Faith of Christ in the primi-

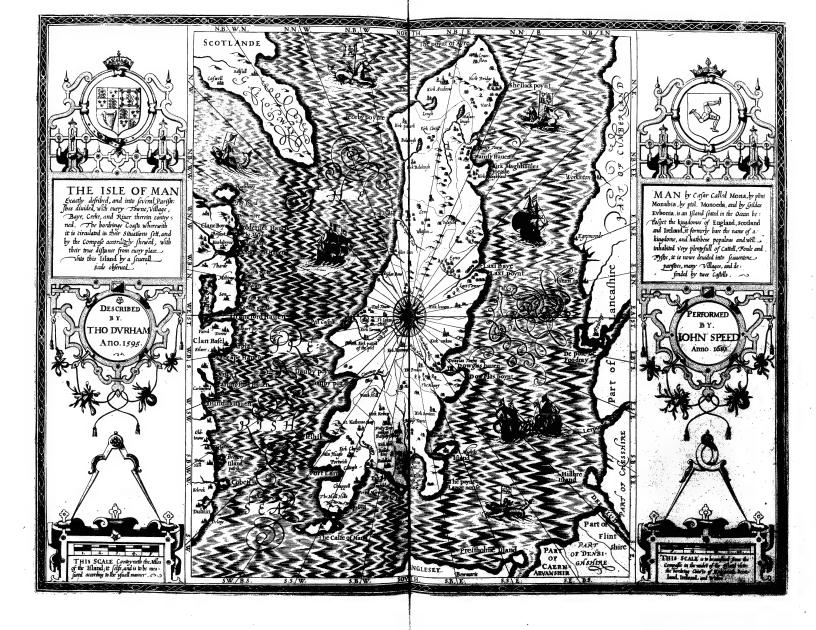
tiue Church of the English Nation.

(13) Busy-gap is a place infamous for robbing and thee-uing, & is therfore tather remembred as a Camionarie note for such as have cause to travell that way, then for any pro per marcer of worth it hath, that merits place with other

parts of this Prouince. Other matters of observation are onely these, that north Time(running through the Wall) waters two dales, which oreed notable light horsemen, and both of them have their hills (hard by) fo boggy and flanding with water on the top, niisi (introby) do oggy annuasuus annuasuu on to ogg that no horfemen arable to ride through them, and yet (which is wonderfulbree be many great hapese of Stock (called Lesso) which the raighbouring people are verily perfused owere call yet and layd together in old time, in temembrance of form that were faint there. There is also a of Men. marriall kinds of men which lie out vp and downe in little cottages (called by them Sheals and Shealings) from Aprill corregated and on them defend and containing a prior Appell, in a Castering fathion, fummering (as they terme it) their Castle, and these are such a fort of people as were the ancient Normades. The last, not least, matter of nore is this, that the Inhabitants of Norpais Set their owne towne on fire in the yeare of Christ 12 15, in the spight they bas to King John, for that hee and his Rutars over ranne thefe

This County hath five Market Townes in lefor her trade of buying and felling, twenty fixe Castles for her strength and fortification, and 460 parishes for divine service.





92

Syrrice King of

Logotas King,

Olige King.

Gadred the fe-

Flagil.

T is here very pertinent to the purpof tomfert a finall thistoric of this tland, that the atchesicements heretofore had, may not be otterly buried, although they are waxen very old, and almost torne from remembrance by the teeth of Time. It is conflicted by all, that the bictaines held this lland, at they did all Britaine. But when the Nations from the North ourselfuneathiefs could past; like vision temples; there may object in the Scots. Afterward, the Norwegians, who did most hunt from the North ourse. Sea to their manifold robotics, made this I land and the I televides to be their haunt, and erected Lords and petty Kings in the same, as is expressed in this Chronicle, written (as is reported) by the Monks of the Abbey of Russin.

A (bronicle of the Kings of Man.

A Nno Dom. 1063. Edward of bleffed memory, King of specific parted this life, and Handd the fourse of Galden per for exceed billion in the Kingdom against whom Handd Hanfyer (King of Normay) came into the field, and fought a blacked as the specific part of the and honourably received him.

and nonourably received into.
(2) The fame yeer William the Baffard coquered England,& Godred the fon of Syrrio died, his fon Fingal fucceeding him. (;) An. 1066, Godred Cronan affembled a great Fleet and came to Man, and fought with the people of the Land,

and came to Dana, and rought with the Popular to the Lating but received the worlf, and was our come.

The fecond time renewing his forces and his Fleet, he faired into Man, and ioined battell with the Manke man, but was vanquifhed as before, and driven out of the field. Howbeir, what he could not at first bring to passe with power in those two scuerall onsets, he afterwards effected by policie. For the third time gathering a great multitude together, he arrived by night in the Hauen called Kamfer, and hid three hundred men in a wood, which flood vpou the hanging hollow brow of an hill called Sectivil. The Sunbeng rilen, the Mankings put their people in order of battell, and with a violent charge encountred with Godred. The fight was hot for a time, and Galeed Comen thood in a doubtfull suspence, till those three hundred men flarting out of the Ambush behind their backs, beganne to foile the Mankemen, put them to the worlf, and forced them to life. Who feeing themfelues thus difcomfitted, and finding no place of refuge left them to escape, with pitifull lamentations submitted themselves vnto Godred, and befought him notto putto the fword fuch poore remainder of them as was left alive, Godred having compassion on their calamities, (for he had been nourfed for a time and brought vp among them) founded a retrait, and prohibited his hoft any longer put flit He being thus pollefled of the flee f.Mass, died in the Hand that is called flee, when he had raigned fixtene yecress Heleft behind him three fonnes, Lagman, Havald, and Olane.

(4) Lagraca the eldeft taking upon him the Kingdome, raigned fourn veres. His brother Harald rebelled against him a great while; but at length was taken prisoner by Lagiman, who caused his members of generation to be cut oil, and his ejesto be put out of his head. Which cruestie this Lagman afterwards repenting, gaue ouer the Kingdome of his owne accord, and wearing the badge of the Lords Croffe tooke a journey to Ierufalem, in which he died.

(5) An. 1075. all the Lords and Nobles of the Hands hearing of the death of Lagman, dispatched Ambassadors to Murecard O-brien, King of Ireland, and requested that hee Musecard O-bries, King of tretand, and requested that nee would fend fome worthy and industrious man of the Bloud Royall to be their King, till Olause the fon of Gedred came to full age. The King yet ling to their request. Gent one Dopada the fon of Tade, and charged himto governe the Kingtome Departd King. (which by right belonged to another) with lenitic and gentlenetle. But after he was come to the Crowne, forgetting, or not weighing the charge that his Lord and Mafter had giuen him, fwaied his place with great tyranny committing many outragies and crue ties, and fo raigned three veeres: till all the Princes of the Ilands agreeing together tole vp against him, and made him flie into Ireland,

(6) An Do. 1111 Olane the fon of Godred Cronan aforefaid, began his raigne, and raigned forty yeeres a peaceable laid, began instalgine, and raigned to by years a preceding Prince. He tooke to wife Africa, the daughter of Fergus of Gal-may, of whom he begat Godred. By his Concubines hee had Regnald, Legman, and Harald, befide many daughters, whereof one was martied to Summerled, Prince of Herrgal-

whereof one-was married to SummerIod, Prince of Herrey, and ded, who cauded the returne of the Kings of the Illand, On her he begat four Gons, Duele Alexinguid, Enguyan and Olans, (2) An Donn, 1444, Goderdath Gont Olans, was created King of Man and raigned thrirty vecres. In the third yeere of this raigne, the propole of Dublie of the for him, and made their King, Which Man-eard King of Ireland maligning, article way, and fem Ofberty his half-brother by the mother relationship of the Man and the River of the Man and the River of the Man and the River of the River of the Man and the River of the R fides with 3000 men at Armes to Dublin, who by Godred and the Dublinians was flaine, and the rest all put to flight. These atchieuements made, Godred returned to Man, & began to vicevranny, turning the Noblemen out of their inheritances. Whereupon one called Thorfin (Otors (onne)being mightier then the reft, came to Summerled, and made Dulea

(Summerleds fonne) King of the Hands : whereof Godred hauing intelligence, prepared a Nauie of 80. Ships to meete Summerled. And in the yeere 1156. there was a bartell fought at Sea on Twelfth day at night, & many flaine on both fides. But the next day they grew to a pacification, and dissided the Kingdome of the llands among themselues. This was the caule of the ouerthrow of the Kingdome of the Iles. (8) Ann. 1158. Summerled came to Man with a fleet of

fiftie three faile, put Godred to flight, and wasted the Hand. Godred upon this croiled ouer to Norway for aid against Summerled, But Summerled in the meane time arthing at Rhinfrin, and having gathered together a fleet of 1060. flaps, coucting to subdue all Scotland, by the just sudgement of God was vanquished by a few, and both himseife and his fonne flaine, with an infinite number of people.

(9) The fourth day after Reginald began to raigne, but Godred comming upon him out of Norway with a greatmultitude of armed men, tooke his brother Raignald, and bereft him both of his eies & genitall members. On the fourth Ides of November, An. Dom. 1187. Godred King of the Hands died, and his body was translated to the Ile of Ely. He left died, and his body was translated to the life JE. Heleft behinde him three founes, Rejand, Johns, and Yuar, Hord-daired in his life time, that Olaum found (fucecede him, be-cusio he only was borne legitiment. But the people of Man-fecing him to be fearce ten yeeres old, fent for Rognald, and made him their King. This cauded great duulinon, and many turbulent attemps between the two brethers, hor the flace turbulent attemps between the two brethers, hor the flace of thirtie eight yeeres; which had no end, till at a place called Tingualla there was a Battle strucke betweene them. wherein Olane had the victorie, and Reignald was flaine. The Monkes of Rushin translated his body vnto the Abbey of S. Mary de Fournes, and there interred it in a place which himfelfe had chofen for that putpofe.
(10) An.1230 Olane and Godred Don (who was Reginalds

fonne) with the Nonwegians came to Man, and divided the Kingdome among themselves. Olane held Man, and Godred being gone vnto the Ilands, was flaine in the Ile Lodhus. So Olane obtained the Kingdome of the Isles. Hee died the twelith Calends of June, Anno 12;7. in S. Patrick Hand, and

twent Calenda or tame, anno 1237. In a reprise quanto, and was buried in the Abbey of Reffin.

(11) Harold his fonne fucceeded him; being foureteene yeeres of age, and raigned wellue yeeres. In the yeere 1339, he went vurn other King of Normay, who after two yeters confirmed voto him, his heires and fucceifours, while his Seale, all the liands which his Predeceffours had policifed.

(12) An. 1242. Handlifetturned out of Norman, and he

ing by the Inhabitants honourably received had peace with the Kings of England, and of Sealand. The fame yeere hee was fent for by the King of Norway, & maried his daughter. In the yeere 1249. as he returned homewards with his wife, h was drowned in a tempelt neere unto the Coasts of Radiand (13) An. Dom. 1249. Reginald the fonne of Olame, and bro-

ther to Harold, beganne his raigne, and on the thirtieth day thereof was flaine by one Tuar a Knight, in a meadow neere unto the holy Trinitte Church, and lieth buried in the

Church of S. Mary of Ruffus.

(14) In the yeere 1252. Magnus the fon of Olasse came to Man, and was made King. The next yeere following he went Adam, and was made thing. The next years for howing the weat to the King of Norway, and stated there a years. (15) In the years 1265, Magnus (Olanes Ion) King of Man, and of the Hands, departed this life at the Castle of Russia, and

was buried in the Church of S. Mary of Ruffin, (16) In the veer 1266, the Kingdom of the Hands was translated, by reason of Alexander King of Scots, who had gotten into his hands the westerne Hands, and brought the He of

Man ynder his dominion, as one of that number.

(17) An, 1340 Wellsam Mountacute Earle of Salisbury wre-(17) An 1 140 William Mommente Earl of Statings were field it from the Seedily by lrong hand & forcepic/Armesand in the year 1392, (sa Thomas Wellinghom Statis) below the read that the control thereof who the William Storage for a great fumme of money. But he being beheded for high Tracion, and his good sconflictuit came into the hand of Howard Formation, and his good sconflictuit came into the hand of Howard Formation, which was the statistical than the state of th open rebellion the fifth yeere following, the King fent Sir lohn Stanley and William Stanley to seize the He and Castle of Man: the inheritance whereof he granted afterwards to Sm John Stanley and his heires by Letters Patents, with the Patronage of the Bishopricke, &c., So that his heires and succellours, who were honored with the Title of Earles of Darie, were commonly called Kings of Man.

Regenald King

10 Harrold King

II. Reginald the fe-cond King.

12. Magnus King

HOLY ILAND.



Book.1.

His Iland is called Lindiffarne, by the Riucr Lied that is opposite vato it on the Coast of Northumberland. Beda termeth it a Demy Iland. The Britaines name it Inis Medicante. for that it twice energy day fuffreth an extraordinarie inundation and o-

uerflowing of the Ocean in maner of an Iland, which twice likewife makes it continent to the Land, and returning vnto her watry habitation, laies the Shoare bare againe, as before. It is called in English, Holy-Iland, for that in ancient times many Monkes have beene accustomed to retire themselves thither, and to make it their receptacle for solitude : having on the West and South, Northumberland, and more South-Eastward the Iland Farne.

(2) The forme of it is long and narrow, the West side narrower then the East, and are both conioined by a very small spang of land that is left vnto Conies. The South is much broader then the rest. It is from East to West about two thousand two hundred and fiftie pales; and from North to South, twelue hundred and fiftie pases; so that the circumference cannot be great.

(3) The aire is not very good either for health or delight, as being seated on those parts that are subject to extremity of cold, and greatly troubled with vapours and foggy mifts that arise from the Seas.

(4) The foile cannot bee rich, being rockie and

full of stones, and vnfit for corne and tillage. It is neither commended for hils to feed sheepe, nor pastures to fat cattle, neither hath it vallies replenished with fweet fprings, or running riuellets, onely one excepted, descending from a standing pond. The only thing this Iland yeeldeth, is a fit and accommodate aptitude for fishing and fowling.

(5) Notwithstanding this is very worthy of note

concerning the same, which Alexin wrote in an Epifile to Egelred King of Northumberland, namely that it was a place more venerable then all the places of Britaine, and that after the departure of S. Paulinus from Yorke, there Christian Religion began in their Nation, though afterwards it there felt the first beginning of miserie and calamitie, being left to the spoile of Pa gans and Miscreants.

(6) It is also remembred of this Iland, that sometimes there hath beene in it an Episcopall Sec, which Aidan the Scot instituted (being called thither to preach the Christian Faith to the people of Northum-berland) being much delighted with the solitary situation thereof, as a most sit place for retire. But af-terwards when the Danes rished and robbed all the Sea-Coasts, the Episcopall See was translated to Durham.

(7) This Iland to fmall in account either for compaffe or commodity, and so vnpeopled and vnprofitable, cannot be numerous in Townes and Villages. It bath in it only one Towne, with a Church and a Castle, under which there is a commodious Hauen, defended with a Blockhouse, situate upon an hill towards the South-east.



FARNE ILE.



His Ile South-eastward seuen miles from Hoh Iland, sheweth it selfe difant almost two miles from Bambrough Castle. On the west and South it beareth vpon Northumberland, and on the North-east side it hath other

fmaller Ilands adioining to it, as Widness and Staple Iland, which lie two miles off Bronfman, and two lef-fer then these, which are called the Wamber.

(2) The forme of this lle is round, and no larger in compaffe then may easily be ridden in one halfe of aday. The bredth of it is but fine miles, and the length no more. The whole circumference extends it felfe no further then to fifteene miles.

(3) The aire is very vnwhole some, and subject both to many *Dysenteries* and other diseases, by reason of the misty sogges and exhalations that are therunto drawne vp from the Ocean. It is many times troubled with vnufuall tempefts of windes, with boifterous fury of ftormie raines, and with feuerall and vncouth rages of the Sea.

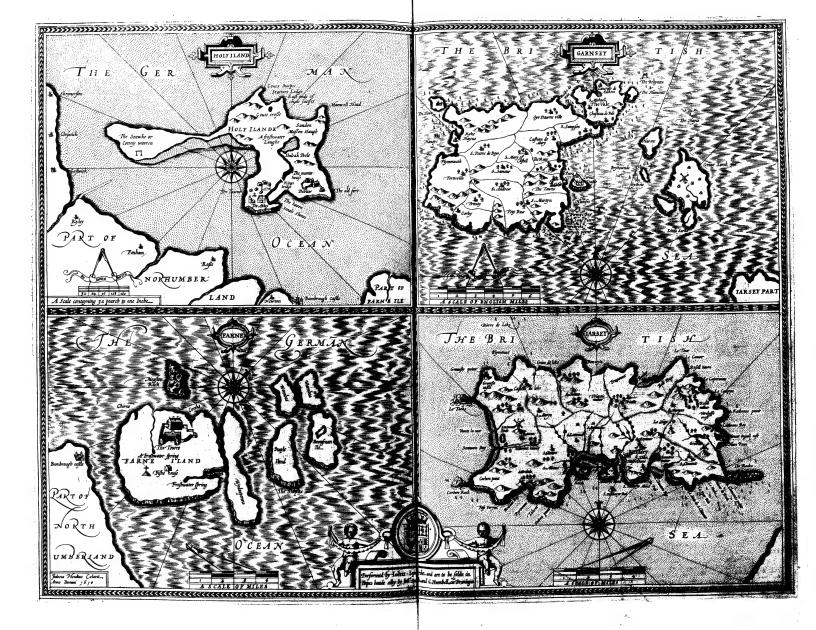
(4) The foile cannot be fertill, being encircled a bout with craggie clifts; neither hath it, in it much matter either of pleasure or profit. It can neither defend it felfe from cold, lacking fuell, as wood, cole, turfes, &c. nor from famine, wanting food, as corne, pastures, cattle, &c. The best commoditie it yeelds, is fifth and fowle.

is fill and towle.

(5) This thing neuertheleffe is worthy to bee rememberd of it, which Beda (writing of the life of cuthshor Billong of Lindsigns, that Tutales Parson of the Northerns Englishmen) reported, namely, that in this lie he built a City fitting his gouertment, andereded certaine houles in the lame; the whole build needed certaine houles in the lame; the whole build and the state of the name of the ing standing almost round in compasse, and reaching the space of foure or sine pearches. The wall about it he made higher then a mans height, to with-hold and keep in the wanto lasciniousnes both of his thoughts and eies, and to elevate the whole intention of his mind up to heavenly defires, that hee might whollie give himselfe to the service of God. But these are all made the ruines of time, as fithence many other Monuments haue beene, of worthy antiquitie.

(6) I cannot report that there are now many houses flanding in it, much leffe Townes or Villages. Only this, that it hath a Tower or place of Fortification be-longing vnto it, placed well-neere in the middle part of the lle.

Bede in the life o



GARNSEY.



lis *lland* lieth about fiue eagues Northwest from Iegg, and is compassed (like to her neighbour) with the British Sea, It lieth in length from Phmouth bay, Southwest to Lancrosse de Anckers Northeast, thirteen miles:

in bredth fro S. Martins point Southeast, to the Home Northwest, nine miles; and is in circuit 36. miles. The Emperor Antonine, having the rule and domination of France (at that hauing the rule and domination of France (a think it me called Came, from whence the word Galla is deriued) did name this Hand Sarnia, which afterward by the change of Times & corruption of languages, was long finec(and is at this day) called Carn[c].

(2) This life in forme and fathion flandeth in the Sea, much like to a Parke that is incompaffed round about with a Pale of Rocks, being very defentible winto the Hand from the attempting innountion of c

nemies.

(3) The Aire and Climat of this Ile hath little or no difference in temper or qualitie from that of Info.

And this deferues to be remembered of it, that in this Ile is neither Toade, Snake, Adder, or any other venemous creature, and the other hash great plenty.

(4) It flandent for the most part vpona rocke, verienghis in many places from the Sca. Neuertheless the Solicis very truitfull yeelding forth great plents of graffs for their Sheep eand other Cattell, which they have to serve all view. Their fields in the fumment varieties are supposed to the solicity are to everythe each of the solicity and the solicity are to everythe each of the solicity and the solicity are to everythe each of the solicity and the solicity are to everythe each of the solicity and the solicity are the solicity and the solici time are so naturally garnished with flowers of all

forts, that a man (being there) might conceit himfelfe to be in a pleasant artificiall garden,

to be in a plealant artificial garden.

(3) The Inhabitants are not fo much giuen to till lage as they of Iroffe, though the Soile be as fruitfull. They haue of Bace taken great delight in planting and fetting of trees of all forts, and elpecially of Apples, by realion whereof they make much Cider. Their commodities are alike, and their helps from the Sea

commodities are alike, and their neight from the Sea no leffs, or rather more.

(6) In this Ile are many great fixeeper ocksymmong which is found a hard done called by the Procedume Suprix, which we terme Emerill. This flower is fruiteeable for many purpofes, and many Trades, as Galiers, &c. but especially for the Coldimities and Lapida-

8c, but especially for the Goldlmiths and Lapidaries, ocut their pertious flones.

(7) It hath a head of Land vpon the North part, thereof, the paffage into which is so narrow, that a man would thinke that at eury Tide (the Sea beating strongly on both fides) it were in a continuall danger to be fundred from the other part of the Ile. This place is called 5. Meisbad in the Fale, where (in former times) Mood a Priory, or Couent of religious persons, the ruines whereof are at this day to beelense.

(3) The gouernment of this Ile, in nature & forme relembles the other of Ist/ey, of whom shall be faid. The people are in their Originall and Language alike also, but in their customes and conditions they come of monument I finde not worthy to be recorded.

It hath ten Parilhes, and one Market Towne, being

alfo a Hauen, and is called S. Peters Port, built close by the Peere, and Caftle Cornet.

IERSEY.



He two Ilauds lersey and Garnesey, being the onely remaines of the Dukedome of Normandie, that in former

dome of Normandie., that in former times many years together was in the poffesion, and under the command of the Kings of Registered, annexing thereunt to a large Territory & glorious title to the Crown, are both feater in the Sea called Adm 8 Pitiansicom, the Ocean parting them a good diffant a funder, and are now both aduncts, and within the Circuit of Hamp-flier. For the first (being the file of 1ee/gs) tieth vpon the British Sea, having on the north parts the coast of Hampfier. & on the fourth the Country of Normandy. (2) This I land is Jone, not marthy while the fishion

(a Mayland, do not elout the Country of Normand, (1) This Hand is long, not much valike the finding of an Egge, it contains; in length from Sentwor Poole, who the Web, to Monst Orgali Calife on the Eaft, ten miles, and in breich from Dubon point to Phymousthog, fix miles: the whole circuit of the Hand being thirtie eight miles. It idilland from a little Hand being the Califer of the Hand being led Alderney, about foure leagues. It was in old time called Casaria; whether from Indius Off animo, or any the other Casars that followed, is vnknowne. But the Frenchmen haue by corruption of speech, long time called it Ierfey.

(3) It is a very delightfome and healthfull Iland, and giveth a pleasant aspect vnto the Seas. It lieth Southward not farre from a craggy ridge of rocks, which is much feared of the Mariners, and makes the paffage that way very dangerous, howbeit it ferues for a forcible defence against Pirats, or any strangers that attempt inuation, and they are termed Caff

(4) The Soile is very fertile, bringing forth flore of Corne & Cattell, but effectally of Sheepe, that are of reasonable bignes, the most of them bearing foure hornes a peece: Their wooll very fine and white, of which the Inhabitants make their Ierfey flockings, which are ordinarily to be had in most parts of Eng-

land, and yeeld a great commoditie vnto the Iland.

(5) The first original of the Inhabitants, sprung (5) The first originate of the Inhabitants, forum, either from the Normans or Britaines, or both. They speake French, though after a corrupt manner, and haue continued their names, language, cultomes, and Country, without any, or little intermixture these many hundred yeeres, hauing been winder the iurissistion of the Bayish eure fince the vatimely and want the state of the speakers of the state of the st

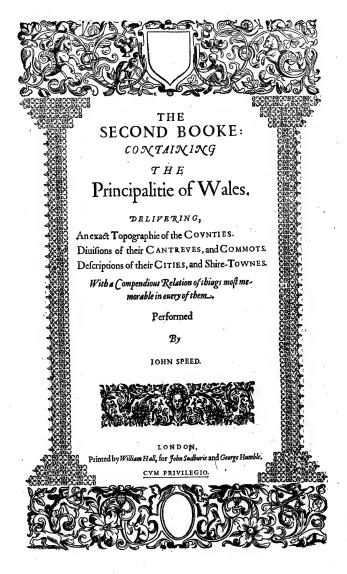
turall death of Robert Duke of Normandy cledit fione to William the Conqueror.

(6) The people of this Country line very pleafantly, as well by the profits of the Land, as the helps and furtherances of the Sea, that yeelds wnto them (and efpecially in furnmer feafon) great flore of fifth but principally Conger and Lobbitrs, the greater fland farterly won the coalf of England. Wood is very feant, for their beff fuell is Turfe: fome Coale they have brought with them, but it is very deare; thraw, furre, and feme feruing their ordinary vies. The middle part of the land hath many price Hils rifing in it, yeelding a delightfull lobied winto the vallies, that receive from one another a mursual pleafure. ceiue from one another a mutuall pleasure.

(7) The Gouernor of the Ile is the Captaine there-

of, who appointeth certaine Officers under him: the principall of whom, carrieth the name and title of a Bailiffe, that in ciuill causes hath the assistance of twelve lurars to determine of differences, and minifter Iustice: in criminall matters seuen: in matters of reason and conscience, fine. Their twelve are chosen out of the twelue Parishes: so that no man goeth fur-ther to complaine, then to his owne Jurate in ordina. rie controuersies.; but matters of moment and dissi-cultie, are determined before the Bailisse in a generall

meeting.
(8) This Ile hath two little Ilands adjacent; the one Saint Albons, the other Hillary Iland. It hath twelue Parishes, and foure Castles. No other Monuments of







A Catalogue of fuch Princes sprong FROM THE ROYAL STEMME OF

THE ENGLISH KINGS, AS HAVE BEEN Entituled, PRINCES OF WALES, fince the time of that Countries last Conquest, and first voluntary

fubication wonder KING EDWARD THE FIRST. (**4**5%)

1 Edward Caernaruon, named afterwards Edward 2. sonne to K. Edward 1.

2 Edward of Windsor, afterwards Edward the third.

3 Edward the Blacke Prince, fonne to King Edw. 3.

4 Richard of Burdeux, fon to the Blacke Prince; afterwards R.2. 5 Henry of Monmouth, Sonne to Henry 4. afterwards H. 5.

6 Henry of VV indiore, the sonne of Henry 5. afterwards H.6.

7 Edward of VVestminster, the sonne of K.H.6.

8 Edward of VV estminster, the sonne of K.Edw.4. 9 Edward, the sonne of K. Richard the third.

10 Arthur, the sonne of K. Henry the seuenth.

II Henry, the sonne of K. H.7. afterwards K. H.8. 12 Edward, the sonne of H.S. afterwards K. Edw. 6.

13 Mary, the daughter of K.H.8. 14 Elizabeth, the daughter of K.H.8.

15 HENRY, the sonne of K. JAMES, our Soueraigne.

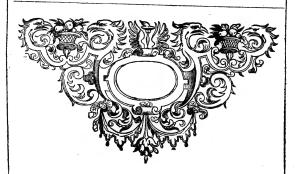


THE NAMES OF THE COUNTIES

IN WALES, (AS THEY ARE NOW NVM-

BRED, AND ANNEXED VNTO THE ENGLISH Crowne) in such order as we have described them.





THE DESCRIPTION OF VVALES. (bap.1.

THE GENERALL DESCRIPTION, AND SEVERALL DIVISIONS OF

THE PRINCIPALITY OF WALES.



Ntiquity hath auouched, that the whole Isle of Britains was disided into three parts. The first and fairest lay contained within the French Seas, the Ri-uers of Severne, Dee, and Humber uers of Seserie, Dee, and Areasor called then Lhoyer, (which name it yet retaineth in Welfh,) in English, called Eugland. The (econd pare occupied at the land Northward from Humber, to the

Orkency Sea, called by the La-tines, Mare Caledonium, or Den-oully knowne by the name of Scotland. The

Citationias, nor formoutly income they then arm of Strelland. The thrid part was this, bying between the first has a the risers Steam. At the thrid part was this, bying between the first has a the risers Steam. At the thrid part was this, bying between the first has a the risers Steam. At the my though we call of arbid, with nume of hy strelland them, though we call the first has a thrist of the proper between the first has a strelland the three come, does name the Italian (their men templation) as Welfmann, and it is a strelland to the come, does name the Italian (their men templation) as Welfmann, and it is a strelland to the three come, does name the Italian (their men templation) as Welfmann, and the strelland three comes, does name the Italian (their men templation) and the strelland three comes, and the strelland three comes and the strelland three comes and the strelland three comes, and the strelland three comes and the strelland three comes, and the strelland three comes and the strelland three comes and three comes and the strelland three comes and three comes are three comes and three comes and three comes and three comes an

(c) situative risultum makes the Riner. Wy to be the Meant Verence Regularies Value, on the forth part called sometime fractions of the Company of the Compa

digided it into three Regions, An Christ.870.

1 Cwyneth, Eng. North-wa. Chief Pengwan, 1em (chief Pengwan, 1em (chief Pengwan, 1em) Dehembarth, ENG. Southw

*Shrewslery. DPswel.

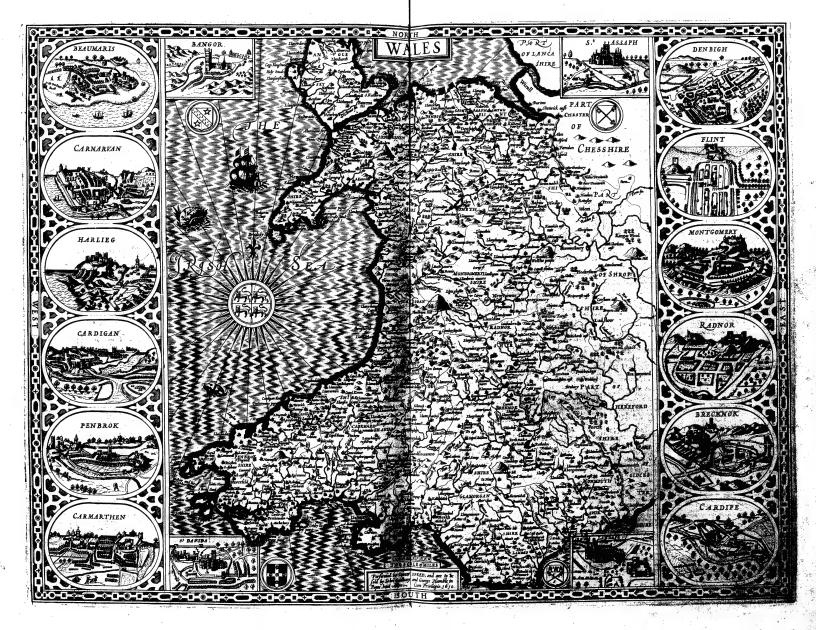
Gwynethor North-Walce.

§ J. Consumer 16, 20. No. 30 miles ?

**J. The National region was the color of the Note Note when the state of the first post of the state of the national polarization of the national polar * Anglesey. * Caernarnon.

(s) Areas the fictoridy are if North-wales, is now called Caracteristics of Army, a the thought Country which and the finelpolity, gaining place to more for fertility of the ground, so the pleasy of woodcastle, this continues to the finel to the place of the ground, and the place of the most Califar, and places of memory. This portion bath on the north, the fact a Moreau, you the Fail and Souther-this cheep the which distributed the first own by the first country which distributed the first own by the first country which distributed the first own by the first country that the first country which distributed the first own by the first country which distributed the first own by the first country which classrates, and common as which countries and the first who first classrates, and common as which countries and the first who first classrates, and common as which countries and the first class of (9) Armon the fecond part of North-wales, is now called Carn

plentiful of Carrell, Fishand Fowlage also of Corner and a situation in the middle, which the Nature Carpet, so which name anameter of other Khuen from the Hills. In this parts Define Carpet, the Hills of the Carpet C



2 Can. Aberth. Cwm.

3 Can, Dangledeu, Cwm. 4 Can. Coed.

Cwm.

E/gair olyfe als efferolf. 10 Talacharn

Amgood.

S Llanbachiden.

which, and is as to Register, one of whole Connies and Shires, it was from latitude forwards, and is a third prefeter rections; and Kadeer-four Cast in wore in lieu thereof) is comprehended in Saubmutes. Heave where the same continues are supported by the point of the maketh neutrino of a '967-3948, which he called Datestia and Dyfe, the one the Latin can due to other the British name thereof is but be, the one the Latin can due to other the British name thereof is but be, the one that the same and the other the British name thereof is but be, and the same that the same than the same than the point of the same than the same than the point of the point of the same than the point of point o

PEMBROKE-SHIRE. Book.2.

PEMBROKE SHIRE

CHAPTER III.

EMBROKE-SHIRE, the furthest Promontorie of all West - Wales, lieth parted on the North from Cardigan-shire with the riuers Tyuy and Keach, and on the East is confronted by Caermarden-fbire; the South and West shooting

farre into the Irilb-Seas.

(2) The forme therof is longer then it is broads for from Saint Gouens South-point to Cardigan-bridge in the North, are twenty fix miles; the Easterne Landenie to S, Davids point in the West, are twenty; the

(3) Theaire is passing temperate, by the report of Giraldus, who confirmeth his reason from the site of Ireland, against which it butteth, and so neere adioined, that King Rufus thought it possible to make a Bridge of his Ships ouer the Sea, whereby hee might

The ancient In-

passe to Ireland on foot. (4) Anciently it was possessed by the Demetia, further branched into Cardigan and Caermarden-fibres as in that County hath beene faid, and in the Saxons Conquests and Heptarchie, by the Britaines forced into those parts for refuge, whither Henry the First, and third of the Normans King, fent certaine Flemings (whose Country was ouerwhelmed with the breaking in of the Seas) to inhabit the maritime Tract called Rosse, lying West vpon the River Dougledge. These Dutchmen (faith Giraldue) were a strong and stout Nation, inured to warres, and accustomed to seeke gaine by Clothing, Traffique, and Tillage, and ever readie for the Field to fight it out : adding withall, that they were most loyall to the English, and most faithfull to the English-men. Whereupon Malmesbury writeth thus: Mam a time

which is to be wonted at promjacting his overty oritinal factors [b. But (laitch he) it may be the uneumness for of the ground, and sharpness of the aire, that maintained their courage, and impeached his values: which to redess [b. King Henry his brother found meaners; for those Etemings, who in regard of his mothers kindred by the fathers side, forely pestred and endammaged the English, hee sent into Wales both to purge and disburden his owne Kingdome, and to quell and keepe backe the courage of his enemies. These then heere seated, deceived not his expectation, but fo carried themselues in his quarell, that they seldome communicated with their neighbours, so that to this

day they speake not the language, and the Country is

did King William Rufus a faile the welfb, but ever in vaine:

which is to be wondred at confidering his other fortunate

vet called Little England beyond Wales. (5) The commodities of this Shire are Corne, Cattle, sea-fish, and fowle, and in Giraldus his daies of saleable wines, the Hauens being so commodious for

Ships arriuage : fuch is that at Tenby, and Milford, an Hauen of fuch capacitie, that fixteene Creekes, fine Bayes, and thirteene Roades, knowne all by fenerall names, are therein contained, where Henry of Richmond, of most happy memorie, arrived with signall hopes of Englands freedome from vnder the gouernment of an viurping Tyrant,

(6) Necre vnto this is Pembroke the Shire-towne

feated, more ancient in flew then it is in yeeres, and more houses without Inhabitants, then I saw in any one City thorowout my furuey. It is walled longwife, and them but indifferent for repaire, containing in circuit eight hundred and fourescore pases, having three Gates of paffage, and at the West end a large Castle, and locked-causey, that leads ouer the water to the decaied Priorie of Monton. The fite of this Towne is in the degree of Longitude, as Mercator doth measure, 14 and 55 minutes, and the elevation from the North-pole in the degree of Latitude 5 2.

(7) A Citie as barren is old Saint Danids, neither S.Danids.

lad with Woods, nor garnished with Rivers, nor beautified with Fields, nor adorned with Meadowes, but lieth alwaies open both to winde and stormes. Yet hath it beene a Nurserie to holy men; for herein liued Calphurnius, a Britaine Priest, whose wife was Concha, lifter to Saint Martin, and both of them the parents of Saint Patricke the Apostle of Ireland. Desit a most religious Bishop, made this an Archiepiscopall See, remooued from I fea Legionum. This the Britaint call Tay Dewy, the house of Deni ; the Saxons, Davio Mynpoep, we Saint Davids : a City with few Inhabitants, and no more houses then are inserted in the draught; yet hath it a faire Cathedrall Church dedicated to Saint Andrew and David, in the middest of mond, father to K. Henry the feuenth: whose Monument (as the Prebends told mee) spared their Church from other defacements, when all went downe vnder the hammers of King Hemy the eighth. About this is a faire wall, and the Bishops Palace all of free ftone, a goodly house I assure you, and of great receit, whose vincouered tops, cause the curious workes in the walles daily to weepe, and them to seare their

downfall ere long. (8) But Monton the Priorie, and S. Dogmels, places of deuout pietic erected in this Countie, found not the like fauour, when the commission of their dissolutions came downe against them, and the axes of de-

furction can downe the props of their walles.

(9) This Shire hath beene firengthned with fixteene Cafiles, belides two Block-houjes, commanding the mouth of Milford Hauen, and is ftill traded in fine Market-townes, being divided into feuen Hundreds, and in them feated one hundred forty fine Parish-Churches, as in the Table annexed followeth.

Caftles. Capties.

1. Kilgerem:

2. Marberbary

4. Malwin caf.

5. Racb caf.

6. The Bioli-boufer.

7. Hansrford.

8. Benton

9. Coron caf.

11. Narberb.

13. Piciton. 23. Refe caff. 24. Cafila Bigb. 25. Cafila Male, 26. Hopes.

Chap.3.

is with the fame altogether washed. whole in circumference is ninety three miles.

Giraldur.

The forme.

The aire.

Pembroke sbire

Houry the First planted Nether-landers in this

The commo



An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and Places mentioned in Dembroke-Shire.

HVNDREDS Caftle-males Kem in Pembroke-shire.

I.KIlgarran.

Dewyslaue. Dongledy. Rowfe.

Narbarth. Castle-Martyn.

Amblefton, Dong. Amrothe, *Ívarb*." S. Anne Rowf. S. Aylucw, Dew.

Bayuill.Kem. Benton caftell, Rowf. Bigelly, Nar. The Bishop and Dem.

Blookhoufe, Caff. Blookhoufe Row. Bobeston, Ner. Bolton hill, Row, Bolheriton, Caft Boyuill, Kem. S. Brides, Row. S.Brides Island, Row Broad hauen, Caft. Brody, Dew. Brydell Kil.

Bulfton, Doug Burlaxton, Cafe Burton, Rów. Caldey Ifland, Caft. Camros, Row. Cannafton, Nar. Capell colman, Kil.

Capell Kiluewir. Canell Capeli castlehan, Kil. apell Kem. Capell daniells, Caft. Capell Gorid, Dew.

South Carew, Nar.
Carew, Nar.
Callebighe, Kem.
Calle-henty, Kem. Castle-martin, Cast.

S. Catherins, Der. Clarbefton, Dong, Cleydei, Kd. Clethy flu. Clothy flu. Coidrathforrest.Nar. Coidhenles Nar

Cosheston, Cast. The Cowe and Dem. Creno, Nar. Crefwell, Nar. Crosford, Caft. Crunualer, Nar. Crynowe, Dong.

Dale, Row. Dale rocke, Row. S.DAVIDS, Dew. S. Dauids head, Dem, S. Dogmells, Kem. S. Dogwells, Dew. Doluath hauen, Den. Dungledyc flu. Dynas, Kem.

Dynas head, Kem. Dynnaston, Nar. Earware,*Nar*. S. Edryns, Dem. Egremond Nar. Egloiswithen Kem. EglotTcrow.Kem. S. Eluywes, Dew. Elington, Caft.

Ferye house, Cast. FISHGARD, Kem. The Fleete, Caft. The Flit, Caft. Flymfton, Caft. Freiftrope, Row Freih-water, Caft. Fresh-water flu.

Gateholme } Row, Island, 5 Giltor point, Caft. Goltop rode, Row. S Gowers, Caft. S. Gowers point, Caff.

Graftone, Dew. Gromsfreiton, Nar. Gupton, Caft. Gwyne flu.

Haifcastle, Dew. laraditone, alias } Rom. S. Ifmacilis, Harbreston, Row. Harelton west, Rose, Harifmote Kem. Hascard. Row.

Little Z Row. Hauen, HAVERFORDZ Re. WEST, Hentland, Caff, Hockwood, Row, Hogeston, Cast. The Horfe, Der. Huberfton, Row.

Iamelton.Caft. Iohnfon.Row. Iordanfton, Dew. lesfrefton, Nar. S. Ifmaells, Row. S. Iticils, Nar.

Katerens rocke, Caff. S. Katterns, Dew. Keach fin. Kerikmale.Caft Kerikmahern, Caft. Keuen bryn, Kil. Kilguyne, Kem. Killgarran, Kil. Kilpafton, Caft. Kiluane, Nar. Kingfrode, Row

Knowlton, Row. Lady chappell, Caft. Llanbederuerfrey, Nav. Liandeloy, Dem. Llandewy, Nar. Llandifillio, Doug. Llandilo, Kem. Llanedryn, Dew. Llangan, Doug. Llanglas head, Dow. Llangolman, Kem.

Llangone, Row. Llanhaddon, Dowg. Llanhowell, Dem. Llanllawharne, Kems. Llanpeter, Nar. Llanrythan, Dew. Llanryan, Der. Llanstadwell, Row. Llanftynan, Dew.

Lantfray, Caft. Llantfray court, Caff. Lantood, Kil. lanuair Kem. Llanualiteg, Dong. Llanuienaghe, Kem.

Llanuihangell Kil. penpedo, Kil. Llanunda, Dew. I langurnach Kil Llanwrenny, Nar. Llanychaeth.Kem. Llanychlloydog,Kem. Llanykeuen, Dong. Lamphey, Caft. Lamiton, Row. Lawhaden, Dong. Lawreny, Nar.

S. Lawrence, Den. S. Leonards chapell. Do. Letterfton. Dew. Leuaston, Caft. Louefton, Nar. Ludchurch, Nar. Ludiop, Caft. Ludiop point, Caff. Lynyerew, Caft. Llyfyuran, Dong.

Maenclochog, Kem. Manachllogddy, Kem. Mauerbyre, Caff. Manernawen, Der. S. Margrets Row. chappell, Row. Marlas, Row. Martletwy, Nar.

Meherye hill, Nar. Meherye castell, Nar. Melyney, Kem. Menerdyuy, Kd. Merian, Caft. Mewston, Row. Milford hauen, Row, Midlan Ifland, Row. Moelgroue, Kem, Monington, Kem, Morthry, Dew. Moruill, Kem. The More, Kem Mouncton, Na Mouncton, Cafe Mukton chappell, Nar.

Munkefton rocke, Nar. Mynwere, Nar. Nangle, Caft. Nantgwyne, Kem

Narberth, Nar. Narberth forrest, Nar. Nashe, Cast. NetTeton Row. Neuerne flu. Neuerne, Kem. Newcastell, Kem Newmoate, Dong. NEWPORT, Kem.

Newton.Row Newton, Caft. Newton, Nar. S. Nicholas, Dem. Nolton, Row. S Nones, Dem Northard, Caff Northard, Caft. Orleton, Caft. Ofmatton, Doug.

Paterchurch.Call. Penallye, Caft PENBROCK, Caft. Pencelly vychen, Kom. Penkenmas point, Ken Penner welt, Caft, Penner call, Caft. enner mouth, Caff. Penrith, Kil.

Pentuaen, Kom. Percely hill, Kom. S. Petrox, Coft. Pickton castell, Dong. Plumfton rocke, Rew. Pontuaine, Kem. Popton caft. Caft. Popton west, Caft. Portolais, Dew. Pouchardston, Kem, Prendergalt, Dong. The Priory, Row. Pulchrochan, Caft.

Pylics, Row. Wallwyn ? Row. Ramfey Hand, Dew. Rate Ifland, Caff. Walton, Row. Redboxton, Dougle Red castell, Wark. Redhart, Nar. Rednaiston, Ner. Rieston, Dew. Rihye rocke, Den. Rife castell point, Doug. Robeston, Nar. Woram, Caft. Robelton, Row. Roche, Row.

Yarbeston, Nar. Roche caffell hill, Row. Yardlanftone.Row.

Roferochan, Caft. Roffe Market, Row. Rynofton Dong. Rywalton, Nar.

Sandy, Row hauen, Row. Sandy Scaline Island, & Row. Shepe 7 Row. Shirlate. >Dew. rocke

Sifter houses, Nar. Slebeche, Doug. Spittell, Don. Stack Caft. Stackpole, Caft. Stackpoole orde, Cafe.

S.Steuens, Dew. Steynton, Rew. Stokeholme Row, Island, Strumble Dew.

Talbeny, Row. Templeton, Ner. Trauegare, Dem. Trelloyne, Caft. Treuenyth, Dew. Treuethell, Kem. Trewgarne, Row. Trewent, Caft. S. Twynelles, Caft. TYNBY, Nar. Tyuy flu.

Vggarllon 3 Caft. Vpton,Nar.

Walton, Doug, Whitchurch, Kem. Whitechurch, Dew. Whitfand bay, Dew. Williamston, Nar. Wifton, Doug. Withamfton parke, Nar. Wrennyuair hill.Kd.

CAERMARDENSHIRE

CHAPTER IV.

The forme

The Aire.

Booke 2.



Aermarden-shire, so called from the chiefe Towne Caer-marden, lieth borde-red vpon the North with Cardigan-fbire; vpon her East, by Brecknock and Glamorgan-shires; vpon the South, with a Bay of the British Seas; and vpon the

West with Pembrookesbire (2) The forme of this County is long, and shooteth it selfe from the South-west into the North and by Eaft, betwixt whose furthest bounds are thirty fine English miles, and in her broadest part twentie; the whole in circumference about one hundred and two

(3) This Shire is not altogether so pestred with hilles as her bordering neighbours are: and those that she hath, neither so high nor so thicke, and therefore is better for Corne and Pasturage, yea and in Woods also, so that for victuals this Country is very well sto-red, which the stomacke doth as well disgest, the aire being wholefome, temperate, and pleafing.

(4) Anciently these parts were possessed by the Dimetree, as Ptolemie, Gildas, and Ninius doe name them: though Plinie holds opinion that they were

Tacitus in vita Agrico.

Cambian

parts. And this County is accounted by Writers to be the very firength of South-wates. In the West there-of at Kilmanlloid (as it should seeme) their Legions kept, where lately an earthen Pot hoarded with store kept, where lately an earthen Pot noared with nore of Roman Const., was by the fipade digged by p, being flamped vpon imbaled filter, from the time of Commodity vnto the first Tribunelin of Gordins the third, which fell in the yeere of Christ two hundred fortie three: and amongst these were the Coines of Helaius Terriera: Anothrongu triete wetter Contes of Paetimas, Marcus Opellus, Antonius Diadumenianus, Iulius Verus Maximus, the fonne of Maximus, of Calius Balbinus, of Coloius Pupienus, of Aquilia Seuera, the wife of Heliogabelus, and of Sall. Barbia Orbiana, peeces rare-

them: though rame holds opinion that they were fubdued to the Romans yoke by Iulius Frontinus, when he ftruggled with the rockie Hilles in those Southerne

The Commo

lie found. (5) The Commodities of this Shire chiefely confift in Cattle, Pit-coale, Fowle, and Sea-fift, whereof the Salmon is common among them, and that of fuch greatnesse and plentie, as no place is bet-ter furnished therewith then the Shire-towne Caer-

The chiefe

(6) Which Towne by Prolemie is called Maridunum; by Antonine the Emperour, Muridunum; by the Britaines, Caer fridhin; and by vs, Caermarden. It is

Sea, where before times was a conuenient Hauen for Ships arriuage, but now is fore peftred with Sands and Shelfs: notwithstanding some small Vessels ascend vp the Riuer euen vnto the Bridge of this Towne, which is fairely built of free ftone. And ouer the fame vpon a hanging Rocke, standeth a very large Castle, from whole stone-wall another intermingled with Bricke rangeth about the Towne, being in circuit one thousand and foure hundred pases. The Inhabitants of this place doe not a little glory of their Merlin, who (as they say) was therein borne, the sonne of a badde Angell, or of an Incubus spirit, the Britaines great Apollo, whom Geffrey ap Arthur would ranke with the South-Saying Seer, or rather with the true Prophets themselues; being none other then a meere Seducer and phantafticall Wizard: which howsoeijet Alani de Infulis in his Commentaries hath labored to vnlocke those darke and hidden Similies, wherwith his booke is peftred and full, yet was it not without cause forbid the reading by the Councell of Trent, as vaine, and not worthy of countenance or credit.

pleafantly feated vpon the South-west side of the Ri uer Tour, that runneth thorow the middeft of this

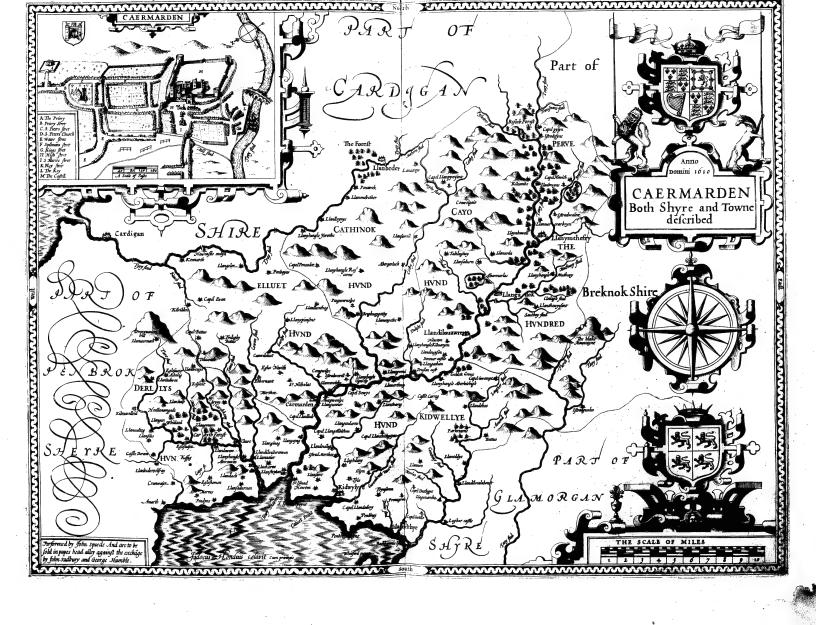
Shire, and falleth South from hence into the British

At the entrance of the Normans, this Towne was brought vnder their obedience, and for a long time was diftreffed with the calamities of warre, yet afterwards was made by the English Princes the Chauncery and Exchequor for all South-wales: and at this day is yeerely gouerned by a Maior, who euer after is an Al-derman and Iustice of the Peace, two Sheriffes elected out of fixteen Burgesses, all of them in skarlet, a Sword-bearer, a Towne-clerke, and two Sergeants with Maces: from whence the Pole is raifed 52. degrees 15. minutes in Latitude, and for Longitude is in the degree 15, and 30. minutes from the first point in the West, accor-

ding to Mercater. (7) East from this place are the Ruines of Carreg-Castle, which stood mounted on a high hill, under the which many vaults and spacious Caues fare into the ground are seene, wherein is thought the people vna-ble to fight, were therein secured in time of their wars. Where also is a Well (take the report from Giralduc who writeth it) that in this place twice in foure and twen-tie houres ebbing, and twice flowing, refembleth the wiftable motions of the maine Sea.

(8) This Shire is watered with twenty eight Riuers and Riverets of name, strengthned with ten Cafiles, traded in fix Market Townes, divided into fixe Hundreds, wherein are seated sourescore and seuen parish-churches, whose names are inserted in the Ta ble following.







Rivers, and places mentioned in Caermarden-shire.

H	undreds in Caer-
1	marden-shire.
-	

Athinok. Cayo. 3. Perueth.

Capell Kidwell. Dewye, Kidwell. Dulas Flu. 4. Kidwellye, 5. Elluet. Dulas Flu. 6. Derllys. Dalashe Flu. Drufton Caffie, Caye. Capell Kid.

Conwill *Ellmes*. Eluet, *Ellmes*. Conwillgaio, *Cayo*.

Caftle Delly.

Ebernant, Elluet.

aching, \$

Eglofuaier, Derll.

Glanraneithe, Elluet.

Cothy Flu.

Cowen Flu.

A Abarmarlas, Cayo. Abergerlech, Carbinol Abergwillye, Elluet. Aberwenly, Kidwell. Amond Flu.

Egermont, Derl. Eglofusier Derl. Bachhannis Kidwell. Bettus, Kidwell. Eglyskymyn, Derll, Capell & Ellust. Bettus, Elluer. Brane Flu. Euan, S ygothy, 3 Cathing.

Glyn, Kidwell. Golden groue, Kidwell. CAERMARDEN ELL Caier Flu. Capell *Kidwell*. Gunllo, *S* Gwendrath vaure Flu. Calicote point, Kid. Cardyth Forell, Derlys Caftle Carreg, Kidwell. Carthkenye Flu. Capell & Kidwell. Cledagh Flu. S.Cleres, Derll. Combeny Flu.

Comgwilye, Ellust.

Gwilye Flu. Hawton, Kidwell. Heullan amgoed, Derll,

S. Ifmaels, Kid. S.Ifmaels poynt, Kid. Istrad merther, Kid. Istradworell, Ellnet. Istradwalter, Perse. Deneuer Caltle, Cayo. Iftrodfyne, Perse. Keach Flu.

Kennarth Ellust KIDWELLYE, Kid. Kiffike, Der. Kilcombe, Cayo. Kilmaenlloid, Der. Kilredyn, Elluet. Kilfant, Der. Kiluargon, Cathin, Kilycon, Cayo.

Llanarthney, Kid. Llanbrayne, Perue. Llanboydy, Derl. Llandach Derl. Llandebea, Kid. Llandebye, Kid. Capell & Kidwell. Llandedery, S Llandefsillio, Derl.

Llandilo Iskenen, Kida Llandingate, Perue. Llandingat & Cayo. Llandeuaylog, Kid. Liandeuaylon, Cayo. Llandylo in Pernet.
Peruethe, S Pernet.
Llandylo 2 Decl.

abercowe

LLANDILO Cay. IN CAYO, Cay. Llanedye, Kid. Llanegwad in Cathine, Llanegwad? Elluet. Llanellye, Kid.

LLANELTHYE, Kider. Llanualteg, Der. Llanuenith, Cathin. LLANGADOKE, Per. Llangainge, Derlys. Llangann, Der. Llangather, Cathin. Llangathan, Cayo. Llangeller, Ellner. Capell Llangellbithon Kid. Llangenarth, Kid. Llonghor Flu.

Llanglodwen, Der.

Llangomer, Kid.

Llangynn, Der. Llangynderum, Kid. Llanyhangel Z *Ellem*, Llangynnok, Der. vgwely, SEME LLANYMTHEFRY, P. Lianhedy, Derl. Lilanliawthog, Elluet. Llanyhangel Calbing. Roscorne, Calbing. Lleghdeny, Kid. Capell ? Ellust. Lloynhowell, Cayo. Llanllonye, Cathin. Lloughor Flu. Capell Capell Capell Llanpympfaint, Ellmet.

Marias Flu. Marros, Derlys. Mathern Flu. Merthyr, Elluer. Llanfadorn, Per. Llanfadornen, Derl. Llanfant, Ked. Morlas Flu. Mothvay, Permet. I.lanfawill. Care Llanstephan, Der Muthvev Flu. Mydrym, Derl. Llantharoke, Kad.

Capell Kid. N Newcastle Emlyn, *Elluer* Newchurch, Ellner, Llanthonor, Der. Capell Perneth. Llanthowic, Peru. Llanthoyfant, Perm. Newton, Care. I lannun, Kad Llanvair arbryn. Per.

lanuaier, Der.

Abercowen,

Cathinok,

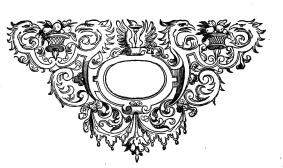
S. Nicholas, Elluet. Parkreame, Kid. Penbray poynt, Kid, Lianvyhangeli 3 Derl. Penbeyr, Ellaet. Penbrey, Kid. Llanvyhangell & Calb. Capell Pencader, Cashi Orarth, Cash,
Llanvyhangell & Kid.
Aberbythyth, Kid.
Llanwenge, Derl.

(bap.IV.

Pencarrek, Cathin. Pendyne, Der. Penwernolye, Carbin Pescotter Flu. Llanwrda, Cayo. Llanwnnyo, Der. Llanycrife in Cayo, Cay. Prenagrois, Kid. Capell } Perneth. Llanycrois in Cathine. Sauthey Flu.

Taue Flu. Talacouth, Ellnet, Talley, Caye. Towa Flu. Towy Flu. Towy hauen, Derl, Traufnant Flu. Treleghe, Elines, Trynlaren, Kid.

Turch Flu. TurgheFlu. Tylo, Kid. Tyvy Flu. Whitland, Derl.



The Aire.

Tage the chiefe

South-Wales.

Booke 2.

AMORGAN-SHIRE

as some thinke named from Prince Morgan the possesser thereof, or according to others, is taken from Morgan an Abbey founded by William Earle of Glocester, vpon the Sea-shoare in the South of this

Shire, lieth bounded vpon that part altogether with the British Sea; the West by Loghor, is parted from Caermarden-fhire; the North butteth vpon the Countie of Breknok; and the East by Remney is divided from Monmouth.

(2) The forme of this Shire groweth still wider from her West-point, spreading her broadest touch in the East, betwixt which extreames I finde by measure to be well neere forty English miles, and from North to South, not altogether twenty. The whole in cir-cumference, about one hundred and twelue miles.

(3) The Aire is temperate, and gives more con-tent to the mind, then the Soile doth fruit or ease vnto Trauellers. The hils being high and very many, which from the North notwithstanding are lessened as it were by degrees; and towards the Sea-coasts the Country becommeth somewhat plaine, which part is the best both for plenty of Graine, and populous Inhabitants. The rest all Mountaine, is replenished with Cattell, which is the best meanes vnto wealth that this Shire doth afford; vpon whose Hils you may behold whole Heards of them feeding; and from whose Rocks, most cleere springing waters through the valleys trickling, which fportingly doe paffe with a most pleasant found, and did not a little reuiue my wearied spirits among those vast Mountaines, imploi ed in their fearch: whose infancie at first admitted an easie step ouer; but growne vnto strength more boldly forbad mee fuch passage, and with a more fterne countenance, held on their iourney vnto the British Seas: and Tane among these is accounted for a

(4) Vpon whose fall, and East-banke, the fairest Towne of all South-wales is feated. The Britaines Caerdid, the English Caerdiffe, which Fitz-Haimon fortihed with a Wall and Caitell, in the raigne of King Rufus, when he and his Norman Knights had ouercome Rusef the Prince of thele parts, and thruft out I estine from his lawfull possession. This Towne he made his owne Seat and Court of Iustice, enjoyning his Conforts to give aid to this honour, and to hold their portions in vaffalage of him, Strong was the Caftell, as by the trust therein reposed may well appeare, where the youngest brother Beauclark kept captine the eldest Curthofe, both of them fonnes to the Conqueror, the space of twenty fix yeeres. This Castell is large, and in good repaire, whence the Towne-wall went both South and East to the Rivers side, thorow which, foure gates enter into the foure windes, and containe in compasse nine hundred & twenty passes; and along the river (a sure defence) vpon her West side three hundred more: so that the Towne containeth in Circuit twelue hundred and fourscore pases. But as the Tane is a friend to the Town, in making a Key for arriuage of shipping; so is she a foc to S. Maries Church in the South, with underminig her foundations, and threatning her fal. The Town is gouerned by a Maior, yeerly elected out of twelue Aldermen, affifted with other twelve Burgeffes, a Towne-Clerk, foure Con-

stables and two Sergeants with Mace : whose fire is The graduation observed from the North-Staire to lie in the degree of and f. of Latitude, 5 1 and 49. Scruples; and from the first point in the West, 16, and 52. Scruples.

(5) In the same Graduation almost is sited the Citie Landaf, wherein is a Caltell and Cathedrall Church, dedicated to Saint Telean, Bishop of the same, without any other memorable matter worthy the (6) But things of strange note are these, by the re-

port of Giraldus, who affirmeth that In a Rocke or : life upon the Sea-side, and Iland Barry lying neere the South- Things officige East point of this County, is heard out of a little Chinke (let him take heed what he faith) the noise as it were of Smiths at their worke; one whiles the blowing of Bellowes to increase the heat, then the stroakes of the Hammer, and found of the Anuile; sometimes the no: (c of the Grind: stone ingrinding of Iron tooles; then the histing sparks of Steele gads, as they flie from their beating, with the puffing noise of flames in a Furnace. And whether this is the place whereof Clemens Alexandrinus speaketh, I determine clemen Alex: not; where in his writings hee hath these words: I her that have recorded Histories (faith hc) doe say that in the Ile of Britaine, there is a certaine Hole or Cane under the bottome of an Hill and on the top thereof a gaping Chineke, into the which, when the wind is gathered and toffed to and fro in the wombe or concauitie thereof, there is heard aboue a found of Cymbals; for the wind being driuen backe from his hole is forced to make a loud found at her went. (7) More Westward from hence, vpon the Rjuer

Ogmore, & neere vnto Newton, in a fandy plaine about an hundred pases fro Seuerne, there springeth a Well, though not of the elecreft water, where at the flowing and fulnesse of the Sca, can hardly any water be gotten; but at the ebbe and fail of tide, it walloweth vp amaine. The cause may be, as Polybius reports of Polybius the like at Cadys; Wherin the windy aire, who it is deprined of his wonted iffues, forcibly returneth, foutting and stopping up the passages and veines of the Spring, whereby the waters are kept in. But contrariwisc, who the surface thereof is void and empty of water, the veines of the Source or Spring, are unstopped and set free, which then boileth up in great abundance.

(8) And vpon the fame shoare more North and by West, on the top of a hill called Minyd-Margan, is Minyd-Margan erected a Monument inscribed with a strange Character, and as strange a conceit held thereof by the bydwellers, whose opinions are possessed, that if any man reade the same, he shall shortly after die.

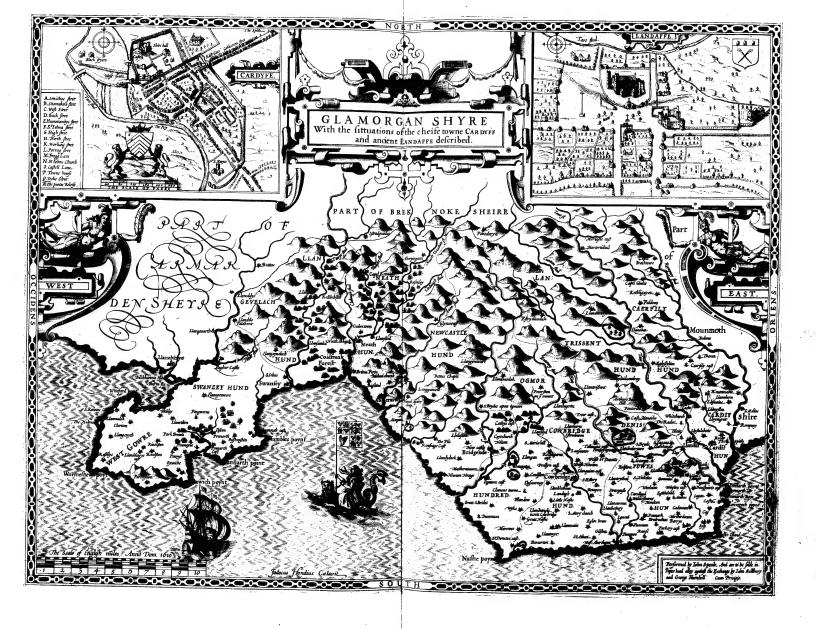
This Shire, as it is the furthest Coast of south-wales, and lay open to forraine inualion, so was it fortified with twenty fine stronger Castels, whereof times and formes have devoured the most : such were Barry, Saint Doneits, Denispowis, Morlashe, Menesse, Loghor, Llanddeny, Llanquian, Oxwich, Oyftermouth, Ogmor, Pile, Liandaesy, Lianquian, Oxwich, Officermonia, Ogmor, Euc. Porkery, Pennarth, Winfton, Newcafile, Caerfly, Coche, Pe-ullyn, Kethigarne, Kenfeage, Tallauan, Treer and Cothy. Neither was the County to ill feated for fufficien-

ie of life, or barren of Graine, but that therein were planted places for dinine pietie : fuch were Neath, Margan, and Caerdif, besides the Episcopall See of
Landaf; which last still remainerth; the other three suppreffed among the fall of their like, under King Henry

This Shire is divided into ten Hundreds, wherein are seated fix Market-Townes, and one hundred and cighteene Parish-Churches, as in the Card and Table annexed, more at large appeareth.

The division of

Bb 2





Rivers, and Places mentioned in Glamorgan-shire.

HUNDREDS IN BurraFlu. Glamorgan-shire.

1. Swanzey. 2. Llangeuelach.

3. Neath. Newcoftle. 4. Llantriffent,

Caerfily. Ogmor. Cowbridge.

9. Denispowys. 10. Cardif.

A ABERAVON, Near Aberdare, Llant. Aberpingum, Neath.

Aberthave caft, Denifp. Aberthowe well, Comb Coganpill, Denif. S Androwes, Denif. Cofton, Denif. Arthu s Buts & Llant. Cowifton, Ogmen hill, Saint? Combrid. COWBRIDGE,Com Coytic Castle, Newcast.

Auon Flu.

Denifpowis Callle, Deni. Bachhannis Swan. Ifland, Swan. Backinfton, Swan. S. Donetts Welfh, Combr. Saint Donetts, 30gmor. Baglane, Nearb. Dredruckan, Denif. Barry, Denifp. Barry Hand, Denifp. Dreerguile, Denif. Bettus Chapell, Newcaft Duliffe Flo Dunrauen, Ogmer. Beuerrton, Conbrid. Bewpeere, Combridge Bilhopfton, Swan.

Bouiston, Denif. Capell Scarf. Eghhelolid, Denif. Egloisbrywis, Combr. Bredruckun, Denis. Egloiffilan, Caerfil. Parke & Swan. Elay Flu. Brewis. Elay, Denifp. Saint Brides & Ogmor. Ewenny Flu.

great, Saint Brides ? Ogmor. the leffe, S Ogmor. BRIDGEND, News Saint & Denifp. Saint Brides Demy. Faldray, Caerf. Brytton ferry, Neath. Flimiton, Cowbridg.

The Friers, Cardi. Funtgar, Denifp. Funnum, Denifp.

Cadoxton, Neath. Caerfilly Calle, Caerf. Saint Georges, Denisp. Gilfton, Combridg. Canton, Cardif. Capell? Caerf. Capell Neath, CARDIFE, Cardif. Glyncorruge, Neath. Gwennowe, Denifp. Carnllayd, Denif. Cayrch, Cardif.

Cheryton, Swan, Hawood aport \ Newca Clafe, Llange. Clemention, Ogmor. Chapell, Cledaugh Flu. The Holme, Swan. Cledaugh Flu. Coche Caffle, Carre

Coidfranke Forest, Llas Condinerchan Denify. Parke. S Iohns, Swan. Cog, Denif. Cogan, Denif.

Cadoxton, Denif.

Canell

Kelligare, Carf. Covrehurch, Newcalt, Cunnon Flu.

Kilibebyth, Neath, Kilvay, Swan. Knelliton, Swan, Capell Nearb.

Lalefton, Newcast. Lamadoke, Sman. Llanbeder ynro, Denift Llanbethery, Denifp.
Lanblethran, Combrid. Lancaruan, Denife. Lancod, Denip. Landaph, Cardi. Llandilotalibout, Llang. Llandewy Castle, Swan. Llandogh, Combrid.

Llandough, Denisp. Landow, Ogmor.
Landeuodock, Ogmor Llandydock, Newcast. Lanederne, Cardif. Langan, Ogmor. Llangenyth, Swan

Llangeuelach, Lling. Llanginor, Ogmor, Llangoned, Newcast, Llangug, Llang, Langwick, Llan. Llangibach, Llang. Llanguncware, Newcast Lanhary, Combrid.

Llanriden, Llang.

Llanrydicii, Swan,

Lanfamlett, Llang. Lanfannor, Combrid.

Llantrillent, Llant.

Lantrithed, Denig.

Lantwit, Combrid.

Lantwyt, Nearb.

Lanvalion, Caerf.

Lanvedowe, Caerf

Lanwuo, Llant.

Llanverock Denip.

Llanyhangell, Deni/b.

Llanyhylotalibout, Swa

Llanyltiduandray, Llans

Llanylted, Neath

Lanylyd, Combrid,

Leckwith, Denifp.

Lifuaure, Cardif.

Lantroitt Vairdrey, Llant.

Lanharan, Combrid. Llanihangell, Com/rid, lanihangle, Denifp. Laniffen, Cardif. Llanmadok, Swan. Lannaes, Combrid. Llampyenwere, Swan Llanquian Cattle, Comb.

Saint Hillary, Combrid, Ilifton, Swan.

ftradouodock, Llant. Istradowen, Combrid. Kanfigg Callic, \ Nowcast.

S.Kenettes Swan Kethligarne Castle,Ogm Keuenmable, Card.

S.Lithams, Denifp. L Louchor Swan. Louchor Swan. Lloynigrat, Card. Lyfwerney, Comb. Llystalabout, Cardif.

Marcroes, Ogm. S Mary Church, Combr. S. Marieshill, Ogns. Margaiu, New, Michalaston. Swan. S Michael, Demis. Michellston vp- } Near Michelfton in 2 Den Michell(ton vp-) Denif on Elay,

Preterfton vp- } Denfp Mychelfton, Combrid. Meneche Caftle, Denifp. Merther Mawre, Ogm. Mertherdeuan, Dens'p

Merthir, Caerf. Morgan, Newcast. Morlashe (astle, Caerf.

Mumbles poynt, Swan.

Nashelittle, Combrid,

Nafrie great, Cowbr.

Nathe povnt, Combr. NEATH, Neath.

Neath vauchan Flu-

Newcastle, Newcast

S. Nicholas, Densfp.

Nolton, Newcast.

Ogmore Flu.

Neath Abbey, Llang.

Newton Welth, Combr.

Newton Nottage, Newc.

S.Nicholas Towne, Sma.

Ogmore Caftle, Swan.

Oystermouth Swan.

Oystermouth, Swan.

Oxwiche Caftle, Swan,

Oxwich poynt, Swan,

Pendoyloni, Corb.

Pengwerne, Swan. Penmaen, Swan.

Penmarke, Denilo.

Pennarth, Denip.

Pennarth Baye, Denifp.
Pennarth, Swan.

Penrees, Swan,

Penthery, Llang, Pentrich, Llant,

Peullyn, Ogmor. Pile, Newcast.

orteynon, Swan,

Portkirig, Denifp.

Peterston on the Mount, } Ogmor

Oxwiche, Swan.

Moulton, Denilp.

Radyre, Llant. Remgedro glytach, Llang. Relowlay, Neath. Reynaliton, Swan. Rompney Flu. Rofylly, Swan. Roth, Cardif. Rowle, Denife. Ruddrye, Caerfil.

The Spittle, Cardif. Sully, Denifp. SWANZEY, Swan, Swanzey Swan. Svly, Domfp. Sylve Ifland, Denifo.

Tallauant Combr. Falygarn, Llant. Tauc Flu. Thouan, Caerfil. Thule Flu. Tilcot, Card, lithegitowne, Newcast, Towye Flu. Treer Callle, Combr.

Walterflown, Denig. Webley, Swan. Pennarth Callle, Swan, Wenny, Ogwer. Wenuor, Denisp. West-Gower, Swan. Pennarth point, Deni p. Pennarth poynt, Swan, Whitford Sman. poynt, Sman. Whitchurch, Caerfil.

Whitchurch, Cardif. Wicke, Ogmor. Winfton Cattle, Denify. Worleton, Denifp. Wormeshead Sman.

Ycheloley, Deniso. Yftradowen, Combr.



MONMOVTH-SHIRE

CHAPTER VI.

The name of

The forme.

The aire.

Book.2.



Onmouthshire from Monmouth Towne, and that from Monnowe water bearing name, is altogether inclosed on the North, & is separated from Herefordfire with the same River, vpon the East, both it and Wye divides this Countre

from Glocester-shire. The South-fide wholly is washed by the Senerne Sea, and fome of her west part by Rempney is parted from Gla-morgan, and the rest lieth bordered upon by Breknock-

(2) The formethereof is fallop wife, both long and broad, shooting her North point to Lianton, and her South to the fall of Rempney, betwixt which two are twenty foure English miles; And from Chepstowe East, to Blanagwent West, are not altogether nineteene: the whole in circuit draweth somewhat neere to scuenty scuen miles.

(3) The aire is temperate, healthfull and cleare, the foile is hilly, wooddy, and rich, all places fruitfull, but no place barren. The hilles are grafed vpon by Cattle and sheepe, the vallies are laden with corne & cartic and incept the values are faden with corne or graffe, neuer vingratefull of the Husbandmans pains, nor makes fruftrate his hope of expected increase; whose springs abundantly riling in this County with many streames, doe fatten the foile euen from side

The ancient Is In the life of

Girald.

(4) Anciently the Silures inhabited this Shire, whole chiefe City by the Emperous Antonine is named Venta Silurum, by the Welfb Caer-went, and was by Tathaie the British Saint, made an Academie, and a di-That the Britip Saint, made an extension, and a de-nine place for worship, So likewise Caer-lion now, once ifca, was, where the second Roman Legion called Au-gusta lay, as by their Coines, Altars, Tables, and In-scriptions there found, and daily therein digged yp, doth euidently appeare:

By the report of Giraldus, in this Citie was the

Court of great Arthur, whither the Romane Embassadors reforted vnto him, and as Alexander Elfebiensis writeth, therein was a Schoole of two hundred Philosophers, skilfull in Astronomie & other Arts. Which is the more credible, for that Amphibalus, S. Albans inftructer, was therein borne, and Iulius and Aaron, two noble Proto-Martyrs of great Britaine, in this City receined the Crowne of Martyrdome, where their bodies were also interred. But as all things finde their fatall periods, fo this Citte for Beautie; Circuit, and Magnificall respect is laid in the ruins of her owne decay; neither may any more lament the loffe of glorie then

Monmouths Castle, which Captine-like doth yeeld to Memmanth conquering time. Her downe-cast stones from those Towne. ofty Turrets doe shew what beautie once it bare, standing mounted round in compasse, and within her walles another mount, whereon a Towre of great height and strength is built, which was the birthplace of our Conquering Henry the great triumpher ouer France, but now decaied, and from a Princelie | King Henry th Castle, is become no better then a regardles Cottage. In this Towne a beautifull Church built with three Iles is remaining, and at the East end a most curiously built (but now decaied) Church stands, called the Monks Church: In the Monasterie whereof our great Antiquarie Geffrey, furnamed Monmouth and Ap Arthur, wrote his History of Great Britaine: whose paines as they were both learned & great, so have they bred great paines among the learned, both to defend and to disproue. The Townes situation is pleasant and good, seated betwixt the Rivers Monnowe and Wye: three gates yet stand, besides that Tower or Locke of the Bridge, and a Trench or tract of wall running be-twist them on each fide downe to the Riuer, containing in circuit about eight hundred pases. The Towne is in good repaire and well frequented, gouerned by a Maior, two Bayliffes, fifteene common Counsellers, a Towne-clerke, and two Sergeants for their attendance. It is in Latitude removed from the Equator 52 degrees, & 8 minutes, and from the west point of Longitude is set in the degree 17, 36 min.

Religious houses erected & suppressed in this Shire for greatest account have beene in Caer-lion, Chepftow, Gold-clifte, Monmouth and Llantony; which last stood fo folitary and among hilles, that the Sunne was not feene to fhine there, but onely betwixt the houres of

This Shire is firengthened with fourteene Caftles, traded with fixe Market Townes, divided into fixe Hundreds, wherein are fituated one hundred twentie and seuen Parish Churches, and is not accounted among the Welfb-fires, being subdued by Henry the se-cond, who passing the Nant Pen-carne, a small Brooke and of no danger, yet held fatall by the Wellb, ouercredulous to a prophecy of Merlin Silvefler the British Apollo; who had foreshewed that when a frout & freckled fac'd King (fisch as Henry was) flould paffe ouer that Ford, then the power of the Wellbours flould bee brought vnder; whereby their flourcou-rage was foone abated, and the whole county the fooner in subjection to the English. The names of the places in this Shire are expressed in a Table, alphabetically gathered in the page infuing, vpon the reft of this Mappe.



8



The Bounds o

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Tovvnes,

Rivers, and places mentioned in Monmouth-shire.

Hundreds in Monmouth-shire.

Ergaueny Hund. Skenfrith. Vske.

Denny Cald,
Ifland,
Dewfton, Cald.
Dyngeftowe, Ragl.

Dynham, Cala.

Dyxfton, Sken.

Ebwith Flu.

bwith Fla

Erles Wood } Cald.

Ebwith

Fidan, Fls.

R

4. Ragland. 5. Caldicott. 6. Wenlooge.

ABERGEVENNEW, Borg. Abernsteth, Berg. Saint } Caldie. Aruans, Auon, Fla.

Goldecliffe, Cald. Goldecliffe } Cald. Baffaleg, West. Goldecliffe } Cald. Bafaleck, Went. Bedwes, Wend. Goyttren, Berg. Bedwellty, Wenl. Lyn Goyde, } Brig. Bettus, Ragi. Bettus, Weni. Gracedue, Ragl. The Grange, Cald. Chapell, Berg.
Wealch Sken.
Bicknor, Birthin, Flu. Retens Grenefeld | Wenl. Gryfmond } Sken. Blanagwent, Went Gwarneaolepa, Went,

Blorench Berg. Gwerneffeny, Ragi. Saint Bride, Cald Saint Bride, Wenl. Herdwicke, Berg. Bryngwyne, Ragl. Bysheton, Cald. Heullis, Wenl. Howicke, Cald.

Hothny, Flw. Caierwent, Cald. Caldicote, Cald. Saint Iclian, Cald, Carewent, Cald. Ifton, Cald. CARLION, Vike. The Chappell, Berg. Chappelhill, Sken. K Chappelhill, Sken. Kebby, Flu. Charlton | Cald. Kylgeden, Berg.

Kemis, Cald. Chepflowe } Cald. Kemis Comaunder, Berg. CHEPSTOW, Cald. Christehurch, Cald, Kenueny, Fin. Kilgoruck, Shen. Cledagnvagh, Flu. Clitho, Ragl. Cocedkernew, Wenl. Kirten Beacon, Went. Colbroke, Berg. Kylicornell, Berg. Connyoy, Berg. Coumcaruon, Sken.

Coydkirne, Wenl.

Creke, Cald.

Crindye, Went.

Crucorne, Berg.

Llanarth, Berg. Llanbadock, Vske. Llanbed, Cald.

Llandenny, Ragl. Llanaferyng, Berg. Llandenaige, Cald. Llandeguith, Vake. Llandilobatthale, Berg. Llandogo, Sken. Llanfoyst, Berg. Llangattokelenyg, Berg. Llangattock Vihanauell, } Sken,

Llangattock Vibon auell, } Sken. Llangattock, Berg. Llangeby, Vske. Llangevye, Ragh Llangevew, Vike. Llangewa, Shen. Llangiby, Vike.

Ljangomes, Ragl. Liangomes, Ragl. Liangoven, Sken. Llangton, Cald. Llanhenoch, Vike. Lianhithell, Berg. Lianilowell, Vike. Llannoyth, Sken. Llannyhangell, Berg. Llannyhangeli Wenl. Veddo

Llanouer, Berg. Lian-pyll, Sken. Llanfanffred, Berg. Llantley, Sken. Llantheruell \ Wenl.

Llanthenyrytherch, Berg. Lanthewye, Vske. Llanthen, Berg. Lianthewy Berg.

Llanthewy Berg. Llantilio Graffmont, Sken. Llantony, Berg. Llantriften, Vike. Llanvaier, Cald. Lianvaghes, Cald.

Llanuaner } Sken. Llanvapley, Berg. Llanueghavan, Vike. Llanveyre, Berg. Llanvihangell, Cald. Llanvihangell, Berg.

Llanuihangell } Sken. Llanuihangell, Berg. Llanuihangell, Ragt. Llanvitheryn, Berg. Llanvreghvaye, Vike. Llanwaren, Cald. Llanwenarth, Berg. Llanyhangeli

Tonney groyle, \\
Hanysten, Sken.
Lianysten, Sken. Llyn Goyde, Berg.

Maghan, Went Magor, Cald. Malpas, Went. Manshilad, Berg. Marshfield, Went

Marthelly Cald.

Chapell, Cald.

Matharne, Cald. Saint Mellans, Went. Michaelchurch, Berg. Michelfton, Wenl. Monnow, Flu. MONMOVTH, Sken. Mounton Chapell, Cald. Saint Michael, Sken. Saint Moughans, Sken, Mynithisloyn, Went,

Mychiltroy, Sken. Nashe, Cald.

Newchurch, Cald. Capell Berg. Betrus } Rag. Newport } Went NEWPORT, Went,

Norton, Sken. Olwyc, Flu. Ould-caftle, Berg.

Panteage, Berg. Parcassik, Sken, Parkhill, Cald. Penalth, Sken. Penciale, Sken. Penclawth, Ragl. Pencarn Flu. Went Pencoyde, Cald. Pencoyde, Cald. Penhow, Cald. Penhow, Cald. Penrole, Rag. Penrole, Vske.

Penteries Berg. Penterry Chappell, } Sken, Saint Perc, Cald. Pertholey, Berg. Perthing, Skew. Peterflon, Went. Pontemoile, Berg. Portefmete, Cald. Pyl,Flu.

Pyl.Flu.

Quenoch Pake

Ragland, Ragla. Redwicke, Cald. Rifeley, Wenl. Rocherston 3 Went. Castle, 3 Went. Rockfield, Sken. Rogeat, Cald. Rompney, Flu. Rompney, Wanl. Runfton, Cald.

Shernewton, Cald. Skenffreth, Sken. Skiriuawre Berg. Sroway, Flu.

Strogle } Cald.

Teteftent, Wenl. Throggy Fla. Traowey, Ragl. Tredeager, Wenl. Tredonock, Vike. Tregayre, Ragl. Trelecke, Sken. Trelecke Graunge, Sken. Trenytie Chappell, } Cald. Treuenthen, Berg. Troftrey, Vike.

Trothy, Flu. Troye, Sken. Trylaye, Berg. Tyntarne, Sken. Tyntern Abbey, } Sken. Tumberlow } Wend

Vske, Flu. Vsks, Vske.

Warigoch Chappell, Berg. Warnde, Berg. Wenfe Wood, } Cald. White Bog. Whitston, Cald. Wick, Cald. Wisewood } Sken. Wolfe

Newton. Sken. Saint Wollos, Wend. Woudye, Cald. Wynastowe, Sken.

Stanton Berg. Sudbroke, Cald,

Girald.in lib. Jti

ly bound.

(3) This County is full of hils and vneuen for tra-uel, which on the South part mout in such height, that as Giraldus hath writte, They make the aire much colder, in defendeth the Country fro the excelsive heate of the Sun, whereby a certaine naturall wholesomenesse of airemaketh it most temperate: and on the East side the Mountaines of Talgar and Ewias do as it were fore-fence the same: Among which, arifeth and runneth fo many fruitfull prings, that their vallies are thereby made most fertile, veelding in plenty both corne and graffe. (4) The ancient Inhabitants and possessions of this Shire, with the rest in this South tract, were the

Silures, much spoken of, and great opposites to the

Romanes, whose Countries were first made subject by

Iulius Frontinus, who befides the valour of the Enemy had

to fruggle with the Mountaines and straits, as Tatitus

tels vs; neither any more hard, we may well fay then

them of this Shire, wherofone in the South, & three

miles from Breknock is of fuch height and operation

as is uncredible; and were it not that I have witnes to

praifed or difliked of, whose bounds upon the North

is parted from Radner with the Rivers Clarmen and

Wye: the West lieth butted upon by Cardigan and

Carmarden-shires: the South is confined by Glamorgan, & the East with Monmouth and Radnor-shires, is whol-

(2) The length of this Shire from North to South, betwixt Llanuthel and Istradgunles, are twentie eight

English miles, and her bredth from East to West ex-

tended betwixt Pentrillo and Limell, are twenty: the

whole in Circumference, about one hundred and

The ancient in-

The nature of

Tacitus in pit.

affirme what I shall speake, I should blush to let the report thereof paffe from my penne: In my perambulations in these parts remaining in Breknock to obferue the fite of that Towne; the Aldermen or chiefe Seniors thereof regarding my paines, with friendly and courteous entertainments at my departure, no leffe then eight of them that had beene Bailiffes of the Towne came to visite me, where they reported vpon their credit and trials, that from the toppe of that hill, in the Welch called Mounch-denny, or Cadier Arthur, they had oftentimes cast from them and downe the North-East Rocke, their Cloakes, Hattes, and

Staues, which notwithflanding would neuer fall, but were with the aire and winde still returned backe and

blowne vp: neither, faid they, will any thing descend fro that cliffe being to calt, vnleffe it be frome or fome metalline substance: affirming the cause to bee the Clouds, which are sene to racke much lower then the top of that hi.l. As strange tales are told of the Meere Llynfauathan two miles by East from Breknock, which at the breaking of her frosen Ice, maketh a fearefull found like vnto thunder. In which place, as is reported, sometimes stood a faire Citie, which was swallow. ed vp in an Earth-quake, and refigned her stone-walls vnto this deepe and broad water: whither, vnto this day leadeth all the waies in this Shire: which as learned Cambden conjectureth, might be that Louentrium which Ptolemy in this tract placeth; and the more confirmed by the Rivers name adjoining, being also called Leuenny, which River also passeth thorow this Meere without any mixture of her waters, as by the colour therof is well perceived, which glideth thorow it with the same streame, and no greater then wherewith the first entred in.

BREKNOCK-SHIRE.

BREKNOCK-

SHIRE.

CHAPTER VII.

Reknoke-shire, in the Bri-tish language Brechineau, (lo called, as the Welchmen

relate, of a Prince named

Brechanius, the father of

an holy offpring, whose twentie foure daughters

were all of them Saints) is

Countie neither verie

large, nor greatly to bee

(5) The Townes for commerce, are Hay, Bealt, The Market and Breknock, two of them unfortunate of their former greatnes, whom warres and fedition have defaced and cast downe. Hay vpon Wye and Dulas, pleafant for fituation, in the rebellion of Owen Glendower dry, was diswalled, depopulated and burnt, in whose foundations for new repaires, many Romane coines have beene found; and thereby thought to be a seate of their Legions: & Buelth, now Bealt, though of good frequencie, yet not fo great as when Ptolemy observed her polition for graduation, who calleth it Buleum Silurum; neither when it with the Country was poffeffed by Aurelius Ambroflus, by whose permission Paf-centius the sonne of Vortiger ruled all, as Ninius writeth; noryet as of later times, when Leolin the last Prince of the Britaines was therein betraied and flaine.

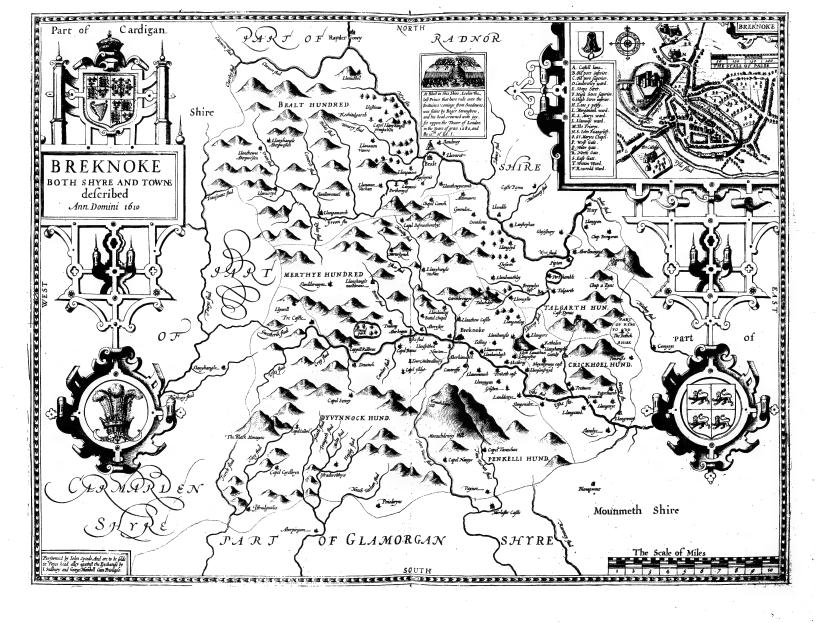
(6) Breknock the Shire-Towne for buildings and Bassuecsa beauty retaineth a better regard, whose walles in O-uall-wise are both strong and of good repaire, having three gates for entrance, with tenne Towres for de-fence, and is in circuit fixe hundred and forty pales about: you whole weft part a most fumptious and flately Castle is seared, the like whereof is not com-monly seene, whole decaies approching doe increase her ruines daily, and in the end is seared will be her

fall. This Towne is seated upon the meeting of two Rivers, Houthy, and Vske, whose yeerely government is committed to two Bailiffes, fifteene Aldermen, two Chamberlains, two Constables, a Towne Clerke, and two Sergeants, their attendants: having the poles elevation in 52, 21. minutes of Latitude, and for Longitude is placed in the 16 and 32 minutes, as the Mathematicians do measure them.

(7) This Shire is strengthned with nine Castles, divided into fixe Hundreds, wherein are seated three market Townes, and fixtie one Parish Churches.

Lignfänatheit







Rivers, and places mentioned in Breknock-shire.

				,	
Lalt. Hund.	Delas F/u.		Llangroney, Crick,	P	
2. Merthy, Hund.	Deninok, Dyaya,		Llangustye Penkel.	Patrifho, Crack.	
Talgarth, Hund.			Llangynyd, Crick,	Penderyn, Dyryn.	
	13 1 m/s		Llanifeenuell, Bealt,	Donale and	
4. Crickhoel Hund.	C-Bla		Liannyllo, Talgar.	Castell, } Penkel.	
5. Penkelii. Hund.	Dynas Talgar.		Llanfantired, Penkel.	Peterchurch, Crick.	
6. Dyuynnock.			Llanspethiet, Dynyn,	Pipton, Talgar.	53
Hund.	G		Llanthetty, Penkel.	Porthamble, Talgar.	C CO
	_		Llandheur	Portheroyes, Bealt,	
A	Garthbrenguy Merib.		Cattle, Penkel.	Fortheroyes, Dean.	
	Llanthew, \$ ""			R	
Aberbrayne Meth.	Gilfton Penkel.		Aberweifyn } Bealt.		
Aberkinvick Penkel.	Glashury Talgar.		Llauthewi Come, Bealt.	Capell	
Aberlleueny Talgarth.	Glyn,]_		Llanuair, Bealt.	Capell Ridbrue, Meribit.	
Aheryskire Merib.	Tawy Dynyn.				
Afyne, \Talgar.	Groney, Flu.		Llanuanuccham, Bealt.	S	
Afyne, 12 again	Gwenthur Talgar.		Llanuigon, Penkel.	1	
Altemawre Talgar.	Gwetherick, Flu.		Llanuhangell Menh.	Llyn \Tales	
	Owenicies, rim.	EX.3		Llyn Sanathan, Talgar.	
В	Н .	23	Llanushangell } Bealt.		
most.			Bryn pablan,	Senny, Dyuyn.	
Battle Merik.	Haterell Jalgar.		Llanuorted, Bealt.	Skethrog, Penkel.	22
Chappell)	Hill, } largar.		Llanurenach, Penkel.	l _	wa
DEALT Beatt.	HAYE, Talgar.		Lianuthuli, Bealt.		
Capell Bettus } Dynyn.	Henuid		Llanuillo, Penkel.	Talgarth, Talgar.	
Bettus ()	Parke Merth.		Llanwerne, Penkel.	Talyllyn, Penkel.	
Blacke Mountaine. } Dynyn.	Hepfey, Flu.		Llanygon, Talgar.	Tauechan, Penkel.	
Mountaine, 5 27/2/20	Houthy, Flu.		Llanyhangell Merth.	Taucchan, S	
Biaynilynuy 2 Cairl				1 auy, Fin.	
	1 1		Llanyhangell } Crick	Trailong, Mercher.	
Brane Flu.	1		Juniaye, J	Trangarth, Flu.	
BREKNOCK Penkel.	Isker, Flu.		Lianyhangio, Penkel.	Traufnant, Fin.	
Capell 2 Talors	Istradgunies, Dyuyn.		Lianyhangell Bealt.	Tre 1 December	
Capell Talgar.	Istraduciltey Dyny.			Caftle, Dynyn.	
Bruntliys Talgar.	1		Llanynnis, Beals.	Tretowre, Crick.	
800	k K	E703	Lieftinan, Beatt.	Tylachthy, Penkel.	
C CORPOR	Water Cold	22	Lleueny, Flu.	Turch, Flu.	
	Ketheden Crick.		Lleveny, Fin.	1	
Capell Dynyn.	Kethitalgarth, Bealt.		Lliwell, Dyuin,	v	25
	1 .		Llyfwen, Talgar.	Tawe 3 Flat	
Camlas Flu.	Liamcamlach, Pentel.			Vachan, } Flat.	
Cantreff Penkel.	Lianzuanuour , Bealt,		M	Neath Fin.	
Clarthy Flu.	L lanbedde, Crick.		Macimynys, Bealt.		
Clarwen Flw.			Towie LDrury.	Tawe }Flu.	
Comartch Fin.	Llanddetty, Penkel.		Maltwalbury, Dyugn.		
Capell 3.Flw.	Llandinalley, Talgar.		Melta, Flu.	Vaynor, Penkel.	
Coyelbryn, 3	Llandiuilog, Merib.		Metherchynog, Merth.	Vske, Flu.	
Craye Fin.	Llandiloruan, Merth.		Mounchdenny Per.	Vske, Fin.	
Crickadarn Talgar.	Llanelli , Crick		Hill. 5		
Crickholl, Crick	Llancliw, Talgar.			W	
Crickhoel, Crick.	Llangamarth, Beals.		C II N		ETCT.
Capell 1 March	Llanganten, Bealt.		Capell Nanty, } Penkel.	Weuery, Flu	23
Cunok Menh.	Llangattuck, Crick,			Wye, Flu.	-
	Llangency, Cruck.		Neath, Flu.	Y	
D	Llangonider, Crick		Newton, Dynyn.		
C11	Llangors, Crick		1 0	Capell	
Capell Merth	Llangouilog, Penkel.			Ylldyt, } Dyujn.	,
Defrunchenthy } Merth.	Llangoyd, Talgar.		Olluannock, Dynyn.	Yruon, Plu.	
			1	1	





RADNOR-SHIRE.

CHAPTER VIII.

The forme.

The circuit,

Polycrhon.

Adnor-Shire lieth bordered pon the North with the County Monmouth; vpon the East, toucheth Shrop hire and Hereford-Shire the Rivers Clarmen and Wye divide it from Breknok in the South: and the west part doth shorten pointvise into Cardigan-shire.

(2) The forme thereof is in proportion triangle, euery fide almost containing a like distance: for from West to North are twenty miles; from North to South, twenty two; and from South to West are twenty foure: the whole circumference extending to

fourescore and ten miles, (3) The aire thereof is sharpe and cold (as most of Wales is) for that the snow lieth and lasteth long vn-The aire. melted vider those shadowing high hils and ouer-

hanging rockes.

(4) The foile is hungry, though not barren, and that in the East and South the best: the other parts are rough and churlish, and hardly bettered by painfull labour; so that the riches of the North and West confifterh chiefly in the brood of Cattle.

fifteth chiefly in the brood of Cardle.

(5) Anciently this County was poffelfed by the Silueria, warlike people, and great withflanders of the Romans impolitions, who had not only them to fight againth, but withall the vnaccessible Mountains, wherewith this Shire is 60 oner-peeffed and burdened, that many times I feared to looke downer from the hanging Rockes where-vnder I passed, into those deepe and ing Rockes where-winder I palled, into thole deepe and darke dales, feeming to mee an entrance into Limbo. Among thefe(as fly our Hilforium) that hateful Prince to God and Man, Vortiger, his Countries scourge, and last Monarke of the British Blond, by fire from Heauen was confumed with his inceftuous wife, from whom Ninius nameth the Country wherein his Cafile stood, Nimus nameth the Country wherein his Cafte 1000, Guartiger-Maur, of whole rubbish the Caftle Guthremion was railed, as some are of opinion. Yet they of North-Wales will have his destruction and Caftle to North-Wales will have his centraction and Capte to frand in their parts necre vnto Beth-Kelleck, whereof we will further speak in the relation of his life. Fatall was this place also to Lhewellin the last Prince of the British Race, who being betraied by the men of Buelth, fled into those vast Mountaines of Radnor, where by Adam Francton he was flaine, and his head (crowned with Iny) fet vpon the Tower of London.

(6) Places most worthy of note in this Shire, are is entueth: The first is Radner from whom the Countiereceiued her Name, anciently Magi, where the Com-mander of the Pacenfian Regiment lay, and thought to Notices. be the Magnos in Antonine the Emperours Survey. This Cambden. Towne is pleasantly seated vader a hill, whereon standeth mounted a large and strong Castle, from whose Bulwarke a Trench is drawne along the West of the Towne, whereon a wall of flone was once raifed as by the remaines in many places appeareth. This Trench doth likewife inverge her West side so farreas the Riuer, but after is no more feene : whose Graduation is observed to have the Pole elevated for Latitude 52.

degrees and 45, minutes; and for Longstude, from the first point of the West, set by Mercator 17. degrees and Prestayn for beautious building is the best in this Prestayn. Shire, a Towne of Commerce, wonderfully frequen-

ted, and that very lately. Next is Knighton, a Market
Towne likewise, vnder which is seene the Claudh-Towne likewife, vnder which is fene the ClavallaOffs, or Offise Diste, whose track for a fance followed along the edge of the CNeontaine, which was a
bound fetro feparate the Welfs from the Entility, by
the CNeroim King Offis : and by Egbert the Momarke a
Law made, by the intigation of his wife, that it
hould be prefern death for the Velfs to patie out the
fame, as Islan Bowner the Monke of Welfsmiller reporterinand the like whether Handla, as Islan of Sakehay writeth; wherein it was ordained, that what Welfsmiller
focure fhould be found with any weapon on this fide
of that Limit, which was Offises Ditter, thould hauc his
right hand cut off by the Kings Officers. The fourth
place for account is Kalbader Gerry, who be befides the
great fall of ley with a continual noice, that her Marerreat fall of ley with a continual noice. great fall of Wye with a continual noise, hath her Mar-kets there kept vpon the Sabbath, which I there obser-ued, and here note for an offense.

(7) Many Riversarife and run thorow this Shire, which were it not that the hils fo cluster together, might make the soile both fertile and fat. Such are Teme, Lug, Ithon, Clowdok, Dulas, Comarton, Somegill, Gwithel, Arro, Machaway, Edway, Hawye, Eland, Clar-wen, and Wye, befides other Loughs that stand betwixt

This Shire is divided into fix Hundreds, wherein are feated three Forests, foure Market Townes, fix Casiles, and fifty two Parisb-Churches, as in the Table in the last page of this Chapter alphabetically are set and in-







Rivers, and places mentioned in Radnor-shire.

Hundreds in Rad-	Clarwen, Flu. Clirow, Faines.	H	Llandilo, Painef. Llandrindod, Keuenl.	Norron, Rad.
norshire.	Clowedoke, Fla.	Harton, Rud.	Llanelweth, Collow,	p
	Calle, Callen.	Hawye, Flu	Llangiallo, Kenenl.	Painefcastle, Painefe.
i, D ayader-Gowy.	Caltle, S Calle	Hiop, Knight.	Llanihangell, Kenen.	Pilith, Kenel.
2. Knighton.	Colua, Radnor. Combehire, Rayad,	I	Llanihangell Rayard,	PRESTEIGNE, Rad.
3 . Keuenllice.	Comaron, Fla.	Ithon, Fla.	Lianthangle 7 page 6	R
4. Radnor.	a		arro, framej.	Radnor old, Rad.
6. Painefcaftell.		K	Llanihangell, Kenen.	RADNOR, new, Rad.
o. Pameicanen.	Darnall, Flu.	Keuelles Kenenl.	Llanhihangle Rad,	Radnor Forrest, Rad.
	Discodde, Rad. Disferth, Collow.	Castle, } Nement.	nanemelan, Maa.	RAY ADER-gowy, Ra
A	Dulas, Fin.	Kregrena, Collo. Kinerton, Rad.	Llanfanffred, Collow.	Rulen, Collow.
Aberdow, Collo.		KNIGHTON, Knight.	Llanfanffred Rayad.	S
Arro, Fin.	E	Forrest, \ Knight.	Lianstephan, Painese,	S Harmon elife
Augop, Rad.	Ednall, Rad	Forrest, Sangar.	Llanuereth, Collow.	S. Harmon alias Philtharmon, Raya
В	Edway, Flu.	Knukles, Knight.	Llanyere, Rayad. Llowes, Painese.	Standilh, Rad.
Banghwid, Painef.	Eland, Flu.	ĹL	Lug, Flu.	Samegill, Flw.
Bettas litlerth, Collo.	F		Llynhoghlen, Painefe,	т
litlerth, ¹ Bigildy, <i>Knight</i> .	Fuldibrok, Rad.	Llanamro, Knight.		l
LETHVACH, Kenen.	I didibion, Kan.	Llanbaderney } Collow.	М	Teme, Fis.
Hethusch } Keuen.	G	Llanbadarne, Keuen.	Machway, Flu.	w
Forrelt,	Garthuagh, Rayad,	Llanbadarne Knight.	Michels Church, Painef.	Whitten, Kenen,
Brongwine, Pains. Buttus, Paines.	Glasbury, Painef.	Llanbeder, Paines	Monaghree, Kenen.	White hall, Knight.
iditary i marry		Llanbefter, Knight.	N	Weiton hall, Kenen,
C V	Glascomb, Collow. Glastrey alias Rad. Glawdiscre, Rad.	Llandegley, Kenenl.		Wyc, Fin.
Cafcop, Kenen.	Glawditere, J Glyngwin, Rayad,	Llandewy, Knight.	Nantmel, Rayad,	Y
Dynbod, Knight.	Gwythell, Flu.	Llandewy } Painef.	Newcastle, Rad. Newchurch, Paines.	Ython, Flu.





CARDIGAN-SHIRE.

Limits.

Dimensitie.

The Salmon.

The Salmons

Lock.z.



ARDIGAN-SHIRE, (in the Welsh called Sire Aber-Timi) is parted on the North from Merioneth-shire with the River Doui, by the Plinillimon hils from Montgomeryfbire in part of her East, and the rest from Breek-

Tony, and with Typy altogether on the South from Caermarden-shire: the West is wholly washed with the

(2) The forme thereof is horne-like, bowing compaffe long and narrow, and growing wider ftill towards the North: so that from Cardigan, the Shire Towne and vttermost point in the South, vnto the Riuer Doni, her farthest North bounder, are thirtie two miles: and from the head of Clarwer in the East two miles; and from the head of Carrier in the Eart, to Aberysthmyth on her Welt, the broadcft part in the Shire, are onely fifteene: the whole in circumference is one hundred and three miles.

is one nunared and three mues.

(3) The Aire is open and formewhat pietcing; the Soile is hillie, and (Wales-like) vneuen: yet more plaine and champion towards the Sea, then in the Eaft or North of the Land. For befules that great and high hill called Plinillimon, a continual trange of leffer doth find the property of the prope paffages who the Sea. In Tyny one of these, as Graldus hath written, the Beauer hath been found, a creature liuing both by land and water, whose stones the Phyllumg both by land and water, whose thones the Pay-fitions holdin great price. His for-feet are like vnto a dog, but the hinder whole skinned, as is the goofe, the dog-like ferues him on flore for tor unne, and the goofe-like as Oares gines him fwift motion in fwim-ming: his taile broad and griftly, he vfeth as a flerne, wherewith on the findden lice and diuert his jwift floating course. But this creature in these parts along time hath not been feene, whose roome wee may well say the Salmon hath possest, who still coueting into fresh water riuers, at their downe-right falles vieth this po-licie: He bendeth himfelfe backward, and taketh his taile in his mouth, and with all his ftrength vnloofing his circle on the fudden (as a lath let goe) moun-teth vp before the fall of the ftreame; whereupon fuch water-falles are called the Salmons leape; and in

these rivers many such Salmons are caught, (4) The commodities of this Shire chiefly con-fift in cattle, sea-fowle, and fish; corne sufficient, but The Cammodiof woods fome scarcitie: and at the head of Istwydhare certaine veines of lead, a merchandize of no meane regard or wealth.

(5) The ancient people that possessed this Pro-nince, were the Dimeta, by Ptolemie branched thorow the Tracts of Caermarden, Penbrooke, and this Shire; who in their struglings against the Romans Shire; who in their trugings against the Komans, did not a little relie vpon Caractacus their most war-like King, (from whose name, though vnlikely, some will have the Shire called Cardigan) yet laftly felt the fortune of subjection with the rest, when Iulius Frontinus warred with these Mountaines. Scarce had the Normans fettled their Kingdome in Britaine, but that they affailed this Countie, as well to enjoy fo faire a Possession, as to secure those seas from enioy to faire a Policision, as to lecure thole leas from any inuation against them; to that Rulin in this wrested from the Pulli-men the maritime Costs, and Henry the First gaue the whole County to Gilbert de Clere.

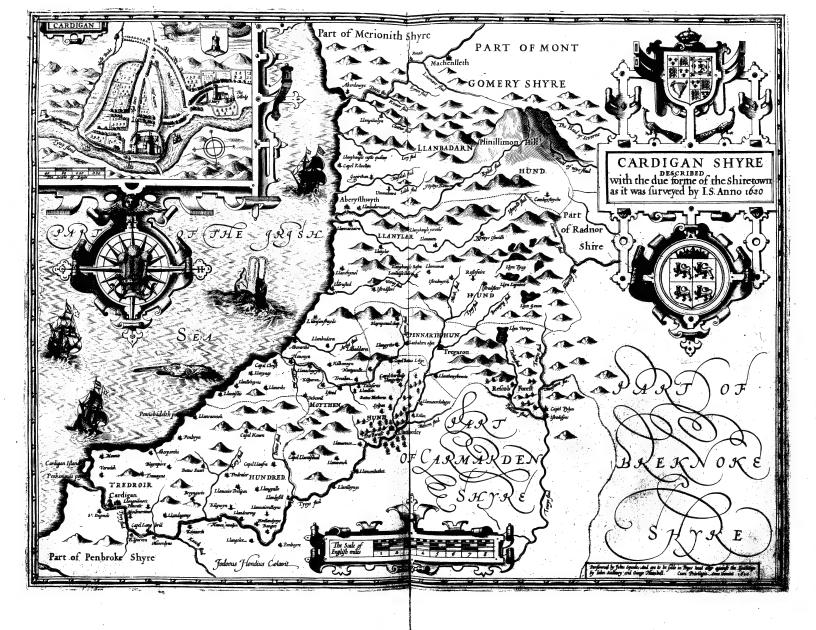
(5) This Gilbert fortised Cardigan the shire-towner with a Wall and from Castle, who for aged linearments

with a Wall and strong Castle, whose aged lineaments doe to this day shew the industrie both of nature and doe to this day new the industrie both of hardrace art; for the Towne is feated you a fteepe banke, her South fide garded with the deep Riner Tyy, and pafable no way but by a bridge vnder the Caftle. The walles take the advantage of the rifing rocks, and circulate the Towne euen round about. The Castle is The Castle, higher built vpon a rocke, both spacious and faire, had not stormes impaired her beauty, and time left her carcase a very Anatomic. The walles range as thou seeft, and are indifferent for repaire, having three waies for entrance, and containe in compasse six hundred and fourescore pases: whose position for latitude is set in the degree 52. 33. minutes from the North-pole, and for longitude from the first Westpoint by Mercator, in the degree 15, and 10, mi-

(7) This Shire, as it is little in circuit, fo accordingly is besprinkled with Towne-ships, whereof foure only have the trade of Markets: neither finde l other remembrance of religious foundations, but at Cardigan, Istradfleet, and at Llan-Badern-Vaur, where fometimes was feated an Episcopall See, which (as Houeden writeth) was decased many yeeres since, when the people had wickedly slaine their Passour. And yet Llan-Deni-breni built, and so called in memorie of the most Doub-fress built, and to called in memore of the most frame all fishop of Chemeus, was in great e-freeme, where in a frequent Synod there holden her refuted the Pelagian Herefit, from sy pagine in British, both by the authority of holy Scripture, and is the standard is by miracle, as is reported, while the earth whereon he stood and preached, rose vp vnto a certaine height

vnder his feet. (8) The Shires division, for businesses belonging either to the Crowne or Common-wealth, is into fiue Hundreds, wherein are seated soure Market-townes, and sixtie soure Parish-Churches for Gods diuine and daily feruice, whose names are further inserted in the Table following.

Ff 1





Rivers, and Places mentioned in Cardiganshire.

-	HVNDREDS IN Cardigan-shire.
1	

1. Llanbadarn. 2. Llanylar.

2. Pennarth. 4. Moythen. 7. Tredroir.

Aberporth, Tred. ABERYSTWYTH, Lib Arrhe fin. Avron flu.

Capell Moyth. Bangor, Tred. Goguthan, Llanb. Bledrus, Moyth Llyn Gonon, Llany. Icuan, } Tred. Bettus Bettus, Moyth. Bidder flu. Blayneporth, Tred. Blayne pennali, Pen.

Brennyng flu. Brongwyn, Tred. Istradfler, Lianyl. Istradiler, Llany. Istradmyrick, Llany. CARDIGAN. Tred. Cardigan Island, Tred. Jilwyth flu.

K Kellan, Moub. Kelekenyn, Llany. Capell Kenan, Tred. Kery flu. Combeyfloyche, Llanb

Capell Moyth.

Dylicwyll, Moyth.

Clarthye flu.

Clarwen flu.

Clettur flu.

Dettor flu.

Dyhewidd ynewidd Ifekerdyne,} Tred.

Eynon Flu-

The Morth.

Kilic ayron, Llasy. Capell Liand. Kilwyn, Tred. Kinuer flu. L Llanarche, Mojth,

Llanauon, Llanyl, Llanauon, Llanyl. Llanbadarn } Llanb. vawire, } Llanb. Llanbaddarn, Llanyl. Llanbadarne, Lland, Llanbadarne Odyne, Pe. Llanbaddarnehill.

Llanbadarne Treuegloys, Llangl. Gunros, Llany. LLANBEDER, Moy. Heullandynye, Tred. Llandeuroigge, Tred. leueneroe, Llany. Llandiffilio, Month. Llandiffiff Ilcard, Moyth. Ifckerdyne,

I landiffill vchkerdyne, \$ 224 Llandogwy, Tred. Llanfra Capell, Tred.

Capell 3 Tred. Llangoydmore, Tred, Llangranoge, Mostb, Llangynllo, Llanb, Llangybye, Moyib. Llangythye, Moyth. Llangytho, Tred. Llangunelyn, Llanb. Lianliohayrne, Mojsh.

Llanfanfrayde, Llany. Llanthewy & Llangt. Llanthewy breuye, Pen Liantifilized Moyth.

Capell, Moyth.

Lianthynoli, Lianyl. Llanuair Tred. lanuaicralloyne, Trea Llanvayrgledoge, Mor. Llanuichangell, Llanyl. Llanunen, Tred.

Ofcoid 7 Llanunnes, Llanyl. lanwenoge, Moyth Lianylar, Llanyl. Penbryne, Tred. lanyna, Moyth. Penkemmas point. Tree lanychayaron, Month Penneralt, Tred. Pennobadath point castle qualtor Pelcotter flu.

Pfinellimon hill, Llosh. Preuerhe Llanb.

R Refcob forrest, Pen. Rollefayre, Llanyl. Rydall flu.

Llanyhangle Yerothen, } Llany.

Yerothen, S. Llany, Roffea, S. Llany, Llanyhangle Llany, Lledrod, Llanynay, Mayib. Llanygrothen, Llanychayaine, Llanyl.

Liarumfled, Llanyl.

Llegenyald, Mosth.

Lery flu.

Leuenant flu.

Lyky, Mojib.

Maffalak flu.

Mathern flu.

Mirik flu. Mounte, Tred.

N Nantegnulle,*Pen*,

lyn Legnant, *Llanyi*.

Salek flu. Silien, Moyth. Spittie vitoith, Llangl. Spittye kinwen, Llanb.

Talaferne, Month. Tothea flu. Torve flu. Tredroir, Tred. TREGARON.Pow. Tremayne, Tred. Treuilon Llant. Treuygoid, Tred.

Tyuy S Llange. Tyuy flu.

Vehelawdd, Pen. Verwicke, Tred. Verwyn S Pen.
Vmnrabowa, Llash. W Weray flu.

Wye head, Llanb.





MOVNTGOMERIE-SHIRE.

CHAPTER X.



Ountgomery-shire in the Bri-tish speech called Siretrefaldwin, and that of the principall Towne Mountomery , lieth bounded vpon the North with Denbigh-shire, vpon the East with Shrop-shire, on the South with Radnor & Cardigan-shires, and on the

West with Merioneth-shire. Welt with Merioneth-June.

(2) In forme it onnewhat refembleth a peare or pinc-apple, as it were growing out of the Welt, and riling thence with many high Hilles, and plentiall fiprings, which water and make fruitfull the folieurer, where: whole Earching rilles with a longedire halte euer forward to shade an encrease and to augment their growth into a bigger body, whereof the Seuerne is the chiefe and the second River in the Land: whose head rising from the spired mountaine Plymllimon, runneth not farre without the receits of other riverets into her streame, and with many windings doth sport her selfe thorough all the East part of

(3) That this River tooke her name from Abren, the beautifull base daughter of Loerinus, begotten out of wedlocke vpon Estrildis the daughter of Humout of wedtocke vpon Eftridus the daughter of Ham-ber the Seythian King, that inusded this Land, and both of them drowned in this Riuer by Guendeless King Loerinus furuiting widowe: let Ieffrey relate, and Poets enlarge, whereof one among them in good account, thus writeth:

Influmen pracipitatur Abren Nomen Abren fluuio de virgine, nomen eidem Nomine corrupto, deinde Sabrina datur.

Into this streame faire Abren head-long cast, Gauename of Abren to those waters wast, Corruptly call d Sabrina now at last.

(4) This River maketh the East part of this shire for fruitfulnes to be copared with most of the Land,

and to exceed any other Shire in Wales: the West side and to exceed any other share in Water: ine Wett use is more Hilly and leffe inhabited, yet furely those mountaines breede innumerable of Cattle, especially of Horse, whose portrainare for making and incom-parable fwiftnes, Girddus Cambronie Arch-deacon of Berbacke doth greatly commend. (1) The ancient inhabitants that were seated in

Guineth and Powisland, whereof this Shire was a part, were to the Romanes knowne by the name of OR-DOVICES, a Puissant and Couragious Nation, whose hearts and hilles held them the longest free whoir nearts and nines need them the longest need from the yoke of subjection, either of the Romanes or English: For vnto the daies of Domitian they kept Plea with the Romanes, and were not brought to the will of the English before the raigne of King Edward win orthe engine detorethe rangied to the first. Those Ordovices inhabited the Counties of Mountgomer, Merioneth, Caernaran, Denbigh, and Flint, which are of vs called now North-Wales, a people generous and of affable conditions, goodly for feature, faire of complexion, couragious of minde, courteous to strangers, and that which is most commendable, most true and loiall to the English Crowne.

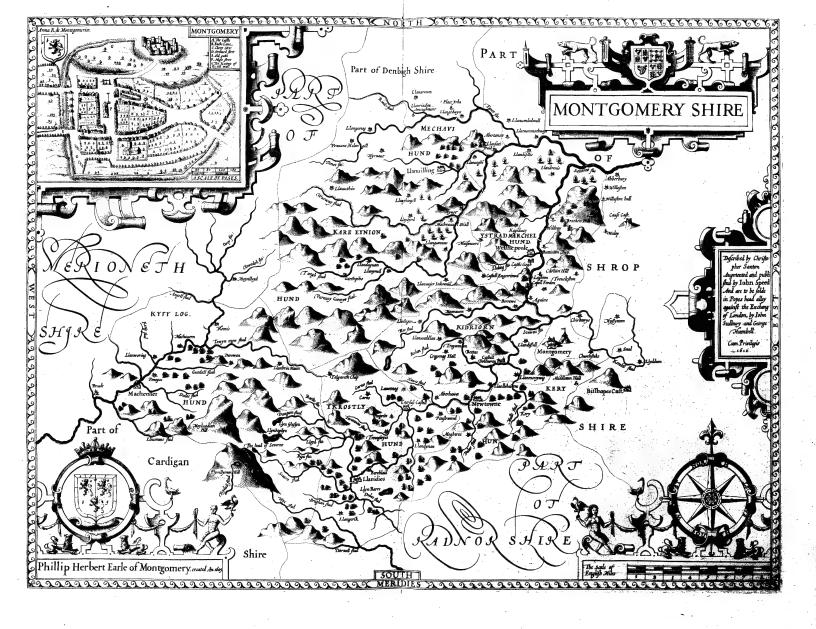
Townes for Trades and commerce in this County Townes for Trades and commerce in this County are fixe, the chiefet thereof and Shire-Towne is Mountgomer, very wholefome for aire, and pleafant for fituation, yoon an eafle after to fan hill, and yoon an other farre higher mounted, thands a faire and well repaired Caffle, from the Eaft Rocke whereof, the Towne hath been walled, aby fome part yet flanding, and the trade and trench of the refu tenum vande to North felic of the first 16-16 for the county to the country of the country ding, and the track and trench or the Petr cuent vitio the North-fide of the faid Caftle may euidently bee feene: whose graduation for Latitude is placed in the degree 3, and for longitude 17, the lines cutting each other in the fite of this Towne.

This Towne hath lately received the Honour and

Title of an Earledome, whereof Philip Herbert the second sonne of Henry Earle of Pembroke, was created the first, in Anno 1 60 5. And the Shire divided into seuen Hundreds, wherein are seated fix market Townes, and forty seuen Parish Churches: The names whereof are inserted in the Table annexed.

Market Towner





Rivers, and places mentioned in Mountgomery-shire.

Hundreds in Mountgo- merie-shire.	Castle Engerrimon Kare.		Llandrenio Yfr. Llanfair Kare. LLANFILLYN Mech. Llanfynhonwen Yfr.	N Nevviouve, Kydr.
Echaui. 2. 3. Yirad Mar- chel. 4. Kidriorn. 5. Ykroftly. 7. Kyfy. Log.		23	Llangadfan Kare Llanguroch Meth. Llanguroch Meth. Llanguroch Meth. Llanlochaiarne Kyde. Llanlochaiarne Kyde. Llanlochaiarne Kyde. Llanlocham J. Meth. Llanuthin, Meth.	Penegos, Kyfy. WW LSH 37 ftr. Pools 37 ftr. Penprice, 7 fc. Penitrowed, 7 fc. Plymilymn 3 Kyfy. R Riader Fls.
A	Chappell } 7 pr.		ynghar eynion } Kare. Llanuyhangell } Kare.	Rue Flu.
Aberhafais Kydor, Agaiere Flora. B E2 Bacho Flu. Lyn- Lyn- Lyn- Lyn- Lyn- Lyn- Lyn- Lyn	Garch-beibio Kare. Lipa 1975 Cladyn 3 75/7. Cladyn 3 75/7. Cladyn 3 75/7. Callie 7 16 H Haus Flu. Heldray Thr. Hirnant Mech. Hyffinton Thr. Karmo Thr. Kar	23	ynghery Jawe. Lianwyn Kyf. Lianwang, Te. Lia	S Scients X/fr. Edge Scient Fin. Scient Fin. T Tagrell 7/fr. Tanot, Fin. Tanot, Fin.
C EEE Carlie 7th. Carlie 7th. Carlie 7th. Carno Fle. Churchfloke 7fr. Cregrong 8th.	Kemes K7ff, Kerig Flu, Kery Flu, Kery Kery. L Llanbrim K7ff, Maire K7ff, Llanddollio Meth. Llanddilli Kidr.	?	Hall. Meifod Meeb. Middleton Kery Mall. Monytownsky Tfr. Moylnadion Kyfr. Hill. Mulle Flas Penant Mylangell, Meeb.	V Vumuey, Flu. Wureay Flu. Wye Flu. Y Lianuihangeli Ynghronfa } Meeb.





MERIONETH SHIRE.

MERIONETH-SHIRE.

CHAPTER XI.

The forme

Wil. Malmf.



Erioneth-shire, which the Britaines call Sire-Verioneth, and in Latine Meruinia; is bordred upon the North by Canaruan and Denbigh shires, vpon the East with Mongomery, vp-on the South by the Ri-

uer Domy, is parted from

Cardiganfire, and the weft
fide altogether washed with the Irifo-Seas, whose rage

idea laogether washed with he Triffs-East, who te rage with such vehemency beaters against her bankes, that it is thought and said, some quantity of the Land hath beene swallowed up by thois Sests.

(2) In former this Share somewhat resemblers a strell-Harpe, though small is the Musicke that to her Inflabitants the makes, being the roughest and most varplesiant to set to, sas sirablus their own Historian written) in all Wales. The aire for great pleasure, nor foile for great profits, I cannot greatly commend, valies it be for the many and mighty great winds, that for the most part thereind or age, and the spired hils clustered together, so never and so high, as the same Jashow altimeter, that site phendar by your their to so. Author aftirmeth, that shepheards upon their tops falling at oddes in the morning, and challenging the sheld for sight, before they can come together to try

field for fight, before they can come rogether to try out the quarriel, the day will be fipen, and the hear of their fury flut vp with their fleepe.

(3) Thefe Mountaines formerly did abound with Wisters, for whole autodance, Edfar the penceable did imposit (as Malonesbay writett) an yeerely Tribate of three hundred Wisters, vpon Lawriell Prince of that Country, whereby in three yeers space they were quite delivoide? And now their faces are coured with fruitfull flocks of fleepe, belides neare and on-ther cartell that therein abundantly doe grafe, where-in the onely riches of this Shire dorh confilt: for by reaslon of the vneuennesse of the folie, and rocks so neer the face of the earth, the Plough cannot be drawne, or the Corne profess-which some hase imion never merace or the earth, the Plough cannot be drawne, nor the Corne profiper, which some haue imputed to the illdenesses of the inhabitants, wherein they haue been gerally wronge.

(4) These people are a part of the Ordonier, of Whom we have spoken, who by the advantage of these Mountaines held our with the longest against the Re-

mans, and their necks not brought vnder the yoke of bondage, before the daies of King Edward the first; fince when, they have attempted to cast off their subfince when, they have attempted to caft off their fubication to the English, you found firmer saided by o-wins Gleadoure, who hasting beene a fanourite of King Risbard the Good, and difcionented by King Henry the fourth, in a quarrell with the Lord Grey of Ruthin, that intruded you his demaines, quarrelled with the King, and entred into open rebellion and confederately with all other his rebells, faving the Wide most whollier to his fide, in hope to have had Princes reflored of their owne blood; and the maintained the fame with wonderfull pride, policie, and oblinacy for a

long time, vntill his confederates, followers and fauorites, and his owne courage, credit, and maintenance, were brought so low by that powerfull King, that in

were brought fo low by that powerfull King, that in the end he perished for very want of foode.

(1) Their Towns are not many, neither shofe that they haue, of any starely buildings, where of Bada, Dadgelle, and Hartes are the nattees. By Badin the North-cast of this County, in the Welfu Linitegid, in Fanjsh Pimbe, mans, a great poole of water of Pimbe Town and the North-cast of this County, in the Welfu Linitegid, in Fanjsh Pimbe, mans, a great poole of water of Pimbe Town at least eight foore acres of ground; whose nature is, as the report of the plate, that the high-land floods though neuer to great, cannot make her to fivel bigger by their recents; but if the air be troubled with our great blasts and tempelts of windes, the in as great a rage rifect and passich the bankes, as if she would encouncer that enemy in fight. Into the South whereof the two headed Dae with a pretie sharp learner enterthe, and thorow the fame gliderth with-

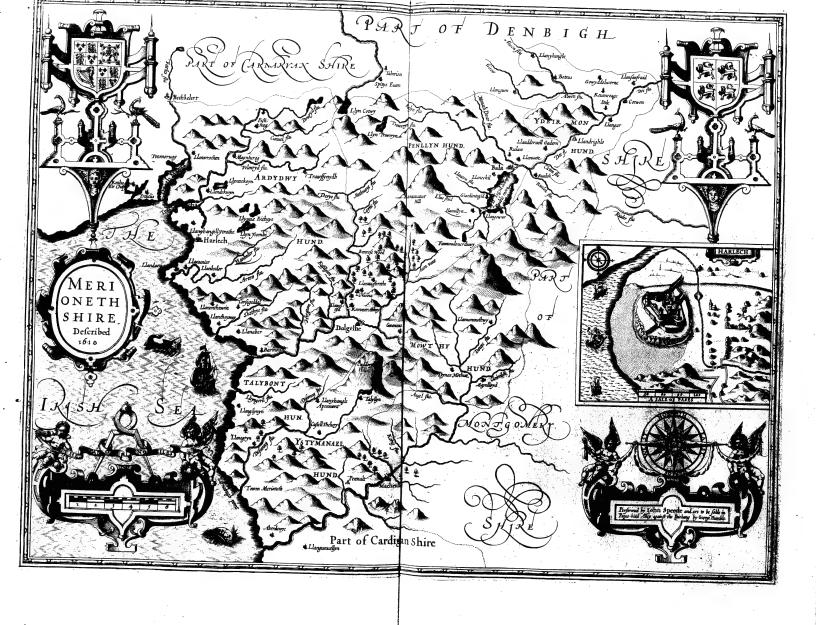
South whereor the two headed Dee with a prette harp freame entruct, and thorow the falme glideth with-out any mixture of the fame water, as the Inhabitants believe is more through conceited in their opinion for that the Salmon vidual vaken in Dee is neuer tound in that Poole, and the fifth called chainted breed in that Meser, neuer is seened in the River Dee. South thence process Deserved here Income South Constitutions of the Constitution of the Constitution of the Meser, neuer is seened in the River Dee. South thence process Deserved here Income South Constitution of the Constitu Metro, neuer is seen in the Kinet Dec. South theme-neere Dolgelhe in a lower hill, a great Rampire of from and compaffe is feene, and harb beene fome for-tification or defence in warre; which whilst we were curious to finde out some instructions thereof, by report, this onely we learned, that it was called Caddo-ryrita Dren, according to the name of her neighbour

and farre higher hill.

(6) Vpon the weft, and Sea-shore of this shire,

Harleeh a Market and Maior Towne standeth, bleake
enough and barren, but only for sowle and fish, tougin and parten, joint only to fowle and fills, house not many, neither curiously built, wherein flandeth a little chappell decaied and without vie, in which lite thouried 5*n* itslead 7 timbeliepe, an English Knight, who for the delight her tooke in that game, remooned his abode from a farre better follelled the control of the cont Herera 2100 tanderha most ftrong and beautifull Ca-/ld., mounted youn a hill, and with a double Bul-warke walled about, commanding the Sea and gal-lage of entrance of fuch as feeke to inuade the Coast. And furely a great pity it is, to feel fo fairer a worke fall to decay the Conflable whereof by Paten is sear the Maior of this Towne, necre vuto which are two great Inlets of Seas, which at low water may be paffed vp-on the Sands with Guides. Vpon whole fhore, as vpon all the Sea-coast, in this County, abundance of Ferrings are caught, for which cause they are much frequented in the feation of the yeere, by many peo-ple from diurer Countries. ole from divers Countries,

ple from disers Countries (?) This rowne being the chiefelt of the Shire, the Pole shalbe cleated only from thence, whose height for faitude shandeth in the degree 3,3,9 minutes, and for longitude in the 15,47 minutes. The whole bee-ing divided into fixe Hundreds, wherein are feated thirty leuen Parish Churches, whose names in the Ta-land the state of the former. ble following are to be seene.



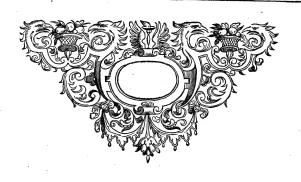
(bap.12



An Alphabeticall Table of all the Tovvnes,

Rivers, and places mentioned in Merioneth-shire.

Hundreds in Meri-	Corfegeddal, Ard.	. K	Llanymorothwy, Men.	Rnedok, Tdeir.
	Corwen, Tder.		Llanywhyllyn, Penl.	Rnedok, Tdeir.
oneth-shire.	Cunuell Flue	Kelyn Flu.	Llauern Flu.	Rulace, Ponl.
-		Kemmer Abbey, Tahb.	Llauyltyd, Ard.	Action Co., I was
	I	Keffigum Flu.	Lienegryn, Taly.	1 .
 A Rdydury. 	D	Keuenreage, Tdeir.	Lleyngoryl Flu.	S
2. Penllyn.			Llue Flu.	_
Ydeirmon.	Dec Flu.	1		Sarnabugh } Taly.
2.	Derye Flu.	L	Llyn y combe,} Ard.	
	Defunney Flu. Tal.		y compe,	Skethye Flu.
5. Mowthy.	Defunney Flu. 7 ft.		Llyn . Pent.	1
6. Yftymanael.	Dole, Tder.	Llannaghrethe, Talys.	Llyn Tigid, } Pent.	1
	DOLGELLE, Tayly.	Llanaelhairn, Tdeir	Llyn 3 Paul.) T '
	Douve Flu.	Llanbeder, Ard,	Llyn Troweryn, } Peni.	1 _
A	Druryd Flu.	Liandderfel Pen!.	Llyn 3 ded	Taly Llyn, 7 by.
	Dynas 2 36m		Teckoyn, Ard,	Thehery } Tfly.
Aberdowye, Tflym.	Dynas More,	Llandanog, Ard.	Llyn 2 dad	Caffle, 5'177.
Alwen Flu.	Mothes, -	Llandeber Flu.	Llyn Eithaye, } Ard.	Llynan
Alwen Flu.	E	Llandekwyn.	1	Tigid, Pent.
Angell Flu.	_	Llanegryn, Taly.	м -	
Artro Flu.	Llyn Eithaye, } Arda	Llandrillo, Tden.	1	Meryonidd, 37 fly.
Auon vane Flu.	Eithaye, Ara	Llanfawr Penl. Yn Melyn, Penl.	Monach doure Flu.	Tracth 2
		Yn Melyn, Pent.	Mothvaye Flu.	Tracth Mawer, } Ard.
B-	F	Llanfechraith, Taly.	Maynifoyd, Mow.	Tracth 2
	l	Llangor, Tdeir,	Maynturog, Ard.	Tracth Bichan, } Ard.
3 A L A, Peul.	Failes Flu.	Llanglynnin, Taly.	1	Trawffynydh, Ard.
Barmouth, Ard.	Fellimog, Ard.	Llangower, Penl.	N	Troweryn Flu-
Benrole } Taly.	Funnondo Lpaul	Llanfanffred, Tdeir.	1 "	
Wood, France	Funnondo Verduwy, Penl.	Llanenthowin, Ard.	Nanna, Taly.	Trowesyn, Pent
Tracth } Ard.	G	Llanthoyway, Ard.	1	
	l G	Llanwrothen, Ard.	1 _ '	1
Buttus, Tdeir.	Glanllintegid, Panl.	Y Pennant, 3 7 ftym.	P	i v
_	Gwannas, Mew.	V Pennant Y flym.	1 -	1
G		Lianyhangeli, Tdeir.	Penal, Tfty.	Velentydd Flui
Cayne Flu.	Gwyddelwern, Ydeir.	Llanuair, Tdeir.	1	1
Lleton Flu.	Ĥ	Llanunier,	R	1
lowedok Flu. More.	"	Lianullyn, Penl.	1	Y
Livn	HARLECH, Ard.	Lianyhangelly trathe, Ard,	l	1
Llyn Cotwry, Penl.	Hirgum Flu.	Llanykill, Penl.	Rarannare } Panl.	Ycombe, And.
,,		Limiyam, rent.	Hill, 3.4	Ycombe, Szine,



Enbigh-shire, called in Welsh, Sire Denbigh, retiring more from the Sea within the Countrey, on this fide of the river Conarey shooteth Eastward in one place as farre as to the River Dee : on the North, first the Sca (for a

finall space) and then
Flint-shire encompasseth it : on the West, Caernaruon

Finst-fine rencompatient it: on the Welt, Carmanus and Maximath-fine 2, on the East, Codiniva and Strong-fine; and on the South, Manutyamery fine;

(2) The formet thereof is long, growing wider fill towards the North-welf, and narrower towards, the East. It is in length from East to Welt, one and thirty miles, and in bredch from North to South, fectors are also in the whole ferrini and cryonical strongers and in the Welt of the South file. uenteene miles : in the whole circuit and circumference, one hundred and foureteene miles.

rence, one hundred and fourereene miles.

(3) Theair is very wholefome and pleafant, yet bleake enough, a sexpoled to the windes on all fides, and the high hilles, wherewith it is in many places enuironed, long retaining the congealed finow. The toppes whereof, in the Summer time are the harvefteness Almanacks, by the riling of certaine vapours thereon in the mornings, and foreflew a faire day lenfisine.

ending.

(4) The foile is but barren towards the Weft part; yet the middle, where it lieth flat in a valley, is most fertile. The East-fide, when it is once past the valley, findeth Nature to be a very sparing inguard of her fanours: but next vnto De it feeleth a more liberall extens of her bleships. The Weft part is but here and there inhabited, and mountesth vp more then the other with bare and hungry hilles; yet the leanneast of the foile (where the hills settle any thing Aartish) hath beene now a wood while beeque to bee leanneite of the foile (where the hils fertie any thing flattish) hath been now agood while begun or bee, ourcrome by the diligent paines and carefull indufrie of the husbandmen ; for they paring away the vpper coat of the earth into certaine Turtes, with a broad kinde of pade, pile them yo artificially on heaps, and fire them, lo as being turned into after. and throwneypon the ground so pared, they fructify the hungrie barrennesse and sterilizie of soile, and make the Fields bring forth a kinde of Rie or Amellcorne, in such plenty as is hardly to be beleeued,

(5) The ancient Inhabitants of this Countrey were the Ordonices, who bee also named Ordenices, or Ordonices: a puissant and couragious people, by reason they kept wholly in a mountainous place, and tooke heart euen of the foile it felfe: for they continued longest free from the yoke both of Roman, and also of English dominion. They were not subdued by the Romans, before the daies of the Emperour Domitian (for mans, before the dates of the Emperon Dominant then Islius Agricols conquered almost the whole Na-tion) nor brought under the command of the English before the raigne of King Edward the First; but lived a long time in a lawlesse kinde of libertie, as bearing themselues bold vpon their owne magnanimitie, and

themletues bold vpon their owne magnanimitie, and the ftrength of the Country.

(6) The Mountaines of this Country yeeld fufficiencie of Neat, Sheepe, and Goats. The Vallies in most places are very plentious of corne, efficiallie Eathward on this fide, betwits the runers of enter and Day have the more sufficient in both of the sufficient of the suffici Dee south the more westerly part is healthy, and alto-gether barren. The heart of the Shire shewes it selfe beneath the hilles, in a beautifull and pleasant Vale, reaching seuenteene miles in length from South to North, and fine miles, or thereabouts in bredth, and lieth open onely toward the Sea. It is enuironed on cuery fide with high hilles, amongst which, the highest is Moillenly, on the top whereof is a warlike Fense with Trench and Rampier, and a little Fountaine of cleere water. From these hilles, the River Clayd re-

forts vnto this Vale, and from the very spring-head (increased with beckes and brookes) doth pare it in twaine, running thorow the midft of it; whereof in ancient time it was named Strat Cluyd: for Marianus maketh mention of a King of the Strat Clayd of the Welfb. And at this day it is commonly called Diffryn

Cluyd, that is, The Vale of Cluyd.

This thing is worthy observation, as a matter memorable, both for admiration and antiquitie, that in the parish of Llan-sanan within this Country, there is a place compaffe cut out of the maine rocke by mans hand, in the fide of a fronie hill, wherin there be foure and twenty feats to fit in, fome leffe, fome bigger, where children and young men, comming to feeke their cattle, vie to fit, and to have their sports. And at

this day they commonly call it Arthurs round Table.

(7) Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne, Obtaining Denbigh by the grant of King Edward the First, after the connection and beheading of David brother of Liewellin for high Treason, was the first that fortified it with a wall about, not large in circuit, but very strong, and on the fouth-fide with a faire Castle, strengthned

with many high Towers. But he gaue it ouer, and left the worke vnfinished, conceiuing griefe (as a forrowfull father) that his onely sonne came to vntimely death, and was drowned in the Well thereof. The death, and was drowned in the Well thereof. The fame of this Towne fpreads it elife faire for repute, as being reckoned the most beautifull place in all North-Wades and it is of no lefte report, for the Caltle adunct vinto it is impregnable for tortification. And this fittings accident happing there in the yeres 1775. deferred so not be omitted, being left as a continuall remembrance of Gods mercifull proudence and preferration are the time, the misses of the control fernation at that time: that where by reason of great earth-quakes, many people were put into great feare, and had much harme done vnto them both within and without their houles, in the Cities of Torke, Worand the whole that notes, in the these of tore, woresfer, Gloteffer, Briftow, Hereford, and in other Countries adiacent, yet in the Shire-hall of Dembigs the bell
was caused to toll twice, by the shaking of the earth,
and no hart or hindrance at all either done or recei-

ned. The gouernmen of this Towne is managed by two Aldermen, and two Bailiffes, who are yeerely ele-cted out of twenty fine Burgefles, that are their Afsistants. It hath one Recorder, one Town-Clerke, and Hans, trnatione Recover, one town-cerecinal two Sergeants at Mac: and by observation of the Mathematicks, the Pole is clevated in the degree of Latitude 53, and 49, scruples, and from the first West

Latitude 51, and 49, Eruples, and from the first West point in Longitude 16, and 45.

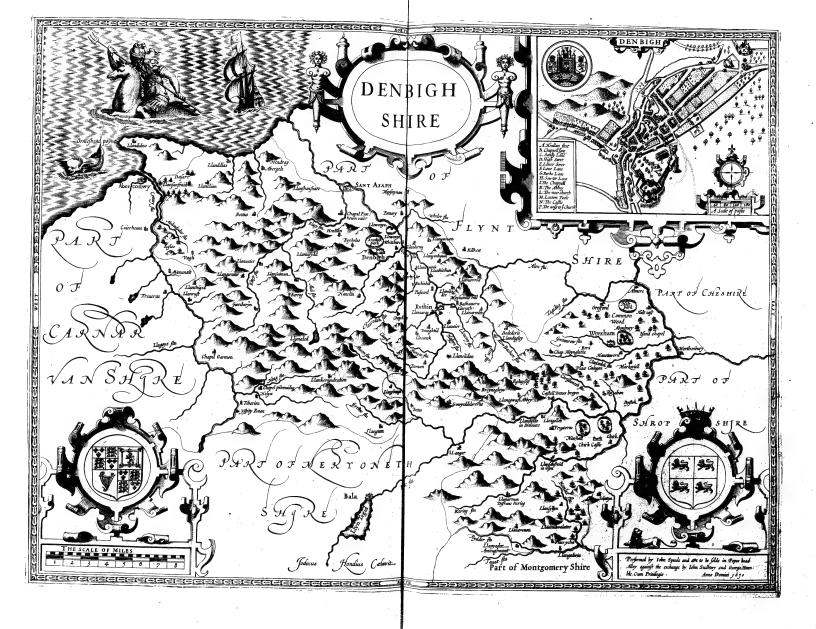
(8) This County, with them of Flint and Carner-som-fisters, are not dissided by pricks into their feuerall Hundreds in their Cards, according to the reft of this worke, the want of their particulars in the Parlament Parlament and Carners in which the the node of the form Rowles fo caufing it, which for the good of these threeShires, I earnefly sought to have supplied from the Nomina villarum, in their Sheriffes bookes, and had promise of them that might easily have procured the same. But whether a searclesse icalousie possessed the Bane. But whether a faratelfic isalousite poffeffed their fipritise, left briches of their Shires, by reucaling finch particulars, should be further fought into, I can off any set this I have observed in all my Surue, that where least is to be had, the greatest feares are pofferfed. Take theffe Shires therefore to bee done as I could, and not as I would, that with both the wealth the shires therefore to be the wealth of the shires therefore to be the said to could, and not as I would, that with both the wealth the shires therefore to be the said to could, and not as I would, that with both the wealth the shires the shires the said to the shires the of them all, and their esteeme to bee of better regard

by those that may doe them good.

(9) This Shire then is divided into twelve Hundreds, for the readier ordering of businesses necessary to the State of the Country, wherein are placed three Market Townes, fit for buying and felling, and other negotiations. It hath fine Caffles to defend her felfe, Caffles. and to offend her enemies, and fiftie seuen Parishes for Gods dinine service and worship, as this Table more particularly expresseth.

Book.2.

The foile,



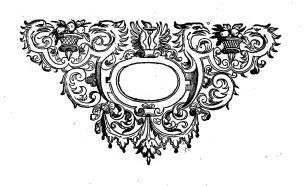
12.0

(bap.13.

An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes,

Rivers, and places mentioned in Denbigh-shire.

				D	
HVNDREDS in Denbigh-fpire. 1. Bromfeild. 2. Yale. 3. Chirkland. 4. Iffaller. 5. Vchaller. 6. Iftulas. 7. Vochdulas. 8. Kymerche. 9. Ruthin. 10. Llannerche. 11. Collion. 12. Dogvylyn. Abenbury. Aberspele. Aled flu. Alen Bu. Alen flu. Alen Bu. Almerce.	Bachinbid. Barroge, Barhauern. Bers. Bers. Bertus. Bertus. Bertus. Bertus. Bythok. C. Place 2 Cadogan. Chirk Callle. Chriftioneth flu. Clawedok flu. Cloryd flu. Cloryd flu. Cloryd flu. Clayd flu. Cl	Eglov/eg. Eglov/eg. Elwy fla. Foxholes. Chapell Funhows vaier. Chapell Garmon Gresford Gweneron HHauotawern Hendray Heflyon flu. Heullan Holt aftle. Holt I [K] Kenlet flu. Kenlet flu.	Chapell Ky, L Linatarmon, Linatarmon, Diffine Keriog S Unnbeder, Linacadvalater, Liancidia, Liancidia, Liancidia, Liancidia, Liancidian, Lianganhaual, Liangene, Liangum, Lian	Llanfanfraid, Llanfaiman, Llanfanhare, Llandhanhare, Llandhyn, Llandhyn, Llandhyn, Llandhyn, Llanuaer, Llanuaer, Llanufyd, Llanuaer, Llanufyd, Llanuaer, Llanuer, Llanuer, Llanuer, Llanuer, Lleuer, Lleuer, Lleuer, Llynaled, Mayfunyan, Meiendydarfiu, Moylunile hill, Chapell Choppell	Neag flu. Newhall. P. Chapel P. Chap
Alwen flu.	Derwen.	Keriog flu.	in Glvn.	Manclin	1-4-5.



int-fbne, firetching out in length, broad at one end and narrow at another, is not much valike in fashion to a

Bock.2.

The limits of it.

Caffics,

Hawarden Caftle

Cales hill.

wedge, a peece of which is cut off by the meeting of Cheftire and Denbigh-fbire, South east in distance some foure miles. It borders Eastward with part of Cheshire,

from whence it is garded in length with the River Deevnto the North, which parteth Worrall and Flint hire, till you come to a little I land called Hell-bree: Northward it is bounded with the Virginian Sea : on the Welf a little River called Clard parteth her and Denbreb-shire asunder: and on the South altogether by Sbroplore. (2) This Country is nothing mountainous as other parts

The circumfeof Wales are, but rifing gently all along the River of Dee, makes a faire thew and prospect of her selfe to every ele that beholds her, as well ypon the River, being in most places thereabouts foure or fine miles broad, as vpon the other fide thereof, being a part of Chefbire.

(3) The Aire is healthfull and temperate, without any

foggle clouds or fenny vapors, fauing that sometimes there ariseth from the Sea and the River Des, certaine thicke and fmoky-feeming mifts, which neuerthelesse are not found hurtfull to the Inhabitants, who in this part line long and

healthfully.

(4) The Clime is formwhat colder there then in Chefting, by reafon of the Sea & the River that engitted the better part of her 3 by which, the Northerne winder being long carried The climate vpon the waters, blow the more cold; and that fide of the Country vpward, that lieth shoaring vnto the top, having neither shelter nor defence, receiveth them in their full power, and is naturally a Bulwarke from their violence vnto her bordering neighbours, that maketh the fnow to lie much longer there then on the other fide of the River, (5) The Soile bringeth forth plenty both of Corne and

graffe, as also great store of Cattell, but they be little. To supply which defect, they have more by much in their num bers then in other places where they be bigger. Great flore of fish they take in the River of Dee, but little from the Sea. by reason they have no Hauens or Creekes for boates. No great store of woods either there or in any other part of great flore of woods either there or in any other part of Media are found, it hasting been a generall plague vinto all the Country user fince the headlitong rebellions of their Princes and great men againflich Kingo of Degloshi, that fin time \text{ tooke away the principall helps of their Innousif-ons, by cutting downe their woods, whereoff in this Shire there hash hereofore been great plentie. Froit are fource, but milke, butter, and cheef pointies, as fall force of honie, of the which they make a pleafant wine, in colour like (in tafte not much valike) varo Muskadine, which they call Matheglin. Yea, and in the daies of Giraldus Cambrenfis, neer the placenow called Holy-well, was a rich Mine of Siluer, in feeking after which, men pierced and pried into the very

owels of the earth. (6) The ancient Inhabitants of this Country were the Ordonices, a flurdy people against the Romans, but now most kinde and gentle towards the English, and indeede make much of all frangers, except they bee croffed, and then they are the contrarie.

tney are the contrains.
(7) Places of defenfe are the Castles of Flint, Hawarden, vulgarly Harden, Treer, Rudland, Mold, Towley, and Hope: of which, Flints and Harden are the two principall. The Cattle of Flint, famous for the benefit is received from two Kings, and for the refuge and releefe it gaue vnto the third. It was founded by Hemr the Second-finished by Edward the First, and long after gaue harbour and entertainment to that noble, but vnfortunate Prince, Richardthe Second, comming out of Ireland, being within her walles a free and ab folute King, but no fooner without, but taken prifoner by

louter King, but no looner without, but then prinner by Hemp Balling-bet, blue of Leasefield, but he liberies, and not long after his life. This Hunderh is the liberies, and not long after his life. This Hunderh is the graduation of Leatunder 8.3 sp. minester, in Congrued 19.7. For the Caille of Humanies, no record remains of the fift Founder, but that it was he led a long time by the Seew association of the principle of the life of the seem of the seem of the left of the life of t Fortifications, as in their Mountaines and Hilles, which in times of danger ferued as natural! Bulwarkes and Defenfes unto them against the force of enemies. As was that which standeth in a certaine strait fet about with Woods, heere vnto the River Alen, called Coles-bull, that is, Coles-bill, where the English, by reason of their disordered multitude

not ranged close in good array, lost the Field, and were de feated, when King *Henry* the Second had made as great preparation as might be to give Battle vnto the Wells, and the very Kings Standard was for faken by Henry of Effex, who was Standard-bearer to the Kings of England in right of inheritance

(8) This Country hath many shallow Rivers in it, but none of fame and note, but Dee and Cluyae. Howbeit, there is a Spring not farre from Rubland Caftle, of great report and antiquity, which istermed Font Sacer, in English, Holy Font Sacer, Well, and is also commonly called S. Wine frids Welltof whom antiquity thus reporteth : That Winefred a Christian Virgin very faire and vertuous, was doted upon by a young luftfull Prince or Lord of the Country, who not being able to rule his head-strong affections, having many times in vaine attempted and tried her chaftitie, both by rich gifts and large promiles, could not by any meanes obtaine his defirest hee therefore (in a place of advantage) (uddenly furprized and rauished her weake (yet resisting) body. After the deede done, the cruell Tyrant, to stoppe her cries and acclamations, flew her, and cut off her head: out of which place did fuddenly arife a Spring that continueth to this day, carry-ing from the Fountaine such a forcible streame & current, as the like is not found in Christendome. Ouerthe head of the Spring there is built a Chapell of free stone, with Pillars curiously wrought and ingraued, in the Chancell wherof, and glatle window, the picture of the Virgin is drawne,

ous, but blinde deuotion, and divers others refort to bathe n, holding firmely that the water is of much vertue. There bee many red stones in the bottome of this Well, and much greene mosse growing vpon the sides: the super-fittion of the people holding that those red spots in the stones were drops of the Ladies bloud, which all the water in the Spring can neuer wash away and that the moste about the wall was her haire, which though some of it be given to the wall was her haire, which mongon more or to eguen to every firanger that comes, yet it never waferb. But how-focuter this be carried for truth by the tradition of time, the models (either findless exceeding fivect.

There is also hard by Kilken (a final willage) within this Kilken.

together with the methoriall of her life and death. To this

Fountaine Pilgrims are accustomed to repaire in their zea-

County, a little Well of no great note, that at certaine times rifeth and falleth, after the manner of Sea-tides.

(9) In the South part of this Country, divided from the reft, is a place (in some written Copies of Antonine called Bonium) which we now terme Banehor, first a City, and afterwards a Monastery of famous memorie, and the first that is read of in the world: wherein (as Beda faith) were a great number of Monkes, and them divided into feuen Companies, every one having his feuerall Ruler affigned. None of these Companies had lesse then three hundred persons denoted to praier, and to get living by their owne labour, for themselves and the poore: although it hath long since been exterly ruinate, so as now there is scarce seene the face and outward flew of a dead City or Monasterie. It hathonlie the names of two Gates remaining, one standing a mile distant from another, and betwixt which the River Dee

stiftent from another, and betwitz which the Ruser Devices over unches, where are often into the Ruser and femoral control of Roman Coine, and other tokens of antiquite. But coine and femoral coine, and other tokens of antiquite. But coine and the Ruser and Ruser an to husbandrie, and to worke within the Monasterie, the reft to praier and meditations. When he returned into Sest- His Montflerie reft to praier and meditations. When he returned into San- reladable ordated Affah, a godly and prejigh man, to be Gouernour ouer this Monalteric, of whom it tooke the name, and scaled Sane Afabra.

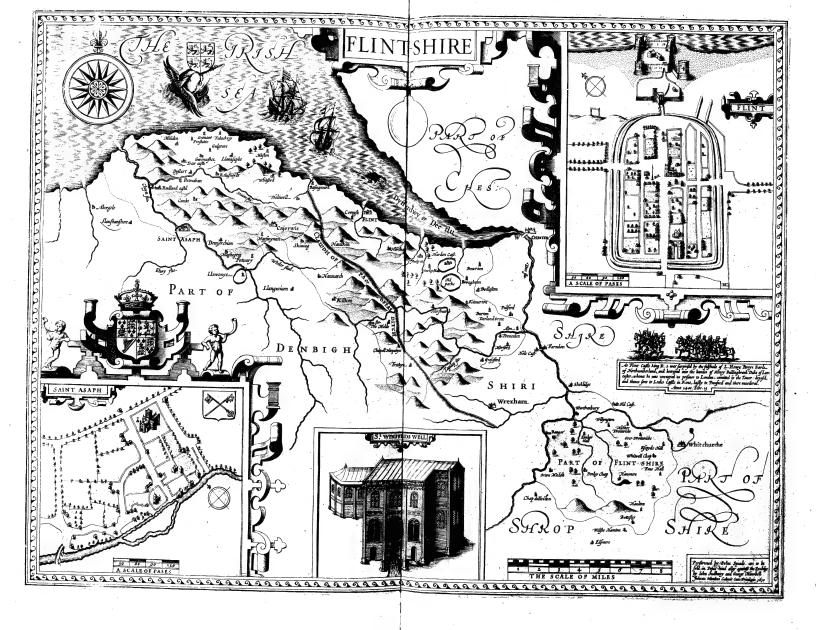
Another Monalteric of great account was at Rafogranter in this Courts, a never wrot which thougame that admirable Ditch drawne thencewrote the mouth of Scuerne by King

Offs, the tract whetcof I have expressed thorow this Shire, and will further speake thereof in the following Hi-

This Shire is divided into five Hundreds, fortified with feuen Caltles, hath onely one Market Towne, and twenty eight Parishes, in which there is continual celebra-

A Spring sriding A Chapell built

The Grange o





Rivers, and places mentioned in Flint-shire.

HVNDREDS	Broughton,). F	Molde.	I Rudland caftle.
in Flintshire.	Bruerton.	Fens hall.	M ofton,	S
	Burton.	Flint.	N	Seuion flu.
1 A Quild.	C	G	Nannarch.	Skiulog,
1 Mould. 2 Mailers.	CAIER WIS.	Gronant,	Chapell >	T
3 Rudland.	Cluyn flu.	Gulgraue,	Nerquoyes. \$	Tagidog flu,
A Presitattyn.	Combe.	Gwenusker.	Northop.	Talarkrey,
5 Colefbill.	Cornish.	H	Ò	Treer caftle.
,	D	Hanmere.	Clawdh >	Trethyn.
	Darland Greene.	Harden Caftle.	Offa,or,	Treucalen.
. A	Demyrchion.	Haulton.	Offas ditch.	w
Alen.	Nether 2	Holiwell.	Old parke.	Wheler flu.
Alen flu:	Droitwiche.	Horsheath.	Orton madok.	Whitford.
S.Afaph.	Ouer Z	K	P	Whitwell 21
Llan Z	Droitwiche.	Kilken.	Penley chapell.	Chapell.
Asaphe. S	Dyffyrdwy,or Z	Kinnerton.	Potruthan,	Willington.
_ В	Dec flu. S,	M	Potuary.	Worthenbury.
Bangor,	Dyffart.	Maghegreg.	Prestatin.	Y
Bafingwark,	E	Meliden.	R	Yowley Caftle.
Bottefley.	Escoyte hall.	Merford.	Relufnoyde.	Yowley hall.





CAERNARVON-SHIRE.

CHAPTER XIV.

Shire. The Welth tu Manto V. or F. So Caer Merd-hin, Caer Frydb i Luidi Brita of Brit

The Aire,

The People.

Pearles

Chap. 14.



Aernaruonfbire, in Welfb Sir Caer-ar-vo, lo called because tisiust oueragainst Anglesey which these Britaines call Mon) & in composition was termed also Snowden-Forrest before Wales was laid into Shires; the Northfide wherof & the west butteth ypon the Irish sea, the south-side is enclosed with Merioneth, and

the East with Denbighshires from which it is seucred by the riuer Commy.

(2) The forme thereof is much like a wedge, long and

The measure:

arrow toward the South, and growing full wider towards the north fo that from Penenkelspains Southward, to Orms-bead poins Northward, are 40. Miles from the Riuer Commy Eallward to the Riuer Lieusy Weltward Miles, 20, and the whole circumference 110. Miles.

(3) The Aire is sharpe and piercing, by reason that the Country hath not naturall prouision to ensconce her selfe against the extremity of winds and wether; but especially as may be thought, through the continuance of the fnow on the hils, which also exclude the Sunnes aspect and warmth. (4) The Soile cannot be much commended for the fer-

tility, except those parts of the Seacoasts, which lie on the West towards Ireland; but for the hart of this Shire, it is al-Well towards Ireland; Just for the hart of this Shira, Jiri alogether mountainous, airl Nature that a purpole few,
practing up these cazegy hils of thicket ogether, Hrongly to compact the iopurs of this out linds, and to frame the Inland partnered for a in place of refuge to the Britaleus, as against those immo or obsecutive, which a ferward did fall upon therms on a farmy through neuers of strongly, so searce
and the properties of the properties, can find
pulling among the grid result for light appointer, can find
pulling among the company the company to the company
and the company that the company that the company
are and poole in the rand where company the company
are ready of highest to receil any integer of forming a figuare ready of highest to receil any integer of forming a figuas ready obstacles to repell any Inroades of forraine affair lants. These mountaines may not unfitty be termed the Bris tish Alpes, as being the most vast of all Brotains, and for their with Alex, as being the most vait of all Brasissa, and for their the Repers and exigingte no twrill its on the of the May, all of them towning up into the Aire, and round encompating one farre higher them all the refuger. Could study and the May are one partly. though otherwife for their height, they are open and lia-ble both to the Sun to dissolue them, and the winds to ouer-

(5) The ancient inhabitants of this Country were the (3) The ancient inhabitants of this Country were the Orasistary of home we have in fellicinely fooken in the deferition of the former prosincespecifier need I infift ei-ther you the pleasures or profits that this Country edu-date, by reason of the great a finitely thath both of Climate and Commodities with Deshigh Airs and Plant-Price before mentioned: 3 But this beyond the other in Goneplacet benedesceration Schafflers, which being conceited by an heauenly deaw, bring forth Pearles, in ancient times more recknowled of the now they are. reckoned, of then now they are,

reckioned, of then now they are,

(6) Touching places of Note, that City is very ancient
which the Emperour Antonius calleth Segantium, taking
name of a river running by, which at this day is called Seions: some reliques of the walls whereof doe yet appeare, neere vnto a little Church confectated to the honour of Saint Publicius. This City Ninnius calleth Caer Cuffenith, Same revisions. I the City communication are capeano, which some interpretethe City of Confluents. Indeed Mathem Verfaminster faith (how true I know not) that Anno 1283, here was sound the body of Confluentias (Father to great Confluentine) which King Edward the first caused to be supported with the Church of the new City, which he raifed out of the ruines of the old, & is now called Caernaruon, which giveth name to this whole Shire. The Towne it selfe yeeeldeth a most excellent prosped towards

the Sea, and is encompated (in a manner) round with the walls of the Castle: so as wee may say, it is a City with

in a Castle, which taketh up the whole West-fide of it: carrained and great pity it is, that so samous a worke should not bee in danger of perpetuous, or ener become the ruine of time, which is Sea. much feared, for the mercileffe underminings of the Sea, that with her daily and forcible irruptions neuer ceafeth to wash away the foundations of the key. The people of this with away the roundations of the key. Intepeople of this Towncare well approved for courtefie, and alfo Civill gouernment, which is administred by the Constable of the Caffic (who is euer Maior by Patent) having the affiftance of the Governtile (who is sucr Maior by Patent) haung the still ance of one Alderma, two Bayliffer, two Sergeants at Mace, and one Townes-Clerks. The Townessen do to a little glorie that King Edward the second was borne there, in a Tower of the Cattle called Eagle-Tower, and furnamed of Caer Bar-non, he being the first Prince of Wales of the English line. The fite of this Towne according to Mathematical observation is in the degree of Longitude 25, and 50. feruples from the first West-point, and the Pole elevated in Latitude 53.

and 50.

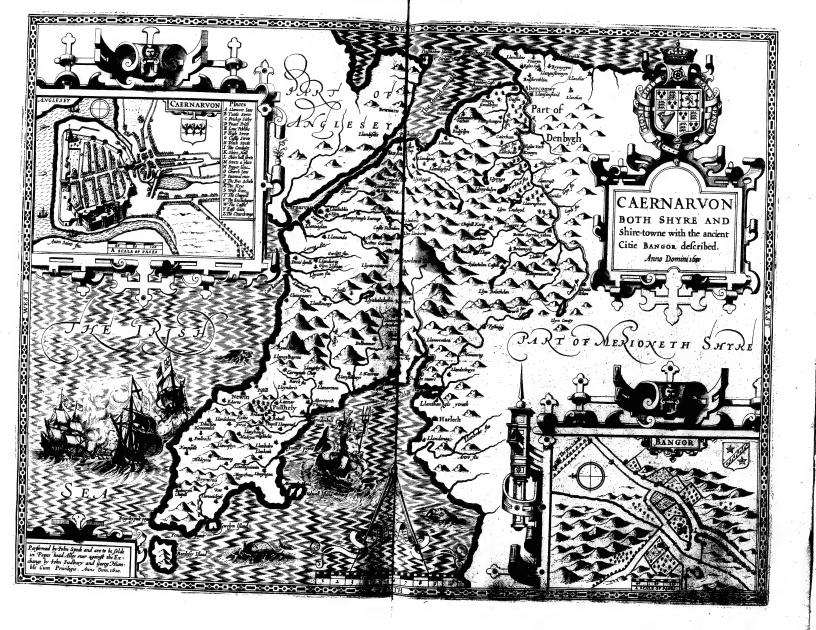
Bangor the Bishops See, though it bee now but a small Towne, yet was it in times palf to large, that for the greatness thereof it was called Banchor Vanr, that is, Great Banchor; which Hugh Earle of Cheffer fortified with a Caftle. But it Banchor, that is, Great Banchor, which Hugh Earle of Cheffer fortified with a Caftle. But it Banchor, hath bin long fince veterly ruinated and laid leuell with the hath bin long unce veterly runated and laid tetted with the ground, infomment, as there is not any footing to be found or other mossmenses left there of sithough they have bin fought with all diligent inquity. This Bilinops for hath within the diocelleninest five passifice Bilinops for hath within the diocelleninest five passifice Bilinop thereof, was conferrated winto Dasis! [ometime Bilinop thereof,

was confectated with Death Constitute Bulletin Minds and with was defacted and feet on fire by that notorious Rep till Corre Was defacted and feet on fire by that notorious Rep till Corre Claudowrsby, who had a purpole allo to definey all the Call the Call that the Call that the Call that had though the fame Church was fince repaired about the fame to the fire of the Call that the Carre correct the refermblance of her former digality.

The River Conserved which limited that is faire on the Eafl-field in Prelamy by corruption or ignorates of Transfers and the Carrest and the Call that the Call that the Call that the Carrest and the Call that the Carrest and the Call that the Call Edward the first built a riser Town as the River mouth ac-med thereroon of the Consey (that the River mouth of Consey), which beeing formerly fortified by Edge 4° Collyge, which beeing formerly fortified by Edge 4° Collyge, Calleby the Rivers fleet, and from the College of a Citic fleety the Rivers fleet, and the College of a Citic inhabitant. Neither must liber to roget News, though side almost 12 most gift were snow populous and surface, though the College of the College of the College of the College Amos 12 May 10 most for the the College of the College Amos 12 May 10 most for the the College of the College with triumphant colchity, after they had subdened the Re-bellious Ringlesders of Whales.

belliou Ringleadera (Walea.
7. Other unserter of momerable Note this Country affordets not much, volletile perhaps this, Thus tissif our against the Riter Comery where tissifient into the set, there formetime flood an ancient Cry hamed Digaway, which many yeers ago was confined by lightning, & lein made viterly defoiler, as many other monuments have been of macient and worthy memory. At likewife that in the Pool Lin-Paw there is a kind of fift called there I made having 1 was belief to the country in the Pool Lin-Paw there is a kind of fift called there I made having 1 was belief to make real file face. For tourshing the firm of List Peus there is a kind of 6th called there? remote having are belly no where elle faces. Portuching their evo other mix-les famoufed by Gwaldaw and Greadjus that or thole his high his there are see Pools called the Mener, the one of which produces free faces for fish, but sill having only once e.g. kin the other three his moueble Lies has which produces the control of the peut of the

of my Acedand yet I thinke the Reader had rather belease them, then to go to fee whether it belo or no. It is traded with fine market Towner fit for bargaining, buying and ellung fortified with four Callet, and hat fine ty eight Parish Churches in it, where the Inababatars con-curre and meete together for the Celebration of divise fertice.



Rivers, and memorable places mentioned in Caernaruon shire.

	В	Coulwyd.
	BANGER. Bardiely Iland. Bednell. Bedskrethlim. Bedskleter. Bettus Seyriony toon, Bettus Garmon. Bettus Garmon. Bettus Garmon. Betunog. Bodvean. Bodvean. Brychtpult point. Brychtpult point. Bryncrois.	Daren flu. Caffie 7 Delbadern. 9 Dinas Orveg Dinas Dynile Llyn. Dolathelan. Dolathelan. Dolbemer. Dowye Gon
i	Brynyryn.	Earch flu.

ABERCONWY.

Apennant.

Cajer I erienrode. CARNARVAN. Carngugh Chappell. Carrog flu. Carodinbill-rocke.

/ Clenoguaure. Clenunay. Conwyflu. Llyn ? Coulwyd. ? Daren flu.

Saint Katherins, Dinas Orveg. Dinas Dynlle. Kerig Chappell Keneamulch. Dolathelan Caftle, Kreky the Castle Kydeo. Dowye Gonulchy.

Llanaber. Earch flu. Llanarmon. Edarne. Llanbeblin. Eglos-roffe. Llanbedro. Saint Elyn-Llanbeder. Llanberis. Llyn Funnon Llegoe. Llanberis, Llancastyn, Llandaguinnim. Gaftellflu. Llandidno.

Girch flu. Llandidwen. Guffin flu. Llandigaio. Llandrighla. Guffin. Gwely Au. Llandurog. Gwelyn Illand. Llangeby. Llangedol Chappell Gwider.

or Pentire. Llangenvill Chappell. Llanghennyn. Llangustennyn. Kenhayerne Chappell. Lianiledhyd. Llanlleueny. Langor. Llangenmachno. Llanrughwen. Llannyhangle. Enreage. Lannihangle,

Maghholet. lannunda. Lianyngan. Llanstidwy. Llanthaniolen. Llanvaier vachan Lleggy flu.

Llenony flu.

Lloinderis.

Glyn,

Llynan. Lynan flu-

Llyndothadern. Llynhaladoylen.

Llynkeggil.

Llynmumber.

Llyntreuennin.

Llynnydulyn.

M

Llynyga.

Madryn,

Mananah.

May flu. Mercroffe Island.

Mildeyrne. Monithnuchill,

Nangunadic.

NEWIN.

Ogwen Chappell.

Ormeshead points

Lanuaier Iskaer. Llanuaielrife. Llanuaglan. Llanuylhayrne. Liedder flu:

Penmen maur. Penmen bidam. Pen moruay. Peuryn. Penuenkle point. Pullill. Porlerit flu. Porthathuferye PVLLHELY. Ryuill hill. Saint flu. Sinadon Caffle.

Penlleache.

Snewdown hilf Stidwell Island. Teduction. Thenuio. Trathe Maur.

Tycomer point.



Book. 11,

ANGLESEY.

Chapter XV. | Fol. 125



ANGLESEY.

CHAPTER X V.

The fift Name

Inhabitants.



the Romanes called Mona. by the Britaines, Mon, and Tir-Mon(that is) the land of Mon, of the ancient English Saxons Moneg: And at last, after the Englishmen had by their sharpe and seuerall affaults brought it vnder their rule, and be-

Nelesey was in the time of

came Lords thereof, it was tearmed Anglefey, as one would fay, The Englishmens Iland.

For, an Iland it is, albeit it be seucred from the continent of Britaine, but with a finall and narrow streight of the river Menai, and on all other parts beaten upon with the furging and troublous Irish fea,in which it lieth fomewhat fourre wife, not much different in length and breadth; beeing, where it reacheth out in length, from Beau-marifh eastward, to the vtmost Promontorie westward, which we cal Holy-head, twenty miles; and in breadth from Llanbaderik northward, to the point of Menai fouth-ward, seuenteene miles; the whole circuit or circumference amounting towards scuenty miles. The aire is reasonable, gratefull and healthful,

and not generally subject to diseases, excepting certaine Agues at some times, which are occasioned by the Fogs and milty exhalations, which arise from the sea called Mare Virginium, with the which this lle is encompassed.

The commodities that commend, (or rather beautifie) this Country, are in Corne and Cattle wherewith it not onely enricheth it felfe exceedingly, but sendeth out great proussion thereof to others to supply their defects, and although the ground may seeme drie and stony, or unpleasant and nothing sightly, wherein for the outward quality, it resemble the some other parts of Wales, that are not so fruitfull, yet for the inward bounties of nature, it is farre vnlike: for aboue all the coasts of Wales it is most plentifull of Wheat, insomuch as by Giraldus Cambrensis report, they are wont to say in Welfb, by way of a prouerbe, Mon Mam Cymbry, which is to fay, Mon is the mother of Waler: for , that when other Countries haruest failes round about, or their prouision is exhaust & drawn drie, this alone like a prouident, and full-brefted mother, is able to sustaine the rest. Whereunto Nature most prouidently hath added another benefite seruiceable and necessary to the former, in that the Country produceth also those kind of stones which

fome not long fince beganne to make Alom and Co-perofe, who (like vnflesht fouldiers) gaue ouer their enterprise without further hope, because at first they faw it not answere their outrhasty expectations. The ancient inhabitants of this Country were the Ordonices, mentioned before in the precedent prouinces of Denbigh-shire, Flint-shire, and Carnaruon-(bire. And this very Iland was that ancient, and fo much enobled feat of the British Drugds, who so amated the army of Romane invaders, as Tacitus reports, and as ellewhere wee have related in the fixt

are called Molares, as of all other fittest to make Mil-stones or Grind-stones. In some places also it

yeeldeth an earth of Aluminous quality, out of which

booke and seuenth Chapter of our ensuing history. This Nation was attempted first by Paulinus Sue Romainettatonius in the raigne of Nero, but brought under the Romane Empire by Iulius Apricola. When the Empire of the Komanes in Britaine began to decline and goedowneward; some our of ireland entred into this Ifle by ftealth, and neftled themfelues there, as may be gathered by certaine mounts of earth entrenched about, and yet to be seene, which they call the Irish mens Cottages; as also by a place named of the Irill men, yn Hierrey Gwidil, who did there (as is recorded) put the Britaines to flight vnder the leading of Siriem. The Norwegians also were often infestous to this Iland; but King Ethelreds Fleet, having in the yeare 1000. scowred the seas round about this life. far exceeded all both wife and Norwegian depopula-

tios, for they wasted the country in al hostile maner, After this, two Hughs both Normans did great afflict this Iland; the one being Earle of Chefter. the other of Shrewsbury; at which very time Mag-nus the Norwegian arriving there, that Hugh Earle of Shrewsbury through with an arrow, and departed after hee had ranfacked the Hand. It was afterwards grieuously intested by the Englishmen, who neuer gaue ouer from time to time to inuade it, vntil in the raigne of King Edward the first, it was wholly brought under his subjection.

The principall towns in this Isle is Beaumarish. which the faid King Edward the first built in the east. fide thereof, and for the faire lituation, though in a morish place, gaue it the name which it now beareth, whereas in times past it was called Bonouer; which he also fortified with a goodly castle.

The Major is the chiefest Magistrate of the town. who is yearely chosen, and hath the affistance and helpe of two Bayliffes, two Sergeants at Mace, and one Towne-Clearke: by whose carefull diligence the affaires of this towns are orderly managed and commanded, whose latitude is 5 4, and longitude 15,

Not farre from hence is Lhaannais, in times past a faire religious house of the Friars Minors, which although it bee now in a manner raced out of memorie, yet antiquity maketh mention that it hath beene of great regard among the Kings of England, who haue shewed themselues very bountiful Pa-trons vnto that Couent, both in respect of the fan-Eumonious life of fuch as converfed there, as also because there the bodies of very eminent persons, as the daughter of King Iohn, the sonne of a King of the Danes, as likewise of many great Lords, Knights and Squires were enterred, that were flain in the wars against the Welfb, in the time of many illustrious Kings

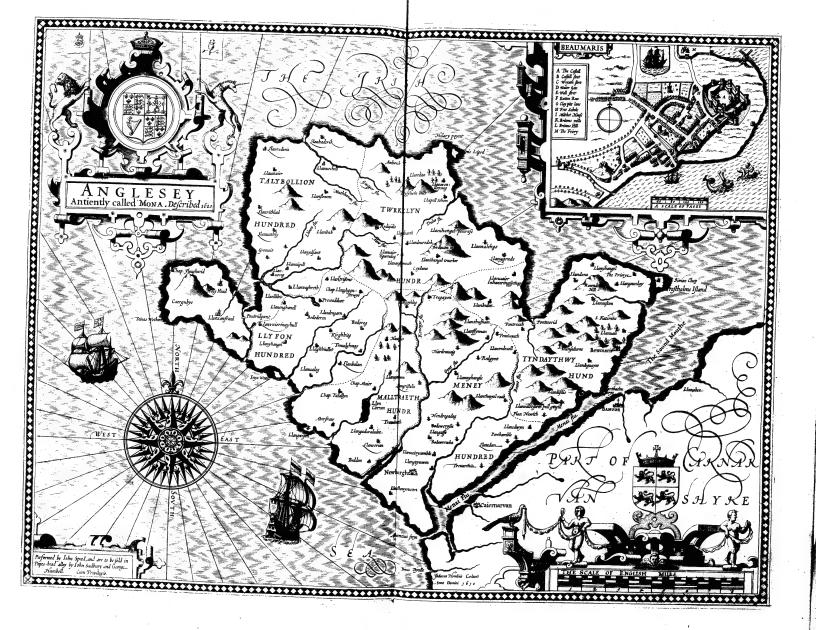
This Isle is reckoned to have had anciently many villages in it, euen to the number of three hundred threefcore and three; and the same euen at this

The putition of this Ifle for disposition of affairs that belong either to the state of the crowne, or to this shie, the condition of the Country, is into fixe Hundreds: in which are feated two market townes, and fenenty foure parish Churches for Gods divine honour and worship, as is Alphabetically gathered in the Table

Inuaded by the

Edward the firft,

The Gotterns





An Alphabeticall Table of all the Townes, Rivers, and memorable placesmentioned in Anglesey.

		7
HVN DREDS in Anglefy. 1. Talyboliou. 2. Trwkelyn. 3. Llyfon. 4. Malltrach. 5. Mency. 6. Tyndaythwy. Aberfro. Mall. Abermensy. Alow flu. Amlwoch Twrk. BEVMARIS. 7m. Boddon Mall. Bodcowe? Victa. Bodower. Victa. Sodower. Vi	Gronait Tdy, Gweger flu. Gynt flu. Hardranaie Mengy. Hendregadog Nengy. Hillary Twrk. Holy-head Taly. Inys wealt. Llyf. Inys lygod Twrk. Chapell; Katherins Tymd. Katherins Tymd. Kuennye flu. Kurghhiog Llyf. L L L L L L L L L L L L L L L L L L L	Liandegwyne Tyn. Liandri Liandri Liandri Liandri Liandri Lindon; Tynk. Liandri Liandri Liandri Liandri Liandri Liandri Liandri Liandri Liandri Tynk. Liandri
В	Chapelly	Llanfechel Taly.
ъ	inyslygod Twrk.	
REWMARIS 75m	Taban > Twrk.	
Boddon Mell	ithon.	
	v	
Bodmon 2		
hill. Turk.		
Bodower->		
vcha. Meny.	Kirahhioa z lef	
Bodowa 2	Burnog Liyje	
riffa. 5 Meney.	7.	
Bodwrog, Llyf.	Llanalleo Twrk	
Brant flu.	Llanarghymeath 71.	Llangwylen 2
Brant flu.	Llanbabo Taly.	Llangyd. } Mall.
	Llanbadrig Taly.	Langynwen, Mall.
_ C	Llanbedor Tyn.	Llanheneglos Mall.
Caergiby Talv.		Llanllawen 2
D .	Llanddniol-7	vawr yn. Smen.
Dinas wethon, Taly.	Llanddniol- vab. Meney	ros golyn,

- 1	lad 5	Lianschli-C_ ,	ferye. 377n.
-	Llanroderis Twrk.	Llanwenll- Z Turk.	Precead->
1	Llanrwydrys Taly.	Llan yddey-	duct. 5 Lyf.
1	Llanfadurne Tyn.	fant. Taly.	
1	Llanfanfraid Taly.	Lanvne- 2	Preftholme?
-	Llanthowywer Men.	henell. \$Llyf.	The Priorye Tyn.
i	Llanthufuam Tyn,	Llanyhangel Tyn.	1 11101 ye 1ym.
- 1	Llanuachraith. Taly.	Llany trylauit.Llyf.	D
١	Llanuaethly Taly.	Llechryd Llyf.	Redgynt Meney.
1		Llech-ovn 2	Redigilio Meney.
	vp wradige, Twr.	farwy. \ Llyf.	
	Lianuaict 2 aty.	Llinon flu.	Rounnall.
	Llanuaier 2	Lloydearth Twrk.	Rown table?
١	Llanuaier } Lhf.	Lluidon Meney.	
1	Llanuaier -	Llyn Corran. Mall.	Saint 3
-	Inhancring- (Tyn.		Sirian. Sina
1	fithay.	М	The found Tyn.
1	Llanuau ?	Cannella	The found Tym.
- 1	ycromwd. Meney.	Maicr. S Mall.	-
.	Lanvaiergwin >	Malltraeth flu.	Cappeli
1		Mathhanan flu.	Talallayn. SMal.
1	Llanuair yng-2	Menai flu.	Talyllin Twrk.
- [howrnyw. (****).	,	Trefdraeth Mall.
1	Llanvailog Llyf.	N ·	Tregauon Meney.
	Llanvais Tyn.	NEWBYRGH. Me.	Trenarthin Meney.
- [Llanuerion Mall.	Place ?	Trouglob
- 1	Llanuigail Taly.	Place } Tyn.	Trewalchmay Llyf.
- 1	Llanuihangell Llyf.		Tryfylwin hils Twr
1	Llanuihangle &	· р	v
1	Llanuihangle \ Twrk	Penmynid Meney.	Ycocdon Turk
1	Llanuihangle >	Pentreath Tyn.	Cappell 2
1	yskiwiog, & Men.	Pontrid pont. Taly.	Yloughroid. Taly.
-!		1 200.2 1091	Trongingidid.

Cappell ? Yloughroid. S Taly.





THE THIRD BOOKE:

CONTAINING,

A GENERAL VIEVV OF THE KINGDOME OF SCOTLAND:

THE COUNTIES DIVIDED, AND FLANDS THEREOF DESCRIBED, AS BY OTHERS HATH BIN OBSERVED.

WITH Abriefe Relation of sun-

dry memorable things therein contained.

JOHN SPEED



¶ Jmprinted at London. 1612.

CVM PRIVILEGIO.



ET

MON

DROITS



RALL DESCRIPTION OF SVNDRIE THINGS RE-MARKEABLE THEREIN.

CHAPTER I.



Cotland, the fecond Kingthe north part of the Iland, hath on the East, the German Ocean, on the North, the Orkneys & Deucalidon Sea, the West affronted

with Ireland, and the South hath the river Tweed, the Cheuist hils, and the adiacent tract, reaching to the Sulmay fands, whereby it is separated from England.

(2) This Kingdome is faire and spacious, and from theic South-borders spreadeth it self wide into the East and West, till againe it contracts it selfe narrower vnto and Weft, till againe it contrach it cleit narrower vatoo the Northerne Promontoniess frumified with all things befitting a famous Kingdome, both for ayre and foile, etcome to plenteous, that it implies the end of the contract of the cont beene performed, but that they were with the first, and last in the field. Their Nobility and Gentry are verie natin the field. INET NOBILITY and Gentry are verie fludious, of learning, and all citil knowledge, for which end they not onely frequent the three Vniuerfities of their owne Kingdome (S. Andrews, Glafe, and Edwards, Carlon and Car forraine Countries,

(3) The Counties contained in this Kingdome are many, and every where bestrewed with Cities, Townes, and Burrows, as is that of England: and, as England, I entended to describe it, had I not beene happily preuented by a learned Gentleman of that Nation, who hath moftexactly begunne, and gone through the greatest difficulties thereof; to build vpon whose foundations, I hold it injurious; and am so farre from any ambition to preuent his Noble purposes, that I heartily wish all happie furtherances thereto, with a longing defire to fee, by his industrious labours, another Scene added to the perfecting of the Theatre of Britaines Glory,

perfecting of the Thesire of Brusause Glery, (4) Yes, in the mean while, left If hould feem too detectuse in my intendments, let mee without offence (in this third, houghthort books) giue onely agene-rall view of that Kingdome, yoon observations from others; which so accomplish by mise owns fearuey (if others; thould hop to faile, and my crasic aged bodie will glue leave) irmy chiefe defire; knowing the Hand ill glue leave) irmy chiefe defire; knowing the Hand furnished with many worthy remembrances apper-taining both vito them and vs, whom God now hath fet vinder one Crown: and the rather, for that their more Southern people are from the same Original with vs the English, being both alike the Saxon branches : as alfo , that the Pills, anciently inhabiting part of that kingdom, were the in-borne Britaines, and fuch as thither fled to auoid the Romane seruitude: whose names beganne first to be diftinguished under Dioclesian the Emperour, when they were tearmed Pill, for painting their bodies, like

they were tearmed relate, sorpainting their bodiets, like the Britaines, as faith Flasines Virgenus: which is more fitnengthened, for that the Northerne Britaines converted by Saint Columba, are called Britaine Fills.

(4) But the Highland-mon (the naturall Sees indeed) are imposed to defected from the Scythians, who with the Genes infelting Ireland, left both their fiftie there, and their maners, apparant in the Wild-Iriff even to this day: And from Seythe (asis thought) the name of Seot grew; for so the Netherlanders by Sentre express in differently the Seythian, or Seot: So Gildar called the Irifh-Britains, Scythians: fo King Elfred in translating the history of Orofius, turneth Scotos into Scyttan: and fo faith Walfingham, from one and the same originall, Scythe, Scytici, Scoti, Scotici, take their names, as from

Geta Getici, Gothi Gothici haue done, (6) Their Manners were alike, fay Diodorus Siculus and Strabo, and their garments not much different, as and Strake, and their gamments not much different, as a by Sidanias Applicars may be gathered, where he fee-meth rather to deferibe the modern Wild-Frijk, then the antike Girst. Novivithfinating this Nations Original by fome hath bin deriued from Seata, the fuppo feed Daughter or the Egyptism King Pharsak than countrible Advigter, afterwards married vanto Ginbelas, the fonns of Ceeropt. (Counder of Absent, Jwho this teating in Spasse, palled thence time Irritand, and laftly into Seating in Appears, palled thence time Irritand, and tally time Seating in Appears, palled thence time Irritand, and tally time Seating in Appears, palled the Absent Appears of the Appear of

the Promontory bearing their name Scythicum) Siling Italicus a Spaniard borne doth shew, who bringeth the who wer-firth known; by the name of Seeux, as is gather cod out of Employ, (alleged by S. terme) in the raigne of Ameliums the Emperor. Gridat callet them the Irigh-Spoilers: Gradual, A Sessift Natural adjoined from Iri-land, which in regard of them by Egubordus, is exemed, which in regard of them by Egubordus, is exemed, which is the Ile Score. by Belacks the limbarited for the Seengrad by other tillifornium, Seenland the Great, su their less in Britation, was called, Seenland the Great, su their less in Britation, was called, Seenland the J. fig.

Britainsywas called, Scotlandris Laffe.

(3) Thele, When the Remade Empire was farre in the wane, butfi into Britains under Remade their Captaine, who entring anniny with the Pilis, posifiefied the North part of the lland, and sifflied them againft the Britainsy, then ready to fall, when the Remanes were gone. But their affects was defined in the Britainsy and sifflied them to the ready to fall fined in the property of the property of the property of the relation of the triall and change of one dates battef, fought be evit the plan in the year of fall uniton, page, which the Pilis Pass on My loft their lines, but uniton, page, when the Pilis Pass on My loft their lines, but with the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines, but with the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines, but with the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines, but with the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines, but with the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines, but with the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines, but with the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines and the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines and their lines and the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines and their lines and their lines and the Pilis Pass of My loft their lines and their foon after eue their very Name alfo: & fortune crowning

foon sifer eat their very Name alfork fortune crowning the Seart with videory, adamach chier Kingdome wate fisch Seart with videory, adamach chier Kingdome wate fisch since and fittengelt, that the fame hash long continued without any abloiute conquell or simprific, against the affailst of whatforest cremine.

**Market of Subape Bay, touchet the degree 56 of Lativ tasks, and then ce imbo forning many Loughtes and In-leger 60. and a Weig. extended in tife with other degree 60. and so, minutes; whose Langinude is likewithish dewitted the control of the subape Bayes and Bayes and In-leger 60. and 50. minutes; whose Langinude is likewithish dewitted the Subape Bayes and B

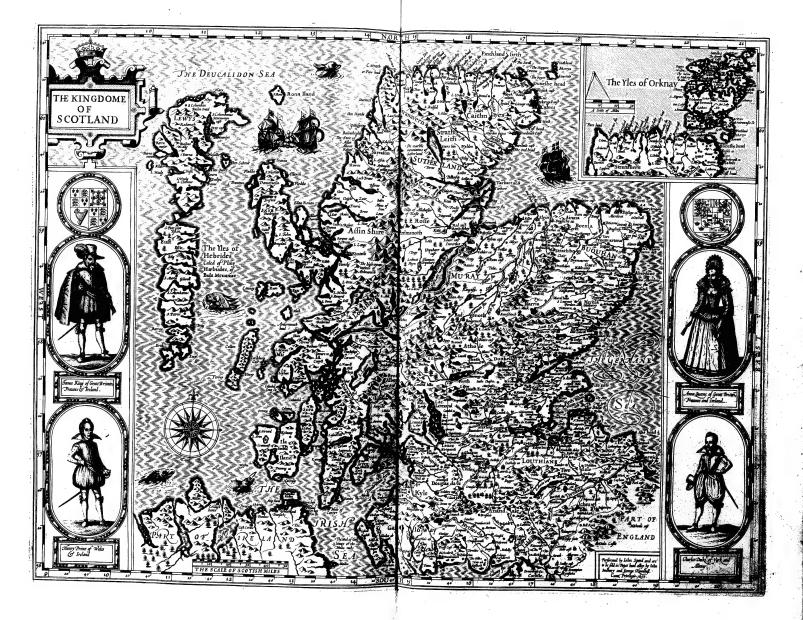
whore the nindermotitatres of the Ordate pane,
(10) The whole Kingdom's is disided into two pdrts,
by the great River Tey; the South whereof is the more
populous and more beautified in manners, ticks, and ciutilitie: the North more rude, retaining the cultomes of
the Filld frifth, the ancient Sees, in whole feuerall Territor
reschief Counties ending are contained.

	South,	North.			
Tosfidale. Merch.	Galloway	Stirling.	Loquabrea. Braidalbin.	Buquhan	
Laudien.	Kyle.	Strathern	Perth.	Roffe.	
Liddesdale. Eskedale.	Cunningha Arran.	Menteith Argile.	Athel. Anguis.	Sutherlas	
Eskedale. Annandale Niddesdale	Cluidesdale Lennox.	Cantire. Lorne.	Merni. Mar.	Strath- (nane	
() A-	J -1 -C		1 1: (1.1	. (//////	

(11) And these agains are sub-divided into Sherifdomes, Stewardships, and Bailiwicks, for the most part inheritory vnto honourable Families. The Ecclesiasticall gouernment is also subject under two Metropolitar

Cambd.Brit.in English Annals

Bede lib.z.cap.



SCOTLANDS GENERALL DESCRIPTION.

Archbishops, which are of S. Andrews, (the Primate of Scotland,) and of Glasco; whose jurisdictions are as fol-

Glasco. Dunkeld. Galloway. Aberdon. Argile. Dunblan. Orkeney.

Amongst the things worthie of note of antiquity in this Kingdom, most memorable was that fortification this Kingdom, mod memorable was that fortification advant from Jeterner vp onto the Trith of Edenberger, in a consideration of the Constitution of reterited at Limitory and Lister, and with the manifering cope Monument of an high and round compas, which, as forme think, was a Temple confectated with the Gad Terminus: others, 2 Topher ratified by Cavality, who fortified this wal with feuen Castles, as Nimins doth

(12) At this place beganne the great and darke Wood Caledonia, famous for the wild white buls that therein were bred, whose Manes were Lion-like, thicke and curled, of nature fierce and cruell, and so hatefull to mankind, that they abhorred whatfoeuer was by them handled or breathed vpon: these woods stretched farre and wide with many turnings, darke shades, and dread-full dens, and so famous in the Roman writers, that they often ysed that name for all Britaine; whose inhabitants were the laft in this Iland, that yeelded their necks to the yoke of subjection, as shall appeare in our following

(13) Ninian a Britaine is recorded to have converted the South-Pitts vnto the faith of Christ, in the raigne of Theodofius the yonger, and the Church in Galloway bearing his name doth witnes it : fo likewife in the fame age Palladius sent from Pope Calestine, became an Apostle Passaus tentron rope casejum, pecame an Apottie who the Sease, whole refugues by enflinited at Fordon in Merni, as was verily fuppofed: but that Chriffianity had been formely planted in this vertemost Province, is tellfied by Tervallian, in faying the Britaines had em-braced the faith further then the Romans had power to follow, or perfectute them, whereupon Peter Monke of

follow, or perfectute them, whereupon Perer Monke of Clus in Spain concluded their countefion to bee more ancient then the Southerne Britaines, (14)But couching things obliverable for the prefent, furely admirable is the report of the plenty of Cattle Fift, and Foule there abiding; their Near but little, yet many in number; Fift he plentifull, that men in Jone places (for delight) on horbetack hunt Salmons with Spears: & a certain foule, which fom call Soland-geefe, fpreading fo thicke in the aire, that they euen darken the Suns light; of whose flesh, feathers, and oile, the the Suns lights, of whole fleth, feathers, and oile, the inhabitants in fome parts make great vie and gaine; yea and etten of Filhes brought by them, abbundant prodution for diet, as also of the files (brought to make their netl-) plentfull prouision for fewell.

(13) With thele, as of wonders, might feeak of the natures of these two famous Loughes, Lemmadand MPsfl, the latter whereof, neuer freezeth in winters, though

neuer fo extreame, and the waters of the other most raging in the faireft and calmeft weather, wherein also flotten an Iland that remouth from place to place, as the wind forceth her spongeous and vnfastened body. In Bagabban vpon the bankes of Ratra is a well, whose In Daymons you the Bankes of Autra's a well, Whole trickling drops turn(in Piramidy-wife) into hard flone, and another neere Edenbrough that floteth with Bitsumen. In Dee and Done, befides the admired plenty of Salmons, is found a Shell-fush, called the Horse-majkell, wherein Pearles are engendred most pretions for phisicke, and some of them so orient, that they give not place to the choifest.

(16) No lesse strange then any the forementioned waters, but more lamentable is the remembrance of the waters, but more lamentable is the remembrance of the great inaudation, happing by the fuddine rifing of Tey, which bare away the walles and Towne of Berth, and with it the cradle and yong fine of King William into the fex, wherein the rold Infian with many others perifled, the thing and his Counters havely desping the danger, the King and his Counters havely desping the danger, the King and his Counters havely desping the danger, the King and his Counters havely desping the danger, and the King and the Counters have the counters are the famous, and the counters have the counters are the counters and the same of the counters are the counters and the counters are the counters are the counters and the counters are the counters ar called Saint Iohns-town.

(17) Ilands and Ilets yeelding both beauty and fubiection to this Scottish kingdome, are the Westerne, the Orks.syes, and the Shetlands, reckoned to be about three hundred in number; their inhabit ants for the most part ving the frugality of the ancient Scot,

(18) The Western, lying scattered in the Deucalidoni-an sea, were anciently ruled by a King of their owne, whose maintenance was out of their common costers, and the regall authority neuer continued in lineall fuccession, for (to preuent that) their Kings were not permitted to have wives of their owne, but might by their redemption. The refidence of those fore mentioned kings, was chiefly in *lla,Bunals*, and *losa*, now *Columb-kil*, where (25 *Donald Munro*, who trauelled through the flands reported) have three Tombes, having the feuerall inferiptions of the Kings of *Scotland*, of *Ireland*,

and of verway.

(19) Among these Westerne Hands, the Hebrider, Skie,
Mula, Ila, and Arran, are the greatest All of them plentifull of corn, woods, Salmons and Herrings, as others of Conies, Deere, Horses, and Sheepe, where in some they are wilde, and in others without any owners; but the people vnciuil, and lacking religion, they rather line rudely in state of necessity, then as Lords of these porti ons which God hath allotted them; and with a fufferable eafs, ignorant of ambition, eniory those contentinents, which fome others (though they no great furnme) do more laboriously attains winto by the preceptes of Philosophie: for, feeding themselues with competency without any excess, they returne all the outer-plus vinto their Lords, as does the inhabitants of Hirta and Rons; bur alas, Religion not knowne among them, thefe penurious vertues are rather the curfes of Cham, then the followings of Christ, who forbids vs to be too careful

(20) The Iles of Orkenay vpon the North of Scotland, lying in a most raging and temperatuous fea, are about 32 in number, whereof 13 are inhabited, and the other replenished with cattle: in these are no venemous serpents, nor other vgly vermin; the aire sharpe and helthfull, and the foile apt to beare onely oates and barlie, but not a flicke of wood : among these, Pomonia is the grea-test, accounted and called the Maine-land, affording fixe Minerals of Lead and Tinne, and in her chiefe Town mre Mineran of Leas and Times, and miner enter a town a Bilhops Secwherein are feated 12, parifi Churches, one of them very magnificent for for remore a Country. (21) Of all the Romans, Inlins Agricula first discoursed the Orkosty, yea and fubbased them, if wee will beleeue Tacism: but Pomponius Mela that wrote 50/years before him do he manifor them and Tumestil the Medica. fore him, doth mention them, and Iunenal in Hadrians time after him, tels vs the Roman had won them, and fo doth Ninius name Odha, 80:Ebiffus, Saxon command ders, who in their rouing Pinnaces walted the Orknays. der, who in their rouing Pinnaces walted the Orleany. Their lands Douadd Base the Viture of the Scientific Cowne, gaue to the king of Norway for his affithnes, and by the Norwegians were they held the space of an hundred and fuxty yeeres, wrill that Altexador'he third king of Sestanda, with fivor and normpointion got them from Magnus the fourth, king of Norway, which afterward king Hagasia constituend vin Norway, which afterward king Hagasia constituend vin Norway, which after but lastly Chrijkhau the first, king of Norway, which after but lastly Chrijkhau the first, king of Norway & Domarsk, but the his constituent of the state of th expresse, lie the Isles of Shetland, of some thought to bee Thule, and by the Commenter vpon Horace, the forts-nate Iland, where as Tzetzes fabuleth, the fouls of good men are ferried into those Elizian fields that ever grow greene, and whence Islins Cafar could hardly bee drawne, as Muretus hath written: but their fictions drawne, as Mareten ham writtent Dut their nettons intended only, that the vertous foules of the dead, paffed the vittermost bounds of earthlie abode, and attained to an ouespleasing report, & cuer flourishing happines; which whether they borrowed from the deferption of Paradife (take both for a faire garden, & the fouls happy and the state of the state o ref()) cannot define; but fure they would not have made those fields alwaies greene, if they had feene how they lie euer courted with lie and fnow, being in the 63, degree of latitude, as Protomie hash placed it, where (for the protony) is a comitted. the most part) is a continuall winter: but for proofe that this was the Thule, besides Prelomies positure, Saxo Grammaticus betwixt Normay and Scotland hath placed Grammaticus Detwikt Ivormay attu Scottam mate piaced it, and Solimus, two daies failing from the point of Caledonia: and Tacinus faith, that the Romans kenned Thule a far off, as they failed about Britain by the Oreades and laftly, Mels maketh it to face Berge a City in Norway.



THE OVRTHB O O K E:

Containing, THE KINGDOME OF IRELAND.

WITH

AN EXACT CHOROGRAPHICAL DIMENSION OF THE PROVINCES THEREIN CON. TAINED, AND THOSE AGAINE DIVL DED INTO THEIR SEVERAL

COVNTIES.

TOGETHER. VVith a compendious description of that NATION, and FLANDS
Commodities

By

JOHN SPEED.



¶ Jmprinted at London by William Hall. 1612.

Cum Privilegio.

The particular Counties in the foure SEVERAL PROVINCES OF IRELAND, AS NOW THEY ARE DIVIDED, AND

Limmerick.

MOVNSTER, Waterford.
Defmend.
Flay Croffe, in Tipperary. } [East Meath.

> Kilkenny Caterlough. LEINSTER,

Queenes Countic. Kings Countie. Kildare. Welhford. Dubline. [[lare, or, ?] Townund.]

Gallaway. CONNAGHT, M.io. Siego. Letrin. Rescoman. Dunghall, or, ? Tyr-connell.

West Meath.

Tyrone-opper.
Tyrone-nether. Farmanagh. Cauon. Monaghan. Colran.

Kk 2

VLSTER,

Antrim_. Doun_.

Armagh. Lough.



IRELAND, AS IT VVAS, AND IS INHABITED the Site and Commodities of the Iland described and declared.

How Treland hath beene na med in times paft,

The dinere

The aire.



He Traditions of time have deliuered vnto vs diuers names . whereby this famous Island is recorded to have beene called, yet none of more faire proba yet none of more faire proba-bilitie, then that of Orpheus, A-riffente, and Claudian, by whom it is named I E R N A: by Inse-nal, and Mela called I V V E R-

N A: by Diodorus Siculus, I RIS: by Martin of Heracle IOYEPNIA: by Euftaching, OYERNIA, and BER-NIA: by the native Inhabitants, ERYN: by the Brittaine YVERDON: the Welfb-Bards in their Ballads, TIRVO LAS TOTIDANAN, and BANNO. & by the English, IRELAND: but from wheee these diversities were derived arife many opinions: Doubtles it is, that Hibernia, Inuerna, & Ouernia, came from Ierna, spoken of by Orphem, & Aristotle, & the same Ierna, as also Iris, Inerdbon, and Ireland, from Erin; the terme that the Inhabitants now vie. From this Erintherfore(a word proper to the Nation)the originall is most likely to bee

(2) Some deriue Hibernia, from Hiberno tempore, that is from (2) Some define riverme, from Airerra tempore, that it, non-the winer featon flower from Hiberru 2 Spaniard; fome from a a Dukenamed Iranlph; fome 2 gain from the ancient river Ibe-rus, & fome from Hire, an Irah word, which fignifieth the well or a western coast, whence Eris may also seem to fetch the de-rivation: for it lieth furthest Westward of any Region in all Fusions for it leich furthet! Wellward of any Region in all Europe; as allof or these the inter tunning in the most remote well-part of this lland, is in Paslome called Lerustille, as the furthet wellerne Promotory in Spass, from whence our Irih men came, is by Strabe called Lerus, and the internext vanie, by Media Lerus; yea and Spasses; left for the lowlefterne fituation is called Helperus; the useft Cale of Irike! Helperius; and in Germany, Wifferds and Weißbonless from their position have their names. Published cannot have atthe followed bits owns fewer than 18. readings in Paris rather followed his owne fancy, then the judgement of or there's fetcheth the original of Ireland from the Hebrewessas if Irin flould be as much as Invin, that is the Inver land; which opinion I hold no better, then those that would have it from the Winter-like flormes, although vpon every wind the Aire is cold there.

(3) Festus Austrus in that little booke which he intituled Ora Maritime, calleth Ireland, Sacram Insulam, that is the holy Jland : to which opinion the people are foone drawne, by reason of the many Saints that the Iland is said to produce, and the bleffed foile that affords no venemous Creatures to retaine life. It is thought that Plut arch meant Ireland by his No venemous Oggeia, for her great antiquity, and of later times by Ifedore and Bede, it was called Scorna, of those Scotsthat inhabited it. and that thence the name of Scotland together with the Scots themselues came into Britaine.

(4) For largenetic and circuit, intimes paft this Iland chal-lenged the third place in ranke of all the Iles of the then knowne World: for thus have Geographers left vs, that the tretand the third Indian Taproban for greatnes was the fift: the Ifte of Burtilland for large-taine the next ; and this of Ireland the third; and for that cause doth Ptolomy call it the little Brittaine. But how-foeuer Strabo hath extended the breadth, as broad as the length; and others have formed it in shape like an egge, yet later dimensions have found it farre otherwise, twicelonger then broad, and may bee compared to the fore-legge of a Beare, if the Simile breed no offence. Whole East tide hath on it that tempestuous sea that cutreth her Channell betwist The bounds. England and this Ireland: the Well is washed with the Wefterne Ocean; the North with the Deucaledonian; and the South with the Virginian fea.

(5) The Aire of this Iland is delectable and wholesome though neither fo cleare nor fubtle as is ours of England which as (Mela faith) is norhing fauourable for the ripening of Corne:but so gratefull to the ground, that it causeth grasse to grow abundantly, not onely fresh and long, but with all very (weet for all Cattle, and in winter is more fubicat to very tweet for all caree, and in winter, is more unicer with the first wind then flow a and that I may be the words of Gradisarite is of all Countries melt competate, unlike forcing the Inhabitation to find from the child time to leak for discover, nor the child ling cold of Capricorne to drive them to the first is but at all feations.

most mild, betwixe a sufferable cold, and gentle warme

(6) The Soile, faith Cambrenfis, is viewen, wooddy, wild, The foile. (9) In e Soite, latter Construction, is veneure, wooddy, with, treefile and boggy for full of Lougha & Mercers, but a great ponds of water are found wpon the high mountains. Their madeed make the places formwhat dangerous wrote all new commers, by breeding of theums, dyfienteries and diuxes, whole 'fullar lene's it w 'Assisha, w holeforme 'Apanesiwhole 'fullar lene's it w 'Assisha, w holeforme 'Apanesito 'Apanesite that drieth more, and inflameth leife, then many other hote confections.

(7) The commodities of this Kingdom chiefly confift in Cattle, whose feed is fo sweet and fo ranke, that they will foone graze to a furfet, if they may be fuffered to feed as they will. Their flicepe are many, but beare not the best wooll, which twice are shorne within one yeere: of these they make Mantles, Caddowes and Couerlets, vented from thence into forraine Countries. Their Hobbies likewife are of great efteeme, and are answerable to the lennets of Spaine. Bees are there in fuch abundance, that Horfes, hony is found in holes of old trees, and in refts of the Bees. nony isround in noise or old trees, and in least or size rocks. No annoisance of hunfull Snake or venemous creatures; and to fpeake all in a word, nothing wanting for profite or pleasure; for so much doth Gradday af-

tor protte or pleature: 1010 muencoun ursaum ataffirme in Sping, the Nature backed into this Wifterns
Kingdome of Zephirus a more grasious eps themas ur ordinery.

(8) Touching the Original peopling of this faire jland, if we will believe their records, they make sample;

up it effects but young vito rhemefules, affirming the dand, if

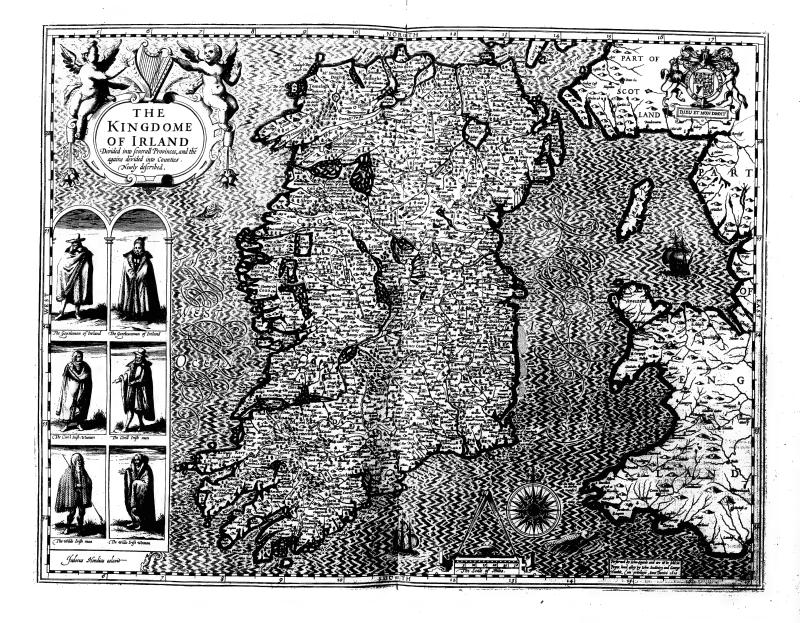
the melentaments. Cafarea, and niece vnto Noab, to have found it out before the floud; and that three hundred yeeres after, when In plear politerity tooke into thele were-parts or the wornon one Barbelanes of his Progenya. Scythian by birth, encouraged by the late fuecess for Nimeral (who now had intruded youn het Monarchy of Syria) wanderd fo farr werft, that Fortune at last cash him and his people you on the contract of the cont coaft of Ireland. There hee ferled with his three formes. Langunna, Salanns, & Ruchurgus, who fearching through Histhree form euery creeke and corner of the land, left their owner names Languing. by three notable places, Languini, Stragina, and Mount Salanue.
Salanga, which there used in the salanga is the salanga and the salanga is the salanga in the salanga is the salanga in the salanga is the salanga in by other names, as Saint Dominicke-bil, Ruiburgi, and Stagnum. Vnder the gouernment of these three sonnes, and their offpring, this land was kept about three hundred their onpring, this lates was kept boost time funnared yeeres; at which time their arrind allois in Ireland a Giant-like kind of people of Nimvadr race, who in bodily shape exceeded the proportion of visall men, viing their strengther to winne Soueraigneties, and to oppress with flengtheto wine Souersigneties, and to oppetit with rapine and violence. Their growing to numbers, accoun-ted it necessary to present dominion, let the curse of the unterlepropheties by Nash Jinoldi light you them to present the which, they ferve a King of their owner, then quarrie bird daily, either parries purposing to hold their interest by their fevorés, against whom, lastly a bar-talle was fought, and a nightic. Company of Giann Flow, when allo died most of those of the posterity of Japhos, Ilaminet hum of Chan Lordan the Bland. leaning them of Cham Lords of the Hand,

(9) Whereupon Nemethus a Scythian, with his foure fonnes, arrived in Ireland, and by fitting hand feated themselves among these Giants; where for two hundred & fixty youres they kept, but then no longer able to hold out against them they left their flandings & departed the Fergefine

(10) Soon after, the fine sonnes of Dela, descended from the said Nemerbus, came into these coasts, and with manly prowelle drove thefe miscreants out of Ireland whereby the feed of Cham was ytterly expelled, and thefe of Lapheth divided the land into five pasts, whereof they became themselves Kings: but falling at variance, gaue advantage vnto others, among whom the Britaines for m

(11) But to make this Hand more famous, certains Hillorians have fetched their Kings from most vicefrain Records, as namely from Gasthel the Grecian, and Sesta, (the daughter of King Pharas, and nourisher of Mofes) his wife: who at that time, when I freel were in Egypt, with a Colony, came into Spasse, and after into Ireland, where he was made King, and in honour of his Queene, the land





Tacit, in vita

ireland neuer

Subject to the

Orefuu.

Strabe

Mele. lib. 2.

Seli cap. 24.

Arrical c.

Heller Bostius Hibernus. Hermios. Euer.

named Scottagirom whom also the inhabitants took name: his posterity increasing in the parts of Spaine, where first they had feated: in procette of time fought further aduentures under the foure fonnes of Milefins King of Spaine, whose names were Hibernus, Hermion , Euer, and Eri (12) These by the direction, sufferance, and assistance,

of Gurgantine, King of the Bruenes, after that Ireland had been venemuch dispropled by a contagious peffilence, feated themselves; and from the eldest, Hibering, called the Island Hibernia, as some are of opinion: these divided the whole into fine Provinces famouffic knowne by the names of Mounter, Leinster, Connaught, Vifter, and Meath in their midt; and from these the present Iris repute them-Ireland divided felues to come. Yet forely as I make no question, burthat this Ifland became inhabited cuen of old time, when man kind againe ouer-spred the face of the earth, so doubt I not, but that our Britanes pailed thereinto themfelues, such infinite number of words in the Irif language yet in vie, fuch ancient names of Waters, Ifles, Mountaines, and Piaces, meerely Brisip words yet remaining, and the tellimonie of Tacitus; who faith, that their manners were fafinoned to the Britanes, inforceth fo much ; and Ptolomie before him, calleth that I fland by the name of little Britans all which flew a former interest for Ireland, then that which by conquest under Henry the second was made.

(13) That it ever was subject to the Romanes, is doubt full, though Agricola did wish it, and Tacina held most necessarie; yes and in the division of their Empire, Ireland with Britane, and Thule, fell vito Confluctine the fonne of Conflanting the great; yet their manners ynreclaimed, and barbarilme retained long after those daies, doe witnelle no fuch civilitie fowen, to bee in that plot : But when Rome. great Empire begane to grow leffe, the Scots or Septhian. grew mightie in Ireland : and as Orofins writeth, that Island was wholic inhabited by the Scartil Nation in the dates of Honorius, and Arcadius, the Emperors: whose warres and flaughter, Claudian doth lightlic touch in this his verfe. Scotorum cumulos fleuit glacialis Ierne.

The frozen Ireland weps to fee, her Scots all flaine on beape (14) As these for the most part, by the testimonie of mus, were the ancient inhabitants, fo by other ancient The manners & writers, their cultomes and manners, are thus fet foorth customes of the wild *Jris*b. trabo Lithethe inbabitants of Ireland are more rude then the Britanes, they feede upon the flesh of men, yea, and thinke it a point of worth to eat their dead parent; I wantonlie they accom-panse with women, making no difference of other ment wises, their owne filters, wor of their natural mothers: but of the fe things (faith he) we have no certaine witnesse of sufficient credit Pomponisu Mela, recordeth that, the Irish are unciwill, in norant of vertues, and void of religion. And Solinus affirmeth that, after victory they drinke the bloud of the flaine, and be smeare their owne faces therewith ; so given to warre, that the mother at the birth of a man child, feedeth the first meat inte ber infants mouse, upon the point of her husbands fword, and with heathenshimprecations, wishelb that it may die no otherwife then in warre or by (word

(15) But from the le ancient and barbarous maners, let vs come to the conditions of their middle time : whom Gir. sidus Cambrenfis describethas followeth. The Irifi (aith Giraldus Camb. he) are a strong and bold people, martiall and prod gall in warre, nimble, flout, and baughty of heart; careleffe of life, but oreed; of gloris ; courseous to thrangers, conftant in love light of beliefe, imparient of murre, ginento fleshie lufts, and in committe implasible. At the baptizing of their infants, their maner was not to dip their right arms into the water, that to (as they thought they might give a more deepe and incurable blow; neuer calling them by the names of their Parents whillt they lived together, but at their death tooke it your thems their women nourfed not the children they bare and they that nurse others, did affect and love them, much more then their owne (16) So much were they given to fantafficall conceits.

that they held it very ominous to give their neighbours fire vpon May day; to cat an odde egge, endangered the death of their horfe; and before they call in their feed they fend faltinto the field; to hang up the faells in the roofe was a preferuative of the chickens from the kite; to fet up greene boughes at their doores in the moneth of May, in creafed their kines milke 3 and to fpit vpon Cattle they held it good against Witchery, whereof Ireland was full.

(17) Superflitious Idolatry among the wild Irifb was ommon, yeelding divine honour vnto the Moone after the change, visto whom they both bowed their knees, and made supplications; and , with a loude voice would thus freake vnto that Planet, We pray thee leane vs mas good effare as 1000 foundf vs. Wolues they did make their God-fibs, terming them Charl Chrift, and so thought themschies preserved from their hurts: the hoofes of dead horfesthey accounted and held facred: about Childrens necks they hung the beginning of Saint Johns Gofpell, a crooked naile of an horseshow, or a peece of a Wolues skin, and both the fucking child, and nurle, were girt with girdles, finely placed of womans haire: fofarre they wandred into the waies of errour, in making thefe armes the ftrength of their healthes.

(18) Their wines were many by reason of dinorcements, Many wines. and their maids married at twelue yeeres of age, whose cuflomes were to fend to their louers, bracelets plated, & curioully wrought of thir owne haire, fo farre following Finns in the knots of thefe allurements. The men wore linnen The attire of the first exceedingly large, flained with Saffron, the fleeues mea. wide, and hanging to their knees, firsit & fhort truffes pleted thicke in the skirrs, their breeches close to the thighes, a shore skeine hanging point downe before, and a mantle most times cast over their heads. The women wore their | Theattire of the haire plated in curious manner, hanging down their backs and shoulders from under foulden wreathes of fine linnen, rolled about their heads, rather loading the wearer then delighting the beholder; for as the one was most feemely. fo the other was vnfightly : their necks were hung with chaines and carkaneths, their armes wreathed with many bracelets, & ouer their fide-garments the fhagge rug mantels purfled with a deepe Fringe of diuers colours, both fexes accounting idlenetle their only liberty, and eafe their greatest riches.

(19 In warres they were forward, and fought with battle ixes, whose bearers were called Gallog laffes, the common fouldier but lightly armed, who ferued with darrs and tharp skeines; their Trumpet was a Bagge pipe, and word for encounter, Pharrob; which at the first onset with great acclamation they vttered, and he that did not, was taken into the aire, and carried into the vale of Kerry, where transformed(as they did believe)he remained untill he was hunted with hounds from thence to his home.

(20) For the dying and dead they hired women to mourn who expostulated with the sicke, why hee would die; and dead, at his Funerall fuch outerieswere made, fuch clapping of hands, fuch howlings, and geftures, that one would thinke their forrowes varecouerable, holding the opinion of Pythager at for the foules departed.

(21) Their diet in necessity was flender, feeding vpon water-creifes, rootes, mulhiomes, fhamrogh, butter tempered with oate-meale, milke, whey, yea and raw flesh, the bloud being crushed out: their vie was also to let their Kine bloud, which standing a while, and comming to a elly, with butter they did eate, as a very good difh.

(21) That the Golpell of Chrift should be preached in Ireland by Iames the Apoftle, I will not affirme, though Vincentius hath faid it; neither will J with the Scott bring the Ilands conversion from a Christian woman, who as their Historians do auouch, first instructed the Queen, & the Queen her husband, & he again his Subjects, til al became Chriftians : But moft true it is, that the Scots firft receiued the doctrine of Christ in this kingdome of Ireland; for thus writeth Prosper: Calestin Pope of Rome sent his Arch-deacon Palladius into Brittaine to withstand the Pelagian herofie, who at one time did drine out these enemies of grace and ordained a Biftop among the Scott, whereby that bar barous Nation imbraced Christianis. Yet Ninius teporteth that Palladise did nothing in neither, being taken away by votimely death: but that S. Patricke borne at Esburne in Cluedidale, the fonne of Calphurm, by the fifter of S. Martin, was the first Apostle for Ireland, who sowed his heavenly feed with fuch plentifull increase, that the foile it selfe shortly was called Santtorum patria, the Countrie of Saints: for whose Sepulchre after his death rose as great variance, as was for Homer amongst them of Greece: they of Downe challenged his graue to be with them, vpon certaine verles written on a Tombe, which aferibes Patrick, Briget and Columbe to bee buried therein; they of Armagh lay claime, by the warrant of Saint Bernard, who faith that Patrickem bis life time there ruled, and after death there rested; Glascenbury in England by ancient records will haue his body enterred with them; & Scotland augucheth his birth to bee at Glafes, and bones to reft at Kirk-Patrick with them; of fuch reuerend efteem was this Irif Apostle.

(23) This Parrick in his youth had been taken Captine by the Irib Pirats, and for fix yeeres continuance ferued Macbusin as his flane, & keeper of his fwine : in which dejected condition, to defirous he was of the lands faluation, that in his dreams he thought the Infants vnborne cried vnto him for Baptilme, and redeeming himfelfe thence for a peece of gold found in the field, which a fwine had turned up, in his aged yeeres came backe againe into Ireland, preached the Gospell, conuerted the people; and lastly became Arch . bishop of Armagh; of whose miracles and Purgatorie I sleaue others to speake, that are more credulous in the one, & hath better leafure to relate the other, and will fhew thee Ireland as now it is, first in generall, and then in parts.

South. North.

Their manner i

Their ridiculo

mourning for their dead.

Their diet.

Christianiry in

Vincentius lib.8.

An.Do.43 I

Hteriem Antifi

Strife for Patrick

The life of S. P.

Eaft. West. The length from outh to North

The bredth from eaft to weft.

Chap.11.

The Bounds

The forme

Luceni. Vcerini. Ondiv or Vodize Corifeli A supposall to

modious.

Portugals mak here a good profit by fifting. Limericke Fortified by King John.

Ann.1332. What happed i this City: by Infolency, by Valour,

Corke cirv.

Encompaffed with wild frish

The Irifl: mari-

waterford the fecond City in Ireland. Alwaies loiall a the English Crowne.

King Hemythe bounty to it.

Christianisie in Ireland how it

The effects of

A ridiculous Of mure fooldiALCON TO

Pit Prouince called in Infin. Jeweyin a more ordinate con-fluction of (peech) phwn; in La-tine, Jewewia, and in English. Mewaffer, beth open fourthward to the Virgium Sen, Northward, it affrontesh part of gaszagie. The Eaft in seighbourcal by Leas-fler, and the Welt's alcogether washed with the Well Ocean. (a) The kength thereof ex-tended from Ballermere By in her South, virto the Bay of Gel. my in her North, are about my in her North, are about.

Prouince called in Infl

ninetie miles: Her broadest part from East to West, is from Water ford-hauen to Feriter hatten, and contained an hundred miles. The whole circumference by following the prometaries and indents, are about furchundred and forty miles.

about the hundred and forty miles,
(3) The form three of is quadente or foore figuare. The Aire
mild and temperate, neither too chilling cold, not too feorething
bot. The Soline parts is hilly, looking aloft with woody,
wide, and foliatine monomizates; yet the validies below are gernified
with cornecteds. And generally, all both pleafant for fight, and
ferrile for foliat.

terrile for folia.

(4) This Promines in a this day disided into two parts, thairs, the West Mounther, and the South Mountler. The West Mounther, the West Mounther, the West Mounther than the American Carlot of the American Carlot of the Carlot of Carlot their name and originall from the Luces/y of Galitia, and of whom there fill remaine some reliques in the Baronie of Lyxnauw) are supposed to have beene seared in those parters that lie neighbouring your telepholes for the supposed to have beene seared in those parters that lie neighbouring

imposed to have beene facult in them. Decourse of A STATINETY SERVICE AND THE STATES AND THE STA

of Innetmona. Then in processe of time, Town offer an Engine-monwas infeofed in it, and King Jabu fortified it with a Cattle, which hee caused therein to be built. In this Castle certaine Howhich heccasfed therein to be built. In this Cattle certaine Ho-flages making their abode in the yeere 1334, grow as is reported fo full of pride and infolency, that they flow the Conflable thereof, & feized the caffle into their ownehands: But the refolute Citizens hall of pride matinfoleroy, that they flore the Contrible thereofic, the contribution of the contribution

theory, and foom abount to Direction. Someonium and the source, commonly called Strict, and the demonstration.

(7) The City which the fifth and first ance tall to most assume an energial water should be suffered to the source of the source

ets, were king stray theferenth del both neigners and con-(3) Although fine their me 5.2 Earliefs, Chinishing) was neuer cution in the Country, yet the goartment being had into converty althous, the Nobilty hardeling, and the multimode wid-comments and the second of the second of the second of the control of the second of the second of the second of the temporal common or partie, time Redignon histh waxed (such that temporal common or partie, time Red gion histh waxed (such that temporal common or partie, time Red gion histh waxed (such that temporal common or partie, time are of opinion, that cert tray intelligous, and addicate wholey to repetitive underteasible of the parties of the second of the second of the second of the tray intelligent of the second of the second of the second to the hopping the population of the deficient and making that the second of the second of the second of the second of the the second of the second of the second of the second of the second fine the parties of the second of the second of the second of the second the second of the second of the second of the second of the second fine the second of the second of the second of the second of the second fine the second of the second fine the second of the seco lach hir chharataes through the maleious himors of Melandolyside, of obsessions marinagine threadlessics becaused and transformed into formes which they are not. Some against embrace an other includious opinious, and periwde themefalest, shis here, who in the barbarous acclamation, and outstry of the Souldiers, which they yie with great broising and firating of other voices, when they some taxting of the normal market as notifies as the reld deep, is full dustry caught from the ground, and carriers is were flying in the

in; not et ap. Commy elfreindjumo fame defer tullier, where her feeleded you gusto, distortium, his finnes de et eafon, the control of the co

rebellions of Typase had turned the hearts of the Infli for Komer Size

Charles Blass Land Massiary in the depth of winter, and with his tyred Souldiers fo danneed their Spanish hearts, that with one wides

or exemposited
by the Lord

Massiar,

Massiar,

ry het ergetfeld their bragging bolderlie, and recovered the Italia by the End Matt were ready to region flowed his tender lose and fifted in with up ready, a larging has fasherly distillated mits and affiliation with up ready, a larging has fasherly distillated mits and affiliation of the state of the tions, In the year 1330, about the feeth of Saint to los Rapilly, there begal field a death of comen in the Country by the showshance of rame and the immediation of waters (which continued with Michaelmas (flowing)), that a Crano of Wheter war folde for twenty this lower of the continued of the treof were neuer feene in Ireland. In the yeare 1317, there was whereof were neuer fener in Iréland. In the preser 1317, there in the A destruct occurs and other Volland, when Colmon Vollands was told for neuery three fullings, dans many Householders that volceme had follands and releaved a great canable; were this years driven to beg, and many familised. In the sume of which famine, the survey of Cold of sulpoid, that worket asy, day of laungs in the survey of Cold of sulpoid, that worket asy, day of laungs in the secret of Cold of sulpoid, that worket asy, day of laungs and the secret of the survey of Cold of sulpoid, that was year per just, had secure been fenen, that the people were many gets path, had secure been fenen, that the people were many gets path, had secure been fenen, that the people were many the properties of the cold of the people were many that the people were t

and received gears reliefe and furthermore by the form. Inst address, of (1) Pelece of feedings on the Courtry, were the two Abbayes (1) Pelece of feedings on the Courtry, were the two Abbayes and the Courtry, were the two Abbayes and the Courtry, were the two Abbayes and the Courtry, and the Courtry of t

In Promotes in goarned by a Lord Pradicat, who hash one officiant, we look and a Sectionary to keeps in days of obedience. It was in earny and a Sectionary to keeps in days of obedience. It was in the record between the section of the Promotes, which was the section of the Promotes, who was the section of the Promotes, who was the section of the Promotes, who was the section of the Promotes in a difficult of the section of the Promotes in the section of the section o This Province is governed by a Lord Prefident, who hash one

Limmerick

More the in

Religious pla-

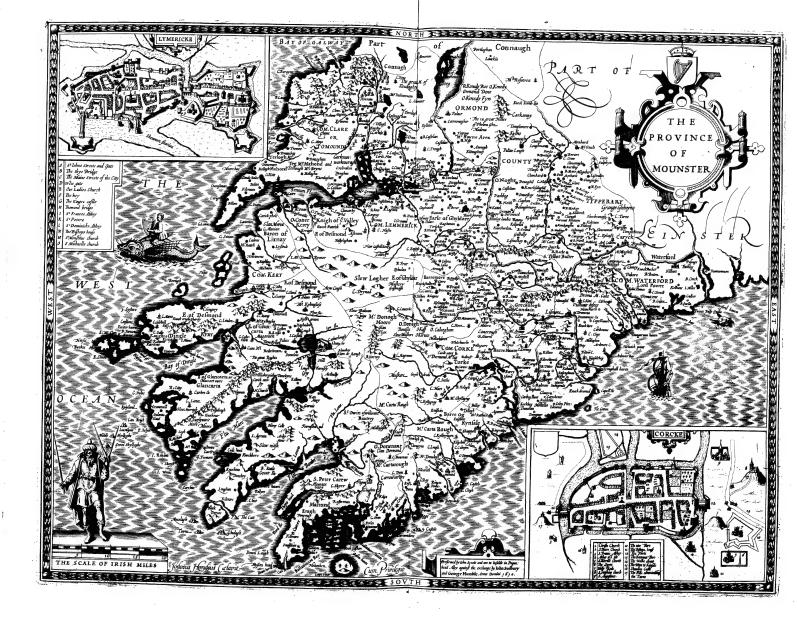
An vinprobable The Ind-

eachere.

As Dungaruans At Limericke. Shandon Cafild.

Kery. Corke. Waterford. MOVNSTER Defmond. Holicroffe > in Tipperary.

Their groffa Idolarne



LEINSTER.

His Country, the natives call Leighnigh, the Britains Lein, In Latene Lagonia, in the ancient lives of the Saints La gen, and in English Leinfter It lieth East-ward along Hi-

bernicum Sea, on Cannought with the River Shanon, the North, with the territory of Louth , and the South with part of the Prouince of Munfter. This County butteth up

on England, as Mounfter and Cannoughs doe vpon Spaine. (2) The forme thereof is Triangle, and fides not much vn-equall, from her Sauth-East vnto the West-point about 80 miles, from thence to her North Well about 70. miles, and mines, from trence to nervorus. Prop. about 70. miles, and her Eafe coal along the frigh-Seaflore eighty. The circumference vpon two hundred and feuenty miles.

(3) The Aire is cleere and gentle, mixt with a temperate distinguishment of the mixther the property of the p

The Avre. The Soile,

The forme.

Chap.4.

The bounds.

disposition, yeelding neither extremity of heat or cold, according to the feafonable times of the yeare , and the natu rall condition of the Continent-The Soile is generally fruit full, plentifull both in fish and flesh, and in other victualls. as butter, cheefe and milke: It is fertile in Corne, Cattle, an pasture grounds, and would bee much more if the husband man did but apply his industry to which her is innited by the commodiousnes of the Country. It is well watered with rivers, and for the most part wel woodded, except the county of Dmelin, which complaines much of that want, beeing fo destitute of wood that they are compelled to vie a clam my kind of fatturffe for their fuell, or Sea-coale brought out of England.

(4) The Inhabitants of these parts in Ptolomies dairs, were the Brigantes Menapy Cauce and Blam, from which Blans may feeme to be derived and contracted, the later and momay teem to Dective and contracted, me sater and moderne names of this Country Livin Leigheigh, and Leighter. The Menapi (as the name doth after a fort imply) came from the Minapians, a nation in low Germany, that dwelt by the Sea-Coalts, These Briganess called also Brigants, Florianse del Campo(a Spaniard) labours to fetch from the Brigants of his owne Country of whom an ancient City in Spaine (called Briganita) tooke the name. But they may feem rather to deriue their denomination from the river Birgm, about which they inhabited; for to this, the very name is almost sufficient to perswade vs.

5. The Commodities of this country doe chiefly con-fift in Cattle, Sca-fowle, and fifth. It breeds many excellent Commodities. good horfes(called Jrifh-hobbies) which have not the fame pace that other Horfes haue in their course, but a fost and

roundamble, fetting very easily.

(6) This Country hath in it three Rivers of note, termed in old time the three fifters, Shour, Neor, and Barras, which iffu out of the huge Mountaines(called by Graddus, Bladi-na Monte) as out of their mothers wombe, and from their rifing tops defectuding with a downfall into feuerall Chan-nels, before they empty themselues into the Ocean, loire hand in hand al together in a mutual league & combination The Grounds,

(7) Places very dangerous for thipping are certaine flats and thallowes in the Sea, that lie oueragainst Holy point, which the Marriners call the Grounds. Also the Shelues of fand that Iye a great way in length opposite to Newcastie, which ouerlooketh them into the Sea from the top of an high hill adioyning. (8) In this Prouince, are placed many faire and wealthy

Killemy.

(3) In this Produce, are placed many raise and weating Townes, at Kilkenny, which for a Burrough townex excels all the midland Borroughein this land. Kildene, which is a dorned with an Epilcopall fee, and much graced in the first infancy of the Irish church, by reason of faint Bridgid a yenerable virgin, had in great account and estimation for her virginity and denotion as who was the disciple of S. Patrivirginity and denotionals who was the untiple of of a mark of to great fame, renowine and antiquity: Alfo Weifford
(a name gine vinto it by the le German; whom the Irib term
Ouffmans) a town though inferiour to fome, yet as memorable as any, for that it became the first colony of the Englift and did first fubmit it felfe voto their protection being affaulted by Fix-Stephen, a Captaine worthily made fa-mous for his valour and magnanimity.

Divelie

Wexford.

(9) But the City which fame may justly celebrate alone, beyond all the Citties or Townes in Ireland, is that which wee call Dinelin, Ptolomee, Eblana, the Latinifts Dublinium and Dublonia, the well Britaines Dinas Dulin, the English Saxons in times past Duplin, and the Irish Bala-cleigh, that is the towneypon hurdles; for it is reported that the place be ing fennish and moorish, when it first began to bee builded the foundation was laid yoon hurdles.

The Antiquity

(to) That it is ancient, is perswaded by the authority of relong. That it was greeuously rent and dismembred in the tumultuous warres of the Daner, and brought afterwards under the Subjection of Eadgar King of England (which his Charter also confirmeth wherein hee calleth it, the Noble

Citty of Ireland) is writte by Saxo-Grammaticsu. That it was built by Harold of Norway, which may feem to bee Harold Distill built by Harfager, when he had brought the greatest part of Ireland Harfager, when he had brought the greatest part of treland into an awfull obedience vino him, wee reade in the life of Griffith Ap Sisam Prince of Wales. At length it yeeled wato the valor and protection of the English, at their field arrival!

into Ireland, by whom it was manfully defended from the fierce affaults aswellof Aufconlph Prince of the Dublinians, as afterwards of Gostard King of the ifles : fince which freland, time it hath fill augmented her flourishing estate, and gi-uen approued testimony of her faith and loialty to the Crown of England, in the times of any rumultuous streights

and commotions. (11) This is the roiall feate of Ireland, frong in her munition, beautifull in her buildings, and (for the quantity) matchable to many other cities, frequent for trafficke, and intercourse of Merchants: In the East suburbs Henry the

fecond King of England(as Housden reporteth)caufed a roi-all palaceto bee etechediand Hemy Loundres Archeifton of Dinelin built a Storehouse about the yeare of Christ, 1220. Dinelin. Not farre from it is the beautifull Colledge confectated vnto the name of the holy Trinity, which Queene Elizabeth of famous memory dignified with the priniledges of an V-niuerfitie. The Church of S. Patrick, beeing much enlarged by King Ishn, was by Ishn Comin Archbishop of Dublin borne at Enesham in England, first ordained to beea Church of Prebends in the yeare 1191. It doth at this day main-tainea Deane, a Chanter, a Chancellor, a Treasurer, two Arch-Deacons, and twenty two Prebendaries,

This City in times past for the due administration of Ciuill Government had a Propost for the chiefe Magistrate. But in the yeare of mans redemption 1409. King Henry the Henry the fourth fourth granted them liberry to choose every veere a Major and two Bayliffes, and that the Major should have a gift word carried before him for euer. And King Edward the ixt (to heape more honor vpon this place) changed the two Eward the fixe Bayliffes afterwards into Sherifs: fo, that there is not any thing heere wanting that may ferue to make the effate of

a City most florishing.

(12) Asthe pople of this Country doe about the neighbouring parts of Disselin come neerest who the civill condi-tions and orderly subjection of the English: so in places far-chereous one ther off, they are more tumultuous, being at deadly feuds amongfi themlelues, committing oft times Man-liaughters one vpon another, and working their owne mifchietes by mutuall wrongs: for for the Lifth of Lenfter walfed Leinfter with many Townes in the fame Province in the yeare 1294mongst themselves, committing oft times Man-slaughters

And in the year 1301.the men of Leinster in like manner ratfed a watte in the winter feafon, fetting on fire the Town of Wykinle, Rathdon and others, working their own plague and punishment by burning vp their fustenance, and losing their Castle by depredation.
(13)Matter of observation and no lesse admiration among

them is the Giants dance, commonly fo called, and fo much talked of, which Merlin is faid by Art Magick to haue traffated out of this territory vnto Salsbury plain; which how true it is, I leane to the vaine beleeners of miracles, and to the Credulous observers of antiquitie.

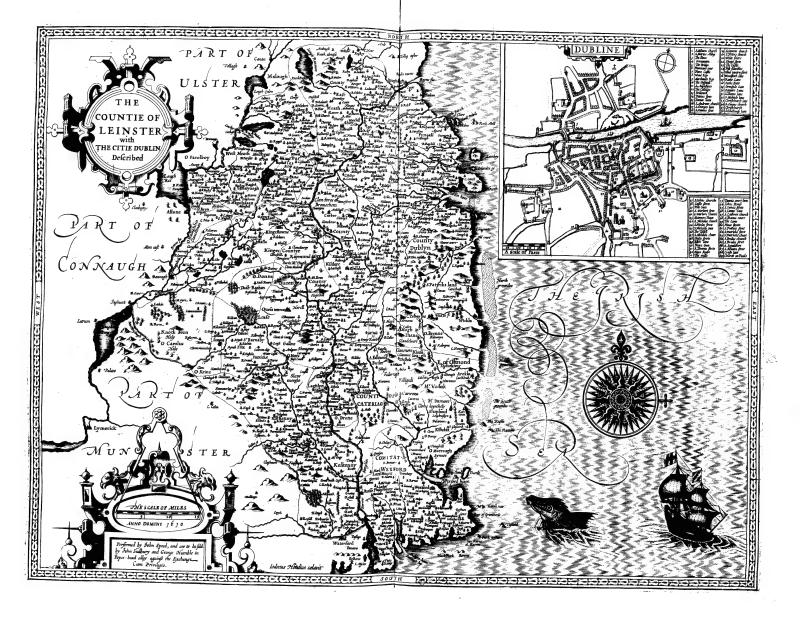
(14) In this County have beene erected many famous The religious (14.) in this Councy have been erected many ismous Monalteries, Abbies and religious houles confecrated to deuous and holy purpotes: As the Monaltery of Saint Maniero of Onlineary, founded for preaching friers, rance which of late dates the tudiciall Courts of the Kingdom have bene translated also the magnificent Abbay called 3. Thomas Courtest Dublin, builded and endowed in times pall with Courte Distributions and receives of King Henry the factorial reprinted grand receives of King Henry the factorial reprinted grand receives of King Henry the factorial reprinted grand for the murther of Thomas Archivless of Caterbury, Like wile Timerum monallery, or the notable Abbay which William Marshal Earl of Penbrook founded and called De vote, for that he had vowed to God (beeing toffed at fea with many a foreand dangerous tempet() to crect an Abby wherefoeuer he came to land, and being (after thipwracke) cast up on land in this place, hee made performance of his

vowe accordingly. This Province containeth the Counties of Kilkener Ca terlogh, Queens County, Kings County, Kildare, East Meath, West Meath, Weisford, and Dublin (to say nothing of Wickle and Fernes, which either be already or elfe are to be annexed vnto it) & fubdiuided into fifteen Market townes. It bath bene fortified with the strength of many Castles against the power of enemies, and is thus divided a

Fast meach. Well meath. Kilkenny. Counti Queens County: Kings County. Keldere. Weithford. Dublin.

Harold King of

Kk 2



142	Ļ.			LEIN	ISTER.			Booke 15
1 East Meach. 2 West Meath.	_	Browne/Wesf. C. Bryne, Wesf. O. Burgage, Deadl. Barter Kantonowy. B. Burne C. varch, Kald. Burne, Kalder. Burder / Vasf. B. Burter / Vasf. B. Button, Oud.	S. Duil. Cort Duil. Courbons, Wesf. Courb. Eagl M. Coupt. Eagl M. Count, 1998 M. B.	Gibbps.Bad Mersh. B. Gibbers#Wel Mersh. Gibadeloure Daid. Gibardeloure Daid. Gibardeloure Daid. Gibardel.Kogt cousty. Glace.Welgh. Mac Gildhank.Welgh. Gildhen.Kall. Gildhen.Kall. Gildhen. Edid. Gildhen	Kruegade, Weft M. Kilbrakm, Q. Cwody. Kilbred, Egif M. Kilbrew, Egif M. Kilbride, Woff M. Kilbride, Woff M.	Majohla, & County. Malahedert, Daki	Raiseach, Espi M. B. Ramney, 'Ve. The Ramme, We. Ram ve, Dust.	Taght, Eafl M. 1 T-goam, We.
2 Dapl.#		Burgage, Deabl. Barter Kin. County. B.	Courtonen, Waxf. Court, East M.	Glandeloure Duid. Glarard, Kings county.	Kilbred, Eqil M. Kilbrew, Eqil M.	Market, Dahl. Oheologia, Will M. Maknet, Dahlon, Maknet, Dahlon, Mand, E. J. M. Mangal, J. P. J. Mand, E. J. Mand, E. J. Mangal, J. P. J. Mangal, J. P. J. Mangal, J. P. J. Mangal, J. P. J. Mangal, J. Dahlon, Market, J. Dahlon, Market, J. Dahlon, Market, J. Dahlon, Market, J. C. Meloo, K. G. Mettin, Dahlon, Meruma, Dahlon,	The Ramme, We.	Talbot, & Dak.
Kildzer.		Burne Crurch, Koll. Burn, Kele. B.	Coupe, East Mr. Court, 18/4/E.M. B.	Glare, West M. Mac Glatkank, West.	Kilbery, Earl M. Kilbride, Wolf M.	Malaghlin, Well M. Maleneal, Dubl.	Rams grang, We. Randla, Carer.	Talbot, S Dake, **Tankard. S Q. County. Tecroghan, East M. Teg., We. Teg., Kilder. Temple, Kel. Temple, L. Ur.
Keegs County.		Burwaine, Kollar, Butler, Wesf. B.		Glathere, Kelk.	Kilbrid, K.Cooney, Kilcamfort, D.Coo-	Malyn, Dulice.	Lough } Eaf M.	Tecroghan, East M.
Kil-henny.			Cotland, Krider, Coynt, Kray County, B. Crabbov, Erif M. Grabbov, Krider, Crabbillilo, Dolf	Glathen, East M.	Kilbrid, K. County, Kilcohan, J. County, Kilcohan, J. Vex. Kilcloe, Ceter.	Maragh JP off M.	Bandla, Care, Lough Leaf M, Ramone, BM, Raphok, M, Raphok, Me Rashook, Me Rash	Teg Kilder.
Wexford.			Craince, Kilder,	Glaisephin, Dulön. Glavderen, Kinercaum, B.	Kiklog, Ceter, Kilcock, Kilder, Kilcocoin, Tudd, Kilcocoin, Konarty, Kilcocoin, Konarty, Kilderman, Dudd, Kilderman, Dudd, Kilderman, Dudd, Kilderman, Dudd, Kilderman, Sidder, Kilder, Kilder, Kilmon, Kuld, Kilmon, Kuld, Kilmon, Kuld, Kilfall, Kulder, Kilgall, Kulder, Kilgall, Kulder,	Miron, Well M. Martin, Eali M. Malfe, Eali M. Malfe, Ball M.	Rasipek Well M.	Temple, Kd. Temple, } We. gail. We. Temghil, We. Temghil, We. Temghil, We. Temckell, Q. Causey. Temtare, We. Temmes, We. Misc St.d. Old St.d. Tempon St.d.
redes,Eaflackth.	B	Caden, Duid, Caden, B. K. Ik, B. Calen, J.V. of. Callan, Keik,	Cristock, Kider, Cragbailillo, Dubl. Crogbau hill Kis. Charty. Crogbau n. Wolf. M. Crombra, Dubl. Crombra, Dubl. Crombra, E. W. Mesth. E. Mar. 2	Glogh Kelk.	Kilconin, K County.	Made, Wei M.	Rathor, W. F.M.	Tenaghili,We
Rock & Duidei, bill. & Duidei, BOY.E.Martic		Callan Kelk, Camenth Doll	Croghouen Wolf, M.	Glorum, Kelk, Goely, Wext, B. Gowne, Espi M. B.	Kilcoran, K County.	Mayle, Duller.	Raspak,We.	Tenckell, O. Ceany, Tentarne, We.
BOY E. Marth.	я	Camench, Dold, Camen, Dold, Camen, Dold, Camenos, Carer Cambell, Kell, Camell, Kell, Cap, 1970; CAR, BRE, Kilder, Car, Doy, 1971; Mac Careles, Kell, S.	Crofekeli, Eeft M., Croffedee, W. Meath.	Gowne, Eaft M. B. Grace Calile, D County,	Kildernam, Duld. Kildewan Kelder.	Megham, Ke/.	Rathalyn, Kol.	Terrill, Weff M. Z
is O.Y.E. Meeth. iffalls, K.m.; County, gard, Daskles, gard, Daskles, gard, Daskles, gard, Daskles, kane, E. Mesth. kane, E. Mesth. klice, K. idd. Knock Almafa, E., imath, E. Mesth. inker, Geter. inker, W. x.f. inna K. idd.		Cantwell, Kelly E.	Mer 2	Grace Caffle & County. Grace dew. Dubl. Grace owns, fel. Grace Orchard, Wenf. Gralouph, Dub. Macs Cray, fel. Gray, J. Granety. Grand, & Gomety. Grand, & Grand, & Grand, G	Kildrogh, Kalder.	Meloy, S. Cessiy.	Ratoch, Didd. Ratoch, Didd. Ratore, Enft M. Ratore, Enft M. Ratore, Enft M. Ray, K. Consury, Raydon, Dodain, C. Rayph, Well M. Ray Inco. K. Consury, Raymanogh, Q. Consury, Raymanogh, Consury, Ra	Mic ZKd.
дага, Омион. дргодата Дчест Св	wy	Cantwell, kale, # E.	Mac West. Damore. West. Damnin, Waf M. Darro, Su Cassey. Darfe 134 of M.	Grace Orchard, Wexf.	Kilfield, Kattler.	Merin, Dubius,	Ray, K. Ceauty	Old Skel. Terpon, Skel. Terra visuarisam Sk. Ceau. Terragh, Es. G. M. Thomas, K. Lier. Thomas, Q. Cousty. Owen.
kane,E Mentis		CARBRE,Killer.	Darro, Sin County.	Mac, Ctay, Kel.	rilgo,East M.	Memme, Wex. Mellali, Q County; G Minathell, Well M.		Terra Ze Co
len,E.Mesth. lice,Keld	8.	Mac Careles Kelle	Darmers, wift M. B.	Grand, 2 County, 2	Kilgoghan, K.Cousty.	Mican, Kel.	Raylon, K. Cour'y. Raymanogh-O, Casery.	Terragh, E. & M.
Knock Almafa, E.i Imath, E.M. ath.	Mes.	Peter Carew, Keft.	Mac C D. LI	Grange, Kele.	Kilkalte, Dull.	Middle-grounds, Dublin	Rayne and Ogg K. Cour.	Thomas, Kinder. 1
nker Cater.	2.	Caric, East M., Caric, West,	Deluin, 1868, M. C.	Grange, Du County, Grangefort Cater.	Kilhill,K.Com v.	Miligh, PVell M. Great 7	Reben Q Courty.	Owen Kid. Thomas, & Kid. Thomdercourt, Kid.
nna Keld. nna hill Dad.	В.	Catikbrak,Cater, Carikmorrow,Ould	Denigary, Kelk.	Grangeketh, E. Meeth.	Kilhobok Wex Kilhobok K Courte	Milk Caffle, J. R.C.	Recognition	Thondercourt, R.A.
max. Kele.		Carichask, Dubl. Carikok, Sp. Count.	Dark; Darf M. B. Degas, Wolf. Mac P. Dash, Dein Seg. M. C. Dein Seg. M. C. Denings, Self. Mac Detret, Battomy, Detret, Battomy, Detret, Battomy, Detret, Battomy, Dosh Reghn M. G. Com, Dosh Reghn M. B. Dollare, Battomy, Dollare, Dash B.	Granedoukin, Dah', Grangs, Kek, Grangs, Ba, County, Grangs, Ba, County, Grangsfoot, Later, Grangsfoot, Metab. Grangsfoot, Maker, Grangsfoot, Maker, Grangs, Brofib. Gregan, Brofib. Gregan, Brofib. Gregan, Brofib. Gregan, Brofib. Brofic. Br	Kilker O Course	Mindfell Jirgh M. Misan, Fid. Misahere, Rafi M. Mishere, Rafi M. Middle grounde, Duddle Middle grounde, Duddle Middle, Grafte, J. Kri. Milliones, Avig M. Minosh, K. Mars, Milliones, Avig M. Molle, K. J. Molle, J. Molle, J. Molle, M. Molle, J. Molle, M. Molle, M. Molle, J. Molle, M. M	Reban, Comey. Reban, Comey. Recolail, W. off M. Rede E. off M. Rede E. of M. Rehdla, W., Rehdla, W., Rehdla, Dadd.	Thories, Q. County.
nncy nasv. mesths ton W. Mestis.	В.	Carne, Wax.	Great 3 K.S.	Gregh, svoji M.	Killackan Killer	Molle, Kr4	Rehela,We.	March Street
reanan Waxf.		Caron Wali M. B.	Doch Reghan Du Cean,	Bay of Zwn	Killare, Erit M.	Molen Froft M. B.	Remyne, Dale.	Tobe, Kel.
rchar 3V Meath. rchtt,Kelk.	8	Caryk new West.	Dorhill, K.Com y.	Bay of Zwa. Greenhord, Zwa. Grenok, Dast. Grenond, Kel.	Killegore, & Cases	MOLINGAR, PP. 1	Richard, Kilder. B	Tobbe Dail.
rcher hill, Kelle.		Carendine Qu. Coury,	Dolar, E. B. B. Dolkerw, Dalling.	Grenond, Kel. Greward, East, M.	Killiguli,Cestr. Killing,O.Courty,	Mollitz, Ki, County, Mollefy, Eeff M. Mollogh, Eeff M. C.	Riket, East M. C. Risers, East M. E. Robin, Wast M. B.	dayly. K.Courty,
ma hill, Dod, max Rel. Mearle, Mearle, rea IV Mere is, tra IV		Caterogr, East M. Calin, East M. B.	Dolknew, Dashin, Dolknew, Dashin, Domanny K. Causety, Domain, Failer, C. Donare, Eagl M. Done, Wex. B. Donne, K. Ceary, B. Donne, Co.	Grenond, Kel. Greward, Egil, M., Griffin, Dud. Groma-Kel. Guenere, Dudl. Gurchene, Wex.	Kelment Aucht. Felgull Ackler. Felgull	Mollogh East M.C.	Rehul, Dad. Remyne, Dad. Richard, Kilder. Richard, Kilder. Richard, M. Robin, Well M. Roch, Dade. Rock, Vellium, Wo Rock, Wellium, Wo Rock Rock.	Tobbe, Dahl. Tobber K. Csanty, dayly, K. Csanty, Togger, K. County, Togger, K. County, Togger, County, Togger,
RBK LO,Catar.		Milke Caffile, Kelk.	Donare, East M. Done, Wex. B.	Guenere, Dull.	Kill men, Well M.	Morrough, Wer.	Rock-William, Wo	Toghcoli-?
rgach, Dubl.		Cafflenn Qu Councy.	Donne, K. Cease y. B.	Garchens, Wex.	Killoghan, Wexf.	Moneton, Dabl.		Togher, Egit M.
rkion, Qu.County. rmagh, E. Morsh,		Caterlarth, Keik	Donnes Dayen Coury O. Donnebany, Wesf. Donebat, Dald.	Hagha, Çelê. Hahadew, Ceter,	Kilmotant, Kings County.	Montgaret VVex.	Roellyn, Ke/. Rogers, Dasf.	
raraght, W. Meach,	В.	Caucrno,Cater.	Doneber flut Kell.	Haly, Kacsus y. Haly, Kauer coun't.	Kilmatok Kilder	Monnegarrer, Wex.	Rogormley, Eqf 34.	Tollogh, Kaider,
magh, E Meesh, raraghr, W. Meesh, redr, W. Meesh, lhesoc, Q. County, lo, E. Meesh,		Cessiway Killer.	Donedrone, Dust. Donefert, Kisser, Donekele, Walt M.	Halrwood, Daid. Hamon, Cater. C.	Kilmanan Duking. Kilmanan Esil M.	More, Well M. C.	Rokel,Ke'. B	Tollogh Dalde
THE AMERICA	ъ.	Church, Eaft M. 3 Churley, Eaft M.	Donekele, 15/6/2 Mg	Hannacle & county,			Roone, Well M. B	Tollogh, Carer.
he' rzówi		Classification of M.	Donellaw, Kuller,	Hannaymotlay, Kel.	Kilmonog, svoji M.	Mablin hauen, We. Mac Multiforme. Waff M	Roffe, Worm.	Tolloghtoron Ken
con,E.Meath.		Clandalke, Dud.	Donemore, Kelk.	Harbart, Kilder, B. Harbart, W. Meath, B.	K lparrick # ex.	N N	Old 2 w.	B . 2 w.
gandbonne,Wex.	8.	Collaboration State of Common Could Common Could Common Could Common Could Country State of	Donckels, 1848 M. Bousker, Krik. Bousker, Krik. Donelbrodvistref. Donelbrodvistref. Donendristref.	Halindew, Cater. Haly, Kansure y. Haly, Kansure y. Haly, Kangresser y. Halywood, Dadd. Hamon, Cater. C. Hamsack E., county, Hamber, NY, Math. Haber, NY, Math. Haber, NY, Math. Hap, Balgers, NYC. B.	Allements, Lock Milmonop, 1969 M. Klimanop, 1969 M. Koodhoranop, 1969	Nanney flut Eafi M., Naroghmere Eider, Nath, Keider, Naunar, Eafi M., Nayle, Daki,	Rochips. Age Rochi	Tolleyb, Dade. Tolleyb, Dade. Tolleyb, Dade. Tolleyb, Dade. Tolleyb, Eye M. Tolleyb, Care. Tollyb, Care. Tolleyb, Care. Tolleyb,
iamore Wexf. Jehare, Kra Cousta.		Bremecham, S Kilder	Donoghmore, D. Comey.	Hap Seigrow Wex. B. Haffela, D. Coursy, B.	Killisyen, Kel.	Naroghmere Kider.	Rofe brenno. Q. Coursy.	Tomegard, Wer, Tomegard, Wer, Tommon, Well M. Mac Tomlernog Well M. Tomo, Dadd.
liner, East M.	iii.	Clanmore Carer.C.	Donomo Hexford	Hatey, Wex. B.	Kiltober, K. County.	Naunt,Eaff M. Navie,Dald	Reffecrea.K.County.	Mac Swall M
loughy, East M.		Clamplen, Cetter.	Dord, Well M. B. Dord, Dubine, B.	Hatey, Wex. B. Hathen, Well M. B. Hayner, West. B. Hearner, West. B.	Kritork, Wex	Negler, Egil M. Newton, Dubl. New, Well M.	Roffe Laiez,We.	Torno, Dade.
acty, Use, 38 bet, West, 18 conde. Meath, gandbone, West, 19 gandbone, West, 19 letter, Law Courty, 19 letter, Law Courty, 19 letter, Law Courty, 19 letter, Law Courty, 19 letter, 19 letter	В.	Carraf, Daki. Veet Clargh, Kelk, Clargh, Kelk, Clargh, Kelk, Clargh, Kelk, Clargh, Kelk, Clock, King Compy, Cloghan Self M. Cloghteremand, Kelk, Cloghtered-I, Kelk, Cloghtered-I, Kelk, Cloghtered-I, Kelk, Cloghtered-I, Kelk,	Does fig Dad in.	Hatter, West M. B. Hatter, West M. B. Hayner, West M. B. Hearne, West B. Heker, East M.	Mac 1 K. cor-	New, Well M.	Rofeperet, Kalder.	Torno, David. Mac & Wolf M. Toure, S Wolf M. Toure of the We. Hoke, We. Treuer, Eafl M. Trimbellion, Eafl M. Tridla Rider. TRY M E.E. & M.
nonglobay Wexf.		Claragh, Kedi.	Doro flu Qu. Compy, Doth, Erft M. B.	Heipa, Wexf. Henogh swell M. R.	King, Est M. B	New, Wolf M. C. New, Kale, B. New Eafl M. C.	Roft-H.K.c.	Hoke, We,
rbe,Kalder. rde,Kalder.	B.	Clarence Ent. Meeth.	Doughmore, East M. Drake and Kest.	Henogh wift M. B. Henorelay, Dald n. C. Herbert, Froft M. B.	KINGESTOWNE, K.Co.	New East M	Royne, Q. County. B	Treuer, East M.
nde Lubler, eret Folder, enoby Fouge County, 5,8 amaby 20se eta Parrick Coun enoby Maril	В.	Cloc, Kings County. Clog transWell M.	Dramdore, Kelly	Herell, D. covery- Heren, E. H. B.	K ngfalough Cater.	New, Well M. C	Roughlin Kel.	Truffen Kilder.
S, Barnaby 2 gor	nemer mere	Clogher, W. ft M. Clogher cenand, Kow.	Drokin, Kelk.	Mac 3 Kings country.	Knalinogh, Well M.	New abbay K lier, Newbayne, We, Newcastle, Dubl.	Ruder, D.St. C	TRYME,East M. Tully,Kaider. Tulcard,Wex.
m. s.Wext.	B	Cloghkendel, Kelk.	Dromeconroph, Dalois.	Heskin,Wax/.	Knockbourne Ked	M BERM	Entkey,East M.	B Zw. au
ter vertice, 3 dead on the control of the control o		Clophic and Relig. Clophic Relig. Cl	Dong Labon. B. Dong the Dad in. Dong the	Heimen, Word, Michelm Edil, M	Knoger, East M.	Nemcaftle, Dukl. M Juft M. Newns, Juft M. Newtowne, Ceter. Newtowne, Cater. Newtowne, Cater. Mork J. Egf M. Newtowne, Chief. North J. Egf M. North J. North J. North N. North J. North N. Nur B. R.J. Nur B. R.J. Nur B. R.J.	Rock East M.	Tute, Wolf M. Tymolog, Daty.
now the Yu.County.	١.	Clomoghan, Kim. County.	Drone-Keff. 6. Drone-Keff. 8.	Heys, Wex. 3 Hickors, Killer, B	Knokarchall Killer. K ocknee, Carer.	Mork Leater	Radicii, Well to. B	v
trofilder. Reserved M.	B.	Clogra o, E. Most b.	Drone-Kell O. Dronney, East M. B. Drymney, Daid.	Hoke Wex f. Holimond, Dald.	Knokibebay, IVeft M. Knock, Dakley.	Newton, Companie New gate, K. il.	Second Dall	Mac Coor.
dell,Egft,M. g,Waxf.	3.	Clontogh, Kr/fe Clont, Qu.Com.	Drymney, Dabl. Dublin hauen, Dubl. DVBLIN, Dubl.	Honon, Well M. B Horfey, Wex. B Hothil, K. Courty. B	Khokyn Dalder, Kollanh 1996 M	Northgrounds, Dall. Novall Well M. C	Sanham, Gaid.	Mac Cerer. Nac Kilder.
Hand, Wexf	2.	Clone, K. It,	Dulyck, E.g. M. B. Drumfer, Keik, Dungernan, Keik, Dunnlaglin, Keik, Duntaglin, Keik, Duren, E.g. M. B. Dune BurKeiler,	Hothil, K.Courty. B	Kroghali Kelk.	Nure flu.Q. County.	hydr Bull-le Ba. Sagard, Dukl. Sannogh, W. & M. Sannogh, W. & M. Sare, Q., Cassary, Saule, Laff M. Seaton, Dukl. Secton, Dukl. Secton, Ba.	Mac Ceser. Vadok, Scener. Mac Kuller. C Kuller. Vanney, Skel.
congon Dail.	-	Close, Vex.	Danganian, Kelk,	Hours, Dud.	K fraen, Wex.	offen O	Saule, Eaff M. C. Seaton, Dad!	Vanney, Same
gar Enfl.M.	- 1	Clonetolk Ka Coury.	Duringlin, Kelt. Duren, East M. B.	Howel, Kelk C Hoyn, Well M. B Hoyre Wex. B Hugh, Ke'k. B	Kyrok west.	Old-court, Dadden	Seden Eafl M. Senkillo Kel	Vera, SW-JE M.
hinn, Est M.		Clotte rewer, Ki. Courty.	Done Bu:Kalder, E	Hoyre Wex. B	Kyrok <i>ave</i> s. Lachath,Killer,	Nur flu Kel. Officer, Q. Compy, Old-coure, Dablan, Frot Cuter, Onely, Cuter, Ottoons!, Cater, Owin mac Hugh, K.Co.	Shelhela, Cater. Shemalyn, Wer.	c 2
iston Kingi Cuany. Nasia, Kali	.	Clone zone, Ki, County.	Ecomans, Dady, S.	Hugh,Ke'k. B Husk,Kilder. B	Lackan Sier. B	Otmond, Cater.	Shenkin, Dad'.	C Watch, Skiller.
ner Kelle.	ı	Clone tower, K. Cousty. Clone tom-ckely, Wex. Clone zone, K. Cousty. Clonekene, Kuller. Clonelin, Nov. County. Clonelofe West M.	Edmond Butler, Carer.	Mac Datas	Lacy, Well M. 28 Ladarath, East M.	Owin mae Hugh, K.Cs.	Sherney, Dud. B	Walter, Sw.Meath. Warthill,E.Meath.
re Kenge Ca. in 150 Alas h	8.	Clonelofe Well M. Clonemel, W. Men.	Edomans, Dadd. S. Edmond Butler, Contr. Edwards, Well M. B. Eson Kol. Boylkare, West. Mac J. Eron. J. Q. Comety. Esker, durkingt Courty. Fataerow, Dad.	Iefferey Dubl. B	Ladones, Well M. B.	Palace, K. Conary, Park, Saf. C. Hole } Duk, Patrick,	Shehla, Caer. Shenalyn, Wez. Shenkin, Daé. Shenkin, Daé. Shenory, 2, Charty. Shenory, Dakl. B Shrwitz, Wafé M. Shiphola, Wez. Shopland, Wez. Shopland, Wez. Shopland, Caer. Skepk, Kidar. B Skare, Wez. Bare, Wez.	Wardhill,E.Meseb. C Warsen, & Kuller.
tops Coart, Kelly.		Clememoney, Kelk.	Fren 2. Comery.	High mac Dables	Macour 7-K-L	Park Ke/.C.	Simylio,Ceer.	Warren, & Koller. B Warren, & E.Merb.
khanie Dull.		Clonemore Kings County	Esker.Su:King: County,	Ihan villa, Teli.	Lageir Faft,M	Patrick, Dall.	Stryck, Q. Comery. Skaph, Kolder. B	C 2 v./
rath, Kilder.	- 1	Clonciale Well M. Chemonely Male. Clonemoney, Kall. Clonemoney, Kall. Clonemoney, Kall. Clonemone, Well means Clonemone, Dasl. Clonemone, Dasl. Clonemone, Dasl. Clonemone, Mall. Clonemone, Mall	Casering Lawry, Fatherow, Dasie, Falterow, Dasie, Falterow, Posteria, Fatherow, Fortantia, British Control of the Control Federation of the Control	Mac J Dahlin . Idway, J Dahlin . Idway, J Dahlin . Idway, J Dahlin . Idiffere J Pold . I . Identifere J Dahlin . Idano,	Lackull, Koller, Lackun, Kolle	Dartick, Dahl. Partick James J. Dahl. Partick James J. Dahl. Partick James J. Dahl. Patine, K. Left M. Patine, K. Left M. Patine, L. Left M. Patine, L. Left M. Patine, L. Left M. Patine, L. Left M. Peris, Dahl. Peris, Dahl. Deris, L. Left M. Peris, L. Left M. Peris, L. Left M. Patine, L. Left M. Patine, L. Left M. Patine, L. Left M. Politicker, Left M. Politicker, Left M. Politicker, Left M. Politicker, Left M.	Start, Wore Start, Carrier Start, Carrier Start, Carrier Start, Carrier Stron, Left M. Strong,	Warten & Kul
an W Meeth.	- 1	Clone-Mulerd, Ki. Causey	Farfeco,W.Meath. B	Inch Roure, Q. Centry.	Lambey, Dubl.	Paine,Cater. R	Skirk, Cestr.	Water, & Kall.
wite, Deubl.	- 1	Clonenmore, Dail,	Farfeco, W. Meath. B. Fasthing, W. Meath. B. Fedan, Kings Commy.	Jhon Well M. B.	Lemrusnoon.Kir.Com.	Paine,Killer. B	Skarlok, Well M. B	Caltie. Q.Cousey.
2.Kolk. 3 Felk.	B.	Cloney, Kalker, Cloney, JV of M.	Fedorrogh, Ceter.	Jrifft, Well M. B	Lesfe, Q. County.	Paine, Eagl M. B. Payeller, Eagl M. B. Petrs, Dadd. B. Pers, Eagl M. B.	Skynik, Q. Courty.	Water Carlie. Co. Consuy. B Log M. Water Factor Water Factor Water Factor Water Factor Wenter Factor Facto
in. r.1Ver.	2.	Clonogh, Kilder, Clonogoskin Fell ar	Fittld Daffer, B.	Juh, Dabl. B	Lench, Ref. 28	Persick Hand Paddin	Slayne, Fall M.	Groue, \$ m/L
and Care.	-	Clonin, Ferf.		Julian, Esfi M. Julian, Esfi M.	S 3wes.	Mac 3 Q. Cause	Slepehill, Q.Comry.	Wented,E.Meeth, WEXFORD,West
and Dall	. 1	Coghan, Ki.Caury	Foskin, Kulder, B.	Katrdeff, Kelk.	S Leonard, Wex. Leucy, D.Couery, Leftee fin Koller.	Phaloghbantre, We.	Situmeroler E./	Wexford ? Wex.
sec Telk.	1	Coloree, Kings Co.	Forman, Daldin, B. Fookin, Kaldin, B. Fookin, Kaldin, B. Fookin, Kaldin, D. Freein, Wear, B. Freequent, English, B. Freequent, English, B. Freequent, English, Kalder, Freeten, C. Kilder, Freeten, Kilder, B. Fuller, Kilder, B. Fuller, Kilder, G.	Mac Joseph K. Katrdeff, Kolk. Mac Dold. Kalraine, J. Dold. Karadjoran, Dold. Karadjoran, Dold. Karad karone. Karbanjan, Ni dav. Karbanjan, Ni dav. Karbanjan, Kold. Kardonkin, Kolf. Kardonkin, Kolf.	Lettee fin Kaller. Lewmanhan K.Couers.	Place, East M. Polfoed, Wa.	Small SeelM.	B Q.Casar
see Kelk, ro 11° M sek, es,Dook! ne Au:Kilder,	8.	Cole, velt M. B.	Pregress Eeft M. B	Karaldgrang Dubl. Karne, Wed M.	Lewmanhan, K.Cousty, Leimester, B.:Cassary, Lions, Keider, C	Politeffer, Egf 14. Polimonton, Carer,	Somer, EgFM. B	Wey, SQ.Coony. C Sud. White, Sud.
ne Hu: Kilder, De fle: Bu.Cone.		Coledophra, 1818 31.	Prompul, Kalder.	Can Burney Byer.	Lifenalin, Weff M.	Polsome Rd.	Southgrounds, Wex.	White, 5 Wicklee flu:Ds. WJCKLO,Dablis,
ne flu. Esft M. n: flu:Esft M.		Colmaller, Fall M.	Fuller, Kilder, B.	Kathanghan, Kaidar.	Lockbay West M.	Porter, Dald. B	Spela K.L. B Stamelyn, Dubl.	WICKLO,Dublin.
kland, Kr. Comp.	.1	Colraine, Dub!	Fingall,Duklin.	Kayn-donkin.Kaft.	Locker, W.M.esh. B. Logh, Q.courty. C. Loghten, Das. C	S 3.K/	Scancour, K L Stepleron, Fed 1	B Wildock, \$ Left M. B William, \$ Enft M.
the Mulkidler, we flue Bu Come, we flue Bu Esf M. we flue Esf M. we flue Esf M. ckland, Kr. Come, wok, IV. Mach, where Wax, y flue Doub!	B.	Colyn, Ki.Cour y.	Leafe?	Kedynogh, Q.County.	Loghren, Das. C	Poulet, 5 "" Poures Court, Dull.	Stenens, Koter B.	William, & East M.
· Land		Combrer, 112ff M.	G Leafe } 2 cours, Gallen } 2 cours, Gallen flu Kr & Galtre, Faft M.	Kelle, Kelk. B	himetter, Eccasary, Liona, Kafar, C. Lifenalin, Welf M. Liftonen, Kaf. Locks, W. Mael, B. Locks, W. Mael, B. Locks, C. Loghren, Dash. C. Loghren, Dash. C. Loghren, Dash. C. Longwood, Erf M. Lord, K. Logh, L. M. Lord, K. Logh, L. M. Logh, L. M. Logh, M. Logh, M. Lowater, Wolf M. B. Lowater, Wolf M. B. Lowater, Wolf M. B. Lowater, Wolf M.	Politifier, Zoft M. Polimonton, Cater. Polimone Rai. Polimone Rai. Polimone Rai. Politifier B. Poter, Daid. B. Poter, Daid. B. Potersph.Rci. S. S. K. K. Poulet, Sort, Daid. B. Poulet, Sort, Daid. B. Quistern, G. S.	Steuen, E. M. S Stockneloff, We.	B Villiam, English, B Villiam, Cater. Villiam, Wolf M.
nest Meath.		Consph, Daki. Contboy, 15 off M.	Galtre, Faff 31.	Kelcolen Krider	Lord, Kitter. B	QVEENS towner Q. Cr.	Stokes, Well M. B	William, Cater.
ack, E Meath,	- 1	Role Conell, Q.County	Grellen, Dukle.	Kellean H'exf. Kellean, Eefl M.	Longhmerken, Wex, Lowster, Wolf M. B			Villiam, Wolf M.
	0.	Confell II'. Mee'b.	Garland, Eqf M. B.	Kellegh, Kner county.	Lowater, Kel.	Quinthert, Kalder.	Swerd, Dade.	Vincourt, S East M.
nno,14°21/. nnogh,14'./f M.	B.	Confile, Kell.	Galvay, Eigl M., Garetton, Dode. Galtand, Eagl M., Garanton, Eigl M., Garmanton, Eigl M., Gritan Kell., Gathon, Eigl M.	Kelles, Enil M.	Lucirell Krister B Lylin K. der. Lyrges 18 ex. C Lyrges 18 ex. C	R Rabelts, Kvl. Rabelts, Kvl. Rabrody, Kvl. Rabaptan, Kvl. Rabaptan, We. Rabaptan, Dud. Rabn. Esg. M. Rain, Catter. Raksonn, Kvl.	Sex on R Aler. B Sweed, Dald. K tock C Cater. Swiftin, S Cater. Symply, Cater. Mic SR Caser. Syme, SR Caser.	Vintered,Q.Cenery.
more.Dask.	1	Consequence Rev.	Gart, Feff M.	Kelles Kelk. Kell Kidder.	yrgesis ex. C	Rabelts, Kvl. Rabrods Kvl.	Symlyr, Carer.	B Vogken, { Dakies. Vogher, { kilder. heart { kilder. Voodstock, Kilder.
therton, E. Meeth.	- 1	Mac Corbelyle, 9 /au	Greek West B.	Kelkennutte M.	rysnau Jareji M.	Racarbo, Kel.	Mic Ch.Come	heart & Artifer.
therton,E.Mach. Ige,Kelè. vne Kelder.	R I							
te Kall	B. C. C.	Claser Lived M. Changh, Kalen Z. M. Changh, Kalen Z. M. Changh, Kalen Z. M. Changh, Kalen Z. M. Changh, Changh, Changh C	Gmthen, E. of M. Green, E. of M. Green, E. of M. Geren, E. of M. Geren, M.	Associoum Aich. Associoum Aich. Associoum Aich. Associoum Aich. B. Kelland, B.	M O Streft.M. Magah } streft M.	Raheren, Dubl.	Tabraker, Kidar. Tarunihme, We.	yoodtock,kuass.

Chap.4. THE PROVINCE OF CONNAVGHT. His Province named by Giraldus Cambrensis, Conachtia, and Conacia, by the Irifo, Conaughty, and by Engliftmen Connaught; is bounded eaftward, with part of the County of Leinfer; northward, with part of vifter. Conacia, by the Irish, Conaughty, westward, with the west-maine Ocean; and on the fourth, it is confined with a part of the Pronjnce of Mounster, closed in with the river Shannon, & butting against the Kingdome of Spaine. (2) The formethereof is long, and towards the north & fouth ends thin and narrow; but as it grows towards the middle, from either part it waxeth still bigger & bigger: extending in length from the river Shannon in her fouth, to Enis Kelling in her north, 126. miles, and the broadest part is from Tromor in her East, to Barragh-Bay in her West, containing about fourescore. The whole in circuit and compasse is aboue foure hundred miles. (3) The aire is not altogether so pure & cleare, as in theother Prouinces of Ireland, by reason of certaine moilt places (couered ouer with graffe) which of their foftnes are viually tearmed Boghes, both dangerous, and full of vaporous and foggy mifts. (4) This County as it is divided into feueral portions, so is every portion scuerally commended for the foile, according to the feafonable times of the yeare. Twomond or the County Clare, is faid to be a country fo conveniently fituated, that either from the fea or foile there can be nothing witht for more, then what it doth naturally afford of it selfe, were but the induftry of the Inhabitants answerable to the reft. Galmay is a land very thankfull to the painful husbandman, & no lesse commodious and profitable to the shepheard Maio, in the Roman Provincial called Mageo, is replenished both with pleasure & fertility, abundantly rich in Cattle, Deer, Hawks & plenty ofhony. Slege (coasting upon the Sea) is a plenteous country for feeding and railing of cartle. Le-Trim(a place rifing vp throughout with hils) is to ful of ranke graffe and forrage, that (as Solinus reporteth) if cattle were not kept fomtimes from grafing, their fulnes would endanger them. And Roscoman is a territory, for the most pare plain and fruitful, feeding many heards of Cattle, and with meane husbandry and tillage, yeelding plenty of corne, As every particular part is thus feuerally profitable by inbred commodities; so is it no lesse commended (in the generality) for the many accommodate and fit Bayes, Creekes, and nauigable Rivers, lying vpon her Sea-coasts, that after a fort inuite and prouoke the inhabitants to naugation. (5) Such as in ancient time made their abode and habitations in this Prouince, were the Gangani, who were also called CONCANLAVTER I.& NAG-NAT Æ. As the Luceni (that were next neighbours vnto them) came from the Lucenfy (in Spain) to those Gangani, and Concam may sceme a so to have fercht their derivation from the Concani (a nation of the felf same country) both by the affinity of name, and vicinity of place. In Strabo, according to the diversity ofreading, the same people are named Coniaci & Co. nife: & Silius testificth them at the first to have been Seythians, & to have vied ordinarily to drinke horses bloud(a thing nothing strange among the wild Irifb euen of late daies.) And some may also happily sup-pose that the Irish name Conaughty, was compounded of Concani and Nagnata: Howlocuer, it is fure that these were the ancient Inhabitants of this Country, as is to bee feene in Ptolomie (6) The Principall City of this Province & which may worthily bee accounted the third in Ireland, is Galway, in Irifh, Galline, built in manner much like to a Tower. It is dignified with a Bishops See, & is much frequented with Merchants, by reason whereof, and the benefit of the road and hauen, it is gainful to the and divided as enfueth. Inhabitants through trafficke and exchange of rich

fmal in-lets and out-lets, in a rew, are the Hands called Arran, of which many a foolish fable goes as if they wer the llands of the lining, wherin none died at any time; or were fubicet to moreality; which is as superstitious an observation, as that yied in some other corners of the country, where the people leave the right arms of their Infants males vichriftned(as they terme it) to the end Afoperfitious that at any time afterwards, they may give a more deadly, and engratious blow when they strike: which things do not only flew how palpably they are carried away by traditious obscurities, but doe also intimate how full their hearts bee of inuctorate reuerige. (7) This Prouince presents no matter more worthy of memory, then the battle of Knoe-toe (that is) The hill of Knoe-toe axes, under which, the greatest rabble of rebels, that were euerseene before in Ireland (raised and gathered together by the arch-rebels of that time, William Burk O-Brien, Mac-Nemare, and O-Carrol) were after a bloody ouerthrow discomfited & put to flight by the noble feruice of Girald-Firz-Girald Earle of Gildare. And the fup pression of certain trifb (the posterity of Mac-Willid) who vitirping a tyranny in these parts, raged somtimes upon | The rebellion o themselus, with mutual injuries, & oppressed the poore the posts people a long time with extorting, pilling & spoilingsto as they left scarce one house in the country vnristed, or vnrased; but were bridled and repressed (cuen in our remebrance) by the feuerity & resolution of the Commisfioner of those times, who in his wisdom and policy well understood, that their excessive insolence, & those their vniust doings, wold be a means to draw the people away from the due obedience to their Prince : fuch therefore as refused to obey the laws, and sided with the tumultuous, with all care and diligence he foon feattered, forcing their Forts, and driving them into woods, and lurking holes (for troubling the bleffed estate of tranquillity)til the L. Deputy, who took pitty of them, ypon their The Rebels feat humble supplication, commanded by his missites, that they should be received upon terms of peace. But they being a stiffe neckt people, tooke armes againe, entred a fresh into actual rebellio, drauc away booties, made foul vprores, & vpon faire promifes procured the aid of the Scotift Handers from out of the Hebrides: wherupon the afech. Gouernor affebled an army, & purfued them with fuch powerful violence through the woods and forrests, that after 6.or 7.weeks, being gricuoufly hunger bitten, they fubmitted the felues in al humility, a ne suanis, allo of the Seois, he by day and night affronted fo neer, & agains, and we received. submitted theselues in al humility. The auxiliary forces had kild & drownd about 3 000. of the in the river Moin. Three thousand (8) About the year 1 316. there was fuch a great flaugh- Scott drowned ter made of the triff in this Prouince of Consught throgh a quarrel that arose therebetween two Lords or Prin the triff of Consught through ces, that there were flain on both fides about 4000 men; | xavgbr. and so great a tribulation at that time came upon the people, that they did denour & eat one another, so as of 10000 there remained not about 300 living. And it is reported for truth, that the people were then so hunger starued, that in Church-yeards they tooke the dead bodiesout of their graves, and in their feuls boiled the flesh & fed vpon it :yea, and that women did eate their owne children. Thus appeared the ire and anger of God, in punishing their fins, and feeking their conversion. 9 Places memorable, arc, I sig Ceath, welknown by the Monastery of Colm's (a deuour Saint) founded for Scots I su Ceath. & Englishmen; and Inis Bouind, which Bede calleth white Inis Bouind, Calfe Ifle. Alfo Maio, a Monaftery built (as Bede writeth) for 30 men of the English nation. Likewise the Ba-ronie of Boile under Curlen hils, where in times past was Curlew hils, a famous Abbey built, together with the Abbey of Beatitude, in the yeer of grace (152. These Abbais & Monafteries erected at the first for religious services, and Beattude. through ignorance & other obscurities diuerted fince vnto superstitious vies, are now made the ruines of time. (10) The Prouince of Connaught is at this day strengthned with 14. Castles, traded with nine marker Towns.

i43

M m

commodities, both by sca and land. Not far from which, neare the west shoare that lies indented with

ATTE

Galway.

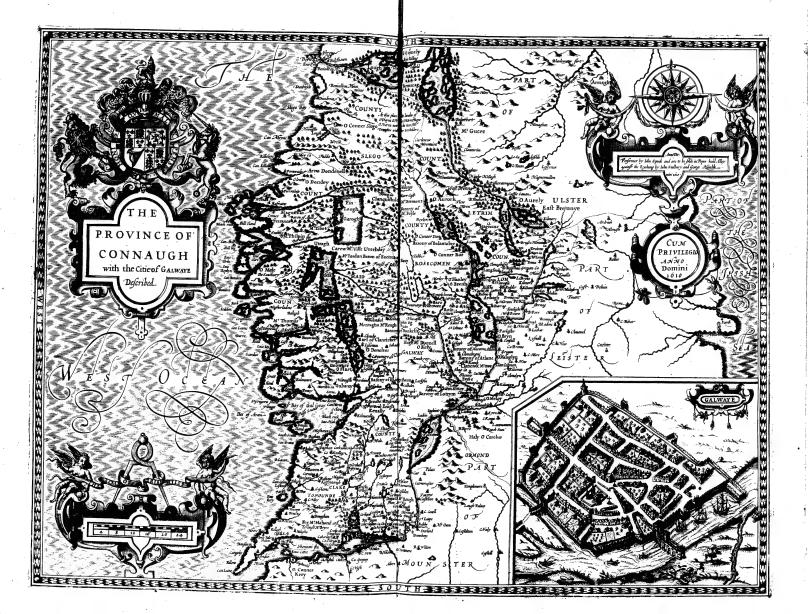
Mais.

Slege.

Le-Trim,

Roscoman.

The Citic of



Mac

Lefalke, Galu

Sleg roghlands,

Harra nei-

Camagh, Longf.

Camme, Letr. L.

Dolphin, Gal.

Donaffe , Ciar:

Book.4.

The bounds of

THE PROVINCE OF VLSTER.

Chapis.

Welfb-Braanes Visw, in Irofb Cui Guilly, in Latine Vitonia, and Visita, in English Vifter; on the North is divided by anarrow Sea from Seaston Southward it extends it felf to Connagh and Leinster; the East part lieth upon the Irifb Sea ; and the West part is

continually beaten with the boifterous rage of the maine West Ocean. This Prouince and furthest part of Ireland, affronteth the Scotift Islands which are called the Hebrides, and are scattered in the Seas betweene both kingdomes; whose inhabitants at this day is the Irif-Sest, fucceifor of the old Seythian,

The forme

The sire.

(2) The forme thereof is round, reaching in length from Coldagh haven in her North, to Kilmore in her South, neere an hundred miles; and in bredth from Black-Abbe, in her East, to Calebegh point in her West, one hundred thirty and odde miles: The whole in circumference, about foure hundred and twenty miles.

(3) This Countrey feldome feeleth any vnfeafonable extremittes, the quicke and flexible windes cooling the heat of Summer, and foft and gentle shewers molifie the hardnes of the winter : Brieflie, the frozen nor torrid Zone have not heere any viurpation; the clouds in the aire, very sweete and pleasant, yea and when they are most impure are not vnholfome nor of long continuance, the (4) This equall temperature, causeth the ground to The foile.

bring foorth great flore of feuerall Trees, both fit for buil-

ding, and bearing of fruite; plentifull of graffe for the bree ding of cattle, and is abundantly furnished with Horses

Sheepe, and Oxen; the Rivers likewife pay dubble tribute.

Plentie of Salmons. Negligence of

deepe enough to carrie vellels either for pleasure or pro fit, and fish great store, both for their owne vies, and commodity of others. Salmens in some Rivers of this Countie. sbound more in number then in any River of Europe, To barren, troubled with Longber, Lakes, and thicke woods, yet is it euery where fresh and full of cattle, and forrage, ready at all times to answer the husbandmans paines : Bu Nature is there to little beholding to Art or Industrie, that the various shew upon bankes, the skady groues, the greene meadowes, hanging hills, and fields fit for corne, (if they were manured) doe seeme to be sangry with their inhabitants for fuffering all to grow wild and barbarous, through their owne negligence.
(5) This Countrey in Ptolomies daies, was wholly pol

The ancient Their cuftome

that Ifland

to fweat by S. Patricke flaffe. Their custome re

(6) The people of this Pronince, were accustomed in controuerfies and folemne protestations, to swear by S Patricks-Staffe, which Oath they feared more to breake then if they had fworne by the holy Enangelift. Their ancient cultome in making their King, was this. A white Cow was taken, which the King mult kill, and feeth the famein water whole, then mult bee bath himselfie therein starke naked; and sitting in the Cawdron wherein it was fod accompanied with his people round about him, hee and they yied to earthe fielh and drinke the broath wherein they yield to earthe nein and offinke the Divolar wherein he fat, without cupor diffu, over for hand. How farre thefe preferiptions and cultionnes were different from the conformities of other civill Monarchies, wee may well perceive by thefe and other like observations of those groffe times, and as yet are they more barbarous then is any other part of the Island besides. (7) Historians relating of Ireland, tells of several Islands in the several Provinces: Some full of Angells,

felled by the Volunti, Darni, Robogdy, and Erdini, who

branched and fored themselves into the severall parts o

S. Patricks Pur-

Elenu Fruga-

Bay Sleg.

Wreik, Sleg.

Enis Pike, Clar.

Slew Welnam, Maio.

fome full of Diuells, some for male onely, some for semale. fome where none may liue, fome where none can die; and fuch effects of trees, ftones, and waters, that a man (but of easie conceit) may well esteeme them, as heedles as vn-certaine. So also S. Patrickes Purgatorie (a thing of much note in the track of this Province :) is a vault or narrow caue in the ground, neere a Lake (called Erne Lyf-fer) much spoken of, by reason of (1 wot not what) fearefull walking spirits and dreadfull apparitions, (or rather some religious horror) which)as fome ridiculoully dreame) was digd by Fife when hee went downe to parley with those in hell. This is the caue which the inhabitants in these daies call Ellann' Frugadory, that is, The Isla of Purgatorie, and S. Patrick: Purgatory: for some persons lesse deuout then credulous, affirme that S. Patrick (or rather Patricius Secundar an holic Abbat of that name) labouring the conuerfion of the people of this Province, and much inforcing

the lifeto come, they replied contemptuouslie vntohim,

that valetle they faw proofes of these joies and paines hee

preached, they would not lofe the possession of their prefent pleafures, in hope or feare of things to come, they wift not when. Whereupon (as they fay) he obtained at Gods hands by earnest prairer, that the punishments and torments which the godlesse are to suffer after this life, might bee there presented to the eie, that so hee might more cassly roote out the finnes and heathenish errors, that flucke fo fall in the hearts of the Irif. But touching the credit hereof(although common fame, and fome records doc viter it) I neither will vrge the beleefe, nor regard, feeing it is no article of our creede. (8) Matters memorable within this Province, are thefe: Matters memo

First, that the Bishops of Ireland were wont to be cosecrated rable. by the Arch-bishop of Camerbury, in regard of the Primacy The Arch-biwhich they had in this Countrey; vntill such time as John Papirio a Cardinall was sent thither from Pope Eugenius the fourth, to reforme Ecclesiastical discipline in this Hand, which was then growne so loose, that there were translati which was then growned 1901s; triat there were training-ons, and pluralities of Bifhops, according to the will and pleaface of the Metropolitane. Also that the Irishmen in were accustomed to leave and for sake their wedded wives for take their

at their owne free wills, whereof Lanfrancke Arch bishop of Cauterburie, complained vnto Therdalmae King of Ireland: And had not this Nation beene corrupted with this vice, even vnto these our daies; both the right of lineal! fuccession, had been more certaine among them, and the Gentry and Comminalty, had not in such cruelties imbrued themselues, with such effusion of their ownekind dreds bloud, about their inheritances and legitimation, (9) The principall place in this tract, is Armagh necre

(9) The principal place in this tract, is Armago neere who the river Kalin, which (albeit it maketh a poore flew) is the Archiepifeopal See and Metropolitane of the whole Island. Before S. Patrick had built there a faire City, for site, forme, quantity, and compaile, modelled out (as he (aith) by the appointment and direction of Angels, this place was named Drumfalich; the Irifb tell much that it received the name of Queene Armacha : But the better opinions are that it is the fame which Bede calleth Dearmach, and out of the Scould and Fife language interpretent it The Field of Oaker. Here(as S. Bernard writeth) S. Parick (the Apostle of Ireland) tuled in his life time, and rested after death: In honor of whom it was of fuch venerable estimation in old time, that not onely Bifhops and Priefts, but Kings also and Princes were (in generall) subject to the Metropolitane thereofin all obedience, and to his Gouernment alone.

Among the Arch-bishops of this Prouince S. Malachy is famouled, who first prohibited Priests mariage in Ireland, and (as S. Bernard Laith, who wrote his life at large) borrowed no more of the natiue barbaroufnes of that Countrey, then Sea fiftes doe faltnes of the Seas, Alfo Richard Fiez- Rithard Fitz Raij Real/(commonly called drivensessam) to framous memory, who turning theedge of his ftyle, about the yeer 1355, began to oppose his opinion against the Order of Mendicans Frier, as detelling in Chesilians, such voluntary begging. The chief Fort in this track, is Exis Kelling, defended by the Babellin in Avert 1500, and won his Dundled month.

Rebells in the yeere 1 593, and won by Dondall a most valiant Captaine: neere vnto which is a great downfall of wa-ter, termed The Salmon-Loan: of which there is a common. The Salmons speech currant among the inhabitants, that it was once firme ground, very populous and well husbanded with til-lage; till it was fudainely ouer-flowne with waters and turned into a Lake, for some filthic abominable acts of

tamounts a Last, too stoller finite administor acts of the people again Nature, committed with Beafts,

(ao) The places of Religion, fequefired from other worldly feruices and conferanted to holy purpofes, treefted in this Prounce, were: The Abbey which the weth it felfe at Donegal: The Monasteric of Derie, where the Irife rebells
Shane O-Neal, received such an overshrow (by Edward Randslob, renowned for his feruice in the behalfe of his Country) that hee could neuer after recouer the lotle hee fustained at that time: The Monasterie neere vnto the river Liffer: The famous Monastery at the Bay of Knockforgwood Lagier - Incremous reconstructions of the Came inflution, stance, & order, as was that ancient Abbey in England, neere vate Obsfire called Banchow: Alfo Mellifam Abbey founded by Danald a King of Vriel, and much commended by S. Bernard: And laftly, the most renowned Monastery, built at Armagh in the yeer of our Salnation 610. out of which very many Monasteries were afterwards propagate both in Britane and Ireland. These pla-ces were far and neere frequented & sought with by great confluences of Pilgrims, till Time produed their devictions to bee erronious, and the pure light of the word reuesled, opening the cies of their underflanding, hath taught them to flake off the flame of fuch Superflitions.

(11) That the people of this County might bekept with- The Division of in the boilds of their duty, this prouince bath been fecured Viller. with 56.caftles & forts & for trade of commerce 9. Market townsappointed, being divided into these Couries ensuing.

Counties, Congress of Counties, Coun

wives at their



THE FIRST INDE OR ALPHABETICAL TABLE,

containing the principall matters in the Maps both of ENGLAND and JRELAND: the first number noting the Page, and the fecond the Section.

Fol. Sell. Ber Conwey town like a City. 123.6

Aber frame the Prince of Wales Ber Conwey town his Court, 99.8.

Adelme founder of Malmeibury Monastery. 25.8 Adulph reedifieth Peterborow Monastery, vpon fortification limiting the Romane Prouince. 6.9 Prince Arthur his Monu-

Saint Albanes Ifle. 94.8 Saint Albanes Towne and Alesbury wherefore much frequented. frequented, 43.7

Alexander King of Scots, King of the Westerne Ilands, and of Man.

92,16 Alfred (or Elfred) reftoreth the Vniuerfity of Ox-Ford. 45. 7 Buildeth Colledges, and placeth Readers there Almanac of Haruest men in

Denbighshire. 119.3 Alney Iland, Ainey Iland. 47.19
Amble-side or Amboriana. 84.10 Ambresbury Abbey. 17.6. of 25.9 Annalites where feated.

Anderida Citie. 9. 4 Andradswald. S' Annes-well at Buxftones.

What Cantreds and Commots it hath. How named and why. The forme and dimensi-

on of ir. The Aire and Commodities thereof. The feat of the Druids, How divided. By whom infefted and I fubdued.

Hundreds and Townes thereof. Antimonium. See Stibium. Antiquities in West-riding. 79-7-

Anwickefield, 89. 10.
Appleby Towne and Cattle in Westmorland 85.8

Aquila prophesieth 17.6 Archbishops Sees in Britain three. Armagh an Archiepiscopall and Metropolitane See in Ireland. 145.9

Arran Ilands neere Galway 143.6. Arthurs Chaire an high mountaine, 109.4 King Arthurs round table in Barkel at Klanfanan in Denbigh - Barnet field. 119. 6 Bartholanns and his three what occasion. \$5, 7. Shire. 119. 6 | Int: Agricola his trench or Prince Arthur keepeth his Court at Ludlow. 71.7

ment or Sepulchre. 51.5 The graduation of it, ibid.

Warman.

99.7

Battle-bridge.

9.7 Monastery. 39.5 Aruon i. Can Naruan.
Alcluid i. Dunbritton. 99.7 britton.

132. 12 Ashes making ground fruit-Battaile of Standard. 81.7 119.4 Bath in Somersetshire what full. 119.4 Ashridge much renowned

called. for a feigned Miracle. Saint Affaph in Northweles an Epifcopall See. 99.11 Beau-marifh, why fonamed Bloud-raine. 15.8.078.9.

& 121.9 See Bonouer. Afroites the precious Thomas Becket his Tombe. fronc found at Shugbury in Warwickeshire. 53.7 Bede a Monke of Were-Alfo neere Bener. 61.3 mouth where borne,

143.5.

83.6
Saint Andree foundtelle of
Elf. Ely. 37. 5 Saint Andrees liberties.ibid. on of it. 41.2 The aire, foile, and com-Augustine first Archbishop of Canterbury. 6.5.

Augustines Oke in Worcefler shire. 51.6 fhire. 48. 3 The Ancient inhabitants

Auteri, what people in Ire-Anglesey Isle how confined

В 99.8 Badbury the West-Saxon-Kings Court. 17.6 Bainbrig an ancient place,

> Baldwine the great fortiers of Flaunders, 57.3
> Baucher or Bangor 2 City, Bennones, See Cleicester.
> Bennones, See Binchester. 121.9 Berinus the first Archbishop The ruines thereof. ibid.

A Bishops See. 99.9 Barkley Castle where King Edward the 2. was murdered. 47. 10 Barklow Hilles in Effex. 31. 5 Barkesbire whence it tooke

name. 27.1 Howitis bounded. 27.1 Berry fometime a famous The forme, measure and aire thereof. 27.2.3.4 Barth a towne in Scotland What commodities it yeeldeth. 27-4

habited.

How gouerned.

modities of Bedford-

Hundreds and Townes

therein. 42.

Bedford Towne and Caftle.

41.4

fhire,

thereof.

of Dorchester.

of the West-Saxons

ihid

His Circuit,

had.

deftroied by the mundation of Tai. 132.16
T-Bernedbwald the fourth By whom anciently in-27.5. part of Northwales, the What Religious houses it Boundes, Commodities, Cantreds and Commots, 37.10 Hundreds and Townes in it. Beuer in Tiui Riuer descriin Barkeshire. 28, 29. 9

City in Shropfhire, 71.9.

bed. 113. 3 Beuerley a Sanctuary. 81.5 Saint John of Beuerley, 81.5 fonnes planted in Ireland. Bibroces, what people, 25.5 137.8 89.9 Binbridge Ifle Binbridge Ifle 15.4 Binchester sometimes Beno. nium

81.7 Sir Richard Bingham his va-9.7 lour and wildome in repreffing Mac-Williams Bath in Somersetshire what posterity 143.7 names it had, and why so Bishopricks how many in

acle. called. 23.7 England and Wales. 6.4
43.7 Beault in Brecknockshire Blam, People in Ireland. 141. 4

124.8. Charles Bluns, Lord Mountioy quencheth the rebellion of Terene. 139.9 Bodman, the middle Towne of Cornwall 21, 8 The Climate thereof ibid:

A Bishops See remoued to Excester. 21.10 Queene Bodue raseth Maldan 31.8 Bone well in Herefordfbire,

49.6 Bonotier now Beaumarish.

The government & gra-Borders beweene Scotland and England, 6. 11 How described, and how Now the middeft of the

Empire, gouerned. 41.7 Borow what it fignifieth. 3.6 Borf-holder or Tithingman

Bainstrig an ancient place.
79.7
Baile Carri, the Bildops Palace of the floor of Man.
Baldwine the great forretter
Blooms Temple in 79.5
Baldwine the great forretter
Blooms Temple in 79.6
Baldwine the great forretter
Blooms Temple in 79.6
Bandan, See Chargen, 29
Baldwine the great forretter
Blooms Temple in 79.6
Bandan, See Chargen, 29
Baldwine the great forretter
Blooms Temple in 79.6
Bandan, See Chargen, 29
Bandan, See Chargen, 29
Bandan, 20
B 41, 10

78. 9 Bowes an ancient Towne in Westriding. Brasen armour digged vp in 6.8 Brafen-nose Colledge in this Stanford. His Circuit, ibid Stanford. 59.8. The Apostic and Bishop Breake-speare. See Hadran

the fourth. Breertons death in Cheshire Preacheth and Baptifeth prefignified. 73.9 at Oxford, 45.4 Breknock fbire, the nature of The Apostle also of the

South-Saxons, ibid. What Cantreues and

Commotts it hath *Buckingham-fine*, why fo *Caternamosfine*how bount-called. 43.1 ded. 99.96° 123, 11 *Cafferine* what rockes, 24.3 ded. 99.96° 123, 12 *Cafferine* what rockes, 24.3 What names it hath. *Cafferine* 778, 10 *Cafferine* 1.3 ded. 12.3 teacher 1.3 ded. 12.3 ded. 12.3 teacher 1.3 ded. 12.3 teache Breknockeshire how bounded Why fo named, ibidem The aire and foile. 43-3 The commodities, ibid. on of it. shid, 2 where planted. 39.4.
The aire and foile. ibid. Caftle Corner in Garnsey. The dimension of it. 109.2 By whom in olde time The nature of the foile. 3 inhabited, 43.4 Places of Religion there-Init Pearles ingendred. Cafter in Norfolke, some-By whome inhabited in 123.5; time Venta Icenorum 35.5 Cantrenes and Commots Catarick of Cattrick bridge olde time. in. 43.7 Hundreds and Townes In Brecknockesbire what Hundreds, Townes, and therein. 44 init. 99.9 an ancient place. 79.7 Bucking ham Townehow By what people in olde Cassienchlani where feated. Memorable places, 110 time inhabited, 123. 5 Breckenocke Towne and feated. 43-5 How gouerned. ibid. The graduation of it. Castle how seared, 109. 6 Townes, Rivers, and me-The Graduation of it. morable places. 124 O 43.4 ibidem. Caernaruon Towne or Ci- Catigern flaine in battell. How gouerned. ibid. Buleum Silurum. ty within a Castle, 123.6 7.11
The Ciuility and gouern- A Cauc or Chinke yeelding 109.5 Brigantes in England, where feated. 75. 5. of King Henry the fourth. ## A continue of the continue feated. 75. 5. 6.79 4 6 87.5. 6 83.5 ment thereof. 123.6 aftrangenoise. 105.6 The position. ibid.99.9 Causi people in Ireland. one origin much entermed in Kildere. 44.18 The fame that Verters, Caledonium or Descaledo-Robert Cell, the worthin Silm Briefs or Brien a Towns in Britaine Armo- Bufie-gap. 89.12 Caledonie. 2. 12 Centuriate or Hundreds. rica whence it had deno- Buxfton-wels. 67.8 Calphurnius Father of Saint | why fo called. 57.3 mination. 139.6 Saint Briocus where borne Patricke. 101.7 Ceorle or Churle. Camalet Hill in Sommerfet- Chamber in the Forreft, 73,7 and bred. 139.6 Bristow, a beautifull Citie. (bire. 23.10 Charles Duke of Orleance Camalodunum, See Malden. taken Prifoner. 9.8 23.7.647.8 Cambria. Chersey in Buckingham-A County by it selfe, 23. 7. & 47.8 Caer-Carados, why so cal-How gouerned. 23. 7 led. 71.5 Cambrideelt. fhire. 99.2 Cheefe of Effex. How gouerned. 2: 7 ded. The Carefulf the faired Towns by the Casess. 27.1 Chefibre how bounded, 23.1 Chefibre how bounded, 23.1 The forms, zire, and climate the cases of the company of the cases of th 71-5 Cambridgesbire how named Cheese of Suffolke. 33.5 extends. 1.3 The greatest Hand of the of all South Wales, 105. 4 How gouerned, ibid, The fite thereof, ibid. The forme, sire, and Cli-The length, bredth and mate. 73. 2 5 3 Roman world, Ibidem Circumference of it. The foile. Ibid. What Countries abut vp- Caer-diffe Castle, where Cheese there the best, The fire thereof. 1.2 Car-digas fire how bounded. 1.6 Cardigas for how bounded. 1.6 Cardigas for how bounded. 1.6 Cardigas for how bounded. Robert Curthofe was kept Whence it came to be fo 73-4 The men described. Ibi.e called. Wher religious houses Chiefe for men and wotherein. men. Sclenderly knowne to Townes, Caftles, Can-Commodities thereof. Alwaies true and loyall Inlius Čafar. 2.8 treues and Commots to their Soueraigne. Diuided-into Kingdomes therein. 100, 16 The County gluen to Gil-Hundreds and Townes in Cafars time. 2.9 The supposed division Their Gentry. 1bi. Made a principality. Ibid. therein. bert de Clare, 113.5 Cambridge Towne, and grathereof to Brutus three A Countie Palatine. Ibid. The forme and dimention thereof. 113.2 duation 37.4 Made an Vniuerfitie.ibid. Cammodities thereof. Came, a Riuer in Cambridgeduation fonnes. 2.10 The Commodities there-Britaine into three parts Hundreds, Townes, Ri- Candal. See Kendal. Hundreds and Townes Britaine the leffe in Ptolos therein. Chefter City, alias Westchemy is Ireland. uers, &c: init. 114. Cangi. Where they inhabi-Caerdigan Towneypon Ti- ted. 37.5 2.11 Britaine great and leffe how 37-5 fter. 73.7 The Minster or Catheto be taken. How fested and by Citie. 7.8 2.12 Britaine the higher, what it Citie. 7.8 The glory and graduatidrall Church by whom whom fortified. 113.7 is in Dio. 3.13 built. 72-7 A Corporation of it selfe. Britaine the lower, what it The graduation thereof. of it. is in Dio. ibidem Britaine divided by Severus ibid. Canterbury Archbishop.Pri-73.7 The position thereos 72.7 Caer-legion is Westchester. thefter. mate of all England.6.7
73.7 Metropolitane, and his into two Prouinces, Chefter Earledome, 72.8 Higher and Lower Caer leon an Archbishops Iurifdiction. 5.4 Chefter in the Street, fome-2.13 Sec. 6 King Canute with his Danes Caer-mardenshre how divi- Desfe, Britannia, prima, secunda Church built and twice ded into Cantreues and Caractacus a valiant British maxima Cafariensis, 2.14 burnt, Ibidem Chichester hath borne the Britaine divided into five Commots, 100, 18 Prince, 71.5 How it is bounded. Caresbroke Castle in the Isle parts, 2. 15 Prima, how limited, 3. 15 title of an Earledome. 103. 1 of Wight. 15.7
The forme and aire of it. The Position or Graduation Thidese Secunda how bounded. The Position thereof, ibi, 103.2.0 3 of it. Ibid. Chiltern-hils. Maxima Cafarienfishow By whom in ould time At Carleton in Leicester- Chirke-Castle in Chirkeland. limited. 2.15
Britaine for greatnes the fecond Iland in the world, Britaines conquest highly Hundreds, Townes, &c., init.
104
Remane Coynes there the found. 183-14
A Carmarden towne, what

The Call built. respected of the Romanes. 3.17 Britaines triumph magnificent. British bricks. 2, 17 names it hath. 102. 6 The Caftle built. Ibid. fo called. How gouerned, 103.6 The position thereof. bird. Cirque Ports. 7.5.
The position thereof, Carreg Castle 103.7 Circester why called Passe. British Ilands which they 2. 3 ibidem. Caruca and Carucata what rum wrbs,

ibid. past. ibi. Cites or Kitescote the Mo-Citie built Saint Cuthbert in Farne Ifle. 93 Clare County, See Twomond ton. 13.10 Cleicester where it stood. Cley, a part of Nottingham-Coccles on the toppe of Mountaines. 79.6 Coinage in old time. 57 5 Cole in Pits of what fubftance. 83.4 Cole-pits in the Bishopricke of Durham. 83.4 Cole in Pits at Cole-Ouerton in Leicestersbire. 61.1 Colchester by whom built. In Colchester Constantine the great, borne, 21.7 Colchester how fortified, Whereof it taketh name. 31.7 The Ciuil gouernment lbid. Colledges which were fuft endowed with lands in Norway were entombed. Combat betweene Edmund Ironside and Canutus. Comius Attrebas or of Ar- Crediton or Kirton a Bishops ras. 27.5 Commodus the Emperour Concani. See Gangani Concha mother to Saint Patricke. 101.7 & 132.12 Condercum. See Chefter in the Streete. Coning, 1 King, why fo called. led, 4.7 Connaught Prouince how it on thereof 143.2 The Aire and Bogghes. ibid. 3 By whome inhabited in old time 143.5 Extreme famine there. What Religious houses there, 143.9 Counties and Townes there. 144. Constantius Chlorus the Em-Comy River how named in old time 123.6 Iohn Cobland a famous and valiant Efquier. In the Map of Durham Bishop-Cobland a part of Cumberland. 87.3 Coppermine at Wenlocke in Shropshire. 71.9 In Cumberland. Corineus Coritani where they inhahi-55.4 6 59.6

Hownamed in old time. Corham or Conerham Ab-Of what circuit in times Corke County in Ireland heath past. ibi. fometime a Kingdome. Danelage nument of Califern, 7.11 Corke City in Monster, how Danmoniu. Clawdh offa. See Offa ditch. zens ibid.
Claufentium now Southamp- Cornany what Countreys The foile and graduation of Colche- Couentry a well walled City. all Christendome. 45.7 Counsell of the Marches of Columbbill where Kings of Wales ordeined. 71.7 Scotland, Ireland and Counfell at Torke erected. 132.18 Courts of Iustice altered his Hercules-like Statue. Cretingsbury Regular is bounded. 143.1 Cubs an Iland 1.2
The forme and dimens-Cumberland how bounded perour, diedat Yorke. 78.9 Cumri, 99.2 His Sepulcher, 78.11 Custodes, See Lieutenants.

with Cornift Rebels o- | Deuils arfe in the Peake 67.8 uerthrowne vpon Black- Deuils ditch 33.7 0 37.7 7.10 Denonshire name whence dermed How bounded Danmony, where placed The dimension thereof feated 139.6 An Episcopall See, ibid. Danewort herb, why so cal-19.2 led The aire and Soile of it. The marriage of the Citi-Darbyshire how bounded 10.2 What Ports and Hauens it 67.1 The forme and dimension hath 19.4 they held 51.40 53.4 ofit What commodities it 67.2 The aire and foile thereof yceldeth It giueth titles of Duke 61.7 Cornwall why so called, 3.2 ibid 2 The Inhabitants of it in Ø 21.1 and Earle 19.8 Of what temperature for old time What religious houses in 67.4 aire it is 21.2 Almost an Isle, 21.4 Commodities thereof 19.9 Hundreds and Townes 67.5 What religious houses therein The dimension thereof. therein 67.9 Diamonds gotten in Corne-Hundreds and Townes wall 21.2 The ancient and moderne thereof In Sommerfeifbire 22.6 Inhabitants Dyffrin Cluid 119.6 The fairest valley within Darby-Towne how named It giueth title of Earle in times palt 67.6 and Duke Wales 99 11 Diuelin or Dublin County 21.6 What commodities it by whom built ibid. The gouernment & gra-duation thereof ibid. yeeldeth. destitute of wood 141.3 21. 7 Religious houses therein. Dinelin Citie the chiefe in Darny, people of Ireland. Ireland, why called in I-rish Bala Cleigh 141.9 21.10 Hundreds and Townes Danid Disciple of Dubritherein Loiall to the Crowne of 2.2 Cottons family of Cening-ham in Huntingtonshire, cins vncle to King Ar-thur Archbishop of Me-England Howadorned shid. 11 How gouerned shid, nestia 6.6 Danid 2. King of Scots pri- Dinet. 1. Pembrokeshire foner in Notingham Ca-100.17 A Corporation and counftle 65. 6 Diuision of this whole Saint Danids City 101. 7 worke or Theatre 1. 1

A Nourcery of holy men A Diuision of England source ibid. fould in Canute his daies An Archiepiscopall See 101. 6 Division of England accor-The Cathedrall Church ding to Iurisdiction Archie-King William Conqueror thereof ibid. pifcopall 5.4 Saint Dauid Bishop, refu- Dobuni: where scated 45.4 teth the Pelagians. 113.7 Deeriuer glideth through Domesday booke, why so 27. 5 See translated to Excester. Pimple-meere without called 5.8 Dopnald King of Man ty-19.6 mixture 117.5 58.10 Deemfters in the Ifle of man rannizeth and flieth into 79.7 Sir Adam de Cretings. ibid. Ireland 91.5 Robert Boffs Crouchbacke Earle of Leicester rebel-Dehenbarth i. Southwales, Dorchefter (by Oxford,) an Episcopali Sec 45.4 Remoued to Lincolne 6.9 110, 15 leth 61.6 Buildeth the Abbay of Dela his fiue fonnes feated Had Archiepifcopall Iu-Saint Maries de Pratis in Ireland 137. 10 rifdiction 6, 8 Demetia or Dimetia .i. necre Leicester. 61.6 How feated He becommeth a Canon The civill Government Southwales . 100, 15 61.6 Demeta, what Nation and thereof The graduation of it 1/.6 where planted, 101.4. Dorcestershire , whence it Ø 103.4 Or Dimeta tooke name 17. 1 The forme and aire of it. Denbigh Towns and Castle How bounded in Northwales 99. 11. 87.0 2.3 The forme and measure Whence it tooke name An Earthquake there ofit The aire and foile thereof 87.5 Commodities thereof. without harme, 119.7 By whom pofferfied in old 87.4 How gouerned ibid. The graduation of it. The ancient Inhabitants, time The commodities it yeel-A Kingdome. Denbighshire how limited. ibi deth 17. 5 Antiquities therein, 87.6 What memorable places Townes therein, 88 Forme and dimension thereof there What religious houses The aire and foile there-17.7.8 What Caftles Cuthbert Bishop of Lindef. of 119.63.4 By whom inhabited in Divisions Hundreds and The Tutelar Patron of old time 119 5 The Commodities there-Townes therein 18 119 5 Doner the locke and key to Northren Englishmen aof 119.6 England, Hundreds and Townes Downes in Suffex gainst the Scots 82.6 A Saint and much adored 83.6 thereof 120 Sit Francis Drake compas His Tombe much vifited Depopulation in England complained of 4.10 Earth by Sea 19. 4 4.10 Earth by Sea 67-3 Drax an Abbey by Kings in Pilgrimage Derwent River Earle of Desmonds rebellion Dropping Well 78. 11 fuppreffed 139.9 Dubricius Archbishop of D Himselfe beheaded by a Caerlion fouldier. ibid. Dunftan, against Priests ma-661.4667.4 Lord Dalbney or Daubney Dencaledonia Sea 99.1 riage, his supposed Stra-

circumference of it. the

tagem 25. 6 Wales 101. 4
Dunich an Episcopall Sec. England shared into Princiof 405. 3 The commodities it stan. Hundreds and Townes engiama inarcai into Principalities by whom, and to there 22.2.

Enia kelling a ftrong Fort in Ulfter 145.9

The graduation thereof 33. 9 deth vpon 105.2 Durolrina Caftles and Religious Duro pont, See God-Manhouses in it 105.8 The graduation thereof Hundreds, Townes and Durotriges were feated. 17.4 Eorles i. Earles 4. 7.6 11 ibid memorable places there-Durham Bishoprike, how Erdini, people in Ireland. Floden-field 89.10 bounded 83. I 145. 5 Falix, Bishop of Dunwich Glastenbury Abbey first be-The forme and dimensi- Erminstreet, mensi- Erminstreet. 37. 7. 35.8 83. 2 Esex, why so named. 31. 1 A font of solide brasse 39. 5 gunne by lofeph of Arimathea The aire, and Soile. 83. The forme and dimenti- Forrest both name and Glocestershire how it is on, I. 2 How bounded, ibid. 3. thing whence it came 1. 2 bounded The ancient Inhabitants The dimension of it. of it Townes in the Bishop-The aire and foile. 31. 4 The ancient Inhabitants. Forrest Instice Forrest Instice 57.2 Forresters office ibid. The forme, aire, and foile. What commodity it yeeldeth, 31. 5 Fosheringhay Caftle and Collegiate Church 55.8 Foshdage in Norfolke what religious houses it is 35. 2 The commodities there Bishops their Royalties. of, 47. 3. 6 5 By whom in ancient time Durham City a Bishops See 31. 9 Fountaine ebbing and flowtherein. inhabited. 47. 4 Hundreds and Townes Hundreds and Townes ing A Countie Palatine, Ibid. therein. 31 Fountaines Abbey 77.7
Exsefter City whence it Freshwater Ille therein. 48
Gloncester City how called E tooke that name. 19.6 Friburgi in old time. 47.6
A Cathedrall See 47.7
The graduation of ir. It was a Dukedome Mar-Eadesburg, where now, the quifate, and Earledome Chamber in the Forrest 19. ibidem The description thereof That Dukedome fatall King Eadgars Triumph a 19.6 Gallena, See Wallingford euer to her Dukes Chefter Hermagnificent Cathe- Galloglaffes what they are Ealdermen who in times drall Church by whom 138.19 Godina Earle Leofrikes wife whom ibid. Galloway County how combuilt East England The Bishops See ibid. released Conentry of Tri-East England 4. 11 East-riding how bounded modious 143.4 Galway the third City in butes by riding naked It withstood the Saxons t withftood the Saxons Galway the third City in throughit 53. 5

465, yeeres ibid. Ireland, and an Episcopall Godmanchester or Gormon-East riding how seated.77.4 How valiant against all See 143.6 chefter The Aire, foile and comibid. Gangania people in Ireland Godred the fonne of Syrher Sceges ibid. What loffes it bath felt modities 81.2.03 Gaothel with his wife Scota ricke King of Man 92. 1 His death 92. 2 In Easteriding what Hunibidem dreds and Townes 82 Refisted Will. Conquerour till the wals fell downe. come into Ireland 137. Godred Crouan warreth vp-Ede-fleda built Glocester Church. 11. on the Manksmen 02 2 Church. 47-7 Edelfleda beneficiall to Lei-Garnfey Hand how it is fitu-Conquereth the Isle of How loyall to King $\mathcal{E}d$ -The dimension thereof Buried in Ilsa an Iland Ibid. celter 61.6 ward the fixth Edith a Saint 45-7-The Climate thereof ibid ibid. Godred fonne of Olane King Edmund Earle of Richmond How gouerned, ibid. The birthplace of the The forme of it father to King Henrie the Sometime called Sarnia King of Dublin feuenth 101. 7 ibid. matchleffe Poet Iofephus He vanquished and flu I fanus The government Origi-Saint Edmundf-bury how Exchequer Court first ere-Ofibeley 92.7 He tyrannizeth in Man. nall, and language of the Inhabitants named in the Saxons time . Cted Saint Edmundsburie Abbey and Towne praifed. ibid. wonshire ibidem Put to flight by Summer Market Townes, Castles, led, 92. 7 King of the Isles also 92.9 and Parifhes therein. King Edward 2. first of the English Race Prince of His death, buriall and if-No toade, fnake, or vefue 123. 6. Murdered by the meanes Falmouth Hauen commennemous creature there Gedred Don, fonne of Regi-Murdered by the meines | Ralasanh Hause commence of Jobeh Issue 1942 | All King of the Carrier 3.7, 8 | All King of the Carrier 3.7, Hald King of the Ilands 92.10 89.8 Godwin fands, dangerous 107. 4 Grantcefter an ancient City ware the fift commended.

62. 7 | Fireful King of Man. 92. Saint Germans confince how to King Rich Fire. Rahb a sainft the Pelagian Herefie lion 130.9 Henry the 3. becommeth Mendicant Friers 145.9

a Nunne. 25.9 Flamins and ArchFlamins the Pelagian Herefie | lion 139.9 77.7 Gromebridge in Suffex 9.8 Hee studieth at Oxford Grounds in the Irish Sea Elfred (or Alfred) the first that divided his king-Their places converted into Bishoppes Sees. Giants teeth and bones dig. Grounds made fruitefull domes into Shires. ged vp 31.8 with burning afhes. His noble care in resto-ring the Vniuersity of Oxford 45.7 Giantz daunce, translated out of Leinster, to Saist-Gnartiger Manr 111.5
bury Plaine by Merlin Guenta part of Southwales
141.14 now Monmonthshire, how 45.7 Elie, 37.5 How limited 2.16
Elle, King of Northumberland flaine 78.9 How limited 2.16
Fleg, a part of Norfolke 35.1
Fleming: inhabiting Refe in 2, 14 Gildas the olde Britaine, confined How it is divided into fludent in Oxford 45. 7 Gilling Monaftery 79.5 Cantreues and Com-78. 10 Wales Elmham 2 Bishops Sec. 35.8 Flintsbire how bounded mors Giamorgansbire how limited 1: 0.19.6 109.1 Emeril stone found in Garnand of what forme. 121.1 fey. 94.6 England on this fide Hum-The dimension ibid.2 What Cantreues and Guy of Warmicke beheadeth The aire and climate 121. Commots it hath 100,19 Piers of Ganefien 53.4 ber how divided into Hides. The commodities 121.5 The forme and measure Gny-cliffe Little England beyond ofit 105.2 Guerong the Lieutenant of The ancient inhabitants The aire and Soile there-Kens

therein. Н Hertford Towne. Hadrians wall limiting the Romane Province in Eng. land Hadrian 4. Pope, where borne, and his death 36.6 Hales Monastery 47.11 Blood of Hales Ibid. Halifax a great Parish, why so called 77.8 77.8 Halifax Law Haly-werke folke Hantsbire how bordered The dimefion therof. 13.2 The aire and foile thereof 13.3.64 What Hauens, Creekes and Castles it hath 13, 5 By what people inhabi ted in old time 13.6 What commodities is veeldeth. What Religious houses therein. 13.11 Hundreds and Townes therein Hardy-Canute his death.11.6 Lord John Harrington Baron of Exton Pearle, ron of Exton 59. 5 His draught of Rutland-Harlech a great Towne in Merioneth-shire. 99.10 Harlech town & Caftle, 117,6 The Position therof, 117.7 Harold Godwins fonne King of England vanquisheth Harold Harfager King of Norway 92.1 Harold Olanes fonne King of Man drowned in a Tempest 92.12 Hanering how it took name 21,9 Hawarden Caftle 121.7 Heghlanbmen 2, 12 Heil a Saxon Idol 17.6 Helbecks 79.3 How divided, Hell kettles Helmer of gold digged vp in Lincolnshire. 63.6 Hengist beheaded 78. 10 Henry, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, Englands great hope 21.6 Henry Prince of Scotland, hardly escapeth death at the fiege of Ludlow 71.6 Henry the 4. Emperour of Almaine buried in Saint Canons, The Caftle, Werburgs Church at Che-Phil. Herbert first Earle of they be. Montgomery 115.5 Hereford-fhire how boun-The climate of what temperature 49.2 Scots flaine, 89. 10 Hundreds and Townes Immes 5,king of Scots dieth therein. 50. Hereford City and Bishopricke, 49. 5 The circuit and graduation thereof. The civil Magistracy thereof. ibid. on of it. Herbert Losinga B. of Norwich what Churches and Monasteries he built. 35.8 Herifordfbire how boun-39. I The forme and dimensi-

39. 6 Iohannes de facro Bosco born The forme, fite and po-The graduatio therof 39.8 at Halifax, fition of it. 7. 2.3 The foile, comodities, 7. 4 Hibernia, whence it tooke King John his monument & name 138. 12 portraiture. 51. 5 Hide of land what it figni- Saint Iohns Towne in Scot-Rivers nauigable therei n. fieth 3.3. 657.3. land. 132. 6 High-landme, natural Scots Iona. i. Columbkil. 132. 18 Kent vnconquered. 7. 7 131.4. See Heghlandmen. Iosephus of Excester (or if-Receiueth Christianity first in this Ific, shid, Hilarie Isle. 94. 8 cansus shis praise. 19. 6
St. Hilda his Miracle. 81. 6 Ipswich commended. 32. 6 canus his praife. 19. 6 Troubled with civill diffentions. 7. 10 How gouerned. 7. 11 Hinchinbrooke Nunery. 57.6 Historicall Tome of this The dimension and fite Historicall Tome of this of Ipsivich ibid.
worke, I. I. How gouerned. ibid.
Hobbies Irish in Leinster. Ireland how diuided into Made a Kingdome, shid. Made an Earledome ibid. Earles thereof with the Provinces and Coun-141. 5 Armes of their feuerall Holy Iland. See Lindisferne Families. ties. Holy, wel, See Winifreds wel. What names it hath. How divided into Hun-Holy Croffe in Topperary 137. 1. dreds & parifhes, wid.8 within Mounster.139.11 The name whence deri-Kestenen a third part of Lin-Hollanda third part of Linued. ued. 127. 2 colneshire. 63.10
The most Westerne Hand Kildare, adorned with an colneshire 63. 10 Hollanders fishing by li-Episcopall Sce. 141. 8 127. 2. cence vpon the North-east why called the holy Iland Kilkeny a faire Burrough-Coasts of England, 81. 3 137.3 towne in Leinfter. 141.8 Henry Holland his high dif-Thought to be Ogygsa in Kimbolton Mannour. 58.94 cent and calamity 19. 8 Plutarch, 137.2 Kings-deife.See Swords-deife Called olfo Scotia, ibid, Kingson vpon Hull, 81. 4 Holt Caftle in Bromfield. The third Iland for big-100. 12 When built. Horse Muscles full of good nes in the knowne world How governed. 137.4 The graduation of it ibid, Horse-shooe in the Shire-When and how it recei Kirk-fed Monastery 77.7 Kirk-fed battell 78, 10 Hallat Oukeham. 59. 7. ued Christianity.138.22 Horfe flaine in battell, 7.11 Christianity there much Knights-fees how many in At Horfteed his monudecaied. 139.8. England in William the ment. Horton. See Halifan. Ireland of what forme it Conquerors daies, 4.10 is. is. 137. 4 How bounded, shid. Knocketoe battel. 143.7 Hospitall at Lescester with a Collegiate Church built The Aire and tempera-61. 6 Charles Howard defeateth 137. The foile, 137. the Spanish Armada at The commodities, 127, 7 Sca. 19.4. Hubblestone in Denonshire Henry Lacy Earle of Lincoln The ancient and Origina his only fon, drowned in inhabitants. 137.8 By whom diuided into a Well, whence it tooke name, 10.7 119.7 altorodum. See Stony-Humber an arme of the Sea. fiue Prouinces, 138, 12 Stratford. Called little Britaine, ibid 77. 2 Hundreds what they are, 3.4 Laford i. Lord, what it im-Irishmens Cottages in Anporteth. Huntingdonshire how it is porteth. 47 agetium. See Casterford. glesey. 125 The maners and customes Lagman King of Man. 92.4 of the Irish in olde time. He taketh the badge of the What maner of Iurifdi 128.14 Croffe for Ierufalem Ction therin at first, 57.4 Their manner of bapti Hundreds, Townes and In his iourney dieth, shid zing. 128 T 6 memorable places there-Their children how nour His cruelty to his broced. th. 58. 10
Huntingdon Towne why fo named,& how feated 57.5
Their Common-feale, ib. ther Harold. ther Harold. 92. 4 Cambeth commended, 11.7 Their fantaftical conceits 1:8.16 Lampeburning many ages, Addicted much to witch Their Priory of Blackecraft ibid. Llanbadern vaur an Episco-Their Idolatry. shie pall See. 113.7 Their attire, 138.18
They for lake their wites The River there fometime Lancaster County Palatine. nauigable. 57. 6 Hurlers in *Cormvall* what at their pleasure. 14's 8 How confined. Their manner of warre The forme and dimensi-21. 0 on of ir. Their mourning for the The foile and commodidead, 138, 20

Lame: the fourth King of Irish BB, consecrated by the ties thereof. Hundreds and Townes Archbishop of Canter therein. bury. 145. 8 Ilca Silura,i.Caer-liö. 197. 4 By whom anciently infor griefe of heart, 87. 5 habited. Ithancester See St. Peters vp. Iceni what people & where feated. 33. 4. 6. 35. 3 Iest or Blacke-Amber. 81.6 Lancafter Towne The polition of it. ibid. on the wall. S. Ino, a Perfian Bifhon, \$7.7 How gouerned. ibid. | Iersey Hand how scared. 94 St. Innes Priory, a Cell to Lancafter House and Torke The forme and dimenfi-Ramsey Abbey. conioined. 94. 2 Lancastrians put to flight. The Aire and foile. 94.3.4 Stockings there made. Katherin Dowager of Spain Lladaff city how fited. 105.5 An Efficopall See. ibid. Llandeni brene, why fo 94. 4 where interred. 55. 7
The original and lan- Keies of the lie of Man.ol. 5 guage of the Inhabi- Kendale or Candale whence called The forme answards of the distriction of the distri tants. 94 5 The commodities 94.6 it taketh name. 85. 4

By whom poffeffed, ibid.

Fortified by whom, ibid.

The position therof.ibid.

Lin. See Leun

Lieutenant in euery Coun- Maiata

King of Man. 92. 14. His death and buriall.

ty called Custos or Earle. Maiden Castle neere Dorce- Merionethshire how boun-

fter. Maiden Castle. 4.11

Lincolnshire how bounded. Main Amber 2 strange

63. 1 rocke.

The dimension and sire Maio County what com-

92. 15 Mercia

17.5

79.7

The position thereof

Religious houses therein

Villiam Montacute Earle of

Salisbury Wresteth Man I-

fle out of the Scots hand

Selleth it and the Crown

thereof to William Scroop

92.17

132.18

ded 99.10.6 117.1

Cantrenes and Commots

The forme, aire and foile

therein

4.11

117. 2

THE TABLE

			1 17		BLE
Montgomery-fb.	ire how	South-Pittes to	Christiani	ty . The p	ofition the
Dounded The forme ar	115.1	1	T221	12	ontion the
	11 5. 2	Normans-Croff	Hundre	ed	
Their horses	115.4	in Huntingdon) it tooke nar	ne 58	ce	O
	habitants.	Ivorthampton h.	ire how	."	•
Montgomery	115.5	Dounded		. 1 Oaten bre	ead.
Castle	I Owne and	The forme a	nd dimeni	fi- Odiam Ca	aftle in He
The Polition	of it ibid.	on thereo	nhah: 55.	2 of wha	titrength.
It grueth title	of an Earl-	old time	nnasited i	in Uffas dike	runneth.
dome	ibid.	The commo	dities of		
Hundreds as	id Townes			S Offchurch	the Pala
Moores in H	116. Testmorlan d	Hundreds a		king O	the Pala
	85.4	therein Northampton I	OWno de	6. Vilters of	Effect the
Mortimers hole		cribed		6 Oiffer-hite	in Hertford
Motingham in K	ent, where	The dimenf	ion therec	of	
the ground fu Mounster, wh	nke 7.6	1	ihia	l. Okam, who	re borne,
beareth	T 20. 1	How governo	d ibid	i, Okham ali	as Oukham
beareth How it is boun The dimension	ded ibid.	Norfolke an Ilan How bounde	d 35.1 d and o	alty.	in times pa
		wnat forme	ihid	the Fe	rrare
The forme, air	139.2	The measure	and name	Okham o	or Oukham o
1	. 139.3	ThenoGalan	ibid		
How divide	d 139.4.	The position,	ibid.	Okenyate.	of Godred
	OT TI.	Commodities	thereof	san King	of <i>Ireland</i> , 9
West-Mounst South-Mouns	er and	~ .	35. 2.08		concubines
in olde time	inhabited	Cómodious ri	uers there,	. i itiue.	
1	129.4	Families of C	rentlemen	Olane the i	
The commo		there, and th	eir lovalty	King of	he Iffee 92
Mounster Mounster addit	139.5			His death	and buri
perfticious	vanities	How Norfolke ned.	is gouer-		
	139.8	By whom in	Ibid.	Ordonices 2	
Much wafted b	y rebelli-	old time.	ibid.		red. II
ons Visited with st	139.9	Replenished w	ith Chur-	Ø 115.5	red, 7 . & 117. 4 121. 6. & 1
lamities of	f dearth	ches and Me		119.5.0	121.6.6
1 '	\$29, TO	The first Earle	of North	5.0 125. Orewood 2 W	
What religion	s places	folke.		C/CHOOM 2 W	ecqe of the 3
there How gouerned	139.11 ibid.	Hundreds and		Orkenay Ilan	ids how ma
Murchard & Brien	King of	in Northfolk Vorth Riding in 2	36		700
		how it lyeth.	ornejnsre,	fubdued	discouered
Mussold or Mossin			77. 4 81. 1	How they	l. 132. descended
ì	35-5	The Aire, foile,	and com-	the Kin	gs of Scotlar
N	1	Hundreds and	Towner		
1	1	therein.	82.	thumberlan	ng of No
Nagnate what p	eople in Z	Jorthumbre. Jorthumberland h	4. 11		
Ireland	142.5	bounded		Otho Bilhop	of Bareux fil
Needles, certaine	143.5 rockes	The forme size	and Cail-	Earle of Ke. Ottadini or O	nt. 7. 1
Nemether and h	15.9	orit, 80, 2, 6			
Nemethus and hi fonnes arriue in	Ireland	The ancient inh	abitants.	Otterburne Ba	ttel Oc.
1	137.9	The commoditie	89.5	Ounsbery hill tempests an	forethewer
Saint Neotus, 2 M	onke of	of.	89.6	Oufe River, gro	draine. 8
Glastenbury Saint Neots of Need		Battels there.	89.10	,,g.,	250
rie	c8.10	Antiquities there Townes and	89.12 Davidson	Onfe in Hertfor	rdshire statet
Nelfa 2 lough in S	cotland	therein,	00.	his courfe, Owen Glendow	
neuer freezeth in	winter. A	orthwales how b			
Neuils Croffe batte	132. 15	Dinidadian c.	99. 6		
Map of Durham	Bishop-	Diuided into fou	re parts, !	whence for How boun	amed. 45.
		What shires it	contai -	The aire and	dea, ibis
Newcastle vpon Tin	89.7	neth.	775 -	Rivers there	of, ibiden
Called Monket		orwich whence for		The dimen	nion of i
		How afflicted wi	35. 5	The ancient	45.
A County and Co	orpora-				
The graduation	89,8 thereof	mities.	ibid;	Hundreds a	nd Parishe
j .	ibid 37	A Bishops See. otinghamshire why	35.8	there Exford how and	. 46
New-forrest in H.			05. 11	demy	.iciit an A(2
fatal to William th querour his Pr	e Con-	How bounded.	ibid.	The preroga	tiue thereof
	13.7	The forme and d on thereof,		demy The preroga by Generali	Councell
New-market heath	27 71	The aire and cor	nmodia	The fecond	
Newnham Regis me ble waters	dicina-	ties.	65.2		
Newport in the Isle o	fwight	Hundreds, Wape	ntakes,	of the Chu	rch. ibidem.
,	15.7	and Townes t	herein.	of the Chu The generall for all Engla Scotland as	Vniuerfity
Made a Corporati	on and N	tingham Towne	com-	Scotlan 3	na , Wales,
Maior-Towne	sbid,	nended.	65.6		
Ninian conserted	the I	low gouerned.	65.7	In Oxford th	nirty thou-

fand fludents. An Episcopall See, ibid-The fite of it 45.8 Ox-gange what it is. 57-3 91.4 lant/hire Palladina Apostle to the 1. 13.5 Scots. 3. z 132-13. 99. 3 Palme-Sunday battell, ÷ 111. 6 lace of Parishes in England divided by Honorius Archbishop of Canterbury 5.4 In England how manie 21. 6 ordsbire. How many in the Con-39.7 querors time 4.10 am Roi- Pafferum orbs. See Circe-Acr Patricke, the first Apostle spaft of for Ireland 138.22. His life. m castle 138.23. His Purgatory 145.7 59.9 Where he liued, died and ed Crowas buried. 145.0 d 02 6 Strife about his Sepulchre. nes and s and core. 138.22. Torke baptizeth in one King of 92. 10 day tenne thousand buriall. Peaceable and fafe trauelling ouer all England in King Elfreds daies.3.4 Nation. Pembrokeshire how limited 115. 4 100.7.0 101.1. What Towns, Cantreues and Commots therein Ø 123. How neere it is adioithe Sea. ning to Ireland. 101.3 21. 2 v manv. The ancient Inhabitants. 123. 2c ered & The commodities therof 132. 21 ded to What religious houses diffolued setland Caffles therein, 33. 21 Nor-Hundreds and Townes there . 178.0 102. 100. 12 Pembroke Towne. 100 .17 enx first The fite of Pembrooke 7. 11 where Perles in Cumberland. 87.4. 80.5 Engendred in Caernar 89.10. wonshire. Perry a drinke in Worcefter nd leffe Perth. See Saint Johns 35. 3. Staieth Towne. Saint Peters in Cornbill an Archbishops Cathedrall 41. 5 rebelli-Church. 6.5. de 117.4 29.2 ordsbire Saint Peters Port Saint Peters Port 94. Saint Peters vpon the wall 31.8 le 45. 2 Peter-house in Cambridge ibidem. built. of it. Peterborow Town and Monaftery 45.3 bitants Peterboron Cathedrall Church. 45.4 Parifhes Pichford famous for a well of Bitume 71.9 Pilts wall. an Aca-It was the Romans onely 45.7 thereof Partition Northward ouncel ibid. Picts the inborne and natuole of rall Britaines 131.4. d Pillar ihidem Pimble Mere in Merioneth iuerfire Shire of what nature it is. Wale Plaister of Lincolneshire. Ireland

hardet then that of Paris

Plantin

	THE TABLE.							
	Plantins first Roman Prefect	Reignold fonne of Godre	d) Effex. 31.6	Selby Abbay. 77.71				
	in Britaine, 2	King of Man. 92.	Salisbury Plaines. 25. 4	Selene now Sandie at a				
i	Plimmonth famous where- fore. 19, 4	flaine. ibia	. Salisbury City. 25.7	Seffions 4.times in the yeer,				
i	Plimlimmon Hill. 113. 3	His body where enter						
١	Plough-land what it is.	Reignald or Reginald the fe						
	Fomona an Iland of the Or-	cond, fonne of Olan	The fituation thereof	The head thereof.				
	eades, an Episcopall See.			115.2				
	172.20	His buriall. ibid						
	What commodities it	Repandunum, See Repton.	rifull in Scotland 102 e	Senerus the Emperour died				
	yceldeth, ibid. Pontfret plentifull of Li-	Repton. 67. 7. Rere-Croffe of Rey-Croffe	Ø 132. 14	1 at 1 orge. 78.01				
	quorice and Skirworts.	VDOD Stanemagre 6. to	Salmonsleape. 113. 3	The manner of his funerall,				
	78.8	Restitutus Bishop of London	531t, now made in Lanca-	Sexwolfe Bishop of Leicester				
	Port, the Saxon. 17. 4	in Constantine the great	Shire. 75. 7	61.6				
	Port-land in Dorfetshire,	his time. 29. 7 Ribble-Chefter, ancient and	Salt comming from ftones	Shaftesbary. 6.				
١	Portgreenes. 4.7		Saltry Indeth why so called.	Sheriffes whence they came,				
	Pondbery a Trench. 17. 5 Powis-land how divided.	74. 6						
	Fowis-land how divided.	Richard Lord Archbishop of Canterbury commen-	Saltry Monastery. ibid.	Shirburne 2 Bishops Scc,				
	Powis Vadoc. ibid.	ded, 11. 7.	Sanda part of Nortingham- fhire 65.7	Translated to Salisburie,				
	Powis beteewne Wy and	ded. 11. 7. Richard Earle of Cambridge	Sangue lac in Suffex. 9.7	07.0				
	Seuerne. 100.13 Powis Wenniumin.	beheaded at Southamp-	Sarnia. See Garnsey.	Shire whence it commeth.				
	190, 14	Richard Earle of Cornwall		1				
i	Powis Vadoc what Can-	enriched by Tin-mines	The 7 feuerall Kingdoms	Shires how many in Eng- land at fundrie times.				
	treues and Commots it	in Cornwall, 21.2	how named. 3.1	ا خشم 2 م				
ı	hath, 100, 12 Powis betweene Wy and	King Richard the third flain and buried 61.6		Shrewsbury chiefe Towne of				
1	Senerne what Townes	King Richard the second 12-	threnlimit. 3. 2 Saxons flates feuerally	Shropshire. 71.8 The building, site, trade				
ı	and Castles it hath.	ken prisoner by Henry of	how at first divided in	and firength thereof.				
	Powis Wenwinnyn what	Bullingbrooke. 121.7	England. 2.2					
	Townes, Cantreues &	Richmond , chiefe Towne of North riding, 79. 4	Saxons gouernment in England how long it	How gouerned, ibid. Shropfhire how limited.				
	Commots it hath.	How imploied, ibid.	continued. 4.11	Suropinire new limited.				
	Prestaine a Towne of Com-	By whom built and fo	Saxons first 7. Kings Pa-	The forme foile, and aire				
١	merce in Radnorshire.	named, 79. 5. How gouerned, ibid.	gan. 4.12	71.				
١	111 6	The polition thereof.	Saxons first 7 Kings Chri- ftian. shid.	Call				
ı	Processe and pleading in the	ibid.	Sceafull Mountaine in the	Hundreds and Townes				
١	French tongue. 5. 3	Ringwood in Hantshire	lile of Man. 91.7					
I	R	whence so named. 13.6 Riplay the Alchymist. 11.7	Scope of the Author in this worke or Theatre. II	Sicilie why to called he a				
ļ	10	Robogdy people in Ireland.	Scotland how bounded.99.1	Sidre in Garnfey what drink				
ı	Raduershire how it borde-	P1-0 145.5.	6, 131. 1	Sigebert King of Southfax-				
ı	reth, 111, 1	Rochester, by whom built,	How divided. 129					
	The forme and circuit of	Rodericke the great King of	The commodities thereof	Silcefter Sometime, Caer Se-				
	it. 111, 2 The aire and foile there-	Wales, 99.5 His division thereof.	ibid.	gonte. 13. 6 How ancient, 13.10				
	of. 111, 2, et 4	His divition thereof.	The Common of 132, 14	Deftroicd, 17.70				
	The ancient inhabitants.		The feature and nature of the Scots. ibid.	Silures, where they inha-				
	Riuers there. 111. 7	Rolamund Clifford poiloned	Scotland adorned with	493.6 107.4. 6				
	Hundreds, Townes, &c.	by Queene Eleanor, King Henry the second his wife	3. Vniuersities. ibid.					
ŀ	there. 102.	45. 8	The polition of Scotland.	Delcribed. 49.2				
l	Radner Towne, the feat and graduation thereof.	Kojcaman a commodious	Scotland how divided in-	Their valour. Ibid. Subdued by Vespasian.				
l	117 6	territory in Connaught.	to Countries or Sherif-	40 2				
l	Radulph Earle of Norfolke.	Rusemont Calle a Kings	domes, Stewardships and Bailywicks, 191, 10	Dimon 2 MORKE Of Awin-				
l	35. 5	Rugemont Castle, 2 Kings Palace. 19. 6	Bailywicks. 191. 10 In Scotland Archbishops	fead poyloneth King				
١	Ramsey Abbay. 57.6 Called Ramsey the rich,	Saint Rumalds Well. 43 5 Rusblan Towne and Castle	Metropolitan. 2. &	Sifters three, what Rivers in.				
	and why? ihid I	in Northwales on an	132.11.	147.01				
	Reading alias Redding in	Rutlandshire how bounded.	Scots Southern of one Ori- ginall with the English.	Slego County in Ireland what commodities it				
	Barkeshire, beautified with an Abbay by King	59.1	127.4	yeeldeth. 143.4				
		Why fo named, 59.2 The forme of it. ibid.	Scots naturall whence	Smyru-Sec Emerill				
	The Castle rased by King	The dimension thereof	descended and named.	Snowdon Hill. 123.4				
	Henry the fecond	mt	Scots vanquith the Picts	Soland Geese their vie,				
	The graduation of it.	The aire and foile. 59. 3 The commodities it well	and raife their name.	Solome-Moffe field. 87.5				
ı	ibid	The commodities it yeel-	Seythians came into Spaine.	sommer jeribire how hours				
İ	Reafen the Danes banner.	detn. ibid.	131. 7	ded. 23.1 Whence it tooke name				
ı	Redhorfe Vale. 53. 8	The ancient inhabitants	Sea-coles, 89.6	ihid				
١	Redmoore, where King Ria	and pofferfours thereof	A Sea-man taken, 33.7 Sea-fand making the foile	The forme and dimenfi-				
١	chara the third was flaine	59. 6. 6. 7 Hundreds and Parishes	fruitiull. 21.21	on of it, 22, 2				
١	Regni, What people and	therein. 60.	Seffrid Bishop reedified					
١	Regni, what people and where feated, 9.5.6		Chichester Cathedrali	The ancient inhabitants				
۱	1,1	~	Church, 9.6 Segontium now Carnaruon.	32. 6				
۱	Reignald fonne of Olane viurpeth the Kingdome	S	122.6	ine promit it affordeth.				
۱			Segontians where they inha-	Memorable for fundry E-				
۱	Deprined of his sies and	Sabbath day mercate.	bited, 12.6	uents. 23.8				
١	genitoirs by his bro- ther Godred, ibid.	may mercate.	Selby the birth-place of King Henrie the first	Religious houses. 23.9				
	States, still.	Saffran a Commoditie of	63.7	Hundreds and Townes thereof, 24				
			- 1	- 24				

		1 11	LIADLE	
	Somersham annexed to t		t. Tithings what they be.	
	Southampton described,	7	. 01	3. by lightning. 111, 5
	I3.	Religious houses in		er Horsa brother to Hengist.
	Southwales divided into	fix What Caftles in	1.9	£
	parts. 100.	16	Starped by an Add	er Poron in Warreffeething at
	Spring of Saltwater at Le	2- How sinided.	Toronal Co	
	mington in Warwick effor	Hundreds and Townes is		51.6
	53.	7	12 of Supposed Pos	ce Vriconium. See Wroxce-
	Springs that ebbe and flo			
	Staffordsbire how bounded	d. What commodities	8 Touleffand hundred in Hu	n. ate. Okeny.
	69		it tingdonshire. 58.	In Vecula at The Co
	The forme and dimension	yeeldeth 9 Religious houses built	· 9 I ownes of Britaine we	re wals daughter with her
	ofit. 60	Gunna C. J		y rgin-Saincts. 27 c
	By whom anciently inha	- How bounded		E- Vske-bah, an wholfome A-
	Dited. 69.	Mow divided.	land, in William the Co querour his time.	
				Viersus ancient people in
	69. What houses of religio	f Townes in it.	Trees floting in Bagmer	Tretana waere they awelt
	it had. 60.			0 77
	Hundreds and Towne	The length thereof	2 Trinobantes what people	e,
	therein.	The length thereof	and where they inhabite	
	Stafford Towne described	The breadth thereof.	29.5 6 3	I VV
	69.	7 thi	Turkill the Day 5. 0 39.	1
	How gouerned, ibid	The aire of it, 9		8 AWallin Scotland from A-
	The fite or positure of it	Hauens in it vuce	the East-Angles, 58. Twomond or County Clar	bercorne of Abercurning
	Sir Hubers Saint Clare hi	and dangerou	5. Conteniently leated, 142.	vnto Dunbrisson, \$32.
	death to faur King House	NT	3	11
	the fecond.	Nature of the foile, 9 Swale River, 79.	4	Wall-towne, 80 72
	the fecond. 7. 6 Stamford fometime an Vni-	Swalle River. 79.	V	Wales how confined. oo. t
	uernty. co.8	Swords Delfe why Co calle	il	The dimension thereof
	Jamjora-briage battaile.	1 .8.	8	Walnut 200 99. 4
	92.1	Synode at Colne abou	Valentia, a part of Britain	Wales and Welfb what it hgnifieth. 99, 1.2
	Stanneries or Stanniers	I Pricits Marriage at	why to called, 2.1	Counties of Wales amalia
	Stibium in Darbishire got-		How limited, 2.10	08 # 100 00
	ten.		Velabri ancient people is	Divided into three Regi-
	Stock Chappell in Norfolke	T	Ireland, where placed	ons or Kingdomes;
			translation 139	99.5
	Stockfilh gainefull to King-		Venedotia. 1. Northwale Venta, Belgarum . 1. Winche	
	Jeens men vpon Hull.	Tamar River boundeth th	el flor -	
	Second 11 . 0 81. 4.	Britaines, by King Athel	Venta Icenorum, v. Caffer	
	Stones like Serpents, 81. 6			West-wales, ibid,
	Stony ferpents found with- in round flones, 81. 6.	Tameworth, iometimes the	Venta Silurum, I. Monmouth	Wales why voide of
			107.4	woods. 121
	the co	Tabrobane the greatest I	Robert de Vere, Earle of Ox	Princes of Wales forung
	The Croffe there, thid	land 137. 4	ford Marquesse of Dublin and Duke of Ireland	from the blood Roiall
	Stones refembling Shel-fi-	Tane-River to		of English Kings. 97
	1 thes. 47 to	I cigne-Month the landing	Transferience on #1 t.	Wallingford Caftle and Towne. 27. 7
	Stoneheng described in the	place of the Danes, at	in Herrfordhire, 29, e	Wansdike in Wileshire. 25.6
	Mappe of Wilishire. Stoneley Priory in Hun-	their first inuasion.	Sacked by Queene Boduo.	Wantage the birthplace of
	tingdonfhire. 58. 9	Saine Tales Did 574	10.€	King Elfred. 37 of
	tingdonshire. 58.9 Suffalke how bounded.	Saint Telean Bishop of Llan- daffe. 105.	Vertera a place in Westmor-	Wapentach or Wapentaka.
	22. 1	Temple to God Terminus	land, 85.8	What it is.
	The aire thereof. 33.2	122 11		Warre Civill of Yorke and
	The aire thereof. 33.2 The forme of it. ibid.	Tetnall , alias, Theotnall.	Vidoms what they were.	Lancafter. 75. 9
	The dimension thereof.	what it fignifieth.	1.6	Warnick fore how bounded
	By whom ==0.033+.3	60. ė	Saint Vincents Rocke, 22.6	How divided, 53. I
	By whom possessed in old time. 33.4	Tenksbury Field fatall to the	Virgata, or Yardland what it	The forme of it, 53. 3
	What commodities it i	Lancastrians 47. 10 Thane or Thean 4. 7	15. 57. 3	The compasse thereof.
	veeldeth. 22 5	vnder-Thean, thid	V ifter Prouince now boun-	ibid.
	How divided, 22.0	Theodore a Gracian, Bifton	The forme thereof	Commodities, ibid,
	Hundreds and Townes	Of Canterbury ~ Q		Who inhabited it in old time. \$2, 4
	therein. 34	Theon first Archbishop of	The dimension of it.	Hundreds and Townes.
	Sumatra thought to be the	London. 6	l ibid.	54
	Isle Taprobana. 1. 2. Summerled, Prince of He-		The aire of it. 145. 3	Warwicke Towne by whom
	rergaidel flaine. 92.	Thribings & Thribingroues.	The foile and commodi-	built. 53.6
	Z 0	Thule where it is feated.	By whom possessed in the	built. 53.6 What names it had in
	Sunning an Episcopall See 1	122. 12	time.	
		Thule. See Shetland	time, 145	The position thereof,
	Surrey or Suthrey how it is	Sir Richard Thumbleby	Their ancient cuftome of	The Civill government,
		Knight, where buried	making a King, 145.6	
	Whence it tooke name,	117. 6	Religious houses in it.	Wallies in Lincolnshire
	The forme of it. 11.4	Thurle-heads, Fishes of the	145.10	hurtfull to King Iohn.
	The length thereof.	Sea, comming to Land in Munster. 139. 10	Counties and Townes in	63. 4
- 1	bidi l	Tin-Mines in Cornewall.	Vodia or Vdia an ancient na-	Wat-Tiler an Arch-rebell
1	The breadth of it, ibid.	21.2		
	The circumference there-	Tinne-Lawes therein.	ted. #39.4	Waterfals or Catadupa, 85.
	of. ibid.	ibid.	Voding . Archbishoppe of	Waterford the second City
	By whom inhabited in old time, 11.4	Tinne-Workes in it	London flaine by Vorti-	in Ireland. 130. 7
		ibid. Earle of Tirone his rebelli-	gerne. 6 ~ 1	Euer loyall to the Crown
	11. 5. 66. 8	on extinguished, 139. 9	Volunty, 145.5	of England since the
1	,. 5 6. 6		Vortigern where confumed	first Conquest of it ibi.
				Water-

Wesser Rince, 3, 5, 3
Wicks, what people, 31, 4
Wicks, what people, 31, 4
Wicks, Sale-pitz, the
Wicks, Sale-pitz, the
Legisland Legisland, the fifth Less Wicks of Regisland
Legisla Colony, 14, 8
What names is had in old Wayeney Riner

A Well boiling vp with fireames of Blood. 27, 9 Ebbing and flowing according to the Sea. 103, 7, # 321 8 Ebbing and flowing con-The forme and dimension of it. 15. 2 The aire and Soile thereof, 25. 4 The Commodities of it. trary to the Sea-tides.

AWell, the droppings whereof turne into hardstone, 132-15 By whom futt inhabited,

15. 6

By whom fubdued, 15.10

How fortified, 15.9

What Townes, Rivers,
and memorable places

the Chappell there the
Sepulcher of what Kings,
27. 8

White Townes, Rivers,
the Apolite of the Heffi-A Well floting with Bitimen. 132. 15
Welles a City in Somerfetfbire, why so called, 23.7
By what Ciuil magistracy
gouerned, ibid. init. 15. 10 ans. &c, How divided. 15. 7. VVinifrides well.

The position or gradus-tion thereof. ibid. Hull, Saint Wilfreds Needle, | Westland How ruled in ancient time.

132.17 | unred England 92.2. | VVoneninhe life of man girt ordinatily withdress.

Their Commodities, effer required 1.2. | winding these. 122. 10 Westminster a Bishops See, 19. 6 29. 7
Westmerlandhow bounded, William King of Scots taken prifoner. 89. 10

The measure thereof. his Cradle 132.16 85. 2 Wilsshire how bounded. The forme and aire. 85.3 24. 1 The ancient inhabitants. The forme and dimensi-85. 5 on of it. Places of chiefe note The aire and foile, 25. therein. \$5. 8 86 Townes in it. West-Saxen Lage.

West-Saxon Law.

By whom inhabited in old time. 25. 5 Religious houles in it. 25.9 West Sex. 4. 11 Whithy Abbey fouded, 77.7 Hundreds and Townes Wigh Star. 1 Municies and Towness Winderful Philosophy Children 1 Municipal Philosophy Childre

17. 6 What name it had in old time. burnt,

How traded and how oft burnt, 13. 9 Situation thereof, 13.9 Tanesbury trench, 25. Graduation thereof. ibid. Yard-land. See Virgate. 15. 1

beene expased vato Cathedrall Church there-By whom first inhabited, Windefor Castle. 82.4 27. 7

& 16 VVinwidfield, Wike. See Kingfone vpon VVoodland a part of Warwickeshire. 53.3 Woods spared and prefer-ued in Lancashire. 75.4

cefter repairesh the Ca-The forme and dimenfion of it, The aire and commodi-His sonne drowned with Hundreds and Townes Worcefter City how named

in old time. in old time. 52.3 What calamities it hath 25. 2 fustained, ibid, The Cathedrall Church built by Sexwelfe Bilhop. The Ciuill Magistracy.

43. 6 Whorwell Monastery built. Winchester City by whom Wiroxeester an ancient Ci-17.9 tie in Shropfhire. 71.9

Fired by the French. Yeoman and Yeomanry.4. What fortunes it hath Teremonth or Tarmont whence so named and how feated, 35- 7

Made a Corporation. A Towne very hospitable and famous for herring

Torke an Archbishops Sec. What Suffragane Bishops

it had, and now hath Torke Metropolitane and Primate, 6.7. d 78.0 His Inrifdiction. ibid Torke City what names it

The positure of it. Library thereof. Torkefhire how otherwise 77-2 there VVhat battels 78. 10

The foile of it. How bounded. How bounded. 77. 3 Divided into Ent Riding

UVef Riding, ibid.
The dimension of it. 77-4
Torke-Mannerhouse sometime the Abbay of Saint

CMaries by whom built.

Z







PROEME. THE LEARNED OVERS

GREAT BRITAINES GLORY.



Auing thus farre trauelled in the protract, and description of this famous Empire of GREAT BRITAINE, I might here have rested, and claimed the priviledge that yeeres and imbecillitie have brought me vnto: had not a further defire in others vrged it a matter incident, historically to lay downe the originals of those Nations and fuccessions of those Monarchs, which either by birth or conquest have aspired to the Imperial Crowne.

And albeit I finde my selfe both tired in the former, and most vnsit to prosecute this latter, yet will I endeuour to give herein my best assayes, though as my labours, so

my wants also, thereby will be made more vulgar to the world. For if those men were blame-worthy against whom Heraclite exclaimeth, who Heraclite

with long toile and great trouble finde a little pure substance in a great deale of base earth: how shall I then free me from the like imputation, that from so many mines of pure mettals, haue gotten so little Oare, and the same neither well tried in my defective fornace, nor yet artificially cast off through the default of the mould, wanting both skil for to fashion, and measure to performe, the true proportions that in such a project is

to be required; and how often these my defetts have disswaded my proceedings, is best knowne to him that is the fearcher of the heart.

But by what fate I am inforced still to goe forward, I know not, vnlesse it be the ardent affection and loue to my native Country; wherein I must confesse that Nature in those gifts hath bene both liberall, yea and prodigall, though Fortune as sparing & falt-handed against me, ever checking the Bit with the Raines of necessity, and curbing the meanes that should illustrate my labours: which moves me sometimes to thinke that if the great Philosopher Theophrastus, had cause on his death- Theophrastus, bed to accuse Nature, for giving man so long a lesson, and so short a life; then I against Fortune, may as suffly exclaime, that hath assigned me so great a labour and so little meanes. And therefore let it not seeme offensive that I draw my maters from the Ceflerns of others, who am not able to fetch them at the spring-head my selfe: Neither that I strike vpon the same Anuile vnto their found, though nothing so loud, nor

with the like strength, wherein yet this fruit at least wil (I hope) redound of my en-M m. 2.

Deut, 6.6.7.

Thales.

Cicero.

Habak. 2.9.

free the face drawne by Apelles, from the censure of the fault or defect in the foot, and not onely to amend, but even to new-mould the whole. Which thing though my 2.50m.19.35. dayes are neere spent; and with Barzillai I may say that musicke to me is now unplea-

ling: yet doth my eare thirst after the set of that straine, as Socrates thoughts ranne euer on his Booke: who the night before he was to suffer death, was desirous to learne musicke, because he would die learning still something. Moses when he foresaw the de-

struction of his Common-wealth, which whilst it stood, was the glory of the earth, and a paterne to all kingdomes succeeding, left this for a Law among the rest, and even to remaine for euer, that the fathers should teach their children, and should commit unto writing those things which the Lord in their dayes had done, and enjoyned the children. Likewife to enquire of the times that were past, euen from the first creation of man: For when as Empires and Kingdomes, Common weales and Cities, do end and perish, yet the Histories

Dest.4.32. thereof do remaine and live; And that made Cicero to fay as he did, that Salamina should be otterly forgotten, before the things that were done in Salamina_should perish: And therefore as among the wife answeres of Thales, the Histories of Countreis are to be accounted for principals, either as Cicero calleth them the Mistres of life, and expositions of Times; so likewise let vs from the lyricall Poet Simonides learne this further, That he

Simonides. is perfettly happy which knowes his native countrey to be truly glorious. And as Caßidoro calls Callidore. him a worthy (itizen that feeketh the commodity of his countrey: So contrariwise he is by Bale esteemed but a fruitles clod of earth, that sucks the sappe of his soile onely to himselfe, Bale in Ley-Lands New whose memoriall shall perish as the dispersed smoake in the clouds, though for a time yceres gift. he mount aloft in his swelling pride. This naturall love and true affection to our natiue Countrey, we may further learne from the ancient Patriarks and Fathers themselues, who besides a desire that they had to theirs, continually to liue therein during

life, commanded their bodies to be buried therein after death: from whose Bowels they first had assumed their breathes, and in whose bosome they layd their bones, as in their last bed of rest. Yea, of the vnreasonable creatures, the Birds and Beasts, we may learne this loue, that alwayes are willing towards their home. And if it happen that Countreys grow vinkinde as Homers did, that in his old age and blind, suffred him to

beg his bread; or that a Prophet in his owne countrey is not esteemed, as Feremy felt it, Matt.13.57 and CHRIST IESVS taught, yet did the one for his peoples captivity, wish his eyes a fountaine of teares, and the other for his countress destruction lamented and wept, holding it unlawfull to take the childrens bread, and to give it unto others. Matt. 15.26. That this our Countrey and Subject of History descrueth the love of her inhabitants, is

witneffed even by forraine writers themselves, who have termed it the Court of Queene Ceres, the Granary of the Westerne world, the fortunate Island, the Paradise of pleasure and Garden of God : whose Typographicall descriptions for the whole Iland, and Geographical furueyes for the seuerall parts, exceed any other kingdome vider the cope of Heauen; that onely excepted which was conquered and divided by Fosuab; And for fruitfulnes and temperature may be accounted another Canaan; watered with rivers that doe cleave the earth, as the Prophet speaketh, and make the land as rich and beautiful, as was that of Egypt. Our Kings for valour and Santity, ranked with the worthiest in the world,

Gene.13.10 and our Nations originals, conquests, and continuance, tried by the touch of the best bumane testimonies, leaue as faire a Lustre vpon the same stone, as doeth any other, and Tho.Lanquet with any nation may easily contend (saith Lanquet) both for antiquity, and continual inhabitants, from the first time that any of them can claime their originals.

And although our many Records are perished by the inuations of strangers, through their couetous Conquest of so faire a Land; or in the civill diffensions of homebred aspirers that haue fought the possession of so rich a Crowne, yet Truth hath left vs no sesses beholding vnto her, then mightier Nations, and them that would be far more famous. Neither

Neither is it to be wondred at, that the Records of GREAT BRITAINE are eaten up with Times teeth, as Ouid speakes, when as in Times ruines lye buried their Regulers, Ouid Metuns.

that haue bene kept with a stronger guard, as Titus Liuy in the entrance of his Hiflory affirmeth of the Romanes. As for those things (laith he) as are reported either before, or at the foundation of the City more beautified and fet out with Poets fables, then grounded vpon pure and faithfull reports, f meane neither to averre nor disprove. Of whole uncertainties, let vs a while heare the reporters themselues speake, before we proceed to the certaine successions of our British Monarchs: vntill which time the credit of our Hiflory may wel be faid to waigh with (if not downe peize) many others. Varro (that learned Romane writer, who lived an hundred yeeres before the birth of our Saujour (brist) Hilloria we calleth the first world to the Flood uncertaine; and thence to the first Olympias fabulous: Because in that time (saith he) there is nothing related (for the most part) but fables the Flood with among the Greekes, Latines, and other learned Nations. And therefore Plutarch begin. neth the lines of his worthy men, no higher then Thefeus: because (laith he) what bath Phutarch. benewritten before, was but of strange things, and sayings full of monstrous fables imagined and deuised by Poets, which are altogether uncertaine and most untrue. And Diodorus Si- Diodorus Siculus (that lined in Augustus Cafars time, a great learcher after Antiquities, and for thirty yeeres continuance a traueller into many Countreys, for information and fur-

ther satisfaction) writing his History called Bibliotheca, conteyning forty Bookes, and yeeres of continuance one thousand, one hundred thirty and eight, of his first fixe himfelle giueth this censure in his Proeme. These Bookes (faith he) contayning the Ads of ancient men , before the destruction of Troy, with the ancient Histories as well of Grecians as Barbarians, are called fabulous: Which mooned Lucretius the Poet to demannd this question.

(ur supra bellum Thebanum & funera Troia, Non alias quondam veteres cesinere Poeta? Why have not Poets in their workes of fained stories brought.

Things done before the Warres of Thebes, or Troyes destruction wrought?

Yea and of Troyes story it selfe, if we may believe Thucydides (whom Bodine | Thucydides. commendeth for an absolute Historian) though it be ancient (faith he) yet a great part thereof is fabulous. And Tully out of Plato complayneth of as much: For you Grecians Tully. (faith he) as children in learning, deliuer onely things uncertaine, and haue mingled fables with the Warres of Thebes, and of Troy, things (perhaps) which neuer were, but gathered out of the scattered Verses of Homer and others, not digested by Aristarchus, and are yet vncertaine and obscure. And that the Greekes indeed were but babes in Antiquity, Fosephus in his Nations defence against Appion, sufficiently doth proue, where he affirmeth, That the invention of their Letters was not so old as the siege of Troy, insomuch that

Greeke tongue. Other say, that certaine Troicns after their siege, in certaine vessels sa-

the Poesse of Homer (then the which there is none more ancient among them) was not committed to writing, but Jung by roate. And the Latine tongue it felfe by M. (ato is Meaning to faid, not to have bene in vie foure hundred and fifty yeeres before the building of Rome. And Titus Liuy their famous Historian, freely confesseth, That the wie of Letters and Times Lini, learning among the Romanes, was rare and hard to be found before the taking of Rome by the Gaules. Yea, and of the uncertainty of Romes foundation, how lauish so euer Historians haue written, not onely Fenestella. hath continued whole Pages, but Plutarch Fenestella. likewise in the life of Romulus, hath many sayings, whereof this is one. The Historio- life of Romulus. graphers (faith he) do not agree in their writings, by whom, nor for what cause the great name of Rome (the glory whereof is blowne abroad through the world) wasfirst given unto it: some affirming, that the Pelagians after they had runne over a great part of the world, lastly stayed themselues in that place where Rome was new built, and for their great strength in Armes, gaue name to that City Rome, which signifyeth power in the

Lucretius.

uer Tyber: whose wines being extremely Sea-sicke, through the counsell of Roma a Lady, the wifest and worthiest among them, set fire on the whole Fleete; whereupon their husbands (though fore offended) were inforced to make vie of their prefent necessity, and neere vnto Palantium planted this City, whose fame presently grew great, and in honour of Lady Roma named it Rome; and from hence they fay the

THE SITE AND CIRCUIT GREAT BRITAINES MONARCHIE.

CHAPTER I.



Chap.i.

ESIDES those fruitfull. lands that dispersedly are scattered about the Mayne, like to beautifull pearls that incompasse a Diademe, the He of GREAT BRI TAINE doth raife it felfe hirst to our fight, as the Bodie of that most famous &

mighty Empire, whereof many other Kingdomes and Countries are parcels and BRITAINE Octor Amgamer and Commerce are parest and members. Being by the Almighty so set in the maine Ocean, as that she is thereby the High Admirals of the Seas, and in the terrestrials Globe so seated, as that she Seas, and in the terretirial Giobe to teated, as that the isworthily reputed both The Garden of Pleasure, and The Storthouse of Profit, opening her Hauens energy way, fit to receive all forraine trafficke, and to veter way, in corrective an iorrame transect, and to viter her owne into all other parts: and therefore (as the Sourciagine Lady and Empress of the reft) deserves our description in the first place.

(2) This Island's so space our and ample, that Cefar (the first Romane discourcer thereof) supposed the standard our search would be for this lead with the public for the standard our search would be for this lead.

that he had found out another World: for to his fee-ming it appeared, that the Ocean was rather contained In Panegy. Orat. within that Mayne, then that Mayne to be compassed with the Occan about. And Inline Solinus, for her circuit and largenesse, saith that it deserueth the name of Another World. But Ariffides a Greeke Author speakes much more properly, who by way of excellencie termeth BRITAINE, The Great Iland. As likewise Tacitus, that vndertooke to describe BRITAINE B RITAINE by his owner knowledge, who faith, that of all Ilands knowen to the Romanes it was the greatest And fo Romanes to the Romanes it was the greatest And fo doth Dionysius in his description of the World.

(3) But as Strabo compares the then knowen Strabs.

World, to a Cloude, Ratilus Namaticaus Italy Coan Okeas Ratilus Namaticaus Italy Coan Okeas Leafs, and Disonflus Spaints, who an Oxe-hide: 16 the fadd Tactius in the life of Agricula, from Linie his ancient, and Fabius Rufficus his moderne, doth liken the fashion thereof to a long Difb, or two-headed Axe: whose forme notwithstanding may better be exposed to the cie, in the draught before seene, then can be explained in words to conceit, or vnto any other thing bee compared besides it selfe: especially seeing that fo many good Writers have had but very bad fücceffe in their resemblances of Countries. And this of them is rather valike to either, if wee speake of the

whole, which then was vnknowen, as it seemeth by wnoe, which fine was viknowen, as it feemeth by Tatista. And the huge enorm traft of ground be by ond Catekania, which runneth vinto the furthermoth point, growing narrow and flare like avedge, was first redoubled with the Romane fleet by Talina Agri-Tanana is used and the Talina and the Talina is used. cola, and BRITAINE discouered to bee an Iland, one hundred thirty and fix yeeres after Iulius Cefars first entrance therein.

(4) Some haue beene induced by the narrow-neffe of the Sea, and likeneffe of the Seile, to thinke that BRITAINE was sometimes joined to the continent of France: whereunto Servius Honoratius sub-scribeth in his Commentaric vpon the first Eclog of rat. Virgil, who there mentioneth

— Penitas tota duifos or be Britatnor,
The Britaine people quite from all the world diffioind.
As likewise by Claudian another ancient Poet it

— nostro deducta Britannia mundo, The Britaine soile removed from our worlds continent.

And Vinianus with them affirmes, that in the beinning Britaine and Gallia were both one Land. The like doth Virgil verific of the Ile of Sivilie, which in sieille thought like doth Pitzil vertic of the 1st of Stitie, which in stitute spath for reports to have been one with Italic. Others hold, that all Isaach had their first leparation Dominal Dominal Office the theory of the trage of the general Dislays, Nagar, and that the mountaines thereby hewed their tops. Thoughte from bourted plaine grounds, and the plaines felting low-lawral Bloods and the plaines for the transport of the plaines for the transport of the state of th er, became deepe vallies. When or howfocuer, by Gods divine ordinance and wildome, wee see that these I lands situated in the Seas, doe no lesse scrue and adorne the Ocean it felfe, then the Lakes and Pooles of water doe the drie land, and all of them (as members of one masse) to minister sustenance for the life of all things liuing, and pleasures to the vse and service of

paration from the Mapus by th

(5) The Iland of BRITAINE, of all others the most famous (by Catallus reputed the furthest to-wards the West) is bounded on the South with Normandie and France, vpon the East with Germany and Demmarke, vpon the West with Ireland and the Atlanticke Ocean, and vpon the North with the valt Deucalidon Seas. The length thereof, measured by the graduations to both extremes, that is, from the Lyfard adactions to both eatheries, studies, studies in the Layara Foun Southward in Cornwall, which liech in the Lati-tude of 50. degrees and 6. minutes, to the Straithy bead in Scotland (being the furthest point of this Iland

Thucydides lib 2.cap.7.

Iofephuscontra Appion.li. 1. Hellanicus. Acufilaus. Diodorus. Herodotus. Ephorus. Timaus. Philiftus. Callias. Thucydides. Suctonius in v ta Cafar Sect Tacitus. F. Maximus, Silenus. Antigonus. Hierome. Dionyfius Hal.

Hierom.in his Prolog. in Iab. Iob.8.g.

Bodine.

Titus Liui.

custome of kissing in salutations came, after the example of these wives, who to appeale the busbands wraths with smiles and imbracings kissed their mouths. Some will have the name from Roma the daughter of Italus and of Lucaria, or els of Telephus the sonne of Hercules, and of the wife of Eneas. Others of Ascanius the sonne of Eneas. Some againe from Romanus the sonne of Ulysses and of Cyrce, wil haue it named Rome. Others from Romus the sonne of Emathion, whom Diomedes sent thither from Troy. There are that bring the name thereof from one Romus a tyrant of the Latines, who droue the Thuscans out of those parts. And they who thinke that Romulus (as that is most generall, and carieth the most likelihood to be Romes founder,) do not agree about his auncestours, as more at large in Plutarch appeareth. And therefore with Thucydides we may well say, It is a hard and difficult matter to keepe a meane in speaking of things, wherein scarsly can be had a certaine opinion of trueth. And the rather, for that the writers themselves have blamed each others of affectation & falshood, as in Fosephus we may see; who affirmeth, That Hellanicus dissented from Acustlaus, Acustlaus with Diodorus correcting Herodotus; Epherus accused Hellanicus of vntrueths; so did Timaus reprove Ephorus of as much; Philistus and Callias differed from Timaus in his History of Sicily, and Thucydides accounted a lyar by some. Casar is taxed by Asinius Pollio (laith Suetonius) to be partiall in his Commentaries; And Tacitus by Tertullian is blamed for vntruths; Fabius Maximus is reprehended by Polybius for defectively writing the Punicke warres; and himselse againe with Silenus, Timaus, Antigonus, & Hierom, as much found fault with by Dionysius Halicarnasseus, for writing the Romane histories so unperfedly. And a man may vie the very same speech against Dionysus, saith Bodine. These things thus standing, let vs give leave to Antiquitie, who sometimes mingleth falshoods with truth, to make the beginnings of Policies seeme more bonourable: And whose power is farre scrued into the worlds conceit, that with Hierome we may say, Antiquity is allowed with such generall applause, that knowne vntruthes many times are pleasing unto many. Yet with better regard to reverend Antiquity, whom fobs opposer wills vs inquire after, and to our owne relations in delivering their censures, let this be considered; That more things are let slippe, then are comprehended in any mans writings, and yet more therein written, then any mans life (though it be long) will admit him to reade. Neither let vs be forestalled with any prejudicate opinions of the reporters that in somethings may justly be suspected, or in affection, which by nature we owe to our naturall Conntrey; nor consent (as Liuie speaketh) to stand to the ancientnesse of reports, when it seemeth to take away the certainty of truth. To keepe a meane betwixt both, my felfe with Bildad doe confesse, that I am but of yesterday, and know nothing, and therefore wil relate the originall names and Nations of this famous fland, with the successions of her Monarches and Historicall

attions, fo farreonly as is most approued by the best Writers, and will leaue other clouds of obscurity to be cleared by the labours of a more learned penne.



towards the North) Set in the degree 60, and 30, minutes containeth (according to the feale of the terrestriall Globe) fix hundred twenty foure miles : not to trouble the Reader with other accounts, feeing the same so exactly to agree with the spaces of the heauens. And the extent of the Land in the brodeft part is from the Lands end in Cornwall in the West (lituated in 14. degrees and 37. minates of Longitude, according to Mercator his Atlas) vnto the Iland Tenet in the East of Kent (lying in 22. degrees 30. minutes) and containeth miles 340.as they have delivered, that with curious fearch haue laid the dimension thereof. (6) The fite of this Iland is fet by the Mathema-

for Latitude, and ticks in the eighth Climate for Latitude, and the Longitude likewise placed betwixt the Parallels fourteene and twenty fix : a feat as well for Aire as Soile. both fruitfull and milde; and for length of daies, pleasant and delightfull: for in the height of Summer the day is said to bee eighteene equinoctiali houres long, wherof fixteen and a halfe are spent from Sunne In the furthest to Sunne. Yea and Tacitus faith, that in the furthest In the friends to Summe. Yea and Textus tasth, than me be purely investing the same of the Better might hee haue faid, by reason of the inclination of his Circle to the Horizon descending not directly, but passing obliquely, razing as it were under

their Horizon. (7) The aire, faith Strabo and Tacitue, is rather inclinable to flowers then to flow. And Cofar commends it to bee more temperate, and the cold leffer, The cold in Brithen that in France, as not subject to either extremes, as the more Northerne and Southerne Countries are: to which temperature Cescenius Getulicus a very ancient Poet seemeth to have respect, when of this Iland thus he verfifieth:

Nonillic Aries verno ferit aera cornu,

Gnofia nec Gemini pracedunt cornua Tauri. The horned Ram there butteth not the airc of tender fring The Twins, nor Bull do to this foile untimely feafons bring.

(8) And although the Seas thereof are accounted and called by Nubienfis the Arabian, The darke and dangerous Seas, in regard of the misty vapors that therfrom arile, yet in the winter leason those clouds are dispersed into still showers of raine, that doe dissolue the rigour and great extremitie of the cold : yea and those Seas themselves stirred and working to and fro with the windes, doe thereby wax warme (as Citero faith) so that a man may easily perceive within that world of waters a certaine heat inclosed. And Minutius Fælix pre ouing that GOD hath a special regard to the seuerall parts of the world, as well as to the whole, faith, that BRITAINE, though otherwhiles wanting the spect of the Sunne, yet is it releesed with the warmth of her environing Seas; and as much refreshed, we may well say, by those sweet and gentle windes that in the height of Summer are fent from those feas, and doe abate the rigor of the Sunnes great scorching heat; and yeeldeth not only entercourse for traffique into all parts of the World, but plentifully aboundeth with all forts of fish, to the great benefit of the Inha-bitants; and bringeth foorth Pearles, as Tacitus sheweth, which were vsually east out with the flood, and ga-thered at the ebbe. These Pearles, though not altogether so orient as they in India, by Amianus in his 23 booke and 12. chapter, are called Rich Gemmes. And Pliny in his ninth booke and thirty fifth chapter, vfeth the like terme : The defire whereof (as Suetonius faith) drew Cefars affection for the Conquest of BRITAINE. (9) The soile (saith Tacitus) setting aside the

Oline, the Vine, and such other plants as are onely pro-

Cefar writeth, that for timber it was stored of all | Cefar. Com. lin 5 kindes, as in Gallia, the Beech and Firre tree onely excepted. For abundance of Graine, Britaine is faid to bee The feat of Queene Ceres, by Orpheus the old Poet;
and the Granary and Storehouse for the Westerne World,
the seasof Queene. as Charles the great tearmed it: and by our owne Ancestors in the blacke Booke of the Exchequer it is called a Paradife of pleasure. From whence the Ro- Romanes laded manes were wont yeerely to transport (with a fleet of come in Britain for their aumies for their aumies of corne for the maintenance of their Armies. But clewhere, vnto the particular relation of each feuerall blefsing belonging to this most happie Iland, wee will not againe enter, feeing that in enery County wee have fufficiently, and no more then truly, spoken thereof. Only, if you please, heare what hath beene said of this Land by the Romane Orators, and first in the Panegyricke to Constantius the Emperour.

(10) of happie BRITAINE, and more fortunate then all other Lands befile, which fift didit fee Conftanum. Unc Emperour! For good cause hat nature endowed thee with all blefsings both of aire and foile: wherin there is nei-ther excessive cold of Winter, nor extreme heat of Summer: cold of winter, wherein there is so great abundance of graine, that it suffi-tech both for bread and drinke. There the forrests are free Britaine aboun from sauage beasts, and the ground void of noisome ser- ling with all plenpents : in whose stead an infinite multitude of tame cattle there are, with their odders flrutting ful of milke, and loden and delight. with fleeces to the ground. And verily (that which for the ve of our lines wee most esteeme) the daies are therein very long, and the nights neuer without some light, for that those Briteines nights utmost plaines by the feaside cast and raife no shadowes on neuer without one light. high; and the aspect both of skie and starres passeth beyond the bound of the night : yea the very Sunneit selfe, which unto us feemeth for to fet, appeareth there only to paffe by a ittle, and goe afide.

ttle, and goe afide.
And in another, spoken to Constantius, the father Panegre, spakes to Constantius, the father to Constantius. of Constantine the Great, thus is faid :

Though BRITAINE be but a fingle name, yet surely the States losses have beene manifold, in forgoing a Land to plentifull in fruit and graine, foriehin pasturage, Lana lo pictusijuum 19 m. anu grame, jo rietusi pajone ago, lo fulloi mines and veines of metall, lo gainfullin tributes | Baitain and reucnewes, so accommodated with masy hauens, and full of mines of metale, for esreuit folarge and spacious.

And a Poet of good antiquity, of natures motherly Remagnes.

affection towards this our Iland, hath thus written: Tunimio net stricta gelu, net sydere feruens, Clement culo temperieque places.
Clement culo temperieque places.
Cùm parent Natura parens, varioque fauore
Diuideret dotes omnibus vua locis,
Sepofuit potioratibis, matremque professa,

Infula sis falix, plenaque pacis, ait. Quicquid amat luxus, quicquid desiderat vsus, Exteprougnies, vel aliunde tibi. Nor freezing cold, nor scorching hot shou art; Thy aire a heavenly temper, fweetly breath'd: So pleas d Dame Nature when she first bequeath d To energ foile of herrich oifts a part;
Then Mother-like best choice for thee she sought:
Be thou (quoth she) the ble sted le of peace. What ever pleasure yeelds, or wealths increase, From thee shall grow, or shall to thee be brought.

(11) And that BRITAINE hath beene taken for those fortunate Ilands whereof the Poets have imagined a perpetual spring time, is certaine by Isa- Havin Testeim Tzeizes a Greeke Author of good account. And in Robert of Auesburie wee read, what time Pope Cle- Robert of Ament the fixth had elected Lewis of Spaine to be Prince useharie, of the Fortunate Ilands, railing him powers both in Fritains taken Italie and France, the English Ligier Embassadours that lay then in Rome for King Edward the third, were so deepely set in the opinion, that this preparation was madeagainst B R I T A I N E, that they wrote their suspicions conceined, and presently with-drew themseluesinto England, to certific the King of these delignes. And it seemeth Pope Innocent the fourth was of the same minde, when (as Matth. Parif. writeth) hee said, Verè hortus deliciarum est Anglia : verè puteus inexhaustus est : Et vbi multa abundant, de multis

the first inhabi-ters of this Iland being meerely barbarous, seuer troubled them-felues to transmit their Originals to posteritie. Cafar. Com.lib. 6. Draides the onely wife men among

wife men among the first Inhabiany thing of their originall, yet it must needs have perified. Gildas de excidio

and whence many things may bee extorted, &c. With which his conceit he was afterward to farre transported with a longing defire, as hee made great meanes and earnest fuit to the King of England (as the faid Authorwriteth, adam. 1250.) that hee might come

into England to fee that Country which was every where so much renowned. In a word, BRITAINE is so rich in commodities, so beautifull in situation; and so resplendent in all glory, that if the Omnipoten. (as one hath faid) had vouchfafed to fashion the world round like a ring, as he did like a globe, it might have beene most worthily the onely Gemme therein. Whole Fallies are like Eden : whose Hilles are as Lebanon : whose Springs are as Pifgah: whose Rivers are as Iordan: whose Walles is the Ocean : and whose defense is the

Chap.1.

the King of Em

multa possunt extorqueri, &c. Certes the Kingdome of En. gland is the very Paradife of pleasures, a Well which can neuer bee drawen drie: where many things doe abound, Lord I EHOVAH.

(12) The body then of this Imperial Monarthe sheweth not onely the greatnesse of it selfe in it felfe, but also extendeth her beautifull branches into many other Countries and Kingdomes farre incent and remote. This greatnesse is made the more sensible, for that the Iland in times past sustained at once no less then it.

Kings commandno less then eleven Kings in their royall estates, all ing great powers. of them wearing Crownes, and commanding great powers. Such was the Heptarchie of the Saxons leven Kingdomes, scated on the South of Seuerius his Wall. Two Kingdomes thence had their sites in that Northerne part, and their feuerall Kings of Scots and Picts ruling on both fides the Clude, even vnto the Deucaledonian Seas. And two Kingdomes (if not mote) divided into North and South, and their Kings of the

ancient Britaines ruling the West part of this Iland D. Perest in the beyond the Chapdh Off a, or Off a his Distrib, commonly in Resource; the

(13) The Itands likewife belonging to this Em- The lie of Ata pre had Kings of their owne, as that of Man, the Original States and in Ireland as one time fine Kings raigning within teller. together. France also is annexed, and so was Cyprus Cfress and some fometimes with fome Prouinces of Syria, Subdued by King Richard the first, surnamed Cam-de-lion. And at this present in the new World of America a Colonie of A Colonell of BRITAINES is feated in that part now called VIR-GINEA; whereby the borders of our Soueraignes command and most rightfull title may bee inlarged, & the Gospell of Iefus Christ further preached, which no doubt will in time be imbraced, to the faluation of many, and great honour to the BRITAINES. And that the borders of this most roiall Tent have beene that the BOUGETS OF LIBS HOUR FORM 12 FM HAUE DECINE
wide fipered in Former times, White of Basing Flocks is of
opinion, who affirmeds that the limits of the British Employer
pire to old time was from the O'Ccades onto the Pyreneau
Reference in the Committee of Mountaines. And that King Athelflan after his continues patt from quest of those Northerne parts with that of Denmarke the Orester vito wrote fo his ritle : which further is confirmed by the Charter of King Edgar for the foundation of the Cathedrall Church at Worcester, wherein likewise he so ftiled himselfe. The inlargement whereof we pray to be accomplished, especially in those parts where God be accompanied, especially in those parts where Godies not knowen, according to the faying of the Prophet, that the turtaines of our habitations may be furplet, that the turtaines of our habitations may be furplet. Piets, time tree curiances of our mantainous may one justifies fives, with increase on the right hand and on the left: and that our feed may possible those GR NTILES, and dwell in their Cities: whereby the ninth National Conserved to

and dwell in their Cities: whereby the minth Politic Conserved to on may be connerted vnto C H R I S T, as eight Conserved to may be Employees have beene. Employees have beene. others before this time by Englift-men haue beene. Englift-

THE NAMES THAT HAVE BEENE

ATTRIBUTED VNTO THIS ILAND

OF GREAT BRITAINE.

CHAPTER IL



The first Inhabit

touching the first Inhabitants and originall Names of this Iland, things to farre cast into the mistie darkneffe of obscuritie and obliuion, that there is no hopeleft vs, fo lately born, to discouer them; especially knowing that the first Inhabitants being meerely

barbarous, neuer troubled themselues with care to transmit their Originals to posteritie : neither if they would, could have done, being without Letters, which only doe preserue and transferre knowledge vnto others. And say they had letters, yet was it not lawfull for them to commit their affaires to writing, as Cefar doth testifie of the Draides, the only wise and learned men among them, that had the managing both of Iustice and religious Rites. And had they committed these things to writing, yet doubtlesse had they perished in the revolutions of so many ages as are pasfed, and so many conversions or eversions of the State. Gildas and Ninus, the Britaines first Historians, Ottau as exetabs

Batte. Gildar and Ninsue, the Britaines first Historians,
No waderstading,
Confesse first affires
of this Hand, but
from formain

Writers; and neither that about two hundred and edde yeeres before the birth of our Sautour Christ. At

which time Polybius a most grave Writer, and an attendant upon Scipio, faith, that the Regions Northward from Narbona (as this is) were utterly unknowen; and Joan Neatonia (as times) were vietry outcomes; and what feet must written or reported of them, was but a dreame. And therefore vntill such time as the Romane Writers reach foorth their hands to direct vs, where the bed directed with the standard of the standard with the reliquiation of wee shall wander, as without a guide, and shall seeme of sitions.

to heape more rubbith vpon former ruines, (2) Yet let this bee granted, that the Originall names of Countries and Provinces were first assumed names of Countries and Prounces were first allumed from their polifiers, whereof Leffbus in the fettern the first flash of Leffbus in the fettern the first flash of Leffbus in the conducted in Section 1 Leffbus in the Leffbus in th after their father: I air his Cities that he conquered in ludg. 10.4 the Land of Gilead and Indea from Indah whose King was of him. And that this also was the practise of the was of him. And that this allo was the presented of the Principal le will.

Gentiles, Perionius doth shew, who saith, that himselfe Principal le will walk would not have their und Gellice. knew no Nation in the earth, which would not have their names either from their Prince, Captaine, or Ring: the cample whereof hee inferteth, that Spaine was so nation their state from Highes,

champter whereout neutrerin, that a passe was to nat tash from Italias, and the like.

(3) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias, (3) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (4) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (5) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes the first from Italias (6) And accordingly from Samothes (6) And accor brother of Gomer, and of Iauan, whose seed is faid in the tenth of Genesis to haue replenished the Iles of the steet the flood.

for Latitude, and for Longitude placed betweene the parallels fourteene and twenty fix.

Probue in Virgil Georgie.

The Ambicke

Bririth Seas Warme, De natura Desadjoined to

Britaines Cenmer affinage the heat.

In vit Cefar

per to hotter Countries, taketh all kinde of Graine, and beareth it in abundance : it shooteth up quickly, and ripeneth slowly : the cause of both is the same. the ouer-much moisture of the foile, and the aire. And

The credit of this and new pamph-let, bearing the name of Berefies

Plate in Timent. Sobs quispeth trut hazine attained to the vertex of a gray head for hiftone. Ledonic, Vines. rerina.

ALKION S name of the .land.o termed by the Greenans,

Pomponius Mela c.p.de Gallia. The name Albion from Alies the

Strabe lib.4.

Mari- Colmogr,

Birchal.de proprietsubus rerum,

Albion colled the it's hand 11.996

State of Company tire stung spon

Humfrey Lhandis Marianus Job Pour Albien, from Al-bing the beauti-full daughter of D. oclepan.

the yeere after the generall Flood two hundred fiftie and two, where he feated, and gaue Lawes to his people, and left to his postcritie the name thereof to bee called Samothea, after his owne. But fith the credit of this Samothes and his Samothea arifeth onely from a fmall and new pamphlet, bearing the name of Berofus the Chaldean, bolftred out vnder a flew of aged Antiquitie, and thrust into the world vnder the counternance of the ancient Historian himselfe : I meane not to enforce, seeing my purpose is to expose this most beautifull Iland in her owne beseeming attire, and not deformed by these rotten and patched ragges. And of this forged Berofus we have better cause to vpbraid I ohannes Annius his Countenancer and Commenter, then the Egyptian Priests had to twit Solon, in accusing the Grecians, that for historie had not attained to the yeeres of a gray head. For it exceeds not much one hundred and twenty yeeres fince the same booke first appeared in the world; and then vehemently suspected as fabulous by Lodouicus Vines, and afterwards conui-Gusperus Var- cted by the learned Gasperus Varrerius in a seuerall treatife, and now univerfally rejected of all skilfull

Gentiles, is brought by some Authors into this Iland,

(4) But the name ALBION is better received, being found to tearmed of the Grecians in ancient time, as in the booke De Mundo, written to Alexander, and supposed to be Aristotles, Pliny in his Natural Hiflorie, Ptolomie, Strabo, and others : yet vpon what ground it should bee so called there arise many coniectures. Pomponius Mela, Nicolas Perottus, Rigmanus Philefius, Ariftotle, and Humfrey Lhurd, derive it from Albion Mareoticus a Giant, and sonne of Neptune, that conquered (as they fay) these Samotheans, and seated himselfe in this Iland the yeere after the Flood three hundred thirty fine. And if that be true which Perottus and Lilius Giraldus have written, then may this Albion giue name to this Iland. Notwithstanding, Strabo, Munster, and Frier Bartholomew, will have it lo named ab albis rupibus, of the rockes and white clifts appearing towards the coasts of France: which carrieth the more likelihood through the credit of Orpheus a most ancient Poet, who in his Argenauticks (if so be they were his) calleth the Iland next vnto Hibernia or Hermin, which questionlesse is this of ours, were that is, the white Land. And accordingly have the Welfh Poets called it Inis Wen. And this is further confirmed from Cicero, who termeth these whitish clifts mirificas moles ; as also by the anticke Coines of Antonius Pius and Seuerus the Romane Emperours, wheren BRITAINE is flamped in a womans attire fitting vpon rocks. And the same being chalkie, or of a Fourth de morbis | plaster-like substance, Fracastorius supposeth was the cause of the sweating sicknesse, and whereof Albion had the name. Vnlesse some will derive it from Alphon, which as Festus faith, doth signific white in Greeke; or Olbion, rich or happie, in regard of the fertilitie of the foile, wholesome temperature of the aire, and the rich commodities in the same : either from Albion for the high fituation. But from the Latine albis rupibus it could not bee deriued, when that language was vnknowen to the world. Marianus the Monke, John Rous, David Pencair, and William Caxton, from others more ancient, doe fetch the name thereof from Albina the beautifull daughter of Dioclesian King of Syria, who with her fifters, thirty in number, for the flaughter of their husbands, were banished their Countrey, and without man, oares, or tackles, were committed to the mercy of the Seas, who after many aduentures. lastly arrived upon this shoare, where they inhabited, A ridiculous opt and gaue name to this Iland, calling it Albion after the name of their eldeft fifter : and accompanying with Divels, brought foorth a progenie of Giants, if we will beleeue the Legend of this most impudent lier, which is worthily rejected by Badius, Volateranus, Harding, Bale, Iohn Rous, and others. But that the name Albion was both of great acceptance and long continuance, is apparent by the worthy Epitheton of King Edgar the Saxon, who in his Charter for the foundation of the

Abbie of Ely, hath these words: Ego Edgarus Basileus | The mame Albie dilect a Infula Albionis, subditis nobis sceptris Scotorum, Cumbrorum, & omnium circumcirca Regionum, quieta pace fruens, &c. By which hee knitteth the whole Kings. Iland together, as a Land worthily to be beloued, and calleth it ALBION

(5) The next name ascribed vnto this Iland is BRITAINE BRITAINE, and that first found and given by the Grecians, who were the first discouerers of these Wes land by y name fterne parts of the world : either from their painted BRITAINE bodies, as their neighbours (if not ancestours) the Gaules were named of their long shaggie haire, or of their rich metals therein gotten, and thence carried in abundance into other Countries ; or from Brute, that with his dispersed Troians conquered it, as he of Monmouth hath translated; or what occasion socuer, uffing ap Aribur. I dispute not : only it feares me I shall give but small satisfaction to the desirous Reader, of the cause and originall of this name, being conforted with fo many vocertainties, wherein the further we follow this intangled threed, the further are we lead into the Labyrinth of ambiguitie. But as Plutareh, Liny, and other Latine Writers have complained of the many fictions The fainings of and fables of Poets intermingled with the histories of truth, Poets have be whereby truth it felfe was often made incredible; for weign rehearing many in the histories. fo we in rehearling the diuers names of Britannie, and the reasons thereof by sundry Writers alleged, rest free in our relations, either from impeaching the power of Antiquitie, or approouing those things that are as yet wrapped vp in Times Oblitions, leaving the credit to them that haue-left the same vnto vs, and the censure of their opinions to the judgement of the

learned, and those of better experience, (6) The vulgar received opinion, held on with foure hundred yeeres continuance, (some few mens of this lland exceptions had against the same) is, that this Iland thought to take tooke the name of Britannia from Brute the sonne of Brate. Syluius, of whom more shall bee spoken in the next Chapter for the peopling of this Iland, and from whom some (following a suspected Gildas) doe write the name Brutaine : for so doth Hierome, who translating Acthicus that excellent Scythian Philosopher, cal-leth both this and the Ilands adiacent, Infulas Brutamic.is. But belides the many objections made both by forraine and home-bred Writers, that sceme to make the storie of Brute doubtfull, Humfrey Lhuyda In his Beeniarie Cambre-Britaine, a learned and diligent searcher of Britaine. Antiquaties, doth confidently deny the name Britaine to be taken from Brute; and among many other obfernations, makes this an infallible argument, that the letter B. is not the fuft radicall of that name; and affirmeth boldly, that there is not any British word whose much boldly, that there is not any British word whose which is the best boundary to be sufficient first radicall letter is B. And therefore hee will have it to be anciently written PRYDCAIN, compounded of two British words, PRYD and CAIN, which PRYDCAL fignifie (as he faith) Beauty and White; the C. being lost in the latter word, for the more easie pronuntiation in the British tongue; and the P. in the former changed into B. by the Latines, for the more gentle and pleasant sounds sake: fo that himselfe thinketh, that those learned and expert men in the British tongue, which wrote the Ilands name with B. doe therein rather follow the Latines, then judging that to bee the true name indeed : for proofe whereof hee citeth both ancient Copies and Traditions of their owne old Poets the Bardi, by whom | Britaine viually (faith he) it was vivally called Prydain, as the fitteft called Prydain. denomination for so beautifull a Land. But if either colour or commodities were her Godfathers at the font-stone, why was she not rather named The Palace of Queene Ceres, as old orpheus termes her; either Infula florum, as it hath beene found written in a very ancient manu-script? And yet to second this his conceited name, I finde recorded by Bishop Cooper, a learned Writer, that which makes for that purpose. At Engehnreh (faith he) two miles from Salisburie, in the dig- Britannia write ging downe of a wall, a booke containing twenty leaves of Professes. very thicke velome was found, which from the hands of Master Richard Pace, chiefe Secretarie to the King, I re- King Edward Vt.

reteined in the Charters of fom

How this flan

ceiued; but being fore defaced, could read no one senience

thorow yet did I well perceive the word PRYTANIA, (not called fo, from the adjuncts white and Beauteous but rather from the Greeke word unnula Prytania, which as he faith, doth fignifie mettals. For the Grecians flourishing in wisedome, and experience, entred the Ocean and finding this Iland full of Braffe, Tynne, Lead, Iron. Gold, and Silver gave name thereunto accordingly and called it Prytania. Thus farre he. And some in regard of these rich commodities thence brought, will haue it named Britannia, as voon like occasion Vibius Sequester astirmeth Calabria sometimes to haue beene so salled. Others, and those many, do hold a more strange opinion, namely, that this Iland was called Britannia of Bretta a Spanish word which fignifieth Earth, for Bretta a Spanish that it was separated from the maine land, and say they it was once joined with the continent of France, Of this opinion are Antonius Volfcus, Dominicus Marius Niger, Servius Honoratus Vinianus, Bodine, Twyne, and Verstegan. But how that name from that separation may be gathered I understand not : for if it be granted, that this Iland also was cut from the continent (as it is thought all others in the world were,) by the violent rage of the univerfall floud, yet it followeth not, that this only should claime that name, and from that occasion, more then any other, or then all of them so divided and set apart in the maine Ocean. Others there are that would have the name Britaine to bee brought from Britona a Nymph in Greece, daughter to Mars, who (as they lay) to avoid the lascivious intents of Minos, for looke the country, and passing the leas ariued in this Iland and by her the name arose, this hath Textor . But I might as well cite Calepine for his Anglia, and Marianus for his Albina, being all fables conforting alike together, and fictions of the same au-Hefychisu. thority that Virgils Dido is. Hefichius deriueth the name Britaine from Britannus the father of Celtice on whom Hercules begat Celtus the original of the Celta as Parthenius Nicesus a very ancient author writeth. taus. Sir Thomas Elia And Sir Thomas Eliot a learned Knight draweth the name of this Iland from the Greek fountaine alfo, Greek word but of other fignification, viz. rumania Prutania, by which terme the Athemans signified their publike reuenues, and yet that is infily excepted against, seeing that it is a peculiar terme only to the Athenians, and that Grecians call the Grecians called this Iland sureme not therente Goroand not pius Becanus in his Originall of Antwerp faith, that the Iporania. Soropius Bei Danes fought here to plant themselues, and so named this in Orig. de Ant. Iland Bridania, that is, free Denmarke. And others delib.6. Bridania or Free-Denmar riue it from Prutenia a country in Germany. But that both these are sictions it manifestly appeareth, for that this Iland was famous by the name of Britaine Britaine fame

Chap.2.

Tentot.

med before ei-ther Dania or

heard of in the

Pomponina Lau

Britons is

France came

pag 8. Forcatulus

Britaine called

white. Britaine called

of an Hebren

Vs. Cambden Brit.

Pomponius Letus would have it Briton, and that name given it from the Britons in France. Indeed it is probable, that from the Celtes, the old Gaules, our originals descended: but that the name should come of them hath no colour of truth, feeing that those Britons came from vs, and not we from them : and in Cafars time that coast was called Armorica, but this of ours Britaine. Forcatulus deriueth the name thereof from Brithin a drinke, which as Athenaus faith was vied among the Greeks. And others will have it from the Bruti aroauing and stragling people in Italy : both which are accounted but idle conceits and for no leffe we will leave them. White of Basing Stocke will have the name thereof deriued from an Hebrew word, and Isidore from a word of her own language. Thus then is Britanny burthened with many titles under one truth; and these are the ascriptions, causes and exceptions, as far as we are able to gather :all which must give place to that which is to follow out of the painfull collections and iudicious observances of our illustruous Antiquarie Master Cambden . Whose words I will abridge, and by his good fauour bring to furnish this chapter, and further to satisfie the vusatisfied Reader.

(7) This then he holderh for granted, that ancient

nations in the beginning had names of their own: and that

after from these the Greeks and Latines by wresting them

Prutania were heard of in the world.

Anciensmation had names of

to the analogie or proportion of their speech imposed names and by Greeks upon Regions and countries, which tooke their denomination and Launes. ons from their people and in-dwellers. So lewry was na- lenry to called many hundred yeeres before that either Dania or

med from the lewes, Media from the Medes, Perlia of the of the lewes. Persians, Scythia of the Scythians, Oc. And why not then by the authority of Martial, Iuuenal, Aulonius, Proco-Scychia of the pius, and in old inscriptions set up by the Britaines them- Britas, Br felues, BRITTA, BRITO, BRITONES, BRIT-TVS, from BRIT, or BRITH, from whom any one Brittis, From being of that nation might be termed NATIONE Brit or Brith, BRITTO, as is feene fo inscribed in Saint Mary the Round at Rome? The Saxons likewife themselves called Round at Rome? The Saxons unewaye socray control the Britains Bp107, and Witichindas the Saxon enerie Base. Societies Reite: 6 that the word withindas. where nameth the Britaines Britæ: fo that the word BRIT we doubtlesse the Primitive, from whence BRIT-TO is derived, and from whence the first glimpse of light leading to the word BRITAINE, seemeth to appeare. And that all nations desifed their names of that, wherein they either excelled others, or were knowen by from others, whether in regard of their first founders honor, as the lones of lavan, the litaclites of litacl, the Cananites of Canaan; Israelites to calor whether in respect of their nature, conditions, and inclior whether in respect of their nature, conditions, and inclinations; as the lbcri after the Hebrew Etymologie bécause their first sunters; the Henci because they were straglers; the beneause they were straglers. the Nomades for that they were breeders of Cattell; the called Me Nomades name to their effected valour and manhood; the frankners for being free; the Pannonians, as Dio conceing of their bree ding of Catell. Franklers for vering free; the Vannontains, as 1010 concestiveth, of their coats with cloth-sleenes; the Acthiopians of their blacke hue: and the Albanes because they were borne called of their with white haire for fo faith Solinus, that the colour of black hue. their heads gave name unto the people. Seeing then that these our Ilanders were known and called by a name comineje our uanders were known and cauca by a name com-mon to both them and their neighbors, Cimbri or Cumeri, and had no better marke to be diffinguished and knowen and had no vetter marks to oe upitrophypea and knowled from the borders, then by their cultome of painting their bodies, whereof the most approach authoris doe writtelf, as Cæfar, Mela, Pliny, Martial and others, who affirme that the Britanes ofed to colour themselves with woad, called in the Latme glastum (and Glase at this day with them doth signifie blew) what if I then should contecture (saith he) that they were called Britains from this their painted bodies? for what is thus stained or coloured, in their ancient country speech is called BRITH. Neither let this Etymologie of Britains feeme to be either harsh or absurd, feeing the very words found alike, and the name also as an expres the very worse journe auxe, marker more my on an expressionage represented the thing which in Etymologies are chiefly required for Brith, and Brit, doe passing well accord. And the word Brith among the Britaines, implicit shat which the Britains were indeed, so wit, painted, stanted, deed, and coloured, as the Latine poets describe them : hauing their backes pide or medly coloured, as Oppianus termeth them. From which colours and vie of painting, the ancient Britaines (as he thinketh) had their names, and as yet in vie among the Welsh. But this is certaine that a Britain is called in the British tongue BRITHON, and as BRITO came of BRITH, so did BRITANNIA, who as Ilidore faith tooke the name from a word of their owne nation: for what time the ancient Greeks (that first gaue name to this Hand) either as rouers or merchants trauelled into other remote and farre dissoined countries (as neutainto other remote ana jarre ayionnea countries (as Erato(thenes reporteth) learned from the Inhabitants themselucs or els of the Gaules which stake the same language, that this our nation was called Brith and Brithon: They then unto the word BRITH, added TANIA, whichin the Greek Gloffaries betokeneth a REGION, and whereof they made a compound name was ain that is the BRITONS-LAND. And that this is so, the countries BRITONS-LAND. ARBITMENTH 11/19, the countries also hing in the West part of the world, as Mauritania, Lulitania, and Aquitania, dee single forteenth confirme: for the Grecians being the first Surveiors of those regions, of Mauri, whom Strabo faith was called Nunidia, made Mauri.

tania; of Lusus the sonne of Bacchus, Lusitania, and of

Aquis (waters, as Iuo Carnotensis is of opinion) called the country Aquirania: as also Turditania, and Bastinania,

Provinces in Spain, might arife from the Turdi, and Basis their possessions. And that this manner of composition is most

viual in the names of countries we fee : For came not Ire-

land by composition of the Irish word Erim ? Did not An-

gle terre grow together of an English and French word PDI

Media of the

Brit the primb tiue from Whence Britte

their neighbors called both by one name Cim-bri or Cumeri.

The Britaines loured them-clues to be di-

Britis and Brit

Cynegetic li.1

ffidore.

Strabo. Tansa added to a

England com-ming of Angle Danmarch one

pounded of Dan and March. S.Hieron.in

Phlegon.

Grecians inhabi

Ashenem. the Greeks inha-

biting in Britain. Bradeus Mifcellan.1/b.3. Vlyffes Altar in Calcdonia.
Thule thought
to be one of the Hesofthe On cades in Scot-land, Low countries.

Thule much

Laza Barfins glory that they derine many words from the Greeks, fo may

Arbenam. For fo by the

for Britannia.

ount I place the In Britaine great flore of large

Philess Tan-Cafar.

In Scotland

and became England, Doth not Franc-lond proceed from a French and Saxon word? Came not Poleland from a Polonian word, which with them betokeneth a plaine? and was not Danmarch compounded of Dan and the Dutch word March, which signifieth a bound or limit? Neither have we cause to wonder at this Greek addition TANIA, seeing that S. Hierome in his questions upon Genesis, proved out of most ancient Authors, that the Greekes inhabited along the sea coasts and Isles of Europe thorowout as far as to this our Iland.Let vs read faith he, Varroes bookes of Anti-quities, and those of Sissinius Capito, as also the Greeke writer Phlegon, with the rest of the great learned men, and we shall see all the I lands well neere, and all the sea coasts of

the whole world, to have been taken up with Greek inhabi ted well neere all the whole world, to have been taken up with week innavi-the leacoasts of lants, who, as I faid before, from the mountaines Amanus the whole world.

and Taurus even to the British Ocean, possession along the seaside. And verely, that the Greeks arised in this our region, viewed and considered well the site and nature thereof, there will be no doubt nor question made : if we obferue what Athenœus hath written concerning Phileas Taurominites who was in Britaine in the yeere one hundred and fixty before Cæfars comming : if we call to remembrance the Altar with an inscription onto Vlysses in Greek letters creeted in Calcdonia as Solinus faith, and lastly if we marke what Pytheas before the time of the Romans here, hath delivered and written as touching the di-Stance of Thule from Britaine. For who had cuer discouered onto the Greeks, Britain, Thule, the Belgick countries, and their sea coasts especially, if the Greek ships had not entred the British and German Ocean, yea and related the description therof unto their Geographers? Had Pytheas, actifiption there y who their vergraphers: It as I yuttess, thinke you, come to the knowledge of fix daies failing beyond Britaine, unlesse some of the Greeks had showed the same? Who euer told them of Scandia, Bergos and Nerigon, out which men may faile into Thule? And these names seem to have been better knowen unto the most ancient Greeks, then either to Pliny or to any Roman. Wherupon Mela te-

stifieth, that Thule was much mentioned and renowned in

Greek writers: Pliny likewise writeth thus; Britain an

Iland famous in the monuments and records both of the

Greeks and of vs. By this meanes therefore, so many Greeke

ords have erept into the British, French, and withall into

the Belgick or Low-Dutch language . And if Lazarus Baylius, and Budæus doe make their vant and glory in

this, that their French-men have been of old wasten that is,

louers and studious of the Greeks, grounding their reason

wpon few French words of that Idiome, which receive some

marks and tokens of the Greek tongue : if Hadrianus Iu-

nius ioyeth no leffe, because in the Belgick words there lie

couertly Greek Etymologies: then may the Britains make

their boast in whose language many words there be derived from the Greeks. Thus farre M.Cambdens indgement

Which name we find first mentioned by Polybius the

ireeks historian, who lived and traveled with Scipic

horow most parts of Europe, about 265, yeers before

the birth of Christ. And after him Athenaus a Greek authour of good account, and before the yeere

of grace 179. mentioneth the name of Britaine

and that vpon this occasion: King Hiero, faith he, fra-

ming a ship of such hugenesse and burden, as was admira-ble to the world, was much troubled for a tree, whereof he

might make the maine mast: which at last with much ados

was found in Britaine, by the direction of a Swineheard.

and by Phileas Taurominites the Mechanick conneied

into Sicilie, whereby that want was fufficiently fuppli-

ed. To this let not the Criticks from Cafar fay, that

Britaine brought foorth neither Beech nor Firre, as he in

his fift book of commentaries affirmeth (if by fagus he

meane the Beech) seeing that the same kind doth most

plentifully grow in all parts of this Iland, and the

Firre-trees for masts in the North west of Scotland vp-

on the bankes of the Lough argicle of fuch great

height and thickneffe, that at the root they beare 28.

handfuls about, and the bodies mounted to 90. foot

of height they beare at that length 20 inches Diame-

tre, as hath been measured by some in commission, &

focertified to his Maiefix and at this prefent growing

vpon the lands of the right worthy Knight Sir Alex-

name Engloen. And therefore Calepine is to be rejected,

Danus; or force it from Angulus Orbis. (10) Neither indeed was it called England before the dates of Canatus the Dane; but with Angle-land, teathed the names both of Albios and Britister, as in a Secon Charter made by King Edger the tenth, Dane. in succession from Egbert, and no leffe then one hundred forty and nine yeeres after this Edict is seene, This Hand viawhere in the beginning he flight himselfe thus; Ego Anglelond, Al-land and Allandis Ballem, &c. And in the end of the facus the fame charter thus; Edgar Rex totius Britannia Donoco-

ander Hayes his Maiesties principal Secretay for Scotland But among the Latine Writers Lucretius was the first that before Cefar mentioneth Britaine in these verses: Nam quid Britannum cœlum deferre putamus,

Et quod in Aegypto est, quà mundi claudicat Axis: We see the difference in the spheeres where Britaines Sunne doth goe

From Egypts Clime, wherein Charles waine is fored to draw fo low. (8) Other names hath this Iland beene termed

by, and that either by way of note for her lituation, as Infula Caruli, the Iland in the Sea, fo written in the Britaine called fonet or parodia made against Pentidius Bassus, and by Claudian confirmed, whose sides (faith hee) the against Sea doth wash. And in a very ancient manuscript it is found written, Infula florum, an Iland of flowers, for the abundance of Graine therein growing: as also for her subjection to the Romanes, hath beene called by Aegisippus, the Romane World, and by her owne Hi- Britisine the Ro forian Gildas, Romania: for being first subdued by Properm them, the very name of servicede (saith he) stucke fast them, the very hame of resulting faith in January 10 the foile. And Properus Aquitanis in express words. A prophecy of callerh it, the Romane Island, and so did the South-sair the Romane of t ers when the statues of Tacitus and Florianus the Emperours were by lightning ouerthrowen, who prophe- taine. cied, that an Emperour should arise out of their familie.

This sland British should send a Pro-consult to the Romane Iland. Vp. Roman Iland. on the like cause of conquest and subjection we read in Amianus, that what time the Iland had affaied a dan- ibas.ca.7. gerous revolt in the raigne of Valentinianus the Emperor, Theodosius as then Gouernor of Britaine, reducing them under their wonted obedience, in honor of Valentinianus, caused the Iland to bee called VALEN-TIA, which name notwithstanding died either with, or immediately after the death of the faid Emperour. (9) But about the same time, when as by Gods de- Many countries

cree the Romanes fulneffe was come to the wane, and the greatnesse of their glory did abate; by the downefall of that one Empire many Kingdomes beganne to arife, and to have their Rulers, Lawes, and Limits of themselues. Among the rest, this Iland Britaine shortlie came to be divided into three icuerali Kingdomes, taine divided in and each of them to retaine an absolute power in to three king. lie came to be divided into three severall Kingdomes, This Iland Britheir owne dominions, and knowen by their feuerall don and proper names. The first was Scotland from Scoand proper names. I ne nrrt was accusate it to no septista, as the best suppose, whose parties a such each suppose, whose parties now southerne bounds was the famous Wall from Carilie to Nencastle, and from thence the enorme tract of all call to Nencastle. that Northerne promontorie was called Scotia, or Scotland. The second was Cambria, of vs called Wales, fited in the West of this Iland, inclosing those waste. The second. mountaines with a dited fraven from Engineering in the North, to the mouth of 18/9e neere Brittell in the South, to the mouth of 18/9e neere Brittell in the South, to feparated by great offs the Bringwark to Western Kine. And the third was Anteleand the Fath Mercian King. And the third was Angle-lond, the East, the most fruitfull, and best of the Iland, lying coasted The third. with the French and Germane Seas; so named when the Nagle-lond on white Heptarchie of the Saxons was ruled by King Egbert, who by his edich dated at Winchester, Anno 819. German Sestcommanded the same to bee called Angle-land, according to the name of the place from whence his anceftors the Angle-Saxons came, which was out of the of placem continent part of Denmarke, lying betwixt Iuitland De and Holfatia, where to this day the place retaineth the led Engloss. that would have the name from Queene Angela, and Goropius, of good Anglers; either from Pope Gregorie Gregorie 1.

Lucreius

rophecy of

Aniema Marcel

The first, Scotland, whose

This Hand no.

his attribute of Angell-like faces; or from others that would faine it from Angula the Giant-like brother to

Chap.z.

The name Es-

Hath the fifth

OF GREAT BRITAINE.

nem cum sigillo S. Crucis confirmati. And yet vpon his Coines wrote himfelfe Rex Anglis, whereby wee fee the rellish of the former names not vtterly extinct; though a new was imposed by the Saxons (11) This last name this Iland still retained;

gland not chan-ged either by t Dane or Northough two feuerall Conquests of two feuerall Nations were made of the fame. Neither did William the Conquerour attempt to alter it, it founding belike fo Angel-like in his cares, accounting himselfe most happie to be King of so worthy a Kingdome : the glorie whereof is further inlarged by the ranking of Christian nations, affembled in their generall Councels, wherein England is accounted the fifth, and hath place of presidencie before kingdomes of larger territories.

This name of England continued for the space of se- Hath continued uen hundred eighty and three yeeres, viito the com-ming in of our Soueraigne Lord King I Am 8 5, in and keprine anne 6 502. who by the hand of G o D hath viited all these Diademes into one Imperiall Crowne; and reduced the many Kingdomes in one Iland, under the gouernment of one Monarch : and after the manifold conquests, irruptions, and diffensions, hath settled an eternall amitie; and extinguishing all differences of names, hath given the whole lland the ancient name of Now reduced to GREAT BRITAINE, by his Edict dated at Westminster, quartring the royal Armes of his severall Kingdomes in one royall Scutchion, and for his mott, as is most meet,

BEATI PACIFICI.



THE ANCIENT NATIONS IN HABITING THIS ILAND OF GREAT BRI-

TAINE BEFORE THE CONOVEST THERE OF BY THE ROMANES.

CHAPTER III.

gen speaketh.

Ifa.45:18,

Norks flood.



T is not to bee doubted, but that this Iland with the Vniuerfall was replenished with people, immediately after that men began to be multiplied vpon the earth even in the daies of the former Patriarkes, and long before the Flood of Noah, as fundrie ancient

Writers haue related. And furely if wee confider in those first ages of the world the long life of man (the only meanes to multiplication) and the worlds continuance for one thousand six hundred sistie and six yeeres before it was destroied, wee shall easily yeeld, that every Country and corner of the earth was plentifully peopled and inhabited. And so much doe the Sacred Scriptures intimate vnto vs, where, by the Prophet Efay it is faid, Thus faith the Lord, that created heauen; God himfelfe, that framed the earth, and made it: he hath prepared it; he created it not in vaine; he formed it to (2) But when the wrath of GOD was executed

vpon the world for finne, and all ouer-whelmed with a Flood of waters, the whole earth thereby became altogether vnpeopled, eight persons only with the breed-reserved creatures saued in the storing Arke: Whose The house of Port or Hauen was the mountaine of Araret in Armemia; whence, with the blefsing of procreation, mankinde againe began to be multiplied vpon the earth; and from the confusion of Babels building, to be scattered by Tribes and Colomes, according to the diversitie of Languages, into divers parts and Countries of the world, giving names to the places where they feated, according to the names of their Princes, or chiefe Commanders. Amongst whom the sonnes of Japheth the eldest some of Noah (whom Moses declareth to have peopled the Illes of the Gentiles) betooke themfelues into Europe, these westerne parts of the world : Sems planted in Afia, Chans off spring seated in Africa. Joseph.lib. 1. as Sem did into Asia, and Cham into Africa : whole

posterities accordingly dispersed tosephus in his first Booke of Antiquities hath both branched into their seuerall divisions, and reduced them to their first roots and originals. (3) Now that the Iles of the Gentiles mentioned by Mofes, were these of Europe, all learned men con-

fesse: and therefore those especially of Britannie and Sicilie, as Wolfangus Musculus is of opinion. And that Europe fell to Japhets portion, Josephus and Isidore doe agree : who affirme his off-spring to have inhabited from the Mount Taurus all Europe Northward, so farre as the British Seas, leaving names both to places and people. And Gildas, as Nubrigensis witnesseth, and Polydore Virgil granteth, will have this I land inhabited even from the Flood. But of their ancient things, faith Sebastian Munster, no man can write certainly, it fer. depending only vpon coniecturals, and the same by heare-say, and flying reports of private men, as Ori-

(4) Gomer then, the eldeft sonne of lapketh, gaue southe Commerce who filled almost the name of name to the Gomersans, who filled almost this part of the world, leading (as Villichius faith) in the tenth Villichius, yeere of Nimrod, a Colonie out of Armenia into Italie, A Colonio of Go which of Gomer were called Combri, and afterwards

Cimbri: whence fuch as departed Haly went into the

of Gomer, came Comparis whence users as expareed 11sts when most in Worth parts and gaue name to Cimbrias Cherjinoful:
From whence it is certaine we the Busilip proceed, and of whom allo it is likely the Britiants came For finding which is lightly the Britiants came For finding which is lightly who faith his countrimen the Welfb which are vulcared, as yet who have the same than the world which will be supported to the world with the same than the welfb which are vulcared, as yet which flatters as yet with the same than the welfb which are with a same than the world with know no other name for their land and people, but

only Cumbri (5) And that of these Gomerians were also the Galles of the Go Gaules, learned Clarenceaux that brightest lampe to all Antiquities, out of Josephus and Zonaras sufficiently hath observed; who that they were also called Cim-bri, he proueth out of Cicero, & Appian Alexandrinus; that those Barbarians whom Marius defeated, Cicero plainly termeth Gaules, where he faith C. Marius reprefled the armies of the Gaules, entring in great num-bers into Italy: which, as all Historians witnesse, were the Cimbrians. And the Habergeon of their king Belewdigged vp at Aqua Sextia, where Marius put grauen in strange characters B B L B O S C I M-BROS; as also the testimony of Lucan doth no Marin Habe leffe, who calleth the Ruffine hired to kill Marius, a gem. Marius killed by Cimbrian, whom Liuy and Plutarch in the life of Marius affirme to be a Gaule . They also who under the conduct of Brennus spoiled Delphi in Greece, were Delphi spailed by Gaules, as all writers with one voice agree, and yet Bress

Wolfang.

Theophilms Hoift tol.lib.a.

Stories of the

Gaules by all Hi-

that these were named Cimbri, Appian in his Illyricks

against them.

Brennus a Britaine doth testifie. And for Brennus their Grand-Captaine, our Historians report him to be a Britaine: as likewise Virgil (though in taunting wife) termeth that Grammarian the Britaine Thucydides, whom Quintilian af-

firmes to be a Cimbrian. (6) And if of the rest of Noahs nephewes, seated The Turket the

of Nasks ne-

Hedore.

in feuerall countries, the Nations proceeding from them, are knowen by their original names, as the Turkes of Togorma, whom the Iewes to this day so terme, the Iones from Ianan, the Medes from Madai, the Thracians from Tiras, and so of the rest, whose names as yet found not much vnlike to their first planters; why then shall not we think?, that our Britanes or Cumerians, are the very of-spring of Gomer, and of Gomer tooke their denomination, the name fo neere according? Sith granted it is, that they planted themselues in the vtmost borders of Europe, as Isodore hath faid. For the Ark resting in Armenia, and the peofountaine region of all Mations. ple thence flowing like waters from the spring, replenished those parts first that lay next their site : as Asia the leffe, and Greece before Italy: Italy before Gaule, and Gaule before Britaine. And if we consider the oc casions, that might be offered, either for disburde ning the multitudes of people, for conquest, defire of nouelties, finalnesse of distance, or commodities of why people dif-perie. the aire and foile, we may eafily conceive this Iland to haue been peopled from thence. For it standeth with fense that every country received their first inhabi-Rack Nation peopled from places neere. tants from places neere bordering, rather then from them that lay more remote: for so was Cyprus peopled out of Asia, Sicile and Candie out of Greece; Corsica and Sardinia, out of Italy, Zeland out of Germany, Island out of Norway, and so of the rest. Now that Britaine Britaine had her had her first inhabitants from Gaule, sufficiently is first inhabitants from the Gaulet proued by the name, fite, religion, manners, and languages, by all which the most ancient Gaules and Britaines haue beene as it were linked together in some

mutuall fociety; as is at large proued by our Arch-

Antiquary in his famous worke, to which I refer the

(7) And although the inner parts of the Ilind

were inhabited, as Cafar faith, of fuch whom they

themselues out of their ownerecords, report to have

been borne in the Iland : yet the fea coafts were peo-

pled by those, who vpon purpose to make war, had passed thither out of Belgia, and Gaule, who still caried

the names of those cities and states, out of which they

names of people both in Gaule, and in Britaine, that

after the warres there remained. Which is the more

confirmed in that both the Provinces were governed

by one and the same Prince, as Casar in his owne re-

membrance knew, and nameth one Divitiacus to hold

a good part of Gaule, and also of Britaine vnder his go-

uernment. Yea and Tacitus the most curious searcher

int) Britaines affaires, in the life of Agricola thus disci-

ph reth them. Now (faith hee) what manner of men the first inhabitants of Britannie were, for aine brought

in, or borne in the land, as among a barbarous people, it

import a German descent. The coloured countenances of the Silures, and haire most commonly curled, and site

they retaine of the race from which they descended, or

that in Countries butting together, the same aspect of the heauens doth yeeld the same complexions of bodies. But

generally it is most likely, the French being neerest, did people the Land. In their ceremonies and superstitious

persuasions, there is to be seene an apparant conformitie.

The Language differeth not much : like boldnesse to chal-

Cafar. Camm The fea-coafts

studious reader.

of Britaine peo pled out of came : as the Belga, the Attrebaty, Paris, and the like

Cafar. Com.lib. A part of Gaul

Tacitus in vita

in one certainly knowen. Their complexions are different, and thence may some coniectives bee taken: for the distinct of the dwellers in Caledonia, and mighty limmes, The Caledonians The Sileres from against Spaine, feeme to induce, that the old Spaniards passed the Sea, and possessed those places. The neerest to France likewise resemble the French, either because

Britaine no fi

lenge and fet into dangers : when dangers come, like feare in refusing : Sauing that the Britaines make shew of great courage, as being not mollified yet by long peace, (8) Whereby wee ice, that their Cimbrians (of whom, as Appian Alexandrinus faith, came the Celts.

and of them the Gaules, as Plutarch in the life of Ca- | Plutarch, and or them the Games, as a small state and Ariffolle Plus.
Ariffolle Ariffolle Ariffolle agree) were the ancient progenitors of these our Britaines : and them, with the Gaules, to be both one and the same people, is allowed by Pliny, that placeth them both in the continent of France; for so Eustathus in his Commentarie understandeth Dionysius Afar, that these Britaines in Gaule gaue name to the Iland now called GREAT BRITAINE, as Pomponius Latus and Beda before him had done. These things considered, with the neerenesse of their sites for ready entercourse, made both Cefar and Tacitus to conceiue as they did. Neither were these things following small motiues vnto them : for their religion was alike, faith Lucan and Tacitus: their boldnesse in warres, and malier of armes alike, faith Strabo, Tacitus, Dion, Pliny, Herodian, and Mela: Their building alike, faith Cefar and Strabo: their ornaments and manners alike, faith Plan and Cefar: their wits alike, faith Strabo and Tacieus : their language alike, faith learned Bodine : and in all things the vnconquered Britaines to the ancient Gaules alike, faith Tacitus. And all these doe warrant vs (me thinkes) to come from the Cimbrians, whose Sonnes, and our fathers, were the Celts and Gaules: the bands of whose amities were so linked together, that the Britaines gaue aid, and assisted the Gaules a. Bale Cours. gainst Cefar, which was no small cause of his quarrell

(9) Not to derive the truth of our historic from the fained inuentions of a forged Berofus, that bring-eth Samothes to people this Iland, about one hundred fiftie two yeeres after the Flood, to give lawes to the Land, and to leaue it to his posteritie, for three hundred thirty flue yeeres continuance : although hee be Holings, bif lib. countenanced by Amandus Zirix aus in the annotations of White of Basing stocke : and magnified vnto vs by the names of Dis and Meshech the fixt sonne of 14- Genel.10.2. pheth, from whom this Iland with a Sect of Philosophers tooke their names, faith Textor, Bale, Holinfhead, Textor, oc. and Cains: yet seeing this building hath no better a Job. Cainin A foundation but Berofus, and he not only justly suspe-fied, but long since fully connicted for a counterfeit, we leaue it, as better fitting the pens of vulgar Chroni-elers, then the relish or liking of iudicious Readers: whilest with Laertius wee judge rather, that those Sophes were termed Semnothoes, and they not from Sa-

mothea, as Villichus would haue vs beleeue. (10) Neither soundeth the musicke of Albions legion tunable in our eares, whom Berofus with full note, and Annius alloweth to be the fourth sonne of Neptune, and him the same that Mofes calleth Napthtahim, the fourth sonne of Mizraim, the second sonne of Cham, the third sonne of Noah, (because his fictions should be countenanced with the first) who being put into this Iland by Neptune his father (accounted for-footh the god of the Seas) about the yeere after the flood three hundred thirty and five, overcame the Samotheans, as easily he might, being a man of so great champosterist ftrength in bodie, and largenesse of limmes, that hee is accounted among the Giants of the earth. Him Hereules furnamed Lybreus in battle affailed for the death of Ofiris his father, and after forty foure yeeres tyrannie (faith Bale) flew him with his brother Bergion in Bale. the continent of Gallia neere to the mouth of the riuer Rhodanus : whence Hercules trauelled into this Iland, as Giraldus (from Gildas the ancient Briton Poet) coniectureth, whose fifth dialogue of Poetrie hee had seene; and the rather beleeved, because Ptolemy calleth that head of Land in Cornwall, Promontorium Herenter in Bri-Hereulis, and left the possession of the Iland vnto them of Cham, contrarie to the meaning of the Scriptures, that made him a Captine, but neuer a Conquerour ouer

his brethren, whiles their first Policies were standing. (11) The last, but much applauded opinion, for the possessing and peopling of this sland, is that of much applase Brute, generally held for the space of these last foure hundred yeeres (some few mens exceptions reserved) who with his dispersed Troians came into, and made conquest of this tland the yeere of the worlds creation

Genier both pla-ced in the Continent of France

Beda bift, Angl. lib.1,cap.1.

Britames and Gaules alike in Cafar, Strabe.

The Calts and gainft Cefer.

a forged author

tiq. Canterb,lib,t

Latrius in vit. Philosopherum

Hollinsbead,

Samothea this Hand Britaine

2887 and after the vniuerfall flood 1231. in the eighteenth yeere of Heli his Priesthood in the land of Israel, and before the incarnation of Christ our Saujour one thousand fifty nine. This Brute is brought from the ancient Troians by descent, yea and from the perfons of the heathen deified Gods: as that he was the fonne of Syluius, who was the fonne of Afcanius, the sonne of AEneas, the sonne of Anchifes by Venus the Goddesse, and daughter to Inpiter their greatest in account. And if Pliny and Varro hold it praise worthy to challenge descents (though falfly) from famous personages, wherby, as they say, appeareth an inclination to vertue, and a valorous conceit to persivade vnto honor, as sprung from a race diuine and power-full: then by all meanes let vs listen to him of Monmouth, who hath brought his Nation to ranke in de-

may not be challenged. Geffrey of in Anne 1152. Acts 17.28.

Pling.

[hap.3. |

tingdon died is Augs 148, deth Brutes lin Geffrey ap. Arthur,

Wil.Lamb.Per-Nigitts and Ta. liefin bring the Britaines from

ound.

Died in Asse

Malmesh de glorum,lib.1. Beda hiller, Angli, lib. 1 sap. 16.

Liny. Infine. (afar. Suctonine. Martia Eufebius. Entropies Niccobore Ambrofe. Socrates. Harding Chro. chap.11. Johan,Hannil. Michela, Vpter

Scip.oru.

OF THE ANCIENT BRITAINES.

gree with the rest of the Gentiles, which claime themlelues to be the Generation of the Gods. (12) But why do I attribute the worke to him, as

the Author, fith he professeth himselfe to be but the translator of that history out of the British tongue, which Walter the Archdescon of Oxford brought out of Normandie, and delivered vnto him? For the further confirmation thereof, and more credit to his flory, Henry of Huntington, who lived in the time of king Henry of Hun-Stephen, and wrote likewise the history of this land, bringeth the line of Brute from AEneas the Troiane, and his arrivage and conquest to happen in the time of Helihis Priesthood in the land of I frael, as Geffrey ap Arthur hath also done: not taking (as some thinke) any thing thereof from him, but rather out of an ancient booke intituled De Origine Regum Britanno rum, found by himselfe in the library of the Abbey of A hooke hereo Bee, as he trauelled towards Rome: which history began at the arrivall of Brute, and ended with the acts of Cadwalader, as by a treatise of his owne inditing, bearing the same title, hath been compared, and found in all things agreeing with our vulgar history, as industrious Lamberd affirmeth himselfe to have seen. And Ninius is faid by the writer of the reformed history, to bring these Britaines from the race of the Trojans, foure hundred yeeres before that Geffrey wrote: yea and long before Ninius also, Taliesina Briton Poet in an Ode called Hanes, of Taieff his course of hife, in these words, Mia depthymyma at Wedillion Trois, that is, I came hither to the Remnants of Troy.

(13) That William of Malmesbury (who wrote in

Mommouth is most certaine; yet doth he make menti-on of arthur a Prince (saith he) deserving rather to be advanced by the truth of records, then abused by fulse imputation of fables; being the only prop and upholder of his country. And Beda, his ancient also, nameth Ambrofius Aurelianus to be King of the Britaines, long before that Geffrey was borne : So was Brennus mentioned by Liny; Bellinus, (if he be Belgius) by Instine; Cassibe lan by Cafar; Cunobilin by Suetonius; Arniragus by Martial; Lucius by Eusebius; Coel, Constantius, Carau fius, and others by Eutropius, and Paulus Diaconus; and Helena by Nicephorus, Ambrofc, and Socrates. Thefe are the affirmatives that give countenance to the Archdeacon of Monmouths translation, and credit to Brutes conquests and successions; yea and Iohn Harding his Herauld, in his home-spun poetry, can easily emblaze his armes to be Gules, charged with two lions rampan. endorsed ore; and the same to be borne by the Kings of Troy. And his banner displaied at his entrance i faid to be Vert a Diana of gold fitchel, crowned, and in thronized, the same that AEneas bare, when he entred the land of the Latines. But the censures of these relations I leave to the best liking of judicious Readers, only wishing them to be valike the inhabitants under the rockes of the Cataracts of Nilus, whereof Cicere and Ammianus make mention, who were made deafe by the continual noise of the fall of Nilus : left by the found and loud voices of these writers, the exceptions of others can not be heard, which from the fulnesse of their pennes I will likewise declare, without offence,I hope, vnto any.

the daies of King Henry the first) was before him of

(14) First (with a reucrend reservation had to the facred histories) Varrothe most learned Latine writer, Varo. diuiding times motions into three feuerall parts, that is, from the creation to the flood, which he termeth altogether vncertaine : from the flood to the first olympiad by Beroaldus computation fet in the yeere of the Times motion world 3 1 5 4 and thirty one of the raigne of Ioss, king of Iudah : seuch hundred seuenty and source yeers before the birth of our Sauionr) he calleth fabuous : and the last age from the first Olympiad to him. The third only felfe he nameth historicall. Now the story of Brute beginning two hundred fixty feuen yeeres before the Theflory of first Olympiad, falleth in the time wherein nothing els is related, either of the Greeks or Latines, the only learned writers, but fables and tales, as both himfelfe and others have told vs, much more then, among the barbarous, valettred, and vacinill nations as all these parts of the world then were. (15) Whereupon Gildas our ancientest home-

borne writer, (cited and in whole fentences followed by venerable Beda, who termeth him the Britaines his floriographer) in this of Brute is filent, and in his lamentable pallions neuer dreames of him, but as one ouerwhelmed with griefe bewaileth the wickednesse of the time wherein he liued, who was born, as himfelfe faith, in the forty fourth yeere after the Saxons first entrance, about the yeere of Christs incarnation 493. and died, as Bale citeth out of Polydore, the yeere of our redemption 5 8 o. Ninius also another ancient writer, who lined aboue eight hundred yeeres fince, taking in hand the Chronicles of the Britaines, complaineth that their great Mafters and doctors could give him no affiftance, being ignorant of skill, and had left no memoriall of things paffed, nor committed their acts vnto writing, whereby hee was inforced to gather what he had gotten from the annals and Chronicles of the holy fathers. Beda likewise, whose history ended in anno 733, beginneth no fooner then with Iulius Cafarsentrance; notwithstanding he had the assistance of the Abbat Albinus, who was brought vp vnder Theodorus Archbishop of Canterbury, and had begun the history of this land with most diligent search from below the Ab the records of the kingdome of Kent, and the prouinces adioining; as also being further assisted by Daniel Bishop of the West-Saxons, who sent him all the records that were to be found of the same Bishoprick, South-Saxons, and the ile of Wight. The like helpes had he from Abbat Esius, for the country of East-Angles; from Cymbertus and the brethren of Lastinge for the prouince of Mercia, and East-Saxons. And from the brethren of Lindufarnum, for the country of Norchumberland; besides his owne paines in collections, knowledge and experience; all which he did difget

that history of Brute nor his successors, which as some would haue it, was then unbegotten in the world. (16) After him Elward, as William of Malmsburie calleth him,or rather (as he writeth himselfe) Patricius Conful fabius Queflor Ethelwerdus, a diligent scarcher of antiquities, a reuerend person, and of the blood roiall, wrote foure bookes, briefly comprising the whole history of England, from the beginning of the world vnto the time of king Edgar wherein he liued; of Brute nor his Britaines speaketh a word; but passeth with silence to the Romans and Saxons. What need I to cite Ingulphus, who died anno I 1 09. Flo-rentius of Worcester, that florished in the daies of King Henry the first, or William of Malmsbury, that wrote vnto the end of his raigne; all of them writers before Geffrey of Monmouth, but none of them mentioning this flory of Brute. This moued William of Newbourgh borne (as himfelfe faith) in the beginning of King Stephens raign, & living at one and the same time with this Archdeacon of Monmouth, too too bitterly to inueigh against him and his history, euen so soone as the fame came foorth: as in the proeme of his booke is to

and historically compile, and before the publication

thereof sent it to king Ceolulphe at that time raigning

in Northumberland, to be approued or corrected by

his most learned skill: yet in none of these found he

divided fate three pares.

163

Beda bift, Angli. lib.1,cap 21. Gildas maketh

Bale out of

Bede hift Aneti

Of Daniel Bl-

Of Abbat Effit and brethren of

The hiftory of

Ingulphus.

William of and yet pone nicle mueighing againft leffrey ap Arthut.

Anno 1210,

The discourt

Afcanius had

proper name was Syluius,

Wifedome the

be feen. And that the words are his and not our own. take them from him as they lie. In the fe our daies (faith he) there is a certaine writer rifen up, denifing fictions and tales of the Britaines out of the vaine humors of his owner braine, extolling them far about the valorous Macedoni braine, extouring interns or acome in cuserous viacecontains, or worthy Romans; his name is Geffrey, and may well assume the streame. Arthur, whose tales he hath take out of the old fables of the Britaines, and by his owners wenton augmented with many untruths, foiling them over with a new colour of the Latine tongue, and hathinuefted them into the body of an history. Adventuring further to Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mindura wand

Mi taines History, how shamelessy, and with a bold counte-nance he doth lie, there is no man that readeth therein can doubt, unlesse he hath no knowledge at all in ancient true histories; for having not learned the truth of things indeed, he admitteth without discretion and judgement the manitie and untruths of fables . I forbeare to fpeake (faith he) what great matters this fellow hath forged of the Britaines acts before the Empire and comming in of Casar. Thus farre

But I know the answer to this so great an accusation: A deutee to put by this William of Newburghs namely, that this William making fuit vnto David ap Owen Gwyneth, Prince of North-wales, for the Bishoprick of Saint Assays, after the death of Geffrey, and thereof failing, fallly scandalized and impudently belied that most reuerend man. Which surely had been a great fault, and might of vs be beleeved, had not o-

thers of the same ranke and time, verified asmuch (17) For Syluefter Giraldus, commonly called Cam-brenfis, that flourished in the same time with the said Deferips.Camb. cep 7. He florished in author, made no doubt to terme it The fabulous story of Geffrey. The like is verified by John Weathamstead. Ab-Giraldus Com bat of Saint Albanes, a most judicious man that wrote brenis calleth Brutshiftory the in anno 1440, who in his Granarie giueth sentence of this history as followeth. The whole discourse of Brutus (faith he) is rather poeticall, then historicall, and for divers reasons is built more upon opinion then truth, first because there is no mention thereof made in the Romane occusive neere is no menium increof made in the Komane flory, either of his killing his father, or of the kild birth, or yet of bunifing the some. Secondly, for that Ascanius begat no such some who had for his proper name Syluius by any approued Author: for according to them, he begat Brucus difpro-ued by John Westbamfred, only one sonne, and his name was Iulius, from whom the only one some some name was unus, grom wown ine family of the Iulii tooke their beginning. And thirdly, Syl-uius Posthumus, whom perhaps Cestivey meaneth; was the some of Acneas by his wife Lauinia, and he begetting his sonne Acneas in the thirty eighth yeer of his raigne, en-ded his life by course of naturall death. The kingdome therfore now called England, was not heretofore, as many will haue, named Britaine of Brutus the sonne of Syluius. Wherefore it is a vaine opinion and ridiculous to challenge tking to viurpe noble blood, and yet to want a probable ground of the chal-lenge: for it is manhood only, that enobleth a nation; and it is the mind also with perfect understanding, and nothing els, that gaineth gentility to a man. And therefore Seneca writeth in his Epistles to Plato ; that there is no King but Senesa Epift.44. tecame from vassals, and no vassall but he came from Kings.Wherefore to conclude, let this suffice (saith he) that the Britaines from the beginning of their nobility have been couragious and valiant in fight, that they have subdued their enemies on every side, and that they otterly refuse the yoke of servitude.

(18) Now that William of Newborough, had suffi-

cient cause(say some)to exclaime against the fantacies of Merline, and the fictions of Arthur, is made manifelt in the sequel, not only by the decree of that obtruded Councell of Trent, wherein was inhibited the publication of Merlines books; but also (in effect) by the flatute enacted the fifth yeere of our last deceafed Queene Elizabeth of bleffed and immortall memorie, wherein is forbidden such fantasticall predictions, vpon occasions of Armes, Fields, Beasts, Badges, Cognizances, or Signets, fuch as Merline flood most vpon; and likewise William of Malmsbury faith that Arthur being the only proppe that vpheld his country, de-

ferued rather to be advanced by truth, then abused with fables wherewith that story is most plentifully stored. And also, that Weathamstead had reason to account Brutes acts and conquests, to be rather poeticall then any waies warranted by the records of truth, appeareth by the filence of the Romane writers therein, who name neither Brute nor his father in the genealogie of the Latine Kings: and if any fuch were, (faith the contradictors) how could they be ignorant of nealogic of the the vntimely death of their king, slaine by the hand of his naturall (though in this act vnnaturall) sonne? or what should moue them, being so lauish in their own commendations, to be thus silent in their Brutes worthinesse, that with seuen thousand dispersed Troians warred to victorioully in Gallia, conquered a kingdome of Giants; Subdued a most famous Iland, raigned gloriously, and left the same to his posterity; none of them, either in profe or poetry once handled, but left to destiny to be preserved by a long ensuing meanes, or to perish in oblinion for euer? And surely this moued the whole senate of great Clerks to give sentence, that neuer any fuch Brute raigned in the world; fuch as were Boccace Y ines, Hadrian Innius, Polydore, Bucha-man Y ignier, Genebrard, Molinaus, Bodine, and others.

Yea, and there are some Criticks that faine would take aduantage from the defenders of Brutes The Criticks history themselues, as from Sir Iohn Prys, that produceth many vncertaine ensamples of the originall of other nations; which granted, (fay they) doth no waies confirme the truth or certainty of our owne; neither is it any honour to derive these Britaines from the No honor to the fcumme of fuch conquered people as the Troians Britans to be de-were. Humfrey Lhuyd likewise denying absolutely the Troung derivation of the Britaines name from Brute , and bringing it from two compounded words, (as we haue faid) doth thereby weaken the credit of his conquest of this Iland to their vnderstanding, as also the catalogue of his fucceffors, which are faid to raigne nedby them-fucceffinely for many hundred of yeeres after him. And another industrious British writer, having the helpe of two most ancient British copies, the collections of Caradock of Carnaruan, their owne Bardies euery third-yeeres vilitation, and twenty feuen authors of Wales but a of good account, (all of them cited in the preface of his Chronicle) besides his helps had in the offices of records for this realme; yet ascending no higher then to the person of Cadwallader, Prince of Wales, whose raign was in the yeere of Christs incarnation 6 8 2 and no leffe then one thousand seuen hundred twenty and fixe yeeres, after that Brute is faid to come into this Iland, doth not warrant (fay they) the ftory that is included betwirt but rather even the same is enterlaced Cadwallers flor with many doubtfull vncertainties, and so left difputable by the faid compiler himselfe; as namely whether that this Cadwallader whom the Britaines claime to be their king, be not the same Chedwald whom the Saxons would have theirs; both living at one time, both in acts alike, and names necre, both abandoning their kingdomes, both taking the habit of religion, both dying in Rome, both buried in one Church, nay, fay they, in one Sepulchre. The like he bringeth of the Britaines Iuor, and the Saxons Iue, in the like coherences of names, alts, denotions, and deaths : fo that this history of Brute carieth not fo fmooth a current for paffage as is wisked, nor is that Gordeons knot so easily vnloosed.

Againe, the Reformer of the British history himselfe, although he hath written one whole chapter in defence of Geffrey Monmouth, and straineth to make his booke authenticall, complaining often and accusing learned and unpartial Cambden feuerall times, for blowing away fixty of the Britaine Kings with one blaft: yet actied by the when he compareth the generations with the time, is forced thus to write : From Porrex to Mynogen are mount twenti one Kings in a lineall descent, and but yeers ninety two one duide 92 by 21 and you hall find, that childrenbeget children, and these (saith he) by George Owen Harry in his book of pedegrees dedicated to his Maiesty appeareth to be in a lineall descent, besides three or

Neger any fuch

The Britaines

Reb Eshico

foure collaterals. And yet goeth further: Though the Scripture (faith hee) allege Iudah, Hezron, Salomon, and Ezekiah, to be but young when they begat their sonnes, which (as Rabbi Isack saith) might be at thirteene yeeres When (as Nadol lauck fairs) might be a similetine years of age: And although Saint Augultine fay, that the strength of youth migh begic thildren young; and Hierome bringeth instance of a boy that at tenyeers of age begot a childe: yet this doll not helpe to excuse the mistaking of secres for the British Kings about mentioned.

Thus far Iohn Lewis: and for the exceptions made against Brute: wherin I have altogether vsed the words of others; and will now (without offense, I hope) adde a supposall of mine owne, seeing I am fallen into the computation of times, which is the onely touch-flone to the truth of histories, especially such as are limited by the bounds of the facred Scriptures, as this for Brutes entrance is. And that the fame cannot bee fo ancient (supposing it were neuer so certaine) as the vulgar opinion hitherto hath held, the circumstance of time, to my feeming, fufficiently doth prooue, (20) For Brutes conquest and entrance are brought

fore the birth of our bleffed Sautour 1059, yeeres. Brute then liuing in this forelaid time, was foure descents

from the conquered Troians, (as he of Monmouth hath

laid downe) which were Aneas, Ascanius, Syluius.

and himselfe: so that by these generations successive in order, the very yeere almost of Trops destruction

may certainly be pointed out and knowen: which in

fearching hath beene found to doubtful, that by some

it hath beene thought to be a meere fable. Yet with

more reuerence to antiquitie observed, let vs cast and compare the continuance of these foure generations

vnto Brutes Conquest, not shortning them with Ba-

ruch, to be but ten yeeres to an age; neither length-ning them with Iosephus, who accounteth one hun-

dred and seventy yeeres for a generation : but with

more indifferencie let vs with Herodotus, who wrote neerer these times, allow thirty yeeres for a succes-

fion, as hee accounteth in his fecond booke. Now

foure times thirty make one hundred and twenty, the

number of yeeres that these foure Princes successively

did line: by which computation likewise measured

by Scripture, the ruination of Troy fell in the thirtie

eighth yeere of Gideons gouernment in I frael, and was

the yeere after the worlds creation 2763. But the

authoritie of Clemens Alexandrinus, alleged out of Menander, Pergamenus, and Letus, destroicth that time of Troies destruction, and placeth it fully two hun-

dred and thirtie yeeres after, euen in the raigne of King Salomon: for in his first booke Stromaton thus

hing occurrent that the our throw of Troy came into Phenicia, at that time when Hiram King of Trous gaue his daughter in mariage onto Salomon King of tirele. Where, by him we lee, that Troies ruines and Salomon King of the characteristics of the characteristics of the characteristics and Salomon King of the characteristics and the c

monsraigne fell both vpon one time. And fo Brute

Smear raigneten both vpon one time. And to Brine hath loft of his antiquity, by this account, 230, yeeres; and entred not in Helies Priethood, but rather in the viurpation of Iudalis Kingdome by Athalia, and in

(21) To whom let vs ioine Iosephus, an Authour

of great credit, and without suspicion in this case, who

in his Nations defense against Appion, in both his bookes, confidently affirmeth himselfe able to proue

by the Phanician Records of warrantable credit, that

the City Carthage was built by Dido, fifter to Pigmalion,

one hundred fiftie and fine yeeres after the raigne of King Hiram, which was Salomons friend, and one hundred

forty three yeeres and eight moneths after the building of

his most beautifull Temple. Now wee know by Virgil

from whom all these glorious tales of Troy are told,

that Carthage was in building by the same Dido at such

time as Eneas came from Troies ouerthrow, through

the Seas of his manifold aduentures. If this teltimo-

the yeere of the world 3118.

by his Authour to fall in the eighteenth yeere of Heli his Priesthood in the Land of I frael, and so is fastned into a computation that cannot erre. Now the eightures most fure account, is seen the year of the world creating account, is seen the years of the world creation 2.887, after the winterfall flood 1231, and be-

Chap.3.

Heli his pricft.

The Authores

Baruch 6.2. Joseph. contra Appien, lib 3. teredetus in

Indg. 8.28.

ned from Tree when Huam gaue hit daugh-ter in maringe

Brute his con-quest rather in Athaba her time Joseph. cons. Ap pien,lib.1.0 2.

Phoenician Carrbage buile rams raigne 155.yeares, Virg. Asueides lib.z.

Tacitus awast 64 Gaspil.

nie of Isfephus be true, then fals Troiss dellruction as bout the twentieth yeere of Ioss raigne ouer Indah, which was the yecre of the worlds treation 3143, wherunto if we adde one hundred and twenty yeeres for the foure descents before specified, then wil Brutes conquest of this Hand fall with the twelfth of Inthant; Britis conquest raigne in the Kingdome of Iudah, which meets with the yeere of the worlds continuance 3263. And fo a.King. 25.32. hath he againe loft of his antiquitie no leffe then 375

OF GREAT BRITAINE.

(22) And yet to make a deeper breach into Brutes storie, and to set the time, in a point so vncertaine, as from which neither circle for line can be trulie drawen ; Manethon the Historian Priest of Egypt, in his fecond book cited by left-phus, affirmed hard the flyedistic departure from Egypt was almost a though a special property for method for the flyedistic departure from Egypt was almost a though a special flyedistic departure from Egypt was almost a though a special flyedistic departure from Egypt was almost a though a special flyedistic departure from the flyedistic fly twenty yeeres more added, for the foure descents aboue mentioned, the number, will fall about the yeere of the worlds creation 3630, long after the death of Alexander the Great, and Greeke Monarch. By which account the great supposed antiquity of Brute, is now leffened by feuen hundred fiftie and two yeeres; and the time so scantelized betweet his and Cefars entrance, that two hundred forty fix yeeres onely remaine : a time by much too short for seventy two Princes, which successively are said to raigne each after others, and from Brate to Cefar recorded to have waied the regall Scepter of this I land.

(23) Burvnto these objections I know the anfwer will be ready; namely, the diuerfities of Scrip-tures account, being so fundrie and different, that the ftorie of Brute cannot thereby bee touched, but still flandeth firme vpon it selfe. Indeed I must confesse, that from the first Creation, to the yeere of mans Re-demption, the learned Hebrewes, Greekes, and Latines, differ much, and that not only each from others, but euen among themselues so farre, that there can be no indifferent reconciliation made, as by these seuerall computations may be seene, as followeth:

Baal Seder-Holem= 3518. Talmundistes-3784. New Rabbins -3760. Hebrewes: Rabbi Nahsson-3740. Rabbi Leui ---3786. Rabbi Moses Germidist. 4018 I ofephus -4192 Metheodoras -5000 Greekes: Eufebius — Theophilus Antioch \$190. 5476. Saint Hierome ----3941. Saint Augustine £251. I fidore Latines: £210. Orofius -\$190. 3952. Alphonfus -1984.

And yet doe these disagreements helpe little the Objectors if this be considered, that the maine foundation of these diversities consisteth chiefly in the first world before the Flood, wherein it is manifest, that pris worsa Deture the Floor, wherein his manifest, mar the reputed Septingins added to the Hebrew Original five hundred eighty and fix yeeres. And from the Floor to Abrahams birth, is accounted two hundred to the Hood to Abrahams birth, is accounted two hundreds. dred and fine yeeres more then Moles hath. As likewife the like is done in the latter times : for from the Captuatie of Babylon to the death of Christ, one hun-dred thirty and leven yeeres are added, more then the Sunnes course hath measured : so that it seemeth the differences were not great for the times of Heli, Salomon, nor Iudahs Kings, in whose raignes Brute is brought to people and possessethis tiand. But leaving these diversities, and to come to a certaintie, let vs calculate the yeeres of the holy historie according as Function, Beroaldus, and fundry other Theologicke Chro-

ont.Appi Brates conqueft rather after A'r-zander the great.

Two hundred forty fix yeeres time too fhort fo

The great differences in com-putation of year among Writers,

ting fantaffical predictions. Malmerhurie restimeny of Arthur.

Merlines book

An Act inhibi

The accounting molegers have done; who from the Scriptures most fure

Frem the floo

life 417.

Jofhua 24.2.

r-King.6.r.

derion of the men death, 36. 1.Kmg.11.42. ning of the Tem-ple, 390, yeeres, 2.King.25.8.

Ifa.45.1. 2. Chron. 26. 21,22.21. Ezra 1.1.2. From the first years of Cyus, was orhe death

of Christ, 490.

Dan.9.24.

account, so tie the stories of times together, that like to a golden chaine, the linkes are faltned each to other, and the whole so compleat, that a yeere is not missing from the fall of man, vnto the full time of his

(24) First then from the Creation to the Flood are reckoned yeeres 1656, gathered by a triple account. from the ages, begettings, and deaths of the fathers. The like is thence observed for foure hundred twentic and seven yeeres, that is, to the seventie fifth of Abrahams life, wherein God began to tie the times accounts in holier fummes : for Terah, the first recorded Idolater, was the last in honour that had the Sunner course measured by mans life. And now the bounds of time tie the Promife to Abraham, to bee before the Law foure hundred and thirty yeeres, as the Apoftle to the Galashians affirmeth. From the Law to the building of Salomons Temple, and that in the fourth yeere Selemons Temple, of his raigne, were yeeres foure hundred and eightie: and from that foundation, to his death, were thirtie fix yeeres: for his whole raigne was fortie. From his death and Kingdomes division, vnto the burning of that Temple, which was executed in the nineteenth of Nebuchadnezzar King of Babel, were yeeres three hundred and ninetie, as by the daies of Exekiels fiege and fleepe appeareth in the fecond and fifth verses of his fourth Chapter. From the burning of the Temple, to the end of Iudahs captuitie, were yeeres fiftie and one, for the whole time of Babels bondage contained

Eze.4.v.2.& 5. feuenty yeeres, as Ieremy 25.11. whereof nineteene From the bur-sing of the Tem- were expired; and fifty one remaining vnto the first were expired; and into one remaining who the first years of Cyrus their deliuerer, whom the Lord in that regard calleth his amounted I fay.45.1. In the fifty years of whose Monarchie he published an Edist for the returne of the Iewes and new building of their Temple, as in the books of Chronicles and of Ezra is feene. And from this first yeere and proclamation of King Cyrus, vnto the last yeere and death of Christ our Sautour the great yeere of Iubilie, the acceptable time, wherein he road the winepresse alone; to the finishing of the ceremonies, the taking away of finne, the reconciling of iniquity, the bringing in of everlasting righteousnesse, to quity, the Oringing in or eueraising repassonsings, we the lealing up of vision and propherie, and to the anointing of the most host; were yeeres four hundred and minety, as the Prophet Daniel from the Angell Gabriel receined, and vnto vs hath delinered Dan. 9. 24. all which added together make the number to be three thousand nine hundred and threescore yeeres. And by this faid computation, I have accounted Brutes flory, as all others wherein I shall bee occasioned to speake,

(25) Laftly if from among these misty cloudes of ignorance no light can be gotten, and that we will needs have our descents from the Troians; may wee not then more truly deriue our blood from them through the Romanes, who for the space of four hun- Britaines may dred threescore and six yeeres were planted amongst the their described by sin which continuance it is most certaine, they tooke of our women to be their wives, and gaue their women to be wives vnto vs, seeing that some of their Emperors did the like themselues, and from whose blood, faith Beda, the Britaines Ambrofius lineally delcended, And if beauty and parts be the infligators vn- 16.1 cap. 6. to loue, as in the first world we fee it was , no doubt Gen. 6. 1. then the features of the Britains were mouing Angels vnto the Romanes, whose faces even in those times were accounted to be angelicall, and whose personages as yet, are respected as the best (if not better) then any other in the world. But that the Romans themfelues descended from the Troians, or AEneas should be the roote of the Iulian family, how soener the fictions of Pocts as a fpring tide have flowed from the fulnesse of their pennes, yet Tacitus their best writer Trianis afable accounterh those things not far vnlike to old fables, Tecinomiana wherein he judgeth that Nero to win credit before the Consuls, and to get reputation in the glory of cloquence vndertooke the pleading of the Ilienses cause, declaring the Romanes descent from Troy: and the deciaring the Assumers detected from 1 reg . and the Islig from the loines of Assumer, which notwithfanding he cenfureth as is said. And Tofophus in the different on of Noahs fonnes and families, affirment that Romus was the Original of the old Romans and he of Chus, and Cham, if he meane as he speaketh. To conclude; (by what destiny I know not) nations desire their originals from the Troians; yet certaine it is, that no honor from them can be brought, whose city and fame flood but for fix descents, as under the Tohaues descent raignes of Dardanus, Erithonius, Troos, Ilion, Laomedon, be an honour to rangeres of Darasanu, evinemus, 1 roo, 1 uon, Laumeuus, 1 per an nonour and Priamus, during which time they were thrice van-united, twice by Hercules in the daies of Laumeuus, vanquified. and the third time rafed by the rage of the Grecians in the raigne of King Priamus, and the Troians themselues made as it were the scum of a conquered people. And therefore as France hath cast off their Francio King Priamus his sonne, Scotland their Scotia King Pharaoes daughter, Denmarke their Danus, Ireland their Hiberus, and other Countries their Demi-gods; folet BRITAINES likewise with them disclaime their BRVTE, that bringeth no honour to fo renow- Brute embafeth their BR VT B, that Dringetti no nonotice to the the deficent of ned a Nation, but rather cloudeth their glorife in the the deficent of the Brueisen. murders of his parents, and imbaseth their descents.

THE MANNERS AND CVS-TOMES OF THE ANCIENT

BRITAINES.

CHAPTER IV.



Auing thus farre spoken of the ancient Names of this famous Iland, and of the Nations acknowledged to bee the first Planters and Poffeffors thereof; it remaineth that fomewhat be mentioned of the Manners and Customes of those not so pleasing or acceptable as were to be wished, for

that the clouds of ignorance and barbarous inciuilitie did then shadow and ouer-spread almost all the Nati-ons of the earth: wherein I desire to lay imputation no further then is sufficiently warranted by most au-tenticke Writers: and first from Cefar, who formost of all the Romanes discouered and described our ancient Rritaines

as sprung from Venus that lascinious Adulteresse

(2) Touching their persons: All the Britaines (saith of their Pet-Cesar) nsed to die themselves with wood, which setteth a son. blew colour upon them, and that maketh them more terri- Caf. Come ble to behold in battle. But Pomponius Mela therein mo- the word lucen

Chap.4.

wore rings on their middle

finger. The Britaines would not be clad, because

trum in Latin)

taken,by reafor

Leser. Some Britains

Die Nicess.

Tettullian.

Martial.

Kritamanun

ueth a doubt. They died their bodies (faith he) with woad; but whether to make a gallant shew, or for what other cause else is vnccrtaine. And yet Herodian herein absolutely determineth, where hee saith, that the Britaines knew no vie of garments at all, but about their wastes and neckes wore chaines of iron, suppofing them a goodly ornament, and a proofe of their wealth; and their bare bodies they marked with fundry pictures reprefenting all manner of liuing creatures; and therefore they would not be clad, for hi-ding the gay paintings of their bodies. To which painting Pliny also agreeth; and describeth that hearbe they would they the gay pain-tings of their bodies, woad, to bee like to the Plantine in Gallia, naming it Glastum, with the inice whereof (saith he) the women of Britaine, as well wives as yoong women, anoint and die their bodiesall ouer, resembling by that tincture the colour of the Athiopians, in which manner they vie at solemne fealts and sacrifices to goe all naked. And Dio Nicaus out of the epitome of Xiphilinus, faith, that the custome of that Nation was, to abide glish word glaile, in tents all naked and vnshod. Notwithstanding, Cefar doth elsewhere report, that they clad themselves in leather, which perchance is meant of the civiller fort of them, and in time of battle. Solinus likewile speaking of the Britaines, saith, their Country is peopled partly with Barbarians, who by meanes of artificiall incisions of fundry formes, have from their childhood divers shapes of beasts incorporate vpon them; and having their markes deepely imprinted within their bodies, looke how their growth for stature, so doe these pictured characters likewise increase. Neither do these sauage Nations repute any thing a greater testimonie of their patience, then by such durable skarres to cause their limmes drinke in much painting and colour. These skarres by Tertullian are tearmed Britannorum sligmata, The Britaines markes. And vnto this skie-colour, or blewish dyings, it scemeth Mar-

Claudia caruleis cum sit Rufina Britannis,

Edita cur Latie pectora plebis habet?

called Picti by the Romanes, that is, the painted people.

(3) The haire of their heads, faith Cefar, they let

grow, and wore long, which naturally was curled, and

of colour yellow, (as in the Panegyricke Oration a-

scribed to Mamertinus, and spoken in praise of Maximianus, is to be seene) all other parts of their bodies being shauen, sauing only the head and upper lippe

Yet their complexions were much different, as by

Tacitus wee fee, who auoucheth that some of those

Ilanders were red of haire, as the Caledonians in the

Northerne Promontories; the haire of the Silures co-

loured and curled, like to the old Spaniards; and those

neerest vnto Gallia resembled their complexions,

though not altogether so yellow, faith Strabe. But

their wit by Tacitus is preferred before them, and

their statures more tall, as Strabo affirmeth, whose li-

neaments shewed a good making of body, and mea-

furable proportion in all parts answerable. Their women faire, and of exceeding good features, as is

described by the Romane Writers. Such was Boudicea,

faith Xiphilinus; Claudia and Helena, faith Martial and

(4) That the strength of nature wrought long in

the Britaines, we read out of Platarch, who reporteth

that the people lived one hundred and twenty yeeres,

for that, faith he, their cold and frozen Country kept

in their naturall heat : whose conditions by Diodoria

Gaules, but yet somewhat more rude and plaine; and

those most civill, who were the inhabitants of Kent.

by reason of their oftner conversing with other Nati-

Sith Claudia comes of Azur de Britaines race, Whence comes her minde so deckt with Roman grace?

tial had relation in his praises of Lady Claudia:

And of this vic of painting, as our great Antiquarie indgeth, both the Britaines had their primitive deri-Master Cambde Picts of the uation, and the Picts (a branch of British race) a long time after, for that their accustomed manner, were

Called Pi@i of their painted

Tacitus in vat. Northern

people, Silures the Westerne, Tacitus.

L'ohilimet. Martial.

Eutropius

Siculus are commended to be plaine and vpright, farre from the wilinesse and crast of the Romanes. And by Strabe the: dispositions are partly resembled to the

OF THE ANCIENT BRITAINES.

(5) Now touching their domestick matters: Of their do-(5) Now concluding their dollection indicates of the Gaules methick matter buildings were many, and like to them of the Gaules methick matters.

Jaith Iulius Casar; notwithstanding they give the name ters. of Townes to certaine comber some woods, which they have fortified with rampires and ditches, within they retreat, to and refort to eschue the inuasium of their enemies. Which they can be a support to the comber of the comber fland them in good flead, faith Strabe: for when they strabe; haue by felling of trees, mounted, and fenced therewith a spacious round plot of ground; there they build for themselues houses and corrages, and for their cattell fer vp stalls and folds, but those for the present vse onely, and not for long continuance. Which, as Diodorus Siculus faith were vsually thacked with reed; but the cities without walls, and the country without townes, as Dion describeth the Calidoni- Diam

(6) Their wines were ten or twelue a peece, as The Britains Cafar hath alledged, which they held common a- moltiplicity of mong brothers and parents, yet the iffue reputed his, who first maried the mother when she was a maide: and Dio indeed affirmeth no leffe, adding withall, that Dio. the children thus begotten, were fostred and brought vp in common among them. And Eufebius likewife Eufebius Euesg. tellifieth, that many Britaines together kept one wife proparate. in common to them all. This community in mariage moued Iulia the Empresse of Seuerus, to twite the Julia her rewife of Argetecaxus, that the fashion of the women of Britaine in accompanying with men, was very impudent; to whom the replied and faid, we British women | The answer. do indeed herein differ from you Roman Ladies; for wee fatisfie our appetite, by accompanying with the worthieft men, and that openly, but you with euery base fellow, in a (7) For their diet ; it was a heinous matter with

them to eat either Hen, Hare, or Goofe, faith Cafar, Detains det which notwithstanding they bred for their plea-fures; neither fed daintily at full and rich tables, as Diodorus Siculus affirmeth, but rather in necessity could line vpon barkes and roots of trees, and with a could little upon barkes and roots of trees, and with a The Buttines of kind of meat no bigger then a beane, after which for a very spare dee a good time they did neither hunger nor thirst, saith venion, and truits: to whiten ano t.e.gar assurant makes, t.egar.
whereof (faith Strabo), they had not then skill to make the tell and according to Salimus, their visual
drinke was made of barley. But for tillage Pliny feemeth to contradict Dio, affirming that the Britaines barley.

selimum
manured their grounds with Marle in flead of dung; Plaie. which argueth no fuch simplicity in gardening, planting, and in other like points of husbandry as Strabe Strabe doth taxe them with. And this forefaid temperance of diet differeth much from that, which Saint Hierome chargeth their neighbors the Anthropophagi of Ireland, who yied to feed on the buttocks of boics, and womens paps, as their most dainty and delicate dish.

(8) For their religion, or rather diabolicall super-fittion, was as the rest of the world, some few excepted)when Satan had clouded the truth of Gods do-Arine, by the foggy mists of confused darknesse. For Tacitus makes their superstitions, and ceremonies to be the same in conformity with the Gaules. And what that was, Dio Cassius in his Nero, and Solinus in his hi- Dio Cessius flory, doe declare; who doe afcribe to them the most solime inhumane offering of mans flesh in their sacrifices. The Britainer And besides their ancient Idols, such as Dis, Jupiter, inhumane to Apollo, Diana, and the like, they worshipped Andates Thenames of for their Goddesse of victory, vnto all which they their idels. performed no small adorations and honors, imputing their prosperities vnto them : vnto whom also they erected temples with such magnificence as they then had; whose walles, as it seemeth, long after remained, whereon some of those prophane portraitures with deformed lineaments were seene by mournfull Gil-

ons, as Cefar sheweth. But the farther from the continent, the more rude, and leffe acquainted with other kind of riches besides cattell, as Pomponius Mela affir- left.

Disn.Caf.Lb. 76.

Of their religion and lear-

Polybius the first

160

Gildan. The Britzins Idole exceed A.

Piluie. Magack highly bonored of the

Cafar.com.6 rermine almost all controuer-fies.

Excommunication of great of the ancient Britaines,

Among the Dru and chiefe ouer the reft.

They affemble to heate concio

Here appea-reth.that Academies were then amonest the Britons, and from their ex-ample decined into other com They are exemp

Their Schollers great many ver-ies by heart,

They vie the flould be too

15, that the foule dieth not jour

das, carrying a sterne and grim countenance, after the 1 wonted heathenish manner : here fee we (faith he) vpon these desert walles, the vely features of the Britains Idols, meerly diabolicall, and in number almost exceeding those of Egypt. So by Tacitus they are noted with the common custome of the Gentiles, which was that they fought for the direction of their Gods by the looking into the entralls of Beafts, yea and of men too; and that they honored the Altars of their Gods with the facrifice and blood of fuch as they tooke captine in wars. And Plinie writing of Magick, Saith, that in his daies the art thereof in Britaine was highly honored, and all the people thereunto so much denoted, year and with all fuch complements of ceremonies in the same to be performed, that a man would thinke the Persians had learned all their Magick skill from them. Priests and instructors had they, whereof the chiefe were called Druides, whose office was imploied about noly things, faith Cafar; for they had the managing of publike and private facrifices, and to interpret and

discusse matters of religion. Vinto them doe resort great numbers of yong men to learne at their hands. and they be had in great reuerence. For they determine almost all controucrsies, and matters in variance, as well publike as private. And if there happen any thing to be done amiffe, if there be any murther committed, if there rife any controuerfie concerning inheritance or bounds of lands, they take the matter into their power, and award either recompence or penalties in the case. And if there be any, be he private person, or be it corporation, that will not stand to their judgement, they interdict him, which punishment among them is held most gricuous. They that are so excommunicated are accounted in the number of the wicked and vngratious : all men thun them, all men eschue their company and communication, lest by conversing with them, they should defile them-sclues and receive harme. If they demand law, they may not haue it : neither may they enioy any place of honor. Ouerall these Druides there is one Primate, which hath chiefe authority ouer them. When he is dead if there be any of the reft that excelleth in wor. thinesse, he succeedeth: or if there be any equall, he is chosen by voices of the rest, and diners times they ftriue for the foueraignty by force of armes. These men at a certaine season of the yeere, in the

borders of the Carantes (whose country is counted the middle of all Gallia) do fit together in a place hallowed, whereunto refort from all fides all fuch as haue any controuerlies : and looke what is decreed and judged by them, that they fland vnto. This order of discipline is thought to have had beginning in Britaine, and from thence to have been brought into Gallia. And at this day, they that are defirous to attaine this skill more exactly, do commonly repaire thither to learne it. These Druides customably are exempted from the wars, neither do they pay taxes and tallages with other folke: for they are priviledged as from the warres, so from all other burthens. Allured with fo great rewards, many euen of their owne accord, do register themselves in that order, and divers are sent thirher by their parents and kinsfolke. Where they are reported to learne a great number of verses by heart. Whereof it commeth to passe, that divers continue twenty yeeres in learning. Neither do they thinke it lawfull to put them in writing, whereas in all other things, for their accounts, as well publike as private, they vie the Greek letters,

This order they seems (in mine opinion) saith he, to haue taken for two confiderations : partly because they will not haue their discipline published among the common people; and partly because they will not that they which shall learne, trusting too much to their bookes, should have the lesse regard of remembrance : in that it hapneth well neere to most men, that vpon trust of the helpe of their booke, they are flacker in learning things by heart, and leffe care to beare them in mind. This is one of the chiefest things that they labour most to beat into mens minds, that

the Soules die not, but do after death paffe from one | paffeth from one to another; and hereby they thinke men should be most stirred vnto virtue, when the feare of death is nothing regarded. Also they dispute many other things: as of the starres, and of their mouings: of the bignesse of the world, and the earth: of the nature of Philosophic. things: of the strength and power of the goddes immortall : and do therein instruct the youth . Vnto these Druides and their doctrine had Lucan the Poet relation in his first booke towards the end, where he writeth thus of them.

Et vos barbaricos ritus moremá, sinistrum Sacrorum, Druida positis repetistis ab armis. Solis nofce Deos & Cali fydera vobis Aut solis nescire datum. Nemora alta remotis Incolitis Lucis.Vobis autoribus, ombra Non tacitas Erebi sedes Ditisa, profundi Pallida regna petunt, regit idem spiritus artus Orbe alio : longa, canitis si cognita, vita Mors media est. Certe, populi quos despicit Arctos, Falices errore fuo quos ille timorum Maximus, haud orgent lathi metus : inde ruendi Inferrum mens prona viris, animaģ, capaces Mortis: & ignauum est reditura parcere vita. In English thus,

You (Druides) free from wars, with barbarous denices Simifrous rites performe, and uncouth facrifices.

High Mysteries, of God, and Heavens, you only knows Or only erre therein.Where (bady woods doe grow; There you repose; and teach that Soules immortall be; Nor filent Erebus, nor Plutoes Hall fhall fee. And, (if your Sawes be footh) Death is no finall dome. But only Mid-way, twixt life past, and life to come. Braue Britain bloods perdi!warmd with this happy error Death(greatest feare of feares) amates the with no terror Hence t is they manly rush on pikes, and griesly death, And scorne base minds that stick to sped reusuing breath. (9) These Britaines being meerly barbarous, as most of the Western parts of the world then were, liued prinately to themselues with scarce any com-

merce, or entercourse with any other nation : neither indeed were much known to forraine people, for a long time. For the first notice of them extant, was by Polybius the Greek writer, that accompanied Scipio in his warres, about the yeere of the worlds creation of this land. 372 o. and two hundred and nine, before the birth of our Sauiour Chrift. Which Author nameth their Iland Polyb. 1663. to be plenteously stored with Tynne: but of other things therin is filent, saying that al those parts which lay betwixt Tanais and Narbor bending Northward in his daies were vnknown and vncertaine, and therefore the reporters of them he held as dreamers. So doth Mafter Cambden another Polybius, & no way his | Cambd. Britami inferior, account it a prodigall humor of credulity to be perswaded that Himileo, from the state of Carthage fent to discouer the coasts of Europe, in the faid expedition entred this Iland: or that Hannibal should war be believed. in this Iland, because Polybius in the Eclogues of his tenth booke saith that he was inclosed within the liand. fireits of Britaine, which place is miftaken for the fireits of Britaine, which place is mittaken to the Britaine Brutij in Italy, or that Alexander came from the Eaf That Hanaibal Indians, to Gades, and from thence into Britaine, fooded war here. though Cedrenus fay so, seeing all other writers are against it; or that Viffes, (ancient enough if he be that Elifhat the sonne of Ianan, the fourth sonne of Ia- thould vull Bripheth) should wifit Britaine in his trauels, whereof Brodass maketh doubt; though Solinus report that an Altar in Caledonia was crected, and Visfes in Greeke letters thereon inscribed. Which might very well be: for who doubteth but that the Greekes, in their vaine denotions, did both build and facrifice vnto their Gods, which they made of their worthieft men? and fith v h ffes, (in regard of his farre fea-trauels) was had in speciall account among all natigators, why might not fuch monuments be reared, and his name inferibed, as faire as the Grecians trauelled, though his per-

And if the Romanes, at whose greatnesse the whole either by Thuworld trembled, were so lately known in those ancipostalib.z.
Gaules and
Spaniards for
many yeeres vnknown to Hiflo

next neighbors.

Their merchan

Chap.4.

enttimes, as that neither Thusydides nor Herodotus made mention of them : yea and with much adoe at last were heard of by the Grecians themselues:as Iofephus affirmeth; And if the Gaules and Spaniards, (inhabitants in the continent) for many yeeres together were vtterly vnknowen to the worlds historiograpeople, nor their hauens for the receit of ships; all which Cafar by diligent inquiry fought after, but could find no fariffaction till he had fent some purposely to search it out.

bee wondred at, seeing the entercourse of their traf-Wreaths & Chains, with other conceits made of Amcompelled to pay customes and imposts vnto Octani-

Their shipping Shi as first room is a matter to be

The thips of this to Carlar,

At first, of hoary sallowes wreathed boughs, the ships Small bulke is trimly twift, and clad in bullocks hide: Then, patient to be ruld, on fwelling waves she skips. Thus on the Pacious Poe the Venice Merchants glide, And Britaine Pilots faile on furge of Ocean wide.

But after-times brought the Britaines to more exquifite skill in nauall affaires, insomuch as the royall Nauie of this Kingdome hath beene reputed (and so is at this day) not only the inuincible walles of our owner but the incredible terror of al other Kingdoms, which haue or shall enuy our happie peace: and the aduen-tures likewise of Merchants, and the skill of our Seamen, hath left no corner of the world vnfearcht.

The Britzines But as times grew more civill, and trafficke more fre-

Cafar

phers; shall we then thinke, that this remote Iland, and people then far from civility, were noted foorth with markes of more certainty? furely to my fee-ming, nothing leffe; feing that their next neighbours the Gaules knew not so much as what manner of men they were: none reforting thither, except some few merchants, and they no further, then vpon the sea coasts, neither able to describe the bignesse of the Iland, the puillance of the inhabitants, their order for war, the lawes that they vsed, the customes of the (10) Neither is this their want of knowledge to

ficke was vpheld by so meane commodities: for Strabo faith, that their merchandizing chiefly confifted in Iuory Boxes, Shecres, Onches, Bits, and Bridles, ber and Glasse; for which notwithstanding they were an Augustus, as elsewhere shall be shewed. (11) And as their commodities were very mean,

fo were their meanes either for exportation or importation very flender in those times ; I meane their hipping. It is true, that some arc of opinion, that Ships were first invented in these our Seas : but that this should be true, I have cause to doubt, that Art being long before inspired by God himselfe into the heart of Noah for making the Arke, and no doubt practifed by that paterne of many others. But that the ancient Britaines had ships of reasonable vie, though of simple Art, Cefar testifieth, faying, that the kecles and ribs of their ships were of light wood, and coursed ouer with leather : which kinde the now-Britaines call Corraghs: and with them (laith Polyhistor) they did faile betwikt Britannie and Ireland, (which sea for roughnesse and danger may bee compared with any other what (ocuer) though the bulke of their vessels were but of some flexible wood, couered with the hides of Buffiles: and as long as they were failing, so long did they abit aine from meat: whereby it seemeth they neuer sailed any great iourneys. And of this their shipping Pliny also speaketh, and Lucan fingeth, thus:

Primim cana salix, madefacto vimine, paruam T exitur in puppim, casog, induta iuuenco, V eltoris patiens tumidum super emicat amnem : Sic V enetus stagnante Pado, fusog Britannus, Nauigat Oceano, -

(12) And their trafficke amongst themselues was not of much worth, in that, as Cefar faith, the Coines which they had were either of braffe, or else iron rings sized at a certaine waight, which they wsed for their monies. Of which kind some have averred they have seene found and lately taken up in little cruses or pitchers of earth

quent, they shortly after stamped both filuer and gold;

and thereon the faces of their Kings, even in the daies

of Iulius Cafar, who was the first that had his owne

stampt on the Romane Cornes. Many of these are a | Knogs image mongst vs remaining, whereof I have inserted some | werein Cusar image imag few, as in their due places shall follow, which I receiued from the liberall hand of that most learned Knight, and worthy storer of Antiquities Sir Robert Cotten of Cunington. These Cornes are commonly imboffed outward and shield-like, whereon the inscription, or fare, is feen; the reuerse hollow, and therein coynes from their deuife fet : and by these formes are they known forrame. to be the Britaines, no other nation stamping the like,

except fome few among the Grecians, (13 We come laftly to speake of the manner of Of their their warfare, which Cafar thus describeth. First (faith he) they ride round about all parts of the battell, cafting off their darts: and often times with the terrible noise of their horses, and the ratling of their chariot They amage the wheeles, they amaze the enemy and breake their array. And when they have wound themselves in a- chartot whetler mong the troopes of horsemen, they leape foorth of their waggons, and fight on foot. In the meane while the waggoners withdraw themselues somewhat out of the battell, and fet their waggons in fuch order, that if they be ouercharged by the enemy, they may haue speedy and casie recourse vnto them. By meanes whereof they are both as ready to remoue as the horsemen, and as stedfast to stand in the battell as the footmen, and supply both duties in one. And they are come to fuch perfectnesse by daily practice and exercile, that even in steepe and falling places they will ftop their horses running a full gallop, and guide and turne them in a short roome, & run vpon the vergies and stand stedfastly vpon the beames, and quickly recouer themselues back againe into the waggons.

These would often give ground to egge their ene-mies from their maine battell, and then would leape out of their chariots and fight on foot. And they kept also such an order in fighting on horseback, that whether the enemies chased, or were chased, they were alwaies in danger. For they neuer fought in great companies together, but scatteringly a great way difrant the one from the other, and had stals lying in diuers places one to supply another, having over fresh and lufty men in the roomes of them that were weary. Of this their manner of fight in chariots, Strabe alfo declareth; and Diodorus Siculus faith that the Britaines lived after the manner of the first age of the world, vling chariots in their fight, as the report goes of the ancient Greeks at the Troian warres. Pomponius Mela also describing these Britaines, affirmeth that their fight was not only with horsemen and sootmen, but also with waggons and chariots, harnessed, and armed at the ends of the axle-trees with hookes and fithes, after the manner of the Gaules; but with apparance of greater courage, as Tacitus faith; as being not yet mollified by long peace. Their strength in field confifteth most of footmen, yet some countries Their chiefe there are (faith he) that war in waggons, the greatest persons guiding the same; and so much doth tunenal

ntimate, who in shew of prophecie but indeed in

this manner. It boads thee Triumph great; to captivate some King; Or sierce Arviragus from Chariots beame to ding. Dio Nicaus from Xiphilinus more particularly decla-Did viraus troin appuissis more particularly decia-rech their frength; Their horfes (faith he) are but little, yet therewithall fivife of pace: their footness also run very speedits, but in their standing are the strongest: their armor are shields, and short speares, in the nether end whereof is falined a round bell of braffe like unto a ball, which at the first onset of incounter they shake with great courage, suppoling that such a ratling noise doth much amate the polling that then a rathing none over much a mate the enemy. And Herodian faith that their fixelds were nar-row and speares sport, wearing swords hanging down their naked loines, having neither knowledge nor ofe either of corflet or helmet.

flattery of the Emperor Domitian, falutes him after

(14) Some haue thought that their women also were not exempted from the wars; but certaine it is that many of that fex were renowned for their valour amongst them. Which made Tacitus to say, it was vfu-

Sir Robert Caten.

They fight not i

They have ever that are weary, Strabe, Diodorus Siculus The Britaines fight in chariots as the vie was in

Their footmer

women renow ned for valour.

Book.5.

Chap.5.

OF GREAT BRITAINE.

171

Tacina.

The British we mens rufull atides behausour In praier amaze

lift up to heauen, pouring out praiers and imprecations. The strangenesse of which light so amazed the Roman fouldiers, that they flood ftill like flocks, whiles the other wounded them at their pleasure; till Pauli-

The Romans name from a infamous períon,

all for the Britains to fight under the conduct of women. (which the Romans found to their fmart) nor to make wind the common found to their mart) nor to make any difference of fexes for government. A more noble patterne whereof, neuer had any age, then in our late glorious Virgin Queen, (the wonder of her fexe, and a glorious virgin of all future ages, who, as the was inferior to no Prince euer liuing, for her admirable gouernment in vpholding of her kingdomes peace, to was the a match (to fay no more) to the proudest monarchs, in her managing of her wars; as (when occasion was offered) she was ready to make good, in her owne roiall person in the field. But besides the vse of armes, the ancient British women had another imploiment in the field, which I will only fet downe in Tacitus his words, speaking of Paulinus Suetonius his affailing of Anglefey : The British Army (faith he) flood on the shore, thicke of men and munition, and women running up and downe of new and munition, and women running yo and downe amongst them, like furies, carrying burning firebrands in rufull attire, and with their haire hanging about their Boulders. The Druides meanewhile went with their hands

> nus encouraged them, and they excited one another, not to be so danted by an army of women and wizards.&c. (15) In the relations of these things, let no man thinke, that the glory of these ancient and warlike nation of Britains, is any waies disparaged, or made inferior to them that would be more famous, whole beginning haue been as meane, and state as rude, if not

more. For let vs confider the Romans fo lauish in their

owne worths and greatnesse; who notwithstanding,

bring their name and originall from Romalus, a baflard by birth, nourished by a beaft, educated among a fort of rustick shepheards: and grown to the ripenesse of his owne affections, he became ring-leader of a damned crue, that lived by robberies and without lawes: besides the shedding of his naturall brothers blood, as Titus Linie their owne historian witneffeth : and both himselfe and followers, had in such contempt and derifion by their neighbour nations, that they both diffained and refused to give them that they both distance and retured to gue them their daughters in mariage, left in time they also should become lawlesse, will that by subtiley and force, they had rasissed their virgins, and thereby made them who who who who will be a few them their after fortunes and successes had mounted them yeon the wings of glory, and feated them on the necks of their iubdued neighbors, their Cafars' would needs be more then mortall, and their pedigrees mult lineally be brought from the Gods.

(14) And to let paffe many others, the like may The poore be (14) And, to tet patte many others, the meet may be faid of the beginners of the Septiam and Turkiff synthesis and Empires, two golden pillers raifed vpon leaden bafes, Turkift Empires, two golden pillers raifed vpon leaden bafes, Turkift Empires, two golden pillers raifed vpon leaden bafes, the state of the state o howfoeuer now, the power of their command, circles three parts of the earth. Nay what more is that pretious, roiall, and Gods only people, from whom the e-ternall King of Kings descended, in their offrings made ternal king of kingsedecended, in their ordrings made in time of their highest glory, were by the Lord thus commanded to acknowledge and say: A Syrian was mo father, wish being reads to perify for hunger, near dawn into Egypt, and locarate with a famile company. And the trichest tone of that most beauticasts. highest pride is counselled by the Prophet, to looke back to the rocke whence it was hewen, and to the hole of the pit whence it had been digged.

Ifai.51.1.

THE GOVERNMENT OF

GREAT BRITAINE.

CHAPTER V.

The British go



EE come, at length, to speake of the government and politicall estate of the Britaines, which doubtleffe (the times then confidered) was as honorable in their rulers, and as ma-

nageable in the fubiects, as any other nations in these West parts of the

world : their temperance, religion, learning, and noble resolution shewing no lesse. But in this point I must craue pardon of our British Heraulds, and some learned Antiquaries, if I bring not a lineall fuccession from Brute, and a monarchicall government in those times of obscurity, through whose mists no Egles eies could pierce, before the daies of Geffrey ap Arthur, as before was touched. And therefore following his counfell, who is best able in these things to give direction; I will begin the fuccession of Great Britains Monarchs, at the entrance and person of Iulius Casar; at which time, it seemeth, by him and other Latine writers (the best Recorders of kingdoms affaires,) this Iland was gouerned rather after the manner of an Ariflocratie, that is, by certaine great Nobles and Potent men, then under the command of any One as an absolute Monarch : though herein is a difference, in that in the Artificeratical regiment, the rulers are all Peeres of one Common wealth; whereas here,

as many Princes, so many feuerall Publike weales. For so Cefar himselfe found the state of Britaine to be the names of her in time and sites. habitants ; and to be ruled by divers Peeres or petty

(2) And fuch a Gouernor was Cafsibelan, ouer the Trinobantes: Cingetorix, Carvilius, Taximagulus, and Segonax all foure Rulers together in Kent : Comes Sup-Segmas, au roure muers cogetties in Aem: comme sup-posed to be king of the Atrebati, and to be the same Comius of Arras, whom Casar imploied to tease and worke the Britaines to his subjection. Carastaeus the warlike King of the Silures, Galgacus the worthy King of the Caledonians; yea and women also, without exof the Concentions of Sealing Winners and y Williams Tacken 14.11.

replication of the Brigants, and famous Boudices Queen of the Irenans. Whereby it feemeth that every feverall Province owed feruice and alleageance only to their owne Prince. And as their gouernments were confined vnto certaine bounds and limits, so were the Inhabitants divided and diftinguished by divers Names: of whom because we shall have occasion hereafter often to speak, it shall nor therfore be amisse in this place once for all, tablewife to lay downe the same; whereby our narrations may paffe vntroubled without more explanations, and the readers mind carried with leffe incombrances. Those ancient names of people, and places for abode, throughout the whole Iland, from Ptolemie

A TABLE OF THE ANCIENT INHABITANTS, AND THE SITES OF THEIR POSSESSIONS AS THEY WERE CALLED BY PTOLEMY, AND OFTEN SINCE MEN-

TIONED IN THE ROMAN WRITERS. People. Countries. People. Countries. CANTII .--& Kent. Northumberland. Teifidale. Suffex. REGNI. OTTADINI --Twedale: Merch. DVROTRIGES. - { Dorfetfbire. Louthien. Deuonshire. DAMNONII. Lide [dale. Ensale. SELGOVÆ -Eskdale. Somer fet fire. Annandale. BELGÆ -Wiltshire. Hampshire. Niddi (dale, Gallower. ATREBATII - { Barkfbire. Carick. NOVANTES. c Oxfordsbire DOBVNI ---Glocester. Cunning ham. {Cluydsdale. Warwicksbire. CATIEVCHLANI. Buckingham. Renfram. Bedfordfbire. Lennox. DAMNII ---Strineling. C Hertford. Menteth. TRINOBANTES. Essex. Middlesex. Fifa, Perth. CALEDONII, 1 Suffolke. Norfolke. Strathern ICENL -Cambridge. Argile. Ely Iland. Huntington. EPIDII -{Cantyré. Rutlandsbire. Lincolnshire. VICEMAGI. -A Murray. Northhampton. CORITANL -Leicestersbire. Darbishire. VENNICONES. Anguis. Nottingham TÆZALL -[Stafford/bire. { Buquhane. Worcefter bire. CORNABII. ---Chelbire. Shropfhire. CREONES. Sutherland CERONTES Lancaster. Yorksbire. Richmondsbire. BRIGANTES. 1 CARNONACÆ. CARINI. PARISI. Duram. CORNABIL Westmerland: Cumberland SIMERTÆ LOGI Denbighfbire. ORDOVICES. -Caernaruon. Montgomery. Merionethsbire (Herefordsbire. Radnorshire. SILVRES -Brekknock. Monmouth. Glamorgan. Caermarden. DIMETA. -Penbrooksbire. Cardigansbire. Qq t (3) These

Their fucceffion

Not meerly monarchicall

Their emulati-

Pomponius Mela.

Cæfar firft en

Carallacus

(3) These States ambitiously banding ech against others, to raise their owne Prince to a more soucraigne supremacy, and to enlarge their Prosinces vpon the borders of the next, were euer ready, the least occasion ministred, saith *Pomponius Mela*, to enter quarels, and seldome held amity, or were quiet. This was the cause, as Tacitus tells vs, which brought that puissant nation into bondage: and was the only helpe to the Romans victories: for seldome it chanced (laith he) that two or three states met in counsell, and concurred in opinion to repulse the common danger; so that whilit they resisted and fought one by one, all at length were subdued. But this was not at once performed by Iulius Cafar the first Roman enterer, who (as he saith) rather (hewed the place to posterities, then gaue them the possession thereof, supposing it his glory sufficient, to have done what he did. For vnto the daics of Domitian, they held play with the Romans, and that with fuch valour, that the fubduing of some small part of this Hand was accounted by themselues to match the conquests of other mightier countries, and more notes of honour shewed in their publike triumphs for one Britaines milfortune, then viually was folemnized for whole kingdomes fubdued.

(4) That fuch people poffeffed, and that many Kings together raigned here in Britaine, Pomponius Mela doth show : Britaine (faith he) bringeth foorth Nations, and Kines of nations, though they be all without civility and barbarous. And Cafars intendments being known vnto them, it is faid that many of their Cities fent him by their Embassadors profers of submission: whereby appeareth their dinerlities of States, whereof only two held promife, and the rest failing was the occasion of his second expedition for Britaine. And Tacitm America, speaking of the shipwrack suffered by the Rollings. mass in the rigne of Tiberius, faith, that many of their fouldiers then diffressed and torne, being cast open the coasts of Britaine, were by the people curteously releveed, and by their petty Kings sent backe onto Germanicus their Generallinto Germanie; which Princes or petty Kings, were drawn (as else where he faith) by emulation into many partialities and factions; which was indeed their owne destruction. And by Gildas these were termed cruell Tyrants, taking his authority out S. Harrant,

(5) Let thus farre suffice, in generall, of these ancient Britains; whose particulars we will further profecute in the places of their refistances, lest otherwise they should seeme to fight only against themselves. And therefore so many of these Gouernors, as either yeelded their subjections to the Romans, or stood their opposite till their owne strengths were spent, I will briefly touch, vntill such time as the land was made a Province, by the valour and industry of Inlius Agricola the first Roman that found it an Iland, and left it more civill, and in subjection to the Roman Empire; and by the way I will insert some of such ancient Coynes, as among them were then vied, expressing their names, and places of coy-

Chap.6.

OF GREAT BRITAINE.



(2) Cafsibelan, as the most worthy among the Britains Kings, to withstand the common danger now ready to light vpon them all, by the inuasions and wars of the Romans; was by a generall confent cho-fen their chieftaine, though in times paft, he had molested his neighbouring provinces to the inlargement of his owne. Whose figniories, as Cafar saith, were seuered from the Cities towards the sea coast by the riuer Thames, about fourescore miles from the same. He had obtained the gouernment of the Trinobantes, by the flaughter of Imanuence, and the expulsion of Mandubrace his sonne, And, with great valour, held

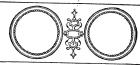
opposit to the Romans, vntill the reuolt of his chiefe Citie, the Cenimaques, Segontians, Ancalits, Bibroces, Cas-fians, and other states, which drew backe, and yeelded to the enemie; his confederates, the foure Kings of Kent, ouerthrown, his owne towne won, and himselfe forced to yeeld vnto Cafar, and the land to pay a tribute of 3000. pound yearly to Rome. A British Coyne of gold with the inscription C A s in scattered letters we have inserted; as also another wheron is instamped the word van, supposed to be his, because it is thought the word variuppoint to be inspectation to have bin coined in antient Verolam, the City of Casfibelan, and that in his daies, before the Romans won it.

mous City
neere to the



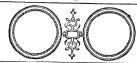
(3) Cingetorix:) whom Cafar calleth Kings that raigned in Kent, were in-Taximagull: ftigated by Cassibelan suddain-Segonax: Ily to set vpon, and to affault the Roman forces, that lay incamped vpon the sea shore whilst he kept Cafar occupied further in the

mayne: which thing they attempted, but failed of their hoped expectation, their men being flaine, three of them chaled, and Cingetorix the chiefest taken captiue. This heavy newes and vnfortunate successe, caufed Cassibelan to sue vnto Casar, and by the meanes of Comius obtained his peace.



(4) Mandubrace a prince of the Trinobantes, but a traytor to his country; whose father Imanuence being flaine by Cafibelan, and his owne life likewife fought after, and in danger, fled vnto Cafar into Galla, and followed his fortunes in the wars; wherein, he was a great spurre vnto Casars forwardnesse for Britain, both to be reuenged upon the murtherer of his father, and to recouer the government of the Trinobantes viurped by Casibelan : preferring his owne

ambitious defire, and the revenge of one mans death, before the freedome of his native Country, or the deaths of many his coutrimen, that daily stopped the deaths of many his courtimen, that daily tropped the Roman pallage with fireames of their blood. He recouring his chiefelf City with the protection of the Romans, yeelded fubiection, & forty hollages to Cafar. whose example drew others to sell their owne liberty. & to buy many miseries at too deere a rate, and with too late repentance, him doth Beda call Androgorius.



Camb Britan.

(5) Cenimaques Segontians Ancalits Bibroces Cassians

(Norfolk,Suff.Cam. &c. Hantshire. Hendly hund in Oxford. Bray hund in Barkshire. Caifbow hund in Hartf.

These people or states, seeing the proceedings and happy successe of Cafar, after the example of the Trinobantes, whose chiefest Citie had yeelded him obedi-

ence, and were thereby secured, and protected from the harmes of his souldiers, sent him likewife their submissions, and were accepted into subjection: so ready were they to saue their owne stakes, that they left the whole to the hazard of loffe, which foone after followed as an ouerflowing flood, wherein was lastly drenched the whole I-(6) Cunobeline

THE KINGS AND GOVERNORS OF GREAT BRITAIN VVITH THE ANCI-

ENT COINES VSED IN THEIR TIMES.

CHAPTER VI.



He first British Corne (as is supposed) both by the fafhion thereof being shieldlike, and Name thereupon inscribed REXCOM: denoteth Comius, (if he be a Britaine) King of the A-trebatij in this Iland: whom some judge to haue fled thence vnto Cafar, as

traytor to his Natiue country; and in Gallia vanquithed those parts, that lay coasted against the Whight, wherein(by Ptolemy) the people called likewise the Atrebaty inhabited : ouer whom he received the gouernment by the gift of Cafar, and was by him imploied to worke the Britaines to his obedience. And that he was King of the Atrebatif in Britaine, may be ftrengthned by that which Cafar in his fecond book of Commentaries affirmeth, where, by his owne knowledge he faith, that one Divitiacus raigned ouer a great part of Gallia, and some portion of Britaine also: and so likewise this Comius is reported to be of great respect among our Britaines, and able in that country to doe much. Neither is it altogether Color. com vnikely, feeing the Britaines distasted his loyalty to Casar, and his Ambassage for their subjection, with such distances, that they laid violent hands only vpon him, and cast him in prison; vsing no such rigor against the rest of their owne Ambassadors, Notwithstanding when successe altered, they set him at liberty, and made him their meanes to pacifie Cafar.

Other Coynes I haue inserted to such British princes as by their inferiprions are known to be theirs. And whereas some are not yet noted by that honor to the world; I have vnto such added only blankes, if happily more be reueiled hereafter, and the bowels of the earth deliuer to others, her treafures hid, as formerly (and in these our searching daies) she hath already done.

(2) Cassibelan

Piolemai Geo-









Iûy.9,6,

Matt. 2. Efay 11.6.

Mica.4 3.



(6) Cumbelon (Or for you his Coynes his name is inflamped) was the fon of Theomeanins and hethe fonne of Lud (as fay our philip higherton, by whom his name is your phy writen Aymbelon) he lined at Rome, and in great fauour with Angelius Cafer the Emperor, by whom he was made Knight, and by his meanes the case of the charge the peace of Britain was continued without the paiment of their Tribute, as Fabian out of Guido de Columna hath gathered. In the foureoutdout comma nath gathered. In the four-teenthyere of his ragge he Day-flar of I acob ap-peared, and the rod out of I shal did flouriff from the wombe of a Virgin, when the wonderfull Counfellor, be might food and Prince of Peace, the Emmanuel with vs was borne at Beth-lehem of commanuci with vis was borne as Detn-lenem of his maiden-mother the bleffed Virgin Mary, and was made man like onto vis in all things, since only excepted. These were the times that great Kings and Prophets desired to see, but saw them not, when the Wolse and the Lambe, the Leopard and the Kid, the Casse and the Lyon fed together; for war was not heard of then in the world, but rather their fwords were made into mattocks, and their feeres turned into fithes, as the Prophets, Shlyls, and Poets from them have affirmed. In Rome the temple of Ianus was shut, and in Britaine Cunobeline enioied peace with the rest of the world, and emoteu peace with the rett of the world, and his fame made more famous by the many Coynes inflamped of him, and whole face thereon among all the *British* Kings was first inscribed, as by these here inserted doth euidently appeare, one with two faces, like vnto Ianus, and foure more with his owne, belides three others wherein is read his name, one of them with a womans head, another with a horse, and the third with a wreath; all these (if horic, and the third with a wreath; all thefe [if not more) are knowner to be his, which fleweth his wealth, his firme, and his civill refpect. The chiefe Civic for his princely refi. dence was Camalodaman, now Maddon in Effect, wonne by Claudius from the fonnes of Camboline, as by the infeription of the Coyne or the control of the Coyne or the Coyne or the control of the Coyne or the Coyne or the control of the Coyne next enfuing appeareth, and wherein many of the British monies also received their impresse. This City with the free towne Persum afterwards selt the heavy hand of merciant of the property of the property of the persuant afterwards selt the heavy hand of mercians. lesse BoDvo in her reuenge against the Romans, who laid the beauty and gorgeous buildings thereof so levell with the earth that those walles and mounted turrets neuer fince afpired to halfe their wonted heights.

(7) Adminius







OF GREAT BRITAINE.



(7) Adminium the first sonne of Cunobeline, King of the Britanee, by Sactemum his report, youn some offence was banished the Iland by his fathet; and with a similar traine fled ouer the scan into Besselia, where Caiuc Caissel and was in making his ridiculous expedition against the Ocean. And yeelding himeliste on his proceeding to the proceeding and after to the variege sportions humors, as of a great victory and conquest, lending the newes thereof to Rome, with an especial command that his letters should be delivered in the

Temple of Mars, and that in the affembly of a full Senate. It is indiged by learned Cambiden that the Roman Copine aboute perfixed, yron whofe renterior in factibled Marspolie Emminy Regis, to be meant of this Administ the forme of Cambidenter, whole Cities Cambidenter, whole who was the content of the Emperour afterwards wonne, and wherein a temple was built and conferented wino him, attended by the Pricits daggidals which heauily burdened the poore effaces of the Britisher.



Dio calls him

(8) Catterstu another fon of Cumboline, immediatly after the death of his father, found himself agree, und at the Rumans, for the retaining of certaine fugities the betraiers of their native country; whereof one Berieu was chiefe, and agreen firebrand of Claudius his attempts against the Britains. This Catentum amination effiliance against Adulu Plantius the Euperors Deputy, with such noble resolution and warfilke cincounters, that often the endangered both his period of the control of the contro

the Romans, brought at length Catacratus their captive into bands, with great flaughters of his Bratause, himfelle led flortly after in great triumph through Rome, in honor of Plastius his fo fortunate faceeffe. The milities of others thus made the Romans to mount the chair of their triumphs; and the chaines of their captiles, the records of their prefent afpired pride.

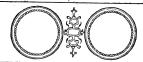
But the bordering Dobuni seeing his fall, made their owne standings surer by yeelding themselues subjects to Rome.



Tacitus in vita

(9) Togodamnus the third sonne of Camobeline, and successfor to Catacratus, prosecuted his countries quarrell with the like boldness and resolutions as his brother before him had done: & was the only couchnone that gaue - \$p\$a\$\text{gain}\$ his little, whose interpositions(as Taitius sinh) was the beginning of that greatnesses where the control of the greatnesses where the control of the Romani, that in a bloody bartell he ended his lift, and brought Plastius their Lieutenard vanco a sand, where strained in dangers both of place and people, he was forced to send of Luduiu the Emperory whose control to the control of the control to the control of the contro

ceit was then grounded , that in Britaine was greateft glory to be gotten, and therefore came to his affiliance in perform himfelfe, the fift fine: Laine, did that attempted their conqueft. His recorded compositions made with Arasingue, the mariage of his daughter and building of Gloerfer, Heaue to be read out of diffryo of Mommauth, and to be allowed at the choice of his heart; only noting that the poffelion of fo faire a land drew the affection and aged perion of this flamperor to vadergoe fo farre distant and dangerous a iournic, asthis of Britaine lay from Rome.



(10) Cogidunus a Britain borne, received in pure gift at the hands of the Romans, certain Cities, ouer which he peaceably raigned their King. For when they had conquered the neerest part of this Iland, and reduced it into the forme of a Prossince; according to their ancient policie, it was their custome, (faith Tacisus) to Rrr ver Taritys in pilea

wse Kings themselves for instruments of bondage, both in admittance of their authority, and in protecting them against their opposits. Other memoriall of him none remaineth, but that he is reported to haue rested euer most faithfull to the Romans, and was of them accordingly effeemed, albeit his owne

people bare him no fuch good will, but rather accounted him and others his like, to be Romes only instruments, and Britaines vipers, that brought in strangers to eat out the home-bred inhabitants, and fettered the freedome of their land, with the heavy chaines of a forrein subjection.



(11) Caractacus the most renowned prince of the Silures, in nine yeeres relifiance waded through many aduentures against the common enemy. For when as the Icenians, Cangi, and Brigantes began to faint and giue ouer, he only with the Ordonices held out with fuch feruice and fame, that thereby he grew both famous and fearefull to the Romans. But Destinies determining the downfall of Britain, the props that were fet to flay it fill vp, proued too slender and brake vnder the waight. For this bold Caractaeus o-uerthrown in battell, his wife, daughter, and brethren taken prisoners, and his forces defeated, committed himselfe to the protection of Cartifmandua the Brigantes faithlesse, and by P. Ostorius brought to Rome; and by P. Ostorius brought to Rome; where beholding the riches and glory of that City, he openly and boldly checked the auarice and ambi-

tious humors of the Romans, who being owners of fo great and glorious things, were (notwithstanding) couetous and greedy for the poore possessions of the Britains. And there being led in triumph, with admiration he was beheld of all the spectators, and for his Zonarai undanted spirit and magnanimous resolution releafed of bands, and taken into fauour by Claudius the Emperor. And the Lords of the Senate affembled together made glorious discourses touching Caractacus captiuity, affirming it to be no lesse honorable then when P. Scipio thewed Syphax vato the people, and Tech.Amal. L. Paulus, Perfes, orifany other had exhibited to the The British Copne here about hewed, by the fastered letters therein inferibed, is by the indicious observers of such ancient monies supposed to be

Book.5



(12) Venutius, a famous King of the Brigantes, and husband to Cartifinandus (a woman of an high and noble linage, but of a bale and vnfatified luft:) finding his bedabufed by Yellocatus his feruant and harmod's because of the property of harnesse-bearer, raised his power against her, and her paramour. With him fided his Brigantes, and the neighbour countries adioining, whose good will went generally with the lawfull husband, fearing the ambitious authority of a luftfull woman. With her went the Romans, at the command of Didius their Deputie: and :hese striking battell won the day : yet so,

as the war continued to the Romans, the kingdome to Venutius, and the infamy with Cartifmandua, both for betraying the pledge of her trust reposed by Carattaeus in his distresse, and her truth to Venutius her noble Lord and husband: preferring the licentious plea-fures of a vasfall, before the bed of chast mariage, or the nuptial limbracements of a worthy King, and hath to ages following left her name noted with the featres of infamy, that time nor continuance shall euer weare away. His ancient coyne is thought to be as thou seeft here aboue described.



(13) Prafutagus King and Queene of the Iceni-Boduo 3 ans, a people vnshaken by war, and themselves rich (as Tacitus reporterh;) the only cause of their ruines, for which the Romans then warred; were brought to destruction vpon this insuing occasion. King Prassus dying, by will less Nero his heire(supposing by this meanes to leave his state the fafer,) together with the protection of his two daughters. Thefe, contrary to truft, were abused and defloured, the mother Boduo turned out of all, and

against all manly civility, or womanly (much lesse, princely) respect, contumeliously and despitefully whipped. In the reuenge of which vniufferable wrongs she so opposed and oppressed the Romans, that at one battell feuenty thousand (or as Dion Cassias faith 80000 of their flaughtered bodies the facrificed to her dead husbands ghost; and hath left the fame of her proceedings registred, even by her encmiesthemselues,to her immortall and neuer dying memory. The strong Cities, Camalodunum, and Vera-

lanium, the facked with the rage of mercileffe war; Petilius, Lieutenant of the ninth Legion , the discomfited, Catus the Procurator droue over the feas, Pollhumu the Campe-master durst not resist her, and all indeed feared the valour of this heroick Lady: whose lawes were not martiall to faue vpon rantome: whose re-uenge was not pacified with yeeldings or submission, nor did the thinke there was blood enough in the Romans to imbrue the altars of her allifting gods, or to

wash off the staine of their vnnoble and vnmanly iniuries. But when successe altered, after losse, and valorous resistance, she made an end of her life by poilon, left living the thould fee either her owne miferies in their triumphs,or leau her remembrance in the records of their lauish and selfe-pleasing historians. Her Coyne of gold we have here expressed, the forme shield-like, and vpon the embossement thus inscribed: BODVO.



(14) Aruiragus, the valiant British King, whom Humfrey Lhuyd confidently affirmeth to be the same man that is called Meurigus, and is faid to withfland Claudius in his enterprifes for Britaine, vntill a compolition of mariage was concluded betwixt the Emperors daughter and himselfe. Notwithstanding by Iuuenal it is plaine, that this Aruiragus was in his fame in the daies of Domitian, vnto whom the Poet, as a

Prophet, would foredoome his happy fucceffe in the dispossession of his gouernment ouer the Britaines, as in these his verses are seene;

It bodes great bonor to thy selfe some King thousbalt deprine Or ele Arunagus from the rule of Britains waine shalt drine An ancient British Coyne of filuer is here inserted, and a mans head thereon instamped, which is supposed to be his, the letters alluding to neere to his name.



(15) Galgaeus, a worthy and most valiant prince of the Caledonians, for vertue, and birth, preferred before any other in the Northern parts of this Iland, and made their Generall against the invasions of Juli-us Agricola, was the last Britaine, that against the Romans flood out: accounting those only happy, which were free from the contagion of that Roman tyranny, and themselves the flower of all the British nobility. that yet had not subjected their necks to their yoke The refistance which he made was great and warlike. but against the decree of God no man can stand; for the Romans, risen to their greatnesse, bare downe all that withstood them; and in a bloody battaile subdued him, and his forces, making all filent before them where they came, and leaving defolation in the places where they had been. Thus then was the whole Iland Subjected to the Roman Emperors, about

one hundred thirty and fix yeeres after C.sfars first entrance, and the land that had been ruled by many petty kings, was brought now (as most parts of the world belides were) vnder the gouernment of one absolute Monarch Grienous, no doubt, was the losse of their liberties, but a greater gaine was gotten not many yeeres after; for from the rude and fauage manners of the barbarous, they were reclaimed, and became most civill. And he that had given their Iland to his Christ, prepared their hearts to receive him their King; vnto whose subjection also they were motiues to the Romans themselues. Two ancient British Coynes stamped in siluer we have here set downe, attributing them both to this Galgacus of Caledonia. Notwithstanding in these (as in the rest) I must fubmit my felfe to the more experienced, and the cenfures of these ancient things to the learned and more



(16) These then were the resisters of the Romans proceedings, that rather yeelded their brefts to the fword, then their necks to the voke of a forrein fubiection, and made their affaulters more famous in their conquefts, and themselves more renowned to following posterities:neither in these relations haue we followed the records of our owne, but the approued testimony of their best writers, who have delitiered what we have faid, and no doubt felt the like repugnancy of many others, both in the South and North of this Iland, though their names died

with their valiant refiftance. And as these Britains held the Romans at eucn hand the space of one hundred thirty and fix yeeres, neither yet then were fubdued without themselves, that ever sided with the enemy against themselues, and whose factions made way for the feet of their conquerors, as from Tacitus we have declared: So their fucceffors the Saxons found as warlike withstanders, till God for Britains finnes had cast downe their strength, whereof more shall follow (Christ assisting) in the due place of their flories, that from the rangue of Vortigerne the Scourge

of his country to Cadwallader the last prince of the Britains, spent their lives in the quarrell of liberty, and hath left their memorials famous for their countries defence.

(17) But the state of kingdomes (how largely so euer extended, or by what humane wifedome ftrengthned with defence) do find their periods not to exceed much the number of fix hundred yeeres, as by common experience among most nations is feene. In these times therefore when the world was shaken with wars, first by the Romans that strone to mount hie the spires of their intended glory, and were by Gods deeree appointed to ouerrun and afflict the earth, when Kings of people(I say) were en-forced to lay the Crownes from their heads at their conquering feet; and free nations loaded with the yokes of their bondage : then was fulfilled the refo-Numb.24.23. lution of this question demanded, Alas who shall line when God doth this? And then among the rest, Britaine gaue place to necessity with as manlike resistance as did states more stronger, or kingdomes confined with far more larger compasse. And Cafar himselfe bought his entrance with such losse to the Romans that no Emperor after affaied the like, before aged Claudius, whose opinion was, that thence the remembrance of his fucceeding glory should

But when the props of that Empire began for to faile, as nothing can bee firme in this still-wearing world, the Saxons, for their valour a second triumphant nation, began as it were where the Ro-mans left: for belides the continuall possession of their owne country, as in that case vnpartiall Tacitus doth tell vs; their legions were transported into all parts of the world, and without whom almost no victory was wonne of whose power and prowesse in the expeditions of warre both Dianysus, Arranue and Seneca, doe speake. To these then likewise if the Britains gaue place, their lots came foorth with the like price of the rest, and in this Iland they bought their conquests as deere as they had done in any other part of the world . Neither was Britaine subdued by either of these nations, or their inversion and exchange of policie altered, but with as vnwilling subjection and streames of blood as had been sufed out of the fides of their mightier nations, or by them had bin tamed to follow their triumphal chariots. And more honour attributed to paffe these British feas, with more admiration only to fee the I land it selfe, then was vsually conceived of kingdomes more larger, or that lay iacent as farre from Rome. And the conquest of some small parts of Britaine in no small selfe-glory to be inscribed as trophies of their victories vpon their Coynes, and to giue sirnames to the Emperors and their sonnes: as shall be shewed, when the age of this history shall be increased with the times of the Romans affaires in this Iland. Free from subjection before the attempts of Caius Iulius Cafar by the testimony of Diodorus Siculus, and never had yeelded to any forrein power, as not prouoked by Dionysius or Hercules , nor inforced

by any to maintaine their liberties by the feats of warre. But Cafar in Gallia thirsting after nouelties, or his conceited humor to purchase renowne, made the sea seeme safe from dangers in passage, and himselfe resolute to venture his person amongst those bold and barbarous Britains: wherein he left no meanes vnaffaied for their conquest and subjection, nor his fucceffors omitted any prouident care to retaine and keepe the land in their possessions, which whilst it stood a province in their obedience was held and accounted the fairest plume in their triumphant Diadem, and the loffe thereof (if no more but only in name) as was publikely affirmed, wold proue a great detriment to the Empire. This made the Romans to defire it as they did, who befides the great glory they conceiued in the conquest, made it the granary for the westerne garifons, besides the delicate prouissons for their Emperors owne tables.

And the German Saxons straitned in their owne countries through increase of their people, or haply to supply their owne wants, infested with piracies these West parts of the world, and among all others fet the eie of their affections vpon this most beautifull Iland, and neuer left their attempts vnaffaulted till they fet the glorious diadem thereof vpon their owne heads. Changing the name Britannia into Anglia, a terme most fit to expresse that Subject, and pleasing in sound as Angelicalliike, ncither have themselues proved vnworthy of so rich a possession, that in wars have maintained, and by voiages made known her fame as far as the funne hath his beames, or the endlesse ocean her ebbes and tides. But of these things wee shall have occasion here-

And now addresse our selves to describe our ancient Britaines, and to shew their true pictures as they are reported. At first rude and vnciuil(I taske them no further then all others then were in the world, some few excepted that were only taught by God) and with the first were reclaimed to a more civill respect, both in their apparell and apprehension of litepect, both in the speak and appearance appearance in the Chapter fucceeding we will demonstrate as they are described by Casar, Plny, Dio, Herodian and others; at first altogether naked cut, and painted as thou seeft, afterwards partly clad in imitation of others which frequented their country either for traffick or conqueft; in both which manner take them as they are reported to bee by these authours, and impute no liberty in the draught to the workmans beft liking, nor thy felfe any whit disparaged to be brought from such parents, which here are set as the pillars spoken of by Iosephus, that after the flood did preserue the invented science of the celestiall bodies, lest time or elements should confume that knowledge or deuoure those rules before demonstrated: So the true portrature of our ancient progenitors may by these be preserved from the ruines of time & made our motives to be thankful vnto him that hath brought vs forth in these most civill times, and not only clad vs with the garments of humanity, but by his spirit hath guided vs vnto a celeftiall knowledge.





THE PORTRAITVRES OF THE AN-CIENT BRITAINES, OF THEIR NAKED.

NESSE, PAINTING AND FIGURING THEIR BODIES. OF THEIR PERSONAGES HABITES, AND HABILI-MENTS, BOTH IN PEACE AND WARRE: AS ALSO OF THE PICTS, THEIR ORIGI-NALL AND HABITES, &c.

CHAPTER VII.

Ariflotle.

Nations Originals are fo hard

Cafar.

Chap. 7.



He understanding and apprehensions of men louded in ignorance are by a Great Philosopher compared to the eyefight of fuch men, as stand and behold things afarre-off; because both of these, though they apprehend some generall

shapes and notices, yet can they not discerne of the true proportions and proprieties of their Objects. The like happeneth in the fearch and furuey, as of all other Nations, fo of our owne, of our first beginmings, our antique Customes, behaviours, habits: the true Circumstances whereof are the more difficill to find, that those things are not onely remote many de-grees beyond the kenning of our Eye, (yea so-manie Ages from the times wherein we liue,) but are also shadowed and enwrapped in manifold vacertainties and contrarieties, wherewith euen those Writers have perplexed our way, who vndertooke to be both our Guides and our Lights. Notwithfranding, our purpose being to propose vnto the eye of our now glorious and gorgious Britaines, fome generall draughts of our poore and rude Progenitours, (that as King Agathocles in his chiefe feasts vied onely earthen diffes to pur himselfe in minde that his Father was buta Potter, fo wee may remember that true Britifb Nobilitie is more in Vertue then in Auncestors ;) let vs first see what the principall notes and markes are whereby the persons of those first Britaines were made so remarkeable among all other Nations.

(2) These Notes were chiefly three; first, their going naked; fecondly, their staining and colouring of their whole Bodies; thirdly, their cutting, pincking and pouncing of their flesh, with garnishments (for so they thought them) of fundry shapes and fashions, as the two first ensuing leases or Portraitures doe repre-fent. Touching all which, the reports of Authors are very discrepant; and therefore, sith light is gotten our. by collition of flintes, wee will effay, whether out of those Writers contradictions (brought to the stroke, and confronted together) we may firike fome glimering light to direct vs how to paint them forth, who lo delighted in painting themselues.

(3) First touching their going maked, the autho-. The first note rity of Cefar must ouersway (as being auncientest) the too-generall reports of such others, as seeme to relate that the Britaines generally vied no Couerture, as neglective either of weathers injurie, or of civill modefty; forhe faith, interiores plerig, pellibus funt vefitti: the In-land men for the most part were clad with

skinnes. And yet these Inlanders were the rudest of all the reft, the Kenlifb and Sea-borders being full of humanity and little differing from the French civilitie.

So that when Herodian faith, Veftis v/um non cognofcunt, nec induuntur quidem, They neither know the vic of Herodian. Garments:nor put any on; either he speaks on hearesay, or his large report must bee restrained to some certaine Persons, Times, and Places. And for certaine Persons and Times indeed Plynie somewhat limits it, Plini. faying, that their married weomen, both elder and fonger, (coniuges, nurufa) in certaine festiuals vsea to goe starke naked: so doth Dio also for certaine Places: in their Tents (faith he) they luned naked and onshod, where he feemeth to allow them fome concreure abroade The like may be supposed in time of Winter or War where Herodian himselfe saith onely, plerag, torporis

nudi, A great part of their body was bare, (4) Itmay feeme hereby, that those Originals of Particular Nations were not much vnlike that first beginning of the vniuerfall profemination of Mankind, when our first Parents innocencie walked in naked simplicitie: the foundations of all things being, as farthest from our light, so more simple and farte from those artificiall fraudes, which some call Wit and cunning. And though an ancient Father be saint opion in millaken, in conceauing that by the foure letters of the name of Adam, were fignified the foure quarters D. de file. of the World, (that being an Hebrue name of three darles, North, etters, and not a Greeke of foure) yet all those Quarters of the World participate somewhat of Adams dispolitions; and as all Naturall things retourne by ourse to that whereof first they were framed, so if Lawes, discipline, and Customes, did not restraine men, they would in time, of themselues revolue to that first neglective condition, and carelessenes of those outward respects whence men are now named

(5) But in our Britaines, three reasons there seeme of this their going wnelouthed. First, their hardines, which was partly naturall, and partly acquired by | Harding! practife of their bodies to durance: of whom Diorecords that all of them had an excellent habit in tolerating unger cold and labours insomuch as they could endure to abide many daies together in the water up to the chinne without any food at all; that they would line in the woods on roots and barkes of trees; though one kind of foode he there mencioneth vnknowne in our times, whereof ving to make as much as a beane onely, they were not Subject either to hunger or thirft. No maruaile, if those who would endure this, could endure the want of garments : especially in a foile whereof wee find this | See Chap.1.5. 10 Euloge. Tu nimium nec stricta gelu, O.c.

Norfreezing cold, nor scorching hot thou art a Twixt both thou hold ft the meane and yleafing ft part.

The like patience we find even now not onely in the wilder Irish, and Virgineans, but in rogues and Wanderers of our owne Countrey, who often pittileffe of Rr 2



themselues voluntarily deprive their Bodies of this Protection against the Aires offence, to procure pittie of others. And what speake we of these? seeing euen children for Custome, and Women for pride, wil fuffer their Breaks, and most tender parts of their Body, to be exposed not only to offence of weather, but of modesty also? yea generally, the handes, and fa-ees, being of most subtilest sence, yet by custome are enabled now to endure that, which by the like cufrome the olde Britaines endured in their whole Bodies; whereby Plutarch thinkes they ofually lined so long enen to the age of fixescore, the externe cold keeping-in and augmenting their internall heate.

(6) Asabilitie to endure colde, fo ignorance (in many) of meanes to prevent it, may feeme another occasion of these Britaines nakednes. The Romans (it feemes) in their old Confuls times, and after, had not the skill nor vie of Hats, Breeches, Ge. That Britaine abounded with mooll and other materials for cloa-thing, is past all doubt, for which cause, by one Panegyrick, it is named Riche in Pasturage, which by another is thus explicated, that therein was an infinite theris thus expirated, to attheren was an injuste multitude of tame cattell both with V dders full of milke, and loaden with Fleeces to the ground, Sothen Woll was not wanting, but Will, or Skill, the latter in most likelihood: for, as Strabe faith, that though those frutting V dders yeelded great flore of milk, yet some of them had not skill to make cheese, and having so rich grounds, pet had not the art of tillage, to their theepe might haue such heavy steeces, yet some of their Owners no cunning to keepe themselues warme therewith. Some of them, I say; for otherwise, as Pliny, touching Tillage, it is a likely to the control of them. giues light to Strabe, witnessing, that others of them were to good Husbands as to manure their grounds with Marle, as likewise doth Dissorders, laying they had skill to make drinke of Barley: so probable is it, that those other who were by Cafar and Tacitus said to be so like the French in conditions, had also some part of their Art in fitting the Burthen of their Sheepes backes to couer their owne,

(7) The last reason of such their going nake fometimes, was out of an opinion that no cloath so adorned them, as their painting and damasking of their Bodies, for which cause (saith Herodian) they mould not cour themselves, left then their gay painting should not be seene: but Pomponius Mela makes doubt, whether their thus painting themselves were for ornament or for some other ofe; which doubt Casar seems to resolve, as if the men did it; because it made them looke more terrible in warre. (8) And thus we are now orderly fallen on the

(8) And thus we are now garderly tallen on the fector of choice three notes appropriated by Assistant our Britishnes, which is their painting and flassis and the resistance of the resistance o Authorisative in increasion of this time primarys, (as we finewed) on the name, perchance allo in the fabblance of that wherewith they frained themselves, and formewhat allo in the calor it feller. The high fame cafer calles luteum, which yet in vulgar acception is thought to be some yellow substance, as Plany cals lute- Plany. amoui, theyoke of the Egge; Plany Lind (Easth the Frenchmen call it glassum, describing it to be an herbe like Plantayne, which Oribasius (as scarned Cambden fhewerth) doth terme Vitrum, in which fense Mela is Mela. vnderstood, to say, that they were stained ritro (and not ritro) it being generally taken to be wead, from those ancient times hithertow feel for the furest staine. But for the colour which is made, Cafar and the rest agree, it was Cieruleus, blewifbor azure, which colour the Cambro-Britannes doe yet call glace, whence our glasse for windowes (called also vitrum) seemeth by reason of the colour, to have taken name. Onely Pliny Pliny leaueth fome scruple, in saying, that the naked painted women imitated the Æthiopian colour; which must be vinderstood either comparatuely, in respect of People white and unpainted, or because blew a farre-of hath the appearance of blacke.

(9) That the Britaines tooke their Name from See Chap. 2 5.7





Taciesa,

this painting, hath been already shewed out of Isi-dore, who writes, that they had that name from a word of their some language, wherein Breeth fignifieth as much as painted or stained; but whether those other Inhabitants of the more Northerne parts of this Iland, called also Picti or painted, had their name vpon the same ground, & whether they were some branch of the British stocke, or of some transmarine Colonie, it is a question not yet decided. Pomponius Latus, and some other, deriue them from Germany, some from the Pictones in France; but Beds, from Scythia, whence faith hee, they are reported to have come into Ireland in a few long bottomes, and finding no scating there to haue entered into Britaine. Though Beda his authoritie be venerable, yet the learned find reasons to induce them rather to beleeue, that they were the re-maines of those ancient Britaines which either inhabited the North-part of this Iland, before the Romanes entrance, or which (vpon their Conquest) fled thether to avoid the Romifb yoake, where the difficulties of the aire & foile protected them from the Romanes ambition and inualion. Whereto Tacitus well accordeth, faying, that Agricola droue the Romanes Encmics (he meanes the more vntractable Britaines) into those parts, as it were into another Iland. And it is thought incredible, that those Enemies of the Romanes, who cent forth against Agricola an Army of thirty thousand strong, and who so vexed Seurus, that in one Expedition he loste seurus, thou and of his Ronanes, & their Aiders were lo vtterly extinct, as that none of them remained; but that rather they wonderfully multiplied, being those who afterward much perflexed and ouerranthe Romane Province, and to whom (not vnlikely) fome other, fuch as Beda mentioneth, did afterward joine themselues.

(10) If we would adde res fons unto Authorities, to proue that these Picts were no other then that multiplied offpring of those Britaines, we could produce their * language, their manners, their kind of Go-uernment (all bearing British Resemblance) to con-

ner of painting is an undoubted marke in the Chil-dren representing of what Parents they were borne. That they were pointed, Claudian flewers, alling them, 7 he Pitter, 6 ray pomed, which fifter well expounds, 7 the Pitter, 6 ray pomed, which fifter well expounds, 7 the Pitter, 6 ray pomed and their name from their Politics, and their name from their Politics, and the politics of the Common for the Politics of the Polit ded them from their other Provincial Britaines, this name (Pictes) for diftinctions take was in vice among it

them; before which times, yea and long after, they were knowne to Writers by no other name then Britaines, and the Romaine Emperor, Commodus, Seucrus, Bassianus, Geta, vpon the Conquests of them instilled themselnes Britannici, British (not Pictish) Conquerors. But after the Romane tongue had prevailed with the Romane fword, the Britaines themselves vsed to name any thing painted by the name of Picte; as may bee any tining painter oy une name or Peter, as may bee gathered out of Peteins, who daith, that the Britiste called certaine Shallops, Pites, because their failes, tasking and Marriners apparell, were coloured blow, the very coloure, wherewith thele British Pites (as "Gme. where they are truely called) wied so staine them gives to the pites a West and the pites and t selues. When afterward the Irish-Scots had confederated themselves with these against the Romanes, they all beganne by degrees to be more civilized: the more Southerly of them being by Ninian the Britains converted vnto Christ, about the years of Grace 430.

fauaged rimes, here added also their Habits, when they beganne to put on, with conditions, a little better cloathing alfo. (11) Neither may we thinke that formerly they refused such Apparell, onely to show this staining and

those other more Northward, by Columbanus Anno

565. by which time, it is likely, that Civilitie increa-

ing, their painting and other like ruder Customes were well nigh forgotten, both amongst them, and also amongst those other Britaines under the Romanes

Gouernment. In which regard we have besides those

præfixed teones, and Patternes of their first and most

Diofeorides: L'efer-

Plutarth.

s, Ignorance.

Cloathes could be. Which of the Britaines, Solines thus deliuereth: The Country is in part (note that he

makes it not genera!) inhabited by People barbarous

who by artificial formes of incision have from their Child-

hood fun lry (hapes of Beasts depourtraied in their bodies,

and as their limmes increase in growth, so doth the pictu-

redworke together therewith neither doth the (e wild People boast of any greater kind of patience, then in bearing long-lasting scarres, where the paint had deeply suncke in-

to their fliced flefb. The very paralell whereof is al-

to by I fidore let downe touching our Pitts whose bo-

dies siced and pinked be an artificiall punchion, did suck

in the suice of the stayning herb, carying these rasures on

their pictured limmes, as badges of their Noblenes, thus

endamasked. Neither only the shapes of Beasts, but

of all other things, were fo printed in their flesh; which Herodian takes to beethe prime reason, why

they delighted to goe maked, least they should hide

thefe their plealing garnishments. Where also by the

way may be observed, since Solinus faith that the bar-

barous onely vied fo to doe, and Herodian, that those

who did fo, vied therefore to goe naked; that therefore not the Britaines in generall, but the most barbarous

of them vied to goe naked. And very answerable to

Solinus (who elegantly calleth fuch their figuring of

themselves, inscriptis visceribus, a writing on their Bo-dies,) is that of Claudian, Perlegit examines Picto mori-

ente figuras, On dying Piels bereades the breathles (bapes

as if the beafts to lively portraited on them, seemed

to lie dead together with the murdered bodies of

(12) By these varieties of picturing, (if * some

76deres

· Maculofa Nobi-

The vie of their haue not milinfor med vs out of their alleaged ancidifferent pictu- ent Authors,) those people so distinguished them-The Appendix felues, that the maried weomen were knowne by hato Harmis Pugi uing pictured on their [boulders, elbowes, and knees, the heads of some fierce beafts, as Lions, Gryphens, &c. Their married On their Belly, the Sunne spreading his beames; on their Pappes, Moones and Starres &c. On their armes. their rapper, Moones and states occ. On their arms, thighes, and legges, some other fancies of their owne Choice. But for their Virgins, their whole Body was garnished oner with the shapes of all the fairest kinds

The Men.

breast & bodie disfigured with vgly Beasts, Scrpents, rauenous Birdes, scales and sinnes of fishes &c. In which relation yet, this scruple will not easily be removed (if it bee true, that from their childhood their prints encreafed with their bodies) how those, who being Virgins had no prints but of herbes and flowers becomming Vines were fo eafily transformed either into Beafts or heavenly Creatures.

of flowers & herbes; which (to fpeake indifferently)

could not but yeeld, though a strange, yet no vnplea-fing alpect. Whereas the Men were (as Calar

(peakes) very horrible to bee looked on, having all their

(13) The later Women, (as you fee by the later portraicture,) became farre more modeft, that is indeed more womenly; having learned that then they openly fhew most beauty, when openly they shew not their beautie; much lesse should they expose to the view, that which nature most endenoured to hide, as knowing it least worth the viewing: yea

*fome observe that weemen being drowned, naturally fwimme with their face and foreparts downward, whereas Men doe contrary, as if the impression of modesty were not to leave a Woman even after death. Agrappa who mentioneth it, reportethalfo of fome Matrones, to too-modeft, that they chole rather to die, then to expose some hidden diseases to their Chirurgians view: A point unfortunately inferted into his witty booke, in praise of women, which he dedicated to Margaret wife to Maximilian (afterward Emperour) face, of womanly bathfulnes choofing rather to die, then to have her thigh cured, which was broken with a fall from a horse. The picture of this British woman here last deportraied, is framed to that description of the most valient British Lady. Condicea, of whose brane attempts on the Romanes you shall read, more heareafter in the 7. Chapter of the

(14) Of which Sex, though naturally the weasome, whose Actions both politicke and Warlike haue beene no way inferiour to the worthiest Men; as our owne Age hath given seltimony to the World in another Great Lady of British race, (the ofspring of the valiant and lovely Meredicke of Wales,) the glorie of as the World. Whose rust, wise, and resolute kindof Gouernement hath instiffed that Custome of our ference of Sexe for the Soueraigne Command, yea and vied to warre under the conduct of women. In which respect though their Ordinary fort of weemen were not imploied in martiall services, otherwise then before we shewed in the fourth Chapter, yet because some of the choifest of them have been so imploied, we have so deciphered them in their Martiall habit. (15) For their other habiliments of marre, and of the Britain

the manner thereof, we have described it in the same | habits in watre then the Gaulles, but yet of no very elegant shape and tim and curling, otherwise shauen all their bodie ouer, except warre. But about their necks they wore a round circle of iron (as an ornament no lesse esteemed then gold with other Nations) as also about their waste, whereat they hung their skeines: being doubtleffe, a most warlike Nation, (as their posterity have ever since proved,) and most defirous to fpill blood, wherein yet their Offpring by diuine bleffing are now most different from their An-

ker, yet in most Writers their are remembrances of nother Great Lady of British race, (the offpring of the valiant and leuvely Meredicke of Wales,) the glorie of defended from whose Raigne and Regall vertues shall bee as lasting as the World. Whose full, wise, and refolute kind. old Britains and Picts, of the former of which Tacitus Tacitus reports, as Beda doth of the later, that they made no dif- Beda.

4. Chapter; their fight being (as Diodorus faith) after Diodorus. the fashion of the Heroes in the first age of the World, who fought in Chariots; yet on foote also they were most strong (faith Dio) and also most swift; which makes me mar-(latth Dio) and allo moj jurge; we were pedibus male fuf-uaile why Strabo should say, they were pedibus male fuf-Strabo fulti, not strongly underpropped; Who also ads that they were (as himselfe observed at Rome) much tauller ber; Vling as (Cafar faith) to weare their haire very long and an inex, other wip is under an inext volume out; except on only the vaper lipe. Their weapons (latth Herodian) were narrow fisield, and floort fleares, at the end where of (aith bis) was a little bell like a ball, which they thooke at their first encounter in Warre for terror of the Enemy. Swords also had they, but short, hanging at their naked sides; but helmet and corstet they vied none, as effecting them burdens rather then helps in

Of their women

Calleth Meridyck

Cxlars complo

" Calez, Suet.invita Ca-far.Stét.7.



Casar the first Roman that af-



THE SVCCESSION OF THE MO NARCHS OF GREAT BRITAINE IN THE

TIME OF THE ROMANS, WITH AN HISTORICALL
RELATION OF THE LIVES, ACTS, AND GOVERNMENTS OF THEIR EMPEROVES AND LIEVTENANTS:
Sofures touchet the affeiter of chistaland, and follows as the flood a Prouince to that Empire.

> BOOKE VI. CHAPTER I.



fecond poffessors of this Hand, Julius Cafar the



He next Nation that to he Britains obtained noffellion, and foueraignty of this Hand, were the Romans, and of them Caius Iulius Cafar the first; what time their State had vndergone all kinds of gouernments, and now afbired almost to their highest

pitch of glory. This Cafar bearing the office of Questorship in Spaine, and naturally disposed for great affaies, was thereto the more incited at the fight of Alexanders portraiture, flanding in the temple of Hercules at * Gades, where beholding it with great admiration fell into a fudden diflike of himfelfe, and (as Alexander in feeing Achilles tombe) with an ambitious, yet honorable emulation, fighed and faid: Haft thou at my yeres atchieued the conquest of the whole world, my selfe hitherto having done no memorable act? Ever after which he disdained that his petty charge, and made suite to the Senate to be dismissed, holding that the cloude which onershadowed his following and (soone after) flowing fortunes. And forthwith returning to Rome observed every occasion that might make him gratious in the peoples eies, having the advantage of the time which then was swaied with most dislikes : and entring into many factions, yea and some of them not without suspirion of conspiracy, did notwithstanding so manage his proceedings, that their con-structions were euer made honorable, and himselfe the man by all affents that did support the glory of their State; vnto whom offices of high dignities were affigned, which daily increased his credit and power. And in the time of his Confulfity, tooke vpon him the government of Gallia, where he remained ten yeeres together, and forbare no occasion for warre were it neuer so vniust or dangerous: Insomuch that framing a Bridge of wood ouer the broad and fwift river Rhene, he entred the country of the Sweuians, being the first Romane that affailed the Germans: And thence with victory returning, found his charge

the Gaules in quiet : both which fortunes were as

spurres to his alpiring minde, and set his thoughts

to worke vpon other attempts.

(2) For now intending a voiage into Britaine, he repared thitherward, as well to inlarge the extent of nis ambition and glory, as to fatisfy himfelfe with the Caples of Cas fight and seate of the Iland, as for a further knowledge of those people the inhabitants, after whom he had most diligently inquired, yet by no relation could find content. But his pretence was reuenge against the Britains, for that thence (as himfelfe speaketh) the Gaules had received most of their supplies against him in all his warres, or as some haue written, for the de- seeen. in vita fire of Pearles that therein plentifully grew, whose Lafer.

beauty and weight he had oft observed But because the summer was almost spent, and that the voiage feemed dangerous through want of knowledge, either for place of entrance, or lafery in harbour (for our learned countriman Roger Bacon Ba con de arte was doubtleffe in an error , who thinketh that Cafar | Saura was conducine in an error, who remeen that cetar for up perfective glaffs on the coast of France, and thence faw all the ports and creeks in England) he thought good to fend one Caisse Volusemus military Tribune ma

galley before him, giving fufficient instructions for fo has spice great an enterprise in hand, himselfe drawing towards those parts of Gallia, that lay neerest coasted vinto Bri-

taine, thence expecting his fuccesse. (3) These things were not so secretly done but that the Britaines received notice thereof, and therupon some of their private States sent Ambassadors with proffers of submission vnder the affurances of their hostages, Which Cafar accepted and fent back again with liberall promises, joining in commisfion with them Comius a king of the Atrebatij (for so he is stiled vpon his Coyne) a man well reputed, and respected among the Britains, that he might perswade the rest of the States to imbrace Cafars amitie. In effecting of which bulinesse, some fine daies being spent, Volusenus returned, hauing waffed vpon the coafts of Britaine fo far, as with fafety he might, which was no further then to view it with the eie, his foot not daring to tread the shoare replenished with those barbarous people, as it pleased the Romans to terme the Britaines: His discouerie and relation gaue small en-

Qg 2



courage-

The Morines were of the hi France, as Turwine,Calu, &c.

Atheness repo

parts, each part being called a

(4) But now composing his affaires in Gallia, and having ready an hundred ships (wanting but two) belides many Gallies also for transporting his army, he loofed from the fhoare, having agood wind, about the third watch of the night, taking order for his horemen to imbarke with all speed and follow after him; himfelfe early in the morning attained the fight of Britaine, whose eliffes he found couered with ar-med men, and place for entrance so naturally beset in person sgandt and strengthned with steepe hills and rocks, that hee there cast anchor, and called to counsell the Legats and Tribunes, declaring vnto them the danger of the hauen that gaue fuch advantage to their enemy, whosedarts from the higher ground might much impeach their arriuage, and therefore determined their landing elfewhere. (5) Their Counfell was no fooner difmiffed but

though wholly addicted to honor himselfe and his

Romans, yet confesseth that his army was fore ouer-

couragements to Cafars hoped fuccesse, and had not

he Morines yeelded him their obedience, it may be

hought his voiage at that feafon had been staied.

C.sfar both tide and wind fitting him, not foreflowing the occasion, gaue signe of remoue, and some eight miles diftant came to a plaine and open shoare, and made preparation to land his men. Thither also the Britaines had remooued part of their forces, and fo valiantly withstood the enemics, that Cafar himselfe,

laid and terrified with that incounter; and had they not been affifted from the Gallies with an vnusuall kind of Engines, which did beat backe the Britaines (vnexpert of that strange manner of affault) from the thoare, the Romans had not fet foot on British foile, neither durft they then adventure it, vntill the flandard-This enfigne was an Eagle of filter flanding in a lattle fluine vpon the top of a fixere.

Valer. Mss. fib. bearer for the tenth legion desperately leapt foorth of the ship with his Eagle, calling on the danted soul-diers and asking whether they would dastardly fortake their enfigne and betray it through cowardize to the enemy? which opprobry prouoked them to fol-low his example, and fo they got the shoare after an encounter fierce and terrible on both parts, as Cafar acknowledgeth. But the first of all (euen before the Stander-bearer) who put courage into the Romans and taught them how to deale, was (as testificth Eutropius) one Scaua a Britaine (who formerly had fled to Cafar) and guiding foure other fouldiers in a boat to a rock nere the shore, where the tide leaving them, his fellowes flunke backe in the boat, but hee most boldly defended himfelfe from the rocke against the Britains, like a Beare at a stake among a multitude of mastines, till having all his armour broken in peeces

and himfelfe all wounded with darts, he fwamme to

the fleet; and begging pardon for his foole-heady for-wardnesse, Casar both forgane him, and rewarded his

valour with the honour of a Centurion : and hee did Cafar afterwards noble service at Dyrrachium in the

ciuill warres. Cafar confessing, that hee alone faued

the fortification against Pompey, at which time his tar-

get was shewed to C.efar, having 230. holes pierced in it by the enemie, whereof Iosephus Iscanus that an-

Hine & Scena fatus pars non objeura tumultûs Ciuilis, Magnum folus qui mole foluța Obfedit, melioră, ștetit pro Cefare murus.

The Britaine Scaua in civill warres well knowne.

(6) This enterprise for landing thus atchieued,

Fesig dthe * Great, and rampiers overthrowen. Was Cafars wall more firong then wall of stone.
The first attempt assaicd, that is warranted by any

cient Poet of Excester writeth thus:

Celar bell civit Ioseph I scanus is

Viz. Pompey.

The first aslay for the conques of this Land. rue Record for the conquest of this Iland : which happened in the yeere of the worlds creation 1873. and before the birth of our Saujour Christ, 54.

Cafar putterh the

Cafar charged so fiercely vpon the enemie, that hee put them to flight; but wanting his horsemen to follow the chase, (which as yet were not arrived) he proceeded no further, but encamped his hoft vpon a great plaine, not farre from the Sea, and not without likelihood thought to be Barham Downe: for so neere lay it vpon the shoare, that thence he beheld the dispersion and losse of his 18. ships (comming vnder saile with his horsemen to his assistance) through the violence of a florme, and rage of Sea.

(7) In the meane time the Britaines, that after flight had againe recovered head, and in their affemblies aduitedly confidered their imminent dangers, concluded their submission for the safest remedie, and to that end fent their fecond Embassadours vnto Cafar, with whom Comius before remembred was imploied, whom they had retained in strait prison for
second ambass
s Cafars cause, but now made him a meane to worke their peace; which was granted after some soft and gentle reproofes, with hostages received for performance of Couenants, and refort of their Nobles to Cafars campe, to yeeld themselves and Cities to his

(8) These Britaines, although rude in regard of the Romanes, and vnmatchable to them in educated civilitie, yet were so skilfull in the affaires of warre. and so ready to discerne the least advantage, that they easily perceived the weaknesse of Casars power, both in want of horsemen to equal their magons, wherein chiefly stood the strength and order of their fight, as also of ships for service and safety, as occasions should be offred : whereby their mindes touching their pro mised submission began to waver, and the matter with better advice to be pleaded in their assemblies; with better adulce to be preated in then agentone, for that not only these forestaid ships for Casas supply were dispersed and hindred, but cuen his owne by were dispersed and hindred, but cuen his owne distributed the state of minds distributed. fleet, which lay then in harbour by the rage of winde and fea, (beging then fpring tide, and the moone in the full) was not onely filled with water. but also their tacklings, failes, and anchours spoiled or lost, the violent storme so dashing the bulkes one against another, that their bruifed bottomes were thereby made unfit for burden.

(9) This lose was to great, that it is accounted the first of the three aduerse fortunes which ever happened to Casiar in all his proceedings: and it was so well observed by the Britaines, that immediately they intended a revolt, and in Counsell vrged this, as the materiall point that breathed hope and life to their former liberies, condemning themselius as impious if they should refuse to joine consent with the heatuens, whose elements had thus farre fought for their freedome and full deliuerance, affuring themselues (if on this advantage they might cut off these new quefts) that neuer any afterward would aduenture to enter Britanny in hostile manner.

And thereupon they began both to flacke the performance of couenants, and daily to withdraw themfelues from Cafars Campe, which gaue him infl occa-fion to suspect whereat they aimed. And to preuent their proceedings he as wifely wrought: for first repairing his Nauie with the huls, timber, and tackling of the most bruifed ships, with the losse of twelve fbips only, the rest were made able to brooke the least And prouiding against the advantage of the enemie, he sent foorth the fenenth Legion for forrage to supplie any occasion.

(10) This Legion taking the coast cleere, and lit-tle furmiling so sudden a revolt, fell to the siekle and fithe like haruest labourers, and laid their weapons Jame interest accountry, and said their weapons apart, milrufting no Exemie. Now the Britaines as forward to put in practife what they had determined, closely had laid themselues in ambush, for thirher they knew the enemie would come, a peece of corne there flanding, whereas in all other parts harnest was past: and so having these workmen in their danger, part : and to maning there were now in contragner; uddenly fell youn them, flaying fome, and forcing the reflout of their array, who not knowing the or-der of their gloss, can't temelines in a ring (the best defensitue forme of embattelling) and shood on their guard as they might: but had they not happily beene rescued, Cafar had lost one whole Legion at that

(11) For though this skirmish thus in acting was altogether vnknowne and vnexpected to the rest of the Romans, yet by the riling of the dust, appearing to the Cohorts that warded before their Campe, the same was mistrusted, which caused Casar in all haste to make thitherward with part of his heit.

Chap.i. Julius Cæsar Emp.

(12) The Britaines thus preuented, seeing more supply to maintaine the battle, stood still, without further stroke : and the Romanes as much amazed at this fudden attempt, and order of their fight, made a fland, not venturing any further. Which order in fight so often mentioned, and so much admired, in Casars words we will declare, the rather because some haue thence collected, that the Britaines were the of-

(lem. Edmunds his observations on Cas.Comment.

The manner of the Britaines

fpring of the Troians, who with other Easterne Na-tions only vied this kinde of fight in Chariots. (13) They wfed (faith he) to ride in wagons against the approch of the enemie, and to circulate them about with

a whirling compasse, and ratling noise, each waies casting their darts as they did drive, and ever as they saw advantage would winde thensfelues in amongst the horse and foot, to breake the array; which done, they would for sake their wagons, and on foot most dangerously a saile the ene-mie. In the meane while the Wagoners would with-draw themselves somewhat out of the battle, and place their wagons in such order that if their masters were over-charged, they might have speedy accesse, and opportunity of retrait, by which means they were ener as quicke to moone as were hor semen, and as stedfast to stand the battle as were the soot, whereby they did supply the duties of both at once, and by daily exercise grew so expert in managing their horses, that running them forcibly downe a sleepe hill, they would stop, and turne them in the mid-way : and they would run along the beame, and stand firms upon the yoke; whence with like facility they would againe returne into their Cha-

This order Cafar fo well observed, as that notwithstanding his defire of reuenge, yet wanting his horfemen (as he pretended) wherein confifted the chiefest refistance, hee durst attempt no further on them, but was content to keepe the field without profer of

(14) The Britaines likewise hopelesse of further

Juccesse at that present, departed without any impeachment, intending to profecute their cause with a greater and more generall supplie : and thereupon there a greater fent messengers to their seuerall states, with notice of power. their hopes against so small a power; whose Campe by them if any way might bee vanquished, the pur-chase of spoile, besides their freed liberties, would re-

quite the paines.
(15) These States, though maintaining civil faetions amongst themselucs, yet seeing the intended danger of this generall enemie, presently assembled days. a great power, purposing yet once againe to trie the hazard and fortune of warre. Cafar, whose vigilancy hazard and rortune owntre. Capar, whose vigousty, did euer equal his valour, prepared his armiz, where in now only 30. horfenea were prefent, and those brought to him by Comius the King. The battle of the visiting of the preference of the prefere ioining continued not long, but that the Britaines gaue backe and fled, whom the Romanes pursued as farre as strength indured, and returned with the flaughter of many, burning the Country where they

(16) Thus the Britaines once againe wanquifbed, The Britaines foorthwith sent their third Embassage vnto Casar, defiring peace, with promise of quiet subsections whom interest the subsection of the subsection of the Britaines subsections who will be subsection of the Britaines subs he with hard termes now reprooued, and imposed a double number of hostages to be brought him into double number of haifager to be brought num mo callas, whither he made all possible preparation, for that the Laurinetium drew never, doubting his srazed lafts would hardly brooke the minter flarmes, that visually rage youn the Seas. And haining gottom of a laugh.

A third with the standard of the sta and so brought most of his fleet safe to the continent [This enterprise so fortunately accomplished, Cafar by his letters made knowen to the Senate, who de by his letters made knowen to the sense, who creed and proclaimed to his honour a generall suppli-cation or thank singuing to their Gods, for the space of the singuistic state of the Romans, clotwente daies together, wherein all the Romans, clorevenue dates together, wherein all the Romans, clo-led in white garments, and crowned with garlands, went to all the Temples of their Gods, and offred fa-orifices for fo glorious a victorie.

Comius.



THE ROMANS.

CESARS SECOND EXPEDI-TION INTO BRITAINE.

CHAPTER II.





Most of the Bri.

taines breake co uenant with Cafar.

Esar expecting the performance of Couenants agreed upon in the treaty of eace with the Britaines. received hostages from two of their Cities onely, and no more : the reft drawing backe, refused his fubication: whereupon intending not to lose so rich

aprey, nor to suffer that Sunne to bee eclipsed, whose

glory thus farre in his Horizon had afcended, hee ap pealed some troubles in Gallia, and in the winter fon began his preparation to that enterprise. And in began in preparation to that enterprise. Also, having had experience of his former wants, he furnished himselfe accordingly, and the next firing following drew his forces towards Calis, the shortest cut into Britaine. There committing the charge of Gallia to T. Labienus his Lieutenant, himselfe with fine Le- 5.0mms. gions of fouldiers, 2000. horfemen, and 800. fhips, about going downe of the Sunne loofed from the shoare, and with a soft Southerne gale were carried

Jecius Perriss fome thinke to be Cells, fome

Flor Hifter. Fabian

into the streame. But about midnight the winde failing, and their failes becalmed, the tide diverted their courfe : fo that in the dawning he well perceived his intended place for landing to be paffed.

(2) Therefore falling agains with the change of tide, and indeuours of their Oares, about noone the same day hee recourred the shoare, even in the same place (and that without any shew of resistance) where he had found best landing the Summer before. There in convenient manner he encamped his hoft, and by certaine Fugitiues got notice of the power and place of the enemie.

(3) And left delay fhould afford them aduantage, he committed the gouernment of his ships at anchor to Qu. Atrius, and his campe on land to the guard of ten Cohorts, besides the strength of three hundred horsemen; and himselfe with the rest about the third watch of the night tooke their march towards the enemie;proceeding with fuch celeritie, that by the day dawning they were entred twelue miles higher into the Continent: where seeking to passe a river, which Cefar relifted at is supposed to be the water Stower, the Britaines with their dares and chariots began in most terrible manner to affault the Romanes. But being at length by them repulsed, tooke into a wood strongly fortified both by nature and mans industrie. For in the time of their owne diffensions they had formerly made this place one of their strongest fortresses, and had cut down many trees, which ouerthwart the waies of en-

(4) In this they secretly kept, and where they saw aduantage, would by companies sallie out vpon the enemie to their no little annoiance. Whereupon Cafar commanded the seuenth Legion to raise a The Britains dribanke, and to build a Testudo of boards, couered with raw hides, by which meanes the place without much ue i from their fortrelle. adoe was won, and the Britaines forced to for fake the woods. Whose chase Cafar forbade both in regard the day was necre spent, as also that the countrey was altogether vnknowen to the Romanes. But the next day the pursuit being begun, sudden newes was brought from Q. Atrius, that most of his ships the night before by a violent tempest were cast on Land, their bulks shaken, their cables broken, and anchours loft. Cafars experience in like mishaps the Summer before, made him so much more ready to preuent the worst. And therefore recalling his forces, in all haste returned to his Campe, finding the relation too true

in their wracke, wherein forty of his ships were quite

loft. Wherefore he wrote to Labienus his Lieutenant

(5) In which admirable totle ten daies

by the great and famous river Thamifis,

and extended into the land full foure-

This Cassibelan present Gouernour of

the Trinobants, had attained to the posses-

trance they had bestowed.

in Gallia for fupply of flips, thence to be fent in all hafte. Then gathering his flipwrights out of the legions, with the ruines of the bruiled bulkes, he repaid red the whole; and now having twice felt the dangers of these seas, caused his whole fleet (a strange attempt) Hee draweth his to be drawn on land, even into the midft of the fortifications of his campe, so to secure them from the like

Cefert Nauis

mishap, ard that one strength might defend both. and nights were altogether spent, before hee could returne to the place from whence he came; where now the Britaines through great confluence of people had increaled their power, and entred against their fortreffe and wood. The chiefe command of these affaires was committed to Cassibelan, whose coine wee haue hecrelikewise set, a Prince of good repute for feats in warre, whose Seigniory was feuered from the Cities towards the Sea,

fion of their chiefest Citie by the slaughter of Imanuence their former Ruler (a man well respected, and much lamented after death) whose some Mandubrace, a gentleman of great hope,

fcore miles.

fearing the like danger, by the new established authoritie of Casibelan, had made over into Gallia, craving Calars assistance to set him in his right. (6) Callibelan (if among these authenticke Au-

thors the British Writers may bee heard) was the brothors the British Writers may bee neard) was the pro-ther of King * Lud, and in the nonage of his nephewes of King Lud. gouerned the Trinobants, whose bounds hee fought to enlarge vpon the bordering Countries of his neighbours, and in his forcunes had so borne himselfe, that he was much maligned, and more feared. But now all their dangers yoked alike in a common perill, they laid aside private grudges, and held him the only man to support the strength of their troubled and declining estate, and by a common consent made him Geming clatte, and by a common content made nim of merall of their warres. The expectation of whole pro-ceedings he long delated not, but with a fierce and hot encounter did affaile the Romans, and so manfully difcharged the parts of his place, that in the light of the whole Campe Quintus Laberius a militarie Tribune was flain, (in memorie wherof the place as yet, though fomewhat corruptly, is called Inl-laber) and Cafar himselfe professeth he learned many points of martiall policie by their brane and running kinde of en-

(7) But his next daies service prooved not so fortunate; for the Romans having learned their owne defects by the former daies experience, laid afide their weightie armour, that with the more facilitie they might both affaile the enemies, and with like nimble neffe auoid their furie, they having now bestowed their powers dispersedly, and scattered their troupes into companies, wherby the Romans were still matched with fresh supplies. A policie no doubt of no small consequence, had not destiny determined the fatall Subjection of the Britaines, and Fortune now raised the Romans almost to the height of their Monarchie.

(8) For this failing, the Britainer neuer after flewed themseliues with any vnited resistance, but having resistance. loft the day departed, thinking it better to secure euerie priuate by his owne meanes, then by a generall ne prinate oy nis owne incairs, then by a general power to hazard all, as hopeleffe any, more to vphold that which the heauens (they faw) would haue down. And Cafibelan himfelfe defpairing of happy fuccesse, drew into his owne territories, keeping with him not aboue 4, thousand wagons. And fearing the Romans further approch, fortified the river Thamifis (then paf-fable onely in one place) with fharpned stakes bound about with lead, and driven so deepe into the bot tome, that Beda and Affer report them so to remaine in their times. All which notwithstanding, the Romans passed with the repulse of their enemies, and Cafar, who grew now to the height of his honour, marched further into the Continent, and comming forward, was met by Ambaffadours from the chiefest Totward, was nice by Announkaous non the Lineau City Citie of the Trinolouste, which for hof all the Srates profered fubmission, and promifed fubicition, with this intreatie allo, that Mandubrace (who being C. afass fol lower, and doubtleffe the contriuer of this submiffion) might be Gouernour of their Citie,

(9) Cafar ready to worke vpon such aduantage. (9) Cajar ready to worke vpon tucn aduantage, feixed them at forty hoflages, mith fufficiencie of graine for his whole armie, which with all expedition those Suppliants performed, preferring the fairstaction of their owne discontentments before the common cause of their Native Country, thus laid open, and betraied into the enemies hands; from whole example many other States without firoke veeled to Common and Brivets, other States without froke yeelded to Cafars command : yea further treacherously shewing vnto him both the power and place of Cafibelans abode, who had now retired himselfe into his owne Citie called Verolam, well fortified both with woods and marish grounds.

Thither Cafar came, and with little loffe or la bour won the place, and many of the milerable Britaines both taken and slaine. Casibelan now despairing of his owne power, farre vnable to match, and much leffe to ouermatch his Enemies, infligated the Gouernours of Kent, being foure in number, Cingetorix, Carnilius, Taximangulus, and Segonax, (whom Cafar terleft, was sine with
cofficients against
cefar. meth Kings) to raile all their firengths, and fuddenly to fet vpon the Romanes Campe that guarded their fhips; which enterprise was accordingly attempted, but with such successe, that the Britaines were on each

Chap.2. Julius Cæsar Emp.

fide flaine, and Cingetorise taken prifoner, the rest sa-uing themselves by flight.

(10) Cassibelan beholding these vnfortunate proceedings, feared the end of vnhappie successe, for hee faw his Country wasted, his owne delignes defeated, and himselfe forsaken by the traiterous reuolt of many Cities and States on euery fide. Therefore as bootlesse to bandy against fortune, he sought to hold his owne with others, and fent Comius King of the rıng it.

amber, Perend

THE ROMANS. Cassibelan Brit. stance, but euer maligned him, and had now a faire time of reuenge, perhaps Cafar might have miffed

Entropius faith, He was wearied out and quelled both with the fierce battles of the enemie, and crosses of tempests.

Attrebatij to be his meane to Cafar for peace, which was the willinglier heard and granted, for that he determined to winter in Gallia, his affaires so requi-(11) The conditions were hard, but necessitie must be obeied : for Cafar imposed a grieuous Tribute to be taxed of the Britaines, of no leffe then three

So faith an old thousand pounds yeerely to be paid, and moreover in-cluded the safety of Mandubrace, with his Trinobantes taken into friendship, and protection of the Romans & laftly, that these Couenants should be faithfully obferued, he comanded hoftages for affurance forthwith to be deliuered. These things thus compounded, he tooke the Seas, about the second watch of the night which then began to equalize the day in length, and fafely arrived in the Continent of Gallia; Having rather shewed the place to posterities, then deliuered to Tacitus in vita the Romans the possession thereof, as Tacitus saith,

> for attire and behauiour filled the peoples eies both with wonder and delight. He offred also in the Temple of Venus genitrix, a Surcoat made all of British pearles, as a Trophey and Spoile of the Ocean. And now his fortunes comming to the highest, the title of perpetnall
> Dictator (then which the State of Rome could affoord December (then which the state or Rome could attoord nothing greater) fufficed him not, but a King hee will be, and fole governow over all, though contrarie to the Law and liking of the Romanes; whereof in short time grew fuch heart-burning and hatred, that feuenty principall men conspired his death, and after his many dangers of enemies in battles abroad, was in the Senate-house amongst his supposed friends, and in peace (if treacherie may be called peace) eruelly murdered, re-ceiuing in his body three and twenty wounds, whereof

supposing it his glory sufficient to undergoe a matter

fo rare and difficult, and at his comming to Rome, to

haue presented his British Captines; whose strangenesse

he died, after he had fate Emperour only fine moneths (12) I am not ignorant that the British Writers doe varie from Cefar in relating these his proceevary from Cafar. dings, and speake more honourably of their owne refiftance then himfelfe hath fet downe, namely, that by the valour of Casibelan their King, in his first at-tempts hee was twice driven backe without his pur-

pole, and forced to take the Seas, to the great hazard of his ships and men, yea and with the losse of his owne fword, which with great proweffe was wonne from him in a fingle encounter by Nenion Callibelans brother. And furely howfoeuer Polydore accounteth their Story new, and Cafar carrieth himselfe glorious-

Btda bift . 13.1 . s. 2 .

Cafars death,

That Caffibelan repulsed Cafar twice,

lie in his owne affaires; yet by fundry other renowned writers it feemeth, that the currant of his Conquest went nothing to smooth and vntroubled, or with for little losse of the Romans, nor the Britaines liberties forgone by so easie resistance; which may be collected euen out of some couert passages of Cafarsown words, where it appeareth, that hee durst not at fundry times gine the Britaines battle, though they were only harnesfed in leather, and his Souldiers were all old Legionaries of long service, called for their huge armour, Milites grauis armatura, as having a helmet, corflet and boots, all of maffy braffe or iron, with a large target, a ftrong two-edged fword, and a great staffe or clubbe headed with an iron pike; which oddes notwithstanding had not Casibelan been undermined by Mandubrace, and traiteroufly forfaken (which Cafar himfelfe confesseth) by the Princes which promised him assithis parcell of his glory. Yet for all these helpes, Lucan faith expresly of him,

Territa quafitis oftendit terga Britannis: He Britaines found, but left them foone by flight.

Tacitus laith, Hee found out Britannie for the Romans, Tacium. but could not winne it for them : which was the very cause why (as Dion witnesseth) for twenty yeeres after Cafars entrance, Britannie kept their owne Kings and their wwne lawes, and had no forraine Prefects to command them. And Beda sheweth, that Casar in this Land was both received with sharpe and fore fight, and weakened by the loffe of his ships, and with the most part of his men at armes. Tatitus also, vling the

speech of Caraffacus to his Souldiers, hath these words : Hecalled (faith he) upon the names of his Anceflors, which chased Cafar the Dictator out of the Ile, by

whom and by whose valour they were delinered from Hatchets and Tributes, and enioted freely their wines and childrens bodies undefied. Againe, in the consultations of the Britaines intending a renolt, hee allegeth their atguments, whereof one was the fudden departure of Ca-far out of this Iland, little better then a flight. With whom Dion Cassius also agreeth, affirming that Casar Dio. 1.32.

teth) who anowed that hee was in the British Campe

when they did beat Cafar from the shoare.

(13) Neither will I vrge that for truth, which

Authours have left vs in their reports, concerning the

many prodigies before going, and forewarning his

death: things rather to be accounted the superfluities

large opinion of his humane power, and caused his glorie much to surmount it selfe. And therefore lest

gnorance should any way blemish his immortalitie,

fnew the fame : all which he either lightly despised or

carelefly neglected, as they would have their Readers

lius Balbus reporteth, that in the ancient Monuments of Capua, discouered but few moneths before, was found a

Table of brasse, wherein was written the manner of his

of beafts and birds, and that in such plentie, that it

and fill vp the latter part of his last booke of Meta-

aday: cinings ratiner to be accounted the supermunics of their owns pens, and outsire insperies, euter working vpon accidentall euents, and afterbing iffued fixeceffe to a fupermanual eaufe. Such concert had Cafer of himselfe, that for his fortunes hee mould bee fitted as cafer would bee

whost time apies an experient at the property of the property gainst his second arrivage. Whereby is apparant (even by Romane Writers) both the bold resistance that the

Tacit,lib.i t. ca. 8.

Britaines made, and the deare stiblection that the Romans bought. But in matters so farre past, it is hard for mee to anouch any thing refoluedly, vnleffe I could meet with that aged Britaine whom M. Aper conferred with heere in Britanny (as Quintilian wri-

mongst the Gods: and his delite to that credulous gene-ration was further firengthmed by the appearance of a blassing flarre, which mooued (no doubt) an ouer-

they have fained the manner of his dying best plea-ling to himselfe, and many ominous signes to fore-

(14) Such was that of Spurina his diviner, that Cofarforewarns forewarned him of great danger, which should not to take heed of the Ides of March. And Sucionius out of Corne-March.

tance of oralls, were trong that should follow his owne murder, and the reuenge that should follow his owne dreames the night before, wherein he seemed to site in the clouds, and to shake hands with supiter: as also his wives,

that thought him slabbed in her armes, and to lie all bloody His in her bosome. Besides many other observances both

vecided fufficient matter for Ouid the Poet to furnish Ouid Metalias.

morphofis. His feature, qualities, and fortunes, are by them thus described : Of personage to be tall, strong, His personage.

and well limmed, faire, and full faced, with blacke

Serces.

cies, and bald headed, to couer which he viually wore the Triumphant Lawrell Garland. He was well learned. and therewithall very eloquent : and although fo great a warriour, thirsting after fame, yet would be be easily reconciled to his enemies, yea and often times feeke the meanes first himselfe. And hee held it no leffe valour to fubdue his wrath, then his enemie; as likewise in his disasters hee was of great temper and moderation, infomuch that Seneca writeth of him, that whiles he was in Britaine, hearing newes of his daughters death (which was lamented as a great losse to the whole State) hee conquered that forrow as easily and as quickly as hee fabdued all things where ever he came. And of his Come apad AibeOther moderateneffe, Cotas (who then held the fecond place of honour and command in the Armie) writeth, that though Cafar was then so great and glorious a Commander, yet he was so farre from outward pompe, as that when he came into Britannie hee had onely three fernants to attend him.

(15) In his enterprises hee was both valiant and foriunate, and is therefore singled out for an Idea or Paterne of an absolute Generall, especially for foure mili-taric properties very resplendent in him: for st, laborious-ware, and must be denotors-bet of battes. nesse in his affaires : secondly, courage in his dangers: thirdly, industrious contriuing of what he vndertooke fourthly, quicke diffacts in accomplishing what hee had once begun: In all which he proceeded with such successful, that in fiftie feuerall battles by him fought, he alwaies preuailed, one only excepted, as both Pliny, Solinus, and others have recorded. Foure times hee was crea- His Offices. ted Conful, and fine times entred Rome in triumph, bcaring still the stile of Perpetual Dictator. And therfore with lefle dishonour did nations subject themselves vnto him; and this of Britaine with them, whose lot being cait among the hazards of the world, was drawen with an equall chance, as the rest, and yeelded their freedomes with as hard conditions, as did Countries of more extent, and Kingdomes of greater account. But most especially the decree of God could not bee Num. 24.24. gaine-flood, who had foreshewed by his Prophets the ri- Dan. 11.30. fing of these Chittims, and them a meanes to make the Dan.2.35. metalline image dust.

Strabe lib.a.

Malden

May 9.6.

Gen.3.5.

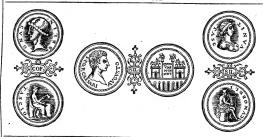
Ifay 7.14.

Gal.4-4.

at whose birth warre went downe, as Virgil speaketh,



CHAPTER III.



Cafar arain!

Cicero against

Fter the death of Cafar, thus flaine in the Senate, Octavian (the grand-childe of Iulia, Cefars sister) whom hee had adopted, and declared his heire, returned vnto Rome from * Apollomia, where he studied Philosophie, intending to profecute the revenge of Ca-

fars death; where falling at oddes with Marcus Antonius a man of great spirit and power, and setting him-selfe against Brutus and Cassus, with their Complices, for the murder of his vncle, fecretly wrought the friendship of the Citizens, before whose eies also Cafars wounds seemed yet to bleed.

(2) These factions thus begun, grew to such height, that in the Senate-house their causes were pleaded, and by the infligation and eloquence of Marcus Tullius Cicero, Antonius was proclaimed enemie to the State : against whom Octavian was sent, with Enfignes of Conful, and title Proprator, being yet not twentie yeeres of age; which duty and office he fo well difcharged in the parts of a valiant Captaine, that Antom

was forced out of the field, albeit in this battle the one Conful was flaine, and the other deadly wounded. For which service so effected, he entred Rome in Triumph though the glory thereof was much blemished being obtained but in an intestine and civill warre. Marcus Antonius, to recouer himselfe, and make good his cause, ioined friendship with Marcus Aemilius Lepidus, Capitaline of the horse, who together interpoled themselues against Ostanians proceedings; but by me-diation of friends all three were reconciled, and iointly crected that forme of gouernment which thence was named the Triumurat: for the establishment whereof they had seuerall jurisdictions assigned them : to Lepidus, Africa, whereof he was present Gouernour: to Antony, the Countries as well of Greece as Alia, that lay betwixt the Ionian Sea, entring at the gulfe of Ve-

(3) In these civill broiles, and bandings of great men (as Tacitus termeth it) the State of Britaine lay long forgotten, and stood in peaceable termes, Augustus thinking it wisdome (faith he) to restraine the infinite defire of inlarging the Romane Empire, whose ex-

nice, vnto the river Euphrates : and vnto Octanian all

these West parts of Europe, amongst which this our Bri-

Chap. 3. Augustus Cæsar Emp. THE ROMANS. Cunobelin Brit. The Empire too great. etc. tent was growen to that vast greatnesse, as it seemed even burden some vinto it selfe, whereby this remote I stand lay overshadowed from their sight: whereanto or rather to vie the words of the Prophet, when fivoras | Micah 4.3. were made into mattocks, and speares broken into sithes: And as in the building of Salomons Temple neither noise of 1. King. 6.7. Fahira out of may be added that the presence of Kymbeline the Briaxe, nor the found of hammer was heard; fo his bodie being The birth of the true Temple, hee came and was incarnate at such time, builden tifh King (as their historie recorderh) in great fauour Christ like the with Octavian, was a great furtherance to the peace. when the found of warre did not awake the world, but a lower Temple, euen without paiment of the formerly imposed Tricalme and quiet peace incompassed it, as by the Angels w.s. loh. 3.19. proclaimed among st the Iewes, and now was more pubbute. But yet the truth is (as Dion Callius hath it) that Oct auian desirous in all things to be like unto Cafar, seelikely made knowen amongst the Gentiles by the shut- Paulus Orostus. ing their tribute neglected, had intended a voiage toting of Ianus Temple in Rome. This univerfall peace was Janu Temple is thut, wards Britaine; but having fet forwards into Gallia, so famous and so admirable, that it found matter for he had there tidings of the fudden revolt of the Parthe finest wits amongst the Heathens to enlarge themnonians, against whom he dinerted his prepared powfelues: whereupon Virgil framing the persualions of er, and left his first defignement for that time. Not-Inpiter to his daughter, foresheweth the happy sucwithstanding, he still retained the desire of their sub-icction, and foure yeeres after made a second very great ceffe of her feed, and in what tranquillity they should fit, when the hands of Mars were thus restrained preparation thitherward, proceeding with his power from fight, as he thus expresseth: againe into Gallia. (4) The Britaines that had felt the force of the Ro-Aspera tum positis mitoscent secula bellis : Virg. Aeneid list mans, and in regard of their own diffractions at home Cana fixes, & Velta, Remocumfratre Quirinus were hopeleffe of strength to withstand them, sought Iura dabunt : dir a ferro, & compagibus arct is Dio.Caff.lib.53. the fauor of Augustus by their submission, and to that Claudentur belli porta : furor impius intus end fent ouer their Ambassadours, who presenting Saua sedens super arma, & contum vinctus abenis themselues before him in Gallia Celtica, appealed his Post tergum nodis, fremet horridus ore cruento. wrath, with promife of obedience and full farisfaction for their Tributes deteined : whereby Cafar was again Then men shall milder prooue : cease shall fierce warres : The fruits of a flaied, and the Britaines taken into fauour and prote-Faith, Gods, and Princes all fhall inftly guide: ction. Notwithstanding, the mindes of their Magi-Warres gastly gates with bolts and iron barres strates were so unconstant, or else the money so hardly Fast shut shall stand: and Mars cashierd shall hide drawen from the people, who naturally hated all fuch Mong si heapes of rusty armour, where his hands Bound fast shall be with hundred brasen bands. obliged fernitudes, having ever lived a free Nation Obliged lethin dees, naming ener index a rice (vacion (as Aegifippus speaketh of them) that they againe failed their paineon; whereas Augustus was fore oftended, and the third time prepared his volage that way, which yet a while was hindred by the revolt of the Bysay-And yet further in his Ecloge (from the Sibyls, who Letter lin ca.s. Auguffus third in all likelihood had it from the dinine Oracles) hee popularies. 32. vieth the very words of the Prophets in speaking of a ans, and some other Prouinces. Maid, and a Child of a new progenic borne and fent downe from heaven, by whom the braffy and iron-like world (5) The Britaines seeing themselues thus still ()) The Britaines leeing themlelues thus full foughtafter, fent vnto Cefar their excufes, with pre-fents to be offred in the Capitoll to the Remane Gods, having now learned with the rest of the world to apshould cease, and a pure golden age succeed. Thus he The Britaines fweetly fingeth: peale Princes by gifts and rewards, yeelding part of Vltima Cumai venit iam carminis atas: Eclog.4. the Iland, and Iwearing him fealtie in the Temple of Magnus ab integro seclorum nascitur ordo: Mars, and so were registred subjects to the Romane I am redit & Virgo: redeunt Saturnia reona: Empire. At which time also they agreed to pay tolles and customes for all wares which they transported I am noua progenies calo demittitur alto. Tu modò nascenti puero, quo serrea primum into other parts, their merchandize chiefly confifting Definet, ac toto furget gens aurea mundo, &c. of Iuorie boxes, Iron Chaines, and other small trifles of Amber and Glasse. All which agreements and compo-Now is the time of which Sibylla faid, The old world doth his prime againe renew : The Britaines fitions were afterward so loyally observed, and the Land so composed to quietnesse, that one band of foul-Now hath the world a pure vnspotted Maid: diers, with a small troope of horse (as Strabosatth) or foure Legions (as sossephus writeth) were sufficient Now raignes the * God of Gods, whose off-spring new Descends from heauen. Blessed be the babe whose raies Virgil nameth) was effected the father of the Gods. to containe to great a multitude in a fetled forme of Hath turn'dour iron age to golden daies. Mognum Joni In which Ecloge are fweetly couched many other incremental Matriangs de (6) Ouer the Trinobantes, the greatest and most most diuine allusions to our Sauiours' Deity, birth and con, &c. potent State of the Britaines, then raigned the happie Prince Cunobeline (for fo in his Coines yet remaining humanity, pouerty, graces, troffes, kingdome, and re-acofe, oc. demption of the world from finne, death, and hell. we finde it) corruptly written Kimbeline, the fonne of Theomantius nephew to Cassibelan before spoken So likewise Marcus Tullius Cicero faw in his dreame najectur, oc. of, whose abode and principall seat was Camalodu-num, as by the reuerse of the said Coines may ap-(as himselfe reporteth) a childe of an ingenuous and revenue. Oc. peautiful countenance, let downe from heaven by a golden beautiful countenance, let acome from neaven of a govern etaine. And Suetonius in the life of Augustus from Inpeare. This Prince to make his estate more respe-The first stame fliue, caused his owne Image to be stamped thereon. one name nato obterued, that certaine predictions in Rome happening, were for reflected and generally expounded. I have now selout to bring forth a King that floudstraine near the whole world. And a beit their and other Heathen Writers afcribe their white their chief of the selout to bring other to Augusta brings chief to Augusta brings chief to Augusta brings chief to Augusta brings chief to Augusta brings and the selout brings are selout brings and the selout brings and the selout brings are selout to the selout brings and the selout brings are selout brings are selout brings and the selout brings are selout brings and the selout brings are selout brings are selout brings and the selout brings are selout brings and the selout brings are selout brings and the selout brings are selout brings are selout brings and the selout brings are selout brings and the selout brings are lius Marathus hath observed, that certaine predictiafter the manner of the Romans, (who now had new lie taken up that fashion) his paiments before consist-ing for the most part in rings of iron, and plates of brasse, seized at a certaine waight, which vsually passed for things either to Augustus himselfe, or to some of his Seein in vit. As current amongst the Britaines, as Cafar reporteth, and as those rings are yet witnesses, whereof we have Satisfaction of all their heathenish Oracles, which is the confidence of the bureful of the Mighabour bleffeld Stations, in whom only the Kingdome of Godd began, which the verter fubureful or of all their heathenish Oracles, which is the bureful of the Mighabour of the Windows of the Mighabour of the Windows of the Wind This man trained his people to a more einill life then formerly had beene accustomed, and enioted peace with the rest of the world, which then stood universalat his birth, or at furtheft at his death, ceafed all, and Zephan. 2.11. Subject to H IS eternitie. Which time of his birth Chift borne in lie in quiet, as waiting the comming of that Prince of peace, Micah 5.2. whose going foorth had beene from everlasting, and of by the Scriptures most certaine account, was from the worlds creation, 3927. and is fet by the Britaines belone. whose kingdome there shall bee no end : even Christ the anointed Emmanuel and sonne of the living God: solong bein the fourteenth of their Cunobelines raigne, and by fore expected, and now in the fulnesse of time manifested: other authenticke Writers in the two and fortieth of

Augustus Cafar, euen in the top of that Empires great-

Augustus Cæsar Emp. THE ROMANS.

Cunobelin Brit. Book 6.

neffe, when Rome was with an univerfall fubication acknowledged the absolute Lady of the knowne earth.
For so in S. Luke wee read, that this Augustus then first For to in S. Luce weer ead, triat cuts Angujum interprise
accased be word. A text most from for the full difficlution of the foure foregone kingdomes reprefented
in Daniel Image, by the fall of this lime Chrift, the vack
and flay of our eternal happing life.

(7) This Emperour raigned in great honour the

the worship of the Romane Gods; amongst whom in

the Capitoll he built an Altar unto the Hebrew childe,

with this inscription : The Altar of the first begotten

Some of God : being thereunto mooued by the Oracle

Dan.2.

Luk.2.

Christ. Nacephilisses.17.

space of fifty fix yeeres, and was obeyed both by the Easterne Indians, and the Northerne Scythians, with the subjection of the Parthians, a fierce and vntamed people, and generally with the love of all. Hee was a Prince indued with great wisdome, magnanimitie, and Instice; yet faulty in this, that he tooke from Tiberius Treit Annal fire Nero his wife Linia, both great with child, and having also formerly borne him a sonne. Deuout hee was in

of Apollo that had answered his owne destruction by the birth of this childe. Of Stature he was but low, and His endown of a good complexion; gray-cied, his haire fome-what yellow, and his body freekled with fpots, which as his flatterers would have the world beleeue, were in forme like starres. Predictions foreshewing his gouernment and death are alleged, the which I willingly ouerpaffe, holding most of them rather fantafies then truth. At his death hee demanded of the flanders by, whether he had well acted the enterlude of Sueton in vita his life upon the flage of this world : and died fourteene yeeres after Christ his incarnation; leaving after him o honourable an estimation of his glory, that as the fucceeding Emperours in remembrance of Iulius Cxfar gloried to be called Cxfars, so they ever held the name gioriec to be caused Cajars, lot ney euer neit the name of Augustit to be facred, and only befitting persons destinated to imperial Maiestic. And both their names were inserted into the number of the moneths, that the honour of them both might neuer periffs while luty and August. Times euiternitie (bould endure.

Careleffe in go- | Mero. Diffolute and careleffe he was in gouernment, though fome haue accounted him a wife and politicke Prince: for the Provinces he left to defend themsclues, and yet daily charged them with larger Tributes, to their great impouerishment, and almost verer

Chap.4. Tiberius Cæfar Emp.

(4) In this state, amongst others neglected, Britaine ftood, wherein Tiberius neither maintained garrifon, nor attempted alteration, and whereby (as it may be thought) their owne Lawes and Princes bare tway among themselves, howsoever the cause for Tribute was ballized betwixt them. And most certaine it is, the Britaines, if not in subjection, yet were well affe-eted to the Romanes, as appeareth by Tacitus in the kinde entertainments, and in releeving their shipwracked fouldiers, that in crossing the Seas were by tempeft driuen vpon their Coasts, and courteouslie tempereditatiny on their Counts, and controlled fent thence by their petty Kings vnto Germanieus their Generall. Notwithstanding, Jeffrey Monmouth seemeth to affirme the contrary, that bringeth the raign of one Guiderius, and the valour of Aguiragus, the some of Cunobeline (of whom more heereafter) to withstand the Romish Command, and vtterly to refuse the paiment of Tribute, banding both against Tiberius, as also against Caligula and Claudius the Emperours fucceeding.

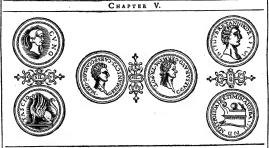
(5) Other remembrances of these times concer- Our Satiour ning vs finde we none, besides that which is common to all, namely the death of our Saniour Christ, which under this Tyrant, and in his eighteenth yeere was valuer (ms. 1 yrans, and in his eighteenth yeare was accomplifted by the proceeding of his (as wicked). Deputy Pontius Pilate, who both adundged kim to die, and to bee guiltless of descripting details: whereby was wrought the mysterie of our Redemption, with such ligness and euidences of his Deitie, that the wicked ludge himselfe wrote thereof to Tiberius, and the to the Senate, to have him consecrated among the Reman Gods. Which they refused to doe, that the wifdome and divine power of God in the doctrine of Sal-uation should not need the allowance and commenda-

tion of men, as Eufebius hath well observed. (6) Finally, when hee had raigned hated of all Tiberinchia menthe space of three and twenty yeeres, with no raigne, age, better liking then is read of I or am King of Iudah, that Tacit Annal, E. liued without being desired, hee was smoothered to death (as is thought) by Caligula, the seuenteenth of 2.Chr. 21.20. the Kalends of April, the yeere from Christs Nativitie thirty nine, and the feuenty and eighth of his owne age. He was of personage tall, and of body strong, broad chested, and vsed both his hands alike, faire of complexion, but great and goggle-cied, whereby he faw fo cleerely as is incredible to report.

Cunobelin Brit.

CAIVS CALIGVLA.

THE ROMANS.



his parents. Tacit Annal,



Ext vnto Tiberius succee ded his nephew Caius Caligula, the lonne of Germanicus, (whose face is expressed aboue) the sonne of Drufus. His mother was Agrippina, the daughter of Inlia, Cafars wife; liked rather for his fathers

vertues, (who was for learning, vertue, valour, and courtefie, the most admired man of that age) then for any parts of his owne an-fwerable to so high a place, as being neither naturally framed for good presence in Throne, nor qualified in minde for an Imperiall Command. Euer in condition opposite to all, and (which is more) most times to himselfe. One while lasciuiously prodigall, in excessiue banquets, admirable Sea-workes, with needlesse levelling of mountaines, and filling up their vallies: Ano-

ther while extremely couetous, imposing taxes upon the His co Prouinces, and exacting gaines out of the base earnings of pollutions: Alwaies cruell and libidinous.
His owne mother he defamed to bee incestuously begotten; his grand-mother he poisoned; his brother Ti-berius he murdered; with his three naturall fifters hee liued inceftuously, and upon Drufila the second (who was contented to be deflowed by him when they were both but children) he io meredibly doted, that he vied to fweare by her facred name, and deified her for philatude vicet to tweare by net lacred name, and acycle tite. If Philaded, as Joddelf by the name of Penthea, commanding diune honours to bee done with the like deitie concricted he simplify, canding his Status to be worthipped, and placed in his vitual roabes among the comane Gods, and would have fet it in Jerufalems Temple (as Iosephus recordeth) had not that great God eut Ioseph. Autiquib him off by death. His Impertall government was with-out either inlargement of circuit, or inforcing by armes a dutifull fubication, rather feeking to make

outly raigning, and peace-ably dying, had ordained for his fucceffour Tiberius Nero, the sonne of Tiberius the Patritian, and of Liuia his wife, whom (as we faid before) he had taken for his Empresse, and by whose incitements and

gustus Casar thus glori-

continuall infligations that matter was procured: though Suetonius thinketh, it was by Augustus his owncambitious conceit, to make himselfe the sooner miffed, and the more lamented, in leaving his fonne fo vnlike him to fucceed, whose conditions as they stood vpon their owne basis, hee knew to bee both reprooueable, and also contemptible.

(2) But before the death of Cafar could be divulged, to write his imperial stile as it were in blood, he began with the murder of young Agrippa the sonne of Iulia, daughter to Octavian, and once his owne wife, and continued his raigne with such tyrannie, that many he flaughtred, without respect of person or cause; and in his loofest lasciniousnesse, thought of nothing but how to Subuert the Nobilitie; for rare it was in his race. Amel 16.6 daies that any fuch died a naturall death : and maintaining a race of men (Promoters, as Tacitus tearmes them, found out for a common overthrow and destruthen, tourisd in a bossimos over throw and central the fich of others) allured them by rewards to accuse the rich, though guilties only this fauour granted to the condemned, that if they sew themselves before the day of execution, their bodies should have buriall, Tests. April, 5.6. their goods not confiscate, and their testament frand cof 4.

(3) A great dissembler he was, seeming ever to hate those vices which in truth he loued, and to love those vertues which he did most deadly hate : and for life and libidinous filthinesse so extreme, that a Christians pen may not expresse, when the Heathen them-selues doe blush to name such things as hee shamed not openly to commit : his publike drunkennesse, and continual banquettings, whereat hee spent whole daies His Epicarisms and nights together without intermission, caused exchange of names from Tiberius Nero to * Biberius

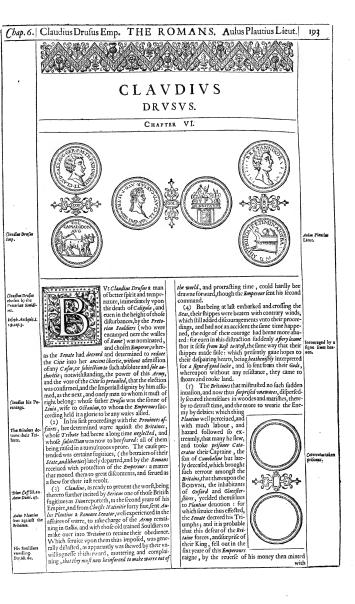
Sueton, in vit. Tiber.

Tiberine Nere his parents.

His actions and conditions.

TIBERIVS

CHAPTER IV.



Tacitus in vit. A-

with a triumphall arch and infeription, De Brittan: (6) Buthe following fill the Enemy, beeing seconded by Flauius Vespasan (afterward Emperour) the leader of the second legion (the soundation of whose succeeding fortunes was first laid here in Britaine) gaue them againe another ouerthrow. The chiefest meanes whereof was a policie they had gotten to gall the Chariot horses, whereby their riders were maistered, and their whole powers disordered: many Britaines in this battaile were flaine, and more in danger, had not the night ended the skirmish.

. Sidim Geta his

(7) The next day the battaile was againe begun and maintained on both parts with equal advantage, till C. Sidius Geta enforced the Britaines to retire whereby the victory rested in the Romanes: for which exploit Triumphall honours were assigned him, although he had not yet attained to the Confular degree. In this Conflict, Velpasian hardly escaped, being fore oppressed by the Enemy, and in such fort, that had not Titus (his renowmed fonne) come to rescue, he had beene flaine, whose valour afterwards was tried in one and thirtie battailes, and in the Conquest of the Ile of Vioht

The Britainer tire to places o

Togodumana Ozine.

(8) After this conflict, the Britaines withdrew themselues into places of more aduantage, and in the mouth of Thamifis neere her fall into the Sea, palled the shallowes and firme grounds in safetie, whereas the Romans ignorant of both, brought many into danger, and in their distressed passage, were sharpely affailed by the Enemie, in which turmoile, a bloody battaile was begunne, wherein Togodumnus a Britifb Prince, brother to Catacratus, and sonne to Cunobeline, was flaine: Notwithstanding, the courage of the Britains was nothing abated, but rather exasserated to a further reuenge: for effecting whereof, new forces were gathered, and confluence of people affembled from each part of the Ile. Plantins the Lieutenant feing daily the increase of their power, respassin imploied in other parts, and himselfe streitned in a place of danger, proceeded no further, but sent word to the Emperour of the doubtfull eftate of their affaires. (9) At that time (faith Suetonius,) the Senate had

great Army.

by decree allowed Claudius his Triumphall ornaments. But he supposing that such a bare title of honour was inferiour to the Maiestic of an Emperour, and willing of himselfe also to enterprise some exploit whereby hee might winne the glory of a compleat Triumph, made choice before all other Prounces, of Britaine, attempted by none fince Iulius Cafar of famous Memory. And with great firength entred into the journey, having with him a mightie Armie both of horse and foote, as also Elephants, a beast of great bignesse and burthen, Elephants first brought into Britance whose strangenesse then amazed the Britaines, and whose Carcases falling in this Land, their late found bones (no doubt) haue bred our errour, beeing fuppoled to be of men, and not of bealts. (10) With very great danger he passed the Seas,

Dian Callins, li

and ioining ftrength with his Lieutenant and Velpafian, they all together croffed the River Thamifts, where presently they were encountred by the Britaines, who a while maintained the battaile very desperately, but in the end gaue place and fled, whom the Romanes pursued even to their strong Camulodunum, then the He furptifeth Cafeate of Adminius, Cunobelins sonne, as may aprly be coniectured by the Medul of Britannicus the Emperors darling, figured in the front of this Chapter; which Citie they surprised and fortified with their owne Garrisons, which the Emperour in the eleventh of his raigne, as appeareth by the other coine, turned to a Colony of Romane Citizens. Claudius now disarming the Britaines, remitted further punishment either vpon their bodies or confiscation of their goods: The which his fauourable elemencie moued those distresfed Britaines to fuch liking and love, that they ereffed a Temple and Altar in his name, and gaue him divine honour, as a God: The rest as vnable to resist, profered their fubmissions, and promited a peaceable subicction under the Romanes governement.

(11) These things thus atchieued, at the end of

fixe moneths Claudius in his ninth yeare returned and entred Rome in triumph with more then vitial maner, flamping againe vpon his monies his Arch of victo-umph. ry, as appeareth in the face of this Chapter, a perpetuall trophic of his victories and memory of our fer-uitude. Afterwhole Town uitude. After whose Triumphant Chariot rode Meffalina his wife, the Monster of her fexe for impudencie and lascinious life : and vpon the toppe of his Palace he placed a Nauall Coronet in memorial of the Ocean by himfailed ouer, and fubdued: withall affuming to himfelfe, and fonne, the Sirname Britannicus: And honoured Plantius with his presence in his Triumphs for Britaine, giving him the right hand, afconding the Capitoll, and belides graced divers Captaines that served vnder him in that warre with Tri

umphall Ornaments. So great an esteeme was held of the Conquest of so small a part of this Iland. (12) The British Historians relate these things The British His farre otherwise, reporting that their King Aruiragus, florians varie in relating clauding the yongest sonne of Kymbeline, with stood Claudius in his enterprife, with whom (fay they) he came to composition by giving him his daughter Genissa in mariage, in memorie whereof, he built the Citie Glauce fer, according to his name, which now is called Glocefier: But Suetonius writing the life of Claudius, his wiues and children, nameth his daughters onely to be Claudia, Antonia, and Ottauia, without mention of Genissa at all, and therefore not likely to have any fuch : And Dion Cassius reporteth that Claudius himselfe staied not aboue sixteene daies in Britaine, a time too short for the sending to Rome, and thence for the returne with his daughter, or for the building of so greata Citie as Glocester is. Neither indeede was Aruiragus knowne in the daies of Claudius: But rather lived in the time of Domitian the leventh in succession after him, as plainely appeareth by Iunenal the Poet,

in those his veries spoken to Domitian, which elswhere we cited. Whereby appeareth that the stirres of this King could not accord with Claudius raigne, and that the trueth of this report is much weakened from the trueth of this report is much weakened from more fufficient authorities. But to proceede, Aulus Make Pleating (the first Lieutenant authoritied ouer the Brifith Lord Deput taines, vpon some occasion was thence renoked, the warres not quieted, and with a small Triumph (as Tacitus faith) entred Rome. Vnto him fucceeded P. Offerius Scapula, for reputation in martiall affaires gric. nothing his inferiour, who at his first landing found all in an vprore: Of whose proceedings let vs heare

Tacitus speake: The Britaines (faith he) that wereyet Tacit. Amellints. unconquered, ranged the Countries of the confederates; cap.8. onconquerea, range a one committee of the confederates, prefaming both open the approch of the winter, and the Propretors unacquaintance with his Army. But he howing that the fift successes breedeth either feare, or confi

dence, gathered the Cohorts, and made towards the Enemy, staying all that made head against him, and disarming those whom hee most suspected. And to retaine Cogidunus the King in stricter assurance and fidelity to the Emperour, granted diuers Cities and States to him by way

of Donation. The first that beganne to stirre, were the Icenians, the Inhabitants of Norfolke, Suffolke, Cambridge, and Huntington-faires, a strong people vnshaken with warres: And with them (at their instigation) their neighbours adioi-ning. These together chose a fit place for fight, compaffed in with a rude, but defensible trench, which had only one narrow entrance whereby the Horfemen must be much impeached. This Rampire notwithstanding the Romane

Captaine, with the onely aide of the * Allies brake | Confederates downe, and disordered the Enemy cuen in this their perchance is owne fortresse, who seeing all passages for escape to means. bee stopped up, (Oftorius having hemmed them in Menin Morthamp with Garrifons betweene the Rivers * Antonis and testions, futh Sabrina) shewed great valour in defending themselues,

ouerthrow and flaughter of the Iceni wrought a more stated resolution in those that before were wavering betweene warre and peace. And the Army led against the Cangi, with waste and spoile consumed the Country, the inhabitants not daring to bee scene in field Whereupon the Romanes pierced thorow the Land euen vnto the Sea-toaft that lookes towards Ireland A finall reliftance was made by the Brigantes but without much trouble foone quieted by the execution of some few, and pardoning of the reft. (13) But the Silures (that is, those of

and by their deaths gaue place to the Romanes. This |

their owne courage relied much vpon the strength and valour of their Prince Cara-Haem (whose Coine we have heere expres-(cd) a man which had waded thorow many dangers, and in many aduentures both prosperous and luckie had gotten such reputation, that hee was preferred before all the British Captaines. This Generall knowing his ownestrength vnable to match the enemie, by policie thought to supplie that want, and having advantage of the Countrey, remooued the warre vnto the Ordo uices, which is now North-wales, where all ioined to him that either feared or disdained to hold peace with the Romans. Heere he chose a place to en-

South-wales) could not be brought to bear

the Romifbyoke of Subjection, who besides

campe his hoft, euen on the top of a hill naturally defenfed from accesse: and where any doubt was, there he stopped vp all passage with heapes of stones in maner of a Rampire; neere the foot whereof ran a River with a foord somewhat dangerous, and not easily found, where a troope of his best souldiers were set

in order to receive the Enemie.

His animating

His manner of

The more to animate their mindes, the Leaders went about exhorting and encouraging the Souldiers, taking all occasions of feare from them, and putting them in hope, with all inducements of refolu-tion: especially Carattaem, who coursing hither and thither, protested that day and that battle should be the beginning either of a recourred libertie, or else a perpetuall feruitude and bondage: and euer nee cal-led vpon the names of his valiant Ancestors, who formerly had chased Cafar the Diltator out of the Ile, by whose valour they were deliuered from Hatchets and Tributes, and enjoied freely their wives and childrens bodies undefiled. The Souldiers also themselves shewed as great forwardnesse, and as Echoes redoubled his words, vowing according to the Religion of their Countrie neuer to yeeld for wounds or life, which they all were ready to facrifice in the cause of their liberties. This their apparant resolution much appalled the Romans cheerefulnes, and most of all the Captaines and Leaders, who before their faces faw the River, on both fides of them had the hanging hils, and the Fort commodious for the enemie, but deadly vnto them: all which notwithstanding the common Souldiers Offering bis care. despised, and demanded the battle. Ostorius, whose fludie was chiefly to performe the parts of a Generall, passed the River with some little difficultie, and leading his Armie vp to the Rampire, was met with such a showre of darts, that many therewith were wounded and flaine. Yet at length breaking downe those rude compacted stones, joined battle with the enemie, and afront came close to handy strokes; wherein the Britaines having better courage then armour (for they had neither headpeece nor coat of defense) were fore galled with their lauellings and two-handed

(14) This victorie as it was almost vnexpected fo was it made famous by the taking of Caraffacus wife, daughter, and brethren, and himfelfe flying for fuccor and protection to the Brigantes, was (as we prifoners. Himfelfe betrai haue before showed) by Cartifmandua their Queene betraied and delivered into the hands of the Con-

felues to flight.

fwords, and so disordered, that they betooke them-

querours after his nine yeeres most generous resi: Hee resisted the stance. Whereupon his same being carried ouer the Rom flance. Whereupon his time being carried ouer the ROMANIAN PROLLING THE PROLING THE PRO also renowned in Italie, and they desired to see him 118 that so many yeeres had contemned their forces. Neither was his name meanly effected of at Rome; for whilest Cafars worth and power was there commended, a more glorious conceit was held of the conquered Caractabus: and against his comming to the Citie Caractaculed in the people from all parts were affembled, as to behold some notable and most rare spectacle. The Emperours Guard in armes and good order were placed in the field before the Campe, thorow whom the Captiues and Trophies were carried, and presented after this manner : first the vassals of Caractaeus going formost bowed their bodies to the people as they pasfed, and feemed by their ruefull countenances to difcouer the sense of their calamitie. The caparisons, his chaines, and other spoiles gotten in the warres. were carried after them. Then Caractacus his brethren, wife, and daughter followed, and last of all himselfe, whose attire and stout behaujour filled the peoples eies with wonder and delight. His bodie, for Hishabitand the most part, was naked, and painted with figures of attire diuers beafts. Hee ware a chaine of iron about his necke, and another about his middle : the haire of his Exhifter magn. head hanging downe in curled lockes, couered his backe and shoulders, and the haire of his upper lip parted on both fides, lay upon his breast. Neither was his behaulour lesse noted then the strangenesse of his habit : for he neither hung downe his head, as daunted His vad with base feare; nor craued mercie, as the rest; but with a confident spirit, and bold countenance, held on till he came before the Imperiall Seat, where ma-king his stand, and a while beholding Cafars Maiefly,

at last with great courage spake to this purpose.

" (15) If my moderation in prosperitie had beene His Oration to

answerable to the greatnes of my birth and estate, Claus or the fuereffe of my late attempts to the resolution " of my minde, I might haue come to this Citie rather as a friend to be entertained, then as a Cap-" tiue to be gazed vpon; neither wouldst thou difdaine to haue received me on termes of amitie and peace, being a man of roiall descent, and a Commander of many warlike Nations, But what cloud

" focuer hath darkened my present lot, yet have the Heauers and Nature given mee that in birth and minde, which none can vanquifh, or depriue mee " of. I well fee, that you make other mens miferies the fubiect and matter of your triumphs; and in this my calamitie, as in a mirror, you now contemplate your owne glory. Yet know that I am, and was a Prince furnished with strength of men and abiliments of warre; and what maruell is it if all bee loft, feeing

variable, and the fuccesse of policies guided by vncertaine fates? As it is with me, who thought that the deepe waters like a wall inclosing our Land, and it so situated by heauenly providence, as in another world, might have beene a sufficient privilege and defense for vs against forraine invasions : but

I now perceive that the defire of fourraignty admits no limitation; and if you Romans must command all, then all must obey. For mine owne part, while I was able I made refistance, and vnwilling I was to fubmit my necke to a fertile yoke, fo farre the law of Nature alloweth every man, that he may defend himselfe being assailed, and to withstand force, by

force. Had I at first yeelded, thy glory and my ruine had not beene fo renowned. Fortune hath now done her worst: wee have nothing left vs but our liues, which if thou take from vs, our miferies end and if thou spare vs, wee are but the objects of the

(16) Cafar wondring to fee fuch refolutions and fo free a minde in a Captine estate, pardoned Caractacus, his wife and brethren, who being vnbound, did their reuerence to Agrippina the Empresse, that fate alost on a Throne Roiall. This Conquest and Tri-

Tt 2

experience teacheth that the euents of warre are Euents of warre

A moition hath

and admiration thorough out all Rome, and the Lords of the Senate held it no leffe honourable, then that of P. Scipio, who triumphed ouer Syphax the Numidian King, or that of Perfes, whom Paulus Aemilius van quished, or then any other King that had beene ta-ken in warre, or exhibited to the view of the people. Then were also publicke Triumphall honours decreed for Osterius; whose fortunes vntill then had beene Offering and his very profectous, but now began to be doubtfull or rather to decline, either because Carachaeus (the foile of his glory) was remoued, and thereupon (as though all had beene fubdued)a more carelesse service entertained, or else the courage of the Britaines was more inflamed to reuenge through the feruent compaffion of the fall of so mightie a King.

Cafars threats

Offering dieth.

(17) For immediately they enuironed the Campmaster, and the Legionary Cohorts, which were left to build fortreffes in the Country of the Silures , whom with eight Centurions, and the forwardest Souldiers, they flew, and had put all the rest to the sword, if rescue had not speedily come from the villages and forts adioining. The Forragers also and troope of horse that were sent to aid them they put to slight. These affronts touched offorius to the quick, and lest their aids should grow to a greater head, he sent forth certaine light-harneffed companies, which with the Legionary Souldiers vndertooke the bastle, and with finall oddes was it continued till the night came, and parted them: divers other Skirmifbes afterwards were made, though for the most part in woods and marishes, whence taking their advantage in fallying forth, they many times prevailed, fometimes by ftrength, fometimes by meete courage, and sometimes by chance; neither were they alwaies commanded by their Cap-taines, but many times fought voluntary and without

(18) The principal motive that induced the rest to take Armes, was the example of the Stlare, who were most resolutely bent, as beeing exasperated by certaine speeches that the Romane Emperour himselfe had ofed, which was, that as the name of the Sugambri was destroied, and the people transported into Gallia, so the memorie of Starres should vtterly bee extinguished: And in this heate as men desperate (whole destinics were read and lots cast already) they intercepted the feattered troopes of the Romanes that vncircumfpectly wasted and spoiled the Country, taking of them many prifoners, and recouering rich booties, which they fent and distributed amongst their neighbours; whereby many other were drawne to reuolt : These proceedings sate so neere Ostorius his heart, who with long cares and trauels had wearied his spirits, spent the strength of his bodie, and thereunto had no wadded the discontentment of his minde, that in thefe vexations hee gaue vp the Ghoft, the Silures reioicing that so worthy and victorious a Captaine was failen in their warres,

(19) But Cludius Cefar, left the Province (hould make head, presently sent Aulus Didius for his Anlas Didisa Lieutenant into Britaine; where, notwithstanding all his hafte, he found all out of frame. For Manlus Va-Tacis, Annal , 12 lens with his Legion had encountred the Britaines with ill fucceffe, yet not so bad as the Ilanders gaue Marline Valen foorth, thinking thereby to terrific their new-eftablished Gouernour: which report himselfe also in policie was contented to augment, thereby to purchase more praise in appeasing so dangerous stirres; or if hee could not, to retaine his own credit without his valours impeachment. These resisters had made many inroads into the subdued Countries; against whom vpon his Didius for a first arrivall, Didius entred the field, and for a while

kept them in awe. (20) But Venutius a very expert man in Militarie affaires (trufty to the Romaines, and defended by their power lo long as the mariage betwixt him and Cartifmandua continued) began a new rebeilion: for Cartifmandaa (in special) fattour with the Romanes for the delinery of Caractaeus) abounding in wealth, peace, &

pleafures(which commonly are the Nurles of licentious liuing) fell in loue (as before was touched) with Vellocatus her hutbands feruant, and harneffe-bearer, & forgetting her owne honour, preferred him before Venutins, and laboured to make him King. The good-will of the Country notwithstanding went generally vpon the lawfull husband: who being deepely touched with this open iniurie, raifed a power against her and her Paramour. At the sirst this quarrell was onely betwirt them, vntill that Cartif-mandua by policie had taken her husbads brother, and some of his neerest kindred, prisoners. Whereupon the next Inhabitants fearing her purposes, and distaining to be brought under the yoake of a wo-man so defamed, declared themselves for enutius,& with a choice band of youthfull Soldiers inuaded her Territories: whereof Didius Tait. biff. L.3. Lap.

having intelligence, fent certain Cohorts to second her, and encounter them. Inwhich conflict, the Romans for Cartifmandua did prevaile; yet the kingdome remained to Venutius, and the warres still vnto them.

(21) For the Silures were not altogether quieted, & a Legion commanded by Cafius Nafica, fought luckily against the Britaines. In all which stirres Didise in person was absent, as being stricken in yeares, and having received many honours, held it sufficient to execute his charge by the afsiftance of others. The State of Britain thus standing, let vs so leaue it, during this Emperous raigne, which now began to draw to-wards his last period, by the working of Agrippina his wife, and by her vpon this occasion.

(22) It chanced, Claudius in his wine, to cast (22) It chanced, Cianaine in his wine, to calt forth a word of great fulpition, in laying: That it was fatall winto him full to beare the leaudines of his wines, & then to punish them. She knowing her selfe guiltie in his fick wife, a disinheriting of Britamicus, who was Claudius his womanof vasatiable lecherie, owne sonne, for the adoption of Nero who was hers, belides other infolencies, wherewith the might bee taxed, fought therefore to cleare her owne way by taking him out of the way : and with Locusta a woman skilfull in poisoning, and Zenophon a Physition, as large of confcience, conferred for the maner of his death: who in fine, concluded that poison was the furest and the least in suspect, or at leastwise the most difficult to be proued against her.

director to be prouded against ner.

(23) This then refolited, they temper poilon in Lofth.

amuliron, whereof he greedily did cate, and lhortly

amuliron, whereof he greedily did cate, and lhortly after ended his life the thirteenth day of October, The continue when hee had raigned thirteene yeares, eight moneths, and twentie daies, the yeare of Chrish his incarnation fiftie fixe, and of his owne age fixtie foure. He was of fature tall, and of a pleafing Continue, full of Maichie and comely gray haires, his tead continu-ally shaking, somewhat stammering in his speech, very learned, but therewithall very forgetfull, and altogether ruled by his wives, and domesticall Servants, the two ordinary banes of most men who are adua-

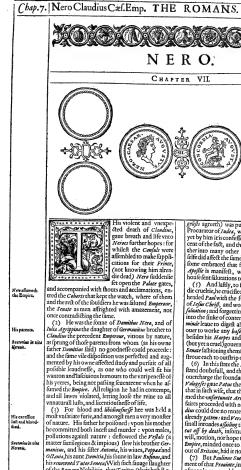
ced to any eminent place of gouernement & comand. ced to any emment piace or gouernement occumant.

(24) This Emperour (faith Seneral) might make his
boalf that he was the fift conquerour of the Britains, for
lating color did but from them sland onto the Romans,
whereas Claudius made their necky geld to the chaines of their captinities. And Egisppus saith thus of Claudius, His witnesse is Britan, which lined without the world, but now by him reduced under the Romans Empire, and those whom the former ages knew not, neither themselves any feruitude, are now by him both made knowen, and feruants to the Romans. And againe: As great a matter it was to to me aomans. Musi againe: As great a master to was to passe those Seas, as to have triumphed over those Britains, wherein (saith he) even the elements have done homage unto Claudius. In joy whereof, and reverence to the Gods, in his triumph he mounted the staires of the Caboas, it instraining the mounted the flares of the Ca-pitoll vpon his aged knees, being inpported and lifted vp by his sons in Law on either side, the glory of this Ilands conquest had so possessed this old Emperours



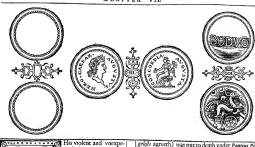
Tscit. Annal, lib.

Anno Do. 46 His indowner of bodie.



NERO.

CHAPTER VIL



cted death of Claudius, gaue breath and life vnto Nerves further hopes : for whileft the Confuls were affembled to make supplications for their Prince, (not knowing him alreadie dead) Nero fuddenlie fet open the Palace gates,

and accompanied with flouts and acclamations, en tred the Cohorts that kept the watch, where of them and the rest of the souldiers he was saluted Emperour, the Senate as men affrighted with amazement, not

(2) He was the sonne of Domitius Nero, and of Iulia Agrippina the daughter of Germanicus brother to Claudius the precedent Emperous, vitious by nature, as fprung of those parents from whom (as his owne father Domitius faid) no goodnesse could proceede: and the same vile disposition was perfected and aug-mented by his owne affected study and pursuit of all possible leaudnesse, as one who could well fit his wanton and lasciuious humours to the vnripenesse of his yeeres, being not passing seuenteene when he af-fumed the Empire. All religion he had in contempt,

vnnaturall lufts, and licentiousnesse of life. (3) For blood and libidiousnesse heed a most vusatiate furie, and amongst men a very monster of nature. His father he poisoned: vpon his mother he committed both incest and murder: vpon males. pollutions against nature : deflowred the Vestals (a matter facrilegious & impious) flew his brother Germanicus, and his fifter Antonia, his wives, Poppaa and Octavia, his aunt Domitia, his sonne in law Rufinus, and his renowned Tutor Seneca; With fuch fauage flaughter of the Romane Nobilitie, that Tacitus (their best Remembrancer) was wearied to record their names, whileft with a feruile patience (as he termeth it) they died Rame for on fi

(4) The City Rome hee fet on fire, charging the Christians with the fact, and inflicted such torments and death vpon them, that they were pitied of their enemies, and his owne cruelties thereby made more notorious. Whose Religion, though Suetonius tear-med new, and a wicked superstition; and Tacitus (as it were in contempt) nameth the Author thereof to be Christ, who in Tiberius raigne (as he with the Enan-

gelists agreeth) was put to death under Pontius Pilate Procurator of Iudea, where that religion first began; yet by him it is confessed, that these men were innocent of the fact, and their doctrine to burst forth furtherinto many other parts, infomuch that Rome it Christians in felfe did affect the fame, Yea and in Nerges Court alfo Nerges Court, some embraced that faith, as by the words of the Apostle is manifest, who from the Saints in Cafar house sent falutations to the Brethren. Phil.4.22.

(5) And laftly, to fill vp the measure of his bloudie crueltie, he crucified Peter vpon the Croffe, and beheaded Paul with the fword, two principall Apolles of Iefus Christ, and worthy instruments of the worlds faluation; and forgetting the Maiestie of his estate, fell into the finke of contempt and all finnes, giving his minde leave to digest all vncleannesse, and his bodie ouer to worke any base exercises, attending nothing besides his Harpes and Harlots, whereby a carelesse (but yet a cruel) gouernment was intertained, and the Senate fashioning themselues to feed his loose humors froue each to outfirip other in their bafe flatteries.

(6) In this state the Provinces subjections began to stand doubtfull, and the greatnesse of the Empire to Roman ouercharge the foundation ; for the Parthians under Tacit. Agual, 15. Vologefes gaue Patus the Romane a great overthrow, and that in fuch wife, that those which escaped were tearmed the unfortunate Armie. And in Britaine their affaires proceeded with no good fuccesse; for aged Didius could doe no more then keepe that which he had already gotten: and Verannius his successor, only with fmall inroades affailing the Silures, was in his first yeere cut off by death, infomuch that Nero having neither Tailmin vita will, motion, nor hope to propagate and enlarge the Empire, minded once to haue with-drawen the forces out of Britaine, had it not beene for very shame.

(7) But Paulinus Suetonius attaining the gouern ment of that Prouinte, in skill for scruice, and opinion of people comparable to any, fought to match his coneurrent Corbulo, who with daily victories prospered in Armenia, himselfe wanting neither courage nor difcretion to atchieue the like, only matter and occasion the Iland affoorded none. Therefore determining an expedition into further parts, he made preparation to inuade the *Ile of Mona*, separated from the *Continent* by the *River Menai*, and fronted vpon the midst of Ireland, both strong with inhabitants, and a receptacle

(8) Against his approach the Ilanders had gathered their powers, which flood thicke vpon the shoare

putro death.

Chap. 7. Nero Claudius Emp. THE ROMANS. Paulin. Suetonius Lieut. 199 fary) ftood yet doubtfull whether hee fhould chuse that place for the Seat of marre, or no. But better ad-" must live servile, and pay tribute even in our graves. Haue the Heauens made vs the ends of the world, uifing, diflodged his Hoft, and with the fourteenth Le-" and haue not assigned the end of our wrongs? Or gion, the Standard-bearers of the twelfth, and other aids hath Nature among all her free workes created vs from places adioining, incamped upon a plaine, encla-Brstaines only for bondage? Why, what are the Rofed with woods, having a narrow entrance, and free ' mans ? Are they more then men, or immortall? from Ambush or enemie at his backe. Their flaine carcales facrificed by vs, and their pu-(18) The Britaines likewise, inferiour neither in " trified blood corrupting our Aire, doth tell vs they number nor courage, triumphed abroad by fuch troupes and multitudes, as the like had not beene are no Gods. Our perfonages are more tall, our bo dies more frong, and our joints better knit : and (to feene, yea and so fierce of courage, and with such affu-" fay as it is) enery part of vs framed more fit for the rance of hope, that they brought their wines to the * Speare then for the Spade. But you will say they are toon Conquerours. Indeed our come we are, but by place to be witnesses of their valours. Boduo in her Chariot doing the parts of a most noble Generall. our felues, our owne factions still giving way to then droue from troope to troope to fee and commend their forwardnesse; and dismounting attended with her intrusions : for had not the Distator a Mandubrace? " Caligula an Adminius? Claudius a Bericus, and Cotwo daughters, and two hundred and thirty thousand tegidunus? Nero (that strumpet, and our still-living thame) Cartifmandus? Romes instruments, and Erifolute Britaines, gat her to a feat made of marish turfes, after the manner of the Romans, apparelled in a loofe taines vipers? without which, you shall see Cafar in vipers. gowne of changeable colours, wearing a kirtle there-Ingle fight, lose his fword, and after flie the Coununder very thicke pleited, the treffes of her yellow haire hanging downe to the skirts. About her necke " try (a dishonor indelible) Tiberius forgoe his Tribute. though extremely couetous, Claudius glad to make thee had a chaine of gold, and in her hand held a light peace, and be quiet and Nero might still have folfleare, being of personage tall, and of a comely cheerelowed his fiddling trade at home, if our diffords had full, and modest countenance, and so a while shee stood " not made up his Musicke heere abroad. Our dissen- Tacino in vita pawfing, in viewing her Armie, and being regarded " fions therefore have beene their only riling, and our Domesticke con with a reverend filence, at length to this effect the spake " defignes still weakened by home-bred conspirators, spirators and angerous."

Neither hath our noble resistance ever beene withvnto them. (19) My Friends and Companions of equal for-" out defert and note of honour: their publike triumphs
being made more admirable by one Britaines Con-" tunes, there needeth no excuse for this my present authoritie or place, in regard of my Sex, feeing it is queft, then viually hath beene folemnized ouer not vnknowen vnto you all, that the wonted manwhole Kingdomes. Caligula for beholding our The cuftome ner of our Nation hath beene to warre under the cliffes only would have divine honours : and for this and other Monarchies to be governed by conduct of a woman; and not only ours, but also of getfull Claudius remembred vnto posterities (in his the greatest Monarchies swaied vpon this vniuerfall Britannicus) a glorious furname from vs. Our Globe: for the Empire of the Affyrians (the first and "frengths have beene acknowledged the maine fup-Justin.lib.x. most famous that euer was) winder the command port of other States, and shall it not bee supplied to of Semiramis triumphed over the fierce Aethiopians maintaine our owne ? We have as much to keepe and the gold-veined India; Babylon for strength and as Birth-right hath given vs, that is, our Iland pof- Cofar. Com.lin. Nitserh. beauty was both defensed and enriched by Nitoria e sessed by our Auncestors from all antiquitie : Ours Tomrris. her sole Empresse. The Scythians under Tomyris ouercame, and slew the great Conquerour Cyrus. " by inheritance, theirs by intrusions, claimes so diffelufin.lib.1. " rent in the scale of suffice, that the Gods themselves to pursue the must needs redresse, and set the ballance in their equal. Roman. Cleopatra. Aegypt gouerned by Cleopatra : yea and Romes Mo narkes themselues ruled, if not ouer-ruled, by Mefpoife. We have seene their propitious beginnings, in Meffeline and falina and Agrippina the monsters of our Sexe. My blood and birth might challenge some preemi-* making vs instruments ouer seventy thousand of " our enemies ; and yet in this reuenge our forces not nence, as iprung from the roots of most royall dediminished, but much increased in number and powfcents: but my breath received from the same aire, er: which thing, as it serves to our encouragements; my body fustained by the same soile, and my glorie fo is it to their feare. For Catus hath fet the Seas (a Shee disclaimert " clouded with imposed ignominies. I disclaime all fure defense) betwixt him and vs; yet not a Britaine fuperioritie, and as a fellow in bondage beare the purfuing: for furely if any had, he would have hid yoke of oppressions, with as heatile waight and preshimselfe in the waves. Petilius the field-mouse doth fure, if not more. Had I with Cafars mother beene keepe his hole, and with the Moale works the earth fuspected of Treason, or with false Cartismandua de-filed my Bed, to the disturbance of their peace, my " for his fafest refuge : And Posthumus their Campe-" master is too wise to venture all at a cast. Only Plau-Reloiceth in he goods might have gone under the title of Confifea "tius fleshed by his late victorie ouer a company of vnarmed Priests, whose resistance consisted only in tion, and these prints of the whip vnder pretext of inflice. But why name I Inflice in these grand Capraiers, and a few weake women, whose weapons talogues of oppressions, whose Actors respect neiwere only fire-brands, builds the hopes of his afpi-" ther person, age, sexe, nor cause? For what abuse can "ring minde, as Caligula did his Trophey of Cocklebe so vile, that wee haue not suffered; or indienitie feels. For fee we not him encamped rather to defo contemptible, that wee haue not borne? My fend his owne, then to offend others ? His Armie stripes, yet felt and scene against their owne lawes, crouched together, as fowles flocked against a and the violent rapes of these my harmlesse daugh " ftorme, or rather like to fearfull Hares squatted in ters, against the Lawes of God and Man, doe witnesse their bufhes, who no fooner shall heare the crie of well what gouernment they intend : and your their pursuit, but their Muife or Fortresse will bee wealths confumed by their waftefull wantonnelle " left : and for their last refuge, as Hares, trust to the your painfull trauels vphokling their idleneffe, doc 'fwiftnesse of their speedy feet. Suddenly, as shee " scale the issues of our succeeding miseries," if not was thus speaking, sheelet slip a Hare which shee had Her device at timely preuented by one joint endeuour. You that fecretly couched in her lappe, which with a great footnote fame, and gaue occasi-" haue knowen the freedome of life, will with me con-" feffe (I am fure) that libertie (though in a poore c on to the Armie (who little suspected it was done by " flate) is better then bondage with fetters of gold: her of purpose) to construe it as an ominous and " and yet this comparison hath no correspondencie in luckie signe of victorie. vs: for we now enioy no effate at all, nothing now (20) And thereupon with great force they affaile their enemies, whiles Suetonius was likewife encoura-" being ours but what they will leave vs; and nothing left vs, that they can take away; having not so much ging his Souldiers to the like refolution. The fouras our very heads toll-free. Other fubdued Nations teenth Legion by his direction kept the strait as a fure " by death are quit from bondage; but wee after death place of defense, till the Britaines in the fury of their Sſ2

The Britaines

first onset had spent all their darts, which with good successe they had bestowed: but then failing and wearied in their first comming on too hotly, the Romanes sallied out upon the plaine, the Auxiliaries and Horsemen with long launces making their way, and beating downe all that flood before them. The Britaines vnable to endure or withstand such sierce asfaults, were forced to giue backe, and at length fought to faue themselues by flight, but were hindred by their owne Waggons placed in the rere-ward of the Army, which gaue the more impediment to their retrait, in that they were then full of their women who in confidence of the victory came thither to behold the fight, which were among the rest all slaine, without regard of sexe or mercie. This day was famous and compara-Eightie thousand ble in renowne for victorie to any other of former times, for therein were flaine of the Britaines to the number of eightie thousand men: And the Land brought under an unrecouerable subjection.

Tacitus bift, lib.2

(21) Bodan sceing the ouerthrow ofher Arm, was notwithstanding vinuanquished in her owne Noble spirit, and scorning to be a spectacle in their Triumphs, Tacit. Annal, lib. or a vassall to their willes, after the example of Cleopatra, shee made an end of her miseries and life, by poison. And Panius Posthumus, Camp-master of the second Legion, seeing the good successe of the fourteenth and twentith: for that disobaying the Generall (contra-ry to the discipline of warre) he had defrauded himfeife and followers of their parts of glorie in that fer-uice, for verie griefe flew himfelfe: and for their good scruice there performed, Nero greatly honoured the eleuenth, thirteenth and foureteenth Legions, repoling a most sure trust in their valour and fidelitie, euer after-

(22) Suetonius animated with this victorie, gathered his Army, & encamped again, purposing to end the residue of the warre, if any resisters should remaine : And at that present were sent him out of Germanie And actual present were lent time out of comment two thousand Legionarie Souldiers, eight Cohorts of Auxiliaries, and a thousand Horse, whereby his strength was augmented, and the ninth Legion which had beene The Britaines mimuch weakened by the rashnes of Petilius, fully supplied: So that bootelesse it was for the poore Britains to make any further relistance, and such as did, or stood doubtfully affected, were daily put to the sword. But nothing diffressed them so much, as did famine, and want of Corne, being a people in all ages more given to warre then good hulbandry, and rather relying upon the prouisions of orders, than by the plough to prouide for themselves, fierce of nature, and slowlie ending eare to peace, or their minde to fuch Arts as either nourish, or are nourished by peace.

Julius Clafficia-

(23) In these stirres Iulius Classicianus, sent from Nero to succeede Catus in his office of receipts, an enemie, & at variance with Suetonias, the more to cloud his renowne, gaue it forth for certaine, that a new Lieutenant was to be expected, who without either ho-Promifeth Clefile rancour, or pride of a Conquerour, would intreat the yeelders with all Clemenete: And likewile by letters sent to Rome, he signified that no end of warre was to be expected, fo long as Suetonius remained Generall, attributing cuerie aduerse lucke to his intollemeran, attributing cuerte aduction incone-rable pride, and enery professors fucesfe onely to the good fortunes of Cafar and State of Rome. Thele Great mens diffentions awaked Nero, fearing left the Britaines, thereby would be more forward to ad-Tranquill 4 in vit. Nero. Selt.40. nantage, with whom experience had shewed there was no dallying, and his former losses among them being againe recoursed, he thought himselfe discharged and quit from all fatall Calamities, as Tranquillus doth affirme. Therefore he fent Polycletus, one of his freed feruitors, with Commission to examine the differences, and to interpose his authoritie to worke a reconciliation at whose greatnes it was also thought that the Britaines would have quaked, and come in vnder feare. Which thing fell out otherwise: for howsocuer the

Captaine and Souldiers regarded him for his place, vn-to whom he shewed him lefte both arrogant and terri-

ble, yet the Britaines made him but their laughing Liberti or Freeflocke, as being themselues borne free, and knew not men, were such Hooke, as being literatures one are acquaint states item. men, were fach, what the power of freed-men was, much admired that fuch Commanders and Armie which had atchieued fo great exploites, could be brought to obay, clause freedom. and yeeld account of their actions to so base a bondflauc, as they termed him.

(24) But Suetonius growne great by his fortunes in these warres, and as it should seeme both suspected and feared of Nero, was by him commanded (the resh ty his and rearcd of Ners, was by non-communical (the large means warres yet continuing) to definer up his Armie to Petersiae his differential Turpilanus, who had lately given over his Conposition. fulfhip in Rome, a man of a softer, and more intreatable condition; and as a stranger to the faults committed before, readier to receive to favour and forgine: who hauing composed the former troubles, not daring any further, neither egged, nor prouoked the Enemie, but gaue himfelfe to a quiet, or rather idle life, which hee thought might paffe vnder the title of an honourable Pitresia rapide. peace. In which estate he gaue vp his charge to Trebellius Maximus, and was after flaine by Galba, nothing Trebell. Max. obiected against him, but his faithfulnesse to Nere, in that he would not betray him, as the rest had done. that he would not betray him, as the rest had done. For Nero now growne Odious to God and Man, Con-cause true to Ne. For a reason we grow to commonly over a mon at many. Our legislates were continually artempted, though not in a classification, while that rulius Vindex Lieutenant of Gallao apposed this proceeding, being the first failure, and the rowling stone that (as T actius tearmers i pumbied Nero out of his Seate.

(25) For having proclaimed Galba Emperour, an Proclaimed Old and weake man, at that time Governor of Arragon, Galba Empusar neither privile to the conspiracie, nor assenting to the title, he fet up daily many bitter and biting Edicts against Nero, wherby he was rowsed from his lascimions rest, and began to seare the satallend, whereunto his inpious life and bloody raigne had now lastly brought him; who destitute of all power of resistance, did now him, who destitutees a super-to-tential to the whole of the whole spee and refuge, you that messes, to which the compasse of the super-to-tential the superis flight into Egypt, there to teach the instructions of that Art: into such sudden baseness was his minde detected, that formerly had lashed our beyond all measure in kurie, pride, and prodigalitie. Vinto this conspiractic isined Priginia Rusus Rusus Leutenant of high Comparact coined Priginia Rusus Leutenant of high Cermanie, with Nymphidius, Sabinus, and Sophonius Tigellinus, Captaine of the Guard, who after Vindex his death, which happened vpon an accident even in his The Sense fend dearth, which happened upon an account cuch at 1115 entrance to Armes) maintained the election of Galba: to apprehend and the Senate as forward to Neroes destruction, proclaimed him Enemie to the State, and pronounced his punishment more majorum, sending out each way to apprehend him aliue.

(26) In this feare Nero attended with foure fer- Nero hideth uants onely, had hid himfelfe in a Country Cottage, not passing foure miles from Rome; whence hearing his decreed iudgement, and demanding what was meant by that fentence, it was answered, that his necke should be locked in the forke of a tree, and his bodie Hebilleth himall naked, whipped to death is whereupon lamenting that to good a Minstrell should be made away, he ran himselfe through on his sword, and so rid the world of a Monster.

(27) Of flature he was indifferent, his body full of Seet in title New freckles , his haire somewhat yellow, his countenance rather faire then louely, his eier gray and dimme, his mecke fatte, his belie bearing out, and his legges flender and fmall; A most skilfull Mustican he was, and in that Art fought to excell others, and to equalize Apollo himselfe, as also in his Chariot-riding to imitate the fwifines of the Sunne. So prodigall in apparell, 16/9h. Rel. that he neuer wore one Garment twice, & so sumptu-ous in buildings, as is vncredible. He raigned thirteen yeares and eight daies, and died the eight of I une, in the one and thirtieth of his age, and after the birth of our Sauiour Christ the threescore and tenth : as Eusebius doth account.

GALBA:

CHAPTER VIII.



Nere the laft of

Ith the death of this Ty rant, ended the progeny of the Cafars, and the Emperours succeeding were af-terwards elected, either for the opinion of their owne worths, or els, (and that oftner) by the facti-on and voice of the Souldiers, whose violence the Senate euer feared to contradict, and whose Colonies in c-

uerie Province fought to raise their owne Generall to that high estate. In which time of Combustion, though little be recorded of the British affaires, yet because the Monarchy of this Hand was then and long afterinuested in the Imperiall dignitie, we may not omit to speake somewhat of the ensuing Emperours, as the chiese Gouernours of this kingdome. Vpon Neroes declining, divers there were (as Vindex and Virginius, Nymphidius and Sophonius) let vp against him but Galba for his reputed integritic got the Garland from them all; who little dreaming of the Imperiall Diademe, fortune set it vpon his head before his hand had toucht the same: for Vindex in Gallia having proclamed him Emperour, and himselfe in Arragon not free from Neroes hatred, hee fought rather to hazard his life with the Glorie of a Crowne, then depend vpon his mercie, who had fent fecretly the fentence of his death. And therefore mounting the Tribunall, the more to impresse a fresh remembrance of former Galba his policie crucitics, he placed before his throne, the Images of certaine Nobles executed by Nero, with some personages sent for out of exile, whose presence might prouoke a deeper edge of hatred, and his Army about him readic for mutation, thefe, or the like words he (2) My fellow Souldiers and friends, wee at this

His Oracion to his fouldiers,

Galba got the

which wee our felues have finally enioted, I meane, libertie from bondage, and freedome from feares of ' a Tyrant. The life that I have hitherto lead, will " fufficiently discharge me from any aspiring con-' ceit, and my owne Conscience doth witnesse that I speake not vpon malice or private respects: It greeucth me to lay, but it bootes not to hide that. " which euerie man feeth. Hath euer Bond-man vn-" der a cruell mafter paffed a yeere of harder feruice, " then we have done fourteene under Nero? what " kind of exaction hath he not proued to supply with " extortion, that which with shame hee hath spent " what kinde of crueltic hath he not practifed? If we " would conceale or feeke to suppresse it, these dumb "ftones would declare them : For behold, he poi-" foned his Father and brother, abused and flew his " owne mother, murdered his wife, his Tutor, and

what els fo euer valiant or vertuous in Senate, in Ci-

" time are affembled, to bestow that vpon others,

tie,in Province, without any difference of Sexe or Age. I neede not to speake of the sorrowful sighes, and bitter teares of so many yong gentlemen bereft of their fathers, so many wives robbed of their husbands, so many great men depriued of their Country, all which cry vengeance vpon fuch a Prince: a Prince? nay an Incendiarie, a Singer, a Fidler, a Stage-piaier, a Cart-driuer, a Cryer, no Prince, nay no man; that hath a man to his husband, and a man to his wife, but a monfter of mankinde: And in trueth New folemely a fubiect, vpon whom, wice hath made her full experience, and raised her triumphs from the base of led Davisto Cafars throne. Against whom, what Vindex in France hath alreadic intended, I am sure you doe know, wis dishewish to have a sure of the care of the car hath alreadie intended, I am jureyou doe know, wid did he with and I, for my part, am most forrier to heare. The wide did he with spread of the with whole course of my former life hath beene hintertor transformer into the most of the removed from Ambition in Court, or from aiming transform too high abroad, and this little that remaines of my daies, I could hartily with were to be spent in more ease: But fith I know not by what my miffortune, some haue imposed vpon me a Part which I neuer meant to fustaine, and least of all at this age, I will not refuse, if you will also approue it, to sacrifice this old Careafe of mine for the wealth of " my Country, not as Emperour or Augustus (which facred names I adore afarre off, not daring to approch them) but as - - And no further heard, was with great acclamations faluted

(3) But such is the height of glory, which is raised by the blafts of the multitude, that it fals againe as the bubble burft in the swelling, which leaves neither circle nor figne of his former pride. And so is the state of Galba with one breath applauded, and placed vpon the Imperial Throne; and that scarce cold, ere they diflike of their owne hastic election: for newes being brought that the State flood firme for Nero, and for certaine that V index in his quarrell was flaine, euen in his first enterprise of revolt; that Virginius was sided by his Germane Legions, and his name inscribed in their banners; that Nymphidius was the man whose deferts could not be sufficiently honoured with leffe recompence then the princely Diademe: These distractions so much ouer-swaied his aged and passionate heart, that he retired to Clunia in great dejection, repenting himfelfe of that which hee had done, and wished againe his prinate estate.

(4) But the death of Nere commonly disulged. and Virginius his refusals of the Imperial Title, gaue strength and life to his former election, now further ratified by the full resolutions of the Armie: who the more to feeme both strong and valorous, though indeed a weake, fickly, and filly old man, Souldier-like in his coat of Armes shewed himselfe, and in that array passed the vast mountains for Rome. With whose entrance, entred the diflike of his person, as one vn-

GALBA.

fit to support the state of others, that by age and im-

becillitie was not able to fustaine his owne : to which

adopted him, and therefore as his concurrent fet his

own aspiring mind for the Crown, And even now this

time beft fitted his attempts, as being the wane of Galbaes authority, and before the full of Pifes powers, his Afrologers and fare-gazers forwarding him with their vaine predictions, a kinde of people euer to

were added the imperfections of his government, car-ried enerty way farre vnder expectation. And long hee fate not before hee faw his owne defects: to redresse which hee elected Piso Licinianus, Casar,ioi-Gallia chuic th Psfo Licinianus for his Lafar. ning him in power with himfelfe, and declaring him his Succeffor, in a short and blunt Oration, in presence both of the Senate and Souldiers. (5) Whereat howsoeuer others stood affected,

yet Marcus ' Saluius Otho (one, who for commerce in leaudnes was very deare to Nere, and whose hope de-Salains Othe conspireth Gal-bass death. pended vpon the common disturbance, for that his excesse in riot had now brought him to the brinke of beggery) much enuied therat; the rather because himfeife had entertained a hope that Galba would have

Princes vnfaithfull, to hopers deceitfull, and in a com-mon-wealth alwaies forbidden, yet alwaies retained. The fouldiers likewife euer difliking the prefent, and affecting the new, fell without respect to othors side : arrecting the new, tell without respect to usees the e-amongft whom Sulpitius Florus, one of the Britifh Co-horts, flew Fife the elected Cofar; Galba himfelfe being murdered and mangled by the Souldiers and band

(6) He was of a good flature; his head bald, his eies gray, and his nofe hooked, his hands and feet crooked by reason of the gout, and a bunch of flesh or wenvpon his right side. A great feeder and Sodomite His vices. hee was, severe in instice, and ouer-ruled by his feruants. Hee died aged feventy three yeeres, having His age. out-lived five Princes. In prosperitie happier vuder the Empire of others, then in his owne ; for hee fate only feuen moneths, and them with small contents. And raigne. In his flourishing age with great renowne he had serued in Germany : Africke he ruled as Proconful, and the neerer Spaine vprightly and well; feeming more then a private man whilest he was private, and held capa-

ble of the Empire, had he neuer beene Emperour.

THE FIRST PLANTING OF RELIGION IN BRITAINE.

CHAPTER IX.



His short time of Galbaes gouernement, with the conspiracies against his Predecessour, admitteth fmall remembrances of our British affaires : which Prouince (faith Tacitus) among all other stirres against both Nero and Galba, held amiry, and stood

in quiet , whether it was the farre distance of place, Senered by Sea from the seditions of the Revolters; or that by continuall service against the Enemie the malice of their humours were spent, it is vncertaine. Therefore a while to digreffe from the Succession of our British Monarkes, and to fill up the emptinesse of those Times with matters incident to our selues, let it not seeme either tedious or superfluous, to speake of the planting of his Kingdome in this Iland, whose Rule in short time extended to the Ends of the Earth; Christianity fup. and whose Ambassadours (as some haue written) about the midst of Neroes Raigne, and in the yeere of Christs Incarnation sixty three approached for the Inhabitants faluation, Aruiragus then fwaying the Scepter of this Kingdome.

(2) Atwhich time (fay they) were sent certaine Disciples out of France into Britaine by Philip the Apostle, whereof loseph of Arimathea, that buried the body of Christ, was chiefe; who first laid the foundation of our faith in the West parts of this Iland, at the place then called Aualon, (afterwards Inis Witrin, now Glassenburie) where he with twelue Disciples his

Affiliants preached the Gospell of life vnto the lleaders, and there left their bodies to remaine for a loiblue band of the land of the burie written to Henry de Bloys, brother to King Ste- Malmethuise. phen, and Abbat of the same place, report, and is confented vnto (for the master, though all agree not touching the time by the learned statements of later times, grounded on the Teitimonies of the beful proued Ancient writers who account the most happy influence of Christianite, to have beene by those statements of the property of the provided in the Teitimonies of the Statement writers who account the most happy influence of Christianite, to have beene by those statements and the statement which we have been supported by the statement of the statement which we have been supported by the statement which we have been supported by the statement which we have been supported by the statement which we will be supported by the statement of the statement which we will be supported by the statement of the statement which we will be supported by the statement of the statem py influence of Christianitie, to have beene by those day. glorious conduits convayed into these remote parts of the world: that so (according to the promise of God by Elaish) The lles a farre off which had not heard of his Elay 66.19. fame, should be converted, and have his glorse to them declared among the Gentiles.

(4) And if the credit of Derethem Bishop of Tyre, who lined to see the Anostacie of Julian) weigh any business as the second seems of the second s (who lived to see the Apostacie of Iulian) weigh any thing with vs, in his tract of the Liues and Deaths of Luk.6.15. the Prophets, Apostles, and Disciples, he bringeth Simon Simon Selotes (an Apostle of tesus Christ) to preach the word, and to fuffer Martyrdome on the Croffe here in Briane; with whom Nicephorus, and after him Iohn Nicephorus. caperaue (in his Catalogue of English Saints) agree, 1600 Cappraue. faying that the same Simon spread the Gospell to the west Ocean, and brought the word of life into the Iles of Britaine: and, in the conversion of Countries wrought by the Apostles, the same Nicephorus , with Michor St. 3. Egypt and Lybia assigneth Britaine also to be one. And cap.s. the forefaid Dorotheus, as also Mirmanus, nameth Ariftobulus one of the fenenty Disciples (the same whom Saint Paul in his Epifile to the Romans among Rom.1612.

CHRISTIAN RELIGION IN BRITAINE. [hap.9.]

Ecclef.

Mary Magdelen,

Lazarus, and

Martha in

England,

authoritie whereon George Owen-Harry doth ground

Eurgain the lifter of Joseph maried Surriles a Britain, Georg. Owen in his Pettigrees.

S. Peter the Apr file Supposed in haue preached in Britains Act.15.7.

Aetaşbraßes,

Eufebine.

A Monkish tale

Apoc.4.

Luk.12.13.

others faluteth) to have taught the doctrine of Saluation, and to have executed the office of a Biflop heere in Britaine.

(4) To these first Planters and Sowers of this heauenly Seed, Cafar Baronius, that voluminous Hifto-rian, ioineth Mary Magdalen, Lazarus, and Martha, who (by his relation) being banished terusalem, in a masterlesse ship without tackling arrived in Gallia; and with them Ioseph of Arimathes, who afterward landed in Britaine (vt tradunt, as hee faith, out of an old Manuscript which he saw in the Vatican Library:) yea and with them also Eurgain the fifter of lofeph, who afterwards maried a Britaine named Siarklos, if the

Gildan de Con-

that report, be of any credit. (5) But yet there are others, who vpon a very good ground from the words of Gildas (the most ancient of our British Historians) will have the Sunne of the Goffelllong before to have rifen in this our west, and this Iland of Britains to have enjoied the very morning of his Aftent, the brightnesse thereof piercing thorow the missic clouds of errour, and shining heere in Britaine even in the daies of Tiberius, towards whose end Christ suffered his death, and by whose indulgence towards Christians, their profession was propagated farre and neere. Which affertion the said Gildus doth not deliuer coldly or doubtingly, but with great confidence, & relying vpon good grounds, as it appeareth when he faith, Scimus, &c. Wee know for certainty, that this was in the latter times of Tiberius. Which was immediately after our bleffed Samours To which untontroleable testimonie some others

have added (though not perhaps on forndoubted warrant) that S. Peter the Applie preached the word of life in this I land, as to other Gentles he did, for whom God had chosen him, that from his mouth they might heare the Gospell and beleette, (as himselfe allegeth) and that hee heere founded Churches; and ordained Priests and Descons, which is reported by Simon Metaphrastes out of the Greeke Antiquities, and Guilielmus Eisingrenius in the first of his Centurie, who saith that Peter was here in Neroestime; whereas Baronius thinketh it was in the raigne of Claudius, when the lemes were banished Rome, and that therefore Paul in his Epifile to the Romans mentioneth him not. Indeed Baronius and some others plead very hotly for S. Peters preaching heere : but I fee not well how it can stand either with Eusebius his account, which keepes him fo long at Rome after he was Biftop there, or with Onuphrius, who denieth that he went west-ward (being expulsed by Claudius) but to Ierusalem, and thence to Antioch, where he listed till the death of Claudius: whence it must follow, that if Peter were heere at all it was before ever he went to Rome, and that the Gol pell was preached heere before it was in Rome, if Peter were the first (as some hold) that preached there: both which may be the more propable, if wee consider the huge multitudes of Christians (fifteene thousand faith Baronius) which dispersed themselves into all parts of the world vpon the martyring of S. Stenen at Ierufalem, (which was presently upon the death of Christ) and that Ioseph of Arimathea was one of that number, Baronius doth confesse. I am heere contented to step ouer that Monkish tale reported by Alure. dus Rinallensis (the writer of King Edward the Confes fors life) that a holy man (forfooth) studious and carefull for a Gouernour to succeed, was in his sleepe told by S. Peter that the Kingdome of England was his, wherein himselfe had first preached, and would also provide him Successours. For seeing it was a dreame, for a dreame wee leave it, and Peter among the other Elders to attend his Throne, that now fitteth in glorious Maiestie, and who in this life minded no fuch earthly preheminence, no not to divide betwixt brethren, though the Kingdome and rule of all

(6) Certes Peter was principally the Apolle of the Circumcifion, and therefore more likely to have spent

things was his alone.

his endenours on them : but for Paul (the Dotter of the Gentiles) his arrivall heere may feeme more war- 5.Psal preache rantable, who doubtleffe (after his first releasement in Britain from Rome) confirmed the doctrine of Christ to these Westerne parts of the world, and among them, as may appeare, to this Iland of Britaine, as both Sophronius Patriarke of Ierufalem, and Theodoret an ancient Do-Cor of the Church, doe aftermeand approone, faying that Fifters, Publicans, and the Tent-maker (meaning) that Fifters, Publicans, and the Tent-maker (meaning) S. Paul) which brought the Euangelicalllight unto all Nations, retealed the same vnto the Britaines. That Paul came into Illyricum, Gallia, and Spaine, and filled all those parts with his doctrine, both Ensebius; Dorotheus, and Epiphanius doe testifie : and of this generall Interest and of the Repulsation of the Repulsation of the Repulsation of the Copfell went there in the act to the Copfell went there in the cast, and was heard water the ends of the world: which his sayings cannot more field becappied to any other Nation then who vs of Britaine, whose Land by the Almightie is so placed in the terrestrial globe, that thereby it is termed of the ancient, The Ends of the Earth, and deemed to be litur om another worldsfore for in an Oration that Agrip-Polyhedilada, par made to the Fernes, and Agricola to his Romans, it is Total, as Agricola to his Romans, it is Total, as Agricola to his the coaff of France had been the Dad of the Earth had worth Agricola to for Britaine. Which for Britaine, which was as another world. And in Dion we read, that the old Souldiers of Gallia, whom Claudius commanded for Britaine, complained that they must bee inforced to make warre out of the world.

ginen to a Poet) Venantins Fortunatus thus recordeth: Transijt Oceanum, & quà facit Insula Portum, Quasg, Britannus habet terras,quasg, vltima Thule: He crost the seas unto the land and utmost coasts of Thule, Arising at the Ports and Iles where Britains bare the rule.

And of this Land and latter Apostle (if credit may be

(7) Thus for Paul: well knowen in Rome by his long imprisonments, and (at that time) in reuerend regard for his doctrine with many there : among whom also there were some Britaines that embraced the faith, whereof Claudia Rufina (remembred by Martial another Poet) was one, whom he thus extols:

> Claudia caruleis cùm st Rufina Britannis Edita, cur Latia pectora plebis habet? Quale decus forma? Romanam credere matres Italides po [funt, Atthides e ffe fuam.

How hath Dame Claudia, borne of Britaines blew, Won fame for wisdome with our sages graue? Her comely forme and learning, as their due, Rome claimes for hers, and hers would Athens have.

This Claudia is by the learned commended to have beene most skilfull in the Greeke and Latine tongues; Arthin Ania Recharden, of whom heare them (not me) speake. At the commandement of the Tyrant Nero (fay they from Tari-tus) many Noble Britaines were brought to Rome, who remaining there their Confederates, they held it an honour to have their children named after the nobilitic of the Romanes: and from Claudius Cafar was this Ladie Claudia named, who according to her worth was matched in mariage to Rufus a gentleman of Rome, then a Coronell, after a Senator, a man of a milde disposition, naturally modest, a great Philosopher in the Sect of the Stoickes, for his fiveeteneffe of behauiour called *Pudens*, who by his graue perswalions caused *Martial* (the wittie but wanton *Poet*) to reforme many things in his writings, and by him is comended for his humanitie, pietie, learning, and elo-quence: as also his wife Claudia the Britaine, for her eautie, faith, fruitfulnesse, learning, and languages. In

proofe whereof, Bale hath mentioned three feuerall Clendie her leas proofs wherever, man mentioned intersection Quantum reserves the reality, before on piled, both in the Greeke and Latine tongues. Dorotheus nameth Fudens, lines of the to be one of the feuentic two, and Volateranus affir. Disciples meth them both Pauls disciples, from whom he fen. Visitiments meth them both Pauls disciples, from whom he sendeth greeting to Timotheus in these words: Eubulus 2.Tim.4.21. Vv I

Sophy, in his Ger-mon of the nart-uity of the Apo-

Kufib.lib.3. ca.1 Deroth.hues of Epiphan.lib.T. Tom.z. Rom.10.18.

Martial III. 2. Boig. 54.

Manb.Perk.

lib.z.cap.4. William of Mal-

poied to bee brought into Braume in Ne

res time. Ex Aniq. Ma-

urteene,cap, 47

The lame Clean

and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren falute thee. But some may object, that Martials Claudia could not be that Ladie, who living in Neroestime gaue hospitalitie vnto Peter and Paul at their being in Rome, for that she could not retaine such beautie and perfection as the Poet to her doth ascribe in the raigne of Domitian, the seuenth in succession from Nero, the time being too long (faith Ado, Bilhop of Treuers, V fuardus and others) for beautie to be so freshly preferued. Now these account her age then to be fixtie; but if we reckon according to Eufebius, wee shall see that hee fets the last of Claudius in the yeare of grace fifise fixe, and the first of Domitian in eightie three, betwixt which, are but twentie feuen yeares, and yet Paul came not to Rome till the tenth of Nero, and in his thirteenth yeare, from the prison wrote his Episse to Timothie, as the same Eusebius declareth: so that from Eufeb. Ecclef.bift, hence vnto Domitian, is left but foureteene yeeres, a time no whit vnpossible to retaine Beautic, though twentic yeares and many moc of her age had beene formerly spent; seeing that in those times Plutarch praifeth Alcibiades to be passingly faire when he was

Alcibiades his beaution old

hreefcore yeares of age. This Claudia then with Pauls spiritual! Manna, is Claudia fends both Pauls and faid to fend likewise the choisest and chastest of the Poefies of Martial (whose verses generally are no lesfons befitting Ladies) for new-yeares gifts vnto her friends in Britaine, both for to feede their Soules with the bread of life, and to instruct their mindes with lesfons best fitting vnto ciuili behauiour; which thing

in his verse thus to write:

Merrial, lib.7. Epig. 10.

moued the Poet himfelfe with no small selfe-glorie Dicitur & nostros cantare Britannia versus. And Britaine now (they say) our verses learns to sing

Tacit. Annal. 15.

(8) It hath also passed with allowance among the learned Senate of our Antiquaries, that when Claudius & Nero began to banish and persecute the Christians in Rome, (whose superstitions, as Tacitus pleaseth to tearme them, from Iudea had infected the Citie it felfe) many Romanes and Britaines being converted to the Faith, fled thence vnto these remote parts of the earth, where they might and did more freely enjoy the libertie of their Professions, vntill the search of Tyrants by the flame-light of Persecutions, had found out all secret places for the safeties and assemblies of Gods Saints: as after in the daies of Dioclesian we shall finde. And from this Sanctuarie of Saluation the fad lamenting Lady * Pomponia Gracina, the wife of Aulus Aulus PLaurius bie Plantins (the first Lord Lieutenant of Britaine) brought that Religion, whereof the was accused and stood indited vpon life and death, which was none other, then the Christian Profession, seeing the same both by Tacitus and Suetonius, is cucrie where termed the strange superstitions and new kinde of Sect that the Christians imbraced, and for which they were accounted vnworthy to liue.

7.6 lib.15, 10. Suetonius in vita Nero.Stil.16.

B. Rhenan, in his Hift of Germany.

(9) And much about these times (as Beatus Rhenanus in his Historie of Germanie, Pantaleon and others doe report) one Suctonius a Noble mans sonne in Britaine converted to the Faith by the first Planters of the Gospell in this Iland, and after his Baptisme called Beatus, was sent by the Brethren from hence vnto Rome, to be better instructed, and further directed by Saint Peter himselfe; and returning thorow Switzerland, found fuch willingnesse and flocking of the people to heare and receive the Dollrine of Christ, that he there staied and built an Oratorie not farre from the lake Thun, and neare the Towne called Vnderfewen, wherein preaching and praiers he imploied his time to the day of his death, which happened in the yeare of grace 110.

And that there were Christians in Britain at these times I make no questio, thogh some exceptions may be taken against the Monk of Burton the reporter therof, who kinth in the 141 yeare and range of Hadri-an, nine masters of Grantester were basiseed themetory or preached to others the Gospellin Britain; howfocuct he faileth in the Emperours name, which yeare was the

fecond of Antonins Pins his fucceffor, and afcribeth to these men Schoole-degrees; altogether vnknowne for nine hundred yeares after, yet these do not hinder the truth of the thing, though that Monke was none of the best Historians. It is reported also that Patricke the Irish Apostle, and Canonized Saint, long before the Patrick the Irish Raigne of King Lucius preached the Gospell in many places of Wales; As also that Ninianus Bernicius of the race of the British Princes converted the Picts to the Religion of Christ. Vinto these aforesaid authorities and testimonies howsoeuer we stand affected: yet it is certaine by Chemnitius citing Sabellicus, that the Britaines were with the first Connerts: And Tertullian, the minimum as who lived within two hundred yeares of Christs Na- Trides, ex Sales tiuitie, sheweth no leffe: Who the more to prouoke the Tewes against whom he wrote, calleth to witnesse the fruitfull increase of the Gospell of Saluation, through many Countries and Nations, and among them nameth the Britaines to have received the Word of life, the power whereof (faith he) hath pierced into those parts whither the Romanes could not come. Whence Petrus Cluniacensis supposeth the Scotish men the more ancient Christians, as not being in the like subjection to Perms Cluni, ad the Romanes, as other then were. (10) Origen, who flourished not much about two

nundred yeares after Christ, in his Homilies open Ezechiel (heweth, that the first fruits of Gods haruest was gathered in the Iland of Britaine: who consented to the Christian faith by the doctrine of their Druides: that taught one onely God: with whom Hettor Boetius agreeth, faying, that some of these Druides condem- HetterBess Chro ned the worship of God in Images, and allowed not the applicatio of the God-bead vnto any vilible forme: which might be the cause why Claudius the Emperour forbad their Religion, as favouring in these things too much of Christianstie, whom likewise he banished Rome, as some from Suetonius coniecture. Of these Sustains in vin Druides wee shewed before, that their offices were most imploied about holy things, and that their dostrine Tacis. Annal. 14 chiefly confifted in teaching the immortalitie of the foule, the motions of the heavens, the nature of things, and Cafar. Com. Lib.6. the power of the Gods: yea and Postellus from others willinforce, that they prophecied likewise of a virgins ropular. conception. These were the helps, saith Tertullian, that caused the Britaines so soone to imbrace the Dostrine of Christ, and thereupon immediately after his death doth Gyldas fasten our conversion, where he writeth. dont Grans Internous Condettion, where he winceth, That the Glorious Goffell of 16 fis Chrift, which first appeared to the world in the later time of Tiberius Casar, did do Brit. euen then pread his bright beames upon this frojen Iland

(11) Whereby wee see the waters of life, flowing from terufalens Temple, into these farre set Countries and vttermost Seas, to be made both fruitfull & tries and vttermoß. Sees, to be made both truttul & wholefome, according to the flyings of the Prophet, that in that day the nature of life flounds i flue from irrival the tails See, and half of them toward the East See, and half of them towards the vitermoß. See, and half or intermediately the tail of the transfer flounds to the transfer of the tr cie of Christianitie, both the Apostles themselues, and also the Proselytes their Disciples to become fishers therein for the Soules of Men, as Chrift in chusing of Matt. 4.19. them faid they should bee; whereby his Kingdome was soone enlarged vnto these Ends of the Earth, and Pfal.2.8. his Throne established among those Heathen, whom God his Father had given to be his. So fruitfull and famous was this spreading of the Goffell, that Baptiffa Mantuan, a Christian Poet, compares the increase thereof with that of Noah, thus alluding vnto it:

Sicut aquis quondam Noc fua mifit in orbem Pignora fedatis, vt Genshumana per omnes Debita Calituum Patri daret orgia terras; Sic fua cum vellet Deus alta in regna reuerti, Discipulos quosdam transmisit ad Vltima Mundi Littora, docturos Gentes quo numinaritu Sint oranda, quibus Calum placabile Sacris. In English thus: As Noah sent from the Arke his sonnes, to teach

ed in Weler

Origen, in Exe. be mil.4.

Scot lib.s. The Draides al-lowed not Ima-ges not any visi-ble forme of the God-head.

Claud. Self. 25.

Baprift, Maut.

haue extended, not only to the Countries farre iacent in the Continent, but also to the Ilands situated in the Ocean it felfe, and amongst them expresty nameth this our Britaine; whose Inhabitants (laith hee) have also consented to the word which is planted in every heart, in honour whereof they have erected their Temples and Alters. And againe : Those Britaines (faith hee) which had formerly fed vpon humane flesh, making no difference betwirt the blood of man and beaft, now through the power of the word by them embraced, have learned the law of true pietie, and give themselves to a religious abstinence, and holy fasts. Of which Barbarifme S. Jerome also complained, that some of those Nations vsed to eat the buttocks of boies, and Paps of Virgins, which in their Feasts were served for the daintiest dishes. But elsewhere speaking of the Britaines conversion, he saith, that they had turned themsclues from their westerne Paganisme, and now had dire-Eted their faces towards I erufalem in the East, whose beautie shined in the word of God. (13) And thus wee see by the planting of the Gofell in this I land, the laying of the P falmist accompli-fhed, that God would give his forme Christ the Heath: n for his inheritance, and the Ends of the Earth (the proper Pfal.2.8. attribute of this our Britaine) to be his poffession. And the fuccesse in Historie most apparantly sheweth these parts (by an especiall prerogative) to bee Christs King-dome. For albeit that terusalem and Antioch may rightlie claime the precedencie of all other places, the one being as it were the chamber where Christians were first borne, and the other the font where they were first Christened with that most facred name : yet Britaine in fome other graces hath outstript them all, having the glory to be graced with the first Christian King that firft Christian euer raigned in the world, which was our renowned King. Ex Archin.Cinic Lucius, the first fruits of all the Kings that cuer laid their Crownes at the foot of our Saujours Croffe: as Britaine had the also for producing the first Christian Emperour that euer by publike authoritie established the Gosell thorow the world, which was Constantine the Great. borne and brought vp heere in Britaine by Queene Helene mothe Helena, a most vertuous and religious British Lady: vnto whose daies the succession of Christianitie did heere continue, as by the martyrdomes of many Saints under Dioclesian is apparant. Heerein also raig-King Henry the Eighth the first that quailed the Pope. ned the King that first vncrowned the head of the vsur-ping Beast, and triple-headed Cerberus, and freed the Land from his denouring Locusts : putting downe Ido-Apoc.9. latrie with Hezekiah that brake the Brasen Serpent : and with Ifaack new digged the Wels that those Philistines had stopped. And lastly hath this Iland produced that Gen.26.18. most royall and Christian Monarke, whose learned pen King James. hath first depainted Antichrist, and pierced the heart of all Papall Supremacie, as the sword of Gedeon did Zalmunna (* the Image of trouble) King of Madian.

And as a Lion hath he meet that erooked * Serpent in Zalmunta fignifi-etb, Judg. 7.20. the way of his vsurped authoritie; whereby in short Hof.13.8. time vindoubtedly the b Kall of his heart will be broken, if other Potentates likewife by his most godly example, cast off the yoke of vasfallage, and in their se-uerall Dominions gouerne (as free Princes ought) the people that GOD hath committed to their charge. So that in those and many other the like Princes of this happy Iland, most properly is performed that propheticall promife made vnto the Church of Christ:that Kings should become her nursing Fathers, and Queene. Should be her nurfing Mothers : Of both which may be truly faid to Britaine, in imitation of that of Salomon

(hap. 9.

Chryfoft, in Serm. de Pentecoft.

The Lawes of God unto the World aright;

So Christ his Scruants sent abroad to preach

The Word of Life, and Gospell to each Wight:

No place lay shadowed from that glorious Light:

Embrac'd their Faith and ioid at their fweet founds.

(12) To which effect also the sayings of S. John

Chryfostome, Bishop of Constantinople, enforce, who

flewing the increase of Christianitie, and the successe

of the Goffell preached, sheweth the power thereof to

The farthest Iles, and Earths remotest bounds.

Many kingdomes have done gloriousty, but thou hast sur- Pro. 31.29.

CHRISTIAN RELIGION IN BRITAINE

(14) And of fuch power hath Christ beene in these His Possessions, that even the Hostile Kings and Conquerour's thereof, were they never fo faunge and rdolatrous at their first correction with the contract to the contract t dolatrous at their first entrance, yet when they here ror to the best had feated for a time they became milde and religion of Churt. ous, and gladly fubmitted their hearts to the Religion of those, whose necks themselves held vnder the yoke

(15) Such were the Romans in this Iland, whose Holling to Hate Deputies at the day-spring almost of Christianitie were converted; as Trebellius, Pertinax, and others, which submitted themselues to that profession, and were moriues to King Lucius more publikely to maintaine the same : as also Constantius the father of great Conflantine, that here in Britaine permitted the profession of the Gofpell, with the crections of Churches for the true service of God, and prohibited the superstitious orfhips of the Gentiles.

(16) The Saxons after them (in time, but not in Idolatrie) had neuer tafted the liuing waters of Siloh, till they were here feated in Christs Possession, where they changed their affections as farre from their wonted manners, as did the Meffengers to Iehu, which turned after his Chariot to deftroy the Altars of Baal : or as Saul and his servants, who no sooner had entred Naioth in Ramah, but that their spirits were joined to the Prophets, and the heat of their furie, with their 1.Sam. 19.20

garments, cast downe at Samuels feet. (17) The Danes likewise, their Conquerours, and Successors in this Royall Throne, euer vntill then were

both bloudy and barbarous, and therefore of all our

Writers commonly called the Pagan Danes; whose many defolations and ruines remaine as records of their cruelties in many places euen vnto this day: yet being a while in this Land, King Guthurn, with thirtie of his chiefe Princes and people, were drawen by the va-lourand vertue of King Alured to receive the Christian Faith, by whose bounty thereupon they enioied the possession of a faire portion of this Kingdome. And afterward Canutus, their greatest King, no sooner almost had this imperiall Diademe set vpon his head, but that hee held it his chiefe Maiestie to be the vassall of Christ, confessing him only to be King of Kings: and with fuch religious denotion as then was taught, crowned the Crucifix at Winthester with the Crowne he wore : and neuer after, thorow all his raigne, by any meanes would weare the same : and the Danes his Souldiers remaining in England, began by little and little to embrace Christianity, and in short time were al converted to the Faith. Thus then we fee the happie increase of these holy seeds springing from the sur-rowes of this blessed ground: and the Tents of Sem to be spread vpon the Mountaines of Britaine, wherein God (according to his promife) perswaded vs who are of Japheth, to dwell.

(18) As hitherto we have fearched the first foundation of our Faith, fo neither want wee testimonies concerning the continuance of the same in this Land vnto following Posterities; although the injurie of Time and Warre have confumed many Records. For the Britainesthat were daily strengthned in their receiued faith, by the Doctrine of many learned and godly men, left not their first loue with the Church of Ephefus, but rather tooke hold of their skirts, as the Prophet speaketh, untill the tortures of Martyrdome cut them off by death: And those Fathers even from the Disciples themselves, held a succession in Dottrine (notwithstanding some repugnancie was made by Redulph Wiger. the Pagans) and preached the Goffell with good fuc- zeland ceffe, even till the same at length went forth with a bolder countenance, by the fauourable Edicts of A- Eufeble 4c. drian, Antonius Pius, and Marcus Aurelius Emperors of Rome(as Eufebius hath noted:) and in Britaine was established by the authoritie of Lucius their King whereby this was the first of all the Prouinces (faith Marcus Sabellicus) that received the Faith by publike ordinance: Of the teachers of those times Bale

.King. 9. #8.

the Crucifix with the Crucifix with Pelyebr.li.6.c., lib.3-p.222.

Gen.g.27.

Zecha.8.11.

Mercus Schol in

Ifa.49.23.

Saint Davids in

Bauarians,

delius,cap.3.

Malmesburie Randulphus,

Bedaliba ca. 7

At Liechfield

Matth, 27. Liechfields Armes.

Bed,üb.z.cap.8.

from some other hath these verses.

Sicut erat celebris cultu numero ja Deorum Cum I ouis imperium staret Britannica tellus : Sicubi terrestres caso descendit ad oras Expectata salue, patribus fuit inclyta sanctis. Qui Neptunicolum campos & Cambricarura, Coryneas g. casas, loca desolata, colebant.

As were the Britaines famous for their zeale To Gentle Gods, whiles fuch they did adore; So, when the Heavins to Earth did Trush reveale, Bleff'd was that Land with Truth and Learnings flore: Whence British Plaines, and Cambri'as desert ground, And Cornewalls Crags, with glorious Saints abound.

In which number were Eluanus & Meduinus; those two learned Dinines, which were fent by King Lucius vnto Eleutherim Bishop of Rome, with whom retur-Bahop of Rame. ned two other famous Clerkes, whose names were Aly Fagains vel Faganus and Damianus; these together, both preached and baptized amongst the Britaines, whereby many dailie were drawne to the Faith: And, as a worthy and ancient * Historian saith: The Temples which had beene founded to the Honour of their many Gods, were nufcript in the Kings Libratie, ad An. 178. then dedicated to the one and onely true God : For there were in Britaine eight and twentie Flamins, and three were in Distance again and treense riamins, and times Arth-flamins, in flead of which, so many Bishops and Arch-bishops were appointed: worder the Archbishop of London were the Provinces of Loegria and Cornubia: winder Yorke, Deira, and Albania: winder Vrbs Legionum, Cambria: By which meanes, this kappy Kingdome vn-der that gody King, was nobly beautified with so many Cathedrall Churches, and Christian Bishops Sees, before any other kingdome of the world.

That this Lucius should be the Apostle to the Baua-King Zucins the Apostle to the rians, or that his fifter Emerita was crowned with the flames of Martyrdome fifteene yeares after his death, Acgidius Sendus Heaue to the credit of Aegidius Scudus, and Hermade Prifca Rhatia. Hermanna Schenus Sthedelius the reporters, and to the best liking of the readers. But most certaineit is, that the Christian faith was still professed in this sland, sound and undefiled, as Beda witneffeth, notwithftanding the cruel per-

fecutions of the bloody Emperours.

19 For, all this time (faith the faid Dicetus) Christian Religió flourished quietly in Britanny, til in Dioclefians time, their Churches were demolished, their holy Bibles cast into Bone-fires, the Priests with their faithfull flocke bloodily murdered. In which number, about the yeare two hundred ninetic three, as we read (in Beda, Malmesburie, Randulphus, and others) Albane with his teacher Amphibalus were both of them martyred for the profession of the Gospell at the old Towne Verolanium: as also in Leicester, those two Noble Citizens, Aaron, and Inlint, with multitudes both of men and women in fundric places (faith Beda) as flortly after no leffe then a Thousand Saints suffered death at Liechfield, wherupon the place was called another Golgotha, or field of blood: In memorie whereof, the Citie beareth for Armes to this day, in an Efchuenem of Landskip, fundry persons diversly Martyred. And yet after these times also the Britaines continued constant in Christianity, and the censures of their Bishops (for the great estimation of their Constancie, pietie, and learning) required, and approved in great points of Dollrine among the affemblies of iome Generall Councels; as that of Sardis and Nice, in the time of great Conflantine (the first Christian Emperour, and this our Country man, whose bleffed daies gaue freeway to that Profession, to the Councels Authoritie, and to the whole world Peace) had wee our Bishops present; whose forwardnes against the Arrian Herefie , afterwards Athanafius advanceth in his Apology vnto Iouinian the Emperor, among three hundred Bishops affembled at the Councell of Sardice, in Anno

yeare three hundred fiftie nine, and in the raigne of Constantius, who caused soure hundred westerne Bi-Thops to be there formoned in fauour of the Arrians. whereof three were out of Britaine, (as Sulpitius Senerus the good Bishop of Burges hath reported) that w.z. gaue their suffrages against that Heresie. These doth Hilarie tearme the Bishops of the Prouinces of Britaine, by whom they were somewhat derided, because himps. beeing farre from their owne Countrie they lived vponthe Emperours charge. And Beda testifieth, that from Dioclesians time they both reedified their former Temples, and founded new also in memorie of their then fresh-bleeding Martyrs, and enjoyed a generall and ioifull peace in their religious profession; till that Arrian Heresse having first filled the Continent, fought and found passage ouer the Seas into our

Germadius in his Catalogues Illustrium Dinorum Gerandius in (a tels vs of an other learned Bilhop of Britaine, Fastidius, who in the time of Cestius Bishop of Rome, wrote vnto one Fatalis a booke devita Christiana, and another de viduitate seruanda; of much divine learning and comfort. Chryfanthus likewise is recorded by Niepberm in Ecbeene a Confular Deputie in Italie vnder Theodofius, and made Lieutenant of Britaine, where with great praise he managed the common wealth, was against his will afterward made Bishop at Constantinople of the Nonaatterward made Dunopa to onstruction processes that called themselves Cathars, that is, pure, making a schime in the Chareb by their denial of Saluation, to such as fell into relapse of sinne after Baptisme once received. This is that Bishop of whom we read, that of all his Ecclesiasticall reuenewes hereserved only for himselfe two loaues of bread vpon the Lords day. And in the first Tome of Councels is mention of Restitutus Bishop of London; whom (because that, as is most probable. Christian Religion had in those primitive times taken more firme footing in Britain then in France) the French Bissops called to their Nationall Councell, the fecond at Arles, in Anno three hundred thirty fiue, that he might with his Suffrage ap-prooue their Decrees. About the yeere foure hundred feuenty, was a Provincial Councell held in Britaine for Icucurty, was a resumctau connect netts in Britaine tor the reforming of Religion, and repairing of the ruined Churches, which the Pagan mariage of Fortiger had decated, to the great griefe and discontent of the people, a pregnant figne of the continuing zeale, which vnto thole daies had left a glorious memorie.

(20) And the Enfigne of Arthur, wherein the Aubur Enfigne Virgin with her some in her armes (as is noted by Vincentius) was portraied, so often displaied for Christ, and his Countries libertie, against the Pagan Saxons, Is as a seale to confirme vs of their Profession, and doth shew the badge of that ages Christianitie. But the fafinew the badge of the a tages Confilamate. But the ta-mous Monasteric of Banelro, as a College of distince Pla-lofophers, and by Clarinather and year of the American distributed into fewers in the world, and her Monkes distributed into fewers in the world, and her Monkes bring three hands of the configuration of the configuration of bring three hands of the configuration of the configuration of his distributed into the configuration of the configuration of the transfer of the configuration of the configuration of the configuration of the transfer of the configuration of the configuration of the configuration of the transfer of the configuration of t by their daily labours, doth notably witnesse to all Bed.tis. Eulef.l. by their daily amounts, doin morably with the to an Beath, fucceeding ages, that Christian Religion was then both planted and preached in this Iland. And in the Synod held at Austins Oake were seven old Britaine Bishops, belides other Dollours, who met with that Romane Legate, and not in points of doctrine, but rather in Legate, and not my points or acception, but futner in their leucral irist and ecrominist did autie, by any thing that in that Alfemblie appeared. For as it is most undoubleed, that (if we lipechae property) lerafa-lem is the Mother of vs.all, and of all Chuncher, and our Bestimans. former allegations doe cuince, that the first Planta-tion of the British Faith was altogether by Iewes and others of the Easterne Church : so the very rites of this Religious College of Banchor do cuidently proue, that their first institution in Religion came from the East, Beda shewing that in all of them they differred from

the Romane Church; yea, and that they neuer did, northen would acknowledge any authoritie of the Bi-

shop of Rome ouer them in matters of the Church and ferwice of God. All which accordeth right well with that before cited out of Zachary that the waters of life should issue from Ierusalem. And S. Hierome, who spake most

(hap. 9.

Heb. 11.25.

Angl.biff,lib.2.

of Saints.

properly, in laying, the Britaines leaving Paganifine, had turned their faces to I erusalem in the East The foundation of the faid College is ascribed to

CHRISTIAN RELIGION IN BRITAINE.

King Lucius, from whose time vnto the entrance of this Austin the Monke, foure hundred thirty eight yecres were expired : in all which space we have seene that the Christian Faith was both taught and embraced in this tland, notwithstanding the continual persecutions of the Romans, Huns, Picts, and Saxons: which last made such desolations in the outward face of the Church, that they droue the Christian Bishops into the deserts of Cornwall and Wales. In which number were Theomis and Thadioceus Bishops of London and Yorke, chusing rather to suffer adversitie with the people of God, then to enjoy the pleafures of finne for a feafon. By whose labours the Gospell was plentifully propagated among those vast mountaines, and those parts especially aboue all other made very glorious, by the multitudes of their holy Saints and learned Tra-

(21) Lastly, (for the close of all) that these testi monies are fincerely by vs produced, for the first preaching and planting of the Gospell, and by such meanes and men as we have declared, and particularlie by Iofeph of Arimathea and his affociates, the con-fent of all Writers, both forraine and home-bred, doth sufficiently approvae: and the reucrend regard had of the place, with the many Charters thereof to this day remaining, are strong inducements for those our first Apostles Residencies and Burials : whereof one exemplified under the Seale of King Edward the third, is to be seene at this day, reciting that the Abbey of Glastenburie being burned in the time of King Henrie the second while it was in his hands, at the request of the Patriark of Jerufalem (then prefent in England) in-fligated further both by the Biftons and Nobilitie, hee did reedifie the fame, causing diligent search to bee made for the ancient Charters of that foundation, and among many recited in that exemplification, in one of them it is called, Origo Religionis in Anglia : in another, Tumulum Sanctorum, ab ipsis discipulis Domini adi-ficatum, fuisse venerabilem. Also in the same Charter amongst many other Kings, there is mention made of King Arthur, to be a great Benefactor unto that Abbey; whose Armes upon the stone walles, both in the Chapell (called S. Iofeph) and in divers other places of the Abbey, are cut: which is an Efchichem, whereon a Croffe with the Pirgin Mary in the first quarter is set, and is yet to this day remaining ouer the Gate of entrance, and is held to be also the Armes of that Abber. This place is faid to have been given to Iofeph and his brethren, by Aruiragus then King of Britaine : and from hence were those two divine Doctors sent to E-

lutherius by King Lucius, as by their Epithetes doth appeare: the one of them called Eluanus Aualonius, or

of Glastenburie; and the other, Meduninus of Belga,

that is, Welles, neere vnto this place. And to these per-

fons and place, Polydore Virgil, that dwelled among vs,

and had perused most of our Antiquities, ascribeth the originall and precedencie of our Christian Faith, in

these words: Hac omnia Christiana pietatis in Britannia

extitère primordia, quam deinde Lucius Rexaccendit &

adauxit, &c. And our other latter Writers likewise

with him agree of this place, further affirming, that

at first but poore, and without all pompe, it was their

Oratorie, built only of wrethen wands, as both * Cap-

grave, Bale, Maior, & Scroope, Harding, Thorne, and

others affirme : Afterwards by divers Princes raifed

vnto greater glory, with many large privileges & Char-

Lers granted; to wir, of Edgar, Edmand, Elfred, Edward, Many king be.
Bringwalthus, Kentwin, Baldred, Ina, Kenwall, the Conpersons to Guminds upon diliberary floating they. querour, Rufus, and others : all which were diligently perused by King Henry the second, as we have said, & that Rectorie in these Charters continually termed The Grave of Saints: The mother Church: The Disciples foundation, and dedicated onto Christ, as the first place in this Land wherein his Gospell was first preached and embraced (22) To conclude this digression, growen much

greater then was intended, we see it is most apparant, that the Britaines had a settled opinion in Christianitie, before the found thereof was heard from Rome ; and that the Lord had heere fet vp his Standard; whereunto these Handers resorted as to the Tower of their Elay 49.22. frength , and was the first Kingdome of the Gentiles, Dan 11.31. that are faid to bring their fonnes thus in their armes, and their daughters thus vpon their shoulders, unto the Lords Sanctuarie: whose knowledge continually increasing, hath hitherto, to Englands great ioy and fame, beene still continued, though the spiritual sparkes thereof for a season have sometimes beene contered in the cinders of the Pagans defolations, or with the superstitious worships of mans inventions; both which now dispersed as clouds before the Sunne, the light appeareth in his full strength, and the most pure waters of the word run vntroubled. This Iland then, in this thing made happy before the most, the Inhabitants became Instructors of others, and in their earthly vessels bare this heavenly liquor, which thorow their golden Conduits ran into many other Countries, and filled their Cesternes with this water of life. For from hence was Netherland converted to Christianitie, as testifieth the story of Swithbertus: Burgundie by our Columbanus, saith Sigebert : Scotland by Brandanus, as Bernard the French Monke affirmeth : Swedia by Bernard. Gallus, as faith Petrus de Natalibus: and Frisia by Wilfred, as is recorded by Beda and Matthew of Westminster: the Franconians, Hessians, and Thuringians, by Winnfred our Deuonshire man : the Normegians by Nicolas Brekspere of Middlesex: and the Lithuanians by Thomas Walden of Effex. Againe, if we shall cast our eie on all the Reformed Churches in Christendome, and with them on Luther, Husse, and Prage, they will all confesse, they first deriued their light from the learned Wickleffe of Oxford; the Lampe of whose sacred knowledge hath illumined not onely all the corners of this Kingdom but also all those forraine States, whom it hath pleased God to deliuer from the thraldome and vengeance of Babylon : so that with the German Poet, to Gods glorie and Britaines praife, the English thus may fing :

Quin se Relligio multùm debere Britannis Seruata, & late circum difper fa, fatetur.

Religion doth confesse, to Britaine deepe she stands In debt, by whom preserved, she now fils for raine Lands,

In which regard, Polydore Virgil doth rightly call Polydor Virgil. England the Parent or Mother-Monasterie of all Europe. As likewise Peter Ramus termeth Britaine to bec Peter Rama Pope. AS MECVINE FEET KAMMUS CHIEFLE DI TRADATE OF USE L'ATTE AND L'UNICA SÉADE MITTE (FET TO THE KINGDOME OF FERNE. Analytof Florders Wellife, that no Nation Had Comany Distins Nobles (they might likewis haute [aid, 60 many Noble Distinct) 38 England hath had, neither any more bountifull to Gods Saints. Our Kings for sanctitie ranked before all other Potentates of the earth, as Vincentius recordeth: Our Nobles truly ho- Vincentin nourable, and the sonnes of Princes : Our Dinines and renowned Nurseries of learning and Religion, shining Icr. Lam. 4.7 like the two greater lights in our British firmament, And all of vs claiming our spiritual lots of Inberitance in the midft of the Tribes of Ifrael.

Britaines profes efore it cause Micah 4.8.

Petrus de Mata-libm. Matthew of

Ezech. 47.22.

XxI

OTHO.

France and Germany at this day with one voice doe ap-proone the same. As also at that of Ariminum, in the

three hundred and fiftie: whose words (as Nicephorus reports them) are these. Know most Christian Emperour (laith he) that this faith hath beene alwaics preached and professe Land that all Churches of Spainc, Britain,

Nicephorus fiafl_Hifl.



OTHO

CHAPTER X.



Ann.Do.70.



Vt leaving christs proceedings to the dispose of himselfe, let vs returne to the fubicat from whence wee haue wandered, and continue the fuccessions of Great Britaines Monarchs, vnto them that haue held it, whether by

chance of warre, or voice of Election: In which fort (as is faid) Galba got it, and but short time kept it: And from him other tooke it.

and a shorter time enjoied it. (2) Whole Originall (faith Tacitus) was from

Otho his original. Tacis.Hift.2. cap. (2) Whole Original (Jain Facina) was from Ferrentium, his Father a Confull, his mothers blood fomewhat difparaged, but yet not bale; his youth run ouer with voluptuous wantennesse and prodigall expenses, more ready for disturbances, then depending vpon preferment or dignitie of State; and having gone thorough all his wealth, retained onely the heartie affections of the Souldiers, which Galba had vtterly alienated. Neither did othe himselfe bandy against Galba, but Vitellius in Germanie was fauoured against both; Two persons so vile and ambitious, as was much feared, would proue the scourge of the Empire, and the ruine of Rome.

(3) Vnto Vstellius sided the Britaines, vnder the Condoct of Tribellius Maximus, (remembred before) a man vnfit for warre, and vnexperienced of service, a man vant vor ware, and vincaperience or ieruice, compounded altogether of couctoufness, and for his niggardly sparings, and vannerciful pollings, exceedingly hated of his Armie: which was further aggrauated by Rofeius Calius, Lieutenant of the twentieth nared by Rejeus Launs, Lieuvenant of the twentieth Legion, his ancient Enemie, betwixt whom the sparks of emie shortly burst forth into slames of recipro-call accusations. Trebellius being charged of infussiciencie for command, with the beggering of the Prouince, and Legions; and he againe accufing Calius of factious behaviours, & diffoluing of aifciplune: through which diffensions a negligene regard was held of the

(4) Otho his Concurrent (in this thing only com-(4) Often his Concurrent (in this thing only commendable) (ought by all means to that whe refution of more cailli blood, and that alreadie fipens, so pole fifth is thoughts, that his mind was fill diffracted and nightly affrighted with the feerning appearance of calker gloot it for which causes here free conditions of peace to Yieldius, offering him an equal part in the Empire. and to true him also his daublave in the high can to true him also his daublave in the high can be sufficient to the control of the call of t Ons of peace to Fieldus, offering him an equal part in the Empire, and to gue him allo his daughter in the highest in the Empire, and to gue him allo his daughter in the highest him the first perfect had a Spring him to the first perfect had a Spring him to the first perfect had been continued, feet for this little forces, and in three feareral skyrmings had the vising to the contraint of the perfect him the fourth as frinchism loft the dair; yet long the most families weaked or variceourable, () had "dair and the wind the fourth as for the him to the perfect him to the him to the perfect him to the him to th not fo much weakned or vnrecoucrable, (his Ar-thefor mie in number and courage furmounting the other) as himselfe was vinwilling to trie the chance of warre any more; for beeing importanted by his Captaines and Leaders, to reenforce the Battaile, with his Souldiers his Souldiers to many reasons, and probabilities of an affured vieto-rie, in a chankfull and short Oration, answered thus

ther industrie or hazard for attaining the same. "These civil warres Vitellans beganne; which I for " my part purpose not to continue; and hereby let " Posteritie esteeme of Otho, that others have kept the Empire longer, but neuer any that left it more vali-antly. Let this minde therefore accompany me to

and vnuanquished. I blame not the Gods, nor enuie your Emperors riling glorie: It is sufficient that my " house hath touched the highest straine of Honour and my selfe to be left in records, The four aign Momarch of the World.

(6) And thereupon foleranely taking his leave of He killeth him. (6) And thereupon note time by caking his sease or the whole Army, went to his Tent, and with his dag-ger wounded himselfe vader the left pappe, whereof immediately he died, in the yeare of his age thirty se. immediately the uneu, in the year of this age that yields and daies of his raigne ninetic fine. He was of the flature but lowe, feeble in his feete, and vinto for great raigness. face without haire and woman-like his attire nice and delicate, and his life and death nothing at all confo-

nant oragreeable.

His excelline

Tacit.hiff. 2. c.s

His huge ex-

(4) His vnmeasurable gluttony was such, that the whole imploiments of his Captaines were to prouide him Cates, and that in fuch excesse, that two thouland dishes of fish, and seuen thousand of sowle, were served to his Table at one supper; and yet was he not assamed to commend his owne Temperance, in a fet Oration before the Senate and People, who well knew him to be guiltlesse of that vertue ; insomuch that Tacitus re porteth, in those few moneths wherein hee raigned he had wasted nine hundred millions of festerces, which amounteth to feuen milions, thirty one thousand, two hundred fiftie pounds sterling. And tosephus thinketh if he had lued longer, the whole reuenues of the Empire

VITELLIVS

THE ROMANS.

CHAPTER XI.



better Prince then Vitellius was.

Chap.tr. Vitellius Emp.

Hen certaine newes of othees death was brought vitellius, he presently affumed the name of Cefar, and administred the affairs of the Empire, with no leffe authoritie then the absolute Commander of the World. And of fuch accep-

tance was the accident. that he dedicated the dagger wherewith it was done, vnto Mars in his Temple at Colleyn, as the luckie infrument of his advanced Effate.

(2) Naturally ambitious he was, and now the fame the more inhaunced by his fitrengths of the Ger-

man Souldiers, and the flatteries of the Senate, which euer bare faile with the fairest winde. His entrance

Ann.Do.70.

into Rome was aboue measure magnificall, having the naked sword of Inlans Casar borne before him, with

found of Trumpers, Enlignes, Standards, Banners, and Flags, accompanied with an Armie worthie of a

Cap.1.

(3) His originall is diverfly reported: either framed according to the affections of his flatterers, or blafted with the tongues of depraning backe-biters; & both in extremes, extremely diagreeing. For 2 Enloging, as Suctonius writeth, deduceth his descent from Faunus King of Aborigines, and Lady Vitellia his wife, worshipped in many places for a Godde se. But Cassus Seuerus affirmeth him to bee sprung from no better Saeura affirmeth him to bee figuing from no better noote then a Cobler, and a common naughty-packe the daughter of a Baker. Howfocuer, true it is, that Lesius his father bare thrice the Confullify in Rome, was Promof of Syria, and in fach credit with the Emperour Claudia, that in his afforce and expedition into Britains, he had the whole charge of the Empire Common than the Commo committed vnto him:himselse in special fauour with Tiberius, and in vie for his strumpets: with Caim, for his Chariot-running: with Claudius, for his dice-plaiing : and with Nero, for his flatterie : vnto whole Ghoft in publike flew hee facrificed, and disposed the Emperiall affaires at the discretion of base Stage-

had not beene sufficient to maintaine his Gluttonic A Prince otherwise no way memorable, as being indeed without skill in profession of Armes, without counfell in matters of the greatest importance, com-monly drowned in furfet, and farre vnmeet to weld weighty affaires.
(2) These defects found ready vent to his Oppo-

fites, and gaue libertie of speech in the Assemblies of justs, and gaue increte or speech in the Assembles of their Estates: amongst whom Vespassan was held the only Morning-Starre, worthy to alcend on the secting of this darkend Sunne; vnto whom Lieinius Mutianus, Gouernour of Syria, was no auerle, Mareus Clunius Rufus of Spaine stood very well affected, and Tiberius Alexander of Aegypt for him the formost. Also with him sided the Kings Sohemus, Assistents, and Agrippa, with the beautifull Queene Berenice: vnto whom Ve fastan and his sonne Titus were well knowen, Gouer-

nours together in the Prouinces of Syria and Indea. (6) The first that did reuolt were the Illyrian Bands: to suppresse which, Vietlius sent vnto Vestius Bolanus Lieutenant of Britain, for aid of that Province, The first reuni hauing had good experience of their feruice in his warres before. As when Hordeonius Flaceus brought eight thousand Britaines to his quarrell against Othe. As also when Trebellius Maximus (formerly mentio ned) joined them to the German forces. Which last Tecit, in offiman had now againe refumed his former place in Britamie, without either Maiestie or Authoritie; but ra-therruled by way of intreatie, and at the discretion of

the Souldiers. (7) Vnto whom, this Vettius Bolanus succeeded for Deputie: a man of no great parts in warre, but for Deputie: a man of no great parts in warre, but more temperate, and not odious for any crime. His answer wno priellius was, that the Country of British flood not fo quiet, that he might fipare any number thence, the Smalkiers and Confidents haming their hands full, to hold all yuright. Neither (in truth) were they fall to his fide, but rather affected V-plane, whose reputation in warlike affaires was first gotten among them in pricing in the primes of College. amongs them in Britaine, in the targine of three though we find in Tacitus, that the Vexillaries of three Histories with Joseph amongst them in Britaine, in the raigne of Claudeus against the Allyrian Armic, wherein the flower and frength of all the Britaines are reported to have been, and that their fourteenth Legion came to his aide, in whom notwithstanding he had no good considence:

cone against it. (8) Finally, when he had raigned only eight mo-neths, and fine daies, as Iosephus accounteth, he was nettis, and the cases, as supprise accounted in the many listens. Blaine in most ignominations maner: for his hands the supprise of the manual field in the manual fie

but hearing the daily revolts of the Provinces, and the

Tacit.biff.s. c.m.

approch of Vestalian, was minded to refigue his dig-nitie vnto him, had not the out-cries of the people

Roscius Caline & Trebullius accul each other.

Souldiers, who carried themselues arrogantly, euena-gainst both; and as men that had rather be doing ill, then doing nothing, grew daily into mutinies. In these stirres Maximus finding himself vnable to withthere carries of aximus finding influent visions to write fland Rofins, the common affection fivaying on his fide) with his friends and followers entred Germanie in the quarrell of Vitellius, and ioined those British forces to maintaine his cause, who now presuming vpon his owne strength, and others his Confederates, ambitiously plaied the Prince, growne to that height euen of nothing.

their rentions.

(5) To hazard your vertues and valeurs for one

Manicitate, I hold dangerous, and needleffe it is,
that my life thould be prized at 6 decre a rategalready fortune and I have had fufficient experience each

dy fortune and I have had fufficient experience. " of others, and not the least in this my short time of glorie, wherein I have learned, it is harder to mo-derate affections in the excesse of felicitie, then ei-"the Graue, that you for your parts would have died for my fake, and I to faue your lives die voluntarie

VITELLIVS.

bush of haire, as condemned malefactors were vsed, to the end, that he might fee and bee feene of all, to fatisfie their malice and augment his miferies. Hee died aged fiftie feuen; and as hee is fet in the Table after Malmesburie, Huntington, and others our English writers, the ninth Calends of Iannarie: But yet in should seeme by his edicts set out against Astrologers, that commanded all of that profession to depart out of Rome and Italie before the first day of October, that

much about that time he should die: for Suetonius re-

cordeth, that the faid Aftrologers fet another against him in the words as follow. WEE GIVE WAR- Surimoita Field. NING BY THESE PRESENTS VNTO Sed.ie VITELLIVS GERMANICVS, THAT BY THE CALENDS OF THE SAID OCTO-BER HEE BEE NOT SEENE IN ANY PLACE WHERESOEVER. (9) Of flature he was exceedingly tall, his face red, and a fat paunch, and somewhat limping vpon

one legge, by ahurt formerly received.

FLAVIVS VESPASIAN.

CHAPTER XII.

Vespasian.



Petilius.

Ann.Do.72



O acceptable was the fall of this Prince, and fuch hopes reuiued at the entrance of his Succe Jour, as that all mens mindes were raifed to an expectation, that the glorie of the Empire, so much Eclipsed through the ciuill broiles of Galba, Otho, and this last

Vitellius, should now shine againe in the beautie of her Prieums, monto now mine againe in the Deautic of ner former libertie, by the defired gournement of aged Veftafian, whole integritie, valour, and fernice, had beene furticiently approach by his many Expeditions in all the Proninces wherein he had to doe.

His originall. Sustem, in vis. Velpaf-fell.t.

(2) His descent was from the Flautan family, and that but base and obscure : his Father called Titus flat but bate and concine: his Fauter cance 11100 Flating, his Mother Polla Vespassa, his Wife Domilia, and his Sonnes Titue, and Domitian, both Emperours succeeding after him. (3) In his yong yeares, hee serued as a Militarie

gric. fo.180;

Tribune in the Countrey of Thracia, and as Questor in the Provinces of Crete, and Cyrene: Vnder Claudiu the Emperour, he went forth into Germanie, as Lieutenant of a Band, and from thence was fent into Britannie, to be Leader of the second Legion, where the foundation of that greatnes whereunto after hee attained, was first laid: for as Suetonius hath written, therein with victorie hee fought thirty fet Battailes. and was also Conquerour of the Ile of Wight: whereby two mightie Nations were subdued to the Romanes, and twentie Townes wonne from the Britaines: for which exploits he had Triumphall ornaments, worthily assigned him by Claudius, whose owne Triumph, as Iosephus faith) was gotten without his paines, but by in the only prowelle of Vefpafian. After this, he gouer-ned Africke with fingular integritie and much, ho nour, and was laftly fent by Neve for his Vice-roy into Syria vpon this occasion.

(4) There had beene spread thorow all the East-(4) There had been expressed thorow all the Esp-parts, and of Prophecie and cited opinion conflantly be-leened, that it was appointed by the Definies, there foodld come out of Turic him that flould be Lord of the

whole world: which how it served for the Tewesto reuolt, or for the Romanes to apply onely vnto Vespasian, the event sheweth, which cannot agree to any oan, the cuent mewerth, while the power of chrift fefor, there, then to the perfon and power of chrift fefor, there borne, and throughout the whole world fill raigning: Yet vpon the confidence of fuch an accomplishment. the lewes revolted from the Romanes obedience, and flew their Prefident Sabinus by name, putting to flight Gallus, Lieutenant Generali of Syria, that came to his aide, and got from him the maine Standard, or Ensigne of the Eagle. This Nation was so populous and strong, that none was thought fitter to stay their and irrong, that hone was thought little to hay their attempts, then was ** espainar, who with great honour and approbation, reduced that **Province** vnto their former subjection, and there remained the short time proceedings there Iosephus writeth at large, vnto whom I must referre the vnsatisfied Reader.

(5) All which times, the civill stirres amongst the Romanes , gaue the Provinces occasion to attempt their former liberties; as did the Batauians, Germanes and French, with whom the Britaines also tooke hart to reuolt: Burthe first that sided with Vespasian, were two thousand expert Souldiers, drawne out of the Mesian Legions, and sent to aide Otho against Vitelhe giant Legions, and sent to and once against vice-lius; who marching as faire as Aquileia, they heard there of the certaine death of othe, and thereupon taking the aduantage of the offred opportunitie, with an uncontrolled libertie, committed many robberies and outragious villanies: In fo much, that fearing condigne punishment, they held it their best policie, to combine some speciall man by their fauours vnto them, whereby their facts might bee either quite smoothered, or lightly reprehended; neither in their opinions was any so gracious for desert or power, as was Velpasian, and therefore with one affent they proclaimed him Emperour, and wrote his name in their Banners, thinking themselues as worthy to make an Emperour, as were the Legionseither of Spaine, or Ger-

(6) Of the like minde were his owne Legions in Syria and Iurie, growne now so famous by the pro-secution of those warres, that they highly conceited An ancient an

his valour, and their owne fufficiencie to bee inferiour to none: And therefore all on the fudden at Cafarea, By his owne. loseph.bell. Jud. lib. 5.cap.10. both Captaine and Souldier falute him Emperour; which title when he refolutely gainfaid and refused, with drawne fwords they threatned his death. Thus then being brought into danger euery way, he sent his letters vnto Tiberius Alexander, Lieutenant of Aegypt, who likewife at Alexandria, prefently proclaimed him Emperour. (7) At this time Vettius Bolanus fent by Vitellius.

Tacit.invit.A.

was Lieutenant of Britaine, there ruling in a gentler and milder manner then was fit for fo fierce a Natione for the Souldiers having gotten head, by the remisse Gouernment of Trebellins Maximus, continued the same loosenesse in discipline still: and Bolanus in stead of awe and obedience, retained onely their affections and good wils. But most especially the short Raignes of these last Emperours (whose Beginnings were alto-gether imploied to satisfie their licentious pleasures, and latter times spent for the defense of their Lines from violent Deaths) gaue way to many imperfections of the Gouernors, and mildemeanours of the common Souldiers. (8) But when Vefpafian had affumed the Empire.

great Captaines and good Souldiers were fent into the

Proxintes, and into Britame, Petilius Cerealis, that had

formerly there made proofe of his feruice under Ne-

ro, in the warres against Boduo; and afterwards in o-

ther parts, as against the Gaules and Batauians, with

prosperous victories. The same of this man strooke

great terrour into the hearts of the wavering Britains

and amongst them of the * Brigantes, the most popu-

lous State of the whole Prouince: against whom at his

first approch he warred, and in many battles; and some

of them bloudy, the greatest part of these people were

wasted, and their Countrey came into the Romish

Petilius Cerealie Deputy in Bri-

(9) Whereby the glory of Cerealis might well have dimmed the fame of his Successor, had not Iulius Frontinus a great Souldier also faltained the charge with reputation and credit, in subduing the strong and Warlike nation the *Silures: where he had befide the force of the enemie to struggle with, the straits, and difficult places of rockes and mountaines, for acceffe.

South-Wales

(10) After whose government (no further Acts being mentioned) Iulius Agricola, who in Rome had beene Questor, Tribune, and Preter, and Lieutenant in Aquitania, was sent Generall into Britaine by Velpasian the Emperour, the yeere before his death. This man formerly had there ferued under the command of Petilius Cerealis, whereby hee had gained experience both of the People and Province ; and at his first approch gathered the Ensignes of the Legions, and other aids of the Auxiliaries, (who for that yeere attended an end of their trauels, because the Summer was almost spent) lest by protracting time, the violence of the Ordonices should further burst foorth, who a little before his entrance, had vtterly almost cut off a wing which lay on their Borders, the rest of the Countrey, as men defirous of Warre, allowing their example.

Against these Agricola addressed, who kept them-selves in places of aduantage, and durst not descend into indifferent ground. Hee therefore being himfelfe formoft, lead up his Armie to their encountere and feeonded with the courage of his trained Souldiers, put them all to fword and flight, whereby the whole Nation was almost quite deftroied.

(11) And now that his fame began to afcend, he knew well that with instance it must be followed, and as the first affaires had iffue, the rest would succeede; he therefore deliberated to conquer the Iland Mona, from the possession whereof Paulinus Suetonius was reuoked, by the generall Rebellion vnder Boduo. But in a purpose not purposed before, and ships wanting, the policie of the Captaine deuised a passage; for hee commanded the most choice of the Aids, to whom the shallowes were well knowen (and without whom

the Romans did almost attempt nothing) to put ouer at once, and fuddenly to invade them. These Britaines, after the vie of their Countrey manner, were most skilfull swimmers, and in swimming armed, able to gouerne themselues and horses. The wenams thinking themselues secure, for that no Ships were feene in their River, now thus fuddenly furprized, as men amazed, firmly thought that nothing could bee inuincible to them, who came with such resolutions to Warre, and therefore they humbly defired Peace, and yeelded the Ilandvnto Agricolaes devotion.

(12) Who now in these prosperous proceedings of his fortunes, fought not with any glorious relation or letters of aducrtiscments, to improoue and dug ment the greatnesse of his honour; but rather in seeking to suppresse his fame, made it shine more bright; and addressing himselfe for civill govern-ment, reformed many abuses in his House, his Campe, and in the whole Prounte, and those especially that most touched the poorer fort, as by moderating the increase of Tribute and Corne, wherewith the Britains were daily burdened : by the suppressing of which enormities (and the like) an honourable opinion of him was cuery where entertained, and a generall inclination vnto Peace, which partly by the negligence, partly by the auarice of former Gone, nours, had beene no leffe feared then Warre it felfe.

(13) And whereas the Britaines hitherto fill harried with Oppressions and Warres, had little leifure or will to apply themselves to things which accompany Peace, and are the ornaments of Ciuil and fettled Serieties, and therefore were prone vpon enery occasion to reuolt and stirre : to induce them by pleasures to quietnesse and rest, he exhorted them in private, and helpt them in publike, to build Temples, Houses, and Places of Affemblies, and common refort; and likewife provided that the formes of their Nobles should be in-structed in the liberall Arts and Sciences, commending the industrie, and preferring the wits of the Britaines before the Students of France, as being now growen curious to attaine the Eloquence of the Ro- The Britainer man Gentrie, (yea cuen the Gowne, the habit of peace and civilized: peaceable Arts) and to delight in gorgeous Buildings,

Banquets, and Baths. (14) And thus farre had Agricola proceeded before the death of Pelpalian, whose managing of the Imperiall dignitie was cuery way answerable to so high a place, and whose death was as much lamented, as his Vertues did furmount his Predecessours. But as tou-Vertues did firmount his Predecessors. But as tou-ching his miraculous cures of the Blind and the Lame, as the limite and the lame, and the lame, and the lame, and the lame, and our present Historie; so yet may they conuince the indurate Atheift, whose conscience is seared with the finne of incredulitie of the Miracles wrought by our bleffed Sautour Iefus Christ. For if the wifest Historians of those times have beleeved themselves, and left Records vpon their credit to following posterities; that by his touch onely hee cured a Lame-man, and with his Tack hiff 4.0.35 spittle opened the eies of the Blinde, being a mortall and finfull man ; shall it then bee doubted; that hee which knew no finne, neither receided the gift by meafure, either in power could not, or in act did not worke fuch Miratles as were the witnesses of his Godhead, and for fuch are recorded to confirme our faith?

But to our purpose. (15) When Veftaffan had lived threescore and nine yeeres; feuen moneths, and feuen daies, and had Vefrefen dieth nine yeeres, ieuen monerns, and ieuen daies, and mad raigned ten yeeres, as Eufebius faith, he died peaceably in his Bed; which no Emperour fince Augustus ever did, 40.3.14.13.0013 having beene a great Scourge and Instrument of God against the miserable Jewes; whose kingly race from Dataids line he lought by all meanes to extirpate, that of God against fo all their hopes and expectations might for ever be the tens.

Hee was of a middle stature, well set, and Hisendownson frongly compact: his countenance not altogether amiable, neither any wates deformed: a great fatoster of Learning, very Liberall, a luft, Wife, and Most Valitations, which was the counter of the counte ant Prince. TITVS

Suet, in vit. Pt-

Agricelaes mira

Suetan, in via, V e Spafi.Stll.4.

TITVS FLAVIVS VESPASIAN.

CHAPTER XIII.



Agricola Licur.

Ann.Do.81

Titus Emp.

Called the de-

tues. His imployment in former times.

Joseph bell Jud. lib. 6. & 7. He wonne Iera

His faulte.

Resently upon the death of this Emperour, Titus his eldeft fonne, firnamed Flauius Vespassan, without al contradiction was receiued and obeyed for his rightfull successor; aswell for that his Father in his life-

time had made him his Partner in the Empire, and at his death by Testament declared him his Heire:

as also for the generall opinion conceived of him, for as also for the generall opinion conceived of him, for his inbred goodnes and noble conditions, called & effectived the lawer during and dulght of monitone. In-deed of a most conceip profine the vars, & first inter-cent fast and very faire.

(2) His youth he spent in Militarie qualities, and ferued in Germanie and Britaine with exceeding commendations, and in lurie warred with the like glorie, which is nothing impaired by the learned stile of his

which is nothing impaired by the learned file of his Recorder 1sfephus, vno whom againe for these affaires I mult reterre the curious Reader.

(3) Ierusalem, with the slaughter of eleuen though and Ierus, euen on the birth day of his daughter, with such honour he wonne, that thereupon presents. with the nonour newonine, that the reupon pretent-ly he was faltured Emperour, even in the life time of Veftafian his Father: and from that day carried him-felte as his Affociate in the Empires for with him hee Triumphed, and with him he jointly administred the Censorship, his Colleague he was in the Tribunes authoritie; and his Companion also in seven Consulhips: In all which, though the Edict's went forth in his fathers name, yet were they penned by himfelfe. Of this his victorie ouer the Iewes, hee left the remembrance to posteritic by stamping upon the reuerse of his coines IVD. CAP, with pictures expressing his Triumph and the Iewes ouerthrow, which in the front of

this Chapter we have also placed.

(4) Somewhat he was blemished with the love of Berenice, the beautifull Queene of Jewrie, and much more with the murther of Aulus Cinna, only through ealousie conceiued of her : and whether that was the finne whereof at his death he repented, is vincertain when lifting up his eies to Heasen, hee complained why his Life should be taken from him, that excepting one offence descrued not to die. As himselfe in glorie wielded the Emperiall Scepter, so did his Sub-

stitutes gouerne the Provinces; at which time in Britaine, Agricola was President, and therein had spent almost two yeares under the raigne of Vespasian, in fuch maner as wee haue declared.

(5) In his third yeare, he discouered new Countries, and parts of this Handyet vntouched, or at least-wise not thoroughly subdued, as altogether vnsaints of that which was gotten, & sought to draw the conof that which was goiten, octought to that the con-fines of the Empire with a larger compaffe: therefore marching Northward to the Frith of * Tans, wasted all as he went, and without any relistance fortified the is thought. places with Caffles and Bulwarkes, which hee stored with fufficient prouision; where eueric Garrifon winwith unicent proutions where everify a win-tring, garded it felfe, and with the Summers feruice, uer repaired the Winters events, whereby evermore the Enemie went to the worfe, and his delignes profpered as himfelfe wished.

(6) The fourth Summer was spent in perusing and ordering that which he had ouer-runne. And if the glory of the Romane name could have permitted, or so beene satisfied, it needed not to have sought other limits of Britaine : for ' Glota and ' Bodotria, two ther limits of Britaine: for Gueta and Boauria, two armes of two oppoints Seas, shooting farre into the Land, and onely divided afunder by a narrow partition of ground, the same was both garded and fortified with Castles and Garrisons: so that the Romanes were absolute Lords of all the South-side, and had cast the

Enemie as it were into another Iland. (7) In this state stood this Province of Britaine at the death of Titus, whose short raign hath left no long matters of discourse, and his Acts greater under other Emperours, then when he was Emperour himselse; yet that little time wherein he gouerned, was with Inflice, Liberalitie and Love of all. A great Enemic he was to Interditing and Loue of all. A great Energie he was to promoters, Petringgers, and Exteriors of penull lawes, which Cancher-wormes of Common-wealths, and Cater-will be pulled to Common the Cancher of Indian to Court of Indians, the caused to be ewilipped and banished out of Rome. Louing and familiate her was to all his Subjects, and so desirous to give them fatisfaction, that his vivall faying was, No man ought to goe sad from the speech of a Prince. Mercifull he was to the poore, and so readie to do them good, that one day being fpent by him without any notable action, in forrow he said: I have quite lost a day. He died the thirteenth of September, the years from Christs Natiuitie eightie three, when he had raigned two yeares and two moneths, and in the two and fortieth yeare of his age, beeing poisoned by Domitian his Brother

The frich of

FLAVIVS

Chap.14. | Fla. Domitian Emp. THE ROMANS. Julius Agricola Lieut. |

FLAVIVS DOMITIAN.



Agricola Licat.

Ann.Do.83

Domitian

Emp.

Surton.in vit, De mit.∫edi.t.

His escaping killing.

ems of natural historie. Martial in his Enigram. Ro. Emp.fol.134. Succes. in vit, D mit.fcll.4.

Tecit is vit.

Omitian attaining the Empire by the death of Titus. (wrought by himselfe) as farre differed from him in vertuous conditions, as he was linked neere him in confanguinitie of blood: His youth not spent in Armes, with his Father and Brother, but inertiously

confumed in lasciniousnesse and penurie, (2) At Rome hee was in the Vitellian troubles, where, with Sabinus his Vncie, he had been murde-

red, had not the Sexton of the Capitoll hid him in his house, and in the habit of a Minister vinknowen, his houle, and in the nation of a Animuter vinknowen, thence escaped: which place afterwards, when hee came to be Emperour, he gorgeously built for a Temple to Impiter his supposed Preserver, and consecrated himselfe in the lap of that heathensish Idoll. Hee very speedily apprehended the hope of an Empire, for no fooner was his Father made Emperour, but that hee affumed the name of Cafar, and in Rome caried himselfe with such prodigalitie, and so liberally made promifcs of the Imperial Offices, that his father hearing thereof, faid, he maruelled why his some sent not one to thereot, lade, or marketea way not some ent not one to fuecced him in his place. But to diffemble and cloake his idle conceits, he gaue himfelfe to the fludy of Po-effe, (although with little affection, as the end prou-uce) for which notwithfanding both Piny and Mar-tial doe highly commend him, as it is the manner of that doe nightly commend him, as it is the manner or men to admire the very shadow of a good quality in Princes and great ones: and so doth Innend and Suc-tonian praise his braue minde, for his shewes in the Amphitheater, wherein not only men, but women alfo were brought, and forced to fight for their lines with wilde beafts: a cruell spectacle neuerthelesse, and

vnbeseeming to humanity.
(1) His first entrance into state and dignitie was neither greatly applauded nor gainfaid, hee feeming to carrie an equal mixture, and his vertues to hold le-uell with his vice. But Ambition now supported with Soueraignty, did quickly fet the scale onely for the worse side. The affaires of the Empire hee altogether neglected; and impatient of labour, or affection to Armes, daily retired into a private chamber or Gallery, wherein hee viually applied himselfe onely to catch Flies, and with the point of a bodkin to pricke them thorow: whereupon one being asked what company was with the Emperour, replied, Not so much as a flie. In which princely exercise let vs a while leave him, and returne to his better emploied Lieutenant

(4) Who now in the fifth yeere of his government tooke the scas, and with many prosperous conflicts subdued some adiacent places and people, before that time vnknowen, and furnished with forces

those parts of Britaine, which lay coasted against Ireland : to which Countrey also hee had a minde, and Agricals his opi would often say, that if the Romans were therin plan-ted, the Libertie of the Britaines would foon be bani-fled quite out of light, and out of hope.

(5) Now in the fixth yeere of his Prefecture, be-

cause a general rising of al the farther Nations beyond

caute ageneral rung or at the narrier exausus ocyonic Bodotris was feared, and paffages were all befet with power of the Enemies, he manned a Flect to fearch the creekes and harboroughs of the ample Region beyond it, and with his Armie marched further stockes and has North. The Britaines heereat, especially at fight of boroughs. their ships, much amazed and troubled, knowing now that the secrets of their Seas were all discouered. and no refuge left if they were ouercome, armed themselues with great preparation; and the Caledonians (a most puilfant and strong Nation in those parts) the formost; who, as challengers, braned the Romans fo boldly, and in such manner, that some counselled the Generall to retire his forces on this side Bodotria and rather of his owne accord to depart, then to bee

and rather of his owing accord to depart, then to bee repelled with filame.

(6) Agricola, whole courage could not be clou-ded with any daftardly feare, held on his intents; and hearing by prisoners taken, the manner of his Enemies proceedings, ordereth his host accordingly, diuiding his armie into three battles, and so lay entren unding its armse into three datties, and to lay entren-ched; the weakest whereof, containing the Ninth Le-gion, the Britainse by Night assaid, and having slaine the Watch, brake into their Campe with a furious noise: to whose recent, Agricola sent his Light horsemen, and a Band of foot, whose Enfignes and Armoun glittering in the appearance of day, so rebated the edge and further purposes of the Britaines, that they gaue backe to the gates of the Trench, where, in the straits the conflict was sharpe and cruell, till in the end they were forced to quit the field. Vpon this battle so manfully fought, and so famously won, the Romans prefuming that to their proweffe all things were now easie and open, cried to lead into Caledonia and to finde our the limits of Britaine, with a sourse of continued Conquests: and those which erewhile were to wary and wife, waxt forward and bold after the euent, and grew to speake bigly : such being the hard condition of Warres, that if ought fall out well, all challengea part, misfortunes are onely imputed to one. Contrariwife, the Britaines prefuppoling that not valour, but skill in the Generall by vling the occa-

Apricals Search

Children and Wiues into places of fafety, and fought by Affemblies & Religious rites to establish an Affeciation of the Cities together. And so for that yeere both parties did depart, incensed to further preparations.

fion, had carried it away, abated no whit their wonted courage, but armed their youth, transported their

(7) In the beginning of the next, Agricola fending his Nauie before, which by vnexpected spoiling

ly buyeth, daily feedeth, and is at charges with her

owne Bondage. We are the last to be conquered.

and therefore is our destruction most fought, as be-

ing the most vile in account: No Fields we have to

manure, no Mines to be digged, no Ports to trade

in, and to what purpose then should they reserve

vs aliue? Besides, the Manhood and sierce con-rage of the subject, pleaseth not much the jealous

Soueraigne: and this Corner being fo fecret, and out

of the way, the more fecuritie it yeeldeth vs, in them

The laft to bee

Manhood and

function of place

more fu pected of a icalous So-

ranne to their weapons, and rushed on furiously toward the Enemie. (10) The Britaines were marshelled in the high-

er ground, fitly both to the flew, and to terrifie: the first Battalion standing on the plaine, the rest on the ascent of the hill, knit and rising as it were one ouer another, the middle of the field was filled with clattering and running of Chariots and horsemen. Agrico- The number of cola feeing their number to exceede his, drew his battaile in length, and leaving his horse, advanced himselfe before the Enstenes on foote,

fides encountred with discharge of their darts, wherin ter.

Chap.14. Domitian Emp.

THE ROMANS. the Britaines, employing both art and valour, with their great fwords and little Targets, avoided the vo-

Saluft Lucullus Lieut. tria. And his Nauie with prosperous winde and suc-

R coherene (15) Thus, after many conflicts, about the space of one hundred thirty fix yeeres from Iulius Cafars Hiften.mage.Brit. first entrance, the vtmost limits of Britannie, and the Iles of the Oreades lying on the North fide of it, were by the valour and industrie of Iulius Agricola first dif-

couered, and made knowen vnto the Romans: and the Agricole. South part of the Ile, in the fourth yeere of the raigne of Domitian, (being the yeere of our Saujour eightie Ann. Dom. 86

fix) reduced into a full Prouince, the gouernment whereof was euer annexed and appropriate to the Distilled.55. Roman Emperours themselves, and not at the disposi-

(16) This state of affaires in Britannie, Agricola deriste which signified by letter, without any amplifying termes to Domition. Domitian the Emperour, who (after his manner) with a cheerefull countenance and greened heart, received the Newes, being inwardly pricked with feare and difdaine, that his late counterfet Triumph of Germanie (wherein certaine flaues bought for money, were attired; and their haire dreffed as Captines of that Countrey) was had in derifion, and fuftly skorned abroad

tion of the Senate, as other Provinces were

ceffe arrived at the Port . Trutulenfis.

whereas now a true and imperiall victorie of so many thousand enemies subdued and slaine, was currant and famous in cuery mans mouth: as being indeed a thing dangerous, that a prinate mans name should be exalted aboue his Prince. In vaine then had hee suppressed the studie of Oratorie, and other worthy politicke Arts, thereby to keepe downe other mens reputation, if he should in Military glory be diffeiled by another. And to be a good Commander of an Army, was to be aboue private estate, that being a Vertue peculiar for a Prince, and therefore not lightly to be paffed ouer. With these and the like incentiues his minde was tormented; yet thought he it best to dissemble his malice, vntill the heat of his glory, and loue of his fouldiers were fomewhat abated. And fore or in studiusers were outcomes a outco. And for forthwith he commanded for Agricals, Trimbhall agricult rect. or are the formally conferred in lice of Trimbhall she yet remaining in charge, from whence, with the like policicallo, hee was shortly displaced. For Syria, by the death of Atilins Rufus, lay destitute of a Lieutenant; and that place rescrued for Men of great qualitie, Domitian gaue

foorth was purposed for Agricola, and sent him both

his Patent and Successor into Britaine; who thereupon

deliuered up the Prouince in a peaceable effate vinto

Salustius Lucullus, and returned to Rome. (17) Where the life of Domitian was now grown nmeasurable vaine. The surname Germanicus he affumed to himfelfe, for some small service therein done. The Moneths September and October he changed into the names of Germanicus and Domitianus, because that in the one hee entred his Empire, and in the other was borne. He caused his Statue to be made in gold, and commanded, himfelfe to be called Gon. His cruelty every way matchable to his pride. The Senatours and Nobles vpon small surmises hee murdered : many new tortures hee invented : Confifcations and Banishments, were fauours, not punishments. Amongst all which, the Christians bare a part, whose Second Perfecution this Tyrant raised and began. The great Euangelist Iohn hee banished into the Ile of Patmos, where hee receined his Revelations from Iefus Eufen Ect bill Christ, appearing vnto him in no lesse Maiestie then 160-3-capats Daniel before time had seene him in his Visions, and Apocal.1.9. both (after a fort) in one and the fame manner: their Daniel to. Visions alike, and almost to the like end : For as Daniel faw a Lion, Beare, Leopard, and Monfler with Tenhorns

persecute the Iewes Gods people, and to fall before the Stone cut without hands, which brake into powder

the Image of their Tyrannicall Gouernment, to give

place to the peaceable Birthand Kingdome of Christ

thed like a Lion, footed like a Beare, spotted as the

Leopard, and horned for number and power with the

Monster, retaining their Tyrannie in raising Perfecuti-

ons in the Church of Christ, and clouding with Idolatry Vu 2

io Iohn faw one Beaft compacted of these foure, mou- Apocal. 13:2.

of theirs upon them, wherewith they were both galled and fore wounded. Agricola feeing his men thus ftoutly relifted, tooke another course: for, spying the aduantage, he commanded three * Batauian Cohorts, and two of the b Tungrians, to presse forward, and bring the matter to handy strokes and dint of sword, athing which (in respect of their long service) they were very expert in, but contrariwise to the Britaines very prejudiciall, by reason of their little Bucklers, and huge fwords, being blunt pointed, and no waies fit for the close in fight. This command advantaged the Romans much ; for these with the pikes of their Bucklers, when they came to deale blowes, so mangled the faces of the Britaines, that they were not able to stand before them; and the rest, gathering courage vpon emulation of these, ascended the hill, bearing downeall that was in their way, fo that many halfe dead, and some wholly vntouched, were ouer-passed and left for hafte of winning the field. In the meane while the Chariots mingled themselues with the battle of footmen, and the troopes of horsemen began for to flie: who albeit they had lately terrified others were now diffressed themselves, by the vneuennesse of the ground, and thicke rankes of the enemy, and were forced to fight standing still, and by the maine weight of horses to beare downe one another The wandring Wagons also, and masterlesse horses, as chance or feare did guide them, ouer-bare many times their friends, and thwarted their way that me

lue of the Romans, showring down withall great store

(12) The other Britaines that kept the hill, and had leifure to behold the manner of fight, beganne to come downe by little and little, and fought to compaffe the backe of the enemie ; which intent Agricola foone preuented, by fending foure wings of Horfmen, retained purposely about him for sudden dispatches and chances of warre. These so fiercely assailed them. that a most sharpe and bloody battle ensued, wherein the Britaines on each fide were beaten downe and flaine, notwithstanding many of them shewed both valour and reuenge euen to the end : the rest disbanded, turned their backes, and fled towards the defert : whose pursuit was followed vntill Night, and fulnesse of blood made an end of the chase.

The Romans loffe.

* Attion per-chance,

(13) Of the Romans fide were flaine (if wee must credit their owne friends) onely three hundred and fortie persons, and of them, one of extraordinary note and account, Aulus . Articus, Captaine of a Cohort, who vpon a youthfull hear, and fiercenesse of his horse, was carried amidst his enemies. Of the Britains fell ten thousand, and their designes so deseated and broken, that as desperatemen, they for sake their houfes, and in despight set fire on them themselves : the hurt persons they carrie and draw with them, and call them that are unhurt, hoping to be relected by them. One while they chuse out holes to lurke in, for their liues fafetie; eftfoones in great hafte forfake them, as doubting therein their owne securitie. Dispersed afunder, they lament, and attend death: affembled together, expostulate of their meanes and life : one while conceining a glimmering of some small hope, another while deiected with vtter despaire : Sometimes at the fight of their dearest beloued, mooned to pitie; but much oftner stirred to rage, for reuenge and many of them, euen by way of compassion, slew their dearest Wines and Children, to rid them from their future miseries.

(14) Agricola having made every where a defolation and filence, withdrew his Armie towards the * Horrestians, where taking hostages for their fidelitie, fent the Admirall of his Nauy to faile about the North Coasts of Britaine, who with strength and store tooke the Seas, their terrour gone already before, himfelfe with easie and gentle iournies disposed his foot and horsemen in their Wintring places, and planted Garrifons vpon the Borders betweene Glota and Bodo

The Britaines

The Britaines

igna, Agricola sendeth to discouer the North coasts,

(11) In the first affault before the loyning, both The first encoun

Theff. 2.8.

the brightnesse of his Word: which shall bee cast into the Lake of fire and brimstone, when Christ shall binde up Satan, and by his appearance abolish the

purto death. Suetan. in vit, Do-

Man of Sinne.

(18) Among many others flaine by Domitian, Salustius Lucullus whom he had made Lieutenant Generall of Britanie was one, and the onely cause is repor-ted to bee, that hee had deuised and made certaine Speares or Launces for scruice, which hee caused to be called Lucullians after his owne name; which was a matter held very suspitious by Domitian, who thought euerie memorable act done by another, did plucke a feather from his plume. And in these courles continued so long, that lastly hee grew odious to all, even to his nearest friends and followers which himselfe had raised, who, together with his Wife, conspired his death.

(19) The chiefest in the Action was Stephen, a Procurator and Steward to Domicilla his Empresse,

who faining himfelfe lame of the left arme, in deline-ring him a fcroll containing the names of the con-death, and their ring him a teroit containing the names of the con-fpirators, froke him into the bellie with his fword, & death, and the treacherie the rest comming in, with seven wounds made an end of his life; whose death was so acceptable to the se-nate, that they digracefully abused his carcale, cast downe his scutcheons and Images, and forbad all maner remembrance of him; albeit some of the Souldi- The Souldiers en ers asmuch stormed, secking to reuenge his death, raged. and canonized him for a God.

(20) Of stature he was tall, his complexion faire, his countenance modest, his head verie bald, his eies red,full,great and dimme, of a comely forme, onely his bellie bearing out, his legges small, and his foote somewhat short. He died the eighteenth day of sepformewhat more. He died intergrittentiating of the raigne. raigne, tember, aged forty flue, when hee had raigned fifteene Rufel. East Col. 1. 13. yeeres, the yeare of our Lords incarnation ninetie 49.18. eight, with whom both Tacitus and Suctonius end



The Relifters of the Romans proceedings in this our Iland of Britaine, in the daies of this Emperour Domitian, for these Southerne parts, was Aruiragus, as from Iuuenal wee haue faid ; and in the Northerne Caledonia, was Galgacus their Captaine; whose Coines, as Remaines and Monuments of their neuerdying fame, wee haue heere againe inferted.





CHAPTER XV.



Ann.Do.98.

Nerua Emp.



Itherto haue wee pursued the fuccessions in the British monarchie, together with the Inuasions, attempts, and fucceffe of affaires, for the Conquest of this Iland, under the first twelue Emperours of Rome: And that from such wri-

ters, who though they were the most fauourable Registers of things done by the Romanes, yet had they best meanes to know, and publish their Histories with warrantize of truth. But after the death of Domitian died many Records, and the Provinces proceedings (especially those that most concerne Britaine) lest vncertaine; and therefore are

neither with the like largenesse prosecuted, nor with the like authoritie auouched. And were it not that these Romane Emperours succeeding, did onely continue the succession of our British Monarchs, many of them might be quite omitted, as neither themselves, nor deputies, allies, or enemies once spoken of concerning our affaires, and the Gouernement of this Proumce, during those times so maimed and defectine (in respect of any warrantable relations) that hardly a method can bee observed to the fitting of a continuall Historie. Yet as we finde it, let vs haue libertie to deliuer it, and rather to expose Truth in the meane attire that Time hath left her, then by difguifing her Platarch in the in richer roabes to abuse the World, and make her life of Peritin. seeme nought else but a counterfeit, as Plutarch in the life of Pericles hathcomplained,

Chap. 16. Traian Emp.

THE ROMANS. (2) Domitian therefore thus made away, Cotreius Nerua, a prudent, honourable, and aged person was

elected Emperour by the Senate, assisted by Petronius Secundus, Captaine of the Pratorian Armie, and Par-

thenius chiefe Chamberlaine, and one of the Murthe-rers of Domitian. His birth was noble, and of Italy in the Citie Narnia, and of the Province Vmbria: ruling so well as he may be esteemed too good a Prince.

morial to be ere-ded for Marius a Conful of Rome. Polychr.lib.4.c.12

ther of Marius. Chap. 6 Jeff, 12.

long to continue in so bad an age. (3) What Lieutenants under him were in Britain or vnder his Successor Traian, I find not in Record: but our English Writers from the Arch-Deacon of Monmouth, bring a fuccession of British Kings, and amongst them Marius, who conquered Rodorick, King of the Piets accompanied with the Scots, whole Trophie erected neere vnto Carleill, remained a long time after, bearing the inscription of his victorie: and after him his sonne Coilus brought up in Rome all the time of his youth, retained their fauours, and paid them tribute without constraint. Albeit by Innenal, it seemeth that Aruiragus the father of Marius, a great re-Arwiraem the fafifter of the Romanes, liued in the raigne of Domitian, as hath beene touched, vnleffe you will fay, that Meurigus and Arniragus was the same Marius, as a worthy Antiquarie affirmeth. But through these vncertaineties and disagreements occasioned by the filence of better Authors, our Histories rest doubtfull, and so must we cleave them, returning to finish vp briefly the Raigne and Life of this good Faster and of Bits. vp briefly the Raigne and Life of this good Emperour

(4) Who having reformed many enormities, and Alfoin an old (4) Who naung rerorme many enormites; and provided in the provided in the profit of the prefixed Coinc, minted by authorite of the Senter, in eternall memorie of his good neared all from but before the provided in the prov nifhment the Christians severally dispersed, and surred banishment the Christians them to enjoy the freedome of their profession. At Dien Coff lib. 8. which time John the Euangelist returned from Path-mas, (wherein he had beene confined) vnto Epheliss, diem Rathmas, Citic in Afia the leffe. And Nerua raigning only one E-feb. 10. 124.18. yeare, foure moneths and nine daies died (of a passionate anger conceined against a Senator) in the yeare Dim (1961). of Christ his incarnation ninetic nine, the twentie seuenth day of Ianuary, & seuentie fixth of his own age.



TRAIAN.

CHAPTER XVI.



Ann.Do.99

Traign raifed the

Dio.Caff.lib.68.

Traian Emp.



which moued Nerua in his

life time to adopt him into fo high a calling, and the whole Sepate after his death ioifullie to confirme his Election, and so often to honour him with the title of the Most Excellent Prince, in

published ediciations, as on the Coine aboue.

(2) Hee railed the Romane Empire vinto the very higher pitch of glory, and spread the power of their Command into the largest circuit that ever before or fince hath beene possessed. For the Kingdome of Da-eia hee subdued; Armenia, Parthia, and Mesopotamia made fubicet; Affria, Persia, and Babylon conquered; passed Tigris, and stretched the confines of the Roman Empire vnto the remotest dominions of the Indies, which neuer before that time had heard of the Roman Name. And indeed, if wee looke vpon his politicke managing of the government, he may feeme (in com-

feruer alfo of Iuftice, infomuch that when he invested

any Pretor, in giuing him the Sword, he commanded

him to vie the fame euen against his owne person, if

he violated Law or Equitie. But yet against the good

parison of others) a right worthy, memorable and louely Prince, of much affabilitie, and familiaritie cuen with his inferiours, and of fuch cariage towards his Subjects, as he himselfe would wish his Prince(he said) to vie towards him, if he were a Subject. A great ob-

Nto Nerus succeeded Vul-Christians the vice ficture or boots: I may necessive their Third Perfectation, wherein Ignatise and many other worthy Saints of God, received the Crowne of Marryrdome, in fuch cruel manner, as that his other Christian. pius Traian in the Roman Empire : borne necre vnto Senill in the Territories of Spaine: of a noble familie. but was much more ennobled in himfelfe for his princely endowments,

purpose are yet extant. (3) The lewes in his time rose vp in armes against the semiles, and in Cyrene, Aegypt, and Cyprus, flew agreet number: against whom Tratarsent his Captings with the confidence of the confid taines with forces sufficient, and in divers parts of the Empire put the lewesto death, in such infinite numbers, as that Maffacre is accounted the greatest Execution that ever had been e in the world, Godfuffring this their punishment to light vpon them for their ingressed that

lification whereof, he was compassionately intreated by Plinius Secundus his Tutor; whose Epistles to that

vertues are much clouded by that taxation: for mol-

fidelitie and obstinacic against his Christ. (4) Finally, after his Conquests in the East, returning towards Rome, at Selencia in Asia the lesse himselfe was conquered by the stroke of death, by a fluxe the feuenth day of August, after he had raigned nineteene yeeres, fix moneths; and fifteene daies, the yeere of our Redemption one hundred and eighteene, and of his age fixtie foure: whose ashes brought to Rome were inclosed within the Crowne of a goodly Pillar

forty foot in height. (5) Of flature he was bigge, of complexion fivar-thie, thinne of haire both head and beard, a hooked Traians postealnose, brode shoulders, long hands, and a pleasant eie; whose lively Image was borne in Triumph after his death, and that in most glorious and pompous manner, in celebration of his great renowne and fame attained in his life.

wrought of one intire flone, containing one hundred

(6) How filent soeuer writers haue beene for this Emperours affaires in this our Iland, yet it is to be thought that vnto this, as wel as vnto other Provinces, both Propretors, Lieutenants, Presidents, Pretors, and Doth represent, Leutenants, Prefacents, Prefers, and Preconful were fent, and euery Citie to haue their municipall Magistrates. The Pretor that yearely proclaimed solemne Sessions, wherin himself sate aloft you a high tribunall seate, and guarded with his listors a-bout him in great estate, did execute his authoritie throughout his owne iurisdiction, and determined all causes brought before him, where rods and axes were prepared for the common people, that were enforced to receive a new Ruler everie yeare. And furely as this yoke of bondage was grieuoully borne of enery *Pronince*, vpon whose necke, it was imposed & laid: So the Britaines underwent the weight of that subjection with such vnwillingnes, that in the time of this Traian, they revolted and rebelled, though prefently suppressed, as it is cuident out of Spartianus.

(7) The care that this good Emperous had for the weale of his Subiects is projected by his projidence in making waies paffageable from place to place, whereof remaine many testimonies by those his Caufeies drawne with wonderfull diligence, euen thorow the whole Iland, which now, though difmembred and cut in pecces by the Countrie people, wherethorow they passed, yet doe many remnants thereof

remaine, especially in pastures, or by-grounds out of the rode way, with bankes so high, that euidently they shew themselues. Of these Causeies Gallen writeth they inew tenements. Of these larger usuare winters as followers: The water (latth he) Trains repared, by faung with some or raing with bankes cast up facts peece; Galmik g.a.g. of them as were mail and may; by specing up and rid. **Method of the major were rough and may; by specing up and rid. **Method of the major were rough and energrowne with bushes and can glack as were rough and energrowne with bushes and briers: by making bridges ouer Rivers that couldnot bee waded thorow : where the way seemed longer then needed, by cutting out another shorter : if any where by reason of some steepe hill, the passage were hard and vneaste, by turning it aside thorow easier places: now in case it was haun-ted with wilde beasts, or lie waste and desert, by drawing it thence thorow places inhabited, and withall laying levell all uneuen and rugged grounds.

Along these Causeies the Emperour caused to bee set little pillars or Columnes, with numerall Characters cut in the, to fignifie how many miles was from place to place. Of these Sidonius Apollinaris writeth thus:

> Antiquus tibi nec teratur agger; Cuius per spatium satis vetustis Nomen Cafareum viret columnis.

Breake not the ancient Causeies strong, Whereon the Columnes standalong, Nor names of Cafars doe not wrong.



HADRIAN.



Cneus Trebel. Lieut.

An.Do. 119.

Hadrian

Emp.



Fter the decease of Traiane, his Nephew Ælius Hadrianus, by the confent of the Armie, who fwore to him obedience, was proclaimed Emperour, the Senate likewise confirming their choice, as beeing a man indued with gifts both of Art and Nature,

answerable to the fortunes of his Estate. His birth was of Spaine, in the Citic Italica, necre vnto Cirill, where Traian was born, his Father Noble, and his Mother in Cales descended of an honourable flocke.

(2) A great Mathematician he was, skilfull in A. rithmeticke, Geometrie, Aftronomie, and Indicious Aftro-logie; learned in the Greeke, and Latine Tongues; in which languages he wrote both Poefie and Profe: well feene in Physicke, and knew the Vertues of Hearbes, Rootes, and Stones: A fingular Musician both for Theorie and Practifes and could both limme & carue with approbation of the skilfull: but about all, is the admirable report of his Memorie, who neuer forgot any thing that he cither read or heard.

(;) His first businesse for the Empire, was rather a care to hold fecurely what was gotten, then by enlarging the bounds to endanger the Best and there-

fore lessening the Compasse, and bettering the strength, he planted his forces along the River Exphrates, and assigned that for the Easterne limits, leauing out India, Armenia, Media, Assertia, and Mesopotamia, as Countries too remote for the Romans to hold to their profit. By which his doings other Provinces tooke occasion to revolt, thirsting after Libertie, and among others the Britaines (as ever most alteration, impatient of Seruitude) attempted alterations, whole Impatient of Serundae Jacompue and automs, who is Licutenant Cnew Tribellius (Successiour to Iulius Agri-Lieutenant Cneue Tribellius (Successors to sauss Agra-eda) could not fo gouerne his Seudders which were growne out of dicipline, and by long rest faire out growne out of dicipline, and by long rest faire out growne out of dicipline, and by long rest faire out was restumed. of Order, but that they fell at variance among themselues, and disquieted the most peaceable of the Bri-taines by their licentious maners.

(4) The Northerne Inhabitants, that were more at libertie, and imboldened by their Bogs and Rocks vnacceffable, fet them felues to withfland their wrogs, to whom also many others ioined their affections and forces, whereupon some bickering insued with loff and bloods to reprefle which Julius Stutenus wish falls with source was fent by Hadrian: but ere hee could fettle the Commotion, was againe recalled and imploied in Syria, to floorer[fe the Twith whealing.] suppresse the Iewish rebellion.

the present the rengent continuing, the Empe-(5) Their litters here full continuing, the Empe-rour tooke it to be of flich importance, that he refol-ued in Perfor to address for prisantel, which he per-formed in his third Consulthip, the years of Christ's research.

(bap.17. Hadrian Emp.

TANNIE.

Licinian Pri Ga

Britaine, Hill.marn.Rrit.

composed, as appeareth by his money in the en-trance of his lite, fixed in memorie of this vnderta-king: With their hee encountred the Northerne

Riders, recoursed fuch holds as they had taken,

and forced them into the Woodes and Mountaines,

whither the Romane Horsemen without danger

could not purfue them. But perceiuing the Aire too

fharpe for the Romanes conflictation, and the Soile

rough and of lesse profit then the rest, shee made a Fortification or strong Wall of Earth, which (as Lampridus saith) did continue on the West from Ituna,

(that is, the Riuer Eden in Cumberland neere Car-

leil) vnto the River Tina, or Tine at Newcastle in

Northumberland in the East, and was no leffe then

Eightie miles in length. This Wall (laith he) was made

of stakes driven deepe into the ground, and bound

together in the maner of an hedge, and with Turfe and Earth intermured as a Rampire or Balwarke to defend the Incursions of the wilder Britaines and ill

Neighbours that daily molefted the peace of the Ro-manes. Hadrian his worke finished, and the Province re-

duced to the obedience of the fatal Gouernesse Rome,

at whose feet he had laid agains the name of Britaine,

as appeareth in the first Reuerse of his Coine, placed in

the fronture of this Chapter) triumphantly returned

to Rome, and for his honourable aduenture and Ex-

pedition had his name inscribed upon his Coine with this addition: THE RESTORER OF BRI-

(6) Neither after this seemed the Southerne Bri-

taines greatly to contend, but patiently bore the yoke

offubication, which Time and Custome had made leffe painfull, the rather, for that they faw themselues

lette paintuit, tie rather, for that they law memicines to fland in neede of the Romanes helpe againft the in-roades of their owne Countrinnen, whole crueltie was now as much feared, as in former times the Inuation

of Strangers: whereupon they conformed themselues more willingly to the Romane Lawes, both in Marti-

all and Civill affaires: which were then principallie

directed by Licinius Prifeus, who had beene not long

before imploied by Hadrian in the service of Jewrie.

and was at this present Lieutenant of Britannie.

THE ROMANS. Licinius Priscus Lieut. 210 One hundred twentie foure, attended on by three Legions: of which, his Army for this exploit was then

(7) This 1ewish warre happened in the eighteenth yeere of the Raigne of Hadrian, who fuddenly affailed and flew where they came, both Romaines & Christians: for reuenge whereof, besides an infinite

number of them flaine and tortured, their Citie Ierufallow was also raced even to the ground, and another built, but not altogether in the iame place, and the name therof changed to A E L I A: the I they wtterly built, but not altogether in the same therof changed to A E L I A: the I they wtterly

name therot changeuto A E L L A : the LEDES vicely banished thence, and(as Arifine Pellaus writeth) not lawfull for them to look towards that Citiz nor Soile, livestoped with the Chinks or Cravice of a days: And discussions to discussions to the contract of the contract no not through the Chinke or Creuice of a dore: And caufed a Swine to be engrauen, a Beaft by the Law ac-

counted most vicleane, and by them abhominable. the lemes, to was hee gratious and fauourable to the

Chriftian, and the rather at the request of Quaratus, a Disciple (as is supposed) of the Apostics, who wrote who him concerning them; and of driftides a learned Philosopher of Athens, who made an Apologie for their defence; so that the Persecution then in practice was forbidden by Hadrian in a publicke Edict; who (as Lampridius writeth) was minded to haue built a Temple to the service of Christ, had not some disswaded him therefrom. In extremitie of ficknes he defigned Cafar, Lucius Alius, whose Coyne wee haud hercunder expressed. A man deare to this Emperour, if we consider at how great a rate hee bought for him the acceptation of the Commons and Militarie men: And how short a time the blaze of that Honour continued : for hee died so soone, that Hadrian himselfe

vpon the Gate that leaderh towards Beth-lehem, hee

(8) But as this Emperour was exasperated against

had wont to fay, Ostendent terris hunc tantum fata, nec oltra

(9) When hee had raigned in great honour and loue the space of one and twenty yeeres, sue monothing the space of one and twenty yeeres, sue monothing the space of one and twenty yeeres, sue monothing the space of the sp tenth of Iulie, of a dropsie: which maladie so tor-mented him, that willingly he refused all sustenance, and languished away through faintnesse. Hee was of personage tall, and very strong, of a good complexion and amiable countenance, wearing the haire of his head and beard long, and died aged fixty two, the yeere of our Lord God, One hundred thirtie nine.

Vnder this Emperour M. F. C.L. PRISCVS LICINIVS, was the Proprætor of Britannie, and imploied in the Journey of Jurie with Hadrian; as appeareth by this antique Inscription in a broken Marble

M. F. CL. PRISCO. ICINIO. ITALICO. LEGATO. AVGVSTORVM PR. PR. PROV. CAPPADOCIAE

PR.PR. PROV. BRITANNIAE LEG. AVG.

LEG. IIII. GALLICIAE. PRAEF. COH. IIII. LINGONVM: VEXILLO, MIL. ORNATO, A. DIVO. HADRÍANO, IN EXPEDITIONE IVDAIC,

Q. CASSIVS. DOMITIVS, PALVMBVS.

Ýуī

ANTONINUS

Hadrianus of an

CHAPTER XVII.





ANTONINVS PIVS.

CHAPTER XVIIL



Lollias Vrbi cus Lieut.

An.Do.139

The Northern

Adrians Wall

Inline Capital

Antonin, Pius

Emp.



Ext vnto whom fucceeded Antoninus, (for his many vertues) furnamed the Pious : and by the Senate, Father of his Countrey. This man did not onely equall his Adopter and Predeceffours, in wisdome and other princely qualities, but was also compared,

for his peace and policie, vnto Numa Pompilius the lecond King of Rome, who for his renowned government, is so famously in their Histories recorded. His ment, is to tamouny in their Finiones reconce. First birth was in Lombardy, the fon of Aurelius Fulaius, and Nephew to Titus Aurelius Fulaius, that had beene Conful, and held other Offices of dignity and State. The whole time of whole Raigne was fo spent in peace, that small remembrances remaine of any martiall affaires:yet fuch as we finde in Britannie we will deliner.

(2) At his first entrance into the Empire, about the yeere of Christ, One hundred thirtie nine (as appeareth by the money minted in memorie of the reduction of Britaine) the Northerne Britaines in that part of this Ile beganto flirre, and made inroads into the Province, notwithstanding the Rampire or Wall that Adrian had made. Against whom Lollius V rbicus Lieutenant heere under Antoninus, brought his power, and with some skirmishes put them backe : taking from the Brigantes part of their Land, as a Mulf, for the walfet they had done to the Genomians, a Province adioining vnto the Brigantes, whose people had put themseluses under the Emperous protection. Which done, he repaired the Wall with stronger Fortifications; or (which is more probable) raifed vp another not farre from the same, to double the defense: for (saith Inlieu Capitolinus) Lollius the Legate to Antoninus oner-comming the Britaines, built another surfe Wall to diside the Prosince, and to impeach the incursions of the barba-rous. Notwithstanding the honour of this service (as is testified by the ancient Panegyricke) was (by one Fronto) attributed wholly to Antoninus the Embe-

Fronto) actionated whenly to Anionnum the Emperior himlesse; who, although absent and in his Palace at Rome, yet stituting as it were at the Helme of a Ship, did command and direct the enterprise, and therefore had right to the glory thereof. This Wallasso (as M. Clarenceaux coniectureth, having feene it so tracted in an ancient Chorographicall Chart) was drawen from the River Tine vnto Carleill-but Time and Warre have vorne it now away.

(3) In the meane while a new infurrection was indled among the Brigantes, that annoied some of the Romane Confederars. But by the diferetion of the Generall, it was quenched before it came to flame : for pon the first rumour of the Reuolt, Lollius marched thither with part of his Armie, commanding Seises

Saturnius, Admirall of the British Fleet, to waffe vpon the North of the Iland, both to defend the Coast from danger, and also vpon occasions to further the Landferuice, if need were: by which meanes, the Brigante. were easily reduced to obedience, euen by the prefence onely of the Lieutenant, who for his good seruice done in Britaine, during the short time of his imploiment there, obtained the furname Britannicus. This may by the first figure in the face of this Chapter (being in the third Confulfhip of this Emperour) be coniectured to have hapned in the yeere of Christ one hundred forty one; and by inscription of the last Coine in that ranke it is manifelt that there was some other expedition against Britaine the yeere following.

(4) I cannot omit, though not directly pertinent (4) Teannor omit, mough nor ancesty present to our purpose, the care that this good Emptrous get actioner plan is considered of the difference and perfect the constitution of the Chestian. ans (who no doubt by his bounty enjoied much tranquillitie heere in Britaine also) in whose desense hee wrote to his Deputies in Asia, and published an Edict against their Accusers, the effect whereof (from Eu-

Eufab.Reclef, Hift

The Edict of As

ebius) is this: (5) The Emperor Cafar Marcus Aurelius Antoninus Augustus, Armenicus, Pontifex Maximus, teninus for pr din fifteene times Tribune, thrice Conful, vnto the Com-Chidliam. mons of Asia lendeth greeting. I doubt not but the Gods themselues have a care that wicked persons " shall bee brought to light : for it much more doth appertaine vnto them, then it doth vnto you, to punish such as refuse to yeeld them worship. But this course which you take doth confirme them whom you perfecute, in this their opinion of you, that you are impious men, and meere Atheifts; "whereby it commeth to paffe, that they defire in the quarrell of their God rather to die, then to yeeld to the wils of fuch as you are, and to embrace your forme of Religion. Let it not seeme vnseasonable to call to your remembrance the Earth quakes, which lately happened, and which yet are to your great terrour and griefe; because I understand that in fuch like accidents you cast the enuy of such, common misfortunes vpon their (boulders, whereby their confidence and truft in their God is much the more increased: whereas you being still ignorant of the true causes of such things, doe both neglect the worship of the other Gods, and also banish and perfecute the service of the Immortall God, whom the "Christians doe worship, and you persecute to the "death all the embracers of that Profesion. In the behalfe of these men many of the Provincial Presidents have written before vnto our Father of famous memory: to whom he answered, that they should not bee molested, vnlesse they were proued to haue practifed Treason against the Emperiall State: and

An.Do.162. Inline Capitol.
Lucius Verus
cholen Cafar.

Marcus Au

relius Emp.

(2) This man chose to him for his Affociate in the Empire, Lucius Verus, the fonne of Lucius Ccionius Com modus, whom Pius had adopted (but died before him) and therefore this Verus was respectively commended unto Aurelius; betwixt whose na tures and conditions was as much oddes, as betwixt Day and Night The one very moderate, louing, and industrious, the other proud, carelesse and cruell: the fruits whereof, the poore Christians felt, whose chiefest oillers, Polycarpus, Bifbop of Smyrna, and Iustinus Martyr, an excellent Philosopher, with infinite more, were put to most cruell deaths; and by him the

ourth perfecution of Gods Saints was be-

gun: whose licentious and bloodie

ife, lafting in Authoritie the space of

gular wit, verie learned and eloquent; a great louer of Husbandrie, peaceable, mercifull and bounteous; in the last of which vertues, he so much exceeded; that thereby he set going whollie his owne private estate & demaines, whereat when his Empresse much repined he told her, that when hee vndertooke the Title and State of an Emperour, he then did forgoe the interest and proprieties of a private Person: meaning that a Prince is not much to respect his private wealth, so as the publike wealth and welfare of the State may bee advanced. In fine, this large Euloge and praise is faftened on him, that neither in his youth he did anie thing rafhly, nor in his age any thing negligently: In which honourable course, having raigned twentie and two yeares, (some say twentie three) seuen moneths, and twentie fixe daies, he died of a feuer at Lorium the feuenth of March, the yeare of his life feuentie fiue, and of Christ one hundred fixtie two.



MARCUS AVRELIUS.

CHAPTER XIX.



Calpharnias Agric. Lieut



Chap.19. Antoninus Pius Emp.

to procure vpon the other.

iects life, then kill a thousand Enemies.

Antenina perfor

vnto me; to whom I have answered with like mo-

deration as my Father did before me . And by this

our Edict doe we ordaine, that if any hereafter bee

found thus bulie in molesting these kinde of men

without any their offence, we command that hee

that is accused upon this point, be absolued, albeit he be proued to be such a man as he is charged to

bee, that is, a Christian: and he that is his Accuser

shall suffer the same punishment, which he sought

This Edict was promulged at Ephefus in the Gene-

rall Councell of all Afia: so fauourable was this good

Fall Counced of all Apia: to radourance was this good Emperour to the true Professors, and (indeed) to all lorts of men, hauing that Apotheyme of Scipio Afri-canue rife in his mouth: That he had rather sauc one Sub-

(6) He was of Stature tall, of a scemely presence,

in countenance Maiesticall, in maners milde, of a fin-

Rom the vertuous exam nine yeares, was cut off by an Apoplexie in the preples of the good Emperour Pius, proceeded a branch sence of Aurelius beeing then in expidition towards Germanie, whose Coine wee haue here expressed as of no leffe towardlineffe wee finde it minted with his face and reuerle. and fruitfulnesse, Marcus (3) Aurelius the Emperour following the warres against those, who there revolted, was inclosed about Aurelius, Antoninus, Verus, Philosophus (for by so with his Enemies, called the Quadi, and fuffered great many honourable names mortalitie both by Pestilence, and much more by

though hee fprung not from Pius, as from his natiue roote, yet was he his adopted Sonne, and graffed into his Stocke and alliance by the Marriage of his daughter Faultina: Hee was the Sonne of Elius Verus who died Prator, and whose Pedigree is brought from Numa Pompilius, the fecond King of Rome; and his Mother was Domitia Camilla, daughter of Claudius Tullus,

daies extreamest drouth and thirst, the whole Army was refreshed, and the Quadi contrariwise by Thunder & Lightning were quite dispersed and overthrowne, (4) This wonder (faith Eufebius) is reported euen by those Historians, who favoured not Christianitie: Ace and and the prudent Epifile of the Emperour himselfe, (which hee wrote to the Senate for confirmation of this miracle, yet extant) doth warrant the same :wherupon he both mitigated the rage against Christs Pro-fessours, and (by tessimonie of Apolimaris) named that Legion of the Christians, for an euerlasting remem-

Legion of the Corriginator, for all constraining remembrance, The lightning Legion.

(5) In his Raigne Calpharnius Agricola was fent Lieutenant into Britannie, where the inhabitants fought formcalterations of the State, fore repining at the oppressions of the Romanes. But the Surname A. pricola reuiuing the remembrances of their former ouerthrowes, sodaunted their Courages, that at the presence of the Generall, who came amongst them to preuent all occasions, they gaue ouer their intended enterprise: for which, and for many other his policies there vsed, he worthily deserved great commenlations, but (for the most part) the glorie of all such

want of Water, whereby himselfe and Host were al-

most confumed: At which time many Christian

Souldiers being in his Campe, and commanded (as Ionas was) to call upon their God, they fell profirate

on the ground in praiers, and obtained of him fo

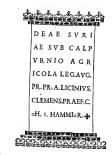
plenteous a shower of raine, as therewith after fine

Aurelius obcate

lib.3.cap.11. Seim Saturnina Admirall of the British Fleet,

Cambden Brit.

touching the same matter some haue given notice



So also Lucius Verus, (whom this excellent Emperour had in the yeere 162, as appeareth by his Coine of Concord, fet in the entrance of his life, elected his College in the Empire) to supply the defect of merit in himselfe, tooke from the Conquest of Auidius Cassius, and other his Captaines in Armenia, Parthis and Media, the Trophies of their victories, with which he filled up his Title, and adorned his Money, expressed in the beginning of this Chapter.

(6) About these times, albeit other things went not so happily with Britaine as might have beene wished, yet one felicitie then befell her, which did both counternaile her owne calamities, and ouerpoize the good fortunes of all other Nations: and that was the bleffed rest of the Gospell of peace in this warring and vnpeaceable Kingdome, a great part thereof being gouerned at that time by King Lucius, furnamed Leuer-Maur. For that was the policie and ancient custome of the Romans (as Tacitus saith) to viceuen Kingsthemselues for their instruments, to bring the people into bondage. And Antoninus Pius ending warre, permitted Kingdomes to be gouerned by their owne Kings, and Provinces by their owne Comites (as faith Capitolinus.) This King difliking the Paganisme and Idolatry of his people, (though, as wee haue shewed, among many of them the truth of Christs Doctrine was both taught and embraced, euen from the first planting thereof) and being incited both by the exemplary life and piety of the Christians, and also by the manifest miracles wrought amongst them, and encouraged moreouer by the fauourable Edicts of the Emperours in their behalfe, and by the good affections and forwardnesse of their Deputies heere, Trebellus and Pertinax; he gaue leaue to their Religion by publike warrant, and was the first Chrifian King in the world, and Britaine the first Prouince that embraced the Goffell by publike authority, as Sa-

(7) This Lucius (as before wee haue touched) to be better furnished with Christian Lawes for himselfe and Subjects, miffalecatione ab Imperatore Romanorum, & à Papa Romano Eleutherio, (as Nemmus faith) for in this purerage the Church was so humble, to vaile (as farre as might be) her actions in the Imperial licence.

fent two learned Clerkes, whose names were Eluanus Libr Landausen and Meduumus, skilfull in the Scriptures, to Eleutherius for Ecclef. Bishop of Rome: whose Reply to his most godly Demand (because the fauourers of the Papall Authoritie Flores b fivierum. either doe doubt it, or altogether deny it) I haue thought good heere verbatim to infert, as I my felfe now in the hands thought good need or one man haue found it, in a most ancient Manuscript, among the right worth the authenticke Records and Constitutions of the Citie of LONDON.

The original Epiftle of Eleutherius Bishop of ROME vnto Lucius the first Christian King of BRITAINE



Scripfit Dominus Eleutherius Papa Lucio Regi Britannia ad correctionem Regis & Proccrum Reoni Britannia. Petistis à nobis Leges Romanas, 🌣 Cafaris vobis transmitti, quibus in Regno Britannia vii Cogaris voous tranjimutt, quious in Aegno Dittanniz vit voluifit. Leges Romanas & Cafarti semper reprobare possumus, Legem Dei nequaquam. Susceptis enimusper (miseratione diuina) in Regno Britannia, Legem & Fidem Christi. Habetis penes vosin Begno vtramý, Paginam : ex illis (Dei gratia) per Consilium Regni vestri sume Legem, & per illam, * de patientia vestrum rege Britannia Regnum. Vicarius verò Dei estis in Regno, iuxta Prophetam Regem; Domini est terra, & plenitudo cius; orbis terrarum, & vniuersi qui habitant in eo. Et rur sum, juxta Prophetam Regem: Dilexisti iustitiam, & * o.t. pp. u.te *Odistiniquitate. Peus Deus duicium tuum, & c. Non enim dixit iudi-les indicium tuum, & c. Non enim dixit iudi-tes indicium tuum, & c. cium, neg, iustitiam Casaris. Filij enim Regis, gentes Chri- fortibus sateris. fian 2 & populi Regni funt, qui sub vestra protectione & films & popus acquisma, qui suo vostra protessione & pace in Regno degunt & conssistunt, iuxta Eusengelium: Lacmadmodum gallina congregat pullos sub alis. Gentes verò Regni Britannia & popus vostri sunt; quos diussos, debetis in vnum, ad concordiam, & pacem, & ad fidem, & legem Christi, ad sanct am Ecclesiam congregare, reuocare, fouere, manutenere, protegere, regere, & ab iniuriosis & malitiosis, & ab inimicis semper desendere. Va Regnocuius Rex puer est, & cuius Principes manè comedunt: non voco Regempropter paruam & nimiam etatem, fed propter stultitiam, & iniquitatem, & infanitatem: iuxta Prophetam Regem: Viri sanguinum & dolosi non dimidiabunt dies suos, &c. Per comestionem, intelligimus gulam: per gulam, luxuriam : per luxuriam, omnia turpia & peruerfa, & mala: iuxta Salomonem Regem : Inmaleuolam animam non introibit sapientia, nec habitabit in corpore subdito peccatis. Rex dicitur à regendo, non à regno: Rex eris dum bene regis: quod nisi feceris, nomen Regis non in te constabit, & nomen Regis perdes, quod absit. Det vobis Omnipotens Deus, Regnum Britannia sic regere, ot possitis cum co regnare in aternum, cuius Vicarius est u in Regno pradicto. Cus cum Patre, & c.

The same in English:

Pope Elcutherius thus wrote to Lucius King of Britannic, for the reformation of the King and the Nobilitie of the Kingdome of Britaine: Ion defired visto fend onto you the Romane and Imperial Lawes, which you would vfe in your Kingdome of Britannie. The Roman Lawes and the Emperours wee may at all times mislike, but the Law of God by no meanes. By the Divine Clemen cieyou have of late received inyour Kingdome of Britannie the Law and Faith of Christ: You have withyou in your

Pfal.45.7. hated iniquity, wherefore, God, euen thy God, hath anointed thee with the oyle of giadnesse aboue thy fellowes. And againe: Lord give thy judgements vnto the king, and thy iustice vnto the Kings sonne. He faith Pfal.72.1. not, The judgement or justice of the Emperor. And the Kings sonnes are the Christian Nations, and People of the kingdome, fuch as line and abide together inyour Kingdome, whele your Protetion and peace; according to that in the Gospell: As the Hen gathereth her Chickens under her wings. The Nations of the Kingdome of Marib.23.37. Britanny are your People, who being now feuered, you ought to gather them unto Vnity, Concord and Peace, and reclaime them to the Faith and Law of Christ, and to the holy Church, to foster them, cherish them, protect, and rule them, and alwaies to defend them from all iniurious, malicrous, and hostile attempts. For, Woe be to the kingdome, whose King is a child, and whose Princes rise early to banquetting: Neither doe I call a King a thild, for the tenderne see shis Age, but for the folly and wicked-nessee that the see shift of the see shift or the folly and wicked-nessee that the see shift of the see shift of the see shift of the phet saith: Wicked and bloud-thirsty attaine not to P[el.55.23. halfe their Age. And by banqueting I meane gluttony; by gluttony, luxury; by luxury all filthinesse, peruersity, and lewdnesse: according to that of King Salomon: Wisedome shall not enter into the wicked soule, nor shall it dwell in a Body enthrald to Sinne. A King hath his name from Ruling, and not from his Kingdome : and fo long shall you be indeed a King, while you rule well; which if you doe not, the name of a King will not continue with you. but you shall lose that rotall title; which God forbid. Almighty God grant you fo to rule your Kingdome of Bri-

Kingdome both the Old and New Testament : out of

Amgame with the Old and New 1 element: sut of them (in Gods naively the Campill of your State, take you a Lux, and therewith by Gods permitting agencer your mandame of Britannie: For you are Gods Victi in your Kingdame, as the kingly Prophet faith, The earth is the Lords and the plenty thereoff, the whole world and they that Well therein. And agains in the fame Protection. And agains in the fame Pro-

pheticall King; Thou hast loued righteousnesse and

Pfal.89.11.

(9.) The date of this Epifle (as by some other Copies it appeareth) being the yeare of the fecond Confulfity of Commodus and Vespronius, may give great light and fatisfaction to fuch as are curious to know the truth, and to reconcile the differences of our Hiforians, touching the time: That Confulfing being a-bout the yeare of Christ one hundred and cighty: which was at the beginning (if not a little before) of Commodus his raigne; and therefore whereas fome refer it to the one hundred fixty ninth veer after Christs Passion, it is apparant to be the only error of transcribers, who so writ in stead of one hundred seuenty nine after his birth; which was, anno currente, the very time of Commodus being Conful the second time: and on this yeere agree, both forrain and domestick writers of this matter. And albeit the very texture of this Epiflle, carieth with it the true Character of Antiquity, yet because our worthy writers, mentioning this Epiftle, are charged of flat forgery (by fuch who challenge to be Malters in all ancient knowledge) we will adde somewhat, to wash off those false aspersions, both from the Record, and from the mentioners

tanny, that with him, whose Vicar you are in your said

Kingdome, you may raigne eternally. To whom with the

Father, & G.

Cambden,

levvell.

7bidem.

Parfons 3.Con-uerlions.Part.

Fox.

Their first exception is, that the Latin Copy would doubtlesse have been produced by them, if it had not beene counterfeit. Whereto what need we answer, fith now we have produced it, and can produce as many, as there are Copies of King William the Conquerors Lawes, wherein it is expresly repeated? The next is, that the English translations of it differ each from other. A reason more childish then the former, sith enery man hath a scuerall conceit of that he translateth, and fornetimes the very Originalls, (by transcribers ignorance or omission) cause variety of translation, as may appeare in the varia lectiones of this Copy prefixed. The laft, but most faucy and ignorant exception is, that

the places of Striptures mentioned in the letter, are fo | Parjen und fostifbly and fenfelefly applied, as is vnworthy to be fathered on the learned Eleutherius. Let vs therefore in word, bring the divinity of this Grand-censurer to the touchflone: For Eleutherius proueth, first, that Kings are Gods Vicars in their kingdome, becaufe the whole Earth is properly Gods, and therefore Kings have it not as their owne, but as his Lieutenants: Next, that as Dauid typically, and Christ impliedly, was by God annointed King, for the execution of Righteonfreffe and Taffice, fo enery gody King ought to make that the on-ly end of his high bonor, that being by God advanced, he might like wife advance Righteonfors, ruffice, and the service of God, whose vasfall he is and that therefore Gods sudgements and Lawes, are to be preferred by them, before all humane Lawes: with which they (bould rule and cherish their gody subjects as their children; and protect them and gather them under one faith as Christ their master)doth, who therefore compareth himselfe, to a Hen gathering her Chickens under her wings.

cations, as if the learnedit fathers on these places be duly examined, they will be found no whit to exceed the apprehensions of this Godly Bifthop. But if Robert Comback, would have cast his eie on the moderne Popes, and their Cardinals applications of Scrip-tures, what would he then fay? God made a greater light and a leffe: therefore the Pope is as much greater then the Emperor, as the Sunne is bigger then the Moone. Christ faid to Peter, Kill and eat: therefore the Pope may excommunicate and depose Kings (yea and kill them too for a need.) Peter said, Behold two swords; therefore the Pope hath both Temporall and Spiritual Iurisdiction over the world. So God laid to Ierem, he should plant and transplant : therefore the Pope may dispose and and transplane: therefore the rope may appea and transplane at this pleasure. Christ to Peter, thom art Cophas, and Cophas is a head; therefore the but ill source their turns.

Pope is head of the Church. Domini sunt Cardines Terra. The earth is the Lords : therefore the Cardinals are the Lords of the Earth. On fuch pillers and applications of Scriptures, is the whole Papall greatnesse founded, and yet these late Seribes can scotlingly capill at the godly applications of ancient Eleutherius. But to our

The defects of which Princely duties, Eleutherine most liuely expresseth afterward, in so proper appli-

purpole (10.) This Epiftle with two other Preachers, Faganus and Daminius, sent vnto King Lucius, did not Pagame and Dominius, tells vinco and pagames, and not a little encourage him in his godly purpofe, in fo-much that receiving Baptifme, the Temples of the Lucius his refor-Heathenith Flamines and Arch-Flamines cuen thirtie Heathenth Humnes and Arch-Humnes cuen thirtie
moin number, were connerted into fo many Chriftie
an Thilbaps Sees, whereof London Torke and Carlein, now
Saint Danids, were made the Metropolitants of the Prouince.

The Control of the Control of the Control of the Control of the Control
and Mannese and Man

(11.) A table remaining in the Parish Church of Saint Peter in Cornhill Landon, recorder that the foundation thereof was by this King Lucius, and that Church to have been the Cathedrall to that Archbishops See. There be that ascribe the foundation of Pollider. Saint Peters Church at Westminster vnto him, vnlesse Progs. the places are mistaken. Others affirme that this King W. Lamb. Perami Lucius likewise built a Church within Douer-castle, to the service of Christ, endowing it with the Toll or customes of that Hauen. Differences there are about the time of his Raigne, but none at all for his converfion and establishing of the Christian Faith. As for Febien. those who would have this Lucius after his Baptisme to faile into Gallia and other forrein parts, where fubduing many Pagans, he became the Apostle to the Baduing many Pagans, ne oceanic the Appendix affects after yr in the City warrans, and that his lifter Emerita fifteene yeeres after yr in the City duguda. was martyred in the City Augusta: I find thereof no

in Gloucester. (12) This good Emperour possessed the Seate of Maiestie, nineteene yeares and eleuen daies; wherein he alwaies approued himfelfe, in wit excellent, in life vertuous, verie learned and eloquent, full of Clementy, Iustice, and Temperance, nothing inferiour to

warrant in any fufficient writer; but in this all others

agree, that he raigned twelue yeares, and lieth buried

Lucius and Lene

Capitaliana

Aemicad.7.lib.5.

Newine.

Svlpius Marcellus? Lieut.

Book.6.

T reall.by un phr. most of the worthiest Emperours before him, nor matchable in qualities by many of the Monarchs that followed him : He died the seuentcenth day of Aprill the yeare of our Sauiour one hundred eighty one, and

of his owne age fiftie nine: leaving to the world a misse for the present, and to posterities a perpetuall memorie of his vertues; and happy had he been, saith Capitolinus, had he not left behind him a Sonne.

Valerianus lib. 2.



LIVIVS AELIVS AVRELIVS COMMODVS ANTONINVS.

CHAPTER XX.



Ann.Dom. 181. Entropius.

Commodus h

Callindar.

Eusebsibs,



H E prudent life, and loue conceived of so good a Father, gaue hopefull fignes and joifull entrance vnto the Raigne of yong Commodus, his foone degenera-ting Sonne; who had nothing from him but Nature, and that also much

fuspected: The knowne Adulteries of Faustina, his Mother strongly confirming the opinion of Bastardie.

(2) At nineteen yeeres of age, he was inuefted Emperor, his raigne not long, but life as loofe and impious as the worst: in sortish pride equalizing Caligula, for intemperancie another *vitellim*, and in cruelties a fecond Domitian. Three hundred Concubines continually he kept, and vpon one of them, named Martia, fo doted, that he wore her painted Piffure vpon the outfide of his Garment; and inftiling his money Herculi Commodiano or Romano, which was stamped about the yecre 193. Sometimes (Hercules-like) would shew himselfe roabed in a Lions skinne, bearing a Club in his hand in flead of a Scepter. Other whiles wantonly clad in the habit of an Amazon woman; alwaies coftly,but feldome ciuill.

19,001 tendonic chain.
(3) The Month August, he named Commodus, September, Herculeus, and December, Amazonius, according to his owne or his Concubines names. Commendable in nothing but for his skill in darting, and for fome small breathing of the persecuted Christians; which came not of himfelfe, but (as Xiphilinus writeth) by the mediation of Martia his belowed Concubine, who was found very fauourable to their doctrine: But the outragious wickednesse of his life made him so hatefull to all, as that his death was often plotted; and once by some of the Noblest, with whom Lucilla his owne Sifter conspired; for which fact he put her, with the rest of the conspirators to death. The Empire and all things els he wielded at the discretion of others, attending only his voluptuous pleasures, howsoeuer the State or Provinces fared vnderhim.

(4) In Britanny the Northren Borderers brake thorow the Wall, and finding the Frontiers but weakly guarded entred the Prounce, where fuddenly they furprized the Roman Generall; and killing many of the Souldiers, ranged the Country, wasting (without refistance) all where they went. Commodus at Rome, hea-

ring these stirres in *Britaine* rouzed vp his spirits, and sent one *r spins Marcellus* to shay their fury; who with the one r spins Marcellus to shay their fury; who with the same shape of the Well. great difficulty forced them back beyond the Wall: Justent Lieute great difficulty forced them back beyond the Walt has fore Lieut and feeing the cardelff leftuie of the Soulditrs, retinant mo Biscale had been left off by the Romans. The repressing of this incurring as it feemeth by fome renote of the prouince, was about the year of Christ one hundred eighty six as appeareth by the monies of this Emperor fet in the entrance of his life, at which time in memory of some worthy expedition and victory a gainst the Britains he stamped them.

gaint cute strains in examplest tiern.

(5) This Lieutenant Marcellus is reported to be of a maruellous great temperance and firange dict;

samo of great Bread, but fuch as was baked in Rome, neither flept he more then would maintaine nature, whereby both his pritate bufineffes and proiects for publike ferui-ces were commonly dispatched by might. Seuere he was in the execution of his place, not led by fauour of the person, nor staid from instice by corrupted Bribes; esteeming Money only for necessity, and riches no further then made for publike good : But those his vertues though now with vs they get him honour, yet then did purchase him Ennie with the Emperor. Who there this pursuae time zame with the Emperor. Who lined (lath Lampridus) for his Subiest smifchief and his owne shame: For Commodus hearing Markellus daily commended, construed his Praise to be his owne Reproch; and doubting left he should grow too high, thought good to crop him off betimes, and so sent

him Letters of discharge.

(6) The Armiethen feeling the raines loosethat erc-whiles had beene borne with a stiffer hand, fell straight to a disordered mutinie, and therein proceeded with fuch boldnesse a stey openly refused any longer to acknowledge Commodus for their Soueraigne: At which time Perennius was a chiefe Agent and so ruled all in Rome for the Emperor, as that he entertained a hope to be himselfe (in time) an absolute and sole-ruling Emperour, and having now fit occasion offred to spread his power further; he tooke vpon Com him to redreffe these disorders (whilst Commodus wallowed in his lascinious idlenesse) and displacing some worthie Captaines at his owne pleasure, sent other persons of meane respect or parts, to command those egions in Britaine, that formerly had been led by Noble Senators and men of Confular dignity, whereby greater mischiese began to accrew and civill disfensions daily to burst forth, the Armie scorning their

(bap.20 | Commodus Emp.

be put to death.

fent Lieutenaus into Britaine

this Emperors inftiling him Brit. m the 8. yeers of his Tribunethip

be discharged of

Histor magna, Brit lib.3.cap.7. Clodius Albinus

ent Lieutenant into Britaine.

vpstarst Commanders, and the Captaines insulting o-

uer the Souldiers, (of all fides) the Aides fo disquieted,

that had the Britaines followed the advantage, the

whole Prouince at that time had been in hazard to

be loft: vpon which diftractions no leffe then fifteene

hundred Souldiers at once went out of the Land to

Rome to complaine their wrongs vnto Commodus:

where charging Perennius to bee the stirrer of these

troubles, with an intent thereby to raise himsefe or

his sonne to the Emperiall Maiesty (a string that can-

not be touched without found in a Soueraignes eare)

they were so farre heard and beleeued that Perennius

was to them deliuered to be put to death, which ac-

(7) Then was fent for Lieutenant into Britaine

Heluius Pertinax, a man of low birth, but high Fortunes, being rifen from the state of a common Souldi-

er, to the dignity of a Confull, and had been Com-mander before that time ouer many Provinces. Him

had Perennius discharged from Britaine, and with dis-

grace sent and confined into Liguria where hee was

borne, whose credit Commodus again with such fauors

repaired, that he gaue him the Straume Britamicus, which glorious title also himselfe had taken about the yeere 1 8 4. At his first entrance and ariuage, he assault

ed by rough hand to suppresse the rebellions of the

Army, and adventured his person so farre in some tu-

mults that he was stricken downe and left for dead:

but afterwards proceeding with better aduice he

composed those troubles with most severe punish-

ments of the principall offenders : whereby notwithstanding he presently grew odious to all, and there-upon so far feared his own safety, that he made suit

to the Emperor to be discharged of his Lieutenantship.
(8) Vinto him succeeded Clodius Albinus in the

Gouernment of Britaine, a man of great birth, forward

enough, and fortunate, for which the Emperor Commo-

cordingly they accomplished with all extremity.

THE ROMANS.

SClodius Albinius Lieut. | 225 dus either vpon fauor or feare, did honour him with

accept of the same, and afterwards discouered his dis-

free state of the Romans. For vpon a falle report of the

death of Commodus, he made an Oration to the Legi-

retired himfelfe from all publike affaires, vntill the

death of Commodus, which not long after followed,

and was wrought vpon this occasion: He having assig-

ned many to die, and to that end had inrolled their

stood in the same list, and in the like danger; they to-

gether thought best to secure their owne lives by his

death: and with poison, stabs and strangling made

him away, when he had lived one and thirty yeeres,

natiuity one hundred ninety and three: the night be-

(9) Of stature he was indifferently tall, of a fine

fore the Kalends of Januarie.

the title of Cafar, though Albinus seemed vnwilling to position more openly in approuing the Ancient and

ons in Britanny in fauour of the Senate, whose kind of Gouernment he much commended and preferred Senators then before the rule of the Emperors: Of which his affection when Commodus vnderstood, he sent Iulius Seuerus Lukus Seuerus

in all haft, to take charge of the Armie : and Albinus Depug

names in a scroll, it chanced Martia his Concubine to Commoduspur.

light on the same, wherein she saw her selfe allotted posedicourred for one: And reuealing this his purpose to others, that by his Concu-

four moneths, and vicioully raigned thirteen yeeres eight moneths and fifteen daies the yeere of Christs natituity one hundred ninery and the

conflitution of Body, very faire of complexion, with cleere eies and golden locks, neither in person nor in

Princely parts refembling his Father: How ioifull the death of this Tyrant was both to People and Senate, their execrations pronounced against him, and their affemblies in the Temples to give thanks for their de-liuerance, do manifeft, as is at large reported by Lam-pridius, who wrote his life, and ftiled by al, Hoffis huma-

Lampridius ni Generis, The enemy of Mankind . The very name of



the diuell.

PVBLIVS HELVIVS PERTINAX.

CHAPTER, XXI.



An.Do. 194.



PON the person of this Heluius Pertinax (of whom we are now to (peake) Fortune (asit fcemeth) meant to make the full experience of her power, and from a very flender foundation to raife the building of her owne Pride:

Dies. Caffi.lib.

His birth was but poore, and parents as meane, whose Father from a seruile condition got to be free, and traded in Mercery wares for his living : himfelfe educated according to his birth rose by degrees to mount the Chaire of all wordly glory, and to be the Monarch of the whole

(2) At first a Schoole-master, and taught the Grammar; next a Ciuil-Lawyer, and pleaded causes in Courts; and lastly, a Martial-man, and scrued in Campe: where Fortune attended him with fuch fauourable fucceffe, that within fine daies, out of the ranck of a common Souldierhe was preferred to bee Captaine of a Cohort, in the Syrian warres against the Parthians, which ended, he was imploied into Britannie Missa, and Germany, and also had charge in chiefe of a Fleete vpon the Flemmish Seas: he served likewise in Dacia, with such honourable proofe of his valour, as that wife Emperour Marcus Aurelius held him in high esteeme, and afterward made him Senator of Rome. Then was hee assigned Gouernour of all Syria and Affa, the greatest place of Credit and reputation that might be; and from thence fent againe in-

into Britaine, chosen out as the principall man, of note for to stay the Commotions there raised against Commodus, where in the Field he was left for dead : but thence also returning after hee had gouerned foure fenerall Confular Provinces, was created Proconfull of Africa, and immediately after Prafett of Rome. Neither yet made he his stand there, (though the greatest of any subjective degree) till hee had mounted the Throne of Maiesty, and had obtained the command ouer All : which fell to his lot by the death of Commodus ; and by the meanes of Martia, Elius Latus, and other Conspirers of his end.

(3) For the Murther being done in the dead of the night, Latus in great haste repaired to Pertinax his lodging; at whole fight the Old man in bed, expected nothing but Death, as supposing him sent from Commodus to no other end. But Latus salutes him by the vnexpected name of Emperour, carrying him with acclamations vnto the Army, and in the morning to the Senate, where, of them all with great Heleius Perinax morning to the Senate, where, of made Emperor. ioy, he was confirmed sugufus.

Sabelliem.

(4) His first businesse was to bridle the Licencious liues of the Pratorian Cohorts & injuries done by them vnto the Romane Citizens, which gained him such hatred, that it was cause of his death: For these men growne difordered and lawleffe in the raigne of Commodus, held themselues wronged, to be nowlocked vnder the constraint of Lawes civil Covernement ; and these only enuied the peace & prosperity of Pertinax, whereas all the Provinces abroad at the very hearing of his Election, and fame of his Imperiall vertues, laid aside their weapons, and disired to embrace peace with a Prince so nobly qualified.

(5) The first that confirred against his life, was one Falco; whom notwithstanding he freely forgaue, yet punished certaine Souldiers thereto accessary: whereupon, the rest assembling themselues in tumultuous and farious manner, with their drawn fwordsimuaded his Palace. Hee feeing their purposes fought no-feapes, but descending the Palace, met them in the base Court: At whose presence and Maichy they were much amazed, and a while made a stand: vnto whom with great gravity, and without flew of any

Helsim Pertinant

Feare, he thus fask vnto them.

(6) Souldiers and Companions, if you come to

kill me, (ds I thinke you doe) you hall therein performe an act neither valorous, nor otherwise very " commendable for you, no, nor any way grieuous " vnto my selfe, for euery mans life hath his limit, and to mine, by Natures course, the last period cannot be farre: Or thinke you that I feare death, who now am so ripened for it, and haue already gotten the very height of all renowne vnto my Name? Surely " you are deceined: but at this I grieue, that my life and short time of Gouernment, which I had deuoted to the good of all, should seem to disgustfuil vnto any, as to deferue a violent and haftned death, efpecially by you, who are by office, the Guarders of my Person : you (I say) whose charge and Oath is, to fecure your soueraigne from perill, and now leek to sheath your Swords in his breast, shall either leaue a Testimony of my bad lite descruing it; or brand your places with fuch staines of Trealon; as Time shall neuer weare away. And what I pray is mine offence? for maintaining your Lawes? why; it was the charge your selues imposed vpon me. Are

Lawes too strait ! surely, not to the vertuous, who are euen a Law vnto themselues : are they need-* lesse? why then were they made? and being made, why should they not be executed? If the death of Commodus grieue you, was I the cause? It he were

' made away by Treason, your sclues are conscious of my innocency. And this I assure you, in the word of a Prince, that his death shall deprive you of nothing, which you require, if you require nothing but that which is honest and just. My life, whilst I was a Subject, was spent with you in Warre, now (be-

ing your Sourciagne) is confumed with cares for 'your Peace: which if you free me of, by taking it a-way, my troubles shall thereby end, but your conscience shal begin to grone under the guilt of blood and perchance bee touched with too late Repen-

(7) His words were spoken with such a mouing granity, and vnmoued resolution, that the formost in the attempt gaue back, and were ashamed of their audacious enterprise, but the rest suriously drining forward, one Traffur with a Lanceran him into the Breaft.
by his Souldier whereupon Pertinax couering his Head with his robe, quietly yeelded his body to the traiterous ftrokes of them all, and so died that poore, old, and innocent Emperor. The yeeres of his life, saith Iulius Capitolinus, were fixty, seuen moneths, and twenty five daies: But Die, Spartianus and Herodian accounteth them to ex- Pertinent his tend to fixty eight: Eufebins to aboue feuenty: The tend to inty eight: Enjeous to about eventy: I he like dilagreement there is for the short time of his Go-ucroment: for Enfebius saith that he raigned nor fully Enfebius saith that he raigned nor fully fix Moneths : Entropius faith but three : Iulius Capitolinus and Aurelius Victor, eighty five dales : Dio, Herodian, and Spartianus, two Moneths and twenty eight daies: how long so euer, thus he liued, and thus he di-

ed, the fift Calends of Aprill.

(8) He was of an honorable and Maiefticall prefence, strong of body, large and full breasted, long bearded, curle-headed, smooth of Speech, and indifferently eloquent.

DIDIVS IVLIANVS.

CHAPTER XXII.



An.Do.194



HE state of man continulace at Rome, renowned, beloued, and guarded with ally attended with vncertarea. nome, tentowines, become, and guarde with the firengths of Europe, Afia, Africa, AEgypt, and Greete, was notwithflanding furpified and lainear noone day, by a Bund of Souldiers, not much exceeding the number of three hundred, and all escaping vapunitaine chance, apparantly doth fhew, the weake condition that nature enjoyeth, and with what vnfire fled, the deed was so suddaine and mens minds so dinesse the seat of maiesty is firacted, that it could not be fully beleeved, though possest, as is seene by the recedent Emperor, who witneffed by fight. . fitting at peace in his Pa-

(2) The Senators mistrusting each others, abandoned the Citie, and the Citizens in secret secured Chap. 22. Didius Iulianus Emp. THE ROMANS. Clodius Albinus Lieut. 227

themselues, all in an vprore, but none for reuenge of the treason: The murtherers, in as great feare as any, fortified their Campe, and with weapons in hand flood vpon their guard : But feeing all in a maze, and nothing against them attempted, a further boldnesse (the like before neuer heard of)enfued for by a Common Crier they made Proclamation for the fale of the Empire, to any man that would give them most which offer was readily accepted by Didnes I ulianus (a man Didin Inhanas buieth the Em-pire of the Roof much more wealth then honesty of life, and a Lawyer, faith Eufebius) who with larger promifes then ones were performed, obtained the Emperial

(3) His birth was in Millen, the sonne of Petroni us Didius Seuerus, his mother Clara Emilia, and himlelfe brought vp in seruice vnder Domitia Lucilla, the mother of Marens Aurelius, by whose fauours, he was first made Queftor, next Edile, & then Prator in Rome. In Germany as a Captaine hee serued under Aurelius Didius Iulianus then was he appointed Gouernour of Dah thinia, and of the Lower Germany, and was Co thinia, and of the Lower Germany, and was Committee Pertinax, and afterwards Proconful in Africa. Their were his rilings and meanes to that Maiely, which not long he kept: for hated in Rome and not approo-ued abroad, Syria chose for Emperor their owne Gemrall, Peferius Niger, Germanie, Septimius Seueras By whole confent Cladius Albinus leader of the Britaine Armie was first elected Cafar, and then his fellow in Germany chofeth the Empire, whereby the Egle, the fairest of Birds

became monftrous, and in one Body bore three Heads. (4) For Albinus at that time having gotten 2gaine the government of Britains, where erecking his game statuses and itamping his picture in his Copnes, a Compensor game great fulfition that he intended to be a Compe. titor, and with his Army a foot meant to have gained the Emperiall feat it seife, by advantage of Septimius forces, absent in suppressing of references; which to diuert inforced Senerus vntill better oportunity, to declare Albinus his companion, for he much more feared him then either of the former : Because Didius in Rome, and Pefcenius in Antioch confumed their times in banquetting, and vnmartiall disports, whiles Albi-nus managed his office most souldierlike, and was highly efteemed and honored of them.

(5) Senerm hasting towards Rome, was met in Italy by Ambassadors from Didius, with faire offers of peace, and possession of halfe the Empire: but refu-fing composition and making still forward, the Sénate Resuscionemthat so lately declared him a traytor, now proclaimed he is proclaimed him an Emperor: And the Souldiers vnfatisfied of the ann a Emperor And the senagers vinatisned or the couenanted promiles, and in hope to purchafe fa-uour with Senerus, flew their Chapman Didius in his Palace, the Calends of Iulie, being but fine daies free Palace, the Calendo Ott 1886, Denig Due Line Dales and he had done himfelfe as much for *Fertinax, when he had raigned, as *Eutrophus faith, feuen months: *Spartianus faith but two, and Die fixty fix dates: the yeere faith the two cand Die fixty fix dates: the yeere of his age fifty seuen, and of our Sautours appearing in our flesh, one hundred ninety and soure,

SEPTIMIVS SEVERVS

CHAPTER. XXIII.

An-Do.194

Sept, Severus.

Atline Speritans Froclamation for the fale of the Empire.



nerus hauing by this bloudy accident of the giddie multitude gained with more facility then he ex pected, the fatal feat of go uernment, it was his next in place to suppresse Pefins by force, and Albimus by falshood: whose

Actions & lines fince they hapned with this Emperor. and ended with his Aword, I will record together, be-ginning with Caius Pesceniss first, fince that he fell vnder the fortune of this man. This olde man in the

eere of Christ one hundred nincty foure, was clected Emperor by Acclamation of the Syrian Armie, of which (though begun but by a handfull in respect of all the other Emperiall forces)he had good hope, fince to the honor of that Goddesse he dedicated the first marke of his Soueraigntie, the minting of his mony.

A person he was of seemly stature, louely feature and faire skinne, except his Neck, which differing fo farre from the rest gaue him the sirname of Niger; his complexion was ruddy, his Body fat, his voice for piercing, that it would be heard a mile off: and his haire for more ornament long hee wore in reflected curies vpon his shoulders. A commendable souldier and well bearing himselfe in the military offices hee underwent. In his Lieutenancy abroad he was seuere, and at home he so well acted his part when hee was Conful, as in his Clemency and Justice hee seemed emulous of Pertinax. Thus all his life he enioted the goodnesse of his merit and fortune, and had not his ambition began, where his yeeres were ending, had so parted: For no sooner had hee put on the Robe Emperiall, but Seuerus descated his Armie at Cizicum, pursued him to Antioch, and tooke him at Euphrates, sending to Bizantium his head a Trophie of the Conquest, and to his wife, children, and followers (vnto whom at first this Victor granted banish. ment) in the end denied life,

(1) Now as soone as Senerus made his approch necr Rome, he gaue command that the Pretorian Cohorts should attend him disarmed; which done, he vehemently checkt them for their proditorious trechery against Pertinax, and pronouncing sentence, deprined them both of name, honor, and armes of Souldiers, and banished them from Rome, and the circuit thereof for one hundred miles distance : which act of his Zz 2

dibious made uccellor in th

wonne him such reputation, that in Rome the whole Story of Pertinax his ruine, and Severus his afpiring to his Throne, was at large portraited in an excellent pecce of worke, of folide molten braffe, as Herodian relateth, though he ascribeth the occasion of it, to a dreame of Seuerus.

(2) Those two objects Didius and Riger, who gaue some hinderance to Severus his beginning, being thus defeated of their high hopes; the third, which was Albinus, feemed now a more dangerous cloud, which would altogether ouer-cast his brightnesse & glory, if it were not dispersed or blown back in time: and therefore to make faire weather with him, hee created him Cafar and his Successor in the Empire, but created nime agar and missureejop in the empire, out afterwards his good fortunes thus swelling in the East, and himselfe full courted by Ambassisdors from all parts, with their tender of subjection, he began to an parts, with their tender of indication, he began to grow proud, and to difdaine any Copartner in State: and thereupon first feerety sought the destruction of his Casar; which failing, he then proclaimed him Traitor and Enemy to Rome.

Proclaimed Traitor, He wageth warte against Severus. (3) Clouds Albinus brought into the fevnex pected dangers, prepared his firengths, and with the choice of all Britishe entred France, and necre vnto Lions tooke the field against the Emperour; but with no better successe, then Pescennius had done in Alia the leffe, in the fame place (as Herodian, Eutropius and Spartianus affirme) where Darius was first ouerthrowne by Alexander. The Armies ioining, a bloody Battaile was fought, which through the great prowesse of the Britains went at first so fore against Secretar, that being beaten off his Horfe, despairing of Victorie, and almost of Life, cast off his Imperiall Robe, and flying, ignobly hid himselfe. Letwo one of Seuerus his Captaines, kept aloofe all this while, of purpole as was thought, to bring the Emperourto ruine, and now upon report that hee was flaine, came on most furiously with his forces, in hope of win-Albinus vanqui-thed by Saverus. ning both the day, and the Empire to himselfe: whereupon the Emperor drawne againe into the field, the day was his by the meanes, but not the meaning, of Letus: whom on attainder of his Treason he afterward put to the fword. That day a great part afterward purte the tword. A matchay a great part of the flower of Britaine was flaine, together with their valiant Leader Albinus, a Captaine of exemplary Senerity and Martiall discipline, a great admirer of Hannibal and Marius; for the Scipio's he thought them rather fortunate then valiant, and in the time of his service in this Iland, there was no toile which hee commanded his fouldiers, but himfelfe would beare therein a part, even in carrying of burdens on his Backe and yet so farre from vaunting of his valour, as that when an Historian would have recorded his noble Acts, he willed him to write of theirs who were already dead, whom he need not to flatter; hol-

> one Pretence, for all, that they wished well to Albinus. After this overthrow Senerus forthwith fent Heraclianus hither, to keepe the rest of the Britaines in quiet, and to be Lieutenant in Albinue his roome, as Spartianus writeth: Of whole affaires therein little remembrance is left, onely it feemeth by a Coine of Seuerus minted in his fecond Confulship, which fell in the yeere of our Sauiour one hundred ninety eight, and about the period of this his last Competitor, that the Britaines gaue not at first their service and servicede to this man, untill he had made the purchase of it by his fword; the brand of which he hath left to posteritie in figuring the Goddesse Victory seated vpon spoiles, and writing in a shield, Victoria Britan.

ding it a foppery to write of those, of whose fauour or wrath the Inditers stood in hope or seare: Being

such a one, no maruaile if Senerue to feared him, as he

did, which he shewed even after hee was slaine, by

putting incredible numbers of great Personages

both in the City and Prouinces to death, with this

Vnto this Lieutenant, Virius Lupus succeeded Prefident of Britaine, as Vipian the Lawyer termes him, and was about the yeere of Christ one hundred ninety feuen, as appeareth by this Inscription crected at Olmaca amongst the Brigantes, in memory of the recdifying of that place by this Emperor and his eldeft Hotely in Torke Sonne, then first designed Cafar, by which the time is discourred, and in this stone inserted.

Promise and promise IM. SEVERVS. AVG. ET ANTONINVS CAES. DESTINATVS RESTITUERVNT CVRAN-TE VIRIO LVPO. *LEG. E-ORVM *PR. *PR.

(4) This man strengthned the Prouince especially in the North, with many strong Castles, repairing many places ruined either by fire or fury of the bordering fwords : Of which Laust Ra, where the first Cohort of the Thrasians lay, was one, as appeareth by this Altar there erected to the Goddesse Fortune, and fince removed to Conington the house of Six Robert Cotton in Huntingdonshire.

<u> gyskaskaskaskaskaska</u>

Legatio.

Pro Pretere

te, when she aske aske aske aske aske ATT ANY MANAMANTA DEÆ FORTVNÆ VIRIVS LVPVS LEG. AVG. PR. PR. BALINEVM. VI IGNIS. EXVST. VM. COH. I. THR. ACVM. REST. ITVIT. CVRANTE VAL. FRON. TONEPRAEF EQ. ALAEVETTO 2572572572572572

He warred against the Meate and North Britaines with such bad successe, that he was forced to redeeme his peace with mony, and was so much weakned by loffe of his men, that he fent to Rome for prefent fupply, with relation of his great danger, and the Enemies strength: which newes touched Senerus to the quick; and notwithstanding his yeeres (fixty at the leaft) and gout wherewith hee was continually grieued, yet would he vndergoe that iourney in person himselfe, aswell to satisfie his owne vaine glorious humours, as to traine his Sonne Basianus from his licentious life, wherein he wallowed idly in Rome, who together with his brother geta, accompanied their Father into Britaine.

(5) The Britaines then hearing of the Emperors Lawyen approch, fent him their Embassage for intreaty of

Emiline Panini.

Chap.23. | Sept. Seuerus Emp. Fifty thouland toylelome labor Sabellicue. Herodian. Caledonians

THE ROMANS. peace, whereby the Iland might have been fetled and lecured without blood; but the old man (faith Sabellieus) had so vusariable a desire to beare the glorious Surname of Britannieus, that he preferred ware, and accepted not their proficred (libiection. (6) Searem than curved, Geta was appointed to remaine in the South of the Province, and to governe

those parts that flood in quiet, assisted by Emilius Papinianus the famous Lawyer, whose Tribunall leat was held in Torke; himselfe and Bassianus marching further into the North against the Meste and Caledonians their neighbours, both which bare themselues boldly vpon the aduantage of their Countries, their waters brackish, and vnholsome drinke for their Enemies, the aire sharpe and contagious to their constitutions, and the foile it selfe so pestred with Loughs, Bogs, Meares, and Mountaines, that the Romans were forced to make way by continual Labour, in cutting downe Woods, in building of Bridges, and in drayning of Meares, so that by distemperature of diet, continuall labour, contagious nesse of Aire, and afflictions by licknesse, fifty thousand of them perished, and that without Battaile, faith Die : many Souldiers alfo, whose spirits were spent, and through feeblenesse could not keepe ranke in their March, were for meere pitty flaine by their fellowes, left they flould fall in-to the hands of their Enemies.

(7) These mileries, notwithstanding old Seuerus indured and sought many Battailes, but (as Sabellicus confesseth) euer with more difficulties to the Romans then to the Britaines, and yet in some small skirmishes he went away Victor, and continued his courses with such resolution, that lastly the Caledonians thought good to intreate their peace; which vpon these conditions was granted: first, that they should forthwith lay alide all hostile Armes, without any further resistance: next, that they should deliuer into the Romans Posses. fion, those Countries that were next abutting on their Prouince : and laftly, that thence-forth they should liue in quiet, attempting nothing against the publike

(8) The State thus fetled, Seuerus bethought himselse of some further meanes to secure the Prouince, by building many In-land strengths anew, and repairing those with Stone and Cement which formerly were but of Turffe and carth, as appeareth by this Inscription found in the Ruines of one of his workes neere vnto the Riuer V R E, in the County of Richmond erected.

kakakakakakakakakakak IMP CAES. L. SEPTIMIO PIO PERTINACI AVGV .--IMP CÆSARI.M. AVRELIO APIO FELICI AVGVSTO------------BRACCHIO CAEMEN -TICIVM VI NER VIO-RVM SVB CVRALA SE-NECINON AMPLISSI-

MIO PERIL. VISPIVS-

---- PRAELEGIO ----

A wall from Sea

Pol, Virg de Rob, Angl,lib,2, Hell,Boerins,

And neglecting the vttermost and vast Northerne parts of this Iland, drew a Wall or Fortification, which might services a Rampire and division betwist the iauage and more civill people, firetching it selfe thorow the whole Iland, even from Sea to Sea; that is, from the Bay of Itum (otherwise Solweyfrith) in Scotland, to the doore of Tine or Tinmouth, containing in length One hundred thirty and two Miles, as Sextus Aurelius Viefor, Eutropius, and others account them, and by tome Severus furns. more. This Wall he built of Turfes and Timber ftrong-ine ferticel with Bulmerles and T lie fensed with Bulwarkes and Turrets, necre vnto (if not upon) the foundation of Adrians Wall, the track whereof thorow the Countries of Westmorland and Northumberland, is more pleasing to bee seene, then casie in word to be expressed. For which his Acts thus heere atchieued about the yeere of grace two hun-dred and eleuen, he affurned to himfelfe his much defired Sirname Britamicus Maximus, causing in his owne and his fonnes Coines that inscription to bee stamped.

Virius Lupus Lieut.

(9) And recording to posteritie the glory of his first atchieuement heere, vpon the reuerse of those his moneies, whereon he sometimes formed a Trophy erected vpon spoiles with two Captines, undersetting the word VICT. BRIT. fometimes a winged victorie : graving a Shield, hung on that tree which is the meede of Conquerours, VICTORIAE BRI-TANNICAE: and sometimes in such a forme and Bafficons difloyphrase as is expressed in the entrance of this his life. And now retired to Yorke, he left his eldest sonne to fi nish this worke of warre by him begun, as being rather allaied then altogether ended.

(10) Bassianus thus fet in the one part of the Iland, as Geta was in the other, fought rather to gaine the af-fections of his Army, by a loofe libertie to doe what they lift, then to manage the trust reposed on him, by the restraint of Martiall Discipline, and exaction of Malitarie duties: hoping by fuch his plaufibilitie and in-dulgence, to purchase to himselfe their best concurrence for the obtaining of the Empire, which hee fo thirsted after, as that hee often tampered with them

to raise him, by the fall of his father. (11) The Caledonians vnderstanding the disso-lutenesse of the Campe, and the want of a better Cap-taine, suddenly assailed the Romans, putting many to the fword, and taking great booties, (which they difpersed amongst their neighbours) without any regard of the obligation of their former Couenants : wherear the testic old man was so much disquieted, and so farre enraged to reuenge, that hee gaue an expresse charge to make a generall Massace, without exception of any; ving in his speech to his Souldiers, these verses borrowed out of Homer:

Nemo manus fugiat vestras, cademá, cruentam: Non fatus, grauida Mater quem gestat in aluo, Horrendam effugiat cadem.

Let none escape your blondy rage; with terrour let all die: Spare not the mother, por the child that in her womb dothly. (12) This (which feemeth to have beene the worke of Seuerus fecond yeere in Britannie, Anno two hundred and twelue for so it is expressed upon the monies of himfelfe and fonnes) may (and with a fit and easie inference from the same authoritie) seeme to haue beene heere the fortune and effect of two encounters and Conquests that same yeere : for whether we observe the two severall coines of victorie then minted, on one of which is the Statue of that armed and winged Guddesse, at whose feet are two Captius prostrate bound; or the other bearing on it a double figure of that Lady, graning the sculpture of the former, VICT. BRIT. vpona Skield, it can conclude

no lesse in probabilitie. (13) Senerus remaining in Yorke, where the Sixth Legion called Victrix kept, (which place afterwards grew to be one of the chiefest for account among the The feed-plots Brigantes, as commonly the Stations of the Romans of our Cities Colonies were the feed-plots of all our Cities, and prin- and Towners, cipall Townes) grew feeble and ficke, being weakened with age, and wearied with trauell, his maladic more

A generall Maf.

Spartianus

ம் நிருக்க difforal, increasing by the diffurbances of the Enemie, and the daily dislocaltie of Bassianus his sonne, insomuch that despairing of life, hee called his Comfelland Captaines before him, and viderlaid with pillowes, he thus addreffed his speech.

lprechto his Countell and

(14) Eighteene yeeres almost haue I wielded the affaires of the Empire, and borne on my shoulders the burden of her encombred estate, both at home and abroad; at my first entrance, troubled " euery where now at length quiet, euen here in Bri-taine, the most vaquiet and molestious Prouince of " ail: The profit of which trauels I must now leave " for others to enjoy, and with case in peace to keepe " that which I with care and warre haue gotten. If therefore amity and mutuall concord, be embraced (the only finewes of a Common-wealth) the glory of " the Empire shall yet shine more bright, sith by con-" cord we see that small things grow to greatnesse,

"whereas contrarivife, discord is the ruine of all. I " die and must leaue the successe of all to my Successfors and Sonnes by Nature, though the Elder onnaturall: I meane Bassianus new made Antoninus and your Emperor, who often ere this hath fought to " gaine that title by his fword and my death; but "knoweth not the dangers that attend a Diadem, nei-" ther remembreth that high places are continually garded with Enuie and Feares. But fo blind is Ambition, as it feeth not that a Soucraignes greatnesse " is such vnto others, but least in himselse, and that the things poffeffed are not the very things they feemed : It is not these Titles therefore can make man happy, the line of his life being drawne forth with so many vncertainties, and the height of his power laid vpon so weake foundations. My selfe at this instant may serue for example, of whom this " may bee faid, I was all things, yet nothing, feeing I "Imust pay my debt to Nature, and leaue my ex-ploits in Esst and West to be registred (either at your disposall) for matters of moment, and good of the Empire, or blotted to the reproch of my gouernement, with the shadowing pencile of Obspeech and his life.

(15) This Emperour by Historians is rancked with the best, both for his warres, wherein hee was verie fortunate, and for his wifedome in gouerning the Empire: and yet is he taxed very fharpiy both by Sabelli-em for fundry vices, and by Eufebim for furring up the fift Persecution of the Christians in the tenth yeere of his Raigne. In which treneus the learned writer, among many others, suffred Martyrdome: howbeit, towards his end, he became more milde to them, as faith Saint I erome: as alfo that he was a diligent reader of the excellent workes of Tertullian, whom viually he termed his Master.

(16) This Emperour was by birth an African, to which Country his affection & graces were so much, that the illustrious Citie of those parts, recorded vpon their coyne his many fauours by this Inscription, I N-DVLGENTIA AVG. IN CARTH. and in- rede. shrined him amongst the Gods of that Nation, He was the sonne of Geta, his mother Pia Fuluia: himselfe rough, cruell, couetous, and ambitious, and his nature, relishing too much of the Punick craft and fimulation: otherwise a most expert Soldiour, and a worthy Prince, more battles hee fought, and more victories obtained, then any other that euer hadruled before him the Romane Empire. In a word, of vertues and vices to equally composed, that lastly this grew into a customed speech: It had been egod that this Emperour had neuer beene borne, or beeing Emperour. that hee had never died.

(17) Of stature he was tall, and of a comely perfonage, his countenance fenere and representing Maefty, his beard white and long, and the haire of his head he wore vsually curled. He was very learned in head he wore vitally curled. He was very learneu in the Maskematica, a good Philosopher, an eloquent Orator, and of a deep founding voice. He raigned cighteen everes (faith most leafthing) by Disso Caffin, Identification of the Problem, and code dates. He died in Torke, the fourth day of A. State and code dates. He died in Torke, the fourth day of A. State and the control of the Caffin and the Caffin and pril, in the yeere of Christ two hundred and twelue, The first lies of pri, in the yeere of Chine two manner and greefe, or lanusty, faith not fo much of licknes, as of discontent and greefe, or lanusty, faith Table. (if our British writers may bee credited) of a deadly (thou British writers may be created 1 of a dealy wound given by Fulgence, Captaine of the Piets, who as the Mante of Chester saith, was brother to Marita, the first wife of Senerus and mother of Bassianus. His second wife was Iulia Domna the mother of Geta, (though some thinke that she was mother to both) a woman of a furpaising beauty, and an earnest instigator of the two Bretherens reconciliation, had she not been blemished with other vices, as after we shal here.



MARCYS

SM AVRE BAS. CARA. ANTO. BRIT.

? P. SEPT. ANTONI. GETA BRIT. Brethren. CHAPTER XXIIII.



Bassianus Caraçalla.



An.Do. 212



Affianus Caratalla, and his

elder so stiled about the yeere of Saluation two hundred and fine, and the yonger foure yeeres after, (as it appeareth by the mintage of their moneys;)were approued and applauded by people and Senate, and of all men faluted and ac-knowledged for Emperours. Bassianus the Elder, stiling himself Britannicus Maximus, as it should feem; was admitted his Fathers fellow Emperour at Yorke at his refiding there, to quiet the Northern Britains; wherein also hee gaue him the name Antoninus; for so implieth that famous Law, bearing jointlie the names of Seuerus and Antoninus, enacted by them at Yorke, touching the interest and right that masters have to the goods and possessions of their servants. His mother, the first wife of Seuerus, was Martia a British Lady (lay our British Historians, though Sabellieus doth judge her to be an African) and himselfe better beloued of the Britaines for her fake, then for his owne.

Geta was the sonne of the Empresse Iulia, a second

minus also on Geta; who with it gaue him likewise the

title of Cafar, about the yeere two hundred and two.

wife, a woman of paffing beautic and furpaffing luft, who beeing perswaded (by some Oracle or dreame) that her husbands fucceffour should be an Antoninus, dreame. Sabellithe importance Severus to befrow the name of Anto-

And to unite the affections of his two fons, aswel as to Brother Septimius Geta, to. eternife their memories, he minted their features vp-on one Medall, inferibing the one fide ANTONIgether were declared Emrours by old Senerus in NVS PIVS AVG. PON. TR. P. 1111. the o- Sabelliem. his lifetime, and both of ther, P. SEPT. GETA. CAES. PONT. having the them by their father furyeere before matched the together vpon the reuerfe named Antoninus, a name of his owne money, and incirculing their heads with very gracious in the ethis word, AETERNITAS IMPERI. as if the steeme of the Romans, the separation of their affections were the diffolution of

his and the worlds Empire. (2) Vpon Seuerus his death, Antoninus Caracad-la, hashing for Rome, profered good conditions of peace to the Britaines, who long tired with warres accepted thereof, and hostages were given for conseruing the same. Whercupon the Empresse Julia accompanied with both the Cafars, departed hence, carying with them the funerall after of the deceafed imperour in a golde Vrna to Rome, where they folemnly confecrated him a God: the ceremony wherof (because it concerneth so great an Emperour and Monarch of this kingdome) is not vnworthy the inferting. In the Porch of his Palace was a bediteed all of Ins-

y, dreffed with richeft bedding and furniture of gold. wherein was laid his image protraited to the life, but yet in manner of a ficke man. On the left fide fate all the Senators and Princes in blacke mourning weeds on the right, all the great Ladies, cladde in white which then was the mourning colour of that Sexe.) The Physitians diligently comming to visit him and feeling his pulle, as if he were aliue, doe lignific that his difease did still increase vpon him. This they all did feuen daies together: at laft, as if then hec were Forum was the dad, all the prime of the Nobility carrie him in his lucrie Bed to the * Forum*, where all the *Patrieta in age and possible mer possible Reviews, incompassed him with most age.

Yy2

dolefull

spected. With which words hee ended both his

" liuion. That therefore my care for the welfare of

this State may survive my selfe, and bring forth the happie fruits thereof when I am withered, this

fhall be my last and onely request, that you will e-

ucrashit my sonnes both with your counsell and

aide, whereby they may rule according to Lawe,

and you obay according to Right, that so in you both, the good of the Empire be about all things re-

Sabellicus.

for refuling to defend a mur-

dolefull Hymnes and ruefull ditties. Thence againe he was remoued to Mars his field, where was erected a foure-square frame of Timber, of a huge height and compasse, the stories still mounting to the toppe with fundry afcents, and richly beautified with strange varieties of gold and purple ornaments, and images of great Art and price: On the second of which alcents, was placed the Emperours faid Bed and Statue, with infinite store of sweetest odours, brought thither from all parts of the Citie: which done, the yong Nobles brauely mounted on Horsebacke, rid round about in a kinde of dance or measure, and another fort likewise (who represented great Princes) in their Coaches, whereupon his fucceffor in the Empire, first ferting fire to the frame, forthwith all the people did the like on all fides: and when the whole began to be on flame, an Eagle fecterly enclosed within, was let fly out of the toppe; which foaring a great height, and out of fight, the people followed it with shouts and praiers, supposing that therewith the Emperours soule was carried vp to heaven. And thus Senerus, which was before a man of Gods making, was now become a God of mans making : and the more to preserue the memory of his fathers glory, Caracalla erected a magnificent Edifice, which he inftiled Senerus his Porch, wherein with most exquisite Art, and admired workmanship, were portraited all his Fathers warres and triumphs, atchieued here in Britaine or ellewhere,

(3) But prefently after, these two vingodly sonnes of this new supposed God, so much emulated each others glory, that the deadly sparkes of enuy, blowne a long time with the bellowes of their ambitious defires, brake out into the flames of murther and blood, being brethren by one Father, but not by the same mother (as it is said) & in this only like, that they were both starke naught, though both in contrarie kinds of Vices. And albeit the Empresse Inlia had sought by all meanes to make peace betwixt them, both formerly, here in Britaine, and now, after their returne to merly, here is being a following their returne to Rome: yet the delite of a fole someragnty, had beene a long time for rooted in Baffianae his heart (for which he had twice attempted his Fathers life, and fo much hasted his death, that hee flew his Physitians, because they had dispatched him no sooner) could not indure an equall (much leffe a confronter) in authority, and therefore in the Court and in the armes of the Em-Geta fisine in his presse, he slew her sonne Geta, in a time least suspected when he had fate with him in state and disdaine, the terme of one yeare and twenty two daies,

(4) And to cloake this fratricide with shew of confraint, first to the Souldiers, and then in the Senate, he accufeth his Brother to have fought his death, and that in defence of his owne life, he was forced to flay the other, and flying to the Pretorian Cohorts for the fafetic of his life, as though further conspiracies had been intended against him in the City, & at his return commanded Papinianus the famous Ciuilian, to excule the murther in his Pleas at the Barre; which when he Papiniozza flaine refused, hee caused him to bee flaine, as also all those, that had beene acquainted with Geta; whereby fo many of the Nobilitic perished, that he was thereby ac-counted another Nero in Rome: and by his fauorites the name of Geta was raced out of all monuments & imperiall inscriptions, as we have seene some of the defaced vpon some Altar stones found here in Brit

(5) Of nature he was subtile, and could well disfemble with them whom hee feared, and make shew of lone where hee deadly hated; alwaies fitting himselfe to the humours of flatteries: Among the Germans, counterfetting their gate and garments; In Greece, be like Alexander, bearing his necke formewhat awry; In Troy, would refemble Achilles; alwaics fo Camelon-like, as the Romans (his followers) were therewith ashamed. In a word, Caracalla (faith Dio) neuer thought of doing good, hecause (as himselfe consessed) he neuer knew any goodnes.

(6) And to fill up the measure of all iniquitic, as one regardlesse of humanity or shame, he married Iulia his mother in law, late wife to his owne Father (4 finne(faith S. Paul) not to be named among the Gen- 1.Cor. 5.1. tiles) and by Sext. Aur. Entrop. and Spar. reported vpon this occasion. It fortuned that Iulia in presence of Caracalla, either by chance, or of purpose rather, let fall the vaile which she wore, discouring thereby her Europius. naked breasts and beauty, which was great; whereat the Imperour casting his lascinious eie and bewraying sabillieut. the Emperous catting its internocests and on supplying this affection, presently faid, Were it not valsayful, I should not be unwilling: to whom she replied (without faceth. respect of modesty) that all things were lawfull to him that made lawes for others, but was subject himselfe to none: forgetting at once both the murther committed vpon Geta her fonne, and the scandals that accompanied so foule a sinne, the pleasure wherof they did not long enioy, both their deaths (by Gods vengeance) foone after enfuing.

(7) For Caracalla remaining in Mesopotamia, and carrying(as it feemeth) a guilty confcience, and fuspition of his life, fent to Maternus, whom hee had left Gouernour of Rome, to affemble all the Aftrologers & ethto forceters Mathematicians (vnto which learned imposters he alwaies gaue especiall credit) and of them to enquire how long he should live, and by what death he should die. Maternus having so done, wrote for answere, that Macrimus his Prefett of the Pratorium (then with him in his expeditios) went about to murther him. Which is thought rather in enuy of Macrimus to have beene fained, then by any Astrological directions so given forth. This letter and others comming to Caracalla his hand, at fuch time as hee was busie about his difport, he deliuered them to Macrinus to reade, and giue him the report at his returne. In perufall wherof finding himselfe to be accused of Treason, and searing left by the sequell hee might bee brought into greater danger, he incensed one Martial a Centurion(whose brother the Emperour had lately slaine) to murther him; which was soone performed, and occasion in the fields offred; for Caracalla stepping aside from his traine to ease nature, Martial, as though he had beene called, ran hastily in without hindrance or fulpect, and with his dagger flabbed him to death; but Generalia kild. being too late perceived, was yet so hastily pursued, that he was hewed to peeces before his tongue could reueale the principall Traitour. Iulia his incestuous wife hearing of his death, with poilon flew her selfe at Antioch, leaving her shame to survive her life.

(8) Antoninus Caracalla, faith Eufebius, raigned Emperour feuen yeares and fixe moneths, but Herodian, Spartianus, and Die allor him fixe yeares Spartianus, and Dio allor him fixe yeeres and two moneths: he died the eight of Aprill, and yeere of Christ two hundred eighteene. The testimonies of these many writers notwithstanding, together with the place and circumstances of his death, and the person by whom it was committed, the British Historians do contradict, reporting him to bee flaine in Britaine in Battaile against the Fiets, by one Caraneeus a man of a Old Manufer. lowe and obscure birth. But by this it may seeme Rep. 136. fome wounds received by him in those British warres, gaue occasion to that errour. He left a sonne not by his incestuous mother, nor by Glantilla his wife, who he exiled into Sicily, but by a mistris, whose name was Iulia Simiamira his cosen German, and indeed no better then a common strumpet: which corrupt rootes brought forth as bitter fruits, euen Heliogabalus, of whom hercufter we shall have occasion to write.

OPILIVS

Eufshire cals be Saulam, aly Sa-nim, and her mo that the was his whore, not his wife. Sabeliang.

Chap.25. | Opilius Macrinus Emp. THE ROMANS.

OPILIVS MACRINVS.

CHAPTER XXV.



Opilius Ma erinuc.

An.Do. 218.



N profecuting our intencourse, for setting downe the AEIs and Lines of fundry Emperours, hecreafter fucceeding, I know I shall hardly satisfie my Readers, being no way able to give content to my felfe, in that, on the one fide, finding very few re-

membrances concerning the state of this our Iland. till the raigne of Dioclesian, the Historie of that Interim may feeme impertinent to our purpose; and yet on the other fide, confidering how vnfit it is, that the Succession of all our British Monarks should be interrupted (that Royall Title being likewise annexed to those other Emperours) I suppose it will bee expected, that somwhat also be said of them, though managing their affaires in places farre remote. It feemeth that the continual! striuing for the Imperial Diademe, and their neerer hazards at home, made them contented to give Britaine some peaceable breathing, and so depriue vs of the Romane Records of those times : which want if I should supply out of our home-bred British Writers, I might be thought, not so much to repaire the ruines of our Monuments, as to heape more rub-bish vpon them. And therefore (necessitie so enforcing) I must crave patience, if I proceed to the rest of our Countries Monarkes, though I cannot to the refrdue of our Countries Exploits and Affaires in those

An.Do.218.

(2) Opilius Macrinus from obscure and base parentage, by fauours of the Emperour, without any notable defert in himfelfe, first afpired to the Office of a Prefect, and at last by the election of the Souldiers, to the Dignitie Imperiall. So farre from suspicion of Caracallaes death, by the outward appearance of a secming forrow, that hee was held of all most free from the Treason, and the second person worthy of their voice. For first, the Title was conferred upon aged Audentius, a man of good fort, much experience, and an excellent Captaine; whose wisdome could not bec drawne to aduenture his life under the weight of fo. vneasie and dangerous a Crowne, but excusing himselfe by the printlege of his age, as farre vnfit to wield the troubles (much leffe to increase the glorie) of the Empire, refused their offers, but with returne of as many thankes as they had given him hands or voices. Whereupon they againe confulted and determined for Macrinus, which as willingly received, as Audentiserefuled : vnto whom they fwore fealtie, but not long after failed in performance,

(3) He made for his Cafar, Diadamenus his sonne, Diadame changing his name (a viuali custome at their election) into Antoninus, because that name was gracious a- Called Antoninus mong the Romans. The Scrate at home confirmed all that the Armie had done abroad; vnto whom it feemed their right, as it were by prescription, to have the election of the Emperours.

(4) His first expedition was against Artabanus King of the Parthians, that hafted against the Romans. for wrongs received by Caracalla deceased : but after three great and dangerous Battles, came to an attone-ment, and a peace betwixt them concluded. After this, as free from further troubles, he returned to Antioch in Syria, and there spent his time in Banquets. and other sensuall pleasures, being drenched so farre therein, that the Armie began to dislike his Gouernment, and to fauour young Bassianus the sonne of Caracalla, then prefent at Emefa a Citie in Phanicia, with Mafa his Grandmother by his Mothers fide, who there had built a Temple confectated to the Sunne, and therein ordained him a Prieft; for which cause he was called Heliogabalus, that is to fay in the Phanician

Language, The Priest of the Sunne. (5) To this Temple in their vaine denotions re-forted many of the Romane Souldiers; and seeing the beautie of the youth, allured Mafa to bring him to their Campe: where knowne to be the sonne of Caraealla, the Souldiers proclaimed him Emperour, and maintained his right against Macrinus; who after this reuolt, met young Heliogabalus in the Confines betwixt Phanicis and Syris, where was fought a blou-die Battle, and Macrinus forfaken of all, and driven to flie; who with his fonne hasting thorow Afia and Bithima, came laftly to Chalcedon, where he fell licke, and was there, together with Diadumenus, put to death the seuenth day of sune, the yeere of Christs Incarnation two hundred and nineteene, when hee had raigned one yeere, one moneth, & twenty eight daies.

Diadamenus

233

Heliogabalus, that

ANTO

ANTONINVS HELIOGABALVS.

CHAPTER XXVI.



Ån.Do.219.

Antoninus

Heliogabalus Emp.



Oung B: Rianus, furnamed Heliogabalus, the fonne of Caracalla before mentioned, thus elected, and propering at his entrance, gaue hopes to his railers, of many princely parts, and fignes of those things that in lequele by better proofe appeared to be on-

lie fignes indeed: for nature had plentifully adorned him with the complements of her gifts, had his mind beene answerably furnished with vertue. But as the one was ouer-prodigall and lauish in his outward forme, so was the other as sparing and desective in bestowing of her inward gifts, insomethe that both in minde and garment, he seemed to be that which in truth he was not. This Emperour, as appeareth by the trust ne was not. A me compressor, as appearent by the recurse of his money, tooke it no meane addition of honour to his imperial Lignitie, to be filled, The Priefl of the Sunne; which in the Affrian Tongue is called El, from whom he tooke the furname Elagabal. (2) Affoone as hee had fettled the Empire firme

vpon himselfe by the death of Maerinus, he began to ypon nimitere by the decision of Maerinus, ne began to discover his owne dispositions, and in wantonnesse, apparell, lightnesse, and diet, to exceed any that had gone before him in Rame; and to farrediffered from the manners of men, that modestie will not suffer vs to record his greatest vices.

(3) Hisapparell was rich, and most extreme costlie, and yet would he neuer weare one garment twice: his Shooes embellished with Pearles and Diamonds; his Seats strowed with Muske and Ambershis Bed couered with Gold and Purple, and befet with most costly temels; his Way strewed with the Powder of Gold and Siluer ; his Veffels (even of baleft vie) all Gold ; his Lamps burning with no other Oile then the Balmes of India and Arabia; his Fifth-Ponds filled with no other water then of diffilled Rofes; his Ships (in his Naumachies or Ship fights) floted in a River of Wine; his Bathes most flately built, and againe after they were once vied, presently pluckt downe; his Plate of finest Gold, but neuer ferued twice to his Table; his Rings and Jewels most rich, yet neuer worne twice; his Concubines many and chargeable, but not one laine with twice; his ny and chargeable, but not one tame with twice; nis Diet to profule, that at enery fupper in his Court, was whally ipent a Thousand Pound Sterling: inuting the vising spens as nouseas remastering: inuting the chiefe Citizens to a Feafs, hee firewed all the Roomes with Saffron, as it were with Auflers, laying, That fach Cattle wave worth of fach cofty Litter. Never the Sea, with him no Fifb was caten: in the Lend, no Flofb: whole Meales made of the Tongues of linging Birds and Peaceeks, or of the Braines of most costly creatures, alwaies faying, That meat was n't fauorse, whose fauce was not coffer. And indeed to coffly it was, that the renenewes of Germany, France, B itaine, Spaine, Italie, Sicilia, Gracia, Afia, Syria, Fgpt, crabia, and all

the *llands*, were not fufficient to defray the charges.

(4) In his *Progress*, this hundred *Chariers* followed him, laden with *Strumpets*, *Eoyes*, and *Bawdes*, for whom he built a *Strumes* in his *Court*, wherein himselfer in the artise of the structure of the structure of the structure. in the attife of an Harlot, made to them folemne and Action Lampid: fet Orations, terming them therein his Fellow-Souldiers; Herodien. and Companions in Armes, with Instructions for them how to practile with most varietie their filthy Luxuries. In regard of which kinde of actions, one doth make this doubt, whether were greater his boundleffe Prodigalitie, his stupendious Lecherie, or his soppith Foolerie: the last of which his Imperiall Vertues, he gaue proofe of, when he gathered in the City ten thoufand waight of Spiders, professing that thereby he vn-derstood how great a City Rome was: at another time, ten thousand Mice, and a thousandwizels, which hee brought forth in a publike shew to the people, for brought forth in a publike niew to the people, for fome wife State-purpofe, like the former.

(5) In Rome he built a Temple confectated to the

Sume, (like to that in Phanicia, whereof himselfe was Priest) commanding the Christians therein to worthip : as also a Chatter-house for women to meet and determine of their Attires; and brought into the Sedetermine of their Attires; and brought into the se-mate house his mother Semiamira, allowing her a Voice among the Senators. In modelite I forbeate to write the particulars of his vn-manly libidinous filthinesse. adding only that which a judicious Author speakes of adding only that which a understood author speakes of him: Kings (faith he) at they shau greater power to sinne then other men, so have they lesser speakes in the circ of the any man; for being set above others in the circ of the World, they are as Markes that are aimed at, and lie open to the shute of Renenge. And so was the state of this Superlatine Monster, whose owne Conscience still flung him, even in the midft of his fivecteft finnes, ltung nim, suen in the mitait of his livectett tinnes, and therefore euer expecting fome violent end, hee prepared silken Halters richly wrought to hang him ielfe, if need were; and Golden Knines to flab himfelte, or cut his throat; and built a goodly Tower of exceeding height, adorned with Gemmes and Gold of inuading tengits autorited with termines and sold of inval-liable coft, that thence he might call himselfe head-long, having these words oft in his mouth, That hope-euer he died, his death should be pretious in the cits of all euer ne atea, put acato poot a ve pressous on sine etes of au men. But he failed of his hope, though not of his de-fert; for against him the Pratorian Suldiers suddenlie arose, no wrong offred them, more then vnto others, but out of a Instice in God, who repaieth sinne with finne, and fuffreth not fuch outragious wicked ones to escape vnreuenged.

These breaking into his Palace, found him (6) I hote breaking into ms place, tound nim not in eltate antiwerable to his calling, but hidde (for feare) in a homely place fureable with his dirty conditions: from whence with Acclamations thorow the ftreets of Kome, more like a Dogge then a Man, they dragged him with his mother, faying, The Bith and her whelpe must goe together: and after their furie spent, threw their bodies into the Common Sinke of the City, and thence into Tyber, finking them downe with

Chap.27. Alex. Seuerus. Emp.

THE ROMANS. great stones, lest the carkases cast vp with the waves, should either find buriall, or infect the aire. The Senate approuing all that was done, decreed that his name should be obliterated out of all monuments in Rome, and neuer any Antoninus (a name before very gratious) should rule againe their Empire: so odious was the remembrance of this Image of I gnominy.

(7) He was aged but foureteene yeeres when hee ceame Emperour; by Herodians computation, he raigned fixe yeeres, and died at twenty: By Aurelius Vi Hors he died at seventeene, & raigned not fully three yeeres: Enfebrus faith, that he raigned fully foure: Onuphrius would have him to live eighteen yeeres,& to dy the 8 day of March, Anno two hundred twenty three.

Enfeb. Heelef. bif.

235



ALEXANDER SEVER VS

CHAPTER XXVII.

Alexander Seuerus Emp



An,Do, 223.



Efore the death of Heliogabalus, his Cosin German Alexianus, by the working of his mother Mammea. was made his Cafar, whole vertues daily increasing, with his age, gaue hopes to the better fort of fome happier times by his meanes: but so farre in-

cenfed Heliogabalus (who hated nothing more then vertue), and so dimmed his fame, that he often affaied to take away his life by trechery: But furuining him, whom no man wilhed to liue, he was with publicke bleflings, and vn(peakable ioy elected Emperour; * his name they changed from Alexianus to Alexan-

he was borne on the day that A-

Heradien. Sabellicus

an (peakes on fylcene) faith, he caufed this Chriwritten all abou bus Pallace . and voice of a publike Crier. Lameridiae, Sabelliess

der, and his furname given of old Severus. (2) He was the sonne of one Varius, a Syrian borne. and of Asammea, lifter to Simiamira, though there are who fay that both the lifters attending on their Aunt Iulia the Empress, were gotten with child by yong Caracalla, and to he sather of Mexianus: howfoeuer, he was brought up in learning from his child hood, having a naturall propention to all humans rouse, natural propention to al numane vertues, and druine pieties: He was very skiffull in the Mathematicks, Geometrie, Mußeke, Caruing, and Painting, & composed some Booker also of Poetrie, so great a louer of the liberall Arts, that he allowed the professors thereof annuall stipends for their further encouragement: and that which most is, hee much fauoured the Christians, from whom he tooke to him-

lefte examples of life, and vrged their Precepts vnto others, and this one elpecially * NOT TO DO TO OTHERS WHAT WEE WOYLD NOT HAVE DONE TO V S. Their Christ he honoured (though as a Heathen man) and would have had him confectated among the Romane Gods: vnto whom he also was minded to have built a Temple, had not his *idol-Priefls* hindred the fame, but a place of their holy affemblies he allowed them by his *Imperiall warrant*: for when certaine *Vinteners* or Victuallers laid claime to the place whereunto the Christians resorted to pray, he thus decided it. That it was much fitter that God therein should be worshipped, then belly-gods should be pampered to surfet there. (A good do-cument of a Heathen for some Christians, who turne

places confectite to Gods diuine feruice into Sheepplaces contecrate to sous attunctoruce into oncep-coares, or to the like prophane vies) This good in-clination of Alexander the forme, was worked in ratioised to fairned up by the infligations of Ammune his mother, in smother thired up by the initigations of examines its infection, as Eufebius wireeffeetl, had fent for Origen (the Christian Doctour) from Alexandria to Anticely by high Acapta. whom the was fo wel instructed, that I erome gives her I from:

whom mews to wer intructed, that I rome gues ner the honourable Title of a moft holy Woman.

(3) Hindelfe, though yong, ruled the Empire with great Wyfedome and Inflice: admitting onely fuch for his Countellors, as were men vicorrupt, fage and learned, skillfull in the Civill Law, and experienced in Antiquities of elder times, and preferring none to any office or charge by fuite, but only by the commendation of each mans worth and fitnes for the place: In regard whereof, he caused Turinus (one of his Courtiers who tooke money of diuers, with ins Courters wint tooke money or quers, with promife to procure the Emperours future in their fuites) to be put to death by imoake, the Crier proclaiming, That hee had fold fmoake, and therefore with fmoake he bould die. And likewife to cut off, in Lawyers their continual felling of Inflice (the bane of all Common wealths) for a fee, he granted a publike & ferreward to fuch as should plead gratis. By which courses, his ciuill affaires were nobly managed, and his warres likewise proued as prosperous; for hee triumphed with great glory ouer the Parthians : The Germanes alfo, who in furious manner had passed the Riuers Danuby, and the Rhine, in many skirmishes he put backe, and forced them to their former obedi-

Bountifull and liberal he was both to the people & foldiers, as by the reuerse of his Coine aboue prefixed is seene, wherin is expressed the fourth Donatiuum and Congiarium, bestowed by the bounty of this Emperour vpon the Souldiers and common people, of which Lampridius maketh mention in his life,

(4) But as Ensy euer attends persons of Estate, and a desire of change, breeds a dislike of the present, to the Roman Legions growne farre out of order by the prodigious Gouernement of the last Emperour, proued now vnnaturall to their dread Soueraigne: whose warres drawing him into Germanie, and thence hither into Britaine, hee found some of his Souldiers Sabelliers and here so tumultuous, that he thought fic to vie exemplary seucrity towards them, whereupon they, being Aaa 1

fecretly backt, (as is supposed) by Maximinus (apotent man in the Armie, raised onely by the Emperous fauour) they traiteroufly affailed him, and together with his mother Mammes, murthered him in a vil-lage then called Sieils, though others fay he was slaine in Germany, in the Citic Mogunce, and some in France,

no other cause mouing them, but onely his vertue, the eight day of March, when hee had raigned (by Lampridius) thirteene yeeres and nine daies, aged by Herodian, and Iulius Capitolinus, twenty nine yeeres, othis rasgne, three moneths and feuen daies, the yeere of our Saniour, two hundred thirtie fixe.

CAIVS IVLIVS VERVS. MAXI EMP.

CHAPTER XXVIII.



CAIVS. IVLIVS VERVS. MAXI, CAES.



Maximus Cafar.

An,Do. 236

Aximinus, a man barbarous by birth and disposition, (himfelfe a Thracian, his father named Nices. borne in Gotland, very obscure, his mother Ababa of little better rancke) spent his youth in keeping of Cattell, the pouerty of his parents admitting no bet-

ter maintenance : yet afterwards his formnes brought him vnto great advancement, and that by working vpon the outward object of his person, being for shape and strength (if the reporter deserve credit) rather to be thought a vast Giant, then described for a goodly man: For Iulius Capitolinus, affirmes his height to be eight foote and an halfe by Geometricall measure, and his Body answerable in euery pro-portion, infomuch, as he did weare as a Ring on his thumb, the * Bracelet which his wife vied to weare on her arme, a stature thought vncredible; and yet Islephus, an Author of great credit, doth confidently record, that one Eleazar a Iewe accompanied Darius the Kings sonne of Persia vnto Rome, (sent by Vitelli-us to Tiberius for an hostage) whose height, as he saith, was fully feuen cubits, a measure surmounting this.

(2) This Maximinus increasing strength with rowth, left his trade of Cattle-keeping, and reforted to the Romane Campe then in Syria, where for his admirable height, he was admitted by Septimus Senerus into the rancke of a common Souldier, and shortly after , preferred to bee one of his Guarde. Baffianus made him a Coronell, and Heliogabalus gave him the leading of certaine foote : but the last Emperour Alexander, advanced him to be a Captaine of the fourth Legion, whose death notwithstanding hee disloiallie practifed (of fuch force is the defire of Soueraignty, which makes men forget all bonds of gratitude and loiall trust) and was thereupon by the Souldiers elected Emperour, with fealty sworne vnto him.

(3) The ignoble Vpftart thus borne from the Maximingiof dunghill, vpon the wings of Fortune, vinto the leat of maughty dipo-Maichte, thought the increase of his pride was an increase of State; and knowing hee had nothing for which he might describe to be loued, he studied in the whole managing of his estate, how by all meanes hee might be feared. Hee therefore displaced Senatours, Captames, Souldiers, and whom not ? with murders, banishments, and confiscations of their goods:

an strick effectally he did cut off, whom hee supposed to have beginnings. The christina knowledge of his bath segnings. The christina knowledge of his bath segnings. The christina knowledge of his bath segnings. banishments, and confiscations of their goods : all and likewise vnder him were martyred, (whereof ori-gen wrote a Booke, not now extant) and he is by Writers accounted the fixth Perfecutor of Gods Saints: His death atfo that, whereas his flatterers at first called him Mile, tempted. Anteus, and Hercules, for his strength; now they all tearmed him, Bustris, Phalaris, and Cyclops, for his fauage crueltie.

(4) But his life being odious to God and Man, was often attempted to be taken away; first, by Maximu, a man of a Consular dignitie; then by Quarcinus (whom Capitolinus calleth Ticus) fet on by the mus (whom capitonius calleth riese) let on by the old Souldiers of Septimus Seaerus, that had beene differenced by Maximinus; and lattly by the Army in Africa, who elected Gordinus (their Proconful, a very Princely qualities) his Cefar the Senate likewife confirming all that they had done. He tooke to himselfe the furname Africanus either in respect of his Pro-Confulthip which he exercised in that Province, or else as desceded from Seipio his family who bore that furname : His fonne Gordianus likewife was stiled Angustus, as appeareth by his Coines, whereon hee writ-eth himselfeA v G. and vpon the Reueric, Liberali-

tas A V G. I. two Emperours fitting.

Maximinus then in Hungarie, and hearing thereof, rather like a mad man raged at his misfortunes, then either by courage or wife forecast endenoured to redeeme them.

Chap.29. Gordianus Afri. Emp.

THE ROMANS.



An.Do.238.

(5) In the meane while, aged Gordianus with the Enlignes and glory of an Emperor, entred Carthage, with blessings and acclamations of ioy: whereat his old enemic Capelianus, Gouernour of Numidia and Mauritama (Provinces in Africke) much envied; and gathering forces in Maximinus his name, made head against him, and shortly gaue him Battle, wherein Gordiamus the younger was flaine before the walles of the Citie. The father feeing his Cafars difastre, and himselfe an Emperour onely nominall, and his new risen Sunne to have passed the circle of his height, and now to approch to the fetting and fall, wished againe his private estate; and in despaire, griese, and disdaine of his enemies successe, with the Girdle which he wore, strangled himselfe to death, when hee had beene stiled Emperour only twenty fix daies: whereat Maximinus was not a little joifull, and the Senate no lesse perplexed, seeing themselves deprived of their hopes, and now laid open to the Tyrants will, who like a Lion came raging on, threatning reue nge in all their blouds.

(6) The State thus flanding, all the Peeres and Princes thereof affembled themselues together at Rome : and in the Temple of Iupiter, after long debating of their present dangers, concluded, that Maximus Pupienus and Clodius Balbinus together should bee must expensis and Loans: satismus together mount bee Emperours; men of great account and fauour with the people. These taking Oath and Imperiall Robes, leuied forces to maintaine their cause: and Balbinus taking charge of the Citic, Pupienus marched to meet Maximinus, who in great pride had passed the Alpes, entred Italie, and now laid siege against Aquieliea; in which this was very memorable, that The Citizens wines cut off the haire of their heads, to make bow-strings for refistance of so hatefull a T yrant: where after long af-fault prevailing little, his discontented Souldiers fell to mutinie : and entring his Pauilion, at noone day without refiftance flew both him and his forme, bearing the same whom hee had created his Cafar, his fonce shine, and whose monies, as he minted them, we have inferted at the entrance of his Empire, Their heads for a Trophy they fent before them to Rome, where with fuch acceptations they were received, as that the Senate acknowledged themselves to be rid of a Monster

(7) Hee was, as is faid, exceedingly tall, his body (7) Free was, as is laud, exceedingly rail, his body great, and ioints proportionable, faire of face, full cies, and of such firength as is uncredible: and accor-ding to his limmes, so was his diet; for hee daily deuoured forty pound waight of fleft, and thereto dranke fix Gallons of wine. He died aged fixty yeeres and odde, when he had raigned three yeeres and odde, when he had raigned three yeers and odde. and odde, when he had raigned three yeeres, in the 1896. Escut. yeere of our Lord two hundred thirty and eight.



CLODIVS BALBINVS

CHAPTER XXIX.





Clodius Balbinus Emp.

An.Do, 2 3 8

Pupienus

Maximus

Emp.



nus Maximus and Clodius Balbinus thus elected together for Emperors, the one in action, and the other resident, a greatsedition chanced betwist the Senate and Souldiers, which grew to a bloudie iffue among the Citizens, and

Rome it selfe was set on fire in fundrie places; the Emperours presence and au-

thoritie little prenailing: which strucke such feare into their hearts, that they accounted thefe times most unfortunate, and themselues and present estate to be vinortunare, and themicines and present estate to be most desperate. But the death of Maximinus (and his head happily brought them at the instant) gaue present life to their dying hearts. And Pupienus comning to Aquielies as much quieted the Armie, sent backe the Lieutenants to their places of charge, and with great pompe and praise returned to his Fellow-Emperour.

(2) The parentage of Balbinus is reported to bee

Juli. Capitol.

Maximinus

Emp.

it Dextrackersum, being a broad plate of gold, fet with rich lewels, an omament in

Infeph.Antiq.L. 18 cap.6. Maximines his meanes of riling to preferment

Heradian and

Int Capital.

both noble and ancient, made Citizens of Rome by great Pompey, and himselfe borne at Cales in Spaine. Pupienus Auncestors were much latter, yet had hee borne many Offices of Magistracie, and euer discharged them with wildome and valour: both of them highly accounted of in Rome.

(3) Peace thus established beyond all expectation, (3) Peace trus citabilines beyong an expectation, with floutes and applauses the Emperous's enter the Senate-house, where (according to the custome and their deserts) they were stilled, The Fathers of the Senat, with thankes as to the onely preferuers of their lines and chares: and some extolling the Senate highly for their prouident forelight, in electing such sapient and worthy Emperors, contrarie to the rash and undiscreet practife of fuch as chose their Gouernours to fit their owne fancies, rather then the charge to which they aduance them; and whose bad lives brought commonly their vntimely, but deserued deaths. The Pretorian Souldiers tooke themselues to bee taxed with those aspersions, and the rather, because the German Strangers were brought in to be of the Guard, as if themselves were not to bee trusted : so turning their fpleene against the present I mperours, sought to set vp a new, which shortly after they found opportunitie toeffer

The Emperours

(4) For these Emperours, though aged and wise, were not so linked together in affection, as they were neere joined in authoritie ; and therefore the winde of emulation had the easier passage betwixt the chinkes of their owne conceits; the one prizing his wildome and government to be more indicious; the other, his birth and Nobilitie to be more honorable: and each of them having his owne Guard, flood vp-on his owne Guard, though one Palace contained them both and both their endeuours euer well conforting for the bufinelles of the Empire.

(5) At this time the Provinces of Parthia and Germanie grew vnquiet, and by civill difeords, endangered their fubications : to represse which, the Emperors agreed to goe in person, the one into the East, the other into Germanie. Now whilest these great preparations were in making, the Capitoline-Games were celebrated in Rome, whereunto all (almost) resorted, but especially the new-come Guards of the Emperours. The Pretorians finding the aduantagious time, which they had long waited for, fuddenly in armour affailed the Court; which Pupienus perceiuing, sent in all haste for Balbinus, and both their Guards for defense. But his Fellow-Emperour, vpon a vaine suspicion detra-ded time himselfe, and hindered the forwardnesse of the Guards, so that these Traitours had easie accesse into both the Emperours Chambers, where in their rage they dispoiled them of their Imperial Robes, and haled these poore aged and innocent Emperours. like two Theeues thorow the middeft of the Citie: Laftly, they flew them, and left their bodies to despightfull ignominie.

(6) These Emperours raigned together one yeere, and somewhat more, and died the yeere of Christ two hundred thirty nine: in which yeere happened to great an Eclipse of the Sun, that the nooneday thereby became as darke as the mid-night.



M. ANTONINVS GORDIANVS.

CHAPTER XXX.



An.Do.239.

M. Antoninue

Gordianus

Ĕmp.



Ordianus (for Antoninushe might not be called, a law formerly acted inhibiting the fame) was the fonne of a daughter to old Gordianus (that had made away himselfe in Carthage, as is declared) at the age of eleuen yeeres was created Cafar by the Senate, with

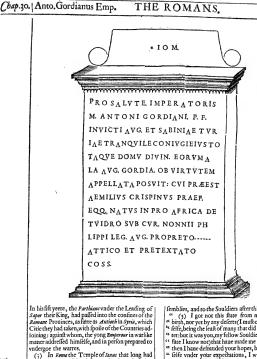
Pupienus and Balbinus; and at their deaths by the Pretorian Souldiers, elected Emperonr, not yet fully by the Aliance and Counfell of one Mifitheus, his Prefect and Instructor, whom for his great learning he so honoured and loued, that he tooke his daughter for his wife; and by whose onely direction, he profperoufly administred his State affaires.

(2) Touching the affaires of our Prouinces pro-

ceedings, or what Lieutenants were imploied in Britaine fince Virius Lupus there placed by Seuerus (fince whose death our storie hath spent twenty seuen yeeres) we finde not recorded. Yet now in the raigne yeeres) we hade not recorded. Yet now in the raigne of young Gordians, fome glimmering light for her Gouernour appeareth by an Altar-Stone found in Camberland at a place then called a Caffra Exploratory, with an infeription for the happy health of the Emperour Gordian the third, his wife Faria Schinal Transmill. Tranquilla, and their whole Familie: which votiue Altar was creeded by the Troupe of Horsemen surnamed Augusta Gordiana, when Emilius Chrispinus a natiue of Africa governed the same vnder Nonnius Philippus Lieutenant Generall of Britaine, in the yeere of Christ, two hundred forty three, as appeareth by the Confuls therein specified : whose forme and inscription wee have followed by the Stone it selfe, now remaining at Connington among many others, in the custodie of Sir Robert Cotton Knight.

* IOM.

*Old Carleil.



windergoe the waters.

(5) In Formethe Temple of Ianus that long had flood flut, he caused to be opened, a sure token that waters were in hand: and departing the City, passed the Straits of Hellesport, and tooke his way thorow Myfia, to ftay the Gothes that were come downe to inhabit Thracia. Thence marching to Antioch, recouered the Citie, forcing Sapor to forfake the Province, and to content himselfe with his owne demaines.

(4) But long this Sunne went not without a Cloud, nor his fauourable fortunes without a checke; for Missitheus, his Nestor, paying Natures debt before it was due (being poiloned by Philip, as Eutropius affirmeth) was wanting in counfell, & miffed for truft: nrmetn) was wanting in council, & milled for fruit to supply which, Philip (an Arabian, and of ignoble parentage) was made his Prefect, wife (I must needs lay) had hee beene moderate; and valiant in Armes, had he beene true. But the glory of a Diademe beheld with the falle light of ambition, so dimmed the eie of his dutifull affection, and blinded the fenses of his afpiring mind, that he, who from nothing was rifen to be fonthing, thought that also nothing worth, whilst it was shadowed with the name of a subject. First therefore he fought to winne credit with the Souldiers, to whom he was facible; to regard the poore, to whom hee was liberall; and in all things to outstripe his Soueraigne, to whom he was treacherous. Yong Gordianus vnable to endure his Prefectors delignes, or his owne diffraces, and perceiving the marke whereat he aimed, complained his wrongs in open affemblies, and to the Souldiers after this tenor.

" (5) I gor not this state from my Parents by
birth, nor yet by any deserts (I must consesse) geech to the
soldiers.

Gestians his
byech to the
Souldiers. ter:but it was you,my fellow Souldiers(vpon what fate I know not) that have made me what I am. If then I have defreuded your hopes, by carrying my
leftle vnder your expectations, I with to bee fet
in the place where I first was; or rather (If I fod
freue) my life, and state, may at one infant be ended by your vnerring hands: For Noble mindes cannot brooke to be curbed with the bitte of base indignities, nor fuffer their vaffals to bee Corriuals of their Maiestie. It is a icalous object (I must needs confesse) and many times casts great suspition whe "contelle and many times caus great impution whe
is finall occasion, but I, for my part, haue alwaics
thought of that humour, that men causifully icalous, doe most justly deserve what they visuallie feare; and both your felues will bee my witnesses, how faire I am from the touch of that staine, and alfo the dailie occurrents of my Cafar, (if fo low I

may termehim) doch make more then manifest, I am but yong, yet elder by fixe yeares then I was my body tender, yet exposed to the charince of warre; my counfell raw, yet bettered by your wifedomes; and my conquests in my selfe nothing, but yet in your valours both glorious & famous. What then are mine errours, that I may amend them? or your discontents that I may redresse? for by the powers of heaven I proteft, it is your loves which

most esteeme, and the good of the Empire, for

which I onely wish to line; the first is in your powers to bestow at your pleasure, but the other in me (if it be possible) shall line even after death. (6) These complaints notwithstanding, Philip so politickly, nay, rather traiteroufly brought his owne

Philiphistres

Hamer Meder a

proiects to passe, as that the yong innocent Emperour was displaced, and abandoned of all: in which diwas cuipacce, and abandoned or all: in which differels be first faced to be made his Cafar, and that denied, to be his Pratorian Prefett. but neither would bee had, yet at length the charge of an ordinary Cap. bee may yet at rengit the charge of an ordinary cap-taine, was with fome difficulty granted him. But Phi-lip bethinking himfelfe of the greatnes of Gardians his blood, his loue and effective both in Rome and the Provinces, and his ownevertues equalifing any, hee commanded him to be flaine in the twenty two yeere of his age, and the fixt of his raigne. The Senate hea-ring thereof, elected M. Mareius, and after him again, Ing unrecojciecce M. Martins, and after him again, L. Aurel. Seureus, Ofinlianus. But Philip through the giddie multitude, prevailed against both. This Em-peron though yong, so well demeaned himselfe, that the Senate by authoritie added to his titles. T. v-TOR REIPVBLICAE, and PARENS PRIN-CIPVM POPVLIROMANI, and after his death euen by his owne murtherers, his Monument of faire Stone was raifed in the confines of Persia, and ♥pon his sepulchre this inscription set

DIVO GORDIANO VICTORI PERSA-RVM VICTORI GOTTHORVM VICTO RI SARMATARVM DEPVLSORI ROMA-NARVM SEDITIONVM VICTORI GER-MANORYM SED NON VICTORI PHI-LIPPORVM.

To the Satred Gordianus vanquisher of the Persians, Gothes, and Sarmates, extinguisher of the Romane Ci-uill disferds, and subduer of the Germans, but not of the

(7) He was of condition most noble and louely, of behauiour gentle, very studious and given much to learning; having in his Librarie no lesse then threelearning nating in his Librarie no lette then three-foore and two thousand Bookes, as is reported. The truth is, that wicked people were not worthy long to enjoy so vertuous, so element, so peercles an Emperour. He died in the moneth of March, in the yeare of our Redeemer two hundred forty fine.

M. IVLIVS PHILIPPVS EMP.

CHAPTER XXXI.



M. IVLIVS PHILIPPVS CAES.



An.Do.245

Iulius Philip



Hat man is there, who confidering those forepasfed murthers, of so many, and so mightie Monarchs, would not, by the spectacle of others calamitics, be induced to preferre the fecuritie of a moderate estate, before the defire of

Soueraignty; whose glorious content is onely in appearance, but the cares and hazards are both reall and perpetuall. But of so attra-Giue vertue is the Load-stone of Maiests, through the imagined selicity thereof, that most mens desires are drawne to that one point of the Compasse, and if a little faire winde of fortune shall blow on them; they will launch forth with their full failes into that More incognitum, a Sea of unknowne calamities. And amogst others, fuch were the blinde defites, and fuch the vnhappy euent of this Inlins Philippus the Arabick Bararian Of parentage obscure and ignoble, as victor and others affirme, who pluckt off the imperial

robes of his Liege-Lord, to inuest himselfe.

(2) Being now accepted as Empereur by the Soul-diers in Parthia, he wrote to the Senate of the death, Vider, Empirical Parthia, he wrote to the Senate of the death, Vider, of Gordianus, as though it naturally had happened, and with faire preparations of his and with faire pretentions of his good purpoles, bur more through the feareof his Parthian Souldiers, obmore enrough the teareof his farman sounders, obtained their confents; whereupon fluffling vp a most dishonourable peace in those parts, and declaring his some Philip for his Casar, (whose coines with his, we have fet in the beginning of this Chap.) hee made all speede towards Rome: where, the yeere infuing, his shewes and games were exceedingly magnificent, for the Celebration of the Birth-day (as we we may terme it) of Rome, that beeing, the thousand yeere from her foundation.

(3) It pleased God at length to touch this Emperours heart, both with such a sense of his owne forepast finnes, and also with the light of heavenly truth, Enfebrus. partitions, and also with the light of nearenty truth, that he hath the honour of being the first Emperous baptiled into the faith of Christ, together with his fonne Philip, and his wife Seuera: though the pub-

Iulius Philip.

Chap.31. Alex. Seuerus. Emp.

Poncius the Martyr did it.

Possp. Lessu.

Eufeb Ecclef, Hift

cap.11. Gothes infelt Mi-ha and Thracia.

THE ROMANS. like authorizing of the same Profession was reserved for the blefled times of our Eritifb Conflantine. The meanes of his conversion from Idelatrie, were Fabianus and Origen, who by letters exhorted him therunto : and for the same Profession, were both himselse and sonne murdered by Decius his Captaine, though

others report, that Decius did rather hate Christianitie

for their lakes, then them for their Professions sake, And howsoeuer Pemponius Latus accuseth him to bee a differibling Prince, yet Eusebius declareth the effects

of his Profession farre otherwise: for Philip (faith hee) feeking to communicate with the Saints, could not bee ad-

mitted, till fuch time as he had made open confession of his

Faith; at which time he ioined himfelfe with those, who for their sunes were brought to examination, and was pla-

ced in the roome of the Penitents, because that in many

things he had beene faulty: which willings he obeied, and declared by his workes his sincere and religious minde towards God. Which may the rather appeare by Sabel-

lieus and Bergomensis, who shew, that the hatred of De-

eius against Philip and his sonne was conceiued, for

that they had committed the custodie of their Treafures vnto Fabianus the Christian Bishop of Rome, who baptized them, as some write; though others say,

(4) The Gothes againe descending from Seythia, infested Missand Thracia with a mighty Armie, seeking their habitations in those Countries as former-

he they had done : against whose irruptions, the Emperour fent one Marinus a most valiant Captaine, who

no fooner came into those parts, but drew the Souldi-

ers into a Rebellion, and proclaimed himfelfe Empe-

rowr, taking (as he faid) his example from Philip, that had in like fort railed his title by his Sourraignes fall. But the Souldiers that had newly creeked him, as fuddenly againe threw him downe, and in their mutable of the source of the s (5) Into whose Charge was sent Decius, a man of

affections flew him. (5) Into whole Congress was tell Decimo, a man of great experience, who allo no fooner was in the drimite, but they forced the Imperial Engines upon him, but they forced the Imperial Engines upon him, mie, but they forced the Imperial Beffgne upon him, and (as fomereport) again this will. Ince therefore fine feerchy to get and the will be the foreign feerchy to Philip, declaring this attempt of the Soudiers, and how her mean to make cleap from them with perfifting in his dutifull allegence. But the Emperous fearing this to be fairing the him how the repetition in Deriva, left by delay he might guice him more through, omit-

ted no time to vphold his owne, and with a mightie Armie vndertooke these affaires himselfe, not trust-ing any more to the disposall of his Captaines. And immediately departing Rome, with a sterne resolution, and ouer-hard hand, held the reine of that begun Expedition, whereby he presently lost the loue of the Experience, wherever the presence out the more worthy of rule, who min Perenathey forthwith proclaimed Emperour, and cut off Philips head throw the teeth, edge flain. before they had departed *Italie*. At newes whereof, Entrep. the *Pretorians* flew *Philip* his *Cafar* and fonne; a man of so observable composed nesses, as that he had beene neuer seene to laugh in all his life. And thus the two

Philips ended their raignes.

(6) Iulius Philippus (faith Enfebius) raigned feuen Enfeb. Eccutius. yceres : but Eutropius and Victor gine him onely fine; whose death happened in the yeere of Christ Iesus,

two hundred and fiftie.

GN. MESSIVS, QVINCTVS, TRAIAN, DECIVS.

CHAPTER XXXII.



Decisus Cafe

Merines faine

An.Do.250

Decius his pa-

Tra. Decius

Emp.



Ecius elected Emperour by the Persian Legions, proclaimed in Verona by the omane Souldiers and in Rome confirmed by the Voice of the Senate, was of them all with wonted flatteries stiled Augustus.

(2) His Birth was noble, of the City Cabali in

the Lower Pannonia, now knowne by the name of Hungarie: himselfe well experienced, wife, and valiant, and wielded the Empire as a worthy Prince, had he not blemished his raigne with a staine of Tyrannie, Desian a great he not beemined the range with a traine of 2 yranme, and perfectived Gold Saints with fuch a Heathenish rage, that he is rightly noted by learned Writers, to be the fewenth Horne of the Perfecuting-Imperial Beaft, whose sauage cruelties towards the innocent Christians, is most lamentable to be heard, but more to their fmart that fuffred and felt it,

(3) The

Enfeb.Ecclef. bift. lib.6.cap.41. Vincent.Niceph.

Pial.1.9.

(3) The Grid-iron he made the Altar, whereupon bleffed Laurence offered his body in facifice; the Stewes the Temple, wherein Theodora the vnsported Virgin worshipped her Christ; the comfortlesse Deferts, the refuge of aged Cheremon, Bishop of Nilus; and the Cane, the Sanituarse of the fenen Souldiers, fabuled by Nicephorus for feuen Sleepers : and so barba-rous was he that way, that he put to Martyrdome many children, as Vincentius, citing Hugo, affirmeth. Vinc. 115.11. c. 52 Fabianus and Cornelius, both reverend Bishops of Rome, Esche Fiele f. h. hee flew . Alexander, Bishop of Ierus falem, imprifoned to death; and Orest Origen, after he had flowing thin at an Iron-stake, his feet hee locks in the Stocks foure paces afunder, where he so continued certaine daies, inuenting such tortures and strange temptations against the guiltlesse Christians, as are most admirable to heare. But long hee raged not, ere God in his iuflice tooke reuenge, and brake him to peeces as a Potters

(4) For the Gothes that had invaded Mysia and Thracia, continuing their Irruptions into the bordering Provinces, drew him into an Expedition for those

parts, where being betraied by Trebonianus Gallus his owne Captaine, he saw his two sonnes, Decius and Hostilianus, (whom he had admitted in fellowship of Empire with him, and whose monies wee have with his expressed) slaine before his face; and himselfe to Decimendhis intombe his body, as a laftrefuge, in a deepe whirle-poole; wherein it was fo fwallowed vp, as it could neuer be after seene; having no other honour of Buriall, nor place of remembrance where his bones should rest. And according to his Death, so was his Defcent : for neither hath he Father, Mother, nor Wife mentioned (for ought I know) by any writer, (for of Salustia Barbia Orbiana, it is doubtfull whether to him or his fonne Hoftilian she were wedded) nor his Acts so exactly registred, as were those of the preceding Emperours, his finnes to deferring it, and God in his renenge so punishing it.

(5) Aurelius Victor and Eutropius say, that hee Occion his raigne aigned two yeeres and odde moneths: but Enfebrus Enfeb Ecute 10.5 affirmetia his raigne, not fully two yeeres; most hold 140.7.40p.1. him to have died at the age of fifty, and in the yeere of Christ, two hundred fifty two.

Pomponius Letu Ternandes



C.VIBIVS TREBONIANVS GALLVS, Emperours. ECAIVS VIBIVS VOLVSIANVS, Š

CHAPTER XXXIII.



Tre. Gallus Emp.

Vibius Voluli Emp.



An.Do.252.

Galliss elected



His ouerthrow of the Romans, and death of Decius, n outward femblance was greeuoufly taken by ebonianus Gallus, that no man was so forward or reuenge as hee, and therefore the last in suspicion of Treason. The Armie hee strengthned, and

daily encouraged, pretending great service against those barbarous Scythians, but all to gaine credit and liking of the Souldiers, whereby hee soone atchieued his defire, and with their applauses was proclaimed

(2) By Birth, he was descended of an honourable Familie in Rome : but true honour cannot harbour where dwelleth treachery and fallhood, as it was with him, when appointed by Deeius to bee Gouernour of

Myfia, and to keepe the passages from the inuading Gothes, the defire of Rule io corrupted his minde, that he plotted with them against the Arme, and betraied the trust and life of his Sourraigne.

(3) Neither is he stained with the blot of Trea-

fors only, but also with a carelesse and cruel government; for with the Gothes hee made a disheronment. ment; for with the Gothes hee made a dishonourable peace, whereby the Romans (who were Lords of the World) became Tributarie by a yearly pay to those vincinill Scythans, who neuerthelesse in short time brake their Truce with him, facking and spoiling the Proninces of Thrasia, Mysia, The salia, and Macedonia: the Persians then also by their example entring Mesopotamia and Syria, made spoile even thorow Armenia

(4) Gallus little regarding these troubles abroad, confumed his time idly in Rome, rather as a Bondman to his owne voluptuous desires, then a Conquering Monarch; taking for his companion and Fellow-Emrour, his sonne Volustimus, as appeareth by inscrip-

Chap. 24. C. Iulius Æmil.

THE ROMANS.

243

Gallus perfecu-terh the Chri-

Paul Oroline Aemilian, Mas

tion of Coine placed before, a very childe, whose yeeres did quir him of any Capitall Crime. But him-felfe not perceiuing the infortunate successe of *Decisis* for persecuting the innocent Christians, stumbled (as Eufebius faith) at the same stone, and banished them Enith Reclof his, whose Praiers preserved his prosperous estate: at Vounerall Pesti which time followed so vinuerfall a Pestilence, that no lence thorow all Pronince in the world was free from the same : and his wicked Life and most vnfortunate Raigne hastened now vnto their period.

(5) For the Gothes continuing their furies begunne, his General Aemilian. Maurus ouerthrew them

with a wonderfull flaughter; whereby hee grew fo famous, and Gallus fo contemptible, that the Souldiers (euer affecting change) proclaimed him Empereus the newes whereof soone roused Gallus from the Bed of his lascinious pleasures, and with his sonne entred the quarrell against semilianus, whose fortune was to the quarter against exeminants, whose for time was to flay them both in fight, the yeer of Christs Incarna-tion, two hundred fifty three, after hee had raigned fone flane. not fully two yeeres, and lived (as Victor testineth) | Esteb Estef Hift. forty and seuen; whereupon the Armies joining their who was 1 forces together, conferred the Imperial Fitle and Enfignes upon the Conquerour.



C. IVLIVS AEMILIANVS.

CHAPTER XXXIV.



An.Do.253

Æmilianu. Maurus Emp



Emilianus succeeding Gallus by the only election of the Mysian Armie, was by birth an African in the Prouince Mauritania, of Parentage base and obfcure; who being rifen by the Warres from meane places of service, and no better then a Common

Souldier, aspired to the charge and credit of a Captaine Generall.

(2) His Election at first was contradicted by the Italian Bands, in fauour of Valerianus their owne Leader, whom they fought to raife Emperour, the Senate also inclining thereto, the fame of the man among them was so renowned. The most voices therefore heard on his fide. Some haue rather accounted Emilianus an Vsurper, then ranked him in the catalogue of lawfull Emperours.

(3) But feeing Eutropius doth allow him the place, we are not to dispute his title or claime; only his short time of gouernment admitteth no matters of large discourse, being cut off in the budde, before the graft had time to spring. For his Armie disliking what themselues had done, and hearing of the worths and election of Valerianus, laid down their weapons born in his defense, and tumultuously murdered him in the heat of their blouds, after hee had raigned in name,

without action, the space almost of four moneths,

(4) So vinconstant is the state of worldly felicitie,
and may bee compared to a massless Shippe, which without Tackle is left to the mercie of the raging Seas that is one while caried with the faire windes of hope towards the hauen of wished defires, but straightwaie ouerwhelmed with the waues of despaire: and most especially him that is borne vpon the opinions of the giddy multitude, now carried aloft vpon the flouds of their fawning fauours, and anon left in the fands of their retiring ebbes, with a fudden shipwracke of all their fore-gone fortunes. And these adventures too foone Amilianus felt, who the same yeere that hee thus put foorth to Sea, loft all his aduenture, and therewith his life, Anno 253.



his end and a

Aurelius Trictor.

O'GO (NEGO DE CO

P. LICINIVS VALERIANVS.

CHAPTER XXXV.



Anno Dom. 254. Herodot in Clie.

Dan. 4. 27.

Treb . Pollio.

Paul Orofius.

educeth Vale

rifonet by Sape



F eucr the saying of the wise Athenian Solon (spo-ken to Crassus the rich king of Lydia) was true, That no man can be happy before the day of his death: then most truly may it be verified of this Valerianus the next fucceeding Emperor:whose eers were multiplied with increase of honour, untill they came to seventy and

seuen, but then were clouded with such ignominious miseries, as the like had neuer hapned to any Romaine Emperour before him, and (I may well say) to no other Monarch in the world before living: Such is the Ordinance of our great God, sometimes from the the Orunance of am greas Gon, to meetings from the Danghit to raile men of low degree, and to place them with Princes in the Chaire of Maieflie; then againe to bring down the Mighty from their seate of Glory, & to leave them chained with the pooreft Captines, & bafelt Vaffals. For fuch was the State of that Great & Proud King of Babel, who from the height of Maiesty fell into the coditions of an vnreasonable Beast. And so was it with Valerianus, though not vtterly abandoned fro the Societie of men, as Babels King was: yet was he cari-ed Captine vnto a Nation whole Society was fearce humaine, and where his viage was more then barbarous,

(2) This man was both nobly descended, and of (2) This man was both nobly deteended, and of fo great cheeme among the Romans, that beeing but a private, and then allo ablent, they chole him for their Confor, an Office of high dignitie, conferred e-uer yponthe Belt, as Trebelliss Pellic, who wrote the Hilfory of his Life, hath declared. Enfetim reportecth his beginning to haue beene gracious and milde towards the Christians, aboue any of his Ancestors what-Palerismus a pr tector of the Chustians, foeuer; yea euen those who were themselues openly accounted Christians: insomuch, that his Clemencie was their Protection, and his Court the Sanctuarie of was their Presettion, and his Court the Susfiancies their fafeties. But Satos (who thearted fleepenh on) firred yan Egyption Sorcercragainft them, who fo inchanted the Emperors heart, that with great crueltie he began the Eighth Perfection, & Gorgach, that fome have appropriated the faightes of the Apocallyps in the chirecenth chapter won him, as so whom proven against for the made fair in mention of the state of the Apocal. c. 13 Disay (see in Epif ad Hermamones apad Eufebium, opinion is the ancient Dionysius Alexandrinus. Many indeed were the Martyrs that he caused with horrible Sabellicus Volan tortures to die, and more had done, if the instreuenging hand of God had not cut him off Valerianus takei

(3) For Sapores the fauage King of Persia, making great spoile in Syria, Cilicia, and Cappadocia, drew Vale rian from Rome into Mejopotamia, to withfland his rage, where firiking Battell with him was left (either by Treason or Chance) without sufficient Guard to fecure his Person, and was there taken Prisoner by the

Perfuss, having then raigned feuen yeeres (whereof two were fpent in fpilling of the bloud of Saints) and thence forward, the reft of his life was enthralled to a most miserable and mercilesse scruitude: For the Tyrannizing Persian pust vp with this fortunate gale, to an excessine swelling of pride; when soener he was disposed to take Horfe, made V alerianus his Foot-stoole, causing this Greatest Monarch of the World to whom all Nations did homage, to bow downe his necke and backe for himselfe thereon to tread, and mount into his Saddle: In which vnsufferable flaucric, his old body indured without release, to the end of his most wretched life, which by some Authours account was full fenen yeeres more; the very time of the Babylonian Kings abasement.

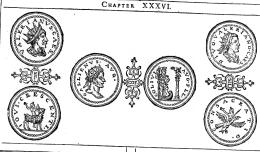
(4) But herein the milery of Valerianus is much greater then Nabuehadnezars was, in that God both restored him to his former glory, and indued him with heauenly grace to confesse his tinnes; whereas Valerianus perished in the desperate calamitie whereinto ansi perithea in the desperate catamine whereince he was fillen as Englesia thewesh in the words:

And how I derian, for finuch as thou half exercised the advancement fame erucly in mardering the fabiots of Cod., therefore solutions. hast proved unto us the righteous Indgement of God, in that thy felfe wast bound in Chaines, and carried away for a Capthy felt may bound in Chaines, and carried away for a Cap-tive Staw with the Gorious Purple and thy Imperiall Ast-tire, to at length alfo commaded by Sapar Sing of the Per-fame, to be laine, to peraided with fait, half fet up unto all memoral to those own workshop to the own wretchedraff. (5) How unificalesable the cruckies were which

this wretched Emperor endured by that Tyrant, may hence appeare, in that not only those which were Alhenceappeare, in that not only those which were Al-lies to the Romaine Empire, but also the Barbarous Kings, and friends of Sapores were moued with com-mission, and distalle, as Trebell. Polis prouch by their own letters sent for his release, the copies whereof he there produceth. Other Princes also of the East, of the Battrians, Albanians, Ilberians, and Soythians, inhabiting Mount Taurus, had fuch fense of these ignominious viages, that they disdained to receive the letters from Sapor of his Victorious successe, and sent their Ambassadors to Rome, profferring their assignment flance for the redemption of their Emperour; yet all auailed not, and Sapor held ftill his Prifoner, abating nounited not and Super need to this Experies, would not thing either of his owne pride, or his Captines mileries, but in the end (fo hellish a fiend is revenge) commandity. ded his Eyesto be pulled out, and so for age and griefe he died, as Eufebius saith : being, as Agathus (a writer of credit) reporteth, flaied aliue by direction of this Flaied sline. vnhumane King. Thus did God punish one Tyrant by another, and thus himselfe felt those torments vnpittied, which hee had without pitie inflicted on others. The race of whose Raigne is accounted to bee feuen yeares before his Captimite, wherein he lived almost so long as Galienus his fonne far Emperour, and died in

P. LICI.

P. LICINIVS GALIENVS. CHAPTER XXXVI.



An.Do.261.



Chap.36. P.Licin. Galienus Emp.

Alerian now Captine in Perfia (while Odenatus grafping the aduantage, tooke vpon him the Empire of the East; & the now guide-lesse Armie of Rome, occupied onely in spoile and mutinie, their leaders in faction, and the whole

Rome in diftur-bance for electi on of an Em-

1. Aurecha in Myria. 2. Gallienus in Rome. 3.Odenatus in the East. Odenatiu ouer-commeth the Perfians.

State aftonished in affrighted terrour and amazement) Balifta (a gallant gentleman) first of the Romans mooned with the instant miserie of the Common-wealth, resolued by electing anew an Emperour, to preuent the apparant ruine of his owne Country: yet neuer in this his worthie refolition, once dreamed of Gallienus, (though before chosen Anyufus in the full fortune of his father) but the affection of the Armie forcibly setled the Garland vpon Macrian and his two fonnes, as the most wor-

thie; who with his eldest not long after subdued by Aureolus viurping Illyria (against Gallenus then receiued Soueraigne by the Roman Senate) and his youngest betraied to murder by plot of Odenatus, left the dif-tracted Empire to tho otheree, of which the last difdaining much the indignitie offred to the State of Rome, by that bale captinitie of Valerian, whose calamity nothing touched the fense of his vanatural fonne, entred a warre against the Persians, and tooke from them their Cities Nifabis and Carras. But fuch was the moderation of this man, that although hee had power of an independant Sourraignety, yet he held fill a good correspondencie and intelligence in all his actions of Gouernment, with Gallsenus, to whom he fent (as monument of Victorie and Revenge) such of the Persian Nobilitie as became his Prisoners : and thus Odenatus did conquer, and Gallenus triumph. But fuch was the basenesse of the other, that when he could not by any Princely vertue in himselfe, eclipse the true merit of Odenatus, he endeuoured to deface by treacherie what he could not suppresse by valour. But in this failing, hee made him then (through feare) copartner of his hee made nin then (inrough reare) copartner of his Empire, filling him Augustus, and stamping his face and the Persian Triumph vpon the publike Coine of the State, by approbation of the Senate, leaving him alone to defend those Frontiers of the Empire, whilest himselfe, neither regarding his old fathers miseries, (most miserable that he had so vanaturall a sonne) the dishonour of the Romane State, norther evolts of the Provinces, whereof newes was daily brought him, spent his unprincely thoughts upon fruitlesseduices, as in reserving sundry Fruits and Flowers, that they might grow greene and flourish all seasons of the yeere; and

(which was worle) vpon women and wanton dallian-

ces. Yet had hee a Ladie of excellent beauty and allurements, Cornelia Salonina Pipara, to his wife, the daughter of the King of the Marcomanni, whole feature wee finde often minted vpon her Monies. His sonne by her Saloninus hee adopted Cafar, of whom there is no more remembred in Storie, then that hee was borne noble, trained vp princely, and perished through the errours of his father, and not his owne. And to his brother Licinius V alerianus (to whom the father had given the title of Cafar) he added the honour of Angusus. And therefore we have not held it improper, to adioine to his their monies in the front of his life.

(2) The calamities of this Emperours time were so many, as almost exceed credit: and Signes showed both in the Heauens and the Earth, manifested his wrath, that fate upon the Throne of Iasper, from whose presence issued Thundring, Lightnings, and Voices. For (by Writers of best credit) the Sanne was clouded as vnder sackcloth, and not seene for many daies together. Earth-quakes great, and fearfully refounding, o-ucrthrew Cities and other edifices, shaking the ground by Earth-q fo terribly, that vast Caues, and hideous gaping bowels of the earth were thereby laid open, and whercout (no leffe strangely) flowed great streames of last waters. The Earth roared, and seemed to thunder, when there was no voice heard in the aire. The Sea ouer-swelled her bankes, and brake into many Continents, drowning Countries, Cities, and People : and (besides all these) so violent a Pessilence raged, that in Rome no leffe then 5. thousand persons died in a day

(3) These miseries somewhat mooued this Heahenish Emperour to remorse : and thinking thereby to pacifie the wrath of the Dinine Powers, hee staied the Persecutions of the Christians, sending out his Edicts in fauour of them. For not only the Heauens, Earth, and Seas declared the anger of their God, out of whose mouth went a two-edged sword, but the Provinces also seemed to be remoued out of their places. The Souldiers of all parts electing their owne Generals, advanced no leffe then Thirty at once, who affumed the title of Empethen very stones, who anumed the title of emper-rours, but are recorded to Posserties by the name of Viuping Tyrants. And as they were all deadly oppo-lite each to other, so were they jointly almost all bent against Galienus; whereby the Roman Empire was more oppressed with her owne forces, then euer it had been by forraine Powers. And fince fixe of them assumed the Purple Robe in this Westerne Angle of the Empire, it will not be impertinent to the course of Story, with a light touch to remember them, and to expresse their Monies, as we have done the rest of those that held the reines of gouernment in these parts of the Romane

Galienus flaied the persecution of the Christians Enfeb, Ecclef, bift

Thirty Emperor

the yeere two hundred fixty one,



M. Cassius Labienus Posthumus after the death of Saloninus (who was committed to his education by Gallienus) assumed the Empire, by aide and encouragement of those of Gallia, ouer whom he had born the office of liefetenancie by fauour of Valerian the Emperour. And these againe, as all Populars greedie of Innouation from him and Junius Cassius Postinmus his sonne, tooke both honour and life, after ten yeares gouernment. This opportunity either made by L. Flianus, or fitly taken, mounted him vp with ease into that Emperiall throne, in which he sate not with like fortune of continuance, though of conclusion. To this man succeeded together, M. Aurelius Victorinus, and Lucius his son; both in a Tumult necre Colam by their fouldiors murthered. And had not the inordinate luft of the elder, blemished his other vertues, he had to al the most excellent Emperors bin nothing inferiour, in the best of their other vertues.

(7) The reftleffe humor now of the giddy Commons, next fetleth it felfe vpon Aurelius Marius, a fo-ueraigne furable in his meane condition to their base affections (for he was no better then a Black-smith) yet to him a man of their own meanes & making, they were no lesse vinconstant and cruel, then to the rest; after three daies, setting an end of his gouernment, with ter three dates, tetting an end of his gouernment, with a fword of his own forging. And therfore Pineflus Testricus, the father and forme, though aftending the throne of Maiefile, with the greatest applause of that people, and filling it wp with much merit and happy fucces of their own, when they considered the insufficient of their own, when they considered the insufficient has been desired as a support of the control of ferable infolencies and desperate practises of that prophane ranke, chose rather to adorne Aurilians Triumph, in a voluntarie captiuitie, then to live and rule

at the denotion of a lawlesse multitude. And these times seemed no lesse fatally bent to bloud, disorder, and tyranny in other parts as well as these: For the Pannonians raised Ingenuus : The Myssians, A. Regillianus : The Egyptians, Æmilianus : In Africa Celsus was proclaimed: In Illyrieum, Aureolus: and in the East, Odenatus (a man the more famous for Zenobia, his glorious and magnanimous Wife; Whose valour was so feared of Galienus, that to make him his, hee admitted him his Fellow-Emperor, with the Stile of Augustus as we have remembred before.) The * Germans invade Italy : The b Gothes waste Greece, Pontus and Asia; The Samartians seize · Austricke and Hungary : The Persians robbe Syria: The Saxons breake into Gallia: The Franks into Spaine: In a word, all are in vproares, the fecond feale opened, and the Red-horse prepared for Battaile, whose Rider had received a great and sharpe Sword, with Commission given him to take Peace from the Earth: and these times of troubles are so famous in Storie, and the revolutions of Acts so agreeable to the words of the Prophecie, that they may feeme justly a most exact accomplishment of that sa-

cred origins.

(5) Finally, when Gallienus had raigned from his s. 1684. veeres, Martian, Heraelianus, and Ceronius, three of yeeres, Marian, reracuants, and Ceromus, duccor, this principal Captaines, (compounding together that one of them should be Emperour) plotted his death, whiles hee besieged the Citie Millan, where they traiterously murthered him, the yeere of our Lord Gellennthis two hundred fixty nine, after that hee had fuffered death and continuous formation in the had fuffered number of his the Empire to be rent in peeces, and viurped by many raignes Forraine and barbarous Nations.

Apoc. 6.4.



M. AVRELIVS FLAVIVS CLAVDIVS.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

Fla. Claudius Emp.



An.Do.260.



OMES glory thus declining, and the Imperial Foundations thus vndermined, the aspiring tops of all that beautious frame beganne to shake, and to forestiew the figues of her approching fall. And had not the Fates even at that

instant raised a stay to vnderprop the Walles, those mounted Towers which so long had braued the Skie, had beene laid leuch with the Ground, and made the ruines of All-confirming

(2) For whereas by the strange confusions under the late Emperour, the Eagles bady was burdened with the waight of those their beads at once of which num-ber though many of them by their owne mutuall ra-uening were confumed before the death of Gallenus, yet the mightieft, as Aurelius Gouernour of Dalmatia. Tetricus and Victorinus, who held Britaine and Gallia; and Zenobia (the Heroicke Queene and wife of Odenatus) all the East; to omit the Murderers of Galienus, that durft not make their claime, (their deed to ill difgefted) all these were still remaining and strong, at such time as Flauius Claudius by the Souldiers was elected before the Walles of Milan, and confirmed with much ioy by the Senate in Rome.

His defeere. (3) This Flanius was descended of noble Paren-tage, out of Dalmatia, by some; or as others say, of Dardania, and sprung from the Troian Bloud. But Au-relius Victor will have him the sonne of Gordianus the

Emperour before spoken of. Howsoeuer, a most worthy man he was, an excellent Captaine, of fingular continence, a just Judge, a louer of strangers, seucréto the wicked, but most benigne to the vertuous : so that we may well fay, In Rome was a new world; or at leaft,

In the World was a new Rome.

Paul Grofius.

Two thousand

(4) His first Expedition was against Aurelius, that held Milan, whom he there flew, and joined his Souldiers to his owne frength. But preferring the gene-rall good before his particular quiet, he addressed his warres for the East, against the Gothes, who (as Iornandes their Story-writer reporteth) had infested those parts of the Empire (for fifteene yeeres continuance) with continuall irruptions, and had now lately entred friendship with many other like barbarous Nations. inuading Thracia, and the Countries before them, e-uen vnto Macedonia : and thence taking their way thorow Hungarie, came downe the Riuer Danubie, with two thousand Saile of Ships, fraught with Munitim and Men. To meet these, Claudius prepared : but be forc his Encounter, he wrote thus to the Senate:

(5) " Renowned Fathers and Reuerend Lords, vn derstand ye for certaine, that three hundred and twen tie thousand men of warre are entred our Confines, whose waight doth seeme to burden the Earth it felfe, and whose warre-like preparations make these parts of the Empire to tremble and quake; with whom I am now to strike Battle : wherein if the

Conquest be mine, the loy will be yours. But if I fall, yet I pray remember that I fight after Gallenss hath raigned, and rent the strength of the Romans in thele remote Prosinces, and after the Rebellions of Lollianus, Possibumus, Eugenius, Regillianus, Celfus, and others, who have so weakened the sinewes of

our Armes, and broken the Swards and Launces of our defente, that I may well by, wee wan, if no heregth, yet weapons wherewithall to fight. And to our flame be it floken, Zenobia a Woman continuous for the continuous continuous to the continuous
our performance shall bee in this scruice, repute it

"(I pray) for great, and wish our proceeding may
fort to the weale of the Empire.

(6) Which done, with no daunted spirit he entired Battle, and with more then wonted courage fought qualitation to valiantly, that he flew and tooke Prifoners, to the number of three hundred thou fand fighting men, with two thousand Shippes laden with Munition, so that whole houses were filled to their toppes with Tarwhole houses were niled to their toppes with Table gett, Shield, Swords, and Launces, and other abil-ments for Warre, whereof he wrote against to Rome: and following the Enemic with successe of Victorie, in Thracia neere Bizantium, in Macedonia neere Thef-Calonica, droue the Gothes out of those parts which they had so long infested, and restored the wonted bounds of the Empire. Thence marching into Ger-manie, neere the Lake called Garda, gaue that revolved Nationa great overthrow, where (as Eutropius and National great outertinows, where (as Emeropsis and Prilion decreport) he vanquilithed two thouland of those fitning Germans, and there established againe their subsection to the Romans power. And now minding to goe forward against Periosas and the puissant department of the prilional Combina, French did fifth cut off his purposse, and short in the control of the principal state of the principal state of the purpose.

lie after his life: a thing very strange and rare in that age, as by the course of their raignes wee haue hitherto feene; not that so great a Monarch should die, (they being all of the same earthly mould that meanest men are) but that in those daies a Roman Emperowr fhould die in his bed, as other men doe, of a na-

nrali death.

(7) Hee was of personage tall, his bodie well His personage tall, his bodie well His personage and qualities. (7) Free was or perionage call, fill boale well composed and firong, bright and cleere cies, his face great and full; and of life most temperate and chafte. Her enigned one yeere, tenne momeths, and fifteene daies, and died the fourth of Februarie, in he yeere of Christ, two hundred seventie one. His Statue of Gold was fet up in the Capitell, and his Target of the same metall hung vp in the Senate-house, himselse (in honour of his admired worth) placed among the Romane Emperours that were deified for Gods: fuch an estimation and loue did his vertuous life procure vnto him euen after his death.

M. AVRELIVS QVINTILIVS.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

A. Quintilius Emperer.



An. Do.271

Daintilias bro-ther to the last Emperour.

Entropius,

landius, and Vice-Roy in his absence for the Guard of Italy, was by the Armie whereof hee had command, proclaimed Emperour immediately vpon the Newes of Claudius his

death : The Senate as ioi-fully confirming his Ele-ction, as they were forrowfull for their loffe of his most worthy Brother. Brethren indeed they were by most worthy prouner. Distinct much valike; so that what seemed to bee past in the one, was in the other supplied and full remaining: For this M. Aurelius Quintilius, was both wife for Civil Government, and experienced for Warrel, wanting no complements of an bfolute Prince.

(2) But long his glaffe flood not without a turne. nor his Fortunes fauning without a frowne. For the

intilius, the Brother of victorious Souldiors which in his expeditions had fol-lowed Claudius, and thought themselves worthy of the first voyce in Electron, proclaimed Aurelianus for Emperour, a most valiant Captain; and of whose pro-

Emperour, a moit valiant Captam; and of whole pro-welfe therehad been fo fufficient experience, as that Quintilus knew hee could not fland against him. And therefore militraling the strength of his Title, and affections of his Southards, repruced irgmontinious for a noble minde, to die with less honour then he attained vnto, and enioied by his life: and therfore resoluing to die an Emperour, chose rather by a voluntary cutting of his own veines, to powre out his life his own veines with his bloud, then to hazard the chance of vnceraine warres, or to returne to his prinate estate.

And thus no longer raigning then seventeen daies, Heraispeedbat (which short time could minister little matter of lar- feuencen daier ger discourse) hee died with his brother the same moneth of February the twentith day, and yeere of Christ his incarnation, two hundred senentic

L. DOMITIVS AVRELIVS VALER. AVRELIANVS.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Val. Aurelianu



An.Do. 271.



O short was the Raigne of the last Emperour Quintilis, that Aurelianus who followed him may be faid to be the Successor of Clau-dius, and not of him: being elected by his Legions in the East, as soone as the other had beene in Italy

(though confirmed before him of the Senate in Rome) continued still his riuall for Maiestie , and attained the top of that high ser

Gole , whereof Quintilius failed, before his foot had well mounted the first step.
(2) This Valerius Aurelianus was of parentage

neither honourable nor rich, and yet his fortunes carried him to the height of both. Some recount his birth was of Dacia; others of Myfia; both so doubtful that Flauius V opifeus, (the copious tyriter of his Life) leaues it undecided, and to the censure of his Readers. His rifings were by the Warres; wherunto from his child-hood hee had a naturall inclination : and for continual carying of his weapons, was commonlie called Aurelianus the Sword-bearer.

Chap. 39. Val. Aurelianus Emp. THE ROMANS.

(3) His feruice was fufficiently knowne to the Gemeral of diuers Prountes, who had forty fundry times implored him in the charge of a Lieutenant: and vader Cludius in Perfix he was the Coronell of the Horfe. In the warres of Sarmatia he is reported to haue flaine forty Enemies with his owne hands in one day; and at other seuerall times, to the number of nine hundred men, as both Vopifeus and Theoelius have affirmed.

And generally fo famous were his deeds, both before perable with Cefar and Afehe was Cafar, and after, as that he is by fome compa-red with Iulius and Alexander.

(4) Vpon the ratifying of his election by the Se-naie at Rome, hee halted not thither to be faluted and enstalled Emperour, but foorthwith marched against the Suenians and Sarmates, who fore infested the Empire with warres : and having foone fubdued them, and quieted those parts, in great haste hee came into Italie against the Germans, who with Fire and Sword had gone as farre as Milan: and them likewise with great valour hee forced thence. Then entring Rome with great pompe, caused the Wallesto bee repaired and inlarged, which was not lawfull but onely for Victorious Emperours. But long he flaied not, ere he returned into Syria, against the stour Lucene Zembia, whose braue resolutions, and warlike power for fight her Letter in answer vnto him (when being sorely tired, he profered her wealth, life, and liberty to yeeld) doth manifestly declare : the tenour thereof being as followeth.

(5) " Zenobia, the most mighty Easterne Queene. (5) "Zembius, the most mignty sasterme zuecom, to Amelianus, Romet Angustus, fenderh greeting. Neuer Captaine to this day, in vling Penne in Read of Speare, or filed Words for Weapens points, hash of more fufficiently discharged the parts of Warre, then thou to me in Writ halt done: wherein I well perceive thy drift, and blame thee not, that feeft me but a Woman : which Sex you men make subjects only by your smoothing tongues. But know, Augustus, thou dealest not with a Roman Dame, nor with her who vpon base conditions will subscribe her honour; but with Zenebia, the * Palmyrean Queene, in whose womanly breft the manly heart of great Odenatus doth fill-line and lie. These courting tearmes doe ill beseeme a Campe, and worser ' him who would be stiled a Mars. But yet thy Gol-" den Showre hath rained beside our Lappe; nor wee a

Venus to meete thee for thy sport, but with our Launce in hand to trie our lawfull right, and with our Sword: to answer thy demands in bloud. I am a Woman; fo was * Tomyris; thou knowest the rest: "a voume; jo was - worrus; thou anowet the reit:
in Armet signalit Auguluss jo was Cleopatra, who rather choic ro ling her felic ro death, then line a fileieif (though a Prince) what great Offaines. Art
thou his better it hou art deceived; or I her worfe?
no ching leffe: who from her perfon doe derine my
Pedigree, and from her courage will maintaine my and filling a vef-fell with their bloud,did caft in caule, I am a Queene, and raigne beloued, was Romes
Empresse, obeied and honoured; and the wife of now drunke th of thy fill, To this doth Zene-bis allude.

Zensbia her Let-

The great Citie

Palmyra (finth loft, 1000) was built by King

Salomen; whene their Nation tooke the name

it bordered vpor the Parthiam Kingdome in the middle betwirt

at and the Ro-

* Emprelle, Obeiet and nonoured; and the wire or of odenatus, whom all you Romans greatly feared. Are my powers weake? The Persians (whose strength you well haue tried) will supplie. Are my Souldiers few ? The Saracens have more that will assift : and the Armenians are wholly at my command. If then Theeues and Robbers in Syria were sufficient to ouer-" throw thine Armie, what hope is left thee to escape our hands, when all these our strengths shall be thus conioined in one ? Therefore the same offers that

to me thou hast sent, the same to thee I heere returne, and will performe, if thou in time embrace thistruce

(6) This haughtie answer of that vndaunted Queene, put more fire to the furie of Aurelianus, who tooke the Letter in such scorne, that hee tiffcattfed death to the Inditer, (whom he supposed to be Longinus the Philosoper, who was alwaies with her, and her Instructor) which afterwards he did accomplish: for destroying her seuerall Aids before they could meete deutroying ner ieneran znas perore they come meete together, and belieging Palmyra her ftrong Citie, hee brought the fame to such distresse, that in the end hee tookeher Captine; and glad of fuch a prey, carried her himselfe to Rome, where following his Chariot of Triumph, attired in Tiffues and richest Robes of price. shoe was lead his Prisoner in Chaines of Gold : vpon thee was lead his Prijoner in Chaines of Onia! vpoin whose presence the Spectators with admirations so much gazed, that somewhat it dimmed the Maieslie much gazed, that somewhat it dimmed the Maieslie beaute, of Aurelianus: for shee is said to be exceedingly faire, though not very white, but somewhat browne : her though no very want, our tentement thrown: ner it is blacke and bright, her teet finning like pearles, her bodic tall, and of most starely proportion, her countenance models, mide, and pleasing, her voice sweet, her connersation honest, her minde chaste, and body continent, wife, temperate, and learned in the Greeke, Latine, and Egyptian tongues. Yea the atchinement of this Conquest was held so notable, that hee reputed himselfe the Restorer of the East, as it appeareth by the reuerse of his money here prefixed in the

reth by the reason or us money nere prefixed in the entrance of his raigne.

(7) Thefe Acts of Aurelianus made him fo famous abroad, and feared at home, that Terriesu which had held our against Galierus, came in under his protection, holding it more fafe to bee a Subject in quiet, then a Commander against an Opposite of so in-uincible a minde: by whom thereupon hee was made Gouernour of Campania, and of other Provinces

(8) Hitherto this Emperours successes were very prosperous (we may well suppose) for his indulgence to the Christians, whose assemblies he permitted, and whose Bishops he so fauoured, that at their request hee banished Paulus Samosatenus the Héretike out of their Councels, and published an EdicF in the behalfe of their Synods. But afterward Satan minding to fift the Wheat, Eugh: Eug. Hig. that the Chaffe might be his, flirred vp this Emperous 1607 cap 39. to raise the Ninth Persecution, and to send foorth his Edicts for the destruction of Gods Saints: which whilest he was in perufing, and about to fet his hand and feale, a Thunderbolt from Heauen strucke into his presence, and so neere vnto his person, that all accounted him to be therewith slaine, God warning him by this his Meffenger to be wife, left he perished in his own waies; sa shortly after hee did, being slaine by his Soruants, through the Treason of Mness his Secretarie, the nine and twentieth day of Februarie following, neere vnto the Citie Bizantium, when hee had fate Emperour foure yeeres, eleuen moneths, and seuen daies, the eere of our happinesse, two hundred seventy fix.

(9) He was offtature tall, of body well shaped, a His feature of pleasing countenance, and of a seemely presence, a body and minds great feeder, and very feuere, whereby he was as much feared as beloued, and therfore reported to be a good Physitian, but that he ministred too bitter Potions; and was Canonized after his death among the holy Empeours : in the second yeere of whose raigne, the Great Constantine of Helena in Britaine was borne.



M. CLAV.

Agrelianus at first a fauourer, now a perfecuto of the Christians



M. CLAVDIVS TACITVS.

CHAPTER XL.



Claudius Tacitus Emp.

An.Do. 276.

dead no man lought to be Emperour.

He former seditions ended by Aurelianus, and the state of the Empire remain ning now in quiet, no man peared to fue, much fle tumultuouslie to triue for that Royal Diadem; but all the great Commanders (as though they made courtefic in gi-

ning way each vnto others) stoode at the foot of Ma ung way earn vito onters) thoose at the root of wa-ieftie; no man attempting higher to mount. The foul-diors fent to the Senate, to defigne the man whom they belt liked; the Senate requested the fouldiers to elect per liked; the senate requested the founders to elec-him whom they held worthief; in which respective complements, and most kinde correspondence of all parts, eight moneths paffed with a peaceable Inter-

regnum, as writers report.

(2) It feemeth, the fresh sense and searefull experiences of the former heady proceedings, made men more wife, then to feeke their owne deaths, and especially the Generals to be better aduited, then to runne desperately vpon their owne destructions. A change vncredible, that Thirtie ere whiles would needs be stiled Emperours, among the tumultuous Souldiours (though they were fure to buy the vse of char name with their dearest bloud) and not one now in peace could bee found, either hasty to seeke it, or verie wil-

(3) At last both Senate and Souldiours, having in their eye M. Claudius Tacitus, a man very Noble and of Confular degree, of great age, fingular learning, & long experience in Magistracie; him by a joint and Riong experience in Maguiracie; num by a ioint and configring fuffings, they all elected to their Empire; but he hauing before hand fome inkling of this their purpole, got him out of the way, lining very ficreely two moneths at his Rurall Mannor, flying (faith two monerns at his Auran mannor, nying (airth Popifew) that high dignity which hefore-law would proue his ouerthrow. And when they did by Embaf-lages often follicite him to accept of their Election; fending him the Entignes and Stile of mushus hee againe returned them, though with harty thanks, yet absolute deniall, alledging by reason of his age and infirmitie, that hee was every way vnable to discharge their so great expectations.

(4) But after much inter-course, and many in treaties passed, at length (the necessitie of the State fo requiring) he accepted their offer, though not with much contentment to himfelf, who knew the waight of fo great titles would proue heavy & alwaies dange-rous for him to beare; but with vnipeakeable toy, was rous for num to center, out with whipeakeanie 109, was received by the whole State, which promifed all blef-fed hopes to the state under so worthy, so wife, so ver-

fed hopes to the flate wader fo worthy, fo wife, fo vertoous, learned, and fo inft an Emperour.

(5) For as before his addancement, he was of Excomplex composed many vertuous disjointion, fo in
then high Effect, his life was temperate, and without
al pride, & to define us to be a Preceder of moderation,
all pride, & to define us to be a Preceder of moderation, & fingularity vnto others, as that he would not per-St ingularity vinto others, as that he would not per-mit his Empresse to weare any Teneth of high price, not to vie other curlo mable inperfluitie, or exceller, not to vie other curlo mable inperfluitie, or exceller, his owne house. For learning and learned men, whom he cure embraced in his primare state, he now by all mennes endemored to honour and aduance, and pub-lications. The state of meanes endeuored to honour and aduance, and pub-likely profields that what Imperial vertues her had, her wasto affiribe them to his fluidy of good letters: For which case, her was worth to call provided restrict For which case, her was worth to the North State, Lat (data worthield Hijferian of the Romann State) his Father, and commanded his worth to be careful-ily preferred in euery Library throughout the Impire; and ten times enery yeare to be transcribed on publique cost. All which notwithstanding, many of

that worthy Authors Bookes have fince miscaried.

(6) But his vertues were too great for the world

Taking. (6) Buthis verues were too great for the world long to enjoy; and fish his Raigne was but flort, it is bootselfe to lengthen it with long disources: For his Peace continued without any memory of Warres; and his flort time (whetein he edid nothing without confern of the Senate) was spent rather reforming or the state of the state ther mens vices , and abuses of the Lawes and State, ther men vices, and abuses of the Lawes and. State, them in displaying his some vertures, which down-leffe (if their faire fireame had not been evarimely floop) would have proued income to carry his foregars, and vamachable by any abid of the work of the control of the contro thanketh mm name, by ms reocusous journers in Ajia, vpon his voiage against the Persians: but Vittor reporteth that hee dieda naturall death, and that of a portent that noe unevanatural death, and that of a low ning-fener, in the citie of That fine: And Flaurus Popifens, (who wrote his life) faith his death came vpon. pyear, (who wrote his nie) takin his death came vpon, a furcharge of griefe, by reafon of factions; whereby (the infirmitie of his age thereto helping) his vnderflanding was crazed, and his heart broken, whereof hee died, when he had raigned fix moneths, and twen-ty daies, the yeare of Christ Iesus, one hundred se-

THE ROMANS.

M. ANNIVS FLORIANVS.

CHAPTER XLI.

M. An. Flori anus Emp.



An.Do.277.

Florishus mad himfelfe Em-

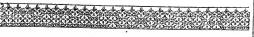
Chap. 41. M.An. Florianus Emp.

O fooner was the death of acitus diuulged, but his prother Florianus (much vnlike him in that point) tooks vpon him the Name and Authoritie Imperiall, without expecting any eection either of Senate or ouldiers, and therfore not

likely long to stand sure. And although in all other princely parts hee was not much valike his brother, yet having fo great an Opposite as Probus was, on whom the Easterne Armichad conferred the same Title, the blossomes of his conceited hope withered euen in the budde, and

perished before they had any time of growth. (2) For no fooner came to his cares the newes of

Probus his election, but he found that heady and precipitate attempts were pleasing in their Beginning, but full of difficulties in their Proceedings, and most disaftrous in their Successe: and therefore despairing both of Men and Meanes to raise the Building, whose foundation he had so hastily (but too weakly) laid he canfed his owne veines to be cut, as *Quintilius* before him in like cafe had done, whereby he boldly bled to death, after hee had enloyed a Titular Soueraignite only eightie daies, faith Eutropius: but Popifeus lath, not altogether two moneths, and thinkes him killed by the Souldiers, in the Citie Tharfus likewise, in the yeere of Christ two hundred seventy and seven,



M: AVREL VALER PROBVS.

CHAPTER XLII.



An.Do.277

Val. Probus Emp.



HE Easterne Armie most potent and famous at the death of Tacitus, from them was expected the new Emperours election, which accordinglie they did, but with much more wisedome and deliberate circumspection, then the Souldiers of those times

were accustomed to doe. For every Captaine of the Armie singled out his owne Companies, and inseveral Assemblies exhorted, that all affections laid asset, they would applie their mindes to thinke of the worthieft man, on whom they might conferre their voi-

ces and fauours. At which time, the opinion of Probus his worth had so generally possessed the hearts of all men, that the shout and crie of all was vniforme. Let vs haue Probus for our Emperour. This being figni-fied to Rome, the Senate with applause and thankes apned to Amme, the Sender with a ppisaue and unanxes approved and confirmed his leichtion, with additions to his Title, Angufun, The Father of his Country, and inherity Elfoys. For inthose times, cue namongst Heatism, the larged Title of a Stipp was accounted an additament of honour cuen to an Empergen.

(2) He was borne in Hungarie in the Citie Sirmia, His descent. f honourable Parentage, especially by his mothers iide. His fathers name was Maximus, a man famous in Militarie Seruice, who died Tribune at the warres in Egypt: and himselfe very young, but very valorous,

FLORI-

Sabelliene.

by the Emperor Valerianus (who so loued him for his ! vertues, that he vied to lay of him, that of all men he best vertites that he victorisy of nim, nat of at men ne negr defenced the name Probus, that is vertuous) was made a Tribune allo. In which Office, with great praice he fer-ued vnder Galienus, Aurelianus, & Claudius the Empe-rours; under whom besides other exploits he tought seuerali single-combats to the great honour of himfelfe and Countrey, and received as markes of victories, many Civicall Crownes, Collars, Bracelets, Launces, Banners, and other Enfignes of Martiall deuice and Priviledge. Preferred to be Generall in Afriea, he subdued the Marmarides : In Egypt the Palmerines; vnder Aurelianus the Sarmates and Germans; vnder Claudius the Gothes; and in all places so famous for his Acts, that hee was compared with Hannibal and Cafar.

(3) His first service after hee became Emperour

Val. Probus Emp.

Probus compa-rable with Han-nibal and fafar,

was in Gallia, against the Germans, that had made themfelues Lords thereof, where in one Battell, continuing two daies, he flew foure hundred thou fand of them, and recovered seventie Cities from the Enemy, as himselfe fignified by his own Letters to the Senate. After this warring in Selauonia, he quieted the Prouinces of Mulcouia, Russia, and Polonia : And entring Thracia, did no lesse in Greece, Syria, Arabia, Palestina, and Iudea; whence passing into Persia, hee had honourable compolitions of Narfeus their mighty King. Wherupon issued so vninerfall Peace, that there were no warres heard of in all the Provinces of the Empire; infomuch that it was a common Prouerbe, The very mice durft not that it was a common rrouerve, a ne very note unity note gram for feare of Probus. But long this laited not, ere hee was diffurbed: for the Egyptians creded one Suntain turninus, a Captaine both wife and valiant, for Emperour, and that fo fore against his will, as he was like to be flaine by them for gaine-faying their defires; and by a speech deliuered to his Erectors, he made known to them his advertnes from to dangerous an ambition; to this effect.

Saturninus cho-fen Emperour.

His speech to

(4) Fellowes and Friends, by my whole endeuours I haue alwaies fought to preuent that, which now I fee I cannot fhunne, I meane the Throne of "Maiefie; which howfoeuer to others, it may feeme
"full of glory and feeritie, yet to my felf, I fore-fee it
"will proue, both bafe and dangerous. Bafe, for that I am no more the master of mine owne affections; which hitherto in my private estate were bestowed freely, & where I thought best, but must hece-forth "be caried at other mens dispose, and cast vpon those that describe them least. That little time that I was wont to take, in retyring my felfe to my felfe, must now be straitned to serue others; and my thoughts "wholly spent to preuent those weapons, which are "borne (in shew) for my defence, but are (in truth) "the keyes of mine Imprisonments. I cannot go without a watch; I "cannot eare without a Tafter; these are but bonda-"ges to a free condition, and neuer neede in a pri-" uate fortune. That it is dangerous, it is no leffe appa-"nate fortune. I nate a sangrous, it is no teste appa-"rant: for besides the sarpe-pointed & waighty sword, "hanging onely by a swifted-thred ouer our head, "Probus is not a Galtenus to compound for the Dia-"dem, but to touch his scepter, is to awake a sleeping Lion: What should moue you then, to stir vp his "wrath, to feeke my death, and your owne destructi"ons? For affure your selues when I die, I shal not die "alone: So all our fame purchased in so many yeers
"imploiments, shalbe lost by this one daies worke: "and my Conquests in Africa, of the Mores, and in "Spaine, branded lastly with the eternall scares and infamie of Rebellion.

(5) These speeches (as Flauius Vopisthe Writer ther-of received them from the report of his Grand-father, who was there present and heard them) could nothing at all divert the resolution of the Souldiers, but that they perfished and maintained their Election against Probus: who vpon notice thereof hastning toward them with a mighty power, offred them pardon, as one vnwilling to fied Civill-bloud, or to lose so worthy a man as Saturnimus was : but vpon refufall of his proffered Clemencie, hee gaue him a most sharpe battell, wherein most of the Reuoulters were ouerthrowne, and Saturninus in the affault of a Cafile Summinushis befieged, was flaine, to the great griefe of Probus, who fought to have faued his life.

longar to hauc tauce in site.

(6) But with his death ended not all Civill Profess.

Broiles: for Bonofie & Proculus two moniters of that age (though of different kinds of vices) opposing induceding themselines against him, and affirming the Trite and profess. Robes Imperiall, vsurped the Prounces of Britaine, Spaine and some part of Gallia, knowing that in these places Probus was not much beloued. Bonofus vvas borne in Britaine, but brought vp in Spaine, without note of action, but onely in his cups, for hee was efteemed the greatest drinker of all men liuing: infomuch as Aurel faid of him, he was born, novi vineret, SabelSins. fed ut biberet; not to draw breath, but to draw in liquor: & yet (as it feemeth) hee was in good account vnder the faid Aurelianus, having a charge of Ships upon the Germane Seas, which either by treacherie or negligence were burned by the Enemy, in the mouth of Rhine, and (as Probus tooke it) not without the prinitie of Bonofus: who therefore not daring to stand to the triall, made all his powers against the Emperour, but was in Battell ouercome, and despairing euer againe to make head, put his owne in a halter, whereupon it was faid, that a Barrell was hanged, and not a Entofast death.

(7) Proculus was a Lygurian borne, as vnsatiate a vassall to Venus, as the other to Bacchus; and therewithall so impiouslie impudent, that as hee had a heart to commit any filthinesse, so a forchead to boast of it openly, as appeareth by his owne Letters, wherein hee vaunteth, how many scores of faire Virgins hee deprined of that faire name in one fortnight; but this Graund-General of Penus Camp was fuddenly forfaken by his Souldiers, and came to

(8) Some firs there were at that present in Britany, by the incitements of their Governor, whose name though Histories doe not specific, yet he may seeme to bee that Cl. Corn. Laliants, whose ancient Cornes are found in this Iland, and not eise-where: and his meanes to the place, was Victorinus a Moore, in great Victorinus a faudur with Probus: who taking himfelfe not cleare lagen, from fulpition got leaue of his Emperor to repaire vn-to Britaine, where giving it out that he was come thi-ther for faferie of his Life, was courteoully received by the Generall. Whom secretly in the Night, hee murthered, and then speedily returned to Rome; hauing by this Expedition, both appealed the tumults in the Province, and approved his fidelitie to Probus. About this time (as is recorded) certaine Vandals Hift Mag Brit. About this time (as is recorded) certaine pranaus hijs.meg.nii.
and Burgundans that had inuaded Gallis, were fent liss.com.to.
into Britishne by the Emperour to inhabite, who provides from though they had troubled the Romans peace in Galinto though they had troubled the Romans peace in Gallis, yet did them good service in Britaine to stay tains their subjection; and the Britaines themselues for subjection good services were now suffred by these Emperations. rours, to plant Vines, and make Wines, with other winemade in matters as well for pleasure as profit.

(9) At length the Empire in these west parts standing vniuersally quiet, Probus determined a journy into the East, to end at once all forraine wars; saying, he would finerly bring it to paffe, that the flate flowid need no more Souldiers: (which speech they tooke very in-dignely) & hauing passed I byrieum in Sclauonia, was by fome of his own Army(for curbing as they coceiued, with an ouer-hard hand their diffolute & idle maners) confipred against & treacherously murthered, in Nouember the second, and yeere of Christ, two hundred eighty two, having raigned fine yeeres and foure moneths: others fay, fix yeeres: where notwithstanding they erected for him a most honourable Sepulchre, wherein was engrauen this Epitaph: Here lieth the Wherein was englated this equaper, waste ment of Emperor Probus, inity for his goodnes called Probus, Estropic, of all the Barbarous Nations and Tryants a Conque. [bb-1.cp 29.]

M. AVRE-

Chap. 43. M. Aurel. Carus Emp.

O G O O O O

M. AVRELIVS CARVS, VVITH CARINVS AND NVMERIA-NVS HIS SONNES.

CHAPTER XLIII.



Cafars.

Anno 282.

M. Aurel. Carus Emp.



R o B v s thus flaine in the 1 midft of his Army, without any apparant cause ministred, the Souldiers were stricken into a great feare and mistrusted each other to be guilty of the Treason, no man therefore diligent to finde out the beginner, nor haftie to pu-

nish the bloudy executors; but holding the right of Election to remain in themselues, they presently chose Carus for their Emperor, who had been the Pratorian Prafect valiant, sufficient, of worth and esteeme; whereunto the Senate likewise consented.

raigne, carried he himselfe vnder expectation. Two fonnes hee had of vnequall conditions, Carinus and Numerianus, these both he made his Casars, with the Name and Power of Augusti.

(2) From whence or what parents we should de-riue his birth, is vncertaine, and of diuers writers diuerfly reported. For Flauius Cacilianus, who wrote the florie of his time, as V opifeus doth report, faith, that he was borne in Sclauonia, or as we call it Mofconia. Onefimus an ancient writer affirmeth his birth was in Rome and that his father was a Selauonian indeed, but held for a citizen, as he citeth by letters from Vopifeus: Aurelius Victor, Eafebius, and Paulus Orofius wil have him a French man, and borne at Narborne: but whence soeuer, his princely parts deserued these his princely preferments, and no waies for the short time of his

(3) His first proceedings was to finde out the murtherers of Probus, whom hee scuerely punished, which tooke away all suspition of treason in himselfe. Then marching against the Sarmates, whose furie had pierced fo far into Panonia, that they threatned Italy it felfe, he ouerthrew with the flaughter of fixteen thoufand, and tooke twenty thousand of them prisoners. And leaving Carinus (his elder fonne) to governe Britaine, Gallia, Illyricum, and Spaine, himselfe with the younger, Numerianus, prepared for the East against the Persians, in which expedition he tooke in his way Mefopotamia, Selencia, and certaine cities whom the enemic had entred: and being furprized with ficknes, and not able to trauel, pitched his Pauilion vpon the shore of Tigris, where in the midst of his armic (about the yeere of our faluation 283.) garded from all suppofed dangers and affaults of man, felt the vnexpected stroke of death euen from the hand of God himselfe: for in his bed by a thunderbolt falling from heaven, he was flaine, with many others then present with him in his tent, and the same consumed altogether with

lightning fire.

(4) The terrour thereof so daunted the courage (4) I he terroit increot to daunted the courage of his whole army, that no further they proceeded in their enterprife: and his death was fo grieuous vnto Numerianus now elected Emperor, that with continual weeping (a fault in few Sonnes who are raifed located and the Children Courth of Children by their fathers fall) his eies were so weakened, that he could not indure any light. V pon which accident, Arrius Aper, (his wines father) tooke occasion to conspire his death, hoping thereby to attaine the Empire himfelfe. For having stall times free accesse to his presence, at length in his closet hee secretly murthered him; pretending to the armie, that his infirmitie only kept him from light; and so leaving his body to putrifie and corrupt, in short space by the very sauor there-of the treason was descried, and the Traitor slaine by the hands of Dioclesian, who was both his Judge and

(5) His Empire thus ended before it was well begunne, the Armie proclaimed Dioclesian, a Principall man in the Campe for Emperor : who to vphold his election, made al his power for Gallia, against his Concuretton, made at his power for Gauda, against his Concur-rent Carinus, a man of profule fensialitie, who there had caused himselfe to bee proclaimed, and in his fa-thers absence had so ruled there and in Britaine, that Porphyrio living at the same time, gave out this testimonie, that Britaine was a fertile Prouince of tyrants. Betwixt these two Captaines, many skirmishes were fought with variable successe, till lastly in a set battell, Carinus was flaine by a Tribune, whose Wife he had defiled; whereby the Imperiall Title was iountly conferred vpon Dioclesian.

(6) The time that these three, the father and two sonnes raigned, is reported to be two yeers and somewhat more; and this last to die the yeere of Christs natiuitie,two hundred eighty foure.

C. AVRE-

Val. Dioclef.



C. AVRELIVS VALER. DIOCLESI-ANVS IOVIVS AND M. AVRELIVS VALERIVS MAXIMIANVS.

CHAPTER XLIIII.



Val. Maximian, Cafar and Emp.



He Empire thus devolued to Dioclestan, with appro-bation of the Senate, hee cuery way fludied to bee accounted worthy of the fame, as knowing well his birth was no way answerable to his present lot : and therefore chose for his Cafar, Maximianus, a

man of better descent, very honourable, wise, and valiant, as was manifested in his first service against the Gaules, whom with an infinite number of pelants in that prouince, troubling the peace of the Romans, hee with much flaughter ouercame. For which exploit fo fortunately accomplished, the Emperor made him his Confort in the Gouernment,

(2) Diotlesians parentage is vncertainly reported by Writers, some making him the sonne of a Notary, and others of a meere Bondman; but all agreeing that his Country was Dalmatia, and his offpring very bafe. This man being but a Common Souldier, consulted with a Witch for his suture successe; who told him (if you please to beleeue the reporters) that he should become an Emperour after he had killed a Bore : to which he gane credit, and euer after was a great enemie to that beaft, and in time grew under Probus to fo great account for dexterity in expediting his affaires, that he was made Steward of his house, and now lastly elected to the Empire.

(3) The very first thing that he attempted, was the punishmet of his predecessors death: for which Arrius Aper being connicted before his tribunall feat, himselferiling suddenly from the Throne, ran him thorow with his fword, in outward thew for zeale of Iuflice, as not able to endure so foule afact : but in truth to fulfill the Prediction of his hostesse, the Druid; for that sper fignifieth a Bore. After which act, he held his Empire fully established.

(4) To let passe many imploiments and troubles of the state, these two Emperors chose to themselues two Cafars, whereby the One-bodied Eagle became againe foure-headed, and each almost of an equall au-

thority. Dioclesian chose Galerius Maximinus, and Maximianus, furnamed Herculius, chose Conitantius Clorus a Roman Senator, enforcing them to put away their former Wines, & to take their Daughters, for an affurance of loue by the bonds of that Alliance; of whom the former was imploied for defence of Illyricum, and the other afterwards into Britaine against the Rebellions there railed by Caraufius, whose coinc is here set.



(5) This Carauflus by birth a Menapian, but of low Parentage, as Beda and Eutropius faith; who being appointed Admirall by the Romans to guard the Britif Seas, from the Pyrasies of the Saxons and Lower Germans, who with continuall robberies wasted the coasts, abused his authority both in suffering those Pirats to passe vnder Compositions, and in taking many shippes and much substance from the true subject to his owne vie : whereby in short time hee became very rich, and (like a cat fet to keepe mice from the larder) did more mischiefe then the Robbers themselves, Sabellicus reports, one very politike custome whereby he inriched himfelfe; and that was by fuffering the Pirats to take as much spoiles as possibly they could before hee would furprife them; whereby they were his in-fruments to rob others, and nothing to better them-

(6) Maximianus then warring in Gallia, and fearing the greatnes of his wealth and power, sent secretly to flay him by treacherie; and in the meane while furprifed many of his principall men at * Geffori-

(7) Caranfius now rich & compaffed with friends, feeing his destruction thus intended and fought

Chap.44. Val. Dioclesian Emp. THE ROMANS. Caraufius V furp.in Brit.

> thought that death was but death as well to Prince as to Peazant: and therefore with a bold refolution, and aid of the Picts or Northerne Britaines, (who had been alwaics enemies to the Roman Subjection) put on the Purple Robe, and viurped the Authoritie and Title of Emperour, which hee most valiantly maintained in fundry Battles, and so kept it for the terms of seuen yceres.

faraufius defen-deth liis viurpa-tion fouen yeers, Maximiania a-gainst (araufius, (8) Against him Maximianus set forward with a puissant Armie, and marched to the British Ocean: but there vnderstanding the power of his Enemie, and finding himfelfe in want of men for Sea-feruice, hee pitched downe his Tents: and knowing Caraufius a man meet to command the Ilanders, and able to defend them against the other Warlike Nations, sent him offers of peace; the making of which is remembred vnto vs by the Coine of Caraufius before expressed, whereon are stamped the Portraitures of two Emperours ioining hands. So himfelfe returning against the Batagians, left Caraufius for Britaine, who governed the Province with an vpright and vnstained reputation, and with exceeding peaceablenesse, notwithstanding the incursions of the Barbarous. He reedified the wall (as Ninnius the disciple of Eluodugus writeth) between the moneths of Cluda and Carunus, fortifiing the fame with feuen Caftles, and built a round house of polish-

> Terminus, and not the foundation of Caraufius. But the date of his noble Gouernment was brought now to a period, by the Treason of Allettus his Familiar friend, one whom he had imploied in managing of the State, who thirsting after the Supreme Authorstie, betraied his trust, and treacherously mur dered him by a wile, putting on himselfe the Purple-Robe, flamping this his Image vpon the publike Coine as an absolute Soveraigne, and assuming the Title Imperiall, about the yeere of Christ 294.

A perfidious

ed stone vpon the banke of the River Carun, which

(some thinke) tooke name of him, erecting therewith a Triumphall Arch in remembrance of Victorie. How-

beit, Buchanan thinkes the same to bee the Temple of



(9) Constantius who had leuied an Armie, and was come with great speed vnto Bulloigne in France, (a Towne that Caraufius had sometime fortified and kept) hearing now of his death, determined the recouery of Britaine; and after great preparations, at length passing the Seas in a darke fogge or milt, landed his men without impeachment : which done, hee fired his owne Ships, therby to frustrate all hopes of escape Allectus, who had laien to intercept his comming. forfooke also the Seas, and meeting at vnawares with Asclepiodotus, great Seneschall of the Pratorium, as a de sperate man, hasted upon his owne death; for encountring with him, hee neither ordered his Battle, no marshalled his men, but fought at randome very vnifortunately: for having put off his Purple Garment, he was among many other flaine, when hee had held his estate the terme of three yeeres.

The Frankners and others of the Barbarous Souldiers escaping the Battle, sought to sacke London, and so to be gone; but as good happe was, the Souldiers of Conflantius, which by reason of a mistie and foggie aire were feuered from the reft, at vnawares came to London, where they refeued their Allies, and making great flaughter of the Enemie, flew Gallus their Leader, casting his body into a Brooke that then ran thorow the Citie, which thence after was called by the Britaines Nant-gall, and by the English, Gallus his Brooke,

where now a faire Street is built, called (vpon that | "idbrooke in Low occasion) to this day Walbrooke.

(10) The deaths of their two V furpers, with the recouerie of the Britaines vnto their wonted obedience, was accounted to great a benefit to the Romans, that it is most glorioully commended, and R hetorically fer downe in a Panegyricke Oration alcribed to Mamertinus, in the praise of Dioclesian, Maximianus, and Constantius: where (after hee had extolled the fertilitie of the Braish Soile, and the Riches that the Empire reaped thence) he let forth the strength of the Enemy, growne to fo dangerous a head : and concluded with this Acclamation; O what a manifold Victory was this, worthing vandoubtedly of immunerable Triumphs, by which Victorie Britaine is reflored to the Empire, their Confederates rought to obedience, and the Seas secured to a perpetuall quietnesse! Glory you therefore (inuincible Emperour) for that you have as it were gotten another World, and in resto-ring to the Romans puissance the glory of the Conquest by ring to the commans pulpanee in giory of the conquest of Sea, baue added to the Roman Empire an Element greater then all the compasse of the Earth, that is, the mightie maine Occanit selfc: and afterwards now by your victories (Inuincible Constantius Casar) what soener did lie vacant about Amiens, Beauois, Trois, and Langres, beginneth to flourish with Inhabitants of fundry Nations, Yea and reouer, that your most obedient City Autum, for whose fake I have a peculiar vause to reioice, by meanes of this Triumphant Victorie in Britaine, hath received many and fundry forts of Artizans, of whom those Provinces Many Artificen were full. And now by their workmanship the same Citie rifethup, by repairing of Ancient Houses, and restoring of Publike Buildings and Temples : fo that now it accounteth that the old name of brotherly incorporation to

(11) But leaving Confiantius to be further spoken of in his due place, let us pursue the Raignes of these two Tyrants, who new began the Persecutions of Gods Saints in all the parrs of the Empire, wherein the rage space of one moneth, besides infinite numbers of such as were otherwise punished.

As in other Countries, so heere in Britaine

Rome is againe restored, when shee bath you eft-somes for

the Christians Churches were demolished, their Bibles and other godly writings burned, and themselues Redde Dieste. tormented with a more cruell and longer continuance then formerly had beene vied: for this endured the terme often whole yeeres together, leaving no time of intermission, nor place free from the staine of ten yeeres together. Marturs Blond.

And amongst others, it made Britaine to be honored with the glory of many holy Martyrs, which constantly stood and died in the Consession of the Faith; whereof the first is reported to bee Albane of Beda hift, Angl. the City Verolanium, who was beheaded at Holmehurft this. 1.427.7. (fince called Derfwold) where now the Towne of Albans (bearing his name) is built, and in whose ho- S. Albans put to nour, offa the great King of Mercia founded a most magnificent Monasterie. Of this Alban the ancient Fortunatus Prifeus in his booke of the Praife of Virgini- Job Capprant. tie, maketh mention thus:

Me, maketh mention (mus:
Albanum egregium facunda Britannia profers:
Britaine fertill of all good,
Mufits with florious Albans blood,
(12) His Influence Ambelbous afterwards apprehended, was brought to the fame place, and whipped about a stake, whereat his intrailes were tied : so winding his bowels out of his body, was lastly stoned to death. Sundry others also in other places laid downe their lives for their Professions lake, as Iulius and Aaron at Leitefter, faith Beda, or rather at Caer-leon in Monmonth fire, as our Grand-Antiquarie judgeth : and in Ar Liebfeild grea Leichfeild in many, that the place became another Gol mulitude Letergicia 10 many, that the pract occurred to the Citie Cambden.
20tha, A Field of dead Corps. For which cause the Citie Ioh. 19.17. doth beare an Ffcocheon or Field charged with many Martyrs, for their Seale of Armes even vnto this day.

(13) This last rage is by Orosius and Beda accounted the Tenth Perfecution from Nero; and by others, 10.1.100%

Cambilen Temah

Mamerians Pa-

Entres.



FLA.

Chap. 45. Fla. Val. Conftantius Emp. THE ROMANS. Val Max. Herculius Emp. 257



CFLAV. VALER. CONSTANTIVS CHLORVS. C. GALERIVS VALERIVS MAXIMIANVS.

CHAPTER XLV.



G. Val. Maxi mianus Emp.

figned up the Empire the 9. Cal- of May in the yeere of Christ 304. Galerius and Cor

Conflantius.

Chlorus,

Emp.

The Christians

refigning vp their Soueraignties (as is faid) at the Citie Nicomedia in Bithynia, comitted the charge thereof, and the defence of the Common-weale vnto Galle-

rius and Constantius, who had been their Cæsars: vpon which occasion, great peace followed in the Church of Christ, and most espe-cially vnto these Westerne Provinces. For those Emperers confirmed by the Senate, presently divided the Empire betwixt them, as two Senerall Estates, and not fubicet to one Government, as formerly had been exer-cifed, which (as Eufebius hath noted) was the fatall end of the Imperial! Glory.

clesian and Maximianus

(2) Vnto Gallerius fell the government of Sclausnia, Macedonia, Thracia, Egypt, and the Provinces in Asia, who tooke for case of that burden these two, whose Coines we have here expressed.



(2) C. Galerius, Valer. Maximinus, and Aurel, Valer Severus his litters fonnes, whom in the yeere of Christ

three hundred and fix, hee elected Cæsars, and after Angalis, which honours the last enioied not long, for he was saine as Rome by the treachery of Maxenius, after one yeere. And the other, when he had four yeeres gouerned as Cæfar, and three as Augustus in the East, died at Tharsis in Cilicia.

(3) And to the lot of Constantius, who much at one time with his Copartner, elected his fonne Conflantine, (so famous in christian historie) Cæsar, fell Great cloded Italy, France, Britannie, Spaine, Germany, and most of the Prouinces in Africke: which seeming to him (who rather chose to gouerne well then much) too spatious, gaue vp to Gallerius all that in Africke, as too remote from the Seat of his relidence, and eie of his direction.

(4) This good Emperor was for his Palenesse fur-named Chlorus, by birth a Roman, his Father named Eutropius, his Mother Claudia, Necce to the Emperor Clau-dius. Himselfe had attained the dignitic of a Senator, and was both Wife, Y aliant, Noble, and Y ertuous; whose parts Eufebius doth thus commend.

Constantius was a man of singular clemencie towards nen, and pietie towards God. He did not partake with him necognia petite vorsa as voa. It e ata not parrace with this cruellie, whose partaker he was in Soueraigntie : neither staining his Raigne with the bload of the Saints, nor despring our Churches and places of Praier, as Maximianus Jumping on Converse and praces of Prater, as Maximanus furionly did, but rather be reuterneed and highly honoured those who truly bonoured God. For which God of blessed him, that this godly Father less a more godly Some Conflantine, the Heire of his well-gotten Empire.

(5) To which his vertues, other Authors adde. that he was of great affabilitic, louing, and gentle, little regarding his Prinate Profit, but altogether raigning to inrich his Subied's, and to that end would often fay; That it was more behove full for the Veale publike, that the wealth of the Land fhould bee differfed into the common walls of the Land flould bee differfed into the common than the common than the common that the common than the common that the common than the common than the common than the common that the common than the common than the common than the common that the common than the common than the common than the common that the common than the common than the common than the common that the common than the common than the common than the common that the common than the common than the common than the common that the common than the common than the common than the common that the common than the common than the common than the common that the common than the common that the common than the common that the common than the common than the common that the common tha hands, then to lie locked up in Princes coffers. In which kind, so averse he was from all superfluities, that hee may be adjudged faulty the other way: for vpon Feaflinall daies, and in his Entertainments of Strangers, he was faine to borrow Plate of his friends (for fuch many times are richer then their Soueraignes) to furnish his Table and Cupbords.

(6) But about all other vertues, was his louing

Eulib.cectef.bift.

Licin. Licini

anus Emp.

2.Kin. 10.20.

Confantine poliese to trie who were true Chri-ftians.

Constantion his

Chapell their Oratorie. And to winnow the Chaffe from the Wheat, he vied the like policie as Iehu King of Ifrael fometime had done against the Priests of Bual. For he commanded all his officers to offer factifice to the Idell-Gody, pretending to dif-court all fuch as refused; but contrariwise those that obeied hee put from him, with this reproofe, that hee who is diflegall to his God, will neuer be true nor trustie to his Prince. (7) When he was first made Cafer, he was forced

countenance and protection to the late perfecuted!

Christians, making his Court their Sanctuarie, and his

to forfake his first wife Helena, by whom hee had his vertuous fonne Conflantine, and to take Theodora daughter in Law to Maximianus, for a further confirmation of friendship.



(8) Helena by birth was a Britaine, the daughter of Calue a British Prince, as faith Eutropius, though Nice-phorus make her of Bithynia, and Beda tearmes her his Concubine, some an Inne-holder, and others for her per-fon and parentage stand very doubtfull; to meet with whom, let vs heare the censure of Times Chiefe Secretarie, the learned Cambden in his Britannia: Constantius (faith hee) what time hee ferued in Britaine under Aure-(latten necy man time recy erweath or trainer water aure-lian, tooke to wife Helena deaphter of Celus or Celius a British Prince on whom he begat that noble Conflantine the Great in Britaine; for so (together with that great Historiographer Baronius) the common opinion of all other Writers with one confent beare witnesse, walesse it bee one or two petty Greeke Authors of late time, and those dis fenting one from the other; and a very learned man, groun ding upon a corrupt place of Iul. Firmicus. Howbeit, com-pelled he was by Maximianus to put her away, for to mary Theodora his daughter. This is that Helena which in Antique Inscriptions is called VENBRABILIS and anique infersperson we cauca VENBRABILIS and PIISSIM A NY GVSTA, and for Christian Pietie, for electifing Icrusalem of Idols, for building a goodly Church in the place where our Lord suffred, and for finding the faint Crosse, is so highly commended of Ecclesiastical

And yet both Iewes and Gentiles termed her by way orignominie and reproductive sand temples termed ner py way orignominie and reproductive. Stabularia, because thee (a most godly Princesse) sought out the Cribbe or Manger where Christ was borne: and in that place where ftood that Hoftelry, founded a Church : for which cause she was by the Enemies of Christian Religion called an Hostesse, and (because such are commonly kind to their Guests) a Concubine also. For whose defense, let the Funerall Oration of Ambrofe, made upon the death of Theodofius, answer, wherein hee doth rather commend her humilitie, then affirme any such base Offices in contempt of her person.

They say that this Lady was at first an Inne-holder or

Hostesse, Ge. Well (laith he) this good Hostesse Helena | Ambretia, Ora hafted to Icrusaiem, and fought out the place of our Lords Passion, and made duligent fearth for the Lords Cribbe. This good Hostelfew as not ignorant of that Greft which cured the way-faring mans hurts, that was wounded by Theeues. This good Hossessechofcto be reputed a Stablefweeper, that she might thereby gaine Christ.

Val Scuerus

And verily the was the moouer and only worker of her husbands conversion, who casting off all superstitious worships, willingly acknowledged the onely allruling God, fuffering the Christians that had beene hidde in Caues and Dennes, now to exercise their Deuotions publikely, and both to reedific the old ruinate Churches, and to creet new.

(y) Of the like Pietie wee reade in a Queene of John Artin the like name, Helena, Queene of Adiabena (commended by sofephus) that was a Connert to the levels Religion, who comming to Ierusalem to visit the Temple vertuous was in time of a greeuous Famine, which happened in the man alfo. daies of Claudius, sent to Alexandria for great quantity of Corne, and for Dried Figges from Cyprus, which shee very charitably bestowed upon the poore. And about three stades or furlongs off from Ierusalem, built a Sepulcher with three Pyramides, wherein her selfe and her two fonnes (both Kings) were afterwards interred But to proceed.

(10) Constantius being heere in Britaine, and lately returned from his Expedition made against the Caledonians and Picts, fell licke in the City of Torke, where the Imperiall Throne of his relidence was let. At which very time, Constantine his sonne escaping the hands of Gallerius, (with whom hee had beene left hoftage) ha-fted from Rome, hauing belaid all the way with Posthorses for the purpose, and left them houghed for Hisprenenting feare of pursuit, came with all speed to Torke, and to his fathers presence; who so much ioied at his sight, let commeth fate to Torke that he sate himsels every spon his Bed, and in the presence of his Counsellors spake as followeth:

(11) " It now fufficeth, and death is not fear-"full, feeing I shall leane my vnaccomplished actions " to be performed in thee my Sonne, in whose person I doubt not but that my Memoriall shalbe retained, as in a Monument of succeeding fame. What I had ' intended, but by this my fatall period left vndone, lee thou performe: let those fruits bee ripened in thee the Branch, that I thy Stocke from a vertuous intent haue had ingraffed alwairs in me : that is, go-

ted my selfe the most happy. To thee therefore I leave my Diademe, and their Defense, taking my Faults with mee to my Graue, there to be buried in euerlasting oblinion : but leaning my Vertues (if euer I had any) to reuiue and liue in thee, With conlusion of which vertuous counsell, hee tooke his last farewell of his sonne, his friends, and his life, after he had fate Cafar fixteene yeeres, and Emperour two, as Conflantin his Englehia accounteth, and died the fine and twentieth

Englehia accounteth, and died the fine and twentieth

day of Iuly, the yeere of our Sauiour three hundred
and fix, and of his owne age fifty fix.

Sornies Bed.

bb.1.283.



FLA. VALE-

FLA. VALERIVS CON- | CA. VALERIVS LICI-STANTINUS MAXIMUS.

NIVS LICINIANVS.

CHAPTER XLVI.







heere with his fathers from both their monies ex-

preffed) was created his Cafar (the way to that Scat of

Maiestie whereunto hee had too hastily and most vn-

duly climed) for now this V furper by his Necroman-cies, Adulteries, Perfecutions, and Murders, was growne

so vntolerable and odious, that the Senate sent to Con-

flantine, crauling his aid and redreffe; who fore lamen-

ting the fores of the Empire, and the case of the Chri-

Stians, first wrote : but that taking no effect, prepa-

Maximianus the father, either in true zeale or fai-

ned pretence, (which by the sequell is more proba-

ble) tooke great offense at his sonne Maxentins vnsuf-

red his forces against Maxentius.

An,Do.306.

Eufeb. Eccl. Hift,

ting both gloriously and peaceably, in the presence of his Son and fage counfellers, the griefe in the loffe of the Sire was no greater then was the iou conceined that they had gained the fonne for his Succeffour, all men reioi-

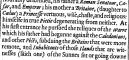
cing at the good fortune of that iourney, wherein hee came to close the sies of his dying father, and to comfort the forrow of his mournefull Countrey-men For forthwith heere in Britaine by acclamation of the people, assistance of the Souldiers, and aduice of Erg-tus King of the Almans (who by the way had accom-panied him hither in his flight from Rome) they proclaimed him at all hands Emperour, and Successiour to all that part of the world which his father held. This election was joifully ratified by the Senate, and of all other Prouinces fo gladly accepted, that they ac-counted this Iland most happie of all other, whose chance was first to see him their Casar, as in these chance was hirt to lee him their Cofir, as in their words ofthe Pangryfi is leene: 0 of winner Britishe, and more happie then all other Lands, that hait the first fight of Constantine Cofir.

(2) His birth (gais faid) was in Britaine, and honourably defeended, this father a Roman Senatour, Constantine Coffeended, this father a Roman Senatour, Constantine Coffeended and Constantine Consta

Constantine the

Euseb.in vita Con

great. Entropius. Conflantines descent.



(3) Maxentius the sonne of Maximianus Hertulim, who at the death of Constantius was proclaimed Augustus by the tumultuous Pratorian Souldiers at

ferable outragiousnesse; and vnder colour of dislikes and redresse, repaired to his sonne in Law Constantine, whose daughter Fansta hee had maried, and notwithflanding his faire pretences before the face of Con-Handingins saire preceives before the face of Con-fantine, yet feeretly he tampered with Faufato make away her husband. But the good Lady well knowing that the bond of a childe is great, but greater the loue of a wife, reuealed his treacherie to Conflantine, who caused him therupon to be put to death, a sit end for

caufed him therupon to be put to death, aftend members of following who caufed him therupon to be put to death, aftend for following again who his no-way-depencating forme, againft who me he prepared his forces: and drawing Litinius Gouernour of sclassing, who was made Celler, to his findable, by guing him his filter Conflamita to wife, (at man but of an ordinarie defent, though Gallions: Meximinat had made him in Illyrish his Copartme Lattly.) hasted towards Rome with an Host of ninety thoufand foot, and eight thousand horse; leuied out of Bri-

taine, France, and Germanie. (4) But knowing well that fuccesse in warre de-

pendeth more in diuine assistance then humane ftrength, yet doubtfull what God hee should in this bleffed enterprise inuocate for aid, (for as yet he was not fully setled in the Christian Faith, though the Gods of the Gentiles he observed altogether deceitfull) cast vp in this his holy meditation his eles Eastward name only medication his cless Edithward
Niephä. 1.2.1
him in obiect the figne of a Croffe, wherein were
Starres (as letters) fo placed, that visibile might be
Vieward his Common Local Conference of the Confere Starres (as setters) so placed, that vindus might bee Propured Commercial this fentence in Greeke, IN HOC VINCE, Paul Duckles, 1.

as diners Authors report.
Yet are there fome fro the testimony of Eufebius himselfe, vnto whom this blessed man did declare his Vision, that affirme this forme being the first Greeke Characters of the name of Christ, (towhich the renerse of Decentius hereafter express | Tetal, against fed, as of many others, may adde much ____ probabilitie) rather then either of these, although Tertullian and S. Ierome affirme, that the Repolds confeaithough **Traillian and \$S. Inview* affirme, that the Reputate configuration was a configuration of the Croft whereon our Satiour died: but this as a question beyond middlement or intention, Heaterto thole learned by unless and others, who have laboured in that fibiled with curious fearch.

Eusebius.

Marcion,li.3. Hieron,in Excel

(5) This

Eurropius,

esp.18, Beda hift Angle lib.t.cap.8, Holinft Ciron, lib.4,cap.26, Camba Brit. pa.7

Barenine.

in the place where our Sa-uiour fuffred.

Helesa builded another Church where the Inne flood in which our Saujour was laid in a Cratch

werne that the inautification and it is the inner that is, gowerne thy Empire with an vpright Iuflice; proceed
to the Innecent from the Tyrannie of Oppreffour; and
wipe away all teares from the eies of the Christians;
to the continuous all other things, I have accoun-



Ewich estel built.

(5) This miraculous figne promifing Victory, and that (faith Eufebius) not in an Inscription only, but by voice of Angels, was so comfortable to Constantine, that with great courage he went forward, bearing before him and his victorious Army, in place of the Imperial Standard, the forme of this vilion imbrodered with gold and stones of greatest price. And as one armed from heaven, proceeded against his hellish aduerfarie.

ers. Sabellicus.

An inferiotion

The memoriali of his vactorie ouer the Frank-

ners. Camba Brit.

Maxentius as much depending upon his Sorcerers, was no leffe affired of the victory. In furtherance whereof, as a stratagem of warre, hee framed a deceitfull Bridge ouer the river Tyber, neere to Pons Miluius, to intrap Constantine: but loyning battell, and ouerlaid with strokes, retired and sled, and (whether for halle, or through forgetfulneffe) tooke ouer the same Bridge, which fuddenly failing under him, hee was with many more drowned, and Constantine remained victor. In memory whereof, hee caused a triumphall Arch to be erected in the midft of Rome, wherein his Statue was imboffed, holding in his Right hand a Crosse; according to the fashion of that which hee had seene in the heavens : and vpon ancient inscription in memory of this victory, this we finde engra-Uen: INSTINCTV DIVINITATIS, MENTIS MAGNITYDINE CVM EXERCITY SVO. TAM DE TYRANNO QVAM DE OMNI EIVS FACTIONE, VNO TEMPORE IVS-TISREMP. VLTVS EST ARMIS. Thus: By instinct of the disine power, with great magnanimitie and helpe of his armie in a lawfull warre, he revenged the cause of the common wealth, as well on the Tyrant himfelfe, as on his whole faction all at once. With the like fuccesse had he warred against the Frankners in Batauia, whose Vieforie was likewise stamped in gold, wherein is a Woman litting vadera Trophey, and leaning her head vp-on a Crosse-bowe, with this inscription, FRANCIA.

(6) But as his fame increased in the mindes of

most, so was it as much maligned by Licinius his fellow Emperour and Brother in Law; who in his heart neuer fauoured the Christians, howsoeuer for a time outwardly hee fuffered their Religion: but at last, secking occasions against Constantine, hee raised a crueil Persecution in the East, where he raigned with Martinianus, whom at Byzantium, and Iulius Licinius Licinianus at Arlas, he had before made Cafars : permitting the to Rampe these monies as marks of Soueraigntie.





I icinim pur to death at Nico-modia, and his sonne after, dwo 326.

By this affliction of Gods Church, he inforced this Champion of God for their defence to prepare his forces, with which hee met Licinius in Hungarie, where he gaue him a great ouerthrow. But hee escaping to Byzantium in Asia, the lesse, ioyned againe battell, and was there taken Prisoner: yet by the mediation of his wife Constantia, had his life spared, and was confined within the citie Nicomedia; where for his treasons afterwards, he and his sonne Licinianus that somewhat survived him, were put to death. And now the peace of Gods Saints manifestlie appeared, and the progresse of the Gospell passed vntroubled.
(8) For now (suth our Gyldas) no sooner was the blafling tempest and storme of Persecution blowne oner, but

the faithfull Christians, who in time of trouble and dan-ger, had hidden themselues in woods and deserts, and in secret caues, being come abroad to open fight, reedified the Churches winated to the very ground. The Temples of holie Martyrs they founded, and erected (asit were) the Banners of victory in enery place, celebrating festinall holy dates, and with pure hearts and mouthes performing the sacred ceremonies: for the which bleffedneffe, he euer after had the Attributes alcribed vnto him of most bleffed Emperour, most pious, happy Redeemer of Romes Citic. Founder of Peace, Restorer of Rome, and of the whole World,most great inuincible Augustus, Sacred, Divine and of facred memory, & e. Howbeit, for admitting these praifes, as it should feeme, he is taxed by Entropius and Victor of pride; as also crueltie for putting to death Criffus his sonne (by Minerains his concubine, whom hee had made Cefar, and permitted to stampe these monies here vnder inferted) as likewife his wife Fau-Ha, fifter to Maxentius : but others affirme that the causes of their deaths were just, though (as Paulus Orofins faith) the reason thereof was kept secret, and Zosimus doth therein excuse him as Cassodore relateth, Tubs. triput. and so doth Rusinus and Eusebius.



(9) Touching Constantine affaires in this Iland, it appeareth by the last Author, that after his Fathers death, and his owne departure out of this Country, some aspiring mind taking advantage of his absence, in other warres, perswaded the people here to withdraw their obedience. Whereupon once againe he ad-dreffed himfelfe with his Armie to the reestablishing of the Ilands Subjection : and passing (faith Eufebine) ouer into Britaine, inclosed on enery side within the banks of the Ocean, he conquered the same. The ioyfull memory of this expedition is registred to posteritie vpon his Coine fet in the entrance of this Chapter, inscribed Aduentus Augusti, and by these Letters, P. L. N. the place of the Mint to be at London.

(10) After this (faith the same Author) he began to Enfebine. compasse in his mind other parts of the World, to the end bee might come in time to succour those that wanted helpe : and when he had furnished his Armie with milde and modestinstructions of Pietie, heeinuaded Britaine, that hee might likewise instruct those that dwell invironed round about with the waves of the Ocean: bounding the Suns setting as it were with these coasts. And of the Politicall gouernment therein by him altered, let it not feeme offensiue that I, who know and professe mine owne weake fight in most of these matters, doe light my dimme candle, at the Bright-finning Lampe of that Cambon in his

Illustrious Antiquarie, who faith:

(11) About this time (laith he) as enidently appeareth by the Code of Theodosius, Pacatianus was the Vicegerent of Britaine : for by this time the Province hadno more Propretors, por Lieutenants, but in flead thereof, was a Vicegerent Substituted. And againe, Seeing that Constantius altered the forme of the Roman Government, it fball not be impertment to note fummarily in what fort Bri-taine was ruled under him; and in the next succeeding ages.

He ordained foure Prefects of the Pretorian, to wit, of the East, of Illyricum, of Italy, and of Gaule: two Leaders or Commanders of the forces, the one of footemen, the other of hor semen in the West, whom they tearmed Prasentales. For civill government there ruled Britaine, the Prefett of the Pratorium or Grand Seneschall in Gaule, and under him the Vicar Generall of Britaine, who was his Vicegerent, and honoured with the title, Spectabilis; that is not able or remarkable: him obeied respectively to the number of the Provinces two Consular deputies, and three Presidents who had the hearing of civill and criminall causes.

For military affaires, there ruled the Leader or Com

mander of the footemen in the West, at whose disposition were the Earles or Lieutenants of Britaine, the Earle, Count or Lieutenant of the Saxon coast along Britaine; and he Duke of Britaine, Stiled every one Spectabilis. The Earle Lieutenant of Britaine seemeth to have ruled

Chap. 46. Constantine Mag. Emp. THE ROMANS.

the Inland parts of the Iland, who had with him seeen companies of footmen, and nine coronets or troopes of horse The Earle Lieutenant of the Saxon coast, who defended the Maritime parts against the Saxons, and is named by Amianus Licutenant of the Maritime tract, for defence of the Sea coast, had seven companies of footmen two Guidons of hor femen, the fecond legion, and one cohort.

The Duke or Generall of Britaine, who defended the Marches against the Barbarians, had the command of thirty and eight garrison forts, wherein their Stations kept, consisting of fourteen thousand foot, & nine hundred horse. So that in those daies (by Pancirolus account) Britaine vaintained nineteene thou fand, two hundred footmen, and

Nineteene thou fand foote and dred hor emen m interned in ordinary in Bri-

Sabellicus

thus detembed

this Ciucin an

epiftle which

Confloring in

Anno 1594.

cuenteene hundred horsemen, or thereabout in ordinary. Besides all these, the receiver of the Emperors Finances or publike reuenewes: the Prouost of the Emperors Trea-Sures in Britaine, and the Procurator of the Draperie in Britaine; in the which the clothes of the Prince and Souldiers were Wouen: and the Count also of prinate renewes had his Rationall or Auditor of privat State in Britaine : to Say nothing of the Sword-fence-Schoole Procurator in Bri-taine (whereof an old inscription makethmention) and of other officers of inferior degrees

(12) After the letling of these affaires, to the end that he might with the more facilitie bridle the vntamed Persians that seldome were in quiet, he remoued the Imperiall feat of his Residence into the East, for now Gallerius and Lieinius both dead, the rent and diuided state of the Roman Empire was in him united: and purposing to build there a Citie, as an eternall Monument of his name, he chose the plot at Chalcedon in Afia: but whiles they were measuring out the circuit, an Bagle scouping at the Line, fled with it ouer the Sea towards Byzantium in Thracia, to which place (the thing feeming ominous) he transferred his new foundation, and there built a most Magnificent Citie, naming it New Rome) as appeareth by an infcription of his Statue). In imitation whereof he circulated Seuen hils with a Wall for Height, Thickneffe, and Beauty, the fairest in the world: and not only erected Temples, Towers, and most stately Palaces himselfe, but by his publike Edicis, comanded all the Princes of the Empire to raife therein fome Monuments & memorable Édi-

fices, befeeming the Maiefly of fo glorious a foundatio.

(13) Hither also from Rome hee caused to bee brought many renowned Monuments of Antiquities. as the famous Goddesse Pallas of old Troy, the Image of Apollo in braffe of an vnmeasurable bignesse; the Statues of Iuno, Minerua, Venus, and the like : whereupon Hierome faith : That Constantine to inrich this one Citie, impouerished all others in the Empire: and other Writers which faw it in the perfectio of beauty, report it to be rather an habitation for the Gods, the the dwelling place for Earthly men. Herein also (so studious was he of good Arts) was built the Proud Palace of that Publike Library, wherein were contained one hundred twenty thousand of the chiefest Written Bookes, and in the midft thereof were the Guts of a Dragon, in length one hundred twenty Foote, on which was admirably written in Letters of Gold, the Iliads of Homer. The New Name of this new Citie lasted not long; for the affection of all men to the Founder, afforded it rather the name of Constantinople. As a trophey then of this Emperours renowne, though now a brand of infamie to another of that name, who loft it in the yeere 1452. to Mahomet the Turke : and as

(14) He drew likewise hither those Legions that lay for defence of the Provinces, as well in Germany and Gallia; as in Britaine : from whence hee brought (faith Malmeshury) a great power of British Souldiers, through whose industry and forward service, basing obtained Tri-

New Rome was reared and ruined in one name, so had

Old Rome in Augustus her pitch of height, and in Au-

enstulus her period.

umphant Victories to his bearts delire, and attained to the Empire: such of them as were past service, and had perfor-med the painefull parts of Souldiers their full time, he plunted in a certain part of Gaule Westward, upon the very shore of the Ocean : where at this day their posterity remaining, are wonderfully growen cuen to a mightie people; in manners & language somewhat degenerate from our Britaines, In which his doings, he laid open the Provinces to the irruptions of their Enemies; and is therefore by 20%mus hardly censured, as being the onely man that by this meanes first subuerted the flourishing estate of the Empire. And indeed, by withdrawing his Forces out of Britaine, the PiEls and other their wonted Enemies had the bolder and easier entrance into the more ciuil parts of this Iland; whereby ere long, being altogether abandoned of the Romans, it became a pray of Conquest to the Saxons, as shall be shewed in due place.

(15) But how foeuer his policie failed (carried (as t (cemeth) by a Diuine inspiration to leave Rome) yet is this good Emperour much commended by all Writers for his many vertues, especially to hee fo laid the foundation of the Christians fecuriof Princes over fince, ouen vnto, this day. And albeit Christianicy, that many Cafarshis fuccessors, have often attempted to shake it by their authorities, and the sharpe infruments of heretikes dangerously haue vndermined it, yet hath it borne out the Stormes of all their boifterous affaies, and stood in the strength that this Emperor first laid it.

(16) And vpon this foundation, that a glorious building might be raifed, hee congregated three hundied and eighteene Christian Bishops in the Citie Nice in Thracia, where himself was present and also President of the same Councel (though now his Beadsmen the of the fame Councel (though now his Beadfmen(the Popes) put him & his Succeffors from that right) and buffire cutf. as another Mofes, he then pacified the contentions of the brethren, and recitablished the authorities of the Bishops for the godly government of the Church in that Primitine age.

(17) But as the cleerest Sunne hath his set, and the fairest day his night, so Constantines elerious life drew to an end, though his living-glory shall be endlesse: for intending a voyage against the Persians, hee fell grie-uously sicke, and counselled by his Physitions to be carried vnto Nicomedia, a Citic in Bythinia, to the Hot Bathes that naturally there fprang (which caused some erroneously to write that he became a Leaper he died on the way neere to the place, and in great denotion commended his departing Soule to his Crucified Redeemer, Maij 22. the yeere of Christ Iesus three hundred thirty seuen, and of his happy victorious raigne thirty one, and of his age fixty five; whose body was interred at Constantinople, in the Church of the Apoftles that himfelfe had therein founded.

(18) Eufebius writing this good Emperors life, faith, that he deferred his Baptisme vntill his old age, in defire that he might receive it in lordayne, where our Sawiour himselfe was baptised. Yet others thinke that he was baptiled with his Son Criffus, what time he created him his Cafar: for the Celebration whereof, hee caused a most sumptuous Font to be made in Rome; which Platina & Sabellicus affirme to have continued to their times. And the ingenuity of the same Sabelliess is much to be approved, in that speaking of Confantines Donation, which some so much vaunt of (though the vanity of that forgery is now laid open to the view of all by fundry learned men) he acknowledgeth (himselfe being a Romanist) that he findeth no mention of any fuch matter, in any of the ancient Records which he followed, and so leaveth it to the Patronage of those Crafts-men, out of whose forges it first was formed. He left to succeed him in the Empire as Augusti, (with distaste of the eldest) his three Somes, Constantine, Constantius, and Constance, whom before he had made Cafars, & defigned by Testamer, Delmatius, the fon of Anniballinus, (his brother) Cafar and therefore we have inferted his mony in ranke of

Signius.
Conflantine buried at Conflantimple.
Socrates,lib.1.

Eusebimin vita

those that succeeded this great & glorious Emperor.
FLA.VAL

And did for three yeeres bandy against Constantius, though with some vnequall successes but lastly despairing to vphold his owne greatnesse, murdered him-selfe at Lyons in Gallia, as his brother vpon newes therof, did with a halter in the same Countrey. For this

euent (no other occasion mooning) Constanting both

(4) At this time the Generall of the Armie in Bri-

taine was one Gracianus, the father of Valentinian the Emperour, by birth an Hungarian, and so strong of

limme, that no five men could pull a rope out of his hand with all their force; whereof hee was firmamed Funarius, the Roper. This mangining enertainment

to Magnentius, was condemned in confication of all his goods by Constantius that now ruled sole Empe-

rour, vnto whom also the Britaines submitted them-

felues, and whose Deputie after Gratianus was aged Martin, a man (no doubt) vertuous and vpright, as

he witnessed by his death; for Constantius, whose base

and distrustfull heart feared the wagging of every

leafe, by the flaughter of many guiltleffe, fought to

make himfelfe fecure : and egged on by his Flatterers,

(to serve their purposes) sent one Paulus a Notario into Britaine, to apprehend them that had aided Mag-

(5) The faid Notarie was a Spaniard of a pelitient wit and fubrilitie, effecially in finding out all quirkes and deuices to endanger mens effates: whose bufi-

nesse being now to apprehend and bring away such Martiall men as had entred action in the foresaid

conspiracies, he under that pretence drew into dan-ger many that were guiltlesse, and the Emperours

true Subjects : forme of which hee imprisoned, others

the offenders thus to punish the Innoent; wherat the proud Catch-pole so much distained, that he ethicaned and sought to bring Martin before the Compell;

and that in bands in manner of a Traiter; which for

much incensed the aged man, that with his dagger he

affailed him; but perceiuing the wound he gaue was not deadly, he stabd the same into his owne side, and

thereof presently died: vnfortunate in this fact, but otherwise a most righteous man (saith Amianus) that

thus attempted to ease the wrongs of these oppressed

(6) But besides these their distresses, the out

rodes of the Segs and Piets breaking into the Marches

of the Britaines, fore molefted their peace: for redreffe

whereof, Inlian the Gafar wintring at Paris, and diftra-

eted into fundry thoughts, was afraid in person to

passe those Seas himselfe, and to leave Gaule without

a Ruler; especially at such a time, when the Almans had fitred vp a most cruell warre : wherefore hee sent Lu-

scalled Ca- fo bruiled, that therefore he was called Catena. Old

Sors. L. 2. 649.27. Thut the Temple of I anus in Rome, as a token of an Amiso. L. 16.65. Vinuer fall Peace; and gloriously triumphed with more

then a viuall afpect,

cording to the qualitie of the businesse, hee might make more hafte to come into the field, and give battle. But with what successe his affaires afterwards proceeded, I finde not recorded : and therefore I returne againe to the Emperour Constantius.



primu at that time Colonell of the Infanterie, and Ma-fler of the Armorie, to withfland their furie; a warlike man certes, and skilfull in feats of Armes, but with-

(7) Flauius Claudius Constantius Gallus his cosen-

german hee elected Cafar, permitted him to stampe this money, and linekt him in mariage with his fifter Conflantia. But he, designed to gouerne the East, and make good those Frontiers against the Persians, forgot the duty of his charge, and gade him felfe vp at Antiach to all licentious lufts and cruelties : of which when Conflantius (infected afore with some icalousie of his ambition) was informed, he fo plotted, that this loft man, drowned in his owne vicious fecuritie, was furprifed, and with his hands bound backward (like a Felon) given vp to the common Headiman for execution. His brother Iulianus was then made C. sfar, and Julianus made this Emperours other lifter Helena bestowed vpon cafar. him, whose victories against the Germans and Gaules gained him fuch applaule, that he was against his will by the Souldiers elected Augustus, and made Consort

with Confiantius in Power Imperiall.
(8) Whose fortunes thus sticking in a tumultuous State (for, with others, Nigrinianus (whose conse cräted memorie is left to posteritie vpon this money) attempted the disquiet of this Emperour, by an ambitious affection of rule, that was both fhort and fatall to him) did plainely foreshew, that neither his Raigne nor life would last long.



For belides the affections of the time that then followed that new rifen Starre Iuhan, his nightly vifions and imagined apparitions did both terrific and appal his mind; for as he thought, his fathers Ghoft prefented vnto him, a Babe of an ingenious countenance, which strooke the Ball (that the Romans call Tufa, a Globe borne only by a Monarch) out of his right hand, berokening nought else but a change of State. Which howfoeuer his diviners interpreted for pleafing things, yet himfelfe thought his owne Genius fill folowed him, in a forlorne, poore, and mournfull

(9) These dumpes notwithstanding, this new

FLA. VAL. CONSTANTINVS IVNIOR, FLA. VAL. CONSTANS, _____ FLA. JVLIVS CONSTANTIVS. FLA. DELMATIVS ANNIBALLIANVS,

CHAPTER XLVII.



Inl.Constanti шEmp. Delmatius Emp,

An.Do.337.

Constantinu

Junior Emp.

Val. Constant Emp.

Confiantinus his part of the Em-

Conftant his part of the Em Pare. Constantius his pare of the Emattempted to inlarge his vpon the Frontiers of his

nia, Dalmatia, and Grecce; and Conflantius the youn-

geft possession and Egypt, Provinces much greater in his sight, then his owne

cemed to bee; and therefore at last ambitiously hee

brother Constant, at that time in Dacia, and in warres

against the Gothes, who there also inuaded his territo-ries, but was met with and slaine by a Captaine of his

brothers, neete to the Citic Aquileia in Italie, when he had held his Seigniories the terme of three yeeres.

(2) Hereupon Constans grew exceedingly proud, and seising his deceased brothers Provinces, ioined

them vnto his owne Possessions, and with his brother

Constanting came into this Iland. This Battle, and

their arrivall heere, by the words of Iulius Firmius, chanced in the winter feason: for (saith hee, speaking

to these Emperours) you have subdued under your Oares

the swelling and raging waves of the British Ocean, even in the deepe of Winter 3 a thing hitherto never scene before.

And the Britaines were fore afraid to behold the vn-

expected face of their Emperour. This Constant was the that called a Councell to Sardies against the Arri-

ans, whither were affembled three hundred Bifbops, and

among them, some of the British, as formerly we have

mentioned. But this Prince being youthfull, cast a-

way all care of the Empire; and drowned in his owne

plcasures, followed ill counsell, (the vsuall way to

Princes ruines.) Thus growne greeuous to the Pro-

uinces, and nothing acceptable to the Souldiers, was by

Confrantinus

Caffod trip, Hift.

gainst the Arri ans called by Constans,

OR the Empire being di-Magnentius a Captaine of his owne flaine, as hee was uided among these Brehunting neere the Castle of S. Helens, situate amongst thren, Constantinus the elthe Tapori, a Spanish people vnder the Pyren Mountaines. And as hence this Murderer of his Sourraigne dest, whose portion was Britaine, France, Spaine, and part of Germanie, tooke Lord and Master, was branded with the name of T4. porus, so in this Emperour there murdered was fulfilled a Prophecie that hee should die in his Grandmohimselfe wronged in this partition; whereas Conthers Lappe. fans his second brother had Italie, Africa, Sclauo-

thers Lappe.

Olympics the Widow of this Confluers was given to

Arfaces King of Armenia, by Confluentius his brother,
to be a bond and purchase of his surer friendship, of which his need was much, as the times required : for which his freed was future, as the times required: For after the death of Conflance, V etranio was proclaimed. Emperour by the Pamonian Armie, though floorly diffrobed, and fent to end his decrepit age in a private dirobed, and tent to end his decrepit age in a private forture. Nophasus the nephew of conflasts by his filter Eutopia, was at Rome by the absiet Ross Hauted Assaflas, which he eniced to munch aboue twentie diacs, being fipperfied by Magnenius, who had now made the truncke of Maiefile, his Soueraignes bodie, when the conflation is the conflation of the the Baffe, whereby he meant with Decentius and Defiderius, his two brethren, to ascend the Throne.

(3) Simon Dunelmensis saith, that Great Constantine at his departure from Britaine, left one Octavius to gouerne the Land, who shortly rebelled, and after diners conflicts was flaine by Traherne, Commander of a Roman Legion. Galfridus makes the faid Octavian a Britaine, and will have him to raigne with great victories ouer this iland the space of fifty soure yeeres, which (as Fabian hath accounted) doth extend to the Rob. Fabian. time of Valentinians Rule in Rome : so farre doe our British Historians differ from the Romans. But from them most certaine it is, that Magnentius before mentioned, a Britaine by his father, though borne among the Lati in France, inuefted himselfe into the Imperial Dignitie, vsurping France, Spaine, and Britaine, thus stamping the face of himselfe and his brother Decentius, by him made Cafar at Millan, vpon the currant Monies of such revolted Provinces as he vsurped.

Martis Deput in Britaine.

Amienes lib. 15. he tormented, and many with Manacles and Chaines Paintacalled Ce. 10 outnets, that interfore he was cauco Catena. Outness this creek teacher his creek ties.

**Cartine the Depair*, much lamenting their mileties, befought the Spaniard to furcease, and not with

Annibalianu

Amianus Mar Jib

The time of his

fects. His wife was

Election he meant to disaudw: and Iulian for his part resolued in point of honor to maintaine and yphold. Whereupon warres prepared, Constantius fet forward to encounter him, and comming to Tharfus, from Antioth in Syria, fell there ficke of a feuer, which full increased as he further trauelled, and in the borders of Cilicia, at the place called Mopfus Wels, fituated at the foote of MountT aurus, died the third day of Nouember, the yeere of Christ by Ieromes account, three hundred fixtie foure: by others, three hundred fixtie one; when hee had ruled twenty four yeeres, and lived fortie and a few moneths, as Amianus Marcellinus, and Pomp. Latus affirme. But Socrates and Zosimus fay, that he lived forty five yeeres, and raigned thirtie eight, that is, thirteen a Cafar, in the life of his Father, feuen a Competitor in the liues of his brethren, and seuenteene yeeres Emperor alone,

Hee is neither accounted with the best, nor worst Emperors, his Vertues seeming to hold scoale with his Vices: temperate, conreous, liberall, and affable; not elequent, yet defirous to speake well; blunt witted, yet a great fauorer of learning; a most skilfull Archer, and apt to take paines; but withall very suspitious; led by Flatterers, and most cruell to the accused, and in exacting importable Tributes, drew more harred vpon his head then mony into his coffers. But especially is he stained with the heresie of the Arrians, for whose fake he banished many of the Christians, and amongst them Athanasius, that excellent light of the Catholike Church.In fauour of those Heretikes, he caused to be

furnmoned foure hundred westerne Bishops vinto the

Councell of Ariminum, whereof three are reported to come out of Britaine. And he is by Amianus his Life-Hilaric calleth writer, condemned for mingling foolish doting superstitti-ons, with the sincere doctrine of the Christian Religion, gi-ons with the sincere doctrine of the Christian Religion, giuen rather to a more intricate search therein, then to settle this opinions upon grantite: and firring up felifmes and differed in maintaining of words and contentious diffurtations, which as they spread more and more, gat wing euen unto this sland of Britaine, as by the words of our lamenting Historian Goldas is seene. When (faith Goldas he) the sweete concent of Christ the head, and his members the body, had continued untill such time, as that deadly and perfidious Arrianisme, like to a pestiferous Serpent from the other side of the Sea, casting up her venome upon us; caused brethren dwelling together, to be dissoyned pitcously one from another And thus the way as it were being made ouer the Ocean, all other cruell and fell Beasts where soener, Staking out of their horrible mouthes the deadly poison of

ly tall, his complexion browne, the cash of his eies lof-tee, his fight quicke, his haire foft, his cheekes alwaies shauen; from the oraffing of his most contact that the profit of his most contact his most co (11) For personage, this Emperor was indifferentfhauen; from the graffing of his necke to the groine very long, but from thence somewhat short and bowlegged withall. His body after death was embalmed, and in Constantinople enterred neere vnto his Father, at Constantius his the commandement of Iulian, whom by his refta-ment (for all his former displeasure) hee declared his ed at Confianti-Heire and Successor.

euery herefie, inflicted the deadly stings and wounds of their

teeth upon this our Country, defirous euermore to heare

FLAVIVS CLAVDIVS IV-LIANVS EMPEROR APOSTATA.

CHAPTER XLVIII.





Vlian succeeded, whose birth had as much of Nobilitie as either the greatneffe of place; (for it was New Rome); or the high bloud of parentage could adde vnto him; for his Father Constantius, was the brother of great Constantine, and not much his mo-

ther Bafiling was lower in her birth, though most vnfortunate in bearing him, her owne destruction. An Orphant he was left together with Gallus his brother, long toffed betweene the fourges of his owne im-perfect conflitution, and the bloudy icalouse of his ruling-kinimen (not long before the fatall ruing of his Father) for being too neere allied to their Crownes.

Meane he was of stature, yet carrying from head to foote a just proportion and vniforme knitting of his lineaments, whereby he had agilitie and firength: big and broad his shoulders, his necke fat, bearing his big and orose his inducers, his ficcker art, pearing his head forward; louely and gracefull was the cast of his quicke and cleere eye, thraight his note, and no feature of his face amiss, but the greatnes of his mouth, and the parting of his nether lippe; the foft haire of his head he wore in a decent length, and his rough beard he cut in a pointed fashion.

(2) His education was vnder many mafters, of which Mardonius a Scythian Eunuch was the first. His education. From him he was fent to the publike Schoole at Con-Santinople, where of Nicocles of Lacedemon, he learned his Grammar, and of Ecebolius the Sophister his R hetoricke; and of both of them (as of Enfebine Bilhop of Nicomedia) the Christian Religion, in which his delight was fuch, that he betooke him to the function

Chap. 48. Flau. Clau. Iulian Emp. THE ROMANS. of a Deacon, reading in publike to the people the fa-cred Bookes; and aimed at no further marke of greatnesse then the reputation of a holy man : led on with the loue of knowledge, hee went to the Schooles of Niconnelia, where, of lamblicus, who fucceded Por-phyry in the Chaire; he learned the Philosophie of Ari-fiotle and Plato. There bewitched at length with the fame of Librarias Eloquence, though derefting his religion; from reading in private studie his prophane labours, hee grew a publike hearer of his invective Lectures : and imitating at first in exercise of wit only this Rhetoricians forme of declaiming, hee grew in the end the profancit Railer, and deadlieft Enemy of all other himselfe against the Church. And to fill vp this vessel of iniquitie, Maximus, the only impostor and Magician then of the world, (worthily after for his impious doctrine put by Valentinian to the fword) must come to Nicomedia. From him did Iulian learne fuch Astrologie as setteth Nativities, and such Magicke as invoketh Spirits. And here was the schoole of this mans Error, and Mistris of his impletie. The feedes of whose Nature and Education having thus obserued, let vs search with an impartial Eye into his manners and condition, and fee what vertue was in (3) His temperance is commended to vs with admiration. He slept little, and could awake at pleasure: his bed was cuer with the hardest, and his diet of the meanest meat, and the moderatest measure, whereby he neuer but once, and that by accident, disburdened his stomacke by vomit; and would often fay, that it was the lafetie of his life, that he neuer had any war with his belly. Such was his challitie, that having loft at once in France, Helena his beloued wife, and her infant, his only Sonne, he neuer fo much as in suspect, had an incontinent defire. And therefore of all the Persian beauties taken in those warres, as the richest fpoiles, Nec contrettare aliquam voluit nec videre: Nei-ther fuffer in his Army either Cookes or Barbers, as Mercell. 12 being deliciarum at á intemperantia ministros. Arceo meipfum à Theatris: I force my felfe (faith he) from the view of Stage-plaies, and neuer but once a yeere permit my Eye that delight in Court; wherein yeere permit my cyc tuat cetigit in Cours wheten the didtafte of my mind is, tanguam paper agrical sributim aliqued pendens inique Domino. And when the action was performing, fimilier fam deteitantie es lado quaim gleismit. Yet doth Mazeellims tax him of much verbolitie and affectation of vaine glory. And Gregory Nazianzen charging him with intemperate passion as vnconstability, saith; That by his ranging and furious aspect, his unsteady and halting pace, his steering looke, and immoderate laughter, Talemante opera vidi qualem in operibus cognoui.

(4) The loue of Iustice in this Prince is remem-Mart.Epig.

bred to vs in his rules of DIRECTION: for he fo amended the Lawes Ambagibus circumcifis, that the Iudges might cleerly see, Quid inberent feri quid veta-rent: and in his E x A M P L B for imitation. For when to an innocent deniall before him, Delphidius the Orator inneghed saying; Nocens esse poterit viquam sine-gare sufficerit: himselfe replied, Et quisimocens esse po-terit si accusasse sufficier? and so discharged the party. As for his clemency and charity, which ought to attend the sword and Scepter of a Soueraigne, since the one is Magnum timoris remedium, and the other will be, post cineres tributum; Nebridius and Lucillianus are Registers of the one, whom notwithstanding their conspiracies in fauour of Constantius, hee not onely pardoned, but defended with perill of his owne perfon from the furies of his owne followers. And for the other, those his letters to Arfacius is a sure record. Let there bee in the Cities of your charge, many Hospitals Ex Iulian, Epilt execution to common consequences, many it opinats our benignitie: and not of them only of our Religion, but of all the rest: (for it sues not well with the goodness of our Godess) uernment, that when the I ewes permit none of theirs to beg, and the wicked Galileans releeve not onely theirs, but ours,

Some haue blemished his bounty with the brand

that ours should be disconsolate of other helpe.

Alipius Lieu. 265 of vaineglory: thus did the Antiochians for depressing of much the reasonable price of Graine in their Mar-lieu.tmp. kets, by a profuse expence of his owne Treasure, gai-ning thereby at first onely the applause of the light multitude, after which he hunted, and drawing on in the end a miscrable dearth, through the licentious excesse of their improvidence : which often hap-

And as the banishment of Palladias into Britaine

vpon a weake suspition, Taurus to Vireillum, in whom the eye of Justice could finde no skarre; and to death Vrfulus, with Pigmeus (the first his Treasurer, that had spent with him and on him his owne meanes, when being Cafar, he had little of his owne: the other the guide of his youth, and to whom he truly ought the greatest part of his goodnesse) may justly staine him with lawleffe fenerity, and ungratefull cruelty; so may his malicious spirit against the Christians, howsoeuer masking in more Art then many that went before him, fet him up in the ranke and top of the greatest Persecutors. And although there be some passages in his Gouernment more easie then in some others that may imply a gentle disposition toward them, (sometimes taking the Gods to witnesse, that the Galileans (for so he named the Christians) should not virdergoe the leaft of iniury, neither be led to Pagan fa-Imp.ad Artebius Ex Edicto Tulias crifice, or forced to any thing beyond the compaffe of their owne contents; and that he not onely reuoked the Edict of Constantine the Arrian Emperour, whereby those holy men flood long exiled : buttaking the aduantage of an vproare begun by the Arrians, (their Enemies) at Ediffa seised vpo their goods,

| The content of t fwolne too great in number and fortune by the gracious aspect of his Predecessors, to whom hee dissembled himselse a Christian): yet did he whiles he had in his owne hands the reine of Gouernment, by all his actions and ends, declare himselfe an heavy opposite vnto them. Sometimes by allurements to assay to corrupt them; fometimes by a fubrill fiding with one faction of the Church, as he did with the Catholike against the Arrians, to counterpeise their power, of feetius regnaret, that by fuch licence of fedition, Non timeret unanimanten plebem, he need not feare the power of their vnitie, as himselfe professed. From this ynfortunate plot of earthly policie (but with worle successe) he incited the sewes to reedifie

the Temple at Ierufalem, and renew their Sacrifice, remitting to them their debt of Tribute, and vowing that at his returne from Perfia he would visit that holy Citie, and (as he faith to them) ut und vobifcum in ea Deo optimo gratias agam; well beleeuing that by raifing such an opposite to the Christians, he should suppresse their increase, and annihilate their Prophecio of Ierusalems desolation. To repaire these cursed walles against the providence of Dinine Instice, Alipini of Antioch, that had beene Gouernour of Britaine was sent : but his indeuour, and the worke of all his Ministers, was interrupted by fearefull flaming balles of fire, which iffued from the Earth neere vnto those foundations, confuming very many of the Tewes and workemen; by reason whereof, this Element still gi-uing fresh assault on them, the place became vnaccesfible, and the enterprise given over: so vaine it is for Man to strine against the decreed purpose of God. And it is by others affirmed, that at the fame time an Earthquake so shooke those Foundations which were left by Titus vntouched, that one stone thereby was not left stan-ding opon another, but were all laid scuell with the ground by which miraculous fights many Ienes were Saleitism. turned to the embracing of the Christian Faith, vpon whose garments fell formes of Croffes, which shined

vpon suspition of Treason. And thus farre of Iulians vailed hatred : now of his open actions of despight against the Christiane. Constantius no sooner dead (under whom as before

as the beames of the Sume, neither could they by any

meanes be washed or wiped away. Alipius that had beene chiefe in this businesse, was afterward confined into Banishment, with the losse of his goods, by Valens

faid Pillar grew a certaine Hearb, in heighth vnto the

deftroyed by lightning.

Hem of his Garment, which cured all kind of maladies; placing his owne figure, to the intent that it shold be worshipped: but suddenly it was with Lightning from Heasen destroied, breaking with violent force the Breft thereof afunder, and ftriking the Head fast into the earth, whose Reliques, as Zosimus faith, remained there to be seene a long time after, a witnesse of mans prefumptuous error and Gods iust displeafure. Manie lawes he made against them, and manie rights of Subjects hee took from them. By Edict he forbad the Christians the publick Schooles & study torbad the Christians the publick Schooles & fluidy of the Arts and Tongues | lefting away the reafonof this insuffice with froftes, as hee did the reft; faying that Artiflest, [Pearstes, and Pearst, who must be the guides in fuch liberall learnings, adoring Mereurie and the other Gade, he held it subfurd that they flouid read and learne of their Bookes, that lootst and raile at their Pearsten.

The equitic of this extended power may appeare by Marcellinus censure, a man of his owne Religion who of it faith, Inclemens obvuendum perenni filen-tio; Let the Edict be dambd to eternall filence. When hee feized vpon the goods of the Christians, which was often, and vpon weake pretences, he vsed to inuert the Letter of their owne Doctrine, in warrant of his foule act, faying that he did it, of facilius in Regnum Calorum veniant. When hee had dilabled the Christians of all command, either in the Field or Common-wealth, (as he did Iouinian, Valentinian & Valens, after Emperours)he would say, he did it because their Gospell taketh from them Potestatem Gladij. And wheresoeuer any poore Christian implored the hand of Tustice against wrong and violence, they returned with no better redreffe, then that it was the rule of their Religion, perferre inturies, it was the dutie of their Profession to beare all iniuries. And although most Authors agree that hee stained not his gouernment with the bloud of any Catholikes, well knowing that gore of Perfecution is the feed of the Goffell; yet fome affirme that when Apolloes Oracle, neere Antioch, had loft his power of answer by the holy presence of Babillaes bodie (there martyred and intombed) and that the Chrifrians in remooning it away, fung folemnly the P falm. Let all them be confounded which worship grauen Images: this Emperour (although the Act was his direction, though not the order) grew fo inraged, that hee put then many Christians to the Sword.

Of the prudence and learning of this man there be many notable monuments remaining: for in all the courses of his life he did rather labour to content the parts of his understanding, then of his sensualitie, often being heard to fay, Turpe effet sapienti, cum habeat animum captare laudes ex corpor : and therefore writing to Eedicius, Prefett of Egypt, to helpe him to the Bookes of George Bishop of Alexandria, hee faith, Where others delighted in Horse and Hawkes, I have beene from my infancie instamed with the love of Books. Many works there were of his owne pen, though now raked up in theruines of the time.

As his Oration to I amblicus, and other Volumes of various learning, remembred by Sutdas: yet is there extant that wittie Satyre of his, of all the Cafars. The Register of his Epistle, full of worthy observa- Inlian. imp. casa-

His discourse De Regno, wherein hee deciphereth much of his Perfian Actions.

His Hymne to the Sunne, a fong of a high straine, and of a matchleffe delicacie, if the subject had not beene too prophane.

As for his Misogon, (where playing with his own person and beard, he sharply reprehended the Antiochians of their intemperance in frequenting Stage-Plaies; of their impietic, in changing Jupiter and Apollo (Gods of their Forefathers) into the Christ of the Caleleans; and of couctousnesse in their Magistrates, in felling Inflice) it is one of the wittieft Inucctines extant of those middle times.

In the course of his Religion hee is by the Writers His Religion. of his owne affection and time rather reported superfirious then deuout; and his fancies therein rather to Marcel, lib. 25. them accounted ridiculous then religious. Such was the excesse and waste of Oxen in his sacrifices, that it is beleeued if his returne had beene from the Perficke Expedition, there would have beene want of them to supply his Rites, and therefore they might happily fay as the white Oxen did of the Emperour Marcus, Si tu viceris, nos perimus. Yet were his rules of order to the Priefts of his superstitious zeale, such as may well become the most religious Church-man of our age to imitate : for he prohibited those Priests from gaze of Stage-Playes, frequenting Tauernes, or exercifing Ex Iulian Epife any foule or illiberall profession, perswading them to imitate the Christians, whose bounty to strangers in distresse, charity in burying the dead, and whose humble manners and fanctitic of life (though but diffembled) had so much increased their Profession.

(6) His fortitude appeareth in the processe of his His Fortitude, Martiall Actions. At three and twenty yeeres hee was made by Constantine his nephew Cafar, matched to Marcel, Eb. 15. his fifter Helena, and fent in person to restraine those barbarous Nations that had forced in vpon the Roman Limits, But whether this imploiment was grounded vpon the Emperours owne feare to aduenture his person against these Sanages, a desire to nurture this mere Scholar his brother in law in more princely manners, who then was rude; or to expose him (in Intances, who then was ruce; or to expote num (in reject of flow feeloudy in State) to an affured perill: it remainted doubtfull. Only himself faith, that he that sejlened has Title of Calir, thenter data! to Grapi accept, omnino recujabat: for in it hee gained nothing plan. but vt occupatior intertret, taking this his Expedition against those I modes, as a banishment into the Hercinian Defert, ut tanquam venator cum feris bellaret : and beleeuing himfelfe rather thereby called out to an expected death, then intended honour. But this man then neither of opinion or hope, and who should haue seemed to haue effected a point of excellent seruice, if hee had no more but defended the frontiers, and repelled the Enemies, did by his valour performe no leffe then deeds of admiration.

Hee recourred the revolted Cities of Gallia, ouerthrowing seuen of the mightiest German Princes in one set Battle.

Hee sent to Rome Chonodomarius and Badonearius. two of their greatest Kings, as spoiles to adorne the Trophey, and attend the triumph of Conflantius. Hee forced on euery fide those to feare his power, that had so long beene fearefull to the Roman Empire. And had he returned home, borne up only with the merit of this his seruice, and opinion of the world, and not beene blowne beyond the bounds of his old moderation by a new defire, hee had escaped the imputation of ambition and treacherie, and beene esteemed a just succeffour, against whom he is deemed now an vniust vsurper. But it may be said that it was a diuine power that inspired it, and a strong hand that inforced him to it: for from aboue the Porch of his entrance, into one of the regained Cities, the Wreath of Laurell (referued an ornament of that place) fell in wonder vpon his head. The Genius of Rome in many apparitions chiding & reprehending his flow defire

Hymus Islian,

Flau. Clau. Iulian Emp. THE ROMANS.

to affect the Empire, and restore the State. As touching his election, he calleth the Gods to witnesse his vn-willingnesse, and the publike protestation he made against it at Paris, when he was there by the tumultuous Armie fa-luted Augustus. And although by the great provision made by him of Corne from Britannie, to hold a foot the Armie against the plots of Constantins (that grew now enuious of his fortune, hee may feeme to have intended the ruine of his Soueraigntic) yet doth hee by the Gods of his greatest confidence, Jupiter and the Sunne, protest, Quod Constantium occidere nunquam op-

Chap. 48.

tauit, imò ne id accideret exoptauit. (7) But Constanting ending this quarrell and competition by his death, Iulian, whom a Pithonist had deluded with the hope of Persia, telling him that his fortunes should be as his feature, like Great Aexander, bred in him a thirstie desire after the surname Perficus: whereupon hee prepared an Armie for this expedition, and feeking the fauor of his Gods the Moone. Fortune, and Mars, embrued their Altars with the Blood of an hundred Buls at once; though manie ominous fignes, as they were interpreted by his Philoso-phers and South faiers, forbad the same. Such was the

great Earthquake happening in Bithynie, that swallowed vp the Citie of Nicomedia. Rivers likewise are saide to fland drie, euen in the heart of winter; and Springs forgetting their viuall boilings, yeelded not foorth their wonted waters : yea and if wee will beleeue the reporters; his successe was foreshewed by the departure of an Angell, and by a Meseor gliding in the Aire. All which hee fought to preuent, by pacifying his Heathenifh Gods with multitudes of Sacrifices: and with an Armie extended ten miles in length, entred Perfia, cutting afunder the Bridges by which hee pal fed ouer his men, to adde to them more of resolution, as their meanes were leffe of returne, refusing all humble fubmission and composition offred him by their King; and at the place then called Phrygia, joined Battle against Surena, a great Commander among the Persians, and Merenes, General of their Horse, ac-companied with two of the Kings sonnes, whose

Islian either vpon a vaine confidence, or sudden Alarum, had forgot to arme himselfe with his Corslet or Brigandine; and in following the difarrated flight of the Persians, lift vp his hands in signe of victorie at which very instant a Jauelin Strucke thorow his left Arme into the fhort Ribbes, and stucke in the nether lappet of his Liuer; which whileft he endeuoured to plucke out, did cut the finewes of his fingers : wherat altogether diffracted, hee fell forwards ypon his hor-

powers not able to relift the Romans, gaue backe and

fes maine, and thence was carried vnto his Pavilion. From whose hand this I auelin came (saith Amianus) Amianus, lib. 25 God only knoweth. Some report the Caster to haue 41:3beene a fugitive Persian: others say that from the hand of one of his owne Souldiers it proceeded: and Califew one of his owne Guard, that wrote this Battle in Heroicall Verfe, affirmeth, that by fome wicked Fiend Socretaill \$. or Dinell, this lauelin run him thorow. Howfoeuer, cap 18. or Drueus, this faueum run funt thereov. From the care, there are that report that in pulling out this Lauree, and casting it into the aire with his bloud, hee should shifted the cast of veter this blasphemous speech, and say, Thou hast ouercome me, O Galilean. At his setting foorth he vowed to his Gods a Sacrifice of Christians bloud, if hee returned Conquerour, but he performed it with his owne. His flaine Corpes was carried to Tarfus a City in Cilicia, where with small pompe of Funerall Objequies it was interred neere to the Cities side; which place himselfe

to that purpose had formerly assigned : although

Nazianzen affirmeth the earth to have opened, and

in a flame of Sulphur to have fucked up his body into

(8) Thus ended this Emperour, the twenty fixth of lune, in the two and thirtieth yeere of his age, and three hundred fixty and three of Christs Nativitie, when he had raigned Augustus necre three, and Cafar full scuen yeeres. Whose wit and eloquence needs no further teltimonie then the Monuments of his owne Pen; nor his religious zeale more then the Function his youth so worthily performed in the Christian Church. His Imperiall Vertues we fee match him in ftorie with Titus, in moderation with Aurelius, and for successe in warre, with Traian; three of the most excellent Princes: and his fortune was to fee bounded within his fole greatnesse, what the hand of right and fword of tyrannie had so late dispersed. But now one Errour, his Apostasie, disroabing him of all his Morall Vertues, leaves him an object naked to the vulgareie, but as a Monster of men, and marke of infamie, I hold it therefore fitting no leffe the vie, then the inflice of a Storie, to doe him (as I haue done) all his right : fince in him we learne that all those admirable endowments of Nature, embelished with all the morall and internal graces that Art could adde, are not the base of holinesse, without divine grace ; nor dalliance of Fortune, and fulneffe of Empire (that made this man wanton and forgetfull) is the center of fecuritie and happine se, without heauenly protection fince from the fense of Sacred Pietie hee fell to Pagan Superstition: for many are called, but few are chosen; and in the feat of Prefumptuous Maieflie he felt the rod of Diuine Reuenge. Discite Iustitiam moniti. & non tenmere Diuos.

FLAVIVS IOVIANVS

CHAPTER XLIX

Fla. Iouianus Emp.



He mindes of the whole Army being much diffraeted by the death of Inlian; the next day, being Inne twenty feuen, they met, and confulted vpon new Emperour : where for a while two factions were maintained, & with equall deferts argued, till

lastly in one accord they both agreee vpon * Salustus a man very honourable and wife, but withall aged and weake, and therefore hee absolutely refused the election. Iouianus by them then was nominated, in regard of his fathers deferts indifferently commended, faith Amianus : but Rufinus, Theodoret, and Socrates attribute great worths vnto himselfe, and Confidently affirme his vnwillingnesse to accept of that dignitie, for that the whole Armie had yeelded to Iulians Idolatrous Edicts, openly professing himselfe to be

Manb.20,16.

Er Sdifte cour Christian.

Ex Epift. Iulian

Hirron, Coffindorus Socrates,

Sobellieus. Sociates, lib 2. ca

His prudence

Epift.Julian.ad Ecdichum praf.

Suides

Jouranus his Pa-rentage.

* Imianus, his

imian.Marcell.

Paulus Orofine Sabellicus

(2) His Father was Varonianus, by birth an Hungarian,a Captaine of good note, who not long before had laid downe his charge of warre, and retired into his Country, to a more quiet course of life. Himselfe ferued Iulian the Apostata in his Campe; from whence he departed by vertue of his Edict, commanding all Christians out of his pay, among who * Ioninianus (as wee haue said) chose rather to cast from him his Sword and Girdle, (marks of honour to Military Professors) then to forsake the Ensigne of his Heauenlic Chieftaine, and the Badge of his Christian Pro-

be a Soneraigne oner an Ethnicke Empire, vntill by the instance of the Souldiers, which declared them-

felues likewise to be Christians, he did accept of the

(3). No sooner was he clad in the Purple Robe, but one louinus (a Roman Ensigne-bearer, lately at vari-ance with this new Elected Emperor, then a private man) fearing the danger of so powerfull an Enemie stepped now about the degree of the common fort, revolted to the Persians; and having good accesse, in-formed King Sapores of the death of Iulian, (to them till then vnknowne) and dilabling toutanus for an Vnskilfull and Effeminate Captaine, both incouraged the Enemie; and gaue directions how to take the aduantage. The Persian as ready to execute as ioyous to heare, set forward his forces, his Elephants leading the way, whose terrible brayings and fearefull approach much affrighted the Roman Souldiers. A fore battell was fought, and fountaines of bloud drawne from the fides of both parts: wherein, with an infinite number of Persians, Iulianus, Macrobius, and Maximus, three Roman Tribunes, of those Legions that then were the Principall of the whole Army, were flaine : in regard whereof, and especially for want of Victuall, (whose scarsitie then was such, that for one Pecke of Meale, ten peeces of Gold were given) Ionianus made Peace with the Persians for thirty yeeres, giving them fine Provinces beyond Tigris, some Cities and Forts in Mesopotamia, whereof Nisibis is named for one that Chejopotamus, whereou regions is named for one that had been the very finewes and strength of the Confines, euer finee the Warres of Antibridates: for which his doings, he is taxed by Europius and Annianus (who both lived in his dairs) and of most the deed is held very dishonourable to the greatnesse of the Roman Empire: howbeit divers others excuse him very justly, confidering the extreame mifery and famine wherein Iulianus left the Army, which was in apparant hazard to be giuen ouer for a pray to the Enemy, to the indangering of the whole Empire, had it not been thus preuented: and therefore they highly commend

him hecrein, as the onely Preseruer of the Roman

(4) Howfoeuer, he is highly commended by So- Socrator Schol, erates, (the continuer of Eusebus his Hiltory) who flourished about Twelue hundred yeeres since; for his constant faith grounded upon the Nicen Creed, and for his Louing Reverence to the Christian Bishops recal-ling from banishment those that Constantius and Iulian had exiled; among whom, Athanasius of Alexandria was one: putting downe the Idolatrons Temples of the Gentiles, and restoring to their Offices both in Court and Campe, those who for their Conscience had been expulsed.

(5) At his departure from Persia, hee visited the CitieT as fas, where he caused the Sepulcitre of Islian (though otherwise he had found him auerse both in Affection, and Religion, yet for that hee was his preceding Emperor) to be richly adorned: and taking Antioch in his way for many daies together was troubled with fome accidents, which that age did take for minous signes. For the Statue of Maximianus Cafar, standing at the entrance into the Kings Palace, let fall the Ball or Globe out of his hand, no force mouing it: horrible founds and noises were heard within the Confistory: and Blazing-starres appeared at Noone- A Blazing fter

Thence therefore in greatt hafte he marched, and at Ancyra, declared his sonne Varronianus his Casar, a veric Infant, whose Wrawlings and vnwillingnesse to ride in the Imperial Chariot, portended (faith Amianus) that which after happened. For hafting still rowards Constantinople, he came to Dadastana, a place that di-uideth Bithynia and Galatia asunder, and there died suddenly of the obstructions and stopping of the Lungs, caused by the dampe of a new mortered Cham- Sabelliess. be wherein he layor (as others write) by coales there fet to dry the new feeling, whose vapors hauing no isfue, fittled him to death, the seuenteenth day of Feiffue, third thim to death, the fewencemth day of Fe-bruary, the yeere of the worlds redemption, three hundred fixtie foure; after hee had raigned feuen moneths, and twenty two daies, aged thirty three yeeres.

(6) For his personage, he was of goodly presence, both tall and big, his gesture graue, his eyes gray, and countenance pleasant: an affectionate louer & profesfor he was of the Christian religion, of indifferet lear-ning himfelfe, but a most honorable imbracer thereof in others; very precise and considerate in choosing of Indges and Magistrates; facile and familiar to his feruitors about him. His Blemifbes were thefe, that hee was a great feeder, and giuen to wine; and somewhat to that other *Vice* which vsually accompanieth such intemperancies.



FLAV.

SFLAVIVS VALENTINIANVS, Emp.

CHAPTER L.



Flavius Valens, Emp.

Socrates in ecclef. bifl.lib.4.cap.1.

Flauius Va-

lentinianus,

Emp.



Resently vpon the death of Iouianus, by a secret whifpering and runnig rumor, Equitius, Tribune of the Scutarij was nominated Emperor, a man naturally rigorous, and rude, and therefore difliked of the better adulfed, and no further followed. But fro

him, their voices turned to Ianuarius, a kinfman to the last deceased Ionianus, at that present Gouernor of Illyricum. But he also resected, V alentinianus, then abfent, was Elected at Nice, as a fit and meet person for the managing of their Warres, and good of the Weale

(2) His birth was of Pannonia, in the Citie Ciba las, of meane and poore parentage; the sonne of Gracian spoken of before, who by trade was a Rope-seller. but of great strength; and therefore by scruice preferred to places of account, and had been made Ruler of Britaine. His owne life likewise was spent in service of Warre, and was ere-while a Captaine ouer the Targatiers: but Iulian requiring him either to Sacrifice to his Gods, or to leave his place; he chose rather to lay aside his Belt then his Faith and Christianitie, as likewife Iowianus had done; and so for neglecting a little honour then, he had now a farre greater bestowed on him by the disposer of all Earthly Kingdomes. The Estate so vrging it, he made Valens (his Brother) Partner in the Empire, the trumpets every where founding warres throughout the Roman World. For the Almans inuaded Gaul and Rhetia, the Sarmatians and Quadi made Spoile of Pannonia: the Pitts, Saxons, Scots, and Attacots infested the Britaines : the Austorians made roades into Africa: the Gothes ranfacked Thracia, and the Perfians entred Armenia. For which cause, Valens remained to defend the East, and Valentinianus tooke his progresse into the West, where in three Battels vnder the conduct of Jouinus. hee discomfitted the Almans:

and Valens likewise ouercame and beheaded Proco-

pius; whose feature we have here expressed, a dangerous V furper in the Baft.



Nellaridina

(3) But in Britaine things prospered not so well: for by the generall bandings of the foresaid Nations, their old Enemies, the Province was fore distressed and brought to extreame misery. For Nettaridius, Admirall of the British Fleet they slew, and Balchebaudes Lord Warden of the Marches, by a traine of these barbarous people, was forelaid & affailed on euery fide. The intelligence of which occurrences, when it was brought to Rome with great horror, the Emperor first the state of the s led away, had not the hap to see the wished successe. Then Ioninus, famous for his Warres in Germany, came into the same parts; and seeing the puissance of the Enemy, ineant to crave aid of the Auxiliarie Forces, the vrgent necessitie requiring so much : at last, in regard of many (and those searefull) accidents, which rumor continually reported, touching the state of this Iland, hither was deligned Theodossus, a man esteemed most happy, and approued for his Martiall prowesse, who with a bold resolution and select power both of Horse and Foote, fer forward for Britaine.

(4) The Picts at that time were divided into two Nations, to wit, Deucalidones and * Vesturiones. The Attacets likewise a warlike kinde of people, and the Scots ranging in divers parts, wasted all where they

Britaine fo called.
Bologue.

Ribebeller.

Loudon called

Land, made hauocke heere by feizing of Booties, firing of Townes, in killing of men and women, and leading away Captines. To stay these wofull miseries, if the away capture. I otaly there would mineries, it the Heaten's had beene (o benigne, this valiant Capture_intended a voyage to this "our end of the World: and comming to." Bononia, which lieth diuided from the oppolite tract of Land by a narrow Channell ebbing and flowing with terrible Tides, where the waters are feene sometimes to match the highest Mountaine, and againe to fettle with the leuell of the Plaines, without any harme of Sailers or Passage: this Sleue with a gentle course hee crossed, and arrived at "Rutupie, a quiet Roade and Harbour ouer against it: from whence after that the Ballauians, the Heruli, loui, and Victores (Companies bold and confident in their strengths) were come, he marched towards Lundinium, an ancient Citie, which posterities afterwards named Augu fla: and having severed his Troopes into sundry parts. he charged vpon those companies of rouing and rob bing enemies, even when they were heave laden with Booties and Spoiles, and were driving away before them both Men and Women bound for their Captines, befides much Cattle, and a great Prey. These hee soone discomfitted, and restored to the poore distressed Tributaries their Liberties and Losses, bestowing some finall parcels thereofamong his weary and well-de-feruing Souldiers: and entred the City with exceeding ferning Souldiers: and entred the City with exceeding great boy, in manner of a Petty-triumph, which crowhile was ouer-whelmed with Calamittes, but mon on the fauden referrhed and fer in perfect fafery.

(3) Vponths proferous discreft encouraged to greater attempts, he eabode yet doubtful of the furness sollion with himself in many projects which have

Saxons their neere confined neighbours, wherefoeuer

they could breake foorth, and make Roades by Sea or

Chrodolina initia

ture, casting with himselfe many projects, which poi-sed Fortunes Scales alike: but lastly by certaine Captines and Fugitiues hee learned that those Companies of sundry fierce Nations, spread so farre and diffusedly vpon the face of the *Province*, could not be vanquished, vn-lesse it were by sleights and stratagemes. By *Edicts* therefore he first proclaimed impunitie to such as had forsaken their Colours, if they would returne; whereby many which had run to the Enemie, or at their owne pleasures had beene dispersed into divers parts, came in, and by their countenance declared their resolutions in his behalfe. Notwithstanding, minrusting the euent, and penfiue still with cares, hee thought good to call to his assistance Civilis, a man of great underflanding, quicke spirit, and withall an vpright Institute, who was to rule Britaine as Deputie, and likewife Duleitim a Captaine, renowned for his skill and deedes of

Amianus Mer lib.18,cap.7.

(6) After Confulcation with them, having gotten courage, and departing from Augusta with a power of Souldiers, which in his politike industric he had leuied and trained to his hand, hee brought exceeding great succour enery where vnto the troubled and confused state of the Britaines, gaining before hand fuch places in each part, as might give advantage to annoy the barbarous Enemie; and enioined the Common Souldiers no service, whereof himselfe tooke not the Affay with a cheerefull heart : in this fort performing as well the Offices of an Active and hardy Soul-dier, as the carefull charge of a right-noble Generall, he discomfitted & put to flight divers Nations, whom infolent Pride (fed with fecurity) had incited and fet on fire, to inuade the Romans Territories; and so restored wholly vnto their former state the Crites and Cafiles which had fuftained many loffes, and eftablished a fure peace for a long time following.

(7) Now there happened whiles he atchieued

these exploits, a dangerous matter likely to haue broken our into great mischiese, had it not beenequenched in the very beginning of the enterprise: for one Valentinus of Valeria Pannonia, a man ora proud spirit, first Deputy Leintenant and after president, for some notable offense banished into Britaine, as Frontinus immediately before had beene, as one impatient of

rest, like some noisome wilde Beast, vpon a certaine fwelling pride, rose vp in commorion against Theodofins, whom hee perceived to be the only man able to withftand his wicked designes. Howbeit, casting about many waies, both closely and apparantly, as the gale of his vnmcasurable desire rose higher, he solicited as well the banished persons as Souldiers, promiling (as the time would affoord) rewards to allure and draw them on to some actuali attempt. Yet when the day came wherein it should have beene effected, Theodofius having intelligence thereof, furprifeeted, Theodofius having intengence united, and placed administ with fome few of inward complices, believe a Reaccordingly. But in his militaric skill and policie, (wherein hee was reputed to haue exceeded all men liuing in those daies) gessing at future dangers, hee pet Warriour. inhibited all Inquisitions to be made touching the rest of the Conspirators, lest so generall a feare surprising at once, and fpread abroad among many those tempefluous troubles of the Proninces, which were now well allaied, fhould reuiue againe,

(8) Therefore turning himselfe from this busineffeto the reforming of fuch enormities as were of most consequence, now that all dangers were quite ouer-blowne, hareedised the Cities, repaired the Garison Castles, and fortified the Frontiers with standing Watches, and strong Fore-fenses. And thus having recourred the Province againe which had yeelded (ubiection to the Enemies, he reduced it vnto the pristine Estate, so as by his meanes and motion it had againe a lawfull Gouernour appointed, and also named it V A-LENTIA, in honour of Valentinianus the Emperor. Palentie

(9) The Areans, a kinde of men (as witnesseth Amianue) instituted by those of ancient times for politicke imploiments, who by little and little were fal. len into disorders and vices, he remooued from their Stations, as being manifestly connected, for that (in-duced with the greatnesse of rewards received or promised) they had divers times discovered vnto the Barbarous what focuer was done or debated betwixt the President and his Counsell: for indeed their charge was to runne to and fro by long journies, to intimate and make knowne vnto the Romans Captaines vpon the Marches, what doings and stirres were among the Neighbour-Nations; whereby they had great opportunities both to know and reueale the fecrets of the

(10) And thus Theodofius having managed most excellently these affaires, was sent for to the Emperours Court; who leaving the Province over-ioied for their Peace, was no leffe famous for his many important Victories, then was either Furius Camillus, Or Papinius Curfor. And being honourably accompanied and attended vnto the Narrow Seas, with the heartie loue and fauour of all men, departed, and with a gentle gale of winde passed ouer, and came to the Princes Campe, where (being received with ioy and praise)he succeeded in the roome of Valens Ioninus, who had the conduct of the Horsemen. For these his Martiall deeds so happily atchieued, in honour of him there was a Statue crected, resembling a Man of Armes on Horsebacke, as by Symmachus may be vnderstood, thus speaking to his sonne Theodosius : The Author of your indred and flocke, Captaine Generall both in Africke and Britaine, was (among other ancient Titles) confecrated by the most honourable Order with Statues of Knighthood. And in his commendations, Claudian with full note thus poetically lang:

Ille Caledonijs posuit qui Castra pruinis, Qui medios Libya sub Casside pertulit astuo. Terribilis Mauro, debellator g, Britanni Littoris, ac pariter Borea vastator & Austri. Quidrigor aternus? Caeli quid sydera prosunt? I gnotumá, fretum? Maduerunt Saxonefusa Oreades, incaluit Pictorum fanguine Thule, Scotorum cumulos fleuit glattalis Hiberne.

In Caledonian frosts his Tents he pight, And Lybiaes scorching heat endur din Field:

Claudian in praise of Theodofius.

(bap.50. Flau. Valentinianus Emp. THE ROMANS. Bucinobantes. Tribune.

The Coleblacke Moores, and Britaines faire, in fight He queld, and fort'd both South and North to recid. What then availd cold Clime, strange Seas, or Starres, When Orkney Iles he drencht with Saxons gore; When Thule did reake with Picts blond spile in warres. And Ireland did hage heapes of Scots deplore?

Dreadfull fights, and fearefull Earthquakes, Amian, Marcell, lib, 36 cap, 14.

Gulfes of the Ses land bare, and many Cities drowned,

(11) Strange and dreadfull were the fignes that in the third yeere of this Emperour chanced; as Earthquakes, Inundations, and the like; whereof Martellinus thus reporteth: A little after the Sunne-rifing (faith he) the waighty and fleddy maffe of the whole Earthly Globe flooks, flaffer of lightning very thicke and fierce going be-fore: the Sea also driven aside, and the waves and billowes o preposterously tumbling and retiring back, that the deepe Gulfes being discouered and laid empty, a man might have feene fundry forts of fwimming creatures sticking in the mudde: Alfo the vaft V allies and Rockes, which Nature had fet farre away under the huge Waters, did now behold had je jarre away vmaer not mage waers, ata now oceona the Beames of the Sume; informeth that many Ships were bedded fall in the drie ground, and flockes of people stragled at their pleasure in the small remaines of water, to take wp Fishes as the Sea-spoile; when on the sudden the waues disdaining to be thus dispossessed, returned with such violent beating upon the Ilands and Promontories, which lay farre into the Sea, as that they over-flowed, and laid levell an infinite number of buildings and Cities. And therefore in this furious discord of the Elements, the surface of the world being couered, represented strange and wonderfull fights: Among which s. Ierome reporteth, that there

rained Woollfrom Heauen so perfect and good, that no bet-ter grew upon the Sheepe, the naturall Producer. But to

daies were renowned; where (no doubt) matter e-

nough was ministred for him to worke you. But the

death of the Emperour presently following, admits no mention of further discourse; which happened in this

manner : The Quadi after many moleftations done

to the Roman Legions and their Confederates, sent their

Ambassadours vnto him, desiring pardon for their for-mer faults committed, and an abolishment of all re-

from Heaven

(12) Fraomarius, whom Valentinianus had ordai-Amien. Marcell. lib.29.cap.9. Fraematius made ned to be King of the Bucinobantes in Germanie, was made Tribune and Colonell ouer a Regiment of Almains King of the Buciin Britane, which for number and valour in those

membrances thereof: with whom being in earnest membrances thereot: with whom being in carnets conference, fuddenly the bloud guffied out of his mouth; and being laid vpon his bed, thorrly after dir Materiana ed of an Apoplexie, or rather of the Plague, as the blew death. Markes appearing vpon his dead body gaue coniecture : Nonember the feuenth, of his age fiftic fide yeeres, hauing raigned eleuen yeeres, eight moneths, and two daies, in the yeere of our Christ three hun-

dred fettenty fine. (13) For prefence, he was Maiefticall, of bodie fat, his complexion faire, his cies gray, and hauing performed and therewith somewhat a scue cast, his haire shining bright; vertues, his joints strong and well knit : he was a Prince mercifull and louing, and mitigated many Tributes formerly imposed on the Provinces : a wife Warriour, sterne in countenance, hastie of speech, and chaste of body, a good Iusticer, and impatient of all delaies. But thefe his Vertues with fome Vices were accompanied for he is taxed with enuie and partialitie, in punishing feuerely the poore Souldier for small offenses, but remissive to the faults of their Captaines and Leaders, and that was the cause (by Amianus his report) of the troubles in Britaine, the loffes in Africke, and the wa-

fting in Illyricum.

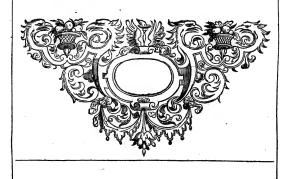
raigned Emperour in the East; by whose sufferance the Barbarous Gothes entred Thracia, which presently proued to be the bane of the Roman World, for that thele Gothes (astrange and vnknowne People till then) being forced out of a fecret Nooke in Scythia, by the Hog-Backt Hunnes, rushing as an vnresistable whirle-Winde from those High Mountaines, insested the Coassis about Danubius, and obtained licence from Valens to passe the River Donaw into Thracia, where long in quiet they staied not, but like a violent Floud running with a full currant, they ouer-whelmed all before them, ouercomming the Romans in many Battles, and in one flew the Emperour V alens, with most of his ap-prooued Captaines, and twenty five Tribunes that had charge of Regiments, the third part of his Armie hardly escaping vinlaine. Some report that Valens flying the Field, tooke into a house neere Adrianople whither being purfued by the Enemie, and his Hold fired vpon his head, was therein burned to ashes, after

he had fate Emperour fourteene veeres.

271

ing in Illyricum.

(14) His Arian brother Valens furniting him, valen Emperer in the Est.



Fff t

FLAY



CHAPTER LI.



Cracianus & Valentinianus Emp.

An.Do.376.

Amianus Mar

Lib.20.680.12

Gracian louing

lufting mothe of young Valen-

Socrates exclef. hift.lib.4.cop.25.

marrieth Justine, by whom he had

lacianus, the Eldest Sonn of Valentinianus, by his Empresse Seuera, was made his fathers Collegue in the Empire in the fourth yeere of his Raigne: notwith-flanding fix daies after his death, his second Sonne Valentinian , a Childe of Foure yeeres old by the ad-

uice of the Counfell and generall confent of the Camp. was also stiled and proclaimed Emperor. These Brethren lived in much love, and ruled in the West, as their wick Valens did in the East, of whom wee last spake. And albeit Graeian had cause of displeasure, that this his Tounger Brother was thus advanced without his allowance; yet he as a Prince kind and naturall, regarded his Brother exceedingly, and brought him up in all tenderaffection, forgetting the wrong offered vn-to himselfe and his owne Mother for Valentinians mothers fake.

(2) The Mother of this Valentinian was Iustina, a damfell of an admirable feature and exceeding beautie, forpassing all other women so farre, that the Empresse her selfe fell in loue with her, and vsually conuerfed with her familiarly as her equall, imparting her most private secrets vnto her as her trustie Counfeller, and often bathing together in the same Bath. Neither was her ardent affection contained within the measure of womanish modestie, informuch as she re-frained not in the hearing of the Emperour (her Husband) to extoll her incomparable beautie, preferring her far aboue any creature in the World. Whereupon V alentinianus fo farre affected this Lady, as that he tooke her to his Wife; by whom he had this young Valentinian, and also three Daughters, notwithstanding Senera was yet lining.

(3) The stormes of the Gothes as a violent tempeft beating flill against the Shoares of the Roman Prouinces , caused Gracian to beare Sayle toward the fafest Harbour, and to commit the guidance of his shippe to the most assured Pilot : their forces

being so great, and their outrages so terrible, that hee thought it best not to aduenture his owner hee thought it best not to aduenture his owne person, but to imploy some other approoned Captaine. For which exploit, none was held more sufficient then Theodofius, the Some of that Theodofius who was so famous for his British Warres, and whose life was taken away by Valens the Easterne Emperour, Him he made first Captaine Generall of the Roman Em-pire, and immediatly vpon his first service against the gother, his Fellow Emperor and Augustus, allotting him those parts in the East, that his vncle Valens lately had enloved.

(4) In many Battels, fought to the last drop of bloud, this worthy Generall ouercame the Gothes, so that their King Athanarius was lastly inforced to sue Gober. for his Peace, which vpon honourable compositions was graunted, and himselfe in most princely manner entertained by Theodofius in the Imperiall Citie Con-flantinople; where falling licke after three moneths, he died, and was both much lamented, and sumptuously diction was DOM much america, and improve buried by the Emperor. Their fer eports cauled \$apor, the most puilfain *King of *Perfa*, to fubrit himfelfe* two To *teoding*, and by his *homelflador, attending his Court, obtained his Amitic. Thus glorioufly raigning Court, obtained his Amitic. Thus glorioufly raigning Court, obtained his Amille. I aus gioriouily raigning, and perfect peace effablished, the ordained his young fonne Arcasius his Fellow Emperor in the East.

(5) But the affaires in the Westerne Empire procee-

ded nothing so fortunately: for Gracian a mecke and soft spirited man, ballanced with Theodosius, was held without regard; and V alentinian by his Prefett Probus. held both Rome and Italy at his denotion; onely Gallia obeyed Gracian. For Clemens Maximus borne in obeyed Gracian. For Ciemens Conaxming to the must rebut spaine, but descended lineally from Constantine the mustebut spaine, but descended lineally from Constantine the must rebut spaines. Great, by his affability and liberal carriage, had wonne the affections of the Britaines to fide with him; a man, no doubt, both Valiant and Wife, had he held his alleagiance to his Soueraigne Lord. But the time fitting his purposes, when the Seats and Piets with their wonted inroads, fore indamaged the Pronince, he fet himfelfe for their deliuerance, and therein sped so well, that the Souldiers by constraint (as Orosius faith) forced him to affume the Imperiall Stile and Purple Robe, And Fantu Orofini

Aurelius Viller Paulus Orofius.

Ann.Do. 381.

so hasting into Gallia, with all the flower and strength well neer of the Britaines forces, arrived in the mouth Imperiall Stile. of Rhene, vnto whom also the Germans Army joyned. and now accounting himselfe an absolute Monarch, admitted victor his sonne, then Cafar, to be partner of his Empire, whose Stampe therefore with his father we have here annexed.

(bap.51.

(lemen: Maxi.



(6) Thus Maximus establishing his throne at Triers, Spread his wings (faith Oyldas) the one into Spaine, the other into Italy, and with the terror of his Name, leuied Tributes and Pensions for Souldiers pay, of the most fell and fauage Germans.

Jaung vermans,
Againth him Gracianus made his power, but after
flue daies skirmishings was forlaken of his own souldiers, and so put to flight. And now deiected and deflitute of meanes to maintaine his quarrell, hee sent Ambrofe (a great Doctor of the Church) his Ambaffador vnto Maximus, to intreat for Peace, which in outward they was granted, but was farre otherwise inten-ded, as the sequell proued. For seeking his death, he did shortly after effect it in this wise: He caused Letters, and reports to be given vnto Gracian, that his ters, and reports to be given vnto Grazius, that his Empreffe wais nourny to vitil thin, and withall fent forth a Carreck fluffed with Soulders, and with them a desperate Capsaine named Andragathius. Grazius greatly reloying for his Wife sproach, prepared himselfe to meet Haraccordingly, and opening the Litter, thinking to imbrace his Empreffe, was by the Ruffins treacheroully murthered never vnto Lyons, than band misself forms growners and linear terms. when he had raigned fifteene yeeres, and lived twentie nine. Valentinian with his Mother Instina, fearing the like conspiracies, became supplicants vnto Theo-

defini in the East against Maximus.

(7) He therefore preparing his forces, marched as farre as Aguileta in Lombardie, where Maximus remained both confident and secure. For having fortified the straits of the Mountaines with sufficient Garrisons, and dammed the Hauens with strength of Ships, himselfe and assisters with great boldnesse proceeded against Theodosius, and gaue him a battell before the Citie Syfeia in Pannonia, and againe most va-liantly received him in another, under the leading of his brother Marcellus; but in both of them was ouercome. From this last, he secretly retired vnto Aquileia, where of his owne Souldiers he was betraied, and deliucred to Theodesius his pursuer; and by him to the Ex-

ecutioner to be beheaded: of which his vnfortunate, Sabelicus Enn. 7 but deserved end, the samous Bishop Martinus Turo-like, nensis being in Britaine, did foretell him long before. An. Dom. 188. Andragathius also, the Murtherer of Gratian, whose the Sea, and made an end of his wicked life. Victor the son of Maximus made him elife. the Sea, and made an end of the wicked life, the fonne of Maximus, made his Cafar in France, as we have faid, was defeated, taken Prifoner & flaine. This Victory was held fo worthy and memorable; that the Romans from thence forward folemnized that day enery yeere as festinall, saith Procopius.

(8) But these Britaines that had assisted Maximus, as by Writers is recorded, did forcibly inuade Armeas by Writers is recorded, did roteinly inuade armo-rica, and there planted themfelues: From whome (high Beda, the Britaines first armied into this Iland. But fürre-ly himselse is either greatly mistaken, or else we misly amiene is entire greaty minaixen, or enewe mu-take him altogether, and that rather, for that by Ca-far those Coasts that lie vpon the Sea shoares, are cal-led Armorica, and there the Celtes search, being the Original of our Inhabitants, as is holden, and so from thece they might fpread themselves surther into these British slands, long before it received the name of Little Britaine. The like troubles fell to other Provinces at the same time, by the intestine warres of the Empire : for the Gaules were molested by the Frankes; Spaine by the Suenians; and Africk by the V andals : the East parts by the Heruli, Ostroges, and Hunnes; Haly by the Lombards, and shortly after by the Gothes.

(9) These troubles in the Proninces, caused the Emerers to call home their Armies, with Aides of their Allies, & all too little to support their own declining Estates, which now beganne to end of it selfe, and these Emperors raignes to be cut off by their vntimely

But to returne into the path of our History, from whence (by the intangled occasions of these foure Emperours raigning together) we have wandred; let vs remember what occurrents happened vpon the vs remember what occurrents happened vpon the death of Maximus the Tyrant, and hasten to end the greatness of the Empire, which in most Prouinces began to end of it selfe. For Valentinian being rid of his feares, vnto which he had beene subject; and Theodofius of his Collegue, vnto whom hee was enforced; great hope was conceined of a flourishing Estate, but t brought foorth onely the remaines of their downefall : for the one returning to Constantinople in great Triumph, liued not long after; and the other left peaceably in the Westerne World, was (as you shall heare) Soone made away by Conspiracie.

(10) Valentinian remaining at Vienna in France free from Hoffile Enemies, retained in his Court those that fought his life, whereof Arbogastes, a Captaine of a haughty stomacke, politicke, aduenturous, and of great power, but withall of a base Parentage, a stranger and an Infidell, was one; Eugenius a Grammarian, but now bearing Armes, and of great account, was abut now bearing Armes, and of great account, was a-nother. The fee corrupting his Combortaines, com-pounded for his death, which they as wickedly per-formed, by firangling him in his bedde, guining it forthit that the Emperous had hanged himfelte; which was so considered was one of the control of the control fo considered was one of the progress in his Addition to Eusebius writing his death, faith, that it was profess.

acted by himselfe, after hee had lived twenty lix, and valuationan his raigned fixteene yeeres, being strangled in the yeere raigne.

of Grace three hundred eighty foure,



FLAV

FLAVIVS THEODOSIVS.

CHAPTER LII.

Flau.Theodo fins Emp.



An.Do.392



E haue declared in the life of the last preceding Emerour, the Birth and Forunes, Warres and Victories of this most worthie Theodofius, vntill the death of Maximus the Britaine. for fo most writers terme him) and now onely remaine his latter Acts in

Warre and Peace to bee further related.

(2) This Emprous returning from Aquileia in Lombardie vnto Constantinople in the East, long time there stated not, but was drawne againe into the West there react not, but was grawne against into the seg-both to reunge the death of Valentinian his Fellow-Emperour fo trecherously strangled, and also to op-pose the proceedings of Eugenius, whose Coine wee have here expressed, being one of the Murderers then vsurping that portion of the Empire, sided by Arbogaftes the other.



(3) Theodofius marching with his forces towards the Confines of Italie found the passages stopped at the foor of the Alps, and his Enemies powers farre fur-mounting his: Therefore a while to deliberate on thefe bufineffes, hee pitched his Tents, and there stairice. In the meane time Engenine and Arbogastes his al-fociate had forelaid the Countrey, and hemmed him about in such a strait, that no victuals could bee

Theodofiss praides to God for victoric,

Sabellic.Ennead

brought vato his Campe.

(4) No meanes being now left, but either to cleere the paffages, or bee ouerthrowne, hee first became supplicant with Fastings and Teares vnto his came supplicant wan rayings and 2 cares who his food, whom he knew to be the God of Hofts, and whom cuer he had ferued, and whose aid had hitherto neuer failed him: whereupon boldly incouraging his men, he accepted of the Field. But the Battle furioully beheaccepted of the Feeds. But the Battle turoully be-gunne, fell fore againfi him, that ten thouland of his Senditers were prefently flaine, and the reft delpai-ring ready to flet, himselfie at that inflant had been furprized, had not God turned the heart of Artifie, a Captame of his Emerica, fuddenly to come to his fide-and to refer him. Thouldown had been shall and to rescue him. Theodosius much daunted by these unfortunate beginnings, yet conceined better hopes of the following successe, trusting to the vprightnesse of his Caufe, and the helpe of his God, which still he im-

olored, till the Heauens were propitious to his earnest desires.

(5) For suddenly a violent tempest arose, and a ra-ging winde rushed so extreamly on the faces of his Enemies, that they were in no wife able to withftand it, the power thereof beating backe againe their darts into their owne fides; whereas the arrowes flootfrom the Emperors part, were thereby forced with double firength to pierce through the Rebels Iron plates, whereby a most glorious victory was obtained; and whetery a morgiorrous victory was obtained; and Eugenius taken, who lay grouelling at the Emperors feete, deploting his effate, and crasing his pardon; but euen as hee kneeled with cries and teares, the Souldiers standing by strucke off his Head. And Ar-Somarry Hairung by Hucke on Instream. And Arbogaties the Author of these eails by flight escaping, two daies after ran himselfe upon his sword, and so reuenged on himselfe his owne wicked actions. This victory was archieued the fixth of September, in the yeere of grace three hundred ninety fix, by Socrates account: and was to famous, that besides the Re-cords of Christian Historians, Clundius a Heathen Poet thus eternizeth the same in his Heroick Poeme.

Gods darling deare, the heavens thy fouldiers were in arms, And windes conspired to aid and follow thy allarms.

(6) Theodofius thus deliuered, repaired vnto Mil- Tombfindich Lan, where worne with yeeres and trauels, thortly after he fickened vnto death. And fending for his Son ter in inchency und custin. And lending for his Don! Ilmnin and Homorius, made him Emperor of the 1466, and to Artical and the Artical and the Ladius gaue the East, wherein hee had before made him his Gas. The Promiser of Artica he alsigned to the government by one Gidds in his Sonnes behalfe, of the government by one Gidds in his Sonnes behalfe, and in the Non-age of Areadius appointed Rufinus for Constantinople, and Stilieho Tutor to young Honorius nout of Conflex tineple. Stiliche Gouer in Italie, three most worthy men vindoubtedly, had the greatnesse of their spirits been contained within the lists of their trust and places.

(7) This last named Flavius Stiliche, famous for a long time, and an inward companion with Theodea long time, and an inward companion with a neone-fiss, had been emploied in the Britaines warres against imploied in the Language of the Scate Wandale and Picts, and there-British Warres. the inroades of the Scots, V and als, and Piets, and therein had borne himselfe with fortunate successe, as the Poet Claudian implieth, where he bringeth in Britaine thus speaking:

Me quoq, vicinis pereuntem Gentibus, inquit, Muniuit Stilicho, totam quum Scotus Hibernem Mouit, & infestospumauit remige Thetis. Illius effect um curis, ne bella timerem Scotica, nec Pictum tremerem, ne littore toto Prospicerem dubijs venientem Saxona ventus.

And I, faith she, that ready was by bordering foes to perish, When Scots dideause the Irish stirres, then Stilicho did me cherifb.

Нù

Chap. 52. | Arcadius Emp. East. THE ROMANS. Honorius Emp. VVeft.

When Seas did foame with strokes of Oares, that beat the bellowes backe, His force effecting with his cares, presented still my wracke: He bad me feare no forraine powers, that Scots or Picts could make, Nor of the Saxons that on Seas, uncertaine courfes take.

So that being by him freed from those many dangers, and all her enemies overthrowne, fhee lingeth her fecurity by the fame Poet.

> -Domito quod Saxone Thetis Mitior aut fracto fecura Britannia Picto.

My Seas, though rough are calmid, fith Saxons conquer'd are, And I fecurely reft, now Picts are queld in warre.

But this her ioy through the Treasons of these three Gouernours, was soone turned into laments and teares, and the whole Empires glory brought to a

and teares, and the whole support giory orought to a fatall period, as prefently it will appeare.

(8) This Theodofius for his Princely parts by all writers is ranked among the very beft of all the Emperours: And as he is likened to Trains for his feature and personage, so may he be compared in wisedome to Marcus Aurelius: In temperance with Antoninus Pius: For his Christian profession and deuotion, with Constantine the Great: and for his mecknes, c-

quall to any: Wherofamong many other, we have one example very remarkeable, yponan offence of mitted by the hinablaturats of The fallatines, hee commanded most fencere punishment to bee inflicted, which was fo vnaduitedly executed, that as well the innocent, as the offenders were innoluted therein. He then comming to Millar, would have entred the Church to have communicated with eather Chief. Church to have communicated with other Christians in their facred deuotions, which Ambrofe, the great Doctor, and Bishop of that See (though otherwife a man of admirable mildnesse) resisted and forbad, in which estate the Emperour stood for eight moneths continuance: and then with great humility & inertis continuance: and tinen with great humility & labeling in acknowledgeing his offence was abfolluted, and againe receiued into the congregation: For preuenting of the like rath offences by him committee the continuance of the like rath offences by him committee. ted, he then enacted a Lawe, that thirty daies should padi betwist the finence of death, and the executi-on of the Atalefattor: And to inpperfile his haity choller (whereun on he was much fubblet) his vituall manner was to receit the Greate Alphaler, before her verted any speech fauering of that humour.

(9) He died Ianuary the feuenteenth, the yeere of the worlds happines three hundred ninety fine; by n. 105, 109 25. when he had raigned seuenteene yeares, and liued fixwhen he had risgned Geomeene yeares, and liuced fix-ty, as Aurelius yifar writeeth, with whom he ends his Hilbory. His first wife was Ending a religious Ladi, a religious Lady, the Mother of Areadus and Homins, by his Second wife hee had a daughern amned Pleasins Galls, first married wno Athushyus King of the Golder, and after his dearly not Conflustius, whom Homenius her bother made Angustus and his fellow Emperous.

SARCADIVS Emperours.

CHAPTER LIII.





Honorius Emp. West.

Anno 395.

Throdofes his



Atail was the Act of Theodosius, in his Election of the three foresaid Protectors, whose greatnes carried with a glutted profperity, grew to a furfet af-ter his death in their am-

pire: first Gildus in Africa, nor contented with the tirle of Comes or Earle, cast off all subjection, and as an absolute Lord, acknowledged neither Areadius, nor Paules Discous Honorius for his Soueraigne.

Maßelzerin

bitious thoughts, and was the downefall of the now aged and drooping Em-

Homemus for his sourcaigne.

(2) Against these proceedings, his owne brother

Massectives opposed himselfe, and both in words
and acts assayed to set him in his worted place of obedience, which by no other means could be brought to passe, but by assistance sent him from Honorius,

with which, though much too weake, he marched a gainst the Emperours Enemy, and as Paulus Orosius writeth more by force of praiers to God, then power of men, in his encounter preuailed, and beheaded Gildus for his Treason: But himselfe becomming mightie, and forgetting that which in others hee reimplifies, and forgetting that which in others her re-membred, himselfe wipred the command of Africa signink Homerius, calting off all libitedities obedience, and as a free Prince ruled the Province: The Sould-ours that had larely a silled the Emperous ranks, now well perceiving his sime, letheld at the Carowne, thought belt to cut the firing before he looked the hafe and making his men. shaft, and made him shorter by the head.

(3) Ruffmas in Configurationle as boldly bare him-felfe, thinking Areadius both too weake and yong to found the depth of his delignes, whose thoughts did alfo worke vpon conceited Soueraignety: he therefore fecretly follicited the Gothes to warre vpon the Empire, that fo Areadius might either be flaine or in-

Stiliche fet at ha-z-rd the whole Empire,

Alaricus the

Paulus Orofins

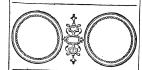
Radaga fine with

(4) Thus Peace obtained by the Deaths of these two Traitors, the Third stood vp with more danger in the west. For Stilieho, Tutor to yong Honorius, thought it not sufficient honour for him to have his Daughter an Empresse by the Marriage of his Ward; but set at hazard (for himselfe and sonne) his own Conscience, both their Lines, and the fatall ruine of the Now-declining Empire. For first, sowing seditions amongst the Lieutenants of the Provinces, picked also quarrels in the Emperors Court, Cashiering with dilgraces those Gothes that had served with good proofe of their sidelitie aboue twenty yeeres, fince their entertainment by Theodofius. These to reuenge their Wrongs, chose for their Cheistainea valiant Goshe named Alareus, which fhortly proued the Scourge of Rome : with whom joyned the Vandals, Alanes, and Sueuians, who ioyntly with great fury beganne to warre in Austria and Hungarie, increasing their Powers with such Multitudes. that as Paulus Orofius, an Author of that time faith; The World was amazed and stood in feare. For ynto these Colonies resorted two hundred thousand Gothes. more, under the leading of Radagafius their King, who two hundred thousand Gorbes together with united forces, subdued all Thrasia, Hungary, Austrich, Sclauonia, and Dalmatia, and spoiled all in fuch manner, that it feemed Dinels and nor Men had passed that way, as Saint Ierome (who lived at that time)expresseth : Thefebrute Beasts (faith he) fuffered by the wrath of Godin this warre, have laid Cities waste, flaine the People, and left the very Fields bare and defolate, whereof the Provinces of Thracia, and Sclauonia, with the Country wherein my felfe was borne, beare too true but lamentable Records.

(5) The Roman Empire thus daily declining, and these shere extenses making havock where they came, the Armies in Britaine were put in great feare, left the Flames of their Neighbours fire might Flaft out, and take hold of them also. Therefore prouidently to preuent that danger, they elected one Marcus their Lieutenant for Emperor, yeelding him their obedience fome short time, and then finding his defects, immediatly murthered him,



In whose stead they Inthroned one Gracian a Briration those tine: whose carriage not answering their expectations, they Murthered also, within Foure Moneths after his Royall folemnity.



The features and Imperiall Titles stamped on the

Romish Mony of these two Vsurpers, (according to the vsuall manner of the like in Estate) we finde not, neither stands it with credit of our History to faine them at pleasure: therefore till time bring them forth, from the Caues of obscurity wee haue allowed them place onlie by these Circles inserted, that others may supply what presentlie wee want, and accomplish by pencile what we cannot by Presse.



(6) Yet time to Constantine hath bin more fauorable in preseruing his remebrance by his minted Moneys, which here with his Story we prefent to fight.

At the fall of these former, no better at all then a

Aun.Do. 410. Common Souldier, but vpon confidence onely conceined of his Name, was made Emperor, who with more respect of honour, and liking of his advancers. bare himselse better then the others had done. For putting to Sea, and landing at Bologne, he easily induced the Romans forces as farre as the Alps to fide with him : Valentia in France hee manfully defended : the Rhine, which long had been neglected, hee fortified with Carrifons : vpon the Alps as well as vpon the Maritime Coasts, where passages were frequented, he built Fortresses: Spaine likewise he held under the hand of Constans his Some, whom of a Monke hee had made Augustus, & by whose valour subdued all from the Pyrenean Mountaines to the Ocean. Whose Moneys wanting to expresse his Image and Stile, we have also supplied with another Blanke,

Constant the fat of Constantine

Conftentine of



(7) Constantine prospering as wee hauesaid, sent exters of excuse vnto Honorius, affirming constantly that he was compelled by the Souldiers to doe what he did: whereby he so pleased the Emperor, that com-mending his Valor, & holding him fit, he sent him of free gift a Purple Robe. Whereuponthis new-growne blade began to bud faire, and at Arles planted his Imperiall Seat, Commanding the Citie to be called Conflantina from him, and ordained that the Assemblies Jamina from him, and ordained that the Altembies of the affaires of Seuen Promines: should bee therein held, But this his Sunfine of prospertie was soone ouercast with the Clouds of aduerse fortunes, and his Crowne & Life laid together in the dust For in Spaine against him was arreated Maximus a Vasfall, whose Geagams mm was arreaced as aximus a r ajau, whole co-merall Gerontius intercepting Constant, (his Some and Cafar) at Vienna in France slew him: and Constantine himself within the Walles of Arles, besieged for Foure Moneths, after the Raigne of Foure Yeeres, laid aside his Purple Robe, and entred the Church in Order of Priesthood, furrendering the Citie with his Stile Imperiall, was laftly led into Italy, and there be-headed.

(8) From that time Britaine renewed her obedience to Honorius, and the Province a while was refrefled by the wifdome and Prowelle of Victorinus her villarism Lieu-Lieutenant, who often repressed the incursions of the taine

Conflant flaine.

(bap.53. Arcadius Emp. THEROMANS. Scots and Picts: whereupon in his praise Rutillius Clau-

Conscius Oceanus virtutum conscia Thule August, de Ciust. Dei. Hieron in Epist. Et quecunque ferox arua Britannus arat.

The Ocean wide and Thule. his vertues witnesse will; And all the Champian Fields, which Britaines fierce doe till.

Pillorinus lea-ueth Britaine.

Zofimu.

bb.z.czp.10.

ad Princip.

But Rome at this time being fore afflicted, and by Alaricus with his Gothes and V andals presently facked, Honorius fent for Victorinus with his Army out of Britaine, to the rescue of the Citie, as Claudian fignifieth, when he reckonoth vp among other Aides, the British Legion sent thither : whereof the Scots and Picts had soone notice, and (according to their wonted manner) with fire and fword molested their neigh-

(10) The Britains therfore resolutely engaging themselues into dangers, tooke Armes, and freed their Cities and States from those Barbarous People: by whose example, the rest of their Nation in Armories, with the Provinces of Gaulois, delivered themselves also from their oppressions, and all of them cast out the Roman Presidents, settling a forme of Commonwealth to their owne liking. But these our Britaines growing too weake to withfland the continuall inroades of their Northerne Exemies, humbly belought Honorius for succour; whose returns of comforts confifted only in words, exhorting them by Letters, to fland upon their owne Guard. But they knowing it was not words which much helpe them, againe deplored their miseries,& so obtained of him the assistance of one Legion, which in their aid droue backe those Affailants into their owne Marches, and fortified againe the wall betwixt the Frith of Edenburgh vinto Cluid: fo then departing, left the Britaines to defend themselves; who now, besides the Common Enemies so often mentioned, were much molested, and their Faith corrupted by one Pelagius, by birth a Britaine by profession a Monke, by leand doctrine an Heretike, who was brought up in the famous Monajtery of Ban-

Pelagina an He-reticke corrup-teth the Britains gor in Wales, had also trauelled ! talie, Sicilia, & Ægypt, for the studie of learning, and grew into great fauour with Paulinus Bishop of Nola, and with S. Augustine alfo, till his Hereticall Affertions, which had beene by him and his disciple Calestus (a Scot iccresty taught, and by Saint Ierome discourred) were afterwards condemned by Innocentine the first, Bishop of Rome. But the Arch-heretike returning into Britaine, began againe obstinately to maintaine the same, together with

Agricola, one who spread the venome of that Hereste Man, without the grace of God, was able to fulfill all most supposed in the first suppos the Commandements, 2. That Man in himfelfe had Freewill. 3. That the Grace of God was given vnto vs according to our merits. 4. That the luft have no finne. 5. That Children are free from Originall finne. 6. That Adam should have died, though he had not finned. And therein also one Timothie most impiouslie disputed against the Duine and Humane Natures of Christ. Notwithstanding, at the same time flourished Fastidius, a most learned British Bishop, and Chrysanthus also the Deputte or Vicegerent of Britaine, who with great honor gouerned the affaires of the Church and Common-wealth, and was afterwards (as elfwhere we have shewed) made Bishop at Constantinople of the Nouatians against his will.

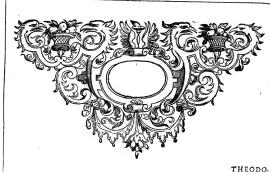
Victorinus Lieut.

(11) Thus were the affaires of this Land managed under these Brethren Emperours ; the elder of which, death and Areadius, died in peace at Constantinople, leaving his fonne T heodosius, a childe of eight yeeres, to the succession of the Empire, and to the tuition of Hisdigerdus King of Persia; a matter which seemed at first very dangerous, but prooued at the last very profitable. He raigned thirteene yeeres, and died the first of May, the one and thirtieth of his age, the yeere of Christs birth foure hundred and ten. At which time one touinus, of an obscure beginning, had raised some Tumults in Gallia, stiled himselfe Emperour, vsurped the Purple Robe, and stamped his Coines with the Title of Victorie, as is seene in one which we heere present.



(12) Against him Honorius made his power, and with his little loffe flew the Ppflart in the Field: wherby his fame was more spread in the West, though not so fortunate as his brothers was in the East, after whom hee liued fifteene yeeres, and with whom hee had raigned other thirteene; and he died, faith Paulue Diaconus, of an infirmitie at Rome, in the yeere of grace death and foure hundred twenty foure, leauing no iffue of his body to fucceed him in the Empire.

Hisdigerdushis Tutor,



Valentinian ele-ded Emperour in the minth W alentinian his kinfiman Emperour in the W in the W is whose raigne and affaires (so farre as they touch west; whose raigne and affaires (so farre as they touch Britaine) we will follow, being the last of the Romane Emperours that held out the succession of our British Monarkes

(4) This Falentinian was the sonne of Constantine. made Angustus, as is faid, and of Placidia Galla daugh-ter to the first Theodosius Emperour: which Lady in the sacking of Rome by Alaricus the Gothe, was taken Prifoner, and by him giuen in mariage to his neere kinf-man athaulphus, who afterwards was King of that Nation; and by her sweet demeanour, and prudent meanes, a Peace was concluded betwixther Husband and her Brother, but with fuch diflikes to the Gothes, that they prefently killed him, and raifed one Wallia for their King; who likewife comming to composition with Honorius, deliucred Platidia according to Couchants, whom the Emperour her Brother bestowed in Mariage vpon Constantine his Generall, in regard of

Placidia Galla her care of Ua-lentinan her fonne. Affar and Actius shofen by her.

his good scruice and Victories by him atchieued. (5) Shee, with young Valentinian New-made Emperour, being fent into Italie, selected the best approued Captaines to secure her sonnes Estate ; whereof Afbar was one, that in Rome flew John the V furper, who had there made himselfe Emperour, stamping this his face and file vpon the currant Money of the State, and by his Tyrannies held his fortunes for fine yeeres continuance.

Iohn Vfor-



Ætius likewise, that had beene Governour of Spain was imploied into Gallia, where the Frankes and Bur gundians (vnder the conduct of Clodius their second King) fought to establish (as shortly they did) their Kingdome in that Countrey, giving it the name of France, according to their owne, by which name they Prince, according to their owne, by which name they were neuer knowne to Cafar, Strabo, Pliny, Tacitus, Mela, nor Ptolemie; whereby the great blaft of their Antiquitie is showed to be but a puffe of winde.

ferable Estates, and crauing his helpe. The Emperour

mooued to remorfe, fent a Regiment of Souldiers into

Britaine, under the Command of Gallio of Aduenna, a

with the assistance of the Ilanders, gave some small comforts to the distressed Britaines. But the Burgun

most valiant man, who having put backe the Enemie

Burgundian quite forfaken of the Romans.

dians passing the Rhene, and threatning to waste Italy, Ætius was compelled to recall Gallio with his Legion, to fecure the Countrey about Paris, whilest himselfe with his followed the dangerous Enemie. (7) He now ready to depart for France, told the

Britains that it was not for the Romans to take fo long and painefull tournies, neither at that time especially when their own Empire was in danger to be ouer-run. Therefore he willed them thenceforth to stand your their Guard, and to prouide for their owne fafeties: and to that end, in regard of their good seruices done to the Romans, he taught them the vie of their Armon and Weapons, as alfo to firengthen their Fortification, and Wall of Turfe, which now they began to build with firme Stone, laid eight foot in thickneffe, and

twelue foot in height. This Wall (faith Gildas) they | Gildas twelue Got in height. This Wall (dath Gidas) brog-drewin a firsight line (at the publik charges of the State) from East to West, and from State to Stat, planning Bul-warker, and rusing Turets, with comments space deflant wiferom assets or which gave a fare and start prospect into the Stat. And So the Romans gave a shirtle Ferrowell, meaning nursess persone assigned and having to part of meaning neuer to returne againe; and burying part of meaning neutro returne againe; and burying part of their Treatigns there in the Earth, whereof much hath beene found, and more is fall lought, left Fritation.

The time of the beene found, and more is fall lought, left Fritation.

The time of the beene found, and more is fall lought, left Fritation.

The time of the beene found, and more is fall lought, left Fritation.

The time of the beene found, and more is fall lought, left Fritation.

The time of the lought found is fall lought, left Fritation.

The time of the lought found is fall lought, left for the lought found is fall lought, left found is fall lought, left for the lought found is fall lought, left for the lought for the lought found is fall lought, left for the lought for the lou inualion thereof made under the conduct of Inlines

most in Forraine Aides, (49 Tacitus faith) was left vnable to defend it felfe; when they had berefe this Pro- defend their wince of all the Flower and Choice of Men, as Gildas in that age complained, laying, Britaine is despoiled of all Gildan her armed men, with her militarie forces : her Rulers (cruell though they were) are wasted, her Garrisons withdrawn, cutioning nory were jure waytea, per variyons without with and defended open, and an exceeding great number of her flont couragious Soulderst aken from her, to ferue the Romans in their warres. With which his sayings the Roman writers themselves agree, and record the Muflers and great multitudes of Britaines that have been transported by them out of this fland : as when Trebellius Maximus with his British Forces made strong the Faction against Otho in Germanie: and then also Honorius Flaceus brought thence eight thousand chosen Souldiers to vphold Vitellius in his cause.

Clodius Albinus banding against Seuerue the Empeour, assuming the Title, and stamping the Moneyes of the Imperiall Estate (as by this here inserted is to be feene; which comming to our hands fince his Storie was written, we hold it more acceptable to fet heere. though out of place, then to give it no place at all in this Worke, being so worthy an Antiquite, and so much concerning the Britaines) vnder whose Banner the Flower of their Cheualrie perished in Battle, when in the Fields of France, and neere voto Lyons, they spent their bloud in his cause (whereby the sinewes of their owne Countries defense was fore weakened, of their owne Countries acteum was to the wanted and laid open to Forraine Innaders. Conflamine the Great allo(as Malmeibury noteth) carried hence agreat power of British Souldiers with him in his warres, by whose puissance (as he saith) he obtained Triumpi Victories, and the Empire of the whole World : and after assigned them that part of Gallia to inhabit, which ter ausgnet them that part of Gallat to Innabit, which was called Armories, lying weltward vpon the Sea Coafts, where they feating themselves, their posterite was increased, and continue tha Mightle People even

(9) This Countrey afterwards (being conquered by Maximus, and his reconciled Enemie Conan Meriadoc, Lord of Denbigh-land, by the proweffe of those British Souldiers whom hence hee carried in his quarrell against V alentinian the Emperour) was receiued in free gift of Conan, after the flaughter of lubates the King, and the name thereof changed to Little Britaine, as being a Colonie or Daughter of this our Iland, ged to the name The Province is large, pleasant, and fruitfull, and containeth in her Circuit nine Bishops Seas, whereof three are called Cornouaille vnto this day, which are Leonen-

conflanticie reach

 $\begin{array}{l} \label{eq:theodosivs} \mbox{THEODOSIVS} & \mbox{2} \mbox{$^$

CHAPTER LIIII.

Valentinian Emp. Weft.

An.Do.408.

lectinion the laft Roman Monarks in Dritains.

Reat haue been the IVars and strange the Altera-tions which both here at home, and through the World abroad haue chanced vnto States fince the first attempts of Inline Cafar vnto these present Emperors, Theodofius the second, and Valentinian

the third, his Affeciate; whose Lines and Raignes did conclude the Successions of the Romish Monarchs within this Iland of Great Britaine, and threw downe their Triumphall Arches in many other Provinces, which for long time had been obsequious to Romes Soueraigne Command. So vncertaine is the Glory of this World, and her Seeming Strength fo liable to Mutabilitie that the Powers and Periods thereof held in His hand that holdeth the Vninerfall Ball, are fuddenly turned from their high-mounted fite and beauty of the Sun vnto the Downe-fall and darke side of the Globe; and either fall againe into the small Circuit of their first compasse, after they have expired their Number, Waight, and Measure: or else with Daniels Image are vtterly extinct and blowne away, as the chaffe from the

(2) The continuance of whose Estates, seeme they

neuer fo Great and Durable in Power, Circuit, Defence,

and Multitude, hath seldome extended much the li-

mit of Fine hundred yeeres, but that their high and

mounted Flames, fall in the allies of their owne con-

fuming decaies, or else hath received some other alte-

ration of Empires encrease, as many learned Writers

haue obsered in most Common-wealths. So was it in the

State established by God himselfe among his Peculiar

People. As from the Promise to Abraham, made of

Christ the Blessed and Life of Man (where cealed

the worlds formerly-vsed computation from the Ages of Men) vnto the Law delinered vpon Mount Sinai, de-

claring condemnation and death, were foure hundred

thirty yeeres from I fraels departure out of Egypt, when their Common-wealth beganne to be ruled

by Indges, and Gods service celebrated in the Taber-

nacle under Curtaines unto the Building of their Glori-

ous I emple creed by King Salamon, were yecres foure

hundred and eighty. From the Anneinting of Danid,

the first King, set vpon Iudahs Throne, vnto the death

of Zedechiah the last King thereof, slaine by Nebuchad-

nezer, and that Holy Temple confumed by fire, were

yeeres foure hundred & feuentie. And other Politike

Estates have flood much vpon the like space of time.

Summer flower.

The Roman M

Dan. 2.35.

Abraham the the Promife made to him, and the going of the Law, Gal 3.17.

departing out o Fullang of the Davi., the time

betweene his Annoinme and the death of Ze-For the Kingdome of Athens fet vp by Cecraps the first

King thereof, vnto Codrus the last, when they changed their Monarchie to a Democracie, is faid to have continued foure hundred and ninetic yeeres. The instance re-Lacedemonians State from Lycargus their Law-giner, laft. vnto Alexander the Great, that ouerthrew it, flou- Lycargue, the rished the space of four hundred ninety one yeeres. him and Aire. From the expulsion of Romes Kings under Tarquinius, vnto the affected Empire in Iulius Cafar, were foure Tarquioun, the time between hundred ninety and nine yeeres, And omitting many him and Julius others, to come to our felues ; from Cafars first Inna- Cefar. fon of Britaine, vnto the daies of this Valentinian the third, wherein the Romans did quite abandon it, were usion of Britaine. fluc hundred yeeres. From the Saxons intrusions and distillion of this Realme into an Heptarchie vnder their Gouernment , vntill the vnited Monarchie made betweene their by King Egbert in the yeere eight hundred and nine-teene, were yeeres foure hundred fixty nine. But Egbert, the time teene, were yeeres rouse numered inty nine. Dut | Econthe un from thence, until their ifflue failed in King Edward | between him from thence, were yeeres only two hundred forty feuen. Confession, were yeeres only two hundred forty feuen. Confession and from the Normans Conquest, vinto the death of Normans. Conjessor, were yettes only two numered to ty action.

And from the Normans Conquest, which the death of that most faced Sourraigne of eternal memoric.

Queen the Conquest, which is the tweener of the Conquest, which is the conquest, which is the conquest. that most parter somerangue of evernau memorie, & meene less and the entrance of GREAT and the entrance of GREAT BRITAINE, and the Vinion of the whole I land to Someranea Kin be brought into one intire Monarchie, by the rightfull Tomas Succession and thrice-happie entrance of our most gracious King IAMES, are yeeres fine hundred thirtie fix. But of these three last, we are to speake hereafter; and now returne to finish up the falling Estate of the Romans Greatnesse.

(3) Theodofius the sonne of Arcadius beganne his Theodofius. The Empire in the yeere of the worlds faluation foure hundred and eight, and was gouerned with a speciall protection by the Persian King during his Mino- Anigonalis ritie, under the charge of Antigonus an excellent man. Tuor. But now growne to yeeres, and some variance happening betwixt him and his Tutor, he was left to the difpole of himselfe; and his vncle Honorius leaning at his death great troubles vnquenched in the West, the mightiest Potentates affaired to make themselves Emperours over feuerall Dominions, and from the richneffe The diffipation of the Imperial Diademe, each one fought to plucke a Empire. Tewell to beautifie his owne Crowne. So the Barbarous Nations out of this one Monarchie began the foundations of many succeeding Kingdomes. For in Spaine the Vandals, Sueuians, and Alanes, not contented with their portion therein assigned, betooke themselves to Armes. The Frankes and Burgundians, which had been driuen out of France, resolued againe to returne. The Gothes, that were Lords of Barcelona, Narbona, and Tolofa, did as the rest. The Hunnes entred Hungarie. Iohn the Tyrant held Rome : and in Africa, Boniface became a Neuter. These stirres mooued Theodosius to

kindnette at their Britaine. Bedaliff, Angl.

to Cefar (6) At this time the Britaines were againe fore oppreffed with the Soots and Pills. preffed by the Scots and Picts, who having notice that the Aides fent by Honorius were returned, paffed ouer the Water in their Boats at both the ends of the Wall,

and inuaded the Province with fuch force, that they bare downe all before them. The Britaines in this lamentable plight, fent their Ambassadours to Rome, with their Garments rent, and dust vport their beads, vnto Valentinian the Third, bewalling their most mi-Britaines Sorrow full Ambaffage

viito this day.

\$5,5.Paul, and Tregniers: the other fix are Dole, Rhenes Ece 2

It containeth inc Containeth

sine Editops

beas.

Keepeth as yet

the British Disto Conen. A great multi-tide of Virgins fent out of britain

Matthew Wefter Heavy Hunt, Names,

to Armerica.

Maximus gaue many Countries to the Britaines

Britaines fled in-

Conflantine who was elected for

Cambden.

Theodofius 2 Emp. East. THEROMANS. Valentinian 3. Emp. VVest. Booke 6. S. Malo, Nanetensis, Vannes, and Brien, whose language differeth from their Neighbours the French, and retaineth as yet the British Dialett. I omit to speak of those other Numbers of men fent for out of this Kingdome by the faid Conan, whereof our British Historians make mention; besides the sending of Vrfula with Eleuen thousand Firgins to be matched in mariage with these their Country-men, all of them perishing by Sea or by Sword, but none of them returning hither againe; whereby the bane of the Land presently followed, her hopes being cut off, and deprined of wonted Poste-(10) This Conquest and Plantation in Armo-

rica, Matthew of Westminster accounteth to have happened in the yeer of Christ three hundred ninety two And these Souldiers thus withdrawne, are so recorded by Henry of Huntington his ancient; and Ninius also long before both, reporteth that Maximus gaue ma-nic Countries to these his Britaines, even fro the Poole which is on the Top of Inpiters Hill, to a Citie called Cantguie, and vnto the Western Mountaines. These (fayeth hee) are the Britaines in Armorica, who never returned to this day, in regard whereof Britaine was Conquered by Strange Nations. With whom agreeth Geruasius a Monke of Canturburie, Iohn Anglicus, Ranulphus of Chefter, and others. Thither also in the downefall and desperat Estate of the Britaines, many of them fled from the rage of their Enemies, as hee that was borne in Armorica, and lined necreft to that age, euen the Writer of the Life of S. Wingualof the Confe for, doth sufficiently proue. An of-spring (lasth he) of the Britaines embarked in Flotes, arrived in this Land, on this to America in Britaines embarked in Flotes, arruned in this Lana, on this the time of the side the British Sea: what time as the Barbarous Nation of the Saxons, fierce in Armes, and uncivillin manners, poffeffed their Native and Mother Soyle, &c.

(11) And lastly, in the cause of that other Constantine, who was elected only for his Name, most of the Flower and Strength of the Britaines were transported into Gallia and Spaine, where in his variable fortunes many of them perished. And Malmesbury writing of these Times, saith, that the Romans had emptied Britaine of all her Flower and Chinalry of Warre, leaning now in her Countries but Halfe-barbarous men, and in her Cities only Epicures, vnfit for fernice. In confirmation whereof, the most learned Cambden out of Antike Inscriptions, and the Booke named Notitia Provinciarum, hath observed, that these Companies under written ferued the Romans in their Warres, and were difperfed here and there in their Provinces, which also were from time to time euermore supplied out of BriAla Britannica Milliaria, Ala IIII. Britonum in Ægypto. Cohors prima Elia Britonum Cohors III. Britonum.

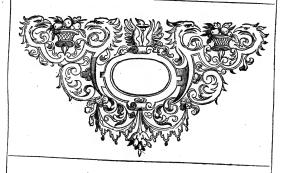
Cohors VII. Britonum. Cohors XXVI. Britonum in Armenia. Britanmeiani fub Magistro Peditum. Innicti Iuniores Britanniciani inter Auxilia Exculcatores Iun. Britan. S Palatira. Britones cum Magistro Equitum Galliarum.

Inuicti Iuniores Britones inter Hispanias, Britanes Seniores in Illyrica

(12) No maruell is it then if Britaine lay weake, being thus continually exhausted of her strengths, which these approued Records made so apparant, as which there approve neores made to apparain, as we need not alleage the doubtfull Story of trous of 5. 11th Pry.

Normey, for the depopulation of the Iland, who is transported as faid by libility under pretence of Kindred, and Itonour to be atchieued, to haue gotten an infinite num- ber of Britaines. ber of Britaines to follow him in his enterprise, which neuer returned againe : or the Baoke Triades mentioned by the Author of the Reformed History of Great Britaine, that bringeth an Army hence, confifting in Britaine, triat tringer and trently thouland men, into Againment of a manner of a mention take and Gault-which, as he faith, was the Aid mention take and Gault-which, as he faith, was the Aid mention transported from Against a special and Aga gainst him. Which may partly seeme to be gathered (afar. from Cafar himselfe, as hath been said:where he affirmeth, that the Britaines and Gaules were gouerned vnder the same King: and is further confirmed by the fashion and Inscriptions of Antique Coines, which wee haue feene stamped in Gold, the Forme round, and Shield-like: Imbosed outward in the Face, and Hollow in the Reserfe; a Forme vnfallible to be of the Britaines Coines, and yet the word Comes is inscribed upon the Imboffed fide, whom we imagine to be the fame Goner-

nor of Artoye in Gallia, whom Cafar mentioneth. (13) Thus then was Britaine first made Weake by the Romans exhaustings, and then quite abandoned of the Koman exhautings, and then quite abandoned or their helpe, and left as a tree in the Wilderselfe, to loke her faire leaues by the continual blafts of thee sharp Northerne winder, whose beauty before had bin as the Cedars of Libanon, or like vnto those in the Gardon of God. And whose Riches had drawne the Worlds then-Monarchs to such liking and loue, that no meanes was omitted to attaine the same, nor care neglected to keepe it in their Subjection : which, while it flood a Britaine account rouince in their obedience, was held and accounted ted the fairest to be the fairest flower in their Triumphant Garlands, and of some of their Emperors thought worthy the Residencie of their Imperial Throne.



THE



THE ORIGINALL, INVA-SIONS, AND HEPTARCHIE OF

THE SAXONS: VVITH A SVCCESSION OF THEIR MONARCHS IN THIS ILAND OF GREAT

BRITAINE, THEIR RAIGNES, MARRIAGES, ACTS, AND ISSUES, VNTIL THEIR LAST SVB. VERSION BY THE DANES AND NORMANS.

But first of the Downe-fall of BRITAINE.

BOOKE VII. CHAPTER I.

ned of the Rema

Gilda.

Chap.I.



RITAINE thus abandoned of all the Romane Garrisons, and emptied of frengths that should have upported her now downfalling-estate, lay prostrate to confusion and miserable calamities; no lesse burdened with the tu-

multuous vproares of her owne great men, who strone for the fupreme Gouernment, then of the Barbarous Nations which with continuall incursions made spoile where they came. These nual incurrons made apone where they dame. I neget times (lath Ninius) were full of feares, and were prolon-ged with forty yeeres afflictions: wherein V origern then king was troubled with the violence of the Romans, the dreads of the Piets and Seets, and the oppositions of Aurelius Ambrofius, who furniting his flaine Parents, that had worne the Imperial Purple Robe, fought their reuenge upon their wicked Murderer: befides the Intrusions of the Germane Saxons, called in for Friends, but prooued indeed the greatest Enemies. During the conflict of these tempestuous stormes, some finall comforts were ministred vnto the Britaines by Bishop German his presence, who from France assisted them against the Pelagian Heresies, and the perillous affaults of the Seats and Piets, who in divers skirmishes ouercame them

(2) These dolorous times of Britaines destruction. Gildas the mournfull Historian, who lived not long after, doth declare. As foone as the Romans (faith hee) hadleft Britaine, and were returning onto their home foorthwith hideous multitudes of Scots and Picts cam swarming out of their Carroghes, (wherewith they passed the " Scittck V ale like whole Armies of duskifb vermine which at high noone, when the Sunne is in his greatest heat began to crawle foorth of their narrow holes an infinite number of hideous Scots and Picts; which two kindes of People, though in conditions somewhat different, yet the conforted too well in greedie desire of bloud-shed : and ha uing intelligence, the affociates of Britaine were now retur-Seattle and Pige (the Remain de-parted) leize all ned with otter disclaime of further assistance, with more confident boldne se then ever before they seize all the Northerne and ottermost part of the Hand, as if it had beene

their oppn none unance, who may are as very or an engang-the fattempts there were ranged in the high Fort along the Wall, Carrifons of Soudiers, but fuch as were both flothfull, and also inserticable for Martiall Affaires: which white-linered Locals with quaking hearts sate still warding day and night, till their ioints were as benummed and flupid as the ftones whereon they fate: infomuch as the naked Enemies did with long hooked Engines plucke from off the wall those miserable Warders, dashing their bodies off the waternoge mycraver rearrange, auguing their violents againft the ground. This goodyet they got by this their violentimely deaths that being thus fuddenly dispatched out of the world, they escaped the imminent lamentable calamities that their brethren and children shorthy felt. To bee short, auing abandoned their Cities and this high defensive Wall. once more they betooke themsclues to slight, and were disper sed in a more desperate manner then ever before. For perfect na more augres are manner, uner ouse ougoe. Eur the enemie vos more hot in pursuit, and more cruell in the laughter, the wosfull linhabitants being by their Eucmies massaced, and rent in peeces like Lambes in the hands of blondy Butchers, or in the lawes of cruell and sauage Beasts. woudy disterer, or in the tawes of trucil and jauage Beglit. In a thefe most limferable times, the encefairs fo compelling) the poore diffressful people forbare not to rob each obster of that sufferences, which could be she them but for a very small feature, and to their hossile when the time the sufference for the three demostrative vex actions, for that the whole Commerce by these lams of the sufference of the three whole Commerce by these lams of the sufference of the suff aumit jucke versauoms, yor mat the whole Country by theft continuall direptions, was vitterly deprined of the flaffe of foode, having nothing left to prolong their life, but that only what they got in hunting. Whereupon, about the chitric nine yeere of Theodofus, and of Christ foure hundred fortie fix, the diffressed Remaines of the down-cast Britaines addressed their mustur Letters of Gallia, in helpe to delta most lamentable manner, and thus inscribed.

Gallia. Britaines addressed their missine Letters to Aetius,

their own inheritance, even as farre as to the Wall. Against

To Æ TI vs Thrice Conful, the groanes of the BRITAINES.

"The Barbarians drive vs backe to the Sea; the Sea a- Reda Hift. Augl. gaine putteth us backe upon the Barbarians : thus be- ub.s.cap.13. tweene two kindes of deaths, we are either slaughtered or drowned. And the more to intimate their mileries, and to mooue his assistance, thus they further vige Wee (say they) are the Remnant that survive of the Britaines, and are your Subjects, who besides the Enemie, are

carch the fivi

aines with long nookes,

afflicted by famine and mortalitie, which at this prefent ex-treamly rageth in our Land. And putting him in mind that it much imported the Maiesty of the Roman Empire to protect and succour their Province, seeing it had now flood vpon the point of flue hundred yeers under their obedience, whose strength of Souldiers taken from thence to serue their Emperors in their Wars elfe-where, was now decaied, and their wealths wasted by maintaining their many Legions in their own Land and abroad : All this notwithstanding the Remans either would not, or could not relicue, having enough to doe to vphold their owne; but returned them againe with heavy hearts into the hands of their most cruell Enemies, who now knowing themselues free from the Romans interceptions, as a violent floud brake thorow the Prouince, and bare downe all before them; the Inhabitants flying like chased Deere. before them; the Inhabitants Hyung ince chaired Letter, formet aking ouer Seas into Britany in France; Cometo South-wates, North-wates, Cormual, and parts of Denon-Intre, leaving the best of the Land to the will of their Persecutors, and much of their Treasures hid in the ground, which neuer after they injoyed.

(4) But the greenous Famine still increasing.

though it had this woful iffue with some, that it made

them yeeld themselues into the Enemics bloudy

wales, North. wales formwall, Dewonfhire.

Britaines flic into

Beds,lib,1,c.14.

hands (onely in hope to gaine a little fustenance of food for the present) and for many yeeres after left lamentable tokens (faith Beda) of great defolations wrought by that dearth: yet with those other which were of more noble and refolute spirits it produced a better effect; insomuch as fro out of the Mountains, Caues, and thicke woods, they affailed their enemics, Britainte trafting repoling their trust not in Man, but in God, whose help in God,ouer-come their ene-mies, is then most at hand, when mans helpe faileth. These in many skirmishes gaue them the ouerthrow with much flaughter, and that for many yeeres together, when they made their incursions for bootes and fpoile; which caused these Rauening Irish to returne home, and the Pists a while tested from further molestation. Notwithstanding the Britaines returned not from their owne wickednesse, growing strong now daily in repressing the Enemie, but stronger in their owne sinnes and civill dissensions. By meanes whereof, though a furcease of Hostile Warres was imbraced, and the skarres of famine cleerly skinned vp, yet another fore as dangerous as either, secretly bred, and shortly brake forth. For the Land being free from the Enemies wastes, yeelded such plenty and abundance of all things, as the like before no age had seene; and therewithall such riot and excesse, that the peoples fins grew to a plentiful haruest, as by the words of Gyldas is apparant.

Elay 1.

Britaines did all

(5) Certainly it is heard (faith he) that there is fuch formication, as the like is not among the Gentiles. Truth with the maintainers thereof is hated : Lies with the Forgers thereof highly eftermed. Euill is entertained for good. leaudnesse respected more then uprightnesse, darknesse de-sired before the bright Sunne, and Satan accepted for an Angell of light : Kings then were anointed, not according to Gods liking, but fuch as excelled others in cruelise; and as cruelly againe by their anointers were they murdered not for any demerit, but that they might advance others more sauage then the former. If hee were milde, or inclining to truth, the darts of hatred were on enery side levelled against him, as the onely Subuerter of the Britaines Estate. What was pleasing or displeasing to God, was all one with them, saving that the better things commonly wrought most discontent: so that rightly the saving of the Prophet, which was tenounced unto the people in old time, might bee applied to our Countrey : Yee lawleffe and corrupt shildren have forsaken the Lord, and prouoked unto wrath the holy one of Israel. Why should ye be smitten any more, still multiplying iniquitie? Eury head is ficke, and every heart is heavy : from the fole of the foot unto the crowne of the head, there

is nothing found therein. Thus did they all things that

were contrary to their safetie, as if that medicine which

was bestowed by that truest Physitian of all, was needlesse

for the world. And not onely the prophaner fort did this,

but also the feletted flocke of the Lord, and the Shepheards

thereof, who ought to have given example to the whole people. To speake of drunkennesse, numbers of them lay sense-lesse and weltring in wine, swelling with pride, contention, and griping enuie, putting no difference in iudgement be-tweene good and euill: insomuch that it seemeth contempt was powred forth both upon Princes and people : and all of them seduced by vanities, wandred in errors and by-paths, not lead in the right way. When Gol therefore was minded to purge his Familie, and to recure them thus infected with terly, and to inhabit (as earft they did) the whole Countrey from one end to another. Yet all this could not reclaim: them, but like unto mad horses, which taking the bit fast betwixt their teeth, runne away with their Riders, fo thefe leaning the way which leadeth (narrow though it bee) unto faluation, ranne at randome in the wide way of all wickednesse, which leadeth directly to death. Whiles therefore (as with words, he is scourged for a foole, and feeleth not the whip: for loe, a pestilent contagion fell heavily upon this foolish people, which (though the enemies sword was gone) in short space destroied such multitudes of them, that the liuing were not able to bury the dead. Neither yet also were ung were not once to may see usan. As uner, yet my were they thereby bettered, that the faint of the Prophet Efay in them might be fulfilled: God called them to mourning, to Elay 12.13. baldnesse, and sacke-cloth: but behold, they fell to killing of calues, and to flaying of Rammes; loc, they went to eating and drinking, and faid withall, Let vs eat and drinke, for to morrow wee shall die. And indeed the time now drew Britainei inineere, wherein their iniquities (like as those in times past of quitic, the Amorites) should come to the fulnesse. And even at that

ted his Dominions with rape and spoile, that hee was ted his Dominions with rape and 1901le, that nee was forced for further assistance to lend for these Saxons The Saxons sense sense forced. to his aid. Whether thus, or otherwife, most true it for. is, the Saxons were sent for, and of hoped Friends, became the tried Enemies to the Britaines and their E-flates, as out of Gildas their Historian wee shall anon

declare. (7) The occasion and maner of this their inuiting and comming, is fer downe by a Countryman of their owne Witichindus, a Writer of good antiquity, who and destinie (as it seemeth) determining the downfall, became soone assaulted by their neighbour Nations the Nor-Land. But no difficulty it was for them so fiercely bent, and Northerne Boreuer ready to make war (especially where they dealt with a Nation feebled and left vnable to make resistance) to destroy

Pfal.106.40. to pure on a summe, and orecure them time inject ca with the corruptions of finner, by heave I and it of Tribulation, the winge aligh is of an often-tried number pierced the attentiae cures of all men, giving notice of their ancient Enemies, ready to arrive, and fully minded to destroy them we will be a summer of the control of the co yet not reclai Salomon faith) the stubborne fernant will not bee amended Prou. 29.19.

instant the like measure beganne to bee heaped upon the (6) For the common enemie now inuading the The Enemie in Southerne parts, was entred as farre as Stamford vp. undeth the Southerne parts, whom to relift the Restaines there parts. on the River Welland; whom to refift, the Britaines affembled together, and having experience what ci-uil iarres had formerly done, they jointly vnite their meanes and powers, and with one consent elect a Britainservaire King to manage these affaires, which was Vortigerne, their powers. by birth extracted from the British Line., nobly defeeded, had not his many vices blemished the same. The British Historie faith, that hee was Earle of Cornwall, and of great command in the daies of Constantine their King, whose simplicitie hee much abused, and whom lastly hee caused to be murdered by the Guard The sear and whom lattly nee cauted to be murgered by the Guara, profiles to murder of his Person, the Scots and Picts by him so placed, ther Constants and to that end infligated: whom nevertheleffe with death hee seuerely punished, to avoid further suspition. In whose reuenge, these sierce Nations so affaul-

thus relateth the circumstance thereof. Britaine (faith Withhidal. the of refusition the Emperous, long since being reduced a-mong the Roman Proninces, and held in their fubicition, flood them in no small stead: but their Legions abandoned, there power assumed to seek neighbors as usons the two-therne Borderers. For the people of Rome after that the Em-peror * Martiall was staine by his Souldiers, being tired out. Marilan he me peror * neartisauwas jiame vy nu sounaurs, veime urea ous ... Manu with for aime wars, were not able to asift their friends with acib. Supply of accustomed aides. And yet had they built a mighty peece of worke for the defence of the Country, reaching betweenethe confines from Sea to Sea, where it was thought write for the that the Enemies would affaile the Inhabitants left in the raced by the

The Down-fall THE SAXONS.

of Britaine:

them some other Associates of bastardly and unnoble brood.

281

the faid worke. Therefore hearing of the worthy and fortunate exploits archieved by the Saxons, they fent an hum-Saxon great Warriours and ble Embassage to require their aid; and these having audifórtunate.

The Sritaines
Ambalisge and
tpeech to the
Sexons,

Chap. 11

"me, spake as followeth.
"Most noble Saxons, the poore and distressed Brets, outworne and tired by the many incursions of their enemies, hearing the fame of those victories which you have most valiantly obtained, have sent vs Suppliants vnto you, crauing that you would

not deny them your helpe and succour. A large and spacious Land they have, plentifull and abun-' dant in all things, which wee yeeld wholly to bee at ' your denotion and command. Hitherto wee haue lived freely under the patronage and protection of the Romans, next vnto whom wee know not any more powerfull then your felues; and therefore we feeke for refuge vnder the wings of your valour. So " that we may by your puissance be superiour of our " enemies, what foeuer feruice you shall impose vpon vs, that will we willingly abide.

fwere to the Pe-tition of the Britaines.

To this petition the Peeres and Nobles of the Saxons riefly made answer in this wise. "Know yee that the Saxons will bee fast friends

vnto the Brets, and ready at all times both to assist them in their necessitie, and also to procure their wealth : with ioy therefore returne yee Ambaffadors, and with this wished-for tidings make your Countrey-men glad. Heereupon (according to your Collinery-inen gial. Heerespon (according to promise) an Armie sent into Britaine, and iosifully received, which in short time freed the Landfro the spaling enemies, & recovered the country onto the behoof of the inhabitants.

(8) But how true this last clause is, may appeare

out of the ancient Gildas, who thus recordeth it : To

Gildar.

Keeles

The Saxens first arrivall on the East part of this Iland.

represse (saith hee) many invasions of those their ancient enemies, which with cruell slaughters and booties continually afflicted them, the Britaines fell to confult upon some convenient course therein to be taken. Lastly, all the Counfellers, together with the proud Tyrant, being blinded in iudgement, deuised such a protection; as in the end prooued their Countries destruction ; namely, that those fierce Sa xons, a people fauage and of hatefull name, odious both to God and man, should be let into this iland, as it were wolues into sheepe-folds, to repulse (for sooth) the Northerne Na-tions, then which protect doubtlesse nothing was ever more Hons; then which protect aenotics for normy was enter more permicious and onhappie onto this Land. O senses sensel for and plunged into despess milts of errour! O desperate dal-nesse, and blinde blocks/smesse of minde! Those whom in ab-sense were seared more then death, now of their owne accord are inuited by these Princes of Egypt (if I may so Say, thus fottifly counselling their Pharao to come and reft Joseph Study Considered the Theraph Some and ref with them under one roofe. Prefently out of the Democ that barbarous Lionesse rulked foorth a kennell of her whelpes, in three long V essels, called in their Language Cy-ula, carried onder full sile, and with ominous presages fore-prophecying that for 300, yeeres they should possesse that Landwnto which they then directed their course, and for halfe of that space, (vix. one hundred and fiftie yeeres) they should waste and depopulate the same. These being put on shore first in the East part of the I land, and that by Commandement of this unfortunate Tyrant, there let fast their terrible pawes, pretending to the Ilanders, defense of their Country, but more truly intending the destruction of them. The forefaid Lionesse finding that her first troupe of whelpes sped so well, sends againe a greater Rabble of the same Litter, which heere arrived in Flotes, bringing with

them, some ourse superances of various and and the roots of And the fe beginnings, the lips of iniquitie, and the roots of bitternesse, (an accursed plantation well befitting our demeriti) have frang op; and put foorthin our fale their haughtic boughes and freeding branches. This batharous Nation thus admitted, professing themselves our Souldiers, and such as would endure all hazards (so they fained) in along not no women comme ou nawara (ye sney jamen) in defenife for their good Hofts, first they craued supplie of vi-ctuals only; which being given them, for some time stopped (so we may say) the Doge mouth: how beit; afterward they complaine that their wages was not bountifully enough compisants that their wages was not vountifully enough paid, deuising of purpose colourable occasions of quarrell, and threatning that unlesse they might have more muniscent entertainment, they would with the breach of conenant foile and waste the whole Iland. Ind without further delay, they second these threats with deeds (for our Sinnes, the cause of deserved revenge, were still nourished) and the fire kindled Eastward; was set a slaming by these sacrilegious men from Sea to Sea, ceasing not to consume all the Ci-ties and Countries bordering thereabout, untill such time as burning welneere all the Inland Soile of the Iland, it lieked (as it were) with the red tongue of the flame the very Rea (at It were) with therea tongue of the fame the very Westerne Ceasni selfe. In this violent imasson, or may be to that of the Asyrtans against the Land of I fractine old times, as historically sufficied also in vs that which the Production of the Comparable of comparable to the Affyrians vpphet by way of forrowfull lamentation vttereth: They have fet fire upon thy holy places, and have burned the dwelling Plat. 74.8. ace of thy name, even unto the ground. And againe : 0 God the Heathen are come into thine heritage, thy holy Tem- P(al.79.1. ple haue they defiled : for all the Fortifications demolished with their Engines, and the Inhabitants together with the Bishops of the church, and also the Priess and people, with glutering swords and crackling slames, were all at once laid along upon the ground, yea and (which was a most lamenalong your use ground, yea and younce was a maje same-label feet and by the flate! I streets, high mounted Walte, and the facred Altar, hy all tumbling together (all purpled with the broken and blondy Lanters and gaared Carcefer mixed as in a horrible wine, prefie. Notiber were there any other Sepalchers abroad, fauc the raines of buildings, and the humal endful heade, and hull have

the bowels of wilde beasts and birds. (9) During this most wofull, desperate, and tem pettuous feason (faith the mournfull Historian) some poore Remaines of Britaines being found in the Mountains, were flaine by whole heapes: others pined by famine, came ind yeelded themselves onto their enemies, upon compositi on to serve them as Bond-slaves for ever, so they might not bee slaughtered out of hand: which granted, was reputed a most high and especiall grace. Others went over Seas into mofe high and affectall grace. Others went out rocas into Strange Lands, linging wader their firead Sailes with a lamentable and mourning note, that of the Platinft: Thou haff ginen vs. O Lord, as Sheepe to loce devoured, and haff. Plat. 44. ti. scattered us among the Heathen. Yet others remained still in their owne Countrey (albeit in fearefull estate, and con tinually suspecting hazard) committing their liues and safetie to the high steepe Hilles, to crassic Mountaines naturally intrenched, to thick growne Woods and Forrelts, yea and to the Rockes of the Sea.

(10) Thus was Britaine brought to the period of her glory, and the people miferably subjected to a forraine Nation, about the yeere from Christs Natiuitie 473. and after the Romans last farewell 28. In which time you fee they were most cruelly pursued with all calons with all calamities of warre, and lastly betraied by use of warre. them in whom so much trust was reposed, as mourn full Gildas hath rucfully declared.



THE



THE SAXONS ORIGINALL.

CHAPTER IL.



times decaied Ruines haue stopped the Passage of those small Springs iffued from the first fountaine of Nations beginnings, and have diverted their streames far from any fure Courfe, or certaine known Heads; so the originall parent, place, and name of

our English-Saxons, have bin writte with a pen of flight touch vpon the leaues of oblinion, or elferecorded in those obscure Roules, that as yet lie bound up in the Office of Times forgetfulnesse: whereby it rests doubtfull from what root these branches first sprang; doubtrul from what root their orances nut prangs fome bringing them from Africa, fome from Meedon, some from Demarke, and some without all likelihood from Britaine it selfe.

Ocea Scarlensis a Frislander borne, affirmeth these Saxons to come of Saxoa Prince of India, who with his two brethren were banished by lot to seeke their destinies abroad, their owne Countries being pestered with ouer many people at home. These (saith he) following Alexander the Great into Greece, became Progenitors to their Countries, that from them receiued their of-springs and names; as that from Frise the eldest, his Frisanders descended; from Saxo the second, the Saxons vpon the River Albis, and from Bruno the yongest, the Inhabitants of the Dukedome of Bruns. wie. And of this opinion also Sufridus Petri Gemeth to be. Crantzius doth deriue them from the Cattiin Germany, and the Phrygians a Region in Afia; to omit others, who would bring them from Sage the bro-

ther of Vandale. (2) F. Albinus a learned Author, doth thinke the Saxons to bee descended from Saca, a people in Afia, and that afterward in processe of time they came to be called Saxons; as if it were written Sax-sones, as much to fay as The formes of the Sace. To this opinion Mafter Hemy Ferrers, a Gentleman of ancient descent, great reading, and a indicious Antiquary agreeth; whose judgement for my particular, I have alwaies honoured, and from the Progeny of his English Monarchs have taken my principall proceeding in these Saxon Successors.

(3) As touching the ancient place of their aboad. Ptolomie the Alexandrian placeth the people Sasones in the Inner Seythia, betwixt the Mountaines Alani & Tapurs; and Amianus Marcellinus fiteth the Saca (no doubt the very same) a fierce and sauage Nation, to inhabit overgrowne places, commodious onely for cattell, at the foote of the Mountaines Afcanimia and Comedus, neere unto which the Citie Alexandria, Tribatra and Drepsa were adiogning, and are fo fet by Ptolemie. Neither is it leffe probable that our Saxons descended from these Saca in Asia, then the Germans from those Germans in Persia, of whom Herodotus writeth. And Infeph Scaliger, a re-nowned Author, sheweth, that these words fader, moder, brader, tutcher, band, and fuch like, are at this day found in the Persian tongue in the same sense, as we vie Father, Mother, Brother, Daughter, and Bound, &c. a great inducement (as somethinke) for the Saxons originall from those parts; though in my opinion the Latine, Pater, Mater, Frater, have no leffe affinitie of found, and in all likelihood were the Primitiues to

these of ours. Of these Sata, Strabe writeth that they made inualions into Countries lying farre off, as namely Armenia, where they left the memory of their successe in a part of that Country, by calling it Sacacena,after their owne name.

(4) From these parts of Asia, as Seythia and the rest. one Band of them, confifting chiefly of their Youth, proceeded by degrees into Europe, and possessed the Nesse, or Forland, which the Romans called Cimbrica Cherfonefus, being at this day the continent part of the kingdome of Denmarke. In which place they were first knowne by the name of the Saxons. And here also they among themselves beganne first to be distinguished into other Tribes, as Holt-Saxons (for so Verfegan, out of their old Chronicle, faith they were called) for their keeping in the Woods: but more proSzen July

Szen July

Sze perly (wee may fay) into Saxons, Angles, and Intes. From hence afterwards they departed, and passing ouer the River Elbe, divided themselves into two Companies; whereof the one taking into the vpper parts of Germany, by little and little intruded them-

along the German Seas.

selues into the ancient Seat of the Sueuians, which now of them is called Westphalia and Saxome: and the other incroched upon Frifiand and Holland (then called Batania) with the reft of those Countries that lie

(f) The time wherein these Saxons should thus inset Germany, by Occa Scarlengis verdick, is as an assume contrast great Alexander: others secount it long after in the raigne of Tiberius. But before Pratomic we finde them not mentioned by any Author, who flourished in the daies of Antoninus Pius, about the yeere from Christs Nativity 140. And most certaine it is by Eutropius and Beda, that before the yeere three hundred, Beda. when Disclesian swaied the Roman Scepter, the Saxons Samusfearefull

out of Cimbrica Chersonesus fore offended the coasts to the Roman of Britaine and France, with their many piracies, and were fearfull euen to the Romans themselues. These multiplying in number and strength, seated in the Maritime tract of Iutland, Slefwick, Holfatia, Ditmarfe, Breme, Oldenburgh, all Friftand and Holland: and indeed, according to the Testimonic of Fabius Quastor, Wholly all the Sea coasts from the river Rhene unto the Citie Donia, which now is commonly called the Denmarc and with him Henry of Erfurd affirmeth Saxon-land to stretch from the River Albis untothe Rhene; the bounds of no one people of all the Germans extending any way fofar

(6) But these spreading Boughes, are brought by others from a neerer Roste, planted not in Afia or Seythis, but rather in Europe and in Germanie it felfe; The names of these Sarous grounding their opinion from Cornelius Tacitus, who maketh them to be bred in the same Countrey, though distinguished by Name from the rest, as others more dutinguinea oy ivame from the reit, as others more befide then were. Which Saxons (lay they) though they were not mentioned by Tacitus in his Defeription of Germanie, yet in Ptolemy, that wrote not much aboue fortie yeeres after him, they are named, as also the Guta, and the Angli, Copartners of their Conquest, Tacitus placeth among these Germanes that worshipped Herthum the Mother-earth for their Auowrie Goddesse; at first but one People, but afterwards divided into three feuerall Tribes; that is, the Saxons, Angles and Iutes, who left the remembrance of their Names stamped (as it were) in the soile from

whence they departed, and also coined new vnto o-thers, wherof they became possessors. Ptolem. Gesgr.i

(bap.2.

Septiblem fo na-med of Seption

to shoote.

Picards for their long Pikes.

Gallogiasses for their Pollax.

Eginberdus,

(7) Ptolomy, among the Sueuians in Germanie defer. Ger.
The place of the
Holt-Saxon inhabiting.
Beda Hiff, Anglia. ceth the Saxons, neere to the mouth of the River Albie in the continent of Cimbrica Cherfone fus. And in this Tland of Britaine, Beda telles vs, that the Kingdomes of the East and West Saxons were of them peopled: Whole originall Name, besides the Indian Saxo or the Seythian Sata, some wil have Etymologed from Saxum a Stone, because forsooth these people were hard or stonie hearted; and some againe from the Axones in Gallia, of whom Lucan maketh mention in this his verse:

> Longifa leues Axones in armis, And nimble Axones in their Armour light.

Justus Lipsus and Engelhusus deri-uation of the Name Saxon. (8) Iustus Lipsius coniectureth, and Engelhusius affirmeth (as Verstegan faith) that the name Saxon tooke the appellation from the Falsion of the Weapon that viuallie they wore; which was a Crooked Bowing Sword, formewhat like vnto a Sithe, with the edge on the contrarie fide, called by the Netherlanders, a Sai-fen, and by themselves Seasen, and the shorter of like saxous weapons called Saifeu, Se-axen and Seaves fashion for hand-weapons, Seaxes; such as were those that were hid vnder their Garments in the Massacre of the British Nobilitie vpon Salisbury Plaine, when Hen-gist gaue the watch-word, Nem cour Seaxes, that is, Take you Swords : three of which Knines Argent, in a Field Gules, were borne by Erkenwyne King of the East-Saxons, vpon his shield of Armes, as some of our Heralds have imblazed. And that their Name was fo gi-

uen them from their Weapons, some allege their accuftomed manner in wearing thereof, which viually was to trusse the same ouerthwart their backes when they went foorth to battle; whereby notice was taken, and that name attributed vnto them, as the like hath been vpon like occasion vnto others; for so in Asia the Seythians were named for their skill in shooting in France the Picards for their long Pikes vied in fight; and in Ireland the Galloglasses, which bare the Pollan as their principall weapon: and of latter times, upon lesse occasions haue Surnames growne both to particular men, as also to whole Societies; which may appeare in such as having vowed their voidge and service for Ierusalem, wore continually upon their backes a red Crosse, whereby the name Crosse-backe, or in old En-Crone, wherevey the name Croffe-backe, or in old En-glish, Crowch-backe, was to them attributed: in which ranke, Edmund Earle of Lancafter (fecond Sonne to King Henry the third) was a principall, and thereby got that name, which he could not claw off from his backe euer fince. So likewise those men who entred that Religion of Monasticall life, wore vsually vpon the outlide of their Garments the figne of a Crofe whereby that Order was diftinguished and noted from others by the name of Crouched or Croffed-Friers. But whence or howfoener the name arofe, among all the Germans there were none in reputation for militarie deeds comparable vnto these Saxons : neither had any adventured by Sea and Land to farre to pur-

Sexeca in lib. de chase renowne and praise, or perhaps (and that more likely) to supply their owne wants; ranging often from place to place, as men alwaies ready to enter any action : and in Germanie to this day a great Dukedome retaineth from them the name of Saxonie. (9) The Guta (no doubt the Inta) Ptolomie like-wife placeth in the Iland Scandia, lying very neere the The place of the Juse Saxons in-Coasts of Germanie, vpon whose vttermost Promontorie (as faith an ancient Manuscript) the Intes did for certaine inhabite, which onto this day of the Danes is called Intland. These intes, Gutes, Getes, or Gothes (or as Beda calles them) Vites, gaue names to those parts of Britaine which they inhabited, as to this day the Ile of Wight beareth their impression. This variety of names we will no further inforce, then that these Gothes were not the same that had passed I fter by Pontus Euxinus, and ouer-ranne Europe, who were also called the Get.e John Maior, Verflegan Reftit. by Iohn Maior. Their name, as Verstegan will have it,

was taken from their agilitie, or fwifine se of foot: and some of them (as Sebastian Munster declareth) went

and inhabited among the Mountaines that divide

Germanic road nature where upon their name grew to be called the Hill-View, which are now the Heluctians.

(10) The Angles (by Fabius Question Ethelwardus; an ancient Writer, and a Noble Person of the Saxons The Angli-Sax an ancient Writer, and a Nobie Perion of the Saxons chapter of habiting.

Royall Bloud) are brought from Onld-Anglia, a Portion lying betwixt the Countries of the Saxons and the Giots, as he writeth them, whose chiefe Towne was by them called Stefwie, and of the Danes, Haithby : but them canced segmen, and or the Dance, Danney : Out (mote particularly) it lay betwire the Citie Flemburge and the Riner So, which Country by Albertus Crassian zine is called Anglis. From hence (faith Henriche Hon. Ress Rantzonius) the Saxons, who were also called the Angle-Saxons, went to aid the Britaines. And at this day there is a little Province in the Kingdome of Dania, named Angell, beneath the Citie Flemburge, which Lindebergus calleth Little Anglia. Their fite notwithstanding is placed by most Authours in westphalia, where the Citie Engern standeth, and where Taitsu and Ptolomy Citic Engern Bandeth, and where T actus and Froomy rangeth them among the Sueutans; which in their times might very well be. Others would have them in Pomerania, where the Towne Englows doth formerwhat found their name: 16 doc Engelskim, Suglewars, and Englernte, places in Germania, bear winnelle, and Words of affinit are prints of their footing among the Longobards and Suemans. But the most glorious remembrance of that their name hath beene for these many ages in this their name natu neene for tneie many ages in this Kingdome of England; though Sext Grammatitus (as eastern we routched, Lib.s., Cap.2) will needs have Anglid uses in amed from Anglid the fonne of Humblus, and Giant-like brother of Dansut the first King of Dennart. B. But Albertus Crasticius being offended at his folly, telles Albertus Crasticius being offended at his folly, telles Albertus (1988). him that England had the name of Britaine many hundred yeeres after that Angul was dead. Others there are that deriue the name England from the manner of this lands lituation, being narrow in the West and North, Tanke in the ancient Transmik Tongue, as well as in the moderne, doth fignific Narry, Strait, or a my applicable Narry, strait, or a my applicable Narry, strait, or a my applicable Narry and to that purpose doe produce this verie of Portugals allusion:

Anglia terra ferax et fertilis Angulus Orbis, Infula pradines, qua teto vix eget orbe :

A fruitfull Angle, England thou, another world art faid An Ilandrich, and hast no need of other countries aid.

(II) Callepine without proofe deriueth the Name fro Cillette. Queene Angela: but on as weake a ground as those who will fetch it from their Angel-like faces, alluded vnto by Pope Gregory the Great. Or that of Goropius, from the Angle or Fishing-hooke, because, saith he, they hooked all things to themselues, and might verie well therefore be called Good Anglers : a very meane conceit in footh. But howfoeuer, most certaine it is that these Angles stole the name of this blessed Hand from their elder brethren the Saxons (as Iacob Gen.27, did the birth-right from Esau) and called it after their owne; as wee shall further shew when our Historie

hath gotten to the age of the Saxons Monarchie. (12) These all claime their descents from Prince Santaboth A Woden, called by the ancient Latines Othinus; and who is deduced by our Antiquaries. as hath beene faid. is deduced by our Antiquaries, as hath beene faid, from the eldeft Sonne of the Patriarke Noth, and is accounted the most noble of all the Progenitors of the Saxon Kings, infomuch as they, and efpecially the Angle-Saxons, our Ancestors, have (in their fuperfittious conceit of such wodden gods) imagined wides to be their principall God of Battell; whole Wife named Pras, was by the like famice held a God-off. Order to the Constant of deffe, of whom more hereafter.

(13) These had issue between them fundry Sons, waden sue sond and from five of them, all the Monarchs of the Eng. their names an Ufb-men have claimed to have been descended. Weekta the first being reported to be the Progenitor to the Kings of the Kentishmen : Caser the fecond, to the Kings of the East-Angles: Wetbelgeat the third, to the Kings of the East-Angles: Wetbelgeat the third, to the Kings of the Mercians: Wegdeg the fourth, to the Kings of of the Dierians: and Beldeg the fifth, to the Kings of

Anglet fiole their

F. Albinus is Protym. Mr. Henry Ferny of English

whence they

Sufradus Petri Crantzius

Amian. Marcel Li 22.549.10.

Michael Near

Joseph Scaliner Perfen & Savon the South-Saxons, to the Kings of the Bernicians, afterwards Kings of Northumberland; and also the Kings of the West-Saxons: only the Kings of the East-Saxons. claiming to descend of the same race, deriue not their descents from any of the Sonnes of the same men. This may suffice for the Originals of these three peo-

ple; who, as Cifner affirmeth, retained (till the fame manners after they were seated in Europe, as they had formerly done in Asia. And what those were, let vs heare the reports of Tacitus, and other ancient Authors, who together with the Germans (among whom they dwelled) doe thus describe them.

THE MANNERS AND CVS-TOMES OF THE ANCI-ENT SAXONS.

CHAPTER III.

Tacit, in defeript

Hele Germans, and among them the Catti and Sueuians, (our Ancestors according to Albertus Crant. zius) were a people (laith Tacitus) well set, sterne of countenance, tall of stature, gray eied, and of a firie a pect, and their haire vellow Vnto whom, Witichindus

Viticbindus,lib.5 the Monke addeth and faith, that They were faire of the womke accept and lauth, that her were eare of complexion, cheerful of countenance, very comely of fla-ture, and their limbes to their bodies well proportioned; bod of courage, hardy in fight, and very ambitious of flory for which parts (latth he) the Franks had them in great admiration, and wondered at their new and strange attire, their ration, and wonacrea a treet new and trange attire, their ramour and teer bulbe clocks of haire, that from their beads over-spread their shoulders, but about all, at their conflaint resolution and valiant courage. Their beads and beards they suffer (laith Tacitus) to grow at length, and ne-uer put off that vowed ornament and bond of valour, vn-Tacit.descript.of till they have staine an Enemie : but then upon blood and spoile, they uncouer their forehead, and say they have paied backe the price of their birth, and thinke themselves worthy of their Country and parents. Their curled locks (faith he) they binde up in knot, and standing on end, tie it in the crowne only that is the harmle sleene they have of beautie, to seeme more terrible to the Enemy. And by Sidonius Apollinaris his testimony, they vsed to shaue off the haire of their heads, referuing onely a tuft in the crowne, about which they worea hoope or plate of copper, which caused the haire to stand vpright, as by

> I ftic Saxona carulum videmus, Adsuetum antè Salo, solum timere: Cuius verticis extimas per oras, Non contenta fuos tenere morfus. Altat lamina mar ginem comarum : Et sic crinibus ad cutem recisis Decrescit caput additurá, vultus.

thele his verses appeareth.

In English thus:

There doe we fee the Saxons clad in blew, Bold on the Sea, but fearefull now on land: Their heighted tops upon their crownes that shew, Are not content to hold their wonted band, But raifd in tufts, where all the rest, doth stand Barenaked shau'd, and hath no haire at all, Which makes full fac'd, but heads seeme passing small.

(2) And that they were indeede bold vpon the Seas, Egyfippus witneffeth. The Saxons (faith hee) 4 most valorous kinde of men, excell all others in Piracies. In imitation of whom, Ifidore affirmeth, that for their

valour and nimblenes in seruice they had their name : A people (saith he) stout, hardie, and most valiant, and sarpenja (satti ne) jibus, narate, and moje valtant, and sarre out-firipping all others in Piracies, seemed more sar-full to luse on Land then at Sea. Whose intrusions and sudden violence both France and Britaine with great dammages felt: for in Gallia they seized into their posfession the Country of * Baiota ses, as is to be seene in Gregorius Turonensts, who thence termeth them 3axones - Baiocassiens : and in Britaine an Office of Charge was instituted to defend the Coasts from their irruptions, the Captaine wherever was a compared to the coasts from their irruptions, the Captaine wherever was a constant of the coasts from their irruptions. tions, the Captaine whereof was commonly called the Count or Earle of the Saxon Shoare : of whose Piracies and fauage Cruelties, let vs heare Sidonius in his Epiftle to Numantius complaine: So many Rowers as you see (saith he) so many Arch-Pirates thinke you behold, they all of them together so command, obey, teach and learne, to rob and steale. There is no enemie so cruell as this, that etteth wpon others at wnawares, and as occasion serves, as warily slips himselfe away. Hee setteth at nought such as encounter him: hee bringeth to nought those that take no heed of him: whom he cour feth, he furely ouertaketh: when he flieth, he is fure to escape. To this service, Shipwrackes mure him, they terrific him not. Be there a Tempest up, the fame ferueth them, and to a saile others. They never weigh Ancour upon the enemics Coasts, but with a resolution agame to returne : and their manner is to kill enery tenth Captine with a lingring and delorous torment: for to such Vowes they binde themselues, and with such Sacrifices they discharge their Vowes againe, being indeed not so much purified by such Sacrifices, as polluted with Sacrilege: and the bloudy and abominable Murderers thinke it a religious thing, rather to terment a Prisoner unto death, then to set him free for a Ransome.

But when wee shall heare these vnhumane and barbarous reports either of the old Britaines or these sauage Saxons our ancient Progenitours, let vs neither be offended at Gildes, or at the reports of these other forrain Writers, who spake thus of them as they were then Heathens, and knew not God: the time of whose ignorance seeing God regarded not, as the Apostle teacheth, let vs acknowledge with due thankes the goodnesse of a most gracious God, who hath brought vs to a holier conversation, and hath made vs Judges of those sinnes in them, that we might slie them in our

(3) Their Apparell was much different from others, and feemed strange to the Gaules, as witichindus harh told vs : and Tacitus declareth the maner there. Hatticouve: and a second second title matter there is not of which (dist he) was stand of Califiche, called Sa. Grand, guns, claffed, or want of a claffe) foliand with a thorn, hatting otherwise no saments at all, our going flarks without hatting the control of others, by their garments ; which were neither large nor wide, as the Sarmates and Parthians ofe to weare them; but straite and shewing the proportion of euerie part of their bodie : besides they wore Pelts made of beasts skins.

Sidonius, lib. 8.

Sexons kill euer tenth Captine.

An adea

The Man and Womans attive differd in nothing, faith he, fauing that the women vie linnen Garments trimmed and interlaced with purple, and without sleeues, their armes bare, and bosomes naked and uncourred. Yet Paulus Dimen in their Paul Discon, aconus speaking of the Longobards, comparing them to the Saxons, saith that their Cassocker were large and worne loofe, most of linnen, trimmed and set out with very broad Gards or welts purfleet, and embrodered with fundry colours, and the richer fort with Pearles: their haire bound up in a copper hoope, flood in tufts upon the crowne, the reft curled and falling downe upon their flooders: their beards they kept skill uncus, till they had killed an enemie; and for another note of ignominie, they were an Iron Ring; as a signe of bondage, till they had cast it from them by the Conquest of a Man. Great Kniues, or rather broad bending Witichindus. Swords, they truffed vpon little Shields thwart their Engelbafou. backes, from which (as we shewed) Engelhafius auoucheth they had their appellation. Hee that abandoned or lost this shield in battle (saith Tacitus) was debarred from their publike Sacrifices and Assemblies, the greatest from their phouse sacripees and Allembites, the greately diffrace that could be; for overy shame and griefe whereof, many, many times hanged themselises. And upon these Shields their manner was to lift up their new elected

Tacit.bift.4.tap.6. Generall, and with acclamations fo to carrie him tho-

row their Campe.

(4) For Warres, the Germans by Tacitus are reputed the best, who for two issuared and tenyeers beld tack with the Romans. Not the Samnites (faith he) not the with the common. Are the Spanisher (all time) not the Carthagenius, not the Spanish or the Gallois, no not the Parthians base so much troubled vs: for what can the East objects against vs. faining the death of Crassus, when he had adoptated Across, before roaden downed by Praisidus? But the Germans bassing either states or taken Carbo, and Cassius, and Scaurus Aurelius, and Seruilius Cepio, and M. Manlius, haue defeated also fine Consularie Armies, and Varus with three Legions in Cafars time. Nei-ther haue C. Marius in Italie, or Iulius in Gallia, Drufus or Nero, and Germanicus molefled them at home in their Country, but to their more smart. And yet these Saxons among those valiant Germans were accounted Saxons among more valuant common were accounted the beft for courage of minde, strength of body, and enduring of trauell, as Zostoneo saith. Terrible also they were, and full of agilitie, by the report of crossus: and for their sudden invasions, most fewered of the Romans, saith Marcellinus.

(5) Their fashion was to goe foorth finging to the

manner was before they ioined Battle, to trie by fin-

Mercel A, 28, c. Tacitue. The Saxone goe Warres, (or rather they especially are said to march to battle, where as others are said to goe) carrying before them cer-taine Images taken out of their consecrated Woods. Their

gle Combat (therein arming one of their own against ome captined enemie) what successe was to be expected : and this they kept as a Law vnuiolate, that non

checi: and this they keep cas a Law unisolace, that some migh prefume beare at most leptor bee was following ad-mitted, where in a frequent Afformhie a shield was gined him by the Parents or Kindra's. and this was the Packet et it were) of his fift homen, he being till them reputed but a particular of a Familie, but thouse-forward a member of the Common wealth. It hay are very families, welf-panteon-fildrate in their feraite, in preferring choice Companies, aim, following their Landers; and primit geher rankers; not as, following their Landers; and primit geher trankers; not say the datantage and benefit of the day, and introceiving in the migh, holding formac end and folly like a colour affects. . certains.. Their westpons, as tellificht I sammer pa-meius, were long Searers; broad Strond Landers. certaine. Their weapons, as terrine in Tournes Po-marius, were long Speares, broad Swords, and the Crof-bow: these they held in such esteeme, that with a borse furnished, Shield, Sword, and Launce, their Virgins were received in mariage, accounting them for the greatest Their Ceremobonds, and the very Patron-Gods of Matrimony: which custome might well bee taken from their neighbours the ancient Saracens, whose Maidens viually presented to their husbands a Tent and a Speare, in way of Dowrie at the entrance of their Nuptials. And among these Germans those Martiall habiliaments were in such vse, that they did meet neither at Feafls nor in Councell, but in their Armour.

A People (faith Tacitus) whom thou canst not so easily perfrade to manure the ground, as to prouoke the Enemie, and adventure wounds; holding small esteeme of that which

is gotten by the fweat of their browes, when it might have been obtained by the expense of their blond. A strange di-werstile (saith he) that the same men sbould so much lone floth, and hate quietnesse. It is with them a great shame for their Prince to be ouercome in Valour; but for any one to returne aline from that Battell wherein the Prince is flaine, a perpetuall infamie and reproach. And that their resolutions were euer noble, and their corage not daunted in distresse or bondage; it well appeared by a whole band of them taken by Symachus and deligned for the Romans paltime of Sword-plaiers, who the same morning that this spectacle was expected, strangled themselves rather then they would ineurre such infamie and basenesse, as to make others pattime with the ignominious vlage of their owne (6) Their Lawes were seuere, and vices not laugh-

(o) I here Lawes were seuere, and vices not imagnife at and good Customes of greater authority among them, then elfewhere were good Lawes; no temporing for fauor, nor offers for gaine; but bounteous in bolystaity, and liberall in gifts, accounting both due to bee ginen nad vectored, year and that without thanks: no Nation from from adultations of the control of th terie, or punishing that some more searcely. For the woman offending, having full her haire trust off, was turned starke naked out of her Husbands house, and that in presence of her owne kindred; thence she was scourged with whips thorow the Towne, without regard of birth, beauty, age or wealth, and neuer after could finde another Husband. Those that were vinnaturally leaud of their bodies, their manner was to drowne them in filthy mud, and to couer them with hurdles. Yea and greater punishments then these the Pagan-Saxons executed vpon fuch offenders, as by the Epiftle of Boniface an English-man, Arch-bishop of Epithe of Baniface an Englishman, Arch-bishop of Asquare, which he wroce ware Stelledad King, of the Marcians, in reprocuing his adulterrous life, in manifoli. For (liath hee) in the actions Campy of the Saccost (where there was no knowledge of Gab) of cities a Maddin har father handle or one bassing a bankwale became a where, flee found bet from feet with a manifolia with the round hands closed to manifolia and the Corrupter found bee banged upon the First wherein flew started. If flee war not go light, then he wherein flew staffeners and whome from the Gridle-fleed, the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the Calle Mattern skillegar et along the light has the light chafte Matrons diducange and whip her, and did pricke her with kniues, and so was she sent from Towne to Towne, where other fresh and new scoweges did meet and torment

And their seuere Lawes a long time remaining in the daies of Christianitie, doe declare with what rigor (without regard of person) they both examined and punished this offense: whereof that of Queene Emma, the mother of King Edward the Confessor, is a suffici-ent example, who being accused for incontinencie of body with Alway Billion of Winchefter, was inioined to passe ouer nine Plangh-share trons glowing red hot, she being blind-fold and bare-footed; by which triall, fhee is faid to have acquitted her felfe, infomuch that having paffed them all before thee knew it, cried and faid; O good Lord, when shall I tome to the place of my purgation? This punishment beginning in these Pagens, and continuing vnto the yeere 750. Stephen the Second, and most pontificall Pope of Rome, did veterie abolish, as too fenere and oner-rigorous for Christians

o under oce. The Virgins of these Saxons were neuer to bee married but once, that they might have no other married but once, that they might have no other once. thoghts, nor further defire but in case of matrimony: neither had the men pluralitie, excepting great Per-fonages, and they fued vnto in regard of procreation, for to be without Children, was to be without reputation. So that the testimony of Salaianas, which lived among them, fitteth well our purpose, saying; Though the Saxons are outragious in cruelty, yet for chastity they are to be honowred.

(7) But as in these vertues they out-stripped most Pagans ; fo in the Zeale of their heathenish superstirions and Idolatrous feruice, they equalized any of them : for befides Herthus, the Mother-Earth, whom the Angle our auncestors accounted for a Goddesse of Aide: they worshipped Mercurie vnder the name of Hhh I Woden

Saxoni their refor

Tecit.defer.Germ

Chroni of Heli

per.leb.6, cap.13.

Асурфун,

Sidenius Apollin.

Mercury worflupped of the Servers for Weden. * An old Manufeript. Wodenfdey dedi-cated to King Frider dedicated to Ducene Fred. Ifis a Goddeffe of the Saxons

Esster a Saxon Goddesse. Beda de tempori-

Elay 40.25.

(Vantzim Nor. Hift.li.3.ca.2. Herald Kine of Norway his wic-Adam Bremens

Vifola a Temple of the Saxass all of gold. The Savant Gods

in their Temple

Woden for their principal God of Battell: after whose victories they viually facrificed to him their Prisoners taken in warres, and of him named one of the weeke daies · Wodensday, whereon hee was chieflie worthipdates : Wousen also, wherevon the was enterne wormin-ped: whole wife named Frea, was by the like foolerie held to bee Venus a Goddesse, who whom another of their weeke daies was assigned for name and service; which of vs is called Fridaie.

Ists likewise with them was a Goddesse of great account, fo was Eofter, vnto whom they facrificed in the moneth of Aprill; whence it commeth (faith Beda) that they called Aprill Eoster-Moneth: and we still name The ing cauca Aprin Egist-nowers: and we minimize the feaf of the Refuretion, Eafter. The Images of all these they still bare before them in battle, reputing no small condence in their aides: and yet (laith Tagtus) they thought it unbeseeming to paint their Gods in the shape of men; hauing even by Nature doubtlesse written in their hearts, a regard to that demaund of the Lord : Towhom will ye liken me that I should be like him, John 2 to whom while income inm 1 poma be the mm, faith the hole one lehous? They gaue great heede allo to the neighing of their Horfes, and to the flight and finging of Errds, as ominous fore-shewers of future

(8) These Superstitions, Ethelward even in his daies complained of That they had infected the Danes, dares computance over Loss use, rose on engine Losses, Normans and Sueuians, with the worship of this God wooden; unto whom those barbarous Nations offered facrifices, that they might be victor ious where they fought. And as Craniz recorderly, Herald the forth of that name, and Norwaies King, was so farre over gone, that he sacrificed two of his Sonnes unto his I dols, that he might obtain nees two of ms somes who ms tout that he might obtaine a tempelf to differfe, and put backe the Armado, which Herald King of Denmarke had prepared againft him. This generall defection of Gods true worling, Adam

Bremensis maketh mention of in this manner : In Temple, faith he, called in their vulgar and native speech I tempre, MILLIER, causes to their muyer and nature speech V bjola, which is made altogether of Gold, the people wor-hip the Statues of three Gods, in such manner, as that I hav the mightiest of them hathonly a Throne or Bed: on either hand of him Woodan and Frisco hold their places. And thus much they signific: "Thor, say they, beareth rule in the Aire, and governeth the Thunder and Lightning, Windes, Aire, and governor to a tempor and Ligitime, virials, Showers, Faire weather, Corne, and ruits of the Earth. The second, which is Woodan, that is, stronger, maketh Warres, and ministreth manly valour against Enemies. The Warrs, and ministreth many valour against encours. Lie-third is Frifco, believing largely open mortali men, peace and pleasure, whose smage they deutife and pourtray with a great virile member. Woodan they engrave armed, like as we ofe to cut and expresse Mars.

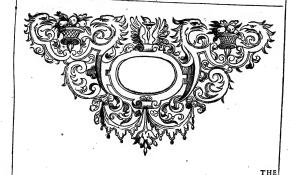
(9) Their controuerlies and doubtfull matters were decided by drawing of Lots, which they cuer made of some fruit-bearing tree, and was performed

after this manner: If there were publike cause, the Pricit; if private, the Goodman of the house, or worthsest in the company, tooke those suited slips, dissinguished with certaine markes that had beene cattered at hap hazzard upon a man ses som man occur junice an emp immonara upon a white gament: and after praires and innovation on their God, with eise fixed upon heasen, and three times lifting the fame lots aloft, gaue their interpretations thereof according to the markes therein inferibeds which was received in the markes therein inferibeds which was received. and between for a most fine to racte: as the like was obter-ued vpon other occasions, both by the inspections of Brasts intrals, and singings of Birds, after the accustomed maner of other Gentiles, that doted vpon the augurations for things of future successe.

(10) For the generall gouernment of their Countrey they ordayned twelte Noblemen cholen from among others, for their worthines and sufficiency: These in the time of peace rode their seuerall circuits to fee inflice and good cuftomes obserged, and they often of course at appointed times met together, to confult and giue order in publike affaires: but euer in time of warre one of these twelue was chosen to be King, and so to remaine so long onely as the warres lasted : and that being ended, his name and dignitie of King also ceased, becomming againe as before. And this custome continued among them, vntill their wars with the Emperour Charles the Great: at which time wittekind, one of the twelue aforelaid, a Nobleman of Angria in Westphalia, bore ouer the rest the name and authoritie of King; and he being afterward, by means Verstegan Restit. authorite of Amegianton coung anterward, by means of the faid benefour, converted to the faith of Chrift, jadby him his mutable Title of King turned into the enduring flile and honour of Duke: and the eleven others were in like manner by the faid Emperouraduanced to the honourable Titles of Earles and Lords, with efablishment for the continual remaining of these Titles and Dignities vnto them and their heires. Of whose descents are since issued the greatest Princes at this present in Germanic. But though they obserued this faid forme of government elfewhere, yet

(11) And thus much out of my poore readings, I haue observed of the original beginnings, the names, maners, and customes, of our ancient Progenitors, the worthy Saxons, without either amplyiying or impayring their glory: who being of all the Germans io much denouted to warre, as that their only fame therein was many times sufficient to daunt the Enemy, were thought vpon by the downe-cast Britaines as the fitteft to support their ruised Effate, of whose Entrance Conquests, and Kingdomes, wee are now next addressed to speake.

heere in Britaine it was otherwise, as heercafter will



THE SAXONS

THE SAXONS ARRIVALL INTO BRITAINE VNDER THE CONDVCT OF HENGIST AND HORSA

CHAPTER IIII.

An.Do.45

The Saxon ence.
Britaine voder
Hengift & Horfa.
W.Malmesbury.



Ien the state of Britains was miserablie torne by the calamities of civil Diffensions, Famine, Dean, and Robberies, the Romans returned, their owne Strength decased, and their Afflictions daily augmen-ted by their wonted Enemies the Scots and Piffe

no hope was left to their despairing hearts, that of themselues they were able to defend themselues: and therefore (as wee haue shewed) they called to their aid the Saxons, a Nation sierce and valorous, who to all the Saxons, a valuou nerce and valorous, who to the number of nine thouland, under the Conduct of Heigiff and Horfs, two brethren, entred Britaine at Ebyliest in the Ile of Thanet, in the raigne of Theodolius the lecond, and of Yalentiman the third, Emperor of the East and West, about the yeere of Grace 450. Receined they were with great joy as Angels from Hea-uen, and faluted with fongs after the accultomed manner of the Britaines, who appointed them the Iland Thanes for their habitation.

(2) These saxons in short time made proofe of their Manhood. For ouercomming the Enemieeuen in Sotiand it felfe, feated themfelues in some part thereof; so that their Conquest feemed absolute, and the Britaines freed from their former assaults. Peace thus fetled, and the Inhabitants freed, a friendly Com-A composition betwixt Saxon and Britains position was made betwixt these Nations, wherein the Saxons undertook to maintaine the Field and the Britaines Sacons vadertock to maintaine the Fold, and the partiame to fulfation the Charge. In which league they aboud lome certaine time, faith Writehindus, making of ina chill flow of the Writehindus, making of ina chill flow of the Writehindus flow to flow us they precincul the Country Lurg, the falle frittle, and the banks of the Industrials flow to practife feat of princes and the conflation, with themself, that themself such which was the conflation of the Country of the ther confidency with themelians, that themelians and the greatlify are if the Secons had no certaine place of about, they found fault with their poy and want of criticals, ma-ting that their quarrely, about the momen, and colitate for their high deferst, threating withall, according Gleist, that flowerly they would recknows itsout their Notes and thereupon Gusting our for more of their Nation, curved

peace with the Scots & Pitts, who all together rofe against

the poore Brets.

Witichindas

Britaines.

Fabian

(3) And iHengift, that by the gift of voitigen had got the whole possession of Kent, sent for more supply of Saxons vnto his ayde, pretending imployments of their seruice in other parts, but indeede to make strong his owne designes: and these swarming daylie ouer into Britaine got the firength of munition and command of military affaires without impeach: For the King holding himselfe now sure from all interceptions, gaue his immoderate senses scope to nourish more freely their sensual pleasures, and committed more audaciously those vices, vnto which his owne corrupt nature was naturally addicted. This Hengift soone perceived, and to adde more matter fit for flame, fed ftill the humors of this vicious King, outwardly shewing his care and readinesse for the

estate, and his courteous carriage to the Commons in generall; but to the King an ouerfeeming dilligence, and feruile obedience: by all which, ere it was long, he gaue fire to the traine, that blew vp the foundations of the British policie.

regard, and whele neighings (faith Tacitus) were their presages, and being white, were implosed in their sacrilegi-ous ceremonies. Virgil also maketh the Horse to bee a

Verflegan, in this manner : A Horfe Argent Rampant, in a Field Gules : which was the ancient Armes, as hec affir-

meth, of the Princes and Dukes of Saxonie. And albeit

those Dukes have of latter yeeres changed that Coat,

yet doth Henry Iulius, now Duke of Brunfwicke, a most

his verse he doth intimate and write :

of the Bring police.

(4) For feathing the King in the Callell of Tonnge, commanded his daughter, a Lady of passing beautie, to attend the banquer, whose excellent feature and feemely behauiour, blew the sparkes of defire so right into Vortigerns wanton eie, that they presently kindleda flame in his lascinious heart : for in the midst of lessname in ms incumous near : To in the must of his cups, Romena (fowas the damofell called) with a low reuerence and pleafing grace, faluted the King with a cup of gold full of fweet wine, incharfning it The King in love with a cup or gote full or tweet wine, incharfning it with thefe words in her language; Wass heal blacopt Cyaing, which is in our English, Re of health Lord Kinghe demāding the meaning, would be taught to answer to her owne understanding, and faid, Dpincheal, that

is, Drinke health; whereof when hee had pledged her (as we speake) this bowle insected his senses with no leffe fortifhneffe, then that of Belm is faid to doe Dido, when Cupid plaid the childe Assaura betwirt Aneas and her. And brought more bale to the Land, then as-

and he And brought more bale to the Land, then afterwards did that which was preferred to King I feels at Swing feel at Swing I feel at Swing

was denied, but lastly consented vnto, and the Nuptials performed. And now Fortune casting occasion de Registra, daly into Hengifts lap, hee gaue his afpiring thoughts no reft, till hee had gor the Crowne from Vortigerns head, and leized all vnder the Saxons power. (5) Hengift and Horfa in their Language, as also Verftegen Reflit,

in the ancient Tentonic Tongue, doe both of them fig-nific a Horse, vitto which beast the Saxons had great

luckie offe or foretokened successe in Battle, as in this Bello armantur equi, bella hac armanta minantur. And Crantzius telles vs, that it was a vsuall thing with crantiu, the Pagan Germans, especially of their Noble-men, to take the names of Beasts, some from the Lion, some Pagan Germans

from the Beare, some from the Woolfe, and some from the Horse, as heere Hengist and Horse are said to sig-

(6) Which beast they bare in their shields of Armes at their entrance of Britaine, and was blazed, saith their Aumet.

ancient Saxon Prince, who sometimes bore the White Horse in a Red Field, beare the White Horse for his The Doke of Greaft, having for his chiefe Coat of Armes, the two Lands defence, his counsell and love to the Nobles in

Britaines abandonce the Landor for themselves in cause, wherein they either perished for hunger, or redeemed their lines with perpetuall sauery.

(13) Neither were their calamities greater in out-

manus Altistodorensis, and Lupus Bishop of Trecasse in France, were by the brethren delired, and sent vnto

ward affilicions then their foules, polluted with the herefic of the Pelagians, brought by Agricals, the Son of Seneriams a Pelagian lifens, that did foulely corrupt the faith of the Brianes: to redireft which, Garware Allifolds of the Control of

In which place Catigern was buried, and a Monu-

ment in memory of him erected: the stones whereof to this day appeare, and fland upon a great plaine in the Parish of distord, and from Catigern as yet is corruptly called Citt-Catikonse. The like Monument the Saxons built for Horfa, which time hath now defa-

ced, and whereof Beda maketh mention, who faith, that a tombe bearing his name was in his daies to bee feene

in the East part of Kent. The credit whereof is conti-

(its-Cotibouse, Catigern has M

The Heritikes The principall cause of the Bri aines mileries. Merlin the Welih Wizard. The differing opinions where this Caltle was ss and Vier Per-A Battle at Maesbell, Hengift disco nicu. Geffry ap Arthur. Matth,Wellminst.

Chap.4. The Arrivall of THE SAXONS into Britaine. their thus troubled and declining estate. These pil-201 lars of Godstruth, after they had powred forth praidoubtlesse had recouered her former strength, both ers, and connicted the Heretikes, lead an Armie of by the praiers of Biftop German, the prowefle of this last spoken of Ambrosius, the valorous attempts of Britaines against the Pitts and Saxons, and gained the victorie; after which (like vnto people that drew on Gods vengeance and their owne defirtations) they Vter Pendragon, and the worthy industries of the Christian King Arthur. The famous relistances of this last mentioned arthur, the Monke of Monmonth fell to robberies and rapine, one Citie banding against another, and all laid waste by the Saxons and themwith such fables hath augmented, that his Acts and felues. These miseries doth Gildas impute to have Trauels may bee compared to those of Hercales, or with the Conquests of Cafar himselfe; insomuch that hapned to his Britaines, because they tooke no care to he hath beene accounted and ranged in the Catalogue reach the Gospell of Christ unto those Infidels the Englishof the worlds nine Worthies. And furely (by the te-Saxons, that in their heathenish cruelties sought the Lands stimonie of Malmesbury) hee was a Prince of great destruction. worth, and did often aduenture with his small power (14) Vortigern thus dispossessed, for his further securitie betooke himselfe into Wales, where among to meet the Saxons in the face and in Field. But the Britaines strength daily decreasing, and new those vast Mountaines hee built a strong Castle; of supplies of these Saxons daily arriving, brought the whose foundation, Merlin the welfh Wixard, with the one in despaire to enjoy their owne right, and the o future successe that should afterward follow the Brither to triumph in their intrufions of wrongs. For taines, haue by way of prophecie vainly spoken. This Castle most of our Writers have said to bee in Southcontinually incroaching forward, and inlarging their limits wherefocuer they came, droue the inhabitauts Wales, vpon a rockie and folicarie mountaine called before them from their wonted possessions, & seated Breigh, or after others Clearie, in the West of that Prothemselues in the southern and best part of the Land, uince, not farre from Radnor, and neere vnto the Ri-uer Gnaua: but the inhabitants of North-Wales report laying the stones (as it were) of those foundations. whercupon in short time they raised their most glo-(by the reports of their ancestors) that in old Bethkerious buildings. lert was that Castle, which Vortigern built, and is yet (17) For enery feuerall Captaine or Commander called Embris, from Merlin Embris, as they affirme. And furely (befides the craggie and solitarinesse of accounting that part his owne, wherein he first entred or made conquest of, with full resolution determined the place, which feemed to mee rather an entrance into keepe what he had got, and (as an absolute King) to the shadow of death, then to be the Palace or Court commanded his Province, whereby the Land became of a King) the River Lignterrenny mooneth much, by burdened with scuen of them at the first ; as Hengest which Faustus his sonne, begotten of his own daugh of Kent; Ella of thele parts now called Suffex and Sur-19; Cherdik, of the Well; Erchempin, of the Euf; 1da of the North; Crida of the Middle land; Vffa, the parts ter Rowena, is faid to spend his life in continuall praiers. (15) But whilest portigern was bussed in building now Middlefex and Effex: which Kingdomes thus bethis Castle, and the Saxons making spoiles whereso gunne and erected, flood not long vnshaken by civill dissensions among themselues, each King enuying enerthey came, the Britaines vnder the conduct of Aurelius Ambrosius, began to receiue some breath of hopes, and to shew themselues out of their Caues. his equals greatnesse, and seeking to inlarge his owne Dominions upon the next. In which combustions, the Britaines.

Beds bift. Esciel.

This Ambrofius (faith Beds) was a gentle natured man, and the notion of all the bloud of the Romans remained then a few or none of them came to the graue in due time, but were either flaine in warres, or treacheroufly liue, his parents being staine, which had borne the name of the King of the Countrey. Hee with his brother yeer, murdered in peace, or elfe inforced to sheare himselfe a Monke, and refigne his Crowne to another. To commonly called Pendragon, returning out of Britain
Armorica, where they had remained from the Tyranfpeake of all these together, I hold would bring too great a confusion to our Historie, and a needlesse surnic of Vortigerne, landed at Totnesse in the West of this Iland; vnto whom resorted great Troopes of charge to the Readers memorie: To avoid which, I will briefly fet downe the Conquests, Circuits, Acts, and Descents, that in enery seucrall Kingdome hap-His first Expedition was against Vortigern the scourge This init expectation was against or oragen inc [conge of his Country, and murderer of his King: whole Calle thraightwates hee belieged, and by the inftreuenging hand of God, with wilde fire confumed, wherin those pened while they stood in their Heptarchie, before they were vnited to an absolute Monarchie; and then (according to my prefixed purpole) continue the fuc-cession of GREAT BRITAINES Monarchs. adulterous and incestuous persons were burned to (18) For albeit the Land was divided into 7. scuerall Kingdomes, and each of them carrying a fourraigne (16) Next, following the common Enemic, hee command within his owne limits, yet one of them gaue battle to the Saxons on the North of Humber, at ener feemed to be supreme of the restand that Prince a place called Maesbell, wherein Hengist was discomfiwho had the greatest power or successe in his warres, ted, and in flight taken by Earle Edol of Glocester, and was ever accounted and called The King of the Englishbeheaded at Comingsborrow, faith he of Monmouth. Howbeit, Matthew of Westminster maketh him fight men, as Venerable Beda in the fifth Chapter of his fe-cond Booke, and Historie of England, euer termeth another battle vpon the Riuer Dun, in Anno 489. wherein, saith he, Hengist was taken. And Polydore saith, that in the same battle Hengist at the first onset (19) Such therfore as held the rest under, either by Armes or alliance, in amitie or subjection, swaied the was flaine, with many of his Germans: the fame of whole whole Monarchy, and were acknowledged as Supremes victorie (faith he) is had in memorie with the Inhabitant in power ouer the rest, which succeeded not ever in of those parts even onto this day. Yet Gildas, Beda, and Ethelward, Writers of those ancient times, and two of the same Familie, neither continued in one and the same Kingdome without reuersement, but were carthem Saxons, mention not the death of Hengist, neiried vpon the Flouds and Ebbes of variable successe ther this great victorie of the Britaines. And Marianus the Scotish Monke seemeth to affirme the contrarie, or as destinie pleased to alter the chance : wherof each of them (sauing the East-Saxons only) did attaine to where he faith, that Hengist raigned thirty foure yeeres in Onely the Zag the height of that gouernment, as to the hauen of great glorie, and died peaceably, leaving his some Eske to succeed him in the Kingdome of Kent. With whom altheir wished defires. See therefore (if you please) a generall view of the whole, and afterwards the feue-To Florentius the Monke of Worcefler agreeth. Howrall Histories of every Kingdome apart, before wee enter into the Succession of the English-Saxons Mofocuer, fure it is, had not the divine power of God otherwise determined, the waning estate of Britaine Hhh 2

Chap.5.

THE KINGS OF KENT.

293



THE KINGDOME OF KENT BEGVN BY HENGIST THE SAXON, WITH THE SVC-

CESSION OF THEIR KINGS, THEIR

ISSVES AND RAIGNES.



CHAPTER V.

An.Do.455 Kent in the daie of Julius Cafar the Seat of four

His raigne and

Beda bift. Angl.

lab. s.cap. 5.

THE



Ent, the first Dominion of the Saxons Heptarchie, was formerly in the daies of Iulius Cafar, the Seat of foure scueral petty Kings, yet neuer called a Kingdome, before that Hengift, the first Saxon Captaine, in fauour of his

Daughter Rowena, got it by the gift of King Vartigern, about the yeere of Grace 455, and in the seuenth yeere after his first arriuage, heere he first laid the foundation of those fortunes which the Saxons his Nation in this Land after-Henjithis raign
and death.

Henjithis raign
and death.

Henjithis raign
and death.

Henjithis raign
and death the space of thirty one
yeers, (some adde three more) he left it in peace to his sonne Eske; and the rest of the Iland so weakened by his meanes, that others of his Nation were shortly planted in other parts thereof. It contained the Continent that lieth betwixt our East-Ocean and the Riuer Thames, being bounded upon the West with Suffex and surrey.

Of Hengif fee more in the fuc-ceffion of the English Mo-narchy, cap. 12. Este, the second King of Kent, is reported to bee the second some of King Hengist, who accompa-An.Do.488 nying his father into this Iland, made proofe of his great valour in all his Battles fought against the Bri-taines, and in one of them (as Geffrey of Monmonth re-King of Kent.
Retained prifereporteth) being taken prisoner, was for a time rereporters) being taken princies, was not a time realized in 70rds, but thence escaping, hee aided his father in the Battle of Crekynford; and after his decease, succeeded him in the Kingdome of Kent, from whom thole Inhabitants (faith Beda) were called Eskings, amongst whom he peaceably raigned about twentie

yeeres, and died in the yeere of our Lord 512. Octa the sonne of Eske began his raigne ouer his Fathers Dominions, the yeere of Christs Incar-An.Do.512. nation 5 1 2. and raigned twenty two yeeres, without mention of any memorable Act

Merik, the sonne of Eske, and the fourth King of Kent, raigned twenty five yeeres, faith Stone; twen-tie nine, faith Sauil in his Table collected from our An.Do. 532. English Writers. He had iffue, Ethelbert the first Chri-Florent Wigorn, Javerik the fonne of Eske, Javerik his chilstian King of Kent, and a daughter named Rikell, ma-ried to Sheddathe second King of the East-Saxons, the mother of Sebert and Sepebald.

EThelbert, the sonne of Imerik, in the yeere of grace of 1. succeeded him in the Kingdome of Kent, An.Do. 561. who by reason of his young yeeres, was fore molested by his neighbour Princes, that fought to inlarge their Provinces upon his: for now the Saxons having made full Conquest of the Britaines, fell at variance among the sclues, taking all occasions to supplant each other,

as Conquerours commonly can endure no equals. and prosperitie euer is looked at with an enuious cie: whereupon Cheulin King of the Well-Saxons, proud of his victorious fuccesses ouer the Britaines, beganne to Chonen intradella disdaine all amitie with his owne neighbour Saxons, inuaded the Territories of this young Prince, and in a set Battle slew Oflane and Cnebban, two of his Dukes discomfitted the King, and wonne the day. This field was fought at Wiphandun, in the yeere of our Redemption 567, and is noted to bee the first Battle betwixt the Saxons themselves since their first entrance

But young Ethelbert growne vnto yeeres, repaired his losses with the inlargement of his Kingdome to the banks of Humber, and was the fifth Monarch of the Englishmen, as after we shall heare. His first Wife was Berta, the daughter of Chilperik, King of France, by whom he had Edbald, Ethelburg, and Edbarg: a se-cond Wife he had vnworthy of name, forter incefluous and abominable act, in matching her selfe in marriage with her Husbands Sonne, A sinne (faith the Apostle) not to be named among the Gentiles. Of this King, as also of all the rest that attained vnto the glo-Kings of the Engliftmen, I purpole to bee sparing in their particular Kingdomes, and to reserve the larger relation of their Ass. Marches, Issues and continuation and their asset asset as the second their asset as the second the second their asset as the second their asset as the second their asset as the second the second the second their asset as the second the ance, to the times of their feuerall Monarchies, whereby a more historicall course may be carried, through a needlesse repetition of the same things anoided, which otherwise of necessitie would follow. Hec raigned in great glory fiftie fix yeeres, and was the First Saxon King that received and established the Gospell, He died the foure and twentieth day of Februarie, the yeere of Christ 616, after he had raigned 56. yeeres, and was buried at Canterbury, with this inscription vpon his Tombe:

Rex Ethelbertus hic clauditur in Poliandro, Fana pians Christo ad Christum meat absa. Meandro.

E Christ 617. assumed the Gouernment of Kent; who no sooner, saith Beds, had gotten from vider the awe of his father, but he refused to entertaine the Do- Beda hift, excles. etrine of Chrift, and so polluted himselfe with the foule sinne of fortication, as that hee married his Mother in Law, the late Wife to his owne Father: which two hainous faults gaue his fubiects both oc- of Christ. casion and impunity to returne to their formerido- Mother in Law. latry, who vnder his Father, for fauour, or for feare, had yeelded to the Lawes of the Christian Faith. But

Ethelbert the file His first wife, one Saint Wereburg.

1.Cor.5.1.

Repetition aud ded in this Hi-florie.

He married his

His Wife. His Daughter.

His Sonnes, and their issue.

Cherch, Beda hift, Angl, lib.1 rap.6.

worthip. Beda bell lib.24.8

Kent divided ato Parifine

An.Do.665 Egbert his mur-

The factro-Wil.Malmsbu

Their bodies C Popuena thete

Her religiousne Egbert his raig Beda hift; eeclef. Ang.lib.4.cap.5

An.Do.67 deth into the

the scourge of God & vengeance from Heauen wanted not to the punishment of this vnfaithfull King: for he was plagued for a feafon with often phrenfie of minde, and raging fury of an vncleane Spirit; but by
Laurence Archbilhop of Canturbury, he was at length connerted from his Idolatry and incessuous Matrimony, and being baptized, indenoured to maintaine the state of the Gospell. He married Emme, the daughter of Theodebert, King of Austrasie, now Lorragne, by whom he had iffue a Daughter named Enfwith, who died a Virgin at Fulkestone, a Religious House in Kent of her Fathers foundation; and two Sonnes, whereof Ermenred the elder died before his Father, and left issue Dompnena, who was married to a Mercian Prince; Ermenberg that died a vailed Virgin, Ermengith a mention; Ethelred and Ethelbert, both murthered by their Cosin-german, King Egbert. His younger Sonne was Ercombert that succeeded him in the Kingdome. This Edbald built a Chapell within the Monasterie of Saint Peter and Paul at Canturbury, in honour of Mary the bleffed Mother of God, endowing that Church with sufficient maintenance; wherein, after the continuance of twentyfoure yeeres raigne, he was buried neere to King Ethelbert his Father, Anno

E Recombert, the Son of Edbald by Emme his Wife, succeeded his Father in the Kingdome of Kent in the yeere of grace 641. He was a vertuous, religious, and Christian King: for the Temples of the Hea-then Idols he suppressed, and commanded the fall of Lent to bee observed. His Wife was Sexburg, the daughter of Anna King of the East-Angles, by whom he had issue Egbert and Lothair, both Kings of Kent after him; Ermenhild, Wife to Wolfere King of Mercia, and Erkengode a professed Nunne in the Monastery of Saint Brigets in France; where the died, and was interred in the Church of Saint Stephen. In his daies the flate of the Church growing to a well letled forme of gouernment, the Prouince of Kent was divided into Parishes by Honorius the Archbishop, as restific the Records of Christ-Church in Canturbury. This King having raigned twenty foure yeeres and odde mo-neths, died in the yeere of our Lord 664. Egbert, the clder Sonne of King Ercombert, in the

nonage of his yong Nephewes, Ethelred and Ethel-bert, (the sonnes of his Vncle Ermenred) obtained the Rule of Kent, and had not their murther much blemished his peaceable Gougrnment, hee might well haue held place with the worthieft of those Kings; but thirsting after an absolute soueraigntic, and searing left his owne power should dimmish by their growths and rightfull successions, he set his mind on that blondy, traiterous, and vnnaturall attempt, and with the assistance of one Thurne, found fit place and opportunitie to worke that diuellish designe, casting their bodies into a River, that so their Murthers night not be knowne. But God (faith Malmesbury) that fearcheth the heart, reneiled the act, by casting vp their bodies on the shore, and to the open view of the next Inhabitants, who with great reuerence there buried them, and built a small Chapel ouer their Monument, whose bones afterwards were remoued, and new interred in the Abby of Ramseyin Hantshire. The Lady Dompnens their Sifter, and next Heire to the Crowne, that was married to Merwald, a Prince of Well-Mercia, and borne him foure Children, founded the Abbey of Miniter in Kem: Wherein, faith Store, the became the first Abbesse her selfe, and Mildrith her daughter succeeded her therein, faith Capprane. This King in great quietnesse raigned nine yecres, and died in the yecre of grace 673: in the month of Iuly: leauing issue Edrik and Wigtred, both Kings of Kent, fucceeding after Lothaire.

Othaire the brother of Egbert, by flrong handobtained the gouernment of Kent. For notwithftanding Egbert left issue Edrik and Wigtred, (asis faid) yet Lothaire taking the advantage of their minoritics, and the example of his brothers intrusions, made himselfe King against his, as he had done against the

Sonnes of Ermenred, but did not inioy the same with the like peace as he had done. For not onely Ethelred the Mercian warred strongly against him, but also Edrik, by the assistance of the South-Saxons cotinually fought to recouer his right, whereby the peace of the Kentifb was much molested : and lastly, in a bloudy battell was Lothaire shot thorow with a dart, whereof he died, under his Chirurgeons hand, the fixth day of February, in the yeere of Christ 685. after hee had Beda bis. Ecolof. raigned eleuen yeeres and seuen moneths. The punishment of the Murther committed by his brother His signe. Egbert, was on him repaied, faith Malmsbury, who derided and made iefts at the laments for young Ethelred and Ethelbert, that were by the people held and accounted Martyrs. His body was buried with his Predecessors, Kings of Kent, in the Monastery of S. Peter and Paul in Canturbury, Anno 685.

E Drik, the Sonne of King Egbert, having flaine his Vncle Lothaire in battell, succeeded him in the Kingdome of Kent, wherein he fare onely two yeeres, Beda bath Angl. and those in continuall warres with his subjects; in the 4 capacitation which civill broiles lastly her was staine leaving the which civill broiles laftly hee was flaine, leaving the Kentifb Kingdome so torne with diffensions, that it became a pray to many Viurpers, and gaue occasion to Ceadwalla the West-Saxon, to seeke the annexion the regiration of the residual time regiration. On tecke the annexion thereoft on his owne Kingdome, who with his brother Mollo entred Kent, and with fire and fword made wafte where they came. To meet the fe, the Kentified. sembled, and getting the advantage, burned Mollo to death: in whose renenge Ceadwalla persisted, and wadesath. fted the most part of that Prouince before he departed: fo that after for fix yeeres continuance no King raigned in Kent, but the Country lay exposed to the yrannies of oppressors. VV Igtred or Withred, seven yeeres after the death

of his Brother, tooke you him the gouern-ment of Kent, which hee purchased with the good opinion that his subjects conceined, and with a great fumme of money paid to King Inas for his peace. He entred his Kingdome the yeere of Mans Redemption 602 the elegant of which was a support of the elegant of tion 693. the eleventh of November, and two hundred and fine yeeres, after the death of Hengift the first Saxon. With him raigned one Swebharde, as Beda declareth: but without mention from whom, or vpon what occasion. He founded the Priorie of S. Martin at Dower, and behaued himselfe worthily both in Warre the Church.

Beda His. Bedles.

Beda His. Bedles. and Peace: his raigne was thirty yeeres; thirty three, faith Beda; and death in Anno 725. leaving iffue Edbert, Ethelbert, and Alrick, all three succeeding successing luces finely in the Kingdome. finely in the Kingdome.

Gert, the first Sonne of Withred, succeeded his Father in his Kingdome, vertues, & valours, whereby a peaceable gouernment is allotted him by all Writers of these affaires, for the continuance of twentie Edberta vertuon three yeeres, without relation of any notable accident peculiar to himfelfe and Kingdome: besides the appearances of two fearfull Comets, in Anno 729. and fourth of his raignesthe one ariling immediately before the Sunne in the morning, and the other thewing his fierie beames presently vpon the Sunnes set, both of them striking their gleames into the North, and by West, foreshewing (it may be) the scourge and desolation that the Pagans intended, who were at that instant entred into France and Spaine.

E Thelbert, the second Sonne of King Withred, and Brother to the last King Edbert, began his Raigne ouer the Kingdome of Kent, the yeere of Mans Saluation 749. and raigned without any memorable act raigne either of his, or of his Kingdomes affaires, the space of eleuen yeeres, leaving this life in Anno 759. and His death. was buried, say some, in the Monastery of Peter and Paul in Canturbury, without iffue of his body to succeed him: howbeit the Annales of Canturbury affirms him to bee buried at Reculuers, in the Ile of Tanet, whose Monument is showed at the upper end of the South He in the Church, and is mounted with two Spires, if there be not a miftaking of him for Ethilbert his Succeffor.

A Lrick, the third Sonne of King Withred, by the

Matt. Westming.

An.Do.686.

An Do.693 Wigired his meanes of ag-

An.Do.726.

Twoblazing

An.Do.749.

THE KINGS OF KENT.

Chap.5. Alrie the last of

death of his brother Ethelbert, obtained the kingdome of Kent, the yeere of Christs Incarnation 760. no other glory attending his affaires (faith Malmesbury) besides his vnfortunate fight at Otteford against Off King of the Mercians, wherein it feemed fome honor (though with his ouerthrow) to withstand so puiffant and impugnable an enemie. Hee is the last King of Kent that held the scepter in a lineall succession: the rest that followed, both got and enioied it by tyranny and vsurpation. This King is said to raigne thirtie

foure yeeres, and to die in the yeere of grace, seuen hundred ninety three.

Tathilbert, furnamed Pren, vsurped the Title and L'Authoritie ouer the Kentish Dominions, when that Province was fore oppressed with the invasion of the Mercian Kenulfe, whose warres against Kent, by succession from offs, were continued with such rigour and valour, that the Countrey lay desolate where hee had beene, and the people diffress whither he came. This Pren, Kenusse tooke prisoner, and lead away with him into Mercia: but at the dedicatio of a Church that had then founded at Wineheambe, in prefence of ten Dukes and thirteene Biflops, he releafed him at the High Altar, without either intreatie or ransome of redemption. The King returning agains into Kent, could not there bee received, his place either being supplied by another, or himselfe so disliked, as not worthy any longer to raigne : and having had experiēce of the worlds mutabilities, is left againe to his priuate fortunes, from whence hee had stepped, hauing | His raignee

held his estate but for three yeeres continuance. Devine and control three years continuance.

Cythed, faith Malmeibury, was made King of Kent
by Kenulfe King of Mercia, when hee had onercome and caprinated Ethelbert: notwithflanding hee is accounted for an V furper, and bare the title of King His raigne. the tearme of eight yeeres, without any other act worthy of remembrance, inheriting his predecessors euill happe and calamitie, through factions and ciuill dif-

Baldred, after the death of this Cuthred, tooke vp-on him the princely dignitie of Kem, about the yeere of Christs Natinitie 805. But now the heavenlie prouidence determining to bring againe together that which the Saxons had divided, raifed from exile little Egbert, to make him the Great Monarch of the Englishmen. His first wars were against Bernulfe King of the Englishmen of Mercia, and his second against this Baldred, King of the Englishmen. Kent, whom in Battle he vanquished, and forced him out of his Kingdome, after he had fate on that prince lie Throne the space of eighteene yeeres. This Baldred is faid to have fled ouer Thames, and to leave Kent to the will of his Conquerour, whither againe he neuer returned, neither yet was heard of after his ouerthrow. This Kingdome then that was erected by Hengist, the yeere of mans happinesse 455. continued her gouernment 372. and ended her glorie in the yeere 827. being made a Prouince vato the West-

An.Do.797.

An.Do.801



SOVTH SAXONS KINGDOME, THE CIRCUIT AND CONTINU. ANCE, THEIR KINGS, SVCCESSI-ONS, ISSVES AND RAIGNES.



CHAPTER VI.

An.D. 488.



HE Kingdome of the South-Saxons, containing the Countries of Suffex and Surrey, had on the East fide Kent ; on the South, the Sea and Ile of Wight ; vpon the West, Hant-shire, and the North fide inuerged with the riuer Thames, This King-

dome was erected by Ella a Saxon-Captaine, that in the fecond yeere of Hengists entrance, as some say, brough a supply of his Saxons into Britaine, with whom came his three sonnes, Kymen, Plenching, and Cissa, these landing at a place which from Kymen was afterwards called Kymenifbore, and discomfitting the Inhabitants. that made reliftance, became himfelfe King of those Southerne parts. But doubtleffe there are many opimons of this mans first entrance and new erected eftate : for some (as M. Sauile in his Table) set it in the second yeere of Hengists first arrivall, Anno 452.

Others in the fecond of Aurelius, and no leffe then thirty yeeres after that, Anno 482. Harrison will haue it forty three yeeres after the Saxons first entrance, and fourth yeere after King Hengist his death, Anno 492. And M.Ferrers in his Succession of the English Monarkes, placeth it in the three and twentieth yeere of King Hengifts Kingdome, and in the fifth af-ter his owne arrivall, the yeere of our Redemption 488. Of fuch vncertaintie is the beginning of this South-Saxons Kingdome, whose Continuance and Suc-ressions are nothing cleerer; insomuch that Malmesburie making seueral Chapters vpon the other six,omit-teth only this of the South-Saxons: and therefore as wee finde them, let vs have leave to relate them, and for the present to leave Ella as hee was King, till wee come to a fit place where more shall be spoken of him as he was Monarch; whose raigne is set by Stom to bee thirty fix yeeres , by Sir Hemy Sauile, twenty foure: and by M. Henry Ferrers, thirty two, and to have died in the yeere \$14. [Iffa the third and youngest some of King Ella,

Ella his raigns

2.

Ciffiets Raigne.

An,Do.595

iber Hifterialls Beda,lib.4.ca, 12

Elds the wife of

An.Do.5 24. then onely liuing at his fathers death, succeeded him in the kingdoome of the South-Saxons, (leaving the Monarchie to Cher dike king of the West-Saxons, who had planted his kingdome betweene him and the Britaines, having taken the charge of warre against them, for maintenance whereof, Ciffa yeelded him a yeerely contribution) and liuing himselfe in long rest and peace, founded Chiehester and Chiehery, the one a Citic for refort of his people, the other a place of re-pole for himselfe; which last he fortified about with a strong Trench, for a further defense against all dangers. Of any other his actions, little is recorded by Writers: onely in this they concurre, that hee was a man of great age and small acts, some affirming that

that no great age and immuners, some attenting that heer raigned the space of seventy six yeeres.

Dispath (by some called Eiselposs and Atherwood) fucceeded King Cissa in the kingdome of the South-Saxons, and was the first Christian of that Nation, converted by Bilbap Wilfride, as some conceive out of Beda: yet Beda saith expressy, that the King was baptized before Wilfrides comming. And the History of S. Swithune faith, it was done by S. Berinus, Bifhop of Dorchester, who usually preaching the Gospell in the king-dome of the Mercians, in the Citie of Oxenford, and predome of the Mercisso, in the Citical Occupied, and pri-ference plumphens King of America, in hapsed that King of Mercinold, then a Legan, was profest, who by the indu-num of p alphens, and influentiation of Bernium, received at the laster of Bayrillow, whom alf Walphens received at the Font for the Godforms, and in give of their adoption game with him true Provinces, to be convected to hely forms ling. done, that is to fay, the Ile of Wight, and the Promine of As amures in liewelf of England; at which time also Beri-nue by King Athelwolds permission, baptized the chiefe. Dukes and Nobles of that Prominee. His Queene Ebba was baptized in her owne Ile, the Pronince of the Viccians, being the daughter of Eanfride, who was brother to Eanberes, and both of them Christians. But

it is generally held, that King Edilwach gaue vnto Wil-fride the Peninsula (as the Latines speake) of Scoleson, now Selfee in the West, with the demaynes of eightie feuen Tenements, wherein he built the Monafteric that bare the same name, and was his owne Episcopall Sea. Against this Editwach, Ceadwald Evaliant young Cap. 15. Prince, of the Bloud-royall of the well-Saxons, being banished his Countrey, making head with the assi-stance of friends and followers, entred his Territories with an impetuous incursion, and slew the King as he made resistance, when hee had raigned twentie fine yeeres: in whose raigne and Countrey raged such an death. extreme Famine, that both men and women in great flockes and companies cast themselves from the Rockes into the Sea.

(4) Berthun and Authun, two Dukes of the South-Saxons, maintained the Warres and defence of their Country against Ceadwald, and by manly valour forced him to retire. These Captaines betwixt them held the dominion of that Prouince, vntill fuch time as Ceadwald had gotten the Kingdome of the West-Saxons; who bearing in mind the remembrance of his former proceedings, and thinking to inlarge his owne Kingdome with the subsection of the South-Sakons, entred againe that Prouince, and in Battell flew Duke Berthun, harrying the Country milerably before him. Which State, vnable to withfland the West-Saxons puissance, was by Ine, the next King succeeding, made a subjected Province, their Government thence forward resting vnder his Successors, after it had flood one hundred and thirteene yeeres; and ended in the yeere of Christ 601, by ordinary computation. But who foeuer shall compare the times of the forefaid Kings, Wulpherus and Athelwold together, will eafily finde, that it is not eafie to finde the certaine concurrence of times, in affaires so clouded in obsen ritie, and so farre remote from our present times.

THE KINGDOME OF THE VVEST-SAXONS, THE CIRCUIT THEREOF, AND SUCCESSION OF THEIR KINGS

VNTO EGBERT; WITH THEIR ISSVES AND RAIGNES.



CHAPTER VII.

ers the first the



He Kingdome of the Well-Saxons, though in time later then the two former. yet in circuit and fame furmounted them both; whose Monarch was the Maull that first brake the Scepters of the other fix Kingdoms in funder, and

made one Crowne of these their severall Diadems, more glorious then they

all, and that first worne vpon Egbert the West-Saxons heads, and the Scepter swaied in his Imperiall hand, until whose time and person wee will continue the fuccession of their Kings, beginning with Cherdik that first made it a Kingdome, and briefly shew their Acts. whileft it so stood in the Saxons Heptarchie.

"His Cherdik is faid to have brought a second supply of Saxons forces into Britaine, in the yeere of our Lord 495. and fifth of the Monarchy of King Cherdle ented into Britains. Ella: his landing being at a place on that occasion cal-led Chederik-shore, who with his sonne Kewik, was en-

An.Do.405

Chap.7. countred by the Britaines, vnder the conduct of Natanleed a British Prince, whose Country was then cal led after his name; whom he flew in Battell, with fine thousand more of his Britaines: the fortune of which field gaue resolutions and hopes of better successe; it was fought neere vnto a Brooke vpon that euent

the government whereof was by him given to Staffe and Withgar his Nephewes, which later flew the Bri taines there inhabiting, and named the place of his victory Withgarbirg, affuming the name of King, and was buried at his Citie Withgar, in the same Ile. About feuen yeeres after Cherdiks entrance, Portha Saxon with his two Sonnes, Megla and Beda, landed in the West, at the place from him called Portesmouth, whose aid with Kent and Suffex, assisted Cherdik in his Conquefts. His raigne is fet to be thirty three yeeres; and

his death in the yeere of grace five hundred thirtie

five : having had two fonnes, Kenrik and Chelwolf, the

one of which died before his Father; and the other

fucceeded him in his Kingdome, Chelwolf had iffue

Cuthgils, whose sonne was Kenfridd, and his sonne

Kenly, the Father of King Eskwin, who was the Succeffor of King Kenwalk, and predeceffor of King Kent-

win, in the Kingdome of the West-Saxons.

The circult of

An.Do. 535

Kewię his battels,

THE VVEST SAXONS KINGS.

Lord 585, and the fine and twentieth of his fathers raigne. Cuthwin his younger brother furnised his father, but succeeded not in his Kingdome, being then (by reason of his young yeeres) vnable to recouer his right. He had two fonnes, Kenbald and Cuth, the latter of which was father to Chelwald, whose fon called Cherdiks-ford, now by contraction Chard-ford. Kenred had iffue, Ine the eleventh King of the West-Heereupon establishing his new erected Kingdome, Saxons, and Ingils his brother, whose some was Eoppa (which contained Cornwal, Deuonfbire, Dorfetfbire, Sothe father of Eafa, whose sonne was Alkenmud, the mer (etfbire, Wiltfbire, Hantfbire, and Barkfbire,) he infather of Egbert the eighteenth King of the Welf-Saxlarged the same with the conquest of the Ile of wight, ons, who reduced the Saxons divided Heptarchie into an absolute Monarchie, CEarlik the fonne of Cuthwolfe, who was brother to this last King, succeeded in the kingdome by the ejection of his Vncle, and was the fourth King of the wip.

Weft-Saxons. He began his raigne in the yeere of our Redemption 592 and continued it the terme of fix yeeres, without any memorable at by him archieued besides his Treason spoken of before.

Helwolfe the fonne of Cath, the fonne of Kenrik, and Cofen-german to Cearlik the preceding King, An.Do.598. began his raigne ouer the Well-Saxons, the yeere 598 Degan instraigne other the Prefix Assemblie vere 3 you on whole first entrance, this province of the West-Saxons was invaded both by the Britaines, and also by the Stots and Picts: and the East-Angles likewise molefted his peace, under the conduct of Redundad at that time Monarch of the Englishmen. But hee wading thorow these troubles; harried the Province of the South-Saxons with invalions and calamities, in the profecution whereof he died, leaving the purfuit of his warres and poffession of his kingdome to Kingils his Nephew, that immediately succeeded him, after

Kenrik, the eldeft Sonne of King Cherdik, having formerly made proofe of his prowesse in the affistance of his Father, was after his death also verie fortunate in obtaining two victories ouer the Bri-taines; the one at Searesberige, and the other at Beranbrig; whose raigne beginning Anno 524, continued ongs, whose targue beginning Anno 534, constitued twenty fix yeers ending in the yeers of our Redemp-tion, flue hundred fixty. He had iffue three Sonnes, of which Cheaulin the eldeft (icceeded him in his king-dome; Cuthyoffe the fecond afsilted his Brother in his Warres, and was partaker with him of his victories. who died Anno 672. leauing iffue one onely Sonne named Chell, or Cearlike, who proued nothing so ver-tuous and dutifull a subject as his Father had beene: for he rose in rebellion against his Vncle, and by ftrong hand expelled him his kingdome.

Cearlife the fon of Cushwelfe, re-belieth against his Vocio. The third Sonne of King Kenrik was Cuth, famous in his iffue, though mentionleffe for action in him-felfe; for hee had three fonnes, of which Chelwolf the eldeft, was King of the Weft Saxons (as shalbe declared) Chell the second, was father to Kingils the fixt (and field chrillian) King of the Welf Saxons, and Grandfa-ther to Kenwall and Kenwin, the fements and ninth Kings of that Kingdome: and Cheed the vongelt, was father of Kenbert, Grandfather to Chedwall the most renowned King of the Well Saxons; of whom we are prefentlie to speake, and of them all in the succession of the English Saxons Monarchs: and now to returne a gaine to the iffue of King Kenrik.

CHeaulin his first sonne, entred vpon the gouerne ment ouer the West-Saxons Anno 561, and euer An Do. 161. hearlis the time at the first began to disturbe the quiet peace of his neighbour Prouinces, taking advantage at the young vecres of Ethelbert, who was made King of Kent in the same yeere that Cheanlin was, whom he discomfited, and flew his two Captaines, Duke oflane and Duke Cnebba, at " Wibbandune, as we have faid. Other Victories he obtained ouer the Britaines, both at Bedford, Deorham, Glocester, Cirencester, and Bathancester But the fortunes of warres being alwaies variable, at Querthrowne length his fucceffe altered, and at VV annes ditche in VViltshire he was ouerthrowne, and dispossessed of his kingdome by Cealrik his brother Cuthwolfs fonne

when he had raigned thirty three yeeres. Hee had it His raigne. His iffue, cut fue, Cuth and Cuthwin: the former ferued valiantly in the warres vnder his father at Wimbledon in Surrey, Cath a valuant where King Ethelbert of Kent was chaled, and his fouldiers flaine: and with the like valour and victorie her fought at Fethanleygh against the Britaines, notwithnis Nepnew, that ininequately neceeved nim, since he had raigned the space of fourteen eyeres.

I ragist the Sonne of Chel, who was Brotherto King Chelmosse, sinceeding his Vacle in the kingdome of the FY of Saxons, in the yeere six hundred and An.Do.6t L twelve, in his third yeere affociated vnto him in his Gouernment Quinthelme his Sonne, who ioyntly managed the Welf-Saxoni affaires both of warre and adoises. peace. And fighting with victorie against the Bri- wil. Melandary. aines at Beandane, they there flew of them one thoufand forty fix persons, and after that against Penda Their vie King of Mercia, neere vnto Cirencefler, about the fift ouer

yeere of his raigne, where lastly they came to a con-clusion of peace. This King at the preaching of Beclution of peace. This King at the preaching of Be-trinus(an Italias Disine, afterward reputed for a Suisy) and to Christia-and by the perforations of Of polar dich em of Christian and by the perforations of States of the Christian in the San is Lang. by the martige of Kinefory his day, but the San is Lang. by the martige of Kinefory his day, but the San is Lang. by the martige of the San become the Benefit of the San is the the Font) received the Word of Life, and became the first Christian King of all the West-Saxons; in witnesses whereof, he gaue the City Dorehester, neere vnto 0x-ford, to his Conuerter, who therein erected his Episcopall Sea. He raigned the space of thirty one vecres fome fay but feiten and twenty, and had iffue (befides Quinebelinus, who raisened with him, and died before him) Kerwin and Kerwald, that succeeded him; and Kineburg his Daughter married to Ofwald, as is faid. Quinchelmus had a Sonne named Cuthred, that was baptized with his Father at Dorchefter, and is faid by Stowe, to have raigned after the death of Kingils: but I take it rather to be Kenwen, whom some suppose to be his Fathers Affociate the terme of foure yeeres, but neuer sole King himselse.

Z Enwald, whom Beda calleth Senwaleh, fucceded his Father Kingils in the kingdome of the Well-Sax- An.Do.642 ans. His beginnings by Matthew of PV eliminites are baddings with the worft, and his endings with the best of those Kings. At his first entrance he fought, the chastian with victorie against the Britaines at Pennum, whereof faith. he became most insolent, and refused not onely to receine the Christian Faith, but also put from him his lawfull wife Sexburg, the lister of Penda King of Merria, whereby hee became hatefull to his owne Subiects, and fore affaulted by the Mercian King, who followed the reuenge so farre, that he forced Kenwald out of his kingdome, who being driven to extremity, fought fuccour at the mercie of Anna the Christian

Keene old was oution.
VVil. Melmels

He chierrained, and at fait (wonne to the Chrittian Faith) was apprized by Biffor Fails, whereupon hee did recall his wife, according to prefeript of Chriftianitie, and recoursed agains his former Maieltie, which he much aduanced by his pious workes. He founded ne much advanced by his pious workes. He tounded the Cathedrall of Wincheffer, and the Abby of Malmef-burie, and when he had raigned thirty one yeeres, gaue place vnto nature in the yeere 673, leauing no iffue of His raigne and death, Vita Alel, his body to succeede him : whereupon Segburg his His Wife goues neth the kingwife tooke vpon her the gouernment of the West-Sa-xons, the same yeere that Lothair was made King of An.Do.674. Kent, shee being a woman of great spirit and vinder-standing, and sufficiently worthy to haue managed the Kingdome, had she not beene preuented by death, or rather (as some write) by a religious deuotion, that the affaires of this present life might not hinder her

Nunne, and is elected Abbest

An.Do.675 Hear.Humingto His battell with VV alfere. He died with

An.Do,677

An.Do.686 Angl. lib.4.ca. 15

His descent.

His warres a

His you to Go The left of the

An empleating

King of the East-Angles, where he was both courteouslic entertained, and at last (wonne to the Christian zealous meditations of the future, in defire whereof, the abandoned her Regencie, and built a house of deuotion in the Ile of Shepey, wherein her selfe became a Vowesse, and afterward was elected the Abbesse of

Skwin after the departure of Queene Segburg, succeeded in the kingdome of the West-Saxens. Hee was the sonne of Kensy, the sonne of Kensy, the sonne of Cuthgils, the sonne of Chelwolfe, the sonne of Cherdik, the first King of that Province : his raigne lasted but two yeeres, in which time he fought a great Bat-Dut two yeeres, in which time to rought a great bat-tle with Wuffer King of the Mercians, at the place then called Bidanheaford, and wherein many of the Saxons on both fides perished leaning neither issue to fucceede him, nor other matters to be spoken of him, though (as it seemeth) hee had dispossessed Kenwin, who had more right to the Crowne then himselse; or (as Beda and Malmesbury auerre) he raigned with him the space of two yeeres, and Kemuin alone for seven

Z Emwin the brother of Renwald, and sonne to King Kingils, in the yeere 677, became the ninth King of the West-Saxons, and raigned the space of nine yeeres. Hee was a great (courge wnto the weake and ouer-borne Britaines, making Conquets of their pofelsions, and forcing them cuento the Sea-shoare, being a people allotted wnto miferie, and by these firangers pursued so vehemently, that lastly they were dri-uen into the West-Angle of this Iland, and their lines defended and maintained among those waste Mountaines and hard Rockes, which therein were more propitious and gentle then the stonie hearts of their Oppressors.

Cadyadia a valiant young man, and of the bloud-Royall of the Geniffes, faith Beds, being banished from his Country through the enuie of others, who maligned him only for his vertues and worthiness, succeeded Kompits his kinsman in the kingdome of the West-Saxons, and with greater glory raigned then any other in that Prouince before him had done. He was the Sonne of Kenbert, whose Father was Ched, the second Sonne of Cuth; and Cuth was the third Sonne of Kenrik, who was the eldeft Sonne of Cherdik, that laid the first stone of this kingdomes soundation. His first brunt of furie was against Editoreh, King of the South-Saxons, whom in field he flew : and in another battell Berthun, that had made himselfe King of that State. The Ile of Wight also he almost quite wasted and though he were vubaptized, yet did hee binde him-felfe by vow to give the fourth part of the spoile vnto lone by Yow to gue the tourn pair to the pone vine Gods vie, and performed it accordingly vino Bilhop Wilfrid, who with Benevine and Hildia conucred the people from their Idolatrous superfittion, vinto the true seruice of Christ, it beeing the last part of the Saxons possessions that was turned from their Pagan manners. Of which his specious denotion, Malmesburie giucth this cenfure : although wee praife his affestion, (faith hee) yet allow wee not the example; for it is written, that who so offereth unto God the goods of the It is written, ton woo jo operate would can be gooded the poors, dood as it were farifice the forme in the fight of the Father. Kentallo with greenous warres her wice a flicted, and therein spilt so much Christian blood, that

as much lamented in repentance whereof, after hee had raigned in great floutnes the space of two yeeres, in a zealous denotion went to Rome, where of Pope, Sergius he was baptized vpon Easter Euen (faith Beda, the yeere of our Redemption 689.) by the name of Peter, and wearing as yet the white Robes of innocencie, put (as the rite then was) vpon him at his lauer of Baptifine, fell ficke, and the twentieth day of Hisdeath. the of Baptijme, ten nicke, and the twentieth day of April following died, having had neither wife nor childe that we read of. He was buried in Saint Peters Church in Rome, under a faire Monument, with this inscription thereon engraven : Heere Cedwall, otherwife named Peter, King of the Well-Saxons, is buried, who Anglitic, s.ca.7. died the twentieth of Aprill, in the second Indiction, and lived thirty yeeres or thereabouts, when that noble and missly frince infinite was Emperous of Rome, and had raigned four eyeeres in the Empire, and sergius a true pa-terne of the Apolles, had fate two yeeres in Peters Seat. What hath beene written of this Ceadwall, King of the West-Saxons, by Beda the Saxon and his followers, the projessacous, by beat the saxon and his tonowers, hath beene attributed to Cadwalader King of the Britaines, by Geffrey of Monmouth the Britaine, John Caftor, and More, affirming him to be the same man, and that vpon the admonition of an Angell hee went to Rome, vpon the aumonition of an Angeunce went to home, tooke penance of Pope Sergius, there died in the twelfth Katends of May, and was there buried with Booke of S. Attwelfth Katends of May, and was there duried with Booke of S. Mitthe lame Epitaph, and after the lame manner. But the lame, part, capet, Writer of the Hisforie of Cambria, of Cadwaladers 80- D. Fewel Hilbory Writer or the *issurate* of *Cambria*, of *Cambaladers* going to *Rome*, and the other appendances, feemeth to be doubtfull, and faith that it differed from the affertion of Bernardus Guidonius, the neercnesse of the names being the very cause of the like relations, and confidently affirmeth that it was Edwall the sonne of Cadwalader, who in such denotion went to Rome, and there made such are ligious end, about the yeere of our Lord 720. Ne, whom Beda calles Hun, others Ina (the sonne of

Kenred, the sonne of Cuth, the sonne of Cuthwin, the An.Do.688. Remed, the sonne of Cutte, the sonne of Chekrin the third King of the West-Saxons, Flora, Vingers, and heethe sonne of Jackis clean. the sone of Kenrik the second, and heethe sone of Cherdik the sirst King in that Province) after Cend-Cherate in the lang in that Frounce; after Cena-wals departure to Rome, tooke you him the govern-ment of that Kingdome, which her emanaged with continuall Victories the terme of thirty eight yeeres. His first attempts were against the Kentifb-Saxons, in reuenge of his colen Molloes death, whose wrath Withred pacified by the paiment of thirty thousand three pacined by the paintent of thirty thousand Markes, faith William of Malmethern. In the yeere of Grace feuen hundred and eight, and twenty one of his owne raigne (as Matthew of Wellminfter hath obnis owner raugne (as a sattorus of re-gimmipter natti ob-ferrued) he fought with the Britaines vinder their Cap-taine Gerent, whom he victorioully fishedued: and in his twenty fixth yeere, against Chestred King of Merhis twenty lixen yeare, against e prove a King of over-eia, with doubtfull victorie, at the place then called wodenesbury and in his thirty fixth, inuaded the South-Saxons with fuch fucceffe, that hee reduced the same the same Kingdome into a Province, and annexed it in Subjection Kingdome into a Prounce, and annexed it in induction to the Web-Scarus; and manifeling his good defires both to the administration of suffer, and the advancement of Pinine Pictic, he ordained many good Lawes like the continued for the amendment of manners in his people, which

tor the amendment of manners on ms people, which are yet extain written in the Saxon Tongue, and translated into Latine by the learned M. William Lambort.

He built at web a Colleage dedicated vnto God, and Remiph, King of the West-Saxon made an Epifopall
Sea. The renowned - Abbey of Glassenire most latelie hee built to the honour of Christ, Peter and Paul (whereof Malmesburie maketh mention in his booke of Glastenburies Antiquities) in a fennie place seque-fired fro the road way, where formerly had stood the old Cell of I of eph of Aremathea, and that being decaied Deuy Bishop of S. Danids had thereon crected a new; which time also having ruinated, twelve men well affected in the North parts of Britaine had repaired. but now by this Ina was quite pulled downe, and aftera most sumptuous manner new built; the Cha-pell whereof hee garnished with gold and filuer, and

nature her felfe was therein offended, and hee at laft

Ine his first year

Reflored sesion Cuthred his

gaue rich ornaments thereto; as Altar, Chalice, Cenfor, Candlestickes, Bason and holie water, Bucket, Images, and Pale for the Altar, of an incredible value: for the gold thereupon bestowed, amounted to three hundred thirtie three pound waight, and the filuer to two thousand eight hundred thirty fiue pound, beside precious Gemmes, embrouched in the Celebrating Veflures. Hee instituted also a certaine yeerely paiment to the See of Rome, entoining enery one of his subjects that possessed in his house of one kinde of goods to that policited in his notice of one kinde or goods to the value of twenty pence, that he should pay a penny to the Pope yeerely ypon Lammas day: which at first was contributed under the name of The Kings Almes, but afterwards was called and challenged by the name but afterwards was called and challenged by the name of Peter-pene. At length, by the infligation and earneft perivation of Eitelburg his Zaean, he renounced the glittering glorie of his prefent and princely efface, wherein her had in great profiperite raigned thirty fruen yeers and odde moneths; and profedency fing a voluntarie pouertie, (lo great was the zeale, and fo little the knowledge of that age) went to Rome. where in the habit of a Religious Man he ended his life in poore estate; and Ethelburga his wife became a vailed Nume, and was made Abbesse of Barking neere London, wherein she ended her life. The brethren of this Inas, were Kenten, whose sonne was Aldelme Abbat of Malmesbury and Bishop of Sherborne, and Ingils Date of Memorious and District the first Sexen Mo-narch of the whole lland: and his fifter Cuthburg and rick into Northumberland, such a discreasing Office her King and husband, and in the habit of a Nume crided her daies at Winburne in the Countie of Dorfet.

den ner danes at windbarne in the Countrie of Dorjet.

L'Held of the kinfman of King Ind. (whom he ordained his fucceffour at his departure to Rome) was the fonne of Ofwald, and he of Ethelbald the fonne of Kenhald, the brother of Cath, and both of them the An.Do.726. fonnes of Cuthwin, the fonne of Cheaulin, the fonne of King Kenrik, the fonne of Cherdik, the first West-Saxon King. He began his raigne the fame yeere that King Edbert did his ouer the Kingdome of Kem, and with him was terrified by the dreadfull appearance of two Blazing Starres: of whose Acks, no other mention is recorded, fauing that at his entrance into regall estate, Ofwald a Norman of the West-Saxons bloud, emulated his glorie, and troubled the quiet peace of his prosperous beginning: but not able to winne fortune to fauour his proceedings, he quite abandoned his natiue Country, and so left *Ethelard* to rule the Kingdome in peace, who therein quietly raigned the space of foureteene yeeres, without any mention of wife or iffue.

Crthred, cosen to King Ethelard, succeeded him in this Dominions, and was much disquieted by Edilbald King of Mercia, both by open warre and privile practifes but these two Kings commings on a conclusion of peace, ioined both their Powers against the ouer-borne *Britains*, and in a bloudy battle gaue them a great ouer-throw. In this time, faith *Beda*, the bodies of the dead were permitted to bee buried within the walles of their Cities, which thing before was not wants of their cores, which thing perore was not lawfull, but their corps were interred without in, the Fields; many of whole Tombesas yet are witneffes to vs, that daily finde them in the digging of the grounds adioning, and referue them for fight, orother necessarie vsc. The peace of this King was molested by his owne subject, an Earle named Adelme, who boldly encoun-

Adelme a rebel

His Wife.

farres. The continu-ance of his

An.Do:740

(bap.7.

tred his Soueraigne in Battle, and fought it our even to the point of victorie; but failing thereof, and forced to flie, his life was pardoned. And hee made Generall against the Mercian Edilbald, Cuthreds ancient foe, wherein by his valiant prowesse, with the flight and discomfiture of the Enemie, hee made a worthie a-mends for guerdon of his life, and was euer after held in great fauour and honour. This King raigned in great fame and victories the space of fourteene yeers, and died in the yeere of our Lords Passion 753. Hee had iffue one onely fon, whose name was Kemika valiant young Prince, who in the ninth yeere of his Fathers raigne was feditiously slaine in his Armie, for

bearing himfelfe (as it may feeme) ouer-rigorous to-wards the Souldiers.

Sigebert obtaining the Principalitie of the Well-Sa-State of the remaining time of the replace of the replace of the remaining time of the remaining time of the replace of the remaining time of the replace of ovails, sugarous our all honour or fame. His parentage is oblcure and value ovails honour or fame. His parentage is oblcure and value ovails ovails of the parentage is obligated and the parentage is obliga ded exactions and cruentes vpon in sources, returns afide all lawes and rules of true pietie: from which vi-cious life, when hee was louingly admonifhed by his most faithfull Counsellor a worthy Earle called Cum-bra, so farre was his minde from abandoning his impious courses, as that he caused this Noble Personage to be cruelly flaine; whereupon the reft of the Peeres feeing their State and lines were enery day in danger. and the common fubicets, whose Lawes were thus vi-olated, being incensed into furie, they rebelliously rose vp in Armes against him, and would acknow ledge him no longer their Soueraigne. Sigebert, by na ture as fearefull as he was audacious vnto vice, fledde into the woods as his only lafeguard, where like a for-lorne person he wandred in the day, and in caues and dennes lodged in the night, till lastly he was met with by a Swine-heard that was feruant to Cumbra, and of him knowne to be Sigebert, was prefently flaine in re-tienge of his masters death, in the wood that was then called Andreads Wald, when hee had raigned not fully

K Enmulfe, sprung from the bloud-Royall of the Kweft Saxons, after the death of wicked Sigebert was made King of that Prouince; and appealing some unuls that were fittred for Sigebert, obtained many victories against the ouermastred Britaines: but had not the like successe against offa King of the Merciand, who at Benfington gaue him a great ouerthrow. He founded the Cathedrall Church of S. Andrewei at Wels, which afterwards was an Epifopall See, and Cathedrall in great honour raigned for the space of twenty source. yeeres; but then Fortune turning her face away from him, the rest of his raignedid not sute to that which was spent: for he giving himselfe to pleasure and se-curitie, banished Kineard, the brother of his Predecesfor Sigebert; who differabling his wrong, gane place vnto time, and occasion being offered, made his vie

thereof. For Kennulfe comming to Merton, to visit his Paramore, was there set vpon and slaine; and his body conucied and buried at Winehester, after hee had raigned twenty nine yeeres, leaning no memorial either of Wife or Children.

of Wite or Chairen.

Ribbie, ineally defeended from Cherdik the first
King of the West-Saxons, a man of a soft and quiet
disposition, succeeded Kempusse in that Principalitie, in the yeere of Christs Incarnation 784. He married in the yeere of this incurnation /04. The married Ethelburgs, the daughter of great offs the Mersian King, by whole power he expelled Egbert that ruled a Lordship in his Province vnder him, whose same in a Lordinip in its Province vnder him, whole fame in-creafing through his feares of wares, draue many iea-loufies into King Brithries head, and the more by the infligation of Ethelburg his Queene, who bearing her felfe great, because of her parentage, practified the downful and defrudion of them whom the hated, and by her suggestions this Egbert was banished on suspicion of conspiracie. It afterward chanced, that thee preparing poison to make an end of one of the Ince preparing poulon to make an ead or one or the Kings Minions, wrought thereby (though vinwitting-ly) the Kings death for he by taiting the confedion, ended his life, after hee had raigned the space of fix teene yeeres. Wherein, the fearing the instreuenge of his subjects, fled into France, & by Charles then King, was so courteously entertained, as that for her great beauty there was offered her the choice of him or his onne. But the in her youthfull and luftfull humor, choosing the sonne, was debarred from both, and thrust into a Monastery, in the habit (nor the affection of a Nunne) where not long after she abused her body by committing of adultery, and was shortly ex-pelled, and in beggerly mifery ended her life, as by ma-

An.Do.755 fcent, Haming. Hen, Haming. His victories against the Sri-

He is flaine imon Dun





Roger Housden

nie that fo faw her, we have beard it reported, faith Afferiss mine Author. For this her most hainous crime, Booke 7.

A Law again@ Affer.

will, Malmerb.

The prodigies that happened

in this Kings

whereby was procured the murther of her Husband, the Welf-Saxons ordained a Law, to the great preiudice of all their Queenes succeeding; that none of them should have either title, maiestic, or place of roialtie; which was feuerely executed for many yeeres

In the daies of this Brithrik, many prodigies appeared, and more perhaps then will be beleeved. For it is reported, that in his third yeere a shower of bloud rained from heauen, and bloudy crosses fell vpon mens garments as they walked abroad. And in his tenth yeere were seene fiery Dragons flying in the ayre. Which wonders, some tooke to be presages of Math. Wells. the miferies following, both by the Inuations of the Hear. Hunt. Pagan Danes, that in these times were first seene to arriue in this Iland, and the extreme Famine that after- in this Kings wards happened : howfoeuer, fure it is that the Hep- time, tarchy now beganne to fet in the West, and the rising Monarchy to appeare in King Egbert, whose acts and iffue shall be further rehearsed, when wee shall come to the time of his succession among the English Mo-



THE EAST-SAXONS KINGDOME THE CIRCUIT, SVCCESSIONS OF THEIR

KINGS, THEIR ISSVES, AND KING-DOMES CONTINVANCE.



CHAPTER VIII.

The fite of this

An.Do.527

Malmesh, de Geft.

Erchempise the first King of the

His delcent.

His death



He fite of the East-Saxons Kingdom, was the Country of Esex, Middlesex and part of Hartfordfhire, and the Circuit fo far as the Diocesse of London now extendeth. It was bounded on the East with the Ocean; on the South with the Thames : on the

West with the Colne; and on the North with the River Stowre. The Kings thereof claime their descent from Prince Woden, not as all the rest of the Saxon Kings, but onely by a collaterall line; and Erchenwine became the first King, which neuerthelesse he held as Feodarie to the Kings of Kent. For which cause, it seemeth that Malmsbury mentioneth him not in the Catalogue of those Kings, but maketh his sonne Sledda the first, and tenth in descent from Woden.

Enne of Bedes, the some of signifuger, the son of Sneppa, the sonne of Awpig, the sonne of Supig, the sonne of Seasoned, from whom all these Kings fetch their originall: His Kingdome began about the yeere of grace 527, and in the fifteenth of Eske the fecond King of Kent; and his raigne long, but yet without any memorable acts; dying in the yeere 586. and leaving his sonne to succeede in his place.

Ledda the fonne of Erchenwine, fucceeding in the East-Saxons Kingdome, raigned peaceablie with-An.Do. 587. out mention of any warres; for having married Ricula S/edda the fecond the daughter of Imerik King of Kent, was thereby the more fauoured of them, and feared of others; and nothing left (belides his quiet raigne) to be recorded to posterities; neither are many yeeres of successions numbred, but as they are gathered from the Computations of other princes, with whom they either li-

ued, or were linked in action. This sledds died about His death. the yeere of our Redemption 596, and left iffue by his wife Queene Ricula, Sebert, who succeeded him in the Kingdome, and Segebald his brother whose Sons Hisiffue. afterward were Kings of that Province.

Lbert the fonne of Sledda and of Queene Ricula beganne his Raigne in the yere of Christs Incarnation

ganne his Kaigne in the yere of the raigne of King
solor the time
when he began An.Do. 196 Ethelbert of Kent, his mothers brother, at that time Monarch of the English-men; who in Seberts chiefe citie London, a Princelie Mart Towne, (faith Beda) of ma- Bede Hift. Beclef. ny people ariuing thither both by sea and land; new built a Church, making it the Cathedrall of Bifbop Miletus, and so wrought with King Sebert, that hee conuerted him to Christianitie; and assisted him in that Foundation, where formerlie (fay fome) had ftood the Temple of Diana. This Church these new Converts and Saxon Kings, either new reared or inlarged for the honour and service of God, and dedicated under the name of Saint Paul : which worke Ethelbert further S. Pauls Church confirmed with fufficient maintenance, as by this his Charter is seene, containing these words : Ethelbert Rex, Deo inspirante, pro anima sua remedio, dedit Episcopo Mileto terram qua appellatur Tillingham, ad Monaste-rium sue Solatium seilicet S. Pauli. Et ego Rex Æthelbert ita firmiter concedo tibi Prafuli Mileto potestatem eius habends & possidendi, vt in perpetuum in Monsstery vtilitate permaneat, &c. And that this was the Temple of Diana, some haue further confirmed vnto vs by the incredible number of Oxe-heads there digged vp in the daies of King Edward the First, when the east-end of that Church was enlarged; which were supposed Temple of to be of those Beasts that were there facrificed to this Disms. These Kings likewise founded the in combility builts: Goddelfe Diana. I new range meeting at a place afore time the Church of S. Peter in the West of London, at a place afore time the Temple of called Thornye, where fometimes stood the Temple of Apollo, as Suleardus affirmeth; which being ouer-

His raigne, His iffue.

An.Do.661. Beda bift, Angl.

An.Do.664.

His Wife

the King of

S. Pauls Church

throwne by an Earth-quake, King Lucius new built for the celebration of Gods feruice; and that againe being decaied, those Kings restored it to a greater beautie, where Sebert, after thirteene yeeres raigne, (as some write) with Ethelgoda his Queene were buried; whose bodies in the daies of Richard the Second (faith Walfingh.) were translated from the old Church to the new, and there interred. Hee had iffue by the faid Queene, Sered, Seward, and sigebert, whose lines and deaths were as followeth.

Chap.8.

Stawe.

Rand Caff

An.Do.623

Mathwestminst. The time when

Segabers the

he began to

raigne. His fucceffor.

Beda hift. Angl. lib.g.cep,13. Sigebere has def-

Sered, Seward, and Sighert, the fonnes of King Sebert, raigned as it feemeth, together in the Kingdome of Three Kings ioyntly fway the the East-Saxons; all three wicked irreligious men, and Kingdome. Enemies to Chrideadly enemies to the Christian Profession. These confriantie,
Beda hift culef.
Aug.lib.z.cap.s.
They are put
from che Comtumeliously presuming to the Lords Table, and holy Sacrament of his Body and Bloud, were prohibited by Bishop Miletus, because they were Idolaters and unbaptized : which repulse they tooke so offensively, that they expulsed Miletus, who therupon fled into France. Miletus fled into But their impietie was not long vnrewarded: for fighting against Kingils, and Linebelinus his sonne, (Kings of the West-Saxons) were by them ouercome, and in The three Kings flaine. battle slaine about the yeere of Grace 623. as by the learned Sir Henry Sauile is calculated, whose account for these times I altogether follow.

Sigebert the little, the fonne of Seward, the fecond fonne of King Sebert, entred his raigne ouer the kingdome of the East-Saxons, the yeere of Christ 623. of whole affaires, little matter is left for vs to relate, fauing that hee hauing both a Brother and a Sonne, yet his Kingdome was fucceeded by neither, but by one Sigibert, his Cofen-German once remooued,

Sigibert, the sonne of segebald, the brother of Sebert, the sonne of King Sledda, and of Ricula his Queene, fucceeded his kinfman in the Kingdome of the East-Saxons. This Sigsbert reduced againe his Prouince vnto the embracing of the Christian Faith, being daily instigated thereunto by Ofwie King of Northumber land, and received Baptifme himselfe at the hands of Bifhop Firman, and at the place called The Wall, procured vertuous Cedda to be his assister for the plantation of the Gofpellin his Kingdome. He was murdered by two of his kinfmen, who, as Beda faith, were Brethren, no other cause mooning them, but his ouermuch lenitie and clemencie. He raigned by the forefaid account, fixteene yeeres, leaving iffue a young fonne named selved, that succeeded Seofred in that Kingdome.

Withelme fucceeded his brother in the Province of the East-Saxons, nothing being mentioned of his life or raigne, besides his Baptifine by Biflop Cedda, and that his God-father at the Font-flone was Edelwald King of the East-Angles.

Sighere, the sone of Sigebert the little, entred his raigne ouer the Kingdome of the Easth-Saxons, the yeere of our Lord 664, and was the eighth King of that Prouince, in part whereof Sebba his nephew raigned, with better commendations then Sigehere at his beginning had done; for Beda reporteth, that you a great mortalitic and plague, to appeale the wrath of his Gods, Sighere became an Apollata, and for looke the faith of Christ, wheras Sebba continued constant with those in that Prouince vnder his Jurisdiction: vet by the diligent care of Wulfere King of the Mercians, Sighere and his people were reclaimed, throwing downe the Temples and Alters erected to Idolatrie, and opening againe the Christian Churches for the Saints afsemblies, that so (saith hee) they might rather die in hope of the Refurrection, then wallow in finne, and liue in Idolatrie. His wife was Ofwith the daughter of Edelfrith, King of Northumberland, whom Capgraue maketh a Saint, and Abbeffe of Berking necre London, euen in the daies of her husband.

Ebba, the Brother of Segebert the Little, and Sonne of Seward, (as we have faid) fucceeded as fole King in the Province of the East-Saxons, and with much Wil Malmbury.

equitie and administration of Iustice raigned therein thirty yeeres: towards the end whereof, the better to prepare his mind for contemplation, he relinquifhed his Princely Robes, and put on the Habit of Religious Profession in the Monastery of S. Pauls in London; as Radulphus de Diceto, with others affirme. Wherein this penitent King luing a while in fasting His latter ends and praiers, died the yeere of Christ 693, whose body was intombed in a Coffin of Gray Marble, the Couer copped, and as yet standing in the North wall of the Sabba his Coffia Chancell of the same Church.

A miracle thereof Bedareporteth, needleffe either Eddabiff. Angl. then to be wrought, or now of vs repeated, were it the separate of muscle, not to point at the blindnes wherein euen good men were then led; and thus it is: They having prepared a Tombe-stone, to lay his body in, found it too short by the quantitie of an hands bredth, and hewing it longer, yet would not ferue: therefore they minding to bow up the knees, laid the body therein, and fuddenly it lengthned of it felfe with more then was fufficient. But furely howfoeuer this tombe was then fet on this Monkish tenter, it is now since shrunke againe in the standing, and exceeds not in measure sine foot in length. His wife (but vnnamed) hee likewife instigated to leaue the momentanic pleasures of princely State, for that which is permanent : which thing with much adoe he laftly obtained, leaving her to follow him in his vertuous denotions, and his two fonnes to succeed him in his kingdome.

Sigherd, the Sonne of King Sebba, whom Beda ma-keth a Monke with his Father, followed him also in the succession of the East-Saxons Kingdome; the time of whose entrance is set in the yeere of Christs Incarnation 694, and his death in 701, no other men tion being made either of Acts, Wife, or Issue.

Sefrid, the Sonne of King Sebba, and Brother to King Sigheard, either joyntly raigned with him, or fuccessively after him, of whom I finde nothing mentioned worthy inferting, having had neither Wife nor issue that are recorded.

OFfa, the Sonne of sighere, and of Queene of with his Wife, a man noted for his comely feature and fweet countenance, succeeded King seefrid in the Kingdome of the East-Saxons, the yeere of grace 701. Ringdome of the Esys-Saxons, the yeere of grace 70 1. He both enlarged with buildings, and enriched with lands the goodly and beautiful Church of Westumsses, but after he had ruled eight yeeres, being moued with a supposed religious deuotion, hee abandoned Kinefwith his wife (the daughter of Penda the Mercian King) his lands, kinne, and Country, and with Kenred King of Mercia, and Edwine Biftop of Worcefter, went to Rome, where he was shorne a Monke, and in that habit died, leaving his Cosen selred to succeed in his kingdome. His wife Kinefwith after his departure, (with the like penancie) vowed her felfe a vailed Nunne in

the like Penance) vowed ner leite a valued Nume in the Abbey of Kineburg, whereof his fifter was Abbe/[f], who had been wife to Alfrith King of Northumberland.

Selred, the Sonne of Sigebert the Good, who was much there of or his onermuch elemence, attained to the Kingdome of the East-Saxons, in the yeere of grace 709. His raigne was long, though his acts are little spoken of, either that others worther affaires filled the pens of those Story-writers, or that his time was so peaceable and vnactively spent, that it mini-fired not matter whereof to indite. Heerzigned 18, yeeres, and died Anno 746, without relation either of Wife or Children.

Sthred, after the flaughter of Selred, was made King of the East-Saxons, which title hee retained, An. Do. 747. untill that Egbert King of the west-Saxons, taking Armes against him, expulsed him out of that King-dome; as also the same yeere he did Baldred, King of Kent, which was in the yeere of Christs Incarnation 827. and made it a Province annexed vnto the Well-Saxons, after it had flood in flate of a Kingdome 281.

Sebba his raigne









Angl lib.s.c.2

An.Do.700

Sutbred King of the Eafl-Sexen

THE

THE KINGDOME OF NORTHVM-BERLAND, CIRCUIT AND CONTL

NVANCE, WITH THE SUCCESSIONS AND ISSUES OF THOSE KINGS, VNTO THE LAST SVBVERSION THEREOF BYKING EGBERT.



CHAPTER IX.

The time when this Province b came a King.

iome. Vil.*bielm*ph,

This Prouince dauded into tw

Deira els Bernicia



lis Kingdome of Northumberland confifted at first of two distinct Prouinces; whereof the one was called Deira, and the other Bernicia, and were gouerned sometimes by their Kings severally, and fometimes vnder one, as

fucceffe of warre or other casualties incident did afford. The royall descents of whose Kings are brought by Florentius both from the Fourth and Fifth Sonnes of Prince woden, after this manner. Ella, vnder whom the Kingdome of Deira manner, Lus, vincer whom the Angoome or Dera beganne, was the fonne of His, who was the fonne of Wigits, the fonne of Westerna, the fonne of Seemel, the fonne of Suearia, the Wassing, the foline of Sweets, the conne of Sweets, the fonne of Sweets, the fonne of Siggest, the fonne of Siggest, the fonne of Siggest, the fonne of Weets, the fonne of Weets. And the descent of Ida, the raiser of the Bernicians kingdome, is brought from Bealdeag the fifth sonne of Weden; for Bealdeag was father to Brand, whose sonnes were Beornand Freedegar, the latter of which twaine was the progenitour of Cherdik the first West-Saxon King : and his brother Bearn begat another Bearn alfo, and hee wegbrand the father of Ingebrand, whose sonne was Alusa, the father of Angengeal, and this mans sonne Ingengeat, the father of Athelbright, whose sonne oesa begat Eoppa the father of this Ida, the first King of

Theis Saxon Captaines Elle and Ida, about fixtie yeeres after the death of King Hengift, changed the title of this Prouince from a Dukedome to a Kingdome. For Hengift having given the poffession of thole North parts vnto Otho his Brother, and to Ebu-Jain his fonne, their Succeffors held it, with many hofile irruptions the space of 99 yeeres. But now the Britaines subjected, and no relistance made, those Captaines divide the Province into two parts, intituling either by the name of a Kingdome; the first Deira, was possessed by Ella, which stretched from Tyne, to the R iner Humber; and the second Bernicia, enjoyed the KAUET IS MINOT 3 AND THE ECOND BETTICE, CHOICE by Ida, Whole Continent lay betwitz the Type and the Frish of Edenborough. These together contained the Counties of Weitmerland, Cumberland, Northumberland, Torkeshire, Lancaster, and Durham, and was borisma, torsepore, Lancaster, and Durnam, and was bounded on the West with the triff Seas, on the North with the Wall of Senerus, on the East with the German Ocean, and on the South with the Rivers Merfey and Humber. Ida, faith Malmsbury, raigned

fourteene yeeres : and Ella by Matthew of Wesiminfler, is faid to succeed him for thirty yeeres. The iffue of Ida legitimate, as Huntington recordeth, were Adda, Bealrik, Thedrik, Ethelrik, Ofmer, and Thedred; illegiti-Beatirs, trearis, ptenirs, comer, and a neares; migrating gionare and the mace, Ogs. Ecs. Of meld, Airis, Sogos, and Sogother. gionace. These (laith Matthey of Weifsmiller) arrived at Firmification of the Matthey of Weifsmiller and the First house with forty Ships, and atsisted their Father in making with the Matthey of the Matthey of the Matthey with the Matthey of the Matthey nic of his enterprises. The iffue of Ella, by Florentius forty th his record, were Acca, Wife of Ethelfrid, King of Bermicia, and mother to the most Christian Ofmald, Momeas, and notice to the most Charlest Ofwara, Mic-narch of the Englishmen, and Edwine the Monarch and first Christian King of Northumberland. Ida is said to beginne his raigne Anno 547. And Elle in the yeere 559. No other particulars afcribed vnto either, be-

fides the building of Bamburge Castell.

With Ella raigned the two sonnes of Ida, namely Add and Thedrik, with three others, Edpag. Theological, and Freshulfe, forung from Eoppe the father of Ida, all fine his substitutes ouer the Bernicians: but because there is no other mention of them besides their names and raignes, I will leane as I finde them, and

proceed to the more worthy of recitall, 2. S Adda raigned 7. yeeres -

3. Elappea raigned 5. yeeres
4. Theodwald raigned 1. yeere King of Bernicia.

Frethulfe raigned 7. yecres 6. Theodrik raigned 7. yeeres

EThelrik the sonne of King Tda, having outrun his youth in pernicious obscurite, attained in his old yeeres to the gouernment of both the Prounces, and whole Kingdome of Northumberland, wherein his time was fo spent (laith Malmesbury) that had not his some in the glaffe of his owne worths shewed the face of his fathers remembrance, his acts and raigne might eafily names rememorance, in acts and rangue might camp haue beene forgotten. His iffue were Ethelfrid that finceeded him, and Theobald flaine in Battle against the Scots. He raigned fine yeeres, and died, An. 193.

E Theifrid, a man very valiant, and thirlie for re-nowne, succeeded his father in the Northumbrians Kingdome. Him Beda compares to King Saul in I frael, A tragame, 1 mm sees compares to A mg a shain 1/fact, Ann. Do. 503. excepting only in the knowledge of Gods true Reit, seek signed, gion: to whom (faith he) might be applied the fay-like shain the fame. The fact to whom the fame with the fame and the fact to whom the fame with the fame. Woolfe he devoured his prey in the morning, and diused the spoile thereof in the euening. For he made greater Conquests ouer the daily afflicted Britaines, hen all the Kings of the Angles had done; and peo-

pling their poffessions with his Saxons, held the right owners under subjection and tribute. This his pro- Or, Edwa. peritic, Edanaden King of the Scots greatly enuied, and attempting to croppe it, and to plant himfelfe vpon

Tde his raign Malmbury.
Ella his raigne
Ida his iffine le

An.Do. 589

Chap.g. THE SAXON KINGS OF NORTHVMBERLAND.

Ethelfred proud of his victorie,

Theobald flaine

the root of like honour, hee affembled a great and [frong Armie against him, and at the place called Degfaston strooke Battle with him, wherein notwithstan ding he was ouerthrowne, and his Scots discomfitted yet with fuch loffe to King Ethelfrid, that Theobald his brother, with the part of the Armie whereof he was Generall, were all vanquished and destroied. This bartle went to fore against the Sostif Britaines, that (faith Beda) no King of that Nation durft attempt to meet the. English in the Field for a long time after. And the fortune of the day did so much augment both his fame, and also his haughty spirit, that presently he reenforced his power against the Britaines, that were at " Cair-

legion, where of them hee made a most lamentable flaughter, and that not only of the Souldiers prepared for fight, but also of those religious and harmlesse Monks, there affembled for praier. These Monks were of the Monastery of Bangor in North-wales, famous for antiquity, forme of discipline and spacious circuit. It was situated in the fruitfull valley now called the English Mailer; and vpon the Banckes of the Riuer Dee, where it extended it selfe as in the circuit of a walled Citie, containing within it the quantitie of a mile and a halfe of ground: two of whole Gates may at this day easilie be discerned, the one of them called Port Hogen, lying by North; and the other Part Clais, fituate on the South; the River Dee having now changed his Channell, runneth thorow the middest betwixt both the Gates, which stand afunder fine hundred paces. This Monasterie, faith Clarius lentius, was the Mother of all others in the World; who in memory of the * Sour Churches the World; who in memory of the *Seuen Churches
of Asia, did diffribute into seuen portions their Monks,

in perished one thousand and two hundred Christian

Monks, besides the discomsiture of the Britaines

Hoft. Many of these were interred in their owner

Monasteries, whose bodies, faith Leyland, have been

found in the memory of man, in the rotten weedes

wherein they were flaine. But as his fame increased

daily abroad, so were his feares augmented continu-

ally at home. For Edwine the fonne of Ella, and third

ons in Ethelfrids head; and though he was brother to

his Wife Acca, yet the neerencife of that alliance, no

whit diminished his lealous conceits, whom therefore

by primie conspiracies and apparant pursuits hee so daily molested, that he was forced to saue his life by

auoiding the Country, and toffed in exile from place

to place, was laftly received and fuccoured by Red-

wald, King of the East-Angles, who in his quarrel forth-

with affembled his forces, and meeting Ethelfrid in

the field, flew him neere the River Idle, after hee had

raigned twenty three yeeres, in the yeere of Christ his Incarnation 617. He had issue by his Wife Acca,

(the daughter of Ella) Eunfrith King of Bernicia, Olafe, and Ofwald King of Northumberland, Olake, and Offia, with two Daughters canonized for Saints, Ofwith

and Ebba the Nunne; as also by his Concubine, of wy,

Monarch of the Englishmen; as in their succession shall

be dec'ared. Beds (fornewhat too much addicted to

fabulous miracles) of him reporteth this storie: That whileft hee lay banished in King Redwalds Court,

the tenth Monarch of the Englishmen.

euery one numbring three hundred foules, and all of them (as Beds faith) living by the labour of their own Angl.ld. 2. cap. 2. Her Monkes di-uided into feuen hands. Many of these assembling at Cair-legion, to asfift their Brethren Britaines with their supplications vnto God against this Ethelfrid, surnamed the Wilde and his fierce Souldiers the Infidell Saxons; with three daies falts spent their time in continual praiers. But King Ethelfrid beholding their maner, demanded the hands.
Their praier and
falting.

Bibelfrid enquireth the cause
of their praying. cause; and understanding that they called for assicanie, and understanding that they called tor alstance of their God against him and his Army, set first upon their Guarder Brockessel, a man of Armes, who to sauch is own life, left all theirs to the sword, where-

He flaieth a grea

ands.

Bernardus (lari-

King of Deira, a gallant young Prince, and newly fea-ted in his Fathers Kingdome, wrought many suspici-

E*dwine* forced into exile.

Henry Hunt, Esbelfrid flai His raigne, Florentues,

Job.Capgrene.

Beda bift.Lx.c.33

8. An.Do.617. Preturned to his Country, and was of the Inhabitation and the Activity and th Beds hift Ecclef. Ang. 16.2.cap.12. The Storie of Ed-

Ethelfrid instigated his receiter, by promises to take away his lifesor if he refused, threatned him warres: His life in dan

for feare whereof, Kedwald, partly inclining to this wicked purpose, reuealed the same to the Queene his wife; which a friend of Edwins hearing, rold him of his danger, and wished him to flie. Edwinethus perplexed, with troubled thoughts in the dead of the night, what to doe, fate solitary vnder a tree in dumps, musing what was best to be done; to suspect and flie from Redwald, that had honoured him so much, he held it a wrong; and to thinke himfelfe afe in other Provinces against fo powerfull pursuers, he thought it was vaine. Thus dipowerium purmers, nernougarit is was vaine. 1 Just al-fracted in calling what way might be faiteft, find den-ly approched a man vnto him, vterely vnknowne, who after faituation, demanded the cause who hee fare ario vnicasonable at time, in so vnocouth a place, and penfine manner? Edwine thinking him to be his Edwine his and deathf-man, refolutely answered; It nothing concerned him at all, either to aske, or to know his citate. Oh Edwine (faid he) thinke not but that I know thy The manthew forrow, and the cause of thy sitting thus vpon that some, thy death is pretended, and even at hand: but him. what wouldest thou give to rid thecof that danger, and to make King Redwald thy affored preserver? Any thing, quoth Edwine, which is in my power. But what shall be his reward (said the other) that shall set what he would thee vpon the throne of thy Kingdome, and that with fuch glory, as none of thy Progenitors euer attained vnto? I would bee thankfull to that man, faid Edwine, in all things, and at all times, as reason required, and of right lought. But tell me Edwine, faid he, what if the same man show thee a more safe way to spreserue the life of thy soule, their either thou at this save his soule, present knowest, or any of thy Parents euer heard of; wilt thou confent and imbrace his counfell? Yea, faid Edwine, God forbid that I should not bee ruled by him, that thus should free me from this present danger, fet me vpon the throne of a Kingdome, and after these great fauours, should also teach mee the way to an eternall life. Vpon this answere, laying his right hand on Edwines head, he said vnto him; When these things shall in order come to passe, then call to minde this time, and what thou hast promised, and so vanifhed from his presence. The young Prince thus left betwirt hope and despaire, his friend that had fore-

frid thine enemy. Which shortly he did, and slew him, as we have faid. as we mate faith.

Edwine thus placed upon the Princely Throne, his first Wife Queenburg being dead in his exile, received in marriage Ethelburga, surnamed Tace, saft name for a woman) the Daughter of King Ethelbert, and Sifter to Edhald King of Kent, a most chaste and vertuous Christian Lady, whose teacher was Paulinus, and both of them Gods instruments for the Conucrison of the Northumbrians to the imbracement of Christian Religion. But because we shall have occasion to speake of this Edwine as he was Monarch of the Englishmen. we will referue his Acts, I flues, and Raigne, to bee further related in the course of his Succession. Hee was flaine in battell against Cadwall King of the Britaines and Pands King of the Arctions, when he had profper roully raigned feuencene yeeres, the welfth of Orbitor, Anno 63; and was burded in Saint Peter; Church at Streamfail, after called Whitely, V pon whole death, the Kingdome of Northmorberland was againe

warned him of his death, came hastily to him with a

more cheerfull countenance, Come in Edwine (quoth

he) and furcease thy cares, for the Queene hath not

onely changed Redwalds mind to faue thy life, but he

also hath granted to maintaine thy right against Ethel

Sricke the Sonne of Afrid (Edwines Vncle) fucceeding in the Prouince of Deira, and Eanfrith An.Do.633. the Sonne of Ethelfrid the Wilde, in the Province of the Bernicians; these, with the rest of Ethelfrids Children, for the continuance of Edwins Raigne, had Eastfrith King of in banishment beene preserved among the Seots and
Red-Banks, and there had received the Sacrament of Baptisme: but after the death of their Enemie, these

*CedwaR.

The British Kings

O/wald the n

Holler Best.

His care of h

people for re

ligion. His death,

Raigne,

BurialL

Iffue,

Lb.3 cap.s.

The centh Mo narch of the

Engil/b-men.

Bedalib.4.ca.5.

Bede bift lib.3.

iede hift.L.s. c.21

Bede bift.Angl.

b.4.cep.16.

11. An.Do.671

His wife.

lowing King, Ofwald, a man dearely belowed of God. Oswald, the sonne of Wild Ethelfrid, and brother to King Eanfrith, beganne his raigne ouer the Nor-An.Do.634. thumbrians Anno 634. having first embraced Christianitie, and received Baptisme in Scotland, wherein her was secured all the raigne of King Edwin, and had withall learned some experience in warre. Hee comming vnlooked for with a small Armie, but fensed (faith Beda) with the Faith of Christ, obtained against Cedwald King of the Britaines a great victorie : the manner whereof, with his other acts atchieued, wee will further declare in his fuccession among the Monarkes of the Englishmen, whereof hee was the ninth

> He sent for Aidan, a Scotish Dinine, to teach his peo-ple the Doctrine of Christ, inlarged his Kingdome, and reconciled the Deirians and Bernicians, who were at mortall enmitie. He was flaine, and cruelly rent in pecces by the vnmercifull Pagan Penda the Mercian, at Ofwaldstree in Shrop-shire, quinto Augusti; the yeere of our Lord 642. when hee had raigned nine yeeres, and was buried at Bradney in Lincolne-fbire. His wife was Kineburg, the daughter of Kingils King of the Well-Saxons; and his sonne Ethelwald, young at his death, and therefore defeated of his Kingdome by ofwy his Vncle, the Naturall Sonne of King Ethelfrid the Wild. Notwithstanding when of win King of Deira was murdered by this of wy of Bernicia, and he not past sixteene yeeres of age, entred by force vpon Deira, and kept the same Province by strong hand so long as hee lined; and dying, left it to his colen Akfrid, the Na-

ined same of the laid King Ofwy.

Sny the illegitimate Ionne of Ethelfrid the wild, at thirty yeeres of age succeeded King Ofwald his An.Do.643 brother in the Kingdome of the Bernicians; at whose Of my the illegit mate of Ethelfri entrance, of wyne the sonne of of rik, that had denied the Faith, and was flaine of King Cedwall, raigned in Be to hift. Ecolof. Deira. This of wyne was flaine by King of wye: after whose death, seizing all Northumberland, he spread his terrour further into other parts, and was the tenth Monarch of the Englishmen, as in his succession we will further speake. His wife was Earfled, daughter to Edmine King of Northumberland, by whom he had many children. His raigne was 28. yeeres, and death the fifteenth day of Februarie, in the yeere of grace 670.

and of his age 58.

Gfrid, the eldeth fonne of King of my by Queene
Englied, had beene Hoftage in the Kingdome of Mercia, and after his father was made King of Northumberland, in the yeere of Christ 671. Hee warred, but with great loffe, against Edilred King of Mercia, neere vnto the Riuer of Trent, wherein his younger brother Elfwyne was vnfortunately flaine, to the great griefe of both the Kings, the one being his owne brother, and the other his brother in law by mariage: whereupon a peace and reconciliation was made. But Egfred being by nature of a disquiet disposition, inuaded the Irift, and destroied those harmelesse and filly people, which (as Beda faith) had beene great friends to the English. Their refishance consisted chiefly in cur-

fes and imprecations for reuenge, which though they could not open heaven, yet (faith hee) it is to be beleeucd, that for their cause he was cut off the next yeere ensu-ing by the Picts or Red-shankes, against whom he prepared, contrary to the aduce of his Counsell, and by them was Saine among the strait and waste mountaines, 20. Maij the yeere of mans felicitie 685, and of his age fortie, after hee had raigned fifteene yeeres. His wife was Raigne. Etheldred the daughter of Anna King of the East-An- Wife, who was gles: thee was both Widow and Virgin; first maried to both a Widow Tonbert a Noble man that ruled the Giruÿ, a people inhabiting the Fenny Countries of Norfolke, Lincolne, Bedaloff 14 e.19. Huntington, and Cambridge-fires; and after him also in virginitie continued twelne yeeres with her hul-band King Egfrid, contrarie to his minde, and the Apofles precept, that forbiddeth such defrauding either in manor woman, except the write mofine for timen and to the preparatio of printer; affirming eliwhere, that Ma-riage in momentable, and the bed hereof wordfield, wherein the woman doth redeeme her transgression, through the boundary of the most of the most of the state of the full blue holizess. fatth, loue, holinesse, and modestie, by bearing of children. This notwithstanding, she obtained licence to depart his Court, and got her to Coldingham Abby where shee was professed a Nume vnder Ebba the daughter of King Ethelfrid. Then went shee to Ely, and new built a Monasserie, whereof shee was made Abbesse, and wherein with great reuerence shee was intombed: whose vertues and remembrance remained to posterities by the name of S. Audrie, she being Canonized for canonized among the Catalogue of English Saints.

A Lifty A the illegitimate fonne of King Of my, in the large of his half-brother King Egirid, whether willingly, or by violence confirmined, lived like a badie. withingsys or by violence contrained, luce a nea-nished man in Ireland, where applying himselfe to studie, hee became an excellent Philosopher, and (as Beda faith) was very connersant and learned in the Holy Scriptures, and therefore was made King ouer the Northumbrians: where with great wisdome, though not with fo large bounds as others had enioied, hee worthily did recouer the decaied efface of that Prouince, ruling the fame twenty yeeres and odde moneths, and departed this life, Anno 705. His Wife was Kenburg, the daughter of Penda King of the Mer-1 Tue. Beda bift. 1.3.c. 11. cians, and by her he had iffue only one sonne, that succeeded him in his Kingdome.

Osred, a child of eight yeeres in age, for the hopes conceived from the vertues of his father, was made King ouer the Northumbrians; whose steps hee Offed, no wayes trod in, but rather in filthy abuse of his perfon and place, wallowed in all voluptuous pleasures and sensual delight, violating the bodies of vailed Numer, and other religious holy women: wherein when he had fpent eleuen yeeres more to his age, his kinfmen Kenred and Ofrick conspired against him, and in battle by his flaughter made an end of his impious life. His wife was Cuthburga, the fifter of Inas King of the West-Saxons, as by the time may bee gathered, from the computation of Marianus, and the Annales of the Engles-Saxons; who vpon a loathing wearinesse of wedlocke, sued out a dinorce from her husband, and built a Numery at Winburne in Dorset-shire, where in a religious habit shee ended her life, and hee by Kenred and Ofricke, leaving his Kingdome to them that wrought his death.

that wrought his death.

Kerred, the sonne of Cushwyne, whose father was
Leohvald the sonne of Egwald, and his father
An.Do.716. Adelm, the sonne of oga, the naturall sonne of Ida, the first King of Deira, after the death of Ofred raigned two yecres, no other remembrance left of him, befides the murder of his Soueraigne Lord and King.

O Srick, after the death of Kenred, obtained the Kingdome of Northumberland, and raigned therin the space of cleuen yeeres, leaving to the world his name flained with bloud in the murder of young Ofred, no other mention of parentage, wife, or iffue of him remaining; for want whereof, hee adopted Ceol-His adopted nulph, brother to his predeceffor Kenred, and died vnlamented the yeere of Grace feuen hundred twentie

Ceolnulph,

(bap.9. THE SAXON KINGS OF NORTHVMBERLAND.

An.Do.729 His raigne,

Matth Well.

Beders booke i

and from the first entrance of the Saxons, containing 285. yeeres, according to his owne account. E Gbert, the sonne of Easts, who was brother to King Renred, succeeded his vncle Ceoloulph in the King-17. An.Do.738.

His raigne.

Simon Donelm.

that became

His iffue,

An.Do.759.

Edil wald or

Mollo. Wil.Malmef.

Eclipies of the Sun and Moons

An.Do.705.

i.Tim,2.15.

An.Do.718

CEolnulph, the brother of Kenred, after the death of King Ofrike, was made King of the Northumbrians; which Province hee gouerned with great peace and victorie the space of eight yeeres: but then forsaking the Royall Estate and Robes of Maiestie, put on the habit of a Monke in the Ile of Lindesferne or Holy Iland.

These were the daies (faith Beda) wherein the acceptable time of peace and quietnesse was embraced among the Northumbrians, who now laid their armour aside, and applied themselues to the reading of holy Scriptures, more de-sirous to be professed in religious houses, then to exercise feats of warre, or of Armes. For not only Pricits and Lay men vowed and performed Pilgrimages to Rome, but Kings, Queenes and Bifhops also did the like : so great (so blinde I might say) a denotion was in their hearts, and so holy a reuerence held they of the place. Vnto this King Ceolnulph, the faid Venerable Beda (a Priest in the Monasterie of Peter and Paul at Werimouth decre vnto Durham) a great Clerke, and Writer of the English Historie, dedicated the same his Worke, which he continued till the yeere feuen hundred thirty one,

dome of Northumberland, and ruled the same with the like peace and pierie, the time of twenty yeeres; and then following his example, also forsooke the world, and shore himselfe a Monke, as divers other Kings in those daies had done, whereof simon Dunelmensis writeth, and noteth their number to bee eight : as Inas King of the West-Saxons, Ethelred and Kenred Kings of Mercia, Sigebert King of the East-Angles, Sebbi and Offs Kings of the Esst-Saxons, and Ceoloulph and this Egbers Kings of the Northumbrians. These for saking the world (as they tooke it) left the Charge that God vpon them had imposed, whose authoritie in earth they swaied, and wherein they might much more haue aduanced Gods glory and Christs Gospel, then for a more easie and private life, not warranted by his word; but rather difliked, and perhaps foreshewed by those heauenly creatures the Sunne and Moone.

which in those daies were fearefully darkned, and for a time feemed to have loft their light: for Anno 733. 1 8. Calend, Septemb, the Sunne suffred so great an Eclipse, that the earth seemed to bee ouer-shadowed as with fack-cloth, And Anno 756.8. Calend, Decemb. the Moone being in her full, appeared both darke and bloudy; for a Starre (though there be none low-er then the Moone) feemed to follow her, and to deprine her of light: but passing before her, shee againe recoursed her former brightnesse. This King Egbert had a brother that bore the same name, and was installed Arch-bishop of Yorke, where he erected a beautifull Libraric (a worke well befitting a Noble Prelate) and plentifully stored it with an infinite number of learned bookes. His fonne was Ofwalph, that succeeded in the Kingdome.

O'Swulph, when his father Egbert had put off the Robes of Maicftie, and clad himfelfe with a An.Do.758 Monkes Cowle, ascended the Throng of Northumberland, and fate therein only one yeere: for before hee had made attempt of any memorable act he was traiteroully murdered by his own fernants at Mikilmongton, the ninth Kalends of August, leaving the Crown vndisposed of vntill the Nones of the same moneth in the next veere.

Dilwald or Mollo was then made King of Northumberland, and with great valiancie defended his Subjects. Some fay, that at the end of fix yeeres hee refigned his government; yet others affirme his raign to be eleuen yeeres, and lastly that hee was slaine by Alured his Successiour.

A Lured, the murderer of his Lord and Master, be-ganne his raigne ouer the kingdome of Northum berland, the yeere of Christs Incarnation seuen hundred fixty fiue, and continued the same with such dislikes, that hee laftly was expelled out of the Prouince by his own subjects, & enforced to abandon the same He was the fon of Tanwin, the fon of Bienhom, the fon of Bofa, the fon of Ailrick, the naturall fon of ida, the first King of Bernicia. And the sonnes of this Alured were Ofred, afterwards King of Northumberland, and

Alhnud, flaine by the Danes, and canonized a Saint. EThelred, the sonne of Mollo, was advanced to the Regiment of Northumberland, and in the fifth yeere of his raigne, was driven out of the same by Edelbald and Herebert, two Dukes that warred against him; who having discomfitted and slaine his Generall and fouldiers in a fierce battel, so weakened the hopes of King Ethelred, that he fled his Country, and left the Kingdome in a miserable estate, through the dissensions of those ambitious Princes.

A Livald the brother of the forelaid King Alered alpiring to the Soueraignty of the Northumbrians, ruled the fame in great Justice, to his worthy commendations: notwithstanding the wickednes of his people was fuch, that without all guilt he was traiteroufly murthered by the conspiracie of Sigs, 23. Sept. the yeere of Christs Incarnation, seven hundred eightie eight, after he had raigned eleuen yeeres, and his body buried at Hexham. His sonnes were Alfur and Alfwin, both flaine by King Ethelred.

Afrons, Octa name by Aning Estressea.

Obserd the fonne of King Alused, tooke vpon him the Rule of Northamberland, the yeere of grace feuen hundred eightie nine, and the same yeere sin live of the same yeers si fhed his gouernment thereof, being expelled by his fubicets, and deprived of all kingly authority.

EThetred the sonne of Mollo, reuoked from exile An.Do.794, wherein he had liued the space of twelve yeeres, Eshelved. was againe restored to the Crowne; but he minding the iniuries that his Lords had formerly done him, fought the reuenge by their deaths, as also to establish his Throne the furer, flew Alfus and Alfuin, the fons of Alfusald, as wee have faid, the right heires to the or Alpuala, as wee naue land, the right hence to use Crowne, and inticing offed the former deposed King into his danger, commanded him to be put to death at Cumburge, the fourteenth of Suptember, and yeere of Christ seven hundred ninety two. And to strengthen himselfe the more against all his opposites, the same yeere he married Lady Elsted, the second Daughter to Rendel. Higher in great off King of Mercia, for faking his former Wife Polychro, without any iust cause ginen on her part.

These things sate so neere the hearts of his subjects, that after feven yeeres from his fecond establishment, they rebelliously rose in Armes, and at Cobre miserably flew him the eighteenth day of Aprill, the yeere His death,

of Christ lesis 794.
A Feer whose death, the Northumbrians were fore molested with many intruders, or rather Tyrans, that banded for the fourraignty the space of thirty yeeres. The first whereof was ofwald, that held the tiyeeres. The first whereof was Ofwals, that held the ti-le of King only twenty eight daise, & then was forced to faue in slife by flight wnto the King of the Pild. Next, Arballe Duble, resouch from exite: then, All wold, Eundred, Bibbered, Reddalph, Other, and Elle, flaine by the Danes in Take at a place, for Elle his flaughter-called to this day Elle-Cryfte, and the Kingdome yeel. ded to the protection of Egbert King of the Well-Sage ons, who was now become Englands first absolute Monarch, (as holding all the rest of the Kings no longer for his Affociates, but his subjects) in the yeere nine hundred twentie fix, after it had frood in forme of a Kingdome three hundred feuenty nine yeeres, and was made a Province, and joined with the reft vnto the

An.Do.765 Flor Witer.

His iffue.

31. An.Do.774

An.Do.778 Aifwald.

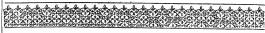
His iffige.

Matib.Weftm.





English Monarchie.



THE CIRCUIT AND SUCCESSORS OF THE MERCIAN KINGDOME, VN.

TILL IT WAS SUBJECTED TO THE WEST-SAXONS.



CHAPTER X.

An.Do. 582

Flor Wigor.

His raigne

His iffue.

His Kingdome of Mercia contained more Counties, and the skirts of that royall Tent were foread with a wider compaffe then any of the rest in the Saxons Heptarchie : for in the middeft of the Iland this Kingdome was feated.

and from the verge of Northumberland touched fome pare of Middlefee, which was the possession of the East-Saxons: the North thereof was bounded with Humber and Mer-(e); the East was inclosed with the German Ocean; the West extended to Severne and Dee; and the South part neerely touched the River of Thames; containing the Counties now known by these names, of Cheshire, Darby-shire, Nottingham, Stafford, and Shrop-shire, Northampton, Leicester, Lincolne, Huntington, and Rutland-lines : War wicke, were fier, Oxford, and Gloceffer-bires; Buckingham, Bedford, and part of Hertford-fire. The first raiser of that Title and name of a Kingdome, was Crida, the sonne of Kenwald, who was the sonne of Criebba, the sonne of Ichell, the sonne of Eomer, the sonne of Engengeste, the sonne of offa, the sonne of Weremund, the sonne of withles, the sonne of wags, the sonne of Wethelgeste, the third of the sine sonnes of Prince Woden. This man, without more same of his further acts, is faid to have raigned the space of ten yeeres, and to haue died Anno 594. His iffue was Wibba that succeeded him in his Kingdome, and a Wibba that forceded nim in his Amgdome, and a daughter named <u>Quenburge</u>, matched in manage with
Edwin afterwards King of Northumberland, with
whom file liued in the Court of King Redwald in the time of his troubles, and died before him in that his banishment, She bore him two sonnes, osfrid and Edfride, as in the fuccession of Edwins Monarchy shall be shewed: notwithstanding Bedareporteth this Quen-burgeto be daughter of Ceorle the third King of Mereia, and grand-child to this first Crida

VV 1bba, the sonne of King Crida, not onely held what his Father had gotten, but also inlarged An.Do. 592 his dominions by intrustion upon the weake Britaines. Wibba. Matib.Weft. His iffua. His islue was Penda, Kenwalk, and Eoppa, all three Pro-genitors of Kings afterwards in that kingdome, with a daughter named sexburg, married to Kenwald, King of the West-Saxans, whom he without inst cause divorced from him; for which cause great troubles afterwards enfued, as in the raignes of those Kings wee haue faid. He in great honour raigned twenty yeeres, and giving place vitto nature, left his kingdome to be

inioied by another.

"Earl, not the son, but the Nephew of King Wibba, fucceeded in the dominions of the Mercians, about the yeere of grace fix hundreth and fourceenth. He was sonne to Kinemund, the brother of Wibba, the younger sonne of King Crida, who was the first King of that kingdome. His raigne is set to be ten yeeres, without mention either of Act or Iffue.

without mention either or retoring.

Penda, the sonne of Wibba, beganne his raigne ouer the Mercians the yeere of Christs Incarnation fix An. Do. 626. hundred twenty six, & continued the same the space Penda.

of thirty yeeres. He was a man violent in action, and Hisraigne. mercilesse in condition, cruell and vnsatiate of blood: he shooke the Cities, and disturbed the borders of the Saxon-Kings, more then any other in that Heptarchy before him had done. Against Kingils and Quinche-line, Kings together of the West-Saxons, he ioined battell neere vnto the Citie Cirenchester, where both the parties fought it out to the vtmost, with the effusion of much Saxons bloud : but those comming to concord, he with Cadwallo King of the Britaines, flew in battell Edwine and Ofwald, Kings of Northumberland. Datten Lawren and Operate, ange or transportuna, sighter, Egfrid, and Anna, Kings of the East-Angles, and forced Rennald King of the West-Saxons out of his Country, in quarrell of his Sifter, Of these his prosperities he became so proud, that hee thought nothing impossible for his archieuement; and therefore threatning the defiruction of the Northumbers, prepared his Army for that expedition. Of my then raigning King of that Country, profered great furnmes of mony, and most precious lewels to purchase his peace: which being refused, and the battell ioined, more by the hand of God, then power of man, this Tyrant was flaine, and his whole Army discomfitted. His Wife was Kinfwith, and iffue by her Peada, who ris where was king; walfere and Ethelred, both Mo-larchisof the Englify; Merkthel, a man famous for his great holinefle, and Merwald that gouerned some part of Meria, whole Wife was Rabinga. the foundrells of Minster in Tanet, and daughter to Egbert King of Kent; by whom he had is like Mersin, a man of noted deution, Milbury, and Middgith, both holy Virgins, and Middith also Abbesse of Tanet, all four canonized for Saints. The daughters of King Penda, were Kineburg, the Wife of Alkfrid, King of Nor-thumberland, afterward a Votaresse in Kinesburg Abby, and Kinefwith, who maried Offa King of the East-Angles, and became also a Nunne with her fifter Ki-

DEads, the sonne of King Pends, in the daies of his father, and with his permission, had gouerned the middle part of Mercis, and after his death, by the gift of ofwy of Northumberland, all the South of that

An.Do.614.

kingdome from the Riuer Trent, vpon copolition to marrie his daughter, and to imbrace Christianity; which thing this Peada performed, and was the first-christian King of the Mercians. His Baptisme recei-ued, to witnesse the first fruits of his profession, hee Hugo de Pete laid the foundation of a faire Church at Medelham fled.now called Peterborrow, but lived not to finish the lame, for that he was flaine by the treason of Alkfled his wife in the celebration of Faster, (as Beda faith) ha-Bede hift Angl. ning had no iffue by her. But Robert de Swapham (an ling nad no nide by her. Dut Ropert at a suppose (an Author of good antiquity, who faw the stones of that foundation to be so huge, as that eight yoke of Oxen could hardly draw one of them) faith, that Peada was brought to his end by the practife of his Mother, and not of his Wife; as in these his words is manifest, Peada (faith he)laid the foundation of a Monastery at Medelhamfled, in the Giruians or Fen-Country, which he could not finish, for that by the wicked practise of his Mother, hee was made away. Whereby this blot is taken from this Christian Lady, and brands the face of her that most deserveth it. This King raigning as substitute to King of worthumberland aforesaid, by some is not accounted for a Mercian King, his regiment resting vnder the command of another. An.Do.659.

Viffere, the Brother of murthered Peada, set vp by the Mercians against King Osny, prooued a Prince most valiant and fortunate. For hee expelled the Northumbrians Lieutenants forth of those domithe withmorran Lieutenants torth of those domi-nions; fought victorioufly againft kernald King of the West-Saxons; conquered the ile of Wight, and attai-ned to be sole Monarch of the Englishmen: whereof more shall be said when wee come to the times and fuccessions of their raignes.

This Vulfhere is laid to raigne in great honour for His raigne,

His wife

His raigne.

His wife.

His raigne

His death.

Hisralgne

Death.

(bap.10)

seuenteene yeeres, and his body to bee buried in the Monasterie of Peterborow, which he had founded. His Queene Ermenheld after his death, became a Nunne at Eh, ynder het Mother Sexburg, and there died. His children were Kenred, Vulfald, and Infra, with a daughter, named Wereburg, a Nunne in the Monastery of Eh. Ethelred the third fonne of King Pends, in the no-nage of yong Kenred the fonne of Fulfhere, (who An.Do.675 in his tender yeeres rather defired a private life then any publike authority in the Common-weale) fucceeded his brother both in the Kingdome of Mereta, and Monarchy of the Englishmen. But when hee had raigned thirty yeeres, gaue ouer the Crowne to his Nephew the laid Kenred, and became a Monke in the Monattery of Bradney in Lincolne flore, where hee died Anno 716. His Wife was 01fryde, Daughter to Ofwyn King of Northumberland: and iffue, Chefred, that fucceeded Kenred in the Mercian kingdome.

Kemed the sonne of Vulfhere, (his Vncle Ethelred changing his Princely Crown for a Monks Coule) An.Do.704 beganne his Raigne ouer the Mercians, and his Mo-narchy ouer the English, Anno 704, wherein he raignarray out the engage, anno 704, wherein new the hase-ned the face of foure years, and then with hase-uotion of those times, addicted to an easteand quier Religion, abandoned both Crowne and Country, and wento Kome, where of Dope Constitute her re-ceited the tonfure and habit of a Monkeat the Appceited the tenture and habit of a Monkear the Apellies Tunkes, and enting a Monalbery, therein form other four eyeres of his life to the day of his death, which was Anno 708. Hauting had neither wife nor tiffue to reciue his riame, or to rule his kingdome.

**Chefeed receiting the refignation of Korned his Collingerman when he went to Rome, and of fulficients.

An Do.709. ent yeeres and discretion to have succeeded Ethelred his Father, what time the faid Kenred was ordained King, raigned with great valour ouer the Mercians, and was likewife Monarch ouer the Englishmen, His peace was disquieted by Inas & his West-Saxons, who for feuen veeres continuance inuaded his kingdome. His Wife was Wereburge, faith Marianus and Florentius the Monke, who aicribe to her a long life, and to die without Childten. This Chelred raigned the space of eight yeeres, and died the yeere of grace seuen hun-dred and fifteenth: whose body was buried in the

Cathedrall Church of Lechfeild.

Thelbald, after the death of Chelred, was made King of the Mercuss, and Monarch of the English, the An. Do., 716, yeere of Christs Incarnation seven hundred increase. He was a Prince giuen to peace, but withall a most laschious Adulterer : insomuch that Boniface Archlaterious Acouster: Informed that soniface Area-bishop of Ments wrote his Episle vnto him in repre-hension of the same; which tooke such effect, that in repentance of his soule facts, hee sounded the Mona-sterie of Growland, driving in mighty Piles of Oake into that moorish ground, whereon hee laid a great and goodly building of stone. He was the son of Alay, and goodly ouncaing or none, rie was the ion of Atay, the elder lonne of Eappa, the ficcond some of King Wibba, the brother of King PenJa: and raigned fortie two yeeres, in the end whereof he was flatne in a batterior of the was fl tell fought against Cuthred King of the West-Saxons, at Secondone, three miles from Tamworth, the yeere of Christ, seuen hundred fiftie fiue, and was buried at Repton in Darby-shire, having had neither Wife nor

Ffa flaying Bernred the murtherer of King Ethelbald, entred vpon the gouernment of the Merci- An.Do. 758. ans, and the Monarchy of the Saxons, An. 758. He in- oga. larged his dominion upon the Britaines, ouercame the Kenijh in a battell, put to flight the Northumbrians, and vanquished the West-Saxons: the East-Angles also he seised upon, after he had murthered Eshelbert their Residue VPOIS atter the had mort meter unique to the King. He raigned thirty nine yeeres, and died at offer, the nine and twenty day of tudy, the yeere of our Lord feuen hundred ninetic foure, and was butied without the Town of Bedford, in a Chapell, now swallowed up by the Riner owfe. He was the son of Thingfryd, the by the Kluer Onle. He was the lon or Tranggrya, the fonne of Early, whole Father Offsmad was the fonne of Early, whole Father Offsmad was the fonne of Early, the brother of Kling Pends, and fon of Kling Wilson, whole Father was order, the first King of the Meetinan-His Wille was <u>Ryandred</u> and children many; the wild will be the when the word of whom, and of them we will turned fine who we come to the time of his Monarchy.

Effyde, the sonne of great offs, was by him made King at his returne from Rome, being the only joy of his parents, and heire apparant to the Saxons Mo-Befryde, narehy, vpon which he entred the day after his fathers death, and lived himfelfe but a hundred and fortie daies after, deceafing the seventeenth of December, in the yeere of our Lord God seven hundred ninety six, having had neither wife nor iffue that wee reade of, and his body honourably interred in the Church of the Monafterie of Saint Albanes, founded by Offa.

Enwelfe, the cofen (a farre off) to King Refridde-cealed, and both of them removed in bloud no leffe then fix defeents from 1971bbs the fevond Merrian

Remedia.

King, was the sonne of Cuthbert, (as the Monke of Worcester deriues him) the sonne of Bassa, the sonne of Kenrowe, the sonne of Kentwin, the sonne of Kenwalk; the sonne of Wibba aforesaid, and succeeded King Egfryd in his Dominions. But of this Mercian Monarch more shall be written in the succession and time of that his gouernment. He raigned two and ome of the raigne ground of the raigned two and twentle years, and deceased the years of our Lord eight humbered and ninetern, and his bodie interred in the Monalkeris of Nienkounbein the Countie of Gloseffer, being of his owns foundation, His wife was Agente Ellium (in the Monalkeris of Nienkounbein the Countie of Gloseffer, being of his owns foundation, His wife was Agente Ellium (in the Monalkeris of Nienkounbein the Countie of Gloseffer, being of his own the Nienkounbein the Nienkounb fryde, the daughter (assome suppose) of offa, who Jyjan, the daughter (as some suppose) of offs, who had beene betrothed to Ethelbert King of the Eafl-Angles, flaine by her father; by whom he had iffue, Kendon, Quendred, and Burgemhild, of whom more following.

W Enelon, the forme of King Kenwolfe, a childe of fe-Kuen yeeres old, succeeded in the Kingdome of Mer-cia, but not in the Monarchie, as his fathers had done, Egbert the West-Saxon at that time being grown great in his fortunes. This young King Kenelm raigned only fine moneths, and then by the ambitious defire of nue monettas, ana terra ny tene ambitions delitre of Quendrid his lithire, who feeking the gouernment by Roger Biglan, the fliedding of his guildesse bloud, instigated one -salebert his Instructor, by promities of great prefer-ments and rich rewards, to make him away, who only should see the thought just her way to the Crowne. This wicked practife was foorthwith as impioully performed : for having him foorth vnder pretence of hun-

An.Do.796.

An.Do.797

An.Do.810

Cap. 1.Sett. 7.

Histaigne Hisdesth

(al.175.

Cestwulfe. Matth Weltmins

His raigne.

His iffue.

His death, His raigne, Henr.Hust.

His raigne.

ting, he flew the innocent King, whose vertuous inclination promifed great hopes, and whose harmlesse yecres had not attained to any worldly guile. His bodie hee secretly buried vnder a bush, and (if we will beseeue the Golden Legend, where his life is described) was thus found out: A white Doue (which belike had feene the deed done) and had got it ingroffed in a scrole of parchment, posted therewith to S. Peter in Rome, and vponthe High Altar laid it to bee read, where in the Saxon characters thus it was found: In Clenc kon bad Kenelme Kinbanne lied vnben whonne, heaved bepeaued : that is, At Clene in a Cow pafture Kenelme the Kings childe lieth beheaded under a thorne. But most true it is, that an obscure sepulcher the body had at the first, and howsoeuer found out, was afterwards with great honour and ceremonie translated to the Monastèrie of Wincheombe, which his father had foun-ded. The murderesse Quendrid, for griefe and shame of so wicked an act, ended her life, without the attai ning of her ambitious defire, and hath left her name indeleblie stained with his innocent bloud.

Ceolwulfe, the brother of Kenwolfe, and vncle to An.Do.820. was elected their Governour by the Mercians : but his glory was not great, nor his raigne long, being still disquieted by Bernulfe, that fought his Crowne; and after one yeeres Regiment was expulsed by his people, and left the same to his pursuer, abandoning the Countrie for the lafety of his life, One daughter hee had, named Eifled, who was the wife of wigmund, the fonne of withlafe, the substitute King of Mercia, and himselfe the last that held the Mercian Kingdome in a

lineall fuccession.

BETMIFE obtaining what hee folong defired, made himselfe King when Ceotmufe was gone, and was the more approoued for his valour in Armes, and the An.Do.821 lesse resisted for his ancient descent, being sprung from ofher, a man reputed to be of the Mercian royall bloud. But Bernulfe perceining the fortunes of Egbert, accounted those his happie successes to bee his owne fhame, and by defiance challenged the west-Saxons to the field which Egbert accepted, and vpon Ellendon ioined Battle with the Mercians, which was fought to the much losse of both their blouds. Notwithstanding at last the west-saxons prenailed, Bernulfe being forced to flie with shame. The East-Angles that then had yeelded to Egbert, and but lately before had felt the fury of Bermife, thought the time fit to repay him againe, and therefore in warlike manner assaulted his Territories, where hee, in defending his Countrey a-

gainst their attempts, was in a skirmish slaine, after he ad raigned not fully three yeeres. V decan then was chosen King of the Mercians. An.Do.824 whose bloud was not downe fince their last losse, neither reuenge forgotten against the East-Angles and therefore the yeere following made strength (sufficient to their feeming) to meet these their enemies. But the State of Heptarchie now drawne to the period, and the supporters thereof weakened by their own diuisions, the Iland declined to a present alteration, & gaue place to a more absolute kind of Monar-chy, that in Egbert the West-Saxon was now begun; who aiding the East-Angles against the Mercians, Ludecan their King fought with no better successe then Bernulf before him had done; whose raigne lasted not fully 2 yeers, nor his memoriall reuiued either in wife or iffue

VV Ithlafe, the sonne of ofwald, the sonne of other, of the Mercian bloud-royall, intruding him- An. Do. 826. felfe (as it feemeth) into the gouernment of Mercia, Wabiafe. was vnexpectedly vanquished by Egbers the Monarch that had affumed from Bernulfe that Kingdome before : him hee made his Subflitute and Tributarie, who so continued to Egbert and Instantic the control of thirteene yeeres, leaving no other relation of his acts. His iffue was Wigmund, the husband of Lady His iffue was Wigmunds to the of Metria, Jid-Organe. the parents of Wystan the Martyr, and of Lady Edburg, maried to one Etheland an Earle in the Prouince

Berthulf vpon the like composition of Tribute, An.Do.839. Saxons foueraigntie, held the kingdome of Mercia as Pertouf. a Substitute, and without any notable reports of his Acts, so raigned the space of thirteene yeeres. At this time the Sea-rouers out of Denmarke, that had often infested this Handwith their many Inuasions, got the head so strong, and wing sofarre, even to the middle part thereof, (as this of Mercia was) that they filled with terror the hearts of the Inhabitants, and stained the foile with the bloud of their fides, which in a most barbarous crueltie daily they shed; whose rage was so great, and mindes so vnsatiable, that Berthulf was enforced to forfake the Country, and in a more prinate estate to secure his owne life. He had a sonne will Me named Berefred, who was the causer of Saint Wystans for of S. wyfung martyrdome.

Byrdred, the last Mercian King, was thereunto de-puted by Ethelwolfe the West-Saxon Monarch, as a An.Do.852. shield of defence against the raging Danes, that made desolations where they came. In continual imploiments against them he spent his time, and that with fuch noble resolutions and manhood, that Ethelwolfe held him worthy of his alliance, and made him his sonne in law, by giuing him Lady Ethelfwith his daughter to Wife, the marriage being solemnized at Chipnham in Wilthire, with great estate. This Burdred with Ethelwolfe, warred against the Britaines with vi-drorie, and he with Alured compelled the Danes under the conduct of Hungar and Vbba, to idiflodge from Nottingham, and depart the Pronince. Yet laftly, after Ment. well. twenty two yeeres raigne, hee was fo ouerlaid with the Pronince their daily supplies, that three of their Kings (as our They returne Writers terme them) whole names were Godrun, Eske- with 3. Kings. tell, and Anmond, wintred at * Ripindon, and fore wafted his Kingdome.

King Burdred at that time distressed, and himselfe not able to withfland their rage, with his wife Queene Ethelswith fled the Realme, and the same yeere in Rome ended his life, and was buried in the Church of our Lady belonging to the English College there erected. His Queene in the habit of a Nume, fifteene yeeres after his death, died at Padua in Italie, and was there honourably buried, the yeere of our Lord eight Padas hundred eightie nine. And now the fatall circle of this Kingdome drawne to the full compasse, staied the hand of all glorious motion from proceeding any further, and with the lor of the reft fell vnder the gouernment of the West-Saxons, after one yeeres vsurpauernment of the Wejt-Sexent, and to do in flate of a king-ition of the Dans when it had flood in flate of a king-dome the space of two hundred and two yeeres, and the space of two hundred and two yeers. In the west of th ended in title and regall authority, the yeere of Christs Incarnation eight hundred eighty fix.



THE

THE KINGDOME OF THE EAST-ANGLE, THE CIRCUIT OF THAT PRO

VINCE, WITH THE SVCCESSION AND ACTS OF THEIR KINGS, SO LONG AS IT STOOD IN THAT REGALL ESTATE, AND VNIILL IT WAS VNITED TO THE WEST-SAXONS.



CHAPTER XI.

The circuit of this Pronince,

An.Do.575

Haft Angles cal-led Pffswes,

Vffa his genea-



He Counties (as we now call them) that were lubiect to this Eaft-Angles Kingdome, were Suffolke, Norfolke, Cambridge-fbire, and the He of Ely. The bounds whereof were limitted in this manner: the East and North sides

were confined by the occan; the West, with Saint Eamunds Ditch, and the South altogether with Effex, and some part of Hert-

The first raiser of the title and State of this Kingdome, was a Saxon Captaine named Vffa, about the yeere of Christs incurnation fine hundred seuentie The first King of the East-Angles, Beds biff. Angle lib.2. Cap. 15. fine, whose renowne was such, that he gaue name not onely to that his alpired Dominion, but a lo from him, the Subjects thereof were a long time after called Pffines: though lastly, it was reduced into the name and Kingdom of the East-Angles. This V ff a (as Florentius the Monke of Worcester hath laid downe) was the sonne of Withelin, and he the sonne of Hrippus, the fonne of Rothmund, the fonne of Trigils, the fonne of Titmon, the fonne of Cafer, the second fonne of Prince woden. His raigne is accounted only feuen yeeres, without any mention of further matter, worthy the recording, and his death to have hapned in the yeare fine hundred eighty one .

Titulus, the second King of the East-Angles, and on-ly sonne of Vsfa that is read of, beganne his raigne

the yeere of Christs Incarnation, liue hundred eigh-

ty three,& continued the same for the space of twen-

ty yeeres. And although the Writers of these times

haue made no further mention of his Acts, yet may

we well suppose that his daies were not altogether so

quietly spent, both in the infancy of that newly cre-

cted kingdom, and when fuch wars were commenced

for the obtaining the whole Iland. His iffue was Red-

wald, that immediatly succeeded him, & from whom

other Kings of that kingdom were lineally desceded.

Court Edwyne with his wife in their Exiles, and affi-

fted him against Ethelfrid King of Northumberland

that fought his life, as before wee haue shewed, and

Edwald, the greatest of all the East-Angles Kings,

An.Do. 582 The fecond King

acts by 1.5.5, the Edit Angles, and Ethelbert of Rest unthe Monar-The thicking chief the Sexuss. He received and Grand Course by the King of the Sexus of the King of the Sexus of the Sex Cap. 9, Self. 7.

hereafter in the fuccession of his Monarchy wee shall haue further occasion. Hee raigned Monarch eight yecres, and King of the East-Anglesthirty one (by the account and computation of the Table annexed to Malmesbury, and others of our English Writers) and died the yeare of our Saluation fix hundred twenty three.

Rpenwald, the younger fonne of King Redwald (Reynhere his elder brother being flaine in battle by Ethelfred, in the quarrell of diftreffed Edwine) (ucceeded his Father in the Kingdom of the East-Angles, the yeer of our Lord God fix hundred twenty foure. He was the first King of that Province, that publikely The first of this professed the Christian Faith, which hee received at proteited the Christian Faith, which hee received at the friendly motion and zealous exhortation of King Edwine of Northumberland; but so much to the discontenument & grudge of the people, as thereupon they rentment & grudge of the people, as thereupon they prefently entred into conspiracy to practife his death, which a Paga Ruffian named Richebert, not long after

most traiterously executed. His raigne is placed in the by a I raise, foresaid Table of our Writers, (as it is compared with His ragne, the other Kings of those times) to extend twelve

yeeres; after whose death, those people returned to their wonted Idolatrie, and for three yeeres continuance embraced their former Gentility, from which

who succeeded him in his Throne, hee hauing no issue, to whom it might be left. Sand by her born to a former husband, whose name An. Do. 636 is vnknowne, was greatly mistrusted by his Father in The fifth King, law, King Redwald, that he went about to aspire his Crowne: the motiues of which suspition, notwithstanding all the endeauours of innocent Sigebert, were

they were reclaimed by Sigebert his brother in law,

still followed with an ennious eye, and his subjectine femblances, as notes of popularity, were euer concei- gainft Redwald, ued to aime at the supreme authority : which blot of icalousie, when it could no otherwise bee wiped out, he abandoned the Court of the King, and Country of his birth, and in France as an exile, all the time of Red- He goeth into wald the Father, and likewise the raigne of Erpenwald the sonne, spent his time in study of good Literature, & contemplatine exercises, where learning the truth of Christs Doctrine, and having received the laver of Baptisme, after the death of this faid Espensiald his allied Brother, returned, and was made King of the Eaft-

This man (faith Beda) following the examples of Bedshift Aug.1. Kkk3

An.Do.624

The Kong Bains

The Subjects re

Sircbert funette

Sigebers with the affiffance of a Eithop doth pre-more relief of and learning.

: France, brought the light of the Gospell into his Dominions, and by the alsoftance of Felix Bifhop of Dunwich, for a more firme plantation thereof, built a Schoole for the education of children, appointing them Schoole-mafters and Teachers after the maner will Lambert in of the Kentish-men ; who are * supposed to hauc at that time the Liberall Sciences professed among them, in their Metropolitane City Canterbury, which was the paterne (faith that Countries Perambulator) that this Sigebert followed in the crection of his; but whether at Cambridge or elsewhere, hee leaueth for Doctor Caim of Cambridge, and M. Key of Oxford, to be disputed of. And indeed Beda assigneth not the place for this foundation, nor once nameth Cambridge, vnlesse you will say, that out of the ruines of Granteester, an ancient Citic decaied in his daies, the same arose, and whereof hee maketh mention in his fourth Booke, vpon this occasion as followeth.

Queene Etheldred (faith he) that had been a Virgin,

wife to Egfrid King of Northumberland the tearme of

twelue yeeres, and Abbeffe of Ely for feuen more, for

Beda hift, Angl.

Gramcefter.

Beds maketh

Mr. Caise and

her reputed holinesse after her death and buriall, was thought worthy by Queene Sexburg her fiftet (who had beene wife to Ercombert King of Kent, and fueceeded her Abbesse in the same Monasterie) to beeremooued out of her wooden Tombe & meane place of buriall, into the Church and richer Monument but for want of stone, which was scarce in those parts. certaine brethren were sent to find out some for that vie, who comming to Grant centrep, a little City left desolate and vninhabited, found by the walles a Tomb of white marble verie faire, and couered with a like frone. This they thought to be found not without miracle, and therefore most fit to intombe her corps, which accordingly they did. But that this had beene the place of Sigeberts Schoole, her mentioneth not. But whether by him or no, wee know it now the other I niverfity of England, a feed-plot of all divine tot of a School and humane Lsterature, and one of those springs whence issue the wholesome waters that doe bedowe The Vaiver Gires both the Church & Common-wealth, both, famous of England, a-boue all other in Europe, for the Arts, for Buildings, and Reuenewes, as their like is not to be found in Europe (faith Peter Martyr) and that most truely. But to returne: Sigebert being wearied with the waighty affairs of this world, laid the bur-Sigebert refig-neth to Egricles, and lineth in a den thereof vpon Egricke his kinfman, and shore himfelfe a Monk in the Abby of Cumbreburge, which himfelfe had built, & wherein he liued, vntill that wicked Penda, the Mercian King, with his heathenish cruelty molested the peace of the East-Angles; who after long refiftance, finding themselues too weake, befought Sigebert, for the better incouragement of their fouldiers, to fhew himselfe in field; which when he refused, by constraint (faith Beda) they drew him forth, where in the midst of them hee was slaine in battle, vsing no other weapon for defence, fauing only a white wand;

when hee had raigned onely three yeeres, and left no

the sonne of Guido, faith Beda, the sonne of Eni, faith

Malmsbury, who was brother to great Redwald; and both of them the fons of Titulus, the fecond King of

that Province. This King, as the other two former

had done, felt the fury of raging Penda, with his mer-

cileffe Mercians, that fore affaulted his Territories

with rapine and spoile. To withstand whose further

proceedings, King Anna drew the ftrength of his Baft-

Angles against them, and encountred Penda in a great

and mortall battle, wherein they were all discomfi-

iffue to furuiue him, that is any where recorded.

againe, and is flaine in battle, His raigne.

He is constrai-

Ericke, cofin to King Sigebert, and by him made King, as wee have faid, was fore molested by the An.Do.633. continuallinuations of Penda, the cruell King of Mer-The fixth King. cis; who lastlie in a set battle slew him with sigebert. King of Mercia. Egrick and Sige-best both flaine about the yeere of Christ his incarnation fixe hindred fifty two. And when himself had raigned 4-yeers, deceased, without mentio either of wife or child, that is read of, further to reusue his memory to posterities. A Non fucceeded King Egricke in the Kingdome of

Athe East-Angles, the yeere of grace fix hundred fortie two, as the next in bloud to Erpinwald, beeing An.D. 642. King. Beda bift. Angl.

ted and himfelfe among them flaine, when hee had | Anna flaine in raigned in continuall trouble the space of thirteene yeeres. His issue were many, and those of great holi nesse or fanctity of life. Whereof Ferminus the cl. Firminus heire dest, and heire apparant, was flaine by Penda in the apparant. fame battle with his Father, and was with him buried in Blidribrugh, now Blibrugh, but afterwards remoued to S. Edmondsbury. His other fonne was Erkenwald, Abbat of Chertfide, and Bishoppe of London, Erkenwa'dAbba that lieth buried in the South Ile, about the Quire in of therefor, and S. Pauls Church, where to this day remaineth a memoriall of him. His daughters were these; Etheldrid the eldelt, was first married vitto a Nobleman, whom | Etheldrid Ab-Beda nameth Tonbert, Gouernor of the Fenny Coun- beffe of \$19. tries of Nothfolke, Huntington, Lincolne, and Cambridge-lbires: and after his death remaining a virgin the was remarried to Egfrid King of Northumberland. with whom likewise she lived in perfect virginity the space of twelue yeeres, notwithstanding his intreaty and allurements to the contrary. From whom lastly the was released, and had licence to depart his Court. vnto the Abbey of Coldingha, where first she was vailed a Nunne vnder Abbesse Ebba, and thence departing, she lined at Ely, and became her selfe Abbesse thereof, wherein laftly fhe died, and was interred; remembred vnto posterities by the name of S. Audrie His second daughter was Sexburg, who married Ercombert, King of Kent, vnto whom the bare two fons and two daughters, as we in that Kingdomes fucces fion haue shewed: after whose death, shee tooke the fion haue lhewed: atter whose geath, mee tooke the habit of a Nunne, and fucceded her fifter Etheldrid, Setherge Abbeffe of Ely, wherin she died and was intered; and beffe of Ely after the fifter. their yongest fister Withgith, was likewise a Menchion with them in the same Monastery, and all of them ca-

nonized for Saints. Ethilburge his third daughter was

ly died. A naturall daughter likewise he had, whose

S. Brigges in France. Such a reputed holineffe was it

held in those daies, not only to be separated from the

accompanying with men, wherunto women by God were created, but also to abandon the Country of

their nativity, and as strangers in forraine Lands, to end the continuance of their lines. Thelherd, the brother of drug, the yere of Christs King of the East-Angles: the which it feemeth he had

King of the East-Angles of his brother, for that hee Incarnation fix hundred fifty foure, was made had assisted Penda in his warres against him; and was the motive (laith Beda) of the warres against Ofwin Bedabift. Angl. King of Northumberland, wherin fiding with the hea- 46.1 . cap . 14. then Penda, he was worthily flaine, the fifteenth day of November, when he had raigned onely two yeeres, His raigne. leaving his name to the blot of infamy, and his Crowne to be possessed by his younger brother. His wife was Herefwith fifter of Hilds, the famous learned Abbesse of Streansbale, and great grand-childe to Ed- wife of Estimbers wyne King of Northumberland, who bare vnto him Aldulfe, Elfwoolfe, and Beorne, all three fucceeding E- Their children

dilwald in the Kingdome of the East-Angles. Delwald the brother of Ethelherd entred his gouernment of the East-Angles the yere of our Lord | An.Do. 656 fix hundred fifty fixe, and continued the fame the pace of nine yeeres, without either mention of any An Do. 664 other memorable act : from whom (as is supposed) issued Ethelred that succeeded King after Bearne.

A Ldulfe, the eldest sonne of Eshelherd and Queene Hereswish, ascerthe death of his vncle King Edelwald, obtained the Kingdome of the East-Angles, and therein raigned without any honour or honourable action by him performed: onely his name and time of his raigne, which was nineteene yeres, is left of him by Writers: and affordeth no further relation of vs here to be inferred, befides his Coine here fer.

Ethiolf the sonne of King Ethelherd, and bother to this last mentioned Aldulfe, began his raigne oner the An.Do.682

made Abbeffe of Berking, neere London, built by her brother Bifhop Erkinmald, wherein fhe liued, and laft-led in the laft-led in

name was Edelburg, that with Sedrido the daughter of Edelburge Abhis wife, were both of them professed Nunnes, and besse of S. Brigger fucceeded each other Abbeffes in the Monaftery of Ecda ib 3. Cap.8.

An.Do. 654





THE SAXON KINGS OF THE EAST-ANGLES. Chap. II. the Kingdome of the Esst-Angles, the yeere of Christ to stand vpon their Guards, and rather to defend

his Incarnation, fix hundred eighty three, and continued in the same, the time of seuen yeeres, without record of any memorable At, Wife, or Ifue, to reuiue his name.

An.Do. 714

An. D. 714. Ethebed the ther

He raigned two

His fonne Sthel-

bert, His wife Leefrun.

Beorne, the yongest sonne of King Ethelherd, succeeded his brother King Elfwolfe in the Kingdom of the East-Angles; no further mention being made of him, his wife, nor liftie, which are al together perished, and laid long since in their graves of oblivion. Ethelred, after the death of his colen Beorne, succeeded him in the Kingdome of the East-Angles, issue ing(as is supposed) from King Edelwald the brother of Ethelherd, and of Anna, both of them Kings in that Prouince. His raigne by writers is faid to bee fiftie two yeeres, which notwithstanding was passed ouer without any memorable note for albeit that his gouernment was long, and the declining Heptarchie not unlikely to have ministred matters of remembrance to posterities, yet is the same passed ouer by the silence of our Writers, and no further mention made of him, belides the education of his yonger fonne Ethelbert, who proued amost worthy King. His wife, and the mother of this vertuous ionne, was Leafrun, faith the Writer of his life, without further mention of her parentage, or other iffue. This king deceased the yeere after Christs nativity, seven hundred forty eight, the same yeere that Ethelbert entred his

to be a Prince religious and charitable, fober, pro-

gation of Quendrid his vnkind (intended)mother in

law, no other occasion ministred, but the greatnes

of his Port, that much in her eyes ouer-heighted her

husbands. His Bride-bed the grave was first at Mer-

den, north from Sutton vpon the River Lug. But af-

terwards vpon repentance, Off removed it vnto Hereford; ouer whom, Milfrid an vnder King of the

Mercians built a moit faire Church in memoriall of

him, which yet beares his name, and is the Cathedral

of her life; notwithflanding fome affirme that thee

was wife to King Kenwolfe, the fucceffor of her bro-

ther Egfrid. This King raigned the space of forty fine

yeeres, as is fet in the Table of our English Writers,

and died the yeare of Christs incarnation seven hun-

dred ninety three, the eighteenth day of May, and his

Kingdome intruded upon by the Mercians, having

had neither wife nor children, that Historians make

mention of: after whose death the Kingdom of the

Esst-Angles was brought to decay, both by the Mer-

cians, West-Saxons, and them of Kent; so that by means

of their violence, that Prouince was destitute of her

owne Gouernours, the space of seventy seven yeeres,

untill laftly the affaults of the Danes, a new-come Guell

and most dangerous Enemie, caused the other Kings

Kingdome of Kent. Ethelbert, the sonne of King Ethelred, after his Fa-thers death was ordained King of the East-Angles, An.D. 740. whose daies of youth were spent in learning and Etbelbert the foureteenth King deeds of charity, and the whole time of his gouernement in continual tranquillity; for hee is recorded

found and wife in counfell. This King being incited Girel Cambrenfu by Offa the Mercian (that still thirsted after great-nesse) to marie Elfryd his daughter, a Lady of great beautie, came vpon that purpose to offa his Court, then feated at Sutton Wallis in the County of Hereford red by Offis King of Mercia, and was by him there cruelly murdered at the infti-

Buried at Mer. After at Here-

of that See. His Bride, Lady Elfrid, much lamenting his contriued murther, withdrew her felf to Crowland in the Fennes, and there vowed chaftitie all the daies Elfrid his elpou-fall yowed chafti-

what they already had gotten, then to fecke inlargement, to the hazard of all:at which time, it is faid one off a, to whom the right of that Crowne belonged, ypon areigned entare troome octonged of the best of the Sepalchre of Christ, and writing in his way a kinsman of his, whose name was Alkmund, arthe Ci-lives of the Sepalchre of Christ, and writing in his way a kinsman of his, whose name was Alkmund, arthe Ci-lives of the Sepalchre of Christ, and writing the Sepalchre of the Sepalchre of Christ, and writing the Sepalchre of Christ, and writing the Sepalchre of Christ, and writing the Sepalchre of Christ, and Sepalchre tie Norhenberge in Saxonie, there made his will, wherin hee adopted young Edmund his heire, the fon of Alkmond: and accomplishing his voiage, in his return died at the Port Saint George, from whence hee fent young Edmund his Ring, and therwith ordained him King of the East-Angles. Alkmund a Prince of great power in those parts, maintained his sons rightfull election, and with a fufficient power fent him to claime the kingdome. These landing in the East of England, at a place called Maydenboure, built a roiall Tower, which hee named, and to this day is called, Hunstantone, situated vpon the North-west point of Norfolke, that beareth likewise his owne name.

L Dmund thus arrived, was as willingly received and by the East-Angles made their king, in whose time An.Do. 870.

Hungar and Hubba, two Danish Captains, with an innumerable multitude of Heathen Danes, entred the Land at the mouth of Hamber, and from thence inua- fin ded Nottingham, Yorke and Northumberland, where (without respect of age or sex) they laid all wast, and left the Land whence they departed like to a desolate Wildernesse. From thence they came with the like furie into Edmunds territories, and facked Thetford a frequent City in those daies: but he not able to withstand their violence, fled into his Castle at Framingham, wherein hee was of them besieged; and lastly, taken (laith Abba Floriacenfis) in a village then called Heglisaune, of a wood bearing the same name, or rather yeelded himselfe to their torments, to saue more Christian bloud, for it is recorded, that because of his Unritian bloud; for it is recorded, that because of his most constant Fath and Profession, those Pagans first bear him with bats, then scourged him with whips, he then the bear him with whips, he that calling upon the name of the bear when the bear him. still calling upon the name of lefus; for rage whereof, they bound him to a flake, and with their arrowes shot him to death; and cutting off his head, contemptuoufly threw it into a bush, after he had raigned ouer the East-Angles the space of sixteene yeeres, having had neither wife nor iffue that is read of. His body and head, after the Danes were departed, were buried Malmes. at the same roials Towne, as Abboterms it, where Si- His talgoe. gebers the East-Anglean King, and one of his predecesfors, at his establishing of Christianity, built a Church, and where afterwards (in honour of him) was built another most spatious, and of a wonderfull frame of Timber, and the name of the Towne, vpon the occa-

the Martyrs Tombe. After the death of this Edmund

the East-Angles Country was possessed by the Danes.

& so continued about some fifty yeers, vntil that Ed

ward furnamed the Elder, expulled these Danes, and

ioined that kingdome a Pronince to the West-Saxons,

after it had stood three hundred fifty three yeeres,

Timber, and the name of the 1 owney, pour the octa-fion of his burial, called wnto this day, Saint Edmonds-bury. This Churchand place, Suenus the Pagan Da-bury. nifb King in impicty and fury burned to aftes. But of Edward, when his sonne Canute had made conquest of this This Church ta Land, and gotten possession of the English Crowne, ground by Sue. terrified and affrighted (as faith the Legend) with a

vision of the seeming Samt Edmund, in a religious deuotion to expiate his Fathers sacrilege, built it anew most sumptuously, enriched this place with Charters & Gifts, and offred his owne Crownevpon Reedified and

The Danes exa

liia

A CATALOGVE OF SVCH BRITISH PRINCES AS WITHSTOOD THE SAXONS

IN THEIR CONQUESTS FROM VORTIGER NE THEIR FIRST MAINTAINER, VNTO CADWALLADER THEIR LAST RESISTER.

CHAPTER XII.

Historio che Sa Xias Heptarchy

The British Op



Ow as we have spoken of euery feuerall Saxon King, that attained vnto, and held poffession of any part in the East & South of this Iland, vntill fuch time as their Crownes were worne by their Con-querors, and the fenenfold divided Heptarchy. vnited into an absolute Monarchy: so by order of His

the forefaid Vortigern (the first subdued by these Sax-ons) vnto Cadwallader the last of those British Princes; who left to them his Land, and went himself to Rome: whose times & stories, according to those Guids that lead vs, wee wil declare, referring the credit thereof to our British Historians; against whom how soeuer some exceptions are, and may be justly taken, yet are they not alrogether to be cast off, in the affaires of these enfuing Princes, especially Gyldas and Ninius, who lived in, and presently after the times of those resisters. Neither is it to be doubted, but that many others there were of that Nation, no leffe carefull for transferring the remembrance of their Ancekors actions to posteritie, (no Nation liuing being more zealously denoted in that kinde,) though their writings haue in Times ruines beene buried, and their remembrances preserved onely by perpetuitie of traditions, and although wee have showed the ancient Coines of the Britaines, and observed a series thorow the of the Britaines, and observed a teries that I leave Romanes succession: yet be not offended, that I leave onely Blanks for these latter Princes, as also the first Saxons, wanting the Monies of their owne feuerall Mintes.

please, behold the Catalogue of their Kings, from

flory it is required, that their oppoicrs (the Britain) follong as they kept their ground, and ftood in defence of their owne rightful inheritance, should be shewed: who with as great a disdaine, and valorous resistance, under-went the yoake of the Saxons subjections, as their ancient Ancestors had endeauoured to cleere themselues from the chaines of the Romans captinity. And vntill God and deftinie withdrew from them the hand of defence, they mated the Saxons in all their delignes. For albeit that the Fomans had robbed the Land of her strength, and the aspired Vortigern, called in these Strangers for his defence: yet their purposes being wisely perceiued, the execution therof was as presently practised, and as eagerly purfued, whilest the pillars (that supported the frame of their gouerment) stood vpon their owne Bafes. But the ground-work failing, and those props not many, the waight of all, fell vpon some few, whose acts and manly relistance (Christ assisting) shall further bee related, as time shall bring them to the yeeres of their aduentures, and carry our History thorow the affaires of their times. Meane while, as we have recorded the names of their Ancestors, and worthy forerunners, the relisters of the Romans: so now if you

Such therfore as I have found of any Kings stamp, raigning whilest the Land was divided and enjoied amongst them, I have in the margent of their remembrances affixed, with the Armes attributed to every feuerall kingdome: and hence will observe the same order, without any invention or fained inscription: which howfocuer wee want to furnish their successions, yet this am I fure of, no Nation in Europe can flew the like, or can come to so true a series of their Soueraignes Coines, as England is able at this day

Donigers the first

VORTIGERN. 1.



Vortigern among the many molestation of the Seets and Piets, was ordained the supreme Gouernor of

these affaires; and to that end, with the Britaines full consent was elected their King. For as touching that Monkish Constantine, the sonne of Constantine, who is faid to be the brother of Aldreonus, King of Little Britaine in France, fent for and made King by these Britaines, whose simplicitie this Vortigern is said to abuse, and lastly to cause his murther and death; I rather thinke the storic to be the same that happened about fortie yeeres before, in the daies of Honorius the Emperor; when Constantius among other Conspirators, was raifed vpon a hopefull expectation conceived in his name.

This Constantius indeed had a sonne that bare his name, a man of a soft spirit, and no deepe reach, and therefore in his youth was made a Monke, But his Father risen to his aspiring honour, created him first his Cafar, and next Augustus, till Fortune turned those smiles into frownes, and stained their purple robes in both their own blouds. For not only the same names induceth this doubt, but the place, which was Winchefler, and Abbey Amphibilus, where this Imperial Monke was shorne, doth not a little consirme the fame; the remaines of which Colledge, by that ftrong and thicke wall standing to this day at the West gate of that Cathedrall Church, doth not a little confirme. But wanting better directions to our proceedings, we must follow for these times men of latter yeeres, and not without some suspect of vncertaintie.

The rather, for that the Saxons as then the chiefe Actors in this Land, have purposely concealed all Victors and victories against themselves; neither but sparingly haue recorded their owne.

This Fortigern, howfoeuer attaining the Crowne.

was ouer-awed (laith Ninius) by the Picts & Scots, flood

in feare of the Roman forces and dread much the returne of Aurelius Ambrosius, with his brother V ter, surnamed Pen-

dragon : and therefore wanting strength of his owne

ries against themselves The cause of

cealed all vifto

to maintaine his standing, sent for the Saxons, as wee have faid, He (faith the British Story) was Earle of Corn-Reda lib.s. cap.14. wall, of an honourable Familie and noble descent, his

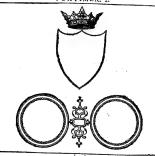
Lady enery way answerable to both; by whom hee had three sonnes, Vortimer, Catigern, and Pascentius. His fecond wife, or rather Concubine, (hauing caft and wife. off this first) was Rowena; the daughter of Hengrist, Rand Higden II. which Pagan mariage product not only the bane of the Land, but fo ruinated the Church of Christianity, that a Provinciall Councell of the Britaines was alfembled in Ann. 470, to repaire those things that this

mariage had decaied. By this Heathen Damofell he had a daughter, who His third wife (against the law of God and Nature) was his third wife, that Kings (as he pretended, to excuse his mcest) might daughter. be descended from the right issue of Kings, vpon whom he begot his sad lamenting sonne Faustus, a vertuous Impeofthose impious parents, that ipent his life in a foliarire place neere to the River Lynterreng, as wee haue faid; who abandoning the companie of men, among those mountaines serued God in continual teares and praiers, for remission of the fault committed in his incestuous generation, for the recalling of his parents to a better life, and for the restitution of

his Country to her former libertie. This Vortigern raigned first sixteene yeeres, and This Vortigern raigned first fixteene yeeres, and then deposed for his fauours to the Saxons, was retained in during all the saxons of the sax ned in durance all the raigne of Vortimer his sonne, af- Vorigen dep ter whole death reestablished, but oppressed by his fedandimpri-Saxons, and purfued by Aurelius, he withdrew himfelfe into Wales, and among those wast mountaines built a Hessiethine Castle by Merlins direction, wherof we have spoken, and more we would speake, were those fantasticke fe

and more we would feake, were thole fantatticke the dison underfer with any propos of likelihood ar truth, which Eand, of Cheffer in his dises werely reiceded. In this Cattle, y origine with his inceftuous wife, the checondly raigned the figure of the years was contained to after, by the inference plant of the checond was contained to after, by the inference plant of the work was contained to after, by the inference plant of the work was contained to after, by the inference plant of the work was contained to after the plant of the work was contained to the work was a support of the w God, by fire from heaven, as some have written; or Red. High. S. c. l. else kindled by Aurelius and Vier, as his Ministers to execute his wrath,

VORTIMER, 2.



An.Do.45 Varrimer the fe. cond relifter of the Saxons.

Pareimer how against the Saxons. Fourechiefe facceffe of the

Tortimer, the eldeft fon of King Vortigern, through the abuse of his fathers gouernment, for which he was deposed by his owne subjects, was erected King of the Britaines the yeere from Christs birth 454. a man of great valour, which altogether hee imploied for the redreffe of his Countrey, according to the testimonie of William Malmesbury, whose words the tellimonie of william at sinesowy, whose wous are these: wortimer (saith see) thinking not good to dif-femble the master, for that see saw similest, and Countrie daily surprised by the crast of the English, set his full pur-pose to drive them out, and from the sewenth yeere after their first entrance, for twenty yeeres continuance fought many Battles with them, and foure of them with great puis. Sance in open field; in the first whereof, they departed with like fortune, and losse of the Generals brethren Horsa and

Catigern: in the other three the Britaines went away with victorie, and folong untill Vortimer was taken away by fa-tall death.

Huntington, Monmouth, Randulphus, and Fabian, name both the places and successe of those Battles: The first was in Kent, and vpon the Plaine neere vnto Ails ford, where the memorial of Catigern to this day Bede lib. 1. ca. 15. remaineth; & Horsted doth as yet relish of Horsa there interred. The second Battle was fought likewise in Kent at Crocanford, now Craford, where many periffi- The place of the ed as well Britaines as Saxons. The third was at Wep-Pold Fleet, with great loffs to the Britisms: and the fourth you Calmere, where many of the Sexons after long and fore fight, were flaine, and more drowned in flight, and laftly driven into the Ile of Thanet, their

The place of the

Booke 7.

first assigned habitation, (if not ouer the Seas) so that fmall hope rested for them so long as this valiant Vortimer liued, who had now dispossessed them of all dently affirmeth.

their footing in the Continent, and often affailed them in the Ile of Tannet likewise, as Fabian confi-

But destiny going forward for the downfall of Britaine, remooned these rubbes out of her way : for Rowena, the mother of the Britaines mischiefe, and the Vartimer made maintainer of the Saxons residence, found the meanes to make this worthy Vortimer away, and by poilon caused the end of his life, after hee had valiantly raigned the space of foure yeeres; all which time, by the testimonie of an old Chronicle that Fabian had seene, of his raigne. Fabras, Chro. Varigern the father remained in durance, and under par.5.cap.89. assigned Keepers in the Citic Caerlegion, now Chester, and so demeaned himselfe towards his sonne (then

his Soueraigne) in dutifull obedience and faithfull counsell, that hee wonne agains the hearts of the Britaines, and was againe re-established their It is recorded by Ninius, that after his last victorie

ouer the Saxons, he caused his Monument to be ere-

Redat the entrance into Tanet, and in the same place) of that great ouerthrow ,which by the faid Author is called Lapin Tituli, of vs the Stonar, where for certaine it seemes hath been an hauen. In this Monument hee commanded his body to be buried, to the further terror of the Saxons, that in beholding this his Trophy, their spirits might bee daunted at the remembrance of their great ouerthrow. As Scipio Africanas conceited the like, who commanded his Sepulchre to be fo fet, that it might ouerlooke Africa, suppoling that his very Tombe would be a terror to the Carthaginians. But how that defire of Vortimer was performed, I finde not, but rather the contrary: for an old Manuscript I have, that conidently affirmeth him to be buried in London : yet others from Ninius the disciple of Eluodugus, hold the place to bee Lincolne. But howfouer his graue is forgotten, yet let this bee remembred, that Sigebertus hath written of him, that rememorecy, than a secretion that whiteen of mini, that is, After the Saxons (laich he) whose drift was not onely to our-runne the Land with violence, but also to creek their owne Lawes without elemencie, he reon approved in the wine Lawes without cumentic, never flored the Christian Religion then sovely decaied, and new built the Churches that those enemies had destroied.

AVRELIVS AMBROSIVS. 3.



An.Do.466.

Galfrid Mon.

Brda bift. lib, 1,

Grace Caxten.

A V relius Ambrosius, verily descended of that Con-flantine who in the fourth Consulthip of Theodofine the younger, was elected here in Britaine, onely in hope of his luckiename, fucceeded Vortigern the Father in the Gouernment of Britaine, and Vortimer the fonne, in affection and defence of his Country. He with V ter (faith Geffrey Monmouth) when their brother Confiantine was murthered by Vortigers, fled into France, where they remained the yeeres of his first raigne; whose returne (as we have heard from Ninius) he greatly feared, and whose force at his last he felt to his fmart. For having againe refumed his Crowne. he liued in his old finnes, and fuffered the Saxonsto be Lords of his Land: to preuent which (faith Beda De LOTIS OF IB LAILL: TO PIEUEIL WHELH (MILLI DEAD From Gyldae) the Britaines by little and little begannes to take fix ength, and with fome counges to come for the of their Cause; who with one uniforme confent, called to Codfor his heavenly help. They had (faith he for their Captaine a Roman called Ambrosius Aurelianus, a gentle natured man, which onely of all the bloud of the Romans remained then Which oney of all the counce of the Komans remained the adine, his parents being flaine, which bere the name of King of the Country. This man being their Leader, provoked the Victors to the fight, and through Gods assistance atchiened the victory. From that day forward now the Britaines, now the Saxons ded prevaile, untill the yeere that Bathe was befieged, which was fortie foure yeeres after their fuft comming into the Iland.

His first expedition (as our British Historians re port) was against Vortigern, and his Castle in Wales, wherein that incestuous King was consumed to ashes

by lightning from heauen, as we haue faid: and then following the Saxons, made toward Torke, & at Maef bel beyond Humber, encountering Hengift, became his Victor: vnto whose mercy (say they) his sonne occa yeelded himselfe, and obtained in free gift the Country in Gallaway in Scotland for him and his Saxons, Bur try in casespay in certains for minimum its axions, but the his affaires thus profpering against the common Enemie, was enuied at by Pafeatius, the youngest son of King Portigern, who not able either to mate the Saxons, or after his Brethrens deaths to recouer the Kingdome to himfelfe, ambitiously fought to prefer his base humor before the recourry of his Countries libertie, which then lay gored in her owne bloud. For inserties when then ay goven in ner owne bloud. For having gotten the aid of Gillamare King of Ireland, whether hee had fled vpon the death of his Father, and now returned into the west of Wales, first indammaged the Citie of S. Danids, and thence proceeded with fire and fword. Awelius then ficke in the Citie of Winchester, sent his brother Vier to withstand his force, who flew both Pascentins and the Irish King his partaker, in a fet & fore battell fought betwirt them, But before this battell, Pafeentius had fent a Saxon, whose name was Eopa, in shew a Britaine, and in habit whose name was zepa, in new a privation, and in naon a Physitian, to minister posion in stead of physicke, which according was effected with Ambrosus his

Vnto this Aurelius Ambrofius is ascribed the creetion of that rare and admirable monument, now called Stonhenge, in the same place where the Britaines had been trecherously slaughtered and interred, whose

Chap. 12.

of the Monu-ment of State-benge.

Ancient fashio ned Armor found at State-berge-

OPPOSERS OF THE SAXONS. counted for one of the Wonders of this Iland, and are

manner and forme in our draught of Wiltfbire wee haue inferred. The matter being Stones of a great and huge bigneffe, fo that fome of them contains The description twelue tunne in waight, and twenty eight foote or more in length, their breadth seuen, and compasse fix-teene. These are set in the ground of a good depth, and fland in a round circle by two and two, having a third flone somewhat of lesse quantitie laid gate-wise ouerthwart on their toppes, faffaed with tenons and mortailes, the one into the other; which to fome feeme fo dangerous, as they may not fafely be paffed vider, the rather for that many of them are fallen downe, and the rest suspected of no sure foundation : notwithstanding, at my being there, I neither saw cause of such feare, nor vncertaintie in accounting of their numbers, as is faid to be. The stones are gray, but not marbled, wherein great holes are beaten euen by force of weather, that ferue for Rauens and other birds to build in, and bring foorth their young. The compaffe, in forme almost round, or rather like vnto a horse-shooe, with an entrance in vpon the east-side. Three rowes of stones seeme formerly to have beene pitched, the largest outwards, and the least inwards: many whereof are now fallen downe : but those that fland, thew to faire an aspect, and that so faire off, that they seeme to the beholders to bee some Fortresse or strong Castle. A Trench also is about them, which hath beene much deeper; and voon the plaines adioining, many round copped hilles, without any fuch trench, (as it were cash vp out of the earth) stand like great hay-cockes in a plaine meadow: In these, and thereabouts, by digging haue beene found pecces of ancient fashioned armour, with the bones of men, whose bodies were thus couered with earth that was brought thither by their wel-willers and friends, euen in their head-peeces; a token of loue that then was v-

fed, as fome imagine. This Trophey, Aurelius Ambroftus (in memorial) of the Britaines massacre) erected, and is worthily ac-

in the verses of Alexander Necham called The Giants Daunce, wherein this Ambrofius was interred after hee had raigned thirtie two yeeres, and wherof the towne Ambresbury beares the name. Others report, that the Britaines crected this most stately Sepulcher ouer the body of Ambrofus there flaine by the fword of his cnemies, that his Countries loue; in such a costly peece of worke, might remaine vnto posterities in this, the Altar of his vertue and manhood : for Paulus Diacomus faith, that this man, in succouring his decaied Countrie, tooke upon him the Imperiall Robe, and against the violent rage of those German enemies; oft times overthrew their pufant armies, but was lastly staine by them open the Plaines of Salesburie. I cannot with filence let paffe the ridiculous reports of the bringing of the Stones out of Africke into Ireland, and from thence, vnder the conduct of rier the brother of Ambrofius, vnto this Plain, Guali amb, by the industrious meanes of Merlin, surnamed Ambrofe, borne in the ancient City Merdbyn, and as Hum- Breuisty of Bri frey Lhuydlaith, of a noble virgin, whose father, for his skill in the Mathematicks, and wonderfull knowledge in all other kinde of learning, was by the rude common people reputed to be the sonne of an Incubus, or a male Divell, which in the similitude and likenesse of men doe wse carnally to companie with women. But how this may agree with his divine mouth, that telles vs the Spirits have nei- Luke 24 39. ther flesh nor bones; and the whole Scriptures, that man is carnally begotten, conceiued and born, I leave for others further to dispute. Only I know, that such begettings as Merlines is reported to bee, without father, and Simon Magua alfo, that before him would needs be the fonne of a Virgin, doe not a little contra-

nation foure hundred ninety feuen.

dict our Christian Profession, who acknowledge onely the conception of Christ to be conceined without the feed of man, or of finne. But to our putpose: Ambrofius Aurelius (by Panninius accounted the last Emperour of the British bloud) is said to raigne in Britaine ence of his thirty two yeeres, and to die in that of Christs Incar-

315

VTERPENDRAGON. 4



An,Do.498. Mat.Westminster.

VTer, furnamed Pendragon, the brother of Ambrofius, succeeded him both in valour, and in the Gouernment of Britaine. His entrance was with troubles against the Saxons, who under the leading of Eske and Octa, the fonnes of King Hengist, had passed with spoile to the Citie Yorke, whither this new-made Generall prefently repaired, and giuing them battell, with the discomfiture of the whole Army, tooke both the brethren prisoners, and committed them to Gafe custodie

But the Britaines (faith Boetius) becomming diffoiall to their Prince, scidome assisted him with preuenting counsell : and the Prince enamored upon the

Duke of Cornwals Wife, consulted more with Merline to transforme himfelfe from himfelfe, then to giue direction against the common enemie. For comming to Tindagell Castle in Cornwall, possessed by Gor-lois, Duke of that Prouince, beheld (in his eye) the Paragen of Nature, which was Lady I gren, his Dutches die Jgron, and wife. Vter, whose thoughts till then had bin free, and from his childhood had ever followed Mars in the field, was now furprifed fo far with her love, that his Shield and Armes were both neglected and vnworne, and all his thoughts fet on worke to purchase his most wished desire; which lastly, by Mertine and Maguek was effected, and that after this manner (if we LII I

Geffey Mann.

quered Rome, and thereof were Emperours, and that they had and held I shall have your z. Goddie grace. Whereby

is manifest his bloud was from the Romans. Let not

therefore any of our Britaines take exceptions against

An anciene M

will beleeue him of Monmouth, who is the reporter.)
His fuires and hopes failing (faith he) to win her vnto dishonor, Merline altogether new-moulded the shape of King Vier, and printed in his face the feature of Gorlois her owne Lord, by which meanes, and without suspect the King dishonourably violated this Ladies chastitie, in which Bed of deceit, the famous Arthur was begot. The captine Captaines Eske and Octa in these loose times of his love, gat loose from their Keepers, and with their ratling armour roused Vter from this wanton Lullaby; who with troopes of strength, and trumpets of defiance, met these Sax-ons face to face in the field, where betwirt them was fought a most bloudy battell, and that even almost to the last stroke, and wherein, if farall destine had withdrawne her hand, the Iland had been rid of these Intruders for euer. For therein (fay our Authours) the Saxons perished by the Britaines swords; vpon whose points also Eske and Octa paid their escapes with the offe of their lines. This field was at Verolam, whither Vter ficke, and in his Horse-litter, was borne among his Army, and after long and fore fiege, wonne from them that Citie. Finally, when this King had raigned the space of eighteene yeeres, he died by poison put

into a well, whereof viually he dranke, and was buried at Stonhenge with his brother Ambrofius.

Of his furname Pendragen, these supposals are Ot nis aurname renaragom, theie supposais are made: Athis natiuitie (lay lome) appeared a sierie Comet, in some part resembling a Dragon Head: where upon that great reputed Prophet Merime, attributed this heatenly Meteor vnto this Princely new-borne Babe, and gaue him the name of Vter-Pendragon. Others for his ferpentine wifdome, derine the furname of this Serpents Head, who like vnto that of Dan, bit Gen. 49.17. the Horse heeles, so that the riders fell backward. For in all his watres against the Saxons, hee was most fortunate and victorious, with their great ouerthrowes. But others will have him so named from his Royall But comes was ever before him, wherein was portra-famen, born eucer before him, wherein was portra-ed a Dragon with a Godden Meda, of which Standard fince, neighbour Nations have had good experience, and in far Country it hash been diplaced in the caule and in far Country it hash been diplaced in the caule for the terror of the Pagan, as in Syris by that inuincible English King, Richard the first, surnamed Cur-de-lion; in Scotland and Wales by that conquering Prince Edward the first, and the same as yet is in field borne for an Imperial Standard in our English

Chap. 12.

lahu Roufe.

OPPOSERS OF THE SAXONS. but as it seemeth, not any of ancient credit, so many toies and tales hee every where interlaceth out of his owne braine, wherewith hee was charged while himfelfe liued, infomuch as he is now ranged among those Writers whom the Koman Church hath censured to be

me for this, neither that I enlarge not his fame, by the enlargement of his Empire in Russia, Lapland, and in making Norway his Chamber of Britaine, as if that This hurt therefore those ouer-zealous Monkes hane done to the Subject whereof they wrote, that Kingdome and Title should bee given him by the through an ouer-much conceited opinion, with the Pope, that indeed cuts large thongs out of other mens vertue and fame of the person, they have mingled such matters as may justly be rejected, whereby their Leather: his Conquests of thirty Kingdomes, and killing of Denabus the huge Spanish Giant, & his combat worths are not only depriued of their truly-delerued honours, but which more is, euen their persons suspewith Frolo Gouernor of France, and with Lucius Hiberus the Roman Legate, whose slaine body hee sent to cted to be nought elfe but fictions, as Hercules in Ouid, the Senate for the tribute of Britame by them demanor Hellor in Homer. And so hath Geffrey done by this ded : feeing thatothers before mee, farre more ripe most worthy Prince Arthur, whose warres against the Historians, haue made both doubts and objections Saxons for defense of this Iland, he hath enlarged with against them. And therefore I conclude with this Arthe Conquests of other Kingdomes and Countries, thur, as Saint Augustine with the Athenians, whose men layed de stait. (faith he) were euer greater infame then in deeds. And Du. 100.100.100. wherein he neuer came : which hath made not onely his Acts to be doubted of, but even his person to bee with Ninius will end with his faying 3 Arthurus pugna called in question, whether any such Arthur euer rubat contra illos in diebus illis; & licet multi ipso nobilioled in Britaine. Yet with better regard to the Recorres essent, ipse tamen duodecies Dux belli fuit, Viders of his spreading same, we grant both the man, and ttorque bellorum : Arthur made warre against them in many honorable parts in him, though not in the like those daies; and though many were more noble then be, manner as they have laid them downe. Neither are yet was hee twelue times Generall in the Field, and returwe straied so farre from the steps of credulitie, that we ned Conquerour. But more constant is the memorie of can beleeue no more then wee see, or that seeing, bee his death, and place of his buriall, both which are refore-stalled with a prejudicate opinion : for though ported .vpon warrantable credit : for Mordred the we consent not to the fables of Homer, neither to the Hom Illad lib.e. ionne of Lothe, whereof wee haue spoken, affecting inventions that Euripides and Sophocles made upon the the Crown, you a pretence of right from King/ter, and supposed bastardise of Arthur, gaue many ac-tempts, through the aid of his Picts, and assistance of Battles of Tree, yet weedenie not but that there were Warres and Battles at Trey, wherein many Martiall acts yndoubtedly were performed: neither doubt wee of the Sacons, to dispossesse him of that wherein he was his person, as Seneca seemeth to doe of Impiters, but feated : and laftly at " Kamblan or Cambula in Cornwall acknowledge it with reuerence for truth, yet with this (faith Leland) this British Heestor encountring Mordred, slew him out-right, and received of him his owne deaths referuation, that all is not Gospell which is written in Greeke. And had there not beene a truth of things wound. The witnesse of this Field as yet are those whereupon Poets made their fables, there had beene peeces of Armour, horse-harnesse, and other habiliat this day no fables of Poets in the world. And as ments of Warre, which are daily digged up in tillage Geffrey wondreth that neither Gyldas nor Beda doe belle wonderen that nether vysas hur seas doe mention Arthur nor his great deeds, so saith Randulphus, may we at Geffrey, that hath augmented them about the pitch of credulitie. But for the truth of this of the ground; vnleffe those reliques of Battle be the scales of that fight which Marianus writeth to have Marianus Scotte beene in this place betwixt the Britaines and Saxons, in the yeere of our Lord eight hundred and twenty. Prince, besides a Charter exemplified under the scale If then it bee true that Arthur heere died, this place of King Edward the Third, wherein mention is made we may lay feemeth to be confectated vnto Mars: for of King Arthur, to have beene a great Benefactour to indagell cafile, standing hard by, first brought into the Abbey of Glastenbury, who as Iohn Rouse reporteth, had given Bren-march and other Demaines, to the vathe world this glorious Prince, for one of her nine Worthies, and Cambula againe received his last bloud. lue of fiue hundred Markes yeerely, to the faid Mona-But from this place he was carried vnto Glastenburie

fterie, His Armes (being an Escocheon, wheron a Croffe, with the Virgin Mary bearing Christ in her armes) cut in stone, and standing ouer the first Gate of entrance as yet, is said to be the Armer of that Abbey. And Iofeph, the indicious Monke of Excester, who followed King Richard the First in his warre for the Conquest

of the Holy Land, in his poeticall verses extolleth Arthur with Alexander, Cafar, and Hercules; yea and Ni-nius, farre his ancient, calleth Arthur an Iron Mall, that both bruised and brake the Lions iawes asunder. Therefore of his person we make no doubt, though his acts haue beene written with too lauish a pen; neither consent we with those Historians that naturalize him for a Britaine, seeing that Ninius, Beda, Malmesbu-rie, and himselse seeme to speake the contrarie: for Ambrofius being the brother of Vter Pendragon, as we already from Beda have shewed, was a Captaine defeended from the bloud of the Romans, whose parents faith Ninius, had worne the Purple Robe, and both of them the sonnes of Constantine, whose father in Bri-

mans, Arthur not only denied them Tribute, but also

threatned to haue a Tribute from Rome : for in his

Letters to that end fent vnto the Senate, thus in an

old Manuscript we finde it indired : V nder stand among

you of Rome, that I am King Arthur of Britaine, and freely

it hold, and shall hold; and at Rome hastily will I bee, not to

giue you truage, but to have truage of you : for Constantine

that was Helenes sonne, and other of mine Ancestors con

in Somerfet-flure, where he died the one and twentieth of May, in the yeere of our Saluation fine hundred Walforner. An of May, in the yeere of our saturation nue nundred forty and two, after he had most victoriously raigned without the con twenty fix yeeres. His body was there buried, and fix tinuance of his hundred yeeres after was taken vp, and found vpon this occasion: When Henry the second, and first Plantagenet, had swaied the English Scepter to the last of his raigne, it chanced him at Pembrooke to heare fung to the Harpe certaine Ditties of the worthy exploits and acts of this Arthur, (by a Welfh Bard, as they were ter-med, whose custome was to record and sing at their Feafts the noble deeds of their Ancestours) wherein mention was made of his death, and place of buriall. designing it to be in the Church-yard of Glastenburie. and that betwixt two Pyramides therein standing: whereupon King Henry caused the ground to be dig-ged, and at seven foot depth was found a huge broad stone, wherein a leadden Croffe was fastned, and in that fide that lay downeward, in rude and barbarous letters (as rudely fet and contriued) this inscription taine against Honorius the Emperour had put on the written vpon that fide of the Lead that was towards faid Robe. And by his naturall descent from the Ro-

HIC IACET SEPVLTVS REX AR-TURIUS IN INSULA AVALONIA. Heere lieth King Arthur buried in the Ile of Aualonia

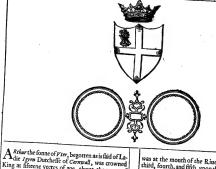
And digging nine foot deeper, his body was found in the trunke of a Tree, the bones of great bignesse, and in his scull perceived ten wounds, the last very great, and plainely feene. His Queene Guineuer, that had beene neere kinswoman to Cador Duke of Cornwall, a

Geffrey, &c.

John Harding.

Pendragon the his raigne.

KING ARTHUR. f.



An.Do. 5 16. Matth.Heftm.

Scotia Chron.

King at fifteene yecres of age, about the yecre of Christ fine hundred and fixteene; or as Matthew of Westminster hath it, fine hundred and eighteene. His prosperous entrance was enuied at by Lothe King of the Picts, and by Couran King of the Scots, who had married his owne Aunts, Anna and Alda, the two fifters of Amorofe and Vter, each of them expecting the Crowne before him, through the opinion and repute of his bastardie, especially Lothe, who had if-tue by Anna, Mordrad, and Gawan: the latter of which spent his life in the cause of that quarrell. His first proceedings were against the common enemie the Saxons, whose Captaine Colgerne, he chased from Northumberland into Yorke; which Citie likewise he girt with a strait siege, notwithstanding Colgerne thence escaped into Germany, and of King Cherdick got fuccour for his Saxons, who with seven hundred faile arrived in Scotland. Arthur advertised of his great power, railed his fiege, and drew towards London, and thence fent for aid to his Nephew Honel, King of Little Britaine in France, who came himselfe in person to ioyne with his Vncle.

Thefe from South-kampton marched to Lincolne, which Citie Cherdlek had firongly befleged, but was thence forced by Arthurs conquering fword. Twelue battelshe fought against these Saxons (as Ninius recordeth) with great manhood and victorie. The first

was at the mouth of the River Gleyne: the second, third, fourth, and fifth, vpon the Banks of Deuglasse, that, touth and men, vpointie Danks of Dongaspe, in the Countie of Lineux: the fixth vpoin the River Bassus, the seventh in the wood Calidon; the eighth paging; the remains in the wood canaon; the eight neere to the Castle Guynien; the ninth in Wales, at the Towne Cairelien; the tenth at Trachenrith, or Rithewode vpon the Sea fide : the eleventh vpon a hill named Agned Cathergonien; and the twelfth at Bathe, or med Agned Cathergomen; and the twentul at 100,005, 04.

Bathers-fill, where the Britaines (as Beda faith) gaue the Beda 16th, Angl.

Bathers-fill, where the Britaines (as Beda faith) gaue the Beda 16th, Angl.

Bit. 1897.18. port) happened fortic foure yeeres after the Saxons heft arrivage into Britaine, the yeere wherein himfelfe

Of Arthurs successe both at home and abroad, his great magnificence in Court and Country, his Banners, and foure Golden Swords borne before him, his Round Tables, and challenges of Martiall Honour, let Monmouth the Writer, Newbery the Relifter, and Leiland Liland, Liland the Maintainer, be heard for me. But certaine it is (by the report of Malmesbury) that Arthur was a Prince more worthy to be advanced by the truth of Records in warmore worsen so be aumanced of the trust of accords in war-rantable credit, then by fables fandalized with poeticall scrious and hyperbolical fallboods. Whose Banner was so often spread for the cause of Christianitie, and defense of his Countrey, being the only proppe that wheld the same. And lamentable it is, that the same of this puissant Prince had not beene sounded by a more certaine Trumpet: for to fay the truth of his Writer even in a Oftenras An

Matth, Weffm,

word, hee was well skilled in Antiquities of tradition, Monmouth.

The like treffes of haire my leffe faw in a coffin digged vp in an old houle neere Paule in Landon, very beautiful? in thew, but be-ing touched, was nothing but duft.

Lady of passing beautie lay likewise by him, whose treffes of haire finely platted, and in colour like the gold seemed perfect and whole vntill it was touched, but then (bewraying what all beauties are) shewed it selfe to be dust. Giraldus Cambrensts, a worthy Author and an eie-witnesse, is the reporter of this finding of

Arthurs bones; and the Croffe of Lead, with the Infeription, as it was found and taken off the stone, was kept in the Treasurie or Reuester of Glastenburie una Ston. Church, faith Stowe, till the Suppression thereof in the raigne of King Henry the eight, whose forme and rude letters we have here expressed to thy sight.

Book. 7.



Arthurs bones

The bones of King Arthur, and of Queene Guineuar his wife, by the direction of Henry de Bloys, Ne-phew to King Henry the second, and Abbat of Glaflenbury, at that prefent were translated into the great new Church, and there in a faire Tombe of Marble his body was laid and his Queenes at his feet; which

noble Monument among the fatall ouerthrowes of infinite more, was altogether raced at the dispose of some then in Commission, whose too forward zeale, and ouer hastic actions in these behalfes, hath left vnto vs a want of many truths, and cause to wish that some of their imployments had bin better spent.





An. D. 542. Brute books.

Conflantine the some of Cador Duke of Cornwall, and cosen to King Arthur by his alliance in mariage, at his death was appointed by him to succeed in his Dominions, and most joifully received of the Commons, as the man, in the opinion of this worthy elector and themselves, accounted most fit to defend elector and the minerales, accounted most nerto determine the Land from the many oppressions of the Saxons, who now beganne to ipreade the wing as farre as to Type in the North, and to fet downe the limits of their

feuerall Kingdomes; which notwithstanding, these strangers daily enlarged vpon the home-bred Inhabitants, the civill warres of the Britaines giving way to the fame, and that not onely among themselves, but by the Pists also, in the behalfe of the two sonnes of Mordred, that fought to dispossesse him of the Crown. In which quarrel many battles were fought, but with such successe to the attemptors, that these two Competitors were forced for refuge into London and Win-

chefter, whither Constantine pursued them, they taking Sanctuarie in the Churches, and not farre from the Altars he flew them : for which deede, the Prieft Gyldas that flourished in those daies, in his innettine reprehen-

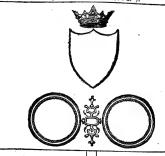
In his Booke De fions thus writeth : Britaine hath Kings (laith hee) but excidio Britan, Hum.Lluyd,Bre. Brit. they are Tyrants: Iudges it hath, but they are wicked, pilling and harming the innocent people; reuenging and defen-ding, but whom? Such as be guilty and robbers. They have many wines, yet breake they wedlocke; many times swearing, yet periure themselues; vowing, but for the most part with dissembling lies; warring, but still maintaining uniust and civill broiles; abroad pur suing theeues, and yet at home cherish them, even at their owne Tables, and sometimes also reward them. They give large almes indeed, yet heape they up finnes high as the Mountaine. They fit in the Seat of sentence, yet seldome seeke the rule of right iudgement, de-spising the humble and innocent persons, and ektolling up to Heauen proud and bloudie Murderers, Theenes, and Adulterers, yea and if he would permit them, the very enemies of ler's ; yes anas y new woula permut norm, yor very enermice of God. Many they keepe in prifor, and load them with irons, more to ferm their owne purpofes, then for any guilt in the perfor, taking folemn O aths before & open the Altars, and yet defin fe they the Altars, as altogether wile, and but fithic

Of this hainous and wicked offense, Constantine
the tyrannicall whelpe of the Lionesse of Deuon-shire is not
ignorant, who this yeere, after the receiving of his dreadfull

Oath, whereby he bound himfelfs, that in no wife he should hurt his Subices, (God fust, and then his Oath, with the company of Saints, and his owne mother being present) did natwithstanding in the reverend laps of both his Mothers, the Church, and her by nature, and that under the vesture the Charte, maker by nature, and that maker the volume of an holy doked, deasure with fived and flears, in deal of itests, the tender fairs and the cutvaline of rowe children of paths and kingly race, and libraring of their two flations, of noble and kingly race, and libraring of their two flations, nours, yea, and that (as I faid) before the facerd afters; the Armeter of which terforing felaines, may frestend the to adject at kingle laws with meapons (which few in short all laws and and the same and the sa dates handled more valiantly then they) but stretched forth to God, and to his Altar, in the day of Indgement shall fet up the renerend ensignes of their patience and faith at the Gates of the Citie of Christ, which so have concred the seat of the Celestall Sacrifice, as it were with the red Manile of heir cluttered bloud

These things hee did not after any good deeds done by him deserving praise: for many yeeres before overcome with the often and changeable filths of adulterie, and forsaking his lawfull wife (contrary to the law of God) beeing not loofed from the snares of his former sinnes, hee increa-seth the new with the old. Thus far Gyldas, for this time, and for the raigne of Constantine, whose life being no better, was cut off in battell by Aurelius Commus, names conwhen he had raigned fully three yeeres, and without issue was buried at Stonhenge.

AVRELIVS CONANVS. 7.



An, D. 545.

Gyldes.

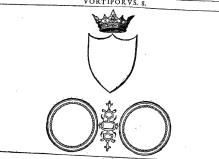
A reliant Conanus, the Nephew of King Arthur, afwas made King ouer the Britaines in the yeere after Christs Natiuitie fine hundred fortie fine. He was of disposition free and liberal, but therewith all of a light credit, and very suspicious, cherishing them that accu-sed others, without respect of right or wrong, putting fome to death, and retaining others in perpetuall prifon, among whom his own Vncle was one, whose two fons he caused to be flain, no causes objected, but that these three were in truth betwixt him & the Crowne for which, and other the like impious parts, the faid Gyldas continueth the tenor of his vehement reprehension in this manner. And thou Lions whelpe (as speakes the Prophet) Aurelius Conanus, what dost thou? art thou not swallowed up in the filthy mire of murthering thy Kinsmen, of committing formications and adulteries, like to the others before mentioned, if not more deadly, as it were with the waves and surges of the drenching Seas, overwhelming thee with her unmercifull rage? dost thou not in hating the peace of thy Country, as a deadly Serpent, and thirsting after civill warres and spoiles (often times uniustly gotten) simit up against thy soule the Gates of celestiall passes? Thou being left alone, we a withering tree in the middle of a fall, calle or rememberare (1 pays the in the wains possible all not seem to the sains possible all strates, and ower timely actually of the Fabrics and the Partiers. Islast thou their sand the Partiers. Islast thou their sign at part, and choice for first to fall thy lineage for thy goldy defers, herefored to line an humbred years, or remains on certain till how the arolled at the thing that and the with exhortations for his amendment, turneth his speech to his Succeffor.

The raigne of this King, among the vncertain ties of other proceedings, is ranged by our owner Hi-ftorians, as vncertainly. For some hold him to rule onely two yeeres, and no more, being then cut off by the inft reuenging hand of God for his finnes: others allow three yeeres for his raigne, wherein, as they fay, most viciously hee lived; and yet Matthew of Westminster will have him continue in gouernement no leffe then thirty yeeres; and John Stow addeth three more : fuch extremes are wee driuen vnto, that have our relations onelie from

Mmm 1

VOR

VORTIPORVS. 8.



An.Do. 578.

Gyldar

Vortiporus, after the death of Aurelius, succeeded him in the Kingdome of the Britaines, which then was much scanled by the intrusions of the Seventeen was much scanled by the intrusions of the Seventeen was much scanled by the intrusions of the Seventeen was much scanled by the intrusions of the Seventeen was much scanled by the intrusions of the Seventeen was much scanled by the intrusions of the Seventeen was made and the seventeen was a seventeen was a seventeen when the seventeen was a seventeen which was a seventeen when the seventeen was a seventeen which was a seventeen which was a seventeen when the seventeen was a seventeen which we want to seve which was a seventeen which was a sevent ons whom in many battels (as faith the British Histopas wrong in many pacters (as abut the printin Pano-rians)he vanquifhed, and valiantly defended his Land and Subjects, from the danger of them and of their Allies: notwithstanding these reported actions thus honorably atchieued, yea and his Parentage with fuccession of gouernment, may be both suspected and infily called in queftion, as by the words of Gyldas is manifelt; who sufferd not this King also to passe vntouched in his Inuectiue and lamentable passions, And toucneum in structure and iamentative passions. Ana thou (aith by or tiper us to Tyran of Sauth-wales, like to the Panther in manners and wickeds [b, airly flootted, ait were with many colours, with thy hourie head in the Throne full of deceit, rafts, and writes, and deflect usen from the lowest part of thy body to the Crowne of thy head,

with dissers and fundry murthers committed on thine own of a good King, as Manafes was to Exechise; how chanceth is that the violent streames of sinnes, which thou swalesth in that the violent friences of finnes, which how final lowed poly he pines, or rather art fruidbred up by this filter and of the filter with the most arming not the pines of the pin being compared to godly Executes King of Indah, and Untiprimate himselfe continuing his government, as is said the contin

space of foure yeeres, ended his life without issue to

MALGO CANONYS. 9.



An. D. 581.

Mas ome write, fucceeded Vortipor us in the Kingdome of Britaine, a man of a most feemely presence, but withall, charged with many vnbefeeming and foulc finnes, by ancient Gyldas, the onely recorder of the Actions in these times; who calleth him the Dragon of the les greater in power then many, but exceeding all in mischnese and malice; a large giver, but more lausso all in mylchese and matice; a turge guer, our more cause and prodigal in all sumes and licentions nesses in Armes and dominions more frong, and greater then any other Britifb Potentate; but stronger in the destruction of his owne Soule, in committing the grand abhorred sinne of Sodomie.

In his youthfull daies, with fword and fire he brought to destruction his Vncle by the mothers side (being then king) preserved not never the mothers pace vering then king together with many others, and after upons a flow-ferming remorfe of Confeience, wowed the profession and of a Monkesbut returned shortly after to his owne vormit. and became worse then he was before: for despising his first and become work then he was before; for adopting his prij mariage, be became enamered upon the wife of his brothers forme, whiles he was liming; and first that he had kept her acertaine time, murthered them both. In these finnes he the consinu continued the terme of fine yeeres, and dying without ifue, at his raigne

By these reprehensions of Gyldas it should rather

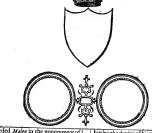
OPPOSERS OF THE SAXONS.

feeme that these Princes lined all together at one and the same time, vnto whom hee spake personally; and mouth to mouth, which could not be, if such successflons and fuch yeeres had beene expired, as heere is laid downe. And therefore not without cause some haue affirmed, that these Captaines vsurped authoritie together in divers parts of the Iland, and not fuccessinely one after another; neither indeed as Kings, but rather Tytants, polluted with these greenous since, as you have heard, and are so termed by their own Historian, that bringeth one more to tyrannize, whom neither Monmouth nor hee of Westminster hath spoken of, which is Cuneglasus, whom hee calleth, a Lion tawney Butcher, a Beare, a Contemner of Religion, an Oppression of the clergie, that fought against God with his many greenous sinnes, and warred vpon man with his martial weapons. Hee (saith hee) did put away his lawfull wife, pronoked the godly with many injuries, was proudly conceited of his owne wisdome, and set his whole hope in un-

certaine riches. If then the head was so ticke, could the body be found, that (as Beda faith) were fo fet to breake all orders of truth and suffice, that feant any token or remembrance thereof remained? And for witnesse against his 1,100 and them, calleth their owne Historian Gyldas, that accused them of many impicties, and this not the least, that those Britaines neglected the preaching of the Goffell

For these sinnes assuredly, God gaue their Land to another Nation, and themselves to exile, or to the fwords of their enemies. Howfocuer, Iome latter Britaine hath rather excused their finnes by the ouerrafh zeale of Gyldas, whom he tearmeth a Pulpit-Prief (but no perfect Historian) that beat down finnes with an ouer-tharpe cenfure of the finners, as the maner of many Preachers is at this day. But (faith hee) let the true renowne of the Britaines appeare to the world: and furely fo shall it doe for me. And againe I returne to my intended purpose.

CARETICVS. 10.



An.Do. 586.

An,Do.163.

(bap.12.

If Cerdix be no

Caretieus succeeded Malgo in the gouernment of Britaine, as destitute of vertue and sluent in vice, as any of these his preceding Kings: for it is recorded that hee was a nourisher of diffensions, and sowed ciuill warres among his subjects; a sinne odible to God and Man, and vnto the vnconstant Britaines gaue oc-casion of his hatred: which when the Saxons perceiued, was further instigated, and with the assistance of Gurmund an Arch-pirate, and Captaine of the Norwegians, followed against the King, who not able to re-fift them, fled into the Towne of Chiehester for safety,

but by the deuice of his purfuers, certaine iparrowes being caught, and fire fastned to their feet, were let flie into the Towne, where lighting vpon straw and source. other matter fit for flaming, burnt in flort space the whole Citie, and Careticus flying beyond scuerne, fecured himselfe among the Mountaines of Wales, wherein he died, after he had vnprosperoully raigned three yeeres; and from that time foorth (faith Kandulphus) the Britaines lost their whole Kingdome in the East part of the Iland, and were confined in the West by the Rivers Severne and Dec.

tinuarce of his

CADWAN, 11.



Chawan, after foure and twenty yeeres civill differ-fion maintained among the Britaines, eyer fince

they had forgone their Country, and betaken themselues to those vast, but securing Mountaines; of a Ruler only of North-wales, was made Gouernour of all those parts, a man deseruing well before hee came to that estate, and being risen, maintained himselfe and subjects in great honour and peace. His first affaires against the Saxons, was to reuenge the deaths of his Britaines, and harmelesse Monkes of Bangor, slaine (as we hauc faid) by wild Ethelfrid, the mighty King of Northumberland, who in Field had affembled all their powers, wherein the farall end either of the Britaines or Northumbrians must needs have ensued, had

not the quarrell beene flaied by the mediation of

friends. These Kings, then, and there reconciled, embraced peace, with such true friendshippe, that they continued amitie together so long as they

Harding faith, that this British King Cadwas, honorably received and worthly cherished Mars, whom this King Ethelfrid had put from his bed, for the load range, he bare vnto his Concubine, but is decined in many distinguished by the concubing the last of the concubing th king her the mother of Edwin, that was his lifter, and Cadwan to raigne but thirteen yeeres, whereas others | Paulso Discount allot him two and twentie.



Redahift.Angl. lib.3.449.1

Incarnation fix hundred thirty fine. He watred most Incaracion in hundred thirty fiue. He warred most frongly against the Secons, and other by Conquest for Alliance toined amitie with Penda the cruel King of the Arctions, a Pagan Idolater, himselfe by the report of Beda shough a Cortification in name and proficion, you immide and manners by rude and outrasions, that her lossed authorizations, that her Pared neither womens weaknesse nor childrens innocencie, but put all to death with greeuous and bitter torments, to fulfill his cruell and unmercifull tyrannie, wasting a long time, and raging ouer the Prouinces, purposed to extermi-nate out of the borders of Britamy the whole Nation of the English, and to extinguish the very name of them. Neither did he ought esteeme any reverence or honour to the Christian Religion, which those men embraced: so that even to this an Kengeon, wence now ement converse to feet the best of a feet to the Britaines custome is to fet light by the Faither Religion of the Englishmen, neither will they communicate with them more then with Heathers or Pagans, Theie two creel Kings flew the most Christian Ed-wyn King of Northumberland, with his fonne Prince Osfride, in a great and bloudy battle at Halpfid, the yeere of Christis incarnation six hundred thirty three: and the yeere following, with wicked force (faith Beand the yeere following, with wicked force (faith Beda) hus with worthy vengeance, Cadwallo the Britaine flew Office and Enfrid, King; of Deira and Bernicis, that were become Apollates from their Chriftian Faiths, and that with creatine and loff of the Sexons, as their owne Hifterian held it fit mither to moniton their names in their casts. monethly Calendar, nor register the yeere wher in they were moneting vaccount of their government, but assigned it unto the raigne of their Successour King Ofwald, which was so observed onto his daies ; fo terrible was this worthy Cadwallo, and odious the remembrance of this unfortunate Battle. But this curfed Captaine (faith he) enioted not this source. Sut two curfed Captainse (latth he) emioied not this felicitic long; for the faid Of wald, to reunge his breiber; felicitic long; for the faid of which, come with a small power, but strongly fensed in the state, wherein himselfe and late-victorious Host ware ellipsis and confounded.

But we must remember that Beda was a Saxon, in whose behalfe his penne hath somewhat passed the

bounds of equitie(if not veritie) in charging this most valiant Conqueror with tyranny, and his Martiall Sword with crueltie, that was drawne and strucke in Sword with crueine, that was unawar and in the in defence of his native Country, wherein the Saxwas claime ftood only vpon vniuft intrusion. So likewife himselfe being a Monke and Priest, hath every where blamed the Britaines for differting from the Roman Church, in celebration of Easter and other Geremonies; whereas in doctrine they were as fincere, which is the true subfance of the Gospell. But the Britaines record that this valiant Cadwallo died not in Heuenfeild, neither by the hand of King Ofwald, but that he raigned in great honour the space of eight and fortie rangued in great nonour the space of eight and former yeeres, and in peace died 22.0f Nonember, in the yeere of Christ Iesus six hundred seventie seven. His body the Britaines buried in S. Martins Church in London, neere Ludgate; whose Image great and terrible, trium-phantly riding on horsebacke, being artificially cast of Braffe, they placed vpon the fame West gate, to the further seare and terror of the Saxons, as Vortimer before had commanded his at Stonar. But this relation, as also that he married the fifter of King Penda, as my often named Manuscript reporteth, I leaue to the best liking of my Reader.

About this time the most blasphemous doctrine of Mahomet began to infect all the Easterne World. For although himselfe lived some nine yeeres before the gouernment of this Cadwallo, yet presently after his death his doctrine was more publikely imbraced. He was borne in Arabia, of a poore and base stocke, and being fatherlesse, was sold for a bondssaue vnro an Ismaelite, whose name was Abdemonaples, a man of exceeding great riches, and in great trade of merchandizing, and Mahomet for his subtiltie in wit, was his fit instrument, and greatly in his fauor. The Master dying, left Mahomes his chiefe Factor, who having great riches in his keeping, married his Miltris, and so became heire of all; with whom conforted one Sergins a Monke, which for herefie was fled into Arabia, who instructed Mahomet in the herefie of the Neflorians, and now for his wealth and Magicall Arts, wherewith hee bewitched the minds of the people,

Catwalls or Cadance of his raign.

OPPOSERS OF THE SAXONS. affumed to himfelfe the name of the great Prophet of God, and began to be famoufly published for the doctrine which he taught: the which was none other but a confused Chass of all the herefies that had been

before him : for with the Sabellians he denied the Tri-

nitie; with the Manichies, he affirmed but two persons

to bee in the Deity ; with Euronius, hee denied the e-

qualitic of the Father and the Sonne; and with Ma-

borrowed of the Iewes Circumcifion ; of the Nicho-

laitans, pluralities of wives; and of the Gentiles, much

edone, taught that the Holy Ghost was a creature. He

Superfittion; and more to cloake his distellish insen-ted funafies, formewhat he tooke from the vertice of the Goifell.Of these compounded he desided a Law, and wrote this his Religion in the booke called his Alaston; and those his Professor he named Saratens, from Continuing Sect. Mad. An.Do,625 from sara the wife of Abraham.

Hee died of the falling sicknesse, which long time hee had dissembled, saying sortions after his trances, that the Angell Gabriel had conserence with him, the brightnesse of whose glorie hee could not

CADWALLADER. 13.



(bap.12.

of the Britaints, after the death of his Father, fuc-ceeded him in his dominions, and with great valour fought against the Saxons, as hee of Monmouth affirmeth, of whom heare him speake in his owne words meth, of whom heare him fpeake in his owne words. Cadwalader (lith he) raiging vidershoffy but inner of twelve gener fell lidfy inner a danger on fechnolfy, with do fighter of recomp, and vanhé to gonere. Meth dotte and first end causing his great for at, and afters of the single meth that they were dead a saging others, to the no finall amoistact and detrineast of the whole County. At which were intlined. which very time likewife, so great a dearth of corne and victuall raigned, that herbes and roots were the Commons chiefest sustenance: whose third calamitie was mortalitie and peftilence, raigning fo fore, and fo fuddenly, that in their eating, drinking, walking, and fpeaking, they were furprifed with death, and in fuch number, that the liuing were scarce able to bury the dead, which miseries lasted no lesse then eleuen yeeres continuance, whereby the Land became defolate, and brought forth no fruit at all, infomuch that the King and many of his Nobles were driven to forfake their native Country, and to feeke relecte in forraine parts. Cadwallader repaired to the Court of Alan his cosen, the King of Little Britaine in France, where he was honourably received and maintained,

But now the Angell of God fheathing his fword from floughter, and the earth answering man a-gaine with her former abundance, those Saxons that were escaped, sent for more of their Nation to their further supplie, who replenished the Cities, and manured the Countrey, at this day called Lhorger, containing all the Land that lay on the East of Semerne and Dee, dispossessing the poore Britaines of their rightfull inheritance, and dividing their Lands vnto their owne vie. Cadwallader hearing of their daily arriuage, and their vniust intrusion vpon his home-bred subjects, minded their redresse by his present returne, and to that end had wrought King Alan, for his fuccour & assistance. But see how it chanced: He being now ready to imbarke his Hoft and to hoise up his failes for Britaine, and in the filent night

much spent in praier & supplication, that God would prosper with good successe these his great affaires, be-hold an Angell appeared to him, or at least wife to his feeming he heard a voice, that forbade him the enter-prise, declaring that it was not Gods will that hee prile, deciaring mar it was not Goos with mar nee thould undergoe that Voiage, or that the Britaines thould rule their Land any longer; but contrariwife bade hie him to Rome, and of Pope Sergius receive the habit of Religion, wherein hee thould die, and reft in

This dreame (for I hold it no other) being told vnto Alan, fearch was made into the Bookes of both D. Powel Chron the Merlines, as also into the speech of the Eagle at of Wale Sheftesbury, pronounced eight hundred and eighty yecres before the birth of our Saujour Christ (if wee doe beleeue these to be true) wherein it was prophe cied forfooth, that the Britaines should lose their Kingdome, and that the same should be possessed of others, untill the time that the bones of Cadwallader fhould bee brought from Rome. By fuch toics and illusions in those daies of darknesse, the euer-erring minds of men were content to be lead: for not onely Cadwallader, a quiet and mecke-spirited man, was posfeffed with this conceit, that it came vnto him by a diuine prouidence, but also King Alan perswaded him to obey his Oracle; and thereupon preparing for his Pilgrimage, gaue ouer his expedition for Britaine, and left his diffressed Subjects to bee ouer-runne by strangers, and the Land to bee enjoied by a forraine Nation : and receiving the habit of seeming Religion ar the hands of Pope Sergius, died soone after in the yeere of our Lord six hundred eighty nine, and there was buried in S. Peters Church, being the laft King of the Britaines bloud, after they had held possession therof the space of one thousand one hundred thirty and seven yeeres before the Nativitie of Christ, and fix hundred eighty eight yeeres after his Birth, as the Chronicle of wales, with other Britaine Writers, haue calculated, though(as is faid) after the largest fize. But

howfocuer this fudden alteration was wrought in

adwallader, yet whiles he continued a King in health,

hee raigned (faith Geffrey) in great magnanimitie, the

terme of three yeers, and fought many Battles against the Saxons, whose sword was ever theathed with victorie; for Lothaire King of Kent he flew in the Field, and Editivath also King of the South-Saxons, with the ruine of his Country, as the British Historians report,

Cap.15.

and would haue it.

But Beda, vnto whom more credit is heerein to be giuen, telles vs, that Lothaire was slaine by Edrik, his Nephew and Succeffort, declaring the manner and day of his death; and that Ceadwall, a young man of the welf-Saxons bloud royall, being banished from among them, fell vpon the South-Saxons, harrying the Country and killing their King. But afterwards lamenting the bloud he had fpilt, whereat euen Nature her selfe seemed to bee offended, in great repentance abandoned his Kingdome, and pilgrim-like went vnto Rome, where of Pope Sergius he was baptized vpon Easter Euen, the yeere from Christs Nativitie six hundred eightie nine. The times thus agreeing, their names to neere, their denotions alike, Sergius the fame ghostly father to both, their sepulchers in one and the

fame Church, doe strongly confirme that they both were the same and one only man, as we formerly haue faid. But with this man Cadwallader, wherefoeuer he died, lay buried the last bloud of their Kings, their goternment, and immediatelie the very Name of Britame, for many hundred yeeres enfuing, as in the fequell of this Historie (Christ assisting) shall bee thewed.

And now at last, according to my first intendment, I am come to speake of the succession of Great Briaines Monarkes, from which (vponthe fore-shewed occasions of the slands division, the Saxons possessions, and these Britaine Resisters) I have beene overlong staicd, and am forced to returne againe to King Hengelt, the first of the Saxons, that I may shew their fucceeding fuccession in this English Monarchy: wher-in of necessitie I must desire the patience of my Reader, if some things be againe touched that formerlie haue beene spoken, the Matter of Historic so much requiring, and the Method that to my proceeding I haue herein proposed, enforcing it.



Saxon Ma narchs.

THE SAXONS SVCCESSIONS IN THE MONARCHY OF GREAT BRL

TAINE, WHEREOF HENGIST THE FIRST KING OF KENT BECAME THE FIRST MO-NARCH OF THE ENG-LISHMEN.



CHAPTER XIII.

Engift, a Prince of the Eng-

lift-Saxons , having the

Command ouer certaine

forces planted in the Low-

countries of Germany, in

the yeere of Christs Incar nation foure hundred and

An.Do.450



his originall from Prince Woden, and his wife Fria by Wechta the eldeft of their feuen sonnes, being the fifth in iffue from them; asthus: Himfelfe was the sonne of Withteils, who was the sonne of with a and he the some of Weehta, the eldest some of the Deified This Prince held the supreme Scepter of this Iland

fiftie, transported them for thirty foure yeeres continuance, and therein died ouer into Britaine, where honorably, faith Marianus Scotus. But Peter de Ikham, the fifth yeere after his ar-Polydore, and others fay, that he was flaine in battell, prifed his fon in law King Fortigern, flain his Britaines, and feized into his possession the best of the lland, he or else taken by Edol, Earle of Glocester, and beheaded at Conesborow. Hee left iffue behind him two fonnes laid the foundation of a Monarchy, and deserueth to and one daughter, whose names were Harwaker, Eske, be reputed the first Monarch of the English Nation.

(2) He(as all the Saxon Kings besides) doth claime and Romena.

(3) Hatwaker his eldest sonne, is reported by Petrus Albinus of Wittenberg, agreat Genealogist and

Chap.14

THE SAXONS MONARCHS.

Historiographer also) to be Duke of the Saxons in Germanie, and there left to gouerne the people at his Fa-thers departure for Britaine. And it Albinus authority be fufficient, he was the Father of Duke Hatnegat, and grandfather of Hilderik King of the Saxons, anceftor to the valiant Withindus, the principall progeni-tor of the most noble Familie of the Dukes of Saxony.

(4) Eske, the second some of King Hengist, came ouer with his Father into Britaine, and was his assistant in all his warres, wherein he gaue worthy testi-monie of his valour: whose Kingdome of Kent after his death he enioyed, and gaue name to that Countries Inhabitants, who were from him called Eskings, ouer whom he raigned peaceably twenty yeeres.

(5) Rowens, the daughter of King Hengift, was borne in Germany before her Fathers departure, and afterwards sent for by him into Britaine, to further his designes. At whose surpassing beautie and feature

Partition to viciously gazed, that he put from him his lawfull and louing wife, to inioy the pleasures of her Paganilh bed, and to the great decay of Christianitie, and griefe of the Nobilitic, the became the Kings fecond wife, and the principall cause of the Lands de-ftruction. By her he had a daughter, who contrary to all lawes either of God or man, was likewise his third wife; by whom he had iffue Fauftus, that as vertuous. ly spent the daies of his life, as he was incestionally begot in that wicked bed.

This Rowens, whom some call Ronixa, by Vitarpine Vitarpine is accounted the Neece, and not the Daughter of Hengift. But feeing his opinion is grounded vpon the youth of Hengift, as not sufficient in yeeres to have a daughter fo mariageable, I rather thinke and hold this bare testimonie vnable to turne the great streame of other Writers out of their viuall course and received

Ella, Monar,



ELLA THE FIRST KING OF THE SOVTHSAXONS, AND SECOND MO-NARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN.



CHAPTER XIV.

An. D. 581 Beda bift lib.s.



la a noble Saxon, being fent for by King Hengift about the three and twentith yeere of his raigne, brought a fresh supply of those Germans to the reliefe of his Countrymen, who with his forces landed at the hauen now called Shoreham in Suffex,

where putting backe the Inhabitants in many skir-mishes, lastly chased them into a great wood then cal-led Andreastings, whence often being assailed by the fudden affaults of the Britaines, wherein, as may bee thought, he loft the liues of his two elder sonnes, was fo hardly befer, that hee fent for more aid of his Saxons, who came to his supply. (2) His strength thus augmented, and ambition

still increased, he fought three cruell and bloody battels, but the laft of them most fatall against the Britaines, in the place then called Macrodef-burne, and befleging the ancient and famous City Andred-Chefter fituated in the faid great forest, and chiefe defensible

fortresse in all those Southern parts, intercepted the Britaines that came to their reliefe, and entring the fame by an affault, put to the fword all that were found within it. After which great loffe, the Britaines fought rather to promide for their owne fafety by fly-ing into defert places, then by making open relifance to procure their owne too apparant destruction.

(3) Ella in this state continued the time of fine An.Do.489. yeeres before he assumed the name of King, or the limits of that Province assigned under his government. mits of that Prounce alsigned vinder his government, but then without any flow of filliance laid the foundation of this Kingdome, which was the fecond of the Sexons; and as Henryl file led Kent, lo he had Suffex and Surry for his Polision, wherein for it's yeers space with Henryl file lived, and that with lich approbation makes the death to have been a the Company of the Polision where the Company of the Polision of of valour as that after his death he became the fecond Saxon Monarch of the Englishmen, in the yeere of

(4) He is faid to be the elder sonne of of a, whose genealogie Florentius of Worcefler thus deriueth : Ofa Florent Wigner. (faith he) was the sonne of Etherbert, and he the sonne of Ingengeat, who was the sonne of Angengiat, whose father was Alufa, the sonne of Ingebrand, the sonne

VVil,Malmib.

Florent.VVig.

of Wegbrand, the sonne of Bearn, the sonne of Bearnus, the elder sonne of Brand, the sonne of Bealdeag, the fixth fonne of prince Woden and of Lady Fria his (5) His issue were Kymen, Plenshing, and Gisla, three valiant sonnes, that came ouer with him, and assisted him in his enterprises for Britaine. From Kymen, the

port wherein they arrived, was called Kymenishore; by the Britaines, Cuneuesbore, which time and seas hath both shortened, and altered: and now is it called Shoreham, a well knowne hauen in Suffer. This Prince came to his graue before his Father, either by the stroke of warres, or by the course of nature, without further mention of his acts, and his succession, cut off by his death.

(6) Plenching his second sonne, was borne vnto him in the Lowe countries of Germany, and with his brethren affifted his Father to the attaining of the South-Saxons Crowne; but being cut off by vntimely death, whether by the hand of the enemy, or by natures appointment, is vncertaine.

(7) The yongest sonne of king Ella,was Ciffa, whom death spared to line a long life; but fame as Whom death space to nue a long life; but rame as fiparing to adorne it with memory of his acts; for nothing of him is left memorable, befides the building of Chichefter. Fortune indeed fet his fathers Crowne on his head, but kept the Imperiall Diademe in her owne hand, to adorne the head of a worthier bearer, which was Cherdik the west-Saxon, vnto whom Ciffa gaue yeerely contribution, to fecure him from the Britaines, as before and after hath been, and shall bee shewed.

(8) This Ella his entrance and erection of his Kingdome, for time is vncertaine; but his raigne therein, as also in his Monarchie, is more certainelie knowne : for hee was King of the South-Saxons the See Chap. .. space of thirty two yeeres, and Monarch of the Engh-men fix and twenty, dying in the yeere of Christs Incarnation fine hundred and foureteene, which was the thirty fixth after his first arrivall into Britaine.

CHERDIK THE FIRST KING OF THE VVESTSAXONS, AND THIRD MONARCH OF THE ENG-



Cherdit

CHAPTER XV.

An.Do.495



He Saxons Sunne, thus rifen and high afcended vp on the South of Britaine egan now to spreade his beames towards the Well: for Kent being quietly possessed by King Eske, and South-Saxia, with al the fubdued, at the diff

valiant Captaine of the Low Country Germans, thought himfelfe as fufficient in warres, and as able to reach at, to weare, and to weld a Crowne of Estate, as either of them that had so done before him : and feeing that Britaine was now the feedeplot for Diadems, fet his affection and preparation

(2) He with his forces entred in the West of that Iland, where he in his first battell so danted the Inhabitants, that apparat signes of approching glory were added to his aspiring hopes: for therein hee flew Ma-tanlead, otherwise called Nazalead, a mighty King of the Britaines, whereby an easie entrance was laid open to his defired Empire, and a more easie warre left to his posteritie. This battle chanced about the yeere of nts potternee. I mis oattue enanced about the yeere or Chrift Felis fue hundred and eight, and was fought in the region of Naturlead, (which Country bare the name of the King) and necre vnto a brooke of water in the West of Hampshire, which from Cherdik began to be called Cherdiks-ford, where now a Towne of the fame name standeth, but by contraction and shortnesse of speech is called Chardford.

(3) Florentius of Worsefler, the Saxons Genealogist (as I may well terme him) bringeth this Cherdik (as he doth the rest of the Saxon Kings) from the ancient Prince Woden, and that in this manner : Cherdik (faith he) was the sonne of Elistus, and hee the sonne of Esta, the fonne of Gerifius, the fonne of Wigga, the fonne of Friarin, the fonne of Freedegar, the brother of Beorn, the progenitor of Ida the first King of Bernicia, and

(.bap.16.

THE SAXONS MONARCHS.

both of them the sonnes of Brand, the sonne of Bealdeag, the fift sonne of the foresaid Weden.

(4) In the seventh yeere of Ells his Monarchie, was his arrivage, and six yeeres after hee beganne his Kingdome of the West-Saxons, seating himselfe and foundation therof betwixt the Britains and the South-Saxons, for whole further fecuritie, Ciffa King of that Prouince, gaue him an yeerely contribution towards the maintenance of his charge in warre; wherein hee got fuch reputation, that after the death of Ella, and the thirteenth of his owne raigne, hee affumed the Monarchie vnto himfelfe, and was both the first King of the West-Saxons, and the third Monarch of the En glifb-men, wherein he continued the space of twentie one yeeres, and deceased in the yeere of our Lord fine

hundred thirty fiue, being the three and thirtieth of his Kingdome, and the fortieth after his first ar-

(5) His iffue were two fonnes, Kenrik and Chelwolfe: the one immediately, and the iffue of the other collaterally attained to the same possession and title that Cherdike heere first laid.

(6) Chelwolfe his fecond fonne (for of Kenrik the eldeft wee are hereafter to speake) hath little mention made among our writers: more then that hee was the Ancestour of Estwin the eight King of the West-Sax-Ancestour of Estima the eight Aing of the West-Saxons, that is to say, the father to Kenfrid the father of Kenfri which Kenfri had issue the Successfor of king Kenwalk, and predecessor of King Kentwin in the kingdome of the West-Saxnas

327

KENRIK THE SECOND KING OF THE VVEST SAXONS, AND FOURTH

MONARCH OF THE ENG.



CHAPTER XVI.

* '

Enrik, the eldeft fonne of King Cherdick (as is faid)

being borne in Germanie and following his father into Britaine, valiantly serued vnder him, as well in the Battle fought against King Natanleod, the first day of his arriuage, as in other battles against the

Britaines in other places; namely, at Cherdiksford, Cherdifley, and in the Conquest of the Ile of Wight. Im-mediately upon the death of his Father, he succeeded in his whole dominions, and was ordained the fecond King of the West-Saxons, and the fourth Monarch of the Englishmen, beginning his raigne ouer both at one and the same time, the yeere of Christ his Natinitie fiue hundred thirty foure.

(2) Andenlarging his confines upon the Territories of the Britaines, gaue them two great ouer-throwes, the one as Seersteen justify thirty, and theother at Bankury in Osfrad fibre, which was fought the two and twentieth of his raigne, whereby his fame grew more tenowned, and his Kingdome in more tenowned, and his Kingdome in more tenowned, and his Kingdome in more quiet after. He raigned the space of twenty six yeeres, and left this life in the yeere of our Lord God sine

hundred fixty.
(3) He had iffue three fonnes, Chenline, Cuthwolfe, and Cuth. Chelwin the first, succeeded his father in the

Monarchie, and Welf-Saxons Kingdome.

(4) Cuthwolfe, the second, assisted his brother in many victories, as presently in his raigne shall follow.

And Cuth, the third brother, famous in his issue. though mentionlesse for action in himselfe, whereof more largely hath beene spoken in the raigne of Ken-7.
7th, as he was King only of the West-Saxons.

An.Do. 556.

LII 2

CHEV.

Met-VVefin.

Chewline.

CHEVLINE THE THIRD KING OF THE WEST SAXONS, AND FIFTH MONARCH OF THE ENG





Heuline, the eldest sonne of King Kenrike, ferued with great commendations under his father, in all his warres against the Bri-tains, and is specially men-tioned at the Battle of Banbury in Oxford-flore; and after his fathers death

became the third King of the West-Saxons, and the fifth Monarch of the English men. Hee much enlarged the bounds of his King-dome, and increased the power and glorie of the

(2) For continuing the warres where his Father left, did not onely subdue the Britaines in many Battles, but also set himselfe against his owne Nation the thes, but also ex-mineric against no owner varion the Saxons, and fought to impose the foope of his power ypon the South of the River Thomes: for entring Kent (whole King was then a childe, by name Ethel. bert, the sonne of Imerik) at Wiphandun or Wilbandun in Surrey, in a fet and fore Battle, defeated all his forces, whence the young King was chased, and two of his greatest Captaines, bearing the names of Dukes,

were flaine, as we have faid.

(3) Not long after this victory, he fet his minde to inlarge his West-Saxons Dominions upon the posto marge nis Weje-Saxens Dominions vpon the pot-fession of the declining Britaines, and to that end fur-nished forth a great Band of his Souldiers, whereof-he made his brother Cuthwin chiefe Generall. These ne mace his Drother Cutowin einer Generau. I nere marching to Bedford, gaue Battle to the Britaines, where they flew them downe-right, and furprized foure of their chiefelf Townes, at that time called Liganburge, , Eglesbourgh, Benfington, and Euclium, which they fortified, to their owne strength, and the Britaines great loffe.

(4) And following the Tract of his fore-going fortunes, about fix yeeres after sent forth againe his Saxons, under the conduct of the forefaid Cullwin, who encountred the Britaines at Diorth or Deorham, with fuch valour and fuccesse, that besides great

flaughter of the British Souldiers, three of their Kings. whole names were, Coimnsgill, Candidas, and Farimnsgill, fell in the Field, with the furprisall of these three still, fell in the Field, with the furprisall of these three Cities, closelyer, saties, and circuscifer. Then (faith Opdan, outlands proposed the Lands defruition, their opdan, of the british county to emit cause to my cause, when univer Primer ner People, Print from Leuie, regardative Land of the Land, but also closely the Land, but also clos

(5) But no greater were the finnes of the Britains. then the vnfatiable defires of the Saxons were to conquer: for Cheuline about the last of Malgoe his governnent, met the Britaines at Fethanleah, in the face of a Field, which was fought out, to the great flaughters of them both, and with the death of Prince Cuth, King Cheulins sonne: notwithstanding the victorie fell on his fide with great spoiles obtained, and possessions of many Prouinces, which himselfe no long time

(6) For growne proud through his many pro-feerous victories against his enemies, and tyransizing ouer his owne Subjects, the West-Saxons, fell into fuch. contempt, that they joined with the Britaines for his contempt, that they comed with the presence on the defruction. The greatest against him, was disloyed chell, or Ceatrik, his nephew, the sonne of Cathring his most loyall brother, whom both the Nations had e-lected for Generall. Vnder him they muster and march into Wils-fire, and at Wodnesbeothe (now Wannes-ditch) into Vist-jour, and at vromespector (now Wasner-state), juich downe their Standards. Cheships that thought hee lead fortune in a leafe, with confident boldneffe built his prefent proceedings you his former functions and in the face of his enemies displated his colours. But the Battles joined, and the Field goared lours. But the Battles somed, and the Fried goard with bloud, the day was loft ypon the Kings fide, and he in diffresse award himselfe by slight. Heere might you have seene the world, as it is, vnconstant and variable; for he a Mars, that had ouer-borne the Britains in fo many Battles, and had raifed his Saxons vnto fo great a height, is forced to flee before his conquered Captines, and to exile himselfe from the sight of his owne Subjects, after he had gloriously raigned thirty one yeeres, or (as some will) thirty three, and as a

(bap.18.

THE SAXONS MONARCHS.

Chanime, how long he raigned

meane man, died in his banishment, the yeere of grace fine hundred ninety two.

(7) He had iffue two fonnes, which were Cuth and Cuthwin, the elder whereof had valiantly ferued in his fathers warres, namely at Wimbledone in Surry, against King Zirbehert and his power of Kentifmen; in the yeere of Christ flue hundred fixty feuen; and lastly in the Battle at Fethanlash, where the Britaines received a great ouerthrow. Notwithstanding, as hee was valiantly fighting among the thickest of his enemies, hee was there flain, in the yeere of our Lord fine hundred eighty foure, being the fine and twentieth yeers of his fathers raigne, and that without iffue.

(8) Cathwin, the younger fonne of King Chealine, furnised his father, but fucceeded him not, because of his young yeeres; or else (and that rather) for the harred that his father had purchased of his Subjects; which they repaied him in his owne expulsion, and in which they repaired in min his owne expansion, and in this his fonnes deprination. But although the wreath of the Wolf-Saxons did not adorne this Cuthwines head, yet shone it more bright, and stood with greater maiethy upon the browes of Inst, the warlike and zeamaiety vpon the prowes of Ina, the warlike and zealous King of Weft-Saxon, and of Egbert the victorious and first fole absolute Monarch of the English Empire : both of them in a right line issued from this Custoring, as in the scuenth Chapter we have said,

329



ETHELBERT THE FIFTH, AND FIRST CHRISTIAN KING OF KENT,

AND THE SIXTH MONARCH OF THE ENG-LISHMEN, HIS WIVES AND





CHAPTER XVIII.

An.Do.561.

VVII.Melmel.



He flame of the West-Sa cons for a time thus quenched, the Lampe of Kent began againe to thine, and to assume the Title of the Monarchie, after it had beene suppressed in them through the raignes of these foure last Kings: for

young Egberts entrance, with the great losse of his Kentish, ouerthrowne by King Cheuline; gaue rather inducements to a tributary fubication, then any apparant hopes to purchase an

(2) But such is the dispose of God in his hidden Counfell, that things of least appearance many times become the greatest in substance, as in this Prince it was enidently feene, who making vie of his owner youth and loffe, got thereby experience, both to defense himselfe, and to prouoke others, and with such victories abroad, repaired his losses at home, that as farre as Humber he made all subject to Kent.

(3) Thus growne to be the greatest of any Saxon before him, hee sought to hold it up by forraine alliance; and to that end became futer for Berts a most vertuous Christian Lady, the daughter of Chilperik

King of France; vnto whom by her father she was last-lie granted, but with these conditions, that she might referre her Christian Prosession, enjoy the presence and the instructions of Luidhard her learned Bishop, with the place of his Queene,

(4) These couenants concluded, and many French
Christians attending her in his Court, by their daily
service of God, and continuall practice of pietic, drew many of the English to favour their Religion, year and the King also to bee inclined that way. And as these were working the faluation of Kent, behold Gods proceedings for the convertion of the rest.

(5) It chanced great Gregory (then but Arch-deacon of Rome) to fee certaine youths of this Iland con or Reme_) to see certaine yourns or tris Hand brought to that Citie, to be fold for flaues: His Chri-ftian heart pivying at fuch heathenift tyrannizing, and beholding ftedfallly their faces to be faire and Angellike, demanded of their Merchants, of what Nation they came; who made him answer, that they were estigles, and by that name were knowne wino other Nations. Indeed, faid he, and not without cause, for their refemblance is Angelicall, and fit it is that they be made inheritours with the Angels in Heauen. But of what Province are they ? faid Gregory. It was replied; Of Deira, a Country fituated in the Continent of Britaine, Now furely, faith he, it is great pity but these

Austine and his

Reda hill. Lib.z.

cap. 16. Beds bift lib. 1.

Gregory Lb.7.

Conturbary guen to Austine

Wil. Lambeyt Paramb of Kent.

people should bee taken from *Deitra*, the ire of God. And farther asking what was the name of their King, it was answered, that he was called Ella; whereunto he alluding, faid, that Alleluis, to the praise of God, in that Princes Dominions should shortly be sung.

(6) And to that purpose himselfe, being afterwards Pope, fent Austine a Monke, with forty others, for assistance, whereof Melitus, Institut, and I ohn were chiefe. These landing in Tanet, in the moneth of Inly, about five hundred ninety and fix yeeres after the Incarnation of Christ, and one hundred forty and seuen after the first arrivage of these Angles into Britaine, had immediately accesse vnto the presence of King Ethelbert, but yet in the open Field, for hee feared to conferre with them in any house, lest by sorcerie (as hee fondly surmised) he might be ouercome.

(7) Thefe preaching vnto him the word of life, his answer was, that presently he could not consent to their Doctrine, neither rashly forsake his ancient and accustomed Religion. But seeing (said hee) you tell vs strange things, and giue vs faire promites of after life, when this life shall be ended, wee permit you to preach the same to our people, and to convert as many as you can; and wee our felues will minister all things behoouefull for your livelihood. Which promiss hee instantly performed, and in Canterburie his head City, allowed them fit places for residence, and fufficient prouision for their maintenance; wherein these religious men, following in some measure the examples of the Apostles, spent their times in prea-ching and praiers, watching for the peoples conversions, and exercising the workes of true piety, as examples and motives vnto others, to embrace the Gospel which they fought to plant. (8) Neere vitto the East part of the City, stood an

ancient Church, built by the Christian Romans, whiles

they had dwelt in Britaine, and by them dedicated to they nad uwen in pritaine, and by them dedicated to the honour of S. Martin, and is fo yet called. To this Church the Christian Queene Berts, with her Com-municants the French, daily reforted to pray, and vn-to these, and in this Church, Austine and his fellowes began daily to preach: vnto whose Sermons so many began camy to preach: who whose sermons to many of the Kenifb allo reforted, that a plentifull harueft in short time appeared, you the sede-plot of their tillages for it is reported that ten thousand of the English people were baptized there in one day, insomuch that the King himselfe forsooke his *Heatherish Idola*trie, and likewise received the Sacrament of Baptisme, Mr., and income received the sacrament of saptime, vnto his falluation in Chiff: .in witneffe whereof, hee gaue the Lordship and Royaltie of his chiefe Citie Casterburie, vnto Augustine, and refigned his princely Palace therein vnto him, who in the East of this City laid the foundation of that great, and afterwards mag-nificent Church, dedicated to the service and name of

Indicent condition at this day is the Cathedrall of that Metropolitan See: and Ethelbert to give him more room, withdrew himselft vnto Reculuer in Tanet, where he erected a Palace for himselfe and his successours, the compasse wherof may be traced by an old wal, whose ruines remaine there yet to this day.

(9) Aussine thus leated, and in the well descrued (9) Appine times leated, and in the wenders recognized fauour of King Ethelbers, got one request more, which was this, that whereas by the Law of the Twelve Ta-

bles, it was forbidden to bury the dead within the walles of any Citie, (the practife whereof, wee daily finde by monuments taken vp in the fields adioining) The buriell of the desagramed it would pleafe him to gue to tract var. at one atom tended the desagramed in the Citic within the Citic when the King himselfe had wontedly worthipped when the King himselfe had wontedly worthipped to the control of the Citic when the King himselfe had wontedly worthipped to the control of his Idols. This obtained, and the Church purged fro that prophane exercise, to the service of God, be ing honored with the name of s. Paneras, King Ethel bert added thereunto a most faire Monasterie, built vpon his owne cost, and dedicated it vnto the name of Peter and Paul the Apoller, appointing it to bee the place for the Kentifb Kings Sepulchers, and Autime likewise meant it for the burials of his successours in that See. But first it became the Monument of his owne name: for in regard of the Procurer, both Pan-

eras, Peter, and Paul were foone swallowed up, and the whole called onely by the name of S. Austines. In this place, eight Kings of Kent had their bodies interred, and tenne of their Arch-biftops therein laid, vntill that Cushbert the eleuenth in luccession, in fauour of S. I ohns, a new Church by him erected, procured of King Egbert the sonne of Ercombert, that the succeeding Arth-bifhops might be buried there. This Monaflerie, as all the rest did, came to her fatall period in the daies of King Henry the Eighths whole vncouered walles flood fo long languishing in time and stormes of weather, that daily increased the aspect of her ruines, till now lastly they are made subject to other publike vses, and the whole tract of that most goodly foundation in the same place no where appearing. Onely Ethelberts Tower, in memoric and honour of the man, as yet hath escaped the verdict and sentence the man, as yet nath escaped the vertice and tensence of defirted in; whose beauty, though much defaced and our worne, will witnesse to facceeding ages the magnificence of the whole, when all stood complear in their glory together.

in their giory rogettier.

(10) Thele his happie beginnings, Austine lig-nified by Letters to Rome, and withall demanded dimice by Letters to nome, and with an uchanked of rections, how he might further proceed: which quefitions, were they not written by the Venerable Beda, Bedabija.Eb.t. wee could hardly beleeue that such idle conceits (49.27. should have place in the minde of a man fo well and fruitfully bulied: as, 14 hether a woman with child might safiner quellireceive the Sacrament of Baptisme, or in her monethly difease, the holy Communion, or enter the Church : how long after her delinerance, the husband ought to refraine her Bed: How the Gifts that were offred on the Altar, ought to be distributed: and unto what degree of consanguinitie be anytoured: and wine what acgree of conjanguintie.

Christians might marie: and many others such like, as though himselfe had neuer read either Moses or Paul. But of the thing then more needfull, for that at that time it flirred most contention, it seemeth he was sufficiently instructed; neither among his other questions is it once named: and that was, the duc time for the celebration of Easter: the difference whereof, betwixt the Britaines and the Romans was fuch, that it caused Lord-like Austen to prophecie (if not to feeke) their destructions; and they in their opinions, to hold him no better then the Man of Sinne : for thus the Storie is reported.

(11) Austine, by the assistance and authoritie of King Ethelbert, called an Assemblie of the British Bifloors and Doctours, that had retained the doctrine of Rand (cf. the Goffell amongst them, even from the first plantation thereof by the Apofles themselues, to be holden Galfralib. 8. in the Borders of the Villiam and West-Saxons, and at the place upon that occasion called *Angustimes Oaker the piace vpoint has occasion casted. Angustines Oake: tisther reforted four British Bishops, and many other well-learned men (saith Beds) out of their greatest Menassers at Bangor, where at that time Dinoth was Abbat. These men now ready to goe to the foresaid synod, came first to a certaine holy and wise man, which lived thereabout an Ancertains nog ana wije man, when there also ought at ac-charest life, to aske his counfell, whether they ought at Au-fins preaching and exhortation, leave their Traditions or no. The Anchoret replied, If he be a man of God, follow no: I be anenote repuea, 15 m or a muss of woa, jouous him. But here shall we proone (faid they) that bee is a man of Cod? The Anchoret answered, Our Lord faith, Takeyee of coal 1 the Anchores anywered, one 1 and suth, Takeyee on you my loke, and learne ye of me., for 1 am milde and hamble of heart. If therefore this Ausline bee milde and hamble of heart, it is the that hamifely beareth the Toke of Chriss, and will offer yea the fame to beare. But if hee bee out if and fraud, it is certaine that hee is not of God, neither om it we much esteem his words. Then they enquired how they might know whether this Austine were proud or no: they mugus encousementer imo Augune were proma or no: Prouide (quoth be) that he and his companie may come first to the place of the Synod or Councell house: and if it bee so to the place of the Synoa or Councest-pouge: analyst bee jo that when you approchemee him, he arife courteously, and falute you, then thinke him to bee the forwant of Christ, and Jo heare him, and obey him: but it when you approch, hee Jobane him, and obey him: host if when you approch, hee delific you, and will not vonchific to it if a your presence, which are the greater momber, be him likenife be delified of you. And truly (faith hee) as this Amshoret bade blem, if all they is it happened, that when they came thinker, S. Austine was already set in his chaire, and stirred not:

*About South

The Anchorise

Chap. 18. Ethelbert THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch 6. which when they faw, forthwith waxing wroth, they noted him of pride, and therefore endeaoured to our thwart and gainfay what focuer he proposed. And so the Synod brake

vp without any thing done. Thus then wee see, that the substance of doctrine was embraced in Britaine, before the fending of Austin from Rome: only in ceremonies they diffented as the most of Christian Churches, without derogation to the Gospell, at this day doe. And this for the celebration of Easter, a matter of no great moment (if we consider our Christian libertie, and the Apostles feare, that the observations of daies, moneths, times, and

yeeres, turne the hearts after beggerly rudiments, bring againe into bondage, and make his labours for Christ in vaine) yet for the different observation only of this Feast from the Romans, how oft are the Britaines tearmed by Beda, a wicked people, a curfed nation, and well deferuing those calamities which the Lord did afflict vpon them? This controuerlie for Eafters celebration, thus begun, continued no leffe then ninety yeeresafter, and was laftly concluded in manner as

(12) This variance (faith Beds) made not onely the people to doubt and feare, left bearing the name

Stranfhalch Synode.

followeth.

of Christians, they did and had runne in vaine, as the Apostle speaketh, but also good of my King of Nor-Apotue peacern, our and good open Anngol Agri-thumberland, and learned Prince Alkfryd, with Queene Zanfled, were much diftracted and perplexed: for by this variance (faith hee) it often times hapned, that in one yeere two Easters were kept; for the King brea-king vp his Fast, and solemnizing of the Feast, the Queene with Prince Alkfrid, continued their Fast, and kept that day their Palme-Sunday. To conclude which

contrarietie, a Synad purpofely was called, and the Oneftion dispured by their belf Diuines. The place was Stranshalch or Whithy, whereof Hilda was Abbesse. The chiefe parties for, and against the accustomed time of keeping that feaft, were King of my and Prince Alkfridhis fonne. The Disputers for Ofwy and the established orders, were Colman Arch-bishop of Yorke, with his Scotist Clergie, and Hildathe vertuous and learned Lady Abbesse of the place. For Alkfrid and the attempted alteration, were Agilbert Bishop of the West-Saxons, Wilfrid Abbat of Rippon, with James and Romanus, two learned men, and the reuerend Cedda newly confecrated Bishop, appointed Prolocutor of the Affembly.

The Conuccation fet, King Ofwy made a folemne Oration, wherein hee vrged a necessitie, that those

people which scrued one God, ought to celebrate his heauenly Sacraments alike, and should keepe one order and rule in the same ; the truth of which service, and furcease of that long vnchristian variance, for the Christian celebration and time of Easter, was then presently by those learned men to bee handled, and by best approouements to be determined; whereunto hee requested their vttermost endenours, and to that purpole commanded his Archi-bishop Colman first to speake : whereupon Colman with reuerence commen speeches shood up and faid: The Easter which I observe I received the Synode. attood vp and taid: I he kafter which softerus, treceused of my Fore-fathers, of whom I was confectated, and fent hither for your Bilbo. They all (you know) were godly men, and observed the Feast as we doe now; neither thinke you they kept this tradition without fure warrant from greater then themselues, which was Saint Iohn the Euangelift, and the Disciple whom I est especially loued, who in the Churches which himselfe planted, celebrated the Feast

of Easter, as we doe now. Therefore knowing the man fo worthy, and the manner so ancient, I hope you will all confeste, it is not safe for vs now to reject.
Wilfride the declaimer, appointed to answer, stood vp and faid : The Easter which we observe, wee our selves haue feene observed in Rome, where the bleffed Apostles Peter and Paul lined, preached, suffred, and are buried: and in our trauels thorow France and It alie, either for studie or opon pilgrimage, we have feene the fame order kept: and we know by relation, that in Africke, Afia, Egypt and Greece, nay thorowout all nations and tongues in the world where Christ hath his Church, that this our time and order

is observed. Shall then these obstinate Picts (I meane the Britaines) and the seremote Ilands in the Ocean Sea, and yet not all of them neither, south contend in this point against the whole world?

But here Colman interrupted him, and faid, I much Dut nete commo interruptee nim, anu anu, immon-mary li, brother, that you terme our doings a fond contenti-on, feting we have for our warrant fo worthy an Apolile as I ohn was, who only leaned opon our Lards breft, and whose use and behaviour all the world acknowledgeth to bee most

Godforbid (laid Wilfrid) that I should accuse Iohn: but

Wilfrids modeyet we know that he kept the decrees of Mojes literally, and according to the Iewish Lawes; and so the rest of the Apofiles were constrained in some things to doe, for the weake nesse of them who accounted it a great sin to abrogate those rites that God himfelfe had instituted; and for that canse

S.P. aul did circumcife Timothie, offred bloud-facrifices in the Temple, shaued his head at Corinth with Aquila and Priscilla: vpon which consideration also spake I ames vnto Paul, You see brother how many thousand of the Iewes haue received the faith, and all of these are yet zealous followers Act araza

received the faith, and all of these are yet sections followers of the Law, Data the light of the Gospilla row flicking thorow the world, it is not lampful for any christians to bec circumstical, are to also you bloody fairful or Pacific, are to also you bloody fairful or Pacific, are to also you bloody fairful or Pacific. Sure, in the four-tenth do go the fight mounted, are one began the celebration of Eufert Festivative, year-diess whether as fall you to be Sabbath day, or any other of the weeke. But S. Peter prea ching the Gospell in Rome, remembring that our Lord arose from his grave the first day after the Sabbath, giving there

by unto us certaine assurance of our resurrection, observed the Feast of Easter according to the Commandement of that the scale of halfer according to the Communicament of that Law be looked for scene as School did, that is to key she full Sabahb after the full Moone of the full moneth. Neither dots this new order usine of the Goffell, and Applies pra-tifle, breake the old Law, but rather fulfilleth is 1 for the Law communicates the Feafl of Passeur to bee kept from Exod.12. the foureteenth day of that moneth, to the twentie and one of the same. And this hath the Nicene Councell not newly decreed, but rather confirmed (as the Ecclefiastical Histo-riewitnesseth) that this is the true observation of Easter, and of all Christians after this account is to bee celebrated

and thereupon charged Bifbop Colman, that hee neither ob-ferued it according to Lohn nor Peter. To this the Bishop replied, that Anatholius for his holinesse much commended by the said Ecclesiassicall Histo-ric, and Columba a Father of like sanctitie, by whom miracles were wrought, kept the Feast according as he then did

from whose imitation he durst not digresse. Your Fathers, which you presend to follow, how holy soeuer they bee (said Wilfrid) and what miracles socuer they have wrought, yet this I answer, that in the day of judge-ment many shall say unto Christ, that they have prophecied, tast out Diuels, and wrought miracles in his name, to whom our Lordwill answer, I know you not. And if your Father Columba (yea and our Father, if hee he the true seruant of

Common yea and one states, y poece to the sections up to the by no means bee proferred to the moft bleffed trince of the Apolitic, ronto whom our Lord faid, Thou art Peter, and woon this rocke I will build my Church, and the gates of bell ball Matth. 16. not preuaile against it, and to thee will I give the keyes of the Kingdome of Heaven. Thus said, the King asked Colman, whether our Lord indeede pake thus onto Peter who answered, He did. But can you (said hec) give enidence of so speciall authoritie granted to your Father Co-lumba? The Bishop said, No. Then (quoth the King) doe you both agree confidently, that thefe words were prin-cipally spoken unto Peter, and that unto him the keyes of the Kingdome of Heaven were given? They all answered, I is most certaine. Whereupon the King concluded this great controuerfie, and faid, Then will not I gainefay fuch a Porter as this is, but as farre as I know, and am a-ble, I will couct in all points to obey his ordinance, left perhaps when I come to the Doores of Heasen, I finde none to open unto mee, having his displeasure, which is so cleerely prooved to beare the keyes thereof.

And with this fo simple a collection of King Ofay, concluded this long and great contention for the celebration of Easter; which heere, as borne before the Nnn I

Holinfobill Ang

40.2440.2

VVII.Malmet.

rea.Thorne. Register Cant.

Reds bill.lib.s.

long he raigned

Hol The

Ethelbert

gaine to King Ethelbert. (13) Who now became an instrument himselfe for the conversions of his Nation the Saxon of he first fruits of his intendements were wrought vpon Sebert King of the East-Angles, his owne fifters fonne, whom not onely hee converted to Christianitie, but therein assisted him in the building of the Cathedrall Church of S. Paul for Miletus his Bishop; as also the Church of S. Peters on the West of London, then called Thorny, with the assistance of a London Citizen, as some haue said; and himself at Rochester built the Cathedral Church there, which he dedicated to the Apo-

file S. Andrew. (14) This noble King having a care for them that should come after, brought the Lawes of his Country into their owne mother tongue, and left nothing vnattempted, that might advance the glorious Gospell of Christ, or with honour adorne his owne temporall raigne; and is worthily an example to all fucceeding Princes, in all true pictie, and heroicall parts of a true Christian King. He died the foure and twentieth day of Februarie, in the yeere of our Lord God fix hundred and fixteene, being the one and twentieth of his Christianitie, the three and twentieth of his Monarchie, and the fifty fixth of his Kingdome of Kent, and was buried at Canterbury in the Church of S. Peter and Paul, afterwards called S. Augustines, in the Chapell of S. Martines.

(15) His first wife was Berta, the daughter of Chilperik King of France, as we have faid, who was the fon of King Clotagre, the sonne of Cledone, the sirt Christian King of that Country. Shee deceased before the King her husband, and was buried in the Church of S. Peter & Paul at Canterburie, within the Chapell of S. Martines there.

(16) He had a second wife, whose name is not recorded by any Writer, being, as is thought, vnworthy of remembrance, because of the vnnaturall contract and mariage of Edbald her husbands fonne; a finne that both Law and Religion doe condemne: and lastly by her converted husband was forsaken, without cither note of her iffue or death. (17) The iffue of King Ethelbert by Queene Berta

were Edbald that succeeded him in the Kentish Kingdome, Ethelburg, and Edburge two daughters.

(18) Ethelburg, the elder, was a Lady of passing beautie and pietie, and furnamed Tace, who greatly defired and intended a Virgins life, had not her mind beene auerted by the intreaty of her brother, the perbeen cauertee of the interest of the footness fair of wastions of Bishop Paulinus, and the earnest suit of Edwine King of Northumberland; vnto which Edwine laftly she yeelded to bee his wife, in hope of his conucriion, and vnto whom for that purpose Pope Boniface directed his Epistle from Rome, earnestly ex-horting her that shee should bee diligent for the Kings faluation : which finee foone after effected, to the great ioy of both the Kings, and to the comfort and increase of the Christian Faith thorowout Eng-

(19) Edburg, another daughter of King Ethelbert, is warranted only by the testimonie of John Capgraue, a great traueller in Antiquities, and should bee most skilful in his own Country of Kent: notwithstanding he is to be suspected in this, that hee reporteth her to haue beene a Nunne in the Monasterie of Minster in the Ile of Thanet, under the Foundreffe Dommewe, being the daughter of her nephew Ermenred, and that thee succeeded in the government of that house, Mildred the daughter of the same Domnewe. Hee reporteth alfo, that fhee died and was buried in the fame place, and that her body was from thence remooued by the Arch-bishop Lankfrank, to his Church of S. Gregorie in Canterburie.

Monarch 7.

Redwald.

REDVVALD THE THIRD KING OF THE EAST ANGLES, AND SEVENTH

MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS WIFE AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER XIX.

An. D. 616.



Edwald, the sonne of Titus, and the third King of the East-Angles, had been fubstitute vnder Ethelbert King of Kent, and feraed a long time as his Vice-roy ouer all his dominions, whereby he gained fuch reputation to

himselfe, that either for

his owne valour, or Edbalds vices, (contemned of the people for his Apoltalie, frensie, and incestuous bed) became the seuenth Monarch of the Englishmen, about the yeere of Christ his Incarnation fix hundred and fixteene; and the twentieth and fourth of his raigne ouer the East-Angles

(2) This Redwald (faith Beda) had received Baptifine in Kent, but in vaine, and without zeale, as it afterwards appeared. For returning to his Country, through the perswasion of his wife, returned againe

Beds bift Angl.

(bap.20 | Redwald THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch 7.

to his superstitious worships; and in one and the same Temple, after the manner of the old Samaritans, hee erected an Altar for the service of Christ, and another little Altar for burnt facrifices to his Idols, which stood vnto the daies of Beds himselfe, But as she was an infligator to the East-Saxons idolatry, so was shee an instrument to the further spreading of Christianitie (though not by her so purposely meant) in sa-uing the life of Edwine, who afterwards planted the Gospell in all the North parts of the Saxons gouern-

(3) For Edwine flying the rage of wilde Ethelfrid, was succoured and maintained in the Court of King Redwald, vnto whom lastly, the Northumbrian sent both threats and rewards to have him delivered, or else put to death : and surely had not the Queene stood for his life, he had presently died. But she allea. ging the law of humanitie, the trust of a friend, and the royaltie of a Prince, preuailed fo farre, that Red-wald did not onely saue his life, but assisted him in battell, to the destruction of his enemie, and the gaining of Northumberlands Crowne. For vpon the return of Ethelfrids Ambassadors, vnto whom Redwald

Edwine.

had yeelded to make Edwine away, he with his power of the East-Angles were at their backes, and as an encmie made towards Northumberland. (4) Ethelfrid; whose rage and revenge was ready enough vpon leffer occasions, with such sudden preparation as he was able to make, met the Bast-Angles almost at Nottingham, and that not farre from the Riuer Idle, where boldly encountring his vnequall enemie, at the first brunt slew Repubere the sonne of King Redwald, to the great griefe of him and his whole hoft: whose reuenge was so violently fought, that they slew King Ethelfrid in the field, and established Edwine to be his fucceffor; which was the fecond yeere of Red-Rodwald, his

walds Monarchy. (5) Wherein he raigned the space of eight yeeres and was King of the East-Angles thirty one, and de-

ceased in the yeere of our Lord fix hundred twentie foure; the eighth of Edbalds King of Kent; the thirteenth of Kingils King of the West-Saxons, and the eighth of Edwins ouer the Northumbrians.

(6) The Queene and wife of this King is not named by any of our Writers, but that the had been the widow of a Nobleman, descended of the bloud-royall of that Nation, and was a Lady that had deserved great commendations for the many vertues by her possessed, had she been a Christian, or a fauorer of the Christians, or had not been an veter enemy to their faith. Notwithstanding by her first husband she had a fonne named Sigebert, that proued a learned and most religious Prince, of whom we have spoken in Chap-

(7) His iffue were Reynhere and Erpenwald, Reynhere the elder, and Prince of the East-Angles, was flaine as you have heard, in the battell that his father fought against wilde Ethelfrid, necre vnto the Riuer Idle in

against white some fire.

(8) Erpenvald the younger succeeded his father Redwald in the Kingdome of the Zelf-Angles, and was him to be a succeeded his father Redwald in the Kingdome of the Elf-Angles. the fourth King of that Nation, whose life and raigne we have declared in the succession of the East-Angles Kings: Chapter 11.

EDVVINE THE GREAT KING OF Montariely 8

NORTHVMBERLAND, AND THE EIGHTH SOLE MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS RAIGNE, WIVES, AND



CHAPTER XX.

An.Do. 617.



le Monarch reuerted from the East-Angles, was next possessed by the Norhumbrians, wherein it was held with greater glorie and for longer time. For Edwine in King Redwalds life growne very potent, after his death became his fucceffor in the English

Monarch, and most worthily did adorne the same by

his civill inflice and divine pietie: his exile, visions, and obtaining of the Northumbrians Crowne, we have already spoken of, and therefore without repetition will paffe on to his end.

(2) This Edwine, the sonne of great Ella, the first King of the Deirians, was the third King that posses fed the same, the eighth of Bernieia, the second (and first Christian) King of all Northumberland, at the age of twenty three, and in the veere of Christ fix hundred twenty foure, succeeded Redwald in the Monarchy, and was the greatest King of all the Saxons. For

Redatel Angl Hebrides.

Conspiracie.

Beda bift, Augl. lib.s.cap.g.

(as Beda laith) hee subdued all the coasts of Britannie wherefocuer any Prouinces were inhabited, either of English or of Saxons, which thing no King of the Engtilb before him had done; and added the Menian Iles vnto his owne Dominions. The first of them, and next the South, was large and fertile, gaue roome for nine hundred and fixty of his English Families, and the second, ground for about three hundred Tene-

(3) His first wife dead, he became suiter for Lady Ethelburg, daughter to Ethelbert King of Kent, deceafed, and silter to King Eadbala then raigning: whose Ambassadours were answered, that it was not lawfull for a Christian Virgin to bee espoused to a Pagan, lest to a complaint regime to be elipouled to a Fagon, left he faith and fair-arments of the hearenly King flouid bee prophaned, by the matching with that earthly King, which knew not to worthip God aright. But Edwine hearing of the Virgins beautie, integrity, and prictic, was fo farre ouregone and multhed therewish, that hee condeficended, thee fhould with her place re-tails the proof, certailing the Section 1. tain her owne Christian Profession, and enjoy the Christian societie both of her men, women, Priests, and servants, to bee her attendants in his Court. These couenants thus confirmed, the Lady accompanied with Paulinus the renerend Bishop, and an honourable retinue, all of them Christian, came to King Edwins Court, and with great joy shee was espoused his

(4) The greatnesse and prosperitie of this Northumbrian King, was both feared by them a farre, that raigned in no such power, and beheld by his neerer, with an enuious eie: among whom, Quinchelme that raigned with his father king ouer the Weft-saxons, sent a desperate Russin, whose name was Eumerus, to murder Edwin the next yeere of his mariage; who repairing to his Court, then refident neeretheriuer Deruent, at the place that is now called Aldeby in York foire, with a double-edged short sword, the point thereof poisoned, and girt under his garment, upon Easter day entred his Palace, as an Ambassadour, and with craftic speech reteined the Kings attention, where getting occasion, and stepping forward, drew his sword, which one Lilla the Kings seruant saw, and wanting wherewith to defend his perion, put himselfe betwixt the King and the fword : and thorow his bodie fo flaine, the same was so farre runne, that it dangerously wounded the King with his point, and with the same fword, before he could be beaten down by the Guard, flew another servant, whose name was Fordhere.

(5) It happened the same night, being holy Easter Sunday, that Queene Ethelburg was brought to bed of a daughter: for ioy whereof, and her fafe delinerance, the King gaue thankes to his Idols; which Bihop Pauling, then in prefence, greatly reproued, and bade Edwin to give thankes vnto God, from whom only all goodnesse came; and spake vnto him of our new birth in Christ : at which conference the King much rejoiced, and promifed that hee would ever af ter renounce all his Idols, and worship that Christ whom he preached, if that God would grant him his life, and glue him victorie against that King, who had first this Manqueller to murder him; in pledge wher-of, heaßigned Paulinus to baptife his daughter, the which vpon whit funday following was performed in her, by the name of Eurified, and fine the first of the Northumbrians which received that Sacrament. At which time also, Edwin being recourred of his wound fo lately received, made an Armie, and marched forth against the West-Saxons, and in battle either slew or tooke prisoners al them that had conspired his death, and as a victorious Conquerour, returned to his

(6) Where continuing in honour, and his affaires prospering to his owne desires, hee was yet in minde distracted, and his thoughts continually perplexed, what God he should worship. The sanctitic of the Christians mooned him much, and the ancient cufromes of his Ancestours sate neere his heart, betwixt whom there seemed a combat in himselfe. And in

these dumps sitting one day alone, it chanced Bishop Paulinus to haue accesse to his presence, where laying Beda his. Assi.
his right hand ypon the kings head, demanded of him his right hand ypon the kings head, demanded of him whether hee remembred that figne: whereat Edwine fuddenly fell at the Bishops feete, whom hee in haste and reuerence presently lifted vp, and spake vnto him

Behold O Souer aigne (said he) by the hountifull hand and Bebola U. Sourrayme tall they fire committy of an opposite of our God, you have of speat the hand and vengeance of your most hated and dreadfull enemie. Behold also, by of your maje hatta and dradjull enomie. Behold aljo, by its most grange goodner you have obtained hie four arguite of reigne and rule of the Kingdome. Romenber now therefore its hird this guidely on your led him, and deferre no longer to accomplibe the mode by receasing his distinct pour in and before mode to the commandement, who hath deliuned you will handlike and keeping his Commandement, who hath deliuned you will handlike and selected and the selected and

(7) Whereupon conferring with his Counfell, whereof Bishop Corft was chiefe, for the establishing of the Gospell, and suppressing of Idolatrie, it was then concluded, that the true God should be worthipped, and the Altars of their wonted Idols ouerthrowne : vnto which action, Coff himfelfe became the first man; for mounted on horsebacke in armour, listed. with a girt fword and launce in his hand (all which was vnlawfull for those Idoll-Priests) he brake downe their Altars, Grates, and Barres, and destroied their Temples wherefoeuer he came. Some ruines thereof not farre from Yorke, and neere vnto the riling of the river Derwent, remained to be feen vnto the dales the riner Dervint, remained to be seen vision in coals of Beds, and were then called dostmand in Gaham. And king Edwine himselfe, with all his Nobilitic, and most seed himselfe, with all his Nobilitic, and most seed himselfe. of the Commons, received the lauer of Baptifme, the eleuenth yeere of his raigne, and of Christs Incarnation fix hundred twenty and feuen, one hundred and eighty yeeres after the Saxons entrance into Britaine. The king was baptized the twelfth of Aprill, being Easter Sunday, at the Citie Torke, in the Church of S.Peters, built then of wood, and was the kings Oratorie, which he enclosed about with a deepe foundation; and laying the walles with fquared stones, made it the Cathedrall Church, and his Conuerter Paulmus Arch-bishop of that See,

Arch-binop of that See,

(3) The Gospell thus established in these Northerne parts, spreaddaily surther into other Prouinces, and with such fruit of peace, that in the raigne of ces, and wan nuch numer peace, that numer rangue of this Edwin, and thorowout his Dominions, a weake woman with her new-borne babe might have passed with the service. without dammage or danger over all the Hand, even from Sea to Sea. And so much did the King tender his Subjects, that his provident care was extended to the way-faring paffengers, for whose vie he enclosed cleere Springs by the waies, where he ser great Basens of brasse, both to wash and to bathe in; which either for loue or displeasure of the king, no man defaced, ortooke away.

Ortooke away.

And so great was the magnificence of this Monarch, that (according to Bede) he had not only in Battle the Entignes proper to battle borne before him, but in his ordinarie passages thorow the Cities and Towns of his kingdome, there alwaies went an Enfigne-bearer before him. And (to vie the words of the same venerable Author)he went not in any freet, in which there was not borne before him that kinde of Stanthere was not some secoremin that none of standard which the Romans called Talk, and the English Talker Though That the Romans had such an Ensigne, as that which here is called Talk, Influs Lipsus in his Commentarie voon that place in Vegetius (4b.3.cap.5.)
where the feuerall Enlignes of the Romans are recited, doth declare, correcting that place of Vegetius (where Rufa was fet for Tufa) by this place of Bede, and in the fame flewing, that Tufa fignified a Ball, as the Ball (by the example of Augustus) was an Enligne of Monarchie, or absolute gouernment,

(9) But as the Sunne hath his rifing, his height

and defcent, and euer is mooning in the circle of his celestiall orbe; so man hath his birth time, being, and death, and till then is neuer staied in one certaine point, Kings therefore, as they be Kings, are the Suns of their owne world, but as they are men, goe to the shadow of death : neither can the strength of their power, wisdome, or policie, loue or applause, stay the hand heere that holds the fatall knife; for so in this King Edwin wee sec, raised about hope to attaine the Diaderne, and ruling in love and liking of the people, was notwithstanding cut off in the midst of his glorie and greatnesse of strength.

(10) For Penda the flout Mercian enuying his peace, and Cadwallo the Britaine feeking to receive his right, joined in friendship against this Monarch, and met him as his enemics in the face of a Field. The plaine was large, and called Hethfeld, where after a long and most bloudie fight, king Edwin was slaine, with prince Offryd his sonne, his whole Host put to the fword, or most shamefull flight : which chanced the fourth of October, the yeere of our Lord fix hundred thirty three, the fixth of his Christianitie, the scuenth of his Monarchie, the feuenteenth of his kingdome, and the forty feuenth of his age. His bodie was lastly buried in S. Peters Church at Streamsball, after called Whitby.

His Wines. (11) Quenburg his first wife, was the daughter (as Beda reporteth) of Ceorle, but as all other Writers doe witnesse, of CridaKing of Mercia. She was married vnto him in the beginning of his youth, (and when he was dispossessed of his inheritance by the Tyrant Ewas unportened or fits innertrance by the I yrant E-theifrid, as we have faild with him fine lived a great part of his banifilment, and in the Court of Retrald king of the Eaft-Angles deccased, before her husband could recover his Kingdome.

Tace.

(12) Ethelburg, furnamed Tate, was the fecond wife of this King, who was the daughter of Ethelbert King of Kent, and of Queene Berta his first wife. She was married vnto him in the yeere of grace fix hun-dred twentie fine, being the second of his Monarchy, and was his wife fix yeeres : but furning him, and desirous to line a religious life, shee returning into Kent, withdrew her selfe to a place not far from the Sea fide, called Lymming, wherein shee built a Monasterie of Nunnes, and among them spent the rest of her life, and therein died, and was there buried.

His Iffue.
(13) Offride, the eldeft fonne of King Edmine, and (13) Off that, the cuertionine of Ling Lawrine, and Quewherg his firth wife, was borne in the time of his fathers exile among the Eaft-Angles. He was baptized in the faith of Chrili by Paulinus the first Archbishop of Torke, and was flaine the fame day, and in the fame battell that his father was. He had a sonne named 1ffs, who was baptized also by Bishop Paulinus; and after the death of his father and grand father, for feare of King Ofwald, was conveied over the Seas into France,

to bee brought vp in the Court of King Dagobert, where he died in his childhood, and was there honourably interred.

(14) Edfrid, the second sonne of King Edwine and Lady Quenberg his first wife, was borne in the time of his fathers exile, and baptized with his brother of frid by Bishop Paulinus. After his fathers death, for feare of King ofwald, hee fled to Penda King of Mercia, who was his fathers enemie, and his mothers kinfman; by whom hee was most treacherously murthered, He left behind him a fon named Hererik, who by his wife Bert fwith had iffue the vertuous & learned lady Hilda, Abbesse of Streanshalch: & Queen Hereswith her fifter, the wife of Ethelhere King of the East-Angles brother to King Anna, by whom shee had iffue Ald wolfe, Elfwold, and Beorne, all three succeeding Kings

woojs, bijwaa, and Berone, an tince increasing Kings of the East-Angles.

(1) Ethelme, the third fonne of King Edwins, and the first of Queen Ethelburg his second wife, was baptized by Paulowa Arch-bindop of Yorks, not long after his father and halfe-brethern; but in short space after his baptisme, he departed out of this world, euen in the time that he wore the white attire, which in those daies was vied to bee worne by fuch as were newly baptized for a certaine space. His body was with all due funerall obsequies enterred within the new Church of s. Peter in the Citie of Yorke, which his father had newly founded,

(16) Visited, the fourth some of King Edwine, and the second of Queene Ethelburg his second wife, and the last and youngest of them both, bare the name of his fathers great grandfather. He was baptized by the Arch-bishop Paulinus at one time with his brother Ethelme. After the decease of his sather, his mother carried him with her out of Northumberland into Kent; and from thence conveied him over into France with his Nephew Iffy, the fonne of his halfe-brother Offrid, where hee continued in the custodie of King Dagobert, being his mothers cosen-german, and there died, and was honourably buried in a Church with his Nephew Iffy.

(17) Banfled, the elder daughter of King Edwine

and Queene Ethelberg his fecond wife, was borne the Bedshift. Ang. night following that her father was wounded and lib.3.cap.15. mignt following that her rather was wounded and baptized, hee being a Pagan. Shee was afterwards married to Ofw, the fourth King of Northumberland, and tenth Monarch of the Englishmen, as shall bee

(18) Etheldrid the younger daughter, the fifth and last-borne child to King Edwine and of Queene Ethelburge, was baptized at the fame time with Ethelburg and Fiftee her brethren. She died an infant, the white clothing not yet put off, which in those daies was vsually worne at certaine fet times after their baptifme. and was with like funerall obsequies buried by her brother Ethelme in the Church of S. Peters in Torke, which their father had founded.





Oog I

OSWALD

Ofwald.

Monarch o.

OSVVALD KING OF NORTHVM-BERLAND, AND THE NINTH MO-

NARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS RAIGNE, WIFE, AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER XXI.

An.Do.634.

Beda bift. Ang.



swald, the fifth King of Deira, the ninth of Bernicia, the third of Northum berland, and the ninth Monarch of the Englishmen, began his raigne the yeere of Christs incarnation fix hundred thirty foure. He with Eanfrith and his bre-

thren, the sonnes of wilde Ethelfrid, and Ofrikalso the sonne of Alfrid King Edwins Vncle had been secured in Scotland all histaigne, and among the Red-shanks lived as banished men, where they learned the true religion of Christ, and which they statistical true rengion of Christ, and had received the Lauer of Baptiline. But Entimes death wrought and divulged, these Princes returne again to their Country, and the Northumbrians Kingdome lately gouerned by one, was now again divided into two feuerall parts, as formerly it had been.

(2) Ouer the Deirans, of rikwas made king, and of Bernicia, Eanfrid affumed the raigne; but Gods inflice ouer taking their Apostasie, neither their liues nor this diuision lasted long. For Cadwall the Christian, and Penda the Pagan were Gods instruments, that with worthy vengeance in the first yeere of their gouernment, cut the one off in battell , and the other by trechery; whose names and yeere of raigne as vnhappy and of hatefull remembrance, the Historiographers of those times would have to be omitted.

(3) But religious ofwald lamenting the effusion of his Countries bloud, long flept not, their reuenge. For affembling his power, which was not great, hee fuddenly and vnlooked for came vpon Cadwallo, and at Denischurne pitched downe his tents. The place (faith Beda) flood neere the wall that Senerus had made, where of wald for the first day forbare to fight, and among his Souldiers for his Standerd fet vp a Croffe of wood; wherunto it feemeth those dawning dates of Christianity were ouermuch addicted. Here

Ofwald making first intercession to God, the onely Of parker meaning into interestions to God, the onersy preferrer of his people, in fore & long fight obtained great victory, with the flaughter of Cadwallo, and of all his British Army: which so accomplished, many have attributed the vertue of that Crosse to bee no final caule of that great ouerthrow. This Croffe for fervp, was the first we read of to haue been erected in England, and the first Altar vino Christ among the Bernicians, whose pretended miraculous cures, not onely in the wood it selfe, but in the mosse and in the earth wherein it was set, let Beda report them, and Stapleton vrge them, yet for my part, I hold them no Article of our canonicall Creed.

(4) But certaine it is, that Ofwald himselfe was a most religious and godly king, and tooke such care for the conversion and faluation of his subjects, that he sent into Scotland for Aidana Christian Bishop, to instruct his Northumbrians in the Gospell of truth. And whereas the Bishops could not speake their language, the king himselfe was interpreter at his Serguage, the sing intinene was interpreter acting our mons, and gaue his words in the English, as hee spake and pronounced them in the Senish, which language ofwald perfectly spake, having beene there the space of eighteene yeeres.

Thus the godly proceedings of the king and Bi-shop, produced such increase of their heavenly seed, that it is reported in feuen daies space, fifteene thoufand Christians received Baptisme; and many of them for saking the pleasures of the world, to have betake themselues to a religious and solitarie life.

(5) At this time the whole Iland flourished both Beds bift. Angl. with peace and plentie, and acknowledged their fubwan peace and periode, and assure we great the nul-iection vnto king Ofrald. For, as Beda reportect, all the Nations of Britamie which spake four languages, that is to fay, Britaines, Redshanks, Scots, and Englishmen, became subject onto him. And yet being advanced to so royall Maiestie, he was notwithstanding (which is maruellous tobe reported) lowly to all, gracious to the poore, and bountifullto strangers. The fruits whereof the same Author

exemplifieth in his bounty and humilitie towards the poore; who vpon a folemne feast day, seeing many such at his gates, sent them both the delicates for himfelfe prepared,& commanded the charger of filuer to be broken, and divided among them. The Bishop much rejoycing thereat, tookethe king by the right hand, and praied that it might neuer consume; as after his death it did not, but was shrined in siluer, and in S. Peters Church at Bebba, now Bambrough, with worthyhonor was worshipped for the many miracles in cures that it did, as likewise the earth wherein his bloud was spilt: with such lauish enlargements haue those writers interlined the deeds of Gods Saints,

(bap.21)

(6) But as the Sunne hath his shadow, and the highest tide her ebbe, so ofwald, how holy socuer, or gouernment how good, had emulators that fought his life, and his Countries ruine : for wicked Penda the Pagan Mercian, enuying the greatnesse that king Oswaldbare, raised warres against him, and at a place then called Maferfeild in Shrop-shire, in a bloudie and fore fought battle flew him; and not therewith fatiffied, in barbarous and brutish immanitie, did teare him in peeces, the first day of August, and yeere of Christ lesus six hundred forty two, being the ninth of his raigne, and the thirty eighth of his age: whereupon the faid place of his death is called to this day Ofwaldstree, a faire Market Towne in the same

(7) The difmembred limmes of his body were first buried in the Monastery of Bradney in Lincolnshire, shrined with his standard of Gold and Purple creeked

ouer his Tombe, at the industry and cost of his neece Offryd, Queene of Mercia, wife vnto king Ethelred, and daughter to Oswyn that succeeded him. From hence his bones were afterwards remooued to glocester, and there in the north fide of the vpper end of the Quire in the Cathedrall Church, continueth a faire Monument of him, with a Chapeli fet betwixt two pillers in the same Church. His Wife.

(8) Kineburg, a most vertuous Lady, and daughter to Kingils the fixth, and first Christian king of the West-Saxons, was the wife of king Ofwald, who became both his father and sonne in the day of her mariage, by receiving him at the Font, and her of his gift. She was maried vnto him in the fecond yeere of his raign, which was the yeere of Christs Incarnation fix hundred thirty fix : no other relation made of her besides the birth of his sonne.

His I sue. (9) Ethelwald, the only childe of king Ofwald and Queene Kineburg his wife, was borne in the yeere of our Lord fix hundred thirty seuen, being the third yeere of his fathers raigne; and but an infant at his fathers death, was disappointed of the Northumbrian Kingdome by the fraud of his vncle Osmyn. Notwithstanding at the death of Ofwin king of Deira, and then not about fixteene yeeres of age, hee tooke the same kingdome, and by strong hand held it against his vncle so long as he lined, and at his death left it to his cofen Alkefryd, the naturall fonne of king of wyne, as in the ninth Chapter we have faid.

OSVVY KING OF NORTHVM-BERLAND, AND THE TENTH MO-

NARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS ACTS. WIFE, AND CHILDREN.



CHAPTER XXII.

An.Do.642

Ofwy.



Swye, the illegitimate fonne of King Ethelfrid, furnamed the Wilde, at thirty yeeres of age fuceeded Ofwald his halfe brother in his Dominions, being the fourth King of Northumberland, and the tenth Monarch of the Englishmen, entring his government

the thirteenth day of October, and yeere of Christs Incarnation fix hundred forty three. His first beginnings were much disquieted by Penda the Heathen Mercian, by the rebellions of his base sonne Alkfrid, and by the oppositions of Ethelwald the son of King Ofwald:but none fate more necre his heart then Ofwyn Ofwyn ensie king of the Deirians did, whose vertuous gouernment did much darken (as hee tooke it) his owne, and the free loue of those subjects, daily to lessen his among the Bernicians.

(2) This Ofwyn of Deira was the sonne of Ofrike the Deirian.

Monarch.10.

an bloud, forfooke the field, accompanied onely

with one Souldier, and went to Earle Hunwaldhis friend as he thought, to secure his life. But contrary

to trust, hee deliuered him vnto King ofwy, who

cruelly flew him the twentieth of August, and ninth

of his raigne, at the place called Ingething; where af-

terwards for satisfaction of so hainous an offence, a

Monasterie was built, as vpon like occasions, many the like foundations were laid; whose stones were

Story following : Among his other rare vertues and

princely qualities, his humility (faith he) and passing low-

line fe excelled : whereof he thus exemplifieth : There-

thus iouncd with the morter of bloud. (3) Of this Of wine thus flainc, Bedareporteth the Monarch 10. Book. 7.

therne parts likewise subject vinto him. He it was that decided the long controuerly for Easters celebration, and founded the Cathedrall Church in Liebfeild for a Bishops See : which Citie, with all South-Mercia, diuided from the north by the river Trent, hee gaue to Peada the fonne of king Penda, in mariage with his naturall daughter Alkfled, on condition that he fhould become a Christian: all which the said king not long enioied, but was murdered in his owne Court. And the Mercians erecting Vulfhere his brother and their natiue country-man for king, rebelled against Ofpy,

and freed themselucs from a forraine subjection. (8) Thus Of my ending in troubles as he began in Bede biff. Aug. warres, raigned the space of twenty eightyeeres, and then failing sicke, was so strucke with remorie for the The time of King death of good of wyn, and bloud which hee had spilt, of wys raigne. that hee vowed a pilgrimage to Rome, in which reputed holy place hee purposed to have ended his life, and to have left his bones therein to rest: but his disease increasing; and that purpose failing, he left this life the fifteenth of Februarie, and his body to remaine in S. Peters Church at Stream bach, the yeere af-

ter Christs birth six hundred seuentie, and of his own age fifty eight. His Wife. (9) Eanfled, the wife of this king, was the daughter Eanfled. of Edwin and Ethelburg, king & Queene of Northum-berland. She was the first Christian that was baptized

in that Prouince, and after her fathers death, was brought vp in Kent vnder her mother, and thence maried vnto this of my, whom she surrained, and spent the whole time of her widow-hood in the Monastery of Steanshalch, where her daughter Elfred was Abbesse, Steanshald Mowherein the deceased and was interred in the Church natterie. of S. Peter, hard by her husband king Edwin.

Elfled his eldeft

His I sue.

(10) Egfryd, the eldest sonne of king Ofwy and of Egfryd the eldest sonne of king Ofwy and of Queene Eanfled, was borne in the third yeere of his fathers raigne, being the yeere of grace fix hundred forty fiue. In the twenty fifth yeere of his age, and of our Lord God fix hundred feuenty one, he succeeded his father in Northumberland, but not in his Momarchie: of whose life and acts, wee have further spoken in the seventh Chapter of this Booke.

(11) Elivine, the second sonne of king of my, and of Queene Earstled, was borne in the yeere of our condisions. Lord fix hundred fixty one, being the ninth of his fa-thers raigne, at whose death he was nine yeeres old: and in the ninth yeere after, being the eighteenth of his age, was unfortunately flaine in a battell, wherein his age, was vincumatery mainer in a pattern, wherein the ferried his brother Egfrid, againft Ethebred king of the Mercians, to the great griefe of them both, the yeere of Christs nativity six hundred scuentie nine.

(12) Elfled, the eldest daughter of king of my and queene Eanfled, was borne in the month of September, the yeere of grace fix hundred fiftie foure, being the twelfth of her fathers raigne; and when the was a yeer old, by him committed to the custodie & bringing vp of the renowned Lady Hilda, Abbeffe of Stream-(ball, wherein the lived vnder hera Nun, and after her Streamball death did succeed her Abbesse of the place, and in great holinesse and vertue, spent therein her life, vnto the day of her death, which was the yeere of Christ Iesus seuen hundred sourteene, and of her owne age fixtic, being interred in S. Peters Church within the same Monasterie.

(13) Offrid, the younger daughter of king of wy and queene Eanfled, was borne about the fifteenth yeere of her fathers raigne, which was the yeere of our Lord fix hundred fixtie feuen: and when the was fully twenty, was married vnto Ethelred king of Mercia, the twelfth Monarch of the Englishmen, in the third yeere of his raigne, and of Christ six hundred

(14) Alkfrid, the natural fonne of king Ofwy, did Alkfryd a natufirst succeed his cosen Ethelwald, sonne of king Ofwald

uerend Christian Bishop Aidan wsing much trauell to preach the Gospell thorowout that Province, the King for his more His gift to the Buhop Aiden. ease, gaue him a goodly Gelding with rich and costly trapping. It chanced one day, as the Bishop rode to minister the word of life, that a poore man demanded his almes : bu! hee not having wherewith to relecue him, and pitying his di-fireffed poore estate, presently alighted, and gaue onto him his horse and rich furniture; whereof when the King heard, Almes to a poo he blamed him, and faid, What meant you (my Lerd) to give to the begger the horse that I gaueyou, with my saddle and trappings? Had we horses of no lower price to give away to trapping? It dat we have is of nadowe price to flue way to the powe? To show how the Billips prejied, Anda it show of of a heaft determines with the powe that the power of a heaft determines when the power manthe children of God? The King these promoted the fire, and there fally paying open this anywer, preferring gaar from hims front, and in half; fell at the Billips feet, defrime forgaments in that be had faid. The Billips made affected the shad defined from the strengthing the mean, and to be mory; which the King defring from the to the billips to the the Billips contractive the gas on the the Billips contractive the gas on the power which the king through the day, and the travestor trickle down his checker in which political and the tearestor trickle down his checker. King O/wiss rehee burst out into these speeches, and said to his Chaplaine Bilhop'Aidas in an waknowne tongue, I neuer till this time haue scene an humble King; and surely his life cannot bee long, for this people are not worthy to haue such a Prince to govern them. King Ofwyn.

But to returne to King Ofwy. (4) Who after many cruell invalions of the mer-cileste Penda, was forced to sue vnto him for peace, with proffers of infinite treasure and most precious icwels : all which rejected, and the Tyrant comming on, Ofwy fought his helpe by supplication to God, and with such zeale as then was embraced, vowed his young daughter Elfled to be confecrated in perpetuall Elfled the daugh-ter of King Ofwy. virginitie vnto him, with twelue Farmers and their lands, to the erection and maintenance of a Monasterie: and thereupon prepared himselfe for battle.

(f) The Armie of this enemie is reported to redouble thirty times his, all well appointed and old tri-ed fouldiers: against whom Of my with his sonne Alkfrid boldly marched, Egfrid his other fonne then being an hostage with Cinwife an vnder Queene of the Mercians : Ethelwald the sonne of Ofwald, tooke part with Penda, against his naturall Vncle and natiue Country : io did Ethelherd the brother of Christian Anna, fide with this heathenish and cruell Mercian.

Alkfrid.

Ethelwald,

Junet River.

Penda flaine.

Ethelmal. this

(6) The battle was fought necre to the river Inuet, which at that time did ouer-flow his bankes, fo that the victorie falling with ofwy, more were drowned in the water then flaine with the fword. And heerein proud Penda loft his life, with the discomfiture of all his Mercian power. Heerein also died Ethelherd, the East-Angles King, who was the only motive to these warres : and Ethelwald cscaping, returned with dishonour vnto Deira. The day was thus gotten the thirteenth yeere of King ofmy his raigne, the fifteenth day of Nouember, and yeere of Christ his Incarnation fix hundred fifty five.

Chap.23 Vulfhere THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch II.

Monarch II.

Chap.y.felt 12

his Vncle in part of Northumberland, and held the fame by force against his Father, which afterwards he peaceably injuved both with him and his halfe bro-ther King Egfrid, whom laftly hee fucceeded in the whole kingdome of Northumberland; as more at large in the fame flory we have declared.

(15) Alkfed, the naturall daughter of king of my, borne before het father was king; in the yeere of Chriss incarnation fix hundred fiftie three, and the

eleuenth of her fathers raigne, was married to Peada the fonne of Penda, that by his permission had gouer-ned some part of Mercia, and by Ofry his gift with this Alfled, all the South of that Province, She was his wife three yeers, and is of most writers taxed to be the actor of his death, being wickedly murthered in the feast of Easter, the yeere of grace six hundred fiftie fixe, and the fourteenth of her Fathers

Vulfhere.

VVLFHERE THE SIXTH KING OF THE MERCIANS, AND THE ELE.

VENTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISH-MEN, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, WIFE, AND ISSUE



CHAPTER XXIII.

An.Do.659.



rulfhere, after the murther of his brother Peads, adnanced against of my by the Nobles of Mercia, maintained his title and kingdome for twelue veeres continuance, in the life time of that Northumbrian Monarch, and after his

death translated the Monarchy from those Kings; and Country, vnto himself and his fucceffors the Mercians, who now wore the Imperiall Diademe without reuerlement, vntill fuch time as great Egbert fet it vpon the West-Saxons

He was the second sonne of Penda King of Mercia and the fixth in succession of that kingdome, begin-ning his raigne the yeere of Christhis Incarnation, fix hundred fiftie nine, and twelue yeeres after, Anno fix hundred seuenty one, entred his Monarchy ouer the Englishmen, and was in number accounted the ele-uenth Monarch of the Land. (2) His entrance was with trouble against the

Linfry I land loft to the Northam-briens,

Beda bift. Angl.

Northumbrians; for vnto Egfrid their King he had loft the possession of the Iland Ling, and was expelled the Country: yet three yeeres after he fought against the West-Saxons with better successe, whose Country with conquest he passed thorow, and wan from Reswald their King the Ile of Wight, which I and he gave

to Edilmach the South-Saxons King, whom he received his God-sonne at the font-stone; notwithstanding himselfe had lately been a prophane Idolater, and most cruell Heathen, as by the Liger booke of the Monastery of Peterborow appeareth, whose story is Lib. Paterbay.

(3) King vulfhere of Mercia remaining at his Castell in vlferchester in stafford-shire, and understanding that Vulfald and Rufin his two fonnes, vnder pre- | Castell tence and colour of hunting, viually reforted to reuerend Chad, to bee instructed in the fruitfull faith of Christ Iesus, and had at his hands received the Sacrament of Baptiline, at the persuasion of one Werebod, suddenly followed, and finding them in the Oratory of that holy man, in dedout contemplations, flew them there with his owne hands. Whole martyred bodies Queene Ermenhild their mother caused to be buried in a Sepulchre of stone, and thereupon a faire Church to be erected, which by reason of the many John Capprise. stones thither brought for that foundation, was ever after called Stones and now is a Market Towne in the after cancul states and the state of the sta an, and destroiced all those Temples wherein his heathen Gods had been worshipped, contierting them all into Christian Churches, and religious Monaste-

ries : and to redeeme so hainous an offence, vinder-

Ooo 2

went the finishing of * Medisham, his brothers foundation, enriching it largely with lands and possession.

THE SVCCESSIONS OF Ethelred Monarch 12. Book. 7. 340 ons: notwithstanding hee is taxed by William of Christian faith by Bishop chad, and martyred for Volfald a jupp profession of the same by King vulfhere, is reported fee Malmesbury with the toule sinne of Symony, for selling vnto Wyna the Bishopricke of Landon. by Water of Wittlefey, a Monke of Peterborow, in a Re- water winteley. (4) He raigned King ouer the Mercians the space of seventeene yeeres, and Monarch of the English fulgifter which he wrote of that Monastery, to bee the Supposed son of King Valfhere himselfe, and to have ly foure, leaving his life in the yeere of our Lord fix been flaine by him in his extreme fury before he was hundred seuentie foure, and his body to be buried in a Christian, or could indure to heare of the Christian the Monastery of Peterborow, which was of his brofaith. He was buried in Stone, as we have faid, where thers and his owne foundation. his father built a Colledge of Canons regular, which S. Vullaider Col His Wife was afterwards called S. Vulfaldes. (5) Ermenhild, the Wife of King Vulfhere, was the (8) Rufine the fellow martyr of Vulfald, is by the Ermenbilds padaughter of Ercombert, the feuenth King of Kent, and sameWriter reported to be his brother, and the sup- supposed for fifter to Egbert and Lothair, both Kings of that Counposed sonne also of Fulfhere the King. Their murtie. Her mother was Sexburg, daughter to Anna, the thers, as he faith, was committed the ninth Calends of Jugost, which is with vs the foure and twenty seuenth King of the East-Angles, whose sisters were of Iuly, vpon which day there was yeerely celebrated a folemne memoriall of their mattyrdomes in the many and most of them Saints. She was married vnto him in the third yeere of his raigne, and was his wife fourteene yeeres. After his decease, she went to her fame place, where they both fuffered, and where their Queene Sexbarg fame place, where usey to the transfer of the Montment was then remaining.

(9) Woreburg, the daughter of King Fulfheer and Queene Ermenidd, was in the childhood committed described. mother Queene Sexburg, being then Abbeffe of Ely, where the continued all the reft of her life, and therein deceased and was buried. to the bringing vp of Queene Etheldrid her mothers (6) Kenred the son of King Vulfhere and of Queen Ermenhild, being the heire apparant of his fathers Aunt, in the Monastery of Ely, by whose perswasion Kenred the first the professed virginity, and returning to her Country in theraigne of King Ethelred her Vncle, was by him made ouerfeer of all the Monasteries within his dopossessions, was under age at his fathers decease; and by reason of his minority, was withheld from the gouernment, which Ethelred his Vncle entred into, withminions. She deceased at Trickingham (now called minions. She decealed at Treitingham (now caused Trentham) in Stafford-fibre, and was buried at Han-Burieda Heabor. Her body was afterwards remooued to Weft.

**Polymer Leafrik the Earle built in honour of her threathing. out any contradiction of this Kenred, who held himselfe contented to line a private life: notwithstanding Ethelred taking the habit of a Monke, left the Crowne to him who was the right heire. a goodly Church called S. Wereburgs, which to this Church, (7) Vulfald a young Gentleman converted to the day is the Cathedrall Church of that Citie. ETHELRED THE SEVENTH KING Ethelred. Monarch 12. OF MERCIA, AND TWELFTH MO. NARCH OF THE ENGLISH HIS ACTS. WIFE, AND ISSVE. CHAPTER XXIIII. Theired, the third sonne of twelfth person that bare the Imperial title of the whole: his claime was not immediately nor next in King Penda, and brother to the last declared Vulffuccession, young Kenred his Nephew standing behere, in the yeere of Chris twixt him and the Crowne. But himselfe a child in Icfus fix hundred feuenty yeeres, and in them also addicted vnto a private life. fiue, beganne his raigne in he gaue his Vncle way to vndergo so publike a charge the kingdome of Mereia, which without contradiction was likewife accepted and at the same time in of the subjects. the Monarchy of the Eng-(2) His entrance was with warre against the Kenlishmen, being the seuenth tifb Lothaire, whose Country he destroied, sparing nei-King among them that ware their Diademe, and the ther Churches nor religious Abbeys, the King not

daring to appeare in field. The Citie Rochefter felt also his fury, whose Citizens were ransacked, their buildings ruinated, and their Bishop Patta driven to such distresse, that he became a Teacher of good Arts and Musicke in Mercia, to maintaine his aged yeeres from the necessity of perishing want. These stirres (saith Beda) happened in the yeere of grace six hundred seuenty seuen; and the next following, so searefull a couered in the moneth of August, and for three moneths together continued rifing in the morning, and giuing forth a blazing pile very high, and of a glittering flame. (3) The remorfe of conscience for the bloud he had spilt, and the places of Oratories by him destroied, (besides his intrusions into another mans right) ftrucke so deepe a wound into King Ethelreds breast, that euer hee bethought him what recompence to make. First therefore building a goodly Monastery at Bradney, and that most fruitfully scated in the County of Lincolne, thought that not sufficient to wash away the scarres of his foule offence, but determined in himselfe to forsake the world, for that was the terme attributed to the monasticall life: wherein notwithstanding, in lesse cares they lived, and their persons more safe from all dangers attempted, then when they publikely administred their lawes to their people, the inft executions whereof, many times breed the ouerthrow of their Princes, and their Perfons neuer fecure amidft their owne gards. (4) But such was the religion then taught, and the godly zeale of the good Princes then raigning, whose works haue manifested their vertues to posterities, and faith in Christ the saluation of their soules, in THE SECRET SECTION OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PROP KENRED THE EIGHTH KING OF MERCIA, AND THE THIR-

bap.24 Kenred Beda bill. Angl. A blazing starre. Blazing starre, as was wonderfull to behold, first dis-Kenred. Ap.Do.704.

mred the fonne of Vuifhere, because of his mino. ritie at his Fathers death was defeated of his dominions by his Vncle Ethel red, and vntill it pleased him to refigne his Crown liued a private life, whereunto by nature hee was

TEENTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN.

CHAPTER XXV.

most inclined. But King Sthelred for the wrongs to him committed, and to rewhose Paradise we leave them, and Ethelred to his deuour intent: who to reconcile himselfe hrst vnto Kenred, bequeathed the Crowne folely to him, although Estelved tells. he had a sonne capable thereof: then putting on the habit of religion, became himselfe a Monke, in his owne Monastery of Brainey, where he lived a regular life the terme of tweine yeeres, and therein lastly died Abbat of the place, when hee had raigned thirty The conditionate yeeres, the yeere of Christs nativity, scuen hundred of his tagne.

THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch 13.

His Wife. (5) Offred, the wife of King Ethelred, was the daugh-(5) Offers, and of Lady Earsted, King and Queene of East his Angl. Northumberland. She was married vato him in the 1853.49.11. yeere of our Lord fix hundred feuenty feuen, being the third of his raigne, and the twentieth of her age Shee was his wife twenty yeeros: and passing thorow the North parts of Mercia, she was set vpon and faine by the people of the Kountry, in cuenge of the death of Peads their King, who had long before bin murthered by Alkefled his wife, and her half fifter, as we have faid. And thus strangely came shee to her untimely end, the yeer of our Lord fix hundred ninety feuen, the twenty three yeere of her husbands raigne and the fortieth of her owne age.

His Iffue. (6) Chelred the sonne of King Ethelred, and of General the first Queene offryd his wife, was the heire apparant of fonns his fathers kingdome, and of sufficient yeeres to have fucceeded him, when he entred into religion; but that it was his fathers will to make amends to his Nephew Kenred, sonne to his elder brother King Vulfhere, that now he might raigne before his fonne, who should naue raigned before himfelfe.

the fame time, both ouer the Mercians and Monar-

(2) He is in account the eighth King of that Pro-

34.1

Monarch 13.

chy of the Englishmen, which was the yeere of Christs Incarnation seven hundred and foure.

uince, and the thirteenth Monarch fince Hengift the Saxon. He raigned in peace the space of foure yeeres;

deeme the time that in warre and wealth he had prodefinite the time that in water and weathin to not pro-digally from ty yeelded the Scepter vnto his hand, and fer his feeming our-heavy Crowne you his Ne. phew Kenreds head; who began his raigne at one and

then weary of gouernment, and defirous of contemofhisraign

THE SVCCESSIONS OF Chelred 342 Monarch 13. Book. 7. plation, after the example of his Vncle, fought a more times to much overshadowed with superstitious zeal, private and religious life: and thereupon appointing the holy acts of men, which no doubt were many, & Chelred his Colon germane to rule in his place, in the Beda hift.Angt. the habit of Monks, the accounted holy garments of lib. 5 .4 # 7.20. fifth yeere of his raigne, abandoned his kingdome humility, were so meritoriously respected and repuand Country, and departed for Rome, accompanied ted in the deuout hearts of the religious, when by the Clergy (that are accounted the light of the world) in with Offa King of the East-Saxons, and with Edwine Bishop of Worcester, where both these Kings were a Councell at Rome held vider Pope Constantine the first, it was decreed and commanded, that carried made Monks in the time of Pope Constantine the first, Initimian the younger then wearing the Imperiall Images, which neither had action, nor life, nor could Crowne : and in a Monastery at that citie, both these faue themselues from the stroke of destruction, penitent Conuerts in the Coules and Orders of Monks, from the reft of their lives, and therein died should bee made to the memoriall of Saints, and should be set up in Churches, with respective adoraand were enterred; this Mercian King Kenred having tion, contrary to Gods most expresse commande.
ment, and condemned for idolatry by the warrant of had neither wife nor child, that I can reade of. (3) It is not greatly to be wondered at, in that these facred Scripture. CHELRED THE NINTH KING OF Chelred. Monarch 14. THE MERCIANS, AND THE FOUR-TEENTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISH, HIS RAIGNE AND SVCCESSION. CHAPTER XXVI. An.Do.709. Helred, the fonne of King grow great. For Kent he had forced to buy their peace Ethelred, was of fufficient with mony: the Britaines subdued, and had inlarged his confines vpon them. And now against Chelred this yeeres, and well able of rule, at fuch time as his fanew rife Monarch, he meant to try chance, whose glother religned his Scepter ry he looked at with an ouer enuious eye.

(4) His greatneffe likewise Chelved suspected, who vnto his Nephew Kenred, had not the pricke of that either to himselfe or successors, (by the foundation tech against to which he laid) would divert the Monarchy from him finne touched his confcience, which made him to and his Mercians, and entaile it to himselfe or his and the mercrams, and entaile it to ninnear or ms. Welf-Saxons. Hereupon great preparation was made, and each fet forward with all the powers, the one to attaine, and the other to keep, the glory and title that bestow the same as he did: notwithstanding the Crown being too waighty for Kenred to weare, he as freely againe gaue it the sonne, as he had received it of the father before, and relinboth of them fo much thirsted after. At Wodnesbury quished his claime and title thereto. they met, and with vndaunted spirits so fought, that (2) Chelred thus advanced before he it expected Celred worthy of the victory was doubtfull, for neither could fay the entred his government with great applause of the battell was his, or that he departed with the leffer out militaries people, in whose opinions he was held the onely man worthy of their Crowne. Ouer the Mercians he raig-(5) These emulations were followed betwixt ned the ninth King, and of the English Monarchs the these two Princes the space of seuen yeeres, and lonfourteenth in number, beginning them both in the ger had done, if Chebred had lived, or Inas not been yeere of grace seuen hundred & nine, and the fourth strucke with remorse of conscience for his ouermuch of Justiman the younger, Empire, fpilling of bloud. Of this Chelred, some Authors (3) His quietnes was disturbed by Inas the Westhaue censured, that he was maruellous in prowesse, town Stow. Tau King of the Saxon, whole fame for his fortunes beganne then to and valiant of courage, but his Country milerable



Offa.

Monarch 16.



OFFA THE ELEVENTH KING OF THE MERCIANS, AND THE SIX-TEENTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISH-MEN, HIS ACTS, RAIGNE, WIFE AND 188VE.



CHAPTER XXVIII.

An.Do.758.

Wil, Malauburi

The parents of

Berwed flaine

King Charles the

Liber M.S.



Ff4, the cosen of King Ethelald, after some time of Inter-regnum, fucceeded him in his dominions of Mercia; a man of so high ftomacke and ftournes of mind, that he thought nothing vnpossible for him to attaine: and for vertue

and vice, so equally composed, that hardly could bee judged to whither of them the scale of his carriage most inclined, although the Monke of S. Albans, and writer of his life, doth blanch out his graces with superlatine praises.

(2) His Parents hee nameth Twinfreth and Mercella, and himselfe hee faith to have been first named Pinered, borne both lame, deafe, and blinde, wherein he fo continued vnto his mans estate, The rage of Bernred (faith the fame Author) had forced all three into a folitary place, where fuddenly by miracle Pinered was restored, and for that cause called another off a, who presently affailed, and in a great battel manfully fought, flew the viurping Bermed. The Nobles of Mercia being rid of that Tyrant by the valour of Off a, gladly imbraced & received him for their King; who began his raigne with greater flew of glory, then any Mercian before him had done, being in number the eleuenth that had raigned in that Province, and is accounted the fixteenth Monarch of the Englishmin.

(3) His neighbour Kings foreseeing whereat his eye glanced, follicited by Letters Charles the Great, then King of France, against him, who wrote vnto offa in their behalfe, and in threatning wife commanded him to delift. But he was so farre from fearing of his

threats, that to his contempt he was the more eager. (4) The first that felt his fury, were the Kentishmen vnder Alrik their King, whose ouerthrow was men vincer Zam tilea King, whose ouerthrow was the leffe dishonourable (laith Malmesbury) for that they were vanquished by so great a Monarch. The place was otteferd, vnfortunate to them, where their King was flaine by the hand of off a himselfe, their forces quite discomfitted by the losse of this field, and their Country trodden downe under the feet of the Mercians.

(5) From South to North King offs then marched, and beyond Humber made hauocke of all that flood against him; whence returning triumphant, he let vpon the West-Saxons, that had formerly joined with his enemies: the place was Eensinton, which Caftell King off a tooke, with the difcomfiture of King off a tooke, with the difcomfiture of King of Kenwelfe, and all his Welf-Saxons, who fought their of the welf-Saxons, who fought their of the welf-Saxons, who fought their of the welf-Saxons of the welf-Sax reuenge by the aides of the Britaines in Wales. Their King (faith mine Author) was then Marmodius, betwixt whom some intercourse by letters passed, & M.S. modulus great presents to King off a sent, onely to protract Wein King. time, and to worke vpon aduantage.

(6) In this Interim of complements, for a further security, off a caused a great ditch to be drawn betwixt his and the Britaines borders, which worke began at Bafingwark in Flint-fbire, and North-wales, not farre Tains and the south, & ended neer Brifton at the fall of Wye; the tract whereof in many places is yet feene, and is called to this day Claudh Offa, or Offaes ditch. Marmedius, who openly bare faile to this wind, and Marmedius tres feemed to winke at Offaes intent, fecretly called a chery.

Counfell of State, wherein he declared how the Act thus in working, would foone proue the bane of liberty vnto their country, and the marke of dishonor to the felues & posterity for euer; therefore his aduice was, that by some stratagem it might be staid by time.

(7) To this his Britaines consented, the truce yet lasting, and the feast of Christs Naturity even then at cessary to it. hand; in the celebration wherof was held the greatest aduantage with least suspect, to put themselues in action against it; and secretly working the assistance of their allies the Saxons, both of the South, the West, and the North, vpon Saint Stephens day at night, fuddainely brake downe the banke of this fortification, filling vp againe a great part of the Ditch, and in the morning most turiously rushed into off his Court,

patting a great number to the fword, who were more intentine and regardfull to the Feaft, then to a-

ny defence from their cruell and mercileffe fwords. (8) These wrongs King offs delaied nor to require, first making their hottages his vassals and flaues, and then with a great army entring Wales, in a bloody and fore-fought battaile hee ouercame Marmodius and all his affociates in the field. Thus then as a Conquerour ouer all his enemies triumphantly after ten yeares wars abroad returned he to his owne Kingdome, neither puffed with pride, nor fuffring his title to be enlarged according to his con-

Marmedius van

quests: yet he was not neglective of regall state, by thereport of the Ligger booke of S. Albans, which faith, that in regard of his great prerogative, and not of any pride, he first instituted and commanded, that even in any prince, by the prince a uncommonance and a con-tinuo of peace also, himself is and his successfors in the Crowne, should as he passed through any Cities, have Trumpetters going and sounding before them, to show that the person of the King Islandsbrede both clarae, and honor in all which either see him or hear's him.

(9) Vnto King Charles of France he wrote in ex-King Charlet cor cuse of his warres, and desire of his amity; whom Charles againe congrarulated with letters of gladnes, both for his victories, and the Christian piety in his land embraced; defiring of Offa fafe conduct for fuch his subjects, as came to his country in deuotion to God, and withall fent to him, (for a prefent) a Booke of the Decrees of the fecond Councell of Nice. Which Synodall Booke (to vie Roger Houedens Ro Hourd Acre owne words) was fent unto King Charles from Conpers t. The second stantinople, wherin (alas for pity) by the vinanimous af-fertion of three hundred Bishops or more congregated in Councell of

that Councell, were decreed many things inconstenient vea and quite contrary to the true faith; as is most especiall; yea and quite court ary to the time faith; is it may ejevenmy, the worshipping of images, which the Church of God doth witerly detest. Against which Booke *Albinus wrote an Episile, admirably strengthmed by the authority of the body Alcuinue. Scriptures, which together with the forefaid Booke him felfe presented in the name of the Princes & Bishops of this land, unto the foresaid Charles King of France. Such intercourse both for State and Church had this great

offa with that great Charles.

(10) His last warres (according to mine Author) were against the Danes, whom he forced to their ships with the loffe as well of their booties, as of many of their lives; and then (faith he) with the spirit of humility, both to recall himselfe from the trace of blood and to the better establishment of his kingdomes peace, he joined in affinity with his neighbour Princes, vpon who he bestowed his daughters in mariage

(11) And making Egfrid his sonne a King with himfelfe, in great denotion went to Rome, where with the like zeale and example of Inas the west-Saxon, he made his Kingdome subject to a Tribute, then called Peter-pence, afterwards Rom-Scot; befides other rich gifts that he gaue to Pope Hadrian for canonizing Albane a Saint : in honour of whom, and in repentance of his finnes, at his returne (ouer against Verolanium, in the place then called Holmehurft. where that Protomartyr of Britaine, for the conftant profession of Christ, lost his head) off a built a magnificke Monastery in Anno 795. indowing it with lands and rich reuenewes for the maintenance of an hundred Monks: vpon the first gate of entrance in ftone ftandeth cut a Salteir Argent in a field azure,& is affigned by the iudicious in Heraldry to bee the Armes that he bare.

(12) Also in testimony of his repentance for the bloud hee had spilt, he gaue the tenth part of all his goods vnto the Churchmen, and vnto the poore. At Bathe he also built another Monastery, and in Warwiekshire a Church, where the adjoyning towns, from it and him, beareth the name off-church.

Offs went to

(13) Finally, when hee had raigned thirty mine yeares, he died in peace at his towne off-ley the nine and twentieth of luly, the yeare of Christ Iclus, feuen hundred ninety foure : and with great folemnity his body was buried without the towne of Bedford in a Chapell Handing vpon the Banke of Owle, which long fince was fwa: lowed up by the fame river: whele Tombe of lead (as it were some phantasticall thing) appeareth often (laith Roufe) to them that feek it not; 150 but to them that feeke it, is altogether inuifible.

His wife. (14) Quendrid the wife of King Offa hath not her

that hee made her his wife, contrary to the liking of his Parents. She was a woman of condition ant-

bitious, couerous, and cruell, as appeared specially in the death of Ethelbert, King of the East Angles, that came to her husbands Court to marry their

manner the foresaid Author declared to be by his fall

into a deepe pit, purposely made in his bed-chamber.

and under his chaire of estate. That his head was cut

off, and found by a blind-man, that the well which

beares his name forung vp presently in the place where it lay, that the bloud thereof gaue the blind

man his fight, and that Dryda died in the same pit which she had digged for Ethelbert, I leave to the

credite of my author, and the liking of my Reader:

atentage let down by any of our Writers:notwith-Randing, the recorder of this his lite, faith that her Inthe life of S. name was Drida, and that shee was the kinswoman to Charles the Great King of France, and by him for some offence banished his Realme, who arriving vpon the coasts of England in a ship without tackle

was taken thence, and relieued by off a, being then a young Nobleman, where face changed her name vnto Petronilla; with whom hee fell fo farre in loue

daughter; whose port shee so much enuied, that shee gundeelbet procured him to bee treacheroufly murdered the trechery,

but certaine it is that Gods vengeance followed this heynous fact within one yeare after the same was committed, by the death of her selfe, her husband, & ded with the like her Sonne, and the translation of that Kingdome paines.

from the Mercians to the West-Saxons. An ancient Saxon coine inscribed with her name CENEDRED REGIN. we have found and here placed, which the judicious suppose to be hers, and that not vnlikely, thee being to powerfull, proud and ambitious.

(15) Egfrid the onely fonne, and heire apparant of King Offs and Queene Questical, was the onely fone to 9 io yand pride of his parents, who fucceded his Father in his dominions and title, and in the famt years alfo in the fhades of death.

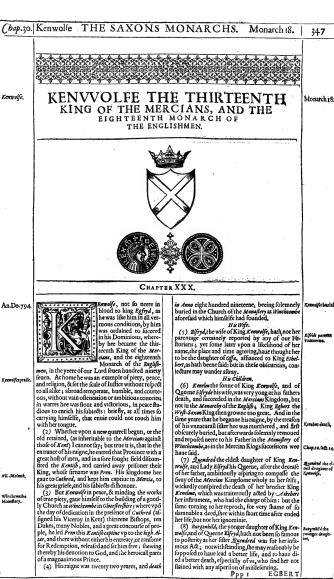
(16) Ethelburga, the eldeft daughter of King Offa athelburga the and Queene Quendred was maried to Brithrick the first daughter. fixeteenth King of the West-Saxons: shee was a Ludy of passing beautie, but withall of an insolent dispofition, hating all whom her husband loued, and practifing the deathes of them that she hated. She departed into France after the poisoning of her husband, & forthat her offence, a law was enacted to the great prejudice of the Welt-Saxons Queenes, as in the raigne of Brithrick we hade declared.

(17) Effiel, the feedid daughter of King off a, & P. Queene Lendred, by the report of Randulph Hig-dustred Monke of Chefter, was the feedid wife to E. thehead King of Northsmoderland, who in regard of her had put from him his former wife, for which his subjects rose in Armes against him, and slew him in the last yeare of King Offa his raigne.

(18) Elfrid the third and yongest daughter of King Offs, and Queene Quendred, being promised in mariage, and affured vnto Ethelbert King of the Eaft Angles, after the murther of her hoped Bridegroom, with great lamentations, and prophelying threats of reuenge, abandoned the fociety of men, and withdrew herfelfe vnto the monastery of Crowland in the

Malmsburg,





Monarch 18.

Monarch 19.

Ezbirt

(bap.31.

Egbert

W.l. M. donbury. | berts eye, whole king not gratious in his own fubiects light, was the ealier to be lubdued; him he chased oter Thamilis, and added not onely that Countie, but also Suffex and Surrey, for Provinces vnto his Owne Kingdome : next were the East-Saxons the East-Angles, and in truthall, both vpon the North, and the South of Humber gaue him obedience; so that the bounds of his Dominion were greatly enlarged, and his royall authority by those seuerall Kings acknowledged.

Egbert the firft

(9) Then hee to confirme his effate called an affembly vnto the City Winchester, where causing him-felfe to bee solemnly crowned, became the first Saxons absolute Monarch of the whole Iland, so reducing the Monarchiall title from the Mercians to the West-Saxons, in whose Progeny it continued with-out renersement until the Danes first got, and againe loft it, and the Saxons iffue failing, the same fell to the Normans Duke by Conquest, as in continuance of our history, Christ assisting, shall be seene.

An.Do. 810.

(10) His Coronation was at Winchester, and en-trance in the yeare of Grace, eight hundred and ninetcene, at which time by his Edict in that City dated, he caused all the South of the Iland to bee calted, he caused an the South of the Inand to be called England, according to the Angles, of whom him telfe came, and promiting great felicity to his State and Successors, was therein not so happy as in his affaires he had beene fortunate.

(11) For those Saxons that by warre and blood, had made themselves Lords of other mens rights, and of one Kingdome no lesse then seuen, are now endangered to bee made feruants vnto fubication, and by warre and bloud their feuen-fold Kingdome brought againe vnto one; neither yet freed from the reuenge of bloodie violence : for that a fierce and cruell nation (the Danes) ceased not continually to inuade them, till they had subdued and fet the crowne thereof vpon their owne heads, who in King Brightrick dayes, and about the yeere seuen hundred eighty seuen, having with three vessels lan-ded in the West of England, at three seuerall times, in

fo many seuerall places, sought the ruine of the land in the raigne of this Egbert.

(12) The first was in his thirty third yeare, when with thirty fine hips they landed at Lindafferse vp-on the North of England, where they were met and fought with at Carham, but with fuch loss to the English, that two chiefe Captaines, Dudda and Of mond, two Bithops, Herefrid of Winchester, and Vig-ferd of Shirborne, with many Souldiers were there-in slaine, King Egbert himselfe hardly escaping by the couert of the night. .

(13) Their fecond attempt was in the fecond yeare following, when in West-Wales they landed vnto whom the Britaines there ioyned, and in the place called Hengistenton abode the King in field, where Egbert with prosperous fortune vanquished and slew both the Danes and the Welfh.

(14) The third place of their arrivage was Sheea doe were expelled in the last of King Egberts raign,

and but the new beginning of their fauage cruelties. (15) This Eghert by Florentius of worsefter is faid to be the fonne of Alkemund, who was the fonne of Eafa, and he the fonne of Eafa, and he the fonne of Eafa. the brother of Ine, the eleuenth King of the West-Saxons, and both of them the fonnes of Kenred, defcended from Cherdik the first King of that Prouince

he was but low of stature, yet well composed and ftrong of limme, very valiant, wite and politicke, a skilfull fouldier, and as great in mind, as fortunate in warre; he raigned ouer the Weft-Saxons the space Therebeh of thirty fix yeares and seuen monethes, and Monarch of the whole Iland seuenteene: his death hapned the fourth day of February, and yeare of Christs Incar-nation eight hundred thirty fix.

349

(16) His bodie was with all obsequies solemnly buried at Winchester, and his bones since taken vp, remaine with others in that Cities Cathedral Church, bestowed in Chests servpon the Wall of each side the Quier, with these verses neither ancient, nor elegant thereon inscribed:

Hic Rex Egbertus pausat cum Rege Kenulpho, Nobis egregia munera vterque tulit. His wife.

(17) Redburg in the wife of King Egbert, was the furfl of the Web-Sassons, that by their new made law was deprised of title, authority, or place of a Queene; notwithlanding it feement hee bare a great froke with her husband, in that I have Beer with the flow of the work the Monke of Westminster reporteth, that shee pro-cured a law to be made against the Britains, the penalty whereof was present death for any of them to set footing within the realme of England, or to passe the Ditch that King Off a had made.

His Isfac.

(18) Ethelmolfe, the eldest some of King Egbert, and Lady Redburghis wife, was in his childsome, hood committed to the charge of Helmestan Bishop of winchester, under whom hee was carefully tray ned vp in learning and vertue, who comming to mans effact proued also a perfect Souldier, and had the leading of his fathers power against Baldred King of Kent, whom he forced to flie ouer the Thamista, and to abandon his Kingdome, which he subdued to the Subjection of his father, and afterwards succeeded him in the Monarchy of the Englishmen.

(19) Ethelftane, the younger sonne of King Eg-bert, and of the Lady Redburg his wife, was by his father deputed King ouer the Kentishmen, the South-Saxons, and the East-Saxons after hee had brought them vnto his subjection; which people hee most valiantly defended against the invasions of the Danes, defeating their forces both by sea and land, and at Sandwich gaue them a most memorable ouertirow. in the yeare of our Lord eight hundred fifty one, being the fixteenth of his brother King Ethelwelfes raigne; in whose time hee deceased, and is reported to haue left a sonne named Ostride, who by reason of his minority fucceeded not in his fathers dominions, which Ethelbert the fecond sonne of King Ethelwolfe entred vpon, and being Monarch reunited these king-

domes inseparably vnto the Monarchy.

(20) Edgith, commonly called Saint Edith the (20) Edgith, commonly called Saint Edith the daughter of King Egbert, was in her childhood by her brother Ethelmself committed to the chargeand bringing up of a Lady in treating, greatly renowmed for her holinefie of life, named Modernies, by whom the was afterwards recommended to a Difciplefie of the faild Lady, named Athe, and made Gouernefie of a Monastery of the Ladies, by her planted in a place which the King her brother had given her, place which are king her protein an guien ner, called Pollefworth fittuated in Art den in the north verge of the County of Warwicke, wherein the liued, died, and was honourably buried, and the place in regard of her afterwards called Saint Ediths of Polle worth,

ETHELWOLFE

EGBERT THE EIGHTEENTH KING OF THE WESTSAXONS, THE NINE.

TEENTH, BVT FIRST SOLE AND ABSO. LVTE MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS ACTS, WIFE, AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER XXXI

An.Do.800



He Saxon Heptarela draw ing now to a period, the pring of an entire Monarchie began to shew it felfe, and the glory of the Englishmen more cleere ly to arife : for though they had weakned each other by their own wars,

get flood their power flrong in the possession of the whole, and the ouer-borne Britaines held still at the worst.

(2) But such is the dispose of the sole disposer of Empires, that they have their rifings, their fuls, and their fals: neuer staying in one and the same point, neither entailed to one and the same Nation, how firong, politicke or populous soeuer. The proofe Intong, pointere or populous socuer. I ne proote whereof is apparant in all the Kingdomes of the earth, and this of ours as mutable as any; whose change of State vnco, and in, this fener-faid Gouernment hath hitherto beene seene: the severall Kings thereof long contending to branch their own fountaines furthest and fairest, lastly let them fall into one streame, which so meeting, made a more fa-mous confluence in this Monarchy, then the season

head of Nilus in the Egyptian Sea.

(3) Formerly, the Kentifo, South-Saxons, East-Angles, Northumbrians, and the Mercians, through no lessethen eight descents had worne the Emperiall Diademe, whose rayes shone now so bright in the West-Saxons eyes, that they againe sought to reestate themseliues in soglorious a possession. For, whereas Brightrik was possessed and contented with the 18eft-Saxon Crowne, neither that worne without icalousie and feare; yet others of the bloud royall from Cherdik raised the wings of their soaring thoughts much higher, among whom Egbert was one, neither the last nor the least in the opinion of the people, or suspect of his Prince.

(4) This Egbert having commaund of some part of that Province, so carried himselfe, that his fame

w fearefull to Brightrik the King, and hatefull to the enuious Ethelburg his most proud Queenc, by whom he was enforced first to secure himselse with the Mercian Offs; and lastly constrained to flie into France: where vnder Charles the Great, he turned his adversity into an occasion of his valour, by serting in his warres, and learned by his politicke go-tiernment, how to rule a quiet or diffurbed State.

(5) But King Brightriks death acted, and his Queene the contriner banished, Egbert is solicited to the wearing of the West-Saxon crowne, where hee became the eighteenth King in number, and nineteene yeares after the ninetcenth Monarch of the Englishmen; entring his raigne the yeare of Christ lefus, eight hundreth, being the same yeare that Charles was made Emperour of the West, and Conwall then ruling ouer the Scots.

(6) His first warres were against the Cornis, and their affociats the Welfb, both of them a remnant of the old Britaines, who had beene oftentimes vanquished, but neuer would seeme to be subdued, and for foureteene yeares continuance held fide against Egbert; which their refistance so prouoked his furie that hee enacted a most seuere law against them,

that the enacted a most feuere law against them, commanding that no Britame should presume to passe ouer great offset disch, and present death to them that durst less too voon any English ground. Their great Carlegian(now Weyferleight) het tooke from them, and at Landam from their West-gase cast. downe the brasen Image of Cadwallo there set up by the Britaines for a terrour to the Saxons, as we have

(7) His warres thus prospering, his puissance grew dreadfull, and his glory much enuied at by the other Princes, whereof Bernulfe of Mercia was the first attempter that sought to plucke the wing of this west-Saxon Eagle, but thereby wrought his owne downefall; for Egbert joyning battaile with him at Ellenden ouerthrew his power, and in that quarrell Chap to let us, Bernulfe was laftly flainc.

(8) Kent was the next, and faireft marke in Eg-

Ethelwolfe,

ETHELVVOLFE THE NINTEENTH KING OF THE WEST-SAXONS, AND

THE TWENTIETH MONARCH OF THE ENG-LISHMEN: HIS WARRES, ACTS, WIVES. AND CHILDREN.



CHAPTER XXXII.

An.Do.837.

of King Egbert, commit-ted in his youth to the care of Heimestan Bishop of Winthester, and by him vnto Swithm a samous learned Monke of that time, tooke fuch a liking vnto the quiet and folita

rie life, (onely enioyed by men of Religion, all other degrees molested to withfland the intruding Danes) that he videttooke the Monkish vow and profession, and was made Deacon; shortly after which degree taken, Helmestan di-ed, in whose place Prince Ethelmosse was consecrated, as Roger Houeden affirmeth, or at least elected, (as Iohn Brampton Abbat of Iarnaux writeth) Bishop of Winchester. But the death of his Father King Egbert immediately following, by great intreaty of the Nobles, and partly by constraint of the Clergy, hee was made King, and was by the authority of Pope

Henry Hunting. Mas Westminster

Wil.Malmib.

Gregory the fourth, whose creature in both profession he was, absolued and discharged of his vowes. (2) He entered his Monarchy the fourth day of February in the yeare of Christs Incarnation, eight hundred thirty louen, and was the nineteenth King of the West-Saxons, and the twentieth Monarch of the Englishmen. His Bishopricke he gaue vnto Swithun his Tutor, and according to his place, combined all, his powers to withfland the dangerous Danes, that attempted the vtter subuersion of his faire land; whole fift inualion in his first yeare happened, which drew the Saxons civill warres vnto a constrained peace, having more then they could well doe to defend their lives from their flaughtering swords, or to faue their vniustly gotten land from the spoiles of those common enemies; who, not like Conquerors, but destroying Caterpillers, left nothing undenoured wherefocuer they came, and had now begunne their mercileffe depopulations in diuers places at

Thelwolfe, the eldeft sonne nce, so that the distracted English were to seeke where was most need first to withstand. (3) At Hampton & Portesmenth many of these Nor-

way Pirates had entred; at Hampton with their ouer-throw, at Portesmouth with victory; and the same time at Carrin, a Toupe of the Dans discomfited King Ethelwolfes power. The next year at Mershware, Lindley, in East-Angle, and Kent, they did much mischiete, and harried all the Country before them to the country before them: yet in his tenth yeare at Pedredesmouth, the Sommer fet and Dorfet fbire men gaue them a memofable ouerthrow, vnder the conduct of Earle En-wulfe, Bishop Adelfan, and Ofred their captaines.

(4) But in the fixteenth yeare of this King, the great Planet Mars feemed to prædominate continu-ally, and Firstene to cast the chance of victory ener on his fide: for two hundred and fifty ships, (some reckon a hundred more) entred into Thamesis mouth and fet on shore an infinite number of these destroying Danes. London and Canterbury they had facked and left wast, had pierced into Mercia, and chased Berthulfe their King out of his Country, and now in Southery had pitched their battle, as able and resolute to abide all the power of the English, whither King Ethelwolfe with his sonne prince Ethelbald repaired, and tooke the field at the place called Otley; wherein after a long and fore fight, the victory fell to the English, with such slaughter of these Norway inuaders, as is incredible to report, and the same held as great and famous, as euer had hapned in the land

(5) With the like successe his Brother Athelstan King of Kent, fought with the Danes at Sandwich where chasing them to sea, tooke nine of their fhips; and in Denonshire, Earle Ceorle at Winleshore fo ouerthrew their whole power, that in despaire they withdrew themselves into the lie of Thanet. where they made their abode all the winter feafon; and if deftiny had not withstood the English, the Danes had beene expulsed for euer. But the Saxons

wil, Malmf. (9) Osburg, the first wife of King Ethelwolfe, was

Simon Dun.

See Chap. to.

feeming cleared of this common enemy, fell to their wonted quarrels with the euer depressed Britaines against whom Burthred the Mercian obtained the affiftance of King Ethelwolfe in his eighteenth yeare, whose daughter Ethelswith hee had obtained in ma-

riage; whereby for a while was encreased the fame and power of that valiant, but vnfortunate King. (6) In this State the affaires of the land stood vnto the nineteenth yeare of King Ethelwolfes raigne, who now remembring his former Ecclefiafticke profession, ordained that Tithes and Lands due to holy Church should bee free from all Tributes or Regall feruices; and in great denotion went himfelfe to Rome, where hee was both honourably received, and

entertained the space of a whole yeare; in which time hee new built the English Schoole, that Off a the Mer. cian before had there founded, and lately was fired, bearing the name of Thomas the Hely; confirming also his Grant of Peter pence, and further co-ucnanting in lieu of his kind entertainement to pay yeerely three hundred markes to Rome, thus to bee emploied; one hundred to Saint Peters Church, an

other hundred to Saint Pauls Light, and the third to the Pope: the Bride that ever more must be kissed and largely paid.
(2) His returne from Rome was through France, and being a Widower, hee there married Indith the most beautifull daughter of Charles the Bald then Emperour; in honour of whom in his owne Court. he ouer placed her in a Chaire of Estate, with all other maiesticall complements of a Queene, contrary to the law of the West-Saxons for Ethelburgaes offence, formerly made. Which his doing so disliked the No-

bles, that Prince Ethelbald his eldest Sonne, Adelstan Bishop of Shirborne, and Empulse Earle of Somer (et.) role vp rebelliously in Armes and sought to depose him, yet by mediation of friends, the matter came to a comprimize, and the land to be divided betwixt the Father and Sonne, but with such partiality that the better part west-ward was allotted to Ethelbald: which vnequality gaue great suspicion, that this re-uolt was rather grounded you ambition, then any inclination they had for the defence of their lawes, which commonly is the pretence and vaile for all disloial attempts of seditions subjects against their foueraigne Lords, (8) Howfoeuer it was, long after this he lived not,

but left his Monarchy vnto his eldeft sonne Ethelbald: and by will appointed Ethelbert his fecond, to be King of Kent and Effex, which countries he had conquered. He raigned twenty yeares, one moneth, and nine dayes, and deceased at a place called Stamrige, the thirteenth day of Ianuary, in the yeare of our Lord, eight hundred fifty seauen, being the twenty one of his Raign. His body was first buried at the place of his decease, and afterwards re-moued into the Cathedrall Church at Winchester. His wines.

the daughter of a Nobleman named of lake, who had the office of Great Butler of England, and was descended of the stocke of Stuffe and Withgar two brethren, being nobleme of the people called Inter, who were the first Princes of the Ile of wight, and Nephewesto Cherdik, and cosen germans to Kenrik the first and second Kings of the West-Saxons, and the third and fourth Monarchs of the Englishmen. She was the fecond Kings wife that was debarred of the title and place of Queene. Shee deceased three years before the King her husband, in the mneteenth year of his raigne, being the yeare of Chrifts Natiuty eight hundred fifty fiue.

Indità a second

(10) Indith his second wife, was the daughter of Charles the Emperour, and King of France, as wee haue faid : her Mother was Queene Ermentrude, the daughter of Vodon Earle of Orleance. She was a Lady of passing beauty, and marryed to this King in France; and when the came into England was receiued with the title and place of a Queene, in abolish-

ment of the peruerfe law of the VVeft-Saxons, made agamit the Kings VV ines, as before was touched. She was his wife three yeares, and furnited him without

His I sue.
(11) Ethelbald, the eldest sonne of King Ethelwolfe, and of Lady Osburg his first wife, was brought vp in and some his youth in the exercise of warre, and served vinder his Father in the great victory obtained against the Danes at Ocley in Surrey, in the yeare eight hundred fifty one: afterwards hee turned his force against his Father; and at his returne from Rome, practifed to defeat him of his Kingdome, and was ready to haue giuen him battaile, had not his Father parted

with him his Dominion. (12) Ethelbert, the second son of King Ethelwolfe and Lady ofburg his first wife, was in the life time of his Father, after the decease of his vncle Ethelstan, appointed and placed his Successor in his Kingdome ouer the South-Saxons, the Kentift, and the East-Saxons, without any mention or meaning (as it seemeth,) that hee should intermeddle further with any other

part of England. Notwithstanding after the death part of Englana. Notwithtatholing after the death of his brother Ethelbald, it was generally holden of all men for law, equity, and reason, that he should succeed him in the Memorchy: and so he did, with the consent of his Brethren, and without relistance, or contradiction of any other. (13) Ethelred the third fonne of King Ethelwolfe, and Lady osburg his first wife, had by the dispo-sition of his Father in his last will, the one halfe of

his Fathers proper inheritance; which was all fuch land as King Egbers his Grandfather had before hee was King, and was no part of the Demaines of the Kingdome, and this was divided betwixt him and his brother Elfred, as the kingdome was betweene their elder Brethren Ethelbald and Ethelbert: with an intent that this Ethelred should succeed his brother Ethelbald in the kingdome of the West-Saxons; notwithstanding, his brother Ethelbert, after the decease of King Ethelhald, entred into the other part, adioining it to his former kingdome, and was king of the whole, and after left it entire to this Ethelred who fucceded him in the Monarchy,

(14) Effect, the fourth fome of King Ethelwolfe
and of Lady Osburg his first wife, was borne at Wan-

tage in Barkesbire, in the yeare of our Lord God, eight Age in asseptors, in our years of our Lord Good, eight hundred forty nine; and the chitreenth of his fathers raign. Being a child of fiue yeeres old, he was fent very honourably attended to the City of Rome, where Low the forst then Bithoppe confirmed him, was his Godfather at the confirmation, and annointed him to the expectation of a kingdome; growne in yeares, hee grew so in discretion, magnanimity and fauour of all men, that in the fuccessive raignes of his three elder Brethren, he ruled as a Vice-roy or fecondary king under every of them, and after them at the last succeeded in the English Monarchy.

(15) Ethelfwith, the daughter of King Ethe Iwolfe and Lady Osburg, was maried to Burthred the twenand Leavy Osburgwas marred to Dustineattic wenterth King of Mercia, which mariage was folemnized at the towne of Chippinham in willfaire, in the moneth of Aprill, and ye reof Christs Natuity eight hundred thirty fiue, and the fifteenth ofher fathers raigne: but within twenty two years after, they were both forced by the Danes to abandon their kingdom. both forced by the Danes to abandon their kingdom, and departed into Italy, where the King died the fame yeare in the English Colledge at Rome: shee lived after him sisteen yeares in the habite of a Numne, at the City of Padua, and there died, and was honourably buried in the yeare of our Lord God eight hundred eighty nine, which was the eighteenth yeare

of her brother King Elfreds raigne, of het oroner King Eyreas raigne,
(16) Neach, supposed by Idm Capgraue the Legend
writer, to be the sonne of King Ethelwolfe, was in his
youth brought up at Glassenbery under Danslan, who was afterward Archbifhop of Canterbury. He proued a man of great learning, and was one of the first Readers of Disinity in the Vniverlity of Oxford, at the QqqI

by his owne, and by nupriall rites, brought her to his finfull and inceftuous bed. Which act, though foule

enough, some haue made worse, in reporting his

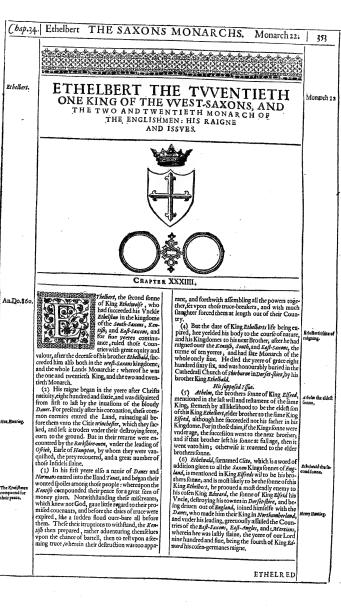
Wife to be his owne Mother, whom King Ethelwolfe kept for his Concubine. And furely this his fin was

ETHELBERT

from whom, through fine descents lineally, Mand

Queene of England, Wife to William the Conquerour descended, and from her, all our Norman English

Kings vnto this day.



Monarch 2 ?

fpcake.

to their Trench.

of the Danes.

ready spoken, and shall bee occasioned hereafter to

(7) But in the last yeare of this Kings raign, their

faging power was most great: for with a new sup-

ply two Danish Kings Sreeg, and Halden, entred in-

to West-Saxia, and at Reading the Kings towne in-

trenched themselues: these forraging the Country, were encountred with at Englefield by Ethelwolfe

Earle of Barkeshire, and his men, who in skirmish slew one of their leaders, and chased the rest backe

(8) These Danes fearing lest delaies would proue

dangerous, and knowing that the first successe is

commonly seconded with further courage of hope; foure dayes after shewed themselues in field rea-

dy to fight: their hoast they divided into two battalians; whereof the one was guided by two of their

Kings and certaine Earles were leaders of the o-

ther; which when the English perceived, they also

divided theirs, whereof King Ethelred had the lea-

ding of the first, and Elfred his brother was Generall of the fecond; the place was A fendon, where their Tenes were pitched, and the day approached for battaile: King Ethelred in his Tent staid to long

in praiers that Elfred vpon a forward courage hasted to encounter the enemy, and that with a most sierce

and tharpe fight, wherein having spent the most of their strengthes, and ready to decline, and give backe:

Ethelred manfully entred the battaile, and so secon-

ded his brother, and ouer-tyred Souldiers, that hee

made way by dint of his fword through the thickest

of their almost-conquering enemies, and with such losse of the Danish bloud, drawne from the sides of

one of their Kings, fine Earles, and an infinite num-

ber of the common Souldiers, that the streames ther-

offeemed as an ouer-fwelling tide, altogether to couer the face of the field, and is accounted for the noblest victory that the English till then had gotten

(9) Yet were not these Pagans therewith discouraged, but gathering more Arengthes and supplies from other parts; foureteen dayes after, made head againe against the English, and pitching downe

their flandards at Bafing, abode the coming of Ethel-red and triall of battaile, wherein fuccesse was alto-

gether altered; for herein the Kings part was dif-

(10) Thus both fides borne vpon rage & hope

in their heat of bloud prepare for new fight. The

Danes power was augmented with a further supply

fent from beyond Seas, and the English confirmed

with hope of successe: These meeting at Merton

(two moneths after the battaile of Bafing) encountred each others both boldly and bloodily; where-

in at first the English prevailed, and the Danes were

chased; but their numbers the greater, and fresh

comfitted, and the Danes the winners of the day.

King; for in his fhort time of Raigne, as Writers record, no leffe then nine let battales against the Danes he fought in one yeare, to the great effusion of Christian bloud, and to no little losse of the Danilb power; for in his raign fell of them one King, nine Earles, and of the common fort without num-(12) He died at Wittingham of his wound received the three and twentieth day of April, in the yeare of

our Lord God eight hundred scauenty two, and was buried in the Collegiat Church of Winburne in Dorcetfbire, where remaines his Tombe and his Armes vnto this day, with this Infeription: In hoc lovo quiefeit corpus Santti Ethelredi Regis West-

Saxonum Martyris, qui Anno Domini 872. 23. die Aprilis , per manus Dacorum Paganorum occu-

to be Grandfather to the noble and learned Ethelward, who being Kinsman, Counsellor and Treafurer to King Edgar; wrote an history of his Coun-

try, beginning at the first arrivall of the Saxons into England, and continuing vnto his own time: which history he dedicated to his kinswoman, and cusen germane the Lady Mande Abbesse of Panellingshirg in Saxonie, being the daughter of the Emperous Otho, by Edgithhis wife, daughter of King Edward Analysis of the Abbesse, who will be a supported by Edgithhis wife, daughter of King Edward. the elder, and fifter of Etheljiane, and Edmund Kings

lands to the Monastery of Abingdon neere Oxford; and to which this some of his hath his name set downe for a witnes; which Charter is yet extant, recorded in a great Legier-booke, and Register of the Euiden-

Thyre, the daughter of King Ethelred, is reported Thyre a daughter by the historics of Ireland to bee married to Gormon King of the Danes, and to have had iffue King Harald King of the Danes, and to naue nau time R. my et arm, which Harald, by Queene Goubild his wife, had iffue, Sweps king of Denmarke, Iringe king of Northumberland, and Gonbild Queene of North-Wales. King Sweps by Queene Sigred his wife, had iffue Couste King of England and Denmarke, Ostryde wife of Duke



His Issue.

His Issue.

Elfred, the eldest sonne of King Ethelred seemeth

of England. Ofwald, a young sonne of King Ethelred, is men-tloned in a Charter of his Fathers, by which he gaue

ces of the lands, sometime belonging to the said Me-

Welfe, and mother of king sweyn the yonger, and Thyre the first wife of Earle Goodwin of Kent.

Ethelred.

ETHELRED THE TVVO AND TVVENTIETH KING OF THE WEST.

SAXONS, AND THE TWENTY THIRD MO-NARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS ACTS, AND ISS VE.



CHAPTER XXXV.

An,Do.866.



helred, the third fonne of King Ethelwolfe, after the decease of his Brother succeeded him in his Dominions, and was in number the two and twentieth King of the West-Saxons, and the twenty third Monarch of the

Englishmen; he beganne hisraigne in the yeare of our faluation eight hundred fixty and fix, and for the time that hee was King , raigned in continuall warres against the Pagan

Danes, whose numbers now were greater, and foo-ting surer in this land then formerly had beene.

(2) In the first yeare of his raigne, there arrived vpon the English coasts a huge Army of these Danes, whereof Hungar and Hubba, men of incredible ftrength and cruelty, were the Captaines: These wintred in East Anglia, made truce with the inhabitants vpon certaine conditions, and forbare a

time from their wonted rauening.
(3) But in the next yeare the King being busied to put backe a fresh inrode of Danes in the South and West of the Iland then entred; these deuourers tooke aduantage vpon the civil broiles commenced among the Northumbrians, who in these turmoiled times fought to withdraw their fubications from the West Saxons, and to set vp Kings againe of their owne. The foresaid Captaines Hungar and Hubba, having in time of their truce strengthned themselues with new supplies of aid, marched further into the North, where finding the people vnprouided of frength and the two Kings Osbright and Ella of reconciled enemies to be made no fure friends, they harried the Country before them, and entring Yorke flew the two Kings, with infinit number of the English; which City they confumed with fire, and burnt therein all those that had fled thither for succour.

(4) The State thus flanding, and their forces en-

creafing euery day, brought new feares vpon the inhabitants, when every late victory with increase of Captines and rich spoiles, ministred occasion & meanes of some other conquest to follow; which these Pagans so pursued, till lastly they set a substitute King to raigne vnder them, ouer all the North Borders beyond the river Tyne; and so retiring them-selves out of Northumberland into Mercia, came to Nottingham, which City they wanne, and therein wintred the third of King Ethelreds raigne, who with the aid of Burthred the Mercian King, constrained the Danes to sue for peace, and a safe departure, yeelding the City, and againe retyring themselues ouer Tyne, remained in Torke all the next winter.

An.Do.870.

(5) The Summers opportunity approching, their wonted desire for spoile was with it encreased, and to cut off long trauell these Danes by boates passed Humber, where Hungar and Hubba beganne with fire and fword to lay all wast before them, sparing neither Person, sex nor age. The places respected for publike good, and sacred Temples confectated onely to God, which all other Tyrants haue forborne, these sauage men as the earths destroicrs cast downe and trampled under their prophane feere: among which for note were the goodly Monafteries of Bradney, Crowland, Peterborow, Ely, and Huntington, all laid in leuell with the ground, and their Votaries, aswell the Nunnes as the Monkes. murthered with their vnhumane and mercileffe words; to avoid whose barbarous pollutions, the chaft Numes of Coldingham deformed themselves to their lasciuious eyes, by cutting off their upper lips and notes; but to euerlafting remembrance they Flores Hifter. remain most faire, and well befeeming faces of pure

(6) These Pagans piercing further into the land, came into the territories of the East-Angles, wherein holy Edmund raigned King, whose Martyrdome in most cruell manner they wrought, he constantly calling vpon the name of Christ, whereof wee have al-

ELFRED

Hungar and

35**6**

Elfred.

ELFRED THE TVVENTIE THIRD KING OF THE VVEST SAXONS, AND

TWENTIE FOURTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS ACTS, RAIGNE, WIFE AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER XXXVI.

An.Do.872



Lfred, or Alfred, the fourth fonne of King Ethelwolfe, though he had beene annointed King at Rome by Pope Lee in his young years & Fathers life time; yet raigned he in no part of his dominions, before the deathes of all his Brethren, vnder whom hee

served in most of their warres, assisting them likewise in all their counsels: the land now miserably torne by the cruell incursions of the bloudy Danes, was left vnto him, both to redeeme, and to raigne ouer, by the death and Testament of King Ethelred

(2) Hee beganne his raigne in the yeare of his age twenty two, and of our Lord God eight hundred fenenty two, being crowned in the City of Winchefter, the twenty third King of the West-Saxons, and the twenty foure Monarch of the Englishmen: but of some Historians he is famoused by the stile of the first absolute Monarch.

(3) His raigne beganne with troubles and wars in defence of the land which the Pagan Danes intended to destroy; and though his powers were smal, yet was he forced into the field within one month after his Coronation; the place was Wilton in the County of Wiltstire, on the fouth-banke of the river Wily where the Danes at first gaue backe and fled but feeing the fewnes of their purfuers, reenforced their battle, and got the field, with whom the West-saxons entred league, and compounded for their departure from among them.

(4) These Rouers then with their affociates at Reading, got themselves into London, where they wintred, with whom the Mercians likewise composided for their peace, which proued shortly to be the

destruction of their princely bloud; and lastly, the lands subuersion to a forraine nation. For the Malwet. Danes having got footing in the North, the West, and the South of this land, (vnto whose aide many new-come guests from their Easterne countries were arriued, under the leading of other three Kings, Gurthrun, Esketel, and Ammond all together set their griping tallents with such safe hold vpon Mercia, that at Rependenthey constrained Euritmed the King with his Queene Elfwith out of the land, and in his stead placed a King of their owne choise, upon Polythro. 1866.c. a condition to deliuer vp the fame againe vnto them when they would demaund it.

(5) In the fourth yeare of King Elfred their armies divided themselves into two parts, the one of them guided by King Halden, returned into Northum-berland; where hec bestowed that Country among his followers, and therein remained for two yeares continuance, doing much harmes both to the English and Piets. The other part led by the last new-come King, came to Granabridge, whence they wintered and spoiled the Country, and there spreading themselues as Grashoppers upon the face of the earth, eate vp all where they came; fo that King Elfred was enforced to compound for their departure | frion out of his owne kingdome in West-Saxia; to which couenants they promifed and fwore; yet contrary to both, tooke into Deuenshire, and wintred at Exceffer, vnto whom a further supply by sea sought to ioine themselues, but met with such boisterous blafts, that one hundred and twenty of their ships were cast away by tempest at Swannicke vpon our coafts, and their land-army marching towards Excefter, were there welcommed with fo sharpe an encounter by King Elfred, that they gaue him both

pledges and oath to depart with all speed. (6) But Fortune euer dallying with them, whom fhee meanes to down-cast, set the chance of losse preMonarch 24.

....

fently vpon the Saxons fide: for now the three Kings Gurthrun, Esketel, and Ammond thought it not good to let Elfred thus rest, and thereupon drew their forces westwards towards him, where at Chipingham(a Mannor of his) they wintred, and compm/smm/a mannor or ms) they wintreu, and com-pelled the Mell-Saxons there, either to yeeld, or to for fake the Country.

(7) King Elfred therefore, with fuch strength as he had, halted towards them, and seventeene miles An.Do.876.

(bap.36 | Elfred

Abington.

from Briftow pitched downe his tents even in the face of the enemy; where betwixt these sierce nations a great battaile was fought, to the infinite loffe of bloud on both fides, and that vpon fuch equall departure, as neither could challenge to bee masters of the field; yet the report went, that King Elfred was discomfited, which turned greatly to his aduantage; for thereupon many of the English hasted to his succour, lest the ouerthrow of him should be the bane of them all; his strengthes thus renued with an vnexpected fupply, no time was detracted to flay the Danish rage, who were now returned fur-ther into the heart of the land, and at Abington by Ox-

ford had pitched their standreds for fight, (8) Thither the English repaired, and the next morning he ordered his Army; neither were the enemics unprepared, but with braues flood ready to receiue the encounter. The battaile ioyned, continued with fuch loffe of bloud, that it is accounted one of the forest that ever betwixt them before had beene fought, and onely parted by the approch of the night, neither party challenging the honor of the day, the loffe being to great vpon both fides. Seuen of these battailes are reported to be fought

Seuen batrailes in that yeare, whereby both their strengthes were much abated, and their spilt bloud so cooled their livers; that lally they concluded vpon a peace; one article was this, that the Danes finula damit no more of their nation to arrive in this I land; but how foone that was broken, the sequels did shew.

(9) For in the yeare eight hundred seuenty fixe, (saith Simon Dunelmensis) Rollo a nobleman of Den-An.Do.876. marke with a great Army entred into England, with no lesse spoile and destruction then other of those Danes before him had done, notwithstanding the truce: with whom King Bifred met, and gaue him fo hoat welcome, that hee liked not greatly his entertainement; and being warned (for footh) in his fleepe that better fortune attended him in France, hee left his countrimen to tugge with the English,

(10) The Danes then accounting the peace to be broken, like Beesfrom the Hiue, infect all the land, infomuch that this vndaunted King Elfred was ofttimes brought to fuch extremities, that he hid himselfe out of fight, and in the Pens & Marsh grounds was forced with such small companies as he had, to line by fishing, fowling, and hunting of wild beafts for his food, having no more of his great Monarchy left him, but Somerset, Hamson, and Wils-shires only, neither yet them free from the incursions of the Danes.

(11) The folitary place of his most residency, was an Iland inclosed with the two rivers Those and Parret, at their meeting in the County of Sommerfet , commonly called Edelingfey, where he in very poore attire disguised, was entertained into a Cowheards house (if not into his service,) where on a time Affer. Spc.Hifto. Ru. Cuen. as he fate by the fire in trimming of his bow and fhafts, a cake of dow baking vpon the hearth before him, chanced to burn; the Cowheardeffe comming in, and seeing him mind more his bow then his bread, in a great fury cast away both his bow and arrowes, and checking him as her Groom, faid, Thou fellow, doest thou see the bread burne before thy face and wilt not turne st? and yet art thou glad to eatest before it bee halfe baked? little suspecting him to be the man that had beene served with more delicate

> (12) But this Prince, the very mirrour of Princes, more minding the wealth of his subjects, then

the maiesty of State, disguised himselfe in the habite of a common Minstrell, and in person repaired to the Danes Campe, who lay like Sendtheribs, wallowing in wantonnesse, and secure in their owne Pables, conceit from impeach of danger; which Elfred a most skilfull Musician, and an excellent Poet, did not a little egge on by his fweet musicke, and songs of their valour; so that he was suffered to passe vincontrolled into the company of their Princes, at banquets, or elfe where: whereby he both faw their negligent fecurity, and by diligent observance learned the defigues that in their counsels they entended.

(13) Returning to his comfortlesse company, he told them the condition of the hostile Campe, and how easie it was to recouer againe their decaied e- An. Do. \$78 flates : whereupon shewing himselfe to his subjects, vnto whose fight nothing could bee more toyous; on the suddaine set vpon the carelesse Campe of the Danes, and made thereofa very great flaughter, to the great terrour of others in other parts, that had accounted him dead long since.
(14) Hubba, that had harried the English, and

now rowzed vpon the newes of King Elfreds victory and life, with thirty three ships sailed from Wales, and arriving in the mouth of Tau, where it falleth into the Senerne Sea, affaied to take there the then-strong Castle called Kinwith, vnto whom the Deuonshire men gaue battle, and slew eight hundred and eighty persons of their retinue; where died the Danish King Hubba, whose corps being there interred vnder a great heape of copped frones, gaue name to the place, and was called Hubblestone. There and then was taken the Danish much esteemed Banner. called Reafan, wherin a Rauen was purtraied wrought in needle-worke, (so Assering Meneuens reporteth) by the three sisters of Hubba and Hungar the daughters of Lothbroke (that is Leather-breach) the Dane In regard whereof, as also for the opinion of good lucke, as they tooke it, it was euer born before them in their wars.

(15) These aduerse proceedings of the Danes defignes, especially falling when the game was neere wonne, made them suspect, how faire societ the ball lay to hand, yet fortune would serue it in the end to their loffe : for Elfred now flocked vnto vpon euery fide, beganne to build fortreffes behind his backe and forward to march with his conquering fword: whereupon the Danes sent to him for Peace, and deliuered him hostages, vpon assurance that they meant as they spake: The conditions were, that their King should receive Baptisme, and the great Army of the Danes quietly to depart out of the land.

(16) Whereupon Gurmound or Gurthrun the Danifb King repaired to the new built Castle of Edelingfey vnto King Elfred, and in the place then called Al-re, was washed in the lauer of Baptisme, whom Elfred received for his God-son by the name of Athelliane, and gaue him in free gift the Country of East-Angles. In the same fountaine of Grace (saith simond Dunelmensis) thirty of the chiefe Danish Nobility were initiated:vpon whom the truly Christian King Elfred bestowed many rich gifts: And that the limites of the English might be free from their incursions, thus the confines of King Elfreds kingdome were laide forth, as we find it in the end of those Lawes that Elfred published, whose words are these: Let the bounds of our Dominion stretch from the river Thamesis, and from thence to the water of Leaguen unto the head of the fame water, and so forth straight unto Bedford: and finally, going along by the river of Oufe, let them end at watling

(17) But so farre were the Danes from performance of couenants, that in this eight yeare of King Elfreds raigne, and the eight hundred feuenty nine after Christ, this Gurmund and his company winte-red at Chipnam in Wilsshire, and a new supply of these Pagans (known by the name of the Wiccingi) wintred at Fulham neere London; yet after voon better adnice, the one went into their assigned circuit, and the

An.Do.879

An.Do.8791

Danes fend for

old English

P-37	Edward THE SAXONS	MONARCHS. Monarch 25.
	(6) The truce yet lasting, the Danes in Northumber-	
nes	landwere nothing onier to flow who fo investigate	left the warres to bee continued by her brother he
ruce	King Edwardians a green mount who had a	daughter at the dispose of her vncle, and her body
Eng-	land were nothing quiet, to flay whose irruptions King Ednard lenta great power, who harried the	to be buried at Glocester in the Monastery of S. Pe
	Country before them, and with much liaughter	ter, which her husband and her felfe had formely
	Country before them, and with much flaughter returned victorious. These daliances of Fortune	ter, which her husband and her selfe had formely built.
	made the Danes very desperate, and therefore to stay	(9) The last battaile of this King against these vn
		fatiate enemies, was in the Country of the raft An
	they gathered their powers & entred Mercia, where	ales whereof Eduid als D
	with victory and spoile they raged for a time. But	gles, whereof Edrick the Dane was King; for hee in-
	Edward to aid Ethelred his brother in law, and Earle	tending new warres with the English; lought to in-
	of the Drawing makes It	cite other Danes to his aide, whereof Edward ha- uing intelligence, preuented his purposic, by his so
	of that Province, mustered his men, and at Wodnef-	ung intelligence, preuented his purpose, by his so
	field neere wolfrune hampton in Stafford-shire gave the	
0.910.	battaile, wherein the English to behaued themselves	Edrick therefore having all in a readineffe, rafhly
	that the two Pagan-Kings Comilfus & Healthing the	encountred with his enemy, and fought a fierce bat
avelm,	two Earles Vter and Seurfa, belides other Nobles & Commons innumerable they flew: and now the clouds of these distemperatures being driven backe,	taile to the gesat loffe of his Army, and dammage o
nifla inc.	Commons innumerable they flows and	Listing Countries of his Army, and dammage of
unç.	clouds of the fe difference was the last of the	his life; for returning to his Court after so foule a dil
	Vine Film I Manager Co. 1 1	comfiture, became odious to his owne subjects, who
	King Edwards Monarchy ascended the Horizon, and	violently fell vpon him and murdered him; and then
	the Summe of his power beganne to shine very bright,	felues brought low by citill diffention were thorti-
	therefore he leeking to hold what he had our fer his	made subject to the English King Edward, and tha
	thoughts to secure his towns with Castles and walles	Kingdome with Mercia, ioined vnto his west-Sax
	of defence.	ons. And now having raigned in great warres and
	(7) These his proceedings caused him to be both	Language Control of the Control of t
	beloved and franch burkings cauled him to be both	honour the space of twenty foure yeares deceased a
	beloued and feared; but his mind still free from any	Faringdon in Barke-shire, the yeare of Christs incarna
	ambitious pride, as may appeare by the intercourie	tion,924, and was buried in the new-Monastery of
	betwixt Leolin Prince of Wales and himselfe, wherof	tion,924, and was buried in the new-Monastery of Winchester, which his Father begunne, and himself
497.	Wal, Mapaus maketh mention as followeth. What	wholy finished.
	time biduard the Elder (birly ha) I met Andalina	His Wines.
	Leolin Prince of Wales at Bethelley, intending a Parly,	Carlo and a second of contract and a
- 1	Leolin refuel de seme demons de la Contrata del Contrata de la Contrata de la Contrata del Contrata de	(10) Eguina the first wife of King Edward, was the
ho. King	Leolin refused to come downe, or to crosse the Seucrne:	daughter of a meane Gentleman named Bereher
King	Whereupon Edward tooke boat and entred the river to-	whole eye-pleating teature and alluring beauty made
	wards him, which when Leolin saw, and knew who shee was, he cast off his rich roahe wherewish he was clad, and	her to be educated aboue the degree of her birth, and
	was, he cast off his rich roabe wherewish he was clad, and	was brought vp by the nurse of King Edward in ten
	which hee had prepared for that rotall altembly, and entred	der affection and great efteeme. It chanced Prince
	the river breast-hie, where clasping the boat with an im-	Edward in kindnes came to visite his nurse, where see
	brace Submissively said: Most wife and sage King, thy	ing the admirable beauty of the Maide, fell fo farre in
ration	humility hath our come me in Glance and all	ing the admirable beauty of the Maide tell to farre in
Edwards	humility hath overcome my infolencie, and thy wifedome	loue, that he tooke her to his wife without the con
	triumphed ouer my folly; come, get vpon my necke which	fent or knowledge of his father: In which regard the
	I have (foole as I am) lifted up against thee, fo shalt thou	is reputed by fome Writers rather his Concubine thei
	enter into that land which the benigne milder hat been del	his Queene, no other cause mouing them but he
1	thine owne this day: and after he had taken him upon his floulders, he would needs have him fit down upon his roi- all roabe, and so putting his hands iointly into his, did him	meane parentage, and secret making and keeping o
	Choulders he would need hour him Ge down moon his vai.	this mariage although there has forme good hid-wi-
1	all rocke and to nutting his hands ininth inca his did him	this mariage, although there bee some good historicand many likely hoods to induce that she was his law
	homage.	full Ousens
1	(0) In the smalfith many of the serious	full Queene.
ting.	(8) In the twelfth yeare of his raigne, as Henry Huntington hath it, Ethelred Earle of Mercia, who had	(11) Elfleda the second wife of King Edward, was
.912.	truntington nath it; Ethetrea Earle of Mercia, who had	the daughter (as Mathew of Westminster reporteth) o an Earle named Ethelhelme, and Asser the Bishop o
	married Elfleda King Eawards fifter, departed this life,	an Earle named Ethelhelme, and After the Bithop of
	the having borne him one onely daughter named	Sherborne maketh mention of an Earle in Wiltshire a
	Elfwen, whose trauell in childbirth was so grieuous,	mong the West-Saxons of the same name, who was
iflike	that euer after the forbare the nuptiall imbracements	in great fattour with King Flored, the father of this
ike.	of her husband, alleadging that it was an ouer foolish	in great fauour with King Elfred, the father of this King, by whom hee was sent Ambassador to carry
		his Almost Control of Control of Carry
	pleafure, which brought with it fo great paines; and	his Almes to Stephen the fixt, of that name Bithop of
	thereupon changing the wonted affection of her fexe from the bed vnto battaile, gouerned Mercia eight yeares after her husbands deceale, as another	Rome, in rhe yeare of our Lord 887 and by all proba
	lexe from the bed vnto Dattaile, gouerned Mercia	ble conference of name, time, and place, hee feemet
	eight yeares after her husbands deceale, as another	1 to bee the man that was tather to this Oncone
	Zenobia, and did not a little all lither brother in his l	(12) Edgina, the third wife of King Edward, was the daughter and heire of Earle Sigeline Lord of Me.
	warres: for the Welfb she pursued as farre at Brek-	the daughter and heire of Earle Sizeline Lord of Me
	noke, which she tooke with their Queene: from the	apham, Culings, and Leanham in Kent, who was there
	Danes thee wonne the Connty of Darby, and affaul-	flaine in battaile against the Danes, Anno 92" She
neth k Darby	ting the towne vpon them, put her selfe in great dan-	was married ones Vine F Loudshard Comment
k Darby	tingthe towne vpon them, put her lene ingreat dails	was married vnto King Edward about the fourteenth
	ger, for enterprising to enter the Gate, shee was re-	yeare of his raigne, being the yeare of Grace, 916
	fifted by whole multitudes of Danes; notwithstan-	She was his wife ten yeares, and after his death the
	ding,the pertitled,& got entrance, in which encoun-	liued a widdow all the times of the raignes of King
	ter many died, and foure of her chiefe men of war,	Ethelstan her sonne in law, of King Edmund, and
	being Warders of her person-euen fast by her side	King Edred her owne sonnes, of King Edry her Grand-child, and was living in the Raigne of King
	were flaine.	Grand-child and was living in the Raigne of King
	The Danes in Yorkesbire the constrained to bee! at	Edward an oak on a Charlet and a bildren along the charlet
	Landanies in Torkejone inc Communication to occur	Edward another of her Grand-children, almost fortion yeares after the death of her husband. It is writ o
	her deuotion, so that some of them became her sub-	yeares after the death of her husband. It is writ o
	iects, some vowed to attend in her aide, and some	her that in the yeare of Grace,959. Shee offered he
	promifed to be prest at her dispose. Her policie in	lands and euidences to Christ vpon his Altar at Can
	warre proued euer the furest; her counsell of State	terbury. She decealed the twenty hit of August in the
	was regarded with the wifest, and her prouidence in	fourth yeare of the faid King Edgar, and of Christ
	building, and repairing Cities for the weale-publick,	963.
	or fortifying places for munition of warre exceeded	
	others which the consended were Cl. A	His Children.
vanne.	others: which shee extended vpon Chester, Tam- worth, Lichfield, Stafford, Warwicke, Shrewsbury, Wed-	(13) Ethelftan, the eldeft sonne of King Edward
was by her.	worth, Lichjield, Stafford, Warwicke, Shrewsbury, Wed-	and the Lady Eguina, was borne and growne to good yeers in the time of the raigne of his Grandfathe
-,	desbury, Eadsbury, Finborow, Rimcorne, Erimsbery-	yeeres in the time of the raigne of his Grandfathe
	Bridge and others.	King Elfred, who with his owne hands gave him the
	This renowned Lady gining place vnto Nature,	order of Knighthood, after a very honourable man
	7 0 01	nc
	·	1. 1. 11.

261

Polyder.

Adrick his do

The time of King Edward raigns. His death and Juriall,

Egain#4

Prince Einderd

Elfede

Stephen the fixt

wo Kings her

E belftan the

Edgina_e

atrieth Sguir

(bap.37 | Edward

The Dan breske to wash the lash.

An.Do

Wil,Mapa

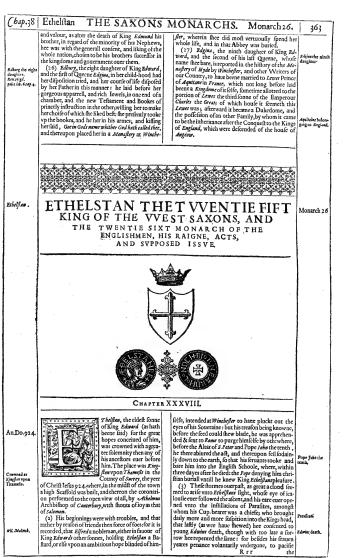
His admir of King E

Hen Huve An.Do.

Elficia dif

She winn

and before his fathere dearh; and was buried in the before his fathere dearh; and was buried in the before his fathere dearh; and was buried in the father of Queene Elfded his fector of Wife, followed the example of her elder fifter Elfded might for the part of the part							
great oblewer of fisch things, bath left in writing with property shade up you ham a Papire, and fairn. He was the Society of the fisch of the state	362			ESSION.	SOF	Monarch 2	5. Book.
who reported, hash pen vyon him a Purple Robe, and ger thin with a girdle wought with pearls, and a Sease found in a teabard of gold, hanging at the fame. He was the Sucception of his Pather in the High-Sassen dominions, and the English Memarky. Sassen dominions and the English Memarky. S	rit. Malmab.	ner of creation, as William the Monke of Malmsbury, a	1	yond-fea, because	he was brou	ght vp here in Englan	d
of his marings, was allowed to beech the first Dules of the service from the action of 900, hasping as the fame. However the Succeifor of his Father in the 199/1-100 cannot be the service of the servic		who reporteth that he put you him a Purple R obe		WITH HIS VIKICK	Ing Ethelitan:	and Gillet Ducheffer	vE1
that Country. This Queen furured King Closer's fam. Leavasted Societies of his Pather in the Biff- Jacons dominious, and the Zapilija Manardy. Jacons dominious, and the Lapilija Manardy. Jacons distinct to bee crowned King, and to fit with in- Jacons distinct to bee crowned King, and to fit with in- Jacons distinct, deceding horty after the recards and and the complex of position of the Country of the Jacons of		land girt him with a girdle wrought with pearle and		of his marriage.	was allowed to	Dane: who in regar	d l
(14) Elfred, the fecond fonne of King Edward and the moderate of the floory of English, to have been loused of his Fatherabous alls to other historic, that he caused in the in his borne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowned lifetime, decenting floorly after his creation, and have hendered the flooring of the floory after his creation, and his work of the flooring and the lady and the flooring of the floo		a Saxon tword in a leabard of gold, hanging at the		that Country, T	his Oucene	furnined King Charle	1
(14) Elfred, the fecond fonne of King Edward and the moderate of the floory of English, to have been loused of his Fatherabous alls to other historic, that he caused in the in his borne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowne lifetime to obse crowned King, and to fit with in his sowned lifetime, decenting floorly after his creation, and have hendered the flooring of the floory after his creation, and his work of the flooring and the lady and the flooring of the floo		Lanc. The was the Succellor of his Father in the Well-		her Husband; ar	nd afterwards	was remaried to He	
the Lady Beans, is warranted by the edimony of the common control		Saxons dominions, and the English Monarchy.	1				
the story of 1944, to hand been loued of his Fathers bound in some lifetime to the crowned king, and to fit with own elifetime to be crowned king, and to fit with own elifetime to be crowned king, and to fit with own elifetime to be crowned with a first which a first was borned and and the first with a first was borned and long before his finter level and hand and been before his finter level and hand been been showned to 1944. (15) Edital (whom the Senifol Writers call #seniform with the senifol Writers and the Lady flam #seniform with the senifol Writers and the Lady flam #seniform with the senifol Writers and the Lady flam #seniform with the senifol Writers and the care and hand yet with the senifol Writers and the care and hand yet with the seniform with the senifol Writers and the fourth of Queene Effects was maried to High with the seniform with the senifol Writers and the fourth of Queene Effects was maried to High with the seniform with the senifol Writers and the fourth of Queene Effects was maried to High with the seniform with the sen		the Lady Equina, is warranted by the reftiment of	1	age was taken for	io great an in	dignity, because Farl	e defined.
boue all his other children, than he caused him in his base of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-his database with him in his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-his database his him in his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-his database his him in his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-him him his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-him him his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-him him his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-him him his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-him him his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-him him his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-him him his Gest of Eltate, as his Parmer in the King-him him his Gest of King Estate and the Lady rive; the daughter of King Estate his the Lady and the him of the Control of National Him his Gest of King Estate his the Lady and the him his Kingdome. Wherefore the forst him his Kingdome. Wherefore the forst him his Kingdome. Wherefore the forst his parmer his him keeper of grace 19; Within one yeers after the maringe, her husband docaded, and his forms Gestfrailing of the town of the King Estate his look did, and was interred, and both hondry and Body afterwards was removed from the more vitor Pallyriant. (10) Elfours, the third fon of King Estater, & King of Frasee, and fisher of King Estater, & King of Frasee, and fisher of King Estater, and the fifth of Queen Elfours, was the first wife of the King of Gest parker, ever lithence vitor the him and to apply the him him his death might be imputed to the king and the fifth of Queen Elfours in the work pallow. (10) Elfours, the third fon of King Estater, his king of Frasee, and fisher of King Estater, and the fifth of Queen Elfours in the work pallow. The first him his death might be imputed to the was a support of the pallow of the him and to apply the defined with the first him the king of the first him the king of the first him the king of the first him the work of the King Estater, and the fifth of Queen Elfours in the work of the king a		the story of Hyde, to have been loued of his Father a.		King her Husban	ratner to this	Earle, had cauled th	e
committed the root of thrait cathody of Queene displaced in the control of the co		boue all his other children, that he caused him in his	1	her fonne prefent	ly purfited b	rnon, that King Lem	4
and in this cert of Eletze, as his Parmer in the King- men that the state of the control of the control of the certain and and beginner of the certain and the		Owne litetime to bee crowned King, and to fit with	1	committed ner to	othe itrait cu	itody of Ouccue Ger	<u>.</u> i
a finall time, deceasing shortly after his creation, and long before his finether death; and was buried until New Monathry at principle; which as ferrowards was remoucted to Hyde. (15) Edital (without the Statify Writers call Late and Hydronic and Hyd	rowned King	nim in his Seat of Estate, as his Partner in the King-		berge his wite: 10	as shee had n	o recourse vnto him	
bog betore his takters death; and was buried mich New Monattery at winekeiter, which afterwards was remouced to yiele. (15) Zelinia (whom the Seatifi Writers call Zetter Prier' the daughter of King Zelinard and the Lady Employer. With Common was maried to Sylinick, the Lanifi King of Nertimberland, in the firit yeer of the rapper of the Prother King Zelindard, being the Lanifi King of Nertimberland, in the firit yeer of the rapper of the Prother King Zelindard, being the Lanifi King of Nertimberland, in the firit yeer of the rapper of the Prother King Zelindard, being the Country, obtained of the Prother Ring Lelindard, which was sometime the head Tow of our Lord 21. Elizaden. (21) Zelinia, the fifth daughter of King Zelinard, which was formed the Corat, barle of Paris, Grand-maller and Collection of Collectine Challeng of Pariser, in the Yeer of our Lord 21. Elizaden. (21) Zelinia, the fifth daughter of King Zelinard, which was formed the Country of Single Langer, progenitors with principle and the Corat of Ning Ingle Capt. Prother to English the Cond Wife, was bronged the found that the Kingdome: but preferred ye pon his fathers decade, he decided himself in the infectored of Englands his cond with the Single Corner, proceeding the Single in the Kingdome: but preferred ye pon his fathers decade, he decided himself in soft participation, and in one place with him in the New Monatery of Single in the Kingdome: but preferred ye pon his fathers decade, he decided himself in the operated himself in the opyta, and was buried at one time, and in one place with him in the New Monatery of Single Andread with the Single Corner, proceeding the Single Corner, proce	me,	a (mall time, deceasing thousand the his manifest and		nor mue by nim,			
See Montalety at Promotile Seasify Writers call Zeater Montalety at Parabeliar, which as terror was a season of the Seasify Writers call Zeater Montalety of Writing, and Decame a Nume in the Monaletry of Writing, and Decame and Nume in the Monaletry of Writing, and Decame and Nume in the Monaletry of Writing, and Decame and Nume in the Monaletry of Writing, and Decame and Nume in the Monaletry of Writing, and Decame and Nume in the Monaletry of Writing, and Decame and Nume in the Monaletry of Writing, and Decame and Nume in the Monaletry of Writing of Parabel of Numerical Call Call Cantal Season in the County of Writing, and Decame and Decam		long before his fathers death and was buried in the	1	(20) Ethelhild,	the fourth	daughter of King Ed	- Ethelfild the
remote to tyste. (15) Zalisa (whom the Scatifu Writers call Zettrie's the daughter of King Zalisa and the Landy England State Pries' the daughter of King Zalisa and the Landy England State Pries' the daughter of King Zalisa and the Landy England State Pries' the daughter of King Zalisa and the Landy England State Pries' the daughter of King Zalisa and the Landy England State Pries' the daughter of King Zalisa and the Landy England State Pries' the Country of Strukter King Zield January and the Corat Para, Grand-maler and Control of Carent England State Pries' the Country of Strukter King Zield January and the Corat Para, Grand-maler and Control of Carent England State Pries' the Country of Strukters, and the Corat Para, Grand-maler and Control of Carent Para, Grand-maler and Control of Carent England State Interest the Country of Strukters' the England State Pries' the Country of Strukters' the Country of Strukter		New Monastery at winchester, which afterwards was	1	Wife followed the	ard of Quee	ne Elfleda his iccond	Tourth daugh
Eguma, with great honour was maried to Sylvink; her believes the control of the raigne of her brother King Ethelflam, being the year of grace 915. Whith one year eafer her mariage, her husband decaded, and his forme Guldfyrdiuc ecoded him in his Kingdome. Wherefore the formation of the production of the production of the single conded him in his Kingdome. Wherefore the formation of the production of the p		remoued to Hyde.	ĺ	and became a Nu	inne in the	Monaftery of Wilson	5
Eguma, with great honour was maried to Sylvink; her believes the control of the raigne of her brother King Ethelflam, being the year of grace 915. Whith one year eafer her mariage, her husband decaded, and his forme Guldfyrdiuc ecoded him in his Kingdome. Wherefore the formation of the production of the production of the single conded him in his Kingdome. Wherefore the formation of the production of the p	bibe the firft	(15) Editha (whom the Scotish Writers call Bea-		which was fometing	me the head	Towne gining name	2
Damph King of Northumberland, in the firit yeers of the raigne of the trother King Eddings, being the yeer of grace 915. Within one yeers after he main age, her huband doctacked, and his form condityris discocked him in his Kingdome. Wherefore the fordation of the product of the whole the decided and his form condityris discocked him in his Kingdome. Wherefore the fordation of the product of the condition of th	ughter.	trice) the daughter of King Edward and the Lady		to the whole Coul	nty of Weltfbir	e,and antiently called	1
the raigne of her brother King Ethelflame, being the year of grace 9 15. Within one year east fear her maring, her husband decaded, and has fome Gushfriduc exceeded him in his Kingdome. Wherefore the fortaking that Country, obtained of her brothersgift, the Candidaction of the work of the history of the process of the process of the process of the found in his Kingdome. Wherefore the fortaking that Country, obtained of her brothersgift, the Candidaction of the work of the history and Body afferwards was removed from thence van being of the work, where the began a Monaltery of Nunnes, and therein liked dicked and was interred, and both the Monaltery and Body afferwards was removed from thence van being of the king of France, and the process of the Rings of the Work, Bonne to Dealer, William Arch. Billiop of France, and the process of the Rings of the brother history, brother to Ender King of France, and the process of the Rings of France, and the process of the Rings of France, and the process of the Rings of the Work, Bonne of Rabert, Brother to Ender King of France, and the process of the Rings of France, the year of our Lord of Condidated the France, in the year of Online and the Path of the Work of Hamilton and the Path of the Work	iai. oripennyis ilidor						
special specia		the raigne of her brother King Etheldens being sha	1	(21) Edhild, t	he fifth daug	hter of King Edward	Edhild the fife
in the County obtained of the brothersgift, the county obtained of the brothersgift, the county obtained of the brothersgift, the county of furmide, where the began at Monatlery of Nunnes, and therein lived dicked and was intered, and both the Monatlery and Body afterwards was remoude from thence van Pallywarh. (16) Elfward, the third fion of King Edward, 8 the first of Queen Elidad his fecond wife, was bornas in termeth, about the beginning of his Fathers raigne. He was carefully brought by in the fluoty of Liberall Arts, and in all other princely qualities, to that it was expected to floud than the inceeded his Father in the Kingdome: but preferrly you his fathers decade, in was a carefully brought by in the fluoty of Liberall Arts, and in all other princely qualities, to that it was expected to floud than the inceeded his father in the Kingdome: but preferrly you his fathers decade, in was a carefully brought by in the fluoty of Liberall Arts, and in all other princely qualities, to that it was expected to floud than the inceeded his feather in the Kingdome: but preferrly you his fathers decade, in was a carefully brought to the count of Queene Elidad his feather in the Kingdome: but preferrly you his fathers decade, in was a consequent of the was a brief at the all fills. Ladder, Duke of Swarf, and the first of the the fills of Ladders, was the first of the first of the same in the first of Carear Duke of Large, and the first of the Ladders, and the first of the the fills and the first of the the count of Queene Elidad his fore ond Wife, was briefed the fills of the count of Queene Elidad his fore ond Wife, was briefed the fills of the count of Queene Elidad his fore ond Wife, was briefed the good from the County of Ladders, was taken and the first of the procurers of his brother death, fending great thanks count Earle that build be falled or Ones on milk of Pathers was briefed to the count of Queene Elidad his fored body in the lead of the county of Ladders, the conflict, and the procurers of his brother		vecre of grace o I s. Within one vecre after her mari-					
Standard Country, obtained of her brother gift, the Callell of Tramment's, in the Country of Harmides, which are strongly and the country of the callel of Tramment's, in the Country of Harmides, and therein and the eggan and marker productives, and the the callel of Tramment's, in the Country of Harmides, and the called before him without any tiftee by all feelings and make removed from thence variety and Body afterward, and the first of Queen Elifeth's level was born as it feemeth about the beginning of his Fathers right, and the fifth of Queen Elifeth's level and the fifth of Queen Elifeth's level of the him of the productive and the fifth of Queen Elifeth's level of the limited the indicate the first of the productive and the fifth of Queen Elifeth's level of the impact of the wasters whence the young Prince ouercome with the first policy by the first of the productive and the fifth of the productive that the first policy by the productive and the fifth of the Drother Sing Extent and the Sin		age, her husband deceased, and his sonne Guthfrid fire-					
Caffell of Tammerids, in the Country of Harmites, where the begans almostley of Numers and therein lived died, and was interred, and both the Monaftery and Body afterwards was remoused from thence vano Pallefysiath. Seed the third of the Harmites of the		tecucumin in his Kingdome. Vy herefore the toria-		being the third of	her brother K	ing Ethelderectoions	
where the began at Monthley of Number, and the second the light dided, and was intered, and both the Monthley and Body afterwards was remoued from thence vino Pallefysisth. (16) Elfward, the third fon of King Edward, & the fifth of Queene Effectals his focond wife, was born as it feemeth, about the beginning of his Fathers raigne, He was carefully brought by in the fluid of Libertall Arts, and in all other princely qualities; to that it was expected the floud than effected of the fluid has discoceded his father in the Kingdome: but preferrly you his fathers decade, he deceded himself in a object, and the fifth of Queene Effects of States, in the fluid of the second of Cares of the fluid of the second of the cond of Cares of the fluid of the product of the fluid of the product of the fluid of the product of the fluid of the f		king that Country, obtained of her brothersgift, the					
lined died, and was interred, and book the Monatlery and Body afterwards was remoused from thence very the process of the device of the process of the proce	il,	Caltell of Tamworth, in the County of Warwicke,		range, and	a tather of Ki	Ng Hugh Cabet, progr.	.1
and Body atterwards was removed from thence vails Feligible with ward, the third ofto of King Edward, 8 cm. (16) Elfward, the third ofto of King Edward, 8 cm. (16) Elfward, the third ofto of King Edward, 8 cm. He was carefully brought by in the floyd of Liberall Artz, and in all other princely qualities fo that it was expected the floud of has increased his frather in the Kingdome: but preferrely you has fathers decade, 1 cm. Elfward the flood of the flood of the flower		lived died and was interred and bosh she Manager					
Fall jurn! Fall		and Body afterwards was removed from thence ware		him	before him	without any issue by	
the first of Queen Effects in Second wife, was bornas in the first of Queen Effects in Second wife, was bornas in the first of Queen Effects in Second wife, was been such as the second wife, and the first of Queen Effects in Second wife, and the first of Queen Effects in Second wife, and the first of Queen Effects in the Guest of Second Wife, was should be first of Queen Effects of Second Wife, was should be first of Queen Effects in the Guest of Second Wife, was should be first of Queen Effects of Second Wife, was should be first of Queen Effects of Second Wife, was should be first of Queen Effects of Second Wife, was should be first of Queen Effects of Second Wife, was should be first of Second Wife, was should be second with the		Polle/worth.		THIII.			
the first of Queen Elledah ins fecond wife, was bornas, it is emethy about the beginning of his Enthers raigne. He was carefully brought vp in the fludy of Liberall Arts, and in all other principly qualities, of that it was expected in flouid have incereded his Father in the Kingdome - burperfeined valuations of the transport of the Kingdome - burperfeined vp vp on his fathers decealed his Father in the Kingdome - burperfeined vp vp on his fathers decealed the father in the Kingdome - burperfeined vp vp on his father was buried at one time, and in one place with father was buried, and his brother kindlight of the food of General Elledah is feed with father was buried, and his profession of the food of General Elledah is feed on with the county of the father was buried, and his profession of the food of General Elledah is feed might be imputed to the wastes : whence the young Prince ouercome with griefs, and not able to matter his owner passions, atl himselficheddion ginto the fee, and his dead body prince and honourably buried to make the same passions, atl himselficheddion ginto the fee, and his dead body prince and honourably buried to make the same passions, atl himselficheddion ginto the fee, and his dead body prince and honourably buried to make the same passions, atl himselficheddion ginto the fee, and his dead body prince and honourably buried to make the same passions, atl himselficheddion ginto the fee, and his dead body prince and honourably buried to make the same passions, and honourably buried in the Monaltery of Saint Berint, in the Towner of 3. Dimers. Which take was much lamented by King Esthelfam, who precuoutly performed to the same passions of the same passions, and honourably buried in the Monaltery of Saint Berint, in the Towner of 3. Dimers. White has been a prince of note and account, worthy of h	ومتنادمناه أدممت	(16) Elsward, the third fon of King Edward &		and the fifth of O	neene Elflede	was the first mile - i	Edgith the fixt
He was carefully brought vp in the fludy of Liberall Arts and nall other was a content of the standard of the	MAN CONTRACT	the hrit of Queen Effleda his fecond wife, was born as		orno the nrit, inrn	amed the Gre	at Emperous of the	. 1
expected he flouid haue fusceeded his Father in the Kingdome - but preficitly you his faither adecase, he decased himself in oxford, and was buried at one that the state of the first of the first of the state of the first of t		Heemeth, about the beginning of his Fathers raigne.		West, sonne to the	Emperor He	pry furnamed the Fal-	
expected he flouid haue fusceeded his Father in the Kingdome - but preficitly you his faither adecase, he decased himself in oxford, and was buried at one that the state of the first of the first of the state of the first of t		Arts and in all other princely qualities to the in		coner. By him the	had iffue Zua	lolfe, Duke of Swabe,	
Ringstome: Dut predently youn his lathers deceded, he would in the cyfer of Christ in cyfer and may be predently you his lathers deceded himself in 16 cyfer, and may be predently as the few and the first of the predently and the first of the predently and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the product at the few and the first of the few and the few		expected he should have succeeded his Father in the	- 1				
ne deceded himslich in Osførs/and was buried at one he deceded himslich in New Monaftery at Principle in Interview with him in the New Monaftery at Principle in Interview in the interview in th		Kingdome: but prejently voon his fathers decease 1	- 1	Quedlingburg in San	v <i>anie</i> in wh	ich Ctrie fla deser C	1.
inter at water the control of pace with man in the New Monas of the pace of Control feeling 24. (7) Zhimo, the fourth four of King Zhimot, and his first of the brother King Zhedraitgine in England the feecond of Queene Effeld his fixe about 12. (8) Zhimot, the fourth four of King Zhimot, and his brother Zhido'ing when his father was buried, and his brother Zhido'ing when his father was brothed, and his brother Zhido'ing when his father was brothed, and his brother Zhido'ing when his father was brothed and the first fold founded in the father and the frield had founded in the father of Change accompanying him, that his death might be improved to the water: whence the young Prince and accompanying him, that his death might be improved to the water: whence the young Prince and him to be princed in the Monastery of Saint and the first of Pades and the first of Greene Effeld his faced body bring driven upon the coals of Flanders, was taken and lamented by King Ethellan, who spreached the search of the procurers of his brother death, fending great thanks to the Earlet the Juried Balan, his food the procurers of his brother death, fending great thanks to the Earlet the Juried Balan, his food the procurers of his brother death, fending great thanks to the Earlet the Juried Balan, his food the procurers of his brother death, fending great thanks to the Earlet the Juried Balan, his food the procurers of his brother death, fending great thanks to the Earlet the Juried Balan, his food the procurers of his brother benefit of the procurers of his broth		he decealed himlelte in Oxford, and was buried at one	- 1	the feuen and twen	ty of August.	n the veere of Christe	1
(17) Edinine, the fourth foune of King Edinine, for the found of General Edide his fector Wife, was very young when his father was buried, and his brother Reddining the King Ata his facility was very young when his father was buried, and his brother Reddining the King Ata his facility was very young when his father was buried, and his brother Reddining the King Ata his facility was very young when his father was bounced the Crowne, he cauded him to be puttino all title Planted Foundation and the Counce of the Counce, he cauded him to be puttino all title Planted Foundation and the Counce of the Co	ried at Winche.		- 1	Nativity 947.thee	leuenth of h	er husbands Empire	l
and the fecond of Queene Effeds his fecond Wife, was the fact that the first of the		(17) Edmine the fourth forms of Vine 11 1	- 1				l
was very young when his facher was buried, and his brother Ethelit are convened. Notwithfalming a deep telofic polificing the Kingshat his title was too never the Crowne, he caufed him to be putton on little Pinnelle, without either Tackle or Ozeres, one only page accompanying hims, that is death might be imputed to the wants: whence the young Prince ouercome with girle, and not able too matter his owner passions, cut himself he headlong into the fee, and his dead body for the property of the Sams, in the Property of Saint Prope	wise the	and the fecond of Oueene Elfleda his fecond Wife	-1				ł
brother Biblisher Crowne, he conversible for the profession of the Right and the State of Cares, on and the fixint of Copene Elifable his fector of Wife, was the first of Counce, he caused him to be put into a little Pinnelle, without either Tacke or Cares, one only page accompanying him, that his death might be imputed to the waters: whence the young Prince ouercome with griefe, and notable to malter his owne passions, and in the first of Palaukers, was taken and honourably burnel in the Monatlery of Saint Bertin, in the Towne of Balaukers, was taken and honourably burnel in the Monatlery of Saint Bertin, in the Towne of Balaukers, was taken and honourably burnel in the Monatlery of Saint Bertin, in the Towne of Balaukers, in Conference, and honourably burnel in the Monatlery of Saint Bertin, in the Towne of Sames. Which fast was much lamented by King Ethellan, whopereuously punished the fuggetions of his owne isoles, and the procurers of his brothers deathfaching great thanks to the Earleiths burded him, and rich prefents to the Monatlery which encombed him, and to appead the phot to this ismocrate borther, built the Abby of Malaukers in the County of Durfet. All the Balaukers of Saint Balaurs, and the first of Queene Elifach in the County of Durfet. All the Balaukers of Saint Balaurs, and the high of County of Durfet. All the Balaukers of Saint Balaurs, and the first of Queene Elifach in the County of Durfet. All the Balaukers of Saint Balaurs, and the first of Queene Elifach burded the single through the saint between the saint Balaurs of the Balaurs of Saint Balaurs, and the first of Queene Elifach in the County of Durfet. All the Balaurs of Saint Balaurs of Saint Balaurs, and the first of Queene Elifach burded the Saint Balaurs of Saint Balaurs, and the first of Queene Elifach burded the Saint Balaurs of Saint Balaurs, and the first of Queene Elifach burded to the saint Balaurs of Saint Balaurs, and the first of Queene Elifach burded to the saint Balaurs of Saint Balaurs, and the first of Queene Elif	Malmf.	was very young when his father was buried, and his		Citie.	ner iene Dad	tounded in the fame	1
selotic policising the Kingshath is title was soo neere the Crowne, he caided him to be putton on altice Pinnelle, without either Tackle or Cares, one only page accompanying him, that is death might be imputed to the wants: whence the young Pinne ouercome with griefe, and notable to matter his owner passions, call himself: he addong into the fee, and his dead body for the same in difference with griefe, and notable to matter his owner passions, call himself: he add on girt on the Coantey of Saint Property of Sa		brother Ethelstane crowned. Notwithstanding a deep	- 1		enench danot	ster of Vina Time.	
incligation teither Tackle or Cares, one only page accompanying him, that lied eath might be imputed to the waters: whence the young Prince outcrome with grief, and notable to maker his owner passions, calk himselfs heedlong into the fear, and his dead body in the factor of the control of the control of the merce, who honourably brief to maker his owner passions, calk himselfs heedlong into the fear, and his dead body his dead heedlong driven you have coasts of Faladers, was taken and honourably burief of the control of the fall from marriage with a Duke of Italy bount the Albert, who is not named of our Writing the fall from the control of the fall from marriage with a Duke of Italy bount the Albert, who is no to named of our Writing the fall from the control of the fall from marriage with a Duke of Italy bount the Albert, which is no no named of our Writing the fall from the control of Duke f. (18) Ellifact, the fector dampther of King Edward, and the fall of the first of Queene Ellifact his fector of the fall of the first of Queene Ellifact his fector of the fall of the first of Queene Ellifact his fector of the fall of the first of Queene Ellifact his fector of the fall of the first of Queene fall of the first of Queene fall of the fall of the first of Queene fall of the first of the first of Queene fall of the fir	0	telolie policising the King that his title was too neere	- 1	and the fixth of Qn	icene <i>Elfleda</i> f	is fecond Wife was	Elgina the fe-
accompanying him, that his death might be imputed to the waters : whence the young Prince outerome with griefe, and not able to malter his owne passions, and here, in some day here the with his owne day here the horizontal and the programment of the red of life to his ledder hands of the horizontal to the beautiful promised the day here, and honourably buried in the Monastery of Saint Bertin, in the Towne of Samers, in Monastery of Saint Bertin, in the Towne of Samers, his General programment and honourably buried in the Monastery of Saint Bertin, in the Towne of S. Jomers, Whit fast was much lamented by King Ethellan, who greenoutly punished the függefitions of his owne-cisolic, and the procurers of his brothers death, fending great thanks to the Earlet the Duried thin, and rich prefens to the Monastery which enrombed him, and to appeade the Photo this innocent borton-try built the Abby of Maltalow in the County of Duriet. All below the termination of the procurers of his brothers day below the termination of the market of the three thanks to the Earlet the Duried General Prince of the world salaution 91. and this fall the termination of the more thanks the expect of age, was the first of Queene Elifeda his fecond Wife, and the first of Queene Elifeda his fecond Wife, and the first of Queene Elifeda his fecond Wife, and the first of Queene Elifeda his fecond Wife, and the formation of the procurers of the process of the		ne Crowne, ne cauled him to be put into a little Pin-	- 1	by ming etheuran n	ter brother.	with her lifter Eaith	aviida daugus
to the waries: whence the young Prince ouercome with girefe, and notable to malter his owner passions, call himselfe headlong into the fea, and his dead body in the fed of the feature of the control of the feature of		accompanying him that his death might be impresed	- 1	TOTAL COURTOR	t the Empero	Leenry the first King	1
with gurie, and notable to malter his owne passions, call himselfe headlong into the fea, and his dead body being driven upon the coalts of Flauders, was taken and honousubly buried in the Monattery of Saint Bertin, in the Towne of Balanes, his octon-fearmane, and honousubly buried in the Monattery of Saint Bertin, in the Towne of S. Joness. With fact was much lamented by King Ethelfan, who sprecuously punished the függeditons of his owne cislote, and the procurers of his brothers death, fending great thanks to the Earlieths: buried him, and rich prefents to the Monattery which encombed him, and to appead the Photo of his innocent borton-the, built the Abby of Madelson in the Councy of Durfet. Make The Councy of Durfet. State the first of Queene Ethela his fecond Wife, and the proclemand vow of Virginity, in the Monattery, the was the first of Numer, and the Proclemand vow of Virginity, in the Monattery of English, the fector was the third whole time of the distribution of the Council and Devis Purior. The data the first of the Council and the Virginity in the Monattery, the was the first of Numer, and the first of Queene Ethela his fecond Wife, and the whole time of the distribution of the proclemant of the procl	ļ	to the wates : whence the young Prince ouercome					1
being driven yoon the coads of Feludors, was taken and hold of Madely E. Earl of Bediuse, his coffeen germane, and honourably buried in the Monathery of Saine and the Bediuse, his coffeen germane, and honourably buried in the Monathery of Saine and the Bediuse, his coffeen germane, and honourably buried in the Monathery of Saine and the Bediuse, his coffeen germane, and honourably buried in the Monathery of Saine and the Bediuse, his coffeen germane, and honourably buried in the Monathery of Saine and the first of Queene Edgiuse, his conference of the Bediuse, his conference of the	- 1	with griefe, and not able to malter his owne passions		and after he had me	aried borold	is owne daughters;	١.
being driften y pont faccoais of Estanders, was taken and compared the production of	- 1	cast himselfe headlong into the sea, and his dead body	- 1	fonne, he placed he	ralfoin mar	riage with a Duke of	
Bertin, in the Towne of 8.2 mers. Which fact was much lamented by king flexifilar, we have been a Prince of noce and account, worthy of her procurers of his brother death, effecting or the horizonters of his brother death, effecting to the Monattery which encomed thim, and rich above of Monattery which encomed thim, and or appeted the thot of this innocen brother builted hobby of Madatowin the County of Data fl. (18) Elifact, the fixend daughter of King Edward, and the first of Queene Elifact his from took vpon her the profession and vow of Virginity, in the Monattery her than the first of Queene Elifact his from the County of Control the Prince of the Windows of the County of Control the Prince of the Windows of the County of Control the Prince of the Windows of the County of Control the Windows of the Windows of the County of Control the Windows of the W		DCINE GRIGER VDOR the coalts of Flanders was rabon I	- 1	Italy obout the Alpe	s, who is no	named of our Wri-	
Bertin, in the Towne of 8.2 mers. Which fact was much lamented by king flexifilar, we have been a Prince of noce and account, worthy of her procurers of his brother death, effecting or the horizonters of his brother death, effecting to the Monattery which encomed thim, and rich above of Monattery which encomed thim, and or appeted the thot of this innocen brother builted hobby of Madatowin the County of Data fl. (18) Elifact, the fixend daughter of King Edward, and the first of Queene Elifact his from took vpon her the profession and vow of Virginity, in the Monattery her than the first of Queene Elifact his from the County of Standing, financed vpon the King Edward, and the County of Standing his throught the program of the profession and vow of Virginity, in the Monattery, the was the condition of the county of Standing his principle decation connected of him in the life of his brother King Elifact his from the county of Standing his principle decation on the county of Standing his principle decation on the profession and vow of Virginity, in the Monattery, the was the condition of the condition of the condition of the profession and vow of Virginity, in the Monattery his standing the profession and vow of Virginity, in the Monattery his standing by the careful provision of his morths of the program of the profession and vow of Virginity, in the Monattery his standing his profession and the condition of the	ders.	vp by Adulphe, Earle of Boloine, his colon-germane,	-1.	ters, but may eafily	be coniectur	ed by the honoura-	
much iamented oy king Ethellan, whogreeuoully punished the fuggetions of his own eichoic, and the procurers of his brothers death, fending great thanks to the Earle that. Duried him, and rich prefents to the Monaltery which encombed him, and to appead the Endot of his innocent borther, built the Abby of Maderon in the County of Duriet. Monaltery which encombed him, and to appead the Endot of his innocent borther, built the Abby of Maderon in the Wornton the County of Duriet. Matthe first of Queene Effled his fecond Wife, and the first of Queene Effled his fecond Wife, and the proficionand vow of Virginity, in the Monaltery of Atamyles, fittuated you have known to the proficion and vow of Virginity, in the Monaltery have been and the proficion and vow of Virginity, in the Monaltery, the was the first of Normal Abby burnet. Many of Atamyles, fittuated you have known the first of County of Duriet. Many of Atamyles, fittuated you have known the first of Queene Effled his feed of him in the life of his brother King Etherd, and the feed of Queene Effled his feed of him in the life of his brother King Etherd, and the feed of Queene Effled his feed of him in the life of his brother King Etherd, and the feed of Queene Effled his feed of him in the life of his brother King Etherd, and the feed of Queene Effled his feed of him in the life of his brother King Etherd, and the feed of Queene Effled his feed of him in the life of his brother King Etherd, and the feed of him in the life of his brother King Etherd, and the first of his work of his more of king Etherd, and the first of Queene Effled his hind with a life of his brother King Etherd, and the first of Queene Effled his hind with all principle decision on the concerned of him in the life of his brother King Etherd, and the first of the kingdom of England her boy her was a first a large with the first of his brother King Etherd, and the first of the kingdom of England her boy her kingdom of England her boy her kingdom of England her was a first a large with the fi	- 1	Bertin, in the Towns of S. Omers, Which S.O.	- 1	or disposition of t	ne maker of	the match, to have	
ponilised the taggettons of his owne ice lofe, and the procurers of his brother scaleth, ferting great thanks to the Earle that buried him, and arich prefents to the Monadtery which entombed him, and on appeale the Monadtery which entombed him, and on appeale the Both of his innocent brother, built the Abbey of Madaleton in the County of Darfet. (18) Elifeda, the ice ond daughter of King Edward, all the first of Queene Elifeda his fecond Wife, entered into the orders of Religion, and took eyon her the profession and vow of Virgainty, in the Monadtery of Eamle, finance of Virgainty, in the Monadtery of Eamle, for the Monadtery of Eamle, finance of Virgainty, in the Monadtery of Eamle, finance of Virgainty, in the Monadtery of Eamle, finance of Virgainty, and the fecond of Queene Elifeda his fecond Wife of Control to the Monadtery of Eamle, for Control to Control to the Monadtery of Eamle, for Control to Control to the Monadtery of Eamle, for Control to	1	much lamented by King Ethellan who green on the I	- 13	ocen a Prince of no	ote and acco	unt, worthy of her	
be the shad of the state of the	- 1	punished the juggettions of his owne jelofic, and the	-1'	(2.4) Edmund als	e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e	CICIO - 1	
to the Larie thir. Duried him, and rich prefents to the Monadrey which entombed him, and to appeale the Monadrey which entombed him, and to appeale the Bott of his innocent brother, built the Abbey of Madaleon in the Councy of Darlet. (18) Elfleda, the lecond daughter of King Edward, the data his learness and the control of Darlet. (18) Elfleda, the lecond Wife, entered into the orders of Religion, and took eyon her the profession and vow of Virgainty, inthe Monadrey of Eamlet, from the Monadrey of Eamlet, financed whom he learned flome experience of first whole time of the Tipe Which was there from an encied, and her body in the faid Abbey buried. The third who is the standard of the profession and wow of Virgainty, in this Monadrey of Eamlet, the third wife, and the whole time of the Tipe Which was there for many the word of Queene Elfleda his fecond Wife to Charlet shet hind, furnamed the Simple King of France, on to King Lear the brother of thaths, Queene of England before mediand, furnamed the Simple King of France, on the Larvi the Idea, furnamed Zechola and the Simple King of France, on the Sing Lear the brother of thaths, Queene of England before mediand, the Condition of the Condition of the Simple King of France, on the Sing Lear the Brother of the Condition of Condition of the Simple King of France, on the Sing Lear the Brother of the Brother of the Sing Lear the Brother of the	1	procurers of his brothers death; fending great thanks	١,	he first of Oucene E	doing his thir	d and laft Wife was	Edmund the fift!
whole of his innocent brother. Journal of Depterment of the Councy of Depterment of the Councy of Depterment of Councy of Depterment of Councy of Depterment of Councy of Depterment of Councy of Co	1	to the Earle that buried him, and rich prefents to the	- 11	porne in the twentie	th veere of h	stathereraione he.	IOEBIC.
states in the County of Darfe. The dataghters, the first of Queene Effect his fectord Wife, entered into the orders of Religion, and took eyon her the County of Darfe, in the Monality of Eamify, financed you not Nignity, and took eyon her the County of Saudiers, financed you not Rivery of Eamify, financed you not Rivery of Eamify, financed you not have the whole time of the life of Part and ended, and her body in the find Abberg buried. The state of the Saudiers and elate, inflowed the Eamify the was first a Nunne, and afterward Abbeffe during the whole time of the life, which was there fore not edd, and her body in the find Abberg buried. The state of the Saudiers and elate, inflowed the King Edward, and the fectord of Queene Effect his fectord Wife (1) Edward, be first home of Ning Edward, and the fectord of Queene Effect his fectord Wife (2) Edward, the Wish was the food of Queene Effect his fectord Wife (2) Edward, the was not long before the death of his father, who left him a little infaint in the couldn't of his mother, by whom he was carefully before the death of his father, who left him a little infaint in the couldn't of his mother, by whom he was carefully before the death of his father, who left him a little infaint in the couldn't of his mother, by whom he was carefully before the death of his father, who left him a little infaint in the couldn't of his mother, by whom he was carefully before the death of his father, who left him a little infaint in the couldn't of him mother, by whom he was carefully before the death of his father, who left him a little infaint in the couldn't of him mother, by whom he was carefully before the death of his father, who left him a little infaint in the couldn't of him mother, by whom he was carefully before the death of his father, who left him a little infaint in the couldn't of him mother, by whom he was carefully before the death of him to him the little him him the		Monattery which entombed him, and to appeale the	- [1	ng the yeere of the	worldsfalua	tion of randarhie	
(18). Eilleda, theickeond daughter of King Edward, and their first of Queene Eilfledah in Second Wife, which is the short of the proofit on and wow the shift of Locard Eilfledah in Second Wife, which was the first of Locard Eilfledah in Second Wife, which was the first of Locard Composition and wow of Virginia, the Monality of Eamify, financed vponor Ring Edward, and the Composition and wow of Virginia, the Monality of Eamify, financed vponor Ring Edward, and the Composition of the Monality of Edward, financed Edward In the Composition of the Composition of the Second Wife to Manager and the Composition of the Second Composition of the Monality		detar in the County of Day Gu	- 12	atners death little n	nore then thr	ee veeres of age was l	
standing metros recipion, and tooke you have the profession and your of Virginity, in the Monalery of Ramife, financed you fine Monalery of Ramife, financed you fine Monalery of Ramife, financed you find the Monalery of Ramife, financed you find the Monalery of Ramife, financed of Course of Ramife, financed of Course of Ramife, financed of Course Effect his fecond Wife of Wife Room Wife to Construct between Charles the Monaler of Ramife, Counder Of Course of Ramife, financed the Simple King of France, on to King Lawrich brother of Lands, Course of Englands before mentioned. She had iffur by him Lawrich tested, furnamed Re-	-	(18) Elleds, the fecond daughter of King Toward	- 11	norwithitanding by	the carefull r	rouilion of his mo.	Three yeere old
standing metros recipion, and tooke you have the profession and your of Virginity, in the Monalery of Ramife, financed you fine Monalery of Ramife, financed you fine Monalery of Ramife, financed you find the Monalery of Ramife, financed you find the Monalery of Ramife, financed of Course of Ramife, financed of Course of Ramife, financed of Course Effect his fecond Wife of Wife Room Wife to Construct between Charles the Monaler of Ramife, Counder Of Course of Ramife, financed the Simple King of France, on to King Lawrich brother of Lands, Course of Englands before mentioned. She had iffur by him Lawrich tested, furnamed Re-	ede the fe-	and the first of Queene Elfleda his second Wife en-	1:	nier, brought vp wi	ith all princel	y education conue-	death.
So the state of th	o cassinci,	tred into the orders of Religion, and tooke you her	1	renerally a great o	mucitate, in	omuch as there was	
So the state of th		the profession and vow of Virginity, in the Mona-	10	onceined of him in	the life of his	brother King Felol.	
first a Nume, and astreward habeffe during the whole time of her life, which was there from and to iced, and her body in the field Abbeffe for grant and the cond of Queen. Essential in Econd Wife, and the fecond of Queen. Essential in Econd Wife, was the fecond Wife Construct between the Simple King of France, Son to King. It manuscut her Simple King of France, Son to King are the brother of industry, Queen the Simple King of France, Son to King are the brother of industry, Queen the Simple King of France, Son to King and the Simple King of France, Son to King and the Simple King of France, Son to King and the Simple King of France, Son to King and the Simple King of France, Son to King and the Simple King of France, Son to King and the Simple King of France, Son to King and Simple Kingdom of France assume that the Cond of Queen essential the Cond of Queen e	ney Mona-		U	ran, vnder whom he	e learned ion	te experience of fer. I	
whole time of her lift, which was there fpent and en- ded, and her body in the find Abbey burted. """ the third hate. "" the third hate. """ the third ha			15	nce in warre, and a	fter whom h	ee fucceeded in the	
we the third and the fecond of Queene Effects his fecond Wife, was the fecond of Contents the third, furnamed the Simple King of France, Conto King Leavish the Simple King of France, Conto King Leavish the Simple King of France, Conto King Leavish the Simple King of France, Conto King Leavish the Simple King of Conto King Conto King of Conto King Conto	1	whole time of her life, which was there from and on . I	11	linguome of Englan	nd.		
(149) Eguma, the third daughter of King Edurad, and the feecond of Queene Effetch in Scoond Wife, was the feecond Wife to Charles the third, furnamed the Simple, King of France, into King Lears the brother of Indiah, Queene of Englands before mentioned. She had iffue by him Learns the third, furnamed Ee-	- 1		1.	he fecond of Co	xtn ionne of	King Edward, and	Edred the fixe
and the econd Wife to Charles be thind, furnamed the Simple, King of France, On to King Lears the broad the Simple, King of France, On to King Lears the brother of Lanks, Queene of Englands before mentioned. She had iffue by him Lears the thord, furnamed Ze-	the third		1	oungest sonne of r	hem both	me horne change	·······································
the Simple, King of Finest, Gon to King Learthe brother of Indials, Queene of England before mentioned. She had iffue by him Learthe that, furnamed Ze-	hter.		10	wo and twentieth	yeere of his f	athers raione and I	
death of his father, who left him a little infinit in the culture by him Lewis the third, furnamed Be-			1)	tere or grace 92 1.	which was i	10t long before the l	
She had iffue by him Lewis the third, furnamed Be-			10	learn of his father, v	who lett him :	Alittle infant in the	
Ty and product at time of to great vertile A good Frince.	- 1.	She had iffue by him Lewis the third, furnamed a	10	ultody of his moth	ier, by whor	n hee was carefully	
and		,,	10	nought vp, and pro	oued a Princ		A good Prince.
			_			and (



Antef: King of Heller Boetius.

went; for it is recorded, that as Elfred the English had attempted to know the State of the Danes: fo this Dane at this place did to understand the English: for disguising himselfe like a Harper, hee went from Tent to Tent, and had accesse even into King Ethelflans presence, vntill hee had learned what he most defired, and then returned againe to his Campe, which part of his was no bolder, or more wifely performed, then was kept fecret, and after reuealed by a most faithfull fouldier: for Anlase departed & free from pursuit, this Souldier made the act known to King Ethelftan: who being fore displeased with his enemies escape, imputed the fault vnto him the reucaler: but he replying, made him this answere:

I once ferued Anlasc (said he) under his pay for a souldi-

er, and gave him the same faith that I doe now with

fents to King

Empire; to that his dominion was the same the greateft with all formine Princes, who fought his friendfhip both with loue and alliance, by matching France here. with his lifters, and presenting him with rich and rare presents; for Hugh King of France besides other vneftimable Iewels; fent him the fword of Constantine the Great, in the hilt whereof (all concred with gold) was one of the nailes that fastned Christ to his Croffe: he fent likewise the speare of Charles the Great, reputed to be the same that pierced Christs the Great, reputed to be the same that pierced Christs naile of the fide, as also part of the Crosse whereon hee suffered Crosse can be considered. his passion, and a pecce of the thorny Crowne wher- England. with his bleffed Temples were begoared, and with these came the Banner of S. Maurice so often spread by Charles the Great in his Christian warres against the Saracens: And from Othe the Emperour, who had married his fifter, was fent a veffell of pretious frones artificially made, wherein were feene Lanskips with vines corne, and men, all of them feeming fo

naturally to moue, as if they had growne and re-tuned life: And the King of Norway fent him a goodly thippe with a guilt sterne, purple failes, and

(bap.39. Edmund THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch 27.

Helinford. the decke garnished all with gold. S. Swithern Abbe

(13) Of these accounted holy reliques King Etheiftan gaue part vnto the Abbey of S. Swithen in Winchester, and the rest to the Monastery of Malmesbury, whereof Adelme was the founder, and his Tutelar Saint, in honour of whom he bestowed great immunities vpon the towne, and large endowments vpon the Abbey; hee new built the monasteries of Wilton, Michelnesse, and Midleton, founded Saint Germans in Cormval, Saint Petrocus at Bodman, the Priory of Pilton, new walled and beutified the City of Exceter, and enriched enery famous Abbey in the land, either with new buildings, Iewels, Books, or Reuenewes.

Isha Stow.

King Athethans

44.821.

Edmund.

(14) As also hee did certaine Cities with the Mintage of his money, whereof in London were eight houses, at Winchester fixe, at Lewis two, at Hastings two, in Hampton two, in Warham two, in Chichefter one, in Rochester three, two for the King, and one for the Bishop; at Canterbury seuen; foure for himfelfe, two for the Archbishop, and one for the Abbat, although it appeareth the Archbishop had his before the raigne of this King. For among these ancient Saxon-Coines, we find one of Ceolnothus, who fate there Archbishop in the yeare 831, which both for the antiquity & authority of truth wee haue here



(15) This Prince King Ethelftan was of an indifferent stature, not much exceeding the common fort | vestues. of men, chearefull in countenance, his haire verie yellow, and somewhat stooped forward as he went, for valour inuincible, in refolution conflant, and for his currefie beloued of all, he raigned in great honour the space of fifteene yearesand odde monethes, and deceased in the City of Glowcester, vpon wednesday the feuenteenth of October, and was buried at Malmerbury the yeere of Christs Nativity:940. having

neuer had wife mentioned in our hiftories.

His spepefed I suc.

(16) Leonest, the supposed daughter of King Ethelftan, is reported by John Rouse and Papulvick, wriPapulvick, wriPapulvick, writers of the miltrufted flory of Guy of Warwicke to bee married vnto Reynburn Earle of Warwicke, and sonne to the same guy, whose remembrance and reputation is preferued & kept with no leffe renowne among the common people, for the liberty of England faued by his victory in fingle combate against Colbrand the Dane, then was Horatius the Romane for the preferuatio of Rome, whose historic I wil leaue for others to enlarge that have more leafure & bettet invention.



EDMVND THE TVVENTIE SIXTH KING OF THE WEST-SAXONS, AND

TWENTIE SEVENTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN: HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, DEATH, WIFE AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER XXXIX.

An.Do.940



THE STREET SEE SEE Downd the fifth fonne of King Edward, borne vnto him by Queene Edgina his third and last wife, at the age of nineteen yeeres fucceeded his brother King Ethelstan in his kingdome, and Monarchy: hee began EREREEEEEEEEEEEEEEE his raigne the yeare of the worlds faluation 040 and with great folemnity was

crowned at Kinelton vpon Thamelis, in the filth yeare of Otherhe first Emperour of that name, and his brother in law; his valour had often beene tried in the warres of King Ethelstan against those stout and flurdy enemics the Danes, Scotifb, Irifb, and Welfbmen, that often had affaied to difturbe his peace.

(2) Athelftan deceased, and the crowne scarse for wilmate; vpon King Edmunds head, but that the Danes in Northumberland, difliking fubication, called again Anlafe out of I reland to be their King; who now in the

Monarch 27

Wil Malmf.

(3) The next yeare of his raigne, the faid Anlase (whom some hold to have beenethe King of Norway) being dead, an other Anlafe, sonne to King Sithriek, of whom we have spoken, intruded vpon the Kingdom of Northumberland. These heads, as Hidras, springing vp each after others, drew King Edmundagaine into the North, who raging like a prouoked Lion, fubdued, as he went, those townes where the Danes kept, and got from them Lincolne, Leicester, Darbie, Stafford, and Nottingham, comhis Subjectes; fo that the Country was wholy his vnto Humber. These his proceedings caused Anlase which Humber. I neve his proceedings caused Aniaje and Reinold the fornes of the Danish Garmo, subduers of Torke, to yeeld themselues wholy to his deutoion, offering him subjection, and withall to receive the Christian faith; for performance wherof, they like-wife received Baptisme, vnto whom King Edmund was Godfather, to Reinold at his Confirmation, and to Aniase at the Font: but how soone they fell from An.Do.944 and fealty thus promifed, they fitted the Northumbrians to another rebellion, yet with no better fuc-

ceffe then defert; for they were forced into a perpetuall exile, and King Edmund adjoined that Coun-

HULLanbert.

(4) Cumberland also, which seldome was quiet. hauing beene a Kingdome entire of it selfe, and now aided by Leolin King of Southwales, he vtterly wasted: and apprehending the two sonnes of Dunmaile King of that Province commanded the eyes of those of uer-bold Princes to be puld out, and gaue their inheritance to Malcolme King of Scots, to hold the same by fealty from him. Thus by power and policie clearing those coasts whence the sharpest stormes had continually blowne, hee returned into the South, and there fet himfelfe to ordaine lawes for the good of his people, the which, left time the confumer of al things might chance to obliterate, were by the labours of the learned Lambert translated into Larine, and imprinted in the years 1768. next, to fhew his loue to God, and bounty to his Church, he gave the towne of Saint Edmondsbury with the liber-

try to his owne gouernment, without the admittance

of any Secondary or Vice-roy to rule there vnder

ties thereof, wholy to that Marryr, and to the Monks that lived in feruing at his Altars. (5) But as each thing hath his (pring, growth, & decay; fo all mentheir dates, howfocuer eminent in degree,& the shank of their Compas so set in a center

that the Circle of their lines are oftentime abrupt, before it be drawn to the full round: for so with others, we may fee in this Monarch, who being fafely returned from many great dangers of war, at peace in his Pallace,came to a lamentable & vnexpected end: for at his Manor of Pucle-kerkes in the County of Marienes. Gloucester, whiles hee interposed himselfe betweene his Sewer and one Leone to parta fray, was, with a thrust through the body, wounded to death the twenty fixt of May, in the yeare of our faluation 946. when hee had prosperously raigned the space of fine yeares and seven moneths, and his body, with no leffe forrow then folemnity, was buried at Glasenbu-

His Wife.

(6) Elfgine, the onely wife of King Edmund, hath not her parents declared (for ought I find) by any ofour Writers : but this is affirmed, that shee was married vnto him in the first yeare of his raigne, which was the yeare of Grace,940, and that she was his wife foure yeeres & vpward, after whose slaugh-ter she remained a mournfull widdow all the rest of her life, which she spent with so great vertue and opinion of the people, as by the writers of that age fhee is commended to posterity by the name of a

Hit Isu.
(7) Edmy, the eldest ionne of King Edmund, and Queene Elfgine his wife, was borne in the second yeare of his fathers raigne Anno 942. When his father died, hee was but foure yeeres of age, and in respect of his minority was not permitted to succeed him in the Kingdome, but forced to giue place to his vncle Edred, vnder whom he liued nine yeares; and in the tenth, his vncle being dead, and himfelfe then growne to the age of thirteene, was admitted to the

fuccession of the Monarchy.

(8) Edgar the second some of King Edmund, and Edgar. of Queen Elfgine, was borne in the third yeare of his fathers raigne, the yeere of Christ Iesus 943, and was but three yeeres old when his Father died not withstanding, he proued afterward a Prince of great expe-dation, and in the second yeare of King Edny his brothers raigne, being then but foureteene yeeres of age, he was chosen King by the Mercians and North age, ne was chosen Aing by the nersians and Northumbrians, both which people he gouerned under the title of King of Nersia, for the space of two yeeres befor his brothers death, and then succeeded him in the whole Monarchie,



EDRED

Chap.40. Edred THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch 28. EDRED THE TVVENTIE SEVENTH KING OF THE VVEST-SAX-Edred. Monarch 28 ONS, AND TWENTIE EIGHTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS ACTS. RAIGNE, AND ISSVE CHAPTER XL. Dred, the fixth sonne of ricus King in his stead (4) Edred awaked with the wasts that they made King Edward, borne vnto An.Do.946 prepared a journey into those parts, where with fire and sword hee bare downeall before him; and him by Queene Edgina his third and last wife, at albeit he was a man religiously bent, yet spared he the age of twenty three veeres fucceeded his bronorthe Abbey of Rippon from flames, but laid all ther King Edmund in the vnto after as he went, the enemy not daring to fnew nonage of his children in the face. In his returne suspecting no perill, sud-dainely an hoast brake out of Yorke, and fell vpon al his dominions, and was the Rere-ward of his Army, marching but carelefly, Some Date. the twenty feuenth King of the West-Saxons, and the twentie eight Monarch and broken out of their array, whereby many peri-fhed before any complete order of reliftance could of the Englishmen. He began his raigne in the yeere of Mans saluation 946. and was annointed, and be made. The King feeing this bold attempt of these Rebels, stroke downe his standard, turning his crowned at Kinglon vpon Thames in the County of Surrey vpon Suday the feuenteenth day of August by the hands of Otho Archbishop of Canterbury. face againe to the North, and threatened the reuenge, with the Countries spoile and their lines. (2) His Coronation robes fearfly put off; news was brought him that the Northumbrians had re-(5) In this plot of sedition wolftan Archbishop of Yorke had sowne some seed of treason, both in the uolted and firred a dangerous infurrection not withassistance of action, and counsell for the enterprise, standing the Coucnants that his brother Edmund very ill beseeming a man of his ranke: this Wo'fe therfore having thus awaked the Lion from rest, was had made with Malcolme King of the Scots to secure the onely man that fell in his pawes; for the Nor-thumbrians expulsing their statelesse Hericus with subthe same. Therfore lest delaies might proue dangerous, with a great Army hee entred into the verge of Scotland without fight of enemy, or any missiue teares and golden showers, so pacified the refiltance. But peace being concluded betwixt E-dred, Malcolme and the Northumbrians; yea and the King, that their offences were therewith cleane wafhed away: but hee good man (a Saint at the leaft) fame confirmed ftrongly by oath, yet was it little rewas mued up in prison (against whom accusations garded of the last named lurers; for no sooner was daily came, and namely, that he had commaunded fundry of the Burgesses of Thetford to bee slaine) Edred returned, but that they fent into Ireland for Anlafe, the sonne of Gurmo the Dane, who had been where hee abode till he was by Edred vpon a reueexpelled the Country as we have faid. rent regard of his calling, released from thence; for (3) Anlafe gathering a fleete and forces accordingly, came into Northumberland, where he was as this King is commended for his lenity towards the vertuous; so is he no lesse for his instice towards wit, Malms. the virious, and for the practife of his Religion, as with great joy received and made their King, which title hee maintained for foure yeeres continuance, banding against Edred, and still holding him play, till forward as any, suffering not onely his manners to be reproued and corrected, (a quality truely roiall, lastly the Northumbrians disloiall to both, took their and best beseeming Princes) but also (so much below feather out of Anlafe his plume, and lent him pack. the pitch of soueraigne Maiesty) his body to bee chastised at the will and direction of Dunstan Abbot ing to the place, whence he came, electing one He-SIL

of Glafenbury; vnto whose custody, he also committed the greatest part of his treasure and richest iewels to be lockt in his chefts, and under the keyes of this Monastery.

(6) The stately Abbey of Mich at Abington neere Oxford built by King Inas, but deftroyed by the Danes, he newly repaired, indowing it with lands & faire reuenewes, and confirmed the Charters with feales of gold: hee also ordained Saint Germans in Cornwal to be a Bishops See, which there continued till by Canatus it was annexed to the Episcopall See of Kyrton in Denon, both which Sees were afterward by King Edward the Confessor translated to the City of Exceller: but fith the brightest day hath his night, and the highest tide his present cobe, what maruaile is it, if then Edred in the middeft of his strength were seazed vpon by sicknesse and death, which furprifed him after hee had raigned in great honour nine yeeres and odde moneths, to the great gricfe of his Subjects, who folemnly interred him in the old Minster within the City of Winchester, the

yeere of Christ Iesus 955, whose bones with other Kings, to this day are preserved in a guilt Coffer, fixed vpon the wall in the south side of the Quier. His 18uc.

(7) Elfred, the fonne of King Edred, was borne Elfred. before his Father was King; neither find I mention of his Mother, or any act by him done; onely in the fixt yeare of King Edred his raigne, which was the to his Fathers graunt of lands in Wittenham, to Ethelwolfea Duke of England in those daies, as appeareth by the Charter thereof, bearing date in the yeere a-

(8) Bertfrid an other, and as it feemeth an elder zenfrid. fonne of King Edred, was borne before his father was King, withour any mention also of his Mother, who liuing in the second yeare of his fathers raigne, namely Anno, 948, was written for a witnesse in the fame years, to his grant of lands in Bedlaking, to Cuthred one of his Barons, the Charter whereof is extant to bee feene vnto this day.

for his ouer-bold reprehenitons; if not rather for retaining the treasure delinered him by King Edred, and demaunded againe in his sicknesse; when by I'il.Malmb. the voice (forfooth) of an Angell from heauen, his iourney was flaid, and those rich Iewels not delinered the King in his life; I will not fay kept backe, left Dunftan with Balaam (whose stories are nor much vnlike) should beethought to follow (as he did) the wages of deceit.

Abbet Dunften.

lader, er

Edgar.

(3) Howfoeuer, the reuerent opinion of the Monks fingle life, and the conceiued holines of Abbot Dunifan in those misty times, did daily counterpoize young Edwy in effective, which made his best acts construed, and recorded to the worst, insomuch that his Subjects minds, ebbing as the Sea from the full, drew backe the current of their fubicetine affections, and fet the eye of obedience youn Prince Fd. gar his Brother: and albeit his young yeeres may feeme to cleare him from the imputation of fo luftful a fact, as he is charged with, at the day of his affuming the Crowne; and the separation from his wife, (as too neere in confanguinity) wrought griefe enough in his diftreffed heart, yet pittilesse of his co ftate, and carcleffe of their owne allegiance, the Mercrans with the Northumbrians did veterly cast off obedience, and sweare their fealty to Edgar, not fully

foureteeneyeers aged: Eding then raigning in a fell 1 Christie. decaying effect, was held of luch his tubicits, in no better effeeme, then was Iekoram of Indeh, . ho is faid to have lined without being defired; for very griefe whereof after foure yeares raigne hee ended his life, the yeare of our Lord 959; whose body was buried in the Church of the new Abbey of Hide at 19 inchester, erected without the Wail in the North of that City.

His Wife.

(4) Elfgine, the wife of King Edwy, was a Lady of great beauty, and nobly descended, yea, and by some deemed somewhat too neare in the bloud rotall, to bee matched with him in spoulall bed : her fathers' name is not recorded, but her mother was Ethelpine. whom some scandalized to have been his Concubine, and the onely causer of Dunstans banishment. The tubiects difliking of this vnlawfull marriage, & further infligned by the Monkes, (whose banco Joseppen rous pleasures, or displeasures could very much fway the state in those daies,) failed by degrees to performe their duties to their King, and her they likewise enforced to a separation, in the third yeere of his regardleffe gouernment, and of Christ Lifes, 958, without other mention of her life or death.

Monarch 30



EDVVY THE TVVENTIE EIGHTH KING OF THE WEST-SAXONS, AND

TWENTIE NINTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN: HIS RAIGNE, ACTS. AND DEATH.





CHAPTER XLI.

An.Do.ors

Edwyes finne

Edwy.



STREET STREET Day, the cideft fonne of King Edmund, after the deccale of his vncle Edred, succeeded him in his dominions, and was the twentie eighth King of the Well-Saxons, and the twentie ninth Monarch of the

BEERE BESS Englishmen: he began his raigne in the yeare of the worlds faluation, 955, and was annointed & crowned at Kingflon vpon Thame-fis, by the hands of Otho the 22. Archbilhop of Can-

(2) Yong hee was in yeares, and vitious of life, if the Monkish Story-writers of those times his deadly enemies may be credited, not past thir-

teene when he entred gouernment, and that begun with a capitall finne: for they report, that vpon the folemne day of his Coronarion, and infight of his Nobles, as they fare in Counfell, with shamelesse and vnprincelike lust, he abused a Lady of great estate. & his neere kinfwoman, whose husband shortly after he slew, the more freely to possesse his incestuous pleasure : and to fill the pennes of his further infamy ready to their hands, that wrote his life, hee was a great enemy vnto the Monkish orders (a fore in those dayes very tender to be touched, and may well be thought the cause of many false aspersions on him,) whom from the Monastery of Malmsbury Gl. senbury and others, hee expelled, placing mar-ried Priests in their roomes: Dunstan likewise the Abbot Saint of Glasenbury hee banished the Realm,

EDGAR SVRNAMED THE PEACEABLE THE THIRTIETH

MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, WIVES AND ISSVE.





CHAPTER XLII,

An.Do.959



Dgar, the second son of King Edmund having raigned two yeares ouer the Mercians and Northumbreans, in the daves of Edney his Brother, to the great impairing of King Edwies reputation and effeeme; after his death at fixeteen

yeares of age was chosen to fucceed in all his dominions, and was the thirtieth

Monarch of the Englishmen, or rather now of whole England, all other titles of Kingdomes falling vnder his scepter, and becomming Provinces annexed vnto his absolute Monarchie.

(2) He beganne his raigne in the veere of Christs Natiuity, 959. and was crowned (as some write) the same yeare at King stop, vpon Thamesis, by Otho Archbishop of Canterbury. But Randulphus Higden in his Polychronicon, referreth it to the twelfth yeere of his raigne: William Monke of Malmesbury to the thirtieth yeare of his age, and the Saxon Chronicle

Virgine and daughter to a Westerne Duke, excee- with a daughtl.

Chap. 42. Edgar Erhelmeld.

THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch 30. dingly praised for her incomparable beauty, the ordgarus the Duke: but Ethelwold mistrusting the cause of his comming, thought by one policy to touch of which string from his eare resounded to his touch of which irring from his sear resonance to his heart, and as a bair it drew him prefently into those parts; where comming to Andeuer, commanded the damfell to his bed: The mother tender of the disappoint another; and therefore reucaling the truth to his wife, how in his proceedings hee had wronged her beauty, and deceived his Soueraigne, requested her louing assistance to saue now his en-Virgins honour, brought in the darke her maid, but nother daughter, who, all as well pleased the King in his finnefull dalliance: the day approching this late laid maid made hast to arise; but the King loth dangered life, which lay in her power, and of the meanes he thus aduised ; Like as (faid he)the richest Diamond rough and to part yet with his supposed faire Lady, demanded vncut, yeelds neither sparkle nor esteeme of great why fhe made fuch hast? who answered him, that price, nor the gold vaburnished giues better luher taske was great, and hardly would her worke be done, if day should preuent her ere she rose; but "ftre then the base brasse; so beauty and feature clad in meane aray, is either sleightly looked at yet being staied aboue her howre, vpon her knees she with an vnfixed eye, or is wholy vnregarded, and held of no worth; for, according to the Prouerbe, made this humble request, that shee might be freed from her shrewde dame, alleadging, it was not fitting, that the woman who had tasted the pleasures 'cloth is the man, and man is the wretch: then to present the thing that I feare, and is likely to proud of a Kings embracements, should endure a seruimy present ruine, and thy last wracke, conceale thy tude under the rule of any other. The King perceit great beauty from King Edgars eye, and give him entertainement in the meanest attires: let them uing the deceit, and therewith moued to wrath, yet could not recall what hee had done (or rather vn-(I pray thee) for a time bee the nightly curtaines done) and therefore turned his conceined wrongs drawne about our new-Nuptiall bed, and the day vnto a iest; but so, that hee both sharpely checked 'ly cloudes to hide thy splendent Sunne from his "fharpe, and too too piercing fight, whose vigour & "raies will soone set his waxen wings on fire, that the deceiver, and kept this damfell, (whose nightworke and pleasance had fully wonne him) for his Concubine, whereby she ruled them that lately had ready are to melt at a farre fofter heat . Pitch(thou the command of her; and to vie the words of Malmsfeeft) defileth the hand, and we are forbid to gine bury, he loued this Concubine most entirely, keeoccasion of enill: vaile then thy fairenesse with ping true faith of his bed to her alone, vntill the time he married for his lawful wife Elfrida the daughthe scarfes of deformity, from his ouer-lauish and "nmakered eye; for the faireft face drawes euer "the gaze, if not the attempts, and natures endow ments, areas the bush for the wine, which being immoderately taken doth furfet the sense and is a sense and the sense and is a sense at the sense at ter of Duke Ordgarus.
(14) His laft lafeiuious Act, was as Danids iovned with bloud, and wrought in manner as followeth. Fames lauish report of beauteous Elfrida (the paragon "gaine caft up with as loathing a taft. Of these dregs drunke Ammon after his fill of faire Thamm; Herod of Mirami, & Ame, a of Dido; yea, and not to seeke of her fexe, and wonder of Nature) the only daughor ner iexe, and wonder or nature) the only daugh-ter of Ordgarus Duke of Denonfoire, founded to lowd in those Westerne parts, that the Eccho thereof was heard into King Edgars Court, and entred his eares, examples farre off, King Edgars variation in his vn-"fledfaft motion doth eafily bewray it felfe: for could either holy Wolfhild, beautifull Ethelfled, or which euer lay open, to giue his eyes the scope of defire, and his wanton thoughts the raines of will: to the wanton Wench of Andeuer, keepe the needle trie the truth whereof, hee fecretly fent his minion or fauourite Earle Ethelmold of East anglia, who well "of his compasse certaine at one point nothing lesse," but it was still led by the load-stone of his ever could judge of beauty, and knew the diet of the King; with Commission, that if the Pearle proued mutable and turning affections. But thou wilt fay, hee is religious, and by founding of Mo-nafteries hath expiated those sinnes. Indeed mafo orient, it should bee seized for Edgars owne weany are built; for which time and posterities must ring, who ment to make her his Queene, and ordgares the Father of a King. thanke holy Dunstan, from whose devotion those Ethelwold a iolly young Gallant, posted into De-nonshire, and guest-wise visited Duke Ordgarus his "good deed haue forung: but is thy person holi-er then sacred Wolfbilds; thy birth and beauty grea-ter then Eskeljtes the White, daughter also to a Duke? Court, where feeing the Lady furpassing the report, blamed Fames oner-fight for founding her praise in the former, of an holy Votary, hee made the finke of his pollution; and the later is branded to all ages, by the hatefull name of a Concubine, and her so base and leaden a Trumpet; and wholy surprito bate and teauer a trumper; and wholy furpri-fed with her loue, himfelfe beganne to wooe the Virgin, yea, and with her Fathers good liking, fo as the King would gue his affent. Earle Ethelwold refonne among vs efteemed for a Baftard, Thefe should bee motiues to all beauteous and verturning, related that the maide indeed was faire; but tuous Ladies, not to fell their honours at fo low yet her beauty much augmented by babling reports, and neither her feature or parts any wife befitting a and too-late repented a price. Neither think (liweet Counteffe) that thy husband is icalous, or suspects King. Edgar mistrusting no corrivall in his love thy conftancy, which I know is great, and thy felfe "wholy complete with all honourable vertues: but
"yet confider I pray thee, that thou are but young, &
"maift eafily be caught, especially of him that is so
"old a Master of the game; neither persivade thy
"City of the complete with the service of the complete the nor dreaming false fellowship in wooing, did with a height thought passe ouer Espride, and pitch his af-fections the safter another way. Earle Ethelwold fol-lowing the game now a foot, desired Edgars assistance to bring it to a stand, pretending not so much for "felfe of such firength, as is able to hold out so great an assault; for men are mighty, but a King is any liking to the Lady, as to raise his owne fortunes to be her fathers heire, to which the King yeelded, much more. I know thou art wife, and enough and for his minion folicited Ordgarus, who glad to be fhrowded vnder the fauours of fuch a fauourite, wilhath been faid, onely let mee adde this that evil beginnings have never good ends: and so with a kind kisse, hoping bee had wonne his Wife to his lingly confented and his daughters deftinies affured to Earle Ethelwold. Will, prepared with the first to welcome King The marriage folemnized, and the fruits thereof a Lady Elfrida thus left to her felfe, began feriously to thinke vpon this Curtaine Sermon, whose text she fhort time enjoyed; the fame of her beauty beganne againe to bee spread, and that with a larger Epi thite then formerly it had beene: Whereupon Ed-gar much doubting of double dealing, laid his angle distasted, being taken out of an ouer-worne and threed-bare cloth prouerbe, as though her fortunes had been wholly reliding, and altogether confifting faire to take this great gull; and bearing no fhew of wrong or suspect, inuited himselfe to hunt in his in her parentage and apparell, but nothing at all in Parks, and forthwith repairing into those parts, did not a little grace his old servant, to the great ioy of any parts of her felfe. Hath my beauty (thought fhe) been courted of alfilds along

EDWARD

Chap.43 Edward Edward. An.Do.975

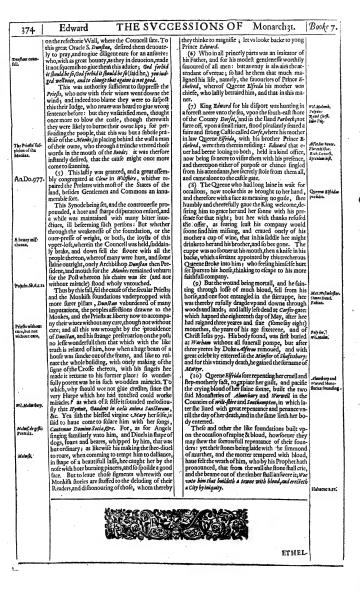
THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch at. EDVVARDSVRNAMEDTHE MARTYR THE THIRTIE ONE MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS RAIGNE, AND DEATH CHAPTER XLIII. which men thought to bee fignes from heauen, Reat were the troubles & fent from God, for the finnes committed against the fidings that prefently en-fued the death of King Edmarried Clergy, whose cause was much pittied, especially of the Nobles, & whose complaints of wrongs gar, about the election of cally of the Problems, who is a companied on the problems of t one of his fons to fucceed; Queene Elfrida with Alferm Duke of Mercia, and many other Nobles combined for young Ethelred, vs to doc, as wee would be done vnto: whereto the Victo doc, as weewolk be done vinto: whereto the Monker antivered, that Chrift repfeed neither the perion not place, but onely them that took wy the Croffe of Penance and followed him, as themelies in their fingle life presended to doe. But they good men little knew the incumbrances of winings, for otherwise they would have felt, that the condition of the married way. difauowing Prince Edward as illegitimate, and therfore not reputable for fuc-cession: against them and Ethelred stood Dunssan and the Monkes, holding their fattes dangerous,& their new-gotten footing valure, if in the nonage of the King, these their opposites should rule all vader him; whereas Edward was altogether wrought in their mould; whole title they abetted, as being lawfully the married, was more truly a fuffering of the Croffe, and enduring of Penance. borne, and begot in the nuptiall bed of Queene Ethelfleda. Their claimes thus banded among these Statef-men, began to be diverfly affected among the Commons, and had put the game to the hazard, if the wifedome of Dunffan had not seene to the chase; for a Councell being affembled to argue their rights the Archbishop came in with his banner and crosse. and not flaying for further debating de iure, did de facto, present Prince Edward for their lawfull King;

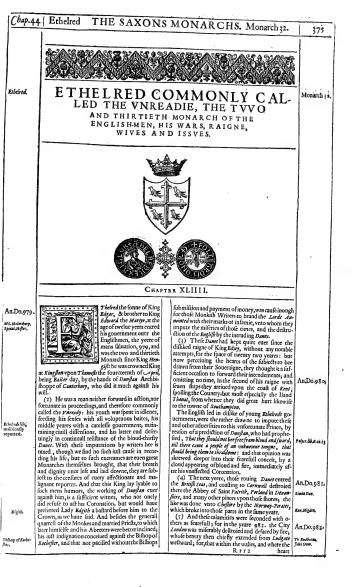
and the affembly confifting most of Clergy-men, per-fwading peace, drew the approbation of the rest, and fo was the Prince admitted and proclaimed their So-

(2) He beganne hisraigne at twelue yeares of age, in the yeare of Saluation 975, and was soone after by Archilhop Dunflar crowned King at Kingfun yon Thumesti: being the thirtie one Monarch (fince Hengift) of the Englishmen. His beginning was mi-ferably afficted with barrennesse of the ground, famine amongst his people, morraine of cattle, and to their further terrour, a fearefull Comet appeared:

(3) These Church men thus divided and rent. were diverfly fided as affection did move, and that not onely of the meaner fort, but even of the Nobles & great Ones; for the Mercian Duke Alferus fauouring the iust cause of married Priests, destroied the Monasteries in his Prouince, cast our the Monkes, and restored agains the ancient reuenewes to them & their wives: contrariwile, in East-Anglia the Priests went to wracke, where the Monks were maintained by the authority of Edelwin their Duke, who in their quarrell, with the assistance of his brother Alfred. and of Brightnoth Earle of Effex, raifed a mighty ArMonarch 21

my, and flood with that power for their defence. (4) The fire thus blown from a sparke to a flame was feared to mount higher, if not quenched in time. and therefore by mediation, armes laid aside, the cause was referred to be heard in Councel, & at Winchefter first the assembly washeld, where after long dispute, and much against the Monkes, it was greatly fuspected their fide had gone down, but that the matter was referred from them to the Roode, placed vp-





376	Ethelred THE SVCC	ESSIONS OF Monarch 32.	Book. 7.	Ì		(bap.44	Ethelred THE SAXONS	MONARCHS. Monarch 32.	
	heart of the City is now, was then neither beautiful,	payment of fixteene thousand pounds: for confir-		ţ		2.	Commons of their content, and the Soueraigne of		377
}	nor orderly built; what time also raged a sicknesse	mation whereof, Ethelred lent to Southampton for An-		i e		i	his wonted respect and observance.	where landing his men, hee made spoile of all b	C-1
	till then vnknowne in England, which was a strong	laf these Norwegians King, andhonourably enter-		1		i	(15) The Danes thus prevailing, did not a little	fore him, and comming to Norwich facked the C	i- Norwich raced.
Pelychron.lib.6.	burning feuer, and bloody fluxe, as alfo carfity of	tained him at Andeuer, where the same time he re- ceived Baptisme, King Eshelred taking him at the		1		ł	Plory in their forming and ariound the same and a	ty, with great flaughter of the Citizens, then tool	
cap. 13.	victuals, and murraine among cattle. This hand of God thus correcting the finnes of all, was received	Font for his God-fonne, and with great gifts returned	Matt.Weft; Semon Dun.	}		Į.	whose service they emploied to care and till the ground, whilest themselves sare idle, & eate the fruit	he Thetford, and set it on fire, notwithslanding he had entred a truce with them: but for want of v	
	as fent for the offence's of some few, and wholly	into Denmarke without any further harme done to		1			ground, whilest themselves sate idle, & eate the fruit	ctuall which then was fearfe in the land, he returne	
	imputed to the King and his Railers; Dunstan	the English.		ł		1	1 of their paines, abuiling the wines and daughters of		
	ftill prophelying further woesto the land, when	(10) But God and deftiny fuffering it , (that		1		Heller Boetlus.		(19 Where making preparation for another expedition, encreased his Nauic and number of men	
1	still prophelying further woes to the land, when himselfe should be dead.	would have the Saxons to fall before the Danes, as-		l .		HEHAT SHEMES,	feare and reuerence were called the Lord-Danes, (which afterwards becam a word of derision to such	pedition, encreased his Natic and number of men	. Henry Heat.
l	(6) The Dave hereupon more holdly affaulted	formerly the Britainer had done before them) no co-		I .		1	flurdy and lazy lozels) fo that the like daies of miferie		
PIL MAURIDITY	each shore, and in so many places at once, that the	uenant could be so surely made, but was as slackly				1	the land neuer felt. To redreffe which, the carefull		
Atas. Wifiminfler	English were to leeke, where hrit to withit and . In	in the performed; for albeit this Anlaf honourably		1		1	King Ethelred was farre too weake and therfore inten-		
Simos Durte	the West they were encountred by Gods Earle of	kept both faith and promise, yet others of his Coun-		1		1	ding to doe that by policy, which he could not by	Forces roued from coaft to coaft, euer carrying to their fhips their bootles and prayes, and to encreal the colorate of the co	2
An.Do.989.	Deuonfbire, as faith Simon Dunelmenft, by whom they were ouerthrowne, though with the loffe of his life,	try continued their inualions, and as an other Hydra faewed their ftill-renining heads,				Ethelreds bad policie.	ding to doe that by policy, which he could not by strength, he deuised a desperate stratagem that pro-	the calamirie, the harueft was neglected, and in ma	ç I
	as also of Stermpolda man of great efteeme and va-	(11) For the nineteenth yeare of King Ethelreds	An.Do.007.	1		policie,	ued the dettruction of the Saxons royall bloud, and	Iny places ipoiled, both for the want of labourers &	ا ا
1	lour in those parts, who served there vnderhim.	most troublesome raigne, and of our saluation 997.		1 4			conquest of the land to another nation.	by the feet of the fouldiers which lay in field a	1
	(7) In the East their leaders Iustine and Guth-	the Danes with a great fleete failed about Cornwall,		i .		ł	(16) For feeking to disburden the Realme of	that leafon, who from place to place transited at	äl I
An.Do.991.	mond warred with better successe; for at Malden	and came into the mouth of Severn, robbing, as they	,	i		ł	these denouring Danes, which by open force hee	though in vaine-	1 1
l	in Effex they gave Brightnod the Earle, a great and	went, Deuonshire, Cornwal, and South-Wales: and mar-		1		t	could no waies doe; he attempted in a bloudy maf- facre to destroy them, giving a secret commission vn-	. Towards the Winter the Danes tooke into the Il	C The Deserinthe
ł	bloody battaile, wherein himselte with most of his	ching further into the Continent, confumed Lydford,		1		Palum 'E & save	to enery City within his dominions that at an an	of Wight, and in the deepest time thereof, passe	d lieut milet.
	people were flaine. The Danes thus prospering,	and the Abby of Saint Ordulfes at Effing flocke, thence		1		Pelyer. li.6.ta.19. The maffacre of	to enery City within his dominions, that at an ap- pointed time they should fet vpon, and kill all the	through Hampfbire, into Barkefbire, vnto Reading	5] [
1	more boldly went forward; and where they fet	passing through Dersetsbire with fire & Iword, found				the Danes .	Danes; the day was the thirteenth of Nonember.	Wallingford, Colefey, and Essington, making clean work whereloeuer they came; for that which they could	e l
1	their tallants, there they held fast, and lay on the	not a man in the way to relift them, and wintering in	An Do	I .		I	being the feltiuall of S. Briefus, the yeare of Christ	not carry they confumed with fire, with triumpho	:1
l	land like vnto Grashoppers. These euils King E- theired could not redresse, his strengthes being small,	the wight lined by spoiles gotten in Hampsbire and Suffex.	AII.1/0.998.	1 1	•	1	lefus 1002, and prefently after his marriage with	cuer returning to their thins	
1	and his fubiects affections leffe; therefore calling	(12) The news Coning show mustines at a mount	An Dages			Horry Hunting.	Emma, the flower of Normandy; in confidence of	(20) The King lying in Shrewsbury, ynable to re	Andread
1	to Counsell his Statesmen & Peeres, demanded their	(12) The next Spring they put into the mouth of Thamesis, and so by the river Medway arrived at	21HD0.999.				which affinity, hee prefumed to do what he did. His	(20) The King lying in Shrewsbury, vnable to re fift, called to him his Councell, to consult what wa	s 2311.10.10074
i	aduice what was best to bee done. Some few of these	Rechefter : thither the Kentifb with their ftrengthes		l .		1	commaund was accordingly performed, and with fuch rigour, that in Oxford the fearefull Danes	beit to bee done: whereof Edrik was a principall	1 1
1	proffered the King their affiftance, but more of them	repaired, but unfortunately fought, and left the field		1		1	for refuge tooke into the Church of S. Fridefund, as	and in io high effeeme with the King, that he crea	
	perswaded vnto a composition, whereof Sirieius	to the Danes, who fhortly after hoifed their failes, &		į.		l	into a Sanctuary of venerable antiquity and priui-	I ted him Duke of Mercia, and cane him his daughter	- Sdrick an vntrufty
Malmfb,de gtft. Pontif,L1,	Archbilhop of Caterbury was chiefe; and in fine,	with a merry gale arrived in Normandy.	A D	1		Math. mft.	ledge among ancient Kings; but they in fury regar-	Egithin marriage: notwithflanding, these gluts of	F Comment
Polycy.lib, 6.cs.13.	Archbishop of Caterbury was chiefe; and in fine, ten thousand pounds paid to the Danes for their departure.	(13) King Ethelred thus rid of their his vnlooked	MILD. 1000.	1		MATID. Profit.	ding neither place nor person, set the Church on fire,	fauours wrought onely the difgestion of falshood in him, who could task nothing valesse it was saused	1
ŀ				1		Regifier of S	wherein were burned a great fort of those Danes with	with treason. This man, then the Kings onely	!! !
ł	(8) This golden Mine once entred, was more ea- gerly digged into, by these still-thirsting Danes, who	Cumberland, whither hee repaired, and with fore warre wasted the Country, before whose sword	l	1		Register of S. Fridejwides.	many rich ornaments, and the Library thereof vtter-	chitophel, perswaded him to pay thirty thousand	lean na
l	finding the branch so beneficiall at first, hoped the	the Dane's were notable to ftand; which somewhat	l	[Malmio.	ly defaced. At which time (if Malmshury (au true)	pounds to the Danes for their peace, whereof no	James Date,
i	veine in following, would proue farre more boun-	encouraged the fairire of his people and berroral		1 -			King Ethelred himself was in that City, and had sum-	pounds to the Danes for their peace, whereof no doubt some fell into his owne Coffers.	
1	tifull, and therefore regardlesse of promise, the	encouraged the spirits of his people, and bettered their conceits towardes him: but farrethis sunne	1	1		1	moned a Parliament both of Danes and English, with	(21) This intollerable impolition extorted of the	: 1
An Do see	a real regions are a managed them follows against for Warter !	past not without a cloud, nor was his successe entailde	ł				which euen the King was much grieued: and there- fore at his very great cost beautifully repaired the	Subjects especially at that time when the land was	: 1
An.Do.992.	and with a great fleete dispatched to sea: the newes	to be fortunate.	i	1		1	Church, and all the loffes accruing by the fire, en-	least able, made many suspect great matters against	t
Wil, Malusburg.	whereof strucke such terror into the English hearts,	(14) For the next yeare, those Danes that depar-	1	1			dowing it with large printledges and donarions, as	Edrik, and some did not feare to accuse him to his face, to bee the onely causer of this payment; char-	5
i	that despairing of hope, they accounted themselues the bond-slaues of milery: The King therfore with	ted from Kent, came now from Normandy with their	1	l l		Hibel/edsCharter		ging him as ouer-affectionated to the Danes, and to	:
	the bond-flaues of milery: The King therfore with	full failes, and landing in Exmouth, their first and	Į	1			tenour of that Danilh flaughter.	haue bewrated the Kings fecrets and defigues were	1 retainable to to a
	much adoe prepared a Nauie, whereof hee made Elfrick Earle of Mercia Admirall, who fetting from	greatest fury was against the City of Exceter, which	1	ł			In this maffacre, Lady Gunheld, fifter to Swaine	them: but he leated in the heart of his Souteraigne	
Flfrick Barle of	London varothe feas, had power fufficient to put	when they fiercely belieged, they were so valiantly beaten by the Citizens, as that enraged about mea-	Roger House, Assal, persprier.	1		l	King of Demmarke, a great and continual friend to	rubd off this Itaine with a few fawnings, and a faire	
meria.	backe the enemy: but hee once a traitor could ne-	fure with the ignominy of that repulfe, they thence	Aunai pars prier.				the Englifb, with her husband and sonne, together	linew, being a man in wit lubtle, in freech elonnene	His fubriley.
1	uer prouetrue; for having been banished, forgi-	as a fodgine floud bare downe all that flood in their		1			were flaughtered, although she lay in hostage vpon	and for riches inferiour to none, (aftone that could	
i	uen, and now taken into fauour, found meanes to	way;and then plainely beganne to appeare the rife of	1	Į.			conditions of peace, whose husbands name was Palin- gus (saith Malmsbury) an Earle of great might, & both	turne euen great ftreames aside) so that these sup-	- 1
	bee false, and to betray his charge; and sending the	the Danes, which enery where lorded it. where they	l	ł			of them Christians,	posals of treasons (as proceeding from enuy to him	1
	enemy intelligence of his power and intents gaue the	had to doe and the fall of the Saxons, whose over-	l	1.			(17) Newes brought into Denmarke of this fud-	for his good services) wanne him greater trust, and sent he was Ambassador to the Danes to mediate	1 1
1	way to their escape; and another fleete of Danes en-	topped Monarchy, and weake walles now wanted	l	1		Hes Husting.	daine ftratagem, no neede there was to vrge them to	for peace: where reuealing the weakenes of the	
1	countring with the Kings, at first hee fainedly and	props to hold up the weight; for the Captains of the	I	1		Simon Dan.	reuenge, or to adde more fuell vnto that ouer kindled	I land, and the teares which the Findilly conceived of	
l	faintly fought againft; and laftly, turned to their fide; through which treason many Englishmen died.	English (laith Higden) wanting lore in deeds of Arms.	l	1		King Sweiter	fire; for preparation being made, the yeere enfuing,	conquest, treacherously disswaded them from giuing	His treachery.
	and the Kings Fleete and power was greatly weake-	their direction neuer professed; if ships were made	l	1		inuation.	Swain with a great Nauy landed in the well, spoiled	eare to any motiues of Truce.	1 1
	ned; but he escaping due punishment himselfe, left	they neuer sped well, but were either chased of the enemy, or destroiced by tempest; if the Nobles c-	l		•	An.D.1003.	the Country, and gaue affault to the City of Exceter,	(22) The State of the land thus flanding, or ra-	An.D.10081
1	his some to answere the fault, whose eyes King Ethel-	ueraffembled to confult of the State, that time was	1			1111.1005.	which by the trechery of one Hugh a Norman (whom	ther hanging at fulpence. King Ethelred game order	An. Reg. 20:
1	red caused to be put out.	rather spent in whetting the spleene each against o-	ĺ			1	in the fauour of the Queen, King Ethelred had made Gouernour of that City) he razed and leuelled with	that out of every three hundred and ten hides of	1 1
An Don-	(9) About which time also another Danish Fleet	ther, then jointly agreeing how to redreffe their pre-	l				the ground, all along from the Eafigate to the West.	land a fhippe should bee built, and of euery eight	1
An.Do.993.	entring Humber, wasted the countries of Yorkeshire	fent danger, or to repreffe the common enemy; for	I	1			This treason and firres great of themselves, but	hides a complete Armour furnished. These mee-	Henry Hunting.
Simon Dan.	and Lyndfey: against these King Ethelred sent his	most of the Nobles were allianced into the Daville	Higden.				made much more rufull in the relating, caused Ethel-	ting at Sandwish, and furnished with fouldiers, made shew of such resistance, as had not beene seene, al-	Simas Dun,
Polyder.	power, vnder the charge of three valiant but treche-	bloud, whereby not onely the fecret of those con-	Casten	1			red presently to muster his men; ouer whom hee	though the event was nothing but a flow For Wil-	1
Dealer of	rous Captaines, namely, Frena, Godwin and Frede-	fultations were renealed, but being imploied in fer-		1		Earle Edrick for his ausrice fur-	made Earle Edrik for his couetouines furnamed Stre-	mot a Noble man of Suffex (banished for some of-	
1	gift; for the battle but begun, these with their fol-	uice, many of them revolted to the enemy. The			3	his ausrice for- named Stresse.	ton) his Generall, who bare a braue flew till it came	fence by King Ethibred) with rwenty Sailes round	Matth.Weft;
1	lowers fled away, which was the occasion of a great	Clergy as backward as any, denied the King their	The Clergies co-	-1	•		to the push and day of battle: but then to couer l	vpon the coaits and by Piracy did much hurr among	
1	ouerthrow of the English; notwithstanding the country people not able to disgeft their intollerable dea-	assistance, pleading their exemptions from warre,	netoffuene	1	•		his treason, he fained himselfe sicke, and left his soul-	the English Marchants: wherefore Reithelle he hen	
1	lings, fell vpon the Daner, flew some, and chased the	and priviledge of the Church, when the land lay	1	1		i	diers to shift as they could. The Danes hereupon	ther of Edrikto winne himfelfe honour and al-	
A Florre of Dane	I reft. At what rime also other of the Doner with	bleeding and deploring for helpe, and scandalized all his other proceedings for demaunding their aide:	1	1 .		1	rifled Wilton, and passing forward tooke Salisburie in their way, to which they were as welcome as wa-	Kings confent to purfue this grand-Pirate, with fourescore saile of the foresaid ships, threatning to	1
on the Thames	ninety foure ships sailed up the river Thamesis, and	to these were ioined scarsity, hunger and robberies.	l	1		1	their way, to which they were as welcome as wa-	bring in Welfard sist or dead or dist, threatning to	1
on the Thames befiege London	" laid their liege against Landon gining it a great of	These miseries caused the summes of their compo-	l'				ter into thips; but hearing that the King himselfe in person was preparing to give them battle, they	heing forced under a faire wind a violence and	Britbrick(chalitte
1	lault; but the Citizens thereof fo manfully defen-	fitions to bee augmented, whose last was fixteene	i	1	•	Ī	left the land, and tooke againe to lea.	fodainely arofe, and outragloufly drough is hippes	by tempest.
1	ided themicines, that they chaird the Daws thence	thousand, now twenty thousand, immediately twen-	i	I			(18) The next yeare following, (which was the	vpon shore, where distressed and torne, their bea-	
1	to their shame and great losse; yet fell they so fonle	ty four then thirty and laftly forty thousand pounds.	l	1		An.D.1004.	twenty foure of King Ethelreds raigne, and of grace,	ten huis lay vnable to recover themselves or the	.) 1
1	vpon E/ex, Kent, Su/ex, and Hampitere, that the	vntill the land was emptied of all the coine + the	1	1		Simon Dan.	one thousand and fourc. King Swaine with a mighty	Sea: Wilmot taking advantage of this prefent mithan.	. 1
1	King was enforced to compound a peace, with the	Kingdome of her glory; the Nobles of courage; the	The effects of it.				fleete of thips arrived vpon the coasts of Norffolke,	Sea: Wilmot taking advantage of this prefere mishap, fell fiercely upon them, and after much slaughter of	ř <i> </i> -
·		Com-		3	•	,		rheb	
				•					·

Chap.44 Ethelred THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch 32. to feare the losse of our Kingdom, and you the mighty hoft entered Lyndfey, where hee burnt all extinct of the English nations renowne; therefore ile is chaled be the Country, and put the inhabitants to the fword. feeing the enemies areat hand, and their hands at Canute not able to refift this puiffant Army, held our throats; let vs by forefight and counfell faue the fea more fafe for him then the land, and enour owne liues, or elfe by courage fheath our tring Humber, failed to Sanawich, where being fore words in their bowels: cither of which I am wilgricued at the mileries of these his confederates, reling to enter into, to secure our estate and nation quited King Ethelreds friends with the like, and from an irrecouerable ruine. commaunded that those pledges which had beene (31) This lamentable Oration deliucred from deliuered by the Nobles vnto his Father, should the passions of a inftly-pensine King, touched the hearers to the heartes, and asmuch distracted their haue their notes flit, and their hands cut off: which cruelty acted, hee failed to Denmarke, as hopeafflicted minds; to abide battaile they faw it was leffe of any good iffue in England. bootlesse, the treason of their leaders so many times (35) But Turkil the Dane, retained (as we faid) defeating their victories, to yeeld themselves to the into King Ethelreds pay, seeing successe so sodainely enemy, would but beginne their feruitude and milealtered, fore repented him of his repolt from the Tarkil inciteth Danes , and knowing now the time to recour his England. ry, and to flee before them, their eternall ignominy reputation, with nine of his shippes sailed into and reproch. Denmarke, instantly importuning Canut to addresse againe for England; alleadging the feares and weak-Thus their opinions were canualed, but nothing put in practife, whereas meane whiles the Danes went forward with victories, and had got the most nesse of the people, the beauty and fertility of the part of the land, yea and London also by submission, land, an Eden, in respect of their owne barren seat, wherewith vnfortunate Ethelred more and more deand (which did most moue) himselfe would assist, iected, fent his wife Emma with his two fonnes by when the English least thought it: with these and her, vnto her brother Richard Dake of Normandy, the like hee spurred him on, who of himselfe was and for his owne fafest refuge committed himselfe forward in a full curriere. An.D. 1014. vnto Turks/the Dane, in whose shippes he remained Canutus therefore with the aide of his brother a while at Greenewich, and from thence went into the Harrold, rigged forth a Nauie of two hundred faile, ali furnished with souldiers and abiliments of warre; Isle of Wight, where he abode most part of the win-Constitution his ter, and thence failed into Normandy to his wife and whole terror landed in England before him, and his brother, leaving the Danes lording it in his rea me. power by report made greater then it was; and to (32) These were the daics of Englands mourencrease the terrour of this fearefull enemy, the sea ning, shee being vnable to maintaine her defenwith a spring-tide brake into this land, and destroyders, and yet enforced to nourish and cherish her deed both townes and many inhabitants;a figne fore-Swaine and Turnourers: for the Danes in two factions most cruelly flewing (as was thought) the fucceffe of that fleete, afflicted the land like two milftones crushing & grinborne hitherward vpon those water, and to encrease ding the grain, Swarn as an absolute King, extorted of the English miseries, thirty thousand pound was the English both victuals and pay for his fouldiers: then collected by way of Tribute to pay the Danill auxiliary Nauy lying before Greenewich. The States also convening in a grand Councell at Oxford to lifb, commanded the like for his ships and men; lo that the Danes had all, and the English maintained al. determine upon the great affaires of the Kingdom, Neither were churches free from their spoils, (whom were divided into factions, and two Noblemen of other Conquerors have held most impious to viothe Danes there murthered by practife of Edrick the Traitor. These(I say) were accounted ominous late,) but either suffered the flames of their consuming fire,or were forced to purchase their standings amongst the English, that made each mole-hill to with great fummes of money. Such composition feeme a mountaine, and every fluadow the flew of an King Swaine demaunded for the preferuation of S Edmunds Monastery in Suffolke; which because the (36) In the meane while Canutus had landed at Inhabitants refused to pay, he threatned spoile both to the place, & to the Martyrs bones there enterred; Sandwich, and given a great ouerthrow to the Eng-Henry Hant, Mat Well mittyl et a Simon Dienel. lifb; entred Kent, and by his fword had made way through the Countries of Derfet, Sommerfet, and in the midst of which iollity (faith Houeden) he sudpars prior. Fabran Cronpar dainely cried out that he was strucke by S. Edmund with a fword, being then in the midft of his No-Ethelred lying dangerously sicke at Costam, the ma-6. ceo 100. Polychron lib.6. bles, and no man feeing from whose hand it came; raging of thele warres was transferred to Prince and so with great horrour and torment, three daies Edmund his sonne, who preparing to meete the after voon the third of February ended his life at enemie with his Army in the field, had fodainely notice that Edrik his brother in law ment to betray Thetford (others fay at Gainsborough:) but with his death died not the title of the Danes, who immehim into his enemies hands; which newes ftrucke diately advanced Canutus his sonne for their King.
(35) The English that liked nothing lesse then great aftonishment vnto his heart, and caused him to retrait his host into a place of security, where-An.D.1015 | bondage, especially under such tyrannizing intruby Edrik perceiuing his trecherous purposes were disclosed, gaue more open proofe of his intendders, thought now or never the time to shake off the ments, flying to the enemy with forty of the Kings yoake; and therefore with great joy and hast sent into Normandy for their native King . Ethelred now fhippes; whereupon all the west Countries submitted themselus vnto Canutus, not vereadie for the recouring of his right, fore-(37) By this time King Ethelred had recoucred flowed no meanes either to haften or strengthen the enterprize, and having the affiftance of his brother his ficknesse, and minding revenge on his most wicked some Edrik, with purpose to trie his last fors An.D.1016, tunes by hazard of fight, summond all his forces of Normandy, in the Lent following landed in England, vnto whom reforted the people from all parts, accounting it their greatest joy to see the face to meete him at a certaine day and place; where being affembled, he was instantly warned not to of their King. giue battaile, for that his owne subjects ment to be-(34) Canutus then at Gainsborough, Souldier-like mustered and managed his men, and holding it good tray him. policieto keepe that by bounty, which his father King Ethelred ever vnfortunate in this, to find Londons fidelity treasons amongst them that ought him most trust, had got by tyranny, made no spare to purchase the hearts of the English; by which meanes those withdrew himselfe to London, whose service against of 1 masey became his Creatures, with an agreethe Danes he had lately feene, and therefore accounment to find him both horse and men against their ted his person most sure in their walles. Prince Edmund with his power posted ouer Humber, where owne King and Country. Ethelred therefore now raging for reuenge, with a obtaining Earle Vired to fide in his quarrell, entred

Chap. 45 Edmund THE SAXONS MONARCHS. Monarch 23. he was euer a traitor to his Countrie, and a fauourer Earle of Bulloigne in Picardy, a man of great valour in of the Danes, betraying both him, and King Edmund those parts of France, and a most faithfull friend to his sonne to King Canut, that he thereby might gette new preferments by him, who worthily rewarded King Edward her brother; which Earle was grand-father to Godfrey of Bullingne, King of Ierufalem, albeit it feemeth he had no iffue by this Lady. him as a traitor and put him to death. (50) Elfgine, the third daughter of King Ethelred and of Queene Elgius his first wife, was the second wife of V tred furnamed the Bold, fonne of Earle Wal-defe the elder, Earle of Northumberland, by whom face had one onely child, a daughter, named Alagith married to a Noble-man called Ataldred, the sonne of Crinan ; thee was mother of Cofpatricke, who was Earle of Northumberland in the time of welliam the Conquerour, and forced by his difpleafure to fly into Scotland, where hee abode and was ancestor to the Earles of Dunbar and of March in that Countrie. (§ 1) Gode, the fourth and youngest daughter of King Ethelred and Queene Elgius his first wife, was death fucceeded him in the Kingdom of England. first married to one Walter de Maigne a Noble-man of (53) Elfred, the eight sonne of King Ethelred, and Bifred the eight Normandy, greatly fauoured by King Edwardher brohis fecond by Queene Emme his fecond wife, was ther; who lived not long after the marriage, and left conucied into Normandie for feare of King Canute, iffue by her a fonne named Rodulfe, whom King Edward his vncle created Earle of Hereford. This Earle Rodulfe, died the one and twentieth of December, in with his eldeft brother Edward, and with him returned into England to fee his mother, then beeing at Winchester, in the second yeere of King Harrald furnathe thirteenth yeere of his vncles raigne, and was bumed Harefoote; by whose practize hee was trained toried at Peterborough; leaving iffue a young fonne nawards London, apprehended by the way at Guilford in Survey, deprined of his eie-fight, and committed primed Harrald, created afterwards by King William the Conqueror, Baron of Sudeley in the Countie of Glowfoner to the Monastery of Ele: his Normans that came eester, and Ancestor to the Barons of that place sucwith him most cruelly murthered, and hee himselfe ceeding, and of the Lord Chandois of Sudeley now being. This Lady Gode, after the decease of the said foone after deceafing, was buried in the Church of the faid Monasteric. Water de Maigne, was remarried to Eustace the elder, Edmund. SIDE THE THIRTIE THREE MO. NARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS WARRES, ACTS, RAIGNE, WIFE, AND ISSVE,

(52) Edward, the feuenth fonne of King Ethebred, Edward the feand his first by Queene Emme his second wife, was weath borne at Islape in the County of Oxford, and brought vp in France all the time of his youth, with his vncle Richard the third of that name, Duke of Normandy, mistrusting his safety in England under King Canute the Dane, although he had married his mother; but hee found the time more dangerous by the viage of his brother Elfred, at his beeing heere in the raigne of King Harrald fonne of the Dane. Notwithstanding hee returned home, when Hardiknut the other tonne (beeing his halfe brother) was King, and was honourably received and entertained by him, and after his

Monarch 33

EDMVND SVRNAMED IRON-

CHAPTER XLV.

An.D.1016



Dmund, the third fonne of King Ethelred, and the eldeft living at his Fathers death, succeeded him both in his dominions, & in his troubled estate against the Danes; entring his gouernement in the moneth of April, and crowned at Kingfton vpon Thamests, by Liuingus Archbishop of Canterbury the yeere of mans faluation 1016. Notwithstanding, a great part of the English, considering the puil fance of the Danes, both feared and fanoured Canut, especially, a great part of the Clergy, who at Southampton ordained him their King, swearing to him the fealty of true subjection; but the Londoners ftood most firme to Prince Edmund, and were principall Actors for his election.

(2) In reuenge whereof Canutus who had belie

seed the Citie before the death of King Etheled, can be a seed the Citie before the death of King Etheled, and the filling now to be towed, and drawn up the Themphr was the welf side of the bridge, and from palled the City, than you have a fill the common palled the City, than you have a fill the common palled the City, than you have a fill the common palled the City, than you have a fill the common palled the City, than you have a fill the common palled the City, than you have a fill the common palled the City and the common palled the City and the control of the city of the	382		CESSIONS OF Monarch 33.	Booke.
palfed the Cray, furting ye all all mer period. The niver with a deep and they bronde, and more palfed the Cray, mixing ye all all mere and the property of the Craise manfully flood in strip. flance, whereou the comming of their new King for their discourt, did not a little encourage them, and channed the Danes, who now thought is belt the cray of the their content of the conte	Heary Hunting, Sixon Dun.	ged the Citie before the death of King Ethelred, cau- ied his ships now to be towed, and drawne up the	lence brake up his Campe, and marched years for	A .
paffedthe City, flusting vp all entrance or egrefic form; but the Citizens manfully flood in relifance, whereto the comming of their new. King for their frictory, do now thought is best to breake vp their fluory, and now thought is best to breake vp their fluory, and the control of the control of the control of their fluory, and their fluory an			great in some and most savnostic die	
son the Citizens manifully flood governing fance, whereous the comming of their means, whereous the comming of their means, when one thought is belt to brake up their figgs and be gone: and the risk for the control of the control of their figures and be gone: and the risk for the control of the control of their figures and the gone and the risk for the control of their figures and the gone and the risk for the control of their figures and the control of their figures and the control of their figures and the control of their figures, where he wintered with Namian adment for their figures, and the risk for the control of the figures, and the control of the con		passed the City shutting up all arge Trenel encom-	quete of the Citie, which in a fort was it ill belieged	4
king zimmed (who was addersing himfelf-of return rincourt, and not a little encourage them, and daumed the Dater, who now thought it belt in the Author gold be goes and the rinchight the Author gold be goes and the rinchight the Author the Control the Long of the Control the Control the Long of the Long o				
bereite of breite view in eigen and be grown and the relative to breite very their (gigner and be grown) and the relative to breite very their (gigner and be grown) and the relative to breite very their (gith the Author of Exaconius of the grown) and the relative to the control of the state of the relative to the control of the state of the relative to the control of the state of the state of the relative to the control of the state of the relative to the control of the state of th		Itance, whereto the comming of their new King	King Februard (who were address)	1
and caunted the Danet, who now knowshis in before to be to b			battaile) of the juddaine departure of his enemin	e
ther(faith the Author of Exemiser Emms.) for the Heritorians, the Counter, which he neither accepted, one of the Counter of th		and daunted the Danes, who now thought it both		
Sing Edward fine Canate a peremptory challenge combine, which fine chief accepted, nor yet fland the fingle combine, which he neither accepted, nor yet fland the fingle combine, which he neither accepted, nor yet fland the fingle combine, which he neither accepted, nor yet fland the fingle combine, which he neither accepted, nor yet fland the fingle to flow flow the head of the fland of the perimpted of the fland of t		ther (aith the Author of Freezewick Farm)		
syeffaned the fegeto trich is chance but waying his anchors failed along the Coaft to the life of Skepits, where he wintred with his Nauke and men. (3) But loth to lofe opportunity, when time ferrued for warres on the fodaine he affailed the welf of Segload, and brought much of those parts where his command; to mere whom the redfield travel his command; to mere whom the redfield travel his command; to mere whom the redfield travel his command, to mere whom the redfield travel his command; to mere whom the redfield travel his command to mere whom the redfield travel his command; to mere whom the redfield travel his command; to mere whom the redfield travel his command to mere whom the redfield travel his first figer, where be partially admined the rich travel his first figer, as a place called Servafian, who have the state of	Proffer of finele	Allig Lamung ICRE Canute a peremptory challenge	with imall adoc, hee removed their fiege, and en-	Tillodand b.
per lander in legeto tres the shaned but waying his anchors filled along the Coast to the left of sleepies, where he wintered with his Nauke and men. The first foot to lofe opportunity, when time for stagled, and brom the foldame he affailed the well of stagled, and brom the foldame he affailed the well of stagled, and brom the foldame he affailed the well of stagled, and brom the foldame he affailed the well of stagled, and brom the foldame he affailed the well of stagled, and brom the foldame he affailed the well of stagled, and brom the foldame he affailed the well of stagled, and brom the foldame he affailed the well of stagled, and the most work of stagled and brom the foldame he affailed the well of stagled, and the continued he folds the to the foldame he foldame to make, and at ready to faur, and the foldame he foldame to fold the to the form the folds when the foldame he foldame to fold the to the form the foldame he foldame to fold the foldame he foldame to fold the foldame he foldame to form the fold wherein a fore battalle was fought, and the foldame to fold the foldame he form the foldame he foldame to fold the foldame he form the foldame he foldame he foldame he foldame he foldame he form the foldame he folda	combar.		thus discomfreed great her amph. The Dane	Edmund.
ankendr antect along the Coaft to the life of sizeins, where he winter with his Nation and men. (1) Dut losh to 10fe opportunity, when time of the for ward of the winter he winter the for own methodian he alialed the well of the command throught much of the part wards his command throught much of those part wards his command to cause, and as Pendam nerve Gillingham, and his command the retto flight, and bloody to the Danes, where many of them nerve had bloody to the Danes, where many of them were the thing that the first own of the form danger, and the relt of fagule to the fiver, and the relt of fagule to the fiver, and the relt of fagule to the form, and in the relt of fagule to the form, and the relt of fagule to the form, and in the relt of fagule to the form, and the relt of fagule to the form, and in the relt of fagule to the form, and in the relt of fagule to the form, and in the relt of fagule to the form, and in the relt of fagule to the form, and in the relt of fagule to the form, and in the relt of fagule to the fagule to th		yet maked the negeto trie his chance, but waving his	thefe faire proceedings would have a professional	
(3) Dis 10st to lose opportunity, when time ferred for vares on the dotain he allaide the welf of ** **gland_and brought much of those parts wader his commands to mere whom the relieffe from the commands to mere whom the relieffe from the peace of the		anchors falled along the Coast to the He of Chemie		
ferued for warrey on the foddine he affalled the well of Forglond, and brought much of those parts varied his command; to meet whom the refliefs from his command; to least e. he halfed into Dosfether, where commended was forewarding his owne too indextequation; the times, and at Posision necre colling basen, each meet on the first of the command of the reflect folgeth, and bloudy to the Dosset, where many of them were pure to the two-dand the refl to folgeth; and bloudy to the Dosset, where many of them were pure to the two-dand the reflect of folgether. (4) Commet immediately cook into Wintelpfer, to the two-dand the property of the control of the control in the first fiege. Many as a read to the reflect of the control in the first fiege. Many and there to begin the first fiege. Many and outcrited county thickneward with his final and outcrited county the final fina		(3) But loth to loss opportunity when time	(11) Edmund, therefore following the aduantage	:
of Fagland, and brought much of those parts wards his commands to more whom the relieffe from fife prepared, and with fuch finall power as his leafure would admit to leasile, he hadded into Deffection would admit to leasile, he hadded into Deffection with the presence of the properties of the control of the parts with the presence of the properties of		ferued for warres on the fordaine he affailed the west		
fire commands, to meet whom the relitefit room fife prepared, and with fach finall power as his leafure would admit to least, he hafted into Dorfet- forworld admit to least, where some was forwarding his owne for- lorder. The commands of the property of the commands of				
pas prepared, and with fuch finall power as his leafter would admit to leasile, he hadfed into Deficit fore, where Casul was forwarding his owne for the contraction of the contraction		his commaund; to meet whom the reftleffe Iron-	fis at the fame place, he loft many of his	- [
An.D.1016. Indestequation where the content of the		frae prepared, and with fuch finall power as his lea-		
in the fight of the control flight. A) Comment immediately tooke into Winterfer, to focure himfelfe from danger, and the relate of any to favore, which was a they to defroy, and there goes the Citie with a first friege. King Edmand as ready to fave, as they to defroy, and there begit rule again with his final and outcrited company, whom Comment and in the fight of this enemy piched his braitie. To the side of Edmand came many of the English, in the fight of this enemy piched his braitie. To the side of Edmand came many of the English, in the fight of this enemy piched his braitie. To the side of Edmand came many of the English, to that his Army was greatly enemed, and their course grainbanned, which made the Dongh Edudicis from what or droops. Antimorp. Simples. Antimorp. Anti		force where Canat was forwarding his asset	vpon which loffe the Traitor Edrike plaied, who	1
in the fight of the control flight. A) Comment immediately tooke into Winterfer, to focure himfelfe from danger, and the relate of any to favore, which was a they to defroy, and there goes the Citie with a first friege. King Edmand as ready to fave, as they to defroy, and there begit rule again with his final and outcrited company, whom Comment and in the fight of this enemy piched his braitie. To the side of Edmand came many of the English, in the fight of this enemy piched his braitie. To the side of Edmand came many of the English, in the fight of this enemy piched his braitie. To the side of Edmand came many of the English, to that his Army was greatly enemed, and their course grainbanned, which made the Dongh Edudicis from what or droops. Antimorp. Simples. Antimorp. Anti	An.D.1016	e tunes, and at Penham neere Gillingham oach man -	earlt had much feared the downefall of the Danes.	Į.
and bloudy to the Danet, where many ofthem were pure to the invortant the reft of fight. (4) Canset immediately cooke into Winterfer, (4) Canset immediately cooke into Winterfer, (5) Canset immediately cooke into Winterfer, (6) Canset immediately cooke into Winterfer, (7) Canset immediately cooked in the fine feat in the work of the winterfer immediately cooked in the fine feat in the work of the work	In the Rogation	ther in the field, wherein a fore battaile was fought		i
benefite and concentence of Edimards Camber himself for to ficure himselfer from danger, and the refl ediped owners Salibury and there begit roth edite with the first owners Salibury and the clogar to the clief with the first owners and bring his enemy into his that the first owners Salibury and the red given the first owners and bring his enemy into his that the fight of his deep called Storoflaw, in the fight of his given, at a place called Storoflaw, in the fight of his given, at a place called Storoflaw, in the fight of his given, at a place called Storoflaw, in the fight of his given when the fight of his given the sale of Edemad came many of the English, in the fight of his given when the fight of t	meene,	and bloudy to the Danes, where many of them were		Counfelt.
to focure himfelferfoundanger, and there of eighed to works saliburyand there begit rice Clies with a first fiege. King Edmand as ready to faue, as they to defroy, made prefently thinkneward with his final and ouertied company; whom Canat, waiting for adamatege, followed with a great holi, and in Horselferfine, at a place called Sterafus, in the fight of his enemy pinched his battaile. To the aide of Edmand Came many othe English, to that his Army was greatly encrealed, and their courages inhamiced, which made the Dongli Goldiers from what to droope. (3) Norwithlanding, vpon the twentich of the Courage from the Court of the Courage of the Cou		put to the tword, and the reft to flight.		
towards salisbury, and there begit the Clie with a first fiege. King Edward as ready to fase, as they to defroy, made prefeutly thicknewad with his final and outerited company, whom Canat, waiting for adantage, followed with a great holt, and in the other parties of the sale of Edward cane many of the English of the his his fight of his enemy picked his battaile. To the side of Edward cane many of the English [1] to the side of Edward cane many of the English [2] that his Army was greatly encreted, and their courages inhumined, which made the Dangle Boddlers for the Parties of the North Company of the North Com	Paleder.	to fecure himfelfe from danger and the red.		
first fiege. King Edmand as ready to faue, as they to defroy, made prefeatly thinkneward with his final and outried company; whom Canat, waiting for adamatege, followed with a great holi, and in Horselferline, at a place called Storafus, in the fight of his enemy picked this battaile. To the aide of Edmand Came many othe English, to that his Army was greatly encrued, and their courage inhamiced, which made the Dough Boulders from what to droope. (3) Norwithstanding, vpon the twentich of the Courage from the their bloud not cold, the next day they been the their bloud not cold, the next day the been the training of the English of the English is the English in the English of the English in the English is the English in the English in the English is the English in the English i		towards Salisbury and there begin the Citie with a		Henry Hung.
treum fair to desire the state of the heart		itrait flege. King Edmand as ready to faile as		
waiting for adamtage, followed with a great host, and in Woreeleginey, as a place called Sereglas, in the fight of his enemy picked his battaile. To the side of Edemade came many of the English, to that his Army was greatly encreated, and their courages inhamted, which made the Danglish Guidiers form what to droope. (3) Notwithflanding, vpon the twentieth of Inne, 1016, their battailes loined, and with equal form continued all the day, withle neight confirmed continued that the day, will the night confirmed them to part. (B) But their bloud not cold, the next day they buckled together agains with no leffe courage then before, till at length the Danes were going down, & the English great forwardness of victory: which when the Traitour Earlier perceived, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was of format, alike when the Traitour Earlier perceived, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was of format, alike when the Traitour Earlier perceived, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was of format, and the Danes were going down, & the English is boody forout with the halfe-galpin bead, rich worth to had the English the preventions; fill, and get amay faryow King is juine, stood down to the hot of the English the preventions; fill, and get amay faryow King is into the content of the prevention of the pre		I Ificy to deliroy, made prefently thicherwood and t		
and in the region of the grant a place called Storeflaw, in the light of his year a place called Storeflaw, in the light of his year a place called Storeflaw, in the light of his year many of the English to that his Army was greated with a great to do the continued all the day, wailt the night continued to the Daws trained the more part. (6) But their bloud not cold, the next day they bucked to gether agains with no left (courage the before, till at length the Daws were going down, & the English ingreat forwardness of victory: which when the Tanitour Edirk perceived, he cut off the heart day that the heart day to the heart day the heart day to the heart day heart day to the heart day the day to the heart day heart day heart day heart day he day to dender the wares between the heart day he day he dender the wares between the heart day he day he dender the wares between the heart day he day he dender the heart day he day h		his imail and ouertired company, whom Canut,		
the fight of his enemy piched his battaile. To the side of Edmand.came many of the English, to that his Army was greatly encreafed, and their counges inhaunted, which made the Danglis foundaries of the Managed of the English his boody sword with the halfe gall interface of the English his boody sword with the halfe gall the cape which the head of a foulther, whole name was of means, like yet writtens, fill, and get amay faryow King is jainer, belood from the host to the host of the English is the yet writtens, fill, and get amay faryow King is jainer, belood from the host of the English is the yet writtens, fill, and get amay faryow King is jainer, belood from the host of the English is the yet writtens, fill, and get amay faryow King is jainer, belood for the high shoody favord with the halfe gall the yet writtens, fill, and get amay faryow King is jainer, belood for the high shoody favord with the halfe gall the yet writtens, fill, and get amay faryow King is jainer, belood for the high shoody favord with the halfe gall the yet writtens, fill, and get amay faryow King is jainer, belood for the high shoody favord with the halfe gall the yet writtens, fill, and get amay faryow King is jainer, belood for the high three he might be the content of the promote of the promote of this treatment found that the promote of the p			Rocheller, where he a while lay still to learne what	
aide of Edmandcame many of the English, to that his Army was greatly encreeded, and their courses; inhauniced, which made the Dough Boulders from what to droope. (3) Notwithflanding, vpon the twentieth of land their courses; inhauniced, which made the Dough Boulders from the twentieth of their parties of the properties. The properties of the properties of the properties of the properties of the properties. The properties of the properties of the properties of the properties. The properties of the properties of the properties of the properties of the properties. The properties of t				Edwards ness
walled the Country in their return, and with a great print and the Day Broad p		latte of Eamand came many of the English to that		rations.
what to droope. (3) Notwithlanding, ypon the twentich of Issue, 1016, their battalies isniend, and with equal former continued all the day, will the night confirmed continued the Daser were going down, & the Engilfor great forwardnes of victory: which when the Traitour Earlie precised, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was Ofmensus, like with the Traitour Earlie precised, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was Ofmensus, like with the Traitour Earlie precised, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was Ofmensus, like with the Traitour Earlie precised, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was Ofmensus, like with the traitour Earlie precised to the head off the head off a foulther, whole name was Ofmensus, like was broken, and the Dares of the whole army was broken, and the Dares of the whole army was broken, and the Dares of the whole army was broken, and the Dares of the whole army was broken, and the Dares of the whole army was broken, and the Dares of the Engilfs. File yet writtens, life, and get amay favow King is lainer, behalf stere is his lead, therefore he head of the training to the linguistic particular to the distribution of the training to the linguistic particular to the life of the Engilfs. The was broken, and the Dares of the Head of the Engilfs who was broken, and the Dares of the Head of the Engilfs was laken agained the training the precince, & the appears are the precision of the Engilfs, was called again to the barries the contrained to the finding to the contrained to the Armies of the Engilfs, was called againe into faculty and the contrained to the finding to the bound of the Engilfs was taken againe into faculty and the contrained to the contrained t				
(3) Notwithstanding, youn the twensieth of Internation of Internat		what to droops		
18th, 1016. their battuales oined, and wish equal forme continued the day, with the night confirmed continued that the day, with the night confirmed continued that the day. The process of the process		(s) Notwithstanding when the trues of the		
fortune continued all the day, wnill he night control of the course the better gains with no left courage the better that the property of the part of the pa		14me, 1016, their battailes joined, and with constit	like array to many himselfe in most war-	
itrained them to part. (6) But their bloud noteold, the next day they buckled together agains with no leffe courage then before, till at lengths the Danes were going down, & the Englishing treat forwardness of vickory: which when the Traitour Earlie perceived, he cut off the head of a foolkler, whole name was Ofmeans, like when the Traitour Earlie perceived, he cut off the head of a foolkler, whole name was Ofmeans, like when the Traitour Earlie perceived, he cut off the head of a foolkler, whole name was Ofmeans, like when the Traitour Earlie perceived, he cut off the head of a foolkler, whole name was Ofmeans, like when the Traitour Earlie perceived, he cut off the head of a foolkler, whole name was Ofmeans, like when the Traitour Earlie perceived, he cut off the Capture of the whole army was broken, and the Danes's low on the hold of the English: File yet writtens, life, and get anny favow. Time is plained, the contrained heart was the properties of the part of the English who heart would have the second of the theory of the whole army of the whole army of the whole army of the whole army of the heart of the part of a wife General, and other perceived, the appearant reactory of Duke Earlie was then again to the hard of the proposition, part of agains the hardles of the man, and chirdly interporting, part of agains the hardles of the man, and chirdly interporting, part of agains the hardles of the man, and chirdly interporting, part of agains the hardles of the man, and chirdly interporting, part of agains the hardles of the man, and chirdly interporting part of the English was taken againe into factory, and hard himfelf outwardly faire for his offers. (a) The hird day appearing, both the Armies prepared for battaile but yet food thill without any artempts, oney referring their werively middles in the counternance of the man, and chirdly into the fooled of the middle of the part of the par	Simen Dun,		taile in a furious manner auticity beganne the bat-	
before, till at lengths the Danes were going down, & the Engilfs ingreat forwardnes of vickory: which when the Traitour Enfir perceived, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was Ofmensus, like with the Traitour Enfir perceived, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was Ofmensus, like with the Traitour Enfir perceived, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was Ofmensus, like with the Traitour Enfir Perceived, he cut off the head of a foulther, whole name was Ofmensus, like with the traitour and the Danes of the whole army was broken, and the Danes of the whole army was broken, and the Danes of the whole army was broken, and the Danes of the whole army was broken, and the Danes of the whole army was broken, and the Danes of the length is the English . He had canded the was the was been and the Danes of the length of the English . He had canded the was the was the many that the the content of the perceived the was the was the same of the English and the Content of the Conten	мантер.	itrained them to part.	blondy for fourt hourse Grand which continued verie	
before, till at length the Dasse were going down, & the Engilia mere of towardness of victory: which when the Taitour Edirik perceived, he cut off the head of a foolkler, who for ame was off-mean, lake and a foolkler, who for ame was off-mean, lake the head of a foolkler, who for ame was off-mean, lake the head of a foolkler, who for a mean of omeran, lake the head of a foolkler, who for a mean of omeran, lake the head of a foolkler, who for a mean of the head of the late of the la		buckled together agains with a laft		
the English ingreat forwardnes of victory: which when the Trainour Early precised, he can off the head of a fouldier, whose name was of foneurs, like was been, and the first of the whole army was broken, and the first of the f		Derore, till at length the Danes were going down &		Paledon.
was broken, and the Dandellaine on all landellaine and landelaine and landellaine and landellaine and landellaine and landella				
with Malmalay. Malmal		William the I millour Edith perceived be ont off the	was broken, and the Osmerdaine and the Whole army	Kan. Higd. Mat. Welmmiler
and flaking his bloody fword with the half-egal pin bed, cried wurte he for fished part and flaking head, cried wurte he flag flish fair yet written, flis, and get amy forows King is flaine, beheld here his head, therefore feet must follow on a wear of the property of the flight flight per written. (7) But Edmand hauing prefent notice of this treacher's interest flight			it is reported that Canute loft fourge shoulded for	
ping head, cried wato the holf of the English. Fale yes written, flit, and get amay favors King & Jaime, betold here is his band, therefore feeks now to faue your eventuars. (?) But Edward having prefern notice of this trees cherous flittageme, and lecing his men ready to give over the fight, hafted himselfie where he might be belt feene, encouraging his Army to fland to it like true Englishmen, and poling from raske to make, both performed the parts of a wise Generall, and underwentthe dangers of the meanes floudider-his men feeting his preferoe, & the apparant trees cheros of the enemy: but the night approaching parted agains the bartiale of this keond day: Drie Edivic, the care the reby had testieve in single the state of the English, who kept King Edward therefore make, paparant trees, the content of the state of the sta	vil. Melmibury.	and fleking his bloody found with 1 16		· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
yet writies, life, and get amay faryow King is plaint, behold here his brack therefore yet me plane, yet were linet. (7) But Edmund hauing prefers notice of this treacher's littratagence, and feeing his men ready to give our the high, thatfed himside where he might be best feene, encouraging his Army to fland to it like true Engillituane, and poling from ranke to make, both performed the parts of a wise General, and underwent the dangers of the meanth flouditershis men feeting his preferee, & the apparant treachery of Dake Early, bent their lows against the traition, and underwent her dispersion of the meanth flouditershis men feeting his preferee, & the apparant treachery of Dake Early, bent their lows against the traition, and underwent her dispersion of the strength of the first of t	www.ceecus.	ping head, cried vnto the hoft of the English a Elia		
betold here is his bread, laterfore feek now in fame your owne lines. (7) But Edward having prefers notice of this tree- cherous itratageme, and feeing his men ready to give over the fight, hafted himselfie where he might be belf feene, encouraging his Army to fland to it like true Englithmen, and politing from ranke to nake, both performed the parts of a wise Gene- nill, and underwent the dangers of the meanef floul dier-his men feeing his preferoe, &the apparant trea- chery of Duke Edwir, bent their bows against the trai- tour, and had floot him to death, had be not preferely anoided to the enemy: but the night approxime, parted againse the beattaile of this Econd day: Duke Edwir excussing his fait, as beeing meerely midsten the countenance of the man, and thrifting to flow the countenance of the man, and thrifting to flow the countenance of the man, and thrifting to flow the countenance of the man, and thrifting to flow the countenance of the man, and thrifting to flow the countenance of the man, and thrifting to flow the countenance of the man, and thrifting to flow the countenance of the man, and thrifting to flow the season. (8) The third day appearing, both the Armice prepared for bastaile, but yet flood fill withoursay artempt, onely referding their werked; and almost ited bodies, and burying the dead flaine in the two daise fightes before. (9) The night following, Camstus in great fi- "Measure Losses" (10) The sight following, Camstus in great fi- "Samman Mobility, Duke Alfferd, and Marijo Abboo." (11) Measure Losses (12) Measure Losses (13) Measure Losses (14) Measure Losses (15) Measure Losses (16) Definy, make Edwise, make Edwise, make Edwise, with the flast of the flowing in the flast of the flast of the flowing in the flast of the				
(2) But Edward having perfent notice of this treacherous Bratageme, and feeting his men ready to give our the fight, harded finallied where he might be beld feene, can be a subject to the feet of the feener of the feener of the feet of the feener of the feet		behold here is his head, therefore feeke now to faue your		
cherous thratageme, and lecing his men ready to give our the hight, harded himselfe where he might be belt seen, encouraging his Army to shand to it like true Engishmen, and possing from ranke to make, both performed the parts of a wise Generall, and underwent the dangers of the mentel floud diershis men feeing his presence, & the apparant treachery of Duke E drift, bert their lows against the trainteour, and had floor him to death, had he not presently anoided to the enemy. But the high rapproching, parted against the bartaile of this second day: Duke Land County, and her English, was caken against into factoring the counting his fast, as beeing mercely mildken before the counting his fast, as beeing mercely mildken, garden the counting his fast, as beeing mercely mild her the counting his fast, as beeing mercely mild her the counting his fast, as beeing mercely mild her the counting his fast, as beeing mercely mild her the counting his fast, as beeing mercely mild her the counting his fast, as beeing mercely mild her the counting his fast, as beeing mercely mild her three miles from Suffyen Vidden, game battaile to Country, and her English, was caken againe into favoure, and her battaile but yet he had to be a subject to the country. (8) The third day appearing, both the Armies of the country, one of the country of the cou				
giue ouer the fight, hafted himselfe where he might bebelf feene, encouraging his Army to he ille true Englishmen, and positing from make to make, both performed the parts of a make, to make, both performed the parts of a make to make, both performed the parts of a make to make, both performed the parts of a make to make to make, both performed the parts of the manuel floud dier. him the clearly had been control to the fight approximate the court, and had fine thim to death, had been proportionly anoided to the enemy: but the night approximate the court againe the bartiale of this food make to make the bload of the English was taken againe into fine to make the bload of the English was taken againe into fine to make the bload of the English was taken againe into fine to make the bload of the English was taken againe into fine to make the bload of the English was taken againe into fine to make the bload of the English was taken againe into fine to make the bload of the English was taken againe into fine to make the bload of the English was taken agained into fine to make the bload of the English was taken agained into fine to death and the counternance of the man, and think of the statistic to Country. (3) The third day appearing, both the Armica perpared for bastralle-but yet food thill without any attempt, onely reflexing their work of the English was the day and the better and English, the courternance of the day and the better and English, the counternance of the man, and think of the		cherous firstageme, and feeing his man and feeing		
the true Engillinane, and poling from ranke to make, both performed the parts of a wife Generall, and underwent he dangers of the meanth floul diershis men feeting his perfence, &the apparant treathery of Dake Early heart their bows against the traited to the enemy. For the late proporting and had for him to death, had he not perfently another to the the traited of this fecond day: Dake Early country. But the night appropring, and the country heart the traited of this fecond day: Dake Early country, and her him feet going had the country her to the statistic to the enemy. The statistic to the traited of this feet and the country had the statistic to the statistic t				
sanke, both performed the parts of a wife Generall, and warderwent the dangers of the meanel floudiers his men feering his perfector, &the apparant treated by a perfect perfe			vreing the danger of amounts, by guilefull	
leafure in aftery to path one time. Iffer, and control the control that th			bodies of his fouldiers, forhar Caputer beraby had	
diershis men feeing his prefence. & the apparant trea- chery of Duke Early been their Dows againd the trai- tour, and had thot him to death, had hen to prefently anoided to the enemy: but the night approchine, parted againe the barriale of this feeond day: Duke Larly excursion is executing his fact, as beeing meerely militaken to Loury, and bare himselfee outwardly larie for his Country. (8) The third day appearing, both the Armies prepared for barriale, but yet flood thill without any attempts, onely refuling their werkerly, and admindtived bodies, and burying the dead flaine in the two dates flights before. (9) The night following, Comstus in great fi- dates flights the Country. (9) The night following, Comstus in great fi- dates flights before. (9) The night following, Comstus in great fi- dates flights before. (9) The night following, Comstus in great fi- dates flights before.			leafure in latery to patie ouer into Effex.	
chery of Duke Edrif, bent their bowsagainfit the trail- tour, and had floot him to death, ald not not prefeatly anoided to the enemy: but the night approching, parted againe the bartatile of this fector day: Duke Edrif excussing his fact, as beeing merely midsten three miles from Suffron Vilden, game battaile to Country. (a) The third day appearing, both the Armice prepared for battaile, but yet flood fill withoursely artempt, onely referring their worked; and almost ited bodies, and burying the dead flaine in the two daies fightes before. (b) The night following, Camatus in great fi- with Castant Ethiopo of Lineakes, and Welfy Abbo. (c) The night following, Camatus in great fi- since the batterian of the Hadden of the Suffron Camatus (his without the Castant Ethiopo of Lineakes, and Welfy Abbo. (c) The night following, Camatus in great fi-				
tour, and had floot him to death, had he not prefectly anoided to the entemp. Further death of the second day: Dake Landing of this fecond day: Dake Landing to this fecond day: Dake Landing to this fecond day: Dake Landing to the counterance of the man, and thirffing to one the blood of the English, was taken againe into famour and the himselfe outwardly faire for his counter that the landing the landing landing the landing la		chery or Duke Earth, bent their bows posinft the trail		A battaile be-
fore made preparation duties and at Africa fore made preparation of the Contract of this feod day: Dake Ediric excussing his fact, as beeing mererly midthen there miles from Soffmon Worldon, you be trailed to be such a bloud of the English, was taken againe into famour, and bare himless of contract, and been withing to such the Country. (8) The third day appearing, both the Armies prepared for bastalle, but yet food fill without any attempts, onely refining their week-ried, and almost ited bodies, and burying the dead flaine in the two dates fighter before. (9) The night following, Camatus in great fill. (9) The night following, Camatus in great file.				
Ladvit couling his fact, as beeing mercely mildken the country of the man, and the fifthy was clear against into factority, and her lamifelte outwardly faire for his country. (8) The third day appearing, both the Armies prepared for battalle, but yet flood thill without any artempte, onely referring their washed, and the first bedough the country. (9) The night following, Camatus in great fit. (9) The night following, Camatus in great fit. (9) The night following, Camatus in great fit. (10) The night following of the fit of the				
in the countenance of the man, and thirffing to fine the countenance of the man, and thirffing to fine the bould of the English was taken againe into finours, and bare himselfe outwardly faire for his Country. (3) The third day appearing, both the Armies prepared for bartistle, but yet food thil without any attempt, onely refruiting their webrief, and aimont itred bodies, and burying the dead flaine in the two daies fighre before. (6) The night following, Commun in great fisher with the country of the country	i			
the bloud of the Englifth, was taken againe into fa- uour, and bare himfelfe outwardly faire for his Country. (a) The third day appearing, both the Armies prepared for battalle, but yet flood fill without any attempt, onely refringing their werker, and tired bodies, and buying the dead flaine in the two daies fighted before. (b) The night following, Camatus in great fi. (c) The night following, Camatus in great fi.	friks excuse.			
uour, and bare himfelfe outwardly faire for his Country. (8) The third day appearing, both the Armies prepared for bartaitchout yet flood fill without any attempt, onely refriding their webrief, and aimon't ired bodies, and burying the dead filine in the two dise fighre-before. (9) The night following, Camatus in great fi- with Catanuts Bishop of Lineskee, and Welfy Abbos. (20) The night following, Camatus in great fi- with Catanuts Bishop of Lineskee, and Welfy Abbos.		the bloud of the English; was taken agains in a C	Wille With conall change of foile or of visions and	
(6) The third day appearing, both the Armies prepared for bartaile, but yet flood fill without any attempt, onely refringing their wedrick, and aimont tired bodies, and burying the dead flaine in the two daies fighter before. (6) The night following, Camatus in great fishers.	- 1	uour, and bare himfelfe outwardly faire for hie		
prepared for bastalle, but yet flood fill without any gartempte, onely refelting their worker, and the strength of the day, and the drived bodies, and buying the dead flaine in the two daies fighte before. (a) The night following, Camatus in great fit. (b) The night following, Camatus in great fit. (c) The night following for the dead flaine in the two daies flaine flaines for the dead flaine in the two daies flaines for the dained flainest flaines flaine	ł		with his french water their Gd-	
attempt, onely refreshing their wedrick; and almost tired bodies, and burying the dead flaine in the two dates fights before. (e) The night following, Carntus in great fishers.	l	nrepared for harmily by	their battaile, which otherwise was at point and	
rired Bodies, and burying the dead flaine in the two daies fights before. (c) The night following, Cernstu in great fi- with Caston Billstop of Linester, and Welfy Abbot 1.		attempt, onely refreshing about 111 Without any	loft, whereby the Danes regained the day and the	
daies fights before. (9) The night following, Canatas in great fit. "All Medmet, Dake Allefred, Dake Gasénin, Dake Callefred, Dake Gasénin, Dake Allefred, Dake Gasénin, Dake Gasénin, Dake Allefred, Dake Gasénin, Dake Gasénin			betrated English, the ouerthrow. There died of	
(9) The night following, Canatus in great fit with Cadnoth Bishop of Lincolne, and Wolfey Abbot Restlief.	- 1	daies fights before.		
Discourse, and welley Abbot Rest Bird's.	1	(9) The night following, Canatus in great fi.	with Cadnoth Bishop of Lincolns, and Earle Vrehell, Si	man Daw.
of		- 0-m 114	Abbot 84	us.Higd:n.

Edrift excule.

Fample, belides other of the Cirrgy that were come chitches of pray for the preferration of the time of the come thinks of pray for the preferration of the time of the come chitches of the come chitches of the come of the	two Princes; coafted you reft. (17) Thus last period, at with a hard of the remains of the rema	the Kingdome disided by Edmand chiving that pa France, and Caunte entrithen the Saxon Monarchy du their tottering crowne small band, was fuddain their tottering crowne small band, was fuddain to the small band, was fuddain the small band, was fuddain the small band, was fuddain to the small band, was fuddain to the small band the fud of the door for the danuars of a the middle flat deeper into Ca du them do for hutters made the datugght into his 50 when the fuddant of the fuddant o	are that lay ng vpon the ang vpon the fall graiped neltyy torne plotted and compound f both the condumnative who cockity, was abody with a crous Edrick felented it to All hale, here behold the f four-raine, d.k. fore grictempt, repliration, the contract of the compound	he Kingdode areal betweent bed, Il downted mut- thered. A spir, Oith Highen.
ed as retained vinto this day, by certaine installiles there remaining, whence have been eiged the bones of men. Armour, and the watchiniso choiré-brides. (14) King Edmand Armour, and the watchiniso choiré-brides. (14) King Edmand Armour, and the watchiniso choiré-brides. (14) King Edmand Lander annéed vinto Glausteure (14) King Edmand Lander (14) Control Causteure-wollen in conceitor this his great victorie, vinto whom then the Londoner fabinitier, and foi did nany other great townes of Name; after which her followed Edmand into the Welt, who now kie a Typar robbed of her Whelpes, feeking the cuence of his lot day, gathered amolt pullfant Army, meaning to trie the vitermost chance of accept and the state of the control of the c	reft. (17) Thus laft period, an wint a hard 2 from the Iron haltned death of recolons, gi Kings, to fer ceit, contriue being recired thrull from that period thrull from that period thrull from that period thrull from the period of the perio	then the Saxem Monarchy and their tottering crowne bought hand, was finddain bought hand, was finddain For Duke Edwird a very lutted with the fauours of a thinefile depart into Cat dine end of renowmed E and the end of renowmed E and the end of the thangul timo his soluring the thangul timo his soluring the thangul timo his soluring the hand, prehelf fawming fallutations. Admarch of Familiand, for the paperner, which for thy fake uph ambitions inough of including the solution, about the solution of the solution of the face of the solution of the face of the solution of the face of the solution of th	Epent to the fall grafped neltyy torne plott ed and y compound f both these and the body with a crous Edrick clented it to All hase, here behold the I have a duenty replication, replication, replication, replication, replication, and the second second processes and the second processes are second processes and the second processes and the second processes and the second processes are second processes are second processes and the second processes are second processes are second processes are second processes and the second processes are second processes are second processes are second processes are second pro	E dis shal mut- hered. A Spic faith Higden.
(14) King Edmand thus traiter only forced to re- tice from the field, on foot marched vmo Glome- ter with a very finall Army, leauing Canariouer- woulen in conceits for this his great vedvorie, vmo wollen in conceits or this his great vedvorie, vmo whom then the Londoner's fubmitted, and fo did many other great townes of Name, after which tee followed Edmand into the Welt; who now kee a Typar robbed of her Wheleps, feeking the cuenge of his lold day, gathered a moft puilfant Army, meaning to trie the vetremoft chance of are, or Battaile. Their hoftes meete at Desr- wigh neere vnto the riter Saearne, where they were refoluedly bent to ethablith the conest itle with he others downfell; and now being ready to opyne, a certaine Captaine of vncertaine name, lept forth (ais reported) betwitz the two Ar- mies, and vtered in effect this fipeech. 4 (15) Many battaile, haue beene fought, and 'too much bloud already fulf for the foucertainnite of this Land, betwitz thefe two fire the side of the s	trom the Iron halthed death of treasons, and halthed death of treasons, to fer ceit, contriue being retired thruli from with a few of the thou new fole-best of the canut, the treasons of the canut, the treasons when the canut, and wow, gets owne head his kingdom swrect attime, faith commund, his mount of the canut, the commund, the canut the canut the canon with the manuel, his the canon with the manuel, his	visible helmer, by his comp For Duke Ederke a very Larde with the fauours of the helmer of the helmer of the helmer or a place for natures her helmer of the helmer of the helmer y which door, the treache to which door, the treache helmer of the helmer of the helmer helmer of the helmer of the helmer of the helmer worthy and diffoliall an art of the helmer of that for howide to advanced above at Which high honour wh	plotted and y compound f both these annet his condiments who cessity, was body with a crous Edrick esented it to All haste, here behald the I have aduenting the four agnetic project on the project of the principle of the princi	hered. A spie,[sich Higden.
nany other great townes of Name; after which tee followed Edmail into the Welfs, who now the followed Edmail into the Welfs, who now the carryage robbed of her Whelpes, feeking the euenge of his loft day, gathered a molt putifiant Yarny, meaning to trie the vetermost chance of Face, or Battaille. Their hoftes meet as Densembly increased the properties of the properties	being retired thrulft from v finarpe speare cutting off h Canut with tl thou new fole- bead of thy Ca tured to cut off Canut, tho try, yet of pr ued at so vn ed, and vow gers owne bead his king dame. digious wret atime, faint uom with the maund. his	to a place for natures need to depth into his to which done, the treach is Soueraignes head, pre- hele fawning falutations. Menarch of England, for 1, ugh ambitions inough of incely diffootion, abaftee worthy and difficial an and chain remark of that fe though the advanced above Which high honour wh	cefsity, was body with a crous Edrick clented it to All haile, here behold the I have a duen- f foueraigned, & fore grietempt, replirate, the bris-	hered. A spie,faith Higden.
ike a Typar robbed of her Whelpes, feeking the cuence of his lot day, gathered a moth putifiant Army, meaning to trie the vetermost chance of face, or Battaile. Their holks meete at Dear- my? here wro the riuer Sauerne, where they were refolucelly bette to ethablish the ones title with the others downefall; and now being ready to oyne, a certaine Captaine of vonecratine name, lepte forth (aris reported) betwite the two Armies, and wtered in effect this fpection. Fought, and (17) Many barrailes, haute for the fouer-signitic of the control of the control of the control of the control and the control of the control of some state of the control of the control of some state of the control of some state of the control of southers and the southers are southers and the southers and the valous of the Generals, Captaines and southers affected the southers and the valous of the Generals, Captaines and southers affected the southers and southers and the valous of the Generals and the valous of the Generals are southers and southers and the valous of the southers and southers are southers and southers	finarpe speare cutting off h Canut with al thom new felse- head of the Canut, tho twent to cut off Canut, tho ty, yet of pr ued at so vn: ed, and vow. ed, and vow. digious wree atime, faith c now with the maund, his	es which done, the treaches is Sourciaignes head, pre heefe fawning falunations. Monarch of Englands, for, It spartner, whichfur thy fake ugh ambitious inough of incely diffosition, abashes worthy and diffosial an art ed, that in reward of that for I flowlid be advanced abone a Which high honour when Which high honour when the source was the Which high honour when which high honour when which high honour who which high honour who who was a supplied to who was a supplied who was a supplied to who was a supplied to who was a supplied who was a supplied	erous Edrick elented it to All haile, here behold the I have a duen- f foueraigne- d,& fore grie- tempt, repli- ruice the brin-	Higden,
must here wroo the ruter Sauerne, where they were refolucely better of etablish the ones title with he others downfall; and now being ready to oyone, a certaine Captaine of voncertaine name, lepse forth (as is reported) betwite the two Armies, and wtered melted this peckers. (17) About the reforming the refo	tured to cut off Canut, tho tys, yet of pr ued at so you ed, and yow, gers owne head his kingdome. digious wret a time faith to uour with his	c ugh ambitious inough of incely disposition, abashec worthy and dissolid an au ed, that in reward of that for I should be advanced aboue a Which high honour wh	f soueraigne- d,& sore grie- tempt, repli- truice,the brin-	Cathorium punci- The chathe crait (62)
oyne, a certaine Captaine of vncertaine name, lepef orth (ais reported) betwick the two Ar- mies and vttered in effect this fipech. 4 (15) Many bactailes haue beene fought, and 4 too much bloud already fult for the fouer-signitie 4 of this Land, betwick thefe two firere Nations, 4 and the valours of the Generals, Captaines and 5 ouldiers fulficiently tried, wherein euen fortune 4 for lefte feemeth to haue beene conquered; for 4 for lefte feemeth to haue beene conquered; for 4 for lefte where wonone, it was not fong kept,	ty, yet of pr ued at so vive ed, and vowe gers owne head his kingdome. digious wrice atime, faith co aour with the maund. his	incely disposition, abashed worthy and disloials an att ed, that <i>in reward of that fet</i> I should be aduanced aboue a Which high honour wh	d,& fore grie- tempt, repli- ruice,the brin-	theth the craitfer
*too much bloud already fight for the four-rightite of this Land, betwist thefe two fierce Nations, and the valours of the Generals, Captaines and Souldiers fufficiently tried; wherein euen fortune ther felfe feemeth to haue beene conquered; for if fone Battaile were wonne, it was not long kept,	arime, faith c	Which high honour wh ch preedily expected, (an	niles this pro- l	
"if one Battaile were wonne, it was not long kept,		Malmesbury, hee found for King:) foone after, by the head bad his shoulders f	nd indeed for me shew of fa- he Kings com- farewell, and	spil, Malushery,
"neither the lofer so weakened, but that hee had both courage and power to winne the nextewhat "is the marke then that you aimeat? is it honour and same? Titles indeed which accompany war;	(18) The	vpon the highest Gate to etraiterous death of this w rme, was acted at Oxford; wrote Encomium Emma, a	orthy Prince, yet the Au-	Old Manufe, Fabian, Ran Bigden,
"but neither long enjoyed, nor much attained vin- tro by the common Souldiers, by whose valours and bloud it is for the most part wonne. Let thin therefore that would weare the Diademe, there the beyond himselfe, without the confusi-	fame time, died of a n his owne doct cannot long for Edmund, le	blancheth the matter, fa aturall death in London: irine, that a Kingdome disi land, and pittying the Engl ft if the Kings had continued	ying that hee God minding ided in it [elfe, lifk, tooke away ad long together,	
"of a fingle combat, who shall command, and "who obey, or divide betwixt them the King- "dome, which may suffice two, that hath main-	That hee Durham agte bont the Fe	uble. died in <i>London</i> , <i>Simon</i> t eeth, and faith further, it eaft of S. <i>Andrew:</i> and A	the Monke of it chanced a- Warianus is of	Simon Dunel. Markan, Scotns. Edmunds raign Polychr.
Edriks; but I hardly believe to good a motion	uen moneti	nes, and his body buried a	at Giajtenbury;	
Armies, entred into a small Iland, embraced about	dy, firong trauels of v	was of perfonage tall, for of limmes, and well cou warre, informeth that for antide, given him onely y	or courage, har- ald endure the me deeme the roon that occa-	The feature of Edmand,
dangeroully on horiebacke, and after as variantly	and the age feemed to chre.	d body of their fore bru- bee buried with him in the	ised Monarchy he same Sepul-	
combate continued with an absolute resolutions, at length Casuse having received a dangerous wound and feeing himfelfe ouermatched in ftrength, with field a comprimite, and thus spake to Edmund with least view.	widow of Nobleman with his b	Sigefersh, the sonne of E of Northumberland; wh rother Morear, was murt	E <i>ngrin a Danijh</i> hich <i>Sigeferth</i> thered at Oxfora	
"what necessity should thus move us maje valual "Prince, that for the obtaining of a Title, we shou "thus endanger our lines? better it were to lay m "lice and Armour aside, and to condiscend to a l "ning agreement: let us therefore now become sworn thing agreement. Limit she Kingdom betweet it. 81	by the tree Lady being after the d his lands, w the Monal	afon of the neuer-taithfull g of great beauty, and no eath of her husband, and as by King Ethelred, comit flery of Malmesbury, when you in great love, and there	oble parentage the feifure of ted in charge to the Edmand fee married her a	f
"thers part as his owne; so some this tand to peace bly gouerned, and we identify assistant to each other	- 1	His I suc.	•	
Whereuponthey both cast downe their lword imbracing as friends with the great ioy and sho ting of both their Armies, who stood before dout fully aguering between those and searce, and looking the water in the strength of the search of the s	Queen An	lgith his wife, was furname ined out of England in Ha through the raigne of Co to Dance Bur when his	ed the Outlaw, be ungary as a ban: anut, and of hi vncle King Ea	lavr.
4 4 4	"who obey, or duude betware them the Anng- 'dome, which may fulficewo, thathath mini- 'tained foren. (16) Some affirme that this speech was Duke 'Lehrist', but I hardly belieue to good a motion floud proceeds from so bad a man; by whom for euroverred, it was acceptably to find the some of the control of	of a fingle combar, who shall commands and who obey, or duide betwist them the King who obey of the between the combard of the between the combard of the between the combard of the curvarence is to acceptably received by Edward of the curvarence is to acceptably received by Edward of the curvarence is to acceptably received by Edward of the curvarence is to acceptably received by Edward of the curvarence is to acceptably received by Edward of the curvarence is to acceptably received by Edward of the curvarence is to acceptably received by Edward of the curvarence is the final the curvarence is the curvarenc	of a fingle combar, who shall command, shot who obey, or duide betwite them the King-dome, which may fuffice two, that hath main-trained leaves. (16) Some affirm that this figered was Duke for extracting the curvertee, it and the firms of proceeds from an expanding the curvertee, it and the firms of the curvertee, it was the curvertee, it is a firm of the curvertee, who thereupon in light of their small and entered that a firm of the curvertee, who thereupon in light of their small curvertee, who thereupon in light of their small curvertee, and the firms opinion, being the year of the firms of t	of a fingle combar, who final commands, and who obey, or diside between them the King who obey, or diside between them the King who obey or diside between them the King who obey or diside between them the King and the proceeds from for bed a man to show the proceeds from for bed a man to show the following the proceeds from for bed a man to show the following the proceeds from for bed a man to show the following the fo

His wife.

he was by him recalled, and most honourably in his Court enterained, till lastly, hee was taken away by death in the City of London, the yeere of Christ, 1057. He married Agatha sister to Queene Sophia, wife to Salomon King of Hungary, and Septia, wire to satomen Aing of Mangary, and daughter to the Emperour Henrie the Econd; by whom hee had Edgar, furnamed Etheling, confirmed heire apparant by Edward Confession, his great Vncle; which title notwithstanding, proceeded no further, for that hee was deprined thereof by Harold his Protector.

The daughters of this Edward, as after shall be faid, were Margaret and Christian, the younger of which became a valed Nunne at Ramfey in Hampfhire, where shee in that denotion spent her life, and was there interred.

Margaret the elder, and afterward fole heire vn to the Saxon Monarchy, married Malcolme the third of that name, King of Scotland, and commonly called Canmore: from which princely bed in a lineall descent, our high and mighty Monarch, King I AMES the first, doth in his most roiall person vnite the Britaines, Saxons, English, Normans, and Seetifh imperial Crownes in one,

(22) Edmund, the second and yongest sonne of King Edmund, and of Queene Algith his wife, after his fathers decease being a Child, was with his brothe Edward fent by Canute to Olane King of Swedon his halfe brother, to the intent, that he by murther should make them both away: but this King taking pitty on the innocent Childrens eftate, fent them to Salomon King of Hungarie, to the intent to have them faued, where they were received with great fauour and honour: and Mathew of Westminster reporteth, that this Prince married the daughter of the same King; and other Writers of these times, that he died in the same Country without any issue of his body.

(23) These two sonnes of the Ironside thus posted away, and the crowne already set vpon the Danes head, had not the meanes of themselues to displace it, nor the English, hearts to assist them to their right : fo that they rather secured themselves from violent deaths in this their exile, then made claime to that which was vnrecouerable; and left the Danes quictly to possesse the land, which so long they had molested with their sturdy Armes.

The End of the Seuenth Booke.



THE

THE ORIGINALL OF THE DANES, THEIR MANNERS, RELIGI-ON, AND INVASIONS OF ENGLAND, THE

RAIGNES OF THEIR KINGS HERE, UN. TILL THE CROWNE REVERTED AGAINE TO THE SAXONS, WORNE BY KING EDWARD THE CONFESSOR, AND AFTER HIM BY HAROLD THE LAST KING

OF THEIR RACE

CHAPTER I.



Spirite of God in his facred writings, to shew his all-commanding pow er ouer Kingdomes and Nations, compareth the transmigrations of pcople from country to country, vnto the transfission of wine from veffel to vet-

fell: and those that are at rest with sinne, to the setling upon their lees, as Moab did, against whom hee cursed that hand that was negligent in his worke of reuenge, and the fword that was not fleathed in their bloud. Eyen fo the finnes of the Saxons growne now to the full, and their dregs as it were funcke vnto the bottome, they were emptied by the Danes from their owne veifels, and their bottles broken that had vented their red & bloody wines: in lieu whereof, the Lord then gaue them the cuppe of his wrath, whose dregs hee had formerly (by their own hands) wrung out vpon other

(2) For these Saxons that had enlarged their kingdomes by the bloud of the Britaines, and built their nests high vpon the Cedars of others, (as the Prophet (peaketh) committed an enill couetousnesse unto their owne habitations, and were stricken by the same measure that they had measured voto others When as the Danes often attempting the lands inualion; and the subuersion of the English estate, made way with their fwords through all the Prouinces in thercalme; and laftly advanced the crowne vpon their owne helmets; which whiles it so stood, was worne with great honour, especially of Canutus the

first and their greatest.

(3) Astouching this Nations originall, and first place of residing, seeing themselves know nothing at all, we cannot determine, but supposing them with Franciscus Irenicus, to be a branch of the ancient Germans, and knowing them by the testimonies of al others, to inhabite: in the same Country among

them, we need not to doubt, but that their conditions and customes were much alike. Of the for mer, what we have observed, is already set downe, where we spake of our Saxons; & now of these later, what is supposed for truth shall be produced. (4) Their Danes so often mentioned by our histori-

ans, for the great afflicters of the English state and peace, were a people descended from the Soythians, as Andrew Velley a learned Danish Writter reportethe but Dudo of S. Quintin (an ancient Author) will have them to come from Seandia, an Iland fituated north-ward, not farre from the continent of Den-marke: which his opinion feemeth vnto fome to be firengthred by Ptolemie the Alexandrian, who in his Geography placeth the people Danciones (the supposed Ancestors of those Danes) in this Iland Scandia, at fuch time as himfelfewrote, which was in the raigne of Hadrian the Emperour, and about the yeere of Christs nativity 133. But wheresour the root had beginning, the branches did farre spread themfelues into the vpper Germany, and parts of Norway, and Sweyden, whose faire fruit more particularly filled that promontory, which tongue-like lieth into teu mar promontory, which congue-unce meta into the Ocean on the north, being ancienty called of the learned, Cumbriac Chefpoing, where (as Tatitu faith) was the ultimoff end of Nature, and of the world; a firange conceir indeed, and yer more firange was

when they remoued their Colonies for Britaine, (5) In this place then the Danes laid first the fourdation of their Kingdome; which, from the word Mare, lignifying not a limit, but a region, was named Den-mare. But touching the former part of that com- Padrer velle; pounded name, the truth and original occasion is not ofoone found out: for the fearthing eye of truth hath long fince seene into the received fable of Danut their first King, and Giant-like sonne of Humbling

their opinion, who were perswaded that the sound

and noise of the Sunne was there heard at his dailie

rifing and fetting in those seas. But from more warrantable witnesses its reported, that this was the very place which the Inter and Angles abandoned,

(bap.I

*E/e*3 51.170

Verflegan, Ant.

though Verstegan of late holds it more certaine in the fearch of originals, to follow the grounded o-pinion that ancient Tradition hath held, then at randome to seeke them else-where: as these Danes (faith he) from Dan, and the Britaines from Brute; which truely for truth I hold much alike, and will herein make doubt as many more of riper judgement before me haue done.

(6) For Goropius Becamu deduceth the name Dane from Da-hen, fignifying a Henne, or rather (as some will) a fighting Cocke; Iunius, from Den, fignifying Firre-trees, which doe there abound.

Andrew Velley from a people in Seythia named Daha, of whom Iosephus maketh mention in his eighteenth booke, and placeth them by the Sace.

Ethelward our English historian will have them named from the faire City Donia. And Ionas Iacobus Venusinus, a diligent searcher of Antiquites, out of Pomponius Mela, findeth the names of certaine or rempension creata, function the manner of certainte Bays, opening into those parts, which now the Danes inhabite, to have beene ancientile written CDAN and CDANONVM; which Orthographic and Pronuntiation to the Latines was both harfh and hard, and therefore they added a vowell, and wroteit CODANUM and CODANO. NIA, whereof (it may be thought) these people gi-uen much to piracies, were knowne and called by that name, as breaking out of those Codanian seas. Some others from Ptolomie hauethought, that from his Dauciones placed in Scandia, and corruptly fo written for Danciones; the name of these Danes hath beene deriued; whereto the neerenesse of the place induceth much.

(7) For Nations Originals may well bee compared vnto a spring, whose current surcharged with continuall supply of more, first filleth the neere continual supply or more, and filled further, and at length are (oftentines) divided into rany and great "fireames: and euen so these Danes, (faith Dado of S. Quintim) after they had in heat, and lalciui-"ous lust ingendred an innumerable ofspring, swar-"med out of seandia like bees out of their hiues, & that both on divers occasions, and in very barba-"rous manner; for growne to ripeneffe of yeeres, &
"falling at strife with their Fathers and Grand-sires, railing acture with their partners and Grand-lives, "yea, and most commonly, among themselves for "ands and linely-hood, necessity compelled them "to disburden the land thus overflowed, for the bettet maintenance of the relidue, and to banish by "lot (after their ancient custome) a multitude of their wyouth, that might conquere by their fwords, in

forraine Realmes, places to liue in.
These then thrust out of their owne, fell vpon other lands with no leffe danger then the falling of a fword out of the fheath, or rather, as the breaking

in of a tempestuous sea vpon the neighbouring grounds, fore diffreffing their neighbour nations, & among them England not the leaft, as shalbe said.

(8) And yet their name was not much notified cambd. Britan. to the world before the raigne of Instinian the Emperour, about the yeere of mans faluation, 570, but then rouing upon the coasts of England, & France; in exercifing Piracies, were noted by writers by the name wiceing; for that Wiceings in the Saxon tongue, as Alfricas witnesseth doth fignific a Pirate; they were also called Pagani, for that they were not Christians; but by the English Denistan, and also Heathon-mon, as being Ethnicks.

(9) The manner of their Feligion, or rather fu- The Religion of perstition and Idolatry, was much like vnto the o-ther Germans and Saxons, whose principall God and Nationall reputed-Patron, was Thur, vnto whom the fourth day of the weeke for his feruice was affigned, whereof as yet it beareth his name Thur (day; who in his robes was fet vpon a sumptuous bed, the Canopie whereof was bespangled with startes of gold, who him they performed their chiese deuotions, and ascribed all their fortunes in their affaires; as the foresaid Duddoth more particularly relate.
They saith he) sarrificed onto Thur, whom they worshipped inold time as their Lord, for whom they killed not many sheepe, oxen, or other cattle, but offered onto him mens bloud, thinking that to be the most pretious oblation of all others; whom, when the Priest by casting of lots had destinated to death, they were all at once deadlie fmitten upon the head with oxeyokes; and tuery one thus chosen by lot, having at one stroke his braines dashed out, was laid along on the ground, and there with a narrow prying was fought out the Fibra, or weine of the heart on the left fide, whence drawing the bloud, as their custome ineuty jud., whence assume the booms, as tour various was, and therewith befinensing the beast of their derrift friends. forthwith they hole failes, thinking their Gods well placed with fuch farifices, and fore-decenting happie facces for their intended voings.

(10) Ditmense the Bilhop (tomewhat ancienter them Dudds recorded in another dereibable (inserthii).

then Dudo) recordeth another detestable superstition vied by the Danes to purchase the fauour of their Gods, Because (faith he) I have heard wonderfull reports of the ancient (acrifices which the Danes and Normans of the ancient factifies which the banes and Norman voicd, I will not let them pafe untouched. In those parts there is a place, and the chiefe it is of that Kingdome, cal-led Lederum, in a Province named Selon, where every ninth yeare, in the moneth of I anuary, after the time in which we celebrate the Nativity of our Lord, they all affemble together, and there they kill and facrifice unto their jemoie together, and there they kit and jet ripe unto their Gods ninety and nine men, and as many hor fes, with dogs, and also toeks, in slead of hawkes, assisting themselucishat hereby their Gods are fully pleased and pacified. And thus much may ferue for a taft and view of their customs, names and originals.



THE

THE DANES FIRST AT. TEMPTS AGAINST ENGLAND.

CHAPTER II.

An.Do.787.

John Stow. Lambert in Per-amb, mentio-

(bap.2.



Hough many were the Piracies of the Danes on the coasts of France and this our Island in former times; yet their arriuall heere, which gaue first breath to their enfuing conquests, was not till the wane of the Saxon Monarchie, about the yeere

of Christs Incarnation seven hundred eighty seuen, in the raigne of Brightrik King of the West-Saxons : in whose dominions, after some proffer at Portland, they first came to land at Teigne-month in Denon-shire; beeing sent then with three Ships onely, to cspie the wealth of this Countrie, the forces of the Inhabismb, mentio-neth their Lan-ding at Tyne-mostb in the North, the neer-neffe of the name(it feemes) deceived him. tants, the commodities of the Hauens, and aduantage of arrivall for a greater power, which was to follow them. The Kings Lieuetenant and Prefect for that place, understanding of their landing, went himselfe to demand the reason thercof; and attempting to lay hands on some to carrie them to the Kings presence,

hee was there flaine; which they tooke as a fortunate presage of the victories wherewith they afterward o-uerranne this Kingdome; though for the present the inhabitants enraged with the loffe of their Chiefe, addressing them in great numbers to reuenge, forced some to lose their lines by the sword, the rest to faue them by flight to their fhips,

An.Do.800. See the feuenth

Raueden.Le.e.x

(2) Notwithstanding their former preparations, they were contented to deferre their returne till ons, they were contented to deterret me returner and the dayes of King Egbert; whole raigne (as ellewhere we have touched) they disquieted with three seuc-rall invasions; the first in the North, , the second in wales, the last in Kent; in all which, the King though with many losses, and hazards of his owne person, yet with great resolutions persisted till hee had disburdened his land of so dangerous guests. But those Flesh-flies having once tasted the sweet, though thole Help-fuer naming once tatted the tweet, through often beatenoff, would not long bee kept away, but could calify take, or make occasions of fresh at-tempts; insomuch that after their first sooting they continued here their cruelties, rapine and spoile the space of two hundred and eighteene yeeres, neuer intermitting till they had got the garland upon their owne heads. The way whereunto was made vpon this ensuing occasion.

(3) Osbright a Northumbrian Viceroy, deputed by the West-Saxons, by chance, as hee followed his disport in Hunting, came to the house of a Noble man, named Beorn-Bocador, whose Lady of passing feature(in his absence)gaue him honourable entertainement, and intreated both himselfe and traine, to repose themselves there a while, after their wearifome delights. The Vice-roy already enfoared with her beauty, accepted her courteous offer, not fo

much to tast her meates, as to surfeite his eyes with her rare beauty, and lasciniously to dote in his owne affections. The dinner ended, and all ready to depart, as though some weighty matters were to be handled, he commaunded an auoidance from the Presence, and taking the Lady into a withdrawing Chamber, vnder pretence of secret conference, greatly tending to the advancement of her Lord & felfe, most vnnobly, being not able to preuaile by smooth perswasions, did by force violate her constant chatity. Which dishonour thus received, and her

minde distracted like to Thamars, at her husbands re-turne, all ashamed to behold his face whose bed had so beene wronged, with flouds of teares shee thus set open the fluces ofher passions,

(4) Had thy fortunes accorded to thine owne defert, or thy choice proceeded as by yow was ob-liged, then had no flaine of blemish touched thine honour, nor cause of suspicion once approched thy "thought: or had my felfe beene my felfe, thefe
"bluthing cheekeshad not inuited thy fharpe pier
"cing eye to looke into my guilty and defiled breath,
"which now thou mailt fee diffurnished of honour, and the closer of pure chastity broken vp; onely "the heart and foule is cleane, yet feares the taine-"ture of this polluted caske, and would have paflage "(by thy reuenging hand) from this loathfome pri-"fon and flithy truncke. I muft confelfe our fexe "is weake, and accompanied with many faults, yee
"none excufable, how finall focuer; much leffe the
"greateft, which shame doth follow, and inward guite continually attendeth; yours, is created "more inviolable and firme, both againft allure"ments and enforcements: by whose constancy as our flexible weakenes is guarded, so our true honours by your just Armes should bee protected. o "Born, Beon, (for husband I dare not call thee) re"uenge therefore my wrongs, that am now made
"thy shame and scandale of my sexe, vpon that monfter, nay Diuell, Osbright, (O that very name corcorrupts my breath, and I want words to deplore 'my griefe) who hath no law but his luft, nor measure of his actions but his power, nor priuiledge for his loathsome life, but his greatnesse, whiles we with a selfe-seare, and seruile flatterie maske our basenesse with crouching obedience, & beare the wrongs of his most vile adulteries. Thou yet art free from such dejected and degenerate

"ed and euer-working vices: be stil thy self then, and truly Noble as thou art. It may be for his place thou owest him respect; but what? therewith the losse of honour?thine affection, but not thy bed; thy Loue "but not thy beloued, yet hast thou lost at once all these, and be thy only bereauer: thou wast my stay whileft I flayed by thee; and now beeing downe, re-

thoughts, nor hast thou smoothed him in his wick-

dured.

"uenge my fall : the instinct of nature doth pitty our "weakenesse, the law of Nations doth maintaine our "honour, and the fivord of Knighthood is fworne by to be vnsheathed for our just defence a much more "the linke of wedlocke claimes it, which hath lockt "two hearts in one; but alas, that ward is broken, and I am thy shame, who might haue beene thine "honour. Reuenge thy selfe therefore both on him "and mee, elfe shall this hand let out the Ghost that "fhall still attend thee with acclamations, till thou re-

" uenge my stained bloud, (5) Birn vinwonted thus to bee welcommed, much amazed at his wives maladies, with gentle words drew from her the particulars of her inward griefe, who reucaled (as well as shame, and teares, and fobs, would fuffer) the manner of the deed, ftil vrging reuenge for the wrong, Bearn touched thus to the quicke, to pacifie his diffressed wife, did not a little diffemble his wrath, and excufing the fact, with the power of a Prince that might command, and her owne weak neffe vnable to relift the ftrength of a man; Commended much her loue and constancy; and alleadging his wrongs to bee equall with hers, if not greater, in regard of their fexe, willed her to fet her string to his tune till fitte opportunity would ferue to strike : but shee distasting that fweet confort, wrefted her passio into so high a strain, that nothing couldbe heard but reuenge & bloud.

(6) Beorn thus instigated by the continual cries of his wife, whose rape already of it selfe had given fufficient cause of wrath: first consulting with his necreft friends, was offered their assistance against that wicked and libidinous Prince, and then repairing to his Court, in presence of them all, made knowne his vnfufferable wrongs, and with vtter defiance departed, threatning his death.

This Nobleman in his youth had been brought vp in Denmarke, and is reported to have been alli-ed into the Danifb roiall bloud. Hee therefore accounted this nation the furest vnto himselfe, and the fittest in will and power to enter his quarrell: so comming to Goderick King of that Country, made his case knowne, instantly desiring his aide against

the villanie of Osbright. Godericke glad to have some quarrell to enter Britaine, leuied an Armie with all speed, and preparation made for all things necessarie, sendeth forth inguar and Hubba two brethren to command in chiefe. ouer an innumerable multitude of his Danes : which two hee thought at this time the fittest for the attemps, not onely for their well approued refolution and valour, but also for that hee knew them to bee on particular motiues (which viually more affect then doth a common cause) implacably enraged against the English, on an occasion vnfortunately hap-

Flores bifforiam That is Lea-

ning, but most lamentably pursued: which it will not bee amisse here to annexe. (7) A certaine Danish Nobleman of the roial incage named * Lothbroke, Father to this Inguar & Hubba, being vpon the shore, his Hawke in flying, the game fell into the Sea, which to recouer, hee entred a little Schiffe or Cock-boat, nothing foresceing the danger that immediately did ensue; for a fodaine tempest arising, carried the boat into the deepe, and droug him upon the coast of Norffolke, where hee came to land at the Port called Rodham and was no sooner seene, but hee was taken for a spie; and presently sent to Edmund, King then of that prouince, who in his answeres sufficiently cleared that suspition, when also declaring his birth & milfortune, he was honourably entertained in the Court of the East-Angles: whom the King much esteemed for his other good parts; but for his dexterity and expertnesse in hawking, held him in a speciall regard; insomuch that the Kings Falconer named Bericke, conceived both such secret envie and deadly hatred thereat, that having him alone in a wood, he cowardly murthered him, & hid his dead body in a Bush.

(8) Lothbroke in the Kings presence and Court was soone mist and diligent inquisition made could not bee found vntill his Spaniell, which would not forfake his dead Masters corps, came fawninglie vnto the King, as seeming to begge reuenge on so bloody an Act, which he did more then once, & at length being observed, and followed by the trace, the dead body was found; and Bericke connicted for the murther, his judgement was to bee put into Lothbrokes boat, and that without either tackle or Oare, as he therein arrived, and so left to the seas mercy to be faued by destiny, or swallowed up by just desert.

But behold the euent ; the Boat returned to the fame place, and vpon the same coast arrived from whence it had beene driuen, euen in Denmarke, where Bericke being known, and hands laid on hm, to free himselfe from the punishment of his butcherly fact, he added treason to murther, laying it to the charge of innocent King Edmund.

(9) In reuenge whercof, and likewise in Godericks quarrell, Inguar and Hubba, ions to the murthered Prince, being now made Generals of the Army of the Danes, first arriving at Holdernesse, burnt vp the Country, and without mercy maffa-cred all before them, sparing neither sexe, nor calling, norage; and furprizing Yorke, which Osbright had taken for his refuge, there flew that luftfull Prince with all his forces, and possessed that City; and afterwards burfting into Norfolke, fent this medfage vnto King Edmund. That Inguar the most victorious Prince, dread bothby fea and land, having fubdued divers Countries unto his subjection, and now arriued in those parts where hee meant to winter, charged Edmund to divide with him his riches, and to become his vassaile and servant.

The King aftonied at this ftrange and vnexpected Ambassage, consulted with his Councell, where one of his Bishops (then his Secretary, and a principall man) vied perswasions to him to yeeld, for preuenting greater mischiefe; who notwithstanding returned this answere: Goe tell your Lord, that Edmund the Christian King, for the love of this temporall life, will not subject himselfe to a Heathen and Pagan Duke. Whereupon Inguar and Hubba, with the furious Reb. Fabian. cap. Whereupon sugar and thoops, while the king to Thet-troupes of thein Danes, purfued the King to Thet-ford; and (as Fabian faith) to Framingham, others to Halesdom; where he pittying the tertible flaughter of seefa. his people, yeelded himfelfe to their perfecutions; and for that hee would not deny Christ, and his Christian faith, was bound to a tree or Stake, and with their arrowes fo fhot to death: whose body was afterward there buried, and thereupon tooke the name of S. Edmunds-bury; as wee have formerly touched in his raigne, Lib. 7. cap. 11.

(10) Whether these were the very true causes, or some other, which drew these Danes hither, most certaine it is and too lamentable experience showed, that hither they came (by Writers account) about the yeere of Christ eight hundred, and in the daies of King Brightrick. Neither want there Authors who acribe certain predictions to have forerunne the yeere 800, made unfortunate by their first attempts; fore-shewed seuen yeeres before, by showers of bloud falling from heaven, and bloudy Croffes markt therewith vpon the garments of men, reported by the learned Alcuinus, who was infiructor to Charles the Great, and borne in the county of Yorke, where this wonder happened: which himselfe saw & testified vnto Ethelbert King of that Prouince, as Malmibury hath written, and was Reger How thought by Houeden, Higdon, Fabian and others, to Ambigat haue beene sent for signes before their bloudy affaults, which beganne at the day-spring of the Saxons Monarchy, when it promifed a most faire ascent to their heires succeeding, but mounted to the highest, againe declined as the fetting Sunne, and fell under the cloudes of their owneruines, so carried by the just reuenging hand of God: for those Saxons having by bloud and warre unfeated the Bri-

tumes of their land and right, by bloud and warre, were by these Pagan-Danes to vincessantly molested, that no place was freed from their tyranny, nor any Bloud reurnged withbloud. ftate fure, long to hold that, which they enjoyed, nor their lines fecured from a daily expectation of their fauage fwords.

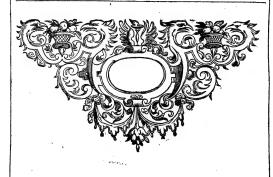
(11) Whose many invasions and cruell proceedings against this land and nation, are already shewed in the raignes of these Saxon Kings, who then felt their heavy strokes in warre, having nothing almost memorable otherwife, to enlarge their fames and stories with, besides these their valours in resisting so mighty and almost vnrepugnable an enemie. Therefore omitting to repeat such things as in their fuccessions are handled, we will fall neerer the time of the wished haruest of their full Conquests: some what remembring the Reader here, of those bloudie affaires, which the Englift at feuerall times felt and en-

(12) Such was the murther of holy Edmund King of the East-Angles, with Danish arrowes martyred to death as hee stoode bound vnto a stake, ever-calling on the name of Ielus : Of Ells and Osbright Gouernours of Northumberland by them flaine, and that Prouince for a long time after by them enjoied, and made subject to their furies ; Of Burdred King of Mercia, by them expulsed, who with his Queene Ethelfwith, were forced to abandon their Kingdome, leauing it to the possession of these Pagan intruders, and to feeke their fecurities in forreine Countries. where at Rome in Italy hee died, and at Padna his wife, as hath beene faid : Of Ethelred King of the weft-Saxons, that in one yeeres continuance fought nine bloudie battles against them, in the last whereof at Merton hee received his deaths wound, and this Kingdome an vncurable blow : Of Elfred that most famous and learned King of the West-Saxons also, driuen by them to such distresse, that hee was forced to leaue his Princely Court, and to remaine fecret in a poore Cow-heards house vnknowne and disguised, in the Isle of Ethelingfey in the County of sommer fet and thence to aduenture himselfe among the Damilo after with his tword through the thickest of those Enemies, made a way to his owne most glorious

(13) To speake nothing of the desolations left in eueric Prouince, Towne, and Place, where they came, laying all leauell with the ground, as prints of their foote-steppes where they had troden: Their cruell and mercilesse dealings towards holy and religious persons, with the ruination of Churches, and other places for Oratorie, is most lamentable to bee rehearfed or remembred : and among many others, the faire & beautifull Monafteries of Brainey, Crow- Islansian, land, Peterborow, Ely, and Coldingham, were made Flore light. subject to their desolations: In the last whereof Lady Ebbe with her chaft Nunnes, to avoid their iauage and filthie pollutions, cutte off their owne nofes and vpper-lippes, leaft the baite of their beauties should prooue the bane of their honours & honestee.

The most greenous tribute and exactions laied | Some Say Stritty opon the poore Inhabitants in generall, and great fums of money, paied in such afflicted & vnseationable times, imposed by the name of Dane-gilt, did from ten thousand, arise to forty thousand pounds, yeerely gathered for them in England. Their sturdv behaulour and Lord-like carriage against the Englifb, in all places where euer they folourned, was with such subjection of the poore Owners, that they abufed both wife, daughter, and maide, and were of all called the Lord-Dane, till lastly they were Lords indeede of the Land, and fivajed the Scepter ar their owne pleasures; which how it was attained vnto, wee haue before declared, and how it was worne and continued, wee are now presently to

hoft, as a base Manstrell and Contemptible make-sport, till hee had perfectly learned their secrets, and



CANVTVS



Polyche.li.6.c.18

Feare makes

riued at the Port of their long fought fourraignety caft anker as it were at the hauen of their wished defire, and prepared them-felues to a fetled reft: for

Canutus possest of halfe the Kingdome by composition with Edmund, now after his death feazed youn the whole, and that all things (as was pretended) might proceed with iustice, and concord, he called a Counsell of the English Nobility at London; wherein was propounded, whether, in the agreement betwixt Edmund and him, any claime of title to the Crowne, had been e referred, for King Edmunds brethren or fonnes. The English that had paid a very deere rate for their ouerbold refistance before, not daring now to buy, with too late repentance, the wrath of this Dane, absolutely answered, No; and having learned to appeale Princes with flattery, offered their fwords against any such claimes, and tooke themselves the Oathofalleagiance vnto Canutus; who beeing a very wise and politike Prince, thought neuer the better of them for such their doings; whose truths thus failing towards their naturall Princes, could neuer (hee well knew) stand firme for him or his forreine po-

(2) But being thus cleered of all other opposites, hec prepared with greatroialty for his Coronation, which was performed at London, by the hands of Lyuingus furnamed Elstane, Archbishop of Canterburie in the yeere of Christ Iesus 1017, beeing the second King of Denmarke of that Name, the first of England,

thers neere vnto the claime, and therefore, taking counsell with Edrike, banished Edwin, who for his melancholy and regardleffe deportment, was commonly called, the King of Churles, fon of King Ethel-red, and brother of Edmund; notwithstanding, hee was guilefully recalled, and treacherously murthered by his owne men, whose bodie they buried at Tane-Stocke in Denon-Shire

(3) One cloud thus ouer-blowne, two others appeared, far more dangerous in Canutus fight; namey Edward and Edmund the sonnes of the Iron-side, whom albeit their yongue yeeres might have freed from suspition of conspiracies, and their gentle dispositions from enuying his glory, yet the bright raies of a Disdem so dazeled his islous cie, that ever he saw (to his owne seeming) the restection thereof shine from their faces : but ashamed (saith Higden) to lay hand on them himfelfe, fent them to his halfe brother of Sweden, to be made away, as we have faid. In Booke 7.csp44 the doubtfull times betweene Edmund and Canute, fed. 100 when the scale of warre was held of either hands alike, Queene Emma had fent Edward, and Alfred (her Hory Hust. fonnes by King Ethelred) vnto her brother Duke Ri-chard of Normandy; whereby (wee fee) the Landwas Fabian. emptied of the English bloud Roiall, and the Crowne left for the Dane without competition.

(4) Who now feeking to hold fast the Scepter thus grasped, sought the alliance of the Norman Duke Queene Emma. by the espousing of his fifter, faire Emms; a suite founding but harshely in the cares of the English, yea and most of all vnto her selfe, as deeming the linke of loue verie slender, that might bee broken by the same hand, which was the death of her Husband : Not-

agreed, that the iffue of her body by him, should inherite the English Crowne: the suit was granted, hoping also, if that failed betwixt them, to establish her other sonnes by King Ethelred. This prouident respect so pleased the subjects, that it both drew the hearts of the English vnto Canutus, and their loue vnto Emma in a furpassing measure, as the booke penned to her praise, and written in that age, intituled Encomium Emma, fufficiently doth fhew. (5) Neither was her louing care limitted onlie Manh. w.4 to her fonnes, but further extended towards the Common-wealth, being much peftred then with his Danes, that lay lazie and idle as drones in the hine: who at her infligations were fent into Denmarke; & left they should through discontents make any stirres either here or there, had a largeffe (to buy their contentment) of fourescore and two thousand pounds. (6) Canutus his next care for the maintenance of his owne fafety, and the continuance of his new got Empire, was the establishment of good lawes (which if duly executed, are the very finewes and frongest guards of all States) to be administred and practifed both on the English and Dane alike: wherefore calling a Parliament of his Peeres vnto Oxford, there established many wholsom Acts both for the Clergy and Laitie to obserue; some of which were dinus Wil Lambert. ged by the praise-worthy care of a studious Antiquarie, and a few as touching Religion, as a relish of the rest, we thinke it not amisse to give the Reader a tast Canutus his god-lie Lawes.

bap.3. withflanding, after good deliberation, knowing him childlesse of any lawfull successor, vpon couenants

(2) And first, for the celebration of Gods most divine service it was ordained, that all decent ceremonies tending to the encrease of reuerence and denotion, should be vsed as need required.

That vpon the Lords Sabbath, publike Faires, Markets, Synods, Conuenticles, Huntings, & all fecular actions should not bee exercised, valesse some weighty and vrgent necessity required it.

That every Christian should thrice in the yeere addresse himselfe to the receiving of the blessed sa-

crament of the Lords Supper.
That if a Minister of the Altar killed a man, or else committed any notorious crime, hee should be deprined both from his order and dignity.

That the married woman connicted for adultery should have her nose and cares cut off.

That a widow marying within the space of twelue moneths after her husbands decease should lose her iointer. (8) These & many other were made, wherby sinne was much restrained, and this realme peaceably and justly gouerned. As likewise fundry other Countries were by his godly and roiall care; as in especiall is recorded of a yong Gentleman of the Danifb roiall bloud, named Odin, whom King Canute brought o-uer with him into England, to be here trained up in

learning, where he profited fowell, asalfo by his trauaile through France (whereby hee much encreased both his knowledge and experience) that he attained the furname of Sapient, and the Philosopher, and therefore was called Odin-char, for the deere efteeme wherein all men held him. This man by his preaching in Finland, Zeland, Scandia, and Sweu land, converted great multitudes to the faith of Christ,

(9) But in Denmarke things proceeded not so wel; An.D.1019. for in the absence of Canutus, and yeer of Christs humanity 1019, the Vandals fore annoied his subjects: hee therefore, in the third of his raigne, with a great host of the English passed ouer the seas, and bad his enemies battaile, which, as Mathew of Westmin fler writeth, went fore against him the first day; and preparing againe for the next, Earle Goodwine, who was Generall of the English, attempted a great enterprize : for in the dead of the night, hee with his fouldiers fet ypon the Campe of the Vandals, and

Canutus THE DANES MONARCHS. Monarch 24. with a great flaughter of their fouldiers, made the two Princes, Vifus and Anlane to flie the field.

Canute ignorant of this acted enterprise, had notice in the morning that the English were fled, for that their flation was left, and not a man found; wherfore following the tract, euen to the enemies campe, by streames of bloud, and dead bodies of the Van-Henry Hesting. dals; hee faw the great ouerthrow that the English had given them, for which he ever after held them in great estimation.

(10) Albertus Krantius, the Danilb historian, reporteth that Olanus King of Sweyden, having afsifted Ca-nute against Edmund the Ironfide, and seeing himselfe to be neglected in the, composition betwirt them moued fuch stirres in Denmarke, that Canutus was forced thither againe; where by the proweffe of his English hee repulsed Olanus, who lastly was staine by his owne subjects.

(11) William of Malmesbury and Mathew of Wessiminster record, that in the yeere 1032 he under-tooke an expedition into Scotland, with prosperous Man. D. 1028. fuccesse against Malcolme the King thereof, with two other Princes called Melbeath and Jeokmare. But being at length ouerburdened as it were with his own greatnesse, and surfeited with glory, which somtimes he had so greedily desired (as even the greatest earthy delights haue their fulnes) hee refolued on a more placable course of life, and to affect a higher and heavenly glory, which hath never fatiety or end. And therefore his denotion being great vnto Godward, on a zealous intent, (fuch a zeale as S. Paul commended in the deuout Ifraclites) hee tooke a iourney to Rome, to visite the sepulchres of S. Peter and Paul in the fifteenth yeere of his raign; & thence fent his letters to his English Bishops and Nobility, beginning thus,

(12) Canute King of all England, Denmarke, Norway and Sweyden, to Ailnothus Metropolitan, &c. Wherein having first set downe the reason of his Wherein hauing lirll tet downe the readon of his pligimage to Some, which was effectally to honour S. Peter, sa hee had been taught by Wijmen, that S. Peter had recited from Chril the great power of binding and loofing, and was alfo the Explorer of heady energy and was also the Explorer of head not open the fame vnto him when the should come this place. ther) heheld it most behouefull for him to procure his Patronage more then all the rest of Saints; then making relation of his honourable entertainement with the Emperour, Pope, and other forreine Princes, sheweth what complaint hee had made against the excessive exactions and huge summes of money extorted by the Pope from the English Arch Bishops, arguest, at such time as they received their Palles from Rome; for redresse whereof, and of other abuses, the Pope in a folemn affembly of foure Arch-Bifhops, twenty Bifhops, and an innumerable multitude of Princes and Nobles obliged himselfe: And thence proceedeth in vowing the whole remainder of his life and reigne, to the onely feruice of God, and due administration of Iustice to his people; to which end, hee first gives command to his Counfellours, that thence forward they dare not, for what foeuer respect, to give way or conniuence to any the least iniustice in his Kingdom and next to his Officers of Iustice, that as they ten-der his roiall fauour and their own liues, they swerue not from Equity in execution of their places, in refpect of any man who foeuer, no not, for the enriching of the Kings owne Cophers, because (saith hee) I hold it not needefull, that treasure should be cheaped to-gether for mee, by any wniust exactions: and so con-Treasure. cludeth with a ftrict charge to all his Bifhops and Iuftiees, upon their allegiance both to God and himfelfe to rake order in his absence, that Gods Church, and his Ministers, bee not defrauded of their Tithes and rights, whereof he vowes at his returne to take a most Church,

(13) By this his great care of his owne faluation, and his peoples tranquillity, we may see the zeale of those darke daies, to have been accompanied with

Tonching his

Ttt2

Folycle.

Canutus THE DANES MONARCHS. Monarch 34. Chap.z. others, thee yied in bringing forth Harold her fecond of his abtence, and affumed the Soueraignery of fonne, who was (fay they) the fonne of a Sowter; this Kingdome to himfelfe, notwithstanding I thinke the condition of the mo-(23) Hardi-Canute, the third forme of King Cather, who lived in dildaine, and died in difgrace; onte, and his first by Queenc Emma his wife, was rather caused this report to be blazed, then any such balenes of birth in the sonnes. borne about the beginning of his fathers Raigne, and towards the end of the same, was constituted (20) Emma, the second wife of King Canute, was King of the Danes, and deligned to succeede him afthe widow of King Ethelred the Vnready; and from ter his death in the Kingdome of England: But the time of her first marriage was called in England beeing ablent then in Denmark, was disappointed by Elfgine, after the name of most of the former Queens, his brother Harold, who succeeded his father, after which had fucceeded Saint Elfgine. Shee was marwhose death he also succeeded him. ried vnto him in the moneth of July, and yeere of (24) Gunhilda, the daughter of King Canute, and Christ Iesus one thousand and seuenteene, beeing of Emma his Queene, was the first wife of Henriethe the first yeere of his raigne : whose wife shee was Third, Romane Emperour fonne of the Emperour generous generous day eighteene yeeres, and furniting, kept still at Winche-Comrad the second of that name surnamed Salike : 447.24 fter, vnto which Church shee gaue nine Manours, fhee was a Lady of a furpassing beauty, which ci-ther mooued her husbands mind vnto iclousie, or Ran Higden. according to the number of those firy Plow-shares that shee was forced to goe vpon, for her purgation, the ouer-lauish report thereof to breede surmize of in the raigne of Edward her fonne, as shall bee faid. incontinencie; for accused shee was of adulterie and This Church shee adorned with many goodly veto defend her caute by combat, none could be found, ftures, and veric rich lewelles : and deceating in this till laftly her Page, brought with her from England, City the fixt of March, the yeere of Grace one thoufeeing no other would aduenture for her innocencie, fand fiftie and two and ninth of her fonne King Edentred the lift, himfelfe but a youth, in regard of the wards raigne, was buried in the Church of S. Swithing other Combatant beeing a Giant-like man; yet in fight at one blow, cutting the finewes of his enemies leage, with another he feld him to the ground, where neere vnto Canutus her husband. His I flue,
(21) Sweyn, the eldest sonne of Canute by Lady presently with his sword, hee tooke his head from the shoulders, and so redeemed his Ladies life. After Albat.Crast. Alfgine, was borne before his father was King of which hard viage, the Empresse Gunbilda forsooke her husbands bed, and by no meanes could bee England, and before his fathers death, was conflituted King of Norway, lately conquered from King Olafe the Martyr; where hee beganne his Raigne, in the yeere of mans faluation one thousand thirty brought againe vnto the same, but tooke the holy vaile of a Nunne in the Town of Burges in Flanders where the spent the rest of her life, and after her death was buried in the Collegiate Church of s. Henry Hunt Lib. and fine, beeing the eighteenth of his fathers Raigno in England; and after he had with diflikes ruled that Merian Scot. Reb. Fabian. Donatian, being the principall of that town, where Realme, the space of fine yeeres, hee was rejected her Monument remaineth belides the north dore of of the Norwegians his fubiects, and deceafing withthe same Church vnto this day.

(25) Another Lady of the like sanctity, is reporout heire of his body, left the Kingdome to the nated to be the daughter of King Canut, and the second tiue heire, Magnus, the sonne of Olaffe, who had beene wrongfully dispossessed by Canute. wife of Godescalke Prince of the Vandals, by whom he (22) Harold, the second sonne of King Canute and of Lady Assigne, was also born before his tacher obhad Henry King of that Nation. They both are faid to have suffered Martyrdome for the faith of tained the English Crown, & for his exceeding swift-nes was surnamed Have foote: He remained with his Christ; he first at the City of Lenzim, and she after at Michelenburg, being most cruelly tortured to death father in England, after he had disposed of Denmark with whips. This Lady vpon fundry strong inducements cannot be reputed legitimate, which moued to Hardi-canute, and Norway to Sweyne, his brethren, expecting fomething in reversion. But perceiving at Andrew Velley, a Danish Writer in our time, to be therhis fathers death, that England was also appointed to in of a divers opinion from Adam of Breme, and Helhis brother Hardi-canute, hee tooke the aduantage moldus who lived five hundred yeeres before him,

HAROLD

Apocal. 2.7

Converse his flat

Peter Pillau.

Simon Tour

which some haue not stucke to say, that he made his iourney to Rome, rather to facw his pompe and riches, then for any humble deuotion or religious intent, yet by many his intercurrent actions and lawes of piety enacted, hee may justly bee cleared of that mputation; as also by the testimony of Simon Monk of Durham, who reporteth his humility to be such, that with his owne hands he did helpe to remoue the body of S. Aelphegus at the translation of it from

Stafford-shire, from her called Vifrun-Hampton. now woller-hampton: This Lady Alfgine to make Canutus more firme to her loue, her selfe being barren, is reported to have fained Child-birth and to have laid in her bed the sonne of a Pricht, whom Canute tooke to be his owne, and named him Swaine; him afterwards hee created King of Norway, which lately hee had conquered from Olaffe called the Martyr. The like policie, faith Higden and Harold

HAROLD, THE SECOND DANISH KING RAIGNING INENGLAND, AND

THE THIRTIE FIFT MONARCH OF THE LAND, HIS RAIGNE, AND ACTS.



CHAPTER III I.

An.D.1036. Wil, Malmf.

Peter de Jeban.

Henry Hent.

Floriaces/is.



ANVTVS being dead, & Hardseanute his sonne by Queene Emma then in Denmarke; Harold his elder (but base brother) foreflowed not the oportunity offered; for feeng himfelfe in his fathers lifetime neglected, and by will at his death, Eng-

land with that of Denmarke heaped vpon Hardicanut; as quicke in apprehension, as hee was of footman-shippe (whereof arose the surname Hare-foot,) made strong his side by the Londoners, and Danes, Merei-ans, & Northumbrians very many, year and some great Personages amongst them, affecting his claime: but Goodwin of Kent who had the Queene and her treasure in keeping, stood in his way, pretending himself Guardian of her Children, & the will of Ca-

nutus, who appointed his sonne by her to succeede. (2) The opposition grew strong, and the facti-ons ripened, euen ready to seede, onely the lingering of Hardicanute gaue leaue vnto Harold to better his fide by daily supplies, and the feares of civill sedition moved the Nobility to argue with wordes and not weapons, the title depending betwixt these two brethren. At Oxford they met, where the presence of the one,downe-peized the absence of the other, fo that their voices went onely with Harold, and prefently proclaimed and confectated him

(3) He beganne his raigne the yeere of Christs humanity, 1036. and was very folemnly crowned at Oxford by Elnothus Archbishoppe of Canterbury, though for a time, hee was very vnwilling to performethat scruice; for it is reported, that hee hauing the regall scepter and Crowne in his custody,

with an oath refused to confecrate any other for King, fo long as the Queenes children were livings For (aid he) Canutus committed them to my trust and assurance, and to them will I give my faith and allegiance. This Scepter and Crowne therefore I here lay downe upon this Altar; neither doe I denie, nor deliner them to you; but I require by the Apostolike authority, all Bishops, that none of them presume to take the same a-way, neither therewith that they conscerate you for King: as for your selfeif you dare, you may vsurpe that which I have committed to God on this his Table.

Notwithstanding that great thunderclappe was allaied with the showres of golden promises, of his inft and religious Gouernment intended, though present experience manifested the contrary.

(4) For saith the auncient Writer of the booke

called Encomium Emma: Harold no Sooner was established King, but that he fought means how to rid Queen outpeating, out took no jougois means now forth Queen Emma out of the way, and that servely, for openly hee durft not attempt any thing againsh her: Sheein filence kept her selfe quiet, looking for the issue of his designes. But Harold malitiously purposing, tooke counsell how hee might traine into his Haye the sonnes of Queene Emma, that fo all occasion of dangers against him might at once for all beecut off: many projects propounded, this lastly tooke effect that a letter should be counterfeited in Queen Emma's name, unto her sonnes Edward and Alfred to instigate them to attempt the crowne vsurped by Harold,4gainst their right, the tenure whereof we have thought good here to infert.

(5) Emma, Queene onely in name, to Edward "and Alfred her fonnes, sendeth motherly gree-tings. Whilest severally wee bewaile the death of our Soueraigne, my Lord and your Father, and your selues (deare sonnes) still more and more dispossessed from the Kingdome, your lawfull inheritance; I greatly maruaile what you determine to

Harold bap.5.

THE DANES MONARCHS. Monarch 35.

"doe, fith you know, that the delay of attempts "giaes the viurper more leafure to lay his foun-"dation, and more fafely to fet thereon his in-"tended buildings; for incessantly hee posteth "from towne to towne, and from City to Ci-'ty, to make the Lords and Rulersthereof his, "either by threates, prayers, or prefent rewards.
"But this in prinate they fignifie, that they had ra"ther one of you their Natines should raigne ouer "them, then this vurper & Danifb stranger. Wherfore my desire is, that either of you secretly, and
"with all speed come vnto mee, whereby wee torture hee ended his innocent life. may adule together what is to be done in this fo " great an enterprise: then whose good successe, I desire nothing more. Faile not therefore to send

(6) These letters thus carried and cunningly delinered, were digested as sauouring of no faishood; and by the bringers, others returned, that Alfred should come shortly ouer to attend his mothers designes: these, brought vnto Harold, the coastes were fore-laid, and longing expectation attended the prey. Alfred as forward to let on his voyage made Baldwin Earle of Flanders his; and some few Bullogners increasing his Fleet, hee tooke the seas for England: where comming to shore, Earle Good-win met him, and binding his assurance with his corporall oath, became his liege-man, and guide to Queene Emma; but being wrought firme for Ha-rold, trecherously led these strangers a contrary way, and at Guilford lodged them in fenerall companies, making knowne to the King what he had done: who forthwith apprehended them euen in their beds, and in the morning as chained prisoners, committing them to flaughter, contrary to the wonted manner of military decimation, did spare

word by this my meffenger, how you meane to

proceed:and so fare yee well, my deerest bowels,&

very inwards of my heart.

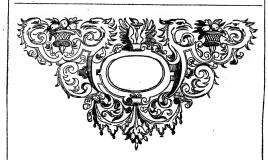
and exempt onely every tenth man for feruice or fale: Prince Alfred himfelfe was fent prifoner to the floor EA, where having his eyes inhumanely put out, lived not long after in torment and

(7) Some adde vnto the former, an other much more horrible kind of cruelty, as that his belly was opened, and one end of his bowels drawn out, and fastned to a stake, his body pricked with sharpe needles, or poinards, was forced about till all his entrails were extracted, in which most fauage

(8) Harold thus freed from one, the other hee thought would no further attempt; and therefore the more boldly fet himfelfe against their mother Queene Emma, whose goods he confiscated, and banithed her out of the Realme: who thus diffressed, was honourably receited, and for three yeeres space maintained by Baldwin Earle of Flanders.

(9) The Dane then feeing his hazards thus preuented, fought fo to fecure himfelfe, and with fixeteene shippes of the Danish Fleete kept the seas, which continued euer in a readinesse, and wassed from Port to Port; to the maintenance whereof he charged the English with great paimets, to their no little grudge & repining; wherby he loft the loue of his fubices before it had well taken root in their hearts.

10) Neither yet held hee on long in these disroiall courses, for that his speedy death did cut off the infamy of a longer life; and is said to have died at Oxford in the moneth of Aprill, the yeer of Christ Iefus, 1040, after hee had raigned foure yeeres & fome moneths: whose body was at first interred at westminster, having beene neither in warres so hardy, nor in gouernment so prosperous, as his Father Canut before him had beene, nor lest behind him cyther wife or children, to furuine his person, or reuine



Xxx 1

HARDI-CANVTE



Hardi-Canut.

HARDICANVTE THE THIRD DA-NISH KING THAT RAIGNED IN

Monarch'36

ENGLAND, AND THE THIRTIE SIXT MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS RAIGNE, AND DEATH.



CHAPTER V.

An.D. 1040



He States of the land, afwell English as Danes, that had frood for Harold, both in obtaining and keeping the Crowne, now feeing him fallen, thought it best to make way for their peace, before Hardicanut by his fword should pur-

chase their subjection;

therefore with all hast they sent into Denmarke, with proffers of the scepter, and their forward allegi-ance only vnto him. Those parts beyond seas, were not then to subjective, as to build his hopes there vpon any fure ground; for the Norwegians had thrust out his halfe-brother Sweyne, and had elected Magrance could he perceine of any quiet common-weale among them: and therefore fore-flowing not the offer, immediately imbarked his men of warre, and with so fauourable a wind tooke seas, that he arriued vpon the coast of Kent, the fixt day after hee had fet faile out of Denmarke; and with great pompe conucied to London, was there proclaimed Englands

(2) Hee beganne his Raigne in the yeere of Grace one thouland and forty, and was crowned in London by Elnothus Arch-bishoppe of Canterbury, beeing the thirty fixt Monarch of the Englishmen : his raigne was frentin doing nothing, valeffe you will fay, in doing cuil hee did forething.

(3) For no fooner had he a power to command,

but he forthwith commanded the body of his halfebrother the deceased King, to bee digged vp, and with spitefull disgrace to beethrowne into Thamists, where it remained vntill a Fisherman found it, and buried it in the Church-yard of S. Clement without

Temple-Barre, commonly called Saint Clement-Danes, for that (faith Stow) it was the burying place of the Danes: this crueltie flewed, was pretended for the hard viage of Queene Brans his mother, though partly spiced with reuenge for his vsurpation of the Crowne against him.

(4) Yet is worthily to bee commended, for the reuerent regard hee bare to his Mother, and louing affection to his Brother; for no fooner was hee rifen out of the throne of his Coronation, but that hee out of the throne of its Coronaton, out that nee fent honorable Embaffage vinto Earle Buldwine, with many thankes to him, for her princely viage, and for her to returne into England to her former estate, and place of Queene. His brother Prince Edward comming ouer to visite them both, was most honourably received, retained, and difmiffed; and thefe are the vertues regardable in this King.

(5) But his vices were more, and concerned more personnes; for a great Epicure hee was, and giuen much vnto Cuppes, whereby he trained the body to belly cheere, and fenfe to bee subject to sloth and drunkennesse, foure times every day were his tables fored, and plenteously with all Cates furnished, euer commanding that his courtiers, guefts, and feruants, Wil. Malmib. fhould rather leave, for fuperfluity, then call, for lack: which howfocuer it was in him accounted for Roiall bounty, yet it caused in the people (who vie to praise the Soueraignes vertues, but imitate his vices) 'a riotous loofeneffe, and the Common-weale to lie ficke of confumptions, bred by fuch excelle of those groffe humours in her body.

(6) This wrought in him a carelesse neglect of

government in State, so that the whole managing hereof was committed to his mother Queene Emma, a woman extreamely couctous, and to Goodwin, the rich and politicke Earle of Kent; who seeing the present state carried wholy away with present plea-

(bap.5. | Hardi-canut THE DANES MONARCHS. Monarch 36.

fures, thought that a fitte fubicet for him to worke vpon; for the King not married (vnleffe it were to his lewd will) and Edward likely to succeede, of an ouer foft temperature; hee thought these both might proue aduantageous to his ambition, and therfore bethought him, how the crowne might bee worne by him or his.

Goodwin dine-lah policy. Henry Hunt

(7) Therefore, to separate the hearts of the subiccs from the Prince(then which, there can bee no greater a wound vnto both,) hee caused the King to impose heavy tributes vpon the English, onely to pay the Danes in his Fleete, appointing enerie common Souldier and Mariner, to receive eight markes in money,& every officer and Mafter twelve; which amounted to the fumme of thirty two thoufand, one hundred forty feuen pounds : for the payment whereof, there was fo great a grudge, that two of the Collectors, Thurstane and Feader were flaine by the Citizens of Worcester; which caused their City to be burnt, and part of the country spoiled by the Kings commaund, and their Bishop Alfred expulled the See, till with money hee had purchased his peace. This Bishops hands (as was faid) were deepe in the murther of Prince Alfred, the Kings half brother, whom we spake of; yea, and Goodwin him-felfe was put to his purgation by oath, for the clea-ring of his suspictors in that treacherous and brutish

fact: which oath was the lighter vrged, and the eafier received for his rich and bounteous gifts, immediately before presented to the King, and that was a fhippe, whose sterne was of gold, with fourescore fouldiers therein placed, all uniformely and richlie fuited. On their heads they al wore guilt Burgenets. and on their bodies a triple guilt habergion, a sword with guilt hilts girded to their wastes, a battaile-axe

(after the manner of the Danes) on their left fhoul-ders, a target with guilt boffes borne in their left hands, a dart in the right, their armes bound about with two bracelets of gold, containing fixeteene oun-

(8) Amundus Bremensis writing the Stories of those times; sheweth, that the three sonnes of Camute Bremenfis,24.5. were possessed of the three Kingdomes, England, Den marke, and Norway, though the father by Will, had disposed of the first otherwise; which moved Hardi-Canute much to maligne the roialtic of Harold, whose Crowne by birth and couenant belonged to him; and therfore with great preparation, intending to recouer his right, hee entred the Sea, and came into Flanders, where having notice of the viurpers death, his rage was staicd, and he peaceably came in, and receiued the Crowne.

(9) And that Swein (called the Younger) King of Denmarke, to assist his vncle Hardi-Canute against Barold the viurper of England's Crowne, with a great Armie prepared thitherward; and taking the Seas, were by tempest driven vpon the coasts of Hadeloe, where his Armie doing some hurt, was set upon and himselfe amongst them beeing taken prisoner, and brought into the presence of the Arch-bishop, was by him most honourably received, and conveied vnto Breme, who there entered a league with him, and

with gifts and other complements, after a few daics; fuffered him to depart; who likewife hearing of the death of King Harold, returned backe to his owne Countrey, where shortly after he was much molested by Magnus the sonne of olaf, then raigning King ouer the Norwegians.

(10) Hardi-Canute in England, hearing of thole Idem of Signific ftirres, thought it his part to aid his Nephew King Sweyn, against the invalions of Magnus: and there fore hee fent one Sueno his kinfman, with an Armic of the English, to recttablish King Sweyn in his Throne. These entred Norway, and the Fielda-gainst the Norwegians, but by them were so ouerlaied; that hee left Magnus the vanquisher, and returned agains for England; but before hee could arrive the

Shore, King Hardi-Canute was dead, with whom dyed the iffue of that warre; whose death was suddaine, and after this manner. (11) At the celebration of a great marriage, contracted betwixt a Danish Lord, called Canut-Prudan, and Lady Githa, the daughter of a Noble-man whose name was Ofgot Clappa; in a solemne affem-bly,& banquerat Lambeth the eight of Iune, reuelling

and caroufing amidft his cups, hee fuddainly fel down without speech or breath: whose losse was the lesse lamented for his excesse, riotousnesse, and vnwonlamented to file execute, riotouniene, and vinwon-ted exactions: but chiefly because a much better was then to succeede him; hauing himselfe had nei-ther wife nor child that is read off. Yea, so farre were all forts from bewailing him, that in regard of in Sandruck. the freedome from the Danish yoke, which they attained by his decease, ever fince among the common people; the day of his death is annually celebrated with open pastimes in the streetes (as the old Romanes kept their fugalias for chaling out of their Kings.) which time is now called Hodide or Huck tide, fignifying a time of fearning or contempt, which fell vpon the Danes by his death.

His body with all due obsequies was interred at Winchesse by his fathers, after hee had voluptionally raigned two yeeres lacking ten daies, and departed his life and kingdome the yeere of Christ Icsus, (12) With the death of this King died all rule of

the Danes in this land, and the facred sparke of the Saxons fire (through three of their fuccessions) buried in their owne aftes, beganne now to take flame and to burne most bright, which was Prince Edward (now commonly called the Confessor) the sonne of King Ethelred; and albeit there were others betwist him and the crowne, as namely, Edward and Edmund the sonnes of the Iron-side, yet the one dying in Hungarie without issue of body, the other there liuing as a banished man (by surname the Out-law) was neither so well regarded, nor thought so worthy of gouernement, as this other Edward was, whom therfore they fent for, and with so great applause and acclamations proclaimed, that the present ioy seemed to prognosticate a perpetuall happinesse to the English, who had beene most miserably afflicted by the Danes, for the space of two hundred forty two yeeresthough this line again failed, before it was well begunne.

DARD

EDVVARD THE CONFESSOR.

SONNE OF KING ETHELRED, THE

THIRTIE SEVENTH MONARCH OF THE

ENGLISHMEN: HIS RAIGNE, VER-

TVES, AND MAR-

RIAGE.

(3) But most true it is, that the English Nobilitie disclaiming all Danish Subication, presently upon the death of King Harold, enacted, That none of their bloud should any more raigne over them: putting this their decree in execution by cassiering all Danes from the Castles, Forts, and Garrison Townes throughout all the Land, whence some even of their Bloud Royall were forced to depart. Then fending fecuritie into Normandy, with proffer of the Crowne vnto Prince Edward, had his confent, and assistance of Duke Wil-

(4) This Edward (as elsewhere hath been faid) was borne at Isup neere vnto Oxford, and tenderly educated by Queene Emma his Mother; and after his Fathers death, for fafety fent into France; where, by his iweet conversation hee gained the love of all, and as much himselse affected those strangers, which was fome blemish of policie in the face of his government, when he had got the Diadem, as being of disposition ouer-foft, and euer too pliant (an imperfection in a Soucraigne) to take the impresse of any stampe. In which mould, the afpiring Goodwin Earle of Kent, doth cast the fabrick of his owne designes; who had made away Alfred, his younger, but of a more refolute spirit, that so the balis of his owne piller (whose

Rand.Higden. Marian, Scotat

power, vsed both to establish Prince Edward in his right, being seconded by Leofrick Earle of Chester. and Lyuingus Bishop of Worcester, and indeed with the generall assistance of all the English; who now were so icalous of all forraine powers, that they forbad an ouergreat traine of Normans, (though comming for

most heavy Tribute of forty thousand pounds yearly gathered by the name of Dane-gilt, which had bin imposed by his Father, and payed for forty years con-tinuance, out of the lands of all, except only the Clergie, because, (say our ancient lawes,) the Kings repo-fed more confidence in the prayers of holy Church, then in the power of Armies. Then, from the divers Lawes of the Mercians, West-Saxons, Danes, and Northumbri-ans, he selected the best, and made of them one body certaine, and written in Latin, (that all men of anie earning might know wheron to rely) to be the touch of his Common-wealths Pleas, and the squire by which he would have every right to be measured; being(in a fort)the fountaine of those, which at this day we terme the Common Lawes, though the formes of

(8) The raigne of this King by most writers records was more spent in peace & works of true piety, the in warres, and bloud, though fome diffentions happened both domesticall, and forreine : for about the yeare one thousand forty fine, and third of his Raign, a royal Nauy was rigged in Sandwich hauen, against Magnus King of Norway, who then intended to inuade England, and indeed had so done, if the wars of Sweyn king of Denmark had not diverted his purpose

written in the manuscript of Aimundus Bremensis, being in possession of two kingdomes, prepared his Na-

uy for the conquest of England also. But, (faith hee)
King Edward gouerning that Kingdome with great instice and Loue, chose rather his peace with proffers of Tribute, and promses that after his death the Crowne should be his, yea though himself eshould have children: howbeit this seemeth not to found for truth ; For Sweyn sending his Ambassadors vnto Edward to craue ayde against Magnus (his grieuous and mortall Enemy,) could obtain none; and Harold Harfager, the fucceffor of Magnus, and enemy to sweyn, prefently thereupon fent vnto Edward for a league of amity, which was ratified

firmely betwixt them. (10) Neither may wee thinke that ever hee meant his Crowne that way , for that belides the decree enacted against all Danish claims, his desire to establish it in the English bloud is most manifest, by sending for Edward his Nephew, the fonne of Edmund Ironfide, remaining in Hungary, and that folong out of England that hee was called the Outlawe; who comming ouer, brought with him his wife Agatha, and children, Edgar a fonne, and Margaret and Christian his daughters; him Edward meant to have made figured the heire to the Crowne, had he not been prevented by hafty death, whereupon the King deligned young Edgar, his sonne, the heire apparent, and gaue him the furname of Adeling, a name of great honor appropria-

the Crowne. (11) Belides thele former attempts, certaine Da- In the fixt yete nilb Pirates entred the Port of Sandwich, which with all the Sea-Coasts of Esex they spoiled, and in Flaunders made Marchandize of their prev. The Irilb like wile with thirty fixe shippes entred Seuern, and with the assistance of Griffith king of South-Wales burnt or flew all that they found; against whom Alfred Bithop of worsefter went and fought; but with such succeffe, that many of his Souldiers were flaine; and the rest put to flight, which made the Welfmen far more An.D.1053. bold, and Kees, the brother of Grifflish, make many in-curfions to fetch preyes out of England, till at length he was flaine at Bulenden, and his head prefented to king Edward at Glowefler.

ted to the Princes of the blood, and men capable of

(12) His domestical molestations, were chieflie by Earle Goodwin and his fonnes; and those first fpringing upon this following occasion, Euflace the elder, Earle of Bullaigne, who had married Gods, fi-fter by the fathers fide to King Edward, came into England to vilite him then lying at GlouceHer, and returning homeward, at Conterbury his Herbinger dea-ling roughlie with a Burgesse for lodgings, caused his ownedeath; which when his Lord heard of, thirfting for reuenge, he flew eighteene Citizens in the heat of his furie : the Canterburians in as great a rage gotte them to armour, and flew twenty of his retinew, wounding many more, and made the Earle to recoile; whose greenous complaint comming to the King, he commanded Goodwin to fee execution done vpon the offenders. Earle Goodwin not haltie to follow his commission, aduited the King to examine the cause before he massacred his true subjects at the instigation of Strangers , whereat King Edward was highly offended, and Goodwin thereby gained great loue of the Commons. This occasioned Robert Gemeticensis a Norman, sufficient Bishop of London, and after Arch-bishop of Canterbury, to spred the Curtaine of disfauour betwixt Goodnin and the King, vrging his refufall as an A& of Contempt

(13) The Commons (whose common guise is, deadly to hate all strangers, though many times well deseruing) now seeing Earle Goodwin in danger for their good, were casily drawne to assist him and his cause, and in warlike manner garded his person, at Benerstane not farre from the King. The Estates affembled, and Goodwin fent for, he refused to come, pretending seruice against the Welfb, then ready to make inroades, and that his presence was more need-

wherein more dangers might lie hid then were to b

Estates, appointing a day of meeting at Gloncester.

fuffered; whereupon Edward called an affembly of

CHAPTER VI.

An.D. 1042.



ward, the Third of that Name before the Conquest, halfe-brother to the deceased Hardi-Canute, and sonne to King Ethelred by Queene Emma his wife, was by the prouident care of a Mothers affection, (when the variable fucceffe of Warre, doubt-

fully depended betwixt Edmund the English, and Canutus the Dane) sent into Normandy to Duke Richard her Brother, there to bee secured from all do-Rand, Higden, mesticall stirres : and now, before the dead corps could be enterred, with a generall consent of the Nobles was clefted their King.

(2) I know well that in the legend of this holy mans life, more things are recorded, then with fafetie of truth may be either beleeved, or delivered; as that he was chosen King by consent of Parliament, when as yet he was in his mothers wombe. Ethelred his Fatherat the same time having many other sonnes alive: as also when the destroying Danes had extinguished by their warres almost the whole Royall issue of the English, the holy Monke Brightwold, of Glastenbury deploring their loffe, and the Lands miferable effate, had wit. Malms in vision this Edward, then an Exile, presented vnto him by the Apostle S. Peter himselfe, who then annointing him King in his fight, telling him that his Raigne should be peaceable, and twenty three yeeres for continuance; Brightwold yet vnfatisfied who fhould next fucceed, demanded the refolution, and was answered by Peter, that the Kingdome of England was Gods owne Kingdome; for whose successors him-felfe would provide. With such vaine predictions our otherwise true Stories are ouer-charged; which moued Comineus the worthy French Historian, to tax the English with ouer much credulitie that way.



lam his colen germane. top in time he hoped to crowne) might be fet, if not vpon, yet with the necreft to the Throne. (5) Hee therefore, the formost both in will and his aid) to attend their new-cholen King.

(6) His Coronation was at Winehelter, with great Alfred Benerel. concourse of people, and the celebration performed by Edsine, Archbishop of Canterbury, vpon the very day of Christ his refurrection, (being also a newrifing day to the English Nation) the yeere of grace 1042. himselfe being aged then towards forty, and was in number the thirty feuenth Monarch of England, where he raigned with fuch Iustice & Piery, that he obtained the venerable name of Saint, and vnto posterities is distinguished from the other Edwards by the adjunct Confessor. (2) In the entrance of his government, to witnes his loue to his people, hee fought enery way the fur-therance of their wealth and afterwards remitted the pleading & processe therein, were afterward brought in by the Couquest. (9) This Sweyn was the sonne of Duke Wolfe by Offred his Duchelse, fifter to Hardi-Canut, who as I find

ambd, Britan.

Albert, Crantius

Yvv 1

full there, then at Court; albeit the Welfb-men cleared themselues by sending their Ambassadors vnto the King. The suspicions increasing, great preparation on both fides was made; to assift the King came Leofricke the worthy Earle of Chester , Siward the Stoute Earle of Northumberland, and Rodulfe Earle of Hereford his fifter Godas sonne, by her first husband Walter de Maigne.

Rand.Higden. Matt.West. Sissen Dun.

(14) To Goodwin repaired his people of Souther rie and Kent, and to him were brought by Swaine his fonne, the men of Oxford, Sommerfet, Hereford, Gloucester, and Berk foires; vnto whom, Harold his other fonne, ioined those of Essex, Norfolke, Suffolke, Cambridge, and Huntingdon-shires, so that his host was exceedingly great, and his mind thereby to inflated, that from Langton, where hee lay, hee fent a bold and Traiterous demand to the King, to have Earle Es-Stace of Bulloigne with all his French and Normans (that kept then in the Castle of Doner) to bee deliuered vnto him, and his fonnes : which beeing (as good reason was) refused, the Battle was prepared and brought to the veric point of hazard and ruine of all : For in that quarrell were affembled the greatest Peeres, and Lords of the Land, the Kings loue fwaying very much with many, but yet the hatred towards Strangers possessing the hearts of more. The beginning thus doubtfull, and the end like to prooue dangerous; the matter both with great forefight and prouidence was referred vnto Parliament, to bee holden at London with all convenient haft. whereunto pledges were both given and received on

(15) King Edward strongly guarded with an Ar my of the Mercians and Northumbrians, entred London, and Goodwin with his fonnes in warlike manner came into Southwarke to his owne house. But his Army wauering, and (as bad causes & consciences make men doe) suspecting the worst, by little and little thrunke away from him; which knowne to the King, he presently pronounced sentence of banishment vnto Goodwin and his five fonnes, without further proceeding by way of Parliament, as was determined. Goodwin therefore with great riches and his three fonnes, Swaine, Toflie, and Girth, failed into Flanders, and Harold with his brother Leofwine, from Briflow passed into Ireland; who were no sooner gone, but the King proclaimed them Out-lawes, and gaue the Earldome of Harold vnto Algar, the fon of Leofrick, Earle of Chefter. This Leofricke is he, which at his Countefles request freed the Citie Couentrie of their importable tribute imposed, as we have elsewhere said.

Booke 1.chap.17.

Simon Dunel.

(16) In the second yeere of Goodwins banishment, both himselfe and those his sonnes with him, having gotten ships conuenient for warre, in manner of Pi rats came vpon the coasts of Kent and Suffex, doing much harme, and returning with spoiles: the like did Harold and Leofwin from Scotland, vpon the westerne coasts of Sommerset and Denonshires, who thence coa-fling about the point of Cornwall, ioined their Fleet

with their Fathers, in the Ile of Wight, (17) Against them King Edward prepared, & himfelfe, though aged, with a Nauie of fixtic ships well furnished for warre, meant to haue made an end of that businesse, by the destruction of his aduersaries: but the Nauies ready to ioine battell, God tooke the cause into his owne hand, and with a thicke fogge so ouer-spread the seas, that one Fleet could not thereby see another; in which, Goodwin and his complices by contrary windes were driven to the place from whence they came. King Edward still in icalousie of Goodwins returne, rigged forth forty tall ships to secure the feas, which kept not fo ftrong a watch, but that Goodwin got by them, folliciting the people of Kent, Suffex, and Survey vnto his aid, and entring Thamesis, did the like vnto them in London, who accepted of his arrivage, though King Edward lay there: fo that without diffurbance his Nauie fell vp with the tide, through the fouth Arch of the Bridge, & a mighty ar-

my to his aid mustered vpo the same side of the river.

(18) The Nobilitie then feeing fide against fide. and all of them meere English, ready to hazard their bloud in the quarrels of strangers, wrought so with Edward and Goodwin, that they came vnto peace, and pledges were againe deliuered for the performance, whereof Wilmot the fonne of Earle Goodwin, and Hacun the sonne of Smaine his eldest, were sent to Duke William of Normandy; so great a trust he ever reposed in strangers. This Swaine, vpon a remorfe of conscience for the bloud he had spit, and especially for the flaughter of Beorne his colen & interceffor, who fued Stone Due, to the King for his peace, undertooke a pilgrimage to Ierusalem, and in his returne died in Licea, whether through an extremity of cold, or by the hands of Saacens, that spoiled all they met, it is vicertaine.

(19) Goodwin now restored, and in great credit with the King, cast the eye of disdaine vpon the Arch-Bishop Robert (as commonly fauorits conslate each others,)and himfelfe being a man eloquent and politicke, so possessed the King both against him and his Normans, that he required his owne banishment, with al theirs out of *England*, some few excepted, that were fauoured by the English: and now promising himfelfe much honour and authority; was fuddainly cut off by the stroake of death, surprizing him as hee sare at Table with the King vpon Monday in the Easter weeke, but died not till the Thursday following, which happened at Winchester, where hee was bu-

(20) Besides these former forraine and ciuil moleflations, other calamities happened to the land; for in the yeare of Grace 1047. and moneth of Ianuary, there fell so great a Snow, which conered the ground ento the middle of March, that Cattle & Fowles perished abundantly: and on the first day of that Month the yere following, a strange and terrible Earth-quake happened, which feemed to rent the ground afunder, and withall fuch Lightnings, as burnt vp the Corne, growing in the fields, wherby an excessive Dearth followed: fo that his raigne was neither fo peaceable nor prosperous, as Brightwold the Monke dreamed it should be. But as all these were scourges sent from God voon the Land for fin, so both Prince, Pastors, and people, had all seuerally their part thereof, as being jointly the causers of the same.

(21) For the King, in case of these Strangers, put the Land more then once in danger to bee loft : and himselfe refraining the bed of his vertuous wife committed thereby the offence forbidden by the Apoftle, and caused her his Queene, either to commit or be accused to have committed adultery. The Cler- 1.Cot.7.5. gie likewise altogether vnlearned, wanton, and vicious:for the Prelats neglecting the offices of Episcopall function, which was to tender the affaires of the Church, and to feede the flocke of Christ, liued themselues idle, and couetous, addicted wholly to the pomp of the world, and voluptuous life, little caring for the Churches & foules committed to their charge: and if any told them (faith Higden) that their Rand, Higden in liues ought to be holy, & their convertation without Polyr, dis, 626.24. Conetouines, according to the facred prescript, and vertuous examples of their Elders, they would scoffingly put them off with, Nunc aliud tempus, alii pro tempore mores; Times have mutations, So must mens fashions: and thus, (faith he,) they plained the roughnes of their doings with smoothnes of their answers. Briefly, the whole people were so loose and riotous, that as Seruafius Dorobornensis recordeth, they fell so fast to Gorufiu of Carcommit wickednes, as to bee ignorant of finfull crimes, was then held to be a great crime is felfe. And by the testimony of Malmesbury, the sinnes of those times euidently foreshewed a generall destruction : for the Englishmen (saith hee) transformed themselucs into the strange manners of the French, and that not onely in speech and behautour, but in their deeds, and Charters: their vie was then to goe fantastically appointed, their garments reaching but to the mid knee, their heads shorne, and their beards shauen all but the upper lippe, which grew with long mustaches; continually wearing massic bracelets of gold a-

Wil. Malmsb.

Chap. 6. | Edward Conf. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 37.

bout their armes, carrying markes upon their skinne poun-ced in of Jundry Colours; and the Clergie contenting themselves with trinial literature, could scarcely backe and hew out the words of the Sasrament. These then were Englands dolorous times both of blindneffe & lewdneffe, drawing downe Gods wrath for their destruction. (22) But howforter this King is reported to bee

Pelger. li.S.ca.24 Scal. Chron.

louing and facile towards strangers, (which in it selfe is a princely vertue if it be opportunely and warily vfed:) yet to his owne Mother, and Wife, vnnaturally ouer rigorous, imprisoning and bereauing them both of all Prince-like honor. Against Queene Emma, his Mother, were instigators Robert Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, and Earle Goodwin of Kent, the two greatest fauorites of the King. The causes objected were, her marriage with Canut the Capitall enemy of England; her regardlesnesse of succouring himself and his brother in their exiles, whom (as was alleaged) shee contriued to haue made away; and that under colour of private devotions, the had vied the company of wine Bishop of Winchester over familiarly, to her great dishonour and the Kings disgrace: for these and the like, hee tooke away all her lewels, and other fubstance, and committed her to safe custody in the Abbey of Werwell. (23) Indeed Malmsbury doth tax her to have been

infatiably couetous, and that shee was more tenderly

Wil. Malm?

affectionate to her Danish, then English children, whereby her loue was measured to their fathers, But for the imputation of her incontinencie, the washed it

off with as sharpe a triall as any that is recorded for truth, by vndergoing that ouer-hard law Ordalium, when in presence of the King her Son, & many of his Peeres, the passed ouer betweene nine plough-shares glowing red hor, bare-footed & blind-folded, without any hurt; vsing this speech to her leaders, as not knowing thee was past all danger, O Lord when shall I come to the place of my purgation: but having her eyes vncouered and feeing her felfe cleerely escaped, fell vpon her knees, and with teares gaue thanks to her Deliuerer, whereby she recoursed, both the lone and her former estate of the King, with the good esteeme and applause of the people: in memory whereof shee gaue nine Mannors (according to the number of plough-shares) to the Minster of Winchester, (wherin she had that triall,) and adorned the same with many rich ornaments;as likewise the King repenting the wrong he did her, bestowed on the same place the Iland (fo then it was) called Portland in Dorfetfhire, being about feuen miles in compasse: for so the chance, in those daies, was let, that who soeuer lost, the monks did winne. (24) Neither were this Kings proceedings bet-

ter with his owne Wife, howfoeuer fome have cloa-

ked that Fraud (fo the Apostle tearmes it) under the

faire robe of Chastity. For hee marrying Editha, a

Lady incomparable both for beauty and vertue, in

whose brest (saith Malmesburie) there was a Schoole

of all Liberall Sciences, refusedher Bed : but whether

it were for his debility, or hatred to Goodwin her fa-

ther, or loue of Virginity, I determine not; but am

fully perswaded, that the accusation of Adultery

wherewith Robert the Arch-bishop did charge her

was more vpon enuy to her father, then truth of so

foulea fact in her, whose vertues were so many, and

fo memorable, by report of Authors, that were eie-

witnesses themselves; for Ingulphus that had often-

Wil.Malmfb. vita Edwards. Marian, Scot.
1. Cor. 7. 5.
Egitha fome
call her.

Chro, Wal.

times conference with her, doth thus of her relate. There was given (faith hec) vnto King Edward for Ingulphusia biffhis Queene and wife, the daughter of Goodwin, a most beautifull Damosell, Egitha by name, excellent well learring of her Fathers, or Brethens barbaroufief, but mild, ing of her Fathers, or Brethens barbaroufnesse, but mild, modest, faithfull, and innocent, nor ever hurtfull to any;

insomuch, that this verse was applied to her: Sicut Spina Rosam, genuit Godwinus Egitham. From prickled stalke, as sweetest Rose: So Egith faire, from Godwin growes.

All these notwithstanding, the King expulsed her | Wel. Malant, his Court and Bed, and that with no little difgrace; for taking all her goods from her, even to the vitermost farthing, committed her prisoner to the Monasterie of Wilton, attended onely with one maid, where fhee, for a whole yecresspace almost, in teares and praiers expected the day of her release and comfort : All which unprincelie, and un-Spouflike vsage, as the King pretended, and faid, was, because shee onely should not line in comfort, when as her Parents and Brethren were banished the Realme: an unjust sentence surely, and unbefitting a Saint, thus to punish the sinnes of the fathers vpon their children, contrary to the prescript rule of God, who by his Prophet complainerh against fuch iniuflice, and regulateth it with this iust verdich, That foule that finneth shall die and for her pure and vn- Ezek, 18.4. uiolated chassity, himselfe on his death-bed spake, faying, that openly she was his wife, but in secret imbracings as his owne fister.

Edwardi vita

(25) Yet behold the blindneffe, and partiality of

those times, wherein for this his only refusall of nuptiall duties, the penciles of those that should have shewed histrue face to posterities, haue so enbellifhed the portraiture and lineaments, that vnto the beholder he feemeth now no mortall creature; his miracles and forefayings answerable to most of the Prophets. Which here to infert in fo worthy a fubiect and holy Kings life, were both to fill vp with a needleffe furcharge, who ie leaves of Times waste abuses, and to breed a suspicion of those other things in him, which we know for found truth; as was his gift from God, through his holy innocations, and touch of the place affected, to cure the disease called Struma, now the Kings Eaill, which vnto this day in his fucceffors, hath been experienced upon many fuch healings, by the touch of those gracious hands who have held the Scepter, as Gods Vicegerents of this most bleffed and happy Kingdome. That he had the spirit of Prophecie, many haue thought, as also the notice of his owne death, some constantly affirme; by a Ringsent him from Ierusalem, the same that hee long time before had given to a pilgrime : but these with his other miraculous cures, his fight of the Danes destruction, and the Seuen Sleepers in the Mount Cellion besides Ephefus, with infinite others, I leave to his Legend-writers, and Aluredus Riualensis to relate, who have written his many miracles with no sparing pen. Most true it is that of a little Monastery dedicated to S. Peter in Saint Peter him-felfe came down from heaven ro the west of London by the river of Thames, he made a most beautifull and faire Church, where he likewise prouided for his owne Sepulcher; and another dedicated to S. Margaret, flanding without the Abbey: this of Westminster he endowed with very rich reuenewes, and confirmed their Charters under his Broad Seale, being the first of the Kings of England, who wied that large and stately impression in their Royall Charters and Patents: the very true form wherof, according to the rude sculpture of those elder times, we haue portraited in the front of this Chapter, as we intend likewise to doe in the rest succeeding; whereof this vie at least, (if no other) may bee made, that by benefit of those paterns, men may know from what Princes they first received the Charters of their ancient possessions, and Patents of their honours, which the Princes stile (many beeing of one name) cannot fufficiently make knowne. The faid Church of Westminster he built for the dis-

of that See: Finally, when he had reigned the space

of twentie yeeres, fix moneths, and twenty feuen daies; hee died the fourth of January, the yeere of

charge of his vowed pilgrimage to Jerufalem, & that in fuch fumptuous maner, that it was in those daies the Patern to all other statelie buildings. He founded also the Colledge of S. Mary Oterie in the county of Deuon, and gaue vnto it the Village of Otereg, and removed the Bishoppes See from Cridington to Excesser, as a place of farre more dignity; where the King taking the right hand, and the Queene the left, led Leofricke from the high Altar, and installed him the first Bishop

King Edward the

tion of ther

T. Clifford.

place, it the fore

402

Christ Iesus one thousand fixtie fix, and was with great lamentations and folemnitie buried in his Church at Westminster, the morrow after the feast

of the Epiphanie.

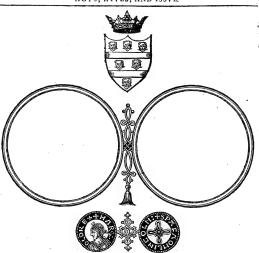
Hee was of person well proportioned, of countenance tober, and of complexion faire; naturally courteous and gentle to all (and thereby too prone and credulous to fuggeftions) louing to his fubiects, and ouer-louing vnto Strangers. A Prince of much vertue and integritie of life, notwithstanding which, had it not beene vailed vnder the faire-shew of Chafittie, he had not so easily been canonized for a Saint; wherein yet the feeming wifest taxed his wifdome, whilest vinder a goodly pretext of Religion and vowed Virginity, hee cast offall care of hauing usue, and exposed the kingdom for a prey to the greedy desires of ambitious humours.

His wife.

Editha, the wife of King Edward, was the daughter of Goodwin, Duke of the West-Saxons, and Earle of Kemt: her mother was Gith the fifter of Sweyne the yonger, King of Denmarke; the was married vnto him the yeere of Christs humanity, 1045, and tourth of his raigne. She was his wife eighteene yeeres; and furuiuing him liued a widow eight more, and in the eight yeere of King William the Conquerours raigne, died in December, the yeere of Christs birth, 1074, and was buried by her husband in S. Poters Church at Westminster.

HAROLD THE SECOND OF THAT NAME, THE SONNE OF EARLE GOOD-

WINE, AND THIRTIE EIGHT MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS LIFE, RAIGNE, ACTS, WIVES, AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER VII.



Ic people forrowing for the death of their King, and the Statef-men perplexed for choice of a new, Edgar Athelingstitle was worthy of more vnpartiall respect then it found : for him they held too young for govern-

ment : besides, a stranger borne, scarce speaking English: and withall, the pro-

phecies of Edward touching the alienation of the Precies of Eawara touching the allehation of the Alleredisa Crowne, the Interest of the Danes, and the claim that Duke william made, (both by gift and confanguini-ty,) bred great diftraction of defires, and opinions; but nothing concluded for feeling the State; no man either assuming or profering the Monarchiall diademe, because none had the power, or right to a-dorne therewith his owne head. In this Calme conference a fuddengale arofe, which blew all the failes pred for that winde into one Port. And that was Harold sonne to Earle Goodwine, a man (duly prizing

his many worthy parts) not vameet for a kingdom, who first succeeding his father in his Dukedome, and next Edward (his brother in Law) in his Kingdom, in patience, clemency, & affability bare himfelte most approuedly towards the vertuous, but with a Lions courage, and fierce countenance chaftifed the difordered, and indeede became another Maccabeus vnto the distressed Land, Whose kingly state before wee touch, it shall not bee amisse to lengthen his short raigne with his Acts and Life, as hee was a Subject, both with, and against his Lord and Predecessor.

(2) That hee tooke part with his Father against Euflace of Bulloigne, and King Edwards hafty commiffion, wee have shewed ; himselfe then enjoying the Earledom of Oxford, and so affected by those of Effex, Suffolke and Norfolke, Cambridge & Huntington-fines, that they fided in his cause against the King; But these delignes failing, (as commonly it is seene all attempts of Subjects against their Soueraignes doc) hee learned by banishment, what was the loffe of true honour, and by forbearance of battle (when halfe the Kingdome flood for him,) his dutie oblized vnto the Common-wealth. And growne againe into fauour with the King, carried himfelfe aniwerably vnto both.

An.D. 1055

(bap.7.

(3) Some icalousy conceined, Edward without any cause, banished Algar the son of Leofrike Earle of Chester, who with the helpe of the Irish and welchmen, under the conduct of Gruffith ap Llewelyn Prince of North-Wales (who had married his daughter,) did much hurt to the English, putting Rodulph Earle of Bereford to flight, with the flaughter of fine hun-dred men, spoiled the City, burnt the Minster and became Masters of mis-rule in those parts. Against thefe was Harold fent and with fuch manhood purfued his flying enemies, that passing through North-Wales, vpon the Snow-downes he pitched his Field: The Earle, and Prince Gruffith, not during to abide his presence, fled thence vnto South-Wales, and again tooke into Hereford; whereof Harold having intelligence hafted thitherward (leaving fufficient in the Snow-downes to mate the Wellb), and recouring the City, with a deepe trench and high rampire fortified it about where for the fauing of more bloud (and not vngratefull to Algar, who without grudge had relig-ned to him his Earldome, and whole R cuenewes at his returne from exile) a peace was concluded, and at Harolds request, Earle Algar and Prince Gruffith were (4) But Algar being again accused, & again aided by

Wd. Malwf.

his old affociate Gruffith, recovered his Earledome by force, whereat King Edward was highly displeased but most against Gruffith, who ever was ready to affiftany against him : whereupon Harold the second time appointed Generall, with a great host entred North-Wales, without fight of enemy, where he only burnt downe the stately Palace of Prince Oruffith, & foreturned to the King. But long the Welfb were not quiet, nor the Prince pleased of the harms to him An.D.1062 done. Wherefore making his forces verie strong he again molested the English,

(1) To restraine whom once more was Harold set

foorth, who with such terrour burst into Wales, that Prince Gruffith, in secret stole from his Campe, lea-Prince Graffith, interest from the from the sample, had using his Souldiers (if they would) to fight for themfelues, whereupon his whole army yeelded themfelues to Harolds mercy, and having Prince Graffith in their hands, cut off his head, and fent it to Harold, giving him pledges for affurance of peace, and the paiment of the ancient tribute which for a time had beene reteined: yet euer after hee carried fo heavy a hand on the Welfb, that as John of Salisburie in his Policraticon writeth, he ordained a law, that what Welfb-man focuer, should with weapon passe o-uer Offaes ditch, should have his right hand cutte off by the Kings officer.

(6) All now in quiet, and Harold withdrawne to his Mannor of Boseham vpon the riuage of the sea in the confines of suffex, there for his recreation, one

day hee tooke into a Fishers boate with small atterdants, neither those very skilfull Mariners, when no sooner were they lanched into the deepe, but a contrary wind came about, and droug the boat ypon the coalt of Ponthieu in France, where hee was taken by the Country people, and prefented to Guido their Earle, who a while retained him his prisoner, in hope of gaine by his rantom, bur Duke William requiring ir, he was conucied into Normandy, where he cunningly Mathem Paris, perfivaded the Duke, that his lecree comming out of England, was purposely to enter a league of amity Her. Husing. with him. The Duke then having prefent wars with the Britaines in France, tooke this his new friend and guest with him for his companion at Armes; whose ready policies followed with forward practife, wan him great estimation with the Dukeswhereupon be- Tand. High. twist them a couenant was made for the referuation of the English Crowne to the Norman, if it chan-ced King Edward to die without children; and the fameratified by Harolds corporall oath, with the affiancing of Lady Adeliza, the Dukes fift daughter, then a child and Harold a widower; which afterwards fell to his owne destruction, and the lands subuersion, as shall bee said,

(7) His last imploiment by holy King Edward, wit Malmibur. was against the tumultuous Northumbrians which had expulsed Tosto their Earle, and Harolds owne brother, where a peace was concluded without shedding blood, but with condition that Tofto should lose his Earledom: whereupo in great displeasure, he with his wife & children fled into Flanders, and euer after hated the person, and emulated the glory of Harold. The originall of these two brethrens quarrels beganne at Windfor, where in the presence of the King they fell from words vnto blowes, and that in such manner, as if refeue had not come, Tollo had di- Mat. Wallming. ed; for which difgrace, hee fecretly hied him into the Marches of Wales, and neere the City Here-fordat Portaflyth, where Harold had a house, then in preparing to entertaine the King, he flew all his brothers feruants, and them cutting peecemcale into gobbets, salted some of their limmes, and cast the restinto vessels of the meath and wines, sending his brother word, that hee had furnished him with poudred means against the Kings comming thither; which barbarous act caused deservedly his name to be odious vnto his Northambrians, and was lastly repayed with his owne death.

(8) Now albeit fome Heralds make Harold by birth but a Gentleman of one, and the first descent, which, were it so, should no whit blemish him who was more truely enobled with princely vertues; yet therein also it may seeme hee is mis-esteemed, seeing his Father was Goodwin a Duke by degree, the son of Wolnoth, and he the fonne of Egelmar, who was the fonne of Egelricke, surnamed Leofwine, and brother of Edrick Duke of Mercia, that married the daughter of King Ethelred of England, of whom wee have spo-

The mother of Harold was Githa the daughter of Duke Wolfe, and fifter to Sweyne the yonger, King of Denmark, by Efrich his wife, who was lifter to
Canute the great King of England; and himfelfe the
second sonne other borne; whose elder brother was Sweyne, that died on pilgrimage in his returne from Ierufalem, and his yonger were Tofto, Wilned, Grith,

(9) A former wife Earle Goodwin had, whose wit. Melast. name was Thira, the lifter of Canute, a woman fold vnto wickednesse for making marchandize of Englands beauteous virgins into Denmarke; thee folde them there at deare rates, to fatisfic her owne vnfatiate augrice, and the lufts of the lasciuious Danes, till a inft reward of Gods wrath fell on her by a thunderbolt falling from heaven, wherewith thee was flaine, Rand Higher, in to the great terrour of the beholders. One fonne by her Earle Goodwin had, who when hee was past childsage, riding vpon a horse (the gift of his Grandfather the King,) proudly giuing him the

Matth.Well.

Camb.Brit.

raigne, life and death, wee will now addresse to de-(10) Edwards life ended, and nothing determined touching his fucceffor, Harold the second day after, being the day of his buriall, made himfelfe King, none of the Nobility difliking what hee had done; for courteous hee was of speech and behauiour, and in martiall proweffe the onely man, as Wales well witneffed, more then once; friended by affinity with many of the Nobles, and by his new marriage with Edgitha the daughter of Algar (lifter of the Earles Morear and Edwin, and late wife to Gruffith ap Lhewelyn Prince of Wales) hee expected to bee both fided and assisted, if his cause came either to triall or voice

reine and spurre, was violently borne into the riner

Thamesis, and so sodainely drowned. Thus much

being premised of Harold before hee was King; his

(11) And the time hee well faw fitted his entrance; for Sweyne King of Denmarke (most dread by the English) was entangled with the Sweden wars; and William the Norman (that made claime from King Edward) at variance with Philip the French King; the friends of Edgar in Hungarie, and himfelfic a stranger, ouer young for rule: all which concurrents made Harold, without deliberation, or order from the State, to fet the Crowne on his owne head, regardleffe of all ceremony and folemne celebration; for which his act, as a violator of holy rites, hee too too much offended the Cler-

(12) The day of his Coronation was voon Friday, the fifth of Lanuary, being the feaft of the Epiphany, and yeere of Saluation 1066: none either greatly applauding, or disapprouing his presump-tion, except onely for the omission of manner and forme; to redeeme which, and to re-gaine the good will of all; no fooner attained hee the feate roiall, but he remitted or diminished the gricuous customes and tributes which his predeceffors had raifed, a course euer powerfull to winne the hearts of the Commons; to Church-men hee was verie munificent and carefull of their aduancements; and to grow more deepely into their venerable effeeme, heerepaired their Monasteries; but most especially that at Waltham in Effex, which hee most sumpruoufly new built, and richly endowed, giving it the name of Holy Croffe; vpon occasion that such a Croffe found farre westward, was brought thither by mira-cle. vt tradunt: and therefore hee chose out this place to powre forth his supplications, before hee marched to meete Duke william in the field. Moreouer, to fatisfie fuch Nobles as affected young Ed gars infer title, he created him Earle of Oxford, and held him in speciall fauour; in briefe, vnto the poore, his hand was euer open, vnto the oppressed he ministred instice, and vnto all men was affable, and meeke: and all to hold that vpright which on his head he had fet with an vn-euen hand: and deprined him of, vnto whom hee was Protector.

(13) Three severall reports are affirmed of Edwards dispose of the Crowne: the first was to the Norman Duke, who made that the anker-hold of his claime; the second was to young Edgar, vnto whom hee was great vncle; and the last vnto this Harold himselfe: for so fairh Edmerus, and also Marianus, who lived at the very same time, and writeth that Harold thereupon was facred and crowned by Aldredus Archbishop of Yorke; so that hereby hee is freed by some from the imputation of intrufion and wrong.

(14) His State thus standing, and his subjects contentment dayly increasing, presently it was somwhat perplexed by an Ambalfage lent from the Norman, putting him in mind of his couenant, and oath, aswell for the custody of the Crowne to his behoofe, as for the folemnazion of the mariage contracted betwixt his daughter and him.

(15) Harold, who thought himselfe now surely

feated in the hearts of his Subjects, and therefore also fure in his Kingdome, answered the Ambassadors, Subjects loue That he held their Masters demaund oniust, for that an arength. eath extorted in time of extremity, cannot bind the maker in conscience to performe st, for that were to ione one sinne with another; and that this oath was taken for feare of death or imprisonment, the Duke himselfe well knew: but admit it was voluntarily, and without feare; caction on dames is not commissing, and westown care; could I (laid he) then a fubicit, without the allowance of the King, and the whole State, give away the Crownes; fucefives to the preindice of both? surely a Kingdome is of a better account then to bee so determined in private onely betwixt two. With which kind of answeres he fent the meffengers away.

(16) The Norman, who till then thought Eng-

land fure to be his, and had denoted his hopes from a Duke to a King, stormed to see himselfe thus frustrated on the sudden, and in stead of a Crown to haue scornes heaped on his head; therefore nothing contented with this fleight answere, returned his Ambaffadors againe vnto Harold, by whom hee laid his claime more at large; as that King Edward in the Court of France had faithfully promifed the fuection with chim, and againe afterwards ratified the func to him at his being in England, and that not done without confient of the State, but confirmed by Stigandus Archbifhoppe of Canterbury, the Earles Goodwin and Syward, yea and by Harold himselfe, and so firmely assured that his Brother and Nephew were delivered or pledges, and to that end fent unto him into Normandy: that hee had no way beene constrained, hee appealed to Harolds owne conscience, who besides his vo-luntary offer to sweare, contracted himselfe to Adeliza his daughter (then but young, and now departed life) up-on which foundation the oath was willingly taken. (17) But Harold who thought his owne head as

fit for a crowneas any others, meant nothing leffe then to lay it downe vpon parley; and therefore told them flatly, that how foener Edward and he had tampered for the Kingdome, yet Edward himselfe comtampered for the kingdomes, yet Exiwall impleye com-ming in by election, and not by any title of inheritance, his promise was of no oxidate; for how could bee give that whereof he was not interessed, nor in the Danes time was ener like to be? And tell your Duke (faid he) that our kingdome is now brought to a settled estate, and with such lone and liking of the English, as that they with note one on a term of the engine, at that they will near don't am more a firmager to rule one, then, and as trucking the contract with his younger daughter, her well feeth, had so do both takes away that excelling of iterating time Crowney and fireth his young what he likewill fresholded remody against fact his flower; whole precepts i ment to follow: and therefore ((and he yill your Duck to weigh my flate with his own, both his and mine now in quiet, conditions the most and it the most his conditions to the conditions to sufficient for two, and either of them, employment enough for one mans Gouernment, and therefore both of them too much to bee well governed by one feeing that God himselse had set a sea betwixt them. With these and the like speeches hee shifted off the Dukes Ambassadors; without all princely entertainements, or courteous regard.

(18) The messengers returned, and Harolds anweres declared, William lion-like enraged, casteth his thoughts about plotting reuenge, and making fome oddes even that might impeach his designes, prepared all things for open warre. Harold likewise not sleeping his businesse, made ready his Fleete, mustered his souldiers, and planted his Garrisons along the Sea-coast. But in these his proceedings, behold a great and fearefull Comete appeared (feldom a signe to Princes of fortunate successe) vpon the twenty fourth of Aprill, and lasted onely seuen Duben. dayes, which drew the minds of the English, into Gueller Court. great suspense, now ready to enter into a double

(19) For as William the Norman for his part claymed England by gift; fo Harfager the Dane did by fuccession; the umors of both which, greatly terrified the heartes of the inhabitants: and yet behold, a third terrour vnexpected, contrary to na-

ture, and most mens opinions, suddainely arose: for Tosto the cruell Earle of Northumberland, and brother to Harold, expulsed by his people, and proscribed by King Edward, fled into France, where by the infligations of william, whose wives fifter hee had married (both of them the daughters of Balwine Earle of Flanders,) he got for his reuenge a Fleet furnished with men at Armes; and thus prepared, his first fury was shewed in spoiling the 'le of Wight; Ran, Higden. then coasting the shore, shrewdly endammaged Kent, whence hoising faile, fell foule vpon Lincolnshire; where Morear and Edwine Earles of Chefler and Yorkeshire, aided with the Kings Nauie, drone Wil. Malmsh. him from thence, though with tome loffe of their

Harold

Chap.7.

wil.Malmb.

Sistent Dun,

Mat. Weftm.

where of King Malcolme he had but cold comfort, tumultuous hast raised their powers, but were so ouerlaid by the Norwegians, that many were flaine. and more drowned, in passing ouer that riner.

(23) The Bridge gotten, and the English reduced into their rankes, Harold most boldly set vpon his enemieseuen in their Campe; where the battaile with equall valour and fortune, was maintained a time, till laftly the Norwegians difarrated and feattered, were flaine outright; and among them the two Chieftaines, Harfager and Tofto, with may others of worth and account, loft their lives. Olave the sonne of this Harfager, and Paul Earle of Orkeney, who kept their Fleet & Seas, whilest his Father and followers fought vpon land, were brought to King Harold, and to have their lives spared, abjured the Land, and thenceforth to attempt no hostilitie against the English peace; and with twenty small vessels to cary away their flaine and hurt, were fuffered to depart, bringing heavy newes into Denmarke of the loffe of their King, and ouerthrow of his Army.

(24) By this victory thus happily obtained, fell vnto Harold an exceeding rich booty, both of gold

and filter, besides the great Armado of Tosto and Harfager; whereby his mind was soone set alost, and he began to grow both proud, and odious vnto his Army, the rather, for that he divided not the spoiles vnto them that had deserued it; a wrong that the common Souldier doth continually murmure at, and commonly endure.

ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 38.

(25) Now in this current of King Harolds fortunes, William the Norman had the more leafure to ftrengthen his owne, and often conferring with his

Captaines about Englands invasions, found them cuer resolute and cheerefull that way; the difficultie

to gain other parts, it would be thereby fo wasted, as

that hardly it would be sufficient to defed their own;

that they thought it more safety to hold what he had

then on hazard of their own to inuade the territories

of others; & that this war inteded, inft though it were,

yet feemed not necessary, but exceeding digerous; be-

fides (faid they)the Normans were not by their alle-

giance bound to Military feruices in forrein parts &

therefore fuch paiments could not bee affeffed vpon

them . And although William Fitz-Ofberne, a man in

high fauour with the Duke, and as gratious among

the people, endeauoured by all meanes to effect it

yea, and (to draw on others by his example) prof-fered to let out forty tall Ships upon his owne Char-

ges towards this warre; yet would it not bee : There

fore Duke william bethought him on another way.

(26) The wealthieft men among all his People

he fent for, and feuerally one by one conferred with,

showing them his right and hopes of England, wherin

preferment lay eue to the meanest amongst them, on-

y money was the want, which they might fpare; nei-

ther should that be given, nor lent without a plenti-

ful increase: with such fair words he drew them so on,

that they frou who should give most, and by this

policy hee gathered fuch a maffe of money, as was fufficient to defray the warre. Then went hee to his

neighbour Princes, namely to the Earles of Anion Poicton, Mayne, and Bulloigne, promiting them faire

possessions in England; yea and vnto Philip the French

King, in case he would aide him, hee voluntarily offe-

red to become his vallall and Leige-man, and to hold

England by oath and fealty under him. But it beeing

thought nothing good for the State of France, that the Duke of Normandy, who already was not so plia-ble to the French King as was wished, should bee bet-

tered in his oftate by the addition of fo mighty a

Kingdome (the power of Neighbour Potentates be-

ing cuer suspected of Princes) so farre was the King

from yeelding any helpe, that he secretly maligned, &

openly diffwaded this his attempt of inuading Eng-

land. This French icalousy, the Norman soone per-

ceited, which made him to cast about yet another

onely refted, how to prouide money enough, the very finewes whereby the vast body of an Army must be knir,& strengthned for a subsidy being pro-(20) Tofto for more succour fled into Scotland pounded vnto the affembly of the Norman States, it was answered, that a former warre against the French had empoucrished much of their wealth, that if new wars were now raifed, & therein their substance spent

himselfe being busied with civill broiles; but howfocuer his expectation there failed, yet his purposes were continued with the assistance of Harold Harfager (that is, the Faire-lockes) King of Denmarke, who with three hundred shippes had entred the river Type for Englands invalion, after his conquest of the Hes of Orknes. Tofto therefore joining his Fleet to these Danes, in warlike brauerie, both of them enter the mouth of Humber, and drawing vp the river Oule, at Richhall landed theirmen, making spoile of the Country wherefocuer they came. To meet with these, the foresaid Earles Edwin and Morear, in a

(21) The enemy grown proud by this late victory hasted towards Yorke, the chiefe Citie of the North where planting his fiege, it was prefently yeelded vp, and hoftages deliuered vpon both parts for the performance of couenants. The Danes thus prospering, had most strongly encamped themselves; for backed they were with the German Ocean, flanked on the left hand with the river Humber, wherein also their Fleete rid at Anker, and had on their right hand and afront the river Derment; fo that it feemed impossi-

bleto raifethis fiege.

(22) But Harold thinking the coasts cleere from all danger, the Equinoctiall at hand, and Nauigation now past, the victuals in his Fleet spent, and notice from Earle Balwin of Flanders, that Duke William meant not his voiage that yeere, was about to dif-band his Army. When this fudden newes from the North pierced his eare, no need it was then to bid him make hafte thither, the cafe standing so neere him as it did. Therefore recalling his Army, posted to Torke, and from thence marched against the Norwegians, who lay secured with such advantage, as wee haue faid. Notwithstanding Harold couragiously or-dered his battell, and assaid to passe the Bridge called stamford, built ouer Derwent, which one onely Dane made good for a time against his whole host, and with his Ax flew forty of his men, till laftly this Dane was flaine with a dart.

> (27) For making his claime knowne vnto Alexander the second then Pope of Rome, with the wrongs done vitto Robert Arch-bishop of Canterbury, by Harold and his Father. (a text that might not bee read without a glosse,)he was so fauoured of his Holinesse (whose See was ever glad to interest it self in disposing of Crowns, that he both allowed well of his enterprize, and fent him a confectated Banner, (Saint Peter himselfe had none such in his Boate) to bee borne in the Ship, wherein himselfe in that expedition should take faile for England; and accurled al them that shold oppose themselves against him ; for even then the Popes had began to viurpe authority ouer Princes, & with their leaden blades to hacke into the iron

fwords of Emperours. (28) Thus furnished on all sides, he assembled his forces, and with a mighty Nany came to the Towne

Rand, Higden,

of Saint Valeries; which frandeth vpon the mouth of the River Some where a long time he lay wind bound to his great discontentment, and with many vowes importunating the fauour of that locall Saint, heaped daily anumber of gifts and oblations your his Altar; till laftly his defire was obtayned, and then with three hundred Ships fraught full of his Normans, Flemings, Frenchmen, & Britaignes, waighed Anchor, and with a gentle gale of wind arrived at Peuenfey in Suffex, vpon the twenty eight day of September. where Landing his men, to cut off all occasion or hope of returne, he fired his owne fleete, and vpon the Shoare erected a Fortresse to bee if neede were, a retiring place for his Souldiers.

Rand Higden in Polychr.11.6.c.19

(29) At his arriuage from Sca, as our Historians report, his foot chaunced to flippe, so that not able to recover himselfe, he fell into the mud, and all to bemired his hands; which accident was prefently conftrued for a lucky prefage: for now (faid a Captaine) o Duke, thou hast taken possession, and holdest that land in thy hand, whereof shortly thou shalt become King: As Cafar is faid to have done, when hee entred into Africa, who from thip-board at his landing fell in-to the lands, and merily faid, I doe now take poffefsion of thec, O Africa.

(30) From Penensey Duke William departed towards Hafting, where railing another fortification disulged to all the causes of his comming, as pretending to revenge both the death of his Normans, flain by the treachery of Goodwin & Harold, and the wrongs and banishment of Robert Gemeticus Archbishop of Canterbury, pretenses very slender, and en-forced out of scalon: but surely had not a third fate neerer his heart, the two former would haue paffed without the spleene of reuenge; namely, the donation of King Edward deceased, whereon he built his claime to the English Crowne. And there also by his Edict, he straitely charged his souldiers not in hostile manner, to wrong any of their perfons, who thorrly were to become his Subjects

(31) Harold in the North hearing of these news,

hafted with his Armie (whose Armour yet reaked with the bloud of the Normegians) rowards the fouth and with fuch power as possible hee could make, entreth London, where immediately a messenger fro Duke William was presented vnto him, demaunding no lesse then the Kingdome, and Harolds vassalage; vrging the same with such instant boldnesse, that Harolds furious indignation could hardly forbeare, against the law of Armes, to lay violent hands upon the Ambassador; so great a pride and confident hope had entred the heart of this late Victor: to thew both, with very great boldnesse, he disparcheta his Ambassadors to William, and by way of irefull checkes menaceth him, videffe forthwith hee departed backe into Normandy: when prefently mustering his men at London, hee found them much leffened by his battaile against the Norwegians; notwithstanding, many Nobles, Gentlemen, and others, whom the loue of their native Country inflamed, did ingage themselves for the field, against his common and dangerous enemy. He therfore with an vndaunted courage, led forth his Armie into Sußex (against the importunate suite of his mo-ther, who sought by all meanes to stay him where on a large and faire plaine, fearleseuen miles from the enemy, he pitched downe his battailes, and fent forth his Espials to descry his power,

(32) These comming into danger, were caught by the Normans, and presented to their Duke, who commanded them forthwith to bee led from Tent to Tenr, to be feafted, and difmiffed, without any harme or dishonour done. These returning to Harold told what they had feene, commending the Duke in his Martiall Prouisions, and his elemency to them-ward, only faid they, his Souldiers scent to be Priests, for their faces were all shauen, whereas the vie of the English was then to referue onely the upper lippe vncut, retaining or renewing the old manner of the ancient Britaines fo described by C.sfar : but King Ha- | Cafar in Coment. rold, who had bin in that country, wel knowing their errour, replied that they were men of great valour & front Souldiers in fight. V pon which speech, Girth, his younger brother, a man much renowned for mar-tiall exploits tooke occasion to adulte the King from being present at the danger of the Field: for (faid he) 'it stands not with the rule of policy, to hazard all in the triall of one battell, nor to depend wpon the euent of war, which euer is doubtful, victory being as ofic gotten by fortune as valor mature deliberatio doth ofte produce the lafest issues, & a provider delay is held to be the greatest furtherer of martial projects; neither will any thing ftrike greater terror into the Normans, then thou to be leaving, & enrolling a new Army, whereby they may ener expect and feare succeeding Battails. Againe (saidhe) thou best knowest what oath thine owne mouth harh

made vnto William; if lawfull, and willingly, then withdraw thy felfe from field, left for that thy finne the whole Hoft periff; for there can bee no power against God. I am free from such guilt, and therefore may the bolder fight, and either defeate this dangerous enemy, or more cheerefully dye in the defence of my countrey; & if thou wilt commit the fortune of Battaile into my Gouernance, affure thy felfe I will perform to thee the part of a louing Brother, and to my Countrimen of a valiant Cap-

(33) This wife aduice notwithstanding, destiny so driving him, he gaine-stood, imputing it a part of dithonour, and not befitting a Souldiour, (as he alwaies had beene,) to leaue the field Coward-like, when greatest glory was to be wonne, or in case of fortunate fuccesse, to be deprined of a part, and therefore re-prooued his brother for making this motion, and with difdainefull speeches, undervalued and embased the worth of the Normane

(34) Duke William now entred the field & both the hots standing ready for fight, the Norman, to spare the effusion of Christian bloud, ypon a pious affo-ction sent a Monke as a Mediator for peace, with offers to Harold of these conditions, either wholy to religne the Kingdome vnto him, and from thence forth to acknowledge the Duke for his Soucraigne: or elfcin fingle combat to trie the quarrel with him, in fight of the Armies; or laftly, to ftand to the arbitrement of the Pope, touching the possession and wearing of the English Crowne. But Harold, as one whom the heavens would depresse, accepting neither domesticke counsell, nor the Normans offers, referred the deciding of the matter vato the Tribunall of God, and answered, that it should bee tried the next day with more swordes then one.

(35) That next day was the 14. of Gräber, which vpon a credulous errour, heeheld ener to be fortunate, because it was the day of his Natiuity, and with hopefull affurance, defired greatly the approach of the fame: His fouldiers likewise as men whose heads were to bee crowned with the Laurels of victory, gaue themselves to licentions reuels, and in riotous banquets, with clamour, and noifes, spent the night; whereas contrariwise, the Normans, more wifely, and feriously weighing the busi-nesse in hand, bestowed the time in prayers and vowes, for the fafety of their Armie, and vi-ctorious successe: neither had the morning sooner fpread it felfe but their battell was ordered, and prepared for fight.

(36) Harold also with the like forwardnes, marshalled his battaile, placing in the Vant-guard the Kentifb men (who by an ancient custome had the front of the battaile belonging to them) with their heavy axes, or halberts. The Middlefex-men & the Londoners were in that fquadron, whereof himfelfe with his brother had the leading.

37 His enemies Vauward was led by Roper of Mountgomery, and william Fitz-Osberne, the fame confifting of Horsemen out of Anion, Perch, and little Brittaine.

Chap. 7.

Harold

were intermingled with companies of Archers. (38) The Normans without any confused, or disorderly shout, sounded the battaile, and advanced forward, discharging a fierce volley of arrowes like a tempessuous haile, a kind of fight both strange, and terrible vnto the Englash, who supposed their e-nemy had beene already even in the middest amongst them; when presently a furious charge was giuen to the Va-ward of the English, who resolutely had determined to couer the place with their bodies rather then to give one foot of ground, and bending all their forces, kept themfelues close together, wherby they valiantly, and with the flaughter of many put backe the enemy: which was so farre from daunting the Normans, that by it they were more whetted to re-enforce themselves upon them : when with an horrible noise, the battailes of both fides gaue the stroke; and now come footeto foot, and man to man, coped together in a most cruell fight The English standing thicke, and close, as if they had beene stucke one to another, abode the brunt, and charge of the Normans, and with fuch welcomes, that after many abloudy wound received, they were at point to recoile, had not Duke William, whose crown lay now at stake, both brauely performed the part of a Leader, and with his presence, and authority restrained them. The fight thus continuing, the Normans horsemen brake into the troupes of the English, and fore distressed the Souldiers on foot, yet not withstanding they still held out, and kept their array vnbroken : for Harold (no leffe carefull to keepe, then the other to gaine a diadem,) as a most valiant Cap-taine bare himself worthily every where. The Duke well perceiving that with fine force, and true valour, no good end could bee got, betooke himfelfe Wil. Malmib. to a stratageme, and commaunded his men to sound the retreat, but kept them still in such order of array, that they gaue backe in as good discipline as they

mans, Geffrey Martell, and a Germane Pensioner com-

manding them: In the Rere-guard was the Duke him-

felfe with the whole manhood of Normans, and the

flower of his Nobility & Gentry, all which battallios

came on. (39) The English supposing the Normans to have fled, and themselves the masters of the field, began in eager pursuit carelesly to vntwift, and display their rancks; when on the fodaine, the Normans having their wished opportunity, and winding about, charged the enemy a fresh, who now being scatteringly difranked, and out of all order, were slaine down on all fides, not able to recouer their battaile; many thus borne downe, and flaine, none by flight fought to escape the field, but rather to maintaine their honour in Armes, cast themselves into a round, choofing there to die in the cause of their Country, then cowardly to forfake the Standard of their King: and therefore with bold refolutions encouraging one an other, they turne head and resist a long time : but showers of arrowes like a stormy tempest falling thicke among them, one, most fatall, and vulucky for the English, wounded Harold into the braines through the left eye; so that falling from his horse to the ground, was vnder his owne standard slaine,

(40) And yet Giraldus Cambrenfis (I know not by (40) And yet or alass Camprenjis (1 know not by what inducement,) relates the iffue of this Battaile formwhat otherwife, affirming, that Harold with loffe of his Eye, but not of his life, from the field fledto the City of Westchester, and there long after led a holie life, and made a godly end, as an Anchoret in the Cell of Saint James, fast by the church of S. John. With Ha-rold died his Brethren Gyth, and Leofwin, with most of the English Nobility, besides the slaughter of fixty feuen thousand, nine hundred seuenty foure of their Souldiers: Bremenfis faith an hundred Thousand.

(41) Duke William in this Battail had three horses flain under him; God (faith Marianus) fo defending his person, that though multitude of darts were thrown against him, yet not a drop of his blood was fpile by the Enemy, and this Bastaile wonne with the loffe onely of fixe thougand and thirteene of his men. Whole wodden bowes (as Iohn Roufe is of opinion) gained the Normans that great victory; for the Arrowes shot leuell, or directly forward, wounded the English that stood in the front, and vpright; the other fhot on high, galled at the fal, those that were more remote, and the backs of fuch as flooped to shunne the

(42) This battle was fought in Suffex 7, miles from

Hastings, vpon Saturday the fourteenth of Ollober, and yere of Grace 1066. Wherin the dolefull destruction of the English fell, and the glorious Sun of the Normans even in the shutting of the day did arile; when perished the Royall blood of the Saxons, whose Kings first had made this Kingdome into Seuen and afterward of them fo glorious a Monarely, that it was not inferiour to any in Europe, and her Monarchs fo renowned for princely magnanimity, as that many of them were ranked with the best in the world: But now the all-ordering hand of God (vnto whose becke not onely this Ball of the Earth, and the Rulers thereof, but eyen the Heavens themselves, and all the powers thereof must bow) either for the finnes of the English which were many, and great, or to graffe one more fair and loger-continuing bud vpon this dried, and decayed flock, brought that forrein offpring into this his nurfery of Britaine, whose branches, as the vine, have spread both fruitfull and farre; and whose rootes are fastned as the trees of Libanon: the Kings thereof, even from the loines of this Great Conquerour, holding on a royall fuccession for the space of these fine hundred forty fine yeares, their iffues topped with the highest Cedars of the world, & their branches spread thorowout al Christendom; which wee pray may still proceede and continue, whilest the Sun and Moone have their being.

(43) This victory thus obtained, Duke william wholly afteribed vnto God, and by way of a folemne fupplication or procession gaue him the thanks ; and pitching for that night his Pauilio among the bodies of the dead, the next day returned to Hallings, there to consult vpon his great, and most prosperously be gun enterprise, giving first commandement for the buriall of his slaine Souldiers.

(44) But Morear, and Edwin, the unfortunate Queenes Brethren, by night eleaping the battel, came vato London, where with the rest of the Peeres, they began to lay the foundation of fome fresh hopes, pothing the confidence to raile a new supply, & to comfort the English (who through all the Land were stricken into a fearfull astonishment with this vnexpected newes) from a despairing seare, shewing the chance of warre to be mutable, their number marne cance of ware to be motable, their minder ma-ny, and Captaines fufficient to try another Field. Al-fred, Arch-biflop of Yorks, there prefent, and Prefi-dent of the Affembly, floutly, and prudently gaue his counfell forthwich to confectate, and crowne young Edgar Athelmg (the true heire) for their King; to whom confented likewise both the Sea-Captaines, and the Londoners. But the Earles of Yorkshire and Cheshire, Edwin & Morear (whom this fearfull state of their country could not diffwade from diffoyaltic and ambition) plotting secretly to get the Crowne to themselues, hindered that wise and noble designe. In which while, the forrowfull Queene their fifter was conucied to West-chester, where, without state or ti-

tle of a Queene, she led a solitary and quiet life,
(45) The Mother of the slaine King did not so well moderate her womanly passions, as to receive either comfort, or counsell of her friends: the dead body of her some she greatly desired, and to that end fent to the Conqueror two lage Brethren of his Ab-bey at waltham, who had accompanied him in his vnfortunate expedition. Their names (as I finde them recorded in an old Manuscript) were Ofegod and Ailrie, whose message to the Conqueror not without a-bundance of teares, and feare, is there set downe in the tenor as followeth.

"(46) No

lebs le Tailear in

Mat Neftminft. Rand Higden.

wil.Maimfb.

Chap.7.

(47) Your King (faid he) vinnindfull of his faith, although hee have for the present endured the worthy pu-"although the have for the prejent ename cases worsny pu-"missment of his fault, yet hath he not therefore defenued "to want the honour of a Sepulcher, or to be unburied: "were it but that he died a King, how source her came by the Kingdome,my purpose is for the reuerence of him, and for the health of them, who having left their wives and possessions, have here in my quarrell lost sheir lives, to build here a Church and a Monastery, with an hundred "build here a Church and a Monaftery, with an handred
"Monkin it is pray for them forcers; and in the dis"Church to lary your King abous thereft, with allianour mot of gerta & Prince, and for his fake to endow
the fame with great renormer.
(48) With which his courteous speech and promilies, the two religious statics comforted, and cutomics, the two religious statics comforted, and cutomics, the two religious statics comforted, and cu-

contaged, againe replied.

" (49) Not so, noble Duke, but grant this thy servants most humble request, that we may, for God, by thy leaue,
receive the dead body of our Founder, and to bury it in the place which himselfe in his life time appointed; that we cheered with the prefence of his body, may thereof take comfort, and that his Tombe may be unto our Suc-

ceffors, a perpetuall Monument of his remembrance.

(50) The Duke, as he was of disposition gracious. and inclined to mercy, forthwith granted their defires : whereupon they drew out store of gold to prefent him in way of gratulation, which he not only vt-terly refused, but also offered them plenty to supply whatfoeuer should be needfull for the pompe of his funerall, as also for their costs in trauell to and fro ; gitting ftrait commandement that none of his Souldiers should presume to molest them in this their bufinesse, or in their returne. Then went they in haste to the quarry of the dead, but by no meanes could finde he body of the King, for that the countenances of all men greatly alter by death; but being maimed and imbrued with bloud, they are not knowne to be the menthey were. As for his other regall Ornaments, which might have shewed him for their King, his dead corps was despoiled of them, either through the greedy desire of prey, (as the manner of the Field is) or to be the first bringer of such happy newes, in hope of a Princely reward; vpon which purpole many times the body is both mangled and difmembred; and fo was this King after his death by a base Souldire,gasht and hackt into the legge, whom Duke Wil-liam rewarded for so vnsouldier like a deed, casshiering him for cucrout of his wages and wars. So that Haro'd lying stript, wounded, bemangled, and goared in his bloud, could not be found or known, till they fent for a woman named Editha, (for her paffing beauty furnamed swan-shals, that is, Swans-necke, whom he entertained in secret loue before he was King, who by some secret marks of his body to her well knowne, foundhim out; and then put into a coffine, was by divers of the Norman Nobility honourably brought vnto the place, afterward called Battle-bridge, where it was met by the Nobles of England, and so conneied to waltham, was there solemny, and with great lamentation of his mother, roialinterred, with this rude Epitaph, well befeeming the time, though not the perion.

Hen cadis hofte fero, Rex a Duce Rege futuro, Firmini iufli lux est tibi,luce Calixti; Pronior hine superas, hine superatus eras. Ergo tibi requiem deposcat utrumque perennem: Sicque precetur eum quod colit omne Deum.

A fierce foe thee flew; thou' a King, be King in view; Boih perce foth perceleff, both feard and both fearles; That fad day was mixt, by kirnis and Calix. This me help there to vanquiff, other made thee liquiff; Both now for thee programd by Requencing; Solet good more all, to God for thee call.

(51) This Kingsraigne was not fo ful of dayes as of great troubles: being but the space of nine months and nine dayes in whom was completed the Period Guill'son. and nine dayes, in whom was completed the Period of the Saxons Empire in Britaine, after they had continued from their first erected kingdome by Hengist in Kens, the space of sixe hundred and tenne yerres, without any reuersement or interruption saving the small Inter-Raignes of these three Danish Kings, of finall Inter-Raignes of these three Dauss Kings , of whom we have spoken. And although . simush the Marola as being an inpose man, and for the by user strength of the Abboto & Rainases, (the Legander of S. Estande life) much commend him for his controval of the strength inter, much comments aim for his courteous affabration, entry controlled in the present and the fall of an office and for his warther present for non-marchable vinco him and was reputed (tath hec) vertue befitting a Sourraigne commender, and borne cuen to vertue befitting a Sourraigne commender, and borne cuen to vertue to be in the fall of the controlled with the source to the controlled with the source to the source of the controlled with the source to the source of the controlled with the source of to repaire the decaied state of England; had he not, in the haughrinesse and opinion of his own valour and prudence, so much addicted himselfe to his owne resolutions, and roo much neglected the wife deliberations of his best friends and counsellers.

His Wines.

(52) The first wife of Harold, whom he had maried and buried before he was King, I find not named by any of our writers, but that he had fuch a one, appeareth, where it is recorded that hee was a Widower, what time he contracted the Conquerors daughter; and that also he had children of such age, that they made warres against King Welliam in the second of his Raigne; which it is probable, he had not by Editha, his Swannes neck, but were legitimat, and by this lawfull, though nameleffe Mother.

(53) Algith, the second wife to King Harold, was the widow of Gruffith ap Lhewelyn King of North-wales, the fifter of Edwine and Morcar Earles of Water, the inter of Extrine and Moren Earles of Torkshire, and Chefter, and daughter of Algar sonne of Leafrick, son of Leofwine, all Earles of Chefter, Licefter and Lincolne: She was married vnto him beeing then but Duke, in the last yeare of Edward Confessors raigne, and of Grace 1 065, neither did thee long enioy him,or her Queenly title, after his afpiring to the Crowne; for being refident in London when hee was flaine, from thence fhee was conueyed by her bro-thren to Westchester, where she remained in meane eflate, and in good quiet (which vivally most attends the meanest) without any princely shew or name, during the rest of her life, which lasted a great part of the

His I sue.

(54) Goodwine the eldest sonne of King Harold, being growne to some ripenesse of yeares in the life of his Father, after his death and ouerthrow by the Con-

querour, tooke his brother with him, and fled ouer into Ireland: from whence he returned, and landed in Sommerfethire, flew Ednoth (a Baron fometime of Journer returner, new Easons (a Daron tomecune or his Fathers) char concurred him, and taking great preyes in Denon-fbire and Cornervall, departed till the next yeare. When comming againe, hee fought with Beorn an Earle of Cornwall, and after retired into Ireland, and thence went into Denmarke to King Swam his Colen-German, where he spent the rest of his life

(51) Edmand, the fecond former to King Harold, went with his Brother into Breland, returned with him into England, and was at the flaughter and outerthrow of Ednah, and his power in Sommer-fession; at the special committed in Cornwall and Denonfbire; at the conflict with the Cornifb Earle Beorn; passed and repassed with him in all his voiages. inualions and warres, by fea and by land, in England and Ireland; and at the last departed with him from Ireland to Denmarke; tooke part with him of all pleafure and calamity what locuer, and attending and depending wholly vpon him, liued and died with him in that Country.

(56) Magnus the third fon of King Harold, went with his brothers into Ireland; and returned with

them the first time into England, and is never after that mentioned amongst them, nor elsewhere, vn-lesse, (as some doe coniceture)) he be that A agnue who feeing the mutability of humane affairs, became an Anchoret, whose Epitaph pointing to his Danish originall, the learned Clarenciaux discouered in a little desolate Church at Lewes in Suffex, where ir the gaping chinks of an Arch in the wall, in a rude and ouerworne Character, certaine old imperfect verses were found, which hee supposeth should bee

Clauditur hic Miles Danorum regia proles. Magnus nomen ei, magna nota Progeniei. Deponens Magnum, prudentior induit agnum Prapete pro vita, fit paruulus Anachorita.

Here lies a Knight of Danish regall race, He * Magnus hight; great name note of great place: But Magnus left, an . Agnus mild he prou'de,

From world bereft, an Anchorite below d. (57) Wolfe the fourth sonne of King Harold, See. neth to bee borne of Queene Algith his second wife for that hee was neuer mentioned among his other brethren, and having better friends by his mothers fide, was left in England, whereas they were forced thence; neither is he spoken of during all the raign of the Conquerour, and therefore at his cntrance may probably be thought to have beene but an Infant: yet after his death he is named among his prifoners with Earle Aforem (his vncle, if Queen Algith were his mother) and was by King William Rufin re-leased, and honoured by him with the Order of Knighthood,

(58) Gunhild a daughter of King Harold is mentioned by Iohn Capgraue (the Writer of the English Saints) in the life of Wolfian Bilhop of Worcester, reporting her to haue beene a Nunne in a Monastery of England; who, among the many miracles done by the land Wolffan, (which hee numbreth by tale, according to the superstitious manner of the time where-in he liued) declareth, how he restored this Lady to her perfect eye-fight, whereof by a dangerous infirmity, the was almost wholly, and in most mens

opinions, vncurably deprined.

(58) Another daughter of King Harold not named (58) Miother caughter of this carross not hands by any Story-writer of our own nation, is mentioned by Saxe Orimations in his Daniff history, to hauecome into Denmarke, with her two brethren; to haue been very honorably intertained by King Swaine the yon-ger, her kinfman; and afterwards to haue been as honorably placed in marriage with Gereflef, called in La-tine Iariflaues, and of the Danes Waldemar, King of the Ruffians: and by him to have had a daughter, that was the mother of Waldemar, the first of that name King of Denmarke, from whom all the Danifb Kings for many ages after succeeded.

The end of the eighth Booke.



The

410



A CATALOGVE OF THE

ENGLISH MONARCHES FROM VVILLIAM THE CONQUEROVR, VNTO KANG JAMES, NOVY SO LE MONARCH OF GREAT BRITAINE, WHOSE ACTS ARE ENTREATED OF IN THIS ENSVING HISTORIE.

	KINGS.	BEGINNINGS.	R	A 1 G	N E.	DEATH.	BVRIALL.
		Yeeres Months Daies	yeers	mont	bs daies	Yeeres Months Daies	
	WILLIAM I.	1066. Oct. 14. Sat.	20	10	26	1087 Sept. 9 Thurf.	Cane.
	WILLIAM 11.	1087. Sept. 9. Thurf.	12	10	22	1100 Aug.1 Wedn.	Winchester.
	HENRY 1.	1100. Aug. 1. Wednf.	35	3	1	1135 Decem. 2 Mor	Reading.
-	STEPHEN.	1135 Dec. 2 Monday	18	è	17	1154 Octob.25 Mon	Feuersham.
	HENRY 11.	11540A. 25. Mon.	34	8.	12	1189 July 6 Thur	Fonteuerard.
	RICHARD L	1189 Iuly 6 Thurfd.	9	8	00	1199 Sprille Tuef.	Fontenerard.
.	IOHN.	1199 Apr. 6 Tuefd.	17	7	13	1216 Octob. 19 Wedn.	Worcester.
	HENRY 111.	1216 Off. 19. Wedn.	56	0	27	1272 Nou. 16 Wedn.	Westminster.
	EDWARD L	1272 Non. 16. Wedn.	34	7	2 I	1307 July 7 Frida.	Westminster.
	EDWARD 11.	1307 July 7 Friday	19	6	15	1326 depo .lan. 22.Sa.	Glocester.
	EDWARD III.	1326 lan. 25 Satur.	50	4	27	1377 June 21 Sund.	Westminster.
	RICHARD 11.	1377 lune 21 Sunday	22	2	7	1399 dep. Sep. 29.mn.	Westminster.
	HENRY IIII.	1399 Sept. 29 Mend.	13	5	21	1412 March 20 Sund.	Feuersham.
٠	HENRY r.	1412 Mar. 20 Sund.		4	11	1422 Aug. 31 Mun.	Westminster.
	HENRY VI.	1422 Aug. 31. Mon.	38	6	4	1460 depo sed.Mar.4	Windfore.
	EDWARD 1111.	1460 Mar. 4.	22	1	5	1483 Aprill 9	Windfore.
	EDWARD v.	1483 April 9	00	I	12	1483 murthered.	Tower of Lond,
	RICHARD 111.	1483 iune 22.	2	I	٥	1485 flain Au.29 Mo.	Leicefter.
	HENRY VII.	1485 Aug. 22 Mon.	23	7	0	1509 Aprill 22 Sund.	Westminster.
	HENRY FIII.	1509 April 22 Sund.		9	5	1546 Jan. 28 Thur.	
	EDWAD VI.	1546 Inn. 28. Thurf.		5	9	1553 July 6 Thur.	Westminster.
	MARY.	1553 July 6 Thurfd.	5	4	11	1558 None.17 Thur.	
	ELIZABETH	1558 Non. 17.Thur.	44	4	6	1602 March 24 Thur.	Westminster.
	IAMES.	1602 Mar.24. Thur.	N	os,	TE F	LORENTE, BEA	



The



SVCCESSION ENGLANDS MONARCHES FROM

THE ENTRANCE OF THE NORMANS VNDER WILLIAM THE CONOVEROR: VNTILL THE REGALL RIGHTS OF THE WHOLE ILAND WERE BY GODS PROVIDENCE VNITED VNDER
ONE IMPERIALL DIADEME, IN THE PERSON OF OVR PRESENT SOVERAIGNE KING TAMES, SOLE MONARCH OF
GREAT BRITAINS: THEIR SEVERALL ACTS,
ISSVES, RAIGNES, ARMES, SEALES,
AND COINES.

CHAPTER I.



Hat hath beene spoken touching the Originals. Lawes, and Customes of the Saxons, and Danes, the ancient Conquerours, and possessor of this our land, may in like fort bee faid of the Normans (being a brach from the same roote) of whom wee are now to

write, fauing only that the name is not fo ancient, and therfore their Manners may bee thought more citill. Through the mifty-darke times of which Stories, to-gether with that of the Romans, and of our Britaines (wherein no brighter Sun did shine vnto vs) by the afsistance of the all-seeing power which bringeshlight out of darknes, I am lastly approached to these times of more light, and vnto affaires of more certaine truth: whose Current to my seeming is made now Nauigable, by the many writers that haue emptied their full channels into this Sea: wherein, though in respect of my owned defects, and that so many Mafter-Bilotes haue failed before me, it may seeme but presumption for me to direct another course, with a purpose to better what they have so well performed : yet to make a complete History from the first to the last : giue me leaue to continue, as I haue begunne.

tion with the warlike Norwegians, Swedens, & Danes, tooke their Name of that Northern Climate from whence they came first, which was that Coast of Ger-many, anciently called Cimbrica Cherlonesus, and Nor-way, for that it tendeth in respect of situation so farre Northward; and from hence, and the parts adjacent, the Saxons, lutes, Angles, and lately the Danes, made their incursions into this Land.

(3) This Tract therfore as the wombe of coccution. by the dispose of the Omnipotent, after it had produced those Nations which formerly made Coquests of Britane, now againe brought forth (as it were) her lastborne Benismin, who descering the pray in the morning, bath dissided the spoile in the Essening, and hitherto con-tinued their glorious fame atchieued; which I pray, may extend to the last period of Times being: For these Normans sirst by force got footing in France with the Dominion, and Stile of a Duke, and next the Diadem of this faire Empire, the last and most famous Monarches of the fame.

(4) These, formerly practizing Piracies upon the

Coasts of Belgia, Frizia, England, Ireland, and France, proceeded in their hardy courses even to the Mediteranean Sea: infomuch that Charles the Great feeing their roauing tall Ships, and confidering the bold at-tempts they underthooke, with a deepe figh, and abundance of teares, is reported to haue faid : Heanie am I at the very heart, that in my owne life time, these Ptand I a the very reast, that it may some eige the experience, they it rates date to come upon my Coalit, whereby I foresee what missibile they will worke upon my Posserite. Which indeede proued so great, that in their publike Processions, and Letanies of the Church, this Petition was added, From the rage of the Normans, Good Lord deliner vs. This feare, and praier notwithflanding, they draue the French to such extremitie, that King Charles the Bald was forced to give vnto Huffing a Norman, Arch-pirate, the Earledome of Charters, for to afwage his furie exercifed upon his People; and againe, King Charles the Groffe, granted vnto Godfrey the Nor-mane part of Neustria, with his Daughter in mariage: Yet all this sufficed not, but that the Normans by force of Armes scated themselues neere vnto the mouth of Sein, taking all for their owne that lay compriled betwixt that River and the River Loyre: which

Countrey afterwards tooke the name of Nor-manny fro these Northern Guests, at what time King Charles the simple, confirmed it vnto Rollotheir Captaine.

(5) This Rollo, as fay the Danish Historians, was the son of Gaion, a great Lord in Denmark, who with

his brother Gosrin were appointed to depart the Country (according to the Danish customes) to seeke

their aduentures abroad, and leaue more roome for the rest at home ; but these refusing the order made warre vpon the King, in which, both Guion the Father and Gourin the fonne, were flaine, and Rollo forced to fly for fafeguard of his life, with whom went a num-ber of Gallants to feeke Fortunes Court, and not a few

names, I haue chosen in this place to insert, leaving the credit therofto him the Reporter. (6) Rollo, a Nobleman of Denmarke, (faith he) and roopowerfull in his Kings eye, was forced with a Nauy to aducature his Fortunes into forreine parts, whose first arrivage, as he saith, was in England, where many of the Danish nobility had formerly tried their valours and fome of them attained to the Scepter, i

not of the whole yet of a great part of that kingdom

mildoers, or out-lawedmen : whole Acts in Fingland

registred by Albertus Krantius, seeing they vary from our owne historians in circumstances of times, and

Indeed, (faith he) England from the beginning was no

tifull prefents, I can doe no leffe, then willingly bestow vpon the fourth Duke of Normandy, and ruled the fame for | fourth Duke of you thefe my paines for your fafetie : it is no more then your twenty foure yeeres: In whose time the Normans Rev. Migdon began to be great, and gracious in England, the mardeferts doe challenge, neither will I accept, or feeme fo uncourteous as to expect, for my paines, any part of your doriage of his Sifter making their way : his first wife was minion. Your felfe now may well gouerne it; for France Indith the Sifter of Geffrey Earle of Britaigne, by whom he had iffue, Richard, the first Duke of Norealles for my presence: keepe therefore those your Pledges. brought to you by your Subjects, and there is no doubt but you shall hence-forward governe your Kingdome in a setmandy, and Robert the fixt, William a Monke, and Nitholes Abbot of S. Andrewes: his daughters by her led and contentfull quietnesse.

(18) The King could not containe those his eies. were, Alice, that died yong, and another of the fame name maried to Reinold, Earle of Burgoine, and Eleanor espoused to Baldwin the fourth Earle of Flanders which now beheld in a stranger so strange and vnexwho bare vnto him Baldwin the fifth, father of Mana empled kindnes, from refoluing into teares ; gitting him both hearty thanks, and rich gifts, feeing hee that was Queene of England, and wife to the Conquecould not fasten on him any portion of his King-dome : of whom, all that Rolls defired was this, that (24) The fecond wife to Duke Richard the fecond he would give licence to fuch voluntary Souldiers as was Estrike, Sister to Canute King of England, from would goe with him into France: whereto Alflen, reawhom he purchased a Diuorce, without any iffue bedy in all things to gratific his defire, gladly conde-feended, and furnished him with attendants. gotten on her body; and then taking for his thrid wife a faire Gentlewoman named Paula, had iffue by her William Earle of Arques, and Mauger Archbishop (19) But leaving Krantius the Dane, as likewise Geme ticensis the Norman, to fauour their Country, & these of Roane. (25) Richard the third of that name, and fifth Richard 3. the fith Duke of their reports, to the best liking of the judicious; most certaine it is, that the French King Charles, commonly Duke of Normandy, in the second yeere of his Dukedome died an vntimely death, not without suspition of Poyson, ministred by Robert his younger brother; called the Simple, gaue the Duchie of Normandy with his daughter Gilla (whose mother was Eguina, the who presently was inucsted in the Dutchie, for that he daughter of Edward the Elder, King of England) vnto left no iffue of his body to fucceed. Rollo the Dane, as is recorded in an old manuscript (26) This Robert (Duke Rithards Brother) was a man of a magnanimous spirit, and of fuch bounter busilebrality as is vncredible. Hee comming to the City. Phalefya in Normandy chanced to fee a most belonging to the Monastery of Angiers. And when Rollo was baptized, Charles receiving him for his God-sonne at the Font, he was there required to doc homage for his Dukedome received, and inioined therein to kille the Kings foot, which hee did, but with some digrace to King Charles, and bound it with an oath that hee did not receive it vpon courgoodly and beautifull damofell, dancing among omeane parentage (the daughter of a Skinner, faith Palyardas de suige bleading feature and comely grace fo pleafed the Duke shared in the suige bleading feature and comely grace fo pleafed the Duke shared in the suige bleading the suige blead (20) This Rollo by his fecond wife Popes, (for Gille pleased the Duke, that taking her to his bed, he bedied childlesse) daughter to the Earle of Besin and got on her , William his onely fonne, (who proued the Baileule, had a sonne named william, surnamed Longonely man of the Normans blood) and after upon a espee, and a daughter called Girlota, who was afterremorfe of conscience, vnderrooke a pilgrimage vnwards married to the Duke of Guyan. to Ierusalem , from whence hee neuer againe re-(21) William Long-effee (to called of the Long Sword he vivally wore) the second Danish Duke of Norturned. Arles in Roberts life time was married to Herlaine a Norman Gentleman, but of meane sub-Duke of Warmandy, took vnto wife Sporta the daughter of Hubert Rancesto whom the bare Ode Bithop of Baion, by his halfe-brother William created Earle of Kent; and Ro Earle of Sentlis, by whom hee had onely Richard his fonne: this william receiving baptisme, received therewith a new name, and was thenceforth called bert created Earle of Mortaigne, aman of a dull and groffe wit; & a daughter named Emma, wife to Richard Wil. Tactym of Robert, who having governed his Dukedome with count of Auranehes, (a Province in Normandy,) the mother of Hugh Lupus Earle Palatine of Cheffer. And thus farre breefly I have thought good to profecute great moderation the space of twenty yeeres, was guilefully murthered by the working of Lewes King of France, to the great gricfe of his people, who so far followed the reuenge, that they intercepted Lewes in the Line of the Normans, for the better illustration of our English Stories, the Citie Rothsmage, and deteined him their prisoner, till he agreed to these Articles: That young Richard (27) Duke Robert intending his pious pilgri-Polyer. nage vnto the holy land, affembled all his Nobility vnto the City Fifean, where he caused them to I weare should succeed his flaine Father in the foresaid Dukedome; and that thenceforth when the King & Duke fealty vnto his sonne William, being then but seuen fhould conferre together, the Duke should bee gift yeares old committing him to the Gouernance of with his Sword, and the King disabled either of one Gilbert, an Earle of much integrity and prudence, Sword or knife: to which Lewes yeelded vpon his and the defence of that Government vnto Henry the French King, and so in the eight yeare of his Dukecorporall oth.
(2.2) Richard thus established, gouerned his dome, fer on his voyage for Ierufalem; who entring Dukedome the space of fifty two yeeres. Hee was a man of an admirable fortitude, and therefore was I sarye, and not able to trausile, was born in a litter vpon the Saracens shoulders, and neere vnto the Citie, called Richard the Hardy. His first wife was * Agnes daughter to Hugh le Grand, Earle of Paris, Lord Ab meeting a returning Pilgrime, defired him to report Walfing Toolig. in his Country what he there faw, which is, (faid hee) that I am carried to Heauen vpon the Diuels backe: but so farge was he borne that he neuer returned, bebat of Germans, and Father to Hugh Capet of Frances but the dving iffueleffe, he secondly married Gunnor, a Gentlewoman of the Danish bloud, (whom he had ing preuented by death: which the Rorman Peeres hearing, made vie thereof for their owne ambitious kept his Concubine before) by whom he had three ends, without any regard of young William their Pufonnes and three daughters; the first was Richard that pill and Soueraigne, and grown into factions, great-ly troubled the Peace of their Country, wherein fucceeded in his dominions; the fecond was Robert Archbishop of Roan; and the third was called Mali-Earle Gilbert the Protector was flaine, by Randulphus ger ; his daughters were Hamifa, the wife of Geffrey Earle of Britaine, and mother to Alane and * Guye his the young Dukes Cofen-Germane, fonnes. Mand espoused * Enldes Earle of Chartiers (28) The beginner of these stirres was another of and Blais : and Emma called the Flower of Normand his kinfmen, euch Gay of Burgoine, the sonne of Duke Richards daughter, brought vp with William in his was Queene of England, both by the English King Ethelred, and Canutus the Dane, to both which shee youth, and euer in his most especial esteeme; who, vpon a vaine hope to afpire to an Earldome, gorthe aide of the Vicounts, Nigell, and Bandulph, but tooke fuch (23) Richard the second, surnamed the Good, was

ENGLANDS MONARCHS

413

Chap.I

Monarch 2

a fall before he could afcend the highest skep, that in busing his footing he lost therewith his head.

(29) Strife a fo arote betwixt yong william, and his Vnckle william the baie-borne Earle of Arciss. Whereupon King Henry of France, who till then had held this Wolfe by the earc, fearing some hazzard to himtelfe, if he should now let him go, thought it best to aid the Earle in his cause, and therefore sent him supplie under the leading of some men of note; but William so begirt his Castle with strait siege, that hee caused the Earle by famishment to yeeld up his Fort, and droue the French with disgrace out of the field: where, with fuch fuccesse he still prospered, that Hen-ry now, to secure his own Confines, sent Ode his brother for Prefect, into those Parts, that lay betwint the Rivers Reyn and the Seyn.

(30) William as watchfull as the French King was jealous, fent against Odo, Robert Count Aucenfis, Hugh Gornacensis, Hugh Mountfort, and William Crisbine all of them flour Souldiers, which so brauely bare themselves, that Odo was the first man that made away, and the restof the French saued themselues by

(31) William that had fworne a league with King

Henry, and in his Minority had ever found him his gracious Guardian, was loth to endanger the breach of his Oath, or the duty that love and deferts had obiged him vnto; and therefore by this Stratagem hee fought to diflodge the French. In the filence of Night when in the Kings Campe all were at reft, he caused to be cried aloud, the flight of odo, and his discomfiture, with no leffe terrour then it was; which rang fo fhrill in the eares of the French, that Henry thought best to be gone : leaving william the absolute Lord

(32) Which he valiantly defended, and vprightly gouerned all the daies of King Henry: whose death presently caused an alteration of States for he leaving Baldwine furnamed the Gentle, and fifth Farle of Flaunders, Tutor to his yong Son e Philip, the quarrell betwixt those two Princes hadan end; Ealewine on the one fide fo working his Pupill, and on the o-ther the Normane, (who was his fonne in law) that a most firme League was ratified betwixt them, and kept vnuiolated to long as william was a Duke; where wee will leaue him in prosperitie and peace, and proceed in our intendment, as he did in his Conquest here in England,



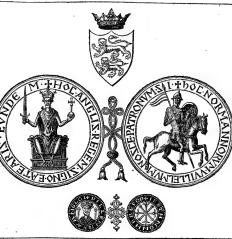
The

Chap. 2. | William Conq. ENGLANDS MONARCHS Monarch 39.



William the Conquerour. VVILLIAM SVRNAMED THE CONQUEROVE, THE THIRTIE NINTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISH.

MEN: AND FIRST OF THE NORMANS: HIS LIFE, RAIGNE, ACTS, WIFE. AND ISSVÉ



CHAPTER II.

An,D.106



Attle Field wonne with the loffe of little leffe then fixty eight thousand men, and Harold in Souldierlike exequies borne vnto Waltham in Effex , & there honourably enterred, as we have faid : Welliam the Conqueror, (for so now may wee stile him) retur-

ned to Halling, and thence fet forward with spoile of the Country, ouer Thamefis towards London,

(2) Where Edwine and Morear, the Brethren of the Queen, were in working the English, that one of them should be King, or rather, faith Simon of Durham, to crowne Edgar Etheling, the rightfull heire, in fuch efteeme with the People, that he was commonly called Englands Darling synto whose side most of the Nobles adhered, with the Citizens of London,

and the Nauall forces; to which part also joined Aland the Natuall forces; to which part alto tomest As-dreich hopping of Farlet, hopping prefairly he field off-and fluckt to the fluorger; for the Prelates, though in fercetly affecting the right claim, eye retrified with the flashing thunderboles of the Papall certle, durft not go for ovarat with their purposition powerful avan the Pope, usen then to defeat the rightful hierors of interfaces the property of the prefairly the interfaces have a fine of the with the Lords, kingdomes) but refused to side with the Lords, whereupon all their designements were suddainely

quashed. (3) For William having walted through Kent, Suffer, Surrey, Hampfhire, and Barkshire, came vinto Wallingford, and croising there the Thamesis, passed Waims on a macrosing there the I namesis, palled through the Counties of Oxford, Buckingham and Hetsford, where staying at Berkhamsted, Aldred Archbishop of Yorke, Wolfiane Bishop of Worse, Melfane Bishop of thereford, with the Earles Ed. win and Morear, yea and Edgar himself, yeelded their allegiance water the Duke: This curfe to preuailing,

Zzz 2

416	William Conq. THE SVC	ESSION OF Monarch 39.	Booke.9
	tarre engaged William to the Pope.	the Realme to his feeming in his fift, stood in de-	
Trees cut downe	(4) William intending for London, being on his	I spatre of his owne lite; of which his sodaine amaze-	
am paliage.	way, found the pallage stopt vp with multitudes of	ment, the reuerend Prelates Stigand and Eg'efine ta-	
	great trees, which by the policy of Frethericke Ab-	king notice, & alfoaduantage, prefented themselves	1
	noble bloud, as likewise from Canutus the Dane) to	before him, and in the behalfe of the Kentish thus spake.	
	fecure his Monasterie from the destruction of the	(8) Most noble Duke, behold here the Commons	
	Normans, were so cut downe: whereat the Duke	" of Kent are come for th to meete and receive you as their	Stig ands Oration
	both wondring and fretting, fent for the Abbot, vn-	" Soucraigne, requiring your Peace, their own free con-	
	der his affurance of fafe returne, and demanding the		
	cause why his woods were so cut; Frethericke answe-	of these be denied, they are here presently to abide the	
Zobu Sterv.	red very froutly, I have done (faid he) the duety both of		
	my birth and profession; and if others of my ranke had	depart with their lawes, or to live feruile in handage:	
	performed the like as they well might and ought) it had not	which name and nature is and ener (hall be strange on-	
	beene in thy power to have pierced the land thus farre.	" to vi, and not to be endured.	
	(5) william hearing the bold answere of this Pre-	The Conquerour driven into this strait, and loath	
	late, and knowing it was now a time fitter to pacifie,	to hazard ali on so nice a point, their demaunds be-	Wil.Therne.
	then exulcerate the English spirits, gaue way to the	ing not varcasonable, more wisely then willinglie	PP ANT GWINES
	present necessity, and withall hastned (as good poli-	granted their defires; and pledges on both parts gi-	
	cy required) his coronation, which at Westminster was solemnized upon Monday, being the day of	uen for performance, Kent yeeldeth her Earledome,	
King Williams		and Calle of Douer to their new King William.	
Coronation,	Christs Natuity, and yeere of saluation, 1066, where he received the crowne at the hands of Aldred Arch-	(9) All things established for Englands securitie,	
	bishop of Yorkes causing the Bishops and Barons to	and subjection now to the Normans; hee ordained his halfe brother by the surer side, Odo Bishop of	Simon Dan.
	take the oath of al eguance vnto him; and himselfe		Ods Bifhop of
	likewife at the altar of S. Peters, tooke a folemne	colen william-Fitz-Osburne(by him made Earle of	Bayeax made Eatleand gouer-
	oath to defend the rights of the Church, to efta-	(Atterora) to Dee Couernours in his ablence oner	nour of Kent.
	blish good lawes, and to see justice vprightly admi-	the Kealme; and in the Lent following failed into	
	blish good lawes, and to see instice vprightly admi- nistred, as became a good Kings and thereupon	Wormandy, leading with him many pledges for their	
1	choic for his counteil, such men as he knew to bee	indenty, bendes other Nobles, elbecially fisch ache	Henry Hune.
	of great wisedome and experience: next, applying	reared to be too potents amongst whom command	Polyer.
William fortifieth	his thoughts for the fecurity of his new gotten Em-	THE AICHDINGO OF Canterbury, the two great Farles	,
against inuations.	pire; fortified such places as lay open to danger,		
-	bestowed strong Garrisons upon the coasts, & ships	THE ADDOC OF S. Albans, Ageingthus Abbot of Gla-	Tpsdigma .
	to ride in those Harbours which were most exposed to inuation.		2(cu).
		Earle of Northumberland, Roger Earle of Hertford,	
Pelyder.	(6) And the better to affure the fouth of the land (best feruing his purpose, if any new troubles		Mariaum,
	should arise) hee tooke his way towards Douer, the	of Cumberland, were the men of greatest note; yet was	
	locke and key of the Kingdome, as Atathew Paris terms	hee no sooner gone, but that Edrick surnamed Syl- nations (sonne to Africk, the brother of Edrick Stre-	
Math. Paris.	it; that so hee might commaund the seas from his	ona, the treacherous Earle of Mereia, a man of great	
Maib. Paru.	enemies arrivage, and ouer-awe the Kentifs a most	fairit, and of no little power sided by the wife	
	ftrong and populous Province When Stipandther-	fpirit, and of no little power, aided by the Welfmen, tooke vp armes and denied subjection to the Nor-	
	fore Archbilhop of Canterbury, and Egleline the Po-	mans, so that by either partie(as in civill discords it	The Wiffines
Lobn Stow.	liticke Abbot of Saint Augustiness being the chiefest	euer fa leth out) great spoiles were made in many	gainst William.
	Lords and Gouernours of Kent) understoode of his		1
	approch, they allembled the Commons at Canterbu-	bert Fitz Scroope left to man the Caffle, did much hurt vpon the Tenants of Edricke, and he to requite	
	77, laying forth the perils of the Prouince, the mile-	hurt vpon the Tenants of Edricke, and he to require	
1	ries of their neighbours, the pride of the Normans,	tinn with the like, tailing to his side Rieting and Fe.	1
		watness Kings of water, waited all to the mouth of	Math.W.S.
Archbishop Sai-	were too apparantly seene: the English till then,	wye.	lib.1.
grads pertwation of the Kantiff.	(they fayd,) were borne free, and the name of	(10) These stirres in England called william out	An.D. 1067
of the Kentifb.	bond-men not heard of among them; but now fer-	Of Normanay, and were to diffaffful to his areas but	
	uitude only attend vs, if wee yeeld (fayd they) to the infolency of this griping enemy: These two	in digerting fromacke, that her began to hold the	
	Pre ates therefore, after the example of the vidaun-		
	ted Machabeer, offered themselves to die in the de-	his Narmans and laying representations of their Nobles vnto	
	tence of their Country: whose forwardnesse dress	his Normans, and laying vinwonted taxes & heatie	
	the people vnto the like refolution, which by their	bred him more harred in 60 much which nothing	The lands of the
	a fuerthements were alsigned to meet at a day, the	them, to enion a barren liberty, for fooke their fruit-	Enelifo ciuen to
	place was Swanfcombe, two miles west from Granes	full inheritance, and with their Wives & Children,	the Normans,
	end,	as outlawes, liued in the Woods, preferring that naked name of freedome, before a sufficient mainte-	
Thom.Sprat.	(7) Where accordingly convening, and keeping	naked name of freedome, before a inflicions	
	secret in the woods, they waited the comming of		
The Kentiff po- licie against King	the Conquerour, all jointly agreeing, for that no		
Brillian.	way may open lage onely a front, to carry in their l	wants, (eafily conceined, but hardly indured)	
	manus great Dranches of trees, wherewith they might!		Warres even in
	both keepe themselves from discovery and (if need)		bearer
	were) impeach the pallage of the Normans: which	houses every where so guarded with bowes, billes,	
ļ	denice tooke fo firange an effect, that it daunted	polaxes, fwords and clubs, as if they had been not	
	the Duke euen with the light at his approch; who		
	being, as he thought, free from the enemy, was now		
	fuddainly befet on all fides with woods, whereof fee-	their dores as in times of open holdilitie On the	
	ing fome before him to mone, he knew not but that		
	all the other vast woods were of like nature, neither had hee leasure to avoide the danger. The Kentish	of rollerable (yea, or vintollerable) viage, they to curry fauour with the Normans, leeming to forget	
	inclosing his Army about diffusion the Kentiff	curry rauour with the Normans, feeming to forget	Mat Pais.
	inclofing his Army about, displaied their banners, cast downetheir boughes, and with bowes bent pre-		i
	pared for battle; so that hee which even now had	did made their beards, round their hairs and in	
		at mem, ochaniour, and diet, a stogether vnfafhio-	1
		ned i	

	I to Ct	MONARCHS. Monarch 39.	417
he Exclusive be-	ned themselves to imitate them: it being a shame in those daies, even amongst Englishmen, to bee an	recouer their former liberties, tooke Armes: against whom, King William in all hast possible, sent Robert	
ame firangers.	Englishman.		
-	Zagujomas.	Cumm, and went himselfe frongly prepared against	ì
	(11) Vnto these Malecontents, and voluntarie	Excefler, which he most straitly beleaguered; at which	
	Out-lawes, ioined Aforear and Edwine, the fout	time the Citizensthought it not enough to flutte	
	Earles of Chefter and Yorkefbire, setting vp again for	their gates against him, but contemptuously taun-	Cantil Dames
	their Captaine Edgar Etheling (which if in due	ted and flouted him, vntill a great peece of the wall	
	time at first they had done, might have proved	falling downe by the especial hand of God, (as the	Exteller yeald to King Wither
	fuccessefull) who with their complices right va-	Historians of that age report) they immediately set	to King Willer
any Nobles?	liantly for a time relifted the Normans, and in their	open their gates, and submitted themselves to his	
cout of	proceedings put many of them to the fword. King	mercy. The chiefe infligator to their difloialty was	
L	william as carefull and fedulous to preuent further	Gatha the mother of King Harold, and fifter to Smain	
	mischiefe, collecting his forces, and not without	King of Denmarke, with Others fiding against the	
	danger of his life, diffolued their power, fo that e-	Normans; who now feeing the yeelding up of that	
t.Parit.	uery man fought how to faue himfelfe by escape: a-	Citie, shifted themselves out of danger, and got o-	
u, wester.	mong whom Edwin and Morear, Weltherfus and	uervnto Flanders.	1
	Merther, with some of the Bishops and Clergie went	(15) But fortune to Camin was not fo fauou-	An.D. 106
	into Scotland. Marleswin, and Gospatrick, Noble-	rable in the North, nor himselfe so circumspect as	
	men of Northumberland went into Denmarke: Edgar	valuant; for lying securely, as hee thought in the	
	Atheling, with his mother Agatha, and his fifters	City Durham, hee was on the fodaine furprifed in	The Names
	Christian and Margaret, tooke the seas for Hungarie;	the night by Edgar Atheling and his followers, where	flaine in the
	but by contrary winds were driven into scotland,	Robert and seuen hundred of his Normans were slain,	north;
	where they were most courteously entertained by	one onely escaping, who brought the bloody news	
	Malcolme (furnamed Cammor) King of that Coun-	thereof to King William, which hapned in the third	Polydere .
ng Malcolate	try, who so affected the person and qualities of	of his raigne, the twenty eight of I anuary, and yeere	
argares.	Lady Margaret, that hee entred with her a Nupti-	of Christ, 1068. The depth of Winter norwithstan-	
	all contract, and the rather in respect of her pos-	ding, he posted into the north, whose only terror dan-	1
	fibility and neereneile to the English crowne; whose	ted all further attempts, so that taking some of the	1
	marriage was folemnized about the feaft of Eafter,	Authors of this rebellion, he cut off their hands and	
	in the second of King Williams raigne, whereby	fome of their heads, conceiuing hereupon more ha-	j
	Scotland became a fanctuary to the English, which	tred against the English, and in that spleene of displea-	1
	daily fledde thither from the preflures of the Nor-	fure returned to London.	1
	275.	(16) Whiles these insurrections were on foot in	An.D.106
	(12) The Conquerour now perceiuing the oc-	England, the fugitive English in Denmarke so far pre-	711120.100
	calion of new ftirres, fent vnto King Malesime for	uailed with King Smaine, that they procured his aid	1
ng William len- th for Edgar	the deliueric of Edgar his enemie; which if he re-	to recover their rights, and the rather, as they allead-	
n of scotland.	fuled , hee threatened to denounce open warre a-	ged, for that the Crowne of England was his, descen-	Marb.Park, Mar Wefim,
	gainst Scotland. But Malcolme minding more his	ding from those that had before made conquest ther-	Mat Wellen.
	owne honour, then King VVillams threats, retur-	of: hee therefore sent a puissant Nauie of three hun-	4b.s.
	ned this answere. That he held it an unjust thing, yea	dred faile well fraught with fouldiers, under the con-	ŀ
	and(in a Prince) a wicked part, to betray him to his	duct of Osburne his brother, and Harold and Canute	The Deser wh
	enemy, that came vnto his Court for protection,	his fonnes,: who arrining in Humber, landed their	
	as Prince Edgar was forced for feare of his life; whole	men for Yorke, and wasted the Country all the way	inuade Sugla
	innocency and demeanour toward William, his	as they went; vnto whom shortly joined Edgar and	i .
	greatest aduersarie, could not touch with the least	his affociates out of Seotland, so that their Army was	1
n honeurable	suspect: alleadging further (besides the respect of	exceedingly strong. Whose approch so terrified the	Lib, Eber St.
ying.	ordinary humanity, in this case euer religiously to	Torkers, that for very griefe thereof their Archbi-	1
	be observed) the straight bands of their neere al-	shop Aldred, (who was wholly become the Ner-	1
he loug of al-	liance, which required him to tender the afflicted	mans fauourite) died, and the Norman Garrisons	l
ARCE.	estate of his most louing wives, most loued brother,	that there kept, left the enemy should have any	Terke feton by her owne
	comming under his Canopie, as it were for de-	fhelter or fuccour, fet their fuburbs on firesthe flame	foulaiers,
	fence.	whereof carried with an ouer-high wind, foone con-	1
	(13) william thus frustrate of all hope from king	fumed a great part of the City it selfe, and therein,	1
	Maleolme, and daily perplexed at the flight of the	the faire Cathedrall Church of S. Peters, with a fa-	1
	Englifb vnto his kingdome, feared a reuolt & dan-	mons I ibrary thereto adjoining.	
	gerous rebellion; to preuent which, hee caused foure	(17) The Citizens, and Souldiers thus befet	i i
	ftrong caftles to bee built, one at Hasting, another	with fodaine flames, thinking to fecure their liues fro	1
	at Lincolne, the third at Nottingham, & the fourth	the fire, did enhazard them on the fury of the fword;	l
	at Torke, wherein he bestowed strong Garifons: and	for comming vnawares upon these hardy and well	1
	difarming the English of armour, commaunded e-	appointed Danes, were forced to come to a disorde	The Destroid
	tiery house-holder to put out both fire and candle at	red fight, wherein though for a time they behaued	oner the Eng
ire and candle	alabraf the clocke at night; at which hours in each	themselues most valiantly, yet being overlaid, were	
orbidat certair		discomfised with the flaughter of three rhousand of	1
oures vato the	berung, of the French then called Conerfew (that is,	discomfited with the slaughter of three thousand of their men. The Danes, swelling with this prospe-	
	Court fire) partly yet in practife, and in name verie	rous fuccesse tooke into Northumberland, bringing all	1
	neer,commonly called Curfue: to preuent nightly	to their obeifance where they came; and the two	
	neer, commonly cance cwines to present nightly	yong gallants were therby fo fleshed,& incouraged,	
	turnults that might happily be done.	that they intended to have marched to London, had	11
Mas.Weftminjles	(14) All this his circumspection notwithstan-	marche everement of minror (enemy to all mortile en	1
	ding, could not preuent the troubles that presently	not the extremity of winter (enemy to all warlike en-	
	arole, for Goodwin and Edmund, the sonnes of	terprifes) hindred them; yea and William as wil-	William pol
	the late King Harold, comming with fome forces	lingly would have beene doing, if the same cause	to weaken th
Soodwin and Edward out of	out of Ireland, and landing in Sommer [et]bire, tought [had not kept him backe:but when the time of the	Englist.
Freland inmade	with Adnothus, (sometime master of their fathers	yeare was fit for warre, hee gathered a great hoft	,
England.	horie, but now a Normanift) whom they ilew with I	whereof the English were chiefe, this being his poli	
	many others, and taking great booties both in	cy, to vie their weapons each against others, wher	-1
	Cornwall and Denonshire, departed agains for Ire-	by their strengths might bee lessened, that so who	wil Malms
	land.	focuer loft, his Normans might winne; thefe io	-
	Exceiter likewise, seeking to shake off the fetters	ning battaile with the enemy, fought it out manful	-
	of the Normans bondage, as also Northumberland, to	ly; and laitly, making a breach into a wing of th	e
		Dani	

in the

withstanding written in the harsh Norman tongue,

which they understood not; so that many persons,

which they vacctitoou not; so that many perions, partly by the iniquitie of the law it felfe, partly by ignorance in milconfruction, & often allo by the leightes of Pleaders and Iudges, who might pretend

for law what they lift, were wrongfully condemned,

in forfeiture of goods, lands, yea and also of life

and generally to intangled with their vnknowne in-

terpretation, and tortured with their delaies, tur-

the field: for, (said hee) the maintenance of martiall

men, with a great part of this lands renenewes, are

adily conserved to pious imploiments, to maintaine and defend these holy voltaries, whose praires pieces more dee-per then the sword and therefore thou are obliged & King.

to maintaine their peace, that have beene the cause of the

(26) But william before the words were well out

of his mouth replied and faid, Is the Clergy fortch and

so strengthned that the land thereby lieth weakened of her

lo estic purchate.

Lib.S. Alban. Simon Dun. Math.Paris King William Ran, Higden Henry Hans, Mub. Peris, The Ile of Ely torufied against William. King William of faulteth the lie of Ely. The Scots in

٠,1

Chap. 2. VVilliam Conq. ENGLANDS MONARCHS Monarch 29. rill the found of fenen hundred markes had opened men at Armes, and to keepe onely the religious in safetie till the found of leaen nuncred marks had opened a fmill peace of the way; to collect which, they were forced to fell money waiting both the jewels and ornaments of their Church; made diore to be (ball the Lattie lie exposed to the inuasions of the Danes, and other forreine Enemies? surely out of your owne which being brought to his receivers, there wanted paide. mouthes I will indge you, and for redresse will first begin (whether by error or deceit) a groat in weight, (for m with thee: whereupon hee tooke from the Abbey of Saint Albanes all the lands and reuenewes that lay those daies greater summes passed by weight, not by tale,) whereof when the King vnderstood, hee in greate (but captious) rage, denied them all combetwixt Barnet and London-Stone. Abbot Fretherick, whose ouerbold answers had now offended the King, polition for peace, whereupon with much fuite he without delay called a chapter of his brethren, shewwas entreated to accept of a thousand Markes more; ing them their approaching dangers, and to avoid the prefent florme, went himlester ozh, where hee delisted nor from his wonted machinations against the was enuceated to accept of a thouland Markes more; to raile which, they diffurnished their Monaftery euen of things of necessary vie.

(31) But the English Fagitines, who had gotten the Course of the Property of the Course of Conquerour. (26) This conference ended, and the Kings oath the Scots to flick to them, were not yet pacified, but entring into Cumberland, they wasted the Counreceived, the English Armies disband themselves, as dreaming they had now good Fortune by the foot try before them vnto the Territories of Saint Cuthas areaming they had now good rortune by the root and hoping the greateft flormes of their dangers were paft; which prefently proued but a Vaine furmife: for King William hauing compounded with the Dases that lay all this laft. Winter in Northumberbert, & city of Durham; to meet whom, King William fent Go Patrick, who lately reconciled to his fauour and created Earle of Northumberland, showed the like measure of cruelty vpon the Scotife Abetters, is they had done against the English. The Conqueror therefore not a little moued against King Malcolme, successing the English of the Englis land, and paid them a great summe for their departure, beganne extreamely to hate the rebels, and with full resolution of their destruction, suddainely for that his Country was a receptacle of his Rebellious Subiects, and himselfe now the cheife Leader of the Male-contents into his Kingdome, hasted fet vpon them apart, which he durft not attempt, when they were vnited, forhat flaying many, iminto Scotland with a delire and purpole, to have prisoning others, and prosecuting all of them with fire & sword, wel was he that could be first gone done much more then hee was able to accomplish: for entring Galloway, hee more wearied his Souldiers in palling the Marish grounds and mountaines, (27) Edgar Etheling got again into Scotland, and Edwin Earle of Yorkeshire following with the like inthen with encounter or pursuite of the Enemy, fo that hee was forced to give over his enterprize, and tent, was flaine in the way by his owne fouldiers Egelwin Bishop of Durham, Morear Earle of Che then drew his forces towards Lothiam, where King fler, Siward furnamed Bran, and Hereward (a verie valiant Knight)got into the Ile of Ely, relying wholly Malcolme and his English late, being fully refolued, there to end by battaile, either his troubles, or his on the aduantage of the place.

This Hereward had received a hallowed fword. (32) But Malcobne wifely confidering the cuent and benediction of his vnckle the Abbot of Peterbe of warre and that the occasion thereof was not for his row, and had most valiantly defended his owne inheritance against the Normans, and with no leffe own subjects, but for a fort of forraine fugitiues, beganne to thinke, that the wrongs therein done to another hee could hardly brooke himselte, and sent couragewithstood the Conquerour, being made capanometrice count many profers of peace; whereunto therefore to william profers of peace; whereunto laftly the English King inclined and hoftages deliucred ypon further Conferences; what time (as I take A desected). taine of those now assembled. (28) But the King left delay should give them aduantage, and harbor more of fuch his vnbrideled Subjects, with a great power hasted thitherward, & stopping vp the East passage from all slight, or reit) vpon Stane-more, not far from an homely hoftilerie called the Spittle, a Stone-Croffe (on the one fide of whose hast stood the picture, and armes of liefe, drew a caufy on the west through the deepe Fennes, euen two miles of length, where likewise the King of England, and on the other the Image & he then built the Castle of wisbeeh : against which armes of the King and Kingdome of Scotland, vp. Heller Berlin. they in the He raifed another of timber and turffes on that occasion called the Roi-crosse) was ereand called it according to the name of their Cap cted, to flew the Limits of either kingdome; fome taine, Hereward: at which place, many affaultes & ruines of which Merre-marke are yet appearing 3 for bickerings being made, but yet no entrance gotten King William, granting Cumberland vato Malcolme, to hold the same from him, conditionally that the Dicketings ocing make, but yet no churance gotten, Morear by boar clasped out of the He, and in Scotland obtained by price, what these diffressed could not by prairrifo that Malesline the King, in rescue & reuenge of them, inuaded Camberland, and forraged all Thesse Scots thould not attempt any thing prejudicial to the Crowne of England, (for which king Malesime, did him homage, faith Hetter Bottins the Scotish writer) dale: Hereward also went out of the Ile, and got a and the English being reconciled to his fauour, at the head built the Caffle of Durham, returned as gallant crew of choise and youthfull fouldiers, which frood most stoutly for the defence of their liberties. (29) In the meane while, the Monkes, oppressed with miseries, sued for mercy vnto the King, & Thurcleared from all Northren troubles. (33) But his Norman Dukedome, ftirred fom-An.D.1074 what vnto rebellion, called King well-and into those flan the Abbot repairing to Warwick, where William then lay, offered him entrance vnto the Ile, if hee parts, where, by the prowelle of the English, her parts, where, by the prowence of the engine, here isome brought all things to peace, and returned for England, better conceiting of that Nation, effectally of Edgar Etheling, whom he courteoufly received and control of the engine of the eng would restore to their Abbey the ancient possessions: the King then reioicing, to obtaine that by wit, which Canatus could not do by maine strength, achonorably maintained in his Court, allowing him corded to the request, and in great hast, but no little difficulty, got into the Ile, where slaying a thoua pound waight of Siluer enery day to spend; a rare The bounty of example of a victorious Conquerour flewed vpon a man for vnconftant, (who twice had broken his oath albeing. fand of the Common fort, hee vied great cruelty against the better, imprisoning many, and dismem-bring others, some of their hands, some of their eies of fidelity) and dangerous to be so neere vnto his perfon, being, as he was, a Competitor of his Crowne.

(54) Whites the King was in Normandy, Rulph
deWare Earle of Suffolkeand Norfolke, tooke to wife and some of their feete. Egelwine Bishop of Durham hee imprisoned, first at Abington, then at VVestmin-Her, whole diet was either so sparing, or stomack so great in forbeatance, or both (for both are reported). Emms the daughter of William Fitz-Osberne, and lifter to Roger Earle of Hereford cofen to King William, and ted) that ere long he died of hunger. that without his confent; by whole affinity he con-(30) Howsoeuer the Monkes of Eh kept their ceited no small pride, and even on the wedding day. promite with William for betraying of the Ile; he conwhen wine had well intoxicated the braine, with a trariwise brake his for their preservation and peace; long circumftance perswaded his Guests vnto a Refor by no means their praiers would enter his eares, Aaaa

preparing a mighty Armado that wdy, as was con-flantly reported and beleeved; King William therfore flantly reported and beleeved; King William therfore The English reteined a great power of French Souldiers with others, which he had lately brought with him from Normandy, to disburden himfelfe of whose Charges. he appointed them to bee maintained at the cofts of the English, both for their wages, and other prouifions, which was an other great burden vnto the Enga lib, though it long lasted not; for that the Danilb King better aduling himfelfe, gaue oner the enterprife, and thercupon these Souldiers were dischar-(46) Another griefe and offence he ministred against both Godand man, for the fruitfull Countrey lying South from Sarisbury vnto the Sea, hee difpeoled, pulling downe Townes, and Villages, with 36. Mother-churches, from mans vie, & Gods dinine teruice; & for 30.miles, laid open the country, some say out of policie, to have fafe ariuage from Normandy in time of needrothers fay, for beafts, & for his own game in hunting, or to vie the words of Gualter Mapes, who lived immediatly after, to dedicate the same unto wild Beasts and Dogs-game; which place called anciently Tiene, was ever lince named the New Forrest : impofing great penalties both pecuniary, and corporal on all fuch as offended in hunting his Game : in fo

much that he was then called the Father of wild Beafts,

more fauouring them then the People his Subjects.

hake the ground.

But Gods int independent not long after followed this fo vnreasonable, and cruelast; to rin this Forest, Richard his second sonne being goared by a Deare, (others say, basted with a petitlent Ayre) was vntimely slaine; And Rafue his other sonne mittaken for a Deare was by chaunce flot thorow with an Ar- William in New-Forefi row, by Walter Tyrell. Hemy likewise his Grand-child by Kobert Curtosse, whilest he horly pursued the chase, was frucken by a bough into the lawes, and as Ab-lean left hanging wntill he died. Thus, no doubt, God punished his sinnes (euen on his children, and children's children) who had both

King William the father of wild

taken away the places, and vie of his feruice, and alfo differited multitudes of Chriftian people to their ex-treme pouerty, for his vnfaciat and fuper fluous pleafure: fothat (as some then thought) the Earth i

scissassion of the second of t a most fearefull Earthquake, with a warring noise, did

(47) Other great calamities are noted to haue
(April other great calamities are noted to haue
hapned vpon his people as burning feuers strangely
Land,

confirming the people: Murrens deuouring infinit numbers of Carrle; abundance of raine, and con-course of water-flouds beyond credit, whereby the hilles were fo formed to the very foundations, that some of them tell, and ouerwhelmed the villages which were in their way: most of the principall Cities of England much endamaged by fire, and Londonespecially, where the Cathedrali Church of

like themselues : Walter Bishop of Durham, bought

of King William the Earledome of Northumberland,

maintained murtherers, and was murthered him-

herein no parciall man) (peake his mind.

Saint Paul(as much as was combustible) was confu-All things dege med to ashes; and if that may also be noted (which caused not the least wonder) tame, and domesticke fowles, as hennes, geefe, peacockes, and the like fled into the forrefts, and woods, and became very wild, in imitation of men, degenerating then in-

to fauages: for in those times even the Churchmen (and therefore lesse marvaile of others) became vn-

maintained murrheres, and was murrues a ma-leffe. Ods, another Bithop, and Earleafloo, recuenge his death, made Northambertand defolate, behea-ding and difmembring the poorer fore, and argreat his death, and the property of the second of

ranfomes fining the rich, and Pope Gregory for his part plaid Rex in this land, fending hither his Buls with damning curses against the married Clergie: commanding that none should heare their Masses: which how it was difgefted, either by God, or man,

let vs heare Paris an ancient Monke (and therefore

422.	VVilliam Conq. THE SVC	CESSION OF Monarch 39	Book.9	10	[bap.2. \	Villiam Conq. ENGLANDS	MONARCHS. Monarch 39.
abiting of	(48) Pope Gregory in a general! Sunada and de	d i "raigned before me have given	DOUK.9		[:	Ornaments thereto belonging to the faid Church,	then (my children)follow me, that here and for
	the married Pricits from execution of their holi-	"their loves honored for which -				being of his owne foundation; for the redemption	ener you may be honoured before God and Men
prients pice, and terate,		"they reft, rejoicing with a happy regribusion in	1		1	whereof, King Henry his sonne, gaue the Mannor of Brideton in Dorsetsbire, to preuent any danger	And chiefly, O you my very bowels, I warne
	"Masses; a president new, and proceeding (as it seemed to many)out of inconsiderate judgement.	"pleasant State: Ethelbert, Edward, Saint Ofwald, Al-	- 1			that thereof might arife; and vnto the Churches	you to frequent & follow the company and coun- fell of good and wife men, and gouerne your
ı	"contrary to the fentence of the holy Fathers; which		1		1	by fire destroied in Meure, he gaue great summes	felues accordingly, fo fhall yee long and happi-
1 1	naue Written, that the Sacraments of the church	Manala Classic Lord Edward, nauc gigen Riches	1		i.	of money to repaire them: and so preparing him-	"ly prosper. Doe instice to all without partiall af-
1 DA I	the inutiable operation of the holy Ghoft have	Good: But my Brother	1		1:	felfe for God, briefly ranne ouer the carriage of	"fection; for it is a true wifedom indeed that can
- tuch	que effect, whether they are differried by	Glently plucketh amount singularity vio-	1			his former life; the fumme whereof (as much as	"discerne betwixt good and enill, right and wrong.
men g	good or bad, &c. By which fact to orignous	stable managed and goods, crueny grindern			1	best fitteth this place) we will declare as he spake	"Shunne wickednesse, relieue the poore, succour
ic .	feandall is arifen, that holy Church was neuer	"Knights from me, and by oppression bath exaspe-	is Oppressions.	- 21	1	t to them that were present.	"the weake, but suppresse the proud, and bridle the
	rent with a greater schisme in the time of any he-	"rated the whole Land with viriust taxations; con-	ı		is laft Speech	(54) Being laden with many and grieuous fins, (O Christ) I now tremble, who am ready to bee	"troublesome. Frequent the Church, honour the
"al	efie whatfoeuer; whiles fome fland for the right, nd others ftriue against it. Moreouer, whereas	"fider thereof, most Noble Lords, and giue mee (1	1	or or	n point of	taken hence, and to be tried by the feuere, but iuft	"vnto the law of God. The Dukedome of Nor-
			i	de	cath.	examination of God. I that have alwais bin brought	"mandy, before I fought against Harold in the vale
" Enoug	20 lome for gaine, or vaine glory doe buse	(51) At which paufe when all flood mute, as	1		- 13	vp in warres, and am polluted with the effulion	"Senlar, I granted vnto my fonne Robert, for that he
			1		1	of bloud, am now vtterly ignorant what to doc;	"is my first begotten, and hath already received ho-
· · · cont	inency with pertury, and manifold adultarias)	ed his freech	j j	0	fhis Sinnes	of for I cannot number my offences, they are foin-	"mage of all the Barons almost of his Country: that
		" Harriell milesoff : cm	l		1	finite, and have been committed by me now these	"honour giuen cannot againe be vndone; but yet
- ipect to	Olacred orders and eccleliafticall gonerna.	"at length be repressed. This man hath oftentimes His	1	48	- 1	"fixty foure yeeres: for which without any delay	"without doubt, I know it will bee a miserable regi-
" ment;	they prophane the holy mysteries, they	"banded himfelfe against hisowne father, and vp-	Trecheries.		. 1	"I must render an account to that most vpright	"on, which is fubicate to the rule of his government;
« humor	Infants, annointing them with the fordid	"on a ftomacke, blowne vp with pride and folly, hath			,	"Iudge. From my tender infancy and age of eight yeares, I haue hitherto fustained the weight and	"for he is a foolish proud knaue, and is to bee puni- "shed with cruell fortune. I constitute no Heire to
	or of their ears in flead of holy oile, they burn tithes due to the Priefts; our Lords body con-	"fallen off to the King of France: therefore left with	1			c yeares, I have hitherto initained the weight and charge of Armes to defend my Dukedome, go-	"the Realme of England, but doe commend it to the
		"ouermuch lenity, we buy too late a repentance, he		C II	Ofhis Worsess coubles.	uerned by me now almost fifty fixe, both in pre-	"euerlasting Creator whose I am; for I possesse not
		"final remaine Prisoner, yet not as a Bissop, whose				" uenting those finares that have beene laid for my	"than honour by any title of inheritance but by the
Out L	ord vpon the ground.	"name I both honour and reuerence, but as an Earle,	1			4 life, and in vanquilling those conspirers which	"inftinct of God, the effusion of bloud, and the per-
(4	10) This Greens (before called Hill-I 1) C	"fubiest to the Lawes and Censure of his King.	imprison-		1	"would have viurped my right: a stiffe nec-	iurie of Harold; whose life bereaued, and his fa-
in P	elers chaire with fuch prophe of impiania about	Which accordingly was done; vpon leizure of			1	"ked people I may fay, my arme hath ftill ma-	"nonrerevanguifhed. I made it fubicat to my do-
						naged: I meane the Normans, who with an hard	"minion. The Natiues of the realme I hated, the
		miration to the behald-			Of his Normans	hand, if they bee curbed, are most valiant, and	Nobles I dishonoured, the vulgar I cruelly vexed
		taken up our of at a large many of his bags were His A	Augrice,	9	ualities.	" in hazardous attempts inuincible: for, as they ex-	"and many vniustly I disherited. In the Countie
		were hidden full of and a where they		300		e cell all men in strength, so doe they contend to	"of Yorke, and fundry other places, an innumerable
Earle, the	Conquerours brother, fed with ful hope	(52) Soone after, fome difpleafure hauing arifen		33	1	" ouercome all men by valour. But if the reine bee	"fort with hunger and fword I flew: and thus
		betwixt King William, and Philip King of France, hee	I.		1	" once let loose, and laid in their necks, they will	"that beautifull Land and noble Nation I made de
			I.		1	teare and confume one another; for they are euer	folate with the deaths of many thousands, (woo
complement	Salutes the Senators with great gifts &	English Alleageance to himselfe and successors, with a		3		"feditious, and desirous of new stirrings; experi-	"worth the griefe.) These then my sinnes being
tersto fin	ents, ftuffeth bagges with money, and let- h as might doe much in the election, and	mighty mafe of money termine and fucceffors, with a	Malmsh.		- 1	a ence whereof fufficiently I have had, not only of my confederates and allies; but even of mine own	"fo great, I dare not give the offices of that
		tempts) departed to Normand; where falling ficke,	th. Paris.		Of his friends &	a my confederates and affects but even of mine own	"they yet be made worle by my occasion, Yet Wil-
Rome. A	mong the which for chiefe, was Hugh Earle	and keeping his Bed more than his wont, the French	ŀ		Kindreds vn- kindnelle.	« kindred, denouncing me to beea baftard, degene-	"liam my fonne, whose loue and obedience from his
of Chefter .v	with many great men and Knights of the	King hearing that his disease was in his belly, gaue	1	,	kindnelie.	"rate and vinworthy of government: against whom, "I have beene forced to put on armour, before I	"youth I have feen, I wish (if so be the will of God)
land: for t	the Normani variable, and defirous to fee	him this frumpe; Our Cofen William (faid hc) is laid Some		7		was by age ripe to weild it: all which I haue van-	may flourish in the throne of that Kingdome, with
forraine Co	ountries, were contented to forfake their	now in Child-bed: Oh what a number of Candels must 1 offer at his going to Church? Surely I thinks a human.	tam tooke			"quished, and some of them captinated, God so	c - 1 life and happy raigne
		off er at his going to Church? Surely I thinke a hundred downed	icke to take	38		preserving me, that they never had their desires.	tee Henry his vongestionne, surnamed Beau
proud	Prelate ouer the river Poo.	thousand will not suffice. Swing I sounce a nunared downer fat bell	ne his great		Ofhis English	« A roiall Diademe, which none of my predeceffors	hearing himlest vitterly neglected in his rather
Thie i	folly trains upon Car Carry to the state of		in.	1	Conquety	4 euer ware. I have gotten, not by right of inheri-	diffribution, with teares faid to the King: And wha
Wight,	and there ingreat pompe ready to fet faile	answere; Well, our cosen of France I trust shall be at no	· ·			a tance, but by heavenly grace. What labours and	= Jeann sineme) to whom hee aniwered. his
nto Norma	may, when on the fodain King william vn-	fuch cost; but after this my child-birth, at my going to hurch (swearing by the resurrection and brightness of God) I will (side b.) C.	1			conflicts I have fullained against those of Excesser,	thousand pounds of silver out of my treasurie I give thee But what shall I doe with treasure, said Henry, if I sha
Ookeu t	for, was even among them, and in his great	of God) I mill (Gid b.) Charlestion and brightnes william	m Helmef.			"Chester, Northumberlands, Scots, Gauls, Norwegi-	But what shall I doe with treasure, laid Henry, if I sha
Tali in preien	as cut hamong them, and in his great	and light them wer GIC. And one thousand candles, Ring W	Williame			ans, Danes, and others, who have endenoured	haue no dwelling place or habitation? His Father re
'tomvu	words and sinceres, I beleech you hearken	August following when the accordingly towards	. 1:			" to take the crowne from me, is hard to declare;	plied, Bee patient my some, and comfort thy selfe in God suffer quietly thy elder brother to goe before thee: Rober
' line i	into Arment I your counfell at my fai-	corn and areas, which both the trees, fruites,	I			" in all which the lot of victory fell euer on my fide:	(uffer quietly thy elder brother to goe before thee: Robel (hall haue Normandy, and William England: but thou:
the go	mernment of a commended England to	tred France with a mighty Army, (poiling all the	ı			which worldly triumphes, howfoeuer they may	time shalt intirely have all the honour that I have gotter
Norman	ada many forming brother Bilhop. In	well parts thereofhefore him, tpotting all the	1		Outward tri-	# please the sense & outward man, yet they leaue an	and shalt excell thy Brethren in riches and power.
sainft n	ne, yea and inward friend t	City a deign on telescote min; and lattly, let the	1	(4) h	umphes leaue inward horrers.	"inward horror, and fearefull care which pricketh	After which speeches, he presently called his so
inuaded	me: for Robert my fonne, and other	med the faire Church of our Lady, in the wals wher-	1			" mee; when I confider, that cruell raffines, was as much followed, as was the just profecution of	william to whom he deliuered a letter figued wi
yonglir	ngs whom I have brought vp, and given	of was enclosed an Anchoret, who might, but would stem fat	l l			as much followed, as was the fall profection of	Lis owne feele written unto Lantrank Archbillio
Arm/	es, haue rebelled; vnto whom my falle	not escape, holding it a breach of his religious Anchori	aithtwo			won O yee Priefts and Ministers of Christ, that I	of Canterbury, and commaunded him therewith
Clients	s, and other bordering enemies haue given	vow to forfake his Cell in that diffresse. The King	т,			" you in your praiers will commend mee to God,	haft for England, left in that ipatious Kingdom for
their a	iffifiance: but they have not prospered,	bussed in these attempts cheered his men to seede	1 .	A		the shoe has will mirigate my heavy linnes. vnder l	fuddaine troubles should arise; and so with a k
God (whose servant I am) euer desending mees	the fire, and came himselfe so neere the flames, that	1			whose burden I lie pressed, and by his vnspeake-	bleffedhim in Chrift. His prifoners he comman
neithe	r haue they gotten any thing of mine, be-	with the heat of his harnesse, he got a sicknesse, and	1	1		" able mercy make me late among his elect. INITE	I ded to be fer at liberty, affirming that he had do
iides tr	on in their wounds: They of Aniou pre-	the same encreased by the leape of his horse, that	ı	1.0	His workes of	" Abbeis of Monkes, and one of Nunnes which my	Forle Morear much wrong whom as hee then co
pared a	gainst me, whom with the onely feare of		1		ecuotion.	Ancestore founded in Normandy. I have enrich-	1 formed her had imprisoned more for teare then
warre i	I have pacified. These businesses you know	his life.	1	<u> </u>		and an anomented; and in the time of my gouern-	fault:onely his halfe brother ode he would have I
aue or	awn me into Normandy, where I have staied	(53) At which time feeling death to approach, he deferred not to address his left will a proach,	1 .			ment, sequenteene Monasteries of Monkes, and	
ile heh	imploied my painfull endeuourson pub-	commanded all the man salt with, wherein hee King will	(Translaft			a fixe of holy Nunnes, have beene founded by my	portunate intercession of friends hee was released
arh o	reading and mitte meane time, my brother	he deferred not to addresse his asset with wherein hee commanded all his Treasure to bee distributed to Will and Churches, Gods Ministers, and the Pearse limiting to mean.	d Telta-			"felf & my Nobility; whose Charters I haue freely	
thes of	I and and D I polling the Chur-	Churches, Gods Ministers, and the Poore, limiting to each their feuerall portion and events.				"confirmed, and doe by princely authority con-	come neere to his laft, when this Sunne lo gloriou
of Or	namente since the maked	caufed to be increded in and quantity, which he	1			"firme against all emulations and troubles; in them	raifed to the height of his course, must now of fo
duce	naments given by our Predeceffors, and hath	each their feuerall portion and quantity, which he caused to be ingrossed in writing by Notaries before him: Amongst which, he bequethed to the Church and Monkesof Seine Sense (Sense Sense Sen	1			God is scrued, and for his sake many poore peo-	fer in the West, the dying King (for Kings must d having raised his weake body vpon the Pillow
hem	otter the Al-	and Monkes of grint out	1			ale released; with (nch Camps both England and	heard the found of the great Bell in the Metropo
anda	gainst the inuations of the Danes, Irifb, and	two Mannors in Dan College at Lane in Normandy, Ex Libro	o Cado-			Warmandy is detended, and in their Ports let all	tane Church of Saint Geruis neere Roan, and dem
ther Ene	mice on and and of the Danes, Imp, and	fbire another in F. Co	Minaff.			"younglings learne to fight against the Diuell and	ding the capie one replied that it did then ring prit
olonris fo	reha Charles for me ; but my greateft	in Norfolke, a Maniion house in Woodstreet of London,		78		"vices of the flesh. These were the studies that I	to our I adv . whereupon with great denotion lifting
icted, and v	nto which the Christian Kings that	with many Advomage Col				"followed from my first yeeres, and these I leave	his eies towards heauen, and ipreading abroad i
	and Christian Kings that	to be wondred at, hee gaue his Crowne, and Regall	1			"vnto my heires to be preserved and kept. In this	Bbbb hand
_							

423

then (my children) follow me, that here and for eaer you may be honoured before Goland Ment And chiefly, O you my very bowels, I warme you to frequent & follow the company and coun-liell of good and wife men, and goomen your felluss accordingly, 16 flall ye long and happi-ly proper. Doe inflice to all without partial in at-fections, for it is a true wifedom indeed that can

46 fechton, for it is a truewifedom indeet that can difference beying good and cull, tright and wrong, 45 Shanne wickedneffle, relieue the poore, fiscour 4 the weake, but ingpreffed the proud, and bridde the 45 troublefome. Frequent the Church, honour the 45 treighous, and without wearingfie bee obseried 75 treighous, and without wearingfie bee obseried 45 united with the Worksham 15 the Marketin for the 15 t

mandy, before I fought against Harold in the vale "Senlat, I granted vinto my forme Robert, for that he of Normandy." is my first begotten, and hath already received ho-

"for he is a foolish proud knaue, and is to bee puni-" fhed with cruell fortune, I conflitute no Heire to "the Realme of England, but doe commend it to the Of England,

rated to the neight of his course, must now of lotter feet in the Weft, the dying King (for Kings must die) hauing ratifed his weake body vpon the Pillowes, heard the found of the great Bell in the Metropoli-

and balt excell thy Brethren in rices and power.

After which specches, he presently called his son
William, to whom he delivered a letter sgued with

Lawgiand.

se may flourith in the throne of that Kingdome, with (a long life and happy raigne.

(3) Hemy his yongeli thome, furnamed Bestelerke, heating himfelf viterly neglected in his Fathers dithibution, with teares fail to the King: And what King williams the state of the

424.		ESSION OF Monarch 39.	Book.
With Such do	hands, I commend my felfe (faid hc) to that bleffed La-	nance sterne, his fore-head high, and haire verie	1
drine was good denotion abuse	a c, will y, mother of Goa, that thee by her holy praters	thinne, fat and corpulent of body, with his bellie	His deferincie
contrary to the	may reconcile me to her most deare Sonne our Lord Iesus	bearing out, to itrong of loints and armes, that few	
contrary to the prefeript of God lfai, Chap.33.16	Chrift; and with the words yeelded vp his Ghoft, vp-	could bend his bow; of witte ready, and very poli-	and qualities Will, M almef.
Ifai. Chip.33.16	on Thursday the ninth of Septemper, the fifty fixth		Rand, Higd en
	of his Dutchie, the twenty one of his Kingdome, the	hazards valiant, a great fouldier, and as great in fuc-	Polyo, lib.7.cap
	fixty foure of his age, and yeere of Christ Iesus	celle; rough and couetous towards the English in his	7.1.4.4.4
		taxes, lawes, and in giuing to his Normans their lands;	1
	(57) Wherein, as we see the instability, both of	whole Charters were of a farre other tenour, forme	ł
	Mans life, and Glory, (a point fitting for great Prin-	& breuity, then those tedious and perplexed conucy-	1
Princes friends.	ces cuer to thinke on;) to by the fequel wee that per-	ances, tince in vie, as by thele few inferted may ap-	ł
	ceiue, how ill-rooted and vngrounded the friendihip	peare.	1
	is, which attends the greatnesse of Soueragnes, whose		l
	Fauourites chiefe or onely ends are their own Ambi-	I William King, the thirdyere of my raigne,	Stow ex libro
	tion and Gaine, the fewell whereof once beginning	Give to thee Norman Hunter, to me that art both leefe	Richmond.
	to decay, the fire of their feeming-deuotion will bee	and Decre,	King William Charter to
	quickly cold. For no fooner had this late-glorious		Hunter
lis Corps for- airen of all fores.	Princes Soule bidden farewell to his Body, but his	The Hop and the Hopton, and all the bounds up and	1
aken of all fores.	dead Corps was presently abandoned by his follow-	downe,	l .
	ers of neerest place, and best meanes, who posted		1
	homewards apace to defend their owne; and by the	Vnder the Earth to Hell, about the Earth to Heauen,	
The enables of	meaner and his inferiour feruants, he was dispoiled	From me and mine, to thee and to thine,	Į.
The qualities of Court-Kites,	of Armour, Vessels, Apparell, and all Princely fur- niture, euen so farre from al wonted and due respect,		
	as that they left his dead Body naked upon the	As good and as faire, as ever they mine were,	
	floore; like true Kites, praying whileft any thing was to be had.	To witnesse that this is sooth, I bite the white waxe with my tooth.	l
	The fudden fame of his death stroke such feare in-		
	to the Commons harts as was admirable, energy man	Before Iugge, Maude, and Margery, and my yongest forme Herry:	}
	initing for one, but all neglecting the funerall rites		
	of their King, vntill that one Harlains a poore Coun-	For a bow and a broad arrowe, when I come to hunt	
	trey Knight, vndertooke the Cariage of his Corps	vponyarrow.	
	I VIIIO CARE, alle at his owne coff both by See and I		1
	Land, viito Saint Stephens Church, which this dead !	(60) At the suite of william Bishop of London, he	
	king had formerly founded.	granted the City (whose chiefe Magistrate was then	Lambert, Peram
	At his entrance into Cane, the Couent of Monks		
	Came toorth to meet him, and to celebrate the buri-	Saxon tongue confirmed with greene wave whoreas	
lis Hearle alfo bandoned of al.	all with all Ceremonies beleeming; burbehold even	the Saxons before vied onely to figne with guilt crof-	Jugulfus :
Dangoned of al.	at that initiant, a judden chance of fire hannened 1	fes, and fuch like markes: the Copy thereof is	2.2.9.0 (
	which prefently invaded agreat part of the Towne 1		
	I that, as the Corps Defore, to now his Hearle was of I	ct William Cyng greit William Biscop. & Godfreges	
	an ionaken, whiles they addressed themselves to re-		
		"and Godfrey Portreys and all the Power C.	Hollinf.
	Functan Sermon ended, the Stone-Coffin fet in the	"and Godfrey Portreue, and all the Burgeffes that in	Lamb, Peramb.
	carry in the Chancell Detwixt the Chorale and the	"Landon be French & French Colon II	
	Alich, and the body ready to be laid therein one 4.1	"von to wit that I will the same and I doe	
	Jeennus Fire-earthur, a man of fome Note food up	"you to wit, that I will, that you enjoy all the law which you did in the daies of Edward King. And	
is buriall place mied him.		"I will that each Child bee his Fathers inheri-	
mid pad.		"tour often his Early and his Pathers inheri-	
	lently tooke from him, and heere voon part of my inheri-	"tour after his Fathers daies. And I will not fuffer	
	tance founded this Church: This ground therfore I chal-	"that any man you any wrong offer. God you	
1	lently toke from him, and here vopen part of my inheritance founded this Church: This ground therfore I challenge, and in Gods behalfe forbid that the Body of my difficult that our council in my and the state of t	(61) In the like Charron amount	
1	Spotter, be concred in my Earth, neither shall it he interved	(61) In the like Charter, granted to his Nephew	John Leland,
	in the precinities of my right. Whereupon they were	Alane Earle of Britaine for lands in Yorkeshire, hee writeth himselfe William surnamed Bastard; and yet	
	fpoiler, be concredingly Barth, nither shall it be interred in the precinities of my right. Whereupon they were enforced to compound with him for a present sum of money then delivered and in the present sum of money then delivered and interest them.	in feemeth, hee was offended at Guy of Burgundy for tearming him Nothus; perhaps, because that word figuisheth such a one, whose Father is vn-known, whereas King will mere week.	
		for rearming him Arethur ar Guy of Burgundy	
- 1	I write memy, for a hundred pound weight of Glass	word fignifieth fach a con-	
. 1		known whereas King will	
moiance ag		known, whereas King Williams was not only known, but renowned also.	
mounce at functall.			
		(62) Howfoeuer hee was fterne and hard to the	
rnce Stane		English, yetto his Normans hee was facile and too	
tes their re- rt for fabu- as, who wrot at his Body			
st, who wrot		Clargin about morning and euening; The	
		ting the Church, both morning and euening; The Clergie that lived according to their rule and pro- fession, hee both honoured and richle and pro-	
rupt 500.			vil.Mainf.
rtupt 500. tres after his ath.	Beether to their cers.		· ·· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
	(58) This then was the life and Just . C. 1.	ded: Ills viicle CM allertia Archbillion of v Pate !	Roene.
I			
		the English deprided, as we have heard	
- 1	adhering; but after his death, neither Ornaments, nor Attendants, nor place of buriall, till it were bought; all which primary follows:		
1	nor Attendants, nor place of bariall +its		Barrel-Abbay fo
1	bought; all which, prince men feldome want: fo		
			bere fought a.
- 1	the state of her darlings.		ainst Harold,
ł	(59) He was for flature indifferent, of counte-		rill, Newberg.
- 1	of counte-	it selfe, which after raine sheweth to bee red; af-	

Chap. 2. VVilliam Conq. ENGLANDS MONARCHS Monarch 29. Church of S. Maries, within the Monasterie of Nuns; firmeth, that after any small showre of raine, the earth sweateth forth very fresh bloud, as by the which the had there founded. euident fight thereof (faith hee) doth as yet plainly declare, that the voice of so much Christian bloud there shed, doth still crie from the earth to the His I ffue. (68) Robert, the eldest sonne of King William, and Robert. (64) But most certaine it is, that in the very same fQueene Mande his wife, was furnamed Curtuoife fignitying in the old Norman-French, Short-Bootes place where King Harelds Standard was pitched, & vnder which himselfe was slaine, there William the he succeeded his father onely in the Duchie of Normandy, and that also he lost afterwards to his brother Conquerour laid that Foundation, dedicating it to Henry King of England; at the battell of Ednarchbray (in that Dukedome) the yeere of our Lord 1106. the Holy Trinity, and to Saint Martine, that there the where he was taken prifoner, and having his cies put of one brother out (an vnbrotherly punifiment) was committed to on shother on the Callant Cardiffer Card. Monks might pray for the soules of Harold and the rest that were slaine in that place: whose Priviledges were Math. Paris in fo large, that they, and others of the like condition, were afterwards diffolued by A& of Parliament. out (an vinoroment) puninnent) was committed to the Cafdloof Cardiffe in South-Wales; and after two-try eight yeeres impriforment; there deceated; the yeere before the death of his faid brother, Anno 1134. when it was found by experience, that the feare of punishment being once taken away, desperate boldand was buried at Glocester, in the midst of the Quier of Saint Peters Church; where remaineth a Tombe nes, and a daring will to commit wickednesse, grew still to a greater head: for it was enfranchised with with his Carned Image at this day. Hee had two many freedomes, and among others, to vie the words of the Charter, were these: If any Thiefe wines, the first, Margaret daughter of Herbert, Earle of Maygne, both married in their Child-hood, and face died before they came to yeeres of confent: The owords of the Charter, were their !! Je and come to this Church let him have no harme, but let him be dismif-sed, and son away free from all punishment. Be it law-full also for the Abbot of the same Church to delucer from ther was Sibyll, daughter of Geffre, and fifter to William, Earles of Conur Jana in Italy, and Necce of Robert Guifeard, Duke of Apulia: By her he had two fonnes the Gallowes any thiefe or robber where focuer, if he chance Guijeara, Duke Of Apuna: Dy ner ne nad two lonnes Henry fishe in William and Henry; this Henry was he that was flaine his Grisdianheri to come by where any such execution is in hand. by mischance, as he was hunting in the New-Forest in The Standard it selfe curiously wrought all of gold and pretious stones, made in forme like an Hampshire. William the Elder, surnamed in Latine Miser, was armed man, Duke William presently upon his vi-Earle of Flanders, in right of Queene Mande his ctory, with great complements of curtelie, lent to Grand-mother, succeeding Charles of Denmarke in that Earledome; he also had two wines, the first Sibyll, Pope Alexander the second; as good reason it was, the Popes transcendent pleasure and power, being the Earledome; healio had two whees, the first Joyle, (whose Mother, called also Sibyll, was the daughter of Fowlke Earle of Anion) after divorced from him, and remarried to Terry of Alfae, his Successour; the second was Ioan, the daughter of Humbert Earle of strongest part of the Dukes title to the Crowne, and his curfing thunderbolts the best weapons whereby he attained to weare it. (65) At Selby also in Yorkesbire, where his you gest sonne Henry was borne,he founded the Abbey Morien, now called Sausy, fifter of Queene Alice of France, wife of King Lewis the Groffe : hee died fixe of Saint Germans: at Exceller, the Priorie of Saint veeres before his father, of a wound received at the Nitholas; and to the Church and Colledge of Sam Siege of the Castle of Angi in Normandy, the 27. of Martins le grand in London, hee gaue both large pri-July, in the 28. yeere of the Raigne of King Henrie uiledges, and much land, extending from the cor-Freier Priory his yncle, and of our Lord, 1128, hee was buried at ner of the City wall, by Saint Giles Church with-Saint Omers in the Monastery of Saint Bertin, and out Criplegate, vnto the common Sewer, receiving left no issue behinde him. the waters, running then from the More, and now (69) Richard the second sonne of King William and Richard Queene Maude, was born in Normandy, and after his Father had attained the Crowne came into England, More-fields. (66) At Cane in Normandie, he founded the Mo-Saint Stephen najlery of Sant Stephen the first Christian Martyr, where, being then veric yong, as hee was hunting in adorning it with most sumpruous buildings, and enthe New-Forest of Hampfhire, he came to a violent & histaches New dowing it with rich reuenewes; where his Queene the New-York of Ampipure, he came to a violent & finden death, by the goring of a Stagge; (others fay, by a petitlentayre,) and is noted to beethe first man that died in that place, the indirect of God punishing Mand had erected a Nunnerie for the focietie of vailed Virgines, vnto the honour of the bleffed virgine Mary. Thus much of his Acts, and now of his maron him his Fathers dispeopling of that Countrey; his body was thence conueied to Winehester, and riage and iffue. there builed on the Southfide of the Quire of the His Wife. Cathedrall Church, where there remaineth a monument of him with an inscription entitling him a Duke (67) Mand the wife of King William, was the and some suppose of Boloigne.

(70) William, the third Son of King William and William Rufus. daughter of Baldwine the fifth, furnamed the Gentle, Earle of Flaunders; her mother was Alice, daugh-Queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

Queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in Normandy, in the 21.

queene Maud, was borne in the Maud, was borne in t ter of Robert King of France, the fonne of Hugh Caper: Shee was married vnto him when hee was a Duke, at the Calile of Angi in. Normandy, and in the fecond yeare of his raigne ouer England, she was lour of his haire, in French Rows, in Latine Rufus he was brought vp vnder Lanfranke the learned Lambard, who was Archbilhoppe of Cantarbary, of whom he received both infiructions of knowledge, crowned Queene vpon Whit-funday, the yeere of Grace, 1068. And although the maintained Robert in his quarrell for Normandy, and out of her owne and the order of Knighthood; he served under his Father at the battaile of Gerberoth in Normandy, coffers paid the charges of warre against his Father, and her owne Husband, yet, because it did proceed but from a motherly indulgence for aduancing her some, it was taken as a cause rather of displeasure, 1079, wherein hee was wounded: and hee alwaics framed his actions so pleasing to his Fathers humor, as that hee thought him much worthier then his elthen of hatred, by King William, as himfelfe would often auouch, holding it an infufficient cause to dider brother to succeed in his Kingdome, der oronner to deceed in this Kingdome.
(71) Henry, the fourth, and yongest some of King
William and Queene Assas his wife, was borne in
England at Selby in Yorkeshire, the third yeere of his minish the love, that was linked with the sacred

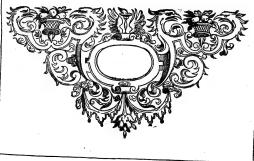
Fathers raigne, and of our Lord God, 1070, his

childhood was trained up in learning; at Cambridge 1000 cains Case faith Caines but the ancient Annales of Saint Aufins 1100.

band of a matrimoniall knot. Shee departed this lifethe second day of November, the sixteenth yeere

of his raigne, and of Christs humanity, 1083. for

whom he often lamented with teares, and most honourably enteried her at Cane in Normandy, in the



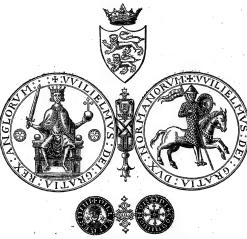
WILLIAM

William Rufus.

Chap. 3. | VVilliam Rufus ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 40 |

VVILLIAM THE SECOND SVR-NAMED RVFVS, THE FORTIETH

MONARCH OF THE ENGLISH: HIS ACTS, RAIGNE, AND VNTIMELY DEATH.



CHAPTER III.



Illiam posting for England, & Archbishop Lanfrank his earnest soliciter by liberall gifts given, and promifes made to abrogate the ouer hard lawes of his Father, had the readier passage into the opinions of them that could doe most: and the more to notifie his in-

tended mild gouernment, with other his noble inclinations to princely vertues, as eye-witnesses of his fauours towards the English, hee brought with him from Normandy, Morear, the front Earle of Cheffer, and Wilnoth the fonne of King Harold, both of the and trumens decionned range travels, both or them released out of prison, and then held in especial fauour with him. But most of the States standing for Robert Curtais his elder Brother (a man deemed of a more liberall disposition, and better temperature to-

vards the Subjects) their titles had beene tried by fwords, had not Lanfrank and wulfan, both wife & reuerend Prelates, by their Counfels and Mediations staied their hands.

(2) Consent thus gotten, and all voices given for William, he was crowned their King at Westminfter, youn Sunday the twenty fixeday of September, and yeere of Saluation, 1 087. by the hands of Lanfrank Archbishop of Canterbury; under whom he had him made fit both for Warre and Gouernment, had not the variable inclination of his owne mind carried his actions past the limits of any staied com-

(3) Robert vpon discontents that Normandy was ftill detained, before his Fathers sicknesse, was gone into Germany , to folicite their assistance for his right to that Ducine: but hearing of his death, hasteth into the Prouince, and was there peaceably recei-B b b b a

An.D.1088

Necessary required a alwaies couetous, yet neuer thrifty, and ftill gathering, yet neuer enriching his King William an Coffers: All Ecclefiafticall promotions then vacant Ecclefiation. and furely, the firres were fo great, and Duke Ro-bert fo fauoured, that by the judgement of Gemitihe affumed into his owne hands, and kept the See of censis, had he hasted his arrinage, or followed the occasion, the Crowne of England had easily been see Canterbury without an Archbishop aboue foure yeeres, letting to fale the free rights of the Church. and he that would give most came soonest to prefer (7) All in an vprore, and Rufus thus turmoiled, ment, wherby both the Lands and good effeeme of he appointed his Nauie to scowre the seas, and to imthe Clergy was daily diminished.

These greeuances were complained of vnto Pope Vrban, but he ouer, bufied to forward an expedition of Christian Princesforthe winning of Ierusalem, had no leasure seriously to thinke upon their estates, or else lesse minde to divert Kings out of their owne by-

(12) The Storme thus cleered without any thunder; King Rufus let the eye of delire vpon Duke his Kingdome; first therefore surprizing the Castles of Saint Valery and Albemarle, hee stored them with his owne Souldiers; then piercing forward did great spoile in the Countrie, Robert destitute of meanes and knowing his Normans cuer vnfaithfull, sent to Philip

: 1 Chap. 2. VVilliam Rufus. ENGLANDS MONARCHS Monarch 40.

Will Gemet

the French King, desiring his assistance against this Brother-Enemy; who preparing towards Normandy, was stopped with such golden showres from King William that he could not paffe, fo that Duke Robert was constrained to make a peace with his brother though for himfelfe a very forry one, as faith Geme ticensis; which, as Paris reporteth, was effected by twelue Princes vpon either part, and the condition as followeth: that King William should retaine and

enjoy the County of Eme with Fescampe, the Abbacie of Mount Saint-Michael, and all the Castles he had gotten in Normandy: for the Duke it was agreed that his brother King William should aide and asfift him to recouer thoselands & territories beyond the seas, which had beene belonging to their Father; That all such Normans as had lost their liuings in England, in taking part with Duke Robert, should be reftored; and lastily, whether of them should die first, the sure should be his heire.

Both Brethren

villi Gemet.

(13) Peace thus established, and both their powers vnited, they bent altogether against Henry their yongeit brother, who fearing after-claps, had itrong ly fortified the Castle of Mount Saint-Michael, situated vpon the confines of Normandie and Britaine him, whom they oughe to have provided for, (faith Gemeticensis) they went about to expell, and all the Lent long laid fiege aginft him. It chanced one day as his men fallied out,& made

King William

am alone, more bold then wife, rode against them, thinking none fo hardy as to encounter him fingle but presently a Knight slew his horse vnder him, & his foot entangled in the stirrupe hee was ouerthrowne; his enemy therefore with drawn fword. was ready to have flainchim, had hee not reuealed himselfe by his voice: the armed men with great reuerence then tooke him vp,and brought him another horse; when the King not staying for the stirrup, sprang into the saddle, and with an angry countenance demanded, who it was that ouerthrew him? the Knight as boldly answered, and shewed himselfe who he was; by Lukes face, quoth William (for that was his oath) thou shalt bee my Knight, and be enrolled in my Cheeke, with a Fee answerable to thy (14) During this seige, Prince Henry being sore

of a Brother, having no more but him and me ? In

1091, and fourth of King Rufus his raigne, one Erebellion against Rees ap Temdor Prince of Southwales, drew to his fide Ieflyn Lord of Glamorgan, vpon promise to become his sonne in law by the marriage of his daughter: leftyn notwithstanding, iudging their faction too weake, sent Encon into Eng-land, where hee was well acquainted, to procure aide against Rees: who entring conference of his Reb. Fiftz-bam. businesse with Robert Fitz-hamon a worthy Knight of the Kings Privie-Chamber, wrought fo far with him, being a man easily drawne to the exercise of warre, that for a Salarie hee vndertooke the seruice, and with twelve Knights, and a competent number of Souldiers went into Wales, where joining with

Jeffin, in battle flew Prince Rees ap Temdor, with Co-

nan his fonne, * Robert Fitzhamon, now minding to return, demanded his pay according to couenants, which leftine in some part denied, alledging that Enton had gone beyond his commission: where-upon such discord arose, that these friends fell out, and Encon thus touched in his reputation, fided with the English against his owne Country-men; whereupon a battaile was fought, and Inflin with most of his Welfbflaine, fo that Robert with his followers obtained a fruitfull poffession in those parts, (which by their postetties are enioled euen to this day) whose names, as they are found written in a British record, were as followeth.

POSSESSION. NAMES. The Knights William de Londres. Comer. Richard de Grana Villa ... Neth. Pagan de Turberuile. Coity, Robert de S. Quintin, Lhan Blethyan,

Richard de Syward. Talanan. 6 Gilbert de Humfreuile. Penmarke.

Roser de Beckrolles. East Orchard, Raynald de Sully. Sully. .

Peter de Soore. Peterton. Saint George 10 lohn Le Fleming.

II Oliver de Saint Iohn. Saint Donats, 12 William de Estirling,

An.D.1092 (16) As these things were commenced betwist England, Normandy, and Walles, Malcolme King of Malcolme K
Scotland entred into the Englifo Marches as farre as to Chefter in the Streete, doing much harme; whose farther outrage to preuent, William incontinently ha-fled, fending by fea a great Nauie of Shippes, and by land his brother Robert, though with much losse of either: for his Fleet was torne by tempest, and his horsemen through hunger & cold perished in those King William 8 barren parts: at length the Kings come to an Interuiew, where by the meanes of Edgar Atheling, a peace was concluded to both their contents: for William restored vnto Malesime twelue Villages, which he had held in England vnder his Father, and gaue him yeerly twelue Markes in gold: And King Maleo me for his part promifed to keepe true peace with him,

as hee had done with the Conquerour, whereunto hee gaue him his Oath, as faith Mathew Paris. (17) But as these two Kings of Enemies were made friends, so the two Brethren of reconciled friends became againe enemics : for Duke Robert well perceining, that King VVilliam meant nothing leffe then performance of couenants, (protracting time vpon some secret purposes, as his icalous head con-ceiued) in great displeasure returned into Normandy, taking with him Edgar Atheling, whom he held in an especiall account.

(18) King VVilliam then repairing those Castles which the Seets had destroied, new built in Cumber-Cárleil reedified land the City Carleil, which two hundred yeares be fore had beene spoiled by the Danes; and having defenced it with walles, built there the Cafile, Churcher, and Honjes, wherein hee placed a Colonie long, of Southerne Souldiers, with their wines and children, granting large priviledges to the place, which the City enioieth cuen vnto this day.

(19) And having setled his affaires thus in the An.D. 1093 North, returneth with triumph into the South, where immediately hee fell dangerously sicke, in the fixth yeere of his Raigne, at the Citie of in the fixth yeere of his Raigne, at the Citie of women smend heart, (not looking to continue to commit many

more) that hee fore repented him of the fame, ma-

rae faire for the vpon his head. peach his brothers arriuage: then gathering his forces, and knowing well how to please the vulgar, promifeth againe to abolish their ouer-hard lawes,& presently to put downall vniust Imposts and Taxations, whereby the People were foone drawne to fland in his defence; and among them Roger Mountgomery was reconciled to the King.
Thus now growne firong, & his enemies decrea-

King William

first beganne, the Castles of Tunbridge and Horne he recouered, as likewise Pemfey, wherein his vncle odo had ftrongly immured himselfe, whose lacke of Ods his great heart taken

victuall, by King Williams strait siege, allaied the pride of that great-hearted mans fo that hee not oney furrendred the same, but promised the deliuerie of Rochester also strongly manned, with Eustace Earle

fed, he led his Armie into Kent where the fedition

as, whose persos he meant to reserve for his own gain. Roberts dominions, who lately had done the like with Todigma New his; and suddenly burst into Normandy, as Scipio did King William eninto Africke, pretending reuenge of injuries done to test Komandy.

Book. 9

a brauado in the face of their beleaguers; King willidistressed for water, and knowing Duke Robert to be of the milder temperature, sent him word of his want, desiring to have that permitted, which God had made common, and ginen euen to brute beafts, aswell as to men; Duke Robert therefore comman-

An.D.1091

ded him to be supplied, whereat William was wroth, telling his Brother he wanted discretion, & policy in warre, which allowed all advantages to surprise the Enemy: And dost thou (said Robert) esteeme more of water, which is enery where to be got, then

which diffension, Earle Henry got thence; and by policy tooke a very strong towne called Danford, where presently was a reconciliation made amongst these three brethren, who thereupon forthwith tooke the Trodiem, Neuftr. Seas together for England.

(15) About this time, in the yeere of Grace, Warre bewist Rife Prince of Southwales, and Steen.

king many promifes to amend his life, if God would |

be pleafed to give him longer life: the hard lawes a-

gainst the English, he vowed to reforme, as also his

owne vices, and to fettle peace and good order in the

Church, then farre out of frame, almost all

the Monkes in England, lived rather like Confuls,

being Hunters, Hawkers, Dicers, & great Drinkers

(faith Higden') little regarding the rules of their pro-

fession, Those Bishopricks & Monasteries that were

vacant, and in his owne hand, hee forthwith, and

(much against his wont) freely bestowed: the Arch-

bishopricke of Canterbury vpon Anselme a learned Norman Abbot: the See of Lincolne lice gaue to

Robert Bluet his Chancellour, a man of meane lear-

(20) But the danger past, and health recoucred

hee beganne to bee more ficke in mind, foon repen-ting him of his too-foon Repentance: for as in

spending his owne wealth, hee was very prodigall,

so was hee very diligent to enter into other mens e-

states, and to gaine from them what he could, and

therefore tampereth with Anfelme, perswading him,

that the trouble of the Archbishops place was very

burthenous, especially for a man wholly brought

vp within the walles of a Monastery, denoted to

of great affaires of State. But all this Art could

not induce him to let goe his hold-fast of the Kings

absolutely passed promise, nor yet to satisfie his

great delire with mony, and therefore the King paid himselfe out of his Lands Likewise from Reger

of Lincolne hee exacted five thousand pounds; and

the Commons hee fined for transgression of his pe-

nall lawes; and in truth molested all for money;

ning, and some other touches, but otherwise of ma-

ny fingular parts.

Math Paris.

fodigm. Nerftr.

None were rich but Treasurers and Collectors, none in fauour but vnconscionable Lawvers and none rewarded but Promoters: fo that his outer-haled fubices fled daily out of the Realme; against whom he King Melcolme published Proclamations, with an inhibition that none should depart without his safe Conduct. (21) Sooneafter this, Malcolme King of Scotcontent. Villiam Malmel

land came vnto Glourester, to conferre with King William touching the Peace of both the Realmes but conceining a grudge, for that hee was not en-tertained according to the Maiesty of his cstate, departed in displeasure without speech with the Kings and immediately railing a power against England destroied the Country vnto Alnewicke Castle. Robert Mowbray then Earle of Northumberland, a

most valiant Souldier, seeing his Countrey thus ouerrunne, made head against him, not staying for directions from his King; and lying in Ambulh for his returne, so fore and suddenly distressed his forces, that both King Maleolme himselfe and his son Prince Edward were there flaine.

(22) Heereupon Earle Mowbray growing proud (22) FIGET UPON EATHER MEMORING BY GOWING PROUND and greatly suspected by King William, began to fortifie the Kings Castles, with Munition for Armes against the like inuation, and indeed against the Kings Earl Membraice greatneffe fulpe etted by the King. will; who feat him word fomewhat roughly, to defift from his doings, and presently to repaire to his Presence; which whilest hee lingered and neglected to doe, King william fent his brother Henry to spoile Northumberland, and immediately followed after himselfe, where without much adoe, he tooke the Earle, and committed him prisoner to windfor Castle.

> (23) These stirres in the North are diversly reported : for Walfingham in his Toodigma Neuftria, faith, that Robert Moubray and William of Anco with others, conspired to deprive the King both of crown and life, and to haue fet up Stephen de Albamarle his Aunts sonne: the issue of which treason was preuented by furprizing Mombray, who died a Prifo ner. William of Anco was punished with loffe both of his eyes and his virility; and William Aluerie(the Kings Godfather, Kinfman and Sewer) cruelly whipped, and all naked goared in bloud, though guiltles,

was hanged. Hector Boetius, the Scotish, Historian relates somewhat otherwise of the death of King Malcolme; as that the Englift having gotten the Castle of Annike, King Malcolne with a strong siege enuiro-ned it about; when, the English distressed, and ready to furrender, a certaine Knight amongst them attempted a very desperate enterprice, for mounted vpon a swift horse, vnarmed, excepting onely a light Speare in his hand, vpon the point whereof he bare the keyes of the Castile, he rod directly to the Scotish Campe, and was with great applause brought vnto their King, where couching his staffe, as though hee meant with submission to deliuer him the keyes, suddealy ranne him into the left eye, and through Malcolme flain wiftnes of his horse escaped, leaving the King there water show of dead : for which act King William (faith he, though erroneously) changed the Knights name into Perce- The name of

eye, whence that Noble Family is descended. Gulielmus Gemeticensis saith indeed, that it was reported that King Malcolme was flaine by a guile, of Malcolme etc. declaring not the manner, but by the hands of Mo-rell, Nephew to Earle Mowbrey, where likewife sain Markey reu, Nepnew to Larie Members, where likewife of the did of Prince Edward his fornee, and the greatest part of his Armie: with which dolefull newes (faith Hetter) his Queene Advagares (called the Saint within three daies after died of griefe. Box Paris hath few the Saint death) within three daies after died of griefe. Box Paris hath fet it downe, as is faid; and in the fame yeer makes Heffer Beeti William the Conquerour of Wales; fince which time Maib. Paris the English Monarches have beene accounted their The English, Mo chiefe Gouernors,

(24) Grudges now grown betwixt King William and An.D 1094 (24) structs now grown detwix A ting minimals.

And D. 1094
Duke Rebert his brother, che accusing other of breech with the control of oath and of Courenants; Williams from Haffings (fet Ralie into Narmardy, where Gone bickering (eilbertwix the two Brethren, but by the mediating of hersechagains). certaine graue persons, their quarrels were comprimiled, and Princes cholen to be their Arbitrators; which hearing indifferently all allegations, adjudged King Ruftu in the fault, who thereupon (as thinking nothing right, but what went with him) fufeth the cenwas fo farre from following their award, that being fire of his Art offended with their centure, he professive afforded offended with their censure, he presently assaulted, and tooke the Castle of Burren; neither did Robert for his part fleepe the whiles, but furprifed the Cafile of Argenton, which was by former couenants giuen to King William, drawing likewise Philip the French King to his side, who with his Army entred Normandy for his assistance,

(25) King VVilliam then waying into what danger hee had brought himfelfe, (all approxing Duke Robert, and disallowing his Acts.) he fought to doe that by money, which he could not by fword. Therfore to those souldiers, which in heat of his surie, he had commanded to bee fent him into Normandy (cuen twenty thousand, now in readinesse, and at Hastings Staying for a wind) he sent a countermand. exacting of euery common fouldier ten shillings in money for the release, and so without further trouble Mest, Parit, to return to their homes; with which summe he so pacified the French King, that he now left Robert to looke to himselfe, who thus for saken, was constrained for money. to come to an vnreasonable peace.

(26) And the more willingly, for that the holy wars for *lerafalem*, deliberated of five yeares before, were now hotely purfued by Pope Vrbane the second, (whome Bibliander blameth to be the causer of much Christian blood-shed) onely to set vp that , which Threed, Biblion. Christ by Prophesie had laid in desolation. Among these Christian valiant Captains Duke Robert would be one, but wanting money, (no newes at all to his coffers) hee fent to his brother King V illiam to be supplied, and for the summe of fixethousand, fixe will Thomse, hundred, fixty fixe pound of filter, (Paulus Acceptions Paul. Acept.) faith, fixe thousand nine hundred thirty foure more) will Gimes, morgaged his Dutchy vnto him, giving him the posscision thereof before his departure.

(27) To make vp which fumme, hee did not only oppresse and sleece his poore subjects, but rather to King williams opportunity of Paris) with importunate exactions data. Paris.

King William

Chap 2. VVilliam Rufus ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 40 did as it were flea off their skins; for the Churches Not sparing Churches and and Monasteries, having fold away their Iewels and Chalices to fatisfie his appetite, and answering they could make no more; the King replied, with some scorne; And have you not I beseech you, Coffins of Gold and Siluer for dead mens bones ? Accounting the money laid out your this holy Expedition, to be better imploied then to garnish the reliques of the An.D.1005 (28) The King thus finding his fortune in all things pliable to his wifnes, and his heart therewith greatly puffed vp.his purpole was now at his returne from Normandy, to make a full conqueft of Wales, therefore redoubling his forces hee drew into the Marches, where piching his Tents hee consulted with his Captaines what was best to bee done. The Welf fly to The Welfbruen finding themselucs ouerweake, fled according to their accustomed manner, into the Woods and Mountaines, taking thereby fuch aduan-An.D. 1006 tage against their pursuers, that the King returned without any notable deed done; and with the like

fuccesse he vndertooke an other Expedition against them the yeere following. (29) But bearing a minde still to subdue al Wales.

he had first in his eie the lland Anglesey, against which he sent Hunh Mountenmery Earle of Shrewesburie, and An.D. 1097 Hugh Lupus Earle of Chefter, who there executed their vied. Girald. Cambr.

The Holy

Conquests with very great cruelties, cutting off the Noses, Hands, and Armes of their relisters, without regard of age, or fexe, nor sparing either places or perlons, facred or prophane. At which very time it chanced Magnus King of Norway, the sonne of Olanus (the sonne of Harold Harfager) to have made his An.D. 1098 Conquest of the Hes of Orkeney, and then wasting a long the Seas, fought to come on Land in Anglesey, whom to impeach, these Earles made all their powers: where Hugh Mountgomery armed at all parts, but onely the fight of his Beuer, was shot into his

right eye, whereof hee died eight daies after. (30) The holy voyage now let forward, (vnto which Pope Vrhane was a chiefe infligator) thirty An.D 1099 Sweeden Clarethousand Christians tooke the Signe of the Crosse

wearing it on their garments as the cognizance of yoinge. Peter, an Her-mite, the Captheir denoted warfare: The chiefest Captaine of which Princely Army, was Peter a poore Hermit, who returning from Jerusalem, certified the Pope of the Christians great milerie vnder those mercilesse Infidels: but the good man more exercised in praiers the Army. (the weapons of Votaries) then expert to guide an Army, was soone entrapped among the Bulga-res, and slaine with most of his souldiers. But yet

the bufineffe still projecuted, the number of all degrees and ages flocking to the feruice, is reported to have amounted (a thing almost incredible) vnto seuen hundred thousand. In chiefe commaund of which huge Armie, were imploied many braue Princes of Christendome; as Godfrey the famous Duke of Loraine, with his brethren Eustace and Baldwin Bohemund Duke of Naples, and his Nephew Tan-credus: Robert Earle of Flanders; Hugh le grand, brother to Philip the French King; Raymund, Earle of S. Egidius; and belides many other great Princes, the forefaid Robert Duke of Normandy, not the last in esteeme for his renowned service; as his memorable proweffe in that imploiment did afterwards make apparant vnto the world. All these meeting at Constantinople (where Alexius was Emperour) passed ouer Hellespont, and proceeded with

Cities and Countries before them, with the flaughter of an hundred thousand Infidels, and purchase of great spoiles: and lastly, tooke Ierusalem the ho-

Mat Parit.

(31) King William at reft whilft his Brother and the rest were in warres, thinking now both of fortifying and beautifying his Kingdome, canted new walles to be built about the Tower of London, and

City, in the thirty ninth day after the Siege

thereof. But let vs from lewrie returne into Eng-

at Westminster (* where before was the ancient Pa-lace of Saint Edward and his Ancestours) [aid new] foundations of a most large and Princely Palace; the Hall whereof, by the testimony of Paris, should have extended (if he had lived to finishit) from the River Thamefis even voto the common high way, as might | weftminder Hall appeare by the first groundworks, at the time wherin Paris wrote: but that flately Building, which now we cal the Great Hall, he finished as it now standers, containing in length two hundred and feuenty foote, in The length and breadth feuenty foure: yet (when fome praised the largenesse thereof) hee found fault that it was not made bigger, accounting it forfe worthy the name of a Bed-Chamber, in respect that which he inten-

ded to build. And certes, of a right magnanimous disposition was this Rufus, as appeared at such time, when sitting at dinner, purpoling forthwith to take his pleasure in hunting, a messenger brought him sudden newes of the Siege of Mayne, a City in Normandy , whereto many before when the King answered, He would take aduite what to doe: But thy Subjects (replied the party) are in di-fire se, and cannot be delated; whereat the King swore his wonted Oath, that if they could not, they should not, and that he would not turne his backe till he were with them; and thereupon commanded to breake downer the wall that he might goe forth the next way to the Sea, leaving fraight Commission for his Nobles to wit. Malas.

follow him with all celerity.
(32) But the winds being contrary, and thereby both the Sea and the King in a great rage; his Pilote bly to expect a while, till those boilterous Elements were calmer, and passage more safe. Wherunto he an fwered, as no whit daunted : Haft thou ever heard that Yes King Pho any, a sing native created around? I therefore heife op the terms done in the Flies and the Flies and the Flies are vinexpected speed of the King, was soone released, and the last, Consult of Cinomannia, who she had been supported by the Consults of the it, being taken by a traine, was by King William iefter at to his face, as a man neither of Martiall proweffe nor policie : at which indignity the Noble Helia

nor policie : at which indignity the Noble Heista ididianingly horming, with great boldnelle failed vario Rufas: I am news the Prifener, not by the provelly hast by chance of ware, and my owner miliferiance: but were I at liberty, then floudily well know, I im not the man thus to be tanghed as. The King well-like king the confidence of his print: Well-then (taid hee) I give thee full liberty, goe thy waies, doe what in thee lieth am the man that ever will mate thee,

(33) And furely, howfoeuer he might be blemi-fhed with many flaines of bad Gouernment, yet for his valour and resolutions in wars he is greatly commended; and so much by some, that, if it were not against the faith of Christianity, it might be thought Will Genes.
(faith Mabnesbury) that the Soule of Cafar had entred His praises world into the body of this Rufus, as that of Euphorbus is laid to haue don into Pythagorus: yea, & those staines (we may well thinke) were no whit lessened by his flory writers, who were dependants of the Romish See: for that he little fauoured their Holy Father, or any fuch as adhered vnto the See of Rome, against the Prerogative of his Crowne; as especially appeared in his Offence conceived against Angelmus Archbishop of Canterbury, for his too Romifb humor. There was at that time a Schisme in the Roman Church, which Monster-like had then two heads on one Body, the Two Popes of Emperour(who claimed that as his right) placing one, Met. Park. and the Roman Clergy abetting another, Vrbanus by name, with whom conforted Anseime, against the

The King alleged, that no Archbishop or Bishop of the kingdome should (or ought) be subject to the page of Court of Rame, with whom they had nought. Pope or Court of Rome, with whom they had nought to doe: that he and his Realme had as large franche-fies, ever fince the receiving of the Christian faith, as the Emperour had in his Empire; and that therefore none ought in his Realme to bee received for Pope, whom himfelfe and his State should not first

Kings command.

Aaaa2

approue: that without his licence none should goe

or appeale to Rome in any cause : that Anselme could

not keepe his Allegeance to his Soueraigne, and also

him and his State to the Papacie; which that it may appeare the better, I will here infert the Conquerors

owne Letter to the Pope.

To Gregory the most Excellent Pastor of Holy

Church, William by the grace of God, King of England and Duke of Normandy, wifeth health and friendship. Your Legat Hubert (Religious Father) came unto me, ex-

horting me, in your name, to make Allegeance to you, and

your Successors, and to take better order for the money

wich my Predecessors were wont to send to the Church of

Rome. The one I have gramed; of the other I have not

ney hath beene negligently gathered, my felfe almost these

three yeeres being in France ; but being by Gods mercy re-

turned into my Kingdome, as much as is Collected is now fent by the faid Legate: the rest shall be fent when it may conveniently, by the me flengers of Lanfrancke our faith

fire is aboue all others fincerely to lone you, and to heare

His Holinesse was then very wroth, that things

Lanfranck cleared himfelfe of the blame, shewing

(35) By which incredible pride and Popish incroachments, attempted by the meanes of these chie-

ons: yea so farre was hee from yeelding his necke to that yoke, that hee auowed, that the Popes,

though boalting of Peters Chaire, had not from

him any power of binding or loofing, whose godly-steppes they wholly neglected, following

onely after Lucre and wordly Honours : that also is

was but imposture to teach Intercession, and bootleffe to vie Innocation to Saints, euen to Saint Peter himselfe. And as for the rest of the Romish Clergie,

who then gave themselves strangely to wordly and fleshly pleasures, wearing their guilt girdles and spurres, and trimming their bushie Locks; their

loofe lives the King much detefted, and fought to

punish ; which most incensed their Choler : and

these were the haires no doubt in those Monkish wri-

ters Pennes that euer blotted his faire name, under

their fast-running, and vneuen hands. For so much may we gather from Gemetisens's the Recorder of his

to the Pope. V pon all which points the Prelates of England, excepting only Gundulphus B. of Rochefler, affented to the King against Anselmus, that he was guilty of High Treason, for attempting to deprine the Crowne of these prerogatives. (34) And because the King then vrged, that here-in he did no more then his Father had done before Pope Gregory
was suftly by all
mens judgeméts
(laith Pans) depo(adfor Treehim, it shal not be impertinent to obserue heere, how that, as V rbanus vied Anselmus for his inftrument to draw the King to his becke : fo Pope Greenie bepoied for Trea-fon against the fore him vied Archbiffiop Lanfrancks helpe for vn-dermining of William the Conquerour, and to subject

M.S. netall

Admitted. The one I make gramea, of the other Invalid and admitted. Fealtie to you, I neither would not will make, for I neither promifed you so much, neither finde I that e-uer my Anticessors did performe it to yours. The * mofull sernant. Pray for vs, and for the good estate of our Kingdome; for I have loved your Predecessors; and my de-

did not cotten better to his desires in England. But him how diligently (but indeed traiterously) hee had bestirred himselse, in counselling the King to yeeld to sweare obedience to the Pope: Suafi, sed non persuasi (saith he) I have so admised him, but I could not

croachments, attempted by the meanes of their char-feft Prelates of the Kingdome, King William Rufus (no doubt) flaw it was high time for him to preuent farther milchiefes to his State, by following his Fa-thers steps in timely repressing such Papall intrusswill, Rufus pru-dently treads his fathers fteps. Eadmerus.

Against praying Rand. in Polychr. üb.7.cap.9.

life, who having reported many Acts of this Kings, feemeth laftly to checke himfelfe for going fo farre: where (he faith) Thefe and many other like things wee could truely report of him, were it not we think it unconnenient largely to relate his actions, because he persecuted ve-rie many of Gods seruants, and the holy Church not a little, for which it is thought by the most part of wisemen. that he repented too late and unprofitably.

(36) And true it is that some of them have taxed

him for great Pride and Couetoufuesse, whereof yet Ross of Glove. Corons, Album wanting; as, (though the inflance bee somewhat fa-miliar) when his Chamberlane bringing him a paire of new hoafe, and he demanding the price, was answered that they cost three shillings; Away base feet Euery base low (quoth he) are those beseeming a King? bring mee knaue will now of & Marke price : his feruant went, but brought | Boecothier, him an other paire of no greater coft, yet tolde him (as greatMens reckonings viually are made) that they were of the rate appointed: wherewith the King was very well pleafed, and disburfed that great Price to fulfill his owne pride,

(37) His Conetousnesse what it was, may hence appeare, that when two Monkes whose Abbat was appeare, that when two Monkes whole Adda was lately dead, repaired to his Court, and each in large offers out-uied and ouerbad the other, to fucced in the Abbacie; a third Monke very fober, and poore in flew, accompanying them in their businesse, stood by; whom the King asked what he would give to be made Abbat ? Nothing, faid the Monke; for I en- Payeb. 56.7.5.11. tred my profession to be poore, and hitherto haue beene, little esteeming the pompe or riches of the world. Then thou art the man (replied the King) and shalt betheir Abbat, more worthy in thy pouertie, then they for their price; and fo conferring on I would all Sihim that high honour, checked the others to their obe ferued,

open infamy and reproach.

As the like he also did to Hugh a Norman Knight, and Souldier by profession, who of a sincere deuoti-on had entred the Monkish Order in the Monasterie of S. Augustines at Canterbury, and at the death of Vido the Abbat, was but a Probationer; when comming with others to the King for the election of an-other, was chosen himselfe (though fore against his will) without any request or proffer; whose penitency and vnfained humility fo moued the King, that in this his Election he burft foorth into teares.

(38) Other faults I grant hee is charged with, wherein we have not and cannot veterly acquit him : | eg. as this besides others, that his chiefest Conforts were Effeminated persons, Ruffians and the like, and him-felfe said to have delighted continually in Adulteries, and the Company of Concubines, etiam coram Sole, shamelesse and in the fight of the Sunne; though none of them be named, nor any his illegitimate iffue knowne; and yet onely, or especially for his fins, many strange signes of Gods wrath are reported to haue happened in the time of his raigne.

(39) For in his second yeers a terrible and most dreadful Earth-quake happened: And in his fourth, vehement Lightning pierced the Steeple of the Abbey at Winfcombe, rent the beames of the roofe, cast downe the Crucifixe, brake off his right legge, Lightning, and withall ouerthrew the Image of our Lady standing hard by, leauing such a stench in the Church, that neither incense, holy-water, nor the singing of the Monkes could allay it. And not long after, fo great a tempest of winde happened, that in London it bare downe fixe hundred Houses, and blew off the roofe of Bow-Church, which with the Beames were borne into the Aire a great height; fixe whereof being twenty feuen foot long, with their fall were dri- Ishn Stow. uen twenty three foote deepe into the ground, the

streets of the City lying then vnpaued. In the ninth of his Raigne a blazing Starre appeared with two bushes, and other Starres seemed to shoote darts each against others, to no little feare and amazement of the beholders. The laft of his Raigne, Deluge. the Sea breaking ouer his limited banks, drowned an innumerable multitude of people in many Countries, and in Kent ouerwhelmed the lands that fometime were Earle Goodwins, which as yet are called Hefer Sortes. Goodwins Sands, lying very dangerous for all Nauigators. But most fearefull was the Wel of blood, which for fifteene daies role vp out of the ground at Fin- wil Mainther chamsted necre Abington in Barkesbire. His owne Matthe chamfted necre Aungton in parkeyore. All Armes Henry Hear, dreame, wherein it feemed the veines of his Armes Rand, High. to be broken, and abundance of his blood ffreaming

Math. Perio

An. D. 1089

(bap.3 | VVilliam Rufus ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 40 |

Math.Paris

Math Paris

on the floore ; as likewife that Monks, who in his fleepe faw the Crucifixe to spurne the King to the ground: these with many like, were held as presages of his death, which presently followed. Of al which, or the most part, what better censure can wee give, then that which King William himfelfe (when this last vision was told him) did deliuer; saving, Well, 4 Monke he is, and can dreame (Monachiliter) as Monke ofe to doe, onely for to gaine. Give him an hundred shil-lings, lest he should thinke he had dreamed bootclesse.

(40) Whatfoeuer force those presages had, it is true, that vpon the fecond day of August, as he was hunting in the new Forrest, and in the place called Chorengham, all his Company being scattered from him, saving onely a Frenth Knight, whose name was Walter Tirrell, the King with his arrow strooke a Stag, which yet not greatly hurt ranne away; to marke therefore the course that it tooke, he held up his hand betwixt his eleand the Sunne, when vnawares also Walter Tirrell fo fhot, that his Arrow glancing against a tree, ftrooke the King in his breft, who haftily breaking off so much as stucke out of his body, with one onely groane fell downcand died. Of which fudden chance, his followers foone understanding, most of them made away, but those few which remained laid his body (basely God wot, but as necessity suffer red) into a Colliers Cart, which drawne with one filly leane Beaft, through a very foule and filthy way.

the Cart broke, and there lay the spectacle of worldly

glory, both pittifully goared, and filthily bemired

tal afterward he was thence convaied vnto Winehelter

and butied under a plaine flat Marble flone in the Quire of Saint Swithers, the Cathedrall Church of the City, whose bones were since taken vp, and laid into a Coffer, with the bones of Canatiss. Hee died Yester of his age after he had raigned twelue yeeres, cleuen moneths lacking eight daies, being the yeere of his age forty three, and of Christ lefus, 1 1 00.

(41) He was of person indifferent, not of any

great stature, yet very welfet, his belly (like his Fagreat stature, yet very welfet, his belly (like his Fa-thers) fomewhat bearing out: of complexion * ruda body. dy, whereof he tooke his furname, and his haire Red-face, fomewhat yellow, his forchead flat and fquare, and his Eses dinerfely coloured; a stammering tongue, nis ites divertely coloured; a tammering tongue; epiccally in his anger; a gorgeous in apparell, and of no sparing diet; very bountifull to Souldiers, often hard to Churchmen, burdensome so his Sub-iers, an expers Souldier, that could wel both endure labour of the Body, and put off cares of the minds;

his warres no leffe diligent, then fortunate. He gaue His works of the

felfe, and all the appurtenances, together with the Towne of Charleton: confirming all that had beene Lib. Bermind;

Yorke founded a new Hospitall, to the honour of Sains

giuen them before. He also of an old Monastery in Peter, for the fuftentation of poore men and women: dying as we haue faid, without VV ife or Iffue, or without respit of time for dispose of his Crowne, or other wordly affaires.

in his affaires circumspect of his word stedfast, and in

to the Monkes called de Charitate, the great New-

Church of Saint Sautours of Barmond fey in Southwark, which he built, with his Mannor of Barmond fey it

HENR Y



An.D. 1100

This was the

M.The Miles. Th Rudberne. * A politicke!



heere in England, and brought up in learning eue frő his child-hood, whereby heegained to himfelfe the high honour very rare inthole daies, especially in Princes, to be, and to bee filed the Beauclerk : whose portion of Treasure was

the Conquerour and third

King of his race, was born

not a little, giuen him by his father, neither any whit fpared by himselfe to purchase friends at the death of his Brother, * Henry of Newburgh the right Noble, vertuous and learned Earle of Warwicke, cuer making his way both with the Clergy and Nobles, who * refused to admit any King but with capitulation and couenants to their owne likings.

(2) The steps then by which hee mounted the

Throne of Maiesty, were the dislikes of Williams oucr-hard curbing of his Natines, as he euer called the English: the rash and giddy head of his brother Robert; his absence in Syria, for whose returne to stay was dangerous, and whose election for King of Ierusalem, was likely to imploy his person there , his Englishbirth, having both a King and Queene to his Parents; his faire promifes for reformation of bad and rigorous Lawes, imposed by his Father and Brother , the restoring of the Clergy from exile, and to their Church-Linings; remission of Taxes exacted on the Subjects; and due punishments of such persons as were the chiefe Caulers thereof, in which behalfe to fatisfie the People hee committed Ralphe Bishop of Durham to the Tower. Then promifing by Oath to frame inft Lawes grounded on those of Saint Edward (then which nothing was more defired) did winde himselfe so farre into the loues of all, that with a generall concurrence he was faluted King.

Henrie I. ENGLANDS MONARCHS Monarch 47.

Chap. 4.

(:) He began his raigne the second of August. the facred rites of whose Coronation were celebrated at Westminster, by Maurice Bishop of London (in the absence of Anselme Archbishop of Canterbury) the fifth day of the same moneth, the yeere of Christ william Malmes. I 100. When Henry the fourth possessed the lmperial Diadem, Philip the first swaied the Scepter of

France, Edgar wore the Crowne of Scotland, and Pafchall the second sate in the See of Rome.

(4) His first businesse was to put in execution what

lychr. 40.7 ca.12.

he had promifed; and because hee might be thought vnfit to guide a large kingdome, who cannot reforme those who are ever at his elbow, began (as a good Prince ought) with his owne Court and Houshold (as knowing that to be the paterne and warrant of others enormities) whence he cathiered al Court-minions and nice or effeminate wantons, and enacting a decree against his Courtiers Rapines, Adulteries and Robberies, punished their Thefts with * death, and Lechery with the *loffe of their Eies, and other parts peccant.

Then he restored to the English the vie of Lights, which his father forbad by the ringing of a Bell, and had now continued for the space of thirty three yeeres, ordaining likewise many good Lawes, and common Liberties exemplified at large in Mathew Paris, which fummarily may be thus abridged.

Math. Paris

- 1 The Freedome of the Church from oppressons, or reservation of their Possions upon vacancies.
- 2 That the Heires of his Nobility [hould po] fesse the Lands of their Fathers, without redemption from him, which favour the Nobles likewife (hould afford to their Te-
- 3 That the Gentry might give in Mariage their Daughters and Kinfwomen without his licence, fo it were not to his Enemy.
- 4 That the widow should have her I ointer, and not be compelled to marry against her owne
- 5 That the Mother or next of kindred, shall be Guardian of the Lands of her Children.
- 6 That Coiners of false money should bee u pu-nished; a ndlikewise ordained a measure to the length of his * Arme to be a standard for Commerce among his People.
- 7 Then did he forgine all debts to the Crown before his ownse time, and must here com-mitted before the day of his Coronation: with some other like industgences: But, to the greatest content of the People, here game power and strength unto King Edwards

(5) To these his Ordinances he set his Name and Seale, with the subscription of sundry Peeres, com-

manding as many Copies as there were Counties in England to be transcribed and kept in the Monaste-

reries of every Province. Then did he recall Anfelm

Archbishop of Canterbury forced out of the Land by

Rufus, and bestowed all vacant Church-liuings vpon

Virginity, and was brought up in a house of Religi-

His Charters fent to be kept in Monasteries Math. Paris.

mej. Of Bland and

Of Eies and Go

tiens liber.

nitals, House Malme Lib. Simon Dun. Wil. Malmf.

King Edw Lawes reu

Ger. Der.

the worthiest persons. But to ground his new planted affection more deepe in the hearts of the English, he became a furer to Edgar King of Scotland, to have

His Mariage to the English blood. Wil.Genetic.

he became a turer to Lagar King or Sestiana, to have his filter to wife, which was Mande the daughter of Queen Margaret, Sifter to Edgar Esfeling and Grand-child of Edmund Ironside, whereby his issue might meerely be both of the English blood and of the ancient English Kings. cap 29. Maib. Parit. (6) Shee by report of some writers had vowed

on at Winchester (having entred the profession of a | His Wife fis & a Nun vnderher Aunte Christian) whose sanctity and knowledge both in mattershumane and dinine, with her mother Margarets; are highly commended (faith Gemeticenfishin a book written of their lines: Notwithstanding others hold that she vailed her selfe but for a thift, to put off some vinworthy matches, which her father Malcolme would have imposed her; and indeed this feruple was fuch a Core in Angelm his mouth that Rand. Biglea, is be would not pronounce the words of Contract visit Polyclera, this 7, her felfe had cleared the doubt by her open confes-

(7) Duke Robert, who now had bin five yeres in the Mark, Park holy warres, and therin borne himfelfe with fuch va- Duke Roberts no lour that he of all the Christian Princes was thought Holy wares, the worthiest to bee annointed King of Ierufalem, had their voice and election standing in the Temple before the Altar, vpon Eafter-Eue; and that the rather by a miracle of his Taper, which tookelight of it selfe, or from Heanen (if wee will be so light to belecue it :) but he hearing of the death of Rafus, refufed that, in hope to have England; for which his neglect of Divine appointment, it is faid God never after prosperedhim : then returning from Syria into Normandy was there joifully received, and affumed a-Normanay was there to many recent space to his bro-again his Dukedome (which he had engaged to his bro-will Genet, ther William) without repaiment of any mony: where hearing that Henry his yonger, was ftept into his throne of England, laid proiects in his minde how to defeate him. And to further these his designes, Ralphe Richard L. detate him. And to ruther their his detages, Raping Bishop of Durkam, corrupting his keepers, brake out of the Tower of Landaw B gast into Narmady, where heinfrigated Duke Rabers gainflus brother of England; others alfo delighting in alterations, folicited Rabers to make into England, with promitie of their affishance to recourrish e Crowne.

(8) King Henrie for his part refoluing to hold what he had got, neglected no meanes to keepe the Diadem as it was let, and therefore rigged forth his Nauie to secure the Seas, manned his fortresses, and with a great Army repaired towards the Coast, where necre vnto Hastings he lodged his Campe, relying ple, then any iust title he had to the Kingdome,

(9) Duke Robert by this time had taken the AnD. 1101 Seas, and was you the Kings fleete before they were An. Reg. 2. Seas, and was you the Kings neces before they were a ware, where preparing for Conflict, the most of the English fell to the Normans, either by the perfusation of the Duke or in hatred of Henry, that then began to of the Duke or in harred of tremy, that then began to tyrannize ouer them as they did imagine: By which meanes the Duke, had lafe landing at Partifiments, and did not a little reioice in this his fortunate beginnings with control of the wrongs. "Medicant." threating his brother to be reueged for his wrongs, & blaming the Nobility for fuffering him thus to be abufed, whilft he for the common good of Christen-dome, was imploied in the Holy-Lands warre. King Henry, as wife, as the other was valorous, wrought K. Henry Isbour under hand for an agreement of peace; for hee very well faw, that the cuent of warre hath commonly it fue from the first successe, and at one and the same time doth bolden and weaken the courage of the multitude; therefore certaine Noblemen on both fides fo trauised the businesses, that the Brethren in Hamiston thorr time became friends, and a composition made As to both their contents. The agreement was thus, that, because Henry was borne after his fathers Conqueft of this Land, and flood now the Crowned King with common consent, hee should during his life, enioy the same, paying Duke Robert in way of fealty three thousand Markes by yeere: and the furuiuour to be heire to his brother deceased, if hee died withour a fonne. In which it was also concluded, that all, either English or Normans, which had ded, that all, either Englip or Normans, which had raken part with the King or Duke, should be pardoned of all offences, and their Liuings againe reflored for the Confirmation whereof, and the performance

accordingly, twelue Princes upon either parties took

Ccce

Ren.Higden.in Potychr.l.7.c.: Math.Paris

Wil. Melmih.

King Heiri Strengthne himselte ag

their Corporall Oathes; and the Armies presently (10) The

ned, and west understanding the datter point of equity when and law) and there no be beganes both to fare from evinient inforcition of the fabricits, and all other exempting worth of God yous him, for his trechenous and writist deathings towards that the best points, to whome undoubtedly the

King, yet the degraded Abbots were restored throgh

the Clemency of the Papall fee, which is neuer wan-

ting to any, as long as the white and red, (to vie the very

words of a Monke) make intercession for them. But

Silver and gold

Henry I. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 41 (bap.4 Saturday, being the Vigill of S. Michael, cuen the fame | day forty yeares that William the Baltard fer foot on | Normandy conEnglands Shoare for his Conquest; God to disposing output | Minimum Kingdome by all right did appertaine: yet flood hee rather in feare of men then God (whose fauours he cunningly laboured to keepe) whom he meant to please another time by (faith Malmsbary) that Normandy thould be fubicated to England that very day, wherein England was fubbuilding of an Abbey for his fatisfaction. Duke Ro-bers then seeing and detesting the Kings swolne ducd to Normandy.

(23) Robert Curtuoife, that now vnfortunate wit. Gem. pride, posted backe vnto Normandy to gather his powers. Henry also held it good policy, not to give passage vnto Roberts wrath, knowing him a Souldier, and well waying his delperate estate: and there-Prince, and William Mortaigne, that valiant, but headstrong Earle, were forthwith sent into England and fore calling his Lords vnto London, in an affembly tickled their eares with these delectable and smooth imprisoned; the Earle in the Tower of London, and the Duke in Cardiffe Castle in Wales, after he had gouerned the Dutchy of Normandy nineteen yeeres; and was for effceme in Chiualrie accounted among (20) My friends, and faithful Counfellors, and the best Captains that the world then afforded, had natine Countrimen, you know by true repor hee not beene (as commonly martiall spirits vie to be)too rash and vnstaied in his other enterptises; how my Brother Robert was elected, and by God himselfe called to be the fortunate King of Ierusawhich headineffe did now draw vpon him a penance lem, and how unfortunately or rather infolently, he of twenty fixe yeeres continuance, in the afflicted Robots rathrell refuted that facred cflate, whereby hee is now most flate of a forlorne Captine. And Henry now no outsthress him "inftly reprobated of God: you also know by many onger as a brother, receining the keyes of Normanother experiments, his pride and arrogancy; for bely, as a Conquerour returned into England. "ing a man of a warring humor, hee is not onely im-(24) But long it was not ere Duke Robert, weary of "patient of any peace, but also wilfully defireth to this vnwonted duresse, lought to escape; and having "trample vpon you as men of abiect and contempiberty to walke in the Kings Meadowes, Forrests, Mat. Wefine. tible disposition, upbraiding you for idle droanes, and Parkes, brake from his Keepers without any "tor beily-gods, and what not? But I your King, na An.Reg.8. Assisters, or meanes for security, who being mist, "turally inclined to bee both humble and peaceable, was prefendie purfued, and taken in a quag-mire, Math. Paris, wherein his Horfe lay fast: whereupon the King "take delight in nothing more then to do you good "to maintaine your tranquillity and ancient liber-"ties,(as I have often tworn vnto you,) and mecke hearing of this his attempt, confidering that "ly and willingly to yeeld my selfe to your aduses, woods were no walles to restraine the sierce Lyon, and that to play with his claw was to endanger whereby I may circumspectly gouerne you as a "clement Prince: and to that end even now will flate, commanded him not onely a greater re straint and harder durance; but also (a thing vnfit *Iconfirme(if your wisedomes so thinke fit) your for a brother to fuffer, but most vnworthy for Beauouer-worne and vndermined Charters, and will elearke to act) both his eyes to bee put out, cauling eles purous, roborate them most firmely wirh a new oath and his head to be held in a burning bason (to auoid the ratification. Meane while, all the lawes which the "holy King Edward by Gods infpiring did cfta-blifth, I doe here command to bee inuiolably deformity of breaking the eye-bals) vntill the glaffic tunicles had loft the office of retaining their light. (25) Having thus quieted all forraine opposiobserved, hereby to move you to adhere stedfast! tions, King Henry fet his minde to preuent Dome-ticke; and therfore (about this time) those Flem-mings, whose Lands the Seas had decoured form few white mee, in repulling cheerfully, willingly, and powerfully, the wrongs offered me, by my brother and I fay hay, by my most deadly enemy & yours, yecres before, and place was granted them in Cum-berland, first by King Rufus, and afterwards by Henand of the whole English Nation: For if I bee guarded with the valours and affections of Englishmen ry; were now by the King, vpon better adulement "I shall scorne the threates of him and his Norremoued into wales, both to disburden his Inland "mans, as forcelesse, and no whit to bee feared. And with these faire promises (which yet afterwards hee of fuch guests, and that so they might bee a defence offuch guelts, and that to mey migrar over a determine betwith kinn and those user-flirring people. Which proised nothing deceiused his expectation; for by the cellimony of Giraldus, They were a Colony frost and firong, and continually natured the warres of the Wellhi The comments. vtterly neglected) hee so wonne the hearts of them all, that they would die with him,or for him,against any hostility whatsoeuer. (21) Duke Robert gone, and preparing for warre frong, and continuous ensures use water by cloathing, by tion of the sieme a Nation most accustomed to seeke gaine by cloathing, by Henry thus feeled in his peoples affection, followed him with all expedition, having in his company the triffique also and Marchandize by Sea and Land onder taking any paines, or perils what soeuer. A people of very great power, and as time and place requireth, ready by choice Nobility of England, Normandy, Gaunt, and Britaine, fo that hee was exceedingly ftrong. With turnes to take plough in hand and till the ground, as ready Kobert, for men of chiefe account, were Robert Bealso to goe into the field and fight it out; and that I may adde thus much more (such hee) a Nation most loially hafme, Earle of Shrewsburie, and William Earle of Mortaigne, in like displeasure with the King, and therefore armed with the like desperate boldnes. denoted to the Kings of England, and as faithfull to the (22) Henry with his Army had pierced into Nor-(26) By the which his policy, he attained that which his brother Rafacould rot, who many a time had but finall fuccesse in those parts though other-wife. mandy, cuen as farre as * Tenerchebray, a Castle of the Earle of Mortaigne, vling all meanes possible to surprise the same, for whose rescue, the Duke with wife, euer sped most fortunatly in all his aduentures these his Consorts, made all diligence to dissolue of warres: Bur it is thought by some, that as the httle successed has Mountanous cragginesse of the Country; and sharpthe fiege, and after some few skirmishes joined a bloody battaile, brauely fought on each part, where nesse of the Aire, encouraged them in their rebelli at the first onset, the Kings power (though, much on; fo the same impeached Rufus his successe. greater in number) went down; but by their mul-But King Henrie (faith Malmesburie) who with many betwire the Brethren and their forces, titude and manhood (especially through the * Kings a warlike expedition went about to force the Welshmen, example and encouragement) they foone prenailed; a waruse expeasion went about to force the vocation, cuer stirring outs Rebellion, for to feeld and to submit themselves; in the end resolved upon this wholesome policies for to take down their pride, he brought thither all the where Duke Robert, with Earle William, and fun-Mat Paris. Duke Rebert dry othersof good note, manfully fighting in the very proffe of their enemies, were taken priloners; but *Robert Beliafmeescaped by flight. And thus (as Ma-thew Paris observed) Gods luftice & Mercy tooke Flemmings that dwelt in England : a great number of Mat.Paris. which Nation in those daies, in regard of his mothers kinafter was take and call into dred by her Fathers side, flocking hither, were closely effect; his Iustice vpon Robert, for his refusall of Ieru-falems title, and vnto Henry his fauour, according purea oy ner sessers stace, poeceng miner, were custing forouded in England, in so much as they for their musti-tude termed burdens from conto the Realine: Wherefore he sint them alltogether with their substance, their Wines, perpetuali pri-fon. 1901 Malmsburg. nurdent England to the prophetie of King William his Father. This battaile was fought, and Normandy wonne, vpon Mat.Paririaith,

Mat. Paris.

wil Gem

end, Marj.

late losses by issue of her; whose Coronation was

appointed to be celebrated by Roger Bishop of Sarif-

very, the infirmity of Palfey to troubling Ralphe Arch-

bishop of Canterbury, that himselfe could not performe

it; yet because Roger was not appointed by him, he

forbad his imploiments and the King wearing his

Crowne, faith the Monke of Cheffer, this tefty old man could hardly bee entreated by the Lords, to

with-hold his hands from striking the same from

the Kings heads of fuch Spirites then were those

spiritual Prelates, and icalousie to loofe their pom-

pous preheminence of honour: but his high top

was formewhat born down by the boilterous blafts of Pope Calist, from whose holy hand Thurstan Arch-bishop of Torke (contrary to the Kings com-

maund, and his owne * Oath) having received con-

fecration, and thereupon forbidden by the King to

put foot againe within his Dominions, his holines

commanded his New-Creature should be installed

(* against all right and custom) without professing

any subjection to the See of Canterbury; and threat-

ned with his curse to interdite both Provinces rill

that was performed. The cause of the Popes indig-

nation against Ralph is supposed to bee, for that hee

had received his * Investiture of the King, who con-

trary to the Canons of the late Romanc * Synode,

did ftill chailenge and practife that * Regall prero-

(43 Whether it were about this contention of In-

uefting, or about a Fryer of the Holy Sepulchre, whom

(as Malmsb. faith) the King had imprisoned, or a-

bout Thurstans hard viage; certaine it is, that the

Pope much defiring to have private talke with the

King, came to him into Normandy, and so at Gifori

conferred (faith Paris) the Great King and the high

Prieft: but notwithstanding the Popes threates or

intreates, Thurstan was kept in banishment full fine

yeares, and then for the Popes pleasure was restored

But at this meeting the King was fo liberall of rich

gifts to the Pope and his Cardina's, that therfore the

Pope(faith a Monke) held him a most wise and eloquent

perswader, and his actions very instifiable: But it see-

meth the Cardinals were neither so cloquent nor

learned as they should be, for that (faith hee) two

youthes in the Kings Company, somes of the Earle of Mellent (learned both, and therefore fitte to be with

that learned King) reasoning of some points with them,

and disputing Scholler-like with Logicall syllogismes, the

Grad Rabbies (vied to other exerciles at kome, then ftu-

dying) were quite grauelled, and had nought to fay,

but that more learning was in the fe Westerne parts then

they had thought. But as these Church-stirres did

not a little disquiet the King, so also did new Welfb

showers of Arrowes rained thicke vpon them from

the higher ground: amongst which, one was so le-

Polyc.lub.r.ca.s.

Grew Daroh

A Cholericke

Kadmerna. * M::b.Paria ad.As. 1119. Polyc.lib.7.2.15. *Parit AU,1113. Roma feb Vrba-

no, Anno 1094.
*Paris there cals
ic Their ancien:
Coffene and An. Trea it had con tinued 200, yeres Will. Malmef.

Math. Poris.

will,Malmaf.

Chron. Walle

tumults, raifed by Meredith ap Blethyn, who with the three fonnes of Cadogin, Encon, Madoc, and Morgan, fore troubled the Kings people and peace, by breaking into the Marches, and especially into Chefbire, where they burned two Callles. The King therefore making towards them, had fent his maine Armie to conduct the Carriages, whilst himselfe with a small Company tooke a neerer way through the Mountaines and Straites; which being forelaid by the Enemy, was with great courage fet vpon, and through the advantage of the Place, many of his men flaine, and more hurt, by the Well Archers, whole

uelled at the King, that it firucke him on the breaft, The King flruck yet being furely armed, did him no hurt; but hee therewith all wonderfully difmated, and by likelihoode fearing some treason amongst his owne, (for, lihoode fearing fome treaton amongst this owned to the five fearing former treaton amongst this owned, then hee fivore by our Lords death, his vitall oath, that no Welfh-man flotte that Arrow, but one of fall oath, that no Welfh-man flotte that Arrow, but one of fall oath, the five fearing this contract to the five fearing this contract to the fearing this contract the fearing this contract to the fearing this contract his owne Prouncials) and confidering that by these his ouer-rash proceedings his glory purchased in more famous parts, might againe bee loft in this wild and rude Country; came to a Parley & Peace; A Peace couch receiving of the King a thouland head of Cattle, and leauing Kord Fitzwarren Lieutenant of the Marches,

returned to England, where hee held three Parliaments in the same yeare, one at Norwich, another at Northampton, and the third at London. (44) The Normans still repining at the Cap- An.D. 1122 (44) The Normans itili repining at the captuity of Robert their late Duke; and flanding well affected vnro his Sonne, thought now the time fitp Duke Roberts tonne. ting, (Prince William being dead) to raise the other William his Cosen Germane into his place: who, as the Monke of Chefter affirmeth, married Sybil the other daughter of Foulke, Earle of Anion, He marrieth siwith whom hee received the Earledome of Cenomannis, vpon displeasure that King Henry withheld the formers dowry in England. The chiefe in this action was Robert Earle of Mellent, who was lately failen off from the King: Henry therefore hasting into Normandy, belieged his Castle Pont-Audomar, and tooke it, and at that time built a large and high wall with many Bulwarkes about the Tower of Roan, repaired the Caftles of Caen, Arches, Gifors, Faleise, Argenton, Damfort, Vernon, Ambres, de. and fundry others.

(45) In the meane time, Earle Mellent desirous An.D. 1124 to bee reuenged vpon the King, affociated Hugh Earle of Montfort and others vnto his aide, who entring Normandy with me and involve, and about harthe as they went, thinking to bring all to their obedience: against whole outrages, William Tenhammer and Lieutenane in those parts, addressed historiam and Lieutenane in the laws and the entring Normandy with fire and fword, did much to danger of an Ambush, laid for that purpose, after long fight tooke them both prisoners, and prefented them to his Mafter, whereby the warres ceafed for a time in those parts,

-(46) In this the Kings absence, but yet with his icence, I shannes Cremensis the Popes holy Cardinal, came into England, fent by Honorius the Second, there to redreffe the ftill continued finne-feeming abuse of the Clergy, in retaining and vsing, according to Gods owne Ordinance, the Society of their wives. This Pontificall Prelate was entertained by cap. 16. all the Bishops and Abbots with great and costly Presents, and afterward being solemnely set in a Councell at London, voon the birth-day of the Bleffed Virgine, made a foleme Oration in praise of Virginitie and Chastity, with a terrible inuectine against the Hourd, in Heart, maried Priests: and to amplifie their sinnes the more, hee shewed what extreme impiety it was, to rife from the bed of vnlawfull luft, (for fo was their chafte Marriage termed) and with polluted hands to touch the Sacrament of the body of Christ: but the same night following he * haning that very day confectated Taken with a night following the * natural time very way conject accust that holy Sacrament, was himself taken with a Whore, where the fame the matter being so apparant, that it could not been the matter being so apparant, that it could not been apparently to the sacrament of the sacrament hid, (neither ought it to be filenced, faith Huntingdon) to the great reproach of those most vnchafte Mst. Paris. boafters of Chastiric, as both Paris and Higden Rog, Higden themselues doe confesse: and so hee returned to Rome with shame enough, but with little suc-cesse in that intended businesse; till some sew yeers after * King Henrie, feeming very desirous to settle his pretenfed continency in the Clergy; in a 1129. Counce held at London, obtained (through fim Pethon, plicity of the Archbilhop of Camerbury, faith Paris) Haningdon, that himselfe shold have the execution of inflice and Sept Hand.

punishments of the Priests, that offended either in

keeping of their wives, or viing of Concubines, (for

likely those that liked not the one, loued the other,

byldsughter to the Earle of As-

An.D. 1 123 Roger Wind. Math. Park. King Henry 10

An.D. 1125 Cardinall Cre-mensis, the Pope Legat to restrain Priests matriage Palychr, lib.7.

Hen, Hunting.

* Viz. An.D.

Chap.4 | Henry I. ENGLANDS MONARCHS.

as well as Cremenfu;) but eucn then also, the Kings end being onely to get in fummes of money which hee had still occasions to vie, euery man redeemed his liberty by his purse, and matters rather proued

worse, then any whit reformed.

(47) Whilest King Henry about his said affaires lay in Normandy, newes was brought him that Hen-An.D. 1126 77 the Emperour his sonne in law was dead; whereupon hee presently sent for his Daughter the Empresse; and with her he returned into England, where dieth The Empresse calling a Parliament, in the presence of himselfe, and of David King of Scotland, hee caused the Nobles, comes into Eng (and first before all other, Stephen his Sifters Sonne

fweare fealty to Empresse Down ager the Kings daughter. who first did violate it,) to sweare scalty to her, as to his lawfull, and now onely heire, by whom they should againe come to bee gouerned by the ancient daughter. Malmef.Nouel. English Roiall bloud, from which he shewed her to co.t. Humwed,lib.8. bee descended: which Oath was this, that they should, as much as in them lay, after King Henries

decease, (if hee died without Heire-Male) establish her Queene of the Monarchy of Great Brstaine, now called England. But whether they did or no (faith Gemeticensis belongs not to mee to tell; but this our Story shall hereafter relate, and make knowne.

(48) Giraldus and Higden, and fome ancient Manuscripts affirme(but with very little probability or credite) that Henry the Emperour died not at this time (as was given forth;) but that rather vpon a Heny the Em-perour supposed not to be dead. * remorse of conscience, for imprisoning his owner natural Father, Henry the third vnto death; and al-

Math. Paris.

so his Spirituall Father the Pope with his Cardinals repenting these outrages, hee laid aside his Imperial Roade, and secretly sted into England, where at Westchester hee became an Hermite, changing his name vnto * Godfeall, where he so lived the space of ten yeeres, and was buried in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Werburga the Virgine. Vpon which his fuddaine flight and milsing, the Empresse Maudxsome fay, was suspected to bee guilty of his death, and

for that cause was kept continually in the Queenes Chamber Indeed, that the abode still in Chamber with the Queene, Paris records; but hee giues a wifer reason thereof, for that her Father did lone her excee dingly, as being now his fole Heire; and where should an Empresse rather live then with a Queene? a Daughter, then with her Mother? a faire Lady, a Widow, and an Heire of so great a Kingdom, then where

her Person might bee safest from danger, her mind from inueigling, and her carriage from [uspition?But as for that other idle coniccture, it is razed out, both by those Writers, who record his Buriall, and Monumentat Spire, (as. Higden himfelf fignifierh) and al-fo by the penne of William Gemeticensis, who reporteth her to be a woman generally well thought of, and approved among the greatest Princes of the Empire, for her prudent and gratious behaviour towards the Emperour her husband; insomuch that they became suiters on-

to her, feeking by all meanes to attaine her to governe them, and to that end attended her to King Henry m Normandy to folicite the same; to whom in no wife hee would give his confent, meaning to make her his Suceeffer in the Kingdome: Whereunto Mamsbury (who then liued) accordeth; faying, shee was very vn-willing to haue come out of those parts of the Empire, where both herdowry and acquaintance lay, and that the Princes of those Countries came more wherewith her busband had disquieted his mind, then once into England, to have her for their Em-Howbeit soone after this her departure from him, presse, but that the King would not part with the Heire of his Crowne. by confent of the States, who met at Northam-

(49) But King Henrie afterwards desirous to bee An.D. 1127 free from the variances of these forraine Princes, and hearing that Foulke Earle of Anion had given his Earledome, with the territories of Gaunt and

Malmel Noutl.

Matth.Paris. Will,Gemet. The Empresse married to the Earle of Anion.

Turyn, vnto his Sonne leffrey Martell, furnamed Plantagenet, (himfelfe minding to abide at Ierusalm, whereof he was King in right of his wife Milissent, the daughter of Baldwine de Burge lately deceased) thought him the fittest to be linked into his alliance, & therfore concluded a mariage betwixt the faid Ief-

frey, and his onely lawfull daughter Lady Maude the Empresse, though partly against her liking, as both Gemeinen Gemei which was folemnized in Normandy the third of A-

Monarch 41

prillaccordingly. (50) That William, fonne to the Cartoife, was for-110) Thus, John to the Carrier Base of Flanders, to me be fabre of the Carle of Easte of Flanders, Flanders of Flanders, Fla being traiterously murdered by his owne People Mat. Paris, without any his iffue to fueceed him, Lewis of France (to make William faster to him) set him in possessi-

on as the next heire in blood vnto that Larledome William being the sonne of Duke Robert, and Robert matine side the Eldest of Queene Mande (the wife of the Con- Funders, querour) and the daughter to Earle Baldwm the fifth; whose issue Male now failing, the right was from her deriued unto this her Grand-child william.

(51) This Ground-worke vnto greatneffe King An.D. 1128 Henry difliked, least by his Nephewes height, himrefin dilike the ouer topped, and his blind fathers wrongs the fooner redreffed: therefore having by

his daughters marriage made Aniou his, from Nor- king Heavy mandy he inuaded France, euen vnto Helpard, where for eight daies he remained as fecure as in his owne Mas, Paris, Kingdome, and partly by feare, partly by faire paiments, wrought Lewis to withdraw his aide from yong William: neither fo ceased, but that hee inftigated william de Tpres to disturbe Williams state, He vieth means and did also drawa cerraine Duke named Theodorick out of Germany with a band of Flemmings, who ent-

ty and valour.

red Flanders in Hostile maner. (52) With these last, Earle William (a Prince for his

age of imcomparable proweffe) foone met, and giuing them battell, with an inuincible courage brake greatvalour. through the enemies troopes, in such fort that they were disconstited; and the Earle had the day; whence in this heate of bloud, hee marched vnto Angi, a Math. Paris. Castle of King Henries, which after a strong siege, being vpon the furrender, by a small wound which Earle William received in his hand, hee shortly died,

Crosiers staues, all of them angerly threatning, and

attempting his death: wherewith hee was to per-

plexed, that leaping out of his bed, he called for

Successors in his Dominions.

He dies of a fma but not without immortall fame, for magnanimi-

(53) Were it not reported by some Writers of note, I might here well passe ouer certains presa will Malines

ging dreames (as the Monkes interpreted them) which King Henry had, being ready now to goe Highen. into Normandy: for to his feeming he faw a fort of rufficke plough-men with their Instruments of husbandry; after them Souldiers with their weapons of Warre: and laftly, the Bifhops with their

helpe: but feeing it but a dreame, as a dreame he efteemed it , and paffed ouer into Normandy where long hee staied not, but that his Daughter Maud vpon formed lipleafure departed from her husband, and came with her Father into English and came with her English an and came with her Pather into England, Some write A.Do. 1131 that fewas the provoker of certaine diffleasures betwirt Roger Hourd. her husband and Father, which fo affected his mind with Hauden, in Hen passions of wrath and griefe, that many thought it was a second with send; and indeed Malmsburie 164. witnefleth, that the King ypon his death-bed pafMalmef.mentl.

Generally mentioned the wrongs and indignities fionately mentioned the wrongs and indignities

Hen. Bantinede pton; thee was reconciled to her husband : fent An.D.1131 which him upon his intreaty and bare him a fonne, Ger. Don. whose name was Henry; for ioy whereof, King Henry affembled his Lords, and againe made his faid Daughter, and the lawfull Meires of her body his

(54) And then preparing againe for his last and An.D. 1133 fatall paffage into Normandy, tooke shipping upon the Nones of August, (the very day wherein he first will Malmelin received the Crowne,) when hapned so wonder-

full an Eclipse of the Sunne, that Malmsbury the reporter faith, himselfe then faw the starres plainy in the Firmament about the Sunne, and that two The Kings laft daies after, so great and searefull an Earthquake hapned, that the house wherein himselfe sate, was lifted vp with a double remone; and others fay, that out of riffes in the earth, burning flames arole, that could not be quenched, which diuers indged to be fatall prodigies of the deathes of those Princes that Polychron lib.7.

foone after enfued. An.D.1134

442

(56) For Robert the Curtoife, after twenty fixe yeers imprilonment and blindnesse, through griefe conceiued at the putting on of a faire new roabe, (too little for the King, and therefore in kindnesse sent to Duke Robert to weare) grew weary of his life (as disdaining to bee mocked with his brothers cast cloathes,) and curling the time of his vnfortunate Natioity, refused thenceforth to take any sustenance. and so pined himselfe to death. His body was buriedat Gloucester in the Church of Saint Peter, and middle of the Quire, where to this day remaineth his Tombe, with a carued Image of his feature, as the monument of a most vnfortunate man,

57 And not long after K. Henry in Normandy com-

Honeden, Wil. Malmf. Math. Paris.

ming care very well from Hunting in the Forrest of Lyons, and Towne of Saint Denys, made his repast of a dish of Lampreyes (which meat hee too wel loued, but could neuer well digeft;) whereupon he fell more gricuoufly ficke, and the fame full increafing, after seuen daies sicknesse, vpon the first of December, the fixty flue of hisage, and yeare of Christ Iesus, 1135, when hee had raigned King of An.D. 11;5 England, thirty five yeeres, foure moneths, lacking foure daies, & Duke of Normandy, twenty nine yeers and foure monethes: he died in the faid towne of S. Dems, and from thence was conneied to Roan where his Bowels, Eyes and Braines were taken out, and buried; the body also sliced, and pow-Palychr. 1.7. c. 27. dred with much falt, was wrapped in a Buls hide to avoide the flinch, beeing so intollerable, (a point fitting for such great Princes to thinke on, & in their great glory and pleasures to remember their fraile and humane condition,) that the Phyfitian who tooke out his braines was poisoned therewith, and presently died: wherupon some obserued, that other Kings killed men in their life; but he allo wafter he was dead; thence was his Corps carried into England, and honourably buried vpon the day of Christs Nativity, at Reading in Barkesbire, in the Abbey that himselfe had there founded, and

endowed with large possessions.

(58) After his death (faith Huntington and Ho-

neden) men spake their mind as freely of him,

as of any other dead man: fome commending him

Rand, Hig.in Po-lychr. lib.7 ca.17. * His especiall

for these three glorious felicities, * Wifedome, Victory, and wealth: others condemning him for three efpeciall vices, Conetonfuesse, Cruelty, and Lechery; some instances of which wee haue touched in the relation of his life; the first three, in obtaining and keeping the Crowne: the last, in his most gricuous taxations, cruell handling and imprisoning his Brother; and his incontinency of life (hall prefently appeare, by his many illegitimate iffues, the fruites of his wantonnes, and witnesses of his shame : in that Princes who are to punish such sinnes in others, ought themselues especially to be free from them: for though their living fortunes froppe mens tongues from vp-braiding: yet after their death the tongues of the vulgar, and pennes of the learned, will make the infamy of their vices to bee immortall.

(59) He was for personage of a reasonable sta-Defeription of his person and qualities. William Genes. ture, broad breafted, well iointed, and full of flefh: amiable of countenance, sharpe and faire eyes, blacke of haire, and that somewhat carelesly hanging on Math. Well. his forehead; his mind was enriched with many vertues, a follower of Iuftice, a louer of Religion feuere against theeues, and all effeminate nicities So that hee commanded mens long haire (which against God and Natures law was matchable at that

time with womens) to be cut off: temperate of di-et, and neuer drinking but for thirft; valiant in bat-Malas (b) s taile, yet very circumspect, seeking rather to win by wife care, then by effusion of bloud: and by the report of most Writers excelled all the Princes of report of moit WHIETS executed an the Princes of the World in his time, in Marcy, Wealth, and Bounty, vnto Monafterier: the land hee defen-ded by Garrifons of Souldiers planted on the Confines of his neighbour Princes, building many Forts, Bulwarkes and Castles; besides twenty fine Townes and Cities: whatfoeuer was wifely or vertuoully performed in his Gouernement, is chiefly in Hen. 1. adoribed to his yonger yeares inflitution in true Learning and Philolo phy, which was * the great fur-niforment of him water the Science of Regality; being ofmigment of time runs ine science of regatity; being ot-ten heard to fay, that hee eftermed an indearned King but a crowned Afe. In which regard (aith * Fossius, hee tooke chiefe pleasure to reside in his new Palace, which himself built at Oxford, both for the delight he had in learned men, himselfe being very learned, and for the vicinity of his new Parke at Woodstocke, nea, and got the cuentry of his new Park at Woodflocks, which che had fraught with all kind of firange beaths, whereis he much delighted, at Lyons, Lepards, Lynes, Camells, Poreapins, and the like. His delight all to in works of deuotion, thewes it felfe both in the ereworks of denotion, shewes it selfe both in the cre-Action and indowment of the Collegiate and Epileopall Sees of Carlile, and Elf, as also of the Abbayes of Hide, Circefter, Reading, and the Priorie of Dues Hable: His Wife Queene Mand founded the Priorie of Countries of Mand founded the Priorie of Dues Carling and Carling Carli orie of Holy Trinity within Algate, and the Hospital of Saint Giles in the Fields: so that by himselfe, his Ouecne, and other denoted persons, twenty source logue of Sishops foundations to religious vses(if not more) were ere-

His Wines.

cted in the raigne of this King.

(60) Mande the first Wife of King Henry, was the daughter of Malcolme the third, surnamed "Can-moir, King of Scotland: her mother was S. Margaret, daughter to Edward, sonne of Edmund the Iron fide King of England. She was married vnto him at London in the first yeare of his raigne, Anno 1100.by London III the nity years of the rangue, anne 1 100.09 / Anschme Archbishop of Conterbury: having former-ly vowed her selfea Nunne, which some swore she did not for loue of single life, but to audide some vnworthy matches, which her Father would have imposed on her. Her Coronation was at Westiminfler by the same Anseline, on Sunday the eleventh of November in the same yeare. She was his wife feuenteene yeeres and more', famous for her learning, loue to learning, charity to the poore, and all vertuous dispositions; and deceased at Westminster the first of May, in the eighteenth yeere of his raign, and vecre of our Saluation, 1118. where shee was buried in S. Peters Church, on the right fide of King Edward the Confessor.

(61) Adheia, or Alice, the second wife of King Henry, was the daughter of Gadfry the first Duke of Louane, by the daughter of the Emperour Henrie the fourth, and lifter to Duke Godfrey, and Iocelin of Lousin. Shee was married vnto him the nine and twentieth of Ianuary, in the twentie one of his raigne, and yeere of Christ, 1121. and was crowned the morrow after being Sunday. Shee was his wife fifteene yeeres, but euer childlesse, and suruiuing him, was remarried to William Danbern Earle of Arundel, and was mother of Earle william the fecond, Rayner, Godfrey, and Ioan, married to Iohn

His Iffue.

(62) William, the sonne of King Hemp, and Queen Mand his first wife, was born the second of his Fathers Raigne, and of Christ, 1102. When he came to age of foureteen yeeres, the Nobility of England did him homage, and fware their fealties vnto him at Shrewsburie. The third yeere after, hee married

"Roffin, that Pal-lace be called Been mount, where afterward

His fecond Wife

Chap. 4. Henrie I. the daughter of Foulk, Earle of Anion; and the same yeere hee was made Duke of Normandy, doing his homage for the same to Lewes the Groffe, King of

France; and received the homage and oathes of the Nobility of that Country: but in his returne for England, hee was unfortunately drowned neere unto Barbileet upon the twenty fixt of Nouember, the yeere of Grace 1120. and eighteenth of his owne age, without any iffue, to the great griefe of his

(63) Maud the daughter of King Henry, and of Queene Mand his first wife, was borne the fourth yeere of her Fathers raigne. She was the fecond wife of the Emperour Henrie the fourth, espouled at fixe

yeeres of age, and at eleuen with great folemnity was married and crowned his Empresse at Ments in Germany, 6. Ianuary, Anno 1114, the ninth of her husbands; and foureteenth of her Fathers Raignes. Shee was his wife twelve yeeres, and furnised him without any iffue of him; & comming into England a widdowe, she had fealty sworne vnto her by the Nobility, and was remarked to Geffrey Plantagines Earle of Anion. Sonne of Foulke King of Terufalem, vpon the third of Aprilland yeere of Grace 1 1 2 7. by whom shee had iffue, Henry, the Second, King of England, Geffery Earle of Nantes in Britanie, and Wil-Less who was called Farle of Porto: the was his wife twenty three yeeres, and furning him also continued a widdowe the last seventeene yeeres of her life, which she ended in the City of Roan the tenth of September, 1167. the foureteenth of the raigne of King

Henry her fonne, and was buried in the Abbey of Bee in Normandy. (64) Richarda second sonne to King Henry, and Richard

lation.

Mard.

Zufem.

Robert.

Queene Mand, by the testimony of Gernasius the Monke of Canterbury, who maketh Mand their eldest Child, William the seconds and lastly, Richard; and then (faith he) fhe left bearing: but Malmsbury faith she had but two Children, one of each sexe. (65) Eufem also another daughter, and fourth Child(by Heffor Boetist the Scottish Historian)is said

to be borne unto the Beauclearke by Queene Mand; the credite of the two last, I leave to the reporters, who onely thus name them without any further re-

His Naturall I flue.

(66) Robert, the naturall fonne of King Henry, was Earle of Gloucester, and married Mabil daughter and heire of Robert Fitzhamon Lord of Glamor gan, by whom hee had illu William Earle of Glone-fler, Richard Bishop of Bayon, Rager Bishop of Wor-tesfer, and Mand the wife of Randolph Germon, the mother of Hugh Keuelist Earle of Chefter, and Richard his brother: Earle William married Anis daughter of Robert Boffu Earle of Leicefter, and had iffue three daughters and heires of that Earledome, which by Anis the second of them, in the end descended to Clare Earle of Hertford. This Earle Robert died the last of October, in the twelfth yeare of King Stephen, and was buried at Brifton in the Church of S. I ames, which hee had founded, and his body laide in the midft of the Quire; vnto him William Malmsbury dedicated his Booke called Historia Nouella.

(67) Richard another naturall fonne of King Henry, was as it feemeth by an ancient Register of the Monaftery at Abington, borne in the raigne of King Wil-liam Rufus, of the widow of Anskill, a Nobleman of the Country adjoining to the faid Monastery; and it feemeth hee is that Richard that was drowned in the Norman Scas neere Barbfleet, among the rest of King Henries children.

(68) Raynold the naturall sonne of King Henry, was borne of a daughter vnto Sir Robert Corbet, Lord of Aleester in Warwickeshire, by the gift of the King in fauour of her, who was after married to Henry Fitz-herbert his Chamberlaine. This Raynold was created Earle of Cornwall, and Baron of Castle comb, with confent of King Stephen, and had iffue foure

Daughters; of whom have forung many faire

(69) Robert another of that name; was borne Robert of Edith, the fifter of Inc. sonne and daughter of Forme, the fonne of Sigewolfe, both of them great Barons in the North: which Edith afterwards King Barons in the North: which Easth atterwards King Henry gaue in marriage to Robert Doile; Baron of Hook-Norton in Oxfordfire; and with her gaue him the Mannor of Eleydon, in the County of Buckingham; by whom he had iffue Henry Doyle Baron of Hook-Norton, who oftentimes mentioneth this Robert in his Charters, cuer calling him Robert his

brother the Kings sonne. (70) Gilbert another naturall fonne of King Henry is named in the additions to the story of William Gemeticensis the Norman Monke, in the Chronicle of that country, written by Iohn Taylor being a Tranflator of that worke out of Latine into French; and laftly, in the Treaties betwixt England and France, written in the French tongue by John Tillet, Secretaric to their late King Henry the second, and yet in them, not any other mention is made, but only of

(71) William also a naturall some of Henry the King, had given vnto him the Towne of Tracie in Normandy; of which hee tooke his furname, and was called William of Tracie: But whether he were the Progenitor of the Tracies, fometime Barons in the Progenitor of the Tractet, sometime Barons in Demonstre, or of them that now be of the fame furname; or whether Sir William Tracte, one of the foure Knights, that flew Thomas Beeket Archbishop of Canterbury, were any of his posterity, is not certainely reported: nor any thing else of him, more then that hee died a little after his Father, which was in the yeere of Christ, 1135.

(72) Henryanother naturall sonne of King Henry, was borne of the Lady Nofta, daughter of Rees ap Temder Prince of South-Wales, who was the Wife of Sir Gerald Windfor, and of Stephen, Constables of the Castles of Pembrooke, and Abertinie in Wales, and Progenitors of the Families of the Fitz-geralds, and the Fitz-Stephens in Itelands he was uing iffue two fonnes, namely, Ateiler and Robert, Hugh Lacie, Lord of Methe in Ireland; hee was at the conflict in the Ile of Anglefy, betweene Magnathe conflict in the Ile of Anglefy, betweene Magnathe fonne of Harold, Harfager King of Norway, and Hugh of Mountgomery, Earle of Arundell and Shrensbury, wherein hee was flain, as some say, with

(73) Mande the Naturall daughter of King Henry was Counteffe of Perche, and the first wife of Earle Rotroke the first of that name, fonne of Arnolfe de Helding the first Earle of that County : Shee had iffue by him one onely daughter named Magdalen wife to Garey the fourth King of Nauarre mother of King Sanches, surnamed the wife, from whom all the Kings of Nasarre are descended: Shee died vpon Friday the twenty fixth of Nouember, in the twentith of her Fathers raign and yeere of Grace 1120, being drowned in the Sea with her brother Dake William.

(74) Maude another of that name and naturall daughter of King Henrie, was married to Conan the first of that name surnamed the Grosse, Earle of little Britaine in France, fonne of Earle Alan by Ermengard his second wife; by Alan shee had issue Hoe well, pronounced illegitimate, and dishersted by his supposed father Constance, that died without issue, and Bertha the wife of Eudes Earle of Porrobet, mother of Earle Conan the yonger, who by Margaret fifter of William King of Scots had iffue Confiance maried to Geffrey sonne of King Henry the second.
(75) Inlian likewise an other natural daughter

of King Henry was married to Euflace the illegitimate sonne of William Lord of Bretevil in Normandy, who was the fonne and heire of Willsam Fitz-Osborne and elder brother of Roger, both larles of Hereford

Dddd, 2 in

Raysold.

Richard.

STEPHEN

ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Stephen. Monarch 42 STEPHEN THE TVV O AND Monarch 47 FORTIETH MONARCH OF THE Stephen. ENGLISHMEN: HIS RAIGNE ACTS, AND ISSVE CHAPTER V. Iough the Empresse Mand Duke of Normandy; his mother was " Adelicia the An.D. 112 had fealty sworne vnto third daughter of William the Conquetor by Queen Mande his wife: And himselfe was advanced to bee her, in the life time of her Earle of Mortaigne by King Henry his vncle, whose Crown he now endeauoured to vsurpe, being other-Father: and againe both her felfe, and iffue ordaiwife for his many princely parts, worthy to weild a Scepter, if his claime thereto had beene inft and warrantable. ned to be his fucceffors in Englands Throne, as hath beene faid; yet so powerfull is Ambition, where the (2) For as foone as Natures course had brought (a) For as foone as Natures courle had brought. King Henry, where Princes and poored Sublects are all equalls, forthwith hee was working to disposite his highest probability of the pro object is a Diademe, and to weake are all affurances which are built on the wa-

uering Multitude, that King Hemies prouidence, was foon defeated, and with his death al fealties reuerled, foon defeated, and with his death al featiles reuerfed, and that by him onely who had a contended to be the formoft of the Lairie in taking that oath, even Stepher Earle of Mertaine and Ballaines aman whose defeant was very Noble, being the third fonne of Stepher Earle of Sleys and Champigne, who was the fonne of Earle Ender, and he of Earle Theobald, the

fonne of Gerlon the Dane, the companion of Rollo

a very potent man in the State, who had industriously a very potent man in the state, who had indultrioully firred himfelfe in making way to his entrance; and (vpon affurance of all liberties to the Church and Common-wealth) had drawne on also William Arch-

446	Stephen. THE SVCC	E	SSIONOF Monarch 42.	Book.9
	bithop of Canterbury, the very first man that had		that all Persons and Causes Feelestastical should apper-	Wi, Malmsbury.
	(worne viito Mande the Empreile: by whole exam-	- 1	taine onely to Ecclesiasticall Indicature: that none but Clergy men should ener intermedale with the vacancies	Huntsingdon. Roger Hourd,
]	ple many others were winded into the like periutic, * traiteroufly auowing, that it was basenesse for so		of Churches, or any Church-mens goods; that all bad v-	Will trans.
A traiterous po-	many, and to great Peeers, to be lublect vnto a vvo-		fages in the Land touching forrests, exactions, &c. should	- 1
ntion. Rog.de Wendswer. Odam 11-ru	man. And to helpe forward thole audacious begin- [be otterly extirpate; the ancient Lawes restored, oc. As	ı
Malinib.Nouth	nings, Roger Bishoppe of Salsbury, the late Kings Treasurer protested (Malmsburie, who reports it, him-		Stephen well knew, that they had chosen him their	. 1
lib.r.	felfe heard it from him) that they were free from		King, onely to make their vies of him, fo these im- munities he granted, rather to bleare their Eies, then	Wil. Malmsb
	the oath made to the Empresse, for that without con		* with any purpose to manacle his own hands with	Howeden,
	fent of the Barons she had married out of the Realm;		fuch Parchment-Chaines,	1
- 1	but that which wrought most, was the testimony of		(5) This his entrance was very peaceable (faith Ger-	Genus.
Or high Ste-	Hugh Bigot, * Senefcall vnto King Henry departed,		nafius of Canterbury) but by little, and little civill dif- cordinercased, to the lamentable destruction of men,	Dereb.
	who comming ouer with Stephen, tooke his corpo- rall, oath, that the King on his death-bed, vpon some		and the land: whereto Robert Earle of Gloucefter,	Math. Paris.
Mat, Paris. The Wal.	offence taken against his daughter Mande, disinheri-		halfe-brother o the Empresse, whose wisedom and	
Toodigma, Neoftria	red her and appointed this Stephen his nephew to be		power King Stephen much feared, gaue a fecret be-	Malust Nonel, lib.z.
	his fucceffour. These colourable instigations so mo-		ginning, when amongst them that swore him feal-	
* Idem. Fealty fworms to	ued the * too credulous Archbishop and the Peeres, that they all swore fealty vnto him and became his		ty, hee concluded his (as we faid) with this refer- uation, that his owne authority thou doe nothing	
Sueben.	Leigemen.		empaired, meaning no longer to respect him as his	- 1
	(3) His first landing in England, (being at Whit-	ĺ	King, then the King should him as a Peere : and a	Caffies cenerals
Malmef Nontl.	fand-bay) by a tempest of thunder so wonderfull &		generall fuffcrance, to cred Caftles for ftrenoth	Caftles general- ly railed in Esg-
Mat.Wifter.	terrible that the people thought verily the ende of all		throughout the land, was no security to his peace- able estate. Intended indeed to strengthen the King-	land
	was at hand, did prognosticke the storms of troubles which his periurie brought with him; for even then		dome against Mand the Empresse; but proved the	
	both Doner & Canterbury fortified themselves against		bane of all subjective obedience; which was politick-	UVallingham.
Suphenslouely:	him, though London gaue better leaue to his entrance,		ly confidered by Henry Fitz-Emtre fe, in the conclu-	Tpodigad Ann.
Will.MalmaG	whose Person and presence drew euer the affections of the beholder, being in all parts complete with	1	fion of Peace betwist King Stephen and him, when a thousand one hundred and fifteene Castles so rai-	
lindem.	natures endowments, of perionage passing comely,		fed, were againe razed and cast downe.	1. 1
	of disposition louing, cheerefull, and affable to the		(6) The first man that professedly set himselfe	
	meaneft, alwaies very liberall; but now especially,		opposite to Stephens viurpation, was Balawin de Red-	Exceller fieft ru- fifts King Stepbe.
	knowing his Purfethe best Lawyer to plead for his Ti. tle; and in Martiall prowesse gaue place to none of	ł	wers, who fortified the City and Castle of Excesser against him; the Welshmen also, bearing in minde the	
	that time wherein, though his whole raigne was		harms that K. Henry had done them defired revenge.	
	continually spent, yet (by reason of King Henries	١.	and made many flaughters upon the Kings people:	
	great Treature left) neuer burthened he the Com-	1	Against these, Stephen proceeded with his band of	
	mons with any exactions, a thing that evergaineth the love of the common fort: neither is he taxed		English and Flemmings, and after a strong and charge- able siege, by famine drew foorth Baldwin, his wife,	
	with any other observable crime, saue onely his per-		and children, all which hee disherited and expulsed	
	iuric against the Empresse Dowager and her sonne.		the Land, viing to great lenity towards all other of-	
Rand, Bigden.	(4) Hee entred his government the yeare of	1	fenders there, that it gaue great encouragement to	Hen, Hauting, lib.8.
Roger Hourd.	Christ Icsus, 1135, the second day of December, and was crowned at Westminster the twenty fixt of the	1	others rebellions. But in Wales the bulinesse pro- spered not so well, where at Cardigana great battell	Flor Wigorn.
	fame Moneth, being Saint Stephens day, by William	١.	was fought, with fuch flaughter and ouer bearing of	1
	Corbell Archbishop of Canterbury, who with the rest	1	the English, that the men by women were taken and	
	of the Prelates doing him homage, and knowing		led away Captine, and so many drowned by the fall	
	now hee would yeeld to any conditions (for perfor- mance whereof his * Brother of Winchester did there		of a Brige ouer Temd, that a passage was made ouer the water with the dead Carcases therein heaped.	1
Will.Melmef.	engage himfelfe for a pledge) they all tooke their	1	(7) Neither thus onely, but some of the English	
lib.1,nouel,	oath of allegiace conditionally, (traiteroufly, I might		allo diffailing King Stephen fecretly infligated Travid	Paigder. A.Do. 1128
Allegeance fworns conditi-	fay) to obey him as their King, so long as he should preserve their Church Liberties, and the vigour of	1.	King of Seotland, to revenge the wrongs done to the Empresse Mand, a service as they vrged it very	Tpadigm. Neaftr.
onally to the	Discipline: And that the Lay-Barons made vigal-		gratefull vnto her, and even pleasing to God and	
King.	fo of this policie, appeareth by Robert Earle of Glou-		Man. He therefore confenting , invaded the bor-	
	seffer, who sware to be true Liegeman to the King,		Man. He therefore consenting, inuaded the borders, and tooke from the English both Carlelle and	Mah,Paik.
	as long as the King would preferue to him his digni- ties, and keepe all Couenants, wherupon the King		a venteague, which he stuffed with Garrions. A coinfi	·
King Stephens	promifed for the prefent, that he would speedily re-		these, King Stephen prepared, and with a great pow- er came into those parts, where diuers accidents by	1
faire promifes,	forme the ouer-hard lawes of his Predecessors, and		divers reporters are related, yet all agree that ere	
	kings under his Sealand Charten and to shows	1	long peace was concluded, Carlett itill enjoied by	
	kings, vnder his Seale and Charter: and so thence hastening to meete the Corps of his deceased vncle,		King David, and the Earledome of Huntington by Prince Henry his sonne; for which hee did homage	
Haveingden.lib.8. Haueden,	(which was now brought into England) he honou-		at his fathers command, David himfelfe refusing to	Will Gemet.
	red that pompous functall, with his owne, and all	1	to doe (as Hector Boetses the Scotish writer affir-	Heel.Roetim, fib.
pen. Huntingdon a Malmef.inenell.	his great Prelates and Peeres, attendance at Reading; whence prefently he went to Oxford, where he fea-	1	meth) for that he had given his faith before unto Maud	12009,17.
lib.t.	led his fore-promifed Charter, of many indulgent fa-	1	the Empresse. (8) King Stephen returned, and all in good quiet,	
Kings Stephens Charter.	uours: * prefacing therein, that hee attained the	1	ne juddenly tell licke of a Lethargy, yea & in fuch dan-	1
	Crowne by Election onely; and that Pone Inna-		ger of me that the common report gaue foorth hee	Simen Duz.
	centius confirmed the same; whereby may be con- ceiued, that his Holinesse, either out of hatred to		was dead, which firred great troubles both in Eng-	
*This Heavy in- prifoned the	the Empresse, (whose husband + Henry was no friend	l	land and else where, for thereby his friends were stricken into great feare, and the factious more bold	İ
Pope.	1 to the Papacic) or for fome other holy ende had		to prepare for Queene Mande; for Hugh Biggt one of	Math Paris
l	normall hand in advancing Stephene perjured and		his chiefelt and first raisers fortified himselfe in the	Henry Hunt.
*Dated spud Ox-	disloial intrusion. The Tenour of the & Charter it selfe is; That all Liberties, Customes, and Possessions		Cattle of Norwich, and would not deliver it vnto a-	46.8.
enford.1136 reg. 1	graunted to the Church, should bee firme and inforce;		ny fauc onely to the King, yea and very vnwillingly also vnto him: and in Wales, Owen and Cadwalader	
	1,,	_	the	1
			Life Control of the C	

Chap.5.	Stephen ENGLANDS N	10	NARCHES. Monarch 42.	1 447
Coron, Wallia,	the fonnes of Gruffith an Conan Prince of that Coun-		but Treason, whom himselfe had formerly taught to	
	try, carried great ipolles from the Fundella as of other		be Traitors to their rightfull Soueraigne? But yet(a	2
Tumultuous at- tempts in Nor-	goods; to allo of Horle and Armour and habili.	- 1	no Rebellion was ever without pretence of Realon and	11
mandy.	ments for warre; likewile in Normandy, Conforma-	- 1	Influe) they alledged, that hee had violated his	# Huntingdon.l
	cies began to bud forth; for Geffrey Earle of Arion,	1	Oath touching their Forrests, and other Immunicie	2)
Walfingh. Toodig. Maimib Nancil.	who in right of his wife made claime vnto all, eafily	- 1	of Church and Common-wealth: but Church and	ıl
ίψ.I.	got the hearts and endeauours of many to adhere vnto the true heire; possessing himselfe of certaine	1	Common-wealth, were but publike colours for pri-	Malme (News)
	Caffles, but entring further on the Demaines of		uate grudges, (as Malmesburie, who then lined well	lib, 2. pag. 205.
	one Talevan, a man of note(proferibed for some of-	- 1	vnfouldeth) which the Great-Ones conceined a	1
	fence or displeasure by King Stephen) the Normans	- 1	gainst their King, because he would not grant them	I
	difliking that, and fome other his doings, fent for		fuch Caffles, Commands, and Lordships, asthem-	ldem.li.t.pa.to:
	I neovald Earle of Bloss (Stephens elder Brother) offe-		felues liked and expected of him , whom they	
Stephent elder Brother laies	ring him both their Dukedome and their Guorde	- 1	denie them nothing. The endlesse and the mal-st-	ļ
claime.	and itues to detend him in it; who comming to	- 1	thought to be so obliged vnto them, that he ought denie them nothing. The endlesse and shamelesse importunities of these men, sometimes hee put off, alleeding thought.	į .
				Idem.
	By Way to weaken King Stephen Idelinered upon him	- 1	newes; fometimes hee was faine to fatisfie, diffrusting	
	voon composition, the County of Falaffa him felfe	- 1	their falling from him : whose lotaltie notwithstanding	I
		- 1	beeing built on to vn-noble grounds, was but colou-	l
	King Henries Treasuric, and very throughly, (though	- 1	rea, and therefore could not long bee permanent.	Barle Rebert
Idem.	lectery) watching all opportunities to advance the	- 1	INCIENCE Was it. FOR Robert of Glacefter (the Limbral	King Stephen.
Cambon acards !-	title and delignes of the Emprelie.	- 1	fes halfe-brother, and now her chiefe Counfellor and Captaine) finding those particular dislikes apt to	1
Susphen goeth in- to Harmandy. Will. Newb.	(9) Stephen recougred, and hearing these stirres,	- 1	and Captaine) finding those particular dislikes apt to	1
Hill, Navis.	prepared himselfe first into Normandy, at whole ap-	- 1	be wrought on, and made leruiceable for a common	l
	proach, after some small attempts, the people (di- stracted betwixt feare, and sense of their ducty)	- 1	benoore; whetted on with the touch of confeience	1
	yeelded themselues vnto his power; surrendring	- 1	and countells of religious learned men. (who wrong	1
Ger. Dereior.	their fenced Cities, and other ftrong holds. This	- 1	iiim, with the hazard both of his credit, and foule for	Idem.
	good fuccefie thus fortunately beginne hechoned	- 1	neglect of his first, and only-lawfull, Oath to the Empresse)	audust v.
He makes league with France.	further to profecute, by meanes of a league, which	- 1	fent threatning meffages vnto King Stephen, charging	Malmesh. Novel
Huntimeden Lib.8.	hee lately had made with Lewis the Greenth King of	- }	him with his Oath of Allegiance vnto Lady Mand	1
Houeden, Math. Parit.	France: and hecreupon created Eufface his eldertion	- 1	his Sourraigne, against whom hee had shewed him-	1
His ion E-face	liuing, Duke of Normandie, commanding him to do	- 13	felfe a most perfidious man, and had impiouslie drawne him with others to doe the like; and so de-	ł
Duke of Ner- mandy.	his homage for the lame to Lewis.		nouncing Stephenan open Enemie to the State, and	1
many.	(10) Earle Theobald Section him folferhase defeat	- 1	himselfe vnto Stephen, made strong his faction with	
	red of his hopes and purpoles, formed arrhe wronge	- 1	the assistance of many Nobles; among whom, Mile,	
	done by King Stephen; for hee, this elder by hirth	- 1:	a chiefe man of warre, and High Constable to King	Gerusf, Dereb.
S'aphen buieth his elder bro-	and stories Earledomes lawfull heire laide his riele	١.	Stephen, rewolted from him, and became a great help	"H.Mining,
thers Fule.	Doth for Normandie and Englandallo now wineped		their proceedings.	
Tood gm. Neuftr. Reger Wesd.		- 1	(13) Earle Robert (whom efricones the enmod	
Banaden .	auailing without power)hee came to a composition, and remitted his Claime for two thousand markes	- 11	King discharged of his honours and possessions in	English Peeres tortifi: against
Hunti gden,lib.S. Mat. Parit.	and remitted his Claime for two thouland markes	- 14	England) tooke into the Caltle of Brillaw, and made	the King-
Mat. Paris.	annually to be paid. Gettrer of Amou likewife whole !	- 11	good also his Castle of slede; his complices likewise	
ı	title by his Wife was better then them both, not able	19	ind the like in other places : for William Talbet man-	Henry Hunt lib. 8. Honeden.
1	at the present being so far ouer-matched by the Kings	. 1	ned the Castle of Hereford, William Louell the Castle	Montaco.
He Roppeth the Faprelles hul-	power, wealth, & confederats) to do what he would,	19	of Carie, Paganell the Castle of Ludlow, William de	
Fmpreffes hui- bands mouth	yeelded to necessity, and for fine thousand markes yeerely to be paid, suffered Stephen quietly to enjoy	- 15	Mount the Castle of Dunestor, Robert de Nichol the	
with money.	the Crowne.	- 13	Caftle of Warram, Enflace Fitz-John the Caftle of	
An,D.1138.	(11) Having thus at once swept the two greatest	1	Meltane, William Fitz-Alain the Castle of Shrewf-	* De Maloma.
	FUDDES OUT OF his fortunes way her well hoped that	1:	urie, and Walkelinus the Castle of Doure. And	
Ann. Reg. 3.	all cloudes of displeasure, and opposition, were now	16	hus those forts which were erected to defend the Crowne, first offended the King, some few wherof	
- 1	Outr-blowne, when vnexpettedly newes came that		is he recouered, he flatted to the ground, and wished	
Geru.Dereb.	England was in tumults, the sparkes of conspiracic.	10	he other no higher walls , still swearing by Gods Birth	King Stephens vitali Oath,
England againe	kindled leggetile before in the hearts of tactions?	- 10	his viual Oath) hee would not fo flightlie beevn-	viuali Oath.
,	Peers, now openly breaking foorth, vpon aduantage	1	eated of his Crowne, and wondring what should	Malmef. Novel.
King Stephen re-	of his ablence in Normandie: therefore having not al.	r	nooue them, who had to readille aduanced him, fol	
UIDES IDIO ERE.	together coposed his busines in those parts, he took	1 1	peedily to vnftate him. One fresh motiue to these	
	Thip for England in the depth of the winter; and even in the Vigill of Christs Nativitic, belieged, and after	- 17	Noble-mens discontents was the Kings * seizing on	Malmud Man .
Reger Honoden.	in the rigit of Christs Nativitic, belieged, and after	16	ome great men and their lands, on bare fuspition of	Malmert Neucl., lebro fecundo.
. 1	tooke the Caltie of Beatera, that was manned against	1 2	heir loialtie; and on the other fide, the extraordina-	,
	him in the behalfe of the Seets; about which time	r	ie fauour, which Stephen showed to William de Ypre.	
Math. Paris. The King of	David their King having entred Northumberland in	a	nd his Flemings (which they interpreted as a con-	Ger. Der,
	the quarrell of Queene Mande, the ruder fort of his	ţ	empt of themselves and their Nation) whose coun-	
King Stephen.	Armie (as commonly the best gouerned is not emp- tie of such) reuenged too tragically the wrongs of the	1 1	ells he generally followed, and chieflie relied vpon:	
Podig Neuftri.	Empresse, in ripping vp the wombes of women with	1.	n diffaine whereof, they fent word to the Empresse,	An.D.1139.
Podig. Neuftri. Housed, in Sceph. Huvrangdon, lib.8.	child, and tossing their infants vpon the points of	15	hat within fine Monethes, shee should have the Realme at command, according to their Oaths	,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,
	their speares, slaying the Priests at the Altar, and	1.	nade to her Father,	
.	dismembring the slaine bodies in most vnhumane	- "	(14) These turmoiles thus working in the bow-	
ļ	maner.	e		The King of
	(12) Against these, King Stephen made hastilie	i	etter opportunitie to affaile the fides and skirts	The King of Scotland his at-
The English No-	forward, affirming it no policie, to give one boures reft	l e	hereof; and following what hee had begunne, with	cmyteagainft Stephen,
tepben,	unto the Enemie : and threatning more then hee ac-	a	very great Armie entring Northumberland, made	,
Simsu Dun.	complished, entred Scotland; whence after some small	2	reat flaughter of the Englifb, and destruction of their	I
. 1	reuenge wrought, hee was haftily recalled; so many	10	Countrey: Against whom the Northren Lords pre-	
	of his Nobles in England now in Armes against him.	D	ared, at the command of Thurstan Arch-bishop of	Simus Day.
i	that hee was in a fort befette on eneric fide. And	Ιź	orke(left by King Stephen Licutenant in those parts)	Dan.
	what other could hee, a V furper, expect from them,	W	ho beeing by fickenes kept from the Field, ap- Cccc 2 pointed	i

whites in septems occasive; you muting certains twoble-ment to his Palacaet timelegher, retained them prisoners, till hee had compelled them there, tore ligne their Caffles to the King. In the meane while Earle Robert flouded and foolied wavefler: Ale Robert flouded and foolied waveflers (Are Pan. Earle Robert flouded and foolied waveflers (Are Pan.)

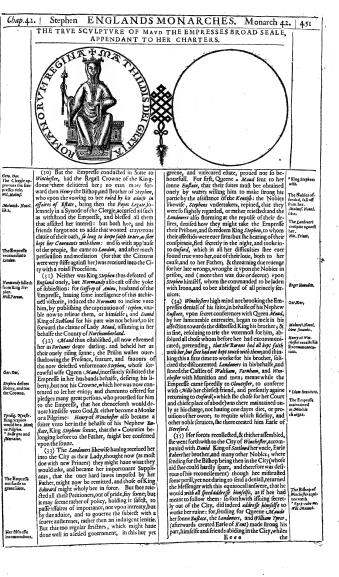
and Ranulph Earle of Chefter, ioming in withes with Robert (whose daughter hee maried) showed himselfer

the King required the dimons to maiste his court for these outrages of their servants, which satisfattion should be, to desure the keyes of all their Casses to the King, as pledges of their sadelty, which they refusing, the Bishops of Salisbury and Lincolne were laid leaded. In the the sade of the salisbury and Lincolne were laid

hold of; but Eh elcaped to the Castle of Dinie: Alexander was imprisoned, till hee had yeelded him bis Castles of New-warke, and & Slaford; Roger the

ENGLANDS MONARCHES. Monarch 42 449 Chap.5. Stephen not vnwilling to annoy King Stephen, though he had received great honours at his hands. The Empreffe "felfe was) of that which was not their owne, by de-"priving other of their rightfull inheritance: Thele her felfe, the better to fecure her owne person, and to therefore thus difherized, ought of right (in affugiue accesse vnto her fauourites, tooke into Lincolne, rance of helpe from their righteous Indee and rewhere the meant to make her abode, floring the City uenger) giue first affault on their vnrighteous opwith all prouisions necessarie, "preffor; and God who justly judgeth his people, (23) King Stephen, as vigilant as the other was politick, made straight-waies thitherward, and begit will (doubtleffe) looke downe from his heanenly habitation, and will not leave vs succourlesse the Citie with a straite siege, where hee had surpri-sed his greatest Enemie, had shee not found meanes whiles in a inft cause, wee impugne a most vniust "Intruder. But one thing, (most resolved Cap-taines and souldiers) I would have you throughlic led his greaters enemie, nao ince nor roung meanes thence to escape: & so possessing himself of the City, settled it, & the whole Countrey in verie good quiet. Soone after whose departure, Rasulph Earle of Chester, with his Countesse, and Brother, comming to to confider, that through these Fennes (which with fo much a doe you have passed) there is no way fit for clcape: heere must we either vanquish,
"or leane our lines, for hope of flight is none at all,
"nor is there any other way, left vs now to goe, but
by our swords into the Citie: and (if Igessea fler, with its Countrie, and protties, someone, containing, Lincolne, to keepe their Christmas; the Citizenes knowing the Kingsiealoufies, and desireut to currie famour with him, fent fecret intelligence, that if he would Malmfb, Neutl. furprize both those Brethren, he had now the fittest "right) euenthis, that wee haue no meanes to flie, aduantage: whereto the King giuing eare, came thi-ther with great expedition; and whiles they, thus "will bee to vs the meanes (by dinine a sistance) to get the Victorie; because they must needes trust to "their Manhood, who see no hope to thrine by
"their Cowardize. Indeed, the Citizenes of Lincircumuented, food on their guard in the Castle, the Earle escaped foorth, and went to craue aid of the Empresse, for refere of his wife and brother whom heelest besieged. Earle Robert, hearing the newes, and glad of so faire an opportunity, joined e colne keepe nigh to their houses, and in the brunt of er the Battle, there will their mindes bee, and thither will their heeles follow, whiles you victoriouslie with Ramalph, and they both gathered all their po-wers both of we'/b and Engli/b, for the relecte of their friends in Lincolne: where, resolutelie first wading " shall keepe the field. And consider farther with mee, what kinde of Captaines they have : First Alaine Duke of Britaine, he comes armed, not against Alain Duke of through the River, (which parted them from the you, but God himselfe, a furious person, spotted Kings Armie, and was then deepe) vpon Candlemas with all filth of finne, in malice vnmatchable, who day and yeere of Christ Iesus one thousand one hunthinks it his greatest dishonour, to see any man exdred fortie one, they pitched their Tents, and in the Kings fight ordered their Battaile : One Squadrone "cell him in crueltie : with him commeth the treacherous Earle Robert Mellent, the very craftes-mawhereof, was lead by Earle Ranulph: the Differited were the Guiders of another; in the third was Earle fer of fraud, in whose heart dwells impiery, guile "in his mouth, cowardize in his actions; high of "minde, vaineglorious in words, degenerous in per-"formance; laft in the fight, first in the flight. Next, Robert himselfe; and the Welfb-men served for the Wing. Their troopes thus marshalled, Ranulph appointed in rich Armor, and full of braue refolution, ipake thus to his followers, in the presence of Robers comes Hugh By-god, his name neerelie founding his periurie; who thought it not fufficient to breake Res. His den Hugh Bi-end. his oath with the Empresse, but that hee must be once againe for sworn (as all the world doth know) (24) "I yeeld you vnfained thanks, (Inuincible "once againe toriworn (as all the world out it know) if that Henry at his death bequeathed the Crowne from the word out the word out of this owne daughter; a man (in a word) who accounts Treacherie Captaine, and you, our companions in Armes) which heere so resolutelie withesse your loues vn-"to mee, vpon my fole requeft, even to the hazard
of your owne lives. Sith then, I am the chiefe cause "a Vertue, and Periurie a courtly quality. Among Earle Allement, "these Gallants marcheth the Earle Albemarle, a man " of this your perill, it well befits me, that I my felfe "be formost in the hazard, and give the first onsette
of battaileagainst this faithlesse King; who made of a fingular constancy in euill; very ready to at "tempt, & very loath to leave any mischiefe; whose wife, through irkesomnes of his vnsusferable flithy vs a thew of truce, onelie to take advantage for our "ruines; and therefore both mine owne courage. qualities, is gone from him; & the Earle that keeps "and the Kings vniust dealing, give mee cause to "hope, that I shall foorthwith breake asunder the her, hee commeth against vs too, a notorious a "dulterer, and the Non-pareill of impurity, a true "Souldier of Bacehou, a stranger to Mors; to whom
"the fight of all bloud, except of the Grape, is ve"rie fearefull. Then setteth forth Simon Earle of "ftrongest array of his Armie, and make my way through their midft, by dint of this my fword. It fhall be argument of your proweffe, to follow me Earle Simen. "Hampion, whole deeds confift altogether in words,
and whole liberality onely in promifes, for when
the hath faid, he hath done, and yee get no more.
Laftly, you see here gathered a knot of Peeres, all "leading you the way, and to imitate mee, gluing you example. My thoughts alreadie tell mee, that euen now I am breaking through his Battles, "trampling on the neckes of his Chieftaines, and " piercing with this my sword the very sides of the "King himselfe. His speech though short and head-die, as more fitting a Souldier then an Orator, yet like to their Prince, accustomed to robberies, enriched with rapines; fatned with man-flaughter's and all tainted with periorie . You therefore (No. well fuited with the time, and was feconded with "ble spirits) whom great Henry advanced, and this Delipints) whom great Henry aduanced, and this "Stephen hat call dowine, whom Henry made "wealthy, and Stephen hath empouerished, be now "couragious, and vpon assured considence of your "great valour, yea, of Gods instice, seeke both your "inst tenge, which God even pute into your hands, i great applause of the Souldiers : Whereupon Ro-bers Earle of Glocester, stept foorth and said. (25) "It is not against right, most Noble Earle,
"that the honor of this daies service, and first assault, should bee permitted vnto you, in regard of the fhould bee permitted vinto you, in regard or the greatnes both of your descent, and your martiall achieuement; but yet, if Descent bee shood on, I my selfe am both the sonne, and nephew, of a on these vingodly wretches; and immortali Glerie
...which shall hence-forward attend both your selues "which final hence-torward attend both your leitues, "and your poblerity for ener. If you are all of this "mind, for executing this Iudgement of God now "upon them, then vow your felues who God, and "this his feruice; a and forbear, nay rather forfiwear, "to flew your backsto your foes. Mightie King; if Valour, heere now are many of "choicht worth, of whom none liuing can challenge
precedence for proweffe. But other reason ought
now to sway. For fith the King, contrarie to his At which words, all jointly lifting up their hands "Oath made to my Sifter, impiously viurped the "Kingdome, he hath made a confusion of all things, and acclamations vnto heauen, with a terrible flious abiured all thought of flight, and quickning vp their braue spirits, aduanced gallantly towards the enemy. "both in causing the bloud of many thousands to bee spilt, and in making many Owners (as him-

450	Stephen THE SVCCE		Booke 9
	(26) King Stephen, the meane while, was farre	"and following the foresteps of your famous An-	
King Stepbeus ad- drelle to thu	from being idle, who also ordered his Armie into	"cestors, leaue to your posterities both a noble pat- "terne, and an euerlasting renowne. Your dayly	
drelle to the Battle	three feuerall Battalions: the greatest part and best	"fucceffe of victories, should quicken your hearts	
	harnassed, whose horses he had sent away (perhaps also to deprive his men of all hope of flight) he ap-	this day to atchieue brauely, and the continuall	
4	pointed to remaine on foot with himlelt, and certain	amifcarrying of our enemies, will quicken their sheeles to flie as speedily: and (I dare say) they al-	
Math. Paris.	of his Nobles, all vnder one Banner. The horfe-	"heeles to flie as speedily: and (I dare say) they al-	
imos Dusel.	men hec disposed into two scuerals wings, the one	"ready repent of their comming hither, and ac by	
	commaunded by Alaine Duke of Britaine, Hugh Bi ged Earle of Norfolke, Simon Earle of Hampton, wit-	"this time casting how to be gone, if the nature of the place would give them leave. Then fith it is	
	the two Earles of Mellent and Warren; and the other	"vnposible for them either to fight, or flie; why	
	Wing was gonerned by William de Yores the Fle-	, come they hither, but even by Gods own appoint-	
	ming. Then the King, because his voice was not very pleasing or audible, commaunded Baldwine	ment, to offer themselues, and all their prouisions	
	very pleasing or audible, commaunded Baldwine	"into your hands? and here you fee their horfes,	
	Fitz-Gilbert, a man or great honour and prowene,	their Armour, yea and their bodies, to rest at your pleasure : reach forth therefore your warlicke	
	to veter his mind vato the Army, who standing conveniently to be heard, spake vato them as fol-	"hands to seize on that joyfully, which God hath	
	loweth.	" freely brought you.	
	" (27) All fuch as addresse themselves, and ex-	Which exhortation hee had fearfly closed, when	4.
Henry Homt. Roger Haueden,	"pose their lines, to the hazard of battaile, haue	the noiseof Trumpets, and shout of the enemics	
(vgm earn)	three things aduitedly to be thought on: The e-	comming on ,was Rhetoricke enough to incite them to their tasks	The Battles loin,
	"quirie of their cause; the Number of the Forces; "the sufficiency of their men. The first, less they	(28) A fore battaile was fought, and with equall	
	endanger the state of their Soules; the next, lest	fucceffe a long time maintained: for the band of	Henry Hunt.
	athey be ouerlaied with multitude of their enemies;	the diffierited, whose particular wrongs whetted	Mat.Parit.
	and the latt left while they prefirme your name	their courage, (and were therefore politickly pla-	
	"bers, they find them but faint-hearted, to their "terruine. But in all these, weeknow our selues	ced in the front) brake terribly into the Kings	
		Vauntgard; and contrariwife William of Tyres into the Welfs, vntill the Fore-ward of the Kings horse-	Polydon.
	"cause is, for observing the vow made before God	men beganne to fhrinke backe, and (not without fuf-	
	"vnto our King, to withfland them that have fallifi-	pit ion of treason) galloped away; when presently the Earle of Chester encountred the Kings battaile of	
	ed their faith, even to the hazard of our lives. For	the Earle of Chefter encountred the Kings battaile of	
	nour Number,in Horseme; tis not inferior to theirs;	foote, in whose strength he reposed most trust; but	
	nin Footmen we farre exceede them: and for fuffi-	it being ouerlaid with Affailants, beganne also to faint and to flie, leauing the King enraged, both	Grr.Der.
	"ciency, what words can equal the noble valour of of many Earles, Lords, Captaines and Followers,	with his friends faint heartednes, and with his foes	
	"trained up euer in the warres? But aboue all, the	fuccesse. A very strange sight it was (saith Paris)	
	"incomparable proweffe and prefence of our King,	there to behold King Stephen, left almost alone in the	Mat.Parit.
	"will be in flead of thousands to vs. Sith then	field yet noman daring to approch him, whiles grinding his teeth, and foaming like a furious wild Boare, he draue	King Stephene great valoue.
	"this our Lord, and the Lords Anointed (to whom	backe with his battle-axe whole troupes affailing him, &	p. Land
	"you vowed your faith) is in field here amongst "you, now performe this your vow vnto God;	massacring the chiefest of them to the eternal renowne	
	"affured, that the more constant you proue in this	of his courage: If but a hundred such had there beene	
	your Princes seruice, and faithfull against those	with bim, a whole Army had never been able to surprize	1
	"faithles periured perions, the more shall your re-	his person: yet as hee was single, hee held out, til	
	"ward becarthe hands of God, and of him. There-	first his Battle-axe brake, and after that, his sword	Huntingdon. King Stephenen.
Barle Robert.	"fore be both couragious, and confident; the rather, "confidering against whom you fight: euen against	alfo, with the force of his varefiltable frokes, flew in pecces, and he now weaponleffe, and (by an var-	ken prioner.
	"Robert the Bafe-borne Generall, whose vtmost worth	knowne,doubtleffe,an vn-noblehand)ftricken down	Tpodig-Neuftr. Malmerb, None
	Lis well knowne; for he can threaten much, and	with a great stone throwne at him, was seized on by	Malmerb, None
Eatle Resulps.	aperforme as little: a Lions tongue, and a Hares	William of . Kahames, a most stout Knight, and by	An. Reg. 6.
	heart: his faire speech is his credit, his foule acti-	Earle Roberts commaund, preferred from any vio-	* Alsarde Kains Huntingden,
	"ons are his shame. Chesters Earle what is hee? a "man audacious, but without all judgement; heady	lence to his person, was carried prisoner vnto Mand the Empresse at Gloucester, & thence was sent bound	Mentagaes,
	"to plota treason, but still wavering in the pursuit	vnto Brifton, where in the Castle he remained in safe	Math. Parit;
	of it: ready to runne into battaile, but vncircum	cuftody.	
ĺ	ipect in any danger; aiming beyond his reach, and	(29) The Empresse having thus got the Lion in	
	"conceiting things meerely impossible; and there-	her hold, triumphed not a litle in her own fortune, & now as fole Soueraign of Englands Monarchie,	The Empresses
	"fore hath he few with him that know him, but "leads onely a rout of vagrant raicals: fo there is	commanded all businesse, elected her Counsellors,	nour of the King
	"nothing in him to bee feared; for whatfoeuer he	and bestowed many dignities where shee most fa-	dome,
1	"beginnes like a Man, he ends it like a Woman; yn-	ucured. Notwithstanding, that shee altered not	
1	fortunate in all his vndertakings; in his encoun-	herstile of Empresse, or Queene of Romanes, may appeare by this her Broad-Seale ensuing; under	
l	aters the either vanquilled, or it he chance (rarely	appeare by this her Broad-Seale enfuing; under	Charta Matild. Imperatricis.
The Weiffe.	"God wot) on a victorie, it is with farre greater lol-	which shee granted the custody of the Tower of Lon-	
1	«les then the conquered. The Wellmen he brin- igeth, are fitter for our contempt then feare: their	don vnto Geffrey de Mandeuil, and his Heires, couenanting with him therein, that the would not make	
1	"rafhnes you may eafily see, for it is naked and vn-	peace with the Citizens of London, without the laid Gef-	
1	"armed, who wanting both military Art and Pra-	freis consent because they were his mortall enemies : but	1
i i	1 "Ctife, runne headlong, like brutes yoon the Hunters	this Earle being afterwards vnawares apprehended	ci
l	"Inuelins. The reft aswell Nobles (if such they	in the Kings Court at Saint Albans, could not bee	Gerusf.Durch.
1	"may bee tearmed) as common Souldiers, are but "ftraglers and runnagates: of whom I would wish	released, till hee had furrendred both the Tower of	1
1	their number greater; for the more they he, the	Vpon these happy successes of the Empresse,	i
1	atheir number greater; for the more they be, the amore successes will bee their service. You	States-men flood not any longer for King Stephen,	1
1	etheretore(great Peeres and Worthies) it now be-	but their Faither turning with his Fortunes, all of them	1
1	"noueth (and indeed it much behough you) to bee	furrendred their allegiance vnto her; the Kentish on-	Wanter 41 a
1	"very mindfull, both of your Valours, and Noble- "neffe: this day advance your Prowes to the height,	ly excepted, where Stephens Queene, and William de	ł
į.	and advance your Frowes to the neight,	Tpres, maintained his quarrell to the vttermost of their powers. (30) But	1
		(30) Dut	



452	Stephen. THE SVCCESS	SION OF Monarch 42.	Book. 9.	Chap	p.5. Stephen ENGLANDS	MONARCHS, Monarch 42	1 4 62
Will, Malmef.	the Empresse and her Nobles defensed themselues	es of the Nobles to attend and guard the Empresse at Ox-	The warres re-	An.D.1	148. Times kent them feluce quiet in the akfores of the fel		453
Well, Malmer. Gerusf. Dorob.	in the Castle, not adventuring to goe forth amongst	ford till his returne, went into Normandie to folicite Geffrey her husband for her defence. But the Earle	newed.	Prince He returnech i	Competitors; all which gaue no little affurance vn-	Tents; euen neere his enemy; and ready on both fides to giue bartaile: the Winter fromes were	
. 1	fo many their mortall enemies: and foone after, to worke his wrathfull will, knowing the Citizens to	hauing troubles with his owne Nobilitie, and the	ł	England.	to stepnens estate.	fuddenly fo troublesome, that nothing could bee	Heavy Haut.
1	bee more affected to the Empresse then to him, com-	Normans fearfly brought to any subjection, thought	1	An.D. r	1149 (41) But Henry Fitz-Empresse, grown now from	done; but thoic lome what ouer blowne, and the	
Ice fires	manded the faid Citie to bee fet on fire, where in the	it not convenient by his owne ablence for a ftate in	1	Ger. Der.		Armies fearfe three furlongs afunder: as King Steel	!
Inchester. Alias The Co-	Monastery of Nunnes, aboue twentie Churches, the Co-	hope, to hazard that in hand; and therefore fent	l		(for it is faid hee was Bookifb) and to follow Mars; fo knowing his prefence would preferre much his	phen was bufied in disposing of his hoast and guing	1
ere at Hyde.	uent of S. Grimbald, and the better part of the Citie, were	with Robert fome strength of Armes, and with them	1		purposes (for men would bee loth to hazard all	direction for order of the battaile, his horse vnder	1
Malmerb.	consumed to albes.	his young fonne Prince Herrie into England.	1		for one, who himselfe would neglect all) hasted a-	him rifing with his fore-feet, fell flat vpon the earth,	Vnluckyprelag
er.Dorob.	(36) Seuen weekes thus spent, in this coun-	(38) The Empresse in his absence, had well for-	The Emprese	. 366	gaine into England, with an Armie of valiant and	not without danger to his Rider; and thus did he	to K. Stephen,
he Bilhop'of	ter-fiege of the Citie and Castle, the Bishoppe, to de-	tified herselfe in Oxford, whom Stephen (vling the	belieged in Or.		choice Souldiers; to whom joined the discontented	thrice ere he left; which thing his Nobles secretly muttering, interpreted for an valueky presage: when	
rappeth the mpreffe	ceiue the Empresse, commanded peace to bee pro-	benefit of Roberts absence) followed with an eagre	Geruaf.Dereb.		Earle of Chefter, Roger the fonne of Miles decea-	William Earle of Arundell,a bold and eloquent man	1
mprelie-	claimed, and the Gates to bee fet open towards eue-	pursuite, and wanne the Suburbs even vnto the Ci-			fed, with many more Knights and Gallants of the	went to him and aduited him to a peace; affirming	1
1	ning. The Empresse then, who had indured such	tic gates; then girt hee the Empresse with so straite a	1		English: hee therefore tooke into the North; and	the title of Duke Henry to be just; that the Nobili-	l
1	troubles and fo long a reftraint, greatlie defired to change her lodging, and to recreat her perplexed fpi-	fiege, (meaning neuer to give ouer, till hee had now made her fure in his possession) that for two mo-	l	Roger Houeden	met with Danid his cofen. King of Statland of whom	ty on both parts there prefent; were necrely linked	1
1	rits in some other place; so taking horse, accompani-	and and and and and an orange of the second	1	Ger, Dor.	hee was most honourably received, and solemnely	in Alliances & Bloud, and how these stood affected,	1
	ed with her brother, Reinold Earle of Cornewall, her	forme in affault or defente, was there put in practize,			facred with the Military honour of Knighthood:	was very doubtfull; yea, that Brethren were there	1
1	feruants, and many others her friends, besides Earle				and thence forward fought all occasions to prouoke	affembled, the one against the other, whereof must	ì
Malmfb,fib,z.	Robert, who followed behind with a troupe of No-	furrender: but shee, a woman (whose sexe bath often	Will. Heub.		both King Stephen, and his forme Enflace against him: and having seried some courses with certain Peeres	needs follow an vnnaturall warre betwirt them, &	
massing but the said	Bles and Knights ; presentle at the Bishoppes com-	deceived wife men) refolued once againe to oner-	Higden.		for the pursuit of his designes in England, hee retur-	of dangerous consequence; euen to him that con-	
I	mandment, thee was purfued by his Souldiers, and	reach her foe by wit, whom thee could not by force :			ned into Normandato composo 8: See formand Com-	quested. With these and the like allegations at last	
1	many of her traine wounded and taken prisoners;	whereto the time did fit her wishes; for being a win-		Prince Her	ned into Normandy to compose & set forward some other businesses, which might be availeable for these	Stephen beganne to bend, and a parley for peace was	1
i	the Empresse by good prouidence escaped into the	ter, sharpe abone measure, the River Thamists that	Walfingh + Youdig	zeturneth i Hormandy.	his ends.	fignified vnto the Duke. Henry already warme for the battaile, and his thoughts fixed on nothing leffe	A Parley berni
1	Caftle of Lutegare[hall, and thence to the Caftle Di-	runnes by the Citie walls, was then congealed with a		222		the peace, could hardly moderate his youthfull af-	Fitz Emerelle.
1	wize: where vnderstanding that shee was still in ha-	ftrong crusted Ice, and besides a great snow did then	Ger.Der.	An.D.1		fections; yer at his friends importunity, hee yeelded	
1	zard to bee furprized, face was contented, (as what	continue, and had coucred the ground. Mand vp-	l	Math. Pari	both of Anion and Normandy; and the veere fol-	to conferre with King Stephen.	1
1	will not necessity endure, & a womans wit deuise?)	on these aduantages, put in practize a most dange-		3000	lowing, he marched in marriage with Eleanor Dut-	(45) The place for conference was fo appointed:	Com David
he Empresse arried as a dead	to bee laide in a coffine bound fast with cords ; and fo, as if it had beene her Corse, carried in a horse-	rous attempt: for cloathing herfelfe, and some choice of her company, in white linnen garments, to	Charles to	Heny Heat	the ches of Guien and Aguitane, lately dinorced from	that the river Thamesis parted the presence of these	Gers.Daroser,
Corfe.	litter to the Citie of Glosefter: in which bonds of her	deceive the eies of the Sentinells, iffued fecretlie by			Lodowicke King of France for confanguinity, and	two Princessio that from either banke they falured l	
	owne distresse, shee had good occasion to remember	night out of a posterne-gate, and passing the frozen	Wil. Malmib.		adultery(faith Paris) after thee had borne him two	each others, and after a long conference, agreeing	1
podigm. Nenftr.	the chaines of King Stephens captinitie. To such ex-	River, ranne on foote, through ice, and fnow, ditches,	Smon Dan.	Prince Hen marieth Rie	daughters; Lodowicke fearing iffue-male by this	on a truce, and your faire tearmes of amiry depar-	A truce cone
1	tremities were these two Princes at the selfe same	and vallies, for fine miles, cuen to Abingdon, the fal-		marieth #4	laurer, marriage to the disheriting of his said daughters,	ted, commaunding all weapons and attempts of	Math. Paris.
1	time subject, that whiles they turmoiled for spacious	ling fnow still beating in their faces; and there taking		disorced by	greatly impugned Duke Henry; and Stephen suspe-	warre to be laid alide.	
- 1	Kingdomes, brought themselues to the very extream	horse, the same night got to the Castle of Wallingford,			Cring his greatnes, now being Duke of Normandy, Aniou, Aquitane, and Guien, both of them fought each	(46) But Eustace, who hitherro had attended	
1	wants, of aire, and of elbow-roome; but with fuch	to the great ioy, and also admiration, of all that were	Geru, Derob.	An,D. 1	way to impeach his peace: Lodowicke, with Prince	Fortune for the Crowne, and now hopeleffe to haue	Zufface K,Sta.
i	dalliance doth-Fortune (wee fee) oftentimes follow	therein.			Eustace, in the parts beyond seas, and Stephen in Eng-	as his Fathers Succeffor, was greatly displeased with	not the truce.
- 1	her game, that shee maketh even Monarchs the Balls	(39) In the meane while, Earle Robert, with	1		land, to make fure his fuccession, sought to inuest the		
- 1	of her play, and toffeth them laftly into the Hamard,	Prince Henrie, were arrived in England at Warrhome	Prince Herris	The Archi	bithop faid Prince Enflace with the English Diademe; both	the field, purpoling to raile himselfe by his owne meanes; and comming to Bury, vrged the Monks	Iohn Texter,
1	whence hardly they escape with safetie of life. Yet	hauen, and prejentlie believed the Caffletham (Co.	attructo.	The Archio of Casterior fulcth to co	to preuent, and veterly deprive Henry Fitz-Em-	of Saint Edmunds for money, to let forward his hea-	,
1	this was not the worst; for Earle Robers her brother,			erate Esfaci	prese for euer : for calling a Counfell at London, King	dy delignes: But the wifer amongst them vnwil-	1
	whilest hee was busier in prouiding for her safetie, then	I dearing of the happie eleane of the Emprate come		King, Ger, I Derok	Stephen commaunded 7 heabald Archbilhop of Can-	ling to bee wagers of new warres (which though ill	1
Mainef. Ser. Det.	for his owne, was taken by his purfuers at Stoubreg	with young Henry vnto his mother, whose fight		An.D. 11		for all forts, yet proued euer worst to the Clergie	1
	with others; brought backe to Winchester, and	made her forget the griefe and forrowes that the had	An.D. 1143	Henry, Hunt	which heerefuled to doe, and that by commande-	mens poficisions) denied his request; wherewith	1
- 1	there prefented by the Bishop vnto Queene Mand, King Stephens wife, who committed him to the cu-	long indured. Then was oxford vpon conditions		A Table	ment from the Pope (whose holy See can deale on	enraged, hee commanded his men to carry their	Polychr,
	ftodie of William Tpres, and he for more fafety to Glo-	yeelded to the King; and Wilton fired by the bastard		Gernafine	both fides, as makes most for their advantage) alled-	corne and other prouition into his owne Caftle,	
arle Robers	seffer; but others taking fanctuarie in the Nuns Mo-	Earle Robert: The Towre of London, with the Ca-	An.D.1145		ging now, that his Father was an viurper, and per-		1
	naftery of Warnell were burned together with the	ftles of Walden, Pleifes, and Lincolne, yeelded to Ste- phen; the Caftles of Warham, and Portland, yeelded	Math. Paris.		jured Intruder: whereupon the honest Archbishop	fituated hard by. But being fet at dinner, wer reade of him (faith mine Author) that even the verie fuff bit that heeput in his mouth, drawe him into a frensie, whereof thors after hee died; whose body was interred at	Ger.Derak.
Malme liba	place: Thus then the King on the one fide, and the	to Robert: The Earles of Chefter, and Effex, surprized	1		fled into Normandy, and the King feized upon al his	that heeput in his mouth, draue him into a frensie,	Prince Enflate
1	Earle on the other, were kept in fafe custodie ; but	by the King ; William Martell the great fauourite,	1		possessions. It may seeme, that one cause of the		
	the Queene labouring for the Kings release, and the	taken and imprilented by the Farle Three Gundain	Andres	Jdem?	Popes inclining to yong Henries title, was to streeth- en him against his enemy King Lewis of France, who	Feuer/ham in Kent. (47) The death of Prince Enflace to much advan-	1
1	Counteffe for the Earles, many Articles were pro-		211127.1140.		had highly offended his Holines, for easting the Popes	taged Duke Henry, that thereupon (the truce in	1
- 1	pounded, and many meffengers imploied: at length,				Bulles (whereby hee required the fruits of Vacancies	likelihood expiring) many fell off vnto him, and ma-	
1	this was thought fitteft, that Stephen should bee re-	I the great ruine of the whole land . the Empre To a	The Empresse and the Prince	K,Lewer cal	illistic wealt Cashadrall Churchas in Eugusa) dus als Con	ny Caftles were deliuered, as Bertwell, Rending,	1
	stored to his kingdome, and Robert under him to	uch wearled with thole warres and vncertaineries of	raturane to Non-	Popes Bulsi	Saying, hee had rather the Popes Bulles (bould roft in the	Warwicke, Stamford, and others; whereat Stephen	
1	haue the whole gouernment of the Land; fo that				fire, then his owne foule flould free in hell.	was not a little displeased, and thinking to entrappe	1
	both of them should now jointly vphold that, which	I vinger the protection of her husband in peace at an	An.D. I 147.		fire, then his owne foule should free in hell. (43) King Stephen thus defeated of his purpose,	the yong venturous Duke, with a ftrong Army fol-	Į.
	they (the two Ring-leaders) by opposition had cast		Ger. Derober.	· ·	and feeing his Title questioned by the Church, who	lowed him vnto Wallingford: But God himfelfe looking	Polydor.
1	downe. But Earle Robert as he was no whit detected in mind, with any frowne of Fortune what focuer, fo	the lame end the had not long before four her young	GU. Deroser.		had before approued it, resoluted to make it good by	down from heaven (faith Mathem of S. Alhane) made	Malb. Parle.
- 1	referred hee his fidelity to the Empresse vnstained,		ĺ		the fword: for winning the Castle of * Muby, for-	there an end of those long calamities, by stirring the minds	
-	and vnmoued either with feare or faire inticements,	rather heire of a Dukedome with fafetie, then of a Crowne with daylie hazard.		*Fortě Nes	embers, tified Malmesbury, and laid a ftrait fiege vnto Wal-	there an end of those long calamities, by stirring the minds of shiese men in the land to labour for peace: Ruch was	
Vill,Malmaf.	ftill refusing to capitulate for his freedome, but to				lingford; against which, hee erected the Castle Cran-	Theobald Archbilhoppe of Canterbury, and Henrie	et. 11
	his Sifters liking; who likewife bare fo braue a minde.	Earle of Cheffen had not a treil iurprizal of Randall	Kings durft not	An.D.r	153. merfe, to stoppe the passages of their reliefe, or com-	Bishop of Winchester, who having troubled the realm	The King and Fitz-Emprelle
	that were her state neuer so weake, she'e would not	(40) Stephen, that by a fresh surprizal of Randall Earle of Chester had got Lincolne, and entring there- into (which no King before him durit does for the	before King	Henry Fitz	rz-Em ming forth. But Hemy after hee had calmed the	with fireand fword, moued now to repentance,	Pitz Empreffe accorded.
- 1	confent nor giue the least eare to any composition	into (which no King before him durft doe, for that certaine wizards had prophefied enilluck vnto fuch)	otelnen.	preficome gaine into l 4md.	boilterous fromes of warre, in the parts beyond	wrought to effectually with his brother, that hee en-	
- 1	for the Crowne.		Gerusfini	gaine into I	the feas, came ouer into England well appointed,	clined vnto a wished peace, contented to adopt the	
Pl. Melmis.	(37) Then was enmitte increased, the Kingdome	mis nead, and after the Empresses departure could			vnto whom also resorted many of the Nobility, who yeelded up themselues, and about thirty strong Ca-	Duke for his Son and Succeffor; and so comming both together to Oxford(a bleffed fight to so diffred	
An.D. 1142.	divided, and the peoples hatred kindled in maine-				yeeded up themiciaes, and about thirty irrong Ca-	fed and diftracted a Kingdome;) there did all the	Gernafin,
The King and Barle Robert re-	taining the factions, all fore-running the ruine of the	Fillice Exitace his lonne : by which two comple	ł		files to the young Duke; now well furnished, hasted to raise the siege of Wallingford, and there	Nobles do fealty to him, as to the vindoubted Heire	
learne Caches	Land : For these two Chieftaines wearied with irk-		1		vndertooke a great enterprice; for hee incircled	of the land; and the Duke to acknowledge this as a	1
ther out of	fomnes of irons, and hard imprisonment, made ex-	land the rather, torthat the most faithfull millions	1		the Besiegers with a great and deepe Trench, where-	fauour, yeelded him the honour of a Father, and the	1
prison. Roger Houeden.	change the one for the other, without any farther		Earle Rebert and		by hee kept them from reliefe, as they did keepe the	rotaltic of all Kingly power during his life.	
	mention of peace, and fo studied not onely to renew	Mile of Hereford the two great and glorious pillars,	Earle Stale die,		Besteged.	(48) Norwithflanding, the cleere Sunneshine of	'
	their former defignes, but to encrease the lands mi-				(44) Seephen following halfily to faccour his men.	shele faire daige was Computed darkened with a	An.D.IIC
Meth. Perit.	ferie by more eagre warres. Stephen in England			Ger.Dereb	(though with the leffe edge, for that hee neuer fped	cloud of treacherie, and lewd attempts of the Fle-	Prince Henry is
Mainesb.	wrought the people for him, & Robers " taking pledg-	the rest of the Nobles, applying themselues to the		King Steph Fitz-Emp		cloud of treacherie, and lewd attempts of the Fla- mings; who enuying Englands peace, upon Barham	chery,
		Times,		Ent-Ent	Last any all and all and any and any and any	Downs	1 -7

Downes, intended to surprise Prince Henry in his re-turne from Doser, and presence of King Stephen. In this conforacie was William the Kings fon though but yong, who himselfe meaning to have one cast at the Crowne, instantly before it should have been effected, was through the wantonnes of his horse cast to the ground, and with the fall brake his legge; to whose assistance, whiles every one gathered and lamented, Henry vpon secret notice of the treason hasted vnto Canterbury, and thence to London, and

foone after ouer the leas into Normandy.

(49) And Stephen now after he had raigned eigh-

Prince Henry go

teene yeeres, ten moneths, and odde daies, departed this life at Doner, in the Monastery of the Monkes of an Ileacke palsion, mixed with his olde discase the Parif. Booke of S. Al-Emrads, the twenty five of October, and yeere of Chrifts Natiuity, 1 1 5 4. A most worthy Souldier, faith Paris : and (in a word) one who wanted nothing but a just title to have made him an excellent King; in his ordinary deportment very deuout; the fruites wherof were shewed in erecking with sufficient endowments, the Abbeyes of Cogshall in Essex, of Furnesse in Laucashire, the houses of Nunnes at Carew, and Higham, an Hospitall at Forke, and the Monaftery of Feuersham in Kent, where his Queene, Ishn Sino. his sonne, and lastly, himselfe were enterred: but fince, his body for the gaine of the lead, wherein it was coffined, was call into the river. So vucer-

the dead, the quiet of their graves.

Ger. Dec.

bodies be alfo (who for filthy lucre) thus enuie to

taine is man(yea greatest Princes) of any rest in this world, euen after buriall; and reftleffe may their

His wife. (50) Maud, the Wife of King Stephen, was the daughter of Eustate Earle of Bulloigne, the brother of Godfrey, and Baldwin Kings of Ierusalem: het Mother was Mary, fifter to Mand Queene of England, wife of King Henrie, her husbands Predeces for. Shee was crowned at Westminster vpon Sunday, being Easter-day, and the two and twenty of March, in the first yeare of her husbands raigne, and of Grace, 1136. and being Queene fifteene yeeres, the died at Heningham Castle in Essex, the third of May, and yeere of Christ, 125 Land was buried in his Monastery at Feuersbam in Kent.

His Isho.

(51) Baldwin, the eldeft fonne of King Stephen and Queene Mand (bearing the name of King Baldwin h is vn.cle) was born in the time of the raign of K. Henry his fathers vncle; and died in his infancy. during the raign of the same King. He was buried at London in the Church of the Priorie of the Trinity within Algate, which was a house of blacke * Canone of the Augustinian order founded by Q. Mand. the first wife of the foresaid King Henry the first,

(52) Eustace the second sonne of King Stephen, & of Queene Mand his wife, being the heire apparant to them both; when his Father was King, was created Earle of Bolloigne, which dignity was the inheritance of his mother. Hee married Constance fifter of Lewis the fewenth King of France, daughter of King Lewisthe Groffe: who afterward was remar-ried to Raimond the third, Earle of Tholouze: for Euflace died before her without Iffue by her the tenth day of August, in the eighteenth yeere of his Fathers

raigne, and of Grace, 1152. Hee was buried by his mother in his Fathers Monastery at Feuersbam in

(53) William the third and yongeft sonne of King Stephen and Queene Mand, maried Ifabell daughter and heire of William Warren, the third Earle of Surrey, with whom hee had that Earledome, hee was in his Fathers life time Earle of Surrey, Lord of Norwich and Peuensey in England, Earle of Mortayne, and Lord Eagle of Normandy. After his fathers death, King Henry the second made him Knight, refumed those things that hee held of the Crowne, restored him to all that his Father held before hee was King. And so he was Earle of Bolloigne, Surrey; and Mortaine, and being with him in his journey to Tholouze, died without iffue, in his returne home-Ward, in the Moneth of October, the feuenth of King Henries raigne, and of Christ Iesus, 1160.

(54) Mand, the eldeft daughter of King Stephen and Queene Maud, was borne before her father was King, in the raign of King Henrie the first, her vncle; in whose time also she deceased, beeing but yongue, (though some report shee was wife to the Earle of Millen) and was enterred at London, with her brother Baldwm, in the Priorie of the Trinity aforelaid, then commonly called Christs-Church, and now lates lie named the Dukes Plate within algate.

(55) Marie, the yonger daughter of King Ste-phen and Queene Maude, was a Nun, and Abbesse of the Nunnericat Rumfey in Hampfhire; notwithstanding, when her brother William; Earle of Bolloigne, was deceased without issue, shee was secretly taken from thence, and married to Matthew the yonger fonne of Terry of Alfae, and brother of Philip Earle of Flanders, who in her right was Earle of Bolloigne Shee was his wife ten yeeres, and was then divorced from him, by the fentence of the Pope, and enforced to returne to her Monastery, having had iffue by him two daughters, which were Ide and Maude, allowed by the censure of the Church to be legitimate. Lady Ide, the elder, was maried to Raymond of Damp-Mar tine, in her right Earle of Belloigne ; and Maude, the yonger, to Henrie Duke of Lorraine.

His Naturall I flue.
(56) William, the Naturall fonne of King Stephen. is miltaken of some to bee the same William, that was Earle of Bolloigne. Others, who know that William Earle of Bolloigne was lawfully borne, do thinke that his father had no other fon named Williams but him wherein let William Earle of Bolloigne, the lawfull fon of King Stephen, be himselfe a lawfull wirnesse of the truth, who having best cause to know it, doth best producit, ; and in an ancient Charter of his, beeing written in those daies, and extant in these, doth name him for a witnesse, and calleth him his Brother.

(57) Germais, another Naturall fonne of King Stephen, begotten on a gentle-woman named Dame ta, and borne in Normandy, was brought into England by his father, the fifth yeere of his Raigne, Anno Dy this statict, the first yeere of his range, enmo Dom. 1140. Hee was the same yeere, by his fathers meanes, made Abbato & Wefiminfter, and so continued for the space of twenty yeeres; hee deceased there the twentie six of Angast. in the six yeere of the raigne of King Henrie the second, the yeere of Grace 1 160, and lieth buried in the South part of the cloifter, within the faid Monasterie, vnder a flat stone of black marble, which is remaining there vntil this day,

HENRIE

THE SVCCESSION OF Monarch 43. Henrie II. Chap.6.

HENRIE THE SECOND DVKE OF NORMANDY, GVYEN AND AQVI-TAINE, THE FORTIE THIRD MONARCH

OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS AND ISSVE.



Ad A. D.1135

Enry of that name the fecond, by the double interest of descent and adoption (as you have heard) fucceeded in the Kingdome of England whose Pedegree, (which Mathew Paris extendeth by the mothers fide, in a

right line vp to 2(oah) and

former fortunes, having already been touched; his counsels, acts, and other affaires of greatest importance, after the death of King Stephen come now to be handled.

(2) Hee came not to the Crown vnexpected, nor vndelired; for the opinion of the man, and hope conceived of his future government, had the force to hold England in good obedience without the presence of a King, about fixe weekes, whose entrance like that of the Soule into the Body, did quicken, and enspirite the Realme, as then (in the person of Eneland) this clozing verse, or Epiphoneme

Spiritus es, caro sum: te nunc intrante reuixi. Thou , Soule; I Body am : by thee to life I came.

Neither did his prefence diminish the expectations raised, but was faluted King with general acclamations, and with no less in a Weshimsler by Theo-bald Archbishop of Contentury, amonited and crowned: the summe of whose first courses for setting lis acceffe and padige Neufly his State was this,

(3) Sundry Castles (nests of Rebels) hec flatteth to the earth, some others hee fortifies or resumes at his pleasure; chiefly such estates, as had beene alienated from the Crowne, as the hire and vniust re-ward of those who withstood his claime. Others write, that hee promifcuoufly tooke all fuch lands

into his owne possession, as were by Jurors found ypon oath to have belonged at any time vnto the Crowne. Some Earles vnduly created he reduceth to prinate condition, and purgeth the Realme from

Lib. Monell.S.

His first actions

455

Monarch 43

Math. Paris

* Powel in hift.

Bridge-Warth, is called Bruge, which cauled

it was a Welth

Roger Hessel. Assal 3.3.

Math. Perin

Pulja. Virg. in

most infested him. And because Government is the Soule of State and Wifedome the Soule of Gouernment, he chooseth to himselfe a Body of Counsell out of the most eminent persons of both forts: fuch was Theobald Archbishop of Canterbu-ry; and for that selfe consideration, he laid the Chancellorship of England vpon Thomas Becket, and held Roger Houseden in speciall fauour Iohn of Oxenford, with fundry o ther Prelates of chiefest note: of the Laity, he had Robert Earle of Lescester, chiefe Iustician of Eng-land, Richard de Luci, locelin de Bailull, Alan de Neuile and others: but for a Cabanet-Counfellour at all times, he had his owne mother , Matildis the Empresse, one of the most sage and experienced Ladies of the World. Thus then furnished, and Math. Paris, ad A.D A155.

forraine Souldiers; chiefly from the Flemings, whose

mercenary fwarmes most pestred the same, and had

affembling a Counfell at Wallingford, hee aswell for his owne fecuring, as for the affurance of his Children, sweares the Realme to the succession of Ger.Dorek. his sonnes William and Henry, the one being in remainder to the other. (4) But quiet confultation did not take vp the most of his time, eucn in the daies of these Sun-shining beginnings: for the raign of Stephen, a most gentle Prince (who thought, out of the necessity of his owneestate, that it was not safe for him to bee se uere) hauing giuen way for many of the mighty, to maintaine fundrie infolencies; these now feeling a

restraint, beganne not a little to repine : but Hugh de Mortimer, wanton with greatnes, and the most arrogant man aliue, stuft his Castles of Glocester, Wigmore, and Bridgenorth with rebellious Garrisons; which Henry notwithstanding reduced to subjecti-Comb., 253. miltakes a single
on, though in the fiege of the last-named, nor withflex out imminent perill of his person, had not Hubert de S. Clare, cast himselfe betweene death and the King, taking the arrow into his owne bosome to preserve his Soueraignes life. It bound Tiberius to Seianus most of all, when a part of the banque ting Caue in which they were, fuddenly falling . the Emperour, with the perill of his life: but Seianus survived that adventure, which our Senslere did not, saue onely in the better renowne thereof, which describes to bee immortall, being an Act of piety, worthy of a Statue, with Codrus, Curtius, Manlius, or whofoeuer elfe haue willingly facrificed themselues for their Country, or for the Father

of their Country, the King.

(5) Henrie thus hauing in some fort settled England, hasheth into Frange to King Lewis in the first yeere of his raigne, and there did homage vato him for Normandy, Aquitane, Angien, Main and Tourain, which partly were his patrimony, and partly the inheritance of Elianar his wife.

(6) His domesticke enemies being subdued or appeafed, hee put his brother Geffrey by force to a penfion, the lumme whereof (if it be any thing to the purpose to know) was 1000.1. English, and 2000.1. Anion by yeere, wringing out of his possess. fion all fuch territories, as by their Fathers last Will and Tefament, were bequeathed to him in France.
But Geffre did not long enior the faid annuiry, or his brothers friendship: for in the third yeare, death brought a discharge, and Henry was disbur-dened of those paiments. For his violence in ta-king away those lands, King Henry might alledge he was eldest brother: but that allegation might bee auoided with his owne consent, which once hee gaue: but the great Elixar, called Reason of State, (though failly so called, vnlesse it bee seasoned with lustice, and Religion) hath so transmutatine a faculty, as to make Copper seeme Gold, right wrong, and wrong right; yea, when all Pleas faile, it will fland for good, while there are forces to sup-

(7) This accord between the two brethren, being thus (howfocuer) established, the King repaires into

England, and at Chefter enters amity with Malcolme King of seets, on such termes, as his Grandfather had done, yet Saluis somnibus dignitatibus fuis, pargoli, nad done, yet a sum emmuse algulations just, persoit, famp to bimifelfe all bie dignities: and the faid Malcolme reflored to Henry the City of Karled, New John Colme reflored to Henry the City of Karled, New John College whom 77mis, 8cc and Henry reflored to him Helder Sension. the Earledome of Huntington in England. And, fo lib. 13. C.1. faith inftly dreadfull did the growing puissance of this young Monarch appeare to his greatest enemies, that Hugh Bigod Earle of Norfolke, who had potent means to doe milchiefe, rendred his Cafile to bee at his disposall.

(8) The Welfb notwithstanding for looke not themselues, but did some memorable matters under conduct of the valiant Prince Owen against the English, in defence of North-Wales, and their Countries liberty, to the loffc of the Englift, and Hift of Camb. extreame danger of the Kings owne person, whose Standard roiall was cowardly abandoned, and the King reported to be flaine: for which Henrie de Effex, the Kings Standard-Bearer at that conflict. was afterward accused by Robert de Montford his neere Kinsman , and in single battaile within lifts was vanquished at Reading, where the said Henry de Effex was shorne a Monke, and died. Mathem Pasi relates the whole voiage of King Henry fummarily thus: That Henry prepared a very great As-my against the Welfs, with full purpose to our com them both by land and fea; that hee cut vp the woods and forrests, and laid open a way; that hee recoursed the Castle of Ruthlan and other fortresles taken from his Ancestors; that hee repaired the Castle of Bastingwerke, and that having brought the Welfb to his will, hee returned with triumph into England.

(9) After this, himselfe and his wife Queene Eliener beeing openly crowned vpon Christmas day, (* some say Easter day) at the Citic of Worcester; they both at the offertorie laid their Diademes vpon the high Altar, vowing neuer to weare them after ; Reg. Honed. this beeing now the third time in which at three feuerall places, Westminster, Lincolne, and Worcester, he had beene crowned. This deuout act of his, did flow perhaps out of some such speculation as that of Canutus, who thought none truly worthy the name of King, but God alone, or that, vpon which Godfrey of Buillion, refused to weare a crowne of gold in Hierusalem, where our Lord and Saniour had beene crowned with thornes. For this King had at times the pangs and symptoms of mortification and piety, and did heerein acknowledge the onely giver and taker-away of kingdoms God-almighty; purting himfelfe and Realme, vnder the protection of that Maiestie of whom hee held paramount; and professing (as it were) that from thencefoorth hee would direct his actions to the glorie of his omnipotent Ma-fier, which is indeede the only finall cause of all true

monarchie. (10) Not long after, having established his affaires in England, hee croft the Seas into Normandie: where successively sundrie matters of importance An.D.1158. fell out : as the feisure of the City of Nants in Bri- ad A.D. 1163. tame after his brother Geffreis death; his iourney to Paris, beeing inuited thither by Lewis and his wife the Queene; the vnprofitable flege of Thelenze laid by King Henrie, where Malcolme King of Scots was in companie with him; the varipe marriage of his sonne Henrieto Margaret the French Kingsdaugh-ter, whom Thomas Beeket then Lord Chancellor had formerlie conducted with verie great State from Paris, by consent of parents for that purpose; the offence taken at those spousals by Lewin, for that the children were but infants, and that himselfe was a loofer thereby; the warre heereupon attempted by Lewis, fortifying Chammount, which (the French ha-ning quit the Field by flight) King Henrie recourred with advantage; the Armies of both these great Kings, being afterward at point (as it were) to ioine, dispersed vpon reconciliation of the two Kings, by

Math. Paris.

debate betwixe

Regiam. Geru Darab.

The great con-

Nabrigenfis,l 1.

Chren, de Paliis

reason of a marriage concluded vpon, betweene Ri-chard, King Henries second son, and Alice the French Kings daughter: All which and fome other, not drawing with them any extraordinaric fequell, nor offording much matter for civill document, must not preponderate the handling of things more rare and confiderable. An.D.1163.

Chap.6. Henrie IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHES. Monarch 43.

(11) For after these accidents, beganne the famous controuerlies betweene the King and his Arch-bishop Becket, a man of an inuincible stomack theKing and Breket Archbish, and refolution in his life, and after death reputed by fome for a great Saint or Martyr; as is likewife noted of Henrie, * that he was the most politike, mar-Mat. Paris de aly.

Legend.aur.in

vita The,

*Polydor.l. 13.

but M.Fox
denies it.

* Gal.wigernieß.

Gib ha ware tiall, rich, and honoured Prince of all his time, This Prelate by birth a Londoner, (though his mother, a Sarazen, 'lay some) by profession a * Ciuilian, was by Theobald Arch-bishop of Canterburie, both made his Arch-deacon, and also placed about the person of Duke Henrie, who beeing now King, aduanced him in the verie first yeere of his raigne to bee Lord Chancellor of England, in which high honor he carried himselfe like another King, and afterward vpon the death of Theebald, though the * Monks objected against Becket, that neither a Courtier nor a Souldier (as hee had beene both) were fit to succeede in so high and facred a function, yet the King gave him that Arch-bip 264. "Nubrig,l 2,c, 16. Housday (hopricke, partly in reward, and partly in further hope of his ready and faithfull service. Which to be true a Levender of his Miracles can best relate. Nonnullis

a Legendro Chis Miracles can bell relate. Normalia them 0.5°. May (in the chi jaded his promissions and Canonicall, because it was presented more by the importu-ming of the King, sheen for no tower of Contra, or People, and it was noted as prefemition and indifferenties in him, to take upon him of guide the Stern, who was face the in-bandle no ture, and that beeing hid analysis worlds of-faces, he did not remobile to allowed to the faceting of figures digitals. We recover the control to consideration of the control of the control to considerate the control to the control to control the control of the control to the control to the control to the control of the control of Th. MS, Fox.p. thors onely wee will heerein follow, as shall bee vnpartiall) * one of which testifies, that the Pope about that time calling a Councell at Tours (and the King c.16. Math. Par ad An.1163.permifii-ene,Regia,&c

charteme caning a Counceriar Town? (and the Aning giating Licence to his Arch-bilpops and Bilpops to got th-ther) Becket feerettle [urreadred his Arch-bilpoprick, which hee had received from the Kings hand, into the Popes hands. The other faith, Becket himselfe con-* Nubrig. per spe-ram,manäque fessed, that, not Canonicall Election did sall him, but publick power drove him in , nor the will of God, but mans pleasure, placed himin the roome. Howsoener, these beeing memorable arguments of the Kings exceeding loue; let vs now fee how this great Prelate en denoured to deserue it, or how hee chanced to lose (12) Great and flourishing was the state of the

Englifb Church & Comon-wealth at this season; the

quiet of both which, the King studied & hoped to e-stablish by the yndoubted affistance of his greatfauo rite Beeket, whose cousel & authority he knew might much further his princely deligns, especially touching affaires of the Church, and abuses of Church men, which then were grown to a dangerous height: wherof let vs heare the Monke of Nuborough speake; It was declared in the Kings prefence, how that Clergy me had comitted aboue a hundred murthers under his raign wherewith the King highly offended, hee was in pumshing of them somewhat too vehement; but the blame of the Kings too much earnefines, muft lie on the Prelates, in as much as they gave the caufe thereof: for, whereas facred Canons ordaine, that Clerks found guilty, not onely of hai-Cannes ordaine, that Clerk; jound guilty, not sovely of this nous and prisonal times, but all of selfer, thould bee de-graded, and thou land of fisch wave in the Church of Euro-land, the insumerable cluffer among a lattle good Euro-ylet very from facts for facts, where the beene depri-ded. I be Frederick for facts, while they buffer them-flacts, when to only the control of the cluster of the clus-tures to children and easy of their views, which is they due Coaland his Church good service, in protecting from publike
Discipline such hainous offenders, whom (by duty of their

places) they ought to correct according to the Canons cen

fure, whereby they through their impunity, having liber-

ty to doe what they left, have neither feare of God, (whole iudgement they thinke u farre off) neither of men in au-thority, fith on the one fide their Prelates neglect to re-forme them, and on the other fide, they are thus exempt by

their order from the temporall Jurifdiction. Realme, wherein some were so miured without remedy, and others fo injurious without coertion, as if neither fort were in condition of Subjects; the King (who was a man of excellent Wifedome, Conflancy, and Zcale) tooke especiall care of quickning the 1.2491 publike Discipline, and the rigour of ancient lawes, which thus lay neglected; for which and hee had setled choise Ministers of Instice through all parts of his land; and open complaints brought him by his Subsects of the remissiones, and other defects of his Indges, hee accordingy by his prince y read ence applied render, and cha-flifed the delinquents. The like remissences consumers the it no harder) was complained of in his Spiritual M. Fra. Judges, occasioned by a murther, committed by a Prieft of Sarum Diocesse, whom the Archbishoppe commanded to be deprited, & put into an Abbey whereby he was freed from sharper punishment intended by the Kings Iusticiaries: with which (and fome other like affronts of his Archbilhop) the King conceined no little displeasure, as requiring, that Iu-slice (bould be ministred to all alike without partiality, & feeing this apparantly to tend vnto the ruine of all roial gouernment: the Archbishop on the oan roungouernment: the Arctionance on the o-ther fide, thou on leftle peremptory on the immunities of his clergy and See: yealo farre, as that hee chal-lengedfrom the Crown(toothe Kings great orfence) the cuffedy of Rachefter Cafile and other Forts, which the King for securing his state had resumed into his

(14) This maine controuersie betwixt Regnun Sacerdotium, the Crowne and the Mitre , Houeden (who then also lived) thus summarily delivers : The King would that all such of the Clergy as were deprehended in any Robberie, Murther, Felonie, burning of hon-(es, and the like, should bee tried and adjudged in his temporall Courts, as Lay-men were: against which the Archbishops resolution was, that all Clergy men so offen-ding should be tried onely in the Spiritual Courts, and ding should bestried only in the Spiritual Courts, and by men of their more cast, who is they were countif, should at full be onely deprined of their office and homeface; but if they should again be gaulty of this, they should not be admiged at the Kings pleasare. The King sinding himselite to be chereby but a Domi-King, deprinced coll Sourenignery outer one half-cleake of his Kingdome, and perceiuing Beckets ftiffenesse, in thus contesting with his Soueraigne, to bee no way mollifiable by whatfoeuer his old fauours, or fresh per fwafions; notwithflanding refolued to put nothing in execution, which should not first bee ratified and frengthned with confent of his Bishops; of whose rea-dy affent to so init demands hee had no cause to doubt: who thereupon affembling at Westminster the King tooke both offence there, at the Archbithops thwarting his defires, and occasion also to establish fundry other Articles, which hee called his

Grandfathers Cultomes, peremptorily vrging Bee-ket to yeel d thereunto, without any fuch referencion of fauing in all things his order, and right of the Church, wherewith he would have limited his affent. (15) The points in those Ordinances which the Archiftop principally flucke at, as * himleffe did fet them downe in his letters to the Pope, and his owne Suffragan Biftops within the Diocesse of the vitto-Canterbury, were principally these; I. That none should appeale to the See of Rome for any cause whatfocuer, without the Kings licence. 2. That is should not be lawful for any Archbishop or Bishop to depart the Realme, and repaire to the Pope you no Bishop should excomunicate any one whomsoeper holding of the King in chiefe, or put any other of his officers under Interdict, without the Kings licence. 4. That Clerks criminous should bee tri-

the Prelates themselues by joint consent adjudged

him of Periury, and by the mouth of the Bishop of

Chichester, disclaimed thenceforward all obedience

greenously sinned in making that absolute promise,

(21) At which, the King was fo vehemently flir-

red and inflamed, that he threatned banishment and

and that he would not finne therein any more.

(bap. 6.	Henriel J. ENGLANDS	MON
1	vnto him, as their Archbishop. The next day, whiles	therec
Nubrig. Honeden.	the Bilhops and Peeres were confulting of fome	fhould
Dersberntufts	further course with him; Beekel, not as yet daun- ted, caused to be sung before him at the Altar: The	dict in
	Princes fit and speake against me, and the ungodly perse-	terbury
	cure me, &c. And forthwith taking his filter Cro-	filcate
Derobornenfis.	fier in his owne hands, (a thing frange and unheard of	fuppo
	before) enters armed therewith into the Kings pre- fence, though earneftly diffwaded by all that wished	ket at I fenten
	him well: wherewith the King enraged commanded	and no
	his Peeres to lit injudgement on him, as on a Trai-	ris feen
	tor and reriured perion; and accordingly they ad-	banish
Heueden.	iudged him to be apprehended, and cast into prison. The Earles of Cornewall and Leicester (who sate as	Archb
Gerusfins	Iudges) citing him forthwith to heare his fentence	and for
	pronounced; hee immediately appealed to the See	bishop
	of Rome, as holding them no Iudges competent: wher-	(27)
	upon all reuiling him with the name of Traitor, and	conten
	the like; he replying, That were it not for his function he would enter the Duell or Combate with them in the	fticall o
Geruef.Dorob.	field, to acquit himselfe both of Treason and Perinty, sped	as obe
Mat. Parit.	from the Court, and from thence without delay in-	l lawes.
An.D.1164.	to Flaunders difaniling himfelfounder the name of	ties by
	Decement. (24) The King on the other fide, to leave nothing vndone, whereby to atchieue his defire, forth-	I locelin
	thing vndone, whereby to atchieue his delire, forth-	fently a
Another Embal. lage from the King to the Pope	with dispatched away Gilbert, Bilhop of London, &	tice th
King to the Pope	William, Earle of Arundel, to the French King, that	against
	beewould not harbour nor cherift one that was	
	fled as a Traitor; but prevailed not: for hee, vpon	bee aga
Rog. Hourd. Gerusfus.	fledas a Traitor; but prevailed not: for hee, vpon the contrary dealt with the Pope, That as he loved the Roman Church and the aid of France, so he would sup-	preten
Gelacimo	port the cause of Thomas against the King: which whe-	tle. 7
	ther hee did it out of Faction, rather then Denoti-	*writa
200	on, let others judge: for as wee may easily thinke	ket) pr
	that the French would gladly incommodate the king	tere, the
	of England: so this is not to bee denied, that Lewis was * often afterward a Mediatour for peace, and	King a
Mat. Paris, F. Rog Houseld alg.	vndoubtedly held the man himfelfe in great cftima-	Pope h
tog.marino aly.	rion borh aline and dead.	bate th
	(25) The Archbishoppe growing thus in fauour	ขล(เยง)
The King lends:	with the Pope, King Henry lends an Ambassage vn- to him of many great Personages, as Roger Archbi-	(28
The King lends, Embaliadors to	to him of many great Perionages, as Roger Archbi-	mas, he
Rome against Becket.	thop of Yorke, the BB. of London, Winchefter, Chiche- fter, John of Ovenford William Fayle of Ayundell &c.	there v
Gerus Ган,	ster, John of Oxenford, William Earle of Arundell, &c. whose whole emploiment being precevel pretio, by	ling the
Housien,	requetts and gratifications to procure diferace unto	the kin
1148145.01	Becket, their finall fuit was, That the Pope would fend two Cardinals into England, fully to end the matter; but the Pope denied it, as holding it derogatory to his owneabfolutenes, faying (like Gods Vice-gerent at	nour,an
	two Cardmais into England, fully to end the matter; but	and his
	owneabfolutenes faving like God Wice from the	his fries
	ically I has a my owne cloric, which I will not rive to	medo
* Ifay chap 42. ver 8. I am the	any other; but when he is to beeindged, I will indge	ricke, he and
Lord this is my	any other, but when he is to beeindged, I will indge him my felfe: For he knew the King of England was	he anf
Name, and my elo- rie will I not give	mighty both in speech and meanes, and that Legates might	with th
to anyother, &c. Howeden,	easily be corrupted, as being men, more thirsty after gold and silver, then after instice and equity: and the Pope	not ren
	and Cardinals wifely resolved (aith the Monke of Can-	his hone
Ger. Dorober.	terbury) that as if this Archbillop were now upheld in his	the rea
	cause it would be a patterne for others in like case to resist	them.
	Kings; fo, if he should finke, no Bishoppes euer after would	(29)
	dare oppose themselves to their Soveraignes pleasure, and so the State of the Catholike Church would be shaken, and	ming a
	the Popes authority be crushed.	ftill ma
	(26) The King having received this foile, and	Monk
The incensed Kings proceed-	imparient of repulse, where his owne subject was a	now f
Kings proceed- ings.	party, thought the indignity offered by the Pope vnfufferable, and to let him understand how hee	thruft
	vilufferable, and to let him understand how hee	difmiff
	tooke it, directs his Writs vnto the Sheriffes in	to Sen
	England, commanding them to attach such as did ap- pealeto the Roman Court: the fathers, mothers, brothers,	remair
Math. Paris, ad	Gillere menhames and neices of all fuch of the Cleron as	a + gre
Math. Paris, ad Ann, 1164.		
Anto Paris, ad Ann, 1164.	fifters, nephewes, and neices, of all fuch of the Clergy, as were with the Archbifhop, and to put them under fure-	Earle o
Math. Paris. ad Ann. 1164.	were with the Archbishop; and to put them under sure- ties, as also to sessether euenewes, goods, and chattels, of	Earle o
Asib. Paris, ad Ann., 1164.	ties, as also to serse the renenewes, goods, and chattels, of the said Cleroie-men. Again, by other his letters to	faid C
And, 1164.	ties, as also to fesse the reuenewes, goods, and chattels, of the said Clergie-men. Again, by other his letters to Gilbert Bishop of London, he sequestred the profits	faid C the Per
Ante, Paru, ad Ann, 1164.	ties, as also to serse the renenewes, goods, and chattels, of the said Cleroie-men. Again, by other his letters to	faid C the Per the two

ARCHES. Monarch 42 459 of. Laftly, to his Iuflices he fignified, that they fafe-keepe who focuer did bring any internto England till the Kings pleasure were fur-, and all the Archbishops goods to bee cond, grounding himfelfe (as may probably bee (ed) vpon the judgement given against Bee-North-hampton, notwithstanding that the saide ice was expresly nullified by the Popes*Bul, ot onely by word of mouth, as + Atathew Panes to mistake it. Neither was this all, for hee mes to mittake it. Neutret was this anjourned or the reduced of the reduced of the false said and fucking babes; Lassich.

Math. Parif.

Math. Parif. orbad that hee should be any longer publike-Ann. 1164. Reg Hav.d. tioned and praied for in the Church as Archof Canterbury The Archbishop on the contrary part (the An.D. 1166 ntion being now whither the power Ecclefia-or Secular, should worke most) did solemny Esp. 2 born, nce where he abode, excommunicate all fuch yed, defended, or had occasioned the saide and Auitall Customes, and some of the parname as Richard de Luci , Richard of Poicton , de Bailull, Alan de Nevile, and other, who preappealed; but the King having further noand Becket * after his publike fermon, on agreat *Ger. Dovob.fairl
all day, had foleowish threatmed the like thursdereday Communications his Rotall Perfon; either to terrifie his aduerfato reuenge himselfe if any such sentence should "Groups that single himself of the property of the single himself hims followed the Kings cause stourly, but also a learned Booke in justifying of it against Beerenailed to farre at Rome, that two Legates à laould beefent into England, to reconcile the and Thomas; but when they were gone, the nearing that they were refolued * otterly to conhe Archbishop, sent letters after them to reeir absolute power, they being men (faith Gerwho too much thir fled after gold and glory. When these two Cardinals came to Thee refused to put his cause to them, valesse were first a plenary testitution made to him s of all that had beene taken away: but been counselled by them to submit himselfe to ng, his answere was, he would, saving Gods ho-nd the Churches liberty; saving his own honour, s Churches possessions; and saving his owne and ments pag. 184. ettle peace in Gods Church, which hee feenely to defire) he would renounce his Bishopif the king would renounce his customes wered, The proportion was not alike: for that he honour of his Church and his Person, he could nounce his Bifhopricke; whereas on the other fide , ing was bound, afwell for his Soules health, as for sour, to renounce those or dinances, (will you know ason?) because the Pope and hee had condemned And so that designe for peace was frustrate. The King of England tempestuously storat these affronts, and daily encrease of new , wherewich like a guilefull Chirurgion, he ade the wound more to fester; menaced the ses (which in their Abbey at Pontenei, had for two whole yeeres entertained him) to all of their order out of England, if they durft e his enemy any longer: Whereupon they ling him, Lewis the French King tooke him with himfelfe, where for foure yeeres hee ned and was (if wee may credite King Henry) ned and was (it wee may creative Ming, stemy) eat infligator of the French King, and also of the of Flaunders, against the King of England; * as the work of the King of England; * as the work of the King of England; * as for p. 134. Ann. 1167. ardinals told not a lie to the Pope: But, that ace was broken, and warres renued betwint the Kings, chiefly for Thomas his fake, Geruale onke himselfe doth record it as most cre-Ffff 2 (30) How-

460	Henrie II. THE SVCCE	SSION OF Monarch 43.	Book. 9
	(30) Howbeit, by mediation at length, the two	matter of his Auitall Customes, offering to stand to	1
Gerualist, A.1169 A:ud montem	Kings were againe reconciled and at their friendly	theiudgement, not of his owne onely, but even of	
miro bilem .	* enterview , Eeckets wel-willers adulted him to	the Parisian Diumes, and Church of France; hee came off from that conference with some advantage &	The King offe
* Tacita omni	fubmit himselfe in the presence of both kings, * without any more reservations; which he seeming to	fauour, in the opinion of the hearers.	The King offe bis cause to bee
conditions.	yeeld to, presented himselfe veric humbly, and	(35) King Henry (for all this) feeing no iffue of	iudged by the Digines and
Gerua/sbid-	referred the cause to the king, not now, Saluo or di-	his long disquietnes, and vnregall vsages, vnderstan-	Church of
	ne (uo, but yet on a new point, Saluo honore Dei;	ding also that the Archbishop of Seins in person had so-	France.
-	ne suo, but yet on a new point, Saluo honore Dei; wherewith the king exasperated, told the French	licited the Pope, to put the Kingdome of England under	Daraharmenfis.
Idem.	king, fuch was the humor of the man, that what fo-	Interviet, (which is the prohibiting of the publike	A ftrange deni
	euer disliked him, he would say it was against Gods honor,	Vic of Christs Religion, & Christian Burial ritrongh.	of Chaifts Vaca
	and so would bee neuer the neerer to conformity;	out the whole land) hee beeing then in Normandy,	to forbid a who Kingdome to lis like Christians,
	with which, and other speeches, King Lewis of-	lends forth his Edict: That if any man bring from	like Christians,
Idem,	fended with Becket, asked him whether hee thought to	the Pope or Becket, any letters of Interdict, he should pre-	Houeden.
	bee greater or holier then Saint Peter? and the Petres	sently suffer as a Traitour to the King and the State:	The Kings Edic to match the
	of both Nations accused him of much arrogancy, as be-	That no Clerke what soener goe forth of the land with-	to match the
	ing himse fe the wilfull hinderer of his own, and the Chur- ches tranquility.	out a Passe from his Insticiaries, and none returne a-	Popes Interdic
A D = 160	(31) Notwithstanding, the Pope forgot not his	gaine without letters of licence from the King himfelfe.	-
An.D.: 168.	faithfull Thomas, and therefore after hee had gra-	That none receive any message from the Pope or Becket, nor make any appeals unto them, nor hold any Plea by	
Nath. Paris.	ced him with a confirmation of all the Priviledges,	their mandates; That if any Prelate or Clerke, or Lay-	
	and powers, which any of his Predecessors in that	man shall obey any fentence of interdict, he and all his	
	See did enioy (to the daring and defiance as it were,	Kindred ball be forthwith expulsed the land and all his	
The King gort a-	of the kings vemost indignation) the king fenta	goods escheated to the Crowne. That all Clorbes who	
The King gors a- bout to fortake	letter into Germany, declaring that her would for-	goods escheated to the Crowne. That all Clerkes who have rents in England, returne home within three Mo-	
the Pope, and	fake Pope Alexander, and joine with the Emperour,	neins, or eige au their rents to fait to the King. I hat	
Antipape,	and Antipape. Whereupon, when the Bilhop of	certaine Prelates specified, bee cited to answere in the	
The Bishop of	Rome had commanded Gilbert Bilhop of London to	Kings Courts for interdicting Earle Hughes lands. That	
London com- manded to ad-	admonish the king to give over his courses, and cu-	Peter-pence be not paid to Rome, but referued. Thus,	
manded to ad- monish the	ftomes prejudicious to the Church, the faid Bishop	(as Geruaje the Monke lamentably complaineth) all	Gers. Der.
King.	obeyed, and in his answere sought to perswade the	from the eldest to the yongest throughout England were	Olis, Dir.
Rog. Hourd.	Pope to a conniuencie, and forgets not to infliffe his	made to absure obedience to Pope Alexander and Bec-	
	Soucraigne, as I hat the King was ready to obey the fa- cred hests of the Church, saving to himself e his own & his	ket.	
The Bilhop of Londons defence	Kingdomes dignity: That, as for Appeales, he claimed	(36) After all this, it came into King Henries	The Ki aufet
of the King to Pope Alexand.3.	that honour, by the ancient institution of his Kingdome,	mind, to fweeten these his many cares with some so-	
rope Auxana.3.	that is to fay, That no Clerke should for a civill action	lace, and to crowne his eldest sonne, yongue Henry, King of England, now in his ownedise time: A coun-	crowned King.
,	depart the same untill right could not be had in his Courts	fell not more temerarious, then infortunate : but of	
	at home, and then he would hinder no man. That hee	which yet he did hope to reape this consolation, that	
	did not banish the Arch bishop of Canterbury, who might	it was done in contempt of Besket (whose office it	
	returne at his pleasure, so as he would observe all those	was to have crowned the King,) with some aduan-	
	his Grandfathers customes which once hee had given his	tage also toward the perpetuation of the Auital Cu-	
	faith to doe: That the King thinks himselfe greatly	flomes, and that also without scruple of conscience,	Ep.Alex Pap.apa
	iustified, in that hee is willing to stand to the sudgement	nis tonne recesuing the Crowne without caution, to pre-	Roge, Honed.
	of the whole Church of his owne Kingdome,&c.	ferme the Churches libertie, either by him put in, or by o-	
The Bishoppe of Leader excom-	(32) But when mediations, letters, meffages, or	thers exacted. Yearather, an Oath ministred, and	1
municated.	other waies, would not prevaile; the Pope admo- nisheth the King, that he meant no longer to restrain	by the yongue King taken, to maintaine those Aui-	
An.D. 1169	the Archbishop from reuenging his owne, and his	tall Cultomes to the Vitermost.	
1 11110	Churches injuries with the fword of centure, and	(37) This folemnitie was performed, at Henrie	
	thereupon(for a beginning)the Archbishop excom-	the fathers commandement, by Roger Arch-bishop of Yorke, (the anciently riuall See of Canterbury) con-	
			ł
	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded	trarie to the Popes expresse Inhibition, the father	
	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was scarce found in	himfelfe King Henrie being present though	
Gers Derob	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was scarce found in the Kings owne Chappell and presence such as might	himfelfe King Henrie being present though	
Gers.Derob,	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was scarce sound in the Kings owne Chappell and presence such as might perform the wonted ceremonies.	himfelfe King Henrie, being prefent thereat, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or caule of confolation in the action. For * he, in his inauf-	* Roger Housder
Gern,Derob,	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was scarce found in the Kings owne Chappell and presence such as might performe the nontedecromonies. (33) The King both touched with his owne	traine to the Popes expresse infibition, the father himfelfe King Henrie, being prefert thereat, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause of consolation in the action. For * he, in his inauf- picious passage out of Normans, artising nor with-	* Roger House
Comforted by	municates Gilbert Biliop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was fearee found in the Kings owne Chappell and presence such as might personne the nontedecremonies. (33) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their case, siwh of or his sake	traine to the Popes experies inibition, the father himfelfs King Henris, being prefeit thereat, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause of consolation in the action. For * he, in his inaupicious passage out of Normandy, arriving now without very great perill, at Portinous hit, the best and new	Roger Houseles
	municates Gilbert Bilipop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was fare found in the Kings come Chappell and prefence fuch as might performe the contelecremonics. (33) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their cale, jiwho for his fake vinderwent that feuerity, animates Bilinoppe cilbert with the might be conderwent that feuerity, animates Bilinoppe cilbert.	trane to the Forge expresse inhibition, the father himselfe King Henrie, being prefern thereat, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause of confoliation in the addion. For * he, in his insufpicious passage out of Normandy, arriung not without very great perill Jan Forssmandy, the best and new-fishing he had was sluncke in the flormes, and there-fishing he had was sluncke in the flormes, and there-	Roger Housedes
Comforted by	municates Gilbert Bishop of Lenden, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was fewer found in the Kings come Chappell and prefence fuel as might performe the nontdexerometric. (33) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their case, (who for his fake underwent that severity animates Bishoppe Gilbert with molfologing offers to bearthe charges of promise in the control of the control	trait to the Poper express infinitions, the father infielfs King Bents, being preficin thereat, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause of confoliation in the action. For * he, in his inaul- picious pallage out of Nemandy, artiting not with- out very great perillal Per Diffusions, the bed and new- eds hisp he had was funcke in the flormes, and there- in, belides Hermide at Apublic and his two forms foll.	* Roger Housder
Comforted by	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo fare with others, that there was feare found in the Kings some Chappell and preferee face is might performe these nucleateeremonie. (33) The King both rouched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their cale, jwho for his fake vanderworth at fewering animates Bishoppe Gilbert with motilouing offers to beare the charges of prefecting his large-leaguist Better, and Gelires the	trait to the Poper express standards, the state in the first point, being prefencherent, chough without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause principles in the state of the principles of the preference of	* Roger Hunder
Comforted by	municates Gilbert Bilhop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was feare found in the Kings some Chappell and prefence facts at might performs the anneteeremonies. (3) The King both touched with his owner wrongs, and tender of their citel, who for his fake vanderwent that Guerity animates Bilhoppe Colloct with most boung offers to beare the charges of proceedings of the control of the co	traine to the Poper express infinitions, the father infielfe King Hearit, being preficin thereat, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause of confolation in the action. For * he, in his inauf- picious palfage out of Normandy, arruing not with- out very great perill, ale perilpush, the beland new- elf hip he had was funcke in the flormes, and there- in, belids * Hearis de Agaldis and his two fonnes, foll- bert de sullemni, Mr. Red fide Bedimunt, the Kings phy- tition and flououtis, with about four bundred men	* Roger Houndes
Comforted by the King.	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was feare found in the Kings come Chappell and preferee face has might performe the sendetecromonic. (33) The King both touched with his owne wrong, and tender of their cale; jwho for his fake vaderwent that Euerity, animates Bishoppe Callert with motilouing offers to beare the charges of preferring his papele against Better, and defires the Pope to fend him Logates which might abloiche bis excommunicated Subiecks, and fette a peace, we fel.	trait to the Poper express institution, the states inside fixing fearing, being perfect thereast, though without any fortunate perfage in commissing, or cause of consolization in the action. For * he, in his insuf- pcious passing course Normandy, arriving not with particular persons and the person of the format of the offine programs of the person of the format of the programs of the person of the person of person of the sufference of the person of fine person of the person of the person of fine person of the person of the person of person of the person of the person of person of the person of the person of person of the person of person of the person of person of the person of person of pe	* Roger Hounder
Comforted by the King.	municates Gilbert Bilhop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was feare found in the Kings some Chappell and prefence facts at might performs the anneteeremonies. (3) The King both touched with his owner wrongs, and tender of their citel, who for his fake vanderwent that Guerity animates Bilhoppe Colloct with most boung offers to beare the charges of proceedings of the control of the co	traire to the Poper expreie infinition, the father imfelfer King Fenris, being prefen thereat, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause of confolation in the action. For * he, in his inaufpicious palfage out of Normandy, arruing not without very great perill, all perilpinate, the behand newelf hip he had was funcke in the flormes, and therein, beliefs thereine de Agalla and his two founes, followed the standard was founded men and women more, were detuoured of the working physician and fauouris, with about four bundred men and women more, were detuoured of the working wases. And acta the feath, their joinful father himselfie.	* Roger Husedes
Comforted by the King. Ger/Dov.	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was feare found in the Kings come Chappell and profence facts at might performs the acmetaceremonics. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their cite, who for his fake vanderwent that Guerity animates Bishoppe Colloct with most louing offers to beare the charges of profecuting his appeale against Beeker, and defires the Pope to Genthim Logates which might abiliote his excommunicated Subiceks, and fettle a peace, or elfe he flouid bete completed to promide a short might abiliote his found in the complete of the flouid bete completed to promide a short might perform the name (34) Two Cardinals therefore, Gratism and prices.	trait to the Poper express innibition, the fasher similes for sign fearing, being prefencherency, though without any fortunate prefage in commissing, or cause for conclusion in the action. For * he, in his insufpicious passing out of Normandy, artisting not with the property of the pro	* Roger Hunder
Comforted by the King. GET. There. Cardinals attempt to make	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was feare found in the Kings come Chappell and profence facts at might performs the acmetaceremonics. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their cite, who for his fake vanderwent that Guerity animates Bishoppe Colloct with most louing offers to beare the charges of profecuting his appeale against Beeker, and defires the Pope to Genthim Logates which might abiliote his excommunicated Subiceks, and fettle a peace, or elfe he flouid bete completed to promide a short might abiliote his found in the complete of the flouid bete completed to promide a short might perform the name (34) Two Cardinals therefore, Gratism and prices.	traine to the Poper express standarding, the states similest King Hearit, being prefencherent, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause of confolation in the action. For * he, in his inauf- picious palfage out of Normandy, arriving not with- out very great perill, at Parlymouth, the beth and new- est hip he had was funcke in the stormer, and there- ton, belieds thermise at Agadia and his two fonnes, foll- bert de sullemmi, Mr. Radi de Bealmant, the Kings phy- tition and staourit, with about four hundred men and women more, were deutoured of the working wates. And art he feath, their follul father himselfle, carrying the first dish, and the Arch-bisino of Tarok- faying in pleasance to the younge King: Resister ms.	* Roger Hunder
Comforted by the King. Ger/Dov.	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was feare found in the Kings come Chappell and profence facts at might performs the acontecterosmoire. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their cite, who for his fake vanderwent that Generity animates Bishoppe Collect with most louing offers to beare the charges of profecuting his appeale against Beeker, and defires the Pope to Gend him Legates which might abiliote his excommunicated Subiechs, and fettle a peace, or elfe he flouid bete completed to promide a short might abiliote his communication of the flouid her completed to promide a short might abiliote his femalia better completed to promide a short might abiliote his femalia better controlled to promide a short might for his own (34) Two Cardinals therefore, Gratism and primary, comming into France to end the contention, returne notwith handing without possibilities.	trait to the Poper express institution, the states imfelfs King Faents, being prefencherent, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause of consolation in the action. For * he, in his insuf- ptions passing earliest Popularity around the other pressure personal proprious that between con- curry great personal proprious the best and new- onal pressure personal proprious that the commence of the proprious proprious proprious proprious proprious proprious proprious proprious for the suffernial proprious proprious proprious proprious proprious waters. And at the feast, the total later bindiffer, carrying the first displayment of proprious facility in the proprious (arrying the first displayment proprious facility in pleasance to the younge King. Reside any fair found, for his war private the word lack, field.)	Paled Tier is
Comforted by the King. GET. There. Cardinals attempt to make	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was feare found in the Kings come Chappell and profence facts at might performs the acontecterosmoire. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their cite, who for his fake vanderwent that Generity animates Bishoppe Collect with most louing offers to beare the charges of profecuting his appeale against Beeker, and defires the Pope to Gend him Legates which might abiliote his excommunicated Subiechs, and fettle a peace, or elfe he flouid bete completed to promide a short might abiliote his communication of the flouid her completed to promide a short might abiliote his femalia better completed to promide a short might abiliote his femalia better controlled to promide a short might for his own (34) Two Cardinals therefore, Gratism and primary, comming into France to end the contention, returne notwith handing without possibilities.	traine to the Poper express infinitions, the father similes King Fenris, being prefent thereat, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause of confoliation in the action. For * he, in his inaufpicious passage out of Normandy, arriving not without very great perill, at Parlymouth, the best and newest thing he had was funcke in the stormer, and there in, besides thereis de Aguslia and his two fonnes, foll-bert de sullemmi, Mr. Raif de Bealmant, the Kings physician and stauouris, with about four hundred men and women more, were deutoured of the working waters. And act the feath, their folial father himselfle, carrying the first dish, and the Arch-bising of Forder signing in pleasance to the younge King: Resides my furr found, for their une Prince in the world, bash fach a feating at the finite, at vo. The womater all feating and the state.	Paled Tier is
Comforted by the King. Ger. Day. Catdinals attempt to make	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was feare found in the Kings come Chappell and profence facts at might performs the acmetaceremonics. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their cite, who for his fake vanderwent that Guerity animates Bishoppe Collort with most louing offers to beare the charges of profecuting his appeale against Beeker, and defires the Pope to Genthim Logates which might abiliote his excommunicated Subiceks, and fettle a peace, or elfe he flouid bete compelled to promide a short nife for his own fewrity and homose. (34) Two Cardinals therefore, Gratism and primary comming into France to end the contention, exturne nowithhanding without possibility of doing goods for that Exclet would not yeed in any point to those Castlones and which he had note	trait to the Poper express innibition, the states imfelfs King Feerin, being prefencheren; chough without any fortunate prefage in commissing, or cause for conclusion in the action. For * he, in his insufpicious passing course for without the best and inevending passing the present the formers, and three times that the present the formers, and three in the present the formers, and three in best formers, and there in best formers, and there is best formers, and the present the present the formers of the formers, and there is the present the formers of the formers, and the formers of the formers, and the formers of the formers, and the formers of the formers, and the formers of the formers of the formers, and the formers of the formers of the formers of the formers of the formers of the formers of the formers of the formers of the formers attention, as the stable as you. The summaries of formers of the formers attention, as his table as you. The summaries of the formers of the formers attention, as his table as you. The summaries of the formers of the formers attention, as his table as you. The summaries of the formers of the formers attention, as his table as you. The summaries of the formers of the formers attention, as his table as you. The summaries of the formers attention, as his table as you. The summaries of the formers attention attention, as his table as you. The summaries of the formers attention to the formers of the formers attention to the formers of the	
Comforted by the King. GET. There. Cardinals attempt to make	municares Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded for the with others, that there was feare found in the Kings owne Chapell and preferee facts a might performe the authenticer otherical, who for his take vanderwent that Guerir, animates Bishoppe Gilbert with moil to lange offert to bear the charges of proceeding his appeals against Bester, and defires the cross of the control of the charge of proceeding his appeals against Bester, and defires the communication of the communications of the communications. At last discount of the communications of the communications and the communications are communications.	traite to the Poper expreise inhibition, the father imfelfek King Fenris, being prefenchereast, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or caude for confedants in the action. For * he, in his insufpicious paffage out of Normandy, artining not without very great perilal. Per Jimoushi, the beth and new-chi hip the had was funcke in the flormes, and there may be the prefer to the prefer to the prefer to the prefer to the prefer to the product of the prefer to the pref	Paled Tier is
Comforted by the King. GET. There. Cardinals attempt to make	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded fo farre with others, that there was feare found in the Kings come Chappell and profence facts at might performs the acmetaceremonics. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their cite, who for his fake vanderwent that Generity animates Bishoppe Calbert with most louing offers to beare the charges of profecuting his appeale against Beeker, and defires the Pope to fend than Legates which might absolute its excommunicated Subiechs, and fettle a peace, we else he found that communicated Subiechs, and fettle a peace, we else he found to the communicated Subiechs, and fettle a peace, we else he found to the communicated Subiechs, and fettle a peace, we else he found to the communication of the substitute of	traine to the Poper express innibition, the stable infile King Favire, being prefencheren; chough a formation of the preference of the presence	Paled Tier is
Comforced by the King. Ger. Der. Cardinals ar- tempt to make reconcilement.	municares Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded for fare with others, that there was feare found in the Kings owne Chappell and prefence facts a might performe the contected eromaine. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their calls, who for his fake underwent that flowerly animates Bishoppe Gilbert with motil bouing offers to beare the chappes of proficuting his appeale against Bishop and Gilbert with motil bouing offers to beare the chappes of profice their seconomunicated Subsets, and lettle a peace, we felt be found to be employed to provide users felf or his variety of the seconomunicated Subsets, and lettle a peace, we felt be found to be employed to provide users felf or his variety for his variety of the seconomunicated Subsets, and lettle a peace, we felt be found to be employed to provide users felf or his variety for his variety of the seconomunicated Subsets, and lettle a peace, we felt be found to be completed to provide useful for the foundation of the content of the content of the content of the content of the content of the content of the provides of the content of the c	traine to the Poper express innibition, the stable infile King Favire, being prefencheren; chough a formation of the preference of the presence	Paled Tier is
Comforted by the King. GET. There. Cardinals attempt to make	municates Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded for the with others, that there was feare found in the Kings come Chappell and profence facts at might performs the acmetaceremonics. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their cite, who for his fake vanderwent that Guerity animates Bishoppe Collors with most louing offers to beare the charges of profecuting his appeale against Beeker, and defires the Pope to fend than Logates which might abilote his excommunicated Subiechs, and fettle a peace, we see the flower of the control of	traine to the Poper express innibition, the stather immelies King Henris, being prefencherency, though without any fortunate prefage in commiss, or cause with the present the present the control of the present the control of the present prefage on the Rev Fire which the best and therein the control of the present perillal Rev Firewish the best and therein, besides Henrie de Agnella and his two formes, galvicition and fauouris, with about foure hundred men and women more, were deutoured of the working waters. And at the feath, the iofful father himselfer, carrying the first dish parties of the Rev Henrie de Agnella and the feath, the foilul father himselfer, carrying the first dish parties when the state has been a present the worklash fach a fertilizer attenting at his table as you. The unmatural programmes approach to the control of the present the death the land of the present the death the land to the control of the present the death the land the present the control of the present the	Paled Tier is
Comforced by the King. Ger. Der. Cardinals ar- tempt to make reconcilement.	municares Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded for fare with others, that there was feare found in the Kings ownse Chappell and prefence facts a might performe the notalecter monics. (3) The King both touched with his ownse wrongs, and tender of their calls, who for his fake underwent that flouriny animates Bishoppe Callert with molitolising offers to beare the chappes of proficuting his appeale against Baeber, and defires the Pope to fend that Logates which might absolute his excommunicated Subiechs, and lettle a peace, we gle to food the company of the company of the provided the protein absort fight in surface with the polar development of the company of the provided the protein and provided in any point to those Customer, at which he had once excepted, but with his ordinary limitations. At last yet by the popes mediation, the two kings of England and of Fasserme cat Paris, whether the Archbishop repaired, and yet no peace entired for that the king refused the kiffs of prace with him, and	traite to the Poper expreise innibition, the father innifiles King Fentis, being prefent chereat; though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause for consolation in the action. For * he, in his insufpicious paffage out of Normandy, attniting not with the part of the part	Paled Tier is
Comforced by the King. Ger. Der. Cardinals ar- tempt to make reconcilement.	municares Gilbert Bishop of Lenden, and proceeded to farre with others, that there was Faere found in the Kings owne Chapell and professe facts it might perform the notesteer or their call; who for his take wrongs, and cented or their call; who for his take wrongs, and cented or their call; who for his take wordings, and called the country of the co	traine to the Poper express innibition, the statter infiles King Favirs, being prefencherency, though without any fortunate prefage in commiss, or cause with the present prefage in commiss, or cause pricase passing out of Are Tor she, in his insufficient passing out of Are the present passing out of the present passing out of the present passing out of the present passing out of Are the present passing out of the present passing out of the present passing out of the present passing out of the present passing out of the present passing waters. And at the feath, the iofful father himselfee, carrying the first dish passing out of the working waters. And at the feath, the ioful father himselfee, carrying the first dish passing out of the present passing in pleasance to the younget King; it seems on the present passing in pleasance to the younget man and work of the total passing that with the present passing that the present passing the passing process of the present passing that the present passing the passing that the present passing the passing the passing that the present passing the passing the passing that the present passing the passing the passing that the present passing the passing the passing the passing that the passing that the passing that the passing the passing the passing the passing that the passing that the passing the passing the passing the passing the passing that the passing the passing the passing the passing the passing the passing the passing the passing the passing the passing the passing that the passing the passing the passing the passing that the passing the pas	Paled Tier is
Comforced by the King. Ger. Der. Cardinals ar- tempt to make reconcilement.	municares Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded for fare with others, that there was feare found in the Kings ownse Chappell and prefence facts a might performe the notalecteromonic. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their calls, who for his fake underwent that fleuerity animates Bishoppe Gilbert with molitoling offers to beare the charges of proficuting his appeale against Baeber, and defires the Pope to fend that Legates which might absolue his excommunicated Subsects, and lettle a peace, we glike found the exempled a presude start fifty for its monty family and homour. (3) Two Cordinals therefore, Gratina and Findone, comming into Strate to end the contention of the cont	traine to the Poper expreint inhibition, the father imfelfek King Fenris, being prefenchereast, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or caude for confedence in the action. For * he, in his insufpicious paffage out of Normandy, arriving not without very great perilal Profusion, the best and newest his pick had was funcke in the flormes, and there may be the former at Payalla and this two formes, following the profusion of the former and profusion and family. At the discharmant, the Kings physical and family, the first the profusion of the working wasnes. And at the feath, the total latter himselfer, carrying the first dish and the think of the fact for the profusion of the fact for the first plane, for the working in pleasance to the younge Kinglo of the fact fair former, for their one Prince to the working of the fair former, for their one Prince to the working of the fair former, there is not Prince to the work of the fair former, for the fair of the	Paled Tier is
Comforced by the King. Ger. Der. Cardinals ar- tempt to make reconcilement.	municares Gilbert Bishop of Lenden, and proceeded for the with other, that there was feare found in the Kings owne Chapell and professe face to make the Kings owne Chapell and professe face to might perform the nonclear orbitaries. (31) The King both rouched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their call; who for his take vaderwent that fenerity animates Bishoppe Gilbert words and the control of the control	traine to the Poper express innibition, the stather similes King Favirs, being prefencherency, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or cause prices and the prices passing out of Ara. For she, in his insufprices passing out of Ara. For she, in his insufprices passing out of Ara. For she, in his insufprices passing out of Ara. For she, in his insufprices passing out of Ara. For she was the control of the property of the pipe had was sinched in the formes, and therein, beliefes Henrie de Aguella and his two forms, galvices de sullment, Mr. Reid for debumant, the King when and women more, were decoured of the working waters. And at the feath, the iofful father himselfee, carrying the first dish, and he Arch-bisting of Trake flaying in pleasance to the yongue King; Reiter was priced to the working that mitteewest limit, for former is the state of the state	Paled Tier is
Comforced by the King. Ger. Der. Cardinals ar- tempt to make reconcilement.	municares Gilbert Bishop of London, and proceeded for fare with others, that there was feare found in the Kings ownse Chappell and prefence facts a might performe the notalecteromonic. (3) The King both touched with his owne wrongs, and tender of their calls, who for his fake underwent that fleuerity animates Bishoppe Gilbert with molitoling offers to beare the charges of proficuting his appeale against Baeber, and defires the Pope to fend that Legates which might absolue his excommunicated Subsects, and lettle a peace, we glike found the exempled a presude start fifty for its monty family and homour. (3) Two Cordinals therefore, Gratina and Findone, comming into Strate to end the contention of the cont	traine to the Poper expreint inhibition, the father imfelfek King Fenris, being prefenchereast, though without any fortunate prefage in comming, or caude for confedence in the action. For * he, in his insufpicious paffage out of Normandy, arriving not without very great perilal Profusion, the best and newest his pick had was funcke in the flormes, and there may be the former at Payalla and this two formes, following the profusion of the former and profusion and family. At the discharmant, the Kings physical and family, the first the profusion of the working wasnes. And at the feath, the total latter himselfer, carrying the first dish and the think of the fact for the profusion of the fact for the first plane, for the working in pleasance to the younge Kinglo of the fact fair former, for their one Prince to the working of the fair former, for their one Prince to the working of the fair former, there is not Prince to the work of the fair former, for the fair of the	Paled Tier is

1	Margaret should be honoured with like ceremonies.		in another place. The Arch-bifloop was hot in zeale of	
1	Thus the fathers patience was exercised on eueric		Instice, but whither fully according to knowledge, God	26467 g.l 2.ca,27.
1 1	hand, and worsethings were scared.	- 1	knoweth, (for it is not for a man of my meane quality,	
1	(59) So now yet at last, in the seuenth yeere of	- 1	knowers, (for it who for a man of my meane quarty,	
Math. Paris.		- 1	rashly to mage of so great a mans actions,) but I thinke,	
The last meeting	Beekets banishment, another meeting was had at		the bleffed Pope Gregorie would have dealt more mildly,	
for a peace be-	Sens, whither, the two great Kings, and the Arch-	-	and winkt at those thing's which might have beene borne,	
and Archbishop.	bishop of Sens, and Bishop of Neuers, beeing toge-	- 1	without any hazard of the Christian faith, & c. and then	
	ther, the Arch-bishop of Canterburie repaired, and	- [concludes : Therefore, that which the venerable Arch-	
1 1	the treatie of Peace was entred into, which at Am-	- 1	bishop then did, I neither sudge that it is to bee commen-	
1 1	bois, in an other meeting (at procurement of Rotrod		ded, neither presume I to condemnett, &c. For good	
1	Arch-bishop of Roan) was finished; and the Archbi-		men are so to bee loved, or lauded by vs, that wee neither	
1 1	fhop (knowing the King was terrified with the expe-		love nor land those acts wherein they show themselves to	
1 1	chation of the forelaid imminent Interdiction) was	- 1	be fraile men, but onely those things wherein without scru-	
1 1	restored to the Kings fauour, and permitted to haue		ple we ought to imitate them : and therefore they are wife-	
1 1	full vie of his Metropolitane See, and all the profits	- 1	lie and warilie to be praifed, that Gods prerogative may be	
1 1	full vie of his Metropolitane See, and all the profits thereof with the arrerages. Which conclusion, the	- 1	reserved intire to himselfe.	
1	King lignifies to his ionne into England, whither	1	(43) Some other learned men there were, who	
1 1	the Arch-bishop returnes, and lands at Sandwich:		lived neere to that time, whose censure was farre	Antizo,
1	And thus the controuerfie betweene the King and		fharper then that Monks: Such were some of those	
	his Arch-bishop seemed to bee ended.	- 1	Divines of Paris, mentioned by * Cafarius the Monk,	l.8.cap 69. Bale Scripe Brit.
1	(40) But the Arch-bishop had not been long in	- 1	who laith, The Question was debated to & fro among st	Cent.a.
The Archbishop	England, before hee published the Popes letters, by	ſ	the Doctors, in the universitie of Paris, whether Tho-	1
publisheth new	which, Roger Arch-bishop of Yorke, and Hugh bishop	- 1	mas were damned or (aued: among st whom, Rogerius	Fox.9.18#1
cenfures.	of Durefme, were suspended from the vie of their	- 1	the Norman anowed, that hee deserved death and dam-	
Math. Paris.	Epifcopall function, for crowning the youque King	1	nation, for his contumacie against his King, the Minister	
Roger Hound,	in presudice of the See of Canterburie; and the Bi-	- 1	of God : but Petrus Cantor alleadged, that his Miracles	
) 1	shops of London, Exceter, and Salisburie, cut off from	- 1	were signes of his faluation, G.c. An indeede if all bee	
1	the Church by censure, for affisting the faid Arch-		true, which * one man hath written in fiue bookes,	
1	bishop at that Coronation; whom Becket would not;	١	containing his 270. Miracles, wee cannot but ac-	Monach Cent.
-	but vnder conditions, at the yongue Kings request,	- 1	knowledgehim, both the greatest Saint, and the me-	de miraculu B, Thoma:
1	absolue. Whereupon a great complaint was carried	-	rieft too, that cuer gotte into heauen ; fo ridiculous	
* Polyder, Virg.	into Normandy, to the father King, " by some of the	- 1	are many things recorded of him. As that of Ail-	
1.13.	Bishops: and in the meane time, the Arch-bishoppe	- 1	wards, who for stealing of a great whetstone (which	
	Thomas, putting himselfe vpon the way to visite the	- 1	the Author that writes it, best deserued) beeing de-	
	yongue King, at woodstocke, in Oxford-shire, was com-	- 1	prined of his Eies and * Virilities, by sentence of Law;	* nes. Pendenda
Lib.Mon.S.	manded not to approach		vpon praier to S. Thomas he had all restored againe :	perhaps for Pedenda,
January.	(41) At the newes of these late censures, the fa-		Yea euen a * Bird, having beene taught to fleake, flying	Malmesh de Kog
The kings wrath fatal) to the	ther King was so fore displeased, that some words	- 1	out of her cage, and ready to be feized on by a Spar-Hanke,	l.s. The printed
fatal) to the	flipping from him, and arguing his great discontent,		Said onely, S. Thomas helpe mee, and her Enemie fell pre-	The printed golden Logend.iik
Archhilhop.	mooued Hugh Moruill, William Traci, Hugh Brito,	- 1	fently dead, and speeescaped, and (belike) reported it.	vis,Them.
Ger,Camb,l.x.	and Richard Fitz-vrfe, knights and courtiers, topost		Of which great power in this Saint, how canne wee	
g, 20. cals them	into England, and there in a furie, (without either	- 1	doubt? fith wee read, that euen in his life time the	
Aulici Canes.	warrant, or privitie of their Soueraigne) to murther	ı	* Virgin Marie her felfe was contented to bee his	
	the Arch-bishop (being then about * forty and eight	-1	Semfter, and fowed his shirt with red sike? Many of	Jbidem;
* The printed Legend faith, he	yeers old) in his owne Church of Canterburie, which	H	which kind of follies, (if that word be sharp enough)	
was fg. recres of	yeers old in his owner Church of Camer our reswinch		might bee heere inferred, were not our prefent argu-	
age. In the festivals	facred Place, and Time, befides his high Calling, might		ment more serious, and these forgeries sit onely for	
	haue pleaded for pittle, had not the men been whol-		Monks to endite, children to read, and fooles to	
Hity Sciles Nata-	ly transported with barbarous rage. For howfo-			
Lis Dominici, Nubrigenfis,	ener we are farre from their fancies, who, for his zeale	ı	(44) The report of the tragical outrage on the	The kings for- row for the mut- ther, and his dif- ficulties there
Etalmus.	to the Popes Soueraignery, haue fo mounted him to	- 1	Arch-bishop, comming to the old King, at Argenton	row for the mut-
Etalmus. Guil, Cambd. Stow in H.S.	the top of Martyrs glory, that not onely the baleft	-	Arch-binop, comming to the old King, at Argenton	ficulties there
Stow in H.S. * Erafm.in Dial.	part of his Shrine was pure gold, and his * old Shee	- 1	in Normandy; there was no kind of forrow, into	moon.
de Peregrinar;	was denoutly kiffed by all * paffengers, but also		which, (without respect to Maichie, or State) hee	Math.Paris. Tpodig-Heufir,
de Peregrinat: Religionis ergo.	fhamelesse and numberlesse Miracles are blindly as-		fell not; and not without cause, as knowing how	- t-mf-result)
* Lambert Pe-	cribed vnto him, and his * Blond almost matched in		plentifull an Hydra of mischiefes (vpon the opinion	
remb.of Keut,in Harbaldowne.	vertue with our euer-bieffed Sauiours : yet wee no		of his prinitie with the fact) would rife, if not pre- uented. But the murtherers, fearing leaft this their	
	leffe condemne their butcherly execution, who			Guil Mubrigen Li
Sanguinem, quem pro te impendit,	(how great so euer his offence was against the King		fact woulddisplease the king, in whose reuenge they	Aat, Parit.
	and State) had no lawfull authoritie to beare them		did it, fled into the North, and abode one whole	VIII. E NIMI
feandere, que Thomas afcendit.	out, or acquit them, from the guilt of Bloud:		yeere in the kings Castle of Knaresborough in Torke-	
acomet ajectett.	(42) To shut vp this long contention (which, as		Bire; perhaps by fauour of the yongue king : none	
1	you fee, would not be extinct but by bloud, nor take		of them dying for the fact, by way of inflice, because,	
1	end but by his death,) because any tensure of our		the Clergic exepting themselves from the bonds of	Nich.Triuet
Guit, Nabrig 1,2.c.	owne will be faid to fauour of Time-ferning, or State-		ciuill Laws, the punishment of a Priest-killer (asby	Holosh plop
16,	pleasing, we will onely annexe the bare judgement of	1	fome itappeareth) was not then the death of the Bo-	Math. Parit.
	the forecited learned Monke of that time, who thus	i	dy by execution of capitall sentence, but of Soule by	faith it was grafts ted to Cardinall
1	speaks. Indeed though most mens custoe is, in those, whom	1	Excommunication, till about the twentiethird yeer	Petro Leoni, by
1	they love and praise, to extoll what soever they have done,	1	of this king, it was (at the inflant fuite of Richard	King Hen. Math. Parit
1	(an argument of their great affection but flender wifdom)		Arch-bishop of Canterburie, and of the Bishops of	4d A.D 3376;
i	not in plain truth those things, which the venerable Arch-		Winchester, Elie, and Normich) yeelded, that such	1
1	hishop so acted, that no profit at all thence proceeded, but	1	perfore thould also fuffer lotte of lite.	l
1	the Wings wrath onely was kindled (whereby to many	1	The king therefore, vpon protestation to	1
1		1	Inbmit himfelf, to the judgement of fuch Cardinais,	1
1	morthy though they for any from a landable zeale; as st	1	Legats, as the Pope should send to inquire of the fact,	1
-1		1	kept his Realme from Interdiction, though the king	i
1	the top of Apollolicall perfection, taught the Gentiles by	1	of France the Archbishop of Sens, and Theobald Earle	1
*Galat.n.	his example to Indaize; for which the Doctor of the Gen-	1	of Blois, had outgone his Emballadors with their in-	1
Cattered	tiles declares that he deserved to be reprehended, though	1	flaming letters, conteining the description of that	1
1	hee didit with a praise-worthy and pious intent. And	1	Parricide.	ı
1	1	1	Henrie	1

Chap.6. Henrie II. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 43:

THE SVC CESSION OF

Title & Stile of KING AND MONARCH
OF IRELAND. And this his purpose was Annalib . Hiber .

* Annalib. Hibs Thid.

Girald, Cambr.

much advanced by the fatall and familiar errour of proceedings in like cases: for the Irish Princes, either through distrust or pride, for bearing to vnite their forces against the common enemy, while each prouides for one, they are all as it were, ouer-(47) Moreouer * Dermot Mac Rurrgh (in that ime of the Irish Pentarchie, or fine-fold Kingdome) having fecretly stolne away the wife of Rotherick (a light woman, and consenting or plotting rather, & vrging the rape it selfe) added to Rotherickes ambition, ainst desire of reuenge, for so notable, impudent, and publike injurie, so much the more, odi-

ous in Dermots person, for that hee was old: ney-ther was this all; for the causes of this change were

(48) The onely disposer and transfator of King domes is God, & in Ireland to move him to offence

(without which no Kingdom is transferred)against the people thereof, all fuch finnes abounded, as commonly forgoe the greatest changes: for not onerupted, but the Christian faith it selfe decaied; bar-Poligemie, 6-c. barifine ouerrunning the one, and * more then fupertitions the other. But it may feem by Jone.

Author, that King Henrier particular inducements

Author, that King Henrier particular inducements

Hand State of the Addition, were both an ancient title vato that

Kingdome, derived from this arceleve circle is an acceptable of the state of Nation, buying and felling their Captines, and wifing Turkish tyranny on their bodies: which made the Irish Clergy themselves confesse, that they had deserved no other, then that their land should bee transferred to that Nation whom they had so cruelly handled Notwithstanding, king Henry, who knew how great and dangerous turnults the Popes had raised on small occasions, thought his way would bee much easier, if he went onward with the Popes good fanour, which hee easily obtained (so liberall is his holinesse of that which is none of his) for a fee; viz. a penny

perely to be paid to Saint Peter of eury house in Ireland. Touching which point, Rossus of Warwick (no Protestant, I assure you,) faith, That Englands King is not bound to rely on the Popes graunt for Ireland, nor yet to pay that taxe, because hee had claime to that Kingdome by an hereditary right: and that the Pope had no temporall interest therein (as his fauorites pretend) the often-mentioned Monke of Gul.Nubrig.l.a. Newborough can tell vs. who faith, that Nunauam externa subiacuit ditioni, treland was never subiett to any forvaine command.

any jorrame commana.

(49) God Almighty therefore did now put it into the heart of Hemy, for the reforming of that kingdome, to make a Conquest thereof, having in his infinite wifedome before hand fitted all circumstances needfull to concurre, for inducing so warie and frugal a Prince to fuch an enterprife, which thus tooke beginning.

(50) Dermet Mac Murgh, beeing in possession of his fatall Helen (the adulterous wife of Rothericke) was purfued to eagrely with the reuenging fword of his enemie (who, howfocuer wounded in heart with the abuse of his Bed, rejoiced in the colour and occafion ministred therby, for him to feife vpon the flourishing Provinces of Leinster) as hee was driven to flie from place to place, and at the length to quitte his kingdome alfo, the subjects whereof his tyrannie and vices had vnictled, in their affections toward him. Thus desperate of help at home, his last deliberations were to draw in forreine aides, the necesfity of his case requiring it; and for that purpose, finally resolues to repaire to the court of the wise and potent Henrie, King of England, beeing then in Aqui tain : neither could Dermot but knowe, that it had heeretofore beene in Henries designes, at such time Hibar Exp. eap. 1 as hee ment to subdue it for William of Angies, his yongest brother, and also, because his present Dominions did halfe (as it were) enuiron it. In which hopes he was not deceived; for Henrie liftened therunto verie willinglie, as to a thing which hee had indeede * fome yeeres, before projected.

Monarch 43.

(51) King Dermot therefore was heard in his fuite. But, because the thing, as at that time, neither feemed great enough, for fuch a Prince as Henrie to vndertake directly, nor as yet was held fufficienty discourred to his hand; that therefore the Ice might be broken by inferiour meanes, and aswell the conueniences, as inconueniences, founded to the depth, (without engaging the roiall person, name, or power,) it was by the Kings letters permitted to Dermot (the exiled Prince) to draw what * aduenturers, or voluntaries, either the commiseration of his 6.1. Hib.expor. eftate, or other respects, of pietie, profit, or delight in armes, could allure to the action. Now whether it were, for that he, whose Countreis lay toward the coafts of Wales, (and within ken upon a cleere day) by commodity thereof might entertaine intelli gence, aswell as trafficke, with the inhabitants of those parts; or, for that the fame of their Cheualrie did inuite; or, for that his acquaintance at his arriuall grew there first; or, for that these and many o-

ther circumstances metre in this accident : sure it is

that Dermot raifed his first, and principall succours

from among the English Colonies there, (52) The Welfh had then in their hands a valiant Gentleman of Norman race, one Robert * Fitz-Stephen, who by Gilbert de Clere was entrusted with him Stephenides other was one of the towne of Cardigan, but through the defence of the towne of Cardigan, but through trachery the Towne being furprited, Robert was also delinered up to Rhefe ap Graffin Prince of South Wales, who would hearken to no other endentments of his liberty, but onely, that he should for euer abandon his possessions in Wales, Whereupon (the oportunity of Dermots quarrel giving hopes of new fortunes) immediately hee entred into contract with the Irifb king, promising by a certaine day to come to his succour, with as many Voluntaries, as his remaining fortunes, or the hope of the voiage could firre: which he * did accordingly performe, leauing it very disputable, whether with more fueceffe or courage. But Dermot well knowing that the fortunes of this Gentlema (to whose valor nothing see Richard Earle of

the man whom the Fate of Ireland did expect. (53) Dermotes perfivalions to the Earle were of this kind: That the enterprife, besides the facul-"tie thereof, was full of pietie, honour, Iustice, or snight, and commoditie: That it appeared so to King Henry himselfe, by whose leaue hee was free to gather what forces he could : That hee was dri-

weight of the inknowne worke, had formerly dealt

with that renowmed Lord, Richard of the house of Clare, Earle of Pembrooke, furnamed Strong-bow : uen out by the cruell ambition of Neighbours,& treacherie of wicked Subjects. That Leinstein was a Kingdome, and though but a part, yet cleere-'ly the best and richest part of Ireland. That multitudes offered themselves to his aid, but his cares

were not onely for a Generall to lead them, but

for one to whom hee might leave his kingdome

Dermon first for

Rabert Fiter St.

* Annales Hiber

med impossible) were vnable to vndergo the whole Pemirete.

ly called(of his chiefe feat in

meete. That the Earle (in his conceit) did dwell but narrowly(confidering what hee was worthing " of) pent-vp in the straights of an Earledomes ti-"tle, for whom a great Kingdome was not great. "That they who would not allow Lenfler for a "kingdome, did forger, that England once was bro"ken into leffer flates; and if Dermot were not a "King, neither then were Ella, Cisa, Vffa, Sigbert, "Crida, and the reft in the Saxon feuen-headed go " uernment: that the quantity of Dominion made more or leffe frong, but not more or leffe a King. That he was rightfull King of Leinster, as Sonne and Heire to Murgh King of Leinster: that if hee must forgoe his inheritance, it should be to fuch as had done him no wrong, and were wor-"thy of it; to Richard Strong-bow and his follow-"ers, and not to Rothericke and Rebels. That hee was not vnking'd,though vnkingdom'd: that E-"us his daughter (Eus the pearle and starre of Ire"land) should indeed be Eus to his enemies to bring vponthem death, and just confusion : that vet it " defeating the Tyrant Rotherick of his hopes by pla "ting Earle Richard and his Forces, hee should pro " uide for his Country, not destroy it. That if it did "fallout otherwise, yet his difloiall people had their just deserts, who objecting vices to their So " neraigne, did themselues commit vile treasons Indeed (quoth he) I was neuer fuch a King, as that "I was not also a Man. But for those matters betweene God and me, here is now no place to ac-"count, for though his instice hath found me out, "yet his mercy hath left me more friends at home "My quarrell is most just, as against most wicked re-bels and vsurpers: Restore methen (my Lord) by your puissance to my natine soile, and my lawful "rights therein: restore with me Religion and Dis-

whose person all the respects of birth, honour

cipline to the ancient splendor thereof, which was onot greater in any Realme about vs then in Ireland "reduce the stray, enlighten our ignorance, polish our rudenesse, and let not such abundant matter of "merite and immortall glory escape you, God him-"selfe will prosper the enterprisesholy Church hath "long since approued ir: and vpon such Authors "what can miscarry? And though in thy noble and "Chriftian courage nothing can weigh 6 much,
(and these I see work mightily yet to satisfic all
"respects, Thou shalt have far larger territories then here Thou canst possesse, and goodly lands to di-"stribute for reward among thy friends and follow "ers. My last offers now shall not shew a more de fire to vie thy forces, then aloue to thy perion & vertues. They are not trifles I propose, but that of which God himselfe doth seeme to me to have aid the ground; seeing it is his holy will that thou at this time shouldst bee without a wife. Know thou then, that I have that one daughter Eng, the

heire of my Crowne, and comfort of my age: let thine owne eye tell thee how faire and worthy "this I dare auouch that thou wilt thinke far broa "der feas wel croft, for view of fo honeft beauty: fhe "in the first blossome of her youth, a vertuous vir-"gine, and by both Parents borne of Princes, shall at thine arrival, with this right hand, bee made "thine, and with her after my death, my whole "realme, and other my rights whatfocuer: which were they infinitely more; (despite not such loue "nor the alliance of one diffressed, but neverthelesse "aKing,) I would repute them farre too little for **Glich a fonne in law: who though thy leife as yet the was Aunt (by "no King*, art come of Kings, and it is my whole "and last ambition, that I may liue to make thee one. The Earle accepted the conditions, refo

lute to fet vp Dermot againe, and for that purpose bound himselfe by solemne contract, to the full per-

formance of his part within a certaine time.

the mether) to Malcolm King of Scots: Cambd. Annales Hibern. Ann. 1169. Earle Richaed

(5 3) Dermot having thus negotiated his affaires and let it in so good forwardnes, while his friends in "bounty, valour, youth and fortunes did happily England prepared themselves and their Forces . left hee should seeme to relie vpon forraine aides, and so to diminish with them the reputation of his owne valour and alliances at home; hee failes backe into his Country; carrying with him the promifes of confederates, and there both by his presence and perswasions did the best hee could to facilitate the entrance of the English; whose honourable entertainements, deuotions, civility, riches, valours, wisedome, and victorious greatnesses he spared not to celebrate, as instruments advancing his own de fignes: which raifed no little expectation, mixt with contrary affections of defire and feare,

(54) The next yeare, when the feafon grew fit for an Army to take the field, Robert Fitz-Stephen accompanied with Maurice Fitz-Gerald his halfe brother by the furer fide, & a competent number of Souldiers, repoling (vnder God) their chief hope in their swords and courages, set faile for Ireland; & in the beginning of May came on shore, at a place called by the Irifb, Barn (by the Englifb at this day commonly, Bagg and Bunn) which in our language fignifies Sacred: a word which (so much as names may be presages of things) did as it were hallow the attempt of the English with a lucky and gratious omination, whereof the Inhabitants at this present retaine this rime.

At the head of Bagg and Bunn, Ireland was lost and wun,

(55) Thonext day after, Maurice de Prender gast allo, with the other men of Armes, and many Archers in two shippes arrived there, being parcell of Massefer. class Fitz-Stephans Forces and Companions of his Fortunes, who ioining themselves together, immediatly marcht to the City of Weifford under their Banners, and that in the greatest brauery they could, (the Knights and Men at Armes, in their * Coates of Arms & Colours) to draw thereby now at the first the greater reputation to themselues, and with opinion fo gotten, to fill vp the fmalnes of their numbere: in which manner affailing the City, the Irife therein rendred themselues, and increward of the service, being also *according to capitulation, and entire and Market an couragement of others, who were to proceed in this warre, Dermos, to whole vie the English Gmessal had cale nit, w beflowed the City is felfe, and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and district the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and district the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and district the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and district the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and district the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and district the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and district the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country and the Country about ypon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his singuistic and the Country about vpon Robert Fitz-Stephen, at his pleasure to be disposed off: and there the first Colony of our Nation was planted, which hath euer fince immoueably maintained their abode among innumerable changes in the world retaining at this day the ancient attire of the English, and the language alfoit felfe, though brackish with the mixture of vulgar Irifb, which therefore by a diffinet name is called Weisford speech, current onely in that City,& the County about.

(56) But Robert Fitz-Stephan thus advanced, for his more affurance, beganne to raife a * Town at Carricke, making the place which nature had already fortified, much more by Art defenfible. This entrie into Ireland being by him now made (vnder the name of Henry King of England) and the fucceffle exceeding hope, Richard Strong-bow receiving aduertifement from Dermot, and the new Lord of Weisford of all occurrences sthought fitte, first to weispra, or an eccurrence 3 chought inte, into dispatch frome supplies to Fizz-Stephen, which about the beginning of May, under the conduct of Raimunalegrosse (a Gentleman of the Earles family) were accordingly sent: and after Rai-mand the Earle himselfe in the same yeere set forth: His Forces were about * two hundreth apad camp, each men of Armes, and a thousand other Souldiers, with whom he came fafe to Anchor in the Bay of Waterford, vpon the Vigil of Saint Bartholomew, Auguft,21. Ann. 1 171. Earle Richard the Generall. knowing that expedition did carry with it terrour and advantage, presently marcheth to Porthlarge,

Eece 2

Robere Firz Ste poen faild into Ireland. Trigiata Mili

An.D. 1170 They were Soul diers of all forts

(as feemeth)fró a Towne of tha Gules , a Sel-

observed in the Friers Church at Clos me Il. *Girald,Cambr. in super. Hiber.
*Camb.p.748The first English
Colonie

reifferdføbish.

Earle Richard

before With fupplies,

med to the King they ment to have renounced.

(60) The Kings goodly Nauy lay in Milford ha-uen, to which as hee iournied, hee thundred against

vnnaturall conspiracies to disclose the mischiefes

which were ordained to exercise this right redoub.

ted King and Warriour, hatched here at home by

the malice (some fay) of Eleaner his Queene, at such

time as hec was absent in Ireland, fo that as " one

"Math Paris

6.	Henrie II. ENGLANDS	М	ONARC
[writes, God stirred up the Kings owne bowells against himselfe. Causes of this vnhappie diffention, there	1	entred the towne
- 1	manyeye. Caules of this vinapple differences, there	- 1	had the persons of
- 1	were many : First a Queene and Wife, violentlie vin-	- l'	Chester, Ralph de Fu
- 1	dicande for wrong done vinto her bed by the king,	- 1	foners of especials no
- 1	dicatine for wrong done vnto her Bed by the King; who was immoderatlic addicted to varietic of loues: then Ambition in an euill-naturd Child, and lastlic,	-	French King moouir vie the good fortune was so willing to make to haue outgone ex
- 1	men Ambidon in an edul-natura Chila, and lakile,	-	vie the good fortun
- 1	pernicious Actors and inftruments, who, for their	- 1	was to willing to m
- 1	owne ends, nourished this cursed mischiefe; so as if	- 1	to haue outgone en
- 1	we should out of our stories recapitulate the seuerall	-	offers, but through were vied, preuailed (69) A violent
- 1	occasions taken by the sonne against the father, wee should rather shew you the colours, then the causes	- 1	were vied, prenailed
- 1	thould rather thew you the colours, then the caules:	- 1	(69) A violen
1	For none of those causes which his Son pretended,	- 1	Robert Earle of Leich
- 1	feemed great enough with menthat feare God, to	-1	die no leffe proud,
- 1	beare out such continual! divisions as followed.	- 1	who at this meeting
	(65) The head of this conspiracy was verie great, and instly verie tetrible: for on the side of King Henry the sonne, there were the Kings of France and	- 1	fronted King Henry yongue Lord, and M words of reproach) hand vpon his fwor
- 1	and inftly verie tetrible : for on the fide of King	- 1	yongue Lord, and M
Liuft.	Henry the sonne, there were the Kings of France and	- 1	words of reproach)
Conba.	Scotland, * Rithard and Geffrey, two yonger fonnes of	- 1	hand vpon his fwor
- 1	Sreiland, Richard and Geffrey, two yonger fonnes of the King of England, whom by their mothers per- fwaftons they forlooke, to follow the yongue King;	- 1	the King, nad he no
Į.	fwafions they for looke to follow the yongue King;	- 1	fuch fairirs had road
-	David the Scotifs Kings brother, Philip Earle of Flau- ders, (a Peere of France, and a potent Prince,) & as- thew Earle of Boloigne, Theobald Earle of Bloss, Hugh	- 1	of countell were like
	ders, (a Peere of France, and a potent Prince,) Mat-	- 1	hauing forfaken the cause was more ho
- 1	them Earle of Relaione, Theobald Earle of Blow, Hugh	- 1	cause was more ho
	Earle of Chefter, Robert Earle of Leicefter, Hugh Bigot	1	Walkingham) the fath
	Farle of Narfalke, Rayer & Mambray, and other great	- 1	gall power, fought to proud and haughtic.
	ones, in great numbers, fo as nothing feemed wan-	- 1	proud and houghtie.
	ting but onely a good cause which (such as it was)	ı	(zo) But God
	Ouesne Elisane like an a Aleffa kentaline formuch	-1	(70) But God, and not to deliner I
1	as lay in her with perpenual formentations. And	- 1	deftroied those hop
	indeed the frame of thefe confederate did require no	- {	their vhnaturall att
	them katte O Biologes, Theshold Battle O Biologis, 1878, Earle of Colfey, Robert Pattle O Liesgier, 1849, Bigst Earle of Norfiele, Robert Pattle O Liesgier, 1840, Bigst Earle of Norfiele, Robert Ones, in great numbers, 6 as nothing feemed wanting, but onely a good canle, which (lich ast was) Queene Elissen, like an Alatia, kerytaline, Yo much asky in her, with perpetual fromenations. And indeed the fcope of their confiderats did require to lefte a combination, is thesing to depote the Pattle, and the Company of the Company of their combination, is the confiderate and require to lefte a combination, is the eight of posterior battle.	1	
		- 1	when newes came is friends and feruant
	whom it pleased them (for countenance of their vn-	1	
	godly armes) to repute no King, because hee had	1	phrey de Bohun high
	crowned his forme.		with the powers o Kings vncle, Rober
	(66) Though nothing then could come more	. 1	Kings viicle, kober
	greeuous, to the bleeding heart of a most louing fa-		Earle of Arundell,
	ther, then such a warre; yet not to bee vnprouided,		lie encountred wit
	hee (like a louidier) prepares himieite, when faire		* Flemings, of wh
	hee (like a fouldier) prepares himfelfe, when faire meanes faild, and found multitudes readic to lite, and die with himsthe indignitie of the vanaturall re- uolt, did fo much inflame all honeft courages, which	- 1	* Flemings, of who flaine, or taken, an Earle himfelf, and*
	and die with him; the indignitie of the vnnaturall re-	- 1	Earle himlelt, and*
	uolt, did fo much inflame all honelt courages, which	- 1	perions at his com
	acknowledged him their Soueraigne.	- 1	brought ouer into
	(67) The particular accidents of the wars would		(71) This * g ceffe, did so much
	fill a volume. At one time Normandie, Guien, and		celle, did to much
	Britane were inuaded by the confederats in France,	- 1	beginning to diffru
	Britane were invaded by the confederats in France, and at the same time Cumberland by the Scots. But	- 1	monethes truce for
	the King of England had friends in an enote partisand	- 1	because there were
		- 1	men, * the Earle
toucden.	himielte hearing that Fernaul was a Deiteged by the French King in perion, hee beganne at lait to kindle, hauing, like a fleeping Lion, fitten fill all that while, and (for that the place had, you parlea, agreed to cheir flact our renderit aid came not by a day) he earnised to cheir flictocour within the time, fending King Lewis word that hee flould gette him foorth of Normandar with the flould gette him floul	- 1	which held out . ha
	Lhauing like a fleeping Lion, fitten ftill all that while,		and feat of warre, kers, not with flandi
	and (for that the place had, ypon parlea, agreed to	-	kers,notwithstandi
	render if aid came not by a day) hee arrived to their	٠.	
	fuccour within the time, fending King Lewis word	- 1	braies Castles, and
Paris.	that hee should gette him foorth of Normandie with		Lord and Father, t
sujur.	speed, or he would without faile, come, and see how		braies Casties, and Lord and Father, a other purpose bu
	hee did voon that verie day. Lewis, meaning no- thing leffethen to put his owne Crowne in danger,		felfe.
	ching leffe then to put his owne Crowne in danger.		(72) The fath
	while he fought one for his fonne in law. (and there-		Conneduat to use hu
	while he fought one for his fonne in law, (and there- fore in all the warre-time, would never fee up his reft		from one place an meane while, reco lent fonne, weakn
	Tote III all the water dilies or herwife to doe to King		meane while, reco
	tore in all the warre-time, would never be you have you a barell, but willing otherwife to doe to King Hemie the father, all the harme hee could, by countenancing the faction, and fupporting the resulted malecontents with his best meanes, and knowing King Hengy was a flower and terrible Prince when he is the counter of the prince when he is the counter of the transport of the prince when he is the counter of the transport of th		lene fonne, weakn
	Henrie the father, and the narme nee could, by count		would have weakn
	tenancing the faction, and importing the resolution		ments came post,
	majecontents with his best meanes, and kingwing		Greeds into Norma
	King Heary was allower and terrible Prince when he		(75) Thither
	came indeede to fight, immediatelie railed his fiege,		(7;) Thither Richard (the Elect of
	and with as much hait as nee might, abandoned trie		A Vinna Indicioni
-1° 24	and with as much haft as hee might, abandoned the place * leaning his Camp, tents, and warlike proujs from behind, and retired into France.		the Kings Institution
elf. in Newltri.	fions behind, and retired into France,		For after that Phil
	(68) And though King Hemie, beginning now indeede to shake his dreadfull fword, had many faire		For arter that PML
1177	indeede to fhake his dreadfull fword, had many faire		lie fworne to inua
.1 173		1	yongue Hemies qui ioining with Hagh and spoiled the C
	men and other strengths, though not great, nor many, in regard of the ouerthrowes which on his beauty, in regard of the ouerthrowes which on his beauty, in regard of the ouerthrowes which on his beauty in Bottom his force had	l	ioining with Hagh
	ny, in regard of the ouerthrowes which on his be-	1	and ipoiled the C
	ny, in regard of the outerthrowes which of his be- halfe were given: For that in Britane his forces had in bartell vanquifhed Hugh Earle of Cheffer, & Ralph de Foilejers, and flaine about one thou fland and flue	l	wile much narme,
Housed.	in barrell vanquished Hugh Earle of Chester, & Ralph	1	faction had taken
	de Fouleiers, and flaine about one thousand and fine	1	of warre were tur as the Earle of Fi
	hundred of their army ; & in England, Reignald Earle	l	as the Earle of F
	thundred of their army; & in England, Reignald Farle of Cornwall, and Richard de Lucie, had in bloudie battells ouerthrowne the infolent Earle of Leisefter, and	ı	the Coaits, there t
.Peris	rells overthrowne the infolent Earle of Leicelter and		ouer, Robert Farle
		1	1

Toolig. 7

Roger E

" Mash.P

An.D.

Roger.

CHS. Monarch 43. 405 of Leicester by force and that he ! of the faid * Hugh Lupus Earle of lgiers, and verie many other prinote and Nobility; yet Leme the ing a parlea; the father defirous to Toodie Newley ne of war, to reclaime his rebells; nake peace, that hee might feeme expectation in the qualitie of his h fuch wicked perswasions, as nt firebrand in this division, was cefter, beeing matched with a La-, and stomachous then himselfe; The ourragious g, was not contented to have afthe father, on the behalfe of his Eule of Leice fle Mafter the sonne but (after many h) is faid to have laid his daring * Roger Housed, Holarita ord, with purpose to haue firucken ot been with-holden; (and where doe, it is easie to gesse what kinds ke to be embraced and pursued;) York Newly he father, not for that the others onest, but for that (faith Thomas her King, labouring to enlarge the re-to fet his foote upon the neckes of the who ment to chaftife the King; him vp into his enemies hands, The Kings ville opes, that mooued the fonnes to empts; for it was not long after, into Normandy, that his faithfull its, * Richard de Lucie, and Humh Conftable of England, together of Reignald Earle of Cormuell the

ere Earle of Glocester, and William not farre from Burie, couragious ith the Earle of Leicester, and his hom aboue * fine thouland were nd among the prifoners was the his Amazonian Countesse, whose mandement were not long after, Normandie.

Izine. great victorie and other good fuc-ch aduantage the King, that Link ruft the enterprize, fought for fixe or himfelfe, and had it granted but re yet in England, two principall of Norfolke, and Roger Mowbray, having Leicefler for their Randenon, with no fmall numbers of parts ling that Geffrey (the Elect of Lin-ale fonne), had taken two of Mond done other good fernice for his the truce ferned the enemie for no ut to breath, and to repaire him-

her (of whom *Lewis* faid, that, *het* ut to flie, he went with such celerity and Kingdome.to another) in the ouers Xaints from Richard his vio ning that partie by fo much, and ned it farre more, but that aduertifdeclaring fuch matter as made him undic.

er * came vnto him out of England, of Princhester) (ent with all hast by ries, to lay open vnto him, the dan-rin the Realme at that time stood silip Earle of Flanders had folemne-tade England, in supportation of quarrell, sundrie forces arriving and the Biget Earle of Norfolke, had taken Citie of Norwich, and done other-, whereby the yongue King and his great encouragement, as if the die ned, and aswell the yongue King Flanders, were come with forces to to transport for England: * Morele Ferrers of Derby (who was falm

Mark Park

+ Galles quidés

hee had brought the young King to a finall attonement

Constantinople, of Fredericke Emperour of Romans, of * William Archbishop of Triers in Germany, (a mighty Prince) of the Duke of Saxonie, and of Phi-

lio Earle of Flanders. Moreover he had the government of France for a time, the Kingdome of Jerufalem offered him, but refused, and two of his daughters married to the two Kings * of Gaftile and Si-

(79) There was first therefore a truce taken betwixt the three Kings, Lewis and the two Henries; twist the three rings, Lews and the two is one; wherein Richard (who flood out) was left to his Fathers profecution, who feeing himfelfe thus defiture after many flashes of preparation to relist, and great conflicts with himselfe, put himselfe most humbly into his Fathers mercy, and throwing him-felfe * with teares at his feet, obtained the pardon hee begd, and a full restitution to his most inward grace and fauour. A most christan, fatherly, wise & happy Act; for Richard ouercome with this vnexpected and incredible goodnes, neuer delifted till

Chap. 6. Henrie II. ENGLANDS MONARCHES. Monarch 42

An.D.1175 chief points of that wished peace were: 1. That Hen-ry the yong King with Richard and Geffrey his breth-lease. ren flould returne, freed from all oathes of confe-deration, to the King their Fathers obedience, as to their Lord and Father. 2. That Prisoners should be fet at large without ransome on all hands. 3. That William King of Scots, the Earle of Leiceffer and Chefter, Ralph de Fulgiers, & other, who had compoun-

ded for their ransome, before this conclusion, should haue no benefite of this exemption. 4. That King Henry the Father should take affurance of loialty toward him by hoftage, or oath of fuch as were ehlar-ged. 5. That King Henry the fon should ravise that Grant which his Pather the King had made to his fon Iohn, of fome Callles, & yerely rents in England, &c. The Seale it felfe, wher with the yong king made this mentioned Ratification, we haughere annexed



fel-310. Symonic was loffe of Patro-

(80) Touching King William of Scotland. his fore-mentioned compounding: our Historians all fore-mentioned compounding: our Hithorians all agree not, * fome faying more, * fome leffe: but*HEGB** Bestund & South Hithorian of fome credit with that Nation) writes; IT-THA King William was to pay 1000001. Striucling for his ranfome, the one halfin prefent coin, the south of 30001. The one half imperfent coin, the context of 50001. The forafficience of that furnme the Earlest Context of 50001. domes of Northumberland, Cumberland & Hunting-ton should rest in morgage 3. That K. N illiam should move no warre against England for the retention of those lands.4. That, for the moresecurity of the premiffes, the Caftles of Berwick, Edenbrough, Roxbrough & Strineling (hould bee deliucred to the English.

(81) In the meane while, King Henry according to Couenants, dischargeth out of captivity nine hundred fixty and nine men of Arms, taken in those late warres; and King Henry the sonne discharged about one hundreth; and hauing accomplished whatfoeuer might content or fecure his Father, they prepared for England, where the ioious letters of their comming written by the Father, had begotor their comming whether by the Father, had negot-ten great and longing expectations in the subjects; which hee did, slath Paris This whom the general danger of ware had afflicted, the common gladnesse might recomfort. In their transile thinherward the confidence was such vpon this fresh reconcilement, that one Chamber and table served both, for whom before one Kingdome was not wide enough. They landed at * Port finouth vpon Friday, 20.2 May, 1175. (82) The face of England at this present, was like that of a quiet skie and sea, no blast, no billow,

no appearing figne of discontentment; which the better to continue, King Hemy the Father accompanied with the King his sonne, omitted no office of a inft and prudent Gouernour, viliting a great part of his Realme in perion, confuling, ordering and nacting fuch lawes and courfes, as might most establish the good of Peace. Hence it came, that at London to good of reace. Tence it came, that at London both the Kings were present in a Synode, in which Richard lately choien Archbishop of Canterbury, did publish ("with the Kings affent) certain Canons for the better government of the Church of England, beginning thus; At the true fountaine of all anguana, oceniming thus; one the true jointaine of all happy rule, that is to fay, at the honour of God, and effa-billment of Religion to Difcipline, Gre. & among the religible to the control of the religible to the religible neutrins one canon in especial words is enacted, both by authority of the King & Synade, (and indeed worthy for euer to bee in force) I hat every Patrone ta-king reward for any prefentation, flouldfor ever loofe the Paromage thereof. And the fame Kings not long after being at weedflook, in accompliftment of fich holy purpoles, by adulied orthe Clergy prouded men to fuch Bifloprides, Abbattes, and principall cures as were vacual, where King Hebry the Father torgar not his true friend Lebr of Occupied, whom ne preferred to the See of Norwich.

(83) From hedee comming to Torke, he fet thole parts in peace, whither William King of Sept's repairing, fundry matters of importance were handled between the two Kings: as likewife afterward at Toky. windfor (where the King had called a great affemwindin (where the King had called a great: afternibly of the Lords Spirituall and Temporall) Rotherick King of Commanght in Ireland (as the fuite of his Ambaffadors, the Archbilhop of Thuamon and To-Amoulasors, the Archolinoport pummy and Vo-mund, 8 others of that nation, (blocks to Rotherick) was received into protection & fauour, and became Triburatie: K. Henry being vnwilling* to fish with an hooke of gold, which in warring your Irefund hee should seem to do. In an other Parliament, not long after at Northampton, he caused England to be diti-ded into six circuits, & to each Circuit three Justiciars Itinerants deputed; and aswell to give his lawes more free passage as also the better to secure himself he threw to the earth fundry * Castles which had bin formerly kept against him, as Leicester, Hunting-ton, Walton, Groby, Statesbury, &c. and had the rest both in his English and in his French Dominions committed to his disposition.

(84) The young King * about these times dis-couered fresh alienations in his mind against his Father : who yet diffembling all, did arme notwithanding upon the defentiue, and replenished both Eng land and Normandie with Garrisons, which drew

(85) But the old King not vnwilling perhaps (left the Brethrens concord might proue no better then a conspiracy against the Father) that his warlike aconfpiracy against the Father) that his warlike Children should contend, "did nourlish debatke at mong them: Certaine is s, that to diuter the warre from himselfee, he appealed his stone the King with an enercase of maintenance for himselfe, amounting in the whole to an hundrech pounds "distaining him deal" and the pounds of the same money for his to the day, and ten pounds of the same money for his wife the Queene: and whereas Alice (daughter of whether Queene: and whereas Laure (daughter of Lewis then King of Frante, who was maried at three pend Propia years of age to Richard (food fonne of King Henry) when hee was but leuen, and now demanded of King Henry the Father, to the intent that Richard her husband might enjoy her, the old King who was

G g g g *fuspected

An.D.1176

Mat. Parit.

catity believe, Baronius and ms - Author space within compaffe, who acknowledge he received 80, lathes. To fuch height was the Papall tyranny and pride grown towards thele, of whom God had faid exprelly/Touch not mine Annointed. (76) Yet fome Monkes of that age, attribute the happy and great successe which ensued to the reconcilement which King Henry thus made with God for the bloud of Thomas, because it pleased

alfo, wherby appears, that every federall fort were

to have a hand in that service. Mathem Paris can tell

you more plainly what that Discipling was t viz. he received the Discipline of rods on his bare stell receiving

of enery religious man, (a great multitude of them being

there gathered) 3. or 5 Jerker a peece : whence we may

casily believe, Baronius and his * Author spake

God to deliuer his enemy William King of Scots into

the hands of his fouldiers about that very time, &

did also with stormes beat backe into France his dis-

THE SVC CESSION OF Monarch 42. Henrie II. 468 Booke 9. ing to him, who was right heire thereunto, to wit, the fonne of Geffrey Earle of Anion, whole brother Fulle was king of tierry idem.

(83) Neutrchelfel, (the King haning, at left. wite formally, adjured the Lords to adult him, that of the land of the land of the land of the land of the land of the land. * Suspected to have deflowed her, for that time suited of the delivery of her person, in such sore that peace was not hindered thereby. Roe. Hound. (86) But while the yong King by his Fathers *in-An.D.118 fligation fought by force to conftraine young Richard to doe homage to him for Aquitaine, and King Henry the Father for the fame cause commanded * Roz Wend. Maib. Paris. Th. Walf. in Toodig. Neuftr. which should bee most for his soules health) it was thought fit, to aid the cause with money, but not to emploie his perfon, northe perfon of any child hee had, which was the Partnarcks laft requeft; and ther-upon (to the vnípeakable griefe of the faid Patri-arcke, and of the whole Christianitie of the Eaft) hee Geffrey his third fon, Duke of Britaine (whom*fome for his extraordinary perfidiousnes in this service toward his Father, and manifold scrilege, cals the *Child of Perdition) to aide and affist his said elder Rog. Hour. brother; while also the lealous Father (out of the refused the said Kingdome, and abandoned as no firife of his formes) fought his own fafety, and in nou-rithing it, had by the treachery of the faid fonnes bin blean occasion of immortall renowne, as euer any King of England had beene offered; but gaue leane to all fuch as would, to take vpon them the Croffe twice endangered and had at both times been wonderfully preserved; and while the young King by and ferue. This Heraclius is hee who dedicated the Temple Church in London, as by this Inscription o-uer the Church doore in the Stone-worke doth approfound diffirmulations, plotted to bring both his Father and Brother Richard into subjection; behold the hand of God by taking away the young King at Martell not farre from Linages, where his Father lay at firege, gaue an end to this odious, fowle and ANNO AB INCARNATIONE DO-MINI M.C.LXXXV DEDICATA HEC IC- vpon the Temp CLESIA IN HONOREM BEATE MARIE (87) Thus was his life cut off like a Weauers A DNO BRACLIO DEI GRATIA (87) Thus was his life cut off like a Weaters: threed(fay * Authors) who had by dying cut of the hope of many: But whatforuer his life was, which God thus shortned at his age of twentie and eight SANCTERESVERECTIONISECCLESIE PATRIARCHA II IDVS FEBRUARII. Q EAM ANNATIM PETENTIBUS DE INyeeres; certainely his death was not inglorious, but worthy to be fet out in Tables at large as a pattern IVNCTA SI PENITENTIALE DIES INto disobedient Children: for his Father refusing to wifite him(fearing his owne life,) but fending his (90) Thus the forrowfull Patriarcke being dif-(90) Thus the forrowfull Partiancke being dis-mitted (not foregetting as "formed on write, to thun-der against the King for abandoning the enale-brought back nothing to utilize motor and defpaire, the Figlense Thence (by the Diacle milatious Arra) beeing wrape and knoted in mutual (dipitions and quartelis indetermined, whereupon (horty) after, ensited, with the losse of templates, the capacity of "22-by in-abandoned and frimmens-by Christings." Ring in figne of forginenes, the dying Prince most humbly with flouds of teares kiffing the same, made a most forrowfull confession of his finnes, and feeling death approch, would needs be drawne (as an vnworthy finner) out of his owne bed, and laid vpon another, strewed with ashes, where his soule depar ted in a most penitent manner from his body which being related to the Father, hee fell vpon the earth, Guido King thereof, and of innumerable Christians besides; whom Sultan Saladin, Prince of the Muweeping bitterly, and (like another David for his Ab " Roy Heard. weeping bitterly, and (like another Dauid dor his Af-fowl) mourned very much, of gamme fandsom off, faith "one most gratuly: 0 how hairons a thing it is far-(inst a perfectate faither! fan unities the fame of the "fighter, sur the hand of an enemy, did access the father: "www." has a fourn and a flaw with occarriation of the "bound. His body was butted (by his own define) at fulmans or Saracens, to the griefe and difgrace of all the Christian world, did vanquish. (91) But, King Henries mind was more fixed on fetling the flate of his already-possessing the flat of the flate of his already-possessing the flat of the flate of his already-possessing the flat of the flate of his already-possessing the flat of the flate of his already-possessing the flat of the flate of his already-possessing the flat of the flate of his already-possessing the flat of the flate of his already-possessing the flat of the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the flate of his already-possessing the his already-possessi and therefore in a great Parlament, held at Oxford, (vnto which came Rhefus and Dasid, Kings of South-Roan; (which yet was not done without trouble, as Wales and North-Wales, with other their chiefe No-An.D. 1181 if the factions, of which hee was the cause in his life, did by a kind of Fate, not forfake him beeing dead bles, which al did there sweare fealtie to the King) he beeing defirous to aduance his sonne John (whom he for the Citizens of Mauns having enterred it, they exceedingly loued, and commonly in sport, hee calof Roan without menaces, and the fathers expresse commandement, could not obtaine it, who thereupled Sans-terra) having affured vpon him certaine Lands and Rents in England and Normandie, did on was taken vp againe,) but his wife Queene Mar-garet was fent backe into France, and his furuing Lands and Rents in England and Normandie..., did there verie folemuly gine him also the citle & King-dome of reland; for, (bediese the foreight Bull of Pope Advisar the fourth, who for figne of inseltures thad also fear a 'ring of gold, which were laid by in the Records at Wineselpy' Giriddau (Who lived in the Records at Wineselpy') Giriddau (Who lived in the Records at Who lived in the Recor fonnes were once againe reduced to due obedience. not any enemie daring to appeare.

(88) Who would not have thought, that this ftirring Prince, should have had opportunitie to end his daies in peace and glorie? but it was otherwise ordained by God, and ancient writers hold, hee was that age) tells vs (to omitte what hee writes of one Gurguntius) that Guillemar King of Ireland, was tri-Gurgammy transcriptor: that Bains (whence (faith her) the Irifo came) was at that prefers under King Hearic the Econd; and that the Iris Princes had whatterify followinted them (fall parts, was become their Sourciagne. But that Author had not feen belief, about 1918 and 19 principallie fcourged, for beeing drawne, by feeming reasons of State, to put off an holy enterprize, the For Heracins Patriarcke of Hierusalem, drawne with the supereminent same of King Henries wisdome. valour, riches, and puilfare, cruailed from thence into England, where, * at Clerkenvell by London, in an affenblie of the States purpofelie called, the king made knowner othem: That Pope Lewin had by erneft letters, commended the lamérable flate of the proone a legall right in the King) what others write prooue a legal right in the Kingj what others write of * Effrides vingodly spoiles in Ireland, or of * Ed-gars Charter, in which is said to bee contained, that he had vinder his rule the chiefe City of Ireland Dub-Holis-land, and the Patriarcke Heraeliss vnto him: * Bede. * Campag.730. That Heraclius (there present) had Rirred compassilin, and the greatest part of the kingdome also. But im, and the greatest part of the king dome and, but King Henrie firengthening his other rights with Grants of the Popes, Advien, and Alexander, obtained also of Vrhon the third (for Lucius the third, on, and teares, at the reherfall of the tragical affli-Ctions of the Easterne world, and had brought with * Rot Houd. him (for memorable " fignes, that the fuite was by Mas. Paris. common confent of the Countrey) the Keies of the who was Alexanders successor, would not gratifie the places of crists Natinitie, Passion, and Resurretion; of Davids Tower, and of the holy Sepulcine; and the humble ofter of the Kingdom of Hierusalem, with the the King therein) that it should bee lawfull for him, to crowne which of his sonnes hee would, King of Ireland, to whom hee fent a crowne of Feathers wo-Enfigne or Standard of the Kingdom, as dulie belonguen with gold, in all their Grants refersing to the RoChap. 6. | Henrie I J. ENGLANDS MONARCHES. Monarch 42 man See, the Peters pence, and rights; whereupon the King gaue the fame to his fonne tohn, whole Coro-nation (flung with the like before) his father onely K. Henry, whose heart was firmely setled (as it seems) to reuenge the cause of Christ vpon Sultan Saladine

did delay, at such time as two Cardinales offered to celebrate that folemnitie.

(92 At Windfor therefore his father gluing him the * Order of knight-hood (at which time hee was the *Order of knight-nood (at which time nee was about * twelde yeeres old) fent him foorthwithin-to Ireland, where the Arch-bilhop of Dublin and the State, entertained him, but (by reason of such par-(imonie roward his fouldiers as was vfed) hee returned the same yeere without doing much, but not without having wafted the most part of his Armie in skirmishes with the trift. His Stile in his seale of Ireland (though Houeden faith, his father made him Regem, aking) was onely, Sigillum Iohannis filij regis Anglia Domini Hibernia, Lord of Ireland.

(93) King Henrie, hearing now that his martiall fonne, Earle Richard, had fortified in Postfou against nonne, parie Rehard, nad fortined in Politius galinithim, and vanquished Geffrey Earle of Britane, * prepares a puilfant armie, vpon terror whereof, Richard came in, rendring vp Politius to his mother Elienor, (whose inheritance it was) at his fathers commandement. The same yeere wherein the West was thus defiled with vnnaturall divisions, the East was like wife polluted with the curfed Apostasie of one Ri chard de S. Albane (whom wee fhame to thinke, was English) who renouncing the Christian beloefe (vp. on the Patriarcks discomfortable returne) became a principall Commander under the Sultan of Babilon Salandine, whom the Christians draue, with losse and flaughter of his armic, from Hierufalem. But on the An.D.1186. other fide, reuenge of disobedience fill pursued Geffrey, sonne of King Henrie, who was in a * Tornes-ment at Paris troden to death under the horse feete.

A miserable end, and a fearefull.

(94) About which times, betweene the French and English all things floode vasure, now warre, then peace, and warre againe, by reason that Philip (who had been crowned King some yeeres before, during the life of Lewis) challenging the custodie of Arthur, the Posthumus sonne, and heire of Geffrey Earle of Britane, and fometimes one thing, and fometimes nother, could not have his will: Whites Earle Richard turning to Philip against his Father, but obtaining a truce for two yeeres, fuch amity (if there be any amity among mighty Princes) grew between king Philip and Earle Richard, Heire apparant of England and Normandy, &c.that one bed and boord ferued both. The Father perplexed, cals his sonne home, who pretending many gricfes, as the deten-tion of Alice his Spoule, the doubt of difinherifon, and other things, flood out againe; and againe after a while fubmits to his Father. Then burfts forth Philip into Armes; and things fo flanding, the hea-uy newes of Ierufalem loft, flew into Christendom. uy newes of Iraquem lott, new into Chinicioni.
When this City was formerly recoured by Godfrey
of Bolem, an Vrban was Pope, a Fredericke was Emperour, an Herselus Patriarch; lo now when it was
loft, an Vrban was Pope, a Fredericke was Emperor, and an Heraclius Patriarch.

(95) Vpon these news Henry and Philip meet, and for the honour of God, laying downe displeasure, in presence of William Archbishop of Tyre, at which time some say a Crosseappeared in the aire, take wpon them, as Souldiers of Christ, the badge of the Crosse, and there the better to distinguish them-selues, it was agreed that the *French should weare read Crofles, the English White, and the Flemish Greene. And this determination was seconded withwarlike preparations, leuies of money, and in-flitution of martiall Discipline: all which notwith-

flanding nothing went forward.

(96) At Richard began the breach of this honourable confederation, who taking reuenge vpon cer-taine Rebels of his in Poitton, who brooked not his hard hand; one mischiese drew another, and at the last both the Kings of England and France became parties to the quarrell, greatly against the minde of

for that in his * aniwere to the Pariarch of Antiesta, * at least the state of the parts required it, Saladine having flaine many of the parts required it, Saladame haufing finite many of the Knights Templars, and Nobles, and aboue thirty thousand footmen, with innumerable other in Ci-ties and Townes by him subdued. Among all which grieuous accidents, we cannot (to season sower therby with fweet) omit one noble protestation made by the chiefe crossed Lords, Philip Earle of Flanders, the Earle of Blogs and other, who being required to "take parts, made answere; That they would not "contrary to their promife to God, put armour on, against any Christian, till they had done their de-

uoire against Saladine (97) In the treaties therefore between Henry and Philip; the demaunds of Philip on the behalfe of Richard were fuch, and so vnsafe for the King (as that all his fubic &s fhould fweare fealty to Richard during the Fathers life; but yet referuing their allegi-ance to the Father) that Richard apparantly fell off, King of France; and at a new I reacy (by mediation of a Cardinall Legate) the demaunds of Fhilip being more hard then before, as that King Henry should not onely settle the Kingdome vpon Richard, but take Iohn also with him into Paleline, or that other-

(98) The effect whereof was, that former good fortunes forfaking King Henry, hee fustained many losses by the Armies of King Philip and Riehard, & was driven out of Ments in Main (the city where he was born, & which he loued about all other places) by firing of the Suburbes before the enemy came, being cafually confumed, hee was glad to yeeld to fuch conditions as it pleased Philip to prescribe. It is written that at the meeting of these two Kings, the skie being cleare, a thunderbolt stroke betweene them, and after a little pause comming together a-gaine, it thundered more terribly, so that Henry had fainc off his horse, but that his people sustained hims whereupon hee came presently to an end, though i were to his vnípeakable griefe; his Kingly heart be

ng vsed to give, and not totake conditions,
(99) Fearefull was the speech which King Hemie, (99) Fearenii was the speech which King Hemre, when hee abandoned Mentz by reason of the fire, "vttered against Richard; which was, That sith he had taken from him that day the thing that hee most loued in this world, he would require him, "nost loued in this world, he would require him, "for after that day nee would deprive him of that thing which in him should best please a Child, to wit, his Heart. But after the peace concluded (vpon mediation) between the fides, another thing ftrucke neerer; for finding the name of his fonne John first in the Catalogue of the Conspirators againth in the Catalogue of the Companyation againth in in that action, hee bitterly curfed the howre of his birth, laying Gods curfe and his vpon his sonnes, which hee would neuer recall, for any perswasion of the Bishoppes and others: but comming to Chinon fell there grieuously licke, and fee-

ble confession, and sorrow for his sinnes, hee depar-(100) It shal not (in contempt of humane glory) be forgotten, that this puissant Monarch being dead his people presently left him, and fell to spoile all he had, leaving him naked; of whom * one faith trulie

ling death approch, hee caused himselfe to be borne into the Church before the Altar, where after hum-

and became Liegeman for Normandy, &c. to Philip King of France; and at a new Treaty (by mediation take John and with him into Faterine, or into their wife Richard would not goe (being lealous of his brothers grace with his Father): Henrie would confent to none of those infolent propositions, but dif-daining to seeme to be enforced, they betooke them felues on all fides to their fwords,

King Harries

Holinfo.per. 119

An.D.1189.

his death, which was, when he had caigned 14. years 7.monethes and

Father to the Graue,

He was buried as Fastemerard.

* Serves in Lewis

m in Ludenic.7. who talls her

470

His Wife.

whereat Richard pierced with remorfe, melted into

flouds of teares in most humble and repentant ma-

ner, attending upon the remaines of his unfortunate

(101) Bleanor, the Wife of King Henry, was the eldest of the two Daughters, and the sole Heire of William Duke of Aquitaine, the fift of that name, & the ninth in succession, sonne of Duke William the fourth, her Mother was Daughter to Raimund Earle of Tholoufe, and her great Dowrie was motive first to King Lewis, (who had two daughters by her. Mary and Alice) and after to King Henry, to marry her. There are of the * French Historians who reportthat king Henry had a former wife, and that thee bare vnto him Prince Henry: but Writers of our owne affaires (and * fome also of the French,) acknowledge but onely Eleanor for his Wife. Certain it is, that king Henries times were much famoused by two Women of much differing qualities: the one was his renowmed Mother Matildis, whose Epitaph thus comprised part of her glory:

Ortu magna, viro maior, sed maxima prole: Hic iacet Henrici Filia, Sponsa,Parens.

Here Henries Mother, Daughter wife dothrest: By Birth, much; more by Spoule; by Child, most blest.

The other was this Eleanor his Wife; the first cause of these bloudie Warres, which long after continued as hereditary betwixt England and France, yea and the bellows of that vnnaturall discord, betwixt her husband and his fonnes. Shee much out-lived her husband (as a bad thing flickes longest) beeing so happie as to fee three of her fonnes, advanced to the Crowne, and so vnhappie as to see two of them in their graves: for she lived till King Johns time.

His I flue.
(102) william, the eldest sonne and first child of King Henry, and Queene Eleanor his wife, was borne before his father was King, and while hee was but Duke of Normandy, in the eighteenth yeere of the raigne of King Stephen, 1 1 5 2, and the fourth yeere after, (his father beeing then King, and in the second yeere of his raigne) the Nobilitie of England sware vnto him their fealtie, as to the heire apparant of the Kingdome, at the Castle of Wallingford in Barkeshire but he deceased the yeere following, being the third of his fathers raigne, and the fift of his owne age 1 1 5 6. He was buried in the Monastery of Reading at the feete of his great Grandfather, King Hemi

(103) Henrie, the second sonne of King Henry. and Queene Eleanor, beeing borne the last of Februarie 1 1 5 6. was their heire apparant, after the death of his brother William ; was Duke of Normandie Earle of Anios and Maigne; and was crowned King of England, at Wessimpler, by Roger Arch-bishop of Yorke, the fifteenth of Iulie 1170. His wife was Margaret, daughter of Lewis the Tonger, King of France, married to him at Nuburgh in Normandy, the fecond of Nouember 1 160. crowned Quencat Winchester, by Rotrocke of warwicke Arch-billiop of Roan, the 21.0f November 1163, and furniting him was remarried to Bela, King of Hungarie: He died without iffue, before his father, at Marcell in Tonfaine, the eleventh of Julie, the twentie fixe yeere of

his fathers raigne 1 1 8 2. and was buried in the Church of our Lady at ROAM.

(104) Rithard, the third sonne of King Henrie, and Queen Eleanor, was born at Oxford, (in the Kings Pallace there, called Beau-Mount, in September the fourth yeere of his fathers raigne I I 57. He pro-ued a Prince of great valor, and was therefore furnamed in French Cuer-de-Lion; in English Lions-Heart. hee was created Earle of Poyton, and had the whole Dutchie of Aquitaine, for which he did his homage to King Lewis the Tonger of France, in the eighteenth yeere of his fathers raigne 1 1 7 0. yet afterward he conceined some discontentment against his father, and maintained warres vpon him, but was reconciled againe into his loue, and succeeded him in his Kingdome.

(105) Geffrey, the fourth some of King Henrie, and of Queene Eleanor, was borne the twentie third of September, in the fifth yeere of his fathers raigne I I 5 9. Hee married Conflance daughter and heire of Conan Duke of Britane, and in her right was Duke of Britane, and did his homage to his brother Henry for the same Dutchie, and received the homages of the Barrons of the same : hee died at Paris, in the thirtietwo yeere of his fathers raigne 1 186. the nineteenth of August, and is buried in the quire of our Ladies Church there : hee had iffue Arthur Duke of Britane, borne after his fathers decease, the heire apparant of King Richard, and by some suppofed to bee made away by King Iohn; and also Eleanor called the Damfell of Britane, who died in prison in the raigne of King Henrie the third.

(106) Philip, the fifth sonne of King Henrie, and Queene Eleanor, may bee mistrusted, to be mistaken by Antiquaries of our time, as misunder-standing the ancient writers, who mentioning the birth of Philip the Kings fonne, might by good likelihood, be thought to meane, Philip fonne of Lewis the Yonger King of France, who was borne about this time, and was after King of the same Countrey. But M. Thomas Talbot, an exact transiler in genealogies, hath not onely fet him downe in this place, amongst the children of this King, but also warranteth the same, to bee done with good authoritie : howfocuer, it is apparant, his life was verie short.

(107) Iohn, the fixth and yongest sonne of King Henrie, and Queene Eleaner, was borne in the thir-teenth yeere of his fathers raigne, in Anno I I 66. hee was iestinglie surnamed by his father Sans terre, in English without Land, because hee was borne last. as if there had beene nothing left for him: Notwithstanding soone after, hee was created Earle of Mortraining toone arter, nee was created have of new-traigne, and had more-ouer by degrees, the Earle-domes of Commall, and Glosefter, the Counties Derby and Lancafter, the Honors of wallinford and Nottingham, the Castles of Tithill, Mass borow, and Ludgarfall, with many other great Seigniories, and aboue them all) was also Lord of ireland, and at the last succeeded his brother Richard in all his Dominions and was King of England.

(108) Mand, the eldeft daughter of King Hen-17, and Queene Eleanor, borne in the third yeere of her fathers raigne, married to Henrie, furnamed the Lion Duke of Saxonie ; Lothar that died yong, Otho the fourth German Emperour, and William borne at winchester, progenitor of the Dukes of Brunswicke, who bare for their Armes, the Coat of England, with the two Lions, as King Hemie his Grandfather bare, before the match with Queene Eleanor, and Mand married to Geffrey Earle of Perch: Shee survived him, and died in the first yeere of the raigne of her brother King Richard, and was buried by her hus-

band, in the Church of S. Blafe at Brunfwicke. (109) Eleanor, the second daughter of King Henrie, and Queene Eleanor, was borne at Roan in Normandy, in the eight yeere of her fathers raigne, 1162. She was married to Alfonfe, the ninth of that name, furnamed the Good, King of Caffile in Spaine, and had iffue by him Sanches, that died in his infancte : Ferdinande that died in his youth, Henry King of Cafile after his Father, Blanneh Queene of France, wife to King Lewis the 8. and mother of Saint Lewis. Berengar married to Alfon fo king of Lion: Vrraca Queene of Portagall, and Eleanor wife of Iames king of Arragon.

Chap. 6. Henrie IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHES. Monarch 43

(110) Ioane, the third and yongest daughter of king Henry, and Queene Eleanor his wife, was born at the City of Angiers in France, in the moneth of October, the 13. yeare of her Fathers raigne, which was the yeere of our Lord, 1166. when thee was cleuen yeeres of age; shee was with great honour conucied to the City of Palermo, and there married to William the fecond of that name, king of Sicil, Duke of Apulia, and Prince of Capua, vpon Sunday the 13. day of Februarie, 1177. and was crowned Queene the same day at the same place. Shee had a sonne by him named Boamund, whom his Father when hee was returned from his Christning, created Duke of Apulia: but the child died first, and the Father after, leaving no issue. And she surviuing, married againe, and was the third wife of Raimund the fourth of that name, Earle of Tholouz, by him thee had Iffue Raimund the last Earle of that house, Bertrand Lord of Branquell, Montelore, and Salusas, and a daughter matried to Berald of Elbeine. Prince of Orenge,

His Naturall I fue.
(111) William the Naturall sonne ofking Henry born of Rosamund, the daughter of walter Lord Clif ford; which Lady for her incomparable beauty was reputed(with allufion to her name) Rola-mundi, the reputed with author to her name? Role of the world: the deare affection the king bare her, caused both burning sealousses the Queene, and facall ruine to her selse, albeit the amorous king, for her fecrefie and fecurity, (but what walles will not a lealouseye pierce through?) had built for her a most artificiall Labyrinth at Woodflockein Oxfordsbire, with such cunning windings and intricate passages, as had not Fate, and Heauen's reuenge on Adultery, shewed the way, the enraged Queen had not fo soone beene rid of her Rivall, northat wanton Dame of her life. Shee was buried in the Nunnery of Godftow by Oxford with this Epitaph,

Heciacet in Tumba Rofa mundi, non Rofa munda; Nonredolet, fed olet, quaredolere folet.

This Tombe doth here enclose the Worlds most beauteous Rose, passing sweet ere while, Now nought but odour olle.

But Hugh (called the Saint) Bishop of Lincolne, thought the Hearle of a Harlot no fit spectacle for a Quire of Virgins to contemplate, & therefore him-felfe in person caused her bones to be call foorth of the Church; which yet those chast sisters afterward recollected, and placed there againe with much honour, erecking a goodly Croffe, thus inscribed to the honour of her memory :

Qui meathac, oret, Signumque falutis adoret, Vtq; tibi detur requies Rofamunda, precetur.

All you which passe this way, This Crosse adore, and pray, I hat Rosamunds Soule may True rest possesse for aye.

The first Sonne which by her King Henry had, was the faid William, furnamed in French, Longespee, in English, Long-Sword. He was Earle of Saluburie, in right of Ela his Wife, Daughter and heire of William Earle of that County, son of Earle Patrick, by whom hee had Iffue William Earle of Salisbury Stephen Earle of Vifter, Ela Counteffe of Warwicke, Ida Lady Beucham of Bedford, and Ifabell Lady Vef-cie: his fonge Earle William the fecond, had Earle william the third, Father of Margaret, Wife of Henry Lacie Earle of Lincolne: hee died in the Cafile of old Salisbury, and was buried in the Cathedrall Church of the New City, in the ninth years of the raigne of king Henry the third.

(112) Geffrey an other Naturall sonne of king Henry, was borne of the Lady Rolamund aforesaid: This man in his tender youth, was (by his Fathers procurement) made Archdeacon of Lincolne, and after Bishop of that See, which hee held aboue featien yeeres without confectation: and then refigning it, in the yeare, 1181.into the hands of Reshard Archbishop of Canterbury, and his Father, he was made Chancellour of England, and afterward by his brother king Richard, he was advanced to the Archbishopricke of Torke, (being consecrated at Tours in France, An. 1191.) which See he gouerned with good approbation. But in the time of his Browith good appropation, but in the time of his Pro-ther King Ishn, hee vnderwene many difficulties, by oppoling the Kings purpofes, who therefore made leiture of his whole flate, and An. 1207, he left the Land and after fine yeeres banishment, died, viz.

(113) Mergan, an other Naturall sonne of King Henry, is thought by * some (because so small men-tion is made of him) to have been of no long life asteghis birth, and to have beene borne of fome wo man in wales, where this Christian name is most commonly vsed, and whither this King vpon many occasions, sometimes reforted. But * some others (whose fluidious paines, deferue much thankes of polteritie) report, that hee was gotten on the wife of one Rodulph Bloeth (or Blewer) a knight, and liued both to bee Promos of Buentley, and to be elected to the Bilibopricke of Durham, when comming to Rome for a dispensation (because his Bastardie made him otherwise vncapable) the Pope willed him to pro-fesse himselfe blewers lawfull son, and not the Kings Naturall, promiling to confecrate him on that condition: but he, vling the aduile of one William Lane his Clerke, told the Pope, that for no worldly promotion, he would renounce his father or deny him felfe to bee of roial bloud; fo blind were fome Prelats of those times, who esteemed firituallfunctions, to be but worldh promotions.

An.D. 2181.



RICHARD

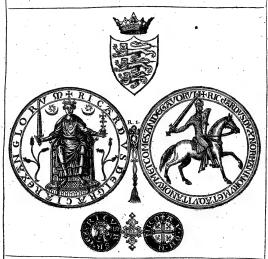
Monarch 44

Suero li. v. z. ze

Richard I.

RICHARD THE FIRST, DVKE OF NORMANDY, GVYEN AND AQVI-

TAINE,&c. THE FORTIE FOVRTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISHMEN, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER VI.



ICHARD succeeding to his deceased Father Henrie, brought forth that wonder, which a Writer ofthat age thus celebrated. -

Mira cano; Sal occubuit, Nox nulla fecuta eft.

Wonder strange I write

the Sundid fet, yet was no Night.
Meaning, that though Henry were dead, yet the glory and happinesse of the land was not thereby tionded, for that Richard was another Sunne, and in some respects farre the more bright, and farther shining of the two; as having for honour of Christian Cheualrie, wholy confecrated his warlike minde and actions to the service of God, and readpancement of the Croffe of Chrift, dishonoured by the Infidels in Afia: in which enterprise hee was so fernently zealous, that from the time of his Fathers

death (in whose vowes it had beene) hee meditated death (in whole vowes it gad oeene) nec meutace.

Karfe any thing elfe, difpoling the affaires of his Eflate (but not * carelefly, as forme would impose) as

of things which did but onely vnder-ferue, and conthings which did but onely vnder-ferue, and coning the state of duce to the maine and principall end of aduancing his Sauiours glory, whereunto hee judged that action did tend.

(2) Having therefore ordered his weightier bufinesses in Normandy, and other his transmarine Dominions & in England by his letters, fet * the Queen his Mother at liberty from that captinity, wherein *GenDors. her late husband the king had long detained her, (who sensible of others woe by her owne, did afterward exercise many works of mercy in that kind) he cuts ouer hither, aswell to receive all the rights of Soueraignety, and to settle the same; as also to scuie meanes for proceeding in his intended holy voi-age, together with Philip king of France, and other Christian Potentates.

(3) And though before his Coronation, most kingly power before Coron Writers doe not call him a King; yet fure it is, that

Richard I. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 44 he and others did immediately, and vnquestiona-bly, vpon the first accruement of the interest, (which was at his Fathers last galpe) exercise all the offices of the roiall power; for fo hee restored Robert Earle of Leicester to his whole estate : So plaine it

is, that our Gouernment allowes not the dangerous consulfions,& emptie spaces of an Interregnum, such as in meer elective States are comon, if not continual, (4) But in nothing more could this noble Prince flew his judgement (though he were otherwise * Sagacis ingenij, of a sharpe and scarching, wit) then

in this: That hee banished from his familiarity,& (as my Author faith) hated all those of what profession to ever they were, who had for taken his Father, and both retained, and enricht those other, who had loially flood for him against himselfe in al affaics,

(5) At his Coronation, which was most magnifi-cently performed at Westminster, by * Baldwyne Archbishop of Canterbury, the pointes of the Oath which hee made to God, and the Kingdom of England, at the Altar upon the holy Euangelists, before the Prelates, Nobles, and whole people, * were peace, honour, and reuerence to God, and holy Church and the Ordinances thereof: 2 That in the people to him committed, hee would exercife right, iustice, and equitie. 3. That hee would blot forth naughty lawes, and peruerfe customes, if any were brought upon his Kingdome, and would enact good lawes, and the same in good faith keepe, and without mal-Eneyn. Which oath being most solemnly taken, and the sacred vnction performed; the Archbishop standing at the Altar forbad him, on the behalfe of Almighty God, to affume that honour, vnleffe hee had a full purpole to keepe what hee had fworne: whereto Richard alfenting, and with his owne hands, humbly taking the ponderous Crowne Imperial from off the Altar, in fignification, as is probable, that hee held it onely from God; hee deliuers it to the Archbishop,

Chiefe matrers

(6) Which Act was accidently hanfeld, and auf picated with the bloud of many Jewes (though vt terly against the Kings will) who in a tu mult (raised by the * Ocean) were furiouslie murthered, which (though it were afterward punished by the Lawes). might seeme a presage, that this Lion-hearted King (as. his by-name Ceur-de-Lion did import) should beea speciall destroier of the Enemies of our Saviour.

who thereupon accomplished all the Ceremonics of

(7) After counsell therefore (first moouer in all worthy enterprises) Money was in his first, and chiefeft cares a for raifing whereof, to furnish the inten-Technical pursuits for the Hely Lend ded pilgrimage, he fold, morgaged, effated, and (by a thouland princely skills) as if he should never have come againe, added incredible heapes to those huge fums, which hee had scruzed out of Stephen de Turnham, his fathers Treasurer (amounting to eleuen hundred thousand pounds sterling, if some say true) all hoorded by King Henry. What could indeed be faid enough for such a voiage? and it was a cogitation woorthy fo glorious a purpose, so to order his effate, as if hee were not to returne at all; because, looking-backe doth vnbend and foften refoluti-(8) As for men and foldiers, the Prelats, Friars,

and other Preachers, had stirred up innumerable, by

their manifold exhortations (the Arch-bishoppe of Canterburie having * travailed through Wales in per-

fon for that purpole, going afterward with the King

to Palestine, where also * he died) in pulpits and pri-

nate conferences, founding nothing but the Croffe

and Passion of Christ, calling the world to reuenge

his cause vpon the Pagans, and setting soules on fire

* Gir Camb.

" Rog Howed, Math. Paris.

with vehement gestures, actions, and perswasions. But the kingdome of England he ordered thus. (9) The onely maine danger of the State in his absence, was in his brother Iohn Earle of Mortone, of whose ambition hee was somewhat icalous, as

* knowing that King Hemie, not long before his death, had intended the Crowne to him: to conquer therefore his appetites, with bountie, and munificence; and to take away all murmuration in him, for want of Princelie competencies, King Richard did as it were share the Realm with him, giving him fixe Earledomes, Cornwall, Dorfet, Sommerfette, Not-tingham, Derby, and Lancafter, belides Castles, Honors, Manors, Forests, and much other riches, and finallie, the Earledome of Glofter, with the Heire of that Countie to bee his Wife, though the Arch-bishop of Canterburie forbad the Nuptialls, alledging

(10) But left, through cuill nature or aduife

face was within degrees of confanguinitie.

Earle . Iohn should convert those so great gifts to the subuction of the bestower, Hee entrusted him with no part of the Regall power, as the Key, and fe-cret of his proper safetie: but laide the maine burthen of Gouernment vpo william Longchamp Bishop of Ely, * chiefe Iustiniar, and Lord Chancellor of England, and Papall Legate, (a person out of all suspition for aspiring to the Crowne) whereby was conferred vpon him, whatfore either King or Pope could grant, for accomplishment of his authoritie; fo that he might well be stiled * Prince and Priest of England; as hee was one, the most powerfull subject | Man. Pain. for the time, that perhaps this Realme hath had : for. torthe time, that germps this neame man man man, ton, though the Kinghad (as it were) binned with him in Commission, one Hugh Bishop of Durham, for the parts of England Deyond Humber; yet, as it * hap-act in the Consultable of Case and Bishubat, that nothing was reported of Bishubat, but all of Casar, to did Long champ in a fhort time easilie make himselfe fole and absolute, his sway burying in silence, the

name, and endeauours, of his Colleague. (11) Thus the fumme of commaund, or the Souereigne power it selfe, was in the Chancellor as Viceroy, but for defence and preservation of his iu-stice, hee * did subordinate or affociate to those Bishops, William Earle of Arundell, Hugh Bardolfe, Inops, requame sauce of resonances, rings was ways, william Marshall, Seffrey Fetz-Peter, william Bruser, Robert de Whitfield, Roger Fitz-Remfrey, wherein hee did shew his love and care of the English Nation, as also of Justice it selfe : for that many of these, were of the most honourable Peeres of the Land (and not men bred-vp or formerly enured to make Juffice, or their owne Tongues venall, for a fee :) honour beeing the rule of their proceedings, and firength of private fortunes, with their Princes favour, the pilar to fusteine that honor. -

(12) There remained to prouide for (before hee left England) the neighbour-hood of Scotland and Wales, which might otherwise make vie of his abfence to his prejudice: But Rhefe ap Gruffith (of whom there is extant a short but elegant Panegris) Prince of South-Wales (beeing already in amitie) came as farre as Oxford toward him; but because the King (who was there) came not in person to meete him (as his father King Henrie had done) the Prince(not-withstanding Earle Iohn the Kings only brother, had conducted him from the Marches with speciall honor) tooke it in so high scorneand indignation, (for euen the meanest, from whom service or love is expected, will againe expect regard) that hee foorthwith returned into his Countrey, without once fa-luting the King ; who by this neglect, loft Rhefer lone, as, vpon the like omiffion, and vnrespectivenesse, Augustime (the too supercilious Monke) did leefe the affections of the Monkes of Bangor, Rhefes owne countrie-men, in another part of Wales.

(13) As for william King of Scots (a verie worthie Prince) hee iourneied hither to King Richard into England, and heere concluded a firme friendship. which hee kept verie religiously, euen in the greatest troubles of King Richard, to the glorie of himfelfe and his Nation, and as some write, sent his Brother Danid with 5000. Scots, to ferue him in the facred warres. The chiefe points of their convention were.

. That for ten thousand Markes Sterling, (then

Hellor Beefini

other not named.

(21) Moreouer for finall affurance, he offereth The Pope King

hat Pope Clemet should undertake for performance Rich

of his part in the faid agreement; and that the faid

Clement would accordingly undertake, hee requests

him by most officious letters, giving him leave with-

Rot. House.

fafe, he *flaied for them by the way, and then came

to anchor not long after (to wir, 23. of September) before the City of Messan, with so great a shew of

power, and found of Waslike Instruments, and o-

her fignes of Maicfly, in the fight of Philip and his

Richard I. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 44 (bap.7. out any reluctation) to put his dominions (vpon aput it againe on the Emperour's head. ny his breach) vnder feuerest centures. (25) The same day in which Philip & his French (22) This peace and accord being happily thus Forces fet faile out of the Hauen of Meffana, arri- Goronem ued Alienor King Richards mother, accompanied concluded King Fancred (having most rotally and A.D. 1191. louingly feafted the King of England for three daies and three nights in a Caltie of his) discouered, vpon The King of France lets faile for the Holy. with Berengaria his new intended Spoule, daugh-ter to * Sanctius King of Nauarre, whome afterward the way at Tauernium in his returne, a foule and vnhe tooke to wife in Cyprus; but his Mother after a Land. thort flay returned by Rome into England, leaving the princely conspiracie of Philip (whome one of our Writers cals the vain-glorious King) against the head and safety of King Richard; which comming to bee young Lady with Ioan Queene Dowager of Sieslie, Ger Dar ooth which accompanied the King toward the holy * Ro. How f. 392 scanned betweene the two Kings, the French char-Land, his whole Nauie being *one hundred and fifged the English with picking of quarrels; and added, that valefle Richard maried his lifter Alice, according ty great thips, and fifty three Gallies well appointed *7pod.2(east, for the warre, and * many other Sailes and Veffels as hee ought, having beene contracted long before together, he would be his enemy while he breathed; and(not to omit the same because it is recorded as a fingularity) he had among all thefe,* thirteen Buces Mar. Par ad A whereunto King Richard (being preffed) did replie: or Buscies, which had each of them three course of Sailes to faile with: but no Writer (so farre as we yet Tool Muss). That his * fifter during the time of her abode in England, had a child by his Father Henry King of find) declares what numbers of Souldiers were in England, which he was ready to proue by many witthe Englift Armie, neffes there prefent: fo that King Richard had farre more caufe then a suspicion of dishonesty (which (26) This Naujeroiall betweene the Ifles of (26) I his inameronan octave and good of King King Ribbards Rhodes and Cyprus, (for the honor and good of King Name featured Name featured *fome write) to refuse the marriage. This falling Richard) was featterd by God with a terrible temout fo thamefully, Philip (vpon certaine conditions betweene Richard and him) left him at liberty to peft, some one or two of which suffered wreack vp. on the Isle of Cyprus, whom * Curfac (or as other call *Ypod, Henft, Math. Paris, • Howed, take a wife where he thought good, but neuer (as it him Ifakius, Emperour of the Griffons) being a * tymay sceme) forgaue him his cuill will while they rant did fpoile, and contrary to Christian Religion. (which was his profession, though some missale)
and all honour and humanity, he would not (among two lived together. (23) And because acts of Christian remorse and humility are too rare among the Great ones of this other his unprincely, or rather barbarous behaui vaine world, it were a crime to pretermit the exem-A Christian exours) fuffer the Kings fifter, and Lady Berengaria ample of King Richard. *Ro.Hoved.f.388 plar humiliation of this famous General K. Richard with other of that tender societie, to come into harlowed fel 3 90 at this time, who(to vie my * Authors words) infpi bour, to their great discontentment and perill, a red with dinine grace, and studying to fitte himselfe Shippe or two finking there; but neither would for the great attempt he had in hand, was flung at God, nor King Richard forgine it him. the foule with fo just compunction for his finnes, (27) For the aid vnworthy Prince hauing thrice refuled to make refittution of his vnlawfull feifures that calling before him his Archbishoppes and Biand prisoners, was entred upon by the English, driven

Re Hand shoppes into a Chappell, at the house where he was lodged without the walles of Meffana; hee blushed from the shoares with great dishonour and slaughnot to make a penitent confession of his manifolde ter; the City Limefzan left for a prey to the victors, exceffes, humbly praying God of mercy, and them (as his fubordinate Ministers) of Absolution, & God and himselfe beaten againe out of his Campe, and de and Men. taken, and after an escape made by him, his onelie paso Holin, (as in Mooden) respected him with eies of Mercy, and game him a penitent heart, so that from thenceforth hee proued a man fearing God, eschning euit, and doing good. daughter and heire veelding her felfe, and her Fadaugner and near vectoming ner terie, and ner ra-ther fally comming againe of his owne accord (as defpairing to lie hid) under cultodie, and thrust into fetters of gold and filter, the whole I land (with all * Ofælicem illum, &c. O happie he, who so fals, that "he may rife more strong: O happy he, who after peni the people, strength, and riches thereof) became subject to the King of England, and both Father and "tence yelapfeth not into fault and raine.

(24) Wherupon addicting his mind to divine con Daughter led away into captivity. templations,& meditation of the christian Church, (28) There arrived at Lime faun, to falute and howhose Champion now he was; hee desired confe nour King Richard within three dayes after his first rence of one Ioachim(a Cistercia Abbot) whose great nour Raig Schma within three days after his his inti-vitory, Guido King of Ierusalem, Geofrey de * Leni-Lant his brother, Raimand Prince of Antisch, Earle Boemond his sonne, &c. offering their services, and swearing to bee his against all men; with whose learning and deepe understanding in the Seriptures, with an opinion of a Propheticall inspiration, made him so famous over the world, that King Richard Ko eroueaus 1810. Paulus Aemsloss in Philippo. 2. fent for him being the in Calabria neer Sicilie, whom privity King Richard Seised the flourishing and spaious lland of Cyprus, by antiquity celebrated as the very feste of Venus, which that it might fo proue to himselfe, in the ioyous moneth, he foleamly took to wife his beloued Lady Berengris, (29) The person of the Emperour (for by that at his comming he heard preaching and expounding at his comming the nearto preacting and expositions of the Appealphy of S. Inhy, touching the afflictions of the Church, and of Antichrift, which (laith hee) we then borne, and in the City of Rome, and fall bee adams-ceds in the Sex-Appliatick, or bown the Applie faid, he flouid extell himselfe about all that is called God, and that hat the Pope is lofty title Writers call him ,) was fent to Tripolis in the feuen Crownes were the Kings and Princes of the Syria, vnder the custody of Ralph Fitz Godfrey, Lord Tot Head. earth which obeyed him. Surely, neere about this very time hapned that in Rome, which might feeme to committed to the two Queenes Berengaria and Ioan: 1319. giue great probability to that Abbots opinion, espethe Hand it felfe was entrufted to Richard de Camule, gue great probability to that Abous opinion, eight cially, if Emperours and Kings bee truely called *Gods, ouer whom Antichrift allo flould extol himfelf: for in the fame moneth that Richard left Meffans, and Robert de Turnham his Viceroyes, with competent force and provisions, and the Handers fuffered to enioy all fuch lawes and liberties; as they held in was the Coronation of Henry the Emperour, and the time of Manuel the Emperour of Constantinople, his Empresse Constantia, in S. Peters Church; where or(as now they call it) of Stamboli. Pope Celestine, the very next day after his own con-(30) This fame of Richard was much enfectation to the Papacie, fate in his Pontificall chaire, holding the Emperiall golden Crowne betwist his feete: larged by his conquering a mighty * Argoscy, called a Dromond, wherein were aboord one thouand the Emperour (as likewife the Empresse) stooping low, received on his head the Diadem from the Popes feet; fand and fine hundreth Sarazens (though difguiled, under French Flagges) furnished, besides all other and presently agains the Pope Strake the Emperors crowne with his foot, and dasht* it to the ground; signifying that prouifions, with fire-workes, barrelles or cages of venemous serpents, and the like, for the vse of the hee had power to throw him (upon his demerites) out of Sarazens at Acon, (anciently called Ptolomais, to the his Empire: but the Cardinal's catching up the crowne, fiege whereof he was then failing,) thirteene hun-Hhhh 2

7.	Richard I. ENGLANDS	M	IONARCHS.	Monarch 44.	477
1	tence of the composition made with King Richard	1 1	impression of the Christian	Cheualrie, and of his	
f.408	at Messana, had not (to their immortal glory) *refu-		owne Allies and Countrime	n; as indeed not long	
	fed to alsift him therein, till Richards returne, aswel	1	after* he died, leauling his E	mpire towly, but fult-	Rog.Haued f. 414.
1	in regard of their owne oathes, as because the sen- tence of excommunication was denounced against	1 1	ly, diftracted by civill confusi Truce the crafty Turke mad	ons. whereas by this	
- 1	all fuch as did attempt to endammage him in' his	1	powers of two to potent Mo.	narkes had in a manner l	
1	abience.	1 1	effected nothing ; & Richard	could neuer haue time	l l
- 1	(38) King Richard notwithstanding that the re-	1	to return for accopitisment of	of his deligns; for which	- 1
	lation of these things greatly troubled him, gaue not		all Christendome hath at th	is howre reason to bee	1
	ouer as yet, but after fundry other matters of im- portance performed, did march vp within the fight		forrowfull, and hereof himse	s crie out that hee	Polyd Verg lib.sq
- 4	of Ierusalem, where he skirmished with the enemie;	1 1	fo that hee would oftentime was not alwayes wife, allu-	ding to this occasion	
	& ouerthrew the Conuoy or Carauan of the Salaa-		lolt.		
	dine, which came latten from Babylon, guarded with		(42) But the noble King,	hoping to pierce with	An.D. 1193
Gith	ten thousand men; whom King Richard valiantlie		speed through Germanie in o	lifguite, tooke to him	
7000. nd	encountring with fine thousand selected souldiers, put most of them to the sword, and took three thou-	1 1	the name of * Hugo a Merch *head and beard growne ver	v long being the firter	* Mat.Paris.
men-	fand Camels, and four thousand Horses and Mules,		to conceale him; but in his	iourney ouer land was	Reg. Haurd f.408.
iles	belides those that were flaine, and so gained the rich		neere to Vienna vnhappily of	liscouered by the pro-	- 1
	fpoile of all the Carriages.		fulenelle of his expenses; v	when hee law he could [
	(39) After this, and many other worthy thinges	1 1	not escape them, * in content put on roiall garments, and	refused to world but	* Polyd-Verg 1,24
	done as the rescue of loppa, and repulse of Saladine from thence,&c, the King indefatigable in his braue		*onely to the Duke himfelf	e, who came with iov	* Math.Park.
	serempts, defirous to regaine Jerufalem, and the Ci-	1 1	as to a prev which he fore lo	nged for: but the raf-	ALLO ALLO ALLO
	ty Baruck, was abandoned in that enterprise by the		call multitude* cried things calling him (O barbarifme)	worthy of themselues,	i
is in	ty Barnek, was abandoned in that enterprife by the Duke of Burgandie (who is * faid to have been ap- parently corrupted with gifts from Saladine, and the		calling him (O barbarifme) ' ing, stone-him, some cut off h	rattour, and fome fay-	* Ger.Dor.
	parently corrupted with gitts from salaane, and the regiments of French under his conduct;) wherupon	1.	him: and because the inh	manity of this wage	- C
	he was the rather periwaded by the Knights Tem-		may be fuited with rimes as	rude and ragged, you	1
	plars, and chiefes of the Christian hoast, not to refuse		may be fuited with rimes as shall in such heare the cause	of this Arch-dukes	"Hardings Chr.
	Saladines offers for a furceasance mm hostility, con- fidering that hee had a purpose to returne with re-		malice, growing first at Acc	on, where the Author	cap,138.
	enforced numbers and meanes; that his prefent		speaking of King Richard Sai	in;	
	powers by divisions, by ficknesse, by battales were		He gate it some with his gre	at Ordinance.	1
	wasted and that the dangerous estate of his owne		And on the walles his Bann The Kings Armes he fet up	ers full high fêt,	1
	Dominions did require his presence, (the greatest morine, for he had supplies of money for his Soul-		The Kings Armes he fet up	alfo of France,	
	diers wages from Pope Celestine) by reason of some		And King Guyes Armes of	erujaiem weuverz	
	vidue practifes at home, and the rancour of King		The Duke of Oistrich Limpo Set up his Armes after about	them all,	1
ww.9,1.5	Philip his vnreconcilable aduerlary abroad. Wheru-	١.	Which King Richard did caft	downe from the wall.	
g.l.14-	po a truce was taken for three yeers, and Saladine re-	١.	(43) And though it is cer	in- shasabia Amaban	
	paid such charges as Richard had been at in fortify- ing Askalon, which was brought to the same estate.		faines not this fact, for that f	ome fuch matter (and	Pretences for
	as in which King Richard found it.		told by *fome with more d	iseduantage to Richards	the detinue of King Richard. * Mat. Paris ad
	(40) But the King of England, though hee had very far excelled all the Christian Princes in great		canfe) is by others arelated.	et the gravest Authors	Mat. Parited
	very far excelled all the Christian Princes in great	1	agree (that next to the comm the greatest pretence was th	on enuie at his vertues)	An.D.1192, Ger. Der. who verices that the
	exploites at that iourney, because * he had neither conquered Salaadine, nor Ierufalem, did mourne	1	oneffe Conrad committed	at Twe, by two cur-	
	and parted penfiue. In the holy-land hee left Hen-	-	queffe Conrad committed fed Affafines, ax certaine fed: a Senior or Ruler, whom they bo they are fent forth to murther f	in the East , liuing under	vp his Standard in the chiefe place of the City
	ry Earle of Champaine, (who vpon taking the faid	i i	a Senior or Ruler, whom they bo	ner as a Prophet by whom	
	Baruck was to have beene crowned King of Ierufa km, which Guido had refigned) and hee last Guyde	:	not promising themselves ther	uen princes as janor inem mand af immantality by	iniutic of King Richard. Guil.de Noubber.
	de l'ustonian the late King of lerusalem in Croppus, to)	obeving him in all things, though	hwith the lolle of their	Guil.de Nousbur.
	whom hee had paffed it, in exchange for the other	,			lib,5,cep.16
	whom hee had paffed it, in exchange for the other to advance his Kinfeman the faid Earle of Champain	3	Emperour, and Leopold the kiniman Conrad was) would	Aren-duke (whole neer	es.lib.4,cep.14 & lib.5,cep.16 This description fitteth a like sect
	which, vpon that I life, the familie of Layman to		Richard was the Author, the	ongh therin they toucht	now in the west,
g.lib., 14	Richard having ordered his affairs in the East parts	,	his princely reputation and outly, for that the chiefe of t	ntegrity, * most iniuri-	
u.f.417	Can Gilla homeward The Queenes Revenueria hi	e l	outly, for that the chiefe of t	hat feet by their owne	Tpod.Neuft.p.
	wife, and Ioan his fifter, with the Captine Lady Daughter of the Cypriot Emperour, vider the con	٠.	publike * letters (written wit called Murex, wherewith S	in the brome of the foot-filly correct when to be dued)	455.Edit. An,D.1603
	duet of Stephen de Turnham (hearing of the Kirly	s	lacknowledging the fact, of	declared the true caule	The copie of the
	most heavie fortune) solourned at Rome about fix	e	thereof, which was a partic	ular Act of injustice in	2(ubrig 1.5.cap.16
	moneths, for feare of Richards enemies, & afterward	d	Comadhim(elfe: There wa	inted not lundry other	
	came fafe by Marfilsa in Poilton.		pretences, as in fuch cases is had entred league with Tan	viuan, as * that <i>Kithara</i> cred King of <i>Sicilia</i> the	
	(41) God whose cause was onely pretended in this voyage of the Christians, did not seeme to ap		The memory and the	thee had through the Car	de Des viat
	proue the faid truce; for hee * scattered the English	6	print their kiniman) our of onely daughter Captine. B	the Empire, and kept his	
aris.	with a terrible tempest, and the * opportunity	of	onely daughter Captine. B	ut this booty, being too	
Vag.	Conquest was so lost, that hitherto it could no uer bee regained, and the King of England letting	ir			1
	flippe when God had almost pur the same into h	is			
	hands, did miserably fall into his enemies hand	s.	which could not make him	in any act or ipeech, or	
	Certainelie, the name of Richard was at that tim	ie l	which could not make him gefure of his, shew beneath ous Prince and King of Eng	the mainte of a victori-	1
	growne terrible to Saladine, who had received duers loffes, foiles and overthrowes at his handes				
	Moreover, the Saladines whole effate being endar	n-	leheworld prejently duck	nea who were lound, or	Eudigrand in nex
	gered by fuch of his own feet as reputed him a me	er	vnfure; forrow and difmay his owne: * His carefull m	was cuery where among	# Ger Der.
	vfurper, hee could not long withftand the doub	ie	nis owne : * Fits carefull in	friends	Rog.Hourd-f.408
	<u>'</u>	<u> </u>			

ENGLANDS MONARCHS Monarchae 1 477

Ro. Hoxed

Math.Paris Rich.t.

Polyd Furg.

Ger.Der.

Rog. Ho

4 Mat. Pa

long time before out of poffession) & therofcrowns him King, writing magnificent letters into England, with fuch like offices.

(48) Now when King Richard (who had wonne

the couetous Emperour, by the proofe of his inno-cency, and by his most noble and constant carriage)

A new and fould to himselfe wonderfull honour and respect, even of

*Rollound fark leine reftore him a after fifteene moneths imprifonment, to Queene Aliener his mother, free from the Rend, Higden Emperour, all that were present weeping thereat in Pagarita. know I truely that the Lord hath fent his Angell and ta- Roger Housed. dily premonished him, and so by a verie little time he preuented his surprisers, landing happily at Sandat Accom in the Holy-land) went ioyously foorth to King and Ard meet him; whom when the King faw, he difmoun-King Richards vanooie captuation of **Richard**King of England, was sung xunara punified by God, and on Gods behalfe. The Duke of **Auftrias' Country, and people, being vifited with thele flue plagues, Fire, Water, Barrennes, Worms, Mat. Paris. & Pestilence: the Fire, casually burning his Towns, Rodoerd f. 425. Subjects, in an overflow; the earth waxing drie and Policies 17.2 17. ftages)is fent to the King with this bloodie meffage. but before his return, ypon S. Stephens day in Christ-mas, the Duke*spurring his horse in sport ypon a *Ga.Do. Castle of snow among youthes, which were counterfeiting a fiege, and an affault, with the flip of his horse, brake his foot in such fort, as it came to be cut off, and within a while feeling himselfe perishing vp-ward, so that his death was certaine, could not bee

absoluted of his Bishops from the sentence of Ex-

Polyd Firg 1.14. * Mat. Paris ad Ann. Dom. 1196 Roger Houed, fol. 431. King Richards doings after his returne. Mas. Par, Ro, Howed f. 392.

Richard I. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 44 communication which had by the Pope bin denounned)held against him; but Henry de Pumeray, who ced, till hee and his Lords had fworne to release all had fortified Saint Michaels Mount in Cornwall, heathe faid matters betweene the King of England and ring for certaine that King Richard was come, died him; but his sonne after his death refusing the for very feare. And now, forty daies of fummons Hoved fot 418. performance, his Fathers body lay ftinking aboue being exibired, which were allowed to Earle John. ground eight daies, for that no clergy man durft bu-rie it, being but conditionally absolued; till the son & Hugh Bilhop of Country, for making their appearance, to answere to such heinous matter as was predid yeeld to the performance; yet (if * some may be pared, and they not appearing, Iohn was adjudged by the Peeres and States of England, to have forcredited vpon his bare word) the fonne did voluntarily condificend, and not vponthis compulsion. feited all that hee might forfeit in the Realme, and (53) But albeit the Emperour * to declare himthe Bishop to be punishable by the Ecclesiasticall selfe wounded with some remorse for his vngodlie censures;as hee was a Bishop, and likewise as an Ofviolence, or to engage others in the impietie, gauc ficer of the King, by the Laitie. Richard afterwarde bestirres himselfeto draw in money more greedilie, three thousand Markes of King Richards ransome to then did become fo great a Maiesty, wherein yet make filuer Cenfers through all the Ciftercian order, who generally refused the gift, as parcell of an accur-fed spoile (for as for those seventy thousand marks. (faith * one) he was rather to be pardoned then accused, for that hee was presently to lead a mightie which hee forgaue to King Richard, with as bad a Armic against the French. purpose (being to hinder peace betweene him, and the French) as he had taken the other vniustly, they (56) But first of all, to wipe away both the sad-nes and contumelie of his late restraint, for a better are not to be accounted as restitution; but as the wafortunes beginning, he canfed himfelfe to be crow-ned againe at the City of Wincheffer; which celebriges of finne); reuenge forfooke him not, being purtie was honoured with the presence of william king of Scotland, who barea sword before *King Richard: fued by his owne wife(the Heire of the Crowne of Sicilia) in reuenge of some cruelties done to her Countrimen; and after reconcilement with her, falbetweene which two Princes, there*followed great ling dangerously sicke, he died at Afessana, excomamity and tendernelle of lone; then beeing municated for King Richards cause. And albeit hee had in his life time sent his Chancellour out of Burgranted to him and his fucceffors Kings of Scotland a certaine pension, with fundry other allowances, and princelic attendances, from the first day of their gundie, of purpose to offer King Richard recompence for the injuries he had sustained, and although Confriendlie entrances at any time into Englanditil their fantia the Empresse had sent the Archbishoppe of Messana (while the Emperours body lay about (57) The King likewise caused a new broad Seale to ground without buriall) to Pope Celestine in humble manner, praying Christian buriall, yet * vnlesse the bee made, requiring that all Charters granted under his former, should be confirmed under this, whereby manner, praying corritan buriant, yet venicle the mony which hee had extorted from the King of England were reflored, hee could by no entreaties obtaine it: which accordingly was promifed. (54) Neither were the King of Englands afflictihe drew agreat masse of money to his Treasurie fubscribing such renued Charters thus: This wa the tenor of our Charter under our first Seale, which be-cause it was lost, and in the time of our beeing captine in Almaine was in the power of another, wee caused to bee ons vnprofitable vnto him, for they gaue him occasion to reforme his life, taking home to him his changed, or c. Some have observed, that as this Rich Queene Berengaria, whose society for a long time he had neglected, though the were a roiall, eloquent, & beauteous Lady, and for his loue had ventured with ard was the first of the English Kinges who bare Armes on his Seales, as appeareth by the *former: so was hee the first who carried in his shield, three him through the world. Lions paffant, borne euer after for the Regal Arms of England. And whereas we see here the Moone in her full, which in the other was but a Cresent, (which is the Turkish Ensigne,) it may seeme to be (55) King Richard after his joyous returne into (55) King Kebardatter Its 10yous returne Into England, hauing at the Abbey of Saint Edmunds, in performance of his vow/as may feeme) offered vp the rich Imperiall Standard of Curfae, Emperour done Emblematically, in that sence, as wee read of a-nother Prince(who going against the Turkes) gaue. a Crescent with this word, Plenior redibo, I will reof Cyprus, which hee tooke among the spoiles of the Griffons Campe: thence he marched, and tooke in by furrender fuch Caffles as the feruants of his broturne more full. The true draught of this second ther Iohn (beleeuing that the King was not setur-Seale we have here annexed.

(58) A good *Author reports, that after this, the King being at dinner at Westminster, and receising aduertisement of the siege laid to Vernoil, by his restiesse enemie Philip of France; sware that hee would neuer turne his face, till hee had gotten thi-

ther with his Armie to fight with the French whereupon hee caused the wall to be cut through, (the figne of which breach appeared * aboue two hundred yeares after) neuer refting, till with an hundred great Shippes hee had croft the seas from Gggg 2

"Rog Hove.f. 420 Hell Boes, 1, 13.

the Kings fought to make friends vpon all fides; but

King Richard by his munificence, and other means,

ueden recites three severall times within a short

fpace, in which the King of France was driven with

Chape7. The famous Ctory of Gilors. * Hened. Math. Paris. Tood. Neuft. In his letter to Drait; the mott of the English *Ro.Hen.J.447 Math Paris An.D 1193 Houted third-

loffe and dishonour out of the field by King Richard, belide the losse of Saint Omers, of Air, and of other Townes wonne by Baldwin Earle of Flanders, and belides the walt of the French Dominions by many inualions. But the greatest of the three victories was the fecond, which King Richard gained at the battaile betweene Curceles and Gyfors, where the K of France him felfe fell into the river of Ethe, the bridge breaking under him, with the throng of pcople which fled for their lines before the English Li on: neither was hee easily faued (twenty of his men of Armes being drowned by that ruine) but before he could be drawne out, water had gotten into his (65) This was a famous victory; for belides a long Catalogue of great names extant in Authors; there were taken by the Kings Armie, 100. Knights and Seruitours on horse-backe, and footmen without number, belides thirty men of Armes, and other inferiour Souldiers not countable, which Markades (Generall of the Rowtes) had for prisoners. There were also taken 200 great horse, whereof scuenscore had barbs, and caparifons armed with yron. King Richard in his owne person did most nobly, for with one speare he threw to the earth Mathew de Mum merancie, Alan de Rusci, and Fulke de Giseruall, & took them. So have we vanquished the King of France "at Gyfers (faith the King) howbeit wee haue not "done the same, but * God and our right by vs : and "in this fact we did put our owne head and kingdome in hazard aboue the counsell of all that were ours. Howfoeuer therefore the French or others may flubber over fuch a noble Journey, wee have not doubted your fo good warrant to record the (66) The warre continuing fill, many vertuous men laboured to make a finall accord; and the new till his returne from Poieton, whether hee went to chastice his rebels, though * fome say, hee did then conclude the peace. (67) At this enterview or treatie, Philip King of France,* (the fower of strife, though he fought peace) shewed to King Richard a deed, in which Earle Iohn with many local tectures? Lees coas soo meet part of the French Court, who flould on his behalf, in what for focure, afternah his honoon and imnocency, against any his accufers: but there was no man found in that Court, neither King nor any other, who would undertake the proofe King Philips words. (68) But now ensued the farall accident, which drew the blacke cloud of death ouer this trium-

offered to yeeld the fame, and all therein, if one lie Caffe Galliard their lines and limbs might be faued : but hee would fanh Fobian, not accept of any conditions, bidding them defend themselves as they could, for he would enter by the fword and hang them all. It grieues me to thinke that fuch a Prince should so forget himselfe: but behold the feuerity of Gods judgement, An Arbala fter(or Archibalista) standing vpon the wall, & see-ing his time, charged his steele bow with a square arrow or quarrell, *making first his praier to God.
That hee would direct that shot, and deliner the innocen ey of the besieged from oppression. Whereupon discharging it, as the King was "taking a view of the Castle within the danger and distance of such an Engin, & Roger Honed, Mat. Par, Tood, Menji. the King(*vpon hearing the bow goe off) flooping with his head, was mortally wounded in the left shoulder; the anguish & perill wherof was extremey augmented by the butcherly and vnskilfull hand of the Surgeon, who having drawne out the wood and not the *enuenomed yron, * mangled the arme with cruell incisions before hee could prenaile; the paine whereof haftned his end. (69) Concerning the name of this tragical! Archer, thereis so much variety, as that we could willingly take that vicertainery for a warrant to filence it:being loth to ennoble him with our pen, it being a thing worthily punishable with yter oblinio, to have shed (though defensively or but casually) the bloud of fuch a King. Mathew Paris * in calling him Peter * Mat. Finite
Balilin, feemes to allude to fome ominous conceit in Bafilii(which with the Greeks fignifies a King;) him Thomas Walfingham followes therein, as Mathem Pa-ris followed *another: there want not * fome who also give him a third name; but Houeden who deliuers this accident as all the rest of this Kings life, in the most probable and fulled manner, cals him Ber-tram de Gurdom, applying vno him certaine *verse* of Lucas, in commendation of his vanpalled consta cy, when he came before King Bichard: where thou maift perhaps (for fatisfaction of thy mind, with beholding some reuenge) desire to know what became of the Actor. After that the Castle by continuall affaults was taken, and (by the Kings command) none left aliue but helds being referred, perhaps to fome more flamefull death/the king (vpon a chrifti-an magnanimity) for gaue him the fact, which the party (without thew of difmay) did neither deny nor " Rog Hout.f. 449 xcuse, but alledged the necessity of his case, and the inftice of Gods worke in it, for that the king had laine his Father and two Brothers with his owne hand: being hereupon set at liberty, and one hundred shillings sterling given him by the king: Mar-kader (Captain of the Mercenarie Rowtes) after the king was dead, tooke him, flead him quicke, & then by hanging ended his life, (70) King Richard feeling the approch of certaine death, disposed his worldly estate, thus: to his browill, uteam, ulpoven uns wortnity einner, ettus: 10 nm 10 rd.

will,

will,

will,

will,

will,

will,

show for the familier of England, and his
other dominions, with three parts of his Treafure,
commaunding fuch as were prefent to fiweare him
fealty: to his Nephew Othe king of a dimante, he beto main Enable. queathed(as it * feemes) all his goods and chattels, money excepted, and the fourth part of his faid tre-fure he gaue to his feruants, and the poore; And having thus discharged his last cares toward the world concerning his transitory state, he prepared himselfe for the presence of God, strengthning his foule with hartie contrition, confession, and participation of the holy Sacrament: commanding further, that when he was dead, * his bowels should be buried at Charron, among the rebellious Poicto-uins, asthole who had only descrued his worst parts: but his Heart to bee enterred at Roam, as the City,

Richard I. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 44 tiue royall, or else missing that the Vicount should make the partition) came with a power to a Castle of the Vicounts called * Challez, where hee supposed the Riches were; the Garrison of which place

Pope Innocentius the third, having proclaimed a new undertaking of the Holy-warre * fends a Cardinall Deacon to attone the two mighty Kings of France and England. At length Articles of peace were

drawne; but Richard (being farre before hand) was nothing haftie to conclude, and therefore put it off,

newly yeelds himselfe Liegeman to King Philip, anewly yeelds nimelite Liegeman to king Finity, against his brother. A wonderfull thing (laith Houeden) that Richard Bould beleeue it (being perhaps but a Copie of that device or tricke, if it were a device which they once had iointly put vpon the same Iohn, as in the end of King Henry the fecond you heard) who thereupon forthwith diffeiled the Earle his brother every where. But the Earle having fearched and learned the cause of the Kings sudden displeasures, (whose loue hee had before redeemed with many loiall fernices) Hee fends two men of Arms

or maintenance thereof; wherupon euer afterward Rich-ard held his brother more deare, and gaue lesse credite to

phall and bright shining starre of Cheualrie, the vnworthy occasion of which misaduenture makes it the more lamentable; which not withflanding, for a document to the Great ones, against the outrage of Agarice and Cruelty, God suffered thus to fal on him, widomare, Vicount of Limoges having found a great * horde of gold and filuer, fent no small por tion thereof to King Richard, as chiefe Lord, with which being not contented (as pretending that trea-

(are trone, was wholy his by vertue of his preroga-

This Chaluz the

Ger Doreb.

Hourd, cals h *Rog. How.f. 444

which for her constant loialty had merited thesame, and his Corps in the Church of the Nunneric at

Mat Park.

Fahian.

Tood, Menft. Ger Derek.

" Math. Paris, in Rich. I. and his Epitaph. Neuftris Ing; tegis Cor in. expugnabile Regis.

M. Feren.

obedient: and God affording him gracious leafure till hee had thus disposed of all; the venemous vapour ascended to his heart, and draue the spirite forth, with whom (lay *Authors) the glory and honor
of Militarie skill exspired, (70) There hath been an opinion, or fancy that this King was called Cordelyon, because hee encountred a Lyon in prifon at the Emperours Court: but (faith *one very truly) these are fables imagined by English tale-tellers to advance their King Richard, as

Font-Ebrard in Gascoigne, at the feet of his Father King Henry, to whom he had beene sometime dis-

the Britaines, by the like, advanced their King Ar-Mathematicall) may theirs feeme, who conice ure, hee was called so of the famous * Starre called Cor Leonis. But how the conceite of killing of a Lion should come vp, as it is not worth the while to enquire, so certainely, Hugo de Neuile (one of King Richards speciall familiars) is recorded to have slain a Lion in the holy-Land, driving first an arrow into his breaft; and then running him through with his fword: whence perhaps that atchieuement is trans-ferred from the man to the master; and the story applide to the by-name of King Richard, whereof the true reason is that which * Thomas Walsingham mentioneth, laying; That for the magnanimity of his heart (groffitudinem praftans, faith an other, meaning, as it seemes, that his materiall heart it felf, was bigge and maffine, which another also faith was inexpugnable) this King was both by the English & Nor_ mans stiled Cour de Lion.

His Wines.

Alice the daughter of Lewis the feventh, King of France, by Queene Alice daughter of Earle Thibald Prante, by Queene-sante taugnier of Earle I monta of Champaigne, is by * fome reputed the first wife of King Richard, though indeede she were 'onely con-tracted to him (being both children) and committed to his Father; but when he demanded her, his father refused to deliver her, or she to com to him, or both: Wherefore being King, conceiuing displeasure a-gainst King Philip her brother, and more then suspend the continency with his owne father (by whom he alledged the had a child) he refused to take her: yet x gaue a hundreth thouland pounds to Philip pro quieta clamantia, to be quitefreed from her. She became the wife of William Earl of Ponthieu, and had became the white of whitam Earl of Postmen, and had iffue Queene Ioan of Caffile, the mother of Queene Eleanor, wife to King Edward the first.

Berengaria the second wife of King Richard, was

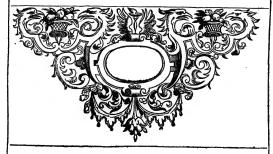
the daughter of Sanches the fourth of that name, King of Nauarre, sonne of King Garese the fourth her mother was Beatrice daughter of Alphonfo, the scuenth King of Castile, called the Emperour of Spaine. She was conneied by Eleanor the kings mother vnto the king in Sicily, and married to him in Cyprus, whence the accompanied him to the Holy land. The king (vpon what cause we find not) neglected her company for a while, but vpon more setled thoughts, he refumed heragaine to his loue and fociety, but had no iffue by her.

His naturall I Tue.

Philip, the natural fon of king Richard, feemeth M. Fores. to haue been begotten, while he was Earle of Poyton of a Gentlewoman Poytonin, and to haue had of his fathers gift a towne in Poyton named Sumac, to have taken alfo his furname, and title of the fame towne; and to haue beene the Progenitour of a familie of Gentlemen of the same surname & title, in the same

I fabel (by * fome who mention not Philip at all) M. Millar, sreputed the Naturall Daughter of king Richard (whose mother the Author nameth not) and that she was married to Leoline Prince of Wales.

Three other Daughters, (Baftards no doubt) King Richard he is faid to haue, of whose names and matches wee will report as we finde recorded. Whiles hee was in France imployed in his warres against king Philip, Fulco a French Priest, came vnto him, telling him he had three very bad Daughters, which he wished him to bestow away from him in marriage, or else Gods wrath would attend him: when the king denied, he had any daughter, yes (quoth the Prieft) thou cheri-fest three daughters, Pride, Conetou fress, and Lecherie. The king apprehenflue of his meaning, called his "Lords there attending, and faide: My Lords, this "Hypocrit hath found that I haue three Daughters: which I maintaine, viz Pride, Couetoufnes, and Leche-*rie, which he would have me bestow forth in mariage; and therfore (if any fuch I haue) I haue found out most fit husbands for them all. My Pride I "bequeath to the haughty Templars & Hofpitallers,
who are as proud as Lucifer himfelfe: My Cone"toufneffe I give to the white Monks of the Cifteaux Order, for they couet the Diuell and all: But for my Lechery I can bestow it no where better then on the Priefts and Prelates of our times, for therein haue they their most felicity. Doubtleffe these mariages proued so fruitfull, that their issue hath now ouerflowed all kingdomes of the earth.

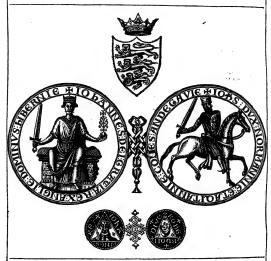


IOHN

(bap. 8. Kinglohn. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Mearch 45.

IOHN DVKE OF NORMANDIE GVYEN AND AQVITAINE, &c. THE FIRST

STILED LORD OF IRELAND, THE FORTIE-FIFTH MONARCH OF ENGLAND, HIS RAIGNE. ACTS, AND ISSVE,



CHAPTER VIII.



He luftre of Diadems. and Soueraignety, fo dazeleth the eyes, and bewitcheth the hearts of ambitious beholders that whiles they fondlie deeme the greatest content to bee in highest Titles, running after a fee ning Happines, they often

cast themselves headlong, and whole Kingdoms, into irrepairable ruine, as the calamities, which after the death of the noble Ceur-de-Lyon, lighted on the Pretenders to his Crowne, and on this miferably distracted State, will yeeld vs too ruful a President. To the full acting of which Tragedy (for such it was, and fo we must now present it in this our Theatre) con-curred as principall Actors, the two (though these Patients rather, as the iffue proued) vnfortunate

Corriuals for the Crowne, John Earle of Moreton Bother to the late King, and his Nephew Arthur, the Posthumous sonne of Geoffry Duke of Britaine, the Earles eldeh Brother: their two Female (and there-fore moremulous and relikes) Subicions, Queen Eleanor and Lady Constance, each ambitious of their Pathers death , who died at Para owne, in their Sonnes aduancements: their two reuengefull Abetters; Othe the Emperour for Ichn, expeg c. 2. and Philip King of France for Arthur : thereupon, the two vniust Intraders on the Crowne; Lewis the Philipthe 2.4 French Kings Sonne, and Innocentius the Pope, the Presenting Sonie, and modernius the rope, the one by vnprincelly forces, the other by vnprincelling fraud: and lastly, their two forts of treacherous Infirmments, of the Lastie for the one, and Clergie for the other; all which, like so many Tragicke sirebreathing Furies, fet this State in so horrible com-

ages after, quite allayed. (2) Earle Iohn(the very Centre in which those

buftion as that the b fmoake is not as yet, fo many b is Better and

h Trinet.M.S. and sl, except wilful Policies i Rog Howed &

The titles of both competitours, k ture propingul tatis,& Tifla-mento Successor, H'alfing, Tpad, Truct. 1 Iure communi Paul Aemilis Philip.2.

m Reg.de W.B.

n Rog.Howed. m leb. o Math.Parifi Earle Iobus

p wordswey M S,

Duke Aribers Adherents, o Houseden in tan. Thomas de Far net. Paris Hift, Maior (Idem. The beginnings of hatred betwix Earle John and the Prousnerals. t Rog. Hou. in tohn, u Judiciñ & con-fuctuels,tb. Mat.Westminst. Laith Indicium, Jus & confuetudo k Polyd Verg 1.15 y Walfing.

y Wilfing.
Ypedig, Borne
An.1187.die Pafthe, his father
dying before in
Angult.
z Sclainuidia, & c
Palyd ibid. a Hearden. Isan proclaimed King in England.

to Philip King of France. * Magnificit verbu,erc.
Polyd Verg L15.
d 100.de Serres in
Phil. August.
e Nich Trinet. Truth, orTruce (worne to King Richard) reenforcethall Arthurs Cities and Castles with his French

The beginning of

King John. Com touris | calamities met,) had from his infancy beene fedde with high and royall hopes, as being his Fathers onely darling, from whome hee had the 4 possession of the Irish, and a intendment also of the English Kingdom: and in his brothers time(f whose return from the holy warres all men despaired) had by gracious deportment towards the Subject, obtained ansoath of Fealty to himselfe, in remainder in case his brother (hould are childlesse: having now therefore the way to those his designs made smoother by the last Wil of King Richard, and allegiance of his Nobles then attendings (for these courses may facilitate, but not make a iust claime;) were may not thinke, that either hee was cold now, for the accomplishment of that, which so hotely hee had before pursued, or so nice, as to neglect a Kingdome, vpon scrupulous points of Titles and Right. Propinquity of Blond plea-ded for John, as Lineall descent for Arthur, the Kings Brother being neerer then his Brothers fonne; but John, who knew that the weaker vie to argue their

Titles, whiles the ftronger hold the poffersion, refolued to trie the strength of his claime by no other Law then of Armes; and therefore, being at time Estle Lobert helps of King Richards death in those forraine parts, hee makes it his first care to fasten to himselfe, by present mlargesse, and large promises of future fauours, (the viuall Rhetoricke of Competitours) all the Stipendiary Souldiers, and other Seruitours of his deceafed Bro ther. To winne himselfe the like assurance of lone at home, and to fettle (if it might be) an vniuer fall quiet, he o forthwith despeeded into England (there to oncurre with Queene Eleanor, his experienced moher) three of the choisest men of the State, Hubert Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, William Marshall apotent Pecre, and Geoffry Fitz-Peter the great Iu-

fticiar, by whose severall interests, the three States of Clergy, Chiualry, and Commonalty, might best bee ey-ther allured to him by fauours, or awed by feare; himselfe, the whiles ? posting to Chines, where King Richards great Treasure was kept; as knowing that hee should hardly get or keepe a Crowne by Forces or Friends, if hee wanted Coine & Crowns, to winne and hold fuch needfull Ayders. (3) The Treasurer, though a himselfe with his

Store Caftles and Fidelity, thus affured to the Earle, had yet a powerfull " Nephew, the Castellan of Angi-ers, wholy denoted to Duke Arthur, to whose vie hee yeelded up that City and Castle, with whom also fided the Nobility of Anion, Maine, and Turaine, forrendring those large Territories, as to their liege Lord, jointly auowing it to be the " Law and Cuftom of those Signiories, that the heritage which was to accrew to the elder Brother, if hee had surnined should descend unto his Sonne. But Constance Arthurs mother, no leffe . defirous to be Regent to a King (for her fon was but y twelue yeeres young) then Queene Eleanor deldainefull to goe below a Dutcheffe, did not dare to build her high hopes on so low grounds, for that fuch subordinare Princes as fauoured her cause, might eafily be corrupted by faire meanes, or cruflied by foule; and therefore you newes of King Iohns successes in England (for with general applause and a homages here was now proclaimed King,) difiracted with violent and Woman-like Paffions, Ambition of her fonnes Right, Rage for his Wrong, Feare of his Safety, and (not the least) Emulation that Queene Eleanor (whose Prudence and Grace with the English , had b fwayed exceedinglie) should effect more in a wrong, then her felfe in a just cause; c shee flies to Turen to the French King Philip, (to seeke a Walfe to whom shee might commit her Lambe,) to whose Protection thee wholy furrenders his Perfon, his Cause, his Countries. Philip * pretending (as Princes vie) a tender care of his Neighbour Princes state, but 4 meaning indeede out of so wished a prize, to raife

aduantage to his owne, forthwith ("without regard of

Garrisons; some of which had scarse put their foot

into Mauns, but King John was at their heeles, to King John to prouide them their latt lodging, facking that Citie, seeth and runner and demolishing it to the ground, for a terror to all others, which after fealty once fworne vnto him, (as & Rog. Houeden. 8 they had done) (hould dare to reuolt.

(4) Queene Eleanor, who having fetled England in Queene Eleans eace, was now come ouer to forward her fonne in fonnes aide. the VVarres, and was h present at the surprising of h Wendover, MS. Maunz, is i censured to hauetoo much sharpened his edge against her Nephew Arthur and his friends, Polyder. out of her implacable disdaine, and Enuie towards Constance her Daughter in-Law, and appears no lesse; for the King passing thence into Anson, left there his Le Captaines and Forces with his mother, who made An-cum rass fun. giers participate the Fortunes of Maunz, the City Ros. Houed. ruined, the Citizens captinated; whiles himfelfe Queene Eleanne comming to Roan, was there by the hands of walker the Archbishop, in the Cathedrall Church with Mas. Paris. great pompe on Saint Marks Festival, girt with the
"Ducall Sword of Normandy, and crowned " with a
"Ducall Sword of Rosen, (taking his Oath for faithfull administration in that Dukedome), which was
the swords of the state the pledge or earnest of his vinquestionable admittance to the English Diademe, which every day now Normandy. expected him. Neither yet may wee thinke, albet King Johns 1 mature & experienced age, his homebred, and well knowne education, his reannexing of India, att. 23. Irelands Kingdom to Englands, made his person more The freetage, irelands Kingdom to Englands, made his perion more The bienden, gracious then arthurs, that yet his Agents all this as Samas, str. while in England found no rubbs in their way, before all the Earls, Barnan, Burgeffer Ger Freet-belder could with one helpan bee induced to diclaims arthurs apparant Right, in Registed. and to sweare feelty to King John against a men liains:

king token theyer, many of the * English Peeres (who through dranes how their last Kings absence, and others conniuences, * **Rickale of **Rick their latt Kings ablence, and others' continuences, a the Lie List of Greatnes, which they milicalled Liberties and Rights, sewage with vader variety whereof, they after drew, not only with the milicalled Liberties and Rights, which will be also de variety variety variety with the service of the complex, who be good they precented, just the great Affembly at Northern William East of William East of the precented, just the great Affembly at Northern William East of William East of the precented, just the great Affembly at Northern William East of William East of the Control of the Cont ton, yeelded onely to sweare a *Conditionall Fealify, to keepe * Faith and Peace to King John, if hee would reflore to euery of them their Rights: which was the first plage of the feed of disloyalties, which after grew to fo great a sub bar conheight. Thus howfoeuer, all domesticke difficul- unterne, Hound, tics ouerblowne, and Queene Eleanor o left in AThe interest of the children arquitane to provide against Forraigne; King Iohn arthe children to provide against Forraigne; King Iohn ar-

(5) Strange it was to confider, (if ought bee True honefty is ftrange in State-plats how men, otherwife very pru-only une Polycy dent, transported once with Worldly, and feemingpoliticke respects, can so wilfullie cloud their Reaon, as to attempt those things, which leave both a present stains on their Soules, and a lasting disrepuation both of their Integrity and wifedome, wherein fo much they glory. For what elfe did Hubert Archbishoppe of Canterbury, the man so 9 famou- 9 Mat. Paris. Archomoppe or Cameroury, the main of a ramon of a main roun. Ced as the * Pillar of the Common-wealthes flabilitie, & Clama fabilitan finemperable for deeperasching virigedome, when in its that facred and celebrious Assembly of * all the 1Vr prefadation for the control of the States, addressing for the roial Inauguration, hee ad-ded to those Leg-Peeres Conditionals, his Clergy-Sophilmes, and "fecond Seede-plot of Treasons; perfiva-ting them by a cunning, but dilloyallipeech (which "febbersant, yet" "Ome by transforming, have more deformed) | Wordston, into that the English Crowne was meerely Arbitrary and roots of enfain that the Englife Crowne was mercily Arbitrary and roose of endang Electricat the peoples decuction? That I they all versions in different one reto known, bow that no man latch light Xrivjare for or any other fore-Title to faceced another in a Kingdom, foested this world fifty (with insucation for Grace and Outdance of vome brian, and with the Kinddom Milliplant and Milliplant an Gods Holy Spirite) hee be by the Body of the Kingdome follows him. thereunto chosen, and be indeed some choice man, pic- Archbishop Ha ked out for eminencie of his vertues; by the President of barts Sophistical Ocation with

ouer his owne people, though neither the Sonne of a King Met. Parin.

don, preparing for his Coronation to be at West-minster, the morrow following being Affention (adam. 486):x.8.

z Printed Copies read Senes talfly for that, t. San. a The example doe not fliew it: for they were of Gods parricular commandement, Which was not

that to the Holy Spirite, which after he contel fethto proceed from his owne drutie. 6 For his Father Kings, his Mother, Queene, field of France, after of Englands tribur nothing

d Iohn de Serres, a Thil August a Mar Paris, Non e Mat. Paris. N aufi ambigero. i Idem, indem. g Rog Hourd. Mat. Paris. Hubert torecafts to bridle the King, h Greldus Camb faith he was Principis fressen.

See vil. Arcoco. Cant in Hubert. Rog Wendoner, Triplici Sacra-Rex. King John first doth reward his three Agencs. Rog. Howeden, dum gleriaretur poteștate illa.

dignity.

m Polydore, Francus rem diffimulauit. n Pol.Verg.

From Shere bam to Deepe, (13.Cal.July.) p Reg. Hourd.

Tn Craftinum Affamptionis, Hound.ib. With Henry the fecond, an Richard, vide fapra. Double dealing most valeemely in a Prince. Crastino Affan Math Paris lo,ibid. u Feria 6.ante x Rog. Wenden

and Finders. Wendower and Park call Wailan An Enterniels

a Rog Heweden.

nor yet of any Regall descent. So after him likewise Dauid the Sonne of " Ishai: the one for being valourous and a Personage fitting royall dignity, the other, for being Holy and Humble minded. To shew that so he, who soeuer in a Kingdome excelleth all in Valour and Vertue. ought to furmount all in Rule and Authority: yet fo, as that, if any of the Offpring of a deceased King surpasseth others, it is fitte iointly to confent in election of fuch a

one. Thus hee spake (as hee professed) in fauour of I om, who then was prefent, whose most illustrations to the King Richard dying without any Herre from him descending, Him they had all sufficiently the Holy Ghostra stiffsance) as being a Provident, Valtant, and condoubtedly-Noble Prince, vnanimiously Elected, as wel in regard of his Merites: as of his Royall Bloud. So vniuit a speech from so great a Person, could not but moue both Offence and Wonder to many, even to Iohn himfelfe, who doubtleffe meant to fland to his right of proximity by blonde: but they durft not then and there move Questions thereof, as afterward flome did, to whom he gaue a reason of it, as strange as the fpeech it felfe; faving, a that he was affured by as the speech it leste; laying, state news a squred by fome divining foresight, that King Iohn would work the ruine of the Kingdome, and that therefore, to bridle him from so doing, hee had assumed his Admission was to be by Choice, and not Hereditary Succession: implying that as by Election he got the Crowne, fo by Eiection on demerite hee might as inftly loofe it. But for that present, the Ceremonies all pompouslie accomplished, (where three Oaths were ministred to him; To love Holy Church, and preserve it from all oppressors; To governe the State in Instice, and about b bad Lawes; Not to assume this Royall honour but with full purpose to persorme that he had sworne:) the first aft and bounty of his kingly Power, was to reward those, whose hands had lifted him to it, making William Marshalland Fitz-Peter, Earles of Pembrooke and Effex, and the Archbishoppe, Lord high Chancellour; who feeming to glory in that addition of ho-nour, was told by the Lord Bardolf, that the height of Archiepiteopall dignity was fuch, as it was euer reputed a great aduancement for a Chancelor to be made Archbishoppe, but none for an Archbishop

to be made a Chancellour.

(6) The Kings Enemies, "who kept their heads in, whiles hee was there in Armes, founde opportunities to impeach him, while hee was here feeling his Peace: the " French King in Normandy Surpriseth the City Eureux, & recouers the County of Main; the Britaines regaine the City Angiers with other ftrong holds: the newes whereof caused King John with all fpeed o to paffe the Seas, to giue stoppage to that current; where on his arrivall, his Army of P Friends and Foluntaries was so encreased, that King Philip was soone content to take a truce for fiftie dayes, on expiration whereof, an Enterview was agreed on to chablish a lasting Peace. But Philip a long time noted of dubling, (ill beforming any, but chiefly a Prince) the very day before the two Kings should meet, giving Duke Arthur the Belt of Knighthood, and taking of him Homage for the Signiories of Aniou, Poytou, Turaine, Mayne, Britanny, and Normandy, hee made him faithful vow, to yeeld him powerfull helpes, for acquiring those possessions. Neither was King John behind him in that kind of preuention, when Philip Earle of Flanders the French Philips professed Enemie, "comming to Roan, and diffiwading King John from trufting anie French friendship, did there sweare vnto him both faithfull Helpe and Homage. Yet the two Kings keeping touch for the day, though not for the purpole of amitie (and yet making faire shew of that too) held Parley betwixt Butauant and y Guletun two dayes by Commissioners inter-current, the third by presence and privatie, that not one of their Nobles or Attendants (who on each fide lay farre aloofe for the (pace of an howre) vnderstood any passages betwixt them. This much yet came to notice by after-relation, that * King Philip then required for Himfelfe the large Country of b Veulguessine, pretending that be gressine.

Geffry Earle of Aniou graunted it to Lews le Große, fin. Hourd V. Le off) Lanco Camen granteen to Lesso to organ, for Rund Ville for asking his Somme King Herrie the fecond against Vite-Ciana. Ville-Ciana. Min. Maine and Turayne: both which immoderate de Rug Stephen: maunds with others, King Iohn (conceiving with Salomon, Why doth he not also aske for Adoniah the King 11. Reg. 2.22. dome?) "neither would nor ought to graunt vnto him; on Nobull, nee whereby their amities intended, ended in more ho-file defiances. But *Philips* capitulating then for indifcord, Arthur, was onely perfunctoric and complementall, as his owne words, (and afterward his actions) bewraied: when being questioned by his Fauou-rices of his implacable " hatred against King Iohn, who had neuer harmed him, professed it was onely, for that a Rog Roads. hee had (not, defeated Arthur, but) possessed himselfe of Normandie, and the other Demaines, without asking him leaue,or offering him Homage.

(7) The flames thus on all fides breaking forth

with Richards last breath, hee still laboured to esta-

Foc, then on the guiles of a falle hearted Friend.&

flance) the young Duke also, the important matter

of fo great contentions. But Heavens were not fo

propitious to these Reconciliats, as so to hold them

long: some Philippines buzzing such needlesses ter-rors of Imprisonment into the Noble Childs eares,

the stronger, by how much the more they had been for a time kept in, many Earles and Barons of France (who formerly adhered to King Richard) became Homagers to King John, they Iwearing, neuer without his affent to reuert to Philip, and hee, neuerto make Peace with Philip, but they therein to

bee concluded. In the heate of which fidings (if not before)a P chiefe adherent of the foresaid Earle P Math. Paris, of Flanders (now col-leagued with King John) being the Bishop Elect of Cambray, fell into the hands of the French at which time also a Philip Bishop of Rea-

wois, (a great French Peer) was held in prison by King in Richard the 1.] John; and neither of them willing to forgoe their mitred Champions, Petrus de Capua, the Legat, interdicted France for the one and Normandy for the ot Mat Paris.

ther, till they, as persons sacred & inviolable, should bee dismissed: yet King John (whose Person and Title the Pope and Papals as yet much tendred) had

the fauour to wring out of his prize, 'fixe thousand f Markes for his release, and an Oth, never whiles he breathed to beare Armes against any Christian. 'This Le- Wie Trimet. M. gat in King Richards time, had made agreement with Ros Handan King Philip for a fine yeeres Truce, which expiring

blish it betwixt the now-Kings: but King Philips great heart would not so come downe, which was likely to haue cost him deere. For pursuing whi-fiege of Lauardin uphence upon King Iohns approach phocetoplace, with his Army hee fled to Maunz, and thence again fled, u Ree Househa

King John comming thither ;) letzed the Caltle of Ba- fol-452. lun(which belonged to Arthur) and to prevent his enemy (as is likely) "he levelled it unto the very ground; which fact Duke Arthursy Generall William de Rupi y Princepi Ex hauing done therein contrain to Commans with his land Arthur, becas feornfully and another than the contraint of the contrain

would not for his Lord Arthures pleasure, forbeare his owne, in doing as himselfe listed, with such forts arongs to Arthur

as hee tooke. The Generall feeing Arthur was but the outward maske, under which Philip reuelld for his hidden ends, "ferioufly perfwaded his Lord to reconcilement with his vncle King Iohn, and rather Rog Hoseed, to hazard his hopes on the clemency of a Generous

fo making his peace with King Iohn, hee prefentlie veelded up to him both Maunz, & (with Lady Con-

Arthur flyeth

that the next night, Feare giving wings to his flight, as Loue did to his Mothers, (for leaving her hus band b Ranulph Earle of Chefter, fince was amorous b Paul demit. of and married Guide a gallant Gentleman, who the fled with her,) they escaped into Angiers. Arthur her madebut it applies the fled with her from the fled with her fled had now neither fure of K. Philip, nor fure to K. John, had now neither fure of K. Philip, nor fure to K. Iohn, had now pears; otherwise aft him felfe betwirt two Militones; but (how foe-by Harodon and

uer) P bilip ment the greift in the end should be his. (8) The

* 8.1d.056

Archiepifespa

he King himfeli

1 Mat Well

hing Pichpand the Emperors ha tred, encreaseth the malice betwixt King labs and Pb-Lp. c Osbo the fourth Ionne of Heary and Mand daughter of K. d Rog Hourd. f.457. eMat.Paris f 24 at.Paris g Mai Wiftmit An. 1198. h Rog-Haxed f.452. The Emperour offers his side t K.labn. i Idem.ibid. An. 1200.

Arricles of atl Nich Trinet. MS m Vide Chartam apad Hourd.p.463

The Kings inte

* Hourd f-456. n Parifal.Cal. o Walforg. Tood.

p Home Id q Tred.Neuft. q Tpod. Neapl,
Leco cit.
King Philip
yeelds up Arthu
to King Jahn,againft his vow.
The Emperours
two Brethren
fent to King
John.
Though Jay
Liberaci, faith Hoved perch for Ebraica. Eureur, t Nico. Trinet, i Rich.s. M.S. u Rog Hautd. King Johns care of his outh to K.

othin oun to a.
Philip.
2 Wesdaur.
Hourd, f 457.
y So called by
Wesdaury.
Mat Westwinth.
Hourd, &t. but
our Heralds
(Glover, Millet, her Ifabel, 2. Grandchild to Reb. bale-brother of King John.

g Ib,Confuet h Idem f. 439.

fcription of Hun-I Sonne of H.a.

m Houed,f-453 n Wendower MS.

(3) The breach betwixt these two great Kings was the more irreconcileable, by reason of the hatred betwixt King Philip and the Emperour othe King Ishno Nephew, whole advancement to the Empire(himlesse perhaps aiming to it) Philip shill endeanoured to impeach, and regarding that the Pope whole power Kings then regarded only, while it made for their purpose) had thundered his Anathe-ma against all his Opposers: and Otho in gratitude to King Richard, who s procured him the Diadem Imperi all, and in tender regard of his vncles honour, fent himaduise, host to hasten any finall attonement with the French King, for that himselfe would bring him his vimost Imperial assistance. Notwithstanding, by the Cardinal-Legates assistances interceding, a Truce was concluded till the Feast of Saint Hilary at which time, the Kings comming to a Treaty be twixt Wailan and Butauant Castles, k it was agreed that Lewis the Heyre of France should marry King Johns Neece, Blanch, Daughter of Alfon (us King of Castiles that King John should give for Dowry the Caffite that King Joon mount give for Lowry me City and County of Eureux, with fundry Forts in Normandy, and thirty thousand Markes in filter; vowing also not to aide his Nephew Otho with men or means to attain the Empire : & further, 1 promifing toleane (if he died without I flue) vnto Lewis al the Terri tories he held in France; all which Articles were a for. merly engroffed, but finally cocluded betwixt Buta want, & Guletun (the 'one, K. Johns, the other, King Philips Castle) the " Octaves of Saint Iohn Baptist when these Counties were actually surrendred to Philip; the Lady Blanch o espoused to Lewis his son; Duke Arthur (Philips once vowed, but now vnualued charge,) yeelded ouer, and made P Seruant and Homager to K. John for his own Dukedom; whom yet his vncle was content to leave with King Philip who had now fo left him, and erft had vpheld him. onely as the baite of his owne aduantage. If Princes can bee thus vnprincely degenerous, what trust can men repose in baser vassals? King John hereupon proued much more fledfast to Philip, then either Philip was to him, or himselfe to Othe the Emperor. who fending his two Brethren Henry Duke of Saxemy, and William (furnamed of Winton) to demand the Counties of 1 Torke and Poitfou, with the Treasure and Iewels which 'King Riebard' bequeathed him: King robin denied to yeeld thereunto, 'only in regard of his Oath which hee had paffed to Philip, to yeelde no kind of aide to the Emperour. And further to tellife, (yea further then he ought) his faithfull meaning to preserve intire this amity with Philip, * by his aduise he dinorced *Hawisia his wife, as too * neere of Bloud, by sentence of the Archbishop, and Bishops of Burdeaux, Poittoirs, and Xanton, and by the Archbishops hands espoused Isabell, Heiretrice of Ailmar Earle of Angolisme, a faire yong Lady, but bde-destined to another bed.

(9) This Finall Concord (fo e called, but not prouing fo) with Philip, who now acknowledged Ishn the a rightfull Heire of King Richards Crowne, gaue him more leafur, to receive peaceably alle Submitties, and bring in forceably all fout-flanders of those his transmarine Dominions, and after to look home to the affaires of his Kingdome, from which hee had beene (and we there following him,) too long absent. Yet in the heate of those forrain imploiments, hee on occasions had his recourses hither to settle his State-affaires, and & Crowne-Renenewes; to enact wholesome h lawes for forraine and domesticke Commerce; to collect an i Ayde for his Neeces great Dowry, and Martiall vies; which later(being three fhillinges on eury k Carrucata,) though his first and onely Subsidie since his com-ming to the Crowne, caused much heart-burnings especially by meanes of his lowne brother Geffr Archbishoppe of Torke (touching whom the King was " forewarned, that hee would bring a Sword, & not Peaceinto England) who bearing himselfe too bold on his bloud and place, a forbad the Collettours

of that Aide in his precincts (though it were organized to the King generally for all England) and also being required by the King to attend him into France, to require of the Peace, and his Neeces Espousall, he very vidutifully denied his service. The King p intelligence with those his disloyalties, caused all his Temporalities to bee seized on by his Sheriffe: whom therefore Geffry (adding fresh fuel to the fire ded folemnly excommunicate, caused the Kings Offi cers to beare blowes, and interdicted the whole Pro uince of Yorke. So partiall, and unhistoricall, is the report of a one; (a Stranger by birth, but more strange for bold vntruthes) who faines the onely in entine of fuch indig nation in the King, was that Prelates reprehension of his Rapines on the people For(to give a further tafte of that Authors 1 webement fond malice, justly to taxed) what ancient Iudicious Writers call an 'Aid necessarie for Warres, that he enftileth R apines and Spoiles; where they make Iohn his Brothers Heyre by Will, hee makes Arthursthey say hee was at valiant man, hee faith he fm. He was a Coward; where they make him a pursuing, and Philip flying, hee chargeth him to have made onplaints, when he foould have drawne fwords; where y punis, worn ne journal nue ar anne juuras; where they charge the Peeres for "advantus back from his Warres, heefmakes them the onely Hasteings, and not shim within a company and the state of the sta Iohn; if the "watry Element ouerflow, it bodes Iohns fury on his Land. But furely that part thereof. which fell on Geoffry, it was (you fee) not vndefer-ued notwithstanding, vpon the Kings*returne into England, and Geoffreys to his more loyall carriage & fubmission, his Peace was made, at the very time,& for the more celebrity, of Queen I fabels * Coronarion, with whom the King himselfe was * again crow

on, with whom the King himfelle was * again rowwided Wiffinither by Archbilop of Palest.

(10) The Pompe of that folemattie ended, the
King refolated of ending a long deepending controuerife with King Fillius of Setsiland, who formerlie
(before John was proclaimed King) land challenged,
as * his partimental Right, the Counters of Northum
Sented. many it was very ominous for a King to enter that . and certaine h other places) and there offered a ga den Chalice on Saint lohns Altar, which i no King befor inm day if doc.) Where an Deutotions perior ined, the two Kings (in preface of * three Archbis kings three the Kings of Gauth-Webs, with a unlittude of English, Sestilla, French, and 1.

rifb Princes and Peeres, alcending the toppe of that Region Stage. conspicuous & high *hill, on the North side of the Citie, did there in a glorious folemnity, fweare amitie and faithfull loue, & upon the Crofter of Archbi-

(11) That Spectacle so roial to the beholders, was feconded with another no leffe Honourable to K. Iohn, (for Humility in fuch great ones is more glorious then their glory,) when the King having latelie

floo Hubert.

a Polyd.Virg. y Polyd.l.15.

berland and Cumberland; and afterward feeing he got but words and delaies, was ready, (King John being then in France) with an hotter and more forceable rgument, to winne, what hee could not craue: but being in dark b denotion all Night at Saint Margarets b At Donfolia Hearfe, the still true English-hearted Queen per-Twaded him by a Dreame (for certainely it was no other) not to infeft England her native foile; who therupon fent backe his Army. But now he commeth with a more friendly traine, vpon King Iohns fen-ding to him, in Honourable 4 Embassage, the Earles of Hunting don and Hereford, King Williams Brother and Nephew, his three Sonnes in Law, Lacy, Vefey and Res with others, to defire him to give him mecting at Lincolne, where accordingly they both meet e So Hered ting at Lineaue, where accordingly they does never the with kingly curtefles; and the next day, King John but Media and to aulpicate his Temporall affaires with Spirituall Papler by error devotions, (and yet to flew what hee thought of fome superfittious follies of those times) went # vslauntedly into the Cathedrall Church, being much dif- | 8 tam. waded by many, (for Monkish Impostures perswaded fore him durft doe. Where his Deuotions perfor-

h As Saint Frif. wides Church is Oxford. The finerals of | left Hugh Bilhoppe of Lincolne (called the Saint, for the opinion of vnfained integrity, though blemished with some obstinacies, and surcharged with Legends of a fained Miracles) at London very ficke, (where himfelfe with gracious care went to visite him, and both confirmed his Testament and promised the like for other Bishoppes after,) now hearing hee was * dead, and his Corpes then bringing into the gates of Lincolne, hee, with all that princely Traine, went forth to meete it; the o three Kings (though the Scottish was to depart that very day) with their roiall Allyes, carrying the Hearfe on those shoulders, accustomed to vphold the weight of whole kingdomes: from whom the Great Peeres received the fame, and bare it to the Church Porch . whence the three Archbishops and Bishops conunied it to the Quier, and the next day (it there lying the meane time ? open faced, mitred, and in all Pontificall Ornamentes, with Gloves on his hands, and a Ring on his finger) interred it with all folemnities an-fwerable. Yet here the King rested not to give proofe, in so great a height, of his lowly mind, and then benigne (how cuer afterward auerted) to the Clergy; when twelue Abbots of the Cifleanx Habit (whole a whole Order had displeased him, by refusing to giue Aid towardes his great payment of thirtie thousand pounds) r came now to Lincolne, and all proftrate at his feet, craued his gracious fauour, for that his Forresters had driven out (for so the King had given commaund) of his Paftures and Forrests all their Cattle, wherewith themselves, and Christs Poore were sustained. The King touched with remorse on fo venerable a troope of Suppliants, (though fo great offenders) commaunded them to rile, who were no sooner vp, but the King sinspired with disume Grace, fell flat on the ground before them, despring pardon, adding, that hee not onely admitted them to his love, & their * beafts to his Pastures, (a speciall fauour which Kings had graunted that Order,) but would also build an Abbey for men of their fort, (if they would designe some choice seat) wherein himselfe meant to bee ensbrined. Neither did he promise then more then hee performed, nor were those wylie Humiliates regardleffe of choosing a delicate plotte for the purpole, where hee built a goodlie Abbey of their Order, deferuedly for the pleasance of the place, named Beaulien, and of wrich Renewae, and excessione Priniledge continuing long of great renowne, as a Castle of refuge inustable; our Auncettors thinking it most namous facrilege, thence to draw any, though wifful Munderess of Traitors: wherein the Founders of fuch vinlanctified Sanctuaries, & Temples of Mercy (lothey called the 1throughout this Kingdom, Jeemed rather to take Romulus for their Prefident, the Moles, who grantin fauor to casuall Manslaughters, yet I commanded wilfull Murderers to bee drawn from the Altar to the slaughter. (12) By what degrees, men not onely of fuch re-outed-religious habit, but also of the Secular-Clergy,

fell afterward more and more from fuch fauoursol the King, and hee from theirs, a man that will not purposcly winke, may casily behold, both forts standing to stiffe on their persons, and their possessions Exemption from Regall commaund, that whiles the Pope could have all for any superfluous imploiment, the King could get nothing, though his Kingdome were in hazard, as you heard by the dis-loyall obstinacies both of the Archbishop of Yorke, who denied the King his personall attendance, and those Cifteaux Monkes, whose Coffers were thus lockt against him . The like pretended Exemptions of their Clergie-Prelacies (as well as of their Persons and Purses) wrought also like offences, both with former Kinges, and now with King Iohn, who on the death of Bishop Hugh, resoluing to conferre by gift, (as his b Ancestors did, and himselfe elsewhere lately had) that See, on forme whom either merite or affection had endeared to him, (the rather, because a men of those places, in those dayes, were viually their Soucraignes bosom-

Counsellors) . hee was with peremptory affronts | e Rog Housed. withstood by the Cannons there, who very bolde withflood by the Cannons there, who very bound on the Pope sybeating, reckt very flenderly their Princes displicating. It is not valkely that Archibithop Huberi (left Canterbury might be thought in paint Archibert of Cast. ferior to Yorke in daring boldnes,)as being Papal Legate, in fecret bolftring them had a hand, though closely carried in a gloue: for that the man, who lately, f gloried the King was wholy his, riow from Housely finding hee had not the fway hee expected, and thought heedeferued (by obligement of his first Agency about the Crowne,) not onely fludied to make vpp that by his Legatine Glory which hee wanted by his Princes countenance, but further, Haberts bollow (as \$ one who thinkes hee extolles his vertue, paints g Polyd. Vert. 1.15 forth his difloyalty) heerepented now, more then any thing in all his life, that hee had so advanced King John to the Crowne, Certes, about this time, hee flewed flender refpect to his Soueraigne, (for as God is in his, so are Kings dishonoured in their Ministers disofficer. graces) when being prohibited by Fitz-Peter, the Kings great Iustitiar and Minister (in the Kings abfence) of regall commaund, h from holding a General Councell of his Province, (neuer vied to bee held, but by Soucraigne permittance) his pleasure scornde to take any countermaund, but from him especiallie, who, in i calling his inferior, by * joynt deserts tot Archiepifespae in Regno a Rege feunda perfona. Mat.Paris. * As fellow agen wards the King, but his Equall, was now, in neerenesse and fastnesse to the King, become farre his Superiour. · But what speake I of confronting a fubordinate power? did hee spare to out-beard his Soueraigne himselfe? It seemes no. For having notice, the Feast of the Nativity now approaching, that the King intended with his Queene at Guilford An, 1201. to keepe that feaftiuity with great magnificence; he to keepe that tealtuity with given insquinessing, while believe ordinarily, for splendour, militiate of attendant and sampious intertainments did firite with the Kingdo one of his own Suscelfor and one of the work Suscelor and one of the work of the work see a support the sampious through this a fitting time, to firew, both his great with the sampious of the sampious subject of the sampi state, and little regard of his Princes discountenance, by 1 paraleling to the Kings, his owne fumptuous preparations, "with rich attires, and costly gifts for his At-tendants at Canterbury. The King(as Kings brooke Quas cum Rege not to bee braued by Subjects, nor is it wisedome for diffauourites to doe it,) moued " with great indignation, thought the man had too much riches, & n Man. Purit, too little Discretion(which seldome lodgeth in the braine, where Pride dwels in the Heart,) and therefore to abate somewhat the one, and learne him more of the other, having first beene in the " North parts to gather money for his better vies, hee meant faying he then went into Irenot to lauish it in keeping his Easter, which he chose rather to doe at the cost of Hubert the P Rich; & not to spare him, who spared not himselfe, he there inp Mat. Parker creaft that great expense with a greater of His, and his Queenes folemne act wining againe on Easter day, in the Cathedrall Church; where, in lieu of his expence, Hubert had the formall honour to fet on their Crownes, but yet not the grace to fit neere the Kings Heart, (13) Such being the first ouertures of hart-bur

fons beleagured his Castles; tidings whereof recal-

led King Johns thoughtes from his Domesticke

Kkkk

The first bre nings betwixt the King and his Ciergy, which after ches betwint the king and his Lay Petros. by additament of dayly fuelling, braft forth into a more fearefull flame; the Lay-Peeres were so farre from labouring to quench it, that they made it the fiercer: for these Bellowes of Rebellion, which before their Homages did condition for their Rights & Liberties, were not all this while sparing of their breath, to inflame other Nobles with the like heat of fury. Hell it selfe (whence al Rebellions spring, and thither fall againe) could not with a fitter occasion to broach and actuate such a mischiefe. For the Portonins with King Philips conninence, (taking Ros.Houd aduantage of King Iohns absence, and Springs approach) were vp in Armes, dislodged his Garri-

Pompes, to his Transmarine Affaires; for the prefent, he gaue commaund to his . Sene schallof Nor-

Chap. 8. Kinglohn. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 45.

Lincolne . 1 Sec Paiplar 1.15. of S. Hugh, n Para boft, mai. Negligent Po-lysor latch he di-ed, 43, 207. Reg. o Keg-Heatd.

The manner of Bulsops tunerals p Mat. Paru . mere Pontificus p.197. King lahus great

a See Hollinfly Tw K Lehm deny sid to K. Houed f 462.

K. tobus facility to pardon offi ders.

iRog.Honed.ib.

*The prestweld confifted in cat-tle and wooll.

t The Reauteens place on Abbey in Hamphere by New Forreft. u valued(at the H.S.) at 418, 1.6,1 8,d-q*. yearly.

x Camb den i n Hamplbire.

y Exod, 21. V. 14

The first brees King and his Clergy.

a Apud Mat. Paris,passim. The Clergy fold exempsis

fens. 2 Oftheir politi-3 Of their Preb S.ein K. Hesry the r. c Succeffit Iobsomi de Oxenforda in at Oxenjorda in Epatu Narrivie, Ish de Gray, Dani Johannii regu. Hou f 458 Epa-

d Mer Perir

mandy to attempt on them some Counter-services,

manay to accempt on them to the Contentations, to withdraw the Seigers, (whom also King Philip, hearing King Iohn was in par for comming oner with an Army, forthwith recalled, and published his gene-

rall fummons, that his Earles, Barons, and all that held by Knights-feruice, should bee ready at Ports-

mouth with Horse and Armes, on Whitsonday then

instant, to crosse the seas with him. The tumultu-

ous Earles knowing, that the King then needed

their present helpes, and therefore might bee forced

to any Capitulations, in a conventicle held at Ley-

cefter, by a "ioint conspiring, sent an audacious met-

fage to the King, that they would not attend him

vnleffe hee would first restore their rightes; with which disloiall refusal, the King justly incensed, by

fome mens too precipitate aduife, (confidering the hazardous time which needed a falue rather then a co-

raffue) scized into his hands some of their Castles.

to prevent their further attempts, of some he tooke

their children for pledges, and others, whose Purses were likely to doe him truer seruice then their ow-

ners, heez released upon payments. At which prefixed time, he dispatched before him william Earle of

Pembrooke, and Lord Roger Lacie with y two regi-

ments to joyne with Normandies Seneshall. What a

graue Author judged of those bold Barrons here,

and other turbulent Great-ones then abroad, may

bee gathered by this; that as foone as mention fell

in of those refractary Lords, he streight felloff, to

fhew how in that very yeare, Pope Innocent then raigning in Rome, Saffadine the Turke in Ierusalem, A.

lexander the Fatricide in Constantinople, (for so he yo-

keth those three together, with some others follow-

the time (great Doctors preached, that then was the time (great Doctors preached, that then was the time (great peliratus, the Disell was let loofe, to seduce the Nations like a b Serpent, and trouble the world

like a Dragon, which how true it proued in this our Nation and little-World, (in whose Tragedy the

Diucil also, amongst the d first named Actors comes

now to play his part,) the Diabolicall enfuing pra-

ctifes, both of fraud and fury, will hereafter demon-

(14) The King, though thus disfurnished of his

principall home helpes, yet entrusting the custo-

die of the land, especially those Southern parts

with & Hubert de Burgo Lord Chamberlaine, and re-

ceiuing to 8 full reconcilement/for more fecurity of

the Northerne, Geffres Archbishop of Yorke, whose h Churches large Priviledges then he ratisfied; with-

out delay at Portefmouth hee put forth to fea, with I-

fabel his Queene, though in fundry Bottomes, and

with differing successe, a sudden gust disparting the

Fleet, whereby the King was driven backe on the

Ifle of Wight, but the Queene's with much adoe, arrived

fafe in Normandy, whom foon after the King fo low-

ed thither. Vpon whose arrivall, the French King

perceiving the power of his adversary, presently con-

discended to another personall (but very m private)

Parley; wherein each gaue and received fuch reci-

procall fatisfaction in their defires, that thereupon,

not onely the former bonds of Amiry feemed to

cotinue frong, butwere also more frengthned with

a new knot of " Affociation, wherein fundry great

Lords of either fide were by indentment of Wri-

ting, made fuerties to the counter-part, with condi-

tion, that whither of the two Kings did first wiolare the Couenants, all his cautionary Lords should bee released of their all eagiance to him, and become

Leegemen and Affiliants to the Prince offended.

And that the world might take more notice of their

combined loues, they both agreede to contribute to the Holy-Warres, (which now begannet o bee on foot) the fortieth part of the whole Reuenewes of

their Crownes, fending their Pletters abroad into

their Dominions, to encourage all their Nobles &

people, by their examples to doe the like. With

which intercourses, & other coplements, three daies being spent betwitt them, King Philip the deeper

Heurd.f.465. t Apad Teur fbu-rie, die Ajcenfis-nu. Paru.

488

u Houeden.

· Maloulus con-

Rog.Honeden.

By Houed. fo na by Nic.Trinet.

fheweth he de-prived his bro-ther Cufath of Empire and eyes not of life, a Apoc.so.v.7, bv,1.6-8, Supra \$ 1.

e Haned f-465 f Parket in vot. Arch Cant erres in faying it was Hubert the Arch bishop, whose Hubert Waters, glisued f 468, h Ibid, i Hollaf,

b. Met Wellmin k Mat Wellmin, Walfing and yet Hourd faith, professivensia ganifa, I Parit Hiff, mine MS. m Newine tenfcio Haued.

o Houed, f 471.

p Epift.Galfredi Apud Honed.

to serue himselfe into King lohns good opinion, (the *fureft way to ouerreach another in any commerce) by intreaty obtained his company, first to S. Den (es Pallace, where hee entred with a pompous Processification. on of the Clergy, and lodged with royall entertainment by the King, and the next day, to Paris, where hee was received with very rich Prefents of the City, and great applause of all forts, to see so noble ar- rread. News. guments of affection betwixt two fo great princes. lately fo mortall enemies; where the French King betaking himfelfe to a more prinate manfion, left his owne pallace to accommodate and honor Englands King. After some dayes there bestowed in princely delights, and entertainements, King tohn conducted forth of the City by King Ph. lip, and parting with mutuall attestations of love never to bee parted tooke his journey towards Normandy, in ful hope to enjoy thence forward the contentment of quiet to himfelfe, and peace to his Dominions: but those windy hopes soone changed with his change of the airc. (15) For whiles at Chinon hee was roially enter-

taining Queene Berengaria his a fifter (whom b hee A new confpira taining Queene Berengaria us - the transfer the cy, there also bounteoutly fatisfied in performing the cy. as R. Richard: wife I oynture promifed her by King Riehard, gining her & Rog. Hourd. the City and Signiory of Baion, two Caltles, and their Demaines in Aniou, with a thousand Markes yeerelie for tearme of life,) and at " Argenton in Normandy, where hee kept his Christmas, was solacing himfelfe with his faire Queen I fabel; the Earle of March, Hugh, furnamed Le-Brun, ad Peere of great power and alliance, to whom I fabel was first promifed/though for her evnripe yeares he neuer bedded her) enflamed with lone of her, who was now thought worthy to beca Queene, fdrew on other Poittonine Nobles, to thinke that hee was vnworthy to bee aKing, who wrongfully had taken her sfrom him, and would, if not preuented, do the like in time with them. So, honce againe young Arhur, whose former hopes were all cold, is re-kindled to King John. | Many, whole former hopes were all cold, is re-kindled | by thefe fire-brands, and fetry by their malice, | he for the fire-brands, and fetry by their malice, | he for the fire-brands, | he for the f the ancient Great Arthur was rifen againe in him, and that the Translation of the English Kingdom was now by him to be effected. Neither was the k French King, for all his late painted pretentions of loue, deate to their fuggettions, who laboured to incente his harred against 10km; whereto hee had these fur-ther inducements; that King 10km might quicklie waxe too potenta Neighbour in that Continent, if his quiet and power were not timely rebated; that now the meanes to worke it, were more then before, the 1 English Peeres being alienated in affection from him, for denying their claimed Liberties; but m Nucl. Triet. propole of fo Noble a Band) which hee hoped for by his amity (being the manifestation). by his amity (being the mining of those Signiories in the Continent, if hee died fans i spie beginning to give apparant hopes of some faire fruite from 10 faire a apparant hopes of some faire fruite from 10 faire a stemme. Thus whiles Earle Hughout of his love, Duke Arthur out of Ambition, King Philip out of Auarice, (ah that the nobleft person should have the basest end,) but all out of Harred, were contriuing King Johns ruine; hee was farthest from suspicion. when necrest his danger, and yet they, who thus

(16) Butthesessie Serpents shrowded in secret king. their enuenomed heades, till the warmth of the Spring(atimefuiting for martiall mischiefes)called them forth; when King Philip (hauing new- P Mortali small y caft his skinne, and as molf able, so was P most weak, willing to break the way) desired another enterview of with the way. with King John: who commlng thither (the aplace was twixt Fernon and Lifle Dandale) with expectation

were forwardeft to vndermine his Greatnes, were

themselves formost to bee crusht with the weight

*Tute frequents

Ann.1202

g Howed faith her

An other ente iew of the swo bift min, M S. Mat. Paris fath

Galutun Cafile.

(bap. 8. King John. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 45.

Hift.min. Parif. MS. Trinet.M.S. Mat-Weft. Paris bifi.min 34.5. u VV alfing. v Nich Triuet

M.S. Raiph Cochall.

a Raiph Cogfhell.

"Die fequenti, (29 Mat. Westm. & Rog. Wend-M.S.

Stowes Anna

Mas.Parif.MS.

King John for-ceth King Philip to raife his

fiege. d Confufus receffit. Wendower,MS.

e Parifacin bift.

E Mat. Wellmind. f Mat. Westmings g Mat.Paris bist.maiov. h Paul.Aemil.in Philippo 2. 1 Tho Walfing.

k Mat. Park.

k Mat.Park. bift, min. 1 Magno natu mulice, Acmil. m. Idem.

n Paulsa Aemil.

c Mat. Wellm.

b Hiff miner.

z H I maior

Mat Well.

menitifiimum o p M.a.W.ft. q King Johns letter, fee Hollin, Queene Eleanes besieged in Miraben.

t John Serres Paulus Aemil, I Aemil:Polyd, t Westmin:Park

their last meeting seemed to have engrafted; he there found that this last winter had nipt all those faire bloffomes. For Philip, forgetfull of all former Compacts, and pretending some imaginary wrongs, in outragious manner required him without delay to redeliuer into Arthurs hands, all his Transmarine dominions, Normandy, Turayne, Aniou, Poictou;or otherwise as Lord Paramount of those Countries which John held by Homage, he peremptorily "cited him personally to appeare in * Easter Terme at Paris, there to answere what should bee laide to his charge, and to abide the Arrest of his Court of Instice The colour on which hee thus did cite him, was (fay y fome) King Iohus tharpe repressing of some rebellious attempts of Hugh le brun the former yeer, whereof the Earle complained to King Philip, as to the chiefe Lord. King John much amaled to lee, not onely hony to foone diftempered into gall, but the French King also turned into an Apparatour, a disdained both his Citation and Commaunds, as very vnnoble for Englands King to accept, or the French to offer; neither indeed did Philip thus put the matter to daying, as intending any fuch legitimate proceeding, but onely to make his aduersary secure of any other affaults, then by Petty-foggers. For whether it be true or no, that King John for his non-appearance, was by fentence of the French Peeres adjudged to loose all his Territories in the Continent : certaine it is, that *no fooner was the Conference with indignation broken off, but Philip (heé had before prepared to ef-fect what hee had proiected) with power and fury affailes Butauant Castle, whose Turrers (high-reared by *King Richard) hee b levelled with the Foundations, and thence fodainely like a flash of lightning, beganne to involve the neighbouring partes with ranfakings and ruines, till giving an affault, (which had held him eight dayes) to the Castle of Radepont King John comming to the rescue, forced him with shame to speed away. To repaire which dishonour, and to empaire the English forces by distraction of imploiments, returning to Paris, hee there appoints for Arthur (to*whom hee had now affianced his yonger daughter) both certaine selected Nobles to bee protectors to fecure and guard his person, & also bands of Souldiers to attend his command, amongst which were 200, the choice Knightsof France; all which in s very pompout Troupes followed him, with Philips h directions, and also supply of great fummes of money) into Poicton, to reduce those parter to his Allegiance, which was no hard matter to effeet; the greater part of Commaunders there (being fore-wrought)expecting nothing more, and the bet ter part suspecting nothing lesse, then these perfidious affaults.

tion of some fruits of those louely courtesies which

(17) Queene Eleanor Regent of those provinces. attended with a very flender guard, yet ftrong inough for daies of quiet, (which both her! Age did now defire, and her " Homage done to Philip , and Philips faire shewes to her did promise;)having no speedier notice of those incursions, then the vnpleasing effectsthereof, (for on Arthurs good successes, "K. Philip proclaimed him Lord of those Dominions) betooke her selfe into Mirabeau, one of the most tenable townes in . Poitfou, fending to King Iohn (whose forces were then in Normandy and 9 Mayne, repressing or preuenting Philips attempts) for prefentaids. Which yet could not fo speedily come, but Arthur (who knew that vpon seisure of such a prize as Eleanour, hee might draw her sonne to any conditions) had preuented them, befieged her, and possessed himselfe of her towne, though not of her person, as fome by mis-understanding haue mis-related. For the retiring into the Castle, made it good against her Grandchilds incessant batterie; about which, whiles he, with his * continual fupplies of Poitouine and Y Aniouine princes, was a indefatigably bufied, King Tohns Army neere at hand (for his ex-pedition both by day and night to his mothers ref-

cue, is recorded as a dmirable) brought the newes King Island Section 1 of their owne approch; which caused b the great in Holling le in Holling.

Army of the Leagers fo industrious before to Impeach others, no lesse sollicitous now to depeaco others, no lens states martially ranged, & even fend themselues. Both Armies martially ranged, & even arthurs Battalions not onely a undauntedly, but also described to the second states of the second states of the second very e pompoully comming on to the shocke, the fight proped most fierce and terrible, each fide refoluing, by reason of both the Competitors presence in the field, that the End and vpfhot of all their delignes. depended on that dayes successe: which in the end by the fortunate s proweffe of King John and his English, fell disastrouslie on Arthur, his French, and other Assistants, who after a h great slaughter made amongit them, turning their backs to him, from irrium.MS. whom they had before turned their Faithes, tooke their flight towards the Towne to shelter their lines within those walles, which so late the Seat of their triumphes, became now the cage of their captination, and the Toombe of all Arthurs ambitions hopes, though himfelfe fo vnhappy as to furusue them: for together with the tumultuary flyers, the IPV endourn. Oils victorious King & his Armic entred, renued a = most bloudy fight, repossessed the Town, freed his mother, enthralled his Enemies, and recovered all the prosinees which had revolted.

(18) This victory was so glorious to King Iohn, and so dreadful to his Enemies, (for King Philips two chiefe confederates, a Arthur and Hugh Brun Ray-mund, Father to Guido the husband of Conflancia, Pall the Pecres of Poicton and Anion, about 200. qLitera & glie French Knights and others of command, belides the vulgar multitudes were taken prisoners) that both then King Philip, though very hote in the flege of Argues in Normandy, presently cooled and con-founded with newes thereof, brake vppe his fortnights fiege, and returned home; and fince, the French fawning fauourites, and King Iohns maligners haue fought to extenuate the matter, auerring against all truth of record, that it was exploited before the French were come to Arthurs aide, and when all his Souldiers were both unarmed and unordered. But, as others highly extolling king Iohns u So Polyder. valour herein, * interprete those fore-doomes of Merlin to have beene ment of him, r that hee should Constitution have been entered time, I may mee posses, y as etial V. the crowned with the head of a Lion, should out out the mist tongues of Buller, and lay you chaines on the backes of roring Beaffi (and indeed hee "chained them hand and "Veredae". foot and so convayed them away in Carts, a kind of riding till then unufuall with them,) so King Iohn himselfe, a duely acknowledging the greatnesse of Gods goodnessetherein, fent his Letters to all his Barons wherefoeuer (thereby to encourage the loiall, and hold in awe the tomultuous) inciting them to render all prayle onto God for so admirable a worke, and fogratious aftiffance: and foone after b hee difperfed his noblest Captines into fundrie Castles in Norhis noblett captures into under Cantes in Aver-mandy and England; Arthurs fifter Eleanse, called the Damofell of Britaine, being committed to Bri-fiom Cafile, where shee a long lived with coery ho-nourable vsege. And though the kings displeasure was justly incensed against her brother Arthur, for so frequent wavering in his faith, yet meaning to trie all meanes of winning him who had thus loft himselfe, f hee sent for him (being then at Falaise in the custody of & Hubert L. Chamberlain) and In the cuttody of 8 thebert L. Chambertain) and entreated him very gently, promising him all homours-blerefpeits; if as yet) he would rejoine to forfake the French kings amity, and frame both him mind for hearty lone, and his Actions for peaceable observance towardes him, his voncle and Leege Lord. Which exceeding clemency, the ill-aduited young Gentleman (for what wisedome is it to shew pride where wee neede mercy, and to give threates beyond possibility of performance?) h required onely with arrogant and onduitfull language, farion(19 obraiding the king with violent and fraudulent detention of the English

489

d Para biff min. Wat.VVil.

g Paris hift ma.

k Mat. VVell.

o Litera K-leb.

Mat.Well.

Triuce, VV alfid x Trinet. Welfing

d Shee muc. 1241. Param H.; e VValing.

Crowne, which menacingly he there required of him. and allother King Richards Countries, as his lawfullin

the staine of dishonour, especially for Treachery or Co-

wardize: from either of which I wish I could with

truth acquite those two great Barons (whose names

wee will here forget) to whom King John entru-

fled the defence of the famous Cafile called Vall-de

Philippe a. The Peeres fen-

his elder brothers some, being an Homager to the French,

and that within the French Territories, without any le-

gall course nor by cognizance of those to whom it apper-

tained; whereupon hee is adjudged to bee held an enemie

(bap. 8. Kinglohn. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 45. Mat.Patis. " Hogh Garmy. Poly LL: 5 . y Tyod Neuß. z Pol.Virgil. e Mat Paris. *Conflable o c Rog. Wed. MS. f Paris, ad Ann o VV end MS. h De Wende, M. * Sub libera cu-

Ruill; who no fooner faw King Philip " engirding it with his great heaft, and mounting his Engines of battery against it, but estsoones, before one stone of the wals was their heads, they dishonourably surrendred the Fort (a matter of very great consequence) to King Philips pleasure: who though abundantly pleased with the deed, yet so x contumeliously (but most justly, and prince-like recompensed the Deers, for Traytors alwaves become odious though the Treason be commodious,) that, for so base a part he commanded them to be fettered in chaines, and basely intreated in close pri-son, till they had deerely redeemed their liberty, though they could hardly their reputation. Another noble Baron, * Captaine of Cafile Galliard (which being built on a very high Rocke ouer Seyne, King Rich ard had made impregnable) by his vindaunted proweffe, and z great flaughter made vpon Philips hoaft, lying 6. moneths in siege about him, was far from any suspition of dassardie; but yet becaped not the blemish both of ingratitude and infidelity, in that at length hee not onely yeelded up that Castle to the enemies, but allo feereth by night brought them into the Cafile of Montfort, which hee betraied vnto them, not weighing bis faith to his Leege Lord, who had bestowed on him that Castle, with all the honour and demaines thereto belonging. Otherwise for his first furrender, his case had beene more excusable, the famine(an vnresitable enemy) in the Castle being so great, that, as the ^d French Recorders them-seliues consess, when the Women and others of the unferuiceable fort were put forth for sparing of pre mant, and being betwixt the Castle and the Enemies, found pitty and relecte of neither in the fight of them all a Woman great with Child was delivered, and her in fant prefently eaten up. Amongst those, and other of King lohns revolting Barons, like so many falling Starres, if we should pretermit that fixed and bright starre of vnmoucable fidelity and resolution, the Lord * Robert de Lacy, wee should bee guilty of high of. fence against true bosours, who having received of his Prince the custody of the goodly Calle Rocke.

Andely ('which was builded also by King Richard) did brauely beare of the fiege and power of King Philip and his hoalt almost a whole yeare; in which space, though by their continual batteries and vnderminings 8 a great part of the walles were flatted germanngs a great part or the waites were natted, yet they could never make entry you him, but were repulfed with flaughter, till his provision of visituati being now fent to the last hourse., he called "his Souldiers together, encouraging them...gfor fo "long proofe of their "Manhood not to faint now in the "last Act; but to consider, that though it were better for them to die by samine, then to line with reproch of falc or faint-heartedues[le, yet it is more noble for soul-diers to die solsting, then familing, and together with their owne lines, to facrifice to their Countries honour the blond of their slaughtered enemies, Whereupon fiercely * fallying forth with his Refolutes, after a bloody mambles made in the middelt of his beleaguers, hee was by multitude ouerborne and taken; but guers, thee was by minimae outer own a trackers, when he in regard of his exemplary faith and prowesse, maintaining his charge by King Philips expresse command, (a second princely and prudent fact, to discipline his Subjects by thus entreating his focs,) hee was honourably vied, and without refiraint of a prife-(23) But as the fact of this Peere was peereleffe, fo was this Clemency in that King, but rare and vnacto was this turnerly in that was thisly out-flood his affaultes; i ome of whom formerly hee had caused to bee dispiteously dragged at horse-heeles, for the terrour of others. Of which indignites, & the informatics, & the informatics of the terrour of the case of the cas other irkefome extremities, (the infeparable comon him, (especially winter feeson enforcing furceastle of warres) to abandon the place of his iniurious foes, to expostulate in England with his perfidious panions of warre)indured by his people, when King Tohn had notice by Messengers sent vnto him for reliefe and sides, no margaile is it, if his griefe were aboue beleefe or measure, finding himselfevererly deflitute of meanes to relieue their want s, or his owne

loffes; albeit for the time hee bare it out with a manly shew, saying, I that these were but the French pilferings, of which he meant in due time to exact an account with interest. For what else could hee doe? The Normans (to omit those others in open Rebellion) meither wholy fallen away from him, or but dissemblingly adhering to him; his " Barons from home, failing him at his need; his "Nobles there about him, being under pretext of a speedy comming againe, returned into England: by which meanes the King Pwas left very dispeopled having onely a small traine, which could in so great a need doc him but very small sernice: but that thele important and unportable matters a did no whit moue him, nor could retriue him from the bosome of his too-dear Enchantresse, (which occasioned some to think him infaruated with sorcery) is a thing past capability of beleefe. (24) The King thus diffurnished of all helps, In

(24) I ne King enus dirturnined of all neips, In-mocentius, the firring Bilhoppe of Rome, made fayre thew to falue thefe temporall wounds with a fpirituall playster; which doubtlesse made King Iohn more ecure then flood with his good: for, as in fo great distresses, there was no forraine Prince fitter for the King to conbine with, then Otho the Emperor, his owne Nephew, and Philips professed enemy: so the Pope on the one side beginning to bee sealous of othe's greatnesse, mistrusted the concurrence of two fuch great friends, and therefore vndertooke to vmpeere the debates betwixt those two great Enemies and King Iohn on the other fide, willing to make vie and amy form on the other hat, while of the Popes fauour, durft not yet comply with any, whom his Sanctitude any whit distanoured. His Legates for this businesse, were the Abbots of Casmer and Troiffons: his motine, that " these diffentions of Christendom weakned the wars against Turky :his De Cas. Marie colour, * that this contention being a matter of faithcotour, * that instruction design matter of parties breach(as of Leagues, Oath and Cournsats) the cognitive very the same thereof did properly appertained to his facted indicature; whereof hee made so little doubt, as that the I very letter then fent to the French Pecres, is to this day registred for 24 pontificall decree: and this audaci-ous Law then by Innocentius first brought to the world for current, * That when sever one Prince is de-linquent against another, the correction thereof appertaines to the Pope. Their Commission was, a to call the Bishops and Princes of both Kingdoms, for ferling a Peace; to inhibite all hostility; to referue the further triall of the Right to the Pope as & Someraigne Iudge; c to enioyne that all Religious places by the warres destroied, or empouerished, should be restored to their due State; difeither of the Kinges should beerefractary, his whole Kingdom presently to bee put under Interdict. Philip, albeir the Pope was then offended with him vpon other terms, (for that hee simposed towards his warres a taxe of certhat nee imposed towards in water a date of the Popes will alleadging it was necessary that out of their primate abundance, they should beare a charge in the common preservation,) yet knowing the Pope had need of his prefermation,) yet knowing the rope has need of his friendship about setting the Empire, he ment so long to side with the Popes authority, as the Pope would stand with his commodity, & repining to have so faire a prey taken out of his talents, made bold to despile both the commands and the curfes : yet this hee did in (moother fashion then hee had done once before, when he rigourously punished all the & Bishops and Prelates, whom, for confenting to such a Papall censure, he turned out of their Sees and dignities; for now, he happealed from the sentence for a fashions sake, i bur i Pespare. yetviolently proceeded with his warres, and k did fwimme with the full current of his wiferries. The kwand. MS. waves whereof to fast furrounded King lohn, that * fearing also further treason of his owne men, hee thought good, till some better daies would shine vp-

ma òift. n Parifmin, bil

q Met.West t Wend.West. Sortilegy; wel malesteys.ibid.

The Pone inte poteth betwist

Armilius in z Ep,Decretal, a Trinet Ats.

dP. Aemil,

(25) For that was the first worke hee did, after Kkkk 2

his arrivall, (1 which was at Port (mouth on Saint Ni-

cholas day in December) when " laying to the charge

of his Earles and Barons, that in his warres they fuffe-

red him to be destitute of requisite aides, and " had left him in the middest of his enemics, by which their defaults, hee

was thus despoiled of his Castles and Countries; thereup-

pon, by aduise of Hubert Lord Archbishoppe, and

Lord Fitz-Peter Chief Institut (who knew these were no Forged canillations) he put them and other de-

linquents to their Fines, (for his Warres made him

defiretheir mony more then their liues) wherein

these two great Counsellors were 4 ouerseers for the

receits, the one for the Clergy, the other for the Lai-ty) of both whom they received no leffe fummes of curfes, then of Coine. The like repining among the people, (who iudge of the goodneffe of a King on-

ly by sparing their purses) ensued on the grant of a

large Subsidie (two Marks and halfe of euerie Knights

Fee) in a Parliament* presently after held at Oxford,

where the King & Peeres contening about redreffe

of those remediles mischiefs, the iffue ('as seemeth)

was, that Ambassages should bee addressed into

France, two Prelates, Canterbury and Norwich, with two Earles Marshall and Leicester, to treat from

the Body of the Kingdome, touching those Prouin-

ces, which being incorporated with Englands Sone-

raignety, could not without apparant injuffice bee

abstracted from a Nations common interest, upon

coloured pretences against any particular. Philip, ha-

uing 'vpon King Iohns departure thence vsed his whole Forces and wittes, to weary, or to winne di-uers other Cities & Forts; which had till then stood

faithfull (for which purpose hee also imployed sun-

dry instruments, themselves first corrupted, that

they might corrupt others to defection, with great

rewards and greater promifes,) hee meant not now

to re-commence Questions of Right, having already neere decided that point by the point of his

fword: yet because hee was to deale with a migh-

ty Nation, hee would not abruptly refuse to capitu-

late, and yet againe by proposall of a conditions

exceeding either Reason or Possibility, hee dam-

med up all passages to peaceable agreement : * his

demaunds were to hauc either Arthur, whom hee

knew to bee dead, redeliuered into his hands a-

line, or elfe, his Sifter Eleanor in marriage with all

those Countries in that Continent: but those

Statesmen easily perceived that Philips heart, aimed

farther then his tongue, and that with Eleanor hee hoped to purchase a higher dowry, even the English

Diadem, whose claim glided down from her bro-

ther to her; which perchance was the fecret ground

of his Oth, that he would never linne to purfue that

quarrell, till hee had deprined King John of his

(26) This Ambaffage was not onely thus iffue-

leffe, but produced also effects tending to further

irritation: for this feemeth to bee the time when

Philip fent a brauing Champion, to justifie by Du-

el before the States here in England, what his Mafter

had done in France against their King in open warre;

and b though it was not deemed expedient to jeo-

parda Title of fuch weight on the Armes and For-

tune of one man; yet it was refolued the Challenger

fhould not paffe vnanswered, whereto none was

held fitter then Iohn Curey Earle of Viller, (for ere-

bellian and derying his homage to the King condemned

or the state of th

uaged with a too carelesse rudenesse: which appea-

red not onely in his 4 wild speeches, touching the

Kings misulage of his Nephew Arthur (which fome

by errour alledge as cause of his indurant durance.)

but euen now, when the king demanding him, whether hee would combate in his quarrell? A.V.

(quoth he) not in thy quarrell nor for thy fake, but for the Kingdomes right I will fight to the death. Against

which day, whiles hee repaired with large diet his

Parificiana.

Kingdome.

d Jbidew. e Campion bift of

ring of his excelline feeding, and strength answerable thereto, thereby fearing he had been fome Monfler of Nature, rather then a man, hee fecretly fneaked away s into Spaine alhamed to shew his face in France againe Curey finding the King gracious, was hereupon released, and h is said (if this bee not to digresse) to have crossed the seas for Ireland fifteen times, and euermore beaten backe to the shore: (acknowledged himfelfe herein juftly punished of God, neuer againe to fee his owne feat, for difplacing God out of his, when he converted the Church of Prebendaries in Doan confectated to the bleffed Trinity, into an Abbey of Monkes, to the honour & name of Saint Patrick, k whose Image was erected in a stately seat, wherein before the Trinitie was deportracted, which was thence rejected into a private Chappell. The ! trifb relate, that the two Kinges being afterward together (belike when they made the next truce in Erance) King Philip hearing Curey to bee in the English Campe, intreated to see some experience of his so much seared and reported strength: where a Helmet of excellent proofe full farced with Mayle, being set vpon a great wooden blocke, the Earle lifting his trufty Skeyne, first louring round about him with a dreadfull afpect. cleft fo deepe quite through the fleely refiftance in to the knotty wood, that none there could draw it out but himselfe, who did it with ease, and being asked by the Kings, why hee frowned to irefully be-fore the stroke; hee told them, that hee then intended if hee had failed of his blow, to have killed them all, both Kings and others the lookers on. (27) But what Philip could not in England by one

where having a = mighty power attending him fro City to City, yet bee thought faire wordes would bee for himfelfe both cheaper and fafer, and with the Pro-nincials more forceable then force it felfe; especially, where such troupes of armed Orators were at hand, and where golden preparatives had made way with the chiefest. Philip tolde them, "their late Lord had quite forfaken them, and that therefore himselfe, as their supreme Liege came to prouide that his owne Countries might bee indemnified. defiring, them louingly to admit and embrace him as their Lord, fith now they had no o-"ther to protect them from [kath; but menacing withall, that if they forced him to yie force, they fould die no other death then hanging or to be " flead aline: with which fawnings and fears, though many well munified places were fetched off without any refistance, their Captaines violating their faith to curry favour with the French; yet Roan, the P place e-uer honoured for fidelity to the English Crowne (and 9 therefore worthily felected by King Richard to bec the Shrine of his Leonine Heart.) was better fortified both in affection and munition, then to wane vpon parties. Which neglect incenfed Philip to turne his Oratory into Battery, (it being the chiefest City, and therefore of greatest consequence for consumating his victories,) which he continued in a most sierce & ins victories, joint a reconstitute in a most factor of the space of two monethes; but finding it to be with final advantage, hee fell againe to * golden Eloquence, attracting some in special to the space of the s ciall with present pay, and all in generall with ' promises of future inioping all their wonted lawes, and liberties without impairement of amy their commodities what source aduiting them to to reiest those profered conditions, which evelong they would gladly get, when they should not be granted. The Roanists, seeing their dangers, feeling their wants, fearing their ruines, yet defired respite till King John might know their State: who finding himselfe at home as ill bestedde as theirsabroad, his Barons refusing to follow the warres, returned them answere, he could not presently releeve them. Whereupon the "Great men who could fway the multitude with cheaper reasons, then Philips open hand had swayed with them, perz Paul Aemil, is Phil. August.

impayred limmes and finewes, the Frenchman hea-

Champion, he accomplished in Normanay by many; u Rog.Wend. Suis detrellantibus militiam. (bap. 8. | King lohn. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 45. fwaded them to weigh, that in truth they were all ori-ginally Frenchmen, though now called Normans, of that noblest and richest part of all France, and the French king being Supreme Lord thereof, there was no saufe at all of continuing this new hostility, but very many of renuing that antique amity.

y Caput totius Kormanie Rothody thus fainting; who can expect that those few inmagum,Polydor. from Exg! fb allegiance z tohde Serret. to that Aemyl. much erreth in laying Rolls had

ad Au.1103. Tringt.MS.

k Annales Bib.

Pol. Firgil, L.15 " Denis & pro-mi fis ad defection

feriour members, yet vntainted should so continue long? neither did they. So as eftfoones all that Dukedome, one of the goodlieft gemmes in the English Diademe, and disbranched from France lince

b Trime.A1S. Walfing.

Tped.Weuft,

Ann. 1204.

Dic.Truet MS

the yeare eight hundred eighty fine, was againe tent a-way,ingloriously for them who lost it, injustlie by them who got it, but perfidiously by such as should, and might haue kept it. For whatfocuer necessity then, or malice fince hath laid on the King; this Eulogie, and memoriall thereof, written by vnpartiall pennes, will stand indelible on his Subiects, A rege Anglia, Normannia fraudibus fuorum alienata, Englands King loft Normandy by treathery of his owne people. And no leffe treacheroufly dealt Philip with them, when hee had caught them with the trappe of his glofing proffers(as such Princes more vinally then princely, fquare their promifes to others liking, their performances to their owne) cauling without delay their Cities goodly wals be to be vitterly demolished, and gi-uing strict charge that they should neuer bee built up againe. The other neighbouring Countries, Main, Turaine, Paicton, who were all forerunners in the rebellion, would not be now behind in the finall reuolt: Angiers in this more happy, that shee fell away by others falshood, not her owne, when stan-ding on her guard, "William de Rupbus cladde his choice Souldiers upon their armour in the habite

(28) The Head, yea and Heart of all Norman-

and other furniture of market-men, who so getting accesse into the City gates, made easie entrance for;a greater hoast, which soone after became absolute Lords of all Anion. (29) Wofull experience had now taught King John a lesson fitte to be learned of all Princes, whom the fawning world enftyleth most Mighty, that this their might is not onely lyable to the checke and dif-

g FVend.MS. Parifhift.min. Od.S. h Cosfball, i Wendower.Paris k Cosfbal.Hollin.

pose of that Highest all-ruling power, who vnthrones them at his will; but euch depends of the waying humors, and wils of those * inferiour vasfels, of whom they thinke themselues varefistable Commaunders. But King John was not vnfenfible eyther of his forraine dishonours, (though as 4 often as hee endeauoured to redeeme it, by lenying any Army, furcable to fo greata deligne; fo often was hee croffed by his own Nobles) or of those his domesticke affronts; which notwithstanding, by counfell and affiftance of his better affected, & truer hearted friendes and subjects: at length chee gathered a Royall Hoast and a mighty Nawy, (therein 14000. Mariners fome fay) with full resolue to reuenge his wrongs, and repaire his losses. Which great enterprize managed with vnmoueable determination (for now with full fayles, and fuller heartes at Port(mouth they were ready to embarke) brought to the Kings further knowledge, and to the worlds, who had beene all this while the fecret vnderminers of his fortunes, and hinderers of his imployners of his fortunes, and hinderers of his improy-ments. For Hubert's the Archbifbop, and Papall Legate with many others, (amongh whom, "fome find Wil-liam Marshall Earle of Pembroke numbred) thither comes vnto the King, and flatly forbids him to proto coniect the true cause and reasons of this audacious Prohibition; but if wee consider on the one side the Popes vie of Philips Forces, to counter-ballance if nced were Othos greatnesse; on the other, the interest which both the Pope and *Philip had in Huberts affection: wee may without Huberts 1 dimining Spirit prie into the mystery of his secret workings, as an Archbishop, and now open commaund as a Legate to hinder King John, for feare of hindring King Phi-

(30) But whatfoeuer was the reason, Hubert was the Infrument that fo refolute projects, fo m inefti-mable charges, fo necessary an action fell fodainely to the ground, whereby, besides the selfe milehiese which therewith fell on the King, many fresh grudgings accrewed vnto him, for fuffering himfelfe to beethus violently repulfed from so behoughful a purpole. The Archbishoppe and Ararshall as principals were rewarded with the " curfes of the dilmiffed multitudes, as the just fee for their valuat counfell; and the King himfelfe was fo little pleated with fo vnexpected a countermaund, that albeit at the present, (either awed with the authority of the Papall Legate, or with the weight of his coloured motiues, or with hazard which hee might leage behind him) hee durft not withftand it; yet o the very next day, checking himfelfe for overprizing the commaund of any man, about the value of his kingly honour and flate, hee P refolued to recollect his disparkeled troupes, and to * put forth to Sea. To which end, taking order for his Nobles to follow, they gaue him leaue 9 with a finall company to waffe of star paris, vp and downe two daies in expectance of their attendance, till feeing them more obsequious to Huberts commaund then his, (the Archbishop pe also fending his Inhibition after them on the fea) hee bift.min.mis. was forced to come agains to land. How a King of any royall fparkle, could brooke fuch Sea-and land-Tempelts, without disgorging his Kingdom of the causers therof, I cannot conceine; and yet so vneuenly doth some mens judgement poyle, whose affection guides the Beame, that this defeating of the Kings weightieft affaires, is cenfured as 100 light to faped Mat. Par. deferue the punishment which insued, when the King put many of his Earles, Barons, Knights, yea and Clergymento a grieuous pecuniary redemption for thus refusing to follow him for recourse of his Inheri-

(31) The Archbishop though their Ringleader, might wellhaue beene exempted from this judgement, by his passage to a higher, dying, (if some erre not) the very same weeke, eyther of " griefe, or of a rener, which killed him in four edayes: but they king forthwith in person at Canterbury seized vpon all his wealth and possessions, shewing himselfe right ioyfull, that now hee was rid of him, whom men fulpe-Eted of too familiar practifing with the French King, & faying, hee was never a King till now, by reason of Huberts too presumptuous daring to crosse his royall refolutions as late hee did. But this loy and hope of happier daies, was soone choked and buried in the same Toombe with Hubert; out of whose Ashes sprang vp a roote yeelding more, and more bitter fruites, then King John had as yet tafted, by how much more lamentable are the wounds which are in the bowels and heart of a State, then those which onely light on the skirtes or imore remot members. The first feedes of which falt growing mifchiefes, were to the very fmall and contemptible, and the Sowers of little better regard, being but Cloistered monkes, who craftily factious to advance a privat friend, (which once mounted into Hubers chaire, might befriend them againe,)they gaue a deadly blow, both to themfelues, their Sourraigne, and the State in generall. The *yonger beads amongst them (whose vnexperience makes them in acts of Societies more foreward and daring) having fecret notice of Huberts death, e meant by a flight (whereunto they doubted not to find the Popes furtherance) to defeat their Soueraignes interest in that Election, (and perchance in all other, ever after) of a Primate for the See of Canterburie, the most important place of his Kingdome. * Regimald the Sub-prior of their Couent, One (as you shall heare) fitter for their projects, then for that

n H*allinfb*ı

p Rog, de Wend,

Hubers dyeth

u Polydo. x Vis: Arch. Cant

Archbishopp Huberts end the

The Monks of

*Adolescemiores

Mat.Wellmin

* Trivet MS, cal

place, was the man they chose, and that at a mid- a wend, MS. night, when finging Te Deum, they lifted him first Para west. de. vpon the High Altar, and after into the Metropili-tan chaire. They ought to have first obtained the

Monkes for their Mothers, till Innocentius to his

Alban, a Castle of much renowne, (as being repu-

i Wend Me

(bap. 8. Kinglohn. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 45. way so much money,) had a gathered of the Clergy a shaft meg. huge masse which in full chessive hee comayed to Mat-Puris. MS. Rome. Yet all these domesticke grudges abated not putedk inexpugnable, and now the Rende-now of his most potent enemies, and all their flower of Chiualry, bee gaue a terrible affault thereto for 15. dayes together; where at last his 1 Englishmens, valour was for the Kings due care, nor yet his good hopes, which 1Parif. aduenturous in scaling the walles, and both giving and were soone after much augmented by the encoutaking blowes unportable, that in those few dayes hee ragements of Othors Imperiall presence, b who in entred Conquerour into that very place, "which Charles the great, could not get with his feuen yeers fedge.

The "multitude of Nobles therin taken was so great; n Mat.Wellmin person arriving here in England, to proice for his owne and his vncles warres, was with great loyes met by the King, and conducted through London aVV end MS. that hee fent into England a bedroll of their names. by night, where all the City was feene inher glory, & all the streetes adorned with richest hangings, beautified for a memoriall of so great a victory. Which auspicious beginnings he seconded with no lesse expediall along with the luftre of pendant Crownes, and burtion, prouidence, and prowelle, in the fiege of Anning lampes: who after some dayes of royall entereiers, where on his first approach, hee o gaue present tainements, hence departed not unfurnified with instructions to his maine Army, suddenly to enuihelpes to defray his warres. ron the whole City, & by affault to feeke entrance (36) Whiles King John is thus bufied about his The Poper beopen hossilities, Pope Innocentius is plotting his se-cret Stratagemes against him at Rome: where, like vnto that "other old Boman, who, being chosen umgianing of wrong stowardes King John. * Q. Labes inter Nelan. & Neaps ar the walles on every fide, whiles himselfe and his selected band, with fire and Engines would affaile the Gates; where with great celerity, and no leffe hazard then hardineffe, breaking through, he bepere touching some march-lands betwixt two neighcame Lord of his owne. But what loeuer were the bour Nations, unpartiall to either, adjudged it citer, offic 1,1, from them both to the Romane State; for hee now, being Arbiter betwixt the King, Bilhops, & Monks, Citizens demerites, pittious it was, that their offences, and the Conquerours wrath, lay to heavy on those stately walles, as P to throw them state to the ground; which halty doome, (it being the gradle of his birth, and City of his chiefe delight;) hee as hasticoncerning their choice, hee means to defeat them Paul. Acmit. all, and * adjudge the right of disposing thereof to Hot decipere e his Romifb See. Therfore, at the * fore-limited day of hearing, his first care was, that the 4 Bishops lippes ly (and very deerly too) repented, when with excelfine expenses her encircled it agains with a beautie farre beyond the former. These faire successes, humfor ener should bee sealed vp, (notwithstanding their e allegations of Law, Reason, Decrees, and Practise,) fro intermedling in choice of their own Primate. Wil bling all the Country before him, cleared his paffage into Picardy, whither King Philip was now conyou heare the maine reason? because himselfe, and some other Popes would have it so. Which definitive sen uerting all his power to oppose himselfe against (Dated 19. Cal the violence of this Torrent, which - now more fatence being flent to the Prelates into England, it was P.Acmil. cilly hee might stoppe, having in his way by laying servet ambussiments, laid hands upon Duke Guido, Sauary, and Almericke, King Iohns principall hopes, thought a point of prudence allo, to spreame the King and worke him pliable before hand, to entertaine that which was to follow: which must be done by amigMat.Paris. that which was to follow : which must be done by ami-able lines, and gemmes, wherewith he knew the King was much delighted. His Prefent, being 4. gold Rings, with four precious stones, an Emrauld, Saphire, Ruly, & Topase, he so vainely & childithly (though signoas they were bufily advancing his prefent affaires: by which furprize, though the Englifh forces miffing The Popes pre-fent and letter King Ishu. their Provincial aids, were greatly impayred, yet their great hearts were not much amated, as the French men found, when both the Armies neere approarance enftile it eloquence) celebrateth in his * Epiftle, * Iohu Stow in Annal.
Epill Innecent ching ouer night, the next morning alacriously they for their number, forme, and colour, that no man will question whether it were dictated with an Apostoaddressed to the fight, and with great spirits on each side expected the Signall. Notwithstanding, the day queltion whether it were dichared with an Apollo-licke Sprine. The Rings Remainfig must remem-ber the King of Exemity, the Based at number of Con-luncy, and other four Cardinalo service, spline, Far-titude, Frederice, Temperanes, the Colds sprint, of mylloames, the Fame and agreement fig. of Easth; the Sa-pines to rightness, or the Colds sprint, of the Tricky the Trajest active reading fig. of the Tricky the Trajest active reading fig. of the Tricky the Trajest active reading fig. of the Tricky the Trajest active reading fig. of the Tricky the Trajest active fig. of the Tricky the Trajest active fig. of the Tricky of Constitution of the Tricky active fig. of the Tricky of the Tricky active fig. of the Tricky of the Tricky active fig. of the Tricky of the Tr likely to proue dreadfull with expence of bloud, vpon earnest interceeding of s forraine Prelates and religious persons, who vndertook equably to compose allthings; both Kinges condescended to a twoyeeres * Truce, King lohn chiefly out of affection to his Captine friends, whose liberty was formost in the conditions. (35) Hauing thus setled those Countries in farre K, lobu retu: to England, better termes then last hee found them, he embar-ked for England; where hee laid not aside a carefull ing by the sequele, they were but baires to beguile him, esteemed the Popes Gold as drosse, his lewels as Lewish fraudes, and his love as most rancored hatred. For (though distastfull) prouidence, for still bettering those his successes: for which ends, whiles from his fhortly after came to his notice, the most indigni-Subjects (both Lay and Clergy) he = gathered money, the snewes of warre, he loft their affections, the ioints ous injurie, which the Pope meant to obtrude vpon him and his Kingdome, having not onely hunted of Peace; whereof Geffry Archbishoppe of Yorke (his both Remard and Gray out of their holdes, but also imposed upon him, for the chiefe place and mana-Naturall and vnnaturall brother) was a principal inging of his State, one whome hee reputed a chiefe centiue who x folemnly curfing all the Kinges reand dangerous Enemy to himselfe and it; which z Mal. Parit. ceivers within his Province, fled secretly out of the land. Which peruicacie, *a bitter enemie of K. Tohn. thus was fetcht about. yet bitterly taxeth, saying, the English Bishops were farre from that dutifull observance towards their Souc-(37) The Monkes freed from the Bilhops im-* Deul . Aemil pugning, were hote how in the strife amongst themr aigne, which the French Bishops perfourmed to theirs, at whose commaund they maintained Souldiers in his warres elues : the s one fide against Reyners election vrged it wanted Royall affent, the greater and founder part of Electors, due folematites, due * time: the other, against Norwich, that no second election could be valiwhoje commannatury maintained somaters in mis warres againf King John, acknowledging they were so bound to doe, as often as the King purfued the warres in person; though now also they didit, where hee was not in person. And indeed how hollow-hearted to the State those gannt commen, max no jecona election could be vali-dous, vniesse the former were forst annussed. Both their Reasons pleased well the Pope; who (as pre-pos-sessed sudges often vse) made show of a great distimoney-murmurers were, their * owne friend belessed indiges often vie.) made inew or great as genee in pondering the Plackings, whereas himselfe long before had resoluted on his Sentence; which was, that by Appsibilish depinitive dome, myther of the Elessify Bonde new becapable of that Sec. So great rubbes hath the Pope with so little breath blowne Met VVelle bewraieth, shewing, how with curses they wished, and prayed to God, that these exactions might never have a my good successe, though they knew it was purposelie for preserving a maine part of the Kingdome, A disloyalty the more vnfufferable by the King, knowing out of his way. The man who leaduancement al this that but a very little before, the Popes Legate, Io while hee had aimed at, was now commended to * Fiorentinus, nick-named * Ferentinus, for bearing &

m Iden.

" 10 Cal. Jul. Paris 15. Mat. Westmin. 12 Rog. Word, MS.

Primate, Stephen de Langton, a Cardinall, English by birth, French by education and affection, one of fo k transcendent power in the Romane Court, that the Pope was thought not for love, but for enuy, (as being himselfe eclypsed by his necrenesse) to have wished his service in some remoter dignity. But the Monks ill apaide with what was done already, and very tremulous to enter matter of new intrications, alleadged against all further courses, that 1 no Canonicall Election could be there made, they having confent neither of King nor Couent; at which word the Pope inapping them vp, bad them know, that " he had there plenitude of power over the Church of Canterbury; and besides, that no consent of Princes wsed to bee expected in Elections celebrated where the Pope was: hee therefore charged them under paine of his high curfe, (aterrible bug-bear inthose daies) there presently to choose him for their Primate, whom himselfe thought good to nomina; e vnto them. Thus trembling vnder the cracke of his Thunderbolt, they (all mexcepting one Helias de Brantfield (whose constancy shall perpetuate his memory,) durift not for feare but elect him, though very vnwillingly, and with murmurations: whole * Confectation followed by the Popes owne handes

at Viterbium, and his earnest recommendation by the Popes "flattering letters, to the Kings fauourable acceptance. And this was the vnbleffed beginning

of those new miseries which brought the King to

his ending, and his Kingdome to vn-reportable cala-mities; all which, little did his Holinesse or his Cha-

rity reckon of, so his desperate Policie might take ef-fect. Yet not viduely fell those judgements on ma-

nie Princes of those times, who neglecting the do-mesticke execution of Supreme instice, suffered their

Subjects, at fo high a rate both of expense and tra-

uels, to buy fuch arbitrary and dangerous formes of a

Pope, the one occasioned by King Johns and Philips

of the Emperour, that where in elections voices are e-

quall, or concord wanting, the Pope may gratifie whome hee pleafe: vnto which wee now may adde a third

no leffe arduous & infolent, that the Pope may firike up

Elections, both where, and of whom, and with, and with-out what confent him lifteth. Which lewed obtrusion,

that it galled the King to the quicke, wee need not

maruaile, if wee ballance in one feale, the Popes

meere will and pleasure; in the other, the dishonour to

the King (thus to be triced out of that, which so ve-

hemently, and with his owne presence hee took care

to fee effected;) the prejudice to his Crowne, to be

defeated of Soueraigne affent; the hazard to the State.

to haue his * Enemy (a Phillippine, and French fauou-rite) the *chiefe man ouer his English: besides wrongs

more particular; as both the difgrace to his best-de

feruing Counfellour, the difloyalty of the Monks, first, to choose without his licence, then to mocke him

with a fecond choice, next, to beguile him with oaths after to trauaile upon his excessive charge, and last-

ly to doe, and vndoe all, with their periure. With all which so farre the Kings parience surferred, that

he beganne on them to difgorge his wrath, who with

him beganne these affronts; proscribing first all those Monkesas? Traytors, and afterward writing "his aletters to the Pope, with relation of those great wrongs to Himselfe, and exceptions to

Langton; vowing immutably to stand for his own

Elett, and to die in defence of the Liberties of his

"Crowne; putting the Pope in mind, that Rome

"reapt more gaine from England, then from all

"the Trans-alpine Regions; threatning also, if he

were now croffed in this, hee would stoppe all from crossing the Seas to Rome, nor would any longer emendicate their forraine Iustice, sith

" his owne Kingdomer, so abounded with Bishoppes

forraine, and falfly-named Iuflice.

(38) Two very prefumptuous Lawer hathone observed to have beene first hatched by this lawlesse 2-1,6.
Pope Invecentius
his three fittange
awes. formet strife, that Princes delinquent must bee lyable to correct ion from the Pope; the other, upon the choice

The wrongs of-fered ynto King

them, who must be there presently chosen for their "and learned men of most accomplished perfection "in all professions,

(39) If, when this Kings Father vttered some fuch threats to Gratian the Popes vaffall, hee then replyed : Sir doe not threaten vs, for wee feare no me-naces, because wee are of such a Court as wieth to be imperious oner Emperours and Kings, (which as a remarkable Apothegme, Baronius lets forth in greater letters;) we may then guesse, how this great Lord of that Court did himselfe brooke such tart saluta tions. Nay the effects bewray it : when in his fublimed t Reply , hee fnebs the King for comminatory obraydings, and contumacious malepartnelle; and "threatens him, that if he do not, by referring himfelfe wholy to his good pleasure, locke to deserue his Grace, hee should plunge into those difficulties. whence hee should hardly euer get forth; intima-"ting, that himselfe (being wnworthy vicegerent to him, vnto whom every knee in Heaven, Earth, & "Hell must bow,) must in the end needs have the vpper hand; and that to relift him is to oppugne God himfelfe and his Church, for which glorious Becket spilt his bloud. These were indeed bloody words; to affright the King with expectance of more fuch blowes, and bloody stripes from Rome, as had lighted on his Father. And hee threatned no more then he acted; for thereupon, hee " fent his doubled Apollolicall command, the one general to all the Prelates, for fubmitting and adhering re folutely to Langton, the other, to fome * particular Bifbops, for a conventing the King, and interdicting his whole Kingdome, if him they found still contumaximally rebelling. Neither was hee more infolent in the command, then they in the execution, wherby (on 7 a day ill fluiting so worker fliss an Action) this flourthing Church (though the King had (worne their banifoment, and confifcation it they did it) was deprined of the very face of Christianity for many enfuing yeeres; as if, not Innocentius Christs Vicar, but Iulian his professed Enemy, had mured up the doores of the Christians Temples for despight of their

(40) But this High-Priest had forgotten what a-nother * taught him, and * he himsefe sometimes thought, about interdicting France for their Kinges offence; that better it was one flould fuffer then 4
whole Nation perifb: whereas now, for the Kings only crossing the Page and Alexander whose A attomperate, whereas now, for the Kings on-ly crossing the Popes good pleafure, God is confured to loofe his worthippe, and all the People to hazard their foules, * living almost like Inflates, without Gods fernice and belfed Secrament, yea and dying white dogger tumbled into enery ditch. But what did uch wofull effects fasten onely on the Layty? The Clergy bare their part too; whom the flames of the Kings inftly incenfed wrath did so scorch, that his Dominions were too hote for their abode: for their b persons hee proscribed and sent packing to the Pope, their reuenewes, hee confiscated their Bishoprickes, Abbeyes and Priories; hee deputed to Laymens cuflody: their women (for such as had not wines, had Joseph For the women (for fuct as near not writes, near Lemmans) were dearly ranformed: and curry where they inferred wrongs without ordinary protection of Inflice. Whereof, though our * vulgar perfunctary Writers produce no other reason, but the onely ouerflowing of the Kings gall, as if first stirred by fome few delinquent Bishops, through furious re-uenge it ouer-whelmed the whole Clergy; yet indeed these were but the due chasticements of their generally difloyall hearts. As (to instance) when the King fent his mandate to S. Albans, that not regarding the Popes commaund in the Interdict, they (bould continue the celebration of Gods service; the Abbot calling his Monkes into the Chapter-house, perswaded them to obey God rather then Man (meaning the Pope rather then the King)and to beare resolutely the Kings anger,* whom God in due time would bring to an end. What maruaile then, if the Clergy carried to generally with this streame of a forraine vsurped power, against Gods service, and their Soneraignes

Earon An.1169 ST Itere Talleres

An. 1208.

" BB.Lond. Ely, Wigorn. xParis,biff me.

The Munda

Caiobar Telm

a Vide apud Wend & Paris

c Ex libro S. A

"Dabit Dem ba quoque finem.
a conning fpeci indifferently touching the

rally involved in that reward of their disloialty. And yet, euen in the Clergy, many of eminencie detested thefe cruell and irreligious courfes of the Pope; d Phi Ip the Bilhoppe of Durefme, and his Successor, with of BB.Lib.S.AL. ban, in vit. Abb. the Bishops of Norwich and Winchester, heartned the King to contemme the Papall curse; the * Cicestertian Abbots (neglecting the Interdict) continued their diuine celebrations, till the Pope suspended them for their contempt; Alexander * Abbot of the Benedictines, a Diumc of * exquisite learning f publi e Literarum ole shed in his Sermons, that their present calamities were no reproch to their Souer aignes proceedings, but due rewards of the Subietts hainous trefpaffes, because kings Mat West. ought to gouerne, yea and strongly bridle all disobedient Subjects whomsoever; but as for Popes they ought not to intermedle in the civill affaires, and regiment of any Princes over their vassals, seeing Peter himselfe recei-ued no power, but onely in matters appertaining to the Church. And though the *Pope were reuenged on him for his plaine truth, and some Monkish humors ty and itaings. have afperfed other fuch men with bitter reproches, yet what may bee thought both of these the Pope courfes, & of fuch his oppofers, a late Iefuite(no par g Parforagaine tiall man to Princes) sheweth saying, t that many, and contractions. centius had not stood so hard with King Iohn in such a point as this was, for contenting him with a person grate-full onto him in that See. And no marvaile they so wished, seeing that was the graund cause of such infinite confusions, factions, and wrongs, hurrying so indignely the Prince Peeres, Clergy & Commons the very contemplation whereof to all godly wife men must needes bee gastly and rufull: yet welfare those Anathematizing Bishops, the Instruments of al these euils, who patiently endured vider the name h Parif, Omni-modis viscutes i of Exile, to line the while abroad in all varietie of de-(41) Such perplexities in the People could not but breed as great hatred and hazards to the King who therefore to preuent the iffue of fuch discontents,(which though causlesse, yet kindling in the multitude proue often vnquenchable,) hee i requi-

godly defire, and due authority, were likewise gene-

multitude proue often vindentiable,) nee reduit red of his Nobles new Oathes of allegiance, pledges of fuch as hee most suspected, and homage of all Free-holders, even of twelve yeers old, whom he dismissed with a kiffe of peace. Mildoubting also the Popes further intent to absolue his Subjects from their due allege ance, hee gathered about him (by *example of his Father Hemy on the like ground) a mighty Armie for all occurrents. The terrour whereof hee first displayed in the North, offended (faith 1 one) with * William King of Scotland, for marrying his daughter to the Earle of Bulloigne; for receiving (laithmanketh. m *Parù biff.ma.* other) Fugitines, and enemies of his State: for throw ing down (faith a "third) a Castle built by King Iohn against Barwicke: but whatsoeuer were the breach, the cloze was amiable, each accompanying other to Tork, where King williams two daughters were promifed to King Iohns two fonnes, and P deliucred p Wend. MS, qParif-kiff.mi. M. S. but as pledges of vnited loue, with a q gift of nine thoufand markes. The dread of this his power so gly-ded out of the North into the West, that vpon his VPendsu. MS. faith xi, (not ix. return, the Princes of wales, and others rich co poor came to him at Woodstocke (the like thing neuer heard of before) to doe him homage. But all these linkes of allegiance were soone crackt by another thunderclap(from Rome) of Anathema on the King by Name, with strict injunction for all men to abandon his presence: which sentence being sent to bee disulged by the Bishoppes and Prelates in England, al of them for feare or fauour of the King, were content to neglect the Popes commaund, and let the Apolloike f Rog. de Wend.

processe escape without execution. The fame yet

thereof was in all mens mouthes, but came first (as

feemeth) to the Kings Esres, 'by a feruant of his fowne Exchequer. Coffry Arch-Deacon of Norwich, who feeretly perhvading his fellow-officers, that they were boundin confeience to velinquif the Kings fer-

k Parifabiff.

Trinet MS.

n Rest islid.

milles. x Mat.Paris.

wee, gaue them example himfelfe by leauing his duty and charge; for which hote-braine tricke, hee was put in a * Coole of lead, the weight whereof (as a punishment of his leuitie) soone hastned his end in prilon: but the greater and wifer fort, both of Nobles and others, continued their due attendance on their Soucraigns Court and perfon, without regard

(42) Those Romish furies thus infesting all at home,gaue also courage & oportunity to il-affected mebers further offsome of which in Ireland having furfeited long of the Kings Indulgence or absence, * beganne now to play the Kings themselues. The no-ble spirite of this Prince in his tender yeeres made choice (on bended knees to his Father, in presence of Heraclius Patriarke of Ierusalem) rather in deuotion to conduct an Army against the Turks, then in Ambition to take possession of that goodly Kingdome. Bur being now possessed thereof; and intending (by a kind of compensation for his losses in France) to annexe and affure that Kingdome to the English Crowne, hee resolues with a powerfull Army to quell the disturbers, and resorme the disorders, of his first, and long vnuisited charge. Whose approach such fame and dread did forerunne, that more then twenty Petty Kings of that nation haflened to Dublin, there to honour his * arrivall with their fubmissive attendance, homage and oath Parif. of alleagiance; others, eyther vpon confidence of their good holds, or diffidence for their ill defertes, their good noise, and fome of them, the Country. The x two Lacies (whole onely prayle was, that they were the fonnes of a nobly-descring Father) having been, through ambition of Sourciagnety, the nauing ocene, introduced a monitor of a small of the fountaine of dangerous garboyles, (* tyrannizing ouer the Commons, and making away fuch of the Nobles, as shood eyther in their light, or in the Kings fauour) fled into France, where they lived in * an Abbey as poore Gardinars, vntill the Abbot de-ferying by their deportment fome state aboue their habite, when reportment to note take about their habite, when penitent humility reconciled them to the King. The Lord William de Brenfe, (a* Baron latelly of great commaund and wealth in the Marches of Wales,) shewed not the like penitence, nor ot Water,) increed not the like penitence, not found the like grace, who, vpon * refuâll to de-liuer his fonne as a pledge of his fidelitie, fpedde into Ireland to flie the Kinges wrath, and now, to auoid his pursuit, fleddeallo into France, then the common Santfuary of all trayterous fugitiues; but fharpe reuenge ouertooke both his Sonne and his Lady (taken in a ftrong Caftle of Meth) whose virulent and rayling * tongue had more exaspera-ted the fury of the King (whom shee immodefuly reuiled as a Tyrant and Murtherer,) then could be pacified by her strange present, *(foure hundred Kine, and one Bull, all milke-white, except onelie the eares, which were redde,) sent vnto the

(43) But b Catalus, the viquiet King of Connaught, trusting to his owne Forces, King John Subdued by strong pursuit: e and after all carried him captinud in triumph, imprisoned the English Fugi-times, tooke pledges both of English and trish inha-bitants, punished by death malefactors, turbulent persons by ransomes, established all their Lawer Coines, and Officers, to the English forme, and deputed(which was worth all) a wife, front and vpright Gouernour ouer them, the Bishoppe of Norwich, Langtons competitor: thus fetling on that barba- Peru. rous Iland to noble and ordered a face of gouernement, as was the stay thereof in those tumultuous times, and a patterne euen to more peacefull ages to imitate. By which both glorious and * fpeedy conquest and reformation, hee better merited that Style of Irelands Lord, then when it was confirocyrevitesamas Leva, unen winen it was confiirmed to him by a Crowne of *Peacockes feathers profit, solve from the Pope, at what time(long before) het inioyed it by his Fathers gift, as his Broad-Seale (here nor a Phenis feathers). unfitte to bee annexed) will shew.

(44) The

*Capi Plumbel

u VV estmin. Ann.1210 Non obstante Semenna,ibiden

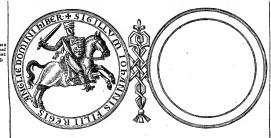
en ad Reg. leb.

S. Taurim.

*Hift.Cambrell

*Wamished/for

Old Chme. of



An.1211. King lebn fubde sch Wales,

cuftody, Lib. S. Alben, MS. d Hift of Cam-

e Thidest f Parifbift.mi. SVS.

g Hiff, of Camb

h Pol Firgil. i Parif bill.ma.

k Rog. de Wend, MS.

n English Chro.

(44) The Banekes of King Iohns estate, were not valike to those in Grounds ill-neighboured with an encroching Ses, where before one breach is well made vp, another no lesse dangerous is laid open: which endles turmoils kept his Body still in Action . his Minde in passions, and his Propelle in vre. The his Ainde in painons, and nis Provelle in vic. I ne vaste expenses of his Irish expedition were no sooner repayred (by a *great taxe charged on all the Con-uentual houses) but Lewylin Prince of North-Wales, with his great spoiles on the English Marchers, made new matter of charge and exploit for the Kings 'hauing, to preuent due reuenge, caused his Walliams to concey all their cattell and better substance to the fearce-accessible refuges of Snowdowne Hill. These difficulties much more whetted and excited the Kings resolution; neither had the vertuall power of the Popes fulmination as yet so blasted his good fortunes, but that hence also hee e returned in great Triumph, as Conquerour of all Wales, where, with won-derfull celerity and valour, hee' fubdued all their Princes and Cheefes, whom hee received spon Oath, homage, and hoftages, with an absolute & graunt of all their Inland onto the King for euer. Notwithstanding, per-ceiuing that h very many slipt away for dread (at least for colour) of the Popes curse, from those his neartical not colour for the Popes curry, from those man-martial and other smill fermices, (though 'thee puni-fhed by fine all fuch Reuolters) whereby his person could neuer bee free from danger, nor his State from trouble; hee refoluce (feeing the Pope vulles-ible, & vnsensible of so many Christians calamitic) at length to relent from his vowed stiffenes against the Popes Elect, in hope so to settle his owne and his Subjects tranquility, though with vnfufferable indignity to himfelfe. In his returne from Wales, two Nunces from the Pope, Randu'ph a Subdeacon, and Duranda Knight Templar, meete him at Northampton to make the attonement: 1 whereto he was so propense, that hee accorded to assure vnder his Scale, that Archbishoppe Langton with the Bishoppes, Monker, and others, should bee restored both to his fauour, and to their possessions; that, holy Church should have all the Franchifes, as in Edward the Confessors time: that hee would neuer take any thing of holy Church against the owners will: but, because hee = would not also make full fatisfaction for all confilcations, and other emoluments received of the Clergie, (nay, hee could not having expended all his treasure in his continuall warres,) the Cleargy and their Factors (the Legates) more prizing their prinate gaine, then the weale publike of their Natius Country, contemned the fweet proffer of peace, & exposed all to the bane of a renengeful contention. For hereupon they did not onely a denounce the rot netcupon they did not onely "denounce the eurse upon the King by name(which the Prelates before durft not doe) and upon all other who consensed with hims but, as if hee had most occusamaciously contemmed quietnesse, by their relations they incensed the Pope (too procine of himself to set forth his own greatnesse) to put on him a fairer more indignous proposed for the processes of the pro uing all Kings and People, poore and rich, having depen-dance on him, from all Fealty and Subjection to

(45) This being the third steppe, whereby, both the Popealcended to the height of his viurped pomer, and mercileffe revenge, and the Subjects + daylie descended from their loyall observance, made king Iohn more circumfpect to strengthen himselfe, both with an Army no leffe faithfull then powerfull, & alfo with the loue of his Neighbour-Princes. King William of Scotland, 9 at this time infefted with a dangerous rebellion, (ftirred vp within his Kingdom by one Gothred, I laying claime, under color of some antiquated title, to his Crowne) being himselfe infirme with age, fent his sonne Prince Alexander into England, to crave affiftance of King Iohn, who (by his owne princely loue and readinesse, to demerite theirs,) resoluting with his Army in person to cha-fice the disturbers of his trusty Confederate, before his setting forth, did on the Table in a selemn feest, (which hee kept in the Hospitall of Clerken-well) ad orn Prince Alexander with the belt & Order of Knight. hood: and afterward with his hoaft vanquishing the Rebels advanced their Chiefe-leader farre higher then his owne Ambition expected, and left that Kingdome in a fetled peace. But whiles he is thus kindly carefull in suppression of anothers Rebelles, Fraises of the his owne at home are as vnkindly vigilant to vndermine his State; the Popes Absolution, like magicke fpelles, having let loofe many tumultuating Spirits,

which will not easily be laid again, For the * Chiefes which will not callup be and against out to among the Walliams, whom neither breach of their as Welfs holder, nor losse of their notes holders, ("which get larged at the callulation of the schale parents singles) could be schale parents. foone after perifhed for their parents finnes) could deterre, fuddenly fell off from the King, and fell the conference of the conferen liuered to him(as hee late at meate) from his faithfull and gratefull friend the Scottifb King, & instant others from his daughter Ioan, Prince Lewylins, ady, both giving him intelligence of imminent Treasons*plotted by sundry of his Peeres, who meant exther to murther him, or betray him to the butchery of his foes. Which dreadfull notices from so true-harted Informers, could not yet affright his manlie heart, till comming to Chefter, hee there vnderflood by fundry other Intelligencers, that his Nobles held themsclues quite discharged from his allegiance; and knowing that they wanting fidelity, he

Ann. 1212.

Heller Best.Lit

Parishil me

(bap. 8. | Kinglohn. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 45.

Sentence of de-position of King

z Rog. de Wend MS.

Perif biff,ma.

Mat.Parp.ad

The Frenc

himfelfe could not but want fecurity, hee difmiffed his hoaft, tooke hoftages of his Barons, purited * Figuratur, Profession on trages or mis parons, purmuse the detected Configurators, and * the three principal part for them flying the land, he profecured their perfons, demolifhed their Caffles, and confidence their perfons, demolifhed their Caffles, and confidence their perfons. possessions. But many of as vile and virulent affections they left behind them, as that * trayterous A& of those Nobles bewrayed, who sent to Philip of France their fealed Charter, promising to settle on his head the Crowne of England, if hee would come to receine it. And that the mindes of the vulgar should not beeynpossessed with like expectation of Iohns vn-crowning, the prophetics of an * Heremiticall wifard (foretelling, that on the day of A feen lion, King

John should bee no King) were buzzed into their eares. Whether by Gods inspiring, or the Deuelles, these were reucaled, * some doe doubt; but hee that confiders the quotidian impostures of these times, and the secret machinations of the Pope, the French King, and the English Barons, all for divers ends, complorting against King Iohn, will casily perceiue both what vie there was of suborning such a Prophet, to deterre the popular maynie, from flic-king to the King, and to beguile their credulity, as if the thing were to be done, by Gods fore-appointment, and ordinance, and also * that his punishment by death as a Traiterous Impostor, was no other

then he deferned.

(46) Neither is the Popes reuenge thus appeafed, tome higher greeces yet remaine, on which his Greatnesse, and greatnesse of his holy rage must display it selfe : the vnderprops whereof (a thing almost incredible) were not onely Englishmen, but
English Bishops also. For Stephen Langton with the
BB. of London and Ety (thirsting after reuenge though with the destruction of their Country, & blood-fied of innumerable their Compatriots)going to Rome with complaints on the King, y made humble supplications to the Lord Pope, that hee would numbic juputcations to the Lora to the total tope, from the work fafe in a touch of pieus toe compassion, to support the English Church, being at the point of ruine. At whose earnest sollicitation, the tender-hearted Pope (grieuously) lamenting the desolation of the Kingdome. of England,) decreed by folomic fentence: That King John hould bee depoled from bis Kingdome, and that the Pope should provide some other, who should bee deemed worther to succeed. To effectuate the former clause, Innocentius eagerly pursued the latter, sending speedy letters to (whom but King Iohns most mortal enemy) Philip King of France, a requiring him to undertake the labour of the dethroning King Iohn, with no leffe reward then pardon for all his fins and entoying of the English Crowne to him, and his heires for euer. A goodly large patent both for a spiritual and remorall Kingdome, which (more like Mars his Priest, then Christs Vicar) he meanes to scale with a deluge of Christians bloud. For not thus yet satiated, hee transmits his Letters generall: 2To all Potentates, Souldiers, men of warre of allnations, to figne themselues with the Croffe, and to follow their Captaine Philip for the deicction of King Iohn, affuring all that their assistance (whether in Person or Contribution) shall been o lesse meritorious, then if they visited our Sauiours Sepulchre. That this Pope vnder colour of such Crusadoes, did formerly cloake his own Auarice, his bowne Monkes auerre; but here hee cloakes therewith both his Pride, and a far more fauage vice, the thirst, not of mens gold but of their h V Tondano M bland. In which feruice with King Philip, hee vied the same English Prelates for his Negotiators, which were before his Solicitors thereunto; with whom also he sent his Factour Pandulph; e giuing him in private fecret instructions how to manage every particular of the whole designe, to the most behoofe of the holy See.

(47) The French King likewise receiving from the Archbishoppe and his Associates (in a d councel) the Apostolike sentence; was very apprehensive of that imployment, whereto not fo much the Papall comå Rog de VV end M.S. maund, as his e owne ancient malignity, and the Eng-

lift Barons traiterous requests, had prepared him; both which he was now willing to maske with the spe-ous pretext of instice and denotion. Vinder which colors hee had * speedily marshalled an immense Army at Roan, & drew a mighty Nauy richly furnished to the mouth of Seyn, *alhis Dukes, Earls, Barons, Knights, & fouldiers being summed to the exploit under painof hie Treason and differizing who therforeboth in feare & hope of fpoile cameflocking without number.

(48) A preparation of fo great importance, that all Christendom tooke notice of, could not long be hidden from King Iohn; whose care, by reason of his now doubled opposition (forrain & domestick) could be no leffe for his owne and his Kingdoms fafety, then was his Enemies for impugning both. Wherfore his Summons being *fent to all his officers both for Sea and land, for speedy furnishing both of a Natire, & an Army, equivalent to encounter so powerfull an Inuasion, such a innumerable multitudes fivarmed to Doser, and other harbours for landing, that the Chiefe-leaders for want of prouision, dilmissing the rest, bencamped at Barham-Downes, onely with 60000 choice, valiant, and well appointed men who, if they had carried all one mind, and true affection who, if they had carried duone mind, and trie aljection towards their King, and safegard of their Country, there breathed not any Prince wider heaven, whose assault Eng-land had not beene able to repell. And being no worse appointed for a Sea-fight, his intent was to graple first with the French Fleet, * making no doubt of finking them all: so secure and confident was he in expectation of all inuaders. In which brave addresse, whiles both fhores of the Sea are thus belaid with both those Kings puissant Armies, the one waiting for the Enemy, the other for faire windes, and more forces, behold Pandulphus (the Popes Pragmaticke) having first desired safe conduct of King Iom, arrives at Douer, to put in execution those serves Instructions which his Lord (who made his advantage of the | Mat. Paris, Foxe-skinne, as well as of the Lions) * had expresty pre-Gribed. He there vnfoldes to the King, the innume-"rable mallitude both of King Philips Jappes, and of
"his Souldiers Horfe and Foote, (all in readinesse to
"passe, and yet more expected to follow) to bereaue him of his Kingdome by Apostolicall authority, and to enjoy it himselfe with his Heires for "euer. That with him were also comming all the English t xiles, both Clergy and Lay, they, by his forces to repossesse their estates (maugre the king) "and hee from them to receive allegiance, as from
his fivorne Subjects. That hee had the fealty of almost all the English Peeres obliged to him by of arrayning eafily his wished successe: which calamities (the more vnfufferable, because imposed by his infulting enemie, and his owne Subjects) he might yet cuade and retaine his Crowne, which by Sentence hee had already loft, if penitently hee would submit himselfe to the Churches judge ment. Doubtleffe the straites whereinto the King faw himfelfe plunged, were very dreadfull; so many deadly enemies abroad to affault him, so few trustie friends at home to guard him: which droue him into this fad cogitation & that thefe his perfidious Peeres would now with their followers abandon him in the field, or betray him over to the Sword of his Enemies. Yet not unlikely other motiues also might forcibly perswade him to relent : the remembrance of the Emperour Othe whom this very Pope (not without fould blot of I niuflice and " Leuity) had both eagerly aduanced, and furiously disempyred; the boundlesse furess of the Crusado promulged against him, where-vish this Pope" viceto ouerflow, as with a merci-lesse Ocean, all such Princes as withstood his will, which once broken in would neuer end, but with | touch the end and ruine of all. Thus thinking it better to yeeld to the time, with affurance both o of his Crowne, and of the P Popes fauour, then desperatelie to hazard Life, Crowne and all, to his immortall

499 f Triut. AtS.

*VVend.Ms.

King thins pre

* 2.Martii, Paris

a Wende . 345.

* Wend Pari

Papa forman

k Rog, de Wend.

l Parif. hift. m m.Met. VV clim. n As Serres show eth in Ludau.8.

foes; hee redeemes his fafety on fuch conditions, as p Mean. West.

13. May.an.reg. 14. Paru, Wendo, q. Mat. Paris, bift, min: MS, r Sec Wendover. Parus testmin. Triuet. Walfingh *Stare mandath Damini Papa.

Paris bift-mir.

u leh-de Serres.

Necellity and the Pope (both which have no law) lifted to impose; and so presently swore to submit in all things to the sudgement of the Church. By vertue of which farre-stretching Oath, Pandulphus afterwards exacteth his subscription to a * Forme of Peace pre-feribed by the Pope, wherein King John, though with an onwilling, yea a bleeding heart, and weeping eyes, yet will he, nill he, must acknowledge that touching all thinges for which hee was excommunicated, hee had absolutely fworn * to stand to what soever the Pope should command. Secondly, that the Archbishop, Bishoppes and Monkes, with all the rest of that list, should with satisfaction also for all damages) beereflored both to their possessions and the Kings fauour, fo that they also would fwear not to attempt any thing against the Kings Person and Crowne. Wherein wee see that King John in swearing to obey the indgement of the Church, was concluded to have fivorne performance of what sever the Pope commanded; and how great matters the Pope can com-maund, King John, with much more * bleeding ams-* V fque ad Spiri ritude of (birit, shall quicklie see and feele. For two dayes after (being the * period of the Hermits proplars, in Douer, by the Popes commaund in his preor-dination at Rome, taking off his Crowne from his head, "Invigilia Afcen-fionia, May 15. Parif. I Perinde, ac Innosurrendred it into the Popes handes by his Attur ney Pandulphus (at whose feet hee also laid his Sceprer, Robe, Sword and Ring, the Royall Enfigness, fubscribed also to another * Charter, whereby hee resigned his Kingdomes to the Pope, professing hee did t luxta quod fuerat Rome Sentenit * neither for feare, nor force, but of his owne free will, and in the common Councell of his Barons, as having in Phol. Augusto. x See Wend, 81 no other way to make fatisfaction to God and the Church Paris,
*The Pope com-mounds the king to aucire vafor his offence, and that thence-forward he would hold his for mo of tener, sout not incince on we a new woman woods.

Crown as Feodory to the Pope, paying a penfiton annual of

1000. Marks for both the Kingdoms of England & 17eland: whereupon doing komage and fwearing fealby to the Pope, hee did withall deliver fome money (as the earnest of his subjection) vnto Pandulph, who throwing it to the ground, did thereon tram ple with his feet, to manifest his Masters greatnesse. That these things were done in presence of some Pecres, who gaue no consent thereto, appeares by Henry Archbishoppe of Dublin (the very principall man in that Assembly) who both imparally grieued thereat; and openly disclaimed and gaine-sayed it.

(49) The Pope formerly pretended he sought

a nothing more then I shus repentance, and b grieved at nothing so much as Englands desolation: but these his

circumuentions bewray he fought fomewhat elfe

which bred both repentance and defolation to King

Tahn and his Successors long after. Which fact can-

not beeliuelyer paralleled, then by another doleful

accident of the former yeare, e when a dreadfull fire

in Southwarke, confurning the Church & buildings

neere London Bridge, fuddenly (whiles numberles

people flockt on the Bridge, either to bring fuccour

or seekesafetie) the fire by a wind seized also on the

hither end of the Bridge; wherewith*multitudes

thus encompassed on both sides, miserably peri-

fhed; where at length some bringing their Barges

to faue the reft, their crowde was fo great, that the

veffels finking, more perished in the water, then by

fire. King tohn, like those, was in the middest of

two ineuitable flames, on this fide his faithleffe No-

bles, on that, his mercilesse foes; when the Pope

thus proffering him S. Peters Boat, for a safegard

fro both, drencht him into as great mifery, certain-

ly greater Ignominy then both the other. Wherin

yet the Pope doth not want his share and shame; a-

mongst his owne fauourites, some accursing that his

prescribed Charter, asd lamentable and detestable; come,

denying it was of the Popes procuring, but that K.

John had long before made a vow of descrion, that

if God setled him in those Kingdomes he would de-

dicare them both, and make them tributary to the

See Apostolicke. But some other (great pillers of the

Papacy) stepping further, f anow it to be veterly on-

true, that King John did make his Realmes thus tribu-

v PariChill ma

b Graui merere confeitus,Paru e Ex Record. S Maria de South. Paris hift min.

diss. Polid.

wite Factington writes that 3000 were found dead and balfe burnt,

The Romaniks centures touching the Popes
thus dealing,
d Legabrem, deteffabilem,
Mat. VV cflm, ad.9.1 f. f Six Thomas More in the Suptary to the Pope; or " that ever such pensions were paide to g campians, bifter of ireland. Rome; or h if hee fo did, or any other English King thould so doe, such an Act to bee of no validity at all; or if it were of any force; it ought onely to lie on King Iohn, who soffended, and not on any his Successors. Sur The More. Doubtlesse, if the Papall Sword had power to cut Education. off King Johns regality for any offence, his Crowne was to have descended to the next Heire (whether Henry his fonne, or Eleanour Arthurs fifter, then aliue) who, as they were not guilty of the fault, so neither confenting to the refignement. Some therefore haue imagined, that k fuch Instruments might k Edmund happily then beemotioned and drawne, and yet die vorratified, though the copies stand recorded; but whatforuer were then done, that the Pope himfelfe (not onelie those his friends) were thereof ashamed will hereafterappeare.

the Crowne for his Master the Pope, Philip is fitting his head to weare it, and was now fetting forth his Nauy to winne it, for himfelfe; which made the Legate/hauing after 1 fine dayes feyfin redelinered the Crowne, but " not yet released the Censures, till carrying with him eight thouland pound, as part of restitution to the exiled Bishops, where comming to King Philip, hee aduised him to dismisse his heast, & enterprise against King John, as being now an obedient and reconciled Sonne to the Church, But Philip who was of the Popes mind not caring for Johns repentance, but for his Kingdome, which now hee loft beforc he had gotten it," fretting exceedingly to fee himfelfe not onely fet vp for a stale, and made to the World an object of scoffe, by the Nunces guilefull collusi-ons, but also by the Popes own inticements, plunged into fo excessive a dammage, (having spent, beside his great travalle in this preparation, 60000. Crowns, wherewith hee purchased nought but senses, trofoued, and professed, that sith the Pope himselfe, had so fare thrust himon, his Legates suggestions (no nor his threats of excommunication.) [hould not draw him backe from his intendment. In which refolution q calling his Peeres and Nobles into a confultation at Sue Jours all the rest approuing the course, Ferdinand Earle of Flaunders (part of whose Country Philipby force detained) told him tartly, that 'as the attempt was both uniuft, and impossible, to it was fitter, every mans right should at home be restored, and instice imbraced, before they attempted to teach duties of piety to others abroad. And, that he oughtrather to thinke of making resistution to King I ohn of those transmarine Countries, which hee withheld vniustly, then of inuading his Realm, wherto bee had no right at all. With which vnexpected reclamation, " the chiefe Peeres beganne to waner,& Philip enraged, bidding him defiance, farbad him his Ceurs. The like rough vlage (nor *long before) found * Reginald the moft valorous Earle of Bulloigne (though his daughter was married to Philips younger fenne,) whom the French King perceiuing to with well to King John, I drove him willly out of his Earledome; but King John, receiping him with honourable compensation of a fayre reuenewes in England. held both with him and Earle Ferdinand, a fure (though fecret) confederacy: So that now Philips rage, and feare to hazard his owne Crowne, if feeking anothers, hee should leave so neere an Enemy at his backe, diverts the course of his Ambition into the streame of his Resenge, and resoluing first to subdue the Earle, (after which fuccesse hee might more fafelie paffe into England, thee commands his mighty prepared Namy to let footh from the mouth of Seyne towards Flaunders, where himselfe with his forces (meaning to subdue the country in their way) would meet them by land. Whereof King John hauing speedy intelligence from the Earle (who, knowing his meanes too flender to beare off the Kinges fo long prepared power, defired his prefent aide) without delay dispatched his * Fleet, to pursue them who intended to pursue him, vnder the conduct of

i Polyd.Virg.1.15

(50) Whiles Pandulphus is thus chaffering about conditions were performed) to haften into France, mParifielt,mi. p Ioh da Serret. t Parifhiff. mit Serres Suppol Feedinand and Reginald fell off at one time, but our English Writers, Paris, Triver, &c.fhew the contrary. x Paul Aemil. Mat.Paris. y Roz. Wend. MS King Philips

Sarisbury, William Duke of Holland, and Reginald Earle of Bulloigne; who with happy gales surprizing the French Nauy at the port of Damme, (whiles most of the French Souldiers were on land, dispoiling the Earles Country,) seized on them all; "three hundred of which shippes, laden with prouision, Armes, and other costly fraught for what foeuer the King and all his Nobles held dearest was therein,) they sent for England (whither at first they were bound) and about one hundreth other they burnt, or funke for

and his confederates) difmiffing his power, as: fe-

cure of any French attempts in hafte. Wherefore

now, with full purpose to find him worke at home.

who fo bufily fought it abroad, hee forthwith fent

(with large rewards to his Flaunders Army) finftru-

ctions also to the Earles, how to infest Philip on that

fide of France, whiles himself entring Poictou, would

the like on the contrary fide, and Otho the Emperon

on a third part. A dangerous plot and league, if the

iffue had beene answerable to the designes. For

profecution whereof, & King John attending at

Partsmouth with a noble Army, in hope now that

all true English, would gladly embrace so fayre an op-

portunity, to recour their hereditary Prouinces

from the false French, his Barons restles themselues

in procuring his vnrest, and enuying that his forrain

vexations being thus passed, he should want dome-sticke, slatly oppose themselves both to his com-

maund and their Countries good, h denying him

(vntill hee were as oyled of his excommunication,) their attendance in so behouefull a service. Those men

in the heate of his former troubles with the Pope,

thinking fuch troubled waters most advantageous

for their fishing, 'recommenced their contention with the King for their long-defired Liberties, wher-

in because they found him still as immoueable, as

themselues were immoderate, it seemeth, though

the cloake of their now refusall were Religion, yet

their spurre was Reuenge; having withall an eye

to the good of the king of France, whom so well they

had before loued, as to wish him King of England

But King John, being no leffe earnest to further the present generall cause, then they their particular

ends, delayed not their defires; and k defpeeding his

Charters and fafe-conducts to the Archbishop and

from the ground, and leading him by each Arme

to the dore of the Cathedrall Church (where, at re-

hearfall of the 50.pfalme, all his Nobles and others

wept for ioy ,)after in the Chapter-house they did ab-

folue him; but with fuch guilefull Appendices of

Oathes imposed on him, that this affoilement was

not fo much the Epilogue of his old, as the Prologue of

(52) For the Prelates, whose best abettors the

difloyall Barons had formerlie beene, meaning now

to beethe like to them, amongst other Oather then

taken of the king (to o defend holy Church & Church

men; to make due restitutions to the Clergy; to bear

his new Tragicall vexations.

(bap. 8. Kinglohn. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 45.

King Johns refo-lution to turne the warres vpon A Trivet SIE VVend,MS. eParis,bift.min

f Mat. Paris. bill

* Of soe flips, Mat.Paris. MS

a Paris bott min. | a three brase Generals, his brother svilliam Earle of Mat.Paris. Truct. AlS. (51) This Nauall victory produced effectes in the two Kings to opposite as were their affections; the done, with anguish of his irreparable last and ignoming, hasting backe into France, to preuent further danger, and the other (loyfull of his own fuccessed).

h wendower, M:

his fellow-Exiles, hee as speedily, * arrived: 1 at whose presence the earth is said to have trembled; but (doubtlesse) King John did; who hearing of his com-17,Cal,Aug, Wen MS, 1 Libr.S,Alba ming towardes him (then at Winchester) went to meete him and those other Bishops; at whose fight vit.Ich Abb. Archbishop Langton arrive = hee fell downe at their feet with flouds of teares, intreating them to commiserate His, and his Kingdomes miin England. m Parn.Wend. feries. Vpon which a great humility in a King (mouing them likewise to bedew their eyes,) they lifted him n lidem.

The King al-fol-ued from the fentence of Ex-

The Archbisho sides with the Barons against the King, o Mat. Parif. bift.ma.

p PVend.MS. A guilefull oath

Barons can picke, fequels will shew. Now all exceptions feeming to bee taken away, which might hinder the Kings deligne for France, hee once againe at Port/mouth haftens to embarke his hoaft; game at Portymour nations to entouries in toutes adialed by n where, at the point of passage new impediments are preceded, a that the people basing spent their money withlong attendance could not be stitled for the services. uice except the King would doe it out of his Treasure; which moved the King in anger, with a fmall traine of his owne attendants, to fet forth to fea, and his Barons (Philips true friendes) to depart home, leaving | The Barons leave the king (who at Gersey expected their comming) destitute of their service. With these so often trecherous delufions, what maruaile, or blame, if a King, and in so important an Action, thus defeated, were enflamed to take due reuenge? On which purpose the King thus rensposed to returne, resoluting to chastice his subjects audit those rebellious Spirits (the causes thereof) and to reclaime them to due obedience by force of Arms, the Archbishoppe(resolute to bee as tough a Bridle to the Regall power, as euer Hubert his predecessor was, came vnto him, to divert him with Argument, that it was a breach of his Oath, for him to take Armes against any man whomfoeuer, without the judgement of his Court. But the 'next day, seeing he could not thus preuaile with reasons (the King forbidding him to intermeddle in matters of lay-indgements, and five aring that hee traishift min.

would not forbeare for one * Clerkes pleasure to tame his M.S. owne vasfals) hee followed the King (who was on his way earnestly following his intendment) deterring him with threates, and vowing, "if out of hand he did not defif from his purpose, he would excommanicate all (except the King himselfe) who durft take Armes against any whomsoeuer, till the Interdict were quite released. So quickly did this Prelate on his comming into England, shew himselfenot onely a faithfull Philippine, (as the King foresaw,) and a

faithleffe Baronist (as these his darings proue) but euen another Pope, to threaten and perfecute the King, fith Innocential had left to doe it. (53) But these threates of facred Censure, though they dash the whole course of Regale government, may feeme the more excusable, hee having some co-lour(though but a colour) thereof by reason of his

vocation and place: the courses which some after he purfued, will not admit the like plea or pardon with the King. This English Pope, having in a * pro-missions Spoole of Clergy men and Barons, granted by Indulgence, that in this time of Interdict, both Conuentuals and Seculars, might in their Churches celebrate divine fervice, fo it were with a very low voice; fingled out the Barons into a 7 very private con-ference, (more cordiall perhaps to them then feruing of God.) relating with much oftentation, what an Oath at his affoiling the King, hee * compelled him to take, for restoring good lawes, and antiquating bad; to which end, a Charter of King Henry the first being lately found (which there hee shewed and caused to bee read) by it, they might, if themselves would reduce to the pristine estate, those Liberties which long they had lost. Both Charter and Counfell being received with * great applauseanding, a Confederacy was stricken betwixt the dio magne. they all swearing to him to strine for those liberties to the pending of their lines, and hee promising them his most faithfulland ottermost assistance. Amongst so many falle to the State, probable it is, that some were false among themselves, by whome these secrecies might come to the Kings eares; who finding himfelfe by both Clergy and Lay-Peeres combining against him, vnable to reuenge his forraine, or re-

way to ouertop them all, then by that high Hand, both Prelate which himselfe was first subjected to them il. How this must be fercht about, because it con cernes his Holinesse, a learned Monke shall relate in fealty to the See of Rome.) cunningly allo inserted this, P to establish the good Lawes of his Predecessors. his owne Language. The King knew and had learned by manifold experience, that as the Pope, both for Amto abolish all bad, proceeding with all his Subjects ac-cording to the just indgements of his Courts: Out of bition, and Pride, went beyond all other mortall men: So likewise, he was in his greedy desire of riches so unsawhich generalities, what good stuffe the Prelates &

(Rog. de Wend.

S Proster tours

confpiring a-gainst the king.

Apad Templum Pauli Losdon.

Rog.de VV and

Gavifi fant gav

The kings plot prefle fuch domesticke indignities, knew no furer to oue

a Matham Paril

tiable, that with money eyther paid or promised, hee might

be wrought like waxe and made plyable to all wicked acti-

ons. Thus having the true length of the Popes

foot, he fittes him accordingly with rich presents,

ped for: by whose b arrivall the King seemed to be

itches (Ambition and Auarice) as his Mafter, and

therefore King John knew how to demerite his fast-

neffcand lone, by supplying him with likedoint-ments; whereby the Archbishop and Barons soone

perceived, that the Legate was wholy Regall, and

the King Papall; which icalousie made both their

Actions more distassfull. The Ouert and professed

end of his comming, being to release the Interdict

hee first tampered a little to accord the King and

Prelates upon concurantes of Restitution towardes

which, though the king offered ten thousand marks,

yet the Prelates(f repining at the Legates * partiality

to the King in approuing that offer,) schole rather

toluffer the whole land to grone under that unchri-

ftian, and truly-ftyled Curfe, then to defalcate any

iot of their couetous demaunds. Vnder which co-

lour, the Popes Agent, (a fitte helue for such a hat-

chet,) brake his mind so the King of a more fecret &

principall eause of his Legacie, which was h for the

contriuing of a more validous and vnexceptionable

conveyance of his Kingdomes to the yoake of Ro mish Soucraignety; pretending doubtleffe, (as Pan-dulph had done) that i hee could never be safe or quiet,

but under the powerfull protection of the Popes winges.

What iust exceptions the World might take to the

former Graunt, his Holinesse was not ignorant; it

being an Act in the King, both of manifest Periorie

against his oath at his Coronation, and also of * Con-

firaint,* Circumuention, and * Feare; hee being dri-

uen thereto by the Pope himselfe, who had set vp

both the French power, and his owne Barons a-

gainst him; an Act of one * actually excommuni-

cate, as also were the * Witnesses conversing with

him in that action, whereto, as neither the * next Heyres, nor the * Clergy, nor * Body of the King-

dome, gaue any consent, so an * open difelaime there-

of was made by the very & Principall man there pre-

fent, in the name(as is likely) of all the reft : and that

all was ingroffed with so many groffe * untruthes, as if done most voluntarily; without any feare or force; in

a general Affembly of the Barons; onely by a divine in-

spiration, and because the King had nothing fitte to pa

leffe abulions; and therefore if now the King stan-

ding on calmer termes, can be wrought to ratifie his

former Graunt, though the dealing bee more fraudu-

lent, yet the Act will sceme more colourable, be-

cause sauouring of lesse constraint, and more free de-

notion. But if we looke with an unpartiall Eye, wee shall see both the plight of King John, and the action

of Innocentius, still like it selfe: the Interdiction still

burthening his land; his Barons more molestious to

him then fortaine foes; his Prelates greedily gra-

ting on him to empouerish his meanes; his Arch-

billiop stopping all proceedings against forraine or

home-bred enemies; and if hee had thwarted the

Popes commaund herein, hee forefaw farre grea-

possessed of those his desires, before his golden let-Rog, Ward, MS. ters arrived at Rome to crave them. . (54) For this Legate was infected with the like

The new Legate king lobe. c Parithift-min. e Summanere

b' Circa f-flum S.

502

Mat.Paris regia, &c. ibid. gNic.Trinet.MS. * tiere interdiffi vfque fatisfattum effet ad plenum.ib. Word.MS.

i VV estmin.

Exceptions of ı.

> 8. Q.

IO. Archbishoppe ĺi. preferibed by grami.

The Pope renounceth hinfult

tiple Godfor his finnes, but the giaing away of his KingCharter, & feels

domes: Well might the Pope blush at these fines flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the fine flowers

The Pope blush at the flowers

The Pope blush a

King lebes lent conditi ter flormes at hand, then hee had hitherto escaped. Thus in defire to fettle his Kingdomes quiet for his owne time, and in hope, perchance, that his Succesfors would(as fince by dinine bleffing they have) vindicate it againe from such an enforced flauery, hee condescended to renue his * Charter of Subjection, knowing belike that his expresse * reservation to himselfe and his Heires, of all due administration of Iuflice, all Liberties, and Regalties, (as being excepted out of the Graunt,) was forcible of it selfe to make it unforceable. For how hath hee his wonted power of Iustice, who was supreme, and is made subordinate how his wonted liberties, who was absolute, & is made Homager and Pensioner? how his fore-vied Regalities whom another may name, and command as his val fall? Yet this Charter, adorned with a Golden Bull (fitte for the Roman * Phalars, whereas the former was but fealed with wax) was at a meeting in Saint red men in a Paules Cathedrall Church (1 pretended for other bufinesses about the Interdict) presented for more authoriticke solemnity at the High-Altar, where, in the King and Legates presence, the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, himself also both a Cardinal and a Legat (in this acting the office of a front Patriote, and noble of Canterbury ap The state of the s presented at the same Altar in solemne manner, his ad An. 1231. In Appeales againft that Charter for secredule to the whole optimisme world as likewise formerly be had offed all possible ender world as likewise formerly be had offed all possible ender wor to distort the kings bart for stat placetion to the Paper are warmed to the possible of the possible ender when the possible ender we have been always to the possible ender when and Court of Rome. That the Peeres of the Luna account of Rome. That the Peeres of the Luna account of Rome. That the Peeres of the Luna account of Rome. That the Peeres of the Luna account of the Rome and the Rom then in Appeales) both the Kings owne P letters to the Pope laying, they openly professed, that they forci-bly made head against him, because hee had so enslaved his land, and their owne bitter exclamations against it, to frequently in 4 Authors reiterated, doe demonfrate: and yet both the Archbifhop and other Ba- 4 Dated at Dorons, are so cunningly named in the Popes : Tran-Fins, are to Chiningly named in the ropes True-ferips, asifthey had not onely been prefent and at Apply, their mines at the doing, but allo appropries of the deed. What comfort then had Immeentius of renouncing What controt then may immercant to the Surely his old Charter, and thus fluffling for a new? Surely but little, it feemeth; especially when he saw both control is and control in the control is and control in the cont Difficulty a receivery exposury when a second of the come constraint in England thus oppugne is, and christian Princes abroad; yea King Johns' mortall emiles, who not onely denied, that England (not withflanding this Translation) "see any partiment yet (Parish), the Peters, and condemned the Pope for bolding as errors."

M. S. Peter, and condemned the Pope for bolding as errors." so pernicious to all Kingdomes; but also vowed to die before they would yeeld, that any King can of his owne will, make his Kingdom Tributary, and his Nobles slaues to others. By which vniuerfall deteftation, of this the Popes vsurping, it is not improbable (though for the present hee flourished the Transcript thereof Christ, and Melchisedech being Kings and Priess, and that therefore in one person of Christ view, as the Soule and the Body fo both Kingdome and Priesthood did now concurre,) that yet ere long hee was no leffe ashamed of this latter, then of his former Charter. Whereto well futeth his testimony, who writes that a Parliament was held at London the yeere 1214 where the drickilloup fate as Prefident with all the Cler-gy and Lafty: wherein by commandement of the Pope, the Charter, Fealty, and homage by which the King was obliged to the Pope, was abfolutely released on the 7 day of Iuly: which if bee true, no margaile if the Court of Rome cannot produce, though often chal-lenged thereto, this Charter whereof io much they vaunt. Notwithstanding some vnquier Spirits, afpiring long after to the Papacy, though pretending (perhaps) the * Originall Charter was confumed at yous (where the 7 Pope caufing, some fay, his owne Conclave to bee fet on fire fo have a pretence to extort a ontribution from the Prelates there in councell, the fire not this. went farther then hee meant it should) they made | 2 See Palliane fome flourish to renew their claime of homage and Roller, temped,

The new Char-ter to the Pope. Dated 3. Octo. Salus noss &

nus. oParif.bist.min. uer,5. Septemb.

Offeb.311214.

o Author Eulogi

z Mat.Park, biff maior. Au; 1845 y idem shid. Could el e tory fire, and

Chap. 8. King Iohn. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 45. fine yeeres I ruce, and return to bridle them at home, The Barons nev pension, till in a Generall Parliament, the Prelates, Lords and Commons, fenerally and joyntly a enacted that for formuch as neither King John, nor any other King could bring his Realme and people to such thraldom, but

The like answer

See Cambden in Hibernia, 9.732.

h Baueden m Henrical. ad av. 1111. f Para in H.1.

could bring his Realme and people to just invaluom, our by common affint of Parliament, (the which was neuer done,) and that in so doing hee did against his Oath at his Coronation; besides many other causes of just exception; if therefore the Pope thence forward should attempt any thing therein, the King with all his Subiects (hould with all their Forces and powers refift the same posturith at their Forces and powers regist the fame, and rather hazardall their lines and linelyhood, theme-dure that volurpation. If Pope Pafchall (in the time of King Johns grandfather) having with much folemmity made fome graunts to the Emperour Henry, and confirmed them with ane Anathema, with the deathes of thirteene Cardinals, and with ereligious receyuing of the bleffed Sacrament; yet, because such grants were thought prejudiciall to his see, folemnly disclaimed his owne Act, and such his doing was aproued by a Clergy Councel, as pretended to be done B by feare : how much more justly might King lohns Successors and his State, by such approbation of their grand Councel, free themtelues of those seruitudes wherewith by anothers vniust, forced, vnwarrantable Act, they were supposed to be ensettered?
(55) Though the Archbishoppe were so vnkind

An. 12 14. The Popes dif-pleasure against Stephen Langton. h Matt. Parm,

i See Innecenti m thiden

Rigidos & aus-ros,f Mat. Parii. bift ma. n Parii,hift min.

• The King had paid 17.thoulan before, and was to make it vp e Nic.Trinet.

6 Aurtos Inch 1 3,14 dies. r Lit.Regit leb. apud Wendau.

> f Mat. Parif. u.Park min. tMS.

> Benines, 6, Cal. Augusti, Paris. MS. y Paris hift, man See in Aemylius this battle at z Datis 8000

against the Pope (the Aduancer of his Fortunes,) as to giue by his appeale so farall a blow to his desired Crowne, yet the Pope was not fo ingrate as to die

in his debt; as quickly hee found in hanother Appeale which hee made to the Pope against his Legate, for that he, relying on Apoliolicall induigence not onely disposed of all Spirituall dignities tokfuch as best liked the King, but also to his owne! Italians and Kinsmen, though absent, vnknowne, vnsufficient, vnworthy, yea, and some vnborne. Which Legatine *Tyranny vnfufferable in a Christian Stare, though Simon Langton (the Archbishops brother and Proctor) vrged earnestly before the Pope, yet the Legates Agent Pandulphus, fo dilplayed both the Archbishoppes feruentnes in vfing (uch eager per swasions and appellation against the Kines subjection, and the Prelates auarice in their unreasonable exactions for restitution from the King; being the most be-nigne, modest and humble Prince that his eyes euer beheld; that his Holines not onely conceived a exceeding hatred against the Archbishop and his cause but fent also his Authenticke Letters for repealing the Interdict, vpon restitution onely of 13000. Markes * more to the Prelates (the King before had voluntarily offered them 100000) and that but by equall portions of o fine yeeres payment. But the King, who knew the Popes pleasure before these letters came to impart it, having found that his French affaires had fustained vnreparable impeachments by his hitherto enforced delayes, P entrusting his Kingdometo the Legate and Earle Marshal custody, was with his Forces passed into Poicton (whiles in his absence, the relaxation of the Interdiet after a more then fixe yeeres continuance, was by the Legate in a Parliament folemnly promulged) where his Successes were so fortunate, that ' it being powerfully subdued, great hope was conceined the other Provinces would follow. Whence breaking with like victories into Britaine, being there at the point to give battle to Lewis the Dolphine, his ever-faithlesse Poythouins sodainely " for sooke him, and made him forsake his purpose. But a greater impayrement of those his hopes, was the defeature of his Confederate Othe the Emperour, at the renowned Battle of * Bouines, where King * Philip, ftricken from his horse by the hand of Reginald Earle of Bal loigne, had there with his life ended the quarrell, if a faithful Souldier had not couered him with his own Body, and brauely facrificed his life, to faue his Sebody, and brauesy sacrinees in sige, to late his Someraignes; who thereupon recouered both his forting, and the wiff or. The heavy newes whereof, concurring with his Barons outrages at home, droue

King Iohn on a deare conditions, to capitulate on a

whose attempts heeeuer found most dangerous, differentes. when hee was most bulied abroad. For under a *pretext of Denotion (the vivall maske for Treachery the Baronsaffembling at Saint Edmunds a did enery man a Mas. Paris. on the high Altar fenerally sweare, to renounce their fworne fealty to the King, and pursue him by Armes, till they had enforced his consent to the Charter of liberties formerly by the Archbelbop recommeded to them. Which An. 1215; when afterward they came in person to challenge of the King, as a part of his Oath taken at his Abio lution; hee e feeing both their forces and affections ad-dressed for violence, was enforced with gentle language and promifed fatisfactions, to desire, till after Easter, mature deliberation on so important a matter; in which breathing time, both in policie, hec tooke new oath of lovalty through all the land, and din denotion, undertooke the Vow and Signe of the holy Warres choofing belike to die against faithles Turks, rather then to live amongst such vnfaithfull Subjects, But neither Oathes, nor holy vowes "(then esteemed the supreme priniledge of protection) could bee sufficient Bucklers to protect against such desperate attempters; who at the prefixed weeke of Easter, prepa ring themselues not for a Conference, as with their Prince, but for a Battle, as against some hostile pow rinner, due tot a name, a againn toine notice power, trouged cogether as Standard, with "an Army ine-flimable for number, whose "over principal abetter and compier was Stephen the Archibipope, the more permitted to the standard of the sta mentes) most affiduous in attendance about the King. And s him the King felecting to fend to the giden. Barons Army (who were come on as farre as Brackley, not farre from the King, reliding now in oxford)to know the contents of their delires; hee brought a Now the contents of their delined liberties, with a meliage of their refolutions, if prefenth hee fealed not a Charter thereof unto them, they would compell him therto by for-cible entrance on all his possessions. Wherear his great heart * highly defdaining, hee demanded, why they also demanded not his Kingdome? those their exactions bedemanded not his kingdome: tooje inter exactions of ing grounded on no colour of reason, and swearing ne-uet to enflaue himselfe to them by such a concession, hee dismissed his Archbishop to return them his peremp-

tory answere. (56) Neitherwere the Barons lesse resolute in performance of their vow and meffage, appointing for Head vnto that huge and heady rout, Robert Fitzwalter, whom they entyled The Marshall of Gods Army and holy Church: who first aslayling Northampton Castle, after fifteene dayes fruitlesse fury, departed to Bedford, whose * Castelan being a Confederate gaue them cate entrance; but the Londoners displeased with the King for burthening them with taxes) not onely admitted them, but inwited them by request, to enter their City by night : where having that Key (as it were) of the land in their dispose, they by their " threatfull letters not onely drew most of the Nobles from the King, but also had almost lockt him out of his Regall Scat. To preuent which outrage, by gentle meffages intrea-ting of the Barons a place and day of meeting, who ting of the Barons a pakes and any of meeting, with the thereto deligned *Runningmed, of fince called Complete of the the state of t inferious onto there, was constrained to * grant them their vitermost delires, not onely for Liberties, (specified in * Magna Charta, and Charta foresta,) but also for a kind of sway in the Government, by twenty fine feletted Peeres, to whole commaunds all the ofine felested Peeres, to whose commands all the other Barons also were bound by dash to bee obsequitives allowed out. Thus one of the greatest Source algrees of Christian Barons also were the source of the source flendome, was now become the stwenty fixth petty king Truit. in his owne Dominions; as appeared that very night, when all the rest following the pompous streame of the new opflart Kings, left their Soueraigne * onelie with seuen Gentlemen to attend him. What maruaile, if high difdain herof pierced his fwelling hearr,

Mmmm

hRog de Wend

i Rog Word, MS.

will.de Bellg-Campo. k Mat Well.

n VV zndouer

a silv a Feditiba

504

to vnwind himfelfe out of those seruile fetters? And fo he did: * sending his letters overnight vnto certaine his trustiest Castellans, strongly to fortifie and victuall their Caftles; and the next morning before breake of day, very fecretly retyring into the Ifle of wight: (whence feeking redreffe both by the faritutParifbif. ma. all and temporall (word) hee fent Me fengers, both to the Pope, and other his forraine friends, to craue the Censures of the one, and succours of the other, against fuch outragious Rebels. In both which, his Agents were fo fedulous, and his Friends fo compassionare. that at " Rome by definitive fentence, the Barons Charu Paris, bift. mir ters were freedily cancelled, the King and Barons * acx Sulla Innecent curfed, if eyther of them observed the composition, (which dat. 9 Cal Sept. apud Mat. Pasis, yParif bift min. Excommunication was foone after vpon their continued rebellion put in execution, for that "the Pope", Fortunes wheele being turned, did mortally perfecute them whome himselfe had first whetted and incensed az Mat Welt. Trinet,MS. gainst the King,) 2 and from Flaunders, Gascovne, Brabant and other parts, fuch competent aids came aMat.Paris. in, as encouraged the King (after a three monethes lecrecy and retyring,) to flew himfelfe in the face of his enemies. His fuddaine comming, with fo vnexpected attendance, to the fiege of Rochester Castle, fo

and filled his mind with revoluing thoughts, how

amated both the * Captaine thereof, and all the Barons (b who had sworne to assist him against any siege,) that the one not daring to approch to his refcue, the other was enforced to yeeld vp his charge; and all * Sufpendio,&c. Mat.PariiMS. his company had received, * what they deferued, had not Sauary de Malleon entreated for their lives . The Gales of King Iohns fortunes feemed from this time, to blow fro some happier Angle; & e diniding c Mat.VVelm. his great hoaft into two parts, with the one, conducted by himself Northward, he* enery wher from the * A mare Auftra li vique ad more Scoticum, Parif. Southern to the Scotish Sea, victoriously subdued his Rebels, as likewise did the Earle of Salisbury with the other forrainers Southward. In which most deplored state of this land, all things were in confusion, & all men fet on mischiefe, a Fathers against their Sons, Brod Lib.S. Albanin then let on mineree, "rainers against inters son, pro-ther against Brother, Kinsmen and Allies, against their nearest friends, by assains, surprising, pursuing, bur-ning, spoiling, disherizing, tormenting, murthering; all the Kingdome, by the combustion of so vniucr-

(57) Which certaine mileries, and vncertain fv-

dings, in civill warres, are not fo strange, as is the fa-uage madnesse of disloyall dispositions, who to ar-

taine a shadow of feeming Liberties, immerge them-

sclues and theirabetters into bottomlesse servitudes

and distresses. Yet more strange it is, that those Ba-

rons, & their adhering impugners of the king, whose

pretext formerly was, that they durft not obey

the King because of the Papall Curfe, being now

themselves by vertue of the same's commanded to o-

bey and afielt him, could without any scruple contemn

both it, and him, s pretending, it concerned them not,

because particularly they were not named. Yea the Arch-

bishop himselfe, who with his rufflings had made

the World beleeue, that the Popes cenfure, (yea and

his howne too,) were of vertue to deprine the king

of all Soueraigne commaund over his Subjects.

now being i by name, and vnder that fearfull penaltie

required by the Pope to denounce the same, against those

perturbers of the Kings peace; hee esteeming thereof

but as a vilard to affright children, told the Popes

messengers, k he would not doe it for any cause whatso

euer, till himfelfe had in person conferred with the Popes

for which enormious contempt, the Bishop of Win-

ton and Pandulph, folemnly denouncing the curse them-felues against the Barons, did likewise suspendhim from

all Episcopallauthority. Stephen thus comming to Rome (for Innocentius had then called a Generall

fall a Rebellion, becomming like a generall fbambles, or place of Infernall torture. And yet as witneffeth one who then lived, the Fathers and aged men (likely to bee the wiser, and better affected,) men (theny to be the which, and better anected,) flood on the Kings part, but the yonger on the contrary; though some agains for soke the King for love of their kindred, and other like respects.

By the Archbi-

h Vide lapes. Rella Per and Paris.

kParit biff, mar.

I I ácm

"Counsel, and therin excommunicated all eyther French on Cancilium La or English winmpured King Iohn) was in that great affembly (of 61. Archbishops, 412. Bishoppes, Vend. 800. Abbots and Priors,) accused and connect of others. P treason against the King and contempt against the P ope a plant the Anal Churches censures, for which the Pope a fully re-Column to depose him from his See and Dignity, by the The Archbisher Cardinals earnest intercesson for him (as being their Brother-Cardinall) was intreated to deale fome what milder; but yet there by * publike sentence confumed his suspension, commanding by his letters all his Susfragane Bishops to withdraw their obedwince from him. I tunecenty lit. a And for a farther reuenge, whereas Simon Langton (his brother,)by his procurement had beene elected to the See of Yorke, (a strange example to ! have a whole Kingdome rulea by two Brethren of lo turbulent | frefinin. humors) the Pope not onely did cassate his Election, and made him meapable of any Episcopall Dignitie, but also placed in that See, Walter Gray, "(a truffic o willmin. friend to the King, and a professed enemy to the Langtons) whose * Pall cost him no lesse then a thou- x wond. Ms. fand pound. By the like couetous grating at the breaking up of the Councell, the Pope " exterted of euery Prelate there, an infinite masse of Money " before he would give them leave to depart home; amongst whom William Abbot of Saint Albans was one, who " comming to take his leave of the Pope without any pre-' fent ; what? (faith he) Art thou the Abbot of Saint "Albons to which place so often fauours have been done
by our See; and dothit become thee, to go hence without respect to me who am Pope? whereupon he offering fifiy Markes, was checkt and enforced before hee went pyl) as arket, was enecet and enforced before her went was of the Popes Chamber, (which hee repented hee cover entred) to pay an hundred Markes: which yet hoe brooked the better, because the Pope so handled all all other Prelates; the fashion being, for every man "to lay downe his money ready told before the Popes feet, and so take a deare bought Benediction and b. Man. Peris. be gone: but if any wanted present cash, the Popes vist.min. 2015. Merchants, that is his V furers, were at hand, but on very hard conditions to supply them. (18) But how ever the Clergy fared, King John

had cause of contentment in the Popes proceedings in that Councell; especially for that now his disloyal Barons were alexacomunicated by Name. all their lands together with the City of London, Interdieffed: which, though it game a deadly blow to the Ba-rons faction, & made their case plainly desperate, yet they standing on their guard still in London, " held they tending on their guard till in Lonuon, neta those consures in so high contempt, that they decreed, neither themselues or citizens should observe them, nor "the Prelates denounce them, alleadging, a that they were on falle suggestions procured; but chiefly, for that it apperturned not to the Pope to deale in fecular af manif. faires, fith Peter received of our Saniour onely a Power | The Barons raile of matters Ecclesiasticke; And what should the Roman on the Pope. insatiable auarice extendit selfe hither to vs? What had Prelates to intermeddle with Warres? Such are Con-"Freldies to intermeasus withir ares: one are com-"funtines Succeffors not Peters, whom as they repre-"fent not in good Actions, so neither doe they in au-"thoritie. Fre on such * rascall ribaulds, who knowing little of Armes or ingenious courses, being but base V furers and Simoniackes, will now by their Excommu nications dominere over the whole world: Oh how onlike are they to Peter, who now v furpe Peters place? The Barons(the causers themselves, of what they so detefted) had leasure thus to reason, for now they had neere loft all; and therefore e carfing both the Pope (who curfed them, and endeuoured f to draw all into the bottomlesse gulfe of the Romane auarice,) and the freed.MS. King, & betwixt whom like two milltones, they were now grounded to peeces; being hopelesse (by reason of their disloyalties) to find any fauour of their Prince, if they should submit themselves unto him, h in these straites, they resolve on a project, (sutable indeed to their former designes, but otherwise so execrable, as well may iustifie King Iohns exorbitances ,) for betraymay instifie King Iohns exorbitances,) for oction in the Crowne of England vnto Lewis the Dolphin of France. In which vngodly message fending the blank of France.

Laterani pridi y Parif hift wa. z Eiufd. min.bili.MS: in vita VVil. Abb

The Barons ex

Laterani, 10, Cal

(bap. 8. Kinglohn. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 45.

*Rob. Fitzmalter. * Marshall of Gods Armie, and some others, with i weadown. Parm. their letters of allegiance, firmed with i all the Bak P. Aemilius 1 Mat. Weft. Paru faith but rons Seales, to implore Kingk Philips fauour for fending his Sonne; and his Sonnes, for the acceptance of the Crowne: they receive (1 vpon deline-3 Cal.Marty. ry of fifty English hostages) a * present supply of French Gallants, with speedy expectance of their new French-English King. (59) Lewis not so void of Ambition, as to loose a

Crowne for want of fetching, was not long behind

them; though the Pope (vpon notice of the defign)

had purposcly sent his Legate Cardinall wallo, with

" Apostolicall commands to Philip, to stay his sonne from entring on Saint Peters patrimony; " who declared the

Great curfe in the Councell on all men combining with

those persons excommunicate, against king Iohn. Vp-on which speech, Philip replyed, that England was no

*patrimony of Saint Peter, no King having power of

himselfe to alienate his Kingdome, King tohn especiallie

who being neuer lawfull King had no power to dispose

thereof, and that it was an Errour, and a pernicious ex-

ample in the Pope, and an * itching lust after a new kind

of domination: his Peeres Sware, P by Christs death

they would spend their lines rather then suffer that a King

(bould of himselfe, or with a few flatterers, passe over his

Crowne, and enthrall his Nobles, especially to the Pope,

who (bould follow Saint Peters steppes to winne soules

and not to meddle with warre, and murther of mens bodies : and Lewis himfelfe & hee beseecht his father .

not to hinder him from that, which hee had not gi-

uen him, and for which hee was now refolued to

fpend his bloud, and " would choose rather to bee ex-

communicated by the Pope, then to fallifie his promife to the English Barons. With which * flender respect &

fcorne to his Holinesse, the Legate, seeing such

of fixe hundred Shippes, and fourescore + boates,

(Eustachius an Dostatate Monke thereof being

chiefe,) wherewith * arriving first in the Isle of

* Thanet, and afterward at " Sandwich, thither came

the Barons and ioyned with him. King Iohn (whose

great Nauy, * wherewith hee meant to encounter

him, was driuen downe Southward by a fodaine

tempeft,) lying then at Douer, 7 with an Armie com

fifting most of stipendary Forrainers, better affected (as afterwards appeared, to Lewis a forraine Prince, then

unto him, hee deemed it a point as of necessity, so of

greater wisedome, to divert towards winchester, and

for a time to forbeare battle, rather then commit his

whole fortunes to the hazard of their suddaine defecti-

on. Lewis hereby had free scope to take in all those

parts (Douer Castle onely excepted, which King Iohn committed to the most valiant Hubert de Bur-

go,) till he came to London, where * entring with fo

lemne Procession, and * incredible applause of all, hee

tooke in Paules Church (whither hee went to pray) onths

of the Citizens, and after at Westminster, of the Ba-

rons, himselfe . swearing to restore all men their right

and to recover to the Crowne, what socuer had beene los

by King John. There hee b chose for his Lord Chan

cellour, Simon Langton (so lately difgraced by the

Pope,) by 'whose preaching, the Citizens of London and Barons, though being all exommunicated, did cele-

hrate divine service, and drew on Lewis to doe the like;

all which, (Lewis and his Chancellour especially, and

by name,) Gualo the Legate (being now with Kine

Iohn) did folemnely a accurfe, and caused to bee fo

denounced throughout the whole land; making

great advantage thereof, by converting the profits of all their Church livings to his owne, and his Chaplens v-

fes. But both Frenchand English had now experi-

mentally learned, that the Popes Curfe was no fuch

deadly and dreadfull Hagge, as in former times they deemed it; nor could it fo fascinate the Lewysians.

and their successes, but that all these parts were soon

humbled before him sthough some where not with-

our relistance, as at Odiam Castle, wherin 1 3. English

Lewishis prepa-

Stat. Well. * Mee fait,eft,

mendo despexie. Mat Paris. d Rog. Wend. MS.

g Peris, hift. min.

m Walfing, Tps

ues ern, Paru. o Mas.Weft. Paru.Wendau. elý. * Aliellus novæ dominateasus lib dine. Mat. West, p :Nat. Paris Just, min. MS.

Spresa moniti welfing. VVeft. f Mat.Park. min.

g Mat. Westmin.

r Triust M S

ferme lookes, and fearing allo they would prejentile have done him some mischiefe, got thence in half; and Lewis as speedily set forth for England, with his Fleet * y 2.Cal Inn u Trinct. Stow.

y Mat.VVest.

z Parif.bifl.min

Penteoft.

Ric, Truet, MS.

Ingenti tripudit
Parn MS.

a Triuet. MS.
Paru.

c Mat.Paris. hijt.ma,

: Mas. Westmin

f Mat, Parit. h:ft.ma.

men alone, not onely braued Lewis and his whole Army fifteene dayes, but also fallying foorth vpon them, enery one tooke an enemy, and to carried them to the Castle, and after with great admiration of the French, and honourable conditions furrendred the Castle. Dower, with + few other Castles onely now flood out; where & whiles Lemis imploies wader. British incredible coft and toyle in a furious but bootleffe fiege, (hwhither Alexander King of Scots in amity repayred to him, but foone returned,) & his Confede- h Paru, hijk inin. rates doe the like at Windfor Castle ; King John and Ms. his mighty heaft, breaking forth with a fuddain violence like a furious tempest, ouerrunneth the Country all about, to the ruining of the Barons Castles, and possessions every where. Thus setting forth from Linne in Norffolke (where for their faithfull feruices hee bestowed large Franchises and his own Sword, and a Guilt Bole, for tellification of his affection,) with a full resolution to addresse his mightie Army for to give Lewis battle, as hee was paffing the Walbes with his Army and rich carriages toward Lincoloshire, in those sands (by reason of the oftenchangeable channell euer dangerous, all his " Carriages, treasure, and prouision, (himselfe and his Ar- m Mat Paris.

my hardiy escaping) were irrecouerably loft. (60) Many likewise were the greeuances into which the Barons, the meane while were plunged to fee their Natine Country by their owne wilfulneffe thus horribly maffacred, their owne Caffles and polsessions ruined and rifled by the King, and which bred in them most anxietie, a their faithfull feruices (in this their faithleffe adherence) not so respected by Lewis, as he, and their owne fore-running hopes had promifed them, whiles hee conferred onely on his Frenchall fuch Territories and Caffles, as the hand of Victory had lent vnto him. But their diftreffes were yet farre greater, then those their lealousies could comprehend, o till a Noble Frenchman (Vicount de Melun) a man of great efteeme with Levis, having his foule in his ficknes deadly wounded with the fins of his health, defired private conference on his death bed in London, with those English Barons, to whome Lewis had committed the custody of that City. To them hee imparted what lamentable defolations and onsuspected ruines hung ouer their heads for that Lewis with fixteene other his chiefe Earles and Barons, wherof himselfe was one, (auerring it on the Saluation of his now departing soule,) had taken an Oath, if ever Eng-lands Crowne were settled on his head, to condemne unto perpetuall exile all such as now adhered to him against K. Iohn, as Traitors to their Soueraigne, and all their kindred in the land otterly to extirpate. So counselling them timely to preuent their miferies, and to locke vp his words under the Seale of Secrefie, presently his penitent Soule being thus in peace with men, went to rest with God. What strange amazements so rufull a relation might worke in the hearers, wee may imagine, but onely men in like perplexed estate can fully and fenfibly conceine. The operatine power whereof was fuch, that though many of the Barons then doubted, whether, if they returned to their So-ueraignes due allegiance, hel whose hatred against them with fo many indignities they had pronoked) would accept them open their repentance, 9 yet presently fortie of them addressed their letters of submission fuite | q Para bill.ma. vnto the King, in hope that true " kingly bloud is ever ready to yeeld mercy, to fuch as are ready to yeeld them-Celues prostrate.

(61) But these Sollicitors for mercy came too late, either to receive, or yeeld any contentment, by their fubmission to the King, himselfe (now at Newarke) lying at the mercy of a higher Soueraigne, and by the stroke of death necre to some rest, which in his life hee had feldome attained: vexations being commonly the attendants of Crownes, but quiet and content the Priviledges of more private States. On deathes approch, with penitent ' confession of his sinnes and great denotion he received the blessed Eu-charist, having the Abbot of * Croxton for his phy-

i Rog. de Wend.

Mat Paris.

Vicount Mela

p Rog.Wood.bi\$

bey Legiue a

fitian both bodily & ghoftly: and not onely forgune gladly all his mortall perfectors (holding that a mater, though over difficult to fielh and bloud, yet failtary to the Soule) but also fent commands Henry his fonne to doe the fame: to whom hee caused all prefent, so fwesrefealty, as to the Heyre of his Crowne, and fent ı Jdem his letters to all his Officers abroad, exhorting them to affifthim. And " thus hee commended his foule to u 7bidem. God, and his Body to bee buried in worcefter Church, where the Bishop solemnly interred it, by the Kings He died on S. appointment, neere the Body of Walftan, a faincted Bishoppe renowned for constant fidelity to his Goderns Catalog of BR. Prince against therebellious Nobles of * his time: ± In the Raigne of William Ku∫ma

had beene miferably encombred.

ry, had not the fuddenty of his death, exacted some

fearch into the cause of his sicknesse. Such Authors

ther in loue to Lewis, or hate to the King, or pitty on

the Land, presenting him with an enuenomed Cup,

(whereof the King commanded him to bee his Ta-

(ler) became the Diabolical Instrument of his own

and his Soueraignes destruction. This relation, de-

livered by Monkes, and men of Monkifb humour,

as a thing fo vndenvable, that they auow (at what

as a trining to vincenyatic, that they allow (at what time they wrote this) is fine Monkes in that Abbey did fing for this their Brothers soule specially, and so should whiles the Abbey stood, which if it had been etorged

cuery Child might eafily have refuted; and the re-

hearfall of all circumstances thereof, (of the Kings

speeches, of the Monkes conference with his Abbot, of his preparing the drinke with a Toads in the gar-

den, of his dying in the Firmary) might deserue cre-

dite with the greatest Patrones of Monkery; yethone

of them (as if by acquiting Simon of Swinfled, all * o-

ther of fuch Orders were cleared from affafinating

of Princes) firiucth eagerly, to afperfe fome late

* Relaters hereof, with the blots both of malice &

forgery. Wherein is the malice? in adding to the

narration, Pictures alfo of the fact, fo to move hatred to Monkes and their Religion,; whereas of truth, either

Monkes, or men of that Religion, were the very first,

who not onely so depictured, but also liuely and

richly depainted it in their i goodliest Manuscripts.

Wherein then the Forgery?in adding to Caxton, that

his Abbot gave him absolution for the same before

hand, there being no such matter at all nor any mention

thereof in the story? No? let the very story speake;

The Monke went to the Abbot, and was shriven of him,

and told the Abbot all the King had faid; and prayd his

Abbot to affoile him, for hee would grue the King fuch a

drinke that all England should be glad thereof and joyfull:

the rode the Monke into the Garden, &c. Yea far-

ther," one Monkalleadgeth, an inducement for the

Abbots affent therto, for that the King had sent for the Abbots fister (a faire Prioresse) with purpose to

have deflowed her. Yea, but the Story it felf is char-

ged with noueltie, the first author thereof being but An. 1483. and all other former Writers making no mention

as touch the matter but in generall, content themfelues with faying, he dyed of a * griefe, or a * feauer, or a * flux, or a * furfet; but those who have entred into the particulars, insist on such a surfet, as whera Job. de Walingf c The, Otterborne d Mat.Weft. e Chronicle of of both griefe, feauer, and flux were most probable effects and Symptomes. For comming (fay they) from the Walkes to Swinfled Abbey, (being of the Cifleanx Order, which of old he had much incented) hee added new matter of offence, as he fate at meat, when, in speech t of his enemies too large provision, hec f English Chron fware, if hee lived but halfe a yeere longer, he would make one halfe-penny loafe as deare as twelue: * As deare sa sa

ob.Lecelirensis. na 12.d. Otterborn na 12.d. Otterborn na 10.d.Polychrö. na 20.s.Canton.

mens a Monke did kill Henry 3. *M. Fex his Mor tyrolog;StrFras-eis Heßings his Ward-word of Faxespicture i Where the kin is hummed with his Crowne and rick roabes, fire ting at a banquet and foure Monks in their habites

Caxtens (hron, Deceffrenss, o By Parfons loco

comming to him, whereof one presents him with the paylo-

ned cuppe. Dide

Archiep Cans. k Parfont ibiden

of it. This if erue, were somewhat, and doubtlesse, it is as true as the former: for how could hee bee the first Author, when not onelie? Ranulph the Monke raigne of Henr.3, q Clarut, A. 1336 r He ended his of Chefter, 9 Iohn of Tynmouth, and Thomas Otterbourne the Franciscan Fryer recorded it as * a fame generally received; but fundry other ancient stories, as

Iohn of Lichfield, the Monke of Leicester, & Scala Munthreat, replyed; What? meaneyou to turne mee out of my Kingdome, and afterward to murder me, as my fawith which kind of men, King Johns gouernment

(62) This, being the Catastrophe of his Tragicall Raigne, might also have beene the close of his Sto-

ther was dealt with? (63) But not to trouble our felues with refuting Goofes gagling against Foxes true relation; eafie it is to obscrue the hatred of Monks against that King, both in thus procuring his death then, and his dishonour (a second death) in their flanderous inuentions euer fince. For; whereas he writ by fome of his Bifbops to certaine forraine Princes, for aides aothis Siphopto cottent formine Princes, for addesa-gainth his faithliffe Rebeles, the CM others charge him, that the counterfrited his Sifhoppes Saeles, and write a-broad, that all Englithness were become Lepfelds and Applitates from Chrifts faith, and therefore facts flound counts fishdue them and take their possitions: I when he said, a Stag which the kild; had never the left facts. though he neuer heard a Maffe; they charged him hee doubted of the Resurrection of the dead; and in saying, hee never sped well after his yeelding to the Pope, that hee faid hee was vnfortunate fince hee was reconciled onto God: that, when hee gaue leaue to a fernant of his owne, to enter any religious Order, he gaue him leaue to bee of what Religion and Faith neelift. That moreouer, b hee offered his Kingdome to a Sarazen, and would embrace the Turkish faith, though this tale were told by one Robert of London (a e wicked Maffe-Priest, orrather a Monof London (a "WICKEL MAILE-PTELL, OF TAINER I WHEN-iter, a hauing a face like a Iew, with one armelong, and another flort, his funger deformedly growing toge-ther two and two,) with fuch fenceles improbabilities, as, that hee found that Moorish King reading of Saint
Paules Epistles, and that hee refused the Kingdom of England being offered him, with the like. That lastly it was reuealed to a Monke, King John was in Hell; though a Poet for fo faying, is by M.P. (swho made no doubt of King Johns faluation) centured for a * Reprobate. These all are demonstrations of so incredible harred as fhould rather alleuiate their Authors credite, then the Kings; whose Raigne had it not fallen in the time of so turbulent a Pope, so ambitious Neighbour-Princes, so disloyall Subjects, nor his Story into the handes of exasperated Writers, hee had appeared a King of as great re-nowne, as milfortunes, His works of deuotion in-h Nu. Triest, MS feriour to none; as his Foundations declare at Bean. ley, Farrington, Malmsbury, and Dublin, and that other for Nunnes, at God stow by Oxford, "for which, fome haue interpreted that Prophelie of Merlin as meant of him, stab fright giftes the stable square, in meant of him, stab fright giftes the stable square, in Triest. Oil. 5.

"Mongh ble field statts God will him faur. His Acts and Orders for the Weale-publike were beyond moût: hee being eyther the first, or the chieffe, who appointed those noble Formes of Civill government in o London , and P most Cities , and Incorporate Towner of England, endowing them also with their Pointer greatest Franchises; The first who caused Sterling money to bee here coyned; The first, who orday ned the Honourable Ceremonies in Creation of Earles; The first, who i settled the Rates and Meafures for Wine, Bread, Cloth, and fuch like Necessa. ries of Commerce; The forst, who planted English itsued Para, Lawes and officers in Ireland, and both annexed that in Huber: Kingdome, and fastned wales to the Crowne of England, therby making amends for his losses in France. Whose whole course of life and actions, wee cannot shut up with any truer Euloge, then that which "an street, estimate Release.

di (to omit other i namelelle Authors before Ann.
1483,) so confidenti y auouch his poisoning at Suineugadus D. Rob. flead, that unpartiall after-Writers, though friends English Chronis cles, MS. t leb, Maior. to Monkery, made no scruple to beleeue it. And why should they not, lith an " Author, more anci ent and vnexceptionable then all the reft, (cuen king George Lillian Johns Sonne and Succeffor in his Kingdome) auerred K. Henry the 3 it, " when, the Prior of Clerken-well faucily telling uParif.bift. him (being then in that house) that as some as hee ceast to doe suffice towards his Prelates, hee should cease to be a King; the King enraged with his trayterous K. Henry 3.ac-

knowledgeth hat Father was mur-

a In Record T mer.

c Lib,S,Alben, MS,in vit,Isb Abb: d M. Paris.

h Nie.Trinet, Mi i Cambd Brit in Berejbire, k Cambd Brit in VVIII bire, I Campian bill of

p Ex Record & Charsis Civitat, q Cambd Brit.is Strikeling. in Hubert: tVV endouer MS. U.Ser. Haurd MC. ancient Author hath conferred on him : Princeps qui-

dem Magnus erat, sed minus fælix; atque vt Marius, viramque fortunam expertus; Doubtlesse, he was a Prince more Great then happy, and one, who, like Marises, had tried both sides of Fortanes wheele.

(64) Alice, the first wife of King John, was the eldest of the two daughters, and heires apparant at that time of Humbert the second, Earle of Maurien now called Sauoy: her Mother was Clemence daughter of Berthold the fourth, Duke of Leringen, who had been the divorced wife of Henry the Lyon, Duke of Saxonie. This marriage was in their childhoode cocluded by their Parents at Mountferrant in Auerne, in February, Anno, 1173; he should have had with her, her Fathers Earledome, but all altered by her vntimely death; and after enfued the death of her Mother, the new marriage of her Father, and iffue male of the fame, whereof the Dukes of Saxonie are descended.

K, Iohn. * See Glovers Catalogue of

(65) Ifabel, his fecond wife (by * some called Hawissa or Muis) though the * youngest of the three Sifters, yet was in regard of this marriage, the sole Heireot William Earle of Gloucester, sonne of Earle Robert, the Naturallionne of King Henry the first; her Mother was Hawis the daughter of Robert Boffu Earle of Leicester. Shee was married unto him when hee was Earle of Mortaine, in the first yeere of his brother Richards raigne; and after ten yeeres having no issue by him, was (the first yeere of his Raigne) disorced from him, under presence of Consanguinity, and married to Geffrey Mandeuill Earle of Effex, and lastly, to Hubert de Burgo Earle of Kent; but died without any Issue by them.

(66) Isabelalio his last wife, was daughter and heire of Aymer Earle of Angolefine; her Mother was Alice daughter of Peter, Lord of Courteney, fifth fon of Lewis the Groffe, King of France. Shee was married vato him in the first yeere of his Raigne, & crowned by Hubert Archbishoppe of Canterbury, 8.Id. Octob. Anno 1200. and surviving him, was married to Hugh Brun Earle of March, and Lord of Lufigmian and Valence in Poyton, to whom first she should haue beene married, but yet (as feemeth)continued her affection to him till now. By him shee had diuers Children, (greatly aduanced by the King, Hen-ry 3. their halfe brother, and as greatly maligned by his Subiects) Hugh Earle of March and Angolefme, Guy of Lufignian, flain in the battell at Lewife. William of Valence Earle of Pembroke, Aymer of Valence Bishoppe of Winchester, Geffrey of Lusignian L. of Haftings.

His I Twe.

* Met.Park. VV cades.

(67) Henry, the eldest Sonne of King Iohn, and Tabell his last wife, was borne at Winchester, 1.0 Hober, 10.0f his Fathers Raigne, Anno, 1208. K. John ber, 10 of his ratners tagnet, Anno, 2200. A. tom dying at Nemarke, (*whither hee was broughtina Horfelitter from Swyaffeed.) the Barons malice was ended, their offence amended, Lewis of France reiected, and the yong Prince feated on his Fathers

(68) Richard, his second son by the same Queene was borne the next yeere after Henry; by whom afterward hee was made Knight, created Earle of Cornwall and appointed Earle of Popton. After the death of William Earle of Holland, Emperour of the West, hee was by the Electours chosen to succeed him in the Empire, and crowned King of Romanes, & of Almayn at the City of Acon in Germany, by Conrade Archbishoppe of Coleyne, Maij 27.being the Ascention day, Anno 1257. decealing at the Castle of Berkhamsted, April 20. Ann. 1271. the 13. yeere of his Empire, his body was buried in his Monastery of Hayles in Gloucestershire, but "his Heart at Oxford in | "R fin V Parki-Reuly Abbey (founded by him) under a Pyramis of Canu. admirable worke. Hee had three wives, the first was Ifabel daughter of william Marsball Earle of Pem-broke, widdow of Gilbert Clare Earle of Gloucester; by whom hee had iffue, Henry flaine at Viterbo in Italy, and tohn, both dying without Issue. His second wife was Senches, (daughter of Raimond Earle of Prouince, & fifter to Queene Eleanor his brothers wife) who was crowned with him at Acon, and had iffue by him Edmund Earle of Cormvall, and others. His last wife was Beatrice, Niece to the Archbishoppe of Coleyne, who seemeth to have survived him, and to have no Issue by him.

(69) 10ane, the eldeft Daughter and Child of K. John and Queene I fabel his last wife; was the first wife of Alexander the second, King of Scots, married vnto him in Yorke, Juny 25. Anno 1221, who returning into England to visite her Brother, deceased at London, and was buried in the Numery at Tarent in Dorfetshire,4. Marty, in the 21. yeare of her Brother king Henries raigne in England, and the 23. of king Alexander her husbands in Scotland, Anno 1236.

(70) Eleanor their second daughter, was first married to William Marlball the vonger. Earle of Pembroke: and after his decease without iffue, and seuen veeres Widow-hoodremarried to Simon Montfort Earle of Leisester, (fonne of Simon Earle Mont fort in France, by Amice Daughter of Robert Blanch-man Earle of Leiceffer) who maintaining the Ba-rons warres against King Henry sier brother, was flaine at the battaile of Eucham, in the 19. yeere of her brothers raigne, 1 265; after whose death, shee and her Children were forced to forfake England; the died in the Nunnery at Montarges in France. Henry her eldeft sonne, was slaine with his father at Euchan: Simon, the fecond, was Earle of Bigorre, and anceftor to a Family of Mountfords in those parts of France Almaricke, her third fonne, was first a Priest, and Treasurer of the Cathedrall Church in Torke, and after a Knight, and a valiant seruitour in sundrie warres beyond the Seas. Goy the fourth Sonne was Earle of Angleria in Italy, and Progenitour of the Mountfords in Tufeaine, and of the Earles of Campo bachi in the Kingdome of Naples. Richard the fift fonne, remained privily in England, and changing his name from Mountford to Wellesborne, was anceftor of the family of Wellesbornes in England. She had alfo a daughter named Eleanor, borne in England, brought vp in France, and matried into Wales to Prince Lewellen ap Griffith.

(71) Ifabel, their yongest daughter, was born, An (71) Justification of the was 21. years of age, thee was married being the 6. and last wife to the Emperour Frederick the second, at the City of Warmes in Germany, 20. of July, 1235. Shee had iffue by him, Henry appointed to bee King of Sicily, and Margaret wife of Albert, Landgraue Thurin: thee was Empresse 6, yeeres, and died in Childbed, Decemb. 1.of her husbands Empire 31.of her brothers raign 18. Anno. 1241.

(72) lane, or Ione the daughter naturall of King John (by Agatha Daughter of Robert Ferrers, Earle of Darby) marryed to Lewis Prince of Wales. Anno 1204. her Father gaue with her the Castle & Lord-(hippe of Elinfmore in the Marches of Southwales; the (like a most louing Child) gaue her Father secret intelligence of the Treasons intended against him by the Wellb and English.

(73) Geoffrey Fitz-Roy, a base son, who transported some Souldiers into France, when Archbishoppe Hubert forbad the King his father to goe thither. (74) Richard, who married the daughter & heire

of Fulbert de Douer, who built Chilham Castle in Kent, which Castle hee had with her, and had Issue by her, of which fom families of good efteem are descended.

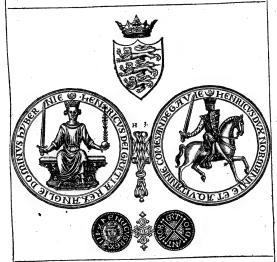
Mmmm 2

HENRIE

508

Monarch 46 HENRIE THE THIRD, LORD OF A.D. 1216. IRELAND, DVKE OF NORMANDIE, GVYEN,

AND AQVITAINE, &c. THE FORTIE-SIXTH MO-NARCH OF ENGLAND, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER IX.

Ypod, Neuft.



ENRIE, the eldest Son of King lohn, was when his Father dyed about ten yeeres of age: which flate of Child-hood, being most vnfit to succeed in fo troublous a state, (the furious wanes wherof feemed far from being appealed) God Almigh-

ty, in fauour and pitty of his Innocency, strengthned with the service of great and worthy men, wher-by the free and noble R calme of England was gratioully preserved from French servilitie; from whose Continent as it was naturally disparted with a Sea, so could it as badly have endured to be joyned therto by subjective governement. Howbeit the difficulties were not few nor fleight, which did at first empeach this happy preservation, though they did not hinder it long; for, * hee disposing the matter, who ordaineth all things wifely, and moderates them sweetely, faire weather was restored after stormes, and quiet eing established through the Kingdome, the peaceable feruants of God had space to breath in.
(1) To effect so great a benefite, Walle the Popes

legate flood wholy for advancement of Henry, and expulsion of the French; the authority of whose per-"the Standing whose per spin and the property of the Prelates fo farre; that (although their lands and goods were therefore fpoythought their hards and goods were treeted poy-led) they would not doe any homage to Lews; as likewise the loyall care of William Marshall Earle of Pembrooke, did gaine (in time) and settle the hearts of the feetal rods. Great was the wildom, con-trage and diligence of that Noble Gentleman in fo broken and icopardous effate; for he, knowing that the maine hopes of his Country refted in the fafety of their persons, in whom the right of Succession

Chap. 9. Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46.

was, he first of all secured them within the Citie of Gloucefter, which was at Henries feruice: There were with the young King, his mother Queene Ifabel, his brother Richard (afterward King of Romans,) his fifters, the faid Earle, and many others in great numbers of the chiefe and principall men of all fortes; who vpon perfect notice of King lohns death, repaired thither to their young Prince, with a purpole to confult and concur in one for the re-union of minds and bodies to the obedience of the true borne king. The Earle of Pembrooke therefore bringing forth his precious charge, and placing him with all due honour and ceremony in view of the affembled States, is reported for the pleasing of all sides, to have vsed words to this effect. Albeit the father of this Prince whom here you seebefore you, for his eaill demeanour hath worthily undergone our persecution, yet this young Child as he is in yeeres tender, so is he pure and innucent from those his Eathers doings: Wherefore sith every man is to be charged with the burthen of his owne transis to be charged with the burthen of his owne trans-griftons, neither fall the Child's Carriptmes teach vs.) bear the iniquitie of his Tather: we county of why and englicises, heave our felax milled: toward his tender Prince, and take compafisons of his age. And for someth as he is the Kings' lawfull and shelfs Saune, and and of he was county of the same of the same of the same of the be our Soure aigne, and his Successor, let we with one ioint afsistance appoint him our King and Gouernour; let tourt assiftance appoint into our King and concribent; its vs remove from vs this Lewis the French Kings some, and suppresses his people, which are a consuson and shame to our Nation, and the yoakes of their servitude let vs cast

of from our flouders,
(3) The entertaining of perswalions among the wife, is an effect of Truth, not of painted Phrases; and these plaine wordes of the Farle, (the young Kings Brother in Law) were received with general applause of all that were present, so that Henry was The Kings Coroapplanted all that were picture, and attemy was immediately proclaimed, and speedily crowned (vp-on the day of SS. simon & Inde) in the presence both of Wallo the Popes Legate, (who imposed on his vn-experienced yeeres some vande Oathess of service to the Romane See,) and of Queene I fabel, with many of the Lords Spirituall and Secular, and flore of all other forts of People. The speede of which roise all Ceremony (for it was the ninth day after King Iohns death) was not greater then the necessity of the State required: for his Enemy (nor onely his, but the enemy of the English name, Prince Lewis) had (as yet) London, the chiefe seate of the Empire, at his denotion, many potent Earles, Barons, and martiall maleconcents, lubiect to his command, and an Armie in the field with which he fought to constraine that mirrour of constant loyalty, Hubert de

Burgh, to render him the most important Castle in

England, that of Doner, committed to his much-approued trust: The young King on the other fide was enuironed with many difficulties, want of mo-ney not the leaft, the most part of his Fathers trea-

fures being drowned. To encounter all which mifchiefes, the faid Earle of Pembrooke was by com-

mon affent of Prelates and Peeres constituted Guar

dian of the young Kings person, and Vice-Gouer-nour of the Kingdome. (4) Letters hereupon iffuing in the new Kinges name, and for his affaires, to all fuch as had charge in the common-weale, (with many promises of re-ward and fauour,) were accordingly in most places obeyed : for the cuill will borne to King Iohn, feeming to die with him, and to bee buried in the same graue, the loyall bloud waxt warme about the col-dest hearts, rekindling in them the honest desire of shewing themselves true Englishmen. It was also a great helpe to the Kings party, that Prince Lewis and Holiday, pronounced to flam accurit and ex-communicated. Lewis perceiuing (contrary to his expectation) that King Jesus death was to him no-thing auslieable, but rather derimentall, dwels no longer about Douer Cafile, but railing his fiege, enters London, and prouides the best hee can for his totte-

ring estate, which hee sought to support, by putting

French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless, The *Tower of Lon
French Garrisons into Castless i don being rendred to him; hee beliegeth Hertford Caftle, which after the flaughter of many French being deliuered upon faire composition, the custody of that Peice was demanded by Richard Fitz-walter as by ancient right belonging to him; but Lewis
put him off with this answere, that he should have patience, till hee had conquered the Realme, at which time hee would reflore their rights to every one. The fecret reason which moued Lewis to give this answere, was: for that, confulting with his French vpon Fitz-Walters demaund, they gaue it for their common opi lees demaund, they gaue it to true: common our nion: That the English were not worthy to have fuch places entrafled to their charge, who were birragers of othe French libeir natural Lord. A suff reason to move Lewis touching the control of the co fo to answere, but a farre better to teach others to continue loyall. The Castle of Berkhamsted (whose Captaine was one Waleran a valiant Dutch Knight) hopeleffe of fuccours was likewife rendred, which as the reft, hee stuffed with French Garrifons, wherein howsoeuer hee prouided for his owne Nation during that prefent, hee tooke no wife course for the maine of his enterprife: for so apparant icalousies (seconding & confirming the Vicount Melanes pre dictions) could not but vtterly unfettle the affections of fuch great ones as had called him in. His next March being to Saint Albans, where he would have constrained the Abbot to doe him homage, he was encountred with this honest answere: That he would doe him no homage, whelfe hee were absolued from the homage which hee had made to the King of England: hemage which we ma mase to the Aing of Engineer, yet to purchase relipies of homage, or rather his, and the Towns peace till Candlemas, hee was forced to vie the mediation both of his *puric, and of his no

ble friends. (5) Bur those intestine causes for which the Ba rons had called Lewis in, falling now to the ground by the death of King Iohn, and the French by their naturall infolence, fulpitions and vanity, ministring natural infoence, imputous and vanity, immuting new reasons of auersion, were all of them strong motiues to dispose the mindes of the English Lewifiant to restaurce to due obedience; yet sinding themseliues bound in honour, not so to leaue him sodainely destrute, (who ypon afriance of their oathes and hostages had put himselfe among them) that he should thereby fall into *Henries*; hands; they desire therefore his absence, but not his destruction. The more handsomely to compasse the rest, an abstinence from warre was (for a time) concluded betweene the King and Lewisthe rather for that Lewis had intelligence from Rome, that the curse which wallohad denounced against him, should shortly bee confirmed by the Pope, vnleffe hee left England, As this Truce gaue Lewis liberty to sayle backe to France for new supplies from his Father, (who greatly desired to conferre with him;) so his absence gaue opportunity to his English, to consult more freely of their best way; that from thence forth Lewis was neuer potent in their affections, but referrity loft many chiefe Lords and others, who

againe became true English.

(6) Lewis vpon his speedie returne out of France minding to make a speedy dispatch, sets out of London his Army of more then twenty thousand Souldiers, with a purpole not onely to free Montthe whole country adioining. Odious and grieuous the wnoe country autoiming. Outous and grieuous to the Countries was this palage of the French, which reach as farre as Lincolne, there were among them to many ragged rafcals, the *verie feutomme and filthy froth of that Nation, who to beggery was to baie that they had not cleathers to hang on their backes, to supply the which they made many goe naked in all the places where they marched. The Earle of Pembrooke Gouernour of the King * by the Earle of Pemprese Gouernour of the Might by the Counfell of Walls, and the Bishoppe of winchefur refoluing to set the cause youn God, and the fortune of a field, is now with the young King and his Affi-

The Kling gather

The aftions of Lewis after King Johns death.

The Earle Mar

Mat. Parie

Lewis and his fol-

Sacr de Duiney

& Robert Fitz.

The policyof K.

in their march,

of the Earle of

The perillous e

Holinfb.

Henry 3.

fiant Lords, at Newarke, where the Generall affem-

bly for that seruice was appointed. The whole Ar-

my after the Musters, rested there some dayes,

which they spent not in vanities, but in denotions &

receit of the Sacrament, humbling themselues be-

fore the offended Maiestie of God; and so all of

them (faith Paris) being prepared, resolue eyther to return victorious, or to die in desence of their coun-

try, their Soueraignes right, and their owne Liber-

ties, and possessions, all which seemed now to lie at

stake. To give them the greater edge and spirite,

Wallo with great folemnity accurfeth Lewis and his

Coadiutors; and thus the Army marcheth towards

Lincolne, and the Lewissans there in siege of the Ca-

ftle: the King himfelfe being left with a strong guard

at Stow (about eight miles short of Lincolne) accom-

panied with Wallo and others, there without perill of

his person to attend Gods pleasure, in the event of

(?) Vpon their approch, if the Counsell of some

Englifb Lords had beene followed, the Lewifian Ar-

my had iffued forth of the City, & giuen them bat-

tle in the ope field; but the Earle of Perch (the French

Generall) thinking the Kings party to bee greater then it was, for that the Noblemen and Bannerets

thereof had each of them two Ensignes, the one born

with themselves, the other advanced among the

Carriages, which doubled the flew of their num-

bers; they did thereupon change that course, clo-

fed the Gates of the City, and plyed their endea-

uours against the Castle more fiercely then before.

The Earle of Pembroke therefore lets Falcafius flip

in arthe Castle-posterne with his Arbalasters, whiles

others breake vp the South-gate of the City, at

which the Kings Army most couragiously entring, and they of the Castle sallying out in Flancke of the

Enemy, scattered and viterly defeated the Lewisians

The Earle of Perch their Generall, being equironed with the Royalifts, and willed to render himselfe,

fware that hee would neuer become Prisoner to a-

ny English: vpon which refusall he was run through

the fight of his helmet into the braines, and so dyed

without speaking any word. In this conflict (being

on Saturday in Whitson-weeke) the force of natu-

rall propension was apparent; for notwithstanding the fierie resolutions of the Kings People, yet when

they saw the faces of their kinsmen, friends & coun-

trimen on the other fide, that fury relented fo ftrog-

ly, that the most part of the reuenge fell vpon the Horses, and not vpon the Horsemen, whom one he

they laboured to make their Captines. The whole

riches of the Lewssian Campe, & of the City of Lin-ealne, became the booty and spoile of the Kings Ar-

Monarch 46.

went) that onely three were flaine vpon both fides, the Earle of Perch, one of Du-Brents Knights, and an obscure fellow belonging to some, or other of the

(8) The Kings Gouernour after the victory rode orefently with the gladfome tidings in the heighth of speed to the King and Legate, who with teares of ioy gaue God thankes. But the noble Earle not leauing his worke imperfect, seekes to embarre Lewis from forraging about London. Meane while by the diligence of Lady Blanch the wife of Lewis, Euftace the ruffianly spofiata, (who of a Monke becom-ming a * Demoniacke) was now upon the Sea with a "Tood News." fresh supply of men and munition bound for London; But God was no better pleased with these, then with the other scatterlings at Lincolne. For the Eng-lifb Nauie, having the wind of the French, sunke di-Rog, de Wend. uers of their shippes by tilting at them with the yron Prowes or Beakes of their Gallies; vsing also vnslaked lime in duft or powder, which they threw into Enflace and the the faces of their enemies, and blinded their fight: fo defeated at Seat were the hopes of Lewis for any present succours abfolutely frustrated Enstace himselfe, found after long fearch, and drawne out from the bottome of the Pumpe in a French shippe, at Douer had his head cut off, though * some say hee was slaine by Richard, a base-sonne of King Iohn. The newes of which succeffe being brought to the King, did not more reloice him, then they wounded Lewis, for the loffe was not onely great in men, but in all forts of riches and prouifions. To give now no reft to Lewis his declining fortunes, the Earle of Pembroke with a mighty Army belieged London, and Lowis therein, alwell by Water as by Land; feeking todriue him by penurie to render the City. It came to capitulation, and in an Ilet in the River of Thomes, not farre from Stanes, the King, Wallo the Legate, and William Marshall the Kings Gonemour, met with Lewis & the Barons to finish the Peace: for Lewis had promifed to doe as Walls and the Earle would deuife. fo that it might not tend to his dishonour or scandall: Heades or Articles of the agreement which Lewis sware vpon the Gospell to performe, were, 1. That Lewis, the Barons, and other his partakers should stand to the indgement of the Church (whose censures they had now some yeeres contemned) and from thence-forth bee and remaine true to the same. 2. That he and forth bee and remaine true to live Jame. 2. I has he and his should forthwith depart the land, went to return again with a purpose to doe harme. 3. That he should doe his best to draw his Father to make restitution of all such octro arow ms rainer to make rejilinion of all their things in France as belonged to the King of England, and that Lewis when himslesse was King should quietly part with them. 4. That Lewis should immediately render with 18tm. 4. I not Lewis jouing immension recover to King Henry all holders and places taken in the warre. On the other part, the King, the Legate and the Earle Sware; I That the King Jould refere to the Barous. and others, all their rights and inheritances, with all the Liberties formerly demanded of his Father. 2. That none (of the Lasty) fould fuffer dammage or reproch for taking part on either fide. 3. That Prifoners fould bee released, Ore. Whereupon Lewis with his adherents was formally by Walle absolued from the sentence of Excommunication, and fo they ranne on all fides into embracements, and parted in the kiffe of Peace. The * Welfb, who had held with the Barons, were left out of this Conclusion, being thereby laid open to spoile. Thus was Lewis * driven out of England, whom the Earle of Pembroke brought to the

Sea-fide, and the Realme was cleared. (9) There are* who write how that Lewis had *Paul demil. a great fumme of money paide him for restoring in Phil.s. the Hoftages; but Mat. Paris whom + fome cite to that purpose, affirms no such matter in any printed Copy. Reason surclie is vtterly against it; for when even the life of Lewis was after a fort in King Henries hand, with what sense can it stand that the King should set all the French free without ransom; and yet himselfe pay money for the Hostages? which also were not his, but the Hostages of his ene-

mies the Barons; so that, if money were due, it must have come from them, not from the King, who both in honour and profite was rather obliged to the contrarie. Writers of that very time doe in plain wordslay, The Ponerty of Lewis was such, that he was compelled to borrow fine thousand pounds of the Londo-Rog Wendouer, MS. Math. Paris. The fame Math. ners, to fet him out of England: and therfore that o-Paris, at A.D. ther feemes nothing elfe but a vaine gloze to falue the honour of Lewis, who was plainly driven out of King Heary charged the Lon-doners for having England, after fo high hopes with loffe, forrow, and eternall differace, which the French are so sensible of, that they scarfe seeme to write of the whole action, giuen Lewis marks at his deotherwise then *laying the missortune of Lewis vpparture forcing them to give him as much. on the Barons mutability.

(10) The Realme of England purged of those for-*Enguer de Mot Gagwin. Paul. Asmil. raine dregges, was not therfore presently freed from other manifold encombrances, such as after so great a toffing of all lawes and things divine, and humane, An.1218. doe ordinarily flote vp and downe, like the froth & working of a troubled Sea. For divers men prefu-

ming vpon their former seruices to the State, or thinking the old bad world would either continue still, or soone returne, if instice grew consident against Trespassors, or for what other corrept mo-*Rog. de Wend. M.S. rives foeuer, did dare intollerable things. The prin-Mas.Parit. cipall Lords of this mifrule, were William Earle of Aumarl, Falcasus de Brent with his Garrison Souldiers, Robert de Veipont, with others, who having had the Castles and possessions of certaine Bishops and Great men, either to keepe in truft, or otherwise by iniquity of the times converted violentlie to their vies; did ftill with-hold the fame, both against the minds of their lawfull owners, and the Kings expresse Prohibition. Among others, Robert de Ganei defended the Castle of Newarke (being the Fee of the Bishoppe of Lincolne, as was also the town it felf) against the Kings Armie, conducted by the * Great

«Marshall Earle of * Pembroke*, for eight dayes, and
did not first yoeld the place, before (by mediation of * So ancient Writers call him friends) the Bishoppe paid to Gaugi one hundreth pounds. There was in that great Earle, a perpetu-

all care to conclude things without bloud-shedde, wherein shined his Christian piety and morall wifdome, there being no other so safe way to settle disordered humors. The greater was his losse both to the King and State by his death * soone after en-An. 1219. fuing, whose * monument yet remaining, doth not so much eternize his memory, as that well-deserved * In the Temple -Church in Lan-* Epitaph, the Epitome of his noble vertues;

a Paris ad an. a raman an. 1114. Sith. Gernafini de Melheley thade thele verses.

Sum quem Saturnum sibi sensit Hybernia, Solem Anglia, Mercurium Normannia, Gallia Martem

Irelands Saturn, Englands Sunne am I, The Mars of France, and Normans Mercurie.

He left behind him fiue Sonnes, all Earles of Pembroke successively, and dying without iffue, his five Daughters advanced by great marriages, brought as great advantage to their husbands iffue, by the inheritances of their issuelesse brethren. (11) The King (gouerned after Marshals death.

by Peter Bilhoppe of winchester, and such * other,

whom the Bishoppe had procured to ioyne in ad-ministration of publik affairs) seeming now to haue

a fetled and calme estate, resolues (for good hopes

fake) to bee crowned againe; which was perfor-

med by Stephen Archbishoppe of Canterbury at west-minster with the attendance and confluence of all

the Prelates, Peeres, and People. Vpon the Satur-

day before his Coronation, the * new worke of the

Abbey Church at Westminster, (Paris calles it the

Chappell of our Lady,) was begunne, whereof the King himfelfe in perion laid the first stone, as if hee

ment the world should know, his intention was to

confecrate his future actions to raise the glory of

King Henry crowned again

Mat, Paris,

Christmas with great royalty at Oxford, in the company of the Prelates and Peeres of England, William de Fortibus, Earle of Aumarl; incited by Falcasius de Brent, and the like riotous Gentlemen, fodainely departed fro the Court without leave, & (whither it were vpon discontentment, because the King it were vpon discontentment, because the King | "wend Ms, had against the Earles will the last yeere taken some | Pandon Ms, Castles into his hands, or out of an cuill ignorance how to liue in quiet) he mannes the Callle of Biham. victuals it with the Corne of the Chanons of Bridlington, spoiles the Towne of Deeping, and under thew of repayring to the Patliament, feifeth on the Castle of Fotheringhay, committing many other fu-rious riots in contempt of the King, and breach of his peace; many * others in other places following his lewd example. Yet at length the Earle comming in under the conduct of Walter Archbishop of Torke, was at the fuite of Pandulph (who fucceeded wallo in the place of Legate) pardoned; and the like hurtfull clemency was extended toward his Complices and Retinue, whom the King(in regard belike of fome former better deferts) fet free without punishment or ransome. And to preuent any further disturbances of that nature, Hubert de Burgh Earle of Kent, for his rare integrity and fidelity(approued in all King Johns troubles) was also made gouernour of the Kings Perlon, and Chiefe Iufitiar of England, with the generall allowance of all the States. What need the land then had of a senere proceeding, wee may judge by this, that Foulk de Brent Mat Well. held the Earledomes of Northampton, Oxford, Bedford, and Buckingham, with the Castles and Holds; Philip de Marc, the Castles of Peke and Nottingham, Nottinghamsbire and Darbsbire; and others detained other portions, without any other right, then

nesse of this time, that certaine * Lords of Wales, and (as * some say) Prince Lewelin himselfe, desirous to " Met. Paris. ridde their Marches of the English, role in Armes,& laide fiege to the Castle of Buelt, which inuited king Henry to draw thither with an Armie; but the worke was made ealie by the voluntary departure of the Wellb supon the fame of the Kings approch : which appearances of some ensuing stirres, moued the king to thinke of strengthning himselfe with faithfull alliances; and not long after, Alexander King of Scots came to Yorke, (who in the yeere* before had met King Henry at the fame place) and there tooke Mar, Parabil, to wife the Lady Ioan King Henries fifter; and Hubert de Burgh, in presence of both the Kings married the Lady * Margaret sister to Alexander; Boetius faith, that two great Lords of England married two fifters of King Alexander at that place. About which time, * Ifabel Queen Dowager of Englad, without the leave of her sonne the King, or of his Councell, crost the seas, and tooke to husband the Earle of March in France. The young King supposing his estate at home now somewhat settled, and his eyes beginning to grow cleare-fighted by the benefite of experience, forgets not to looke about his affaires abroad: and first sends * Sauarie de Malleon taires abroad; and mri tenus " ommers at an aucon" popul Pre l' to bec his Lieurenant in Aquitaine, where yet the tagliff held the greater part, and dispatcheth Am-balladors to Philip King of France, for refitution according to the Articles with Lewis; whereunto Manl'ar place answere was made that nothing ought to bee restored which by right of warre had beene atchieued;

concerning the County of Poicton. (13) The State both of Church and Commonwealth in those troubled daies, seeme to haue much refemblance; cuery man daring to attempt in either, what his own audaciousnes would suggest, or others conniuency permit. But Stephen Archbishop of Canterbury (who himselfe was lately the ring-leader of disorders both in State and Church) is now beccome very diligent in his Prouinciall Synode at Ov-

(bap.9.

Mat. Paris.

Book.9

Articles ofper

mie, whereupon this discomfiture was called Lewis Fair : Neither did the clergy of the place escape, for the Popes Legate had commaunded that they also should be rifled to a penny, as persons excommuni-

cated in partaking with Lewis. The Chase was but coldly & fainedly followed vpon the flying Barons, otherwise not a man could have escaped; wherein vet the chiefest Barons were taken, with about * 400. Knights, belides Efquiers, and of other forts without note or number, though a fome lay that this number of Knights were flaine, & matrons and women of the towne flying by boate, which they had

no skill to gouerne, were drowned. Such as escaped the fight were not therefore past the danger; for the Country people fell vpon them as they fledde, killing great numbers, so that almost all the footmen tooke vp their last lodgings before they could reach to London, where Lewis was. The Marshal of France, the Chastellan of Arras, and about two hundreth Knights came fafely thither, but were not otherwife then fowerly welcome of the Prince, who laid vpon

their cowardife the loffe of all the reft. His feare of being taken Prifoner inftly encreasing, hee fortifies London by the best meanes hee can, and dispatcheth Posts into France for more reliefe. This great victory was much the stranger, if (as * some write the same

na# Per hift

God. This calme but new beginning, was almost as speedily distempered and disturbed by sodaine stormes; by reason that, while the King kept his Ann. 122

that which the iniquity of the late tumults gaue.

(12) It was no small addition to the troublesom-

but (asit feemes) there was a Truce for * fowte veeres agreed vpon betweene the two Monarches, . rpod News.

512	Henry 3. THE SVCC	E	2001.9
An. 1222.	ford, *about reformation of the Clergie; where also	1	deposed the Magistrates, though some write that the
The Walf in Tood Newft,	was convented before him an execrable Impostor,	1	
Canul Celle:	who feeing how current all groffest delusions pas-	1	King found, that onely the * baser fort were interes-
Man.l.7.4.34.	fed in those dayes of blindnesse, was emboldned to	1	
-	lutter himielte to be wounded in his hands, feete, and	1	
Mat.Park	* fide,(an horrour to thinke) that by the retemblance	1	Engujo Empire, and pluckt vp by the rootes the ma-
Pfeudo-Christ	of those bloudy impressions, he might perswade the	1	
lifcovered and	people (apt to beleeue any thing) that hee was their	1	(15) This dangerous beginning might haue had
nmared.	verie Saujour: whose deserted punishment was by		
	immuring betweene two walles, as a monfter too im-	1	
Ish-Stowes	pious and vnworthie to die by anie humaine hand.	-	
pod.Neuft.	There was immured with him a curfed ould Beaft,	1	
Death by immu-	who preteded to be Mary the mother of this Christ,	1	
ation.	and well might bee, if their manners bee compared;	1	
dutiquit, Brit,	* fome adde a third also, who named herselfe Mary	1	
unit.Steph.	Magdalen. The punishment by Crucifixion which		
24. Para.vit.	* fome thinke was executed vpon the man at Arbor	4	
rchiep,Cant,in	bery, is neither to credible nor tollerable, as in which	1	Which they demained ought not to bee observed beaute
teph.	Christianity it selfe might seem to sustaine reproach	.1	
Euf-biss in vita inflan,	it being also against the * ancient law of Constantine		
injtan. Kanul, Ceft.	the first famous Christian Emperour, that any should		
	from thence forth die by crucifixion; but it may be	1	
	that it was first so judged (which might cause the	1	Mil of vs have sworne to those Liberties, and that
	relators errour ,) though afterward vpon founder		which wee have fworne, all of vs are bound to observe.
	deliberation changed into a more fitting centure.	1	
	But strange it is, that this man deseruing (as hee did)	1	heedurft doe no other,) and Writs were fent foorth,
	fo feuere a judgement at Oxford, Saint Francis, whole	1	to enquire vpon Oathes, what Liberties or free cu-
	fiction and imposture was the very same (for the	1	
Mat.Paris.in	*wounds, though not for the name, of Christ) " fo foor	1	
lent.	after deserved for it to be canonized at Rome, for a		
An, 1217 apud LatiParis	Chiefe of Saints; and perhaps if this Monster had	1	all those grieuous contentions, which had so long
en a arm,	been at Rome, hee had beene likewife Sainted, or if	1	encombred the Kingdome. The like hope was
	Saint Francis had been at Oxford, he had been like-	1	conceined of better (incoeffee short of
	wile immured.	1	conceined of better fucceffes then before, in formain
	(14) In the State of the Common-wealth incredible	1	affaires, vpon newes of the death of King Philip of France, the euer-deadly (and now-dead) Enemy of France dieth.
he tresfonable	darings(though of inferiour quality to that former)	1	Englands welfare; which moued the King to fend
prore of C. witan-	were not wanting, against the maiesty of the Kings	1	the Archbiftonne of Control and a line to fend
ne Fitz Armif.	as appeared by Constantine Fitz-Arnalf, a Citizen of	1	floors to Lewis now crowned Vine - Co
	London: who vpon colour of a popular tumult, by		
	him purposely cherished, (which rose at pastimes		Lands on that fide of the (so as he for the demands his
	of wrestling, and like masteries betweene the Citi-		
	zens of London, and others of the Suburbes,) attemp-	1	Gwere was a Then he hall do Co. Co.
	ted to fet vp a Lewis againe, and in the heat of the fe-		as been as good as Come with the polyer sons by a suft title,
	dition, he traiteroully cried, * Mount-loy, Mount-	1	as hee was ready to flow King Henry, if he would come to his Court to make his demands.
arif. bift.	loy, God for vs and our Lord Lewis. Though the		to his Court to make his demands 2. that the King of Lewis presents
	*Lord Maior, a discreet man, earnestly perswaded		
Robert Serle	dutifull behauiours, yet Conflantine had made the		
en L.Maior.	people incapable of good Council with his Galia		ties of England, for which the warre was first moned go
	people incapable of good Counfell with his fedici-		had been granted at his departure, and fince confirmed by oath, were not only not observed, but the old wicked ones reduced, and approval.
,	ous Proclamations, which hee there caused to bee		of vain, were not onely not observed, but the old wicked
his was done	* published. The secret of this conspiracy was * re-		
Aug.	ucaled by another Citizen, and without question		
abian. ly one Walt.	was farther fpred then the compaffe of one City, c-		
kerel.	uen as farre as into the hearts of all fuch turbulent		
	people, to whom warre was beneficiall, and Quiet		(16) The king wall managing to the second
too de 1717-a	banefull. The chiefe Iufliciar hearing of thele mat-	ı	should be either to recouer those his Trausmarine An. 1224.
Rog.de VV end. S.	ters, with forces affembled, entred the Tower,		
	whither hee commaunded the principall men of the		eftareat home, if fuch, as by the vnrulynes of former the King to re-
	City to come, who easily put off the blame from		times having gotten possession of Crowne-lands court his king to re-
	themselves vpon Fitz-Arnulf. But hee as resolute		might fill with-hold them, refolued to refume them;
1	in his answere, as desperate in the sedition, complai-		
	ned of him felfe in the hearing of all, that he had done		
	lesse therein then hee ought; yet fifteene thousand Markes sterling hee offered for his life, when hee		
Cryce banged	Markes sterling hee offered for his life, when hee		
ł	law the halter about his necke, (for with his Cryer,		mony, though it were no leffe needfull then lawfull
	and his Nephew the next day hee was hanged,) but		
- 1	no price could redeeme him out of the hand of Iu-		fuch as wanted no will to toffe the whole Kingdom,
tat.Perk.	frice. It is faid, that he so considently answered, vp-		rather then forgoe their holdings,)they wifely vied
- 1	on trust of the Articles and Oath between the King		all the firengthes which Religion or humane policy
1	and Lewis, that the partakers of Lewis should not be		
1	troubled; and that, vpon this occasion, Levis de-	- 1	Briefe from the Pope, by which both the King was declared to bee at libertie to choose his owne
	nied restitution of such things, as the Articles did		was declared to bee at libertion both the King Aut Pan, bil.
	mention, pretending that Henry had herein broken	- 1	Councell and governe by him CIC
	first his faith, and thereby made the whole con-	- 1	
	traffruftrate Execution thus done with the mail		
1	tract frustrate. Execution thus done without noise,		
	or the Londoners privity, the Infliciar accompanied with Falcafius and his armed troupes, enters London,	- 1	
	and me and me and troupes, enters London.		
lands and Care	apprehends fuch others as		
ands and feet	apprehends such others as were culpable, and for	- 1	the interessed into a will to raise Armes; meeting
ands and feer offenders out	apprehends such others as were culpable, and for a terrour to the rest, causeth their * hands or see to be cut off, and then set them at liberty. The King		the intereffed into a will to raile Armes; meeting for that purpose at Leisesfer, where the Cestraing Earle and his * Confederates cogssist, how they (vn. Falissian de Frent and mirror).

513 der the specious pretext of remouing the Earle of Kent, as one whose predominating greatnes, and possessions seized by the King, he procures Alexander Bishoppe of Countree to lase conduct him to euill offices against them, were not to be by them endured) might deteine the Castle and other pos-Bedford, where hee throwes himfelfe at the Kinges feet, imploring mercy for his former good feruices. fessions demanded. But upon notice, that (if forth Hee was, after pardon of life hardly gotten, tent into perpetuall *banishment; at which time he with He died afterwith they did not render backe what they vniustly to perpetual shanilhment; at which time he with the facile of persons, who had in which are to the hard of persons and the persons and the persons are the same persons and the persons are the persons and the persons are the persons and the persons are t held) they should by name bee presently excommunicated; and that the King (now at Northampton) had with him not onely an honefter cause, * but a feared then all their flathes of Excommunication) they following a*wifer course, repaired forthwith to the King, rendring vppe into his handes all that belonged to the Crowne; but did not lay him, that hee commaunded all * Strangers to dedowne their difpleafure for that, on their perition part the Realme within a time there limited vnde the King would not put from him his chiefe Justin great penalty.
(19) The interrupted Counsels of Parliament, and the object of their Enuie. (17) Meane while Lewis King of Prance not conpurpoles of the King for recourie of his Poictoum tented to deny the demaunded reflitution vpon his inheritances, were now againe refumed; yet the King innerrances, were now againe returned; yet the King could not there (but vpon condition * that he should graunt their Liberites, the string which was ener har-ped on,) obtaine a fifteenth, nor the good will of alleaged pretexts, inuades fuch other parts as * King Henry peaceably held in Postou and Xunctions; the best colour and reason given for it, * is, That whereas Aquitain (whereof X ainttomy and Poicton were part) the States to furnish him in his French hostilities: was holden of the Crown of France by homage, the King of Thus the king, adrawne with defire of money (wherwas tolden of the Crum of France by boning, the King of England, being so blonder by fibeling in me ther well of the first many the first man of his want was very vrgent) grants thole his Cher-ters vnder his Seale, and was so further wrought on, that oathes were by royall commandement) taken, to tie all men to the observation of the said Graunts, according to the very letter, if that bee the meaning of * literatorium juramentum, and not forn-thing elle. Vpon the firength of this money (whole Mar. Patiente Henry in Aquitaine: vpon which ouerthrow the loffe of those foresaid Townes with the whole Countrey thing elfe. V ponthe thrength of this muney whole AD. 1878 John Adayly expens, like vitall nouriflument, keepes in retalerancing legrest actions aluse.) Richard Earle of Commad the Kings brother, William Lengy Earle of Saldivise, and about ehreefcore Knights with competent for sewer fent into Geigeju in the Springs where they fiftely arrived at Bandesses, and were honourably entererained. This interly arrival had good effect, on the continued the well-the whole followed the sewer for its confirmed the well-the whole followed the sewer for the confirmed the well-the whole followed the sewer for the of Poitton (as a one faith) enfired. Withall, the king of Pactions as wone ratery entered. Without, the king loft the ferruice of the faid Sanarie, a valiant commander, who for forme indignity offered watch him by william Longife Earle of Salisbury, (* fent ouer by King Henry, vpon some distaste of Sanaries do-Pol.Verg.H.l. 16. ings, with commission to oueruiew his courses,) so-dainely turned French, among whom hee had great credit and preferment. King Henry ill brooking fo great a defalcation of his forraine estates, determited by the French. Hugh Earle of the Marches of Polyd, Virg. 1, 16 ned to have recourse to the generall aide of his pro-Poicton, comming by the French Kings direction to compaign, and remove Earle Richard and the English from the flege anish be both. ned to hane recourie to the general laide of his peo-ple, for meanes to recouer his loffes, but while (for that purpole) hee held a « Parliament, the whole affembly was fodamely troubled with inft com-plaints of an unfufferable ourage.

(18) For Hanry de Braitracke, a Inflice Inneremote Earle Richard and the English from the lietge on it is being to the Rinks, was with all his Forces intercepted by an Antholycada, and discom faced with no finall loffe offmen, munition and carriages. All fides were in the end * contented to paule without parliance; Fred, and the English held Ansitizate deligite their Porce or practities. But William Languye the Kings vincle farmined not long his good ferroise in tholy parties who returning (yrom balines of Sale College Colle (18) FOR NEWLY as ENTARTHERS, A LUJIES TIME-rant, who with other held the Affifers to Dunftaple, was fodainely furprifed (and imprifoned vider fitrong Garrifon in Bedford Castle) by the com-mandement of Falasius, entraged, for that thirty wermandement of Facajus, entraged, for that thirty ver-dicts had there paffed against him, vpon trials of ti-tle for lands which hee had forceably entred. The Iudges wife with her teares so moued the whole with fo great humility and pietie, that at point of death hee would not receive the holy Eucharift in his Polyd.Perg.lib.16 Bed (which denotion is also reported of King Hen-Parliament to indignation and pitty, that all other ry the eight) but vpon his bare knees on the ground businesses set a part, the Clergy aswell as the Laity which hee moistned with abundance of penitent teares, Vpon which great Earle this Epitaph was forthwith attended the King to the fiege. Faleafine himselfe flying into Wales, thereto contribus a greater body of rebellion, did leave his brother, Lieutenant in the Caffle with a desperance rew, having vic-Plos Comitum Vilielmus obit, stirps regia; * Longus Enlis, vaginam capit haberebreuem. tuals and munition for an whole yeeres reliftance. Yetafter two Moneths fiege the Castle being taken, the Iudge was enlarged, the Lieutenant and his whole retinue hanged, the pile it selfe (as a denne of theeues) demolished; and an example given what o-Royal-born William, Flower of Earles lies here; A fleath thus fhort, doth Long-Sword ferue to bear thers should trust vnto, who did not in due time fubmit themselves to their Soueraigne. This * Fal-castus was a Norman by birth and a bastard, who (20) About these times the Pope(say his Monks) fent abroad into the world his Nunces, requiring enerie where undue exactions, with purpose to settle a cer-tainty of contribution to his See of Rome, out of all comming ouer in poore fort vnder King lohn, so b:-haued himselfe in the Kings seruices, that in renauen nimente in the Kings terutices, that in re-gard of his al-daring forwardnesse, Bedford was gi-uen him to desend against the Barons; where by rapine and violence hee had drawne rogether the shew of a great forpune, besides that which he had the Cathedrall and conventual! Churches in Chrithe Catheural and contention. Contents of the Adheric from that See, that entite frankall of America and Briberie, which otherwise their pensory must fill enforce them to vole. Neuerthelesse, aiweil the Messenger, as in marriage with Margaret de Ripariu a great inhe-ritrix, whom King John, to her no leffe discontentthe Message found but slender welcome here. For ment, then disparagement had bestowed upon him. But now when this Castle, beyond his imagination was thus beaten to the earth, and all other his burn) the Popes Agent Otto, received letters from Rome commaunding him prefently to returne: ot-

Chap. 9. Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46.

Polyd. Pergil.

i.10. Mat.Patis.

to, in rage of this vnexpected renocation, like a brane Romane threw the Popes letters into the fire, vet durst not disobey the Contents. And whereas the meffage it felfe had beene scanned and sifted to the very branne, both here and in " France, and indged to sauour of so universall an oppression, as might cause a generall discession from the Church of Rome; the King in presence of his Prelates and Peeres, turned off The King puts off the popes demaunds, Mat.Paru. the Popes couctous demaund with this thrifty anfwere: The things which the Pope would perswade us onto, doe stretch themselves as farre as the Christian world is wide, and because England is but an Out-Angle thereof, therefore when we fee other Kingdomes give vs an example, hee shall then finde vs the more forward to

(21) That difficultie so avoided; the King was carnelly bent to make a voyage in person to the aide of his brother Earle Richard, who pursued the affaires of Gafeoigne; which though by the late Earle of Sarisburies death it received some maime yet by the fortitude and counfell of other noble persons, it did still prosper. This intention and delire was staide by the receit of letters out of France which declared the Earle his brothers health, and the good fuccesse of affaires. The King (some say) among his Counfellors of State, had one William de Perepound a great Aftrologer, who fortold that Lewis King of France should not preuaile; and this affirmation did the rather withhold him at that present There is who* writes, that King Henry (vpon the Popes letters) forbare to attempt any thing in France at that time, left he should hinder Lews, who was then upon an enterprise against the remaines of the Albigenfes in Languedoc, Province, and the parts a-What kind of Heretikes the Albigenies of Waldenies were. bout. These men were traduced for Heretikes, and fo condemned by the See of Rome; but what their Herefie was,a * Fryer (who writes against them.) reports, faying, they were of all other the most pernicious Sect; for antiquity, some holding they were from the Apostles time; for generality, there scarse being any Nation where they are not; and lastly, for shew of prety, in that they line insthey before men, and beleeue all things *The Mafter he-rafie of the Albi touching God aright, or all the articles of the Creed, only they blaspheme and hate the Church of Rome. No maruail if this horrible herefie did trouble his Holinese; and therefore, whereas his Predeceffor, and himfelfe had kept much adoe in Christendome, to excite men to take the Signe of the Croffe, and warre against the Turke; (which the Fryers did perswade men vnto, teaching, that * who seuer were polluted with any hai-*April Aventinous offence, as Parricide, Incest, Sacrilege, hee was prefently acquited both from the finne, and the punishment of it . if hee thus tooke the Croffe voon him. \now. because the Earle of Tholous, and his people entertained the forefaid Herefie, the Croffe, and bolie warres The holy warres were by the Pope denounced against them. Of denounced 2-gainst Christian Princes, * Math. Peris. which Earle yet let vs heare the judgement of another * Fryer then living. Those (laith hee) who thus tooke the warres and Crosse against him, did it more for feare of the French King, and the Popes Legate, then for zealeof Justice; it seeming to many a wrong thus to infest a faithfull Christian man, and one who with many teares defired the Legate to examine the faith of euerse one of his Cities, and if any one held against the Catho-like faith, hee would punish him, according to the iudgement of the Church and if any City Should refelt him, hee would enforce it to make satisfaction. As for himselfe. hee offered to bee examined by the Legate touching his faith, andif hee were faulty, hee would make fatisfacti-

on to God and the Church. But all thefe things the Le-

gate (corned, nor could that Catholike Earle find anie

fauour, vollesse hee would for sake his Inheritance, and abiure it both for himselse, and his heires sor euer. These

were the Herctikes against which Lewis was now

imployed by the Pope, and King Henry the while

*commanded to furcease from impeaching his holy

enterprize. Wherein Lewis had spent a moneth in

the fiege of Aumion and endured (for all his facred

Crossings) maruailous losses, by a terrible plague de-

denouring his Army, by a strange kind of venemous The Popes ero flies, dispatching many, by a sodaine drowning of sings attended a great part of his Armie; and lastly, by being him with the bleffeife * poyloned by * one of his Earles(an vnchaft fings. Riuall of his Bedde) though it was given forth of The Earle of him(as * of his late Enemy King John, whom some thinke that Lewis his friends did make away) that hee ninke that Levis his friends did make away)that hee legite, were publiquely character (22) The newes of the French Kings death feath Levis his aied onely of a Flux.

conded with fure relations of fundry discontentments, and open factions under the young King (who was but * about twelue yeeres of age) bred an hope in King Henries mind, that now the time was come, wherein hee might recourr those ancient Roger Wand. inheritances which his Forefathers held in France: Math Park. and to advance his hopes, he had his mother Queene "Titima.

If abel (wife to the Earle of March in those parts,) "Melling shirts.

Membrase shirts. an earnest follicitor. Peter Duke of Britaine was the Para, tearce 10. principall man who tooke offence that himfelfe had Lifethers for not a chiefe hand in directing the young King Lewis ; but his prudent mother Queene Blanch * weakned his party by drawing his brother Robert Earle of Dreux from him; and albeit the Duke had re- m Lud 80. paired the breach, by affinitie with the Earle of Champain, (one of the twelue Peeres of that Realme, to whom the Duke marrieth the Ladie Blanda his daughter and heire,) yet watthe Earle driven by a short warre to continue quiet. The Duke hereup-on castes himselfe vpon King Henrie; Sed sera auxilia Anglica, the English sides come flow lie faith Eny-King to fend walter Archbishoppe of Torke, with others, to the chiefe men of Normandie, Angiou and Paicton, that by large promifes they might procure them to acknowledge Henrie for their King or by partakings, facilitate their reduction to the English Sourreigntie; who accordinglie profecuted their emploiment.

(23) These opportunities for that designe, mo-ued the King to bethinke how to gather money, to furnish so chargefull an enterprize; whereby while The King begets he fought to prouide to recouer that which was loft, he ministreth occasion to hazard that which he had. The onely great man in Court now was Hubert de Burgh: For the King protesting himselfe of age to gouerne without a Tutor or Protector, did principally conferre with him about all his most weightie affaires. Hence grew more enuy against Hubert, and perill to the King. From * the Londoners (besides the granted aides of a fifteenth, which all degrees Ms. Paris. were subject vnto) he wrung fine thousand Markes, were (tiblect vnto) he wrung nue troutant read to for that they had (as was alleaged) to his prejudice, span had this given Lewis the like fumme. In the Parliament at Oxidate have been supported by the like fumme for the ford, by aduice of Hubert his Lord Chiefe Inflice, he reuokes the Charters of Liberties , which now for about two yeeres had been practiled through the Realme:

The Charters two yeeres had been practiled through the King was of likeries reprecending, that at the time of their Grant the King was of likeries reunder use and had then no liberty either of his perfon or
week and called Signature; though otherwise, the royall power of the English Monarchie neuer pleads pupillage or minoritie. It served the turne for the time, and all men were faine to pay, what Huberts * pleasure was to asfesse, for obtaining the new Seale. The fortune of fuch Arts, whereby they were wont to fill Princes Treasuries, was not alwaies without repentance to the Authors, and Authorifers. The Clergie was compelled (vnder paine of Papall Censures) to pay the Fifteenth, not only for their temporall goods, but also for their Ecclesiasticall; and yet in the end, (after so much toffing of the People,)the Kings Ambaffa-dors returne out of France, without having effected that which they went about, fo that the whole enterprize quailed. For Queene Blanch by fweet and prudent courses, so preuailed among the factious, hat there was left no place for Henrie to take sure hold vpon. The Duke of Britain (who expected the English fuccours not till the Spring,) was fo ncerely preft, and almost opprest, with a winter war, that he thought himselfe beholding to his bro-

Campaigne, and the Poper

Otterbrente de d

enemies at home by railing

*Rog.de Wend,

ther Robert Earle of Dreux, for procuring his peace though it were with such a condition, as euer after, left vpon him, the by-name of Mauclerk or Male-Met.Paris.ed doctus. He acknowledged the Dutchie of Britain, to be An. 1234.
Scriptorts Brit,
apad Paul. Acmil,
in Ludon 9. the Fee of the Crowne of France, and that by right it ought to hold thereof; this acknowledgment, because against all apparant truth and Record, procured to him that By-name. Such conclusion at this present

Chap. 9. Henry 2. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46.

had King Henries French delignes. Our * auncient *Reg.dt VV end. Authors write, that this dishonourable homage Mat:Paris, at was done long after, and with an halter about his necke, at such time as the King of England refused to goe in person to his succours, but offered source

Earles, and other competent Forces, which hee refused, as harbouring a revolt in his bosome, and tur-(24) The enill will which the other great Lords fecretly harboured against Hubert, (whose Enuy the

Kings fauour in * creating him Earle of Kent had Rings randor m - creating interaction was naturally accorded, now openly discoured it felle, vpon this occasion. Richard Earle of Cormula, the Kings brother, (lately returned with honor out of Galeograe...) had feized into his hands a certaine

Manour, then in the tenure of one Waleran a Dutch-Gentleman, (to whom King John, for his good fer-uices had formerly giuen it,) which hee alleaged was parcell of his Earledome of Cormwall. The King hereupon directs his letters to his brother, commanding him to come immediately, and shew a reason of his fact. He doth fo, and without any pleaders helpe defended, as just, the feifure which he had made, concluding,among other words, that hee was ready to stand to the indgement of the Kings Court, and Peeres of the Realm. When the King, and the Chiefe Institut heard him name the Peeres of the Realme, they (fu-(pecting his bent that way) were exceedingly offended; and (faid the King) eyther restore the Manour to Waleran, or thou shalt depart out of the Kingdome, neuer to returne: at which peremptory sentence, the Earle boldly (but too rashly) answered; that heeneither would give his right to Waleran, nor without the indgement of the Peeres depart the Realme. The *Earle in this heate returnes to his lodging; thence (vpon furmife that Hubert had perswaded the King to lay hold on him) he posts to Marlebourgh, where sind in William Marshal the young Earle of Pembroke, hee enters into a sast confederacy, ratified by oath; and Rasulf Earle of Chefter is easily drawn to make

The Barons to

*Weed.MS. Mat.Park.

of Kent before

another, Letters thence flying about to all their friends, at Stanford there affembled vnto them, the Earles of Gloucester, of Warrenn, of Hereford, of Warwicke, Earle Ferrars, many Barons, and an huge multitude of armed men. Their strengthes being in likelyhood able to beare out their darings, they ad dreffe a bold meffage to the King, by which they require him in lofty Phrase, to make preset amends to his quire him in lotty Private for make projection and to the for the wrong bee had done; the fault whereof they imputed not to him, but to the chiefe Iustitiar: and that if he did not without delay restore the Charters of Liberties, which hee had cancelled at Oxford, they would drive him by dint of fword to give them therein competent atisfaction. The King seeing it no fase time to deny their requests, appoints to meet at Northampton in August next; where the Earle of Cormpall(vpon his Affociates resolute demaund of the King) had large amends of any iniury furtai-ned, his Patrimony being augmented with large accessions. The moderation and equanimity of the accettions. 1 ne moueration and equalitarity of the King (terrified by his Fathers example) peaceably finished this contention (the matter of the Charters being for the time hush, as seemeth) which might otherwise haue cost many thousand lines, and haue hazarded the ruine both of King and kingdome. (25) That daunger was not a little augmented The Welfh in

by the infurrections of the Welfb. The King had given the Castle of Mountgomery to his most trusty Counsellor Hubert de Burgh; the Garrison of which place, iffuing out, meant to stocke vp the Trees, and shrubbes, which grew necre vpon an high-way

leading through a great wood of fine leagues long; that transiters (ordinarily there spoiled) might passe, more fafely. The welf not suffering that waste; violently affayled the Workemen, and not without flaughter on both fides, draue them into the Caftle; which drew the King (who even in litle matters vied to make one) to come thither in person . who, with a competent strength, giues not ouer, till hee had with fire, and other force, confumed the whole Forrest. From whence hee peirceth farther into Wales, and confumes with fire a place called * Cridia; where whiles the King is building a Math Paris, Caffle to bridle them, * Levelin drew thicher critish his forces, where many were flaine on both fides, Powel in Hist. and a man of speciall worth William de * Brausia (or de Brufe) by the Welfb intercepted, as he went to "Hip. cambre forrage in the Country; * many great persons there in the Kings Armie being secretly confederated with Lewelin. By which trecherous practife, victualles grew fo fcarce, that the king was compelled to yeeld to a very dishonourable peace, the conditions wher-of were: that the King should raze to the ground the new Fort now almost finished; that William de Bruce should stillremaine Prisoner till the Welst thought good; that Lewelin should give the King toward his expenses three thoufand Markes.

(26) These home-bredde garboyles thus appea-sed; whereas Ambassadors had formerly repayred to the king out of Gascoigne, Poicton, and Norman-die, to offer him their services for recovery of those his inheritances, if himfelf would com in person with a royall Armie, hee about Michaelman's now read at 48.1235.

dy at Portfrouth for the exploit; whither all his Nobles were come with so great a multitude, not onely out of England, but out of Ireland, Wales and Galloway, as none of his ancestors ever had. Many were the motiues which encouraged the king to this attempt, but none greater then the business of Queen Downser his mother. Lewis king of France had created his brothet. Alfonse Duke of Poilton, commaunding the Lords of that Country to doe their homages to him; one of these was Hugh Earle of March, now husband to Queene Ifabel, who because thee had once beene the Wife of a King, and now the Mother, disdained that even her present husband, though but an Earle, should doe homage to a Subject, and thereby her felfe (bearing the file to a Superer, and thereby her lette (bearing the time of a Queene) feeme inferiour to the Lady loss, wife of Duke Alfins. The Earle was hereupon drawne to a refulail of homage; and the like spirit shee had breathed into the hearts of the princely family of Lufinian, whose Ancestors had been Kings of lerusalem and Cyprus. Northus contented to haue plotted a party, for her Sonne among the French the is charged to haue fought by poyfon to make that purpose were discouered, and executed. But Oneene 1/abet

and arture same time great Lituitons among the The moble for French Nobility, but the English (laith English warns among himfelfe) wrought not by treachery, but after the manner of faire warre, which they lift by defiance get. denounced, and then did openly profecute with (27) The King of England being thus provided of men, munition, and other necessaries fitt for the field, and now ready to embarke; there was not

shipping sufficient to transport halfe the Company. Barle Haber Which enraged the King io farre, that turning himfeife to Earle Hubert, (vpon whom hee charged the blame, he called him ranke old Traitor, affirming,

Nnnn

indgement, as also in thinking her the Author of

suborning Assaines to murther the King; for that

wee find him fingular therein, the * received opi-

Sarazens out of Afia, to take away the daunger

which they forefaw was comming, in regard King

Lewis was fo devoutly addicted to Christian piety,

and the hatred of Mahomets Infidelity. There were

+Ropertend.Se Cambr.

* This William hanged by Lem-elin for lying with his wife, as is reported in Mar. Paris.

Alex. Perm.

ad. As., 1230.

though elicowhere he fath it
was by reason of
Hubert de Barght
letters to Lewelin. 2dat. Paris.

Queene Ifabel practiles for he

* Wish Guilles nion being, that they were fent under-hand by the chr. Fran.

also at the same time great Diuisions among the The moble for

* Math.Paris.

Chap.9. | Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46. and also put him from his place, into which (by the Bishoppe of Winchesters suggestion, who now predominated in Court) hee substituted Peter de Oriuail a * Poictouine, the Bishoppes * Nephew or Sonne, if Paris fay true; and fo, laith hee, the Kings coffers otherwise empty and leane, were by these means suffer againe, though not to their full surfet. For their were but preparatives to a farther scrutinic and ran-sacke, intended against the Earle of Kent, whom (vpon the * Bishoppes suggestion) the King remoued on the 'Bimoppes toggettion, the Kim Termouse.

Trom the 'Bran-lughtiar/lippe (or high office of his Chiefe triffice) and put in his place Six Stephen Sergesea Kinight onely in name. Then is a first and captious account demanded of the Earle of Kent, for all finch things as he wait any fort chargeable with as, I. For lich receipts or debts, as were due. The principall to King Iohn, or to this King Henry himselfe: 2. For the meane profites of fuch lands, as the King was feifed of, from the day of the death of the first great William, Earle of Pembroke, his Institutar and Mar-shall, whither those lands were in England, Wales, Ireland, or Poicton: 3. For fuch Liberties or free Customes which the King had in Forrests, Warrens, Counties and else where, and how they were kept or alienated. 4. For such things as the King lost by Huberts negligence: 5. For the wronges and dammages offered to the Roman, and Italian Clerks, and to the Popes Nuncios against the Kings will by authority of Hubert, who would take no order to correct the mildoers, as by vertue and na-ture of his place hee was obliged: 6. For the many escuages comming by Carrucages, gifts and pre-fents, or for the rents of Custodies belonging to the (32) To all which heades, the Earle answered. The Earle of that hee had the Charter of the Kings Father, by which hee was freed from giuing any account eywhich nee was treed from guing any account ey-ther for things passed, or to come, and that hee had given such proofe of his fidelity unto King Inhm, as he would not endure to leare him make an account. Peter Bishoppe of Winchester replyed hereunto, that such a Charter after the death of King Iohn had no force, Jack a Charter after the actump a two journs an object and therefore the Fathers Charter, and grants of Privilege., was no reason why he should not stand accountant to the Somme. This defence for money dangers in this for transered or anoughed, they labored to draw him in for his head, by charging him with fundry Arricles or ca Articles founding treasonable; as, t. That Hubert had dissiwated the Duke of Austria from matching his Daughter with the King who fought it; 2.that he had hindred the King from entring vpon fortain lands to him belonging, whereby the King, Peeres, and People confused their Treafures vainely: 3. that hee had enticed the Daughter of the King of seast (whom King Isbin and entruffed to his cu-flody, meaning himfelfe to marry her) & traiterou-fly defiled the noble yong Lady, whom he married in hope to bee King of Sestland in her right, if thee furnised her Brother: 4. that hee had flohic out of his lewel-house a precious stone of wonderfull value, whose vertue was to make him who had it, inuincible in Battle,& that he gaue that stone to Lewelin prince of Wales, the Kings enemie: 5. that he by his letters had caused Lewelin to hang William de (33) The Earle much perplexed with these ac-culations (whither true or false) could hardly obtaine a short respite to make his answere: Thus; that taine a fhort respite to make his answere: Thuir, that Hubert ([13]* the Monkey) hope for lawe, of the King Hubert ([13]* the Monkey) hope for lawe, of the King and defence of the King dame, had prouched the harred of all the great Lords, now being for fact on it is King, it of the folds and bitters—y without privades a compart. One by Luke Archbishoppe of Dubin, neuer to look thing, on with prayers and tearse belough the King, on his behalf, but could not be cheard against fig great nearly the contractions of the country of The Earle to Sanchaaryt * Wesdower. Mat.Parii. opposites, on so great pretenses. When the cry was thus vp, and that the world faw it was no fu-

with the mutable King, there rife forth many accu-

fations(fauouring of much malignity) round about, Other malicious nations (audouring or much maignivy round about)
youn hoper opprelle & bury Hubert vinder them
foreuer;as, Likal he had poigned the two noble Earlie
foreuer;as, Likal he had poigned the two noble Earlie
for Editing and Pembroke; 2. that hee had also procured Fiduciju de Brent, and Richard Archispop of Canterbury to be made away; 3. that by Sorceries and Enchantments, hee had drawne the King to fauour him acomments, peecha at whe lim hing to plant man bused lother; 4, that in the victiony gotten against the Erench by Sea, hee forecably tooke many Prijoners from the King Sailers, and made his benefite of their ransjoms, contrary to right, and this hee had foiled and disherited many; 5, that hee had without triall uniusty put to man conjustine for which except the Citizen of Long companies of the many conjusting the conjust should repaire to Court, and there receive immediate redresse. This strange course of proceeding did fled to the Priorie Church of Merton in Surrey, where among the Chanons, hee sheltered his head Kenetakes (34) The King with his Prelates and Peeres mee ting at Lambeth, at the * day appointed for Huberts answere, hee (being made to beleeue that the King would put him to a most foule death) durst not appeare, or peepe forth of his facred refuge. The command) to the number of about twenty thoufand vnder banners displayed to dragge the Earle ont of Sanctuary: but vpon the Earle of Chesters wifer Counfell, the prey was taken out of the hands of a bloudy multitude (who mortally hated him for Constantines death) and they returned agains to their City. The Archbishoppe of Dublin still per-forming the office of atrue friend, ouerslips not this occasion, and by his importunity obtayned day for Hubert, till about Twelfe-tide then next enfuing, and the King for his affurance during the Interim, glues him letters Patents. Hubert thinking himselfescure for the present, is now upon his way toward his wife at the Abbey of Saint Edmund in Suffolke, but his enemies so prevailed by their sug-Suffiels, but his enemies to prequated by their ug-gethons, that Sir oddry at Censemb Knight, with thre hundred armed men, was fen to apprehend the Earle in 2/6r. He haing inclligence of their approach, fledde into a Chappell at * Breatwood, which adioyned to his lodging, from whence thole rough Souldiers hated him. (hee holding in one *handa Crucifix, and in the other the Sacrament) and fent for a Smith to make for him shackels of yron. Bus when the Smith understood, that it was from Bus when the 3 mind whethout, that it was for Hubert de Burgh Earle of Kent, he refuled, vitering fuch words (it Mathey Park doe not Poetize) as did well thew that honourable thoughts are fomtimes found in the hearts of men, whose fortunes are farre from honour; for having first drawne a deepe figh, hee faid; * Doe with mee what yee pleafe, and God have mercy on my foule; but as fure as the Lord lines, I will never makeyron shackles for him, but will rather die the worst death that is. For is not this white after are the work acan that is, for it not that that most loyall and couragious Hubert, who so often hath preserved England from being destroyed by strangers, co-restored England to England & He who faithfully and con-Stantly served his Soueraigne Lord King John in Gal jeanty jeruca nis souerangue Lora Aung tem in Sig-coigne, Normandy, and elfe where, that he was com-pelled to eate the fielfo fhorfes, whose high courage euen Enemies admired? he, that so long defended Douer Caenemies ammrea: ne, that je wong adjenaed Douer Ca-flic, the Key of England, againft all the exquisite slege of the French, and by wanquisings them as Sea brought safe-ty to the Kingdome? What need I rehearse his excellent doing: at Lincolne and Bedford? Let God be judge between him and you, for ving him so vinishly and inhumanely, repaying good with enill, nay requiting his most excellent deserts with the worst recompence that can be.
But Sir Godfrey, and his blacke band regarded not fuch speeches, but otherwise binding the Earle hard, they fet him on horsebacke, and so conuayed him to perficiall displeasure, into which the Earle was fain

the Tower of London.

rakes Sanctuary. * Fab.Conc. MS.

The bonest and

(35) This

(35) This breach of Sanctuary being made knownet o Roger Bishoppe of London (whose Dio-cessei was) he considently tels the King, that if the Earle were not restored to the Chappell, hee would

excommunicate all the Authors of that outrage.

The Earle is accordingly restored: but the Sheriffes

of Efex and Hertford, at the Kings commandement,

with the powers of their counties beliege the Chap-

518

Ra.Wend, M.S.

The Archbifhop of Dublin a faith-full friend to

to the King.

pell fo long, that at last (they having cast a Trench about it that none might goe in or out) the Earle was compelled to come forth and render himfelfe, bearing all things with an equall mind, as one that had a cleare conscience before God, which hee professed to haue. While the Chappell was thus beset round, the Kings indignation was fo violent, that hee forbad all men once to make mention of Hubert in his hearing. No maruaile then if it bee faid, that the Princes indignation is death. The Archbishoppe of Dublin neuerthelesse was not deiected, but with praiers and teares belought the King, who remained as yet inexorable, Huberts enemies possessing his foule and fenses. Hubert therefore is againe impri-foned in the Tower. There was no facrifice as it feemes could appeale the Kings ire, but that of the Earles Hoord of gold, and other riches, which the Knights Templars had in their custodie vpon trust, & without Huberts consent refused to deliuer. Hubert therefore willingly yeelds; which when the Depositaries did giue vp, the value feemed incredible. This hoording perhaps was Haberts crime, whereof being thus purged, he had hope to recour out of thele deadly pangs and consulfions of fortune, and himselfe to bee made capable of curing. Well, the king obtains this precious booty, but his enemies would have his bloud allo; faying, fifth hee was constitled of theft and fraud, it was meet he should die a moss shame-full death. It seemes, they thought, that the verie finding of fo much treasure was a conuiction of fraud in the getting, and that the King must bee interpreted to haue loft, whatfoeuer the Earle had gained. But the displeasure of the King was mollified with this golden balme, for hee answered The King relactime that year the properties the child of the district of the control and the learning strength on the child of the district of the child one cake has like the control and the child one cake has like the child one cake has like the child one cake has like the child one child of the child one child of the child one child of the child one child of the long ferued mee and mine ancesters; nor will I weigh more his euill deedes, which are not as yet manifest, nor proued true, then all his good deeds, which are plainelie knowne to the Realme, and to vs all. Hereupon Hubert had all fuch lands granted vnto him, as eyther King 10hm had given, or himselfe had purchased. There vndertooke for him to the King(as fureties) the Earles of Cornwall , and Warrenn, Marfhal & Ferrars, and himselfe was committed to the *Castle of Deuifer, there to abide in free Prilon, vnder the Custody of foure Knights, belonging each of them to one of these foure Earles. This Court-storme thus in part ouerblowne, let vs take our standings, to view what other weather followed, and what countenance of things in this Kingdome did next present it

felfe to the world. (36) The King being naturally, as it seemes, addicted to repose himselfe vpon some one mans coun-An.1233. fell, was now wholy swayde by Peter de Rapibus Bishoppe of Winchester, who had therefore wrought the Earle out of grace, that hee might foly raigne, and predominate in the gentle King. Which the better to effect, the Bishoppe procures him to dis-place the * English Officers, and in their roomes to furrogate Poictonines and Britons; who comming ouer to the number of about two thouland, he stuffes his Castles with them; and (in briefe) did as it were wholy entrust himselfe, his treasures, strengthes, and the Realme to them. So that * Indgements were com-mitted to the winds, Lawes to the Out-lawes, Peace 10

Wranglers, and Instice to wrong-doers. Such as would

haue praied redreffe for these abuses, were interrupted, and put off by the Bishoppe of winchester. Among them who were removed from their places in Court, was one Sir William de Redune a Knight, and
Deputy Marshall to Richard Earle of Pembroke. This
The kingby adwas to the Earle very displeasant, which ioyned with uneng stranger a consideration of the publike cause and danger, he are discontent his Mobles. affociates vnto him certaine of the great Lords (as was the fashion of those Lording times, vpon enery discontent,) and in the Company of them aduanceth confidently to the King, whom in the hearing of many hee reproueth; for that he had, through finiof many uccreptonents for man we may move in meller adults, called in the Poitsouins, to the oppression of the Realme, of his naturall subjects, of their Lawes and Liberties: humblie therefore hee beseecheth him that hee would spedily reforme such abuses, which threatned the imminent subversion both of the Crowne and Kingdome: which if hee did not, himself and other Lordes, would so long withdraw their attendanc, as he entertained Strangers. The Bishoppe hereunto makes tained strangers. The Billhoppe hereunto makes andwere; That the King might well and largishly call in what Strangers bins/felf thought goad, for the adjence of the Crowne and Reader, and fach, and for many of them, a might be able to compell his proad and rebellious people take obedience. When the Oracle would return can inchase no otherwise, they demonstered from Count feetine can inchase no otherwise. speake no otherwise, they departed from Court greatly discontented; firmely promising one to the strangers. other, that in such a cause which did so touch them all, they would like men stand together while anie breath was in their bodies.

(37) Those who were now most potent about the King, nothing forry for the discontentment of so great a Peere as the Earle Marshall, but counting it a part of their strengthes, to vie the regall power toward the weakning of the English, nourish in the King his auersion. The minds of men sufficientlie inclining of themselues, to doubt the worst vpon such diussions, had their seare increased by sundrie prodigies of strange thunders and raines, but especially of source redde Parbelions (or resemblances of Fine Summer in the Sunne) befides the Sunne it felfe, (appearing a bout the parts of Hereford and Worsefer) from moning till night in the Skies: and indeed much troubles mediates the felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates to felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates to felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates to felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates to felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates to felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates to felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates to felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates and felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates and felfer in the skies and indeed much troubles mediates and indeed much t ble immediatly enfued aswell in England as 14 ales, & Ireland, The Poictouins, and other Strangers thus bearing the fway, fo as the Kings person went guarded with troupes of fuch, the Earles and Barons being by the Kings command furmoned to another Parliament at Oxford, refused to come. While the King was there, one * Robert Bacon, who yied there to preach before the King and Balance Condition there to preach before the King and Balance Condition the King was inere, one * Lovers Bacon, who vice here to preach before the King and Prelates freelic told him, that if hee did not remous from him Peter Bi-floor of Wincheller, and Peter de Risallis, he could near force to the work of the work of the told the work of th be in quiet. The King did hereupon a little come to himself, & Roger Bacon a Clergy man also of a pleasant wit, did second Roberts aduste, telling the King that * Petra and Rapes were most daungerous things at fea, alluding to the Bishoppes name, Petrus de Ru- and Stones. pibus. The King therefore (as he had the happines in his mutability, to change for his more fecurity taking that good aduise of schollers, which he would not of his Pecres, summons a Parliament to be holden at * Westminster, giving the world to know withall, that his purpose was to amend by their adusse, * 11 July. what soener ought to be amended.

(38) But the Barons, confidering that still there arriued fundry ftrangers, men of warre with Horse and Armour, and not trufting the Poictonine faith, came not, but prefumed to fend this traiterous mefcame not, but pretuned to tend this traiterous melo diagnoto the king, that if our of hand her remarked met Peter Bilopo of Winnehoffer, and the Polifaniuses out of his Court, they all of them, by the countens affect of the third was with the common affect of the third was with the common affect of the third was a state of third was a state of the third was a state of third was a state of the third was a state of the third was a state of the made more timerous,) could easily haue beene drawne, to haue redeemed the loue of his natural! Liegemen, with the difgrace of a few strangers; but the Bishoppe of Winehester and his friends infused

The Barons fe

more spirite into him. Whereon, to all those whom | hee suspected, the King sets downe a * day, within which they should deliuer sufficient pledges to secure him of their loialty. Against that day the Lords in great numbers make repaire to London, but the Earle Marshall (admonished of danger, by his sister the Countesse of Cornwall) flies backe to Waler, and

*Rog de VP and chiefly for want of his * prefence nothing was concluded. The King not long after is at Glaffer with an Armie, whither the Earle-and his adherents required to come, refused, the King therefore burns their Mannors, and gives away their inheritances to the

The Earle Mar-

Mat Rais.

* The Sunday

mar. Hubert de Burgo

Chap. 9. Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46.

(39) This Rebellion had not many great names n it, but tooke strength rather by weight then num-

ber: the known Actors were the Earle Marlbal, the Lord Gilbert Baffet, and many other of the inferiour Nobles. The Bishoppes Arts had pluckt from him, the Kings Brother, and the two Earles of Chefter and Zincelne, (who dishonourably sold their loue * for a thouland Markes,) and otherwise, as it seemed secured the reft: neuerthelesse, these may well bee thought, not to have borne any euill will to their now forfaken confederate, the Earle Marshall, who tooke himfelfe to handle the common cause; certainely hee handled his owne fafety but ill, as the euent shall demonstrate. The Earle hearing these things, contracts firict amity with Lewelm Prince of Wales; whose powers thus knit together, by aduantages of the Mountaines, were able to counterpoize any ordinary inuation. To the Kings aide Baldwin de Gifnes with many Souldiers came out of Flanders. The King now at Hereford in the midft of his Forces, fends from thence (by winchesters counsell) the Bishoppe of Saint Danids, to defie the Earle Marshall how farre soeuer this word defie extends it felfe, fure it feems that the Earle hereupon

understoode himselfe discharged of that obligation, by which hee was tied vnto the King, and freed to make his defence. The King notwithstanding after fome final attempts, and better confiderations, did promife and affirme, that by adults of his Coun-cell all that was amife (bould (at a * day appointed) bee rettified and amended. About which time, thebert de recipes and amenaes. Adout which time fishers de Burgo, haing intelligence that the Bishoppe of Wim-chester (who was a Poistowne) plotted his death, escaped out of the Castle of Deuiser (where he was prisoner) to a neighbour Church, but was haled from thence by the Castle-Keepers. The Bishop of Sarisbury (in whose Diocesse it happened) caused

him to bee safe-restored to the same place, from whence by the Earle Marshall, and a *troupe of ar-York Nest. med men his friends, hee was refcued and carried (40) The King, at the day and place appointed, holds his great Councell or conference with the Lords; but nothing followed for the peace of the Realme; it was not an ordinary paffage of speech, which hapned there betweene the Lords, and the Bishoppe of Winchester . For, when the English Bi-

shops and Barons humbly belought the King for the honour of Almighty God to take unit grade his natu-rall Subtetis, whom without any triall by their Peeres) becalled Traitore: the Bishoppe (offended it seems, at Peeres) takes the words out of the Kings mouth, and antiveres; That there are not Pereis in England, as in the Realme of France, and that therefore the King of England, byfuch tulkitars as himfelfe pleafeth to daine, may hantly offenders out of the Realme, and by indicially proefic condemne them. The English Bishops relished his speech so harshly, that with one voice remneuns specen sonarmy, that wan one voice they threatned to excommunicate and accurie by name the Kings principall wicked Counfellors; but strinehoffer appealed; then they accuried all such as alienated the heart of the king from his naturall subjects, and all others that perturbed the peace of the

(41) The Earle Marshall, this while had by force resumed a Castle, which he had a little before sur-

rendred to the King, which stirred the King to gather his forces at Glocester, and thence to advance towards Wales. But the Earle had politically barred the Country of al Provisions, for man and beaft, that the King was faine to strike aside to Grosmont Cafile; where the Earle, with his Confederats and the power of Wales, so awaited their time, that assailing the Kings Campe vnawares, there were taken Cambr. p. 189. about fine hundreth horse, with the Sumpters, riches, and carriages of the Armie; vpon which loffe (his men also greatly scattered) the King leaving two noble Gentlemen with the Poictouins, to make good the Marches against the Welfb, returned more empty and inglorious then before. The Earle found them worke, whom the King had left behind, and (as hee was a man of no leffe courage then deepe witte,)whereas Baldwin de Gifnes (the valiant Flemish knight) with a thousand Horsemen, thought to haue furprized him, who having but a tenth part of that number, came to view the Castle of Monmouth; the Earle alone defended himselfe against twelve of his enemies, and when his horse was cowardly flaine by them, he pitcht one of them by the legge out of the Saddle, and leapt into it himfelfe, neuer giuing ground till his Armie came to the ref cue, and obtained a faire victorie, with the flaugh ter and captingtion of many Poistonines and others. His other exploits in and about wales, were not few nor vnfortunate; if it were not onely in this, (as what indeed could be more gricuous or vnglorious to a noble mind?) for that his Soueraigne was youn

the contrary fide. (42) The King about this time, to ftrengthen his life and State, with the prayers of Beneficiaries, and other denoted affections, founded the * houle of Connerts, where such as for sooke the Indaicall in Ch Superflitions, had provisions for maintenance vner a fober rule and ruler; he also erected and endoweda * famous Hospitall at Oxford, both for the entertainement of Forrainers and Pilgrimes, (who thither much frequented,) and for reliefeallo of fuch as were discased: So that Leoline Prince of fuch as were difeafed: So that Leoline Prince of whiteforwas was threatmed fore, if he would not liue in quiet, did not speake more magnificently of charity, the following the Maries of the Maries o honourably of the King; I more feare (quoth hec)

Mes. Res.

Mes.

(43) The Earle Marshall encreasing in strength and hatred against such as were the Kings reputed Seducers, makes spoile and booty on their possesfions, and loyning with the power of Leoline, puts all to fire and fword, as farre as Shrewsburie, part whereof they burnt to Ashes, and sackt the residue. The " King then at Glofter for want of fufficient Forces, departed thence (greatly grieued) to Winche fer, abandoning those other parts as it were to wast and ruine. It therefore seemes, that he was not growne stronger or richer, by the displacing of Hubert Earle of Kent, and the rest, and by taking new into their roomes, who commonly bite and fucke hard till they have glutted themselves, (if at least wise there be any fatietie in auarice) whereas the old of-

chance, haue the leffe reason to be grieuous. (44) Therefore the Lions skin not being large enough for the Bilhoppe of winchester, and his factious purpoles, they piece them out with the Foxes case; an ineuitable stratageme is deuised. The Earle Marlball had in Ireland all the ample Patrimonies of his Grandfather, the famous Strangbow. To make that member of his strengthes improfitable. if notalfo pernicious, they deuise certain letters directed to Maurice Fitz-Gerald (Deputie Iustice of A practifeto ru-Ireland) and other principall men, who held of the Earle. In them they lignifie, that Richard, once Marshall to the King of England, was for manifest trea-fon by the judgement of the Kings Court, banished the Oòoo

ficers, having provided in a fort for the maine

Now the Rall

An.1234.

*Rog.VV end.

leger,ex legibus, pax discordanti-

Book.9

The peftilent te-nour of the let-

Realme, his Lands, townes and Tenements confumed with fire; other his Hereditaments destroyed, and himselfe for ever disinherited; that if upon his comming thi-ther, they did take him either alive or dead, the King did give them all the Earles lands there, which now were forgue them at the Earles tands there, which have perfeited by vertue of his Attainture; and for a flurance that the faid gift floudd continue frine and good shey, by whose admissible King and Kingdomenaga governed jaithfully undertooke. To these letters which the Monkes call bloudy) they caused the King to set his Seale, as they themselves also (being eleven) did theirs; vpon receite of which lines, the parties fignifie backe under the feale of feeresie, that if the Contents of those letters were confirmed by the Kings Letters Patents, they would performe that which was defired. The Letters patents bee made accordingly, and having fraudulently gotten the Great Seale from Hugh Bishoppe of Chichester, Lord Chancellour, who knew

Alexander Bishop of Chichester clea-reth himself from

* Ra Wend, MS

The English Bi-shops deale wit the King about redresse of the

Objections a-gainst the Bishop of Winton and

not thereof, they make them authentike with the (45) The Kings mind therefore being fill exul-cerated towards the Earle Marfhall, hee grienously charged Mexander Bishoppe of Chefter, that he had too much familiarity with the Earle, affirming that they fought to thrust him from his throne; the Bishop to cleare himselfe from so hainous a scandall, puts on his Episcopall habite, and solemnly pronounceth his Epilcopall habite, and loteranly pronouncern all those accurs, who did but imagine a wightenesse of so foule a nature, against the Maiely or perface of the King: and thereupon by the intercession of other Prelates, he ewas received into grace. The King was then at westminster; where Edmund the Archbishop of Canterbury elect, with other his Suffragan Bishops. bewailing the effate of the kingdome, prefent thembewaiting the create of the kingdome, precise there for him, telling him, as his loyal Liegemen, et that the Counfell of Peter Biftop of princhefter, and his eComplices, which war be had, and offel, was not found or nor fife, but cruell and perillone to himselfel, and et his Railma. Erift, for that they hated and despifed the "his Keatime. Et fly or that toop bates and adjujes toe 'englift, calling them Trainours, turning the Kinges, chear from the lone of his people, and the hearts of the copcing from him; as in the Earle Marifall, whom (be-ing one of the worthieft men of the land by flowing felfe clales they druse into discontentment; 2. that by the Counsellof the Same Peter, his Father King John "Completed the hearts of his people, then Normandie, then "other lands; and finally, wasted all his treasure, and "almost England it selfe, and neuer after had quiet; 3: "that if the Subjects had now beene handled according to Justice and law, and not by their ungodly counsels those present troubles had not hapned, but the Kinges alands had remained undestroyed, his treasures unex-"hausted; 4. that the Kings Councell is not the Coun-cell of Peace, but of perturbations because they who cannot rife by Peace, will raife themselves by the trouble. s and disinherison of others; 5 that they had the treasure, Castles, Wardships, and strengthes of the Kingdome in their hands, which they insolently abused to the great hazard of the whole estate, for that they, made no con-"science of an Oth, Law, lustice, or the Churches censures. "Icenee of an Oth, Law, uptice, or the charlest cenjures.
"Therefore we, & King (laid they) fleake the ethings
"faithfully unto you; and in the prefence both of God and
"man, doc counsell, besech, and admonish you, to remove
"such a Councell from about you, and (as it is the usage "in other Realmes) governe yours by the faithfull and forme Children thereof. The King in briefe answered hereunto, that hee could not fodainely put off his Conneell, and therefore prayed a short respite, till their accounts were audited. Meanwhile the behauiours of the Marshalline taction (having this backing at Court) grew more and more intolerable; for while the King was at Huntingdon, the Lord Gilbert Basset and others, set fire vpon Ackmundbury, a Towne belonging to Stephen de Segrane, the flames whereof were seene of the owner, being then with the Kingat Huntingdon. They also tooke prisoners vpon the Welfh Marcher, and according to the Law of VV arre(which, faith one, is *lawlesse) did put them to their ransomes.

(46) Nothing had hitherto preserved the King in taking and lea more, then that hee could, without great griefe forgoe any fauourites, if hee were neerely profled; the contrary quality whereof hath beene the cause of finall defolation to fo many Princes. For albeit the choice of Counsellors ought to bee free, yet by com-mon intendment, they should bee good; or howsocuer they are, or are not, it is madnesse to hazard a Crowne, or leefe the lone of an whole Nation, rather then to relinquish or diminish a particular de pendant. The rights of amity ought neuerthelesse to remaine inuiolable, but in such distance, that the publike be not peruerted, nor interuerted for a priuate. The King therefore, in this point not vufortunate, commaunded Bishop Peter to betake himfelfe to his residence at VV inten, without once medling in affaires of State; but against Peter Rinallis his Treasurer, hee was so vehement, that he sware, hee would pincke out his eyes, were it not for reuerence of hely Orders; commaunding also their Poi-Commes to depart the Realme, neuer to fee his face

(47) Then are the Archbiflop of Canterbury with the Bishops of Chester and Rochester sent anto Wales to pacifie things there. But the inuincible Earle Marshall had now crost the Seas into Ireland, to take reuenge for the spoiles and diffeisures, which his hired enemies had made in his lands there; by whole plots, according to that fecret agreement, hee was finally taken, and died of a wound given him in the backe, as hee with admirable manhood defended himselfe. His Body was buried in Kilkennie (which pleasantly-situated Towne our Soueraigne King lames erected into a City,) where himselfe in his life had appointed, in the Oratorie of the Minorites: in which Town, as yet some small tokens of this great name are remaining; for in the East window of the Abbey-Church of S. I ohn Baptist, and in the Abbey of S. Dominieke, the ancient Armories of the Abbey of S. Dommiere, the anticus and the Patri*Marfbal, Lord of Kilkenny, are yet extant. The Patrimony of this Earle was finited by the Contractors

ore very outer
all a Lyon ran. according to the purport of the Letters patents; but when the King heard of his death, hee(to the wonder of all that were by) brake forth into teares, be-walling the loffe of 60 braue a Knight, affirming that he had left no Peere behind him in the Kingdome. A blok fed King, faith Paris; to love even those who had offen

(48) The Archbishoppe of Canterbury with the Ann. 1235. other Bishoppes, repaired to the King at Glocester. vpon their returne from Leoline Prince of Wales, who pretended hee could not conclude, till the King had received into grace such of the banished No bility, with whom himfelfe had beene confederated during the late displeasures. The King hereupon moved with Pittie, sends forth his Proclamations, homehis rebel that all fuch as were outlawed or proferibed, should bee at Gloucester upon a certaine day, there to be receiuedinto the Kings fauour againe, and to haue restitution of their inheritances; but less they might reflitution of their innertrances, out left they magne fulped any cuill measure, it was ordered that they should bee in the Churches protection, and come vnder the safe-conduct of the Archbishoppe and the other Prelates. Thither at the time and place limited doth Hubert de Buree Earle of Kent (and lately chiefe Infliciar of England) repaire; vpon whom, by mediation of the Bifbops, the compassionate King looks gratiously, receiving him in his Armes with the kiffe of peace; in like fort was the Lord Gillert Baffet, and all others of that fellowshippe, receiped into fauour, their feuerall livings and rights fully restored; and both Hubert and Baffet admitted to bee of his Councell. And, that nothing might bee wanting to make the ioy vniuerfall; Gilbert, Brother to the late Earle Marshall, had the whole Earldome conferred upon him with all the lands and rights thereof wherefocuere notwithstanding the foresaid treacherous conveyance; whom also the King made Knight at V Vorcefter , and delivered into his hands

Of Princes Cos

The king re-

The Earle Man

Hubert de Burgh

prothets lands &

Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46.

the Rod of the Marshallbip, according to the custom. Howbeit in all these points the King may sceme but to have temporized (as thereto driven by overbearing inducements) or elfe greatly afterward to haue changed his judgement, because hee open ly at one time * called the faid Richard a bloudy Traitour, and caused this Gilbert to bee forcibly kept

The practife to destroy the late Earle Marshal

"Rog. de Wesd. M.S. Math.Paris.

geries Armie against the mu

Mach. Paris ad

Chap.9.

out of the Court vpon a Christmas day. (49) Vponthis reconcilement the practife,by which the late great Marhall was deftroyed, and his poffessions difmembred, came to light; the copy of the letters, which had beene fent into Ireland, being by commandement of the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, openly read in the presence of the King, the Presates, Earles and Barons. It moved teares in all of them; the King with an Oath affirming that hee knew not the contents of the faid letters though by the vrging of the Bishoppe of winchester Rinallis, Segrane, Passelen, with other of his Councell, hee had caused his Seale to bee put vnto them. At the found of Summons to make their feueral appearances, the Malefactors take Sanctuary, the Bi-floop and Peter de Riuallis in Winehefter Church, Segraue in Leicester Abbey, Pascleu in the new Temple and others otherwhere. In the end, vpon the intercession of Edmund Archbishop of Canterburie who piously endeauoured to extinguish all occasions of further diffention in the Kingdome, and vndertooke they should have a lawfull triall, the delin-Easter at Norwich. dertooke they inould have a lawful trian, the climing quents appeared at Westminster before the Kings who * sate in person with his sussiciars upon the Bench.

Peter de Risallis was first called (for the Bishop came

not.) whom the King shot through with an angrie The king fits in Weltwinster with the Judges on the eye, faying; O thou Trastour, by thy wicked aduise, 1 was drawne to fet my Seale to thefe treacherous letters for the destruction of the Earle Marshall, the Content yor sic aestrussion of the Earle was jume, the contents whereof were to mee unknowne; and by thine and he like counsell, I bandhed my naturall Subjects, and turned their minds and hearts from me. By thy had counsel, & thy Complices, I was moved to make warre upon them to my irreparable loffe, and the dishmour of my Réalme, in which enterprize I wasted my treasure, and lost many worthie persons, together with much of my royall respect Therefore I exact of thee an account aswell of my treafure, as of the custodies of wardes, together with many o ther profites and escheates belonging to my Crowne. Pe-ter denying none of the acculations, but falling to the ground, thus befought him. My Soueraigne the ground, this belought nim. Crys Someraigne Lord and King, I have been ensurficed by you, and made rich in worldly fubliance, confound not your own Creature, but at leafivile grant mee a time of delibe-ration, that I may render a competent reason for fach points as I am charged with. Thou shalf (faid the King) The king himfelt gives fentence of the Bench be carried to the Tower of London, there to deliberate till I am (atiffied.He was fo, Stephen de Segraue, the Lord Chiefe Inflice (whom the King also called most wicked Traitour) had time till Michaelmas to make his accounts, at the Archbishops and other Bishops humble entreaty; and for other matters, he shifted them off from himselfe, by laying the blame vpon against the muu-ned Romans, (sy both Wendeuer and Paris, ad An. 1335. fuch as were higher in place then hee : into whose office of Chiefe Luftice, Hugh de Pateshull is aduanced. The like eualion Robert Paflew hald, by leaving the fault vpon Walter Bishoppe of Carleil, who was aboue him in the Exchequer: and thus were these civill enormities reformed, not without reducing

> (50) As those continuall turmoiles, and plagues of the Sword, much afflicted the land, forthis was the third y eere, wherein God inflicted also for sin the plague of famine, whereby the poore did miserably periff, there being no Samaritan to pay for their harbouring, or to annoint their wounds with the oyle of confolation. Our Authors, to make manifest, how odious the mercilesse heart is in the fight of God, relate a storie of that time with protestation, that they doe it, lest so memorable an example should be in time forgotten. Certain*poore, while as yet the Corne was greene, pluckt the cares

ftore of Coine to the King.

in the common fields, to fuftaine their lives; whereupon the Owners call on the Prieft, to curfe all fuch as had so done: but one in their company adjured the Priest in the name of God to exempt his corne from the sentence, saying, it pleased him well, that the poore drinen with samine, had taken his corne, and so commended that which they had left to God The Priest, compelled by importunity of the rest was entred into the sentence, when by a terrible in terrupting tempeft of thunder, lightning, wind haile, and raine, all the corne-fieldes about were desolated, as if they had beene troden downe with Horse and Cartes; that no kind of beaft or fowle would feed vpon the corne thus laid. But (as fay our Authors out of the * Scripture) feeing the who are pitteous find mercy, that honest and compassionate hearted man, found all his corne and grounds (though interlaced with theirs,) altogether vintoucht and vinharmd. Wher-tipon (fay they) it is more cleare then any light, that as glory to God on high is Jung of Angels, so there is peace on Earth to men who are of goodwill. This dearth was in * France and Gascoigne aswell as in Regiand. A Isrific improry may well be annexed to want of Chrifisias Charity. There were brought before the King at Wiffmingfer liven I leves, who circumcifed a Child, and purposed in contempt of The Israel State of the Child, and purposed in contempt of the Israel State of the Israel Christ and Christianity) to have crucified him in pireto crucifie

(51) These now calmer times, were made more happy, by the marriage of the Emperour Fredericke marriage of the Emperour Fredericke marriage with the Lady I label, the King of Englands fifter, a beauteous young Lady about twenty yeeres of age. The messengers arrived in March with the Em perours letters, closed under a Seale of gold; and there were fent to conduct her ouer, the Archbishoppe of Colein, and the Duke of Louain. The King brought her to Sandwich with about three thousand horse in his traine; and being imperially furnished with all worldly abundance, shee tooke shipping in May, and in one dayes and one nights space arrived at Antwerpe, a City of the Empire, & was every where most magnificently entertained; her sweet humility, and excellent beauty, drawing all to lone and honour her. At the solemnitie of her * marriage were prefent three * Kings, eleuen Dukes, thirty Marqueffes & Earles, befides the number of great Prelates. On whether superstition, or observation of the Emperour is noted at this marriage, that he forbare the Empresses company, till a age, that he forbare the Empresses company, till a certaine howre, which his prisards or Astrologers to not the state of t had assigned, and in the morning hee caused her to bee carefully tended as a woman with child, and fent word to his brother the King of England, that hee should have a sonne, so skilfull or confident hee was; and God did fauour his judgement, for it nee was; and Good did tauour nis truggenein; for it proued fo. This Imperiall affinity gaue a *wor-thy Hittorian occasion here to display and embla-zon the Maiesty and glory of the English Princes; but amongst them all, none were higher aduanced then the Children of King Iohn, one of whose sons was now a * King, the other afterward chosen to be

(52) There were spread through England about this time certaine Romane V surers called * Caursini, who had entangled the King himfelfe, most of the windename great men, and all others as had to deale with the Court of Rome, in their cunning fnares. Their first entrance into England was some few yeeres past, when the Pope requiring the * tenth of all moneable goods in England, Ireland and wales, towards his wars against the Emperour Fredericke, sent Stephen his Nunce hither to collect it, * who brought with him that race of deuouring-Monsters under humane thape, called the * Popes Marchants, vnder colour

an * Emperour, and one of his daughters a *Queen,

can enjoy his good company no longer.

confusion of hard heartednesse

*An. 1235.

* At Wormer in Mat.Paris.

* Rog Wendoner in bill, MS, in

this other (here mentioned) an * Empresse. And here doth V endouer end his history, to whom we have hitherto been beholding for his labours, forry wee

after requested the King to send him his brother

Richard, Earle of Cornwall, to make him Generalla-gainst the French, whereby the English also might re-

couer their right : but the Emperour was delired to choose any other; for him the States of his Realme,

(which were affembled to confult thereupon)

ruption or fale of Juffice; and finally hee conditio-

neth, to relie whollie upon his naturall Subjects for ad-nife, leaving all others. The money gathered (the seue-

rest and most mistrustfull point of all,) was not to

be paid into the Escheequer, but to be deposited in some religious house, or fortresse of enery Countie,

Popes Pensioner then a King. Notwithstanding the King was to proudent of his State, that the Legate to bee expended in the generall feruices of the Kingdome, as occasion required; so that if the king calling his * Nationall Councel, thither came from the failed to performe his part, every man should have backe what hee had disbursed. One great and or-King, John Earle of Lincolne, John Fitz-Geoffrey, & was makes vo-luctary houses. dinary cause of waste, seemed now taken away, for that Lealing such bad a Co. William de Rele a Canon of Pauls, to forbid the Le- The king forbid gate on the behalfe of the King and Kingdome, not to attempt any thing against the corne or royall digthat Leoline (who had * first taken homage of all his owne Barons) did * voluntarily yeeld to hold his whole Principality of the Kings of England; mo-(58) Simon de Montfort (afterward created Earle ued thereunto (though with much millike of the Wellb) to ftrengthen himselfe against his son Grifof Leicester) had now wrought himselfe into such fauour, that the King with his owne hand secretie fin, who greatly infested him, being also assayled gaue Elienor, (widdow of the last William Mar-fhall Earle of Pembroke) to him in marriage, notwith a palfie. (57) There is in Mathew Paris much complaint of the State of England at this time, which by the Kings flexibility (laith he) was become the ordinarie withflanding that she had vowed herselfe a Nunne. Complaint of the Kings raigne more grieuous then suft, When this was once knowne to Richard Earle of Cornwall, and the angry Lords, they all took such frusfe thereat, because they were not first consulted prey, sometime of one fort of strangers, and sometime of another, Poictouins, Italians, Alemaines, with, in regard the King had promised to doe no and Pronincois. Indeed the Genius, and common weighty matter without the, that none but Hubert humour of a Nation, is not easily alterable: and The Rule of de Burgh Earl of Kent adhered to the forfaken King . our Microsie (or harred to Strangers) was no new quality, for * Horsee noted it before or about Christs birth and Englishmen can hardly see when The head of this decidion was the Earle of Ceri-wall, of whom men generally had hope, that he would now free the Land from the milerable operations both of Romans and other Straggers. Him therefore the Le-gate vndertakes, but found him fifting and vntractathey are well to keepe them fo. But no kind of Strangers at that time more infefted England (faith our*Monk)then the Romans, of which here iwarpace v nucreases, our round immanie and vitracea-ble as first. For when hee truly and fatherly vold-him: T has if all the people of the land rose against the King, get be being his own brother ought awayes to stand fast with him against the whole world, and not a make himselfer Captain of the nemies, to e. The Earler gound-*Parif.bifl. mt. med three forts, V furers, which were the Popes Merchants, Italian Clerks, most vile and illiterate persons which armed with the Popes Bulles possessed themselves (against all right of Priusleages) of spiritual revenues, and if any withstood them, they were by the Popes owne investige upsain of the entertainty. The carrier to the being the confliction of the thing the confliction of the thing the confliction of the carrier than the confliction of the carrier than the confliction of the carrier than the carrier to the public soft of the carrier than warrant excommunicated; lastly, the * Farmers and Proctors for the Romans, who cunningly scraping toge-ther whatsoever was of price in the Land, sent it over Firmarii d Pescuratores Rom.Parif. ther whateners was of price in the Land, lent it our-ces other Adjers, who there lines in additionalises we the Patrimony of from that was crusified, and in price on other mens goods. Informuch, that body more pro-tected in the price of the price of the price of the lit was better for thems to die, then toge the price of the little of the price of the price of the price of the good letter that the price of the price of the price of the price of the price of the price of the price of the good letter of the price of the defines through from the west emuseans with neumaric Thair was more reconstruct by for function to the Thair was more reconstruct by for function to the Ring his brother did most fland in med of belop-, and year differences, that in would not take example by fush as were welf, a neutier of the Emperous, who having married heir fifther, returned the with him, but four lacked all that attends for, not giving to any of them entire lands or many although himself & did about all bothymore than the second of the second o Sion was become like an impudent Harlot. And as these Papall Engines dealthere in England, so did the example of the King of France, who tooke the same course though he married the class sister of the English they with others * at Rome, the Gouernours of that Church not feeking to winne mens foules, but their mo-Queene, Gre. The Legate vpon thefe and many o ney, oppressing the religious by punishments, vsuries,& Simonic, without any care of instice and honesty. Which ther shrewde sharpe speeches, takes with him Peter Bishoppe of Winchester, and deales with the King, made the Greeke Church at this time to fall quite away, minoppe or remorper, and cause with the Aung, who required time to answer; which the Lords granted, and met at London stronglie appointed vpon the day. There, while the quarrell hung in suspense, simon ale Monifort had with money, faire and oppose it selfe against the Romane. Doubtlesse England had no lesse cause so to doe, then had the Greekes; but as Pope Gregory knew that his onely way to keepe England falt, was to hold close with wordes, and much entreaty of Mediators, reconci the Kings fo the King also saw no way to strengthen led himselfe to the fierce young Earle, and so also himselfe against his Barons, but by holding in with had tolm Earle of Lincolne, another marke of the the Pope, though with so many vnsufferable mispublike enuic. This practife (which Earle Richard entertained without his Confederates printity) had chiefes. And for some such purpose of the Kings, newly now arrived Cardinall Otto, the Popes Leprofitable effects; for the controlling Lords loft thereby their Generall, and hee greatle weakened gate, greath against the liking both of the Peeres, and Mat Paris, gate, greate against one using voting the recess, and of the Archbriloppe of Canterbury, who not onely repromed the king thereof, as of a thing dangerous to the Kingdome, but foome after also tooke his iourney himselfe in the opinion of the Lords and People nimetre in meopinion or the Loras and People's both which were points of aduantage and farley for the King. But Simon feeling himfelfe as yet vpon no fitre ground, left his wife with child at to Rome, to make formecomplaints, neither monid he flay, though the Legaterecalled him by his authoritie, which ener after cassed much hatred between them. Yet Kenilworth, not ceasing, till by the fauour of the Emperours letters and * excessive bribes, (by which so said the fundry good offices were at first performed by the Emperours letters and excelsue orives, (of winen king bimielle suffice was ourroome, and made captine to the Romana-that dispensaise Legate. The treatie of peace begun betweene the Legare. 1 ne treatte of peace begun betweene the two Kings of England and Seotland at Tork, was again refumed in the fame City, where Otto interpoled himselfe coward making a finall agreement, which enflued. There were also affembled the Earles and serice) hee had obtained at Rome a dispensation for Paris. that marriage, which yet was * doubted, whether it could bee lawfull, because shee had taken the ring, though neither the hebit of a Nunne, nor * ring, though neither the habit of a Nunne, nor and Met. Parkthe vaile. Howfoeuer, the King did afterward Hallings, 232. Barons, who by the princely offices of Alexan fodainely breake with him, objecting that Montford der King of Scots, were reconciled to the King their had * first corrupted her, and hee to couer his Si- "Matteria, Sourraigne, if this be the time which Boetius meanes. fters shame, was content to giue her in Ma- P480. and not the next yeere. Otto had formerly accorand not the next yeere. One had formerly accorded many of them among themselnes, whose difagreements had emperild the State of the Realme, so that for a time nothing but calmnesse and amity riage.
(59) While the Kingand his Queene abode at
Woodliecke, a Traitour was apprehended, who vpon examination, confelt that others had vowed the The King in day appeared. Yet soone after they stormed to see the fame, and that hee was fent out of Ireland from Kingio * addited to the will of the Romans, especially the Legate, for which, Richard Earle of Cornwall VV eliam the sonne of Geoffrey de Marifes (one of

Ma. Paris.

reproued him, as carrying himselfe more like the

those Patentees, which hoped to share in the lands

00002

Chap. 9. Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46.

1355

2

The Traitor drawne in tunde with horfes

* Because Kings

Scriprares they are called God * Mat Paris. ad A.D.1242.

Paris.

* In Walling ford Castle,

* 16 lunij, Lomini.Paris.

Ann. 1239.

bly crave absolution; which accordingly they perfor-

(60) The Legate was (not long after) called

home by the Pope, * opon notice of the scandall daylie ginen in England, by the unsatiable anarice of the Ro-

manes; but by the earnest workings of the King

who feared left his great ones would rife against

him, hee was detained as a necessary cuill to establish the good of Peace. For it was in a manner taken up for a fashion among the Lords, to glorifie

themselues with the senselesse multitude, by sedi-

tiously disparaging and taxing the Kings discretion

and gouernment, being farre too gentle and ami-

able for spirites so pernerse and insolent; which might well forcehis louing nature, to feeke kind-neffeand adulife among firangers, feeing he could not haue it for any his deferts among the home-borne. A great reason why (perhaps) he did some

few things rashly and passionately enough ; it being a thing forceable to diftemper a very wife man to haue so many imperious censors to obserue his actions, and few to humble their abilities to obse-

quious feruices, all bearing themselves rather like

Turors or Controllers, then like Subjects or Counsellors. About which time, one william an

ordinary Calumniator, and accuser of great men

Great faulte in the Lords to-wards the Kins

of Richard late Earle Marshall) to commit that asto the King, was for that impious practife confaffinate vpon him. This execrable wretch having demned to die; though hee fought to peece out beene a Courtier, and one of the Kings * Knights. his dayes by the helpe of new appeachments and supposing to have found the King in his owne retiwas hanged vpon a Gibbet in London. Now allo the King beganne to finell out the vndirect and Promoter. ring Bed, had about midnight gotten in at the Chamber window; but God (in whose special protection, the lines of ces are) disappointed him, for the King was ellewhere in bed with his Queen. the king occurre to men our the violetee and faile dealing of his beloued Legate, whole familiar friend (Peter Saracen) being taken Captuse by the Emperour, and to pay 10000 l, Sterling for his randome; the fhameleffe Legate counfelled the king Neuerthelesse he gaue not ouer, but with naked knife in hand, fought vp and downe in fome other Chambers. One of the Queenes' gentlewomen (litting late and very deuoutly at her booke by canto bind himfelfe and his Crown for that payment. Wher-by the King perceiving what toiles were laid to entrap dle-light,) at fight of the furious villaine, with her bythe any percessing, were some over use to enjoy then, (the komanes net caring what loffe happened to the Kingdome, so they might be gainers) (worsin great rage, that it repented him be had our admitted the Legate into the land, to dispitate he wealth thereof. But the Bilhoppes of the land meeting in Conneell at fhriking noise wakened the Kings servants, who ftarting out of their Bed, laid hands upon him: & afterward he was drawne in peeces with hories at Couentree, And worthily: for(as * a vulgar Chro-Couchtree. And worthing tori 25 "a vulgar conco-nicler hereupon faith truly, Im mounding and killing a Prince, the Traiter we guilty of homicide, of puricide, of "Christiside, may of "Deteide. William de An-rise, who was saide to bee the instigator of this London to redresse the oppressions of the English Church, toide the Legate flatiy, that the Romanes importunity had fo long exhausted their Church-goods that they would no longer endure it. These English repentan-Treason, knowing his danger, became a Pyrate & ces seeme somewhat too late; but that providence fortified the lile of Lundey in Seuern, where hee did much mischiefe, the littration of that little Iwhich the King of Scotland soone after vsed, was, as more tempestine, so more commendable, when land being * inexpugnable. At length hee was furmeeting the same Legate (for now into Scotland he is going to gather coine) he denied him entrance in to his Kingdome, telling him, he was the furfi Legate which euer entred that Kingdome; yet by intreasie to prised therein, and lixteene of his Complices, who all of them after conuiction were put to death at London. William to the last gaspe denying his priuity to the former treasonous attempt of killing faue the Legates credite, hee was permitted; first the King. About the time of the Kings danger at Woodstock, the Legate was in very little better case at Oxford, where being at first honourably by the vmaking a declaration, that his entrance should neuer goe for a President of any after; whereto the Legate should put his Seale at his departure; but niuersity entertained in Ousney Abbey, the pride of his Romans there proued so intollerable, that a troupe having gotten what hee came for he fodainly stole away mithout leave of the King, and carried his wri-ting with him. By all which vile and indigne viaof the yonger students, prouoked therewith to arme themselues, not onely slew the Legates owne brother, ges, a man might thinke the Church of Rome did but would have done the like with the Legate himbut would nate upone the tike with the Legate man-lelle, whom they termed an V furer, Symbolif, Rent-raker, Money-thirfler, persenter of the King Julieriter of the Kingdome, enriching firangers with spoiles of the English; but her lawking in the Bellyer, at maningsh purposely strine to draw the hatred of all nations against her; especially, fith (as we shewed) the Greekes were fallen from the Romane vnion, to now the Church of Antioch had both excommunicated the Pope, the Church and Court of Rome, and challenged the Primacie about the Pope and the Romane
Church, as being an ancienter See, wherin S. Peter
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane
Romane escaped over the river (not without danger of drowning) and fled to the King for his protection. For which outrage, the King lending the Earle of Warren with first sate Bishoppe for senen yeeres; and more excellent and deare, sith there Peter lined with lone and renean armed band, imprisoned about 30.0f the offenders, and the Legate interdicted the Vniuerlity, till rence, whereas both he and Saint Paul were continudets, and the Legae interdirect the vinterity, the all the Billiops of England (purpole) * meeting in a Syndae) pleadedfor the Vinterfity, as being the fecond of Christendome: to whose importunity the proud Legate would not condificend, vulcife all the Bially persecuted in Rome; which Church was now also defiled with Simonie, V furie, Auarice, and other hainou (61) But(doubtleffe)it was worthy of reproofe shops would yeeld to goe on foot with the Students from in the King; that after so manifold trials of faith Paules Charch to the Legates house, (which was about a mile,) who there vingowned and vinhod, should hum-

and constancy in Hubert Earle of Kent, hee should now againe affiich his honourable old-age with reuiuall of acculations, when hee rather ought to haue tendred him as a Father. Among other the Articles (engines of vexation) which the King bent against him, these were 3 new ones, by which any reasonable man may take a scantling of the rest. I That timbers had taken the money out of the barrels which were fent for the reliefe of Rockel and Poickon, and which were fent for the relief of Rackel and Railing, and Julged them whishend. 2. That to slipinde a give a light of the work which a light of the work of the state of from marriage with that King, be had faithet. Long was a figure, by death, a leave man, and a kinel for fore deciril, persured, more faint hearted then women of the trible to be unserpriend; a mod test you flip for the fait to enable Laises company. 3. The art Wedfrick, when the King was alone, for railing in with a naked fine to some the Tale did modelly and clearly refuser too so the Tale did modelly and clearly refuser. tions the Earle did modestly and cleerely refute. But with the last (being most wicked of all) he was so greened, that making low obeisance to the King,

on of trespasse, brought against the Earle by the

King in the Kings Bench, at which triall the King

Book.9

Hubert Farle of

Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46. (bapago

*Cambden Brit. in Kent, this man died An.D.

An.1240.

himselfe was also present. But howsoeuer the Earle answered, hee was condemned to give to the King * foure his *dearest Castles, Blanch Castle Grofmount in Wales, Skenefruh and Hafeld; and then also (as it seemes) hee was * deprined of his Title of Earle.

ty. * Mundiffman terran. Paru. Paris.

(62) After so many mischiefes patiently broo-ked, at last the King vpon receipt of letters from the Emperour whom as his brother in law, hee was loth to offend,) commanded othe the Popes Legate, in regard of the great enmittees betweene the Pope and Emperour, to depart out of England.
There was also strait commandement given to the Italian V furers, to leave the most * pure earth of his Realme (meaning that his owne people was most innocent and free from such a sinne, but (faith one, who durft write any thing hee thought) by

giuingshe King money, which is too much vied to in-fishe the wicked, they for a great part remained fiill, as loth to for fake such fat passures. And the Legat himselfe also stated so long, till the Pope by wily inducements, and * forged calumniations had drawne the King, both to relinquish the Emperour his brother in law, and to fuffer the Papall Excommunica-

tion to paffe here against him, and money also to be gathered to his impeachment. A briefe rafte of all the Popes proceedings against this glorious Emperour, we may take from the Nobilitie of France, who (when the Pope offered the Empire vnto Robert the French Kings brother) in their grand Councell refused to accept it charging the Pope with the Spirit of au-dacious rashmesses, for deposing the Emperour not convi-Eted of any fault, and whom a Generall Councell onely ought to censure, not the Pope, to whom no credit ought to be given, being his Capital Enemie. For that themseives knew he was a vertuous and victorious Emperor, and one who had in him more religion then the Pope had Our Legat Otthe (who now at length is gone) was no fooner departed but Peter of Sanoy the Queens Vncle arriued, to who the King gaue the Earldome of Richmod, and entertained otherwise most magnificently. This and the like largeffe to strangers, drew on the King much eaill will, who also in fauour of his Queene, procured her Vncle Bonifacius to be chosen Archbishop of Canterbury in place of * Edmunde, who weary of his life in England, by reason that he could not Saint, thoughdy redresse the Popes detestable exactions and oppressions, made choice of a voluntarie Exile at Pountney in France, where he died with the honour and opinion

An. 1242. A reg.16, The King goes to recourt Pailler.

· calum

cie of ciuill difturbations, or in the too-patient sufferance of some forraine greeuances, nourished within his Kingdome; which gave him perhaps little leafure, minde, or meanes, to purfue any transmarine defigne. But now better prouided with money, then with men, (and yet not fufficiently with money) he takes shippe immediatly after Easter towards Poicton, where the Earle of March (now husband to Queene I fabell his mother) expected his arrivall. Hee committed the Government of the Realme in his absence to the Archbishoppe of Yorke. Thirtie Hogsheads or Barrels fraught with fterling money were shipt for that service. There alfo went with him Richard Earle of Cornwall , (who was returned with much honour out of the Hol'vland not long before) and feauen other Earles with land not long before) and feasen other Earle's with about three hundret Knights, before other fouldiers. To refull the English, the King of France (who had ginen Patien to his bottler or Hingle) affects bled an Armie royall of four thousand men of Armes, excellently wel appointed gind about verter by thousand choice Souldiers; while thousand to Carasto carries their other receiptings. Sing Parise Carasto carries their other receiptings. valeritanding that the King of France lay before Francens, (a Castle belonging to the Earle of March,) seeking to force it by assaults, sent a messenger of defiance to him as a breaker of Truce. Lewis

(63) The Kings imploiments hitherto have (al-

most wholly) been taken up either in the impation-

a most instand valiant Prince, denied that ever hee brake the truce, but that the King of England by maintenance of his Rebels, didrather feeme to infringe the Peace. Neuertheleffe bee offered (fo as the English would not protect his enemies the Earle of March and others) to give him Poicton, and a great part of Normandy, in latisfaction of his * Fathers Oath, and moreover, to enlarge the last trace with a longer terms of yeeres. These so honourable, safe, and profitable conditions, by the practife of the Poictonines (who feared the French Kings indignation would proue too heavie for them to beare, if the English abandoned their cause) were unfortunately refused.

(64) When the French King heard hereof, it retelling his Lords, that he neither feared his Cofen of England, nor all his forces, but onely that Oath, (for restoring of the lands in France) which his father made when hee was in England. This scruple did fo trouble the Kings mind, on the behalfe of his dead Father, that hee would admit no comfort till one of his Lords told him, that the King of England, by putting Conftantine Fitz-Arnold to death for having spoken some words in honour of King Lewis (his Father) had first broken the truce. This satisfied the French. That whole businesse is thus concluded by * Tilius; Hugh Earle of March overconcluded by "little"; Hugh Latter Order over-come with the pride and perfusions of his wife '[label, would not doe homage to Alfonfe the French Kings bro-liver: for shee was a cause to draw the English thither, where things thriuing on his part but meanely, Hugh is conftrained in the end to doe both homage and fealty onto Afonfe. This onely must be added, that he did vnfaithfully prouide for his prinate lafety with-out the knowledge of the King of England, at fuch time as he * pretended otherwife. (65) This treacherie loft the King all Poicton,

prefuming vpon the Earle for men, when ir came to the point, the Earle was not onely not prouided, but sware by the throat of God, he never promised any such matter, and denied he had set his Seale to any writing concerning (uch promifes, and that if any fuch fealed writing were (as the King and his brother the Earle of Cornwall affirmed) their mother his wife had forged it. They were now in light of the French Hoft before Tailbung in Xaintioing when this improvident ex-postulation was made. The King of England mani-festly seeing his perill, and having by his brother Earle Richards mediation (whom many of the French did greatly honour because he had by compolicion been a meane at his arrivall to free them from the Saracens in the holy-land,) raised his came by night, and retreated with much more haft the good speed. Not long after this, the faire Citie of good speed. Notiong after this, the latter the way **Xainties in Xaintioing*, vpon displeasure conceiled by the Citrizens against the King, because he had gi-uen the same to the Lord Hugh his halfe-brother. (sonne to the Earle of March) first contriued a perfidious resolt to closelie, that if first the faid Lord Hugh, and then Guy de Lustinian his elder brother, had not in good time fignished the danger, the King and all the English had been surprized by the French. There was none (among all the mutable Poictonins) found respective of honor and loyaltie, but onel tound respective or nonor and toyance, but oney one called Hertald, Captaine of the famous Calfic of Nirabell, who in great forrow repaired to the King of England, praying counfell and affiftance, where the King with a downceast looke gaue him where the ang with adowness tooke gate him this afficer; Fun aloff fee ferhald that my forest The Fire fee feare inflicient to defend my felfe. Our Lord and Sauiss was betraied by his Difficiple India, and therefore who falls fee fee feelood to Early of Western Lord when I tooke and remember a my Father, hat be given a sumple. whoms I tooke and reservence as my neutry, outor guent permicious prefedent; house tousfled in a flat for read, and the fluinters thereof have wounded my hand. Thouse it the onlyman who has the thoused the fels homes fly; who as fo-cient therefore thou deeft possible of mime by any sussibilities, take it to thee as thin owner, give st thre: Prouide other

Vide fupra

A molt Christie

To. Till. Chess.

for whereas he principally tooke care for money, writings to draw

wife for thy selfe, as thou dost thinke it most expedient. The King of France, in whom all magnanimitie, bountie, and Christian vertues did shine, hearing what Hertold had faid and done, commended the men, and manner so highly, that, saying, He loved and allowed fuch as bee. The Castle was entrusted backe to the fame Cappaine, when with many ceares and other fignes of forrowe, he had furrendred himfelfe and it to Lepis. The farther profecution of that warre was empeached by ficknelfe and penuric which fore afflicted the French armie. An ouercure therefore for five yeeres truce being made, Lewis returned into France, and Henrie to his City of Burdeaux in Gascoigne, where his Queene Elianor (who bare him Prince * Edward about two yeeres before) bare to him a daughter called Beatrix. (66) Meane while the King looking carefullie

the King.

*Prince Edward
borne at VVeftminster, An. 1239. An.1243. into the double dealings of the Poictonins, who Ap reg. 27. 4 were the limitanie or border-fubiects of the English dominions in Aquitaine, and by a nature proper to free March-men which lie betweene the hammer and the Anuill, are enured to all forts of deuices

how to faue themselves and delude others, wiselie "yono I fterling besides the Earle of Marches huge withdrawes his*large Penlions, which they by deep diffimulations and improfitable flewes of affifummes. stance had shared among them, for which they repayed nothing but fecret scoffes of their Patron and Pay-mafter. The Earle of March whatfoeuer his Fees were from the King his Sonne in

Law, made but an euill bargaine in the end: for, besides that the French King tooke from him no small portion of his Estate, hee was openlie appeached of Treason in the French Court, by a valiant Knight, who offered to proue the truth of his acculation by Battel. I fabell, whom the French in passion called lexabell, because her pride and turbulent practifes had procured all those euils, fled voon the newes to a Nunnerie. In the end yet her hufband being aged, by the diligence & care of friends auoided the Combat, and was suffered to returne home. The king (whose comming had been long expected in England) having ordained one Sir Ni-cholas de Molis his* Leistenant in Aquitain, is now "The King lands at Portferouth in October. vnder Saile, although the Gascages, because his pre-sence was greatly beneficiall, had sought all the waies they could to detaine him longer. Being returned, by reason of that vnaduised and losseful voiage into France, hee was compelled to be bur-thenous to his Subjects, aswell by the leuie of Efcuage, as of loanes and otherwife. The lewes also

ments and showes.

felt the gripe of his wants fo farre, that even Chri-The prodicality ftians commiserated: whose gold hee received with his owne hands, but their silver by others. made onely to fill vp (uch breaches as the French affaires had produced, but also to spend in entertain-

ney, 0.367, faith fhe was mother to 5. Queenes, adding to the 4 forementioned,

should bee wanting, when publike occasions do re-quire; in which respects they are not onely vsefull, but absolutely necessary, because Common-weales are partly founded upon the opinion which Subiects and neighbours have of their power and riches, and their estimate is commonly made by that which is outwardly seene at such times. This care, besides the great loue hee bare to his wives kindred and Countrimen, made him puruey for money in this manner; for in December the Lady Beatrix Counteffe of Province * mother to the Queenes of England and France, having with her the Lady Cinera, Cynthia, or Scientia (for by all those names shee is called in Authors) and a princely traine in all points excellently well furnished landed at Dower . loss married to Philipking of Naucre. Richard the kings where innumerable of the best forts gaue her welcome and attendance. London was hung with rich Ornaments, from the Bridge thereof to well with a This noble young Lady Cineta, was brought hitherto bee married to Richard the Kings brother

These and other importunate corrasions, were not

(67) Neither will the Maiesty and honour of the

Kingdome permit, that fuch kindes of expense

Earle of Cornwall: At whose Nuptiall fealt, there were thirty thousand * Messes prouided in the Cookery onely, and of all other things there was incredible plenty. All which notwithstanding did manifeftly proue(as Paris faith most truly) that the world is but a very Iugler, and the pompe thereof but an i-truth conce dle shadow feeing the next morrow blew away the whole the worlds varietie of so great preparations like as if it had beene a Cloude. Nor much vnlike is the life euen of greatest Princes, which hangeth on very viscousty continued of Griffin, eldeft brother of David Prince of Wales did criffin elder brother of Ender when hoping by achaine of Blankers, and fundam, limited the continued of the Tomer of Landow. Princes, which hangeth on very vntrufty termes, as An.D.1244 like stuffe to escape out of the Tower of London, enfully but where the King had emprisoned him, the line brea- his necks. king, hee pircht vpon his head, which the weight of his great body drauc (as it were)into his shoulders and miferably flew him. The King therefore punishing the Keepers for their sloth, commanded that the Sonne of Griffith (prisoner with his father) should from thenceforth bee more narrowly watched. Not long after the which, David Prince of cneu. Not long after the which, Dasid Prince of Walst prosseds by wronges, Chiefit done by the "Earle of Harsfired" in Junaded the English Nasches, whom the Earle of Glassife and Hersford, and Treebles who there mighty men in thole parts, having the Kings confers and diffiance, did withflands, yet righting but with variable fortune. Le was Prince Dasid parts of the Prince Dasid. purpose to haue freed himselfe from the obedience or tenure which hee had acknowledged to the King; for which purpose he exhibited his * complaint to *D.Powel.inbiff the Pope, pretending that the King of England compelled him vniustly to hold his Principality and Lands of him. But the Kings credite, cause, and workings, easily onerweighed the Prince of walas, (68) The States of the Realme were in those

dayes nothing supple, when the King sought to handle them for money; for hee about this time labouring to draw some from them, vpon faithfull promife to keepe and observe the liberties, vnto which he had fworn at his Coronation, and whereof he had granted his Charter, they belought him to remeone grove an control cuty decough this corem-ber, how of the head wrong from his faithfull life; people (whom he ought to cherife, not cutry) empone.

"I) without performing his possif," That for the kings of Bedford, hee had Garra"with after the taking of Bedford, hee had Garra"with a first the taking of Bedford, he had Garra"with a first the same for the sam eage, that is, two shillings vpon enery Plough-"and; the next yeere after, a fifteenth of all their "Moueables: wpon his paffage into Britain, no final "fummes of money from the Prelates, Religious or ders, Burgesseand, Lewes: after his returne, hee s had Escuage, that is, vpon euery Shield (or knights Fee) three markes : then a fortieth part of all their Moueables: within a while after a thirrieth part;
"By and by, for the marriage of the Lady I fabell of perunary ale to the Emperour, two Marks vpon enery Plough."
in a yetre service of the transfer of the Carlogue of the Emperour, two Marks vpon enery Plough. " land; at his Sonnes birth, hee by Prefents heaped "wp no small flore of money. Againe, when hee went into Geseigne, hee railed almost infinite heapes of money from all forts of Subjects: upon this returne, where hee had beque desired and diffionoured, hee fleeced all manner of Subjects. They now also (vnder the name of aide for the marriage of his eldest daughter) granted him vp-on every Knights Fee, which held of the King in chiefe, twenty shillings, the one halfe to bee paide at Easter, the other at Michaelmasse. But (say they) bow well the King will keep and fulfill his vaderia-king sand promifes, in requitall of the past and prefet contributions, he need knoweds whom nathing is on-knowne. But inchast resulted to firengiten the Dopes defigned, with collections of money among the English Ciergy, found a stern and constant op polition, not onely for that they were vnwilling, but also for that the Emperour had written to the King in plan e phrase, that if hee suffered any such matter, hee would not faile in grieuous fort to punishall the English hee could get, in reuenge of

that partiality.

(69) About

Chap. 9. Henry 2. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46. noured to free Danid Prince of Wales from his ho-

Met.Peris.

warre with Scotland would bring them this commodity, that the oppressions they did to the peothe Lord Ingelram de Cowcie, who (as all Frenchmen) was betweene the two Kings of England and of Scots, as a point necessarie or profitable for the tranquilitie of France. Their hope thus had ending the faid Ingelram by the stumbling of his horse in the depth of the river, while his foot hung fast in eyhanged in his Rirrop, drownd, and run through two fifter-Nations likewife died: for not long af ded, with relation to fuch Articles as had been forof England had with him five thousand horseme

The King feekes in vaine to draw the grant of

* At Wew-Cafil

them overflow.

Mat.Paris.

(69) About which time many feditious persons were in the Court of England, which hoped that ple should rest vnpunished; for Lawes and Instice have no place in time of battell. Their hope thus tooke beginning. Alexander King of Scots had married the Lady Mary, a goodly Gentlewoman daughter to being a deadly enemy to the King of England, had laboured to weaken that strength of amity, which Foord, being cast out of his Saddle, and pitcht into the firrop, his fword at the fame time falling out of his fleath, and running him through, did most strangely end his life by a triple death, with whom it feemed the humour of battel between the ter, (notwithstanding the great preparations on both sides) all quarrels were absolutely * conclumerly made betweene them at Yorke. The King most fairely armed and appointed; besides a most puissant number ofseruiceable men on foot. The Welfhmen feared and expected that vpon this agree ment, the King would turne all his forces against them; but hee knowing it needlesse to vse such numbers for that feruice, fent onely three hundreth men of Armes, vnder the conduct of Sir Hubert Fitz-Mathew, to represse their attempts but through their own rashnes, & the Welshmen valiancie, hee and his people were with loffe at that time scattered. The newes of this bad successe troubled the King neerely, for finall remedy whereof, hee resolved to lead a full Armie thither. But when to furnish this designe hee prayed more Subsidie of the States of his Realme, they with one voice and with one mind contradicted; though also his debts to Merchant-strangers for wines, and other necessaries, were so many and so continually called for, as hee could scarce passe abroad without their clamors. Neuerthelesse, the newes which he receyucd out of Aquitaine, where his Senefchall Nichola de Molis had wonne the day in a battell against the King of Nauarre, did somewhat mitigate the sowreneffe of these overthwarts; and for replenishment of Coffers, Robert Paffelen io ordered the matter, by

(70) The great helps which the King found by the new supply of his Treasure, made him dayly confider, how to augment the fame, and how to stoppe all vndue Outlets, by which it was ordinarily impair d. Voon the departure of otthe the Popes Legate, who had well stuffed his owne and his Masters Coffers, (and had no lesse filled the Peoples heartes with repinings, and their mouthes with curses of him) there was some hope the Romish Horse-leaches would for a while haue left fucking the best inyce of the land; but it proued otherwife, new Agents, Legats, & Factors. ftill comming ouer, as if England had bin a wel which could neuer be drawne drie, and Rome a bottomlesse gulfe which could neuer bee filed full. Whereupon, before this, the King writ his letters both to this poper, and to his Predecessor of the string them to furceasses but neither one nor ather of them their exactions; but neither one nor ather of them would vouchfafe to bridle their owne wilfull motions, if God and Saint Peter (whose steps they follow not) had even bent their howes against that Church of Rome.

With which contempt the King had the more rea-

fon to bee incensed, because the Pope had endea-

fining such as had encroched vpon the Kings For-

refts, that hee vnexpectedly beganne again to make

mage made to King Henry, pretending that if it were done by feare or force, it was of no force but vitter lie void. Notwithstanding the Pope seeing the King and State refolued to the contrary, was defirous not onely to hold fast the Kings good-will, but also to come into England; to which purpose he caused his Car-tests come dinals to write their persuasory letters to the King, as a thing tending much to his fafety, and to his Kingdomes immortall glory, to enion the Lord Popes presence, who didlong to fee the delicacies of westminster, and the riches of London: but the kings Councel told him, that the Romans rapines and Simonies had enough stained Englands purity, though the Pope himfelf came not perfonally to spile & prey upon the wealth of this Church and Kingdom, The like denyal of entrance he had found both in France and Arragon, it being faid, that the Pope was but like a mouse in a sachel, or a snake in ones Iden. rope was out the among in a Jacote, or a June to one, beloom, who did but illergy a beit Halfs to their lod-ging 50 the infamies of the Popes Court deferued no other whose philosiath our Monk four forth a flowe 60 flench as hie as the every Clauds. The Pope, though he could not come himselfe, yet hee had his pipes & conducts to conuay this stench into this land, and the wealth of it backe in lieu thereof. Which was now to factoured by his Chaplaine Martin, that certaine of the Peeres commiferating the inceffant depredation of the land, tooks order for fruit watch at all the Ports in England, that all letters comming dayly from the Pope to picke mens puries, thould be flopt. But soone after a more generall redresse was intended against so vnmercifull tyranny: the King finding by diligent inquirie in eury Shire that the annuall revenues here wherewith the Court of Rome had fraudulently and violently enriched Italians, amoun ted to threefcore thousand Markes, to the great both wonder and anger of the King; which made him now wonace and anget of the King; which made him how beginne to detest the insatiable greediness of the Court of Rome. Hereupon, for that the Pope had now immoned a Generall Councell at Lions, Embassa dors were thither fent, there publikelie in the name of the whole Kingdome, both to complaine and crave re-dresse of the Popes too long fuffered extortions,

(which were particularly there rehearled, and which as being detefiable to God and man, they would no longer endures) and to disauow all subjection vniustlie pretended from King John, as whereunto both the then

pretended from Ring som, as whereasto with the teach Archbishoppe openly contradicted, and the Robles and State neuer consented nor ener would. The Pope (a-shamed belike to bee so taxed in so great an assem-

(71) The Welfh affaires by reason of the casuall death of Fitz-Mathew growing dayly leffe tractable then other, the King againe prepares to reprefit their insolencies in person. Before he sets forward. hee came into London to the Church of Saint Paul, The King prepar to the intent that before his departure hee might take his leaue of the Citizens in a popular and louing manner. And because neither warre nor linity. Nnnn 2

bly) is noted to have fate long filent, not fo much as

lifting up his eyes from the ground, till at length hee

cut off their importunity with this briefe answere,

that so difficult a matter would aske longer deliberation

which vaine delay to enraged Earle Bigod, and the reft

of the Kings Agents, that with threats and terrible oaths,

they fware to remedy that themselves, which the

Pope would not. And indeed the Nobles at home

had already begunne so to doe; having comman-

ded Martin (the Popes Agent) to depart out of hand, for if hee stayed, hee and all his company should bee cut

n beeces; who prefently packing away, (the King

alfo wishing the Diuell to take him, having thus preyed

alse withing the Disect to take nime, naming time present open his land) so entaged the Pope with tidings of this vlage, that his Holinesse lid; it is high time that we make a quickeend with the Emperour, that so we

may crush these petty Kings (meaning the English and French, who both denied him entrance into their land)

who spurne against us; for the great Dragon being once crushed, those lesser poore snakes will some been troden

duine service, nor preach, nor keepe hospitalitie, nor eare for soules, &c.) but only begger the Landwith carrying

away the Coine. 3. that the Popes Pronifions and Penfi-

Chap-9. Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46. close-handed, and open mouthed; for, besides their vndutifull vpbrayding the King with some ouer-The editions
Nobles expossulite their greemances with the
King in stead of
granting monyfights, they vntruly and feditionfly charged him to have done contrarie to the example of his magnificent Predecessors, in that his chiefe Instice, Chancellour and Treasurer were of his owne choosing, and not by the Common Councell of the Realme, as they ought. The King inwardly touched herewith, yet feeing no o-ther helpe, promifeth redreffe and change for the better. Whereunto they answered; that they would expect a while with patience, and as the King shall carrie himselfe toward them, so will they performe their obeyfance to him. So the meeting was adjourned from that Candlemas till Midfommer; at which time alto there was nothing done, but all parts role disconreted. The cause of that discotentment was, for that the King, in flead of fatiffying their audacious dethe Ang, in treat or tathlying their audacious est mands, answered them, That they fought to bridle him at their furlie pleasures, proudlie for bidding that in him, which was lawfull for themselves. For that everie private man may vse, what, and whose Counsell he list; enerie mafter of a familie preferre or remove what officers in his house he list; which yet they saucily denied unto him, their Lord and Soueraigne, as if Servants and Vassals were to rule their Lords; whereas indeed he is no King but a seruant, who must bow at others becke. That therefore he would neither place nor displace either Chancellour, I usti-ciar, or T reasurer as they thought good. Nevershelesse hee required money at their hands, torecover such forreine lands as concerned afwell them as him, to fee it done. Hereupon the Parliament brake vp, and the King was left to furnish himselfe otherwise so well as hee could, euen by sale of his Iewels, Plate and other precious stuffe, after a dishonourable manner, (75) The affaires of Gascoign (which one Guasto de Biard had greatly troubled) by the manhood and An.reg.33. wit of Simon Earle of Leicefle were now brought into better quiet, which made his prefence (being returned, as it feemeth for more supplies, which Simon Earle of went againe with him) very acceptable in the Court of England. The King intending to furnish that enterprise afresh against the comming spring time, left no meanes vnthought of, which either by Art or ftrong entreatie he could vie to replenish his exhaufted Coffers. In which he embased too much the Royall name and dignity, telling some (and perhaps truely) whose bountie he craued, that it was more almes to ayde him with money, then one that went begging from dore to dore. Meanewhile the king neglects not his administration of Justice; for, whereas the whole Countie of Hampshire swarmed with felons and murtherous robbers, himfelfe so ordered the matter, fitting in person in Winchester Castle, that the infamie and danger of those places were cleared by hanging the Offendors; many of which were A.D. 1250. A.reg. 34. Walter Clifferd makes an officer eat the kings writ, wax and all.

very wealthie, and some the kings owne servants. Walter de Clifferd also (a Baron of the Marches of Wales) for enforcing an officer (whom he had otherwife handled badly) to eat the kings writ, waxe and

all, ranio fare into the kings dipleasure thereby, that while he lined, he was made the lesse able to feed himselfe; paying to the king a very great sum of money, and hardlie escaping without confiscation of his whole patrimonie. The king defirous to be friends with the Citizens of London, to whom of late he had beene oner-hard, publikely reconciled himfelfe vnto them, whom for that cause he had commanded to appeare at Westminster, and there immediatly received the badge of the Crosse at the hand of Boniface Archbilhop of Canterburie; but whatfoeuer his intention was, it neuer came into action on his part. In the meane time contrarie to his Fore-fathers example, he so much abridged the expences of his house, and his Almes, that he vnderwent fome dishonourable imputation. Neuerthe-lesse he wisely wound himselfe out of many a Merchâts debt; whereto he wrung great helps from the

Iewes, (as the ordinary Clippers and defacers of his

Coyne,) and the forgers of seales and Charters;

from one of whom hee had at times drawne thirtie Thirde theuthousand markes Sterling, besides two hundreth

markes in gold. (76) It feemeth an inseparable qualitie in his nature, to bee extreamly violent, in doing what seeuer hee had a mind to doe, and that sometime without the due respect to secular Maiestie; as in the

Course her tooke for advancing his halfe-brother Ethelmare to the Bilhoprick of Winehefter. For not contenting himfelfe to have fent his meffengers to the Couent by them to worke the election, heecame thither in person, where the Chapter being fer in the Cathedrall Church, hee entred, and placing himselfe in the Presidents seat, makes to them check to the Co a speech in the nature of a sermon, taking for his uent. Theme those words of David : Inflice and Peace kille each other, Whereon hee shewed them, That subereas luffice belonged to him, and to fuch as had the rule of Na-tions, and to the Clergy commelfe and Peace, both thefe flowld that day kiffe together of they elected his brother for their Biflop: For which he gaue them many reasons, but concluded, if they did otherwife, they should feele his Princely displeasure. When therefore they published to the King their Choise, they did it with this refernation (because Athelmare was to remaine under the title of the Elect of Winchester, for that he was not a Pricft) if fuch an election might stand by law, or lawfull fauour. But the Pope, who meant to make his aduantage hereof, as well as the King, exacted of him for confirmation of the same election, five hundreth Markes of Church revenewes, to be paffed ouer vnto the Earle of Burgundies fonne a childe; which makes * the Monke to breake forth into this bitter lamentation; O Pope, the Chiefe of Fathers, why doft thou suffer thus the Christian world to be defiled? worthily, worthily, therefore art thou * drinen out of thy owne Citie and See, and like a runnagate and another thy owne citie and see, and are a running us and awence.

Cham, art inforced towander up and downe. 6 God,
thou God of suftreuenge, when with thou draw forth thy
fword to imbrue at in the blood of fach oppressors? Though in these vniuerfall abuses, the Pope would neither redresse himselse nor others, yet God raised vp aftout and learned Prelate, Robert Grofteft, Bithop of Lincolne, who undertooke to reforme the Monks and Friars; but they (who knew Rome was from the beginning* Afylum Latronum) appealed to troin the Deginning A journ Larronium) appealed to the Pope. Whereupon the aged Bishop going to his blineste, tolde him that all offenders escayed, by his opening his bosome to such as brought him bribes; who snapping 1 im vp with angrie Countenance and speech fent him home with reproach. The Pope was at this time at Lyons, where not long after the Coucel breaking vp, Cardinal Hugo made a Sermon of farewell to the Citizens; wherein among ft other benefites which the Popes lying in their City had brought them, he fold them this was a " Principall, that whereas at their comming there were three or foure Whore-houses in the Lyons, now at their departing they left but one, but indeed that reached from the East-Gate of the City to the West. Whereby wee see France had some part of the

(77) The King now whollie intent vpon encrease of treasure, neither game any rich presents ac-cording to the ancient Custome of England, and alto thortneth yet more the allowances of his Househould and entertainements, without any regard to Maicstie or rumor. And to spare his ownecharge the rather, he inuites himfelf fometime to this man, and fometime to that, but no where contenting and nometime to that, but no wherecometing himselfe with his diet & hospitage, vnlesse both he, his Queene & some Edward, yearnd chiefe fauouritees in Court, were presented with great and costly gifts, which they tooke not as of Courtesie, but as duc, This was the vnhonourable face of the Kings effare at that time. But in the depth of his wants and rigour of his Parcimonie, he could not that vp himfelfe against the suites and advancement of his

Popes Almes, as well as England.

Poictouines and Provinceis, so that it was become a common murmur in England; Our inheritance is con-

*The pope wa Remetal fear e of

mandement, where after so much purloyning by others, now the Kings owne errand and affaires was to get money for himselfe. But they (who gaue fuch way to the Popes collections) were now all

the clause Non obstante (brought in first by the Pope) was taken vp in England by the King, in his grants and other writings, as " Non obstante priore mandato, Non obstante * antiqua libertate, &c. This ding any tormer dement our ancient Author cals an odious and detestable * Or former prielause: and Roger de Thurkeby Iusticiar, fetching a deepe figh at the fight thereof, cried out both of the times and it, faying, * it was a streame derived

from that sulphureous fountain of the Clergie.

(78) Another of the Kings Iusticiars, and a learned Knight, Sir Henry de Bath, (whose Lady,be-cause herselfe was well descended, filled him with pride,) was so considently greedy, the better to latisfie her ambition, that in one circuit, hee appropriated to himfelfe aboue two hundreth pound lands. Corruption in Iustice (which must needs be suspected to be there, where excelline wealth u cotten by the Officers of inflice) is but a fandie ground-worke of a vainely-hoped greatnesse, and may well beereputed in the number of crying sinnes; and this mo-Sir Philip Darey appeacheth Sir Henry Bath a briued a Knight, Sir Philip de Arci, to appeach him before the King, both for vnfaithfulnesse in his office, and treason against the King. The King had no hold of himselfe, after hee was once throughly kindled. Bath knowes it, and therefore writes to his wines friends to come firong in his defence, that the King should not dare to call him to his triall; yet withall hee feekes all fecret meanes how to appeale the King; who understanding of this combination, was the more enflamed. The Earle

of Cormuall his brother could not appeale him; no.

not though hee knit vp his intercessions with these

minatorie words; Wee must not ferfake Gentlemen in

of Inftice, which he deferuedly feared. The accusations were many, (for all me were called to fay whar

they could against him,) and among all, these two,

most hainous: that he troubled the whole Realme, and

stirred all the Barons thereof against the King, so that a

generall rebellion was to be feared, (which one of his fellow-Iusticiars did openly testific:) that bee had for

remard discharged a connicted Malefattor out of prison without punisment, in presudice of the King, and to the perill of his associate Iusticiars. The King was to enra-

ged-herewith, that feeing no other way to punish

him, being fo strongly backed, hee mounted into an higher place then before, and cries out, Wholes-

uer kils tienrie de Bath (ball be quit of his death, and

I here doe acquit him; and prefently departs. Nevertheleffe, although hee left behind him many men,

who would have readily executed the Kings terrible

doome; yet by the wifdome of Sir John Manfel,

(one of the Kings private Councellors) they were

restrained. His wordes are worthy to bee remem-

bred; Gentlemen, and friends, it is not necessary for vs

to put that presently in execution which the King hath

in his anger commanded. It may bee when his wrath is

ouerblowne, hee will bee forry hee faid it. Moreoner. if any outrage be done to Bath, loe here are his friends

who will take all forts of revenge. Sir Henry escaping

thus from so present a danger, found meanes vpon

promise of money and great mediation of friends,

to obtain his peace & fafety; for at this time, Instice

and all things grew saleable. The North-East part of

Wales was committed to Alan de Zouch, who had

it in Farme for elegen hundreth Markes yeercly,

uerted to aliens, and our hou fes to strangers. The mat-

ter seemed the more gricuous, for that their pride

and violence were intollerable. About this time

their right, nor in preserving the peace of the tottering Kingdome. In March there was holden a Parlia The diforderly weake and rio ment at London; there the King caused Bath to bee lent carriage of sharpely prosecuted. Thither Sir Henry Bath repairs. strongly attended with Knights and Gentlemen of his owne friends, and his wives, to daunt the edge

Sir John Manfei Rayes the Kings

An. 1252.

whereas tokn de Gray (whom he supplanted in the place) paid but fine hundreth : fo * miferable Wales was let out to such as would give most.
(79) Alexander the third, succeeding his Father in the Kingdome of Scotland, comming in Christ-

mas to Torke, there espoused, though very young, Alexander the the Lady Margaret, daughter to King Henry. There Sens esponsets were present the two Kings in person, with a most the Lady Marga choice multitude of either Nation, the English being in number aboue a thousand Knightes, befide greater States, as Prelates, Earles and Barons, and of the Scots about fixe hundreth Knights and Gentlemen, all of them well appointed. There was also two Queenes, the Mother of the Bride, (who was to be Queene) and the widow or Queen Dowager of Scotland, who for that cause was returned out of France, attended vpon in royall manner with many Lords and Gentlemen of France. The Scots were lodged in one place of the City by them felues. Vpon Christmas day the King of England gaue the order of Knight-hood to the King of Scots, and at the same time to twenty others richly apparrelled. Vpon the next day the princely couple were espoused. Take a scantling of the cheere and multitude of guests by this. The Archbishoppe of Torke, who was Prince (as it were) of the Northerne Six bundreth parts (and the common hoft of all that most noble Oxenspental fellowshippe, which cost him about foure thousand marks)gaue toward that feaft fix hundreth fat oxen, all which were spent in the first generall service; and whatfocuer the vaine * Stage-play of the world might afford eyther for pompe or delight, was there all enioyed. More worthy to bee remembred, then that magnificent gluttonie, (the natural vice of these our Nations) was the orderly and no childish actiour vactions) was the orderly and no children action of the young Bridegroome, in reconciling Philip Losell (whom King Henry had latelle fined and discourted for taking Bribes) to the King his Lord K.

The young King Alexander value patients of the buffine fle, and finding of some a fitte time, prefents himselfe to the King of England you his knees, holding vp his hands, neither Leading Fallon. would hee rife, though earnestly requested, but againe. with a gesture which seemed to draw teares of ioy and loue from the eyes of such as * fate round about, prosecuting his intent, faith; My Lord King, your Maiely howes, that I am withall both a Child, a fivel I had princely is and princely in a princ in age as in knowledge, and also an Orphan, my father being dead, and my mother leaving me, though at your sending for, she is now pleased to bee present; therefore the king his from henceforth, and for euer after, I here doe take you, both for Eather and Mother, that you may supply both their wants, and with your paternall care help & protect all mine insufficiencies. The King scarse able to refraine from tender teares, or to hold down his throbbings, faid no more but onely this one word, Willingly. The princely Child replied therupon: I will make experiment of that, and know it by proofe; feeing you have graciously heard mee hitherto, in proofes feeing you name y actions mear a mee numerio, in philip Loudie-trying whether I stall reage the effect of my first sait.

Then hee declared his request, and had it sto that Lo-

(80) The State and fidelity of the Gascoignes was so desperately shaken and plunged by the reuenges which Simon de Montford (to whom the king had given the government of their Country for fixe yeeres,) had exercised vpon them, for that they had accused him to the King of tyrannous & prodirorious dealing, and affirmed that his name ought rather to be sinon then simon, that but for the vent of their wines, (in which respect their fub. sea, sate Gapiciello to England was verie beneficiall to their Common-weale) it was thought they would generally have revolted. But the King though readie thus to leese Gascoigne, would yet needshope to obtaine Normandie, and his other lands in France without blowes. The King of France (whose confcience was wonderfully tender and fincere) had indeed written out of Palestine to that purpose, as thinking King Hemies title was better then his owne: but the French, among whom their Kings milfortunes in the loffe of Damiata in Egypt,

well was afterward Treasurer.

(which was wholy * ascribed to the Popes anarice, who ritism tolk event

Chap. 9. Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46. for money released those who should have aided him,), had brought him into lesseraged then his excelthe presence of Christ, against also thoseyour Councellors, who bewitch and dull your sudgement, and draw

lent vertues merited, did vniuerfally and constantlent vertues merited, did vinterially and containt-ly refule, adding, that before the King of England should have any more land among them, hee must passe through a thousand sharpe Lances, and a thousand bloudy Swords when the Lances were burft. On the other fide, the King of England was but in little credit with his people: for, whereas (by an agree-ment betweene the Pope and him,) the Tenths of the Clergie through England during three yeeres should have beene received toward his charges in his pretended iourney to the Holy-Land, yet in a generall affembly at Westminster very few were drawne to giue their names to that feruice, notwithstanding that two Bishops and the Abbot of Westminster laboured in their Sermons all they could to ftirre the people to that martiall Pilgrimage, and though the King himselfe in all their view took a most solemn oth, that within three yeere he would fet forward; the onlie reason of their vnwillingnes growing vpon suspition, that he onely sought (as the Pope had given him example) to draw by this colour the treasure of the Realme into his hands This their diffidence of finceritie in him, made him therather incline to foster and favour strangers, & that with a kind of peruicacie, though himselfe

pinion of the Kings deligne for the holy Land.

by manifold neglects of his word, had worthilie bred that diffidence. (81) The King could more hardlie find followers in such an enterprise, for that his people had no conceit of his valour, but faid : What reason encourageth him, who was never trained up in Martiall difeipline, nor hath managed anhorfe, nor drawn a fword, pune, nor natu managea an norje, nor ar awn a word, nor charged a staffe, nor shooke a Target; to hope for a triumph ower the Sarazens against whom the Chevalrie of France hath miscarried or wherefore dreames hee of ecouery of more land, who could not keepe that which he had in forraine parts? concluding, that he was a man onely borne to draine their purses, to empty his own, and to multiplie debts. This was the opinion of men, & behind his backe; but not onely of men, for Ifabel Countesse of Arundel, widow of Henry Earle of Arundel, a young Lady receiving the repulse at the Kings hands in a matter which shee allcadged to be hers in equity, durft fay thus to his face : Omy Lord King, why doeyou turne away from unflice? we cannot now obtaine that which is right in your Court; you are now obtains that which is right to your court; you are placed as a mean between God and visbut you neither go-merne vs. nor your felfe, neither dread you to wexe the Church dinersty, as it hath not onely felt in present, but often heretofore. Atoreouer you doubt not manifoldlie to afflict the Nobles of the Kingdome. The King firedat fo free a speech, with a scornefull and angry countenance, answered with a loud voice; O my Lady Countesse? What? have the Lords of England because you have tongue at will, made a Charter, and hyred you to bee their Orator and Advocate? wherevnto the Counteffe replied: Not fo my Lord, for they have made to mee no Charter, but that Charter hey have made to mee no Charter, but that Charter which your statem made, and which your statem made, and which your statement, puraring to keepe the same involudy and conflaintly, and often exterting, showey, open promise the Liberies therein centained should be statisfially only the statement of the statement nour or conficience broken. Therefore are you foiled to be a manifelt violator of your faith and eath. For where are the Libertice of England fo often fairely engrefit in working: fo often pranted fo often bought? I therefore though a woman, and all the material loyall people of the Land, appeals againfy you to the Tribunal of the fearer of the there is the sum of the third than and the Earth fall bases on twistfull Indge, and Heaven and Earth hall beare vs wit-

messe, that wee are ofed omissily, and God the Lord of resembles right on. The King abashed at these words

asked her, if shee did not looke to obtaine her suite opon

HISKOCENEY, 17 jnee and not note to containe her justice open favour, in regard fleet was his Kinfwoman? whereun-to thee answered: That setting hee had denied that which the Law gaue, how could shee hope to obtain her suit by fauour? Therefore (laid shee) I doe appeals to

you out of the path of truth, gaping onely after their own commodity. But the King (faith Paris) remained incorrigible, and the Lady lost both her charges, hopes and tranell.

(82) Thus harsh were the former yeeres to the King and Kingdome: let vs see what more gentle or rougher accidents rife vnto vs in the next. But it then the first little better appeares; for the King hauing bought out the time which Simon de Montfort had in the government of Gafcoigne (which now he giues to Prince Edward) was truely aductifed that Guallo de Biard was turned Spanilb, and labored by all the meanes hee could to plucke that part from the Englif obedience. Alfons & to spaine, claimed the same by vertue of a Charter made therof by Henry the second, confirmed by Richard and John Kings of England, Simon Earle of Leicester thus difplaced to let the world fee that hee would not difflaced, to let the world fee that he would not for any preferment incurre the fulfpition of diffor- feth high honer law world most honorable offers which fofter in France to a few world most honorable offers which fofter in France to a few world most honorable offers which fofter in France to a few world most honorable offers which fofter in France to a few world most honorable of the few world for the alty, refused most honorable offers, which, (after the death of Lady Blanch, Queene Dowager, and Rectrix of France,) the French Nobility made him, if to England, he would with his counsell and Force helpe to sustaine that Monarchie, while Lewis their king was absent. In the meane time the king of England (all old matters being buried in obliuion, vpon hope of future amendment) for advancement of his martiall Pilgrimage had large aides granted him in Parliament; but vpon condition that hee should now at last, once for all, submit himselfe to gouerne by a Law, not at his pleasure, confirming the Charters of Liberties, against the breakers whereof a most folemne curse was pronounced by the kings assent The Archbishoppe, Bishoppe, and the reft of the Prelatespontifically apparelled, pronounced that curse with Tapers burning, which when they had throwneaway vpon the paucment, where they lay extinguished and smoking, the King (hauing laid his hand on his breast all the while,) sware to keep all Liberties upon pain of that execratory fentence; Thekings oath as he was a Man, a Christian, a Knight, and a King to confirmation.

The business of Gascoigne confirmation. foone after called him to a neerer warre, whether vpon his promife made to the Gafcoigns, he fet faile, leaving his sonne Prince Edward, and his kingdome to the government of his Brother, the Earle of Cornwall, and the Queene his wife : his arrivall there giuing a light and stay to all the affaires therof. Such Holds as held against him hegreduced to obedi-

offended, he was fure to fmart for it, and that rather more then leffe. (83) His feare now was, left the Gafcoigns fhould draw in the Spaniards, and relinquish his Soueraignty. To preuent this, hee verie prudently and fea-tonably fent Ambassadors to Assemble King of Spain and Cassile, to desire that the Lady Elianor his si-Zaburd. fter, might be giuen in marriage to Prince Edward. The motion was well approued, and besides that they brought Letters Patents from the King of Spaine, in which, among all other Clauses it was Spaine, in which, among an other Claules it was conteined, that the King of Spaine did quit his claime and whole right, which by vortue of any Grants from Henry, Richard and John Kings of England, he had, or ought to hau. Hereupon hee fends both for his Sonne (whom the king of Spaine defired might be conuaied to him, onely with a noble intent to see and doe him honour) and for his wifethe Queenc. Among other Acts of fincerity and love, Alfonfo fent to the King of England good aduile: that, after the example of good Kings and Princes, he should be Theking of ter the example of good. It mig and Princes, he found of Spainer adule a Lambe toward his Subjects, and Seruitours, and a Lion the king at Angele Simon Farle of Leicether with land. to Aliens and Rebels. Simon Earle of Leicefter with a gallant Troupe of Souldiers offered his feruice to the King, who admiring the Earles charity, received him with all ioy possible; at which reconciliation PDDD

ence, but with too faulty a Clemency sparing

most open Traitors, whereas if an Englishman had

uoid the fulpitia on of difloialty

533 * Mat. Farm. * St. Matim.ib.

* Romanorum malleus & con temptor. Tarie.

Mat Perit.

to appalled, that they came * droppinglie in, and became good Subjects. That valorous Earle was thereunto moued by that great, free, and noble Prelate, Robert Grofted called the * Maull of the Romans, as being a great curbe in those dayes of the Popes vigodly courses towards his State of Eng-land; against which hee writa * famous letter to his Holinesse, learnedlie prouing, that his detestable, abhominable, foule-murdering actions, did cuince him to be an Heretike, worthy of death, to be Antichrift, and to fit in the Chaire of peffilence, as next to Lucifer himselfe, and that he had no power to excommunicate such as resisted those his actions. With which Catholike Letter, the Pope was besides himselfe for rage, swearing by Saint Peter and Sasnt Paul, that he could find in his heart to make that doting Prelate a mirrour of confusion beart to make that asting treates mirrour of conjuguon to all the world for his faweinesse. But some wifer Car-dinals assisted him from any sharper course against him; telling the Pope that all was true be said of their Courts abuses; that he was holier then any of themselues; and one who had no Peere amongst all other Prelates for fantitity or learning; and therefore it were best to hush the matter, for feare of stirring coales, especially sith it was knowne, that at length there would bee a departure from their Church. This noble Prelate dyed this very yeare, with opinion of a Saint (in delpite of the Pope, who would have had his bones throwne out of the Church) leaving this * Propheticall farewell at his verie last gaspe; that the Church would never bee set free from such her Egyptian servisude, but by the dint of blow-

(84) Soone after the Queenes arriving in Gaf-

the Gascoignes * who feared him like lightning, were |

Ann. 1254. igne, when all things were rightly prepared, Prince Edward was thence fent into Spaine, where, at the City of Burges hee married the Lady Eleanor, lifter to the King with great honour, hauing first received Knight-hood at his hand; which done, hee returnes with his Bride to Burdeaux, from whence they all together came fafe through France into England. What treafure this noble young Princeffe brought in portion to her husband, wee cannot The effate which fay; but the King forthwith gaue his sonne Gascoigne, Ireland, Wales, Bristow, Stanford, and Grantham. He had drawne vpon himselfe a debt, in this The kings debr. and other his actions of about three hundred thoufand Marks; the King of France being not long be-fore returned from the Holy-Land, gaue them both safe-conduct in their passage, and did to him, & his whole noble company all the honor which the wit of man, or the most goodly kingdome of France could afforde. There were at Paris in this entertain-

ment Beatrix the Counteffe of Province; and foure

Queenes her Daughters. The King of England had

in his owne Houshold traine, a thousand choice &

excellenthorfe, beside Carriages, Sumpters, and Coursers. Hee was lodged in the Pallace of the

olde Temple, being an house almost capable of

an Armie, where the next morning hee comman-ded that all forts of poore should be relieued with

his charity and Almes. The magnificence of the great Fealt of the Kings, at the King of Englands charge, shall be expressed in our Authors owne words, who is bold to affirme, that Affuerus, Arthur, Charlesthe Great, had neuer any fuch. After dinner, the King fent to the French Lords, and men of Armes, Plate, Buckles of Gold, and other royall preferts. The King of England are at the Table on the right hand of the French King, and the king of Nauarre on the left. But the French King contended much in curtefie to the contrary, till K. Henry obstinately refused saying, the King of France was his Lord, fould be for there was reafo, mening, because hee held his Lands in France of him. To whom the most inst and gracious King Lewis with a soft voice answered; Would to God every one had his right with-out offence, meaning such other lands as the English Crowne had right vnto. At another time he gaue the reason, why the Peeres of France would not confent to the restitution of Normandy, for that the Normans would neuer learne to keepe their Borders in quiet. The English King did to himselfe, and to the English name great honour, in his whole behaviour and carriage, which was full of Charity towards the poore(a vertue for which in those dayes Kings chie-

flie fought to be commended) of Maiesty, Magni-ficence, and all forts of royall liberality and gentleneffe. The King and Court of France brought him an whole daies iourny vpon the way. He staide a while at Boloigne for a wind, but returned fafe, hauing peaceably measured a way through France, out of Gafeoigne, which his martiall Nephews kings of England trode afterward in another maner, drawing lines of bloud and fire ouer all France, the most pleasant, rich, and spacious realm of Christendome. (85) Elenor Prince Edwards wife landed at Do- An. 1255.

(8) LERROY PHICE EARDWAY WITE BRINGER AT DO-ther in great State. On the other fide, Edmund the Kings fecond fonne, by a king, which the Pope fem (fo to ingage King Henry in his warres against state. Kings (coond fonne, by a king, which the Pope firt (fo to ingage King Henry in his warres against Mansfredus, the sonne of the late Emperour Fredericke) was folemnly inuefted in the kingdom of Sicilie. The Ambaffador was a Bishoppe, who

forthwith departed, for indeed his errand was in show glorious, but in truth both delutory and vnprofitable, aswell because the King had already vnreasonably interessed himselfe in this quarrell (the Pope hauing changed his vow against the Turkes, into this against Christians,) as also, for that the Romane Armie which (by the Popes fetches) warred most at his charge; was not withflan-ding the Popes blessings) vtterly ouerthrown, be-fore this ayrie honour could bee settled in the Lord Edmund, whom yet his Father(whose credulity the Pope for his owne ends had shamefully inneigled, by drawing him into obligations of *two hundreth and fifty thouland pounds) openly tearmed and vfed as the King of Sicily, (for which also he vsed this anexed Seale) highly pleasing himself in the varietie of a wastfull Title to his owne, and his whole Kingomes*extreme imponerishment.

* In totine regni xtermintum 1774 leurabile, Paris.

Edmund



King of Sicil.

A.D. 1256. A.reg.40.

(86) The Calamities of the Kingdome in these exhaustings, was the more lamentable, because they were countenanced by the King, who should have repelled them. But the Pope having no fo easie way to be supplied as by the King, nor the King any but by the People, both Pope and King were well accorded to grinde the people each for the others

vies, the King to latifie the Popes Aparice, the Pope to aduance the Kings Ambition. The gayning of the Kingdome of Sicilie must bee the colour, for which the King was resolued to goe in person; and therefore Rustandus (the Popes Agent) sent to ga-ther the Tenth of all England, Scotland and Ireland, for the Popes vie and the kings, indifferently, had

called a great Councel the former veere, and adjourned it * till this; where he also required all the Prelates to binde themselues to the Popes marchants, as having received of them a great fum of money, which was imploied to the vie of their Churches. At which guilefull and vntrue deuise the Prelates replyed they would rather diethen fuffer fuch oppreflion, and that they held it a manifester Martyrdome to die in such a cause, then was the death of Thomas Becket. The Nobles also peremptorily refufed either to recouer Sicilie, or to beare the charge thereof, being both impossible; the one for the ftrength of Manfredue, the other for the present pourrie of England. And indeed soone after the Pope and Manfrede were made friends, and fo King Henrie and King Edmund beguiled one of his great expenses, the other of his high hopes. The King was herewith wakened out of a sweete dreame wherein till then he continued, feeding his minde with the hope to leauc to either of his fons a kingdome; though neither to he refled quiet till he had almost throwne the Crowne into the gulphes of irrecouerable debts and viurie. The yong King of Scots and his Queene, about this time came into England to visite their best friends, the King and Queene of this Kingdome, which lay wholy open to their honor and vies. The King to let his fonne in law fee how welcome he was, did befrow voon Alexander king of Scots and his Queene highlie him the Earledome of Huntingdon; They and their Queenes with almost all the great Lords and Ladies of England met at Woodstocke by Oxford, from whence they came to London. The King was vnwilling to denie his fonne in law and daughter any thing, for at their earnest suite he pardoned Sir Wil-

lia de Lile, Knight Sheriffe of Northamptorshire, who was proued to haue practifed by most foule suborned treacherie to spoile another Gentleman of his estate: for which the said Lile had died a shameful paffe anothers e-flate wickedly, judged worthy of death. but a worthy death, by drawing and hanging, had not his wines teares and praiers made the King and Queene of Seets their interceffors. Thus the yong Princes returned into Scotland, worthily well conrented.

The King comes in person to the Court of Escher-

(87) The King much the fresher to vndergoe ferious affaires, by reason of the late comfort he had in his Childe the Queene of Scots, bestirres himselfe, and comes in person into the Exchequer among the Barons therof, when the Court was let, and made fharpe orders against all Sheriffes and Baylines of at the Eschecquer, to pay such money of the Kings as was come to their handes. At the same time all the Sherifs of England were amerced, because they had not distreined all those which had such estates in land, as the law limiteth to take the order of

in his bosome. The Welsh therefore would not

for any perswasions be drawne to lay downe wea-

pons, but having about ten thouland of their coun-

Drines Edward having no helpe of the King for his Welth wars

Towns incorporate, who did not yeerely appeare Knighthood, or pay their fines. Which of the Lords could fay now that the King would not proue a good husband? Howbeit the case of the people seemed nothing relected, for (faith Paris) there were fo many petty Tyrants by the negligence or conniuence of one, that the ancient State of England when it had many Kings, feemed to be brought in againe.
(8 8) Occasions of expense like the heads of Hydra daily encreased. The Welsh (oppress by Geoffrey de Langley an officer vpon the Marches) rose in armes, and ministred one of those occasions, but that Prince Edward, to whom his Father had given Wales, was left therein to himfelfe, for his Father could spare no money. The Prince therefore borrowes some thousands of markes of his vncle Richard, and with his owne and them wageth Souldiers; his fernants behaued themfelues most violetly eucry where, taking without paiment, or paying with blowes; and it was the humor also of their young Master, who had store of martiall and stirring fire

trey horsemen, and many more on soots, tooke a loleme Oath, that they would stand together for ther libertie and national saves, holding it better to alter with honour, then to line a wretched life in shame and fersitude, And indeed they did great things under Prince Lewelyn ap Gruffith, by whose meanes they valiantly recoursed all the Inland-countrey of Northwales, with other places; and in one fight flew aboue two thousand Englishmen, and draue the rest out of the field. They also spoiled the land to the very * gares of *Cheffer*. This they had the greater opportunitie to doe, for that the King, while he built Kingdomes in the Clouds, and plunged himfelf into the Abyffes of Viury, fuffered fome few, his sonne, his brother, the Earle of Glocester, and his halfe-brothers with their families to trample right and reason undersoot, and with his hatred to enrich themselues, his owne meanes daily consuming, and mens mindes more and more alienated from him, as menthat despaired of redresse and instice. The Welfh also persisting in their enterprise, made Prince Edward retire in a battaile, and he complaining to his Father, had no other comfort but this: what is that to me ? the land is thine of my gift. Put forth thy strengths at first, and get honour in thy youth, that from thenceforth the enemies may stand in feare of

thee. As for me I have somewhat else to doe.

ches, deriued and tendred to Richard, Earle of Corn-

(89) The greatest worldly forrein honour that (fince Conflantine) euer fell vpon anie English subiect, was at this time, in regard both of his birth and ri-A.D. 1257.

* Toodig. Menf.

wall, brother to the King, to whom was fent an honorable Ambaffage out of Germanie, who, in humble manner declared, that the Princes of the facred Roman Empire had elected him King of Romans, befeeching him to accept of that their common choife, In testimonie whereof the Archbishop of Colon, high Chancellor of the Empire, Prince Elector, and other great Lords of Almaine had fent their writings under seale, affirming, That never was anie one with so generall consent and universall good liking ele-Eted to that place as he, his name carrying it clearely without anie contradiction among them. Vpon receipt of this most honourable inuitation and offer, there was much debatement in the Chappell where they fate yoon the Earles behalfe, whether he should accept therof or no; but while all of the flood in doubt the king puts in a deciding voice, faving: Lest my brothe king puts in a deciding voice, saying, seep in joine ther be thought faint harted, my opinio & request is, that he wold not result accept this honor, which God & man have tedered unto him. This made the squadron of the negatives to give way, and at leastwife to become Neutrals, till all'obiections were answered, as they were all of them by one or other, concluding in their speeches to the Earle; That hee should bee wartheir specifics to the Carre; that neepoona pie war-ned, and withall firred up to the fernice of God, in ac-ceptance of this highest place, by the example of Robert Curthose Duke of Normandic classift some of William the field, King of England) to whom the Kingdome of Levusalem, for the entent to rule the inheritance of Christ was facen, for incensen to rule in the trace of Chiff, was
offred, which be refußing to accept, did afterward feele the
gricuous wrath of God, and neuer had happy daies after.
To these and many other reasons, the King, his halfe brothers, and speciallie the Elect of Winchester encouraged him with one voice, affirming that this ho-nour would exalt the English name for ever: The Earle therefore putting on the man with a free and cheerefull voice answered: And I relying upon the goodnesse of Almightie God, though I am insufficient, unworthy, to avoide the note of faintnesse, doe thanke-fully accept this burthen and honour, which Heaven (I hope) hath put into my hands. And then turning himfelfe to the Bishops who were present, among which Richard Bishop of Bangor (from whose mouth our * author wrote those things) was one, * Mat. Parif. who hec concluded and faid. Let mee before I depart out had it o many of this Chappell, die, and sodeinely be burnt with the fire dates from the of Hell, if I doe accept thereof either for ambition, or a-warice; but onlie to restore the Empire (which God grant)

The Farlege

The king of Romans what and who.

The English tongue in the dayes of *Mati*on Para agrees ble to the Dutchto a better estate, and to governe them, who have willinglie elected me, for their Lord, in modelt, iust and honou-rable maner. These words exhaled joyfull teares from off many of the hearers, and the Ambaffadors returned to deliuer the newes of this acceptance, who from thenceforth was King of Romans, that is Emperour elect, which title is vied till they receive the Crowne imperiall; though to all other purpo-fes he is Emperour, fo that King of Romans feemes to answere to the Title of Casar, which under the ancient Roman Emperours was given to the heire apparent of the Empire or Coadiutors. After the German Ambassadors were gone, the King permitteth his brother to fend fome ouer to found the truth of the Electors and Peoples affections, which in regard the English were originally Germans, and by late affinitie incorporated, and for that English

(faith Paris) was in a fort agreeable to the Almain tongue) they found entire, and with that certitude returne. The King of England hereby seemed to haue his delignes for recourry of Normandy, greatlie strengthned, the Almaines and French hardlie brooking one the other; but howfoeuer, fure it is that his brother the new King, had occasion to spend the golden Oyle, which was so long in gathering, to maintain the light of this Imperial lampe; and without question hee might bee liberall, for he was reputed to possesse so much ready coine, as would enery day for tenne yeeres afforde him an hundreth marks vpon the maine stocke, without of ready money reckoning his rents & reuenues in Germany, and the which Sichard English dominions. The Earl *was foon after crowned King of the Romans, at Aquifgraue, by Com ade this Eledion. Archbishop of Colein, with great pompe & solenity. * 6.cel tun.die



* Contra antiqua Basuta & liberta-

"Mat.Paris.
in biff : masori.
The Vniversit
of Oxford the i cond Schoole of the Church next

for a weekes space at the Abbey of S. Albans, cer. taine masters of Oxford brought a great complaint against the Bishop of Lincoln, for some encroachments vpon the ancient liberties of that V niverfitie to whom the King was gratious and affigned a day: & Matthew Paris, whom the King in honor of his learned paines, admitted enery day to his table, and Chamber, faid to him upon this Complaints * My Liege, for Gods love have a care of the shaken State of the Church. The V niversity of Parie (the Nurse, and motive of for many holy Prelates) is not a little diffigui-cied. If at the same time the V muerity of oxford should be disturbed, which is the second Schoole of the Church, yea the fundamental base thereof, it is greatly to be feared, least the whole Church do fall to ruine. Whereunto the King made antwere, God forbid that (bould happen at all; but chiefely in his daies. Which the Parlia-ment then at hand, he accordinglie prouided for to their contentation. The memory of the King feemes by this to have beene excellent, for befid that hee recounted to Paris all the Kings of England which had beene Canonized Saints, all the Princes Electors, and great Princes of Germany and France, he called to minde the names of about two hundreth and fifty Baronics in England. (91) Atthis Parliament, (which was exceeding

(90) In the meane time, while his brothers

royall preparations were in hand, the King being

great) holden at London, the King in fight and view of all the people, brings forth his younger sonne Ed-mund attired like an Italian of Apulia, (which Country is a member of the Kingdome of Sicilia) and vied this speech: Behold here good people, my Sonne Ed-mund, whom God of his gracious goodnesse hath called to the excellencie of kingly dignity; how comely and well worthy he is of all your fauors, and how cruell and tyranmeall they are, who at this pineb, would demy him effectuall and timely helpe, both with adulce and money. The fumme of all was to draw a valt contribution from the Clergie for atchieuement of this shadow (it pro-

ued no better) into his Coffers. Nevertheleffe he ob tained a grant of aboue fiftie thouland Marks, vpor couenant that the liberties of the Realme should be really and finally once for euer established : which was done. There were present in this Parliament fix was done. I nere were present in this rainament has Archbishops, Canterbury, Yorke, Dublin, Colin, Messana in Sicilia, and Tarentum in Apulia. The politike Ger-mans knew what they did in choosing Richard their King, for they faw a cloud of gold and filuer would diffolue it felfe into showres among them at his arriuall; and all elections of ftrangers turne to their profit, because none is chosen that relies wholly vp on the rents of the Empire.

(92) It was a worthy care in this King, that when A.Do. 1258 by the promision of his brother Richard King of Ro- A.reg. 42. mans, there arrived in the river of Thames fiftie faile of German Ships, laden with corne to relieue the great dearth, which then raigned through the Land, he caused proclamation to be made, That no Citizen of London should buy any of that corne to store up, which they were wont to doe, to the intent they might fell it the dearer afterward, to fuch as wanted. But no warning, praiers, adniscs, nor sense of wants were able to make him frugall of his expense; whereby he was miscrably streightned, neither would the Laitie in Parliament contribute any thing, but (hammering some great attempts in their thoughts) in plaine words concluded, That they neither would, nor could any longer endure such (they called them) extorsions. Moreouer they there vitered many greeuances, and Simon Earle of Leicester complained of the dishonor and iniury done him by William de Valence, calling him Traitor; fo that against the Session to be holden vpon prorogation, he, the Earle of G'ecester, and Marshall, confederated themselves and (pretending the feare of strangers the Kings fauorites,) determi ned to come firong to Oxford at Saint Barnabas day. The Barons They also sent messengers to the King of France,

not hinder the good purpole which they held of

praying at least so much assistance, as that he would

Chap. 9. Henry 3. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 46.

* Mat. Parif. peg.940.

ordeining and fetling the troubled estate of England. They had also taken order to watch the * Portsagainst strangers. Thus they prepared to abate (as it seemed) or banish the loftinesse and insolencie of Posttonines and of other Forreiners, by whom the King was powerfully lead, for they despaired of redreffe at his hands, who like another Proteus (as Paris faith) tooke all shapes upon him to serue his turnes, and then flipt out at his pleasure, no promifes, or ties being strong enough to hold him. These were the beginnings of bloody euils, and the feedesparks of those factious fires which afterward brake forth from the fight and fenfe whereof many thoufands were taken by death, whose mortall stroake of pestilence raged ouer England, specially among the poore through scarcity of food (93) When the time appointed for the Parlia-

ment at Oxford was come, the feditious Earles and

Barons (with whom* fundry Biffigs had taken Coun-

fell against the King the Lords annointed) repaired thither, and sternely propounded fundry travterous Articles to the King to which they required his al fent. The chiefe points were, That the King would unfainedly keepe and observe the Charter of liberties, which he had so ofen granted, and sworn to maintaine in-wiolable; That such a one should be in the place of Chiefe Institiar who wouldindge according to right, without respect to poore or rich, &c. Then they renewed their confederacie, solemnely swearing, That neither for life nor death nor love nor hate, they would be drawne to relent in their purpole, till they had cleared England (in which them elues and their Forefathers were borne) from upstarts and aliens, and had procured laudable Sta-tutes. Those turbulent Nobles had yet a further plot, then all this; which was first broached (faith Mat : westminster) by the disloyall Bishops, which

was that 24 persons should there be chosen, to have the

whole administration of the King and State , and yeerely

appointment of all great Officers, referring onely to the King the highest place at meetings and fallatations of he-nour in publike places. And because they would not

be croffed in their purpoles, they *came exquisitely ar-

med and appointed, that so the King and his Aliens should

*P.Jmer erry rrime, accue în cenu ére. Mar, West. Ibidem,

Mat.Paris.

Mat.Weft,

be enforced if they wold not willingly affent. To al these their ordinations the King and Prince Edward was enforced to sweare, for feare of perpetuall imprisonment, the trailerous Lords having by an Edict, threatned death to all that refifted. Whereupon all the Peeres and Prelates tooke their Corporall Oath to be faithfull in this their infidelitie, and made all who would abide in the Kingdome, to smeare they would stand to the try-all of their Peeres : the Archbishops and Bishops solemnelie accurfing all that should rebell against it. The Monkes themselves detesting this impudent treaion, alke with what forehead, especiallie Prelats, durst thus impaire the Kinglie Maiestie, expressie against their fworne fidelitie to him? This conjuration they fo profecuted, that when William de Valence the Kings halfe-brother, denied with Oathes to render up any Castle which was given him, the Earle of Leicester, and the rest of the Barons answered, they would either haue his Castles or his head. This violent proceeding to terrified the Poictouines, that fodeinely they left, Oxford, and shortly fled into France, where also the Barons had made them odious, Hugh Bigod, brother to the Earle Marshall, was made chiefe Iufitiar. The people, seemed wholy theirs, which made the Barons fo rough and peremptory in all their conferences, that when the Lord Henrie sonne to the King of Abnain, refused to combine or take their oath, without his Fathers confent, they roundly bad him know, That if his father himselfe would not hold with the Baronage of England, he (hould not have a furrowre of earth among them. And least anie thing which might tend to their fecuritie, should feeme to be omitted, they vling the Kings name, commanded London to stand vpon her guard, by keeping their Cities gates carefully thut , & by maintaining ftrong watches night by night, vpon pretence of

danger to the Realme through the practifes of strangers ; and after they dispatched thither certaine fit Agents, who in the Guilde-hall made known their commission, which was directly to understand, whether they would immutably adhere to the Barons and obey ther they would immutably adhere to the Berons and obey the conditutions, by manfully aiding and effectually suptible Barone to ce phing them in the common cause. Whereunto the Ci-tizens condescended, binding themselves thereunto under the publike seale of London,

(94) The Barons did as yet forbeare to declare. what those reformatoric Prouisions should be, beeause the Earle of Gloucester (a principal) man among them) was in danger of death, whose sicknesse did perplex & suspend their proceedings, & the maner of his maladie did put them in doubt of their owne fafeties, making them grow in diffrust of their Cooks their butlers, and fewers, for the Earle his body breaking out into puffules, and his haire, nailes, teeth and fkinne it felfe, falling away, was (as many others, of which some died)thought to be poisoned. But whither they were or no, the Poictouines and strangers had the blame laid vpon them, to make them the more odious to the Commons. But the Earle partly recoue red his health in time by the benefit of medicines and diligent attendance. The * poisons were said to have beene tempered in the house of Eleas a Iew afterward baptized. The King himfelfe perhaps would not haue beene forry, if that he, Simon Earle of Leicester

and some few others of the Barons had beene with

God, for howfocuer his body was among them, yet

his heart was not at quiet, which in this wife well ap-peared. For being in the moneth of June vpon the

river of . Thames in his barge, the aier sodeinly grew darke, and there enfued'a terrible shower with thun-

der and lightning, of which the king impatient com-

viethus you proving stame in fear e of me, who name awaites beene loyall both to you and your Realme, whereas you ought to fear your enemies, such as destroy the Realme and abuse you with bad Counfels. The Barons therefore re-

maining firme in their first purpose, send messengers

abroad to will all such as had beene wronged by the

Kings halfe-brothers and other Poittowines and stran-

gers to present their greenances to the Barons, and to prosecute them. Moreover (because fundry other

petry-tyrants of the English nation, encouraged by

their example, had exceeded their limits, in oppres-

the fame under their feales within a certaine time li-

mitted.

*Mat,Parii p.951

mands himselfe to be set on land at the next place which was Durham house, whereas then, the Earle of Leitester lay. The Earle being thereof certified The King feares the Earla of Leicame out to entertaine him, faying, Sir why are you afraid? the tempest is now past: whereunto he answered with a feuere looke : I feare thunder and lightning about

with actuere 100ke: 1 feare sommer som unemming acouse measure, but by the head of God, 1 doe more feare thee then all the thunder and lightning of the world. Whereunto the Earle replied: Myliege, it is iniurious and incredi-ble, that you should stand in feare of me, who have alwates

fing their inferiours) they procured the King to Commissioner to certific wha appoint foure Knights Commissioner's in eueric fhire, to enquire of all fuch injuries, and certifie

(95) The Barons in the meane time neglect not Officers pur from their enterprize, at whose instance (principally of their places, Hugh Bigod the new chiefe Iustitiar) Philip Louel the

Kings Treasurer, for abuses committed in the Kings Forrests and game about Stony-Stratford, and many Officers of the Exchecquer, were likewise remoued to give roome to fuch as the Barons better liked. The Sherifs likewise of Shires, their practises, Theabuses of and extortions, were diligentlic feene into, and it was Sheriffer note ordeined, that aswell the givers as takers of bribes and provided

should be seuerely punisht. The welsh seeing these round proceedings in England, the peace & restorishment whereof they feared, labored for reconciliation but could not then obteine it.

(06) Rithard King of Romans, having a defire to lee the King his brother, and his lands in England, not without a purpole to bring an Armie, or fuch a number of men as might greatly strengthen the King a-of the Barons, gainst the Barons, as they suspected, was aduertifed armee in Eng Q qqq

The King co

was notwithstanding brought about againe by the

The King not fuffered to enter

Then the

that they prouided for his relistance aswell by land as sea. This-made him, his wife, and sonne, to lay alide that purpole, and to arrive in a private maner at Douer with a small traine, in which there were onely two Earles, and about nine Knights. The king met him with great congratulation at the Sea fide, but nor King, nor hee could bee suffered to enter into Douer Caftle, because (forsooth) it was the principall Key of England; for the fafegard whereof they openly exacted an Oath of him at Canterburie in this manner. The holy Gospels being laide upon the Pulper in the Chapter-house of Canterbury, the Barons reuerently brought in thither the Kings of England and of Almaine; then Richard Earle of Glocefter (for Simon Earle of Leicester was gone with others into France, to deale with the King and States thereof about a perpetual league) standing in the midst openly, and in humble fort cals Richard King of Remans vnto him, by the name onely of Richard Earle many vito nim, by the name their of kitewar Latic of Cormulal, who obeyed accordingly, to whom hee diffinely minifitred the Oath following:

Hence all men, that I Rickard Earle of Cormulal fueure upon the boly Soffest, to bee faithfull and forward to reopen the boly copiest, to over justificating and provided to re-forme with you the Kingdome of England, hitherto by the counfell of wicked men too much deformed. And I will be an effectuall Coadiutor to expell the * Rebels and troubles of the Realme, from out the same. This oath will I observe upon paine to forfeit all the lands I have in England. On the other side (had the King known how to vieit) there fell out such diffention between the Earles of Gloucester and Leicester, that Leicester departed from England discontented, saying, he tooke no joy to live among men so mutable and deceitfull. Neuertheleffe such meanes were vsed, that these two chiefe Captaines of the Barons, brake not forth into any farther division. Thus whiles the Barons vfing the Kings name, disposed of all things, and Simon de Montfort Earle of Leicester, was gone with others to transact with the French about an indisfoluble league; the King himselfe through desire not to be interrupted with forraine matters, if warre should rife at home, or through want of money or better aduife, was induced (if not betrayed) to an act of little honour, though it carried with it the face of profit and fetled quiet.

(97) For (the affaires of the realm thus ftrange- | The King failer ly managed) the King in person failes oner into to demand resti-France, there to demand a peaceable restitution of fuch Signiories as Philip & Lewis (Father of this Lewis) had injuriously withdrawne from his father King Iohn. The French replied, that no restitution was due for many respects, specially, because the * anci- * Guil Genetical ent grant made to Rolle the first Duke of Wormandy, was not voluntary, but extorted by feare and force of Armes, in the dayes of the weake state of France. The King hauing * no disposition to recouer his claimes by battell, and destitute of money wherewith to wage an Armic, but principally for that his owne Pecres and people stood on their guard against him, did *vnwillingly ratifie a conclusion; the Articles whereof were, that the King of France should quietly hold the Dukedom of Normandy, and Earledome of Angion (*Main alfo, Tourain and Poistou) for * three hundred thou fand small pounds of Tourain, and vpon promife to receive other lands to the yeerely value of twenty thousand pounds. Polydor faith, that the reputed limits of the English Pale in France, were from thenceforth the river of Charent in Xanttoing , and the mountaines Pyrenaes; and that hee should peaceably haue Angoumous, Quercy, and Tribute Limain, being Countries marching upon Gascoigne in lieu of the reft, yet so as the King of England should *hold them of the Crowne of France by homage and *tole Tillen fealtie. Vpon these Articles the king acquitted, and for euer renounced all his challenge to Normandy & the other lands, and thenceforth abridged his Stile, and changed his Seale, wing a Scepter in place of a Sword: whereon these Monkish and mockish verses

Est M.CCLIX. vtinam concordia falix, Andeganis, Picta-nis, Neustria, genterelicia Anolorum dantur tibi France Sigilla newantur. Nomina tolluntur fugit Enfis, Sceptra geruntur,

M CCLIX, God grant firme peace thou fix, Poicton, Angion, Normans, to France range you, New Seales are made old Styles for faken; Downe laid the Blade, Scepters up taken.

" Ypadig. Wenft.

Pol. Verg. 1.16

* Polyd. Ferg. faith 15 0000. Crowns in hand



A.D. 1260 A.reg.44.

An.Reg.45.

(98) The King (at these vnworthy rates) having fecured himselfe from the French, labours to vindi-cate the Regall power out of the vsurping Barons hands (whose ouer-toppings at home had driuen him to those forraine indignities,) alleadging, that the Oath which his fonneand hee had taken at Oxford, was voide, in regard it was compulforie, that the Barons alfo, who pretended the profite of the Ann. 1261. Realme, fought onely their owne honour and gain, contrary to their decrees. For his more fecurity he takes the Tower of London, preparing force by the

helpe of his brother King of Romans. There followed agricuous perturbation of the Realmalthough Armes being laid downe for a little space. Edward the Kings eldest some would not trauerse the oath he had made at Oxford, but held with the * Barons for the present. The King, the Queene, and his selected friends, still remaine vpon their guard in the Tower; where hee(in the yeere before) had burst up the locks of the ancient Depositum, or dead stocke of the Crown, to employ against the Barons. Peace Crowne

A.D. 1262 An.Reg.46. The King feifeth

Queenes speciall diligence; and Douer and Roche-fer Castles (whither hee went in person) are deliuered vnto him. This makes him refolue to purfue the Barons , the rather also for that the French King (who much condemned the Barons vniust courses)
had promised his assistance. Henry therefore thrusts out the Barons Chancellor, & Chiefe Iusticiar, placing Walter Merto & Philip Baffet, men of much more ring of this, haften in Armes to Winchester, where the King was, who (hauing intelligence by his faithfull Clerk, Sir Iohn (Manfel) got back into the Tow-The Barons er of London. The King of France was made Vmpue in the quartell. The * caufe was heard at Ami-AD 1263, est, where hee gate indgement with the King of An.Reg. 47. England against the Barons, pronouncing all the Sta-tutes and Aths made at Oxford to have pire in the quarrell. The * cause was heard at Amiprouided neuerthelesse, that the Charter of Liberties which King John had made to the English nation, fhould in no fort bee thereby infringed. This pro-uifo animated Simon Earle of Leicester, and the Barons, to maintaine all the Statutes of oxford, (because they were pretendedly founded vpon that Charter) notwithstanding that iust iudgement which King Lewis had given. The fecret confederacy with Lewelin Prince of Wales, ministred to the Barons no little encouragement, who about this time wasted the Dominsons of Prince Edward in the Marches of Wales. This judgement of the French King did much disaduantage the Barons, of whom divers being drawne with perswasions, gifts, and promises, revolted from Simon Montfort. There was now a taking of Townes and Prisoners on all hands. Prince Edward (who now was wholy for his Father in despite of the Barons) takes the Castel of Briftol, and fines the City at a thouland pounds Simon Montfort executeth his greatest reuenges vp. A.D. 1264. on the Queenes friends which were Aliens, not fpa ring the Kings. Marching forward, he recours Glofer Castell, enters Worcester and Bridgenorth; lastly, surpriseth the Ile of Ely, subduing that fastnesse or fenny ftrength to the Barons vie. Sir Iohn Manfel the Kings Councellour, fearing the euent of things, flies secretly from the Tower where the King was. Henry sonne to the King of Almain, was after this taken by the Barons. Meanewhile Prince Edward fortifies wind/or Castle with strangers. Mutuall wearineffe at length begat a defire of peace, and the * King had yeelded that the Statutes of Oxford should stand: but the Queene was otterly against it, not without cause; for it did enfeeble the arbitration which the French King had made. The Queenes opposition in this point was knowne to the Londoners; which put the baser sort into so lewd a rage, that finee being to shoot the Bridge from the Tower toward windfor, they with durt and stones and villanous words forced her to returne. Prince Edward under the conduct of the Bishoppe of worcefter, came from the Castle of Bristol (by reason of quarrell betweene his men of warre and the Bargers) and contrary to his promise entred into Wind-for Castle; but afterward going forth to meet Simon Montfort at King ston vpon Thames, with purpose to offer peace, the said Simon got Windsor Castle, & would not permit him to depart. At London yet in a Parliament, matters were pieced againe, and the Kings fide grew fronger dayly.
(99) There were with him his brother King of

by reason of their multitude, * being abone 15000 1 *W.Rufbager MS (laith william Rifhanger who then lived) of those only whose names were entred into the Matriculation booke. amongst whom being so many young Nobles, the King doubted how they might bee affected to the Barons. Whereupon many of them went to Northampton, wherethen the Barons were strong; and thither the King comming with his hoaft, and breaking in arthe Towne-walles upon Passion Sunday,encountred his enemics, amongst whom the * Students of Oxford had a Banner by themselves advanced right against the King, and they did more annoy him in the fight, then the rest of the Barons: which the King(who at length preuayled) had vowed sharpe-ly toreuenge, but that his Councellors told him, those Students were the sonnes and kindred of the Great-men of the Land, whom if hee punished, even the Nobles who now stood for him, would take Armes against him. The King there tooke Simon Montfort the younger, and foureteene other principall Baronsand * Knightes Banerets, forty other Knights, besides Esquiers,&c. Encouraged with this successe, hee advanceth the Standard royall toward Nottingham, burning and walting the Barons lands where locuer her came. To divert this tempest, Simon Montfors hastneth to Lon-don, and attemptes the taking of Rochester Castle, which Iohn Earle of Warren defended for the King: who comming to raife the fiege, takes Kingfton Ca file, which belonged to the Earle of Gloucefter; then vnexpectedly falling vpon fuch as maintained the fiege of Roshefter, while Simon was absent, kils verie many, and scatters the rest. Then seifeth hee the Castle of Tumbridge, and therein the Countesse of Gloncester, whom, notwithstanding he nobly set at large, as professing not to warre against Ladies; from thence the Cloud of power borne vpon the winges of indignation, speedes to Winehelfen, and receives the Cinque-Portmen to grace, fetling at last in Lewis where himselfe rested in the Priorie, and his sonne in the Castle, whither the Barons sent letters to him, protesting their loyall observance to his person, but all bostility to their enemies which were about him.

(100) But the King flaming with defire of reuenge, fets flight by thefe vowed (but fained) fidelities; sand returnes a full defiance as to Traitors, professing tha hee takes the wrong of his friends as his owne and their enemies as his. The King of Almaine, Prince Edward, with other of the Kings chiefe friends, fent their like letters of defiance. The Barons, loath to let it come to the hazardous and vnkind triall of steele, (though they then encamped about fixe miles from Lewis,) not acquirting themselves in this repulse, iterate

their meffage, with an offer to pay to the King thirty thousand pounds, in satisfaction of such there as their people had done through the Realme; so me the

Statutes of Oxford might stand. The king of Almaine (whose honour they had toucht, and spoild part of

(101) It came to a battel; wherein Simon de Montford commands his traiterous Army to weare white Crosses on breast and backe, to show they fought for Iuflice; great was the effusion of bloud on both parts; chieflic of the Scots vpon the Kings fide, & of the Londoners vpon the Earles fide; whose Battalion, (lead by the Lord Segrane,) Prince Edward most furiously charged, and had the execution of them for about foure miles, which he purfued the more bloudily, in reuenge of the extreame difgrace which they had offered vpon London Bridge to the Queene his Mother, and after that the Garrison of Tumbridge followes, and flew many at Croyden. But while the Prince [penthimself in that revenge, his Father (who having his Horse slain under him, had yeelded himfelf prifoner to Simon de Montfort)his vncle the king of Romans, and others great Peeres were taken. and the whole hope of that day loft. There fell in all

his inheritances) hindred all harkening to any their

on both fides, about five thousand. Prince Edward returning from the flaughter of the Londoners

The Scots aide

Romans, his sonne Edward, William de Valence (whom Prince Edward had brought out of France) John Comyn of Seotland with a multitude of valiant Seots, (whose King was Henries sonne in law,) Iohn de Baliel Lord of Gallway, Robert de Brus, & c. with whom hee marcheth from London to Oxford, where the Rendeuou of his friends and forces was appointed. The King meaning to make that place (where his chiefe blow was guen him) his chiefe feat to confult for remedies, difmiffed thence all the Students.

The kings leres

The king of Al-maines letter, &c

the kings of Eng

538 Prince Kdward

would haue reenforced the Battaile, but the Barons offered peace; which vpon the next day was concluded for the prefent, fo that Prince Edward and Henry fonne to the king of Romans, should also render them felues prisoners, and the two kings, till such time as all quarrels might receive an happier conclusion by calme deliberation. Thus was Simon Earle of Lei-cefter in possession of both the kings and of their elder sonnes; so fortunate may Treason and Rebellion bee for a time, but in the end it speeds as it deserues. (102) By this advantage this Kingly Rebell got all

the cheif Castles of the Kingdoe into his hand, leading

his Soucraigne as his Prifoner about the Country (yet

with all outward respect and honour) the rather to

An. 1265. An.rcg.49. The Earle of Leiceffer catrie till he had gotten all the chiefe firengths of the Realme.

menfem. Mat. Weff.

procure a more quiet furrender. The King of Romans hee imprisoned in the Tower, Prince Edward and the Lord Henry in Doner. The Earle feeling now his owne greatnesse, began to be lesse tractable; neither could the Popes authority interpoling it selfe for the King, preuaile. For as the Pope by Apostolike fentence before had absolved the King and others from his Oath to the Provisions of Oxford, to now he lent his * Cardinall Legate to excommunicate all the Fauourers of those Acts & impugners of the King but these men *haing the material frond to trust vnto made no reckning of the Spiritual, pretending they appealed to the Pope, or to better times, or a generall Councell, or to God himfelfe: fo great account made these croffed souldiers of the Popes curie. Notwithstanding the loyall blood of Roger de Mortimer, and many other high spirited men of Armes, could not brooke their Kings so base viage and dangerous estate, but make head, in vaine. For Simon treacherously combines himselfe with Lewelin Prince of Wales, and with their ioint forces takes Hereford Castle; thether they remoue Prince Edward from Douer. The loyall band was hereby compelled to capitulate, and deliuer hostages. 6 the fearefull point to which England was brought at this present, but God (in whose protection it was) deliue-

Suffex, and William de Valence Earle of Pembrooke with others are joyned ; and not long after, Prince Edward by escape from the Castle of Hereford, commeth in safetie to Wigmore. There were that laboured to attone the two Earles of Leicester and Glocester, but offence and indignation had taken too deeperoote. Meanewhile thou, ô Henrie art shewed up and down by the Arch-rebellious Earle of Leicester, to countenance thine owne destruction. (103) The Prince therefore feeing that he must refolutely stand for the liberty of the Realme and of his Father, friends and posterity, raiseth an Armie,

confederates himfelfe with the people and Counties

of Hereford, Worcester, Shropsbire and Chester. Glosester hee enters by force, and drives the defendants into

the Castle, which after yeelds. Simon Montfort with

Lewelin Prince of Wales, doe in the meane time spoile

their enemies lads in " Momouth & Glamorganshires,

the King in person, not in spirit being present. Prince

Edward and the Earle of Gloceller on the other fide.

speed to the Castle of Kenelworth kept against them

by Simon, sonne of the Earle of Leicester; there they

intercept the Earle of Oxford with about thirteene

Knights Bannerets before they could reach the Ca-

file, whither they were hastning. Newes came

then that the Earle of Leicester was returned with the

King in his companie out of Southwales, neere to Wor-

cefter. Thither the Prince advanceth to fight with

him. The Earle hearing of his approach, encampes

at Eucham with his whole power. Vpon the third of

August the noble Edward fets out of Worcester, and

red it. Simon and the Earle of Glocester fall at debate about their Dividend and shares in the spoiles, (for

what cuer they pretended for the Kingdome, their

owne greatnes and gaine was the motiue,) and some-

what also the vnequal latitude of his said partner the
Earle of Leiesser, together with the perill of his
Country moued him. Who thereupon confe-

derates, with Roger Mortimer and his affociates, to

whom not long after, John Earle of Warren, Surrey and

*Nic. Triest.

firikes betweene Simon Montfort and his way to Ke- Simon Barle of nelworth, and the next day turnes backe toward Eucher enclose by the Princes hely or the Earl of Gloseffer with his force, and Roger he hey had agreed) with his bartalion, worther the hey had agreed) with his bartalion, worther the hey had agreed with his bartalion, worther the hey had agreed with his bartalion. drawing thither by two other waies; fo that Simon thus thut vp and enclosed, must either fight or yeeld They ioine in bartaile in a goodly large field before the Towne of Eucham; where the Earles hoft being affailed on all fides, was with much flaughter (of the Welfhespeciallie) vtterly in the end distressed and discomfitted. At the houre of his death it thundered and lightned, and so great a darknesse spread the skie that men were amazed. The Earles head. (which was fent to Worceffer Caftle to the Ladie Mortimer his hands, and feet, were chopt off. In this cruell Battaile the King himfelfe (being wounded vnawares with a Iauclin) was almost slaine. Let vs now behold how this victorie is vied. The King being thus restored to liberty, cals a Parliament at Winchester, by authority whereof hee feileth into his hands the Charters and freedomes of the Citie of London, and of many other Townes for their Rebellion. Those that were taken in the battel are committed to fafe Guftody, and all fuch as had been younthe Earls fide were difinherited, a ratable distribution being made of their estates to the Kings well deserving friends. Simon and Guy de Montfort, the Earles fonnes, were chiefe of the attainted; their mother the Counteffe with all her goods was fent in fafetie out of England neuer to returne. Simon the eldest brother sought to preserve himselfe, and the remaines of his Fathers

(104) The King meaning to take all refuge from him, is together with his brother the King of Ro-mans, Ottoben the Popes Legate, (who was lately ar-rined) and a pui Gray are resident. riued) and a puissant ar mic, at Northampton, with purpose to oppresse him by warre. Simon had friends about the King, but the Earle of Gloesser maligning his restitution to full grace, it was concluded (vpon his fubmission) that he should live in exile, and for his maintainance receive onely five hundreth marks by the yeere. But the Castle of Kenelworth would not yeeld, driving the King to an halfe yeeres fiege; who also in the end was content to give the garrison pardon for life and limme, licenfing it to part with bag and baggage. In the meane while the other outlawes and difinherited men, made fundry excursions out of the Ile of Elie. Temperate men, desirous to pacific all these euils, would gladly have had the king to pardon those transgressions, and restore their lands vpon reasonable fines. This proposition found a fowre enemie of Roger Mortimer, who had by the kings gift gotten much of their land; which moued the Earle of Glocester (who favoured the other course)
to indignation and distrust, so that he withdrew him-

misfortunes in the Ile of Axhelme.

felfe. Not long after which, hee by his messengers An. 1 267. belongs the king, to remove frangers from about 1.67, him, to fee that the Statutes of Oxford were obscued through the king down and to keepe fisch promises as he had made at Esoform. Otherwise the king must not marviel, it she did that which himself is thought best. The Legate Cardinall Ottobon, about the same time (to hinder the growth of anie new rebellion) excommunicated the Bishops of Winchester, wercefter, London and Chichefter for having adhered to Simon Monifort, and also declared that the Clergie were to pay their tenths, for feuen yeeres next enfu-ing, to the king. On the other fide, all the vadone and diffinerized nien (except the fonnes of Simon Montfort and Robert Earle of Derbic) were offered to be put to ransome, and for certaine fines to be restored to their lands; but they required to have them without redemption, exposulating with the king and Legate many greeuances. When words had no An.D.1268. better operation, the King and Prince Edward beliege the Ile of Ely on all fides. This being known to the The Estle of Earle of Glocester, who (although hee had vnder his feale promised neuer to take armes against the King the king taket and Prince, but only in his owne defence)gathers a

force in Wales in fauour of the difinherited, marcheth vp to London and taketh it, the Citizens fauouring him. Then commands he the Popes Legate, who lodged in the Tower, to yeeld up the fame ; but he as taking no knowledge of any fuch matter, repaired quietly to Pauls, there, by preaching to fittre vp peo-ple against the enemies of Christ in the Holy-land. Peaceensued not long after, by mediation of the King of Romanes, and the Noble Lord Philip Baffet; the Earle binding himfelfe in ten thousand markes to the King, neuer to moue any tumult. Lewelm Prince of Wales, who had greatly supported the Earle of Leicesters rebellion, for thirty two thousand pounds sterling was restored to foure Cantreds; which the King had taken from him in the warre and reconciled.

at Northampton, by the delivery of Ottobon, who

not long after returned into Italie. Then was the

Kings peace proclaimed through England, al men be-ing yoon paine of death commanded to forbeare to

make (poiles, or take booties violently, as they of late

had been accustomed. The Prince, seeing the Realme

thus acquitted, doth the more willingly (having his

Fathers content) yeeld to goe with Lewis King of

France, into the holy land, who, toward his furniture

things yet might not run out of fquare, the King held

a Parliament at Marlborough where the Statutes

called of Marlborough were enacted. The old King and his Queene henceforward enloyed the bleffing

of a quiet estate at home, with the more leisure to

pray therein for their fonnes faire successe in Pale

fline, whose virtues had there raised an admiration of

him among the Infidels. That quiet neuertheleffe

was a little interrupted by an incendiarie outrage at

Norwich, where the Citizens fet fire on the Priorie

Church. The king being kindled with another kind

of fire fware he would in person see a reuenge taken ;

and dispatching first away Sir Thomas Trinet, (before

whom a great multitude were found guilty, and con-

demned to be drawne and hanged)himfelfe, hauing

in his company one Bishop and the Earle of Glocester

followed; where beholding the deformed ruines, he

could hardly refraine from teares. The Bishop ha-

uing therefore excommunicated the nocent, and the

King condemned the Towne in three thousand

markes, toward the reedification of that Church, as

alfo to pay one hundreth pounds for a Cup weigh-

ing ten pounds in gold, he purposed to returne to-

ward London. This publike act of zeale to religion and

Iustice, was the last which he did, as a King; for now he

was come to that, which hee was to enter into as a mortall man: At the Abbey of S. Edmund in Suffolke,

he feligreeuoufly ficke, where while he lay, * he cau-

fed the Earle of Glocester to be sworne to keepe the

Realme for his sonne; the Prelates, Earles, and Barons

of the land, being affembled to be present at his de-

parture. Therefore after hee had in Christian man-

ner prepared his foule, by acknowledging his finnes

Creditors and the Poore shared all his goods. The

fpace of time which he reigned, is almost an old mans

age, and absolutely the longest number of yeeres, that

euerany King of England reigned, not excepting E-

thelbert the first Christian King, if (which is * written

by fome) he reigned fiftic fixe yeeres, and as manie

A.D. 1269.

An.Reg. 53.

(105) Dometlick peace now beginning to finine in An.Reg. 53.
the English Hemisphere, Prince Edward his brother, the Lord Edmand, the Earle of Gloncester with many other Noblemen of England, with intent of a more honourable warfare, take the Crosse vpon them

Chap.9

in that voyage, lends him thirty thouland markes: for affurance whereof the Prince morgageth Aguitain vnto him. But what true fetled peace may we judge The chiefe Iuir, when Iohn de Warren Earle of Surrey the Kings halfe-brother (vpon the increase of words betweene them) durft kill Alan le Louch the chiefe Iustice, with his owne hand in Westminster Hall? A plaine and fearefull example of fauorites potencie. That all

A.D. 1270. 1271. 1273. The Priorie wich burnt in a

and receiuing fit spirituall consolations, he rendred up the same to his Redeemer. His will was short, for his

Additam.ad

daies more, as are between the feast of Simon & Inde, and * Saint Edmund the Archbishop, which are about twentie. A Prince whose * denotion was greater Police then his discretion, as we see in his permitting the depredation of himfelfe and his whole kingdome by Papall ouerswayings , the errour of whose Gouernrapan outriwayings, the errout or whole Gouern-ment, concurring with the tumultuous treafons of his Nobles, did precipitate him into many milchiefs, out of which yet God almighty did strangelie deliuer him; for if he had not beene divinely protected, there is no cause for a reasonable man to doubt, but that his end had proued as headlong, as some of his own, and his Barons actions feemed to threaten. The royall remaines of this happily-dying Prince were with all the due pompe of exequies interred in West. minster, the great and sumptuous new worke whereof he began, but finished not; the description of whose life, being full of diuerticles and abrupt passages, as a maze or labyrinth, here at last hath found a lace of reft for it felfe and vs.

His Wife.

(106) Eleanor the wife of King Henry, was the fecond of the fine daughters, of Raymond Earle of Prowince, sonne of Earle Alfonfe, sonne of Alfonfe the first unee, Jonne of Earte Ayang, Johne or enjugie the man king of Arragon; her mother was Beatries, daughter of 7 homes Earle of Sausy, fifter of the Earles Amee, and Peter, and the Archbishop Boniface of Canterbury. Shee was married to him at Canterbury, January 24. An. 1236.regn. 20: Crowned at Weltminster the 19.0f the same moneth was his wife 37. yeere, his widow 19. died a Nun at Alme/bery, the 25. of June, in the 20. yeere of her fons raigne 1291, and was buried in her monastery, the I 1. of September following.

Edward their eldeft sonne was borne at Westminster the 28,day of Iume, the 24. yere of his Fathers Raign 1239, hee was furnamed Long hancke, of his tall and flender body, made knight in Spaine of Alfonfe king of Caffile, created Earle of Chefter by his Father, after the lifue male extinct of the former Earles, and fucceeded his Father in the kingdome of England.

(107) Edmund their second sonne, borne lan. 26 A. 1245. and of his Fathers raigne, 29. was furnamed Crouched-backe, of bowing in his backe, fay fome, but more likely of wearing the figne of the Croffe, (anciently called a * Crouch) vpon his backe, which was viually worne of fuch as yourd viages to lerufalem, as he had done. He was inuefted titulare King of Sias he had done. He was inucited timere a ting of the men, made cilia and Apulia, and created Earle of Lancaffer, (on whole person originally the great contention of Lancaffer, and add and hasting of the grant created Friest cafter and Yorke was founded) and having of the grant of his Father, the lands of Simon Montfort and Robert Ferrers, (difinherited in the Barons warres) was by vertue of the same graunt Earle of Leicester and Derby, and high Steward of England. He had two wines, the first was Auelin, daughter and heire of William Earle of Albemarle, by whom he left no iffue, the fecondwas Queene Blanch, daughter of Robert Earle of Artoys, (brother of Saint Lewis King of France) wi dow of Henry of Champaigne, King of Nauarre, and mother of Joane Queene of France and Nauarre, the wife of Philip the faire. By her he had iffue three fons and one daughter. Thomas who after his Father was Earle of Lancaster, and having married Alice, daughter and heire of Henry Lacie Earle of Lincolne , was beheaded at Pomfret without iffue: Henry Lord of Monmouth, who after his brothers death was Earle of Lancaster, and father of Henry, the first Duke of Lancafter: Iohn, who died without marriage: and Mary, married to Henry Lord Percie, mother of

Henry, the first Earle of Northumberland. This

wodden fup-portes of impo-tent men, made

Earle Edmund died at Edyorin Gascoigne, Inne. 5. An. 1296. and of King Edward his brothers raigne 24. when hee had lived firty yeare, foure moneths and nineteene daies; whole body halfe a yeereafter his death, was conuaied into England, and lieth entomb-Qqqq 2 1

*Sa we call the

liouse, and manie noble houses of that time.
(108) Richard the third sonne of King Henry and Queenc Elenor, (bearing the name of his vncle Richard, King of Romans Amaign,) deceased in his youth, and lieth at Westminster, enterted on the south-side of the Quire.

(109) John the fourth sonne of King Henrie and Queene Fleanor, (bearing the name of King 10hn his grandfather,) deceased yong, and at Westminster his bones lie enterred with his brother Richard.

(110) William the fift fonne of King Henry and Queene Eleanor, is mentioned by Thomas Pickering, (a Priest of the monastery of Whithy in Yorkeshire, who lived in the time of King Henrie the fixt, and wrote a large Genealogie of the Kings of England, and their. iffues,)'and that he dying in his childhood, was buried within the new Temple, by Fleete-streete in

(111) Henry the fixt sonne of King Henry and Queene Eleanour, is also reported by the same Pickering, to have died yong, and to be buried at Westmin-

(112) Margaret the eldeft daughter of King Henry and Queene E'eanor, borne the twentie fixt vecre of her Fathers raigne. 1241, was the first wife of Alexander the third, King of Scotland, married to him at Torke, An. 1251. by whome shee had issue, Alexander and Dasid, (who died both before their Falexander and Dasid, ther without iffue, and Margaret Queene of Norway,

wife of King Erike, and mother of Margaret the heire of scotland, and Norway, that died unmarried : free was Queene twenty two yeeres, lived thirtie three, deceased before her husband, in the twenty third yeere of his Raigne, the first of her brother Edwards in England, and was buried at the Abbey of Dunferinling in Scotland.

(113) Beatrice the second daughter of King Henrie, and Oneene Eleanor, was borne at Burdeaux in Gascoigne, iune. 25. An. 1242. of her Fathers raigne 27. At the age of eighteene yeeres, flee was married to Iohn the first Duke of Britaine, (Ionne of Iohn the last Earle of the same,) and had assue by him, Arthur Duke of Britanny, John Earle of Richmont, Peter, and Blanch married to Philip, Sonne of Robert Earle of Artoys; Eleanour a Nunne at Amsbery, and Marie married to Guy Earle of Saint Paul: when shee had beene his wife twelve yeeres, and lived thirty yeeres, face deceased in Britany, in the first yeere of the Raigne of her brother King Edward, and was buried at London, in the Quire of the Grey Fryers within New-

(114) Catherine the third daughter of King Henry and Queene Eleaner, was borne at London, An. 1252, of her fathers raigne 37. Novemb. 25. being Saint Katherines day, whose name was therefore ginen vnto her, at the font, by Boniface Arch-Bilhop of Canterbuher, and was her Godfather. Shee died yong and at Wessmiller her, bones lie enterred, with her brother Richard and Iohn, in the space betweene the Chappels of King Edward and Saint Bennet.



EDWARD

6bap. 10. Edward. J. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 47.

EDVVARD THE FIRST, LORD OF Montarch 47 IRELAND, AND DVKE OF AQVI.

TAINE, &c. THE FORTIE-SEVENTH MO-NARCH OF ENGLAND, HIS RAIGNE. ACTS, AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER X.

Ann. 122



Dward, who followed K. Henry in wearing the English Crowne, but far out-went him in all regall ertues, was abroad at the time of his fathers death, still pursuing his high defires for the Hely Warres: wherein what he

performed, (being yet but a Prince,) against the public enemies of Christians, it shall not bee impertinent to touch, before wee come to his actions as a King; having already remembred, with what valour and felicity hee had fubdued his Fathers domefticke enemies, fetled the peace of his Kingdome, and reestablished the raines of Soueraignty in his Fathers hands, which those potent Rebels had formerly extorted.

(2) King Lewis of France, whose perswasions had enflamed this noble-spirited Prince to affociate him

in this glorious quarrell, having first set forth for the enterprise, lay now in siege of Tunis in Africa; where Prince Edward with all his forces arriving, the France King (greatly rejovcing in his withed preferect) together with the King of Maustre, and other Princes of his Army, wene forth to meet him, and received him in the kiffe of Peace. This place which they beleaguered, was (as then) not great, yet by reason of the situation, * it greatly impeached the Christians in their passages through those Seas; being built out of the scattered ribs, and wasted ruines of that mighty and famous City Carthage, riual once in Maiefty and Ambition with ancient Rome, as contending with her about the Empire of the World. Therefore to secure the Mediterranean Seas, it Mai. Par. was thought necessary to beginne that enterprife for Asia, with this in Asias is but not long after Lewis yeelding uppe his holy Souleto God at the siege, and sicknesse (by reason of the

heates in those Regions, for it was August) raig-

take charge of the whole enterprise, arrives; and after sharpe reenforcement of the fiege, (where Edward gaue frequent proofe of his great valour and prudence,) Charles is content to forbeare extremity, Prince Edward vn willing to any truce with the (to which the Saracens were brought) vpon capitulations with them, contrary to Edwards mind, being wholly fet to subdue, conuert or root them

Paul, Aemyl.

(3) Yetthe points of the treaty & truce (though granted for many yeeres) carried shew of honour. being these: 1. that all Christian Captines should bee let free without ransome: that in the Cities of that Kingdome, the Christian faith might freely be taught: 3. that all fuch as were willing, might freely receive facred Baptisme: 4 that the Sarazens should repay to the Christian Kings, their charges: 5. that the King of Tunis should remaine tributarie to the King of Sicilie. The fiege hereupon was raise fed, to the griefe and indignation of Edward, who would not (as is reported) partake nor share in any of the treature, which by reason of the truce was payed by the Sarazens, as accounting it to be wickedly gotten, and contrary to the Tenor of the vow, which for the honour and advancement of Christian Religion had beene made. The euent also seeming to confirme no lesse; for the wrath of Heauen (faith our * Author) purfued King Charles, brother to the late King Lewis, and finding him out vpon the sea in his returne toward Sieilie, tooke seuere reuenge by terrible weather, aswell vpon him, as almost his whole Army, which perished in the

waters, together with the impious treasure brought

from Tunis, and all other his furniture of State and Houshold. Which when Prince Edward understood,

hee sware by the bloud of our Lord, that though all his

Companions in Armes and Countrimen should abandon

him, yet hee and Fowin his * Lackey alone would enter

whom Lewis (before his decease) had sent for, to

enterprize.
* Cuffot Palfreds.
* Aces or Acres.

* Continuatio Mat Par.

inte * Ptolomau, and keeps the own which he had made, whiles foule and body held together. A noble refoluti-on, and as faithfully performed, but not with so small attendance; for the English hearing his feruent affeueration, promifed with one heart to accompanie him, and that (in all likely hood) the more willinglie, because it is not observed, that the tempest had any way danified Edward, or his fellowship. He forthwith thereforesets saile toward doon, into which hee entred fafe not about four daies before the City should haue beene yeelded to the Sarazens, from which precipitation these succours out of England withheld it. The Sultan of Babylon, who lay about Acon with a puissant hoaft, and had begun to affault the breaches; hearing this, not long after raifed his fiege, and without the fruition of his defire withdrew to his owne Dominions. (4) Edward vndoubtedly was not more tall of

personage then stout of courage, and vpon trust ther-

of, doing some things, which perhaps a Prince of

his hopes, and fortunes, might with good reason

haue forborne. His vndaunted courage against those

Edwards volun-tarie fingle fight with Sir Adam Gurden,

Infizels may bee gessed by the like against a dome-sticke Rebell. Among those who were out-lawed for Rebellion & Treason, after the battell of Eucham for partaking with Simon Earle of Leicester, was one Sir Adam Gardon a Knight of the parts about Win-chester, who with certaine his Complices kept out of the way of the Kings officers, but made the Kings high-way betweene Wilton and Farnham (which by reason of woods and windings was sitte to shelter e-nemics) very dangerous for such as meant to passe, but doing most mischiefe to the lands and goods of fuch as were the Kings friends. Edward hearing of this mans fingular courage, gets intelligence of a fit time, and comes ypon him with a strong band of followers, but he, nothing terrified, prepares himfelfe to fight for his life to the last gaspe. The Prince hereupon commands that none of his men should

dare to interrupt their Combat, and forthwith with

equall courage exchanged mighty blowes without winning ground each of other. Edward delighted with the brauery of Adams spirit, and proofe of his manhood, bad him yeeld, promifing him life, and his lands againe; who prefently throwing away his weapons, enjoyed the full benefite of Prince Edwards promise. The happinesse of that age, wherin Sword and Shield were the ordinary weapons, and afforded much affurance in fight, might somewhat excuse the Prince from the note of temerity, which otherwise, in hazarding his princely person against a privat Gentleman, hee could hardly have escaped. But here at Acon hee refused no occasion of purting forth the naturall strengthes of his firme-compacted body, till by the Sultans retreat the most honourable opportunities were subtracted.

(5) All this while did that renowned and vertu- Edwards wife ous Lady, Elanor, wife of Prince Edward, endure delivered of a with him an infeparable companion of all his fortunes, and was at Acon delivered of a daughter baptized there by the name of loan, But if God had not better prouided for him, thee was not likely to haue enjoyed any longer the deare company of her louing Lord and Husband. Amongst that bloody Sect of Sarazens , called Affaisini, who, without feare of torments, vndertake (vpon commaund of their *Superior) the murther of any eminent prince, impugning their irreligion, was one Anzazim, often v-fed by the Sarazen Admirall of Ioppe, as a Messenger betweene him and Edward, whom the Admiral pretended exceedingly to honour for his heroicke parts of mind and body. The desperate wretch by this employment getting credite and accesse, vpon his infinuation of certaine fecrets to be imparted, Prince traineroufly Edward commandedall men to voide the Chamber, when looking out of a window, the Affaline fodainly with a polioned knife gives him three wounds, two in the arme, and one neere the arme-pit; whom Edward presently with his foot threw to the earth. wrung the knife from the Traitour, (not without wounding himselfe in the hand,) and with the treffel of a Table smote out his braines. Then calling in his people, hee commands that the body of the villaine should bee hanged up ouer the Cities Wall and a liue dogge with him. The Admirall hearing of this trayterous attempt, is * faid to have fighed for forrow, for that hee neuer knew thereof, but meant himselfe to have become a Christian. But when the Christians understood of this cursed assault vponthe person of sorenowned a Prince, they ment in reuenge thereof, to have forthwith invaded the Pagans wherefoeuer. But the Prince (whose first care was the lafety of Christians) said, I forbidyou on Cate was the latery of Chillians plane, porton por in-the behalf of God, that none of you zet prefume to in-fest the Pagans Armie, because many of our people are gone to white the holy Sepulchre, who shall every one of them bee murthered by the Sarazens, if they shall now sustaine any (though but small) veration at our hands. The fecond care was of his wounds, which by reason of the enuenemed blade were feared to be mortall; wherein the Lady Elener gaue so rare example of conjugall affection, as her immortall memo-A rare example of winely affection ry doth infthy impart glory to that whole Sex. For when no medicine could extract the poison, shee did it with her tongue, licking dayly, while her husband Acpt, his ranchling wounds, subserely they perfectly clo-fed, and yet her felfe received no harmes so sourraigne

Centing, Math.

a medicine is a wives Tongue, annointed with the vertue fix. of lonely affection. (6) Thus while Edward abode in forraine pare for the generall service of Christianity, against the encreasing Enemies thereof, (contending then to that lamentable Greatnesse, wherein our vnhappie times behold them;) his Father king Hemie dies, and Prince Edward had the defect of his presence supplied by the faith and care of such venerable and noble persons, as his Father left behind him at his The Walling. death. Therefore Robert Kilwarby Archbishop of Canterbury, Gilbert Earle of Glocefler, with other the

nenge as followed the captination of his valiant Pre-The Voalfag.

*Peol. Aemylia Philipp. 8.

"All and Men %The.PValfin Edward, z. The marusilou

together at the New-Temple in London, acknowled-ged and proclaimed absent Edward for their Soueraigne Liege Lord; and by the affent of his Mother, the Queene Dowager, prouided for the com-mon affaires of the King, and the good estate of the Kingdome. The first newes of his Fathers death were brought vnto him, when after his return from the Holy-Land(which feruice hee was * enforced to forfake, having long in vaine expected the promi-fed aids of Christians and Tartars.) he rested himfelfe in Sicilia, with Charles the King thereof; where to the immortall commendation of his pietie, and filiall affection (rare in Princes) it is recorded, that the death of his some and Heire, comming first to his care, and afterward of the King his Father, hee much more forrowed his Fathers departure, then his Sonnes: whereat King Charles greatly maruailed, and demanding the reason, had of him this an "[were, The loffe of Somnes is but light, because they."
"are multiplied enery day: but the death of Pavents is
"irremediable, because they can never bee had a-(7) Now, whether it were the terrour of fuch re-

chiefe Prelates and Peeres of the land, affembling

deceffor King Richard, or his owne wifer carriage, or the calmer condition of the times, or all of them together, which secured him in his returne : certaine is is, that hee trauelled in great fafety and honour oner land from Sicilia to Rome, where he was met vp-on the way with all the Cardinals, gratulating the honourable successe of his Cheualrie against the Turkes, his safe returne, and new Kingdome. At his inflance Pope Gregory * excommunicated the bloudy:handed Guy Montford (because * his person could not easily bee gotten, by reason of his Greatneffe, and power) with all his receivers, and (vntill amends were made) put their whole Dominions vn der interdict, for that the faid Guy, (fonne to Simon late Earle of Leicefter , flain ar the battel of Enefham in reuenge of his Fathers death (*for which he mor tally hated all King Henries race,) had most butcherly murthered * Henry of Almaine, King Edwards neere kiniman, voon his returne toward England in the raigne of the late King Henry, as hee was de uoutely feruing God in the Church at Fiterbe in Ita-lie; which horrible act induceth a * indicious Author to fuspect, that Guy also had a hand in that Affalfination on Edward, who had flaine his Father. This Guy being afterward taken by the Admirall of Arragon, to gratific King Edward, was kept in prison, & the death of Henrie reuenged *with his. From Rome hee journied through the Cities of Italy, where he was generally entertained with exceeding joy and honour; and as he was * entring into Sauoy, at the nonour; and us ite was cuttring into same, at the Roope, or defent of the Alpes, very many of the Pre-lates, and Peeres of England met him, acknowled-ging their gladnesse for his lafety, and their duties to his Soueraignty. In his paffage, hee gaue notable proofe of his great prowesse and strength at a Turnament (or rather * battel) against * the Earle of Chableun, and his Burgundians: for the faid Count

being a gallant man at Armes, after many blowes

with the fword betweene King Edward and him,

throwing away his weapon, grafpt the King about the gorget, and hung yoon him with the weight of his massic body, in hope to cast him to the earth;

but the King, fitting vpright, without any bending, put spurres to his lusty horse, and lifted the Count

io hanging about his necke, quite from his Saddle, carrying him away, till hee had forceably shooke

him off to the ground, who recouering himselfe, & comming to redeeme his diffrace, had such enter-

tainement, as hee was contented to yeeld. In our

effeminate and degenerous age, to omit such an architement of a King of England in his owne per-

fon had beene hainous and piaculum. Thus his re-

nowne encreasing with his progresse, hee had mag-

nificent entertainement in France, of Philip the king,

to whom (vpon condition to have such tetritories reftored, as were promifed to his Father King Hen ie when he fold Normandie to the French) hee did homage for fuch Signiories, as he held of the Crown of France.

(8) And as well to shew his owne moderation & princely temperance, (a vertue which makes every man a King in himselfe, and Kings like to Gods) as also his reverence to the Crowne of France, whose Homager hee was for his transmarine Dominions, Gualeo de Biern, a valiant man of Armes, being in actuall rebellion against K. Edward in his Dutchie of Gascoigne, was admitted to appeale for triall of his pretended causes to the French King, as the superior Lord. Many of King Edwards friends and Counsellours were vtterly aduerse to this fauour; aswell because the said Guafee had drawne the King to no small charge, and labour, as also for that now he was brought by strait fiege to fuch extremities as that hee could no longer hold out, and himfelfe, having all that while put his confidence in walles of stone; and the weapons point; there was also little reason to allow him an ordinary civill triall of his pretexts for taking arms; and many perhaps, both thought the example preiudicious to King Edward and his Successors, by giuing way to fuch appeales, and distrusted the instice of the French Court: Contrary to all which, the king decreed, and it was fortunate with him; for Gualed (not long after) was condemned in France, and fent with * an halter about his necke, to proftrate him-felfe to instice, or mercy at King Edwards feete in England, who pardoned him the forfeiture of life, & let 15s. Walf.
(when hee had for certaine yeeres kept him prifoner at Winchester) fet him at liberty, and fent him ced backe to his own, who remained for euer after gratefully firme and loyall.

(9) King Edward (his transmarine affaires thus being fetled) arrived in England, where hee was after fo long defirings most toy fully welcome, and there, in the Church of westminster (the magnificent newwork of his deceased Father, who had with great cost, and after aboue fifty yeeres spent therein, almost fini-shed the same) he and his dearest Elenor were annointed and crowned by * Robert Kylmarby Archbishop of Canterbury. There were present at this solem-nity Queen Elenor the Kings mother, * Alexander htty Queen Exerce the Enings mounter, and the strength of Sects, the Duke of Britaine, with multitudes of Peeres and others: where (as * one faith) for the more royall celebration of this great feaft, and honor wides size. of fo martialia King, there were fine hundreth great Horses let loose, every one to take them for his own, who could

(10) The finall abolishment of succession of the Welfb bloud in the Principality, or chiefedom of Wales now enfued: but yet (as great matters vie) not first without some time, and certaine degrees. The originall was this; King Edward having sent for Lewelin Prince of Wales to his Coronation, there to doe him homage; he, excusing the same, was againe (for that cause) admonished to repaire to the Kings

Parliament at Westminster: whither likewise he for-bare to come, pretending it wasdanger to his perfon, but * directing his excuse to the Archbishops of Canterburie and Yorke, and their Suffragans, profeffed his readineffe, if it would pleafe the King ther to fend a Commission for taking his Oath and fealty, (who bare him a deepe displeasure, euer * fince his history of walts.

Lewelin had put him, being then but Earle of Chester, walts. to the worle) or else, to appoint some indifferent place, or give to him for hoftages the *Kings forme, and Robert
Earle of Glacefler, with Robert Burnel the Kings Chancellour. But King Edward differabling the arrogancic of the demand for the present, went forward in Theftseure of

his Parliament, where the first Statutes, called of Mortmain Wellminster, and among them the Statute of Mort-

ther alfo; wherefore the King, refoluing (for deniall

main were enacted. But after the Parliament, the King repaired to his City of Chefter, being very neere to Wales, and Lewelin foreflowed his comming thi-

The VV alfing.

Hell Bost.

Da.Powel p-331

544	Edward.I. THE SVC		ESSION	OF	Monarch	47.	Book.9
	of homage) to feize vpon the whole Fee of the faid	1	to gaine the We	//-Nation	rather by his large	Te,then	1
	Prince, marcht with an Armie into Wales; his good fortune there was accidentally augmeted by a prize	1	puillance, hau	ing to hone	urably vscd Lewel	in, hee	
	which foure shippes of Bristol tooke about the Isles		could not yetr	etain their	hearts; for whether	it were	t D. B
	of Sillie, wherein the daughter of Simon Montfori		(which * lome,	to amoue	the note of ingratit	tude, &	* Da Pow.p. 33
	late Earle of Leicelter (who, according to a fector	- 1	parriality (Gd	n tnem, ar	firme) for that the	ere was	1
	contract betweene their friends, went to be given in		of inflice your	ha March	lißofficers in diftri es,or(which feems	bution	1
	indicage to Legreum and Americke her brother were	• •	as likely) for the	at they allo	red in vaine to their	to lome	.1
	lurprised, but thee found honourable viage of the		liberty(being mil	rably Ceduc	ed with certaine bl	ind ove	
	Aing ner neere kiniman.	1	phelies) the W	elle beton	ke themselues af	na pro-	Poly Perg. 1. 1
A.D. 1278.	(11) Meanewhile, Lewelines affaires, by the man-		Armes: for D.	und himle	lte, whom the Kin	nor had	11
Alias Camurcys	1 1000 and diligence of Pain de Canulae and others	1	laden with lo m	any benef	ftes and graces, bec	amero	
	who had take Welt-Wales in, & broght it to the Kings		them a princip	ill leader, a	and to give them fo	ıll affn.	.]
	peace, untuing but poorely, and the laide Prince	1	rance of his fai	tneife to th	eir cauté(reconcilie	10 him-	1
Toward in Tale	feeling the foundations of his fafetie beginning ma-	1	leite to his brot	ter the Pri	ace) he fodainely an	ıd trea.	1
Languet.in Epit. hr.ex The.			cneroully vpon	Palmc-Su	inday feifed the Ca	aftle of	1
Faifing. Hift.Angl.L.17.	for peace, and had it vpon fuch termes, which in		- Hawardm, lu	priling Ro	ger de Clifford, a n	oble &	
HIJE. ANG 12. 17.	likely-hood were not(as * Polydor Virgil would have	1	famous Knight	. whom th	e King had difpare	hed in.	100.77 0.70
	it feeme) granted by King Edward, less he should leese his cost, and care, by warring against bogs and mountaines. In the conditions of Peace (which was procu-	1	to those parts, a	s iuiticiar	of all Wales . and	flaving	1
	teiner In the conditions of Deserviting against bogs and moun-		luch vnarmed n	ien as offe	red to relift that via	alence	1
Fabian.	red * with great difficultively and an advantage of		whence marchi	ig, hee laid	fiege together wi	ith the	1
	red * with great difficulty) the most remarkeable (as carrying the shew of a farre greater riches in the		Prince his broth	er, to the	Caltle of * Rodolan	, doing	* Ruthlan.Dr.
	possession of the wells, even at that time, then some		many outrages,	and killing	g all fuch as they	could	Pow pag.337.
David Peorl.	prejudicated can easily beleeue) were these. r. That		had token st	as it is laid) whose ransomes	*they	apud Da, Powel
	the Prince flould pay to the King for his peace and	1	King Edman 10	gn againít.	Lewelins mind, And	while	E ag.339.
eg.334.& 534. Them.Walfing. Edw.t.andin	goodwill, fifty thousand pounds sterling, the *pay-	1	and afternoon	Gradel	er at the Vifes in W	sttfbire,	1
ud, Xult.	ment whereof, should bee in the Kinges will and	1	lined in the N	unca the C	Queene his mothe	r, who	1
	grace; that is (as wee conceine it) how much thereof	1	diners Carrein	mericat A	mbresberie, the welf	vnder	I
	the Prince should pay or not pay, and when 2. That		* frenorher and	Cables :-	ten fundry of the diuers parts. Th	Kings	1
	the faid Prince should have the Isle of Anglesey in		extant the * Co	vies of som	diders parts. In	cre are	*The Walfing.
	Fee-farme of the King, to him, and to the lawfull if-	1	to John Archbil	nonne of	aine grieuances,ext anterbury by the W	nibirea	* Da.Par.p. 336
r in Gersume,	fue of his body in generall taile, for fine thousand	1	fuch time as of	his owne a	ccord (to fay the fa	eyo, at	l
ome vie the	Marks readic money, for * erellom or a fine in hand	1	nies) hee inter	no fed him	folfo (mist out at	Id Co-	
rd.	paid, & the yearly rent of a thouland Marks. The reft	1	leane) to ferrie	heir anies	felfe (without the which Articles in	Lings	1
	of the articles (being about eight,) amounted to fo		(for the answere	softhe En	glish are not set de	imew,	
	much as a plain Conquest, or dissolution of the Prin-		containe indeed	fundry or	eat abuses but th	owne)	i
	cipality of wates, after Lewelins death, who was to en-		of Wales had no	w inuolned	them all in a defo	derina	
	toy the same, during his time upon conditions.						
	(12) Now whereas the faid Lewelin had three		the Archbilhop	oe hadi trar	edled in perfor •	o the	
	Brethren, Danid (whom King Edward fauoured) Ow-						* The Walling
	en, and Rodericke, it was enjoyined to him at this		ned without any	Conclui	On made, "commit	no vn-	* Antiq Brit,in
	conclusion (made by the Lord Robert Tiptoft, and		to Oxford, hee th	cre fenz ou	t the lightnings of	* ev-	* The Walfing, * Anniq. Brit, in vit. 10b. Peckam * Polyd. Verg. 1.17
Da. Pow. p 33@	certaine other * Commissioners, vpon eyther side		communication	against hir	n and his feduced	adhe-	Lights organis
	appointed) that hee should appeale and satisfic his		rents: vveetay	educed, be	cause they did cani	itulate	
	faid Brethren: but because Danid was afterward a	1	in luch lort, as i	they had	beene able to make	their	
	principall Actor in the calamities which fell vpon		party good.				
	himselfe, his house, and his Country, we must not		(14) Burtho	igh the old	Brittifb Principalis	ty was	A.D. 1283
bassalf.	neglect to speake somwhat particularly of him. This		now to expire, vo	tit mult b	ee confessed that a	· Fame	21.10. 1203
	Gentleman for some causes, * flying into England		esen had an end vi	worthy o	his bloud, being	rather	
1	from his Brother Lewelin, for his faithfull feruice		vnrortunately ila	ine, then	Otherwife, fo on 1	he o-	
	to the State of England, was there honoured (con- trary to the manner of his Nation) with the order		ther lide the lam	e hapned n	ot without reueno	e:for	
	of Knighthand and received also, by the bearing		arone encounter	in open h	eld. Gilbert Farles	of Gla	
	of Knighthood, and received also, by the bounty of King Edward, for his maintenance, the Castle of	- 1	free lost william V	<i>uence</i> (a voi	nger Colen of the k	Cinnel !	
	Denbigh, with lands to the yearly value of one thou-	- 1					
	fand pounds, and the Daughter of the Earle of Der-	- [hodies dead and	ano, many	of the welfh left	their	
i	by (being then a Widow) to wife : with all which haun-	- 1	rytothe Fnelift	bue the	together with the	victo-	
. 1	ty, the King did but entertaine a reuealer of his fecrets,	- 1					
bien.in Kd.1.	as fome (not improbably) doe affirme. The Stare !				fe, may not bee for		
. 1279.	of Wales thus composed, and the Castle of " Abe-		Audeler and the	Tord Page	will * Lord Willia	ım de	"The Walfing.
Pow.p. 226.	ristwith (which seemes to bee the same, that by *an-		got foureteene F	niianee fra	Clifford the yonge m the English Arm	r,and	"The Walfing. King Edward repulied by the
. VVaij.	other is faid to have beene built in West-Wales at La.	ı	Edward being ent	orced to	nter into the Cast	uc,K.	Welsh,
1.	pader Vaur) being built by King Edward for affuring	- 1	Hope for his fafer	v. The	things, though not	ac of	
	those parts, the King (as he was munificent, and roi-		temptible, bur ra	ther ceresi	ne deceirfull fauou	con-	
1	all) the more to tie Lewelins faith, gaue vnto him						
1	the Lady, of whole furpriseat Seawe have mentio-	- 1	conid not abuoid	the cause.	For first the Prince	re ha. I	
- 1	ned, to be his confort, honouring the Nuptials with						
1	his owne preience, and his Queens. And whereas	J	tome rew otners	from his	Army, which then	a wae !	
	Alexander King of Scots came about the same season	- 1	in the land of Bue	th, was fer	vpon by two prin	cinal!	
1	into England to treat with Edward concerning im-		Gentlemen, Tohn	Giffard. a	nd Edmund de A	farta	
1	portant affaires, and had formerly lent to the Wellb		mar, with their Fo	rces,and th	tere by the band or	fone	
- 1	warres, certaine aides of the Scots, the faid Alexander		*Adam Francton	was runne	through with an I-	lorfe.	
	being icalous (on his Countries behalfe) that those		mans staffe, who	at the first	being vnknowne,	had	* Deu, Pow.p. 374.
rift ables	aides might bee interpreted, to have beene fent		his head strucker	afterward	off, and prefent	ed to	
efted not to	vpon duty, obtained letters teltimonial from King	1	King <i>Edward</i> , a	t whole o	ommandement in	wae	
ient of duty	Edward, declaring that they were not fent of duty, or in	- 1	*crowned with I	ie,and fer	vp for a certain tim	CVP	"The Walfing.
ue.	respect of service due.	- 1	on the Tower of .	Condon.		- 1	
.1282.	(13) Though King Edward were thus defirous	- 1	(15) This (fair	h the *Hi	ftory of <i>wales</i>) was	s the	
		- 1			, , 114.	end	* Pag 374

bap.10	Edward I. ENGLANDS M	ONARCHS. Monarch 47.	545
10	end of Lewelin, betrayed by the men of Buelth, who	S.Salomon Rochester, chiefe Iustice of Assics, 4000. M.	
- 1	was the last Prince of Britaines bloud: and with him	S.Richard Boyland, 4000.Marks.	
	(whom one Versifier calleth the Captaine, the praise,	S.Thomas Sodentone, 2000. Marks.	
he.W.djing.	the law, and light of Nations, and another defaceth	S.Walter de Hopton, 2 000. Marks.	
1.	with as many ignominious attributes) the liberty of that people did also die. For it was not long but	S.William Saham, Iuslice, 3000, Marks.	
1	that people did also die. For it was not long but	Robert Littelburie, Clerk, 1 000. Marks,	
-	that King Edward subdued in a manner all Wales, &	Roger Leicester Clerk, 1000. Marks.	
	reserving to himselfe the Coast-Towns & strengths	Adam de Stratton (beside other riches incredible)	
{:	toward the Sea, diffributed the In-land Countries	32000. Markes. But with one Sir Thomas Weyland	
ambden in	to the Lordshis followers: therein prudently fol-	the Kings * chiefe Iustice, (being found belike most	* Stowin Edwa.
omites.Flist.	lowing the counsell of Augustus, who thus under pre- tence of defence for the Prouinces, had the brideling of all	false)he dealt farre more sternely, for he not only sei-	
- 1	tence of defence for the Provinces, had the brideling of all	fed vpon all his moueable goods and Iewels (which	,
- 1.	their forces at his pleasure. Neuerthelesse the whole	he had done to others) but also vpon his immouea-	i
1	flame was not as yet extinguished, for David the	ble, and banisht him moreouer out of the Kingdome.	1
An.D. 1284.	Princes Brother, and * chiefelt-tirebrand in this fa-	At which time the King constrained all his Instices	1
Polych.1.7.6.38.	tall combustion, was at large: who being taken &	to fweare, that from thenceforth they would take no	1
- 1	brought to King Edward at the Castle of Ruthlan,	pension fee or gift of any man, except only a break- fast, or the like present. O divine and fill necessary se-	t
- 1	could not obtaine admission to his sight or speech,	fast, or the like present. O dinine and fill necessary fe-	
1	but was amanded, and fent Prifoner to Shrewsburie.	" uerity onely able to breake the pernicious combination of	t
- 1	Thither the King, having fetled the State of Wales,	men that under the profession of law & offices of Iustice	1
1	repairing to a Parliament which he had fummoned,	" make merchandize of honor inflice law and conscience,	Į.
	there to bee kept after Michaelmas, caused Danid (ha-	" which cannot in the end but bring forth ruine, and con-	
The Walfing.	uing first had a Legall triall . before certaine Iusti-	" fusion,	
IA.D.	ciars for that cause appointed) to bee severely put	(18) That tempest now, which * Thomas Ersiston,	Scottifh affairt
Result Ceffe in	to death, by * hanging, heading and quartering,	a Scottifb Rimer, is faid to have obscurely propheci-	Helt.Bostrant.
Polych.l.7.	whose head was set vp at London, and his quarters	cd, alluding to the troubles of Scotland by reason of	49.13.
1	in foure other principall Cities of England, to the	King Alexanders death; hapned about these times;	1
	terrour of all ingratefull and difloyall persons. The	which raifed so great, and bloody contentions, that it	1
- 1	Wellb line thus thrust from the Principality, King	had almost blowne vp the regalitie of that king-	1
1	Edward vpon Saint Marks day had a sonne borne	dome by the very rootes. For when, by the violent	l
1	vnto him in Wales at Caernarum, who also was called	fall from his horle, King Alexander had most vnfor-	1
	Edward, and raigned after him; and that with the	tunately loft his life, that Realme was wofully defti-	1
n.D. 120).	birth of a new Lord, the welf b might bee inured to	tute of any apparent heire, fundry persons stading in	1
1	new lawes, the King established (by example of K.)	competition for the fame. These things were thought	1
	Iohn his Grandfather in Ireland) the English lawes	to be foreshewed from heaven by many * fearefull	
	and offices among them.	presages, as extraordinary Mercors, Flouds, Fires,	*Hell.Bo. Gb.1
	(16) But the King that hee might not seeme for-	and Pestilence. But King Edward intending to	1
	getfull of his French affaires, repayred into France,	fway that affaire, and being upon his way toward the	i
A.D. 1287.	where hee obtained fundry fauours, though they	borders, the death of his royall confort, and Queene,	1
	continued not long, and fate in person there with	which he lamented while himselfe did live, called him	A.D. 129
	the French King in his Parliament at the City of	backe to the celebration of her funerals : as her ex-	
	Paris, as a Lord or Peerc of that Realme, in respect	cellent virtues did well deserue. To our Nation shee	
A.Do.1289.	of such lands as hee had in those parts. Nor may	was a louing mother, & (faith * one) the Column, and	" Walking.
	here bee forgotten an Act of fingular monificence,	pillar(as it were) of the whole Realme. In her ho- nour the King her husband (who loued her about	1
The VV alfing.	and charity in this renowned King, for the redemp-	nour the King her husband (who loued her about	
	tion of Charles Prince of Achaia, sonne and Heire of	al worldly Creaturs) caused those many famous *tro-	
	Charles King of Sicilia, who had some yeers before	pheis, or croffes to be erected, wherefoeuer her noble	*As Charing Croffs, and at W tham, S. Alba
	beene taken in a battell at Sca before Naples, by	coarse did rest, as it was conveyed from Lin- colnesbire to buriall in westminster. Nor coulde	tham, S. Alba
	the Gallies of Sicilia, fighting on the behalfe of	colneshire to buriall in westminster. Nor coulde	Dunytapic, Co.
	the King of Arragon: for whose speedier enlarge-	any thing, but the respect to other weighty matters,	.]
	ment, K. Edward disburfed thirty thousand pounds	now presently in hand, with-holde our pen from	.1
	sterling, and gaue his owne Knights in hostage, till	paying to her memory a farre more copious com-	
	Charles had fent in his two fonnes , Robert and Lew-	mendation.	A. D. 129
Pol. Perg. 1.17.	is, as pledges to Alfonse king of Arragon: which done,	.(19) Those mourning offices as mournfully per-	
-	King Edward returned into Gascoigne, and there	formed, the King repaires into Northumberland, whi-	
	tooke vpon him the Croffe, in full purpose to finish	ther the greatest, and sagest persons of the Scottish na	-
	the journey which once he had vndertaken, and had	tion being come, *themselves having sought to him.	Hell.Bee. li.
	in part performed against the Sarazens.	Edward makes claime to the superiority of Scotland	
	(17) In the meane time, to purge England (whi-	and requires that the Competitors would quietlie	
King Edward	ther hee was now returned) from such corruptions,	affent to his award, alleaging that the Crowne of	f
confilcates the	and oppressions, as vnder which it grouned, and not	that Realme was held of him: for more credit to	>
lewes, and fines his Infliciars,	neglecting therein his particular gaine, hee banished	which affertion he youched fundry books and acts	. x seeder en
An. 1290.	the Iewes out of the Realme, conficating all their	whereunto the Scots replied, * That they were igno rant, that any such superiority belonged to the King of	- VVillet Mal
nu. 1290.	goods, leaving them nothing but money to beare	rant, that am such superiority belonged to the King of	Ro. Hoved &c
	their charges. And whereas they by their cruelly-		
	furies had one way caten his people to the bones, &	without a King the head, upon whom it lay to heare fuch a	in Edward,1.
	his Iufticiars (like another kind of Iewes) had ruined	without a King the head, upon whom it lay to hear e such a demunciation, and protested, that other answere they ough	1
	them with delayes in their fuites, and enriched them-	not as then to give, in regard of their Oath, which after	. [
	felues with wicked corruptions, hee (like a father of	the death of Alexander their King they had made one to	'
An honourable	hie Country) out all these from their offices who were	the other and the same to keepe under paine of excommu-	-1
way to enrich a	his Country) put all these from their offices who were found guilty (and they were *almost all) and punished	nication. Whereupon the King deliuered to them	1
King. * Ibe. Walfing.	them otherwise in a grieuous manner, being fust in open	his letters Patents, in which he acknowledged, that	: .
	Parliament connicted. The particulars whereof, by	the comming of those Scots, on this fide the water of	ft
	reason of the most instand commendable example,	Twede, should not be at any other time vrged to pre-	.1
Iohn Stew ex	we will not thinke needlesse (the order of naming	indice them, for comming againe into England: that	
Adam, Merim. Chron Dung. &c.	we will not thinke needlene (the order or naming	is, That their example should not so be drawne to an argu-	.1
	them only changed) to recapitulate here. Sir Ralph	ment of King Edwards right over them, as if they were to	. [
	Hengham, Chief Iustice of the higher Bench, 7000 marks.	come againe upon dutie ; so prudentlie ie alous were these	
	Sir Iohn Louetot, Iustice of the lower Bench, 3000 marks	Patriots of their Countries liberty.	١,
i	Sir William Brompton Iuflice, 6000. markes.		

540		ESSION OF Monarch 47. Book 5
	(20) The names of the Competitors were these, ac-	whole Vinedom Ca L L
		(24) Meanetime the French King pursued there-
į	peared by his Attorneys; Florence, Earle of Holland:	nenge of the Marmone dames 1
1		
1	of Galway; John de Hastings, Lord of Abergenenny;	
	Jehn Comin, Lord of Badenam; Patrick de Dunbar,	
The Walfing Havel High Polychilder,	Earle of March; I ohn de Vesci, on his Fathers behalfe, Nitholas de Sules; william de Rosse. These all peacea-	
Phijcht.lib.7.	b'y submitted themselues, for so much as concerned	white he discourred either his vitallingnes to an
	their fenerall titles to the Scott fo Crowne, to the final a-	
1	Ward and arbitration of King Famera patting thereof	
7	an authorities intrument vato him; who having gi-	his possession of Galeoigne, to the great milcheife, and
	den clution to reffore the realme of Seatland Twithin	difaduantage of the English: whereupon K. Edward highly incenfed, called a Parliament at London, where
}	a certaine prefixed time,)to that party to whom the	
Bellendens		
translaf Hell		
tranfl.of Hell Bot.l.b.14	on, or (fay the writers of that nation) they giving him	
	power to confirmine the parties to fland to this fen-	
	neffe, being so diversly related and centured by the	
	writers of both nations, (though for the present it be not material, both Kingdoms now blessedly acknow-	
	Reps of truth in a middle way genefalities at the	
	fteps of truth in a middle way, as refoluing neither to impeach the action of that glorious vmpier, nor pre-	
	indicate the right of our noble fifter nation. The State	
* Hell, Bot. lib	Or a cottand now was not without manifest perill. for	
estimate. W	the seas denying that their Kingdome was in ania	
	Point tubalter he to the Crowne of England and King	
	Eawara citner periwaded that it was for or refolution	his homage to aid him with all his powers against
	and plotting now to make it io, would not needed	
So Beniface o	the advantage of this * Ake; halifis or want of a known	and traueries) the faid confpiracie. Whereupon he aduanced forward against the Sec. Whereupon he
king Edward.	nead in Scotland.	armie to News flavon Tour The Coll a pullant
	(21) Vpon full ventilation therefore and fcan-	armie to Newcastle vpon Tyne: The first blood which
	ming or all rights, the maine doubt refled whom I and I	was drawne was of the English, of whom, the Scots * flew almost one thousand in a village under the sea-
		ding of one Robert de Res who had flad for The Welf.
	affect the nonour of having pretended title in blood	
	leither of them. Great was the adule and delibera	
	tion (as mere was caple) which King Fameratooks	the first bodies after a displeasing, (as was faid) for that
	therein, tor not truiting to his owne judgement, hee	
Hell.Boc.lib.t	4. Caunca (laith : Hector Boetsus) twelve of the belt	
	Clerks or learned men of Scotland, and twelve of	
	England to concurre as Affeffors with him in that	
A.D. 129	great decision.	
	ment , there fell our deadlie strife betweene the Eng-	
	lift and Normans, occasioned by one of them casually	
	flaine by the English; which mischiefe the King of France forwardly nourisht, as thirsting for the dutchy	
	of Galegiane, which hold has might establish the dutchy	
	of Gasesigne, which best he might attain by troubling the forreine affaires of King Edward, whom they saw	English Marriners, who rashly entring, with twentie
	now entangled at home in fo weighty emploiments.	and foure Ships into the harbour, were repelled
	I W nercupon the Normans flew fundry of the Fundal	with the loffe of foure of their veffels, which was
	and nong vp one vpon the maft of a Shippe whom	whomas it of the forceable taking of Berwick,
famous Sea- Borie of the	they had taken at Sea: but, ere long after, threefcore	where Helfor Bottus faith, there was exercised great
glifh againft	English thips encountring with two hundreth faile of	
Normans		
b·m. Walfingle. h 1500,	tel (wherein many * thoulands of the French word)	
1300	flaine)tooke, with their whole fleete, their full re-	er, from whence they leueld, at the entring of the
	denge, and prought them into England.	ly flew Richard of Community one of which calual-
ell Boedb.14.	(23) At last yet King Eaward returning to Reval	ly flew Richard of Cornewal, a gallant Gentleman bro-
		ther to the Earle of Cornwal, which, in an army hea-
dwardi litere Popum anud		fed with former contumelies, for the Scots vpon the
Papam apad VValjagh	good will and allent of the Scottill I ords, gane for	
eement et-		English marriners, published certainerimes in deri-
by king Ed.	the elder daughter of Dauid, Earle of Huntington a	
-	yonger tonne of Scotland; whole iffue the line of the	
	elder brother being extinct) was to inherite, without	Towne wome Derwicke, all our unthancks ? (5.6.)
	denisor the laid Danid, of which the Lord Robert	together with the remembrance of many fresh
		the Towne was thus taken to Cook officers. After
4-cap,1.	were produced, which drew many mens indoements	
		Captainerherof was descined - : C
	Growne. But according to the fentence, Balolwas folemnly crowned King of Scotland vpon S. Andrews	captaine therof, was detained prifoner, and (as* fome *Fab.
D. 1294.	folemnly crowned King of Scotland vpon S. Andrews	write) Sir Robert Bruce : others were suffered to de-
		against the King of Tandard Tom thenceforth
П.Вост. П БЬ.14.		against the King of England. The loss of this important Towne, and Castle was very great, for it was the key, and common Rulworks of south, for it was
	minds of many Seots) did homage vnto him for the	the key, and common Bulwarke of Scotland.
3.		

Edward I. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 47. bap.10 (27) While the English, at this place, were busie, might not passe toward Stotland, upon paine of life: tocast a very deepe ditch, to hinder the sodeine in-The cultody of Scotland was committed to John de roades of their enemies, John King of Scotland fent Warrenn, Earle of Surrey and Suffex, and the Trea-The Walf. two religious men to the King of England with *letfurershippe thereof to Hugh de Cressingham, but William ters; in which, alledging that he was by Oath bound to de Ormesby was ordained Justiciar, with this particudefend his owne kingdome, and people, he renounced his ho-mage, and fealtie, as extorted by violence, and void in st lar commandement, that hee should take the homages and fealties of all fuch as held lands of the King. Telfe, being made without affent of the three estates of his And the more to thew his purpote, veterly to dil-Realme. The refignation was admitted, King Edward folue the diftinct Regality of Scotland, and to vinite commanding his Chancellor to record the same for it to the English Monarchie, as hee had done Wales, perpetuall memorie, as a justification of his procee hee tooke out of Edinbrough the Crowne, Scepter and Cloath of Effate, offering them vp at * Saint Edwards + Febian. (28) The Scots hereupon, ander the conduct of thrine in Westminster, if the Author mistake not, for the Earles of Burquhan, Menteth, Strathern, Ros, A-thol, Marr, and other of their nobility, made an incurat Saint Thomas at Canterbury, * hee offered up Ba-liols Crowne faith another; and (besides many other fion into England, whence with the spoiles of two re-Acts rending to the abolishment of the Scottish ligious houses, and other booties they returned : But Name, which * Hellor relates, as the burning their Patritk Earle of Dunbarre came to King Edward fub-Records, abrogating their lawes, altering their forms of divine feruice, and transplanting all their learnedst men Bellind tranf. mitting himselfe; and the Castle of Dunbarre (by this fübmittion being vnder King Edwards protection) thence unto his Vniversity of Oxford,) hee tooke out was regained by Scots: For recouerie, or furregaining of the * Abbey of scene the Marble Chaire, in "The TVIS. whereof; the King fent Iohn Earle of Surrey, and Sufwhich the Kings of seatland were wont to bee crow- Santage 14 fex, and William Earle of warwick, who were entertained, and fent the same to Westminster; for Priests to such the was a sit therein at Celebration. This Chaire is the same stone inclosed hed with battel by the Scottish nation, of whom the English, *after crucil fight, obtained a victory of great "Tho, Weifingh. Heff. to:l.14. Fabian. vpon which was engranen, the famous Propheticall within a worders importance, the chase holding about eight miles, in which the flaughter was not imail. The fiege of Ni fallat fatum, Scott quocunque locatum Dunbarre being reinforced, King Edward had it yeel-Inucnient lapidem, regnare tenenturibidem, ded vnto him, at his comming, wherein were taken three Earles, fixe or feuen Barons, besides many If Fates goeright, where ere this stone is pight. knights, and Efquires, which were all fent prisoners to The Regall race of Scots shall rule that place. diverse Castles of England, and (if some say true) not put to the fword (as Helfor transported perhaps with Which by whomfoeuer it was written, we who now hatred to Edward writes) contrary to his word, and liue, finde it happily accomplished. But these great Acts of this yeere brought to the Commons of (29) King Edward knowing as well how to vie a England final! commodity, vpon whom the charge victorie, as to get it, hatting a prefent spirit vpon all of the warres lay heavily, and it is not often found, aduantages, and turnes of fortune; takes the Castle that the people gaine much by their Princes Conquests. of Rocksbrough, and (for a finall end to this affaire) marcheth to Edenburgh it felfe (the chiefe Towne of (32) The force of Scotland with a greater force being thus for the present broken, who would suppose, that it could once again haue lifted up the head. Scotland) which * was shortly rendred : Then tooke Telyd. Fire 180-7 they Strineling allo, and drane Ballol to the Caffle of The VP alime Forfar where 16hn Comin Lord of Strabogie submitted and that chiefly by the particular vertue of a private man as it after hapned? which hee had the more oporhead. Socials, 14. himselfe to King Edward. About this time there came to the English campe great numbers of Welsh tunity to doc, for that the King of Fneland was diuerfly discreed by occasion of waters in Gascoiene Welsh aid against fouldiers, with whom he releeved many of the Engfor recourry of his owne, and for aid of his friends Stell and against lith footemen, tyred with fernice, fending them backe in Flanders, whom the French did afflict in hostile into England. Thither also came the Earles of Vifter manner. The Captaine of the revolted troupes in with bands of Irifh. Stotland, was one William Wallace (the fonne of * Sir *Bellenden (10) The King of England prospering thus, pas-feth with his army over the * Scottish Sea, where Andrew Wallace of Cragic Knight, though some * vp. warfl of Hest, on hearesay, write contemptibly of his course of life, * 7h. way. while he kept the feaft of Saint John Baptiff * at Perth as of a publike robber) who, by the assistance of such as were outlawed, for refusing to doe their Tolod Vers. libar (or Saint Iohns Towne) there came mellengers from Baliol, and the Lords his factors, to fue for mercy, homage to King Edward, draue William de Ormesby which was granted vpon condition, that they should "libas-(the Kings Justiciar) out of Scotland, Which King The FVAL render themselves to him as his subjects. * Hestor Bo-Edward hearing, discharged John Comin of Badenaw etim faith, that after this agreement (wherein * Anand the Earle of Bucquhan from their confinement, to the entent, that hee might by their endedours, the thonie Bishop of Durham was vsed) John Comin The Belief rebrought Baliol, void of all kingly habiluments with a whiterod in his hand, to the English campe at Monfooner fettle matters, but withall hee gaue Iohn de Warren Earle of Surrey commission to Icuie an Artras, where he refigned his whole right that he either my: and the king (loath to bee hindred from his other destinations) easily yeelded to such requests as had, or might have to the Crowne of Scotland, into king Edwards hands, and made thereof a formall Charter in French, and at the same time also (for seare were propounded on the Seets behalfe for that time. The voyage which hee had then in hand, wasto of life)gaue his sonne Edward for hostage, and affutranisport from Winchelses an Armie, to assist the Earle of Flanders his confederate. fance of his fealtie; by which final disclaime, the Lord (33) England at this time was not without great Bruces right might feeme now vnquestionable. But this refignation being thus made, king Edward rediscontentments, which Humphrey de Bohun Earle of Hereford and Esex Constable of England, and Roger turnes to Berwick, where * all the Nobles of Seotland (at a Parliament there holden) were fworne to be loy-Bigo: Earle of Norfolke, Marshall of England, did il, and true fubicets to king Edward for euer after : countenance; for prefent fatisfaction whereof, the kTbo.Walf. and * hereof a folemne instrument was sealed by the King yeelded (among other things) to confirme (aid Lords fof whom John Comin of Badenaw was first) Magna Charta, and Charta de Foresta, and that bearing date at Berwick in the twentie fifth yeere of there should no subsidie nor taxation bee leuted upon the reigne of their Soucreigne Lord King Edward. the people, without the confent of the Prelates, Peeres. (11) John the late King, was fent to the Tower of and people. But before this time, and while the London, and there was honourably attended, haumz King was absent out of the land, the Scots under the liberty for twenty miles about. The Scottish Lords leading of VVilliam VVallas, putto*flight, the Earle Tro. PVall. leading of V villam V v along, posses in the state of the New About the English Forces which were with him Took Veg. L.Y. were confined within Trent, ouer which River they

him,

on of their freedomes,) and flying before King Ed-ward, whose fortune in warre had worthily made him terrible; that day (in Walfinghams judgement) had beene irrecoverably fatall to the Scottift name, if the English had beene able to have followed them in their Armour, ouer their bogges and mountaines, or that the Welfs had with their naturall mimblenesse supplied the fame. Sure it is, that Edward held himselfe so fast in possession, that hee neither would grant the Seot. tifb Lords their Baliol to raigne over them, (which they requested faith walfingham) nor suffer them to redeeme such lands of theirs, as hee had given to the English among them.

(39) Armes failing, and the Scots having made their way in the Court of Rome, procured inhibito-

The Pose in

suthority for the reliefed Stelland.

The support of the state of the support of It is the faying of Heller Bothus, that the English were about three for one, our ancient and later authors fay that the Sedes had farre the * more people; he afena. • Per fanguisem firmes that it was in the plaine field, ours that it was uertheleffe the Scots, after a few dayes, requested the nrmes, that it was in the plaine new, ours that it was "an Ambulli; he that the Seots did put to flight, and "wife, "in tooke the froiles of three whole battels, in either of "Them. welfage King to let them line in peace till they had taken tooke the spoiles of three whole battels, in either of counsell of the Peeres, and of the King of France, which were *10000. English, ours, that the Stots by *Bellind insept. reason of their multitudes did onely ouerbeare the Hell Bos bis. threatning that otherwise the Pope would take the matter vpon him. But the King with a disdainefull Vauntgard from which the nearest of the other bat-"fmile answered . Have you done homage to mee (as to "she chiefe Lord of the Kingdome of Scotland) and move "she chiefe Lord of the Kingdome of Scotland) and move "suppose that I can be terrified with fwelling lies, as if "like one that had no power to compell) I would let the "right which I have overyon to lip out of my hands! Let tels was a foure miles off. All agree in this that the Lord Iohn Segrane (Ralfe Confrey laith Hettor) who had the point or voward of the English (whose Generall he alfo was) by dividing his army into three parts for their better reliefe, weakned to his whole "me heareno more of this for if I do I fwear by the Lord I will consume all Scotland from fea to fea On the o force, that thereby, and his vnaduised forwardnes (impatient to flay for his other powers) he gaue octher fide, the scots did boldly enough replie, That in this cause they would shed their bloud for defence of iucasion to the Scots of such a victory . They had also taken the person of the said Lord Generall, but Rice and their Countries liberty (40) About this time the King made his sonne Edward, (who was borne at Caernaruon) Prince of *Sir Rebert de Mesile, who with others was at divine feruice, hearing therof, came with his troups of horse rescued segrave, slew many, put many to flight, and Wales, and Earle of Chefter, which fo greatly contented the Wellb, because (in regard of his birth place) they held him as one of theirs, that when all friends brought away backe the rest of the prisoners, without the loffe of any one man of his owne, The faid 'The Police Scottish Chronicle makes no mention of William did afterward forfake him (as the following raigne Walleys, at this discomfiture of the English, but gives will shew) they alwayes stucke most loyally vnto him, expressing wonderfull lone and affection, and bewayling his heavy fortunes in wofull songs, which the whole glory thereof to Cumyn, and to Simon Frafor: whereas we attribute all to Walleys, and make no mention of the other, with farre leffe wrong to the neither the dread of his enemies por length of time could immortali deferts of Walleys; for he vindoubtedly, ener make them to *forget.

(41) But, in the matter of Scotland, the King not The Trailings. was the only man, who kept vp Scotland, till neere the to feeme altogether to negled the Court of Rome, adtime of deliverance. (44) The Scottifb Nation(as *Helfor reports) had dreffed thither the Earle of Lincolne, and the Lord for their warrant in conscience, and instification of resi-Hugh de Spenser with manifold complaints against the Seets, and instification of his owne proceedings; of or their warran in conjectnee, and injustication of reje-if ance, the Popes indgement, who upon ripe deliberation in their matter, decreed (faith he) that the Scots had inft action of battell in defence of their liberties against King how beit at the Popes request, he granted them truce from Hallowmas to Whit Soutide. This very yeere; Edward: who not much esteeming the doome of Caffan King of Tartars gloriously slew one hundreth that Oracle, ypon the other fide was perswaded hee thousand Turkes in a battell upon the plaine of Damasses, and was baptized therupon, as acknowledging the midray to some from the some of God the ioy wherof filled England, as other the partes of Christenmight proceed to subdue them wholy to his dominion: and therefore, (vpon report that the Seots were not only vp in Armes) but encouraged to greater attempts by this late successe,) came in person with a (42) The inflice of the English Armes against the dreadfull hoft, piercing therewith * through all Seatland, from one end thereof to the other ; from Rockf-Scots, being now againe directly impugned by the brough to Catnes, which is the farthest point in the length of that Land, being about three hundreth miles: whither he marched by small journeys, not an Papailletters, comprehending fundry arguments on rapalicters, comprenenting unitry arguments on the behalfe of that Nation, King Edward in a Par-liament at Lincolne published their contents, and by confent of the whole representative body of the enemie appearing with power to empeach him. For they, vnable to make head, being so continually wa-Realme, returned a copious defence of his whole proceedings, with protestation, first, that hee did not fled, did either for their safetie betake themselues to proceedings, with proteination, intri join the ara not exhibite anything as in forme of judgement, or triall of his caufe, but for fatification of its holy Eatherboods conference, and not otherwise. But whereas the Pope had required the King to stand to his decision for the woods, and Mountaines, with their Walleys, or wholly submitted themselves, * swearing to be true to king Edward there being in al Sestland but one Calland Carlot Control of Carlot Cont file(the Castle of Striveling) which stood out, and that also (vpon King Edwards returne from Catnes) was matter of claime, hee writes, that thereunto hee would make no answere, as having left that point to the Earles and Peeres of his land: who with one *absolutely furrendred to him; and therefore no great cause, why Becter should call King Edward false Tyrant for committing the Captaine and Garrison of that Castle to sindry Prisons: So that had not God in his eternall providence, savouring the liberty mind directly lignific, that their King was not to e mind directly ignine, that then King year not is a sufferer insidenteem for any right of the Cryms of wasfurer insidenteem for any right of the Cryms of wasfured before any rishmall wade Heasen: and that (by finding Departies or Attenue), et spaces an early to the foundation make the fail with doubtfull-because it may be full that the fail wasfured of the side Cryms, which with the before of God, they would refoundly and with at Action, and the Councer also, for that Somitation and wasfured that Action, and the Councer also, for that Somitation that when the deep at pome, by reaction of form cereat conof that people, ordeined some inacceffible places, and natural strengths, where no Armie could march nor be maintained, the Scots had in all liklihood perpetually vndergone the same fortune, which we the Englifh were brought into, for want of the like, by Willi-

Edward I. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 47.

Chap.10

3

much to doe at home, by reason of some great con-Ä.D. 1303 trougries between the French and him. Meane time troucries octween the French and man-meane time Sit tolm Segram, Lord Segrame, a renowned Sould-ter, was feat Gouernout or Cuffer into Sculard, with an Army, after the Truce expired, which at the French Kings inflance, King Edward had yeelded ynto for a time; tolm Cumin, who had also beene a Competitor for the Crown, was chosen by the Seets * for their Gouernour.

(43)We may not here overpasse a victory (at Rosse lin) which the Writers of that nation celebrate, where in the English were by them ouercome, howbeit there is in our Writers much variety in that relation. me the first, anonis Normans:

• (45) Thereforelet prophane discourses (with their

• Father Epicurus and Lucretius) shall and tremble, as of
• ten as they shall dare to instinuate any thing against

• Gods wisdome in the Fabrick of the world, as if the · Craggy, and defert places, thereof, had no we in nature when omitting all other reasons of their being) the con

The VV alleg

Mat. Perkl

349

Them. VVal

* Pol. Virg. lib. 17

fernation of kingdomes, and nations was thus by them effected. We had an " Herward in the Conquerours time, aswell as the Scots had a Walleys in this ; and we

am the first , and his Normans :

reme, surveu so no construct or surjoin the state of the survey of the hourse have been without French within terms, if God had provided our Country of such Wastes, and deserts as either they or the Welshmen did enioy, who for manie hundreths of yeeres, after the ruine

548

A.D.1299

The Welf.

*Hell,Bott, L 14-

betweene the two Nations, in which more

Scottifb bloud was spilt then in this, for thereof * Sebaftian Amufer feemes to meane, faying, that there were flaine threefeore and ten thousand, which

though wee take not to bee the true number, (for

fome have * threescore thousand , * others not so

many) yet shewes it that the slaughter was vast, as it

eould not otherwife bee, the Scottill footmen va-

liantly * fighting as it were to the last man. Bloud

worthy to have beene shed on both sides, against another 'kind of enemy, them Christians, the deformits of which
effulious may iusth represent to us the blessed estate of
our nowsetted union. This victory was obtained

Tpod. Neufir. Ren. Ceft. Po'yeb lit.7. *Fabian,&

Harding. "Po'yd,Ver.lib. 17.Hcl.Bost.l.

. Menfe Iunij di

*/ib.14. A.D.1305. After reigne, and fo farre as he wrote being till Hems

Thom. Walfingle.

550

their liberty, when the English had twice by Danes, and Normans, in the meane time, vtterly loft it. (46) Scotland (laith * Hector) being in this manner subdued and all the strengths of buildings; and the Nobility thereof at King Edwards disposition, he hauing ordered the affaires thereof as himfelfe thought best, left the custodie thereof agains to * Segraue, and in his triumphall returne through England from Dunfermelsn in Scotland where he kept his hi-Boot-halers, Incendiaries, and other perturbers of and otherwife, which brought to the Realme much

A.D. 1306.

*Militle. with the girdle of * Knight-hood) was brought vp Hell Roet *Helinfb.p.303.

*Bellind.tran.lib ple, the Scots had their spirits keptawake, and quicke wishing many the like in our owne.

(48) Let no man now make doubt to write vp one of the grea-test English Mo-narche. beene folong, and well acquainted; and to gratifie the same Edward the King of France also banished the Scots our of his dominions. Thus was King Edward po! feffed of Scotland; which neuertheleffe (that the world may fee Gods band in translating of Kingdomes, being a* point of his prerogative) was not long after plucke from his fo nne; and the calamities which the Scots had fuffered, whelmed backe vponthe Englift.

> (49) Wallace therefore being taken our of the way, the Lord Robert Bruce (betweene whom, and the vnfortunate Baliol the maine strife lay for the Diadem) beholding the state of his Countrey, for which Wallace, without interest to the Crowne therof, had stood so nobly, and desirous to gine it a new head by making himselfe King (whereto by Baliols surrender his other right was made more paffable) had for that purpose entered into a conspiracy with Cumyn, whose

disclosure thereof (as Seois doe write) brought into apparent danger the Lord Bruces life, who was then attendant in the Court of England. King Edward vpon the first discouery of the plot not crediting the fame, Bruce, most constantly denying it, and casting the accuration, with good probabilitie, vpon Cumyus enuic, had time, and warning to escape. For an Earle (faith Boetius) fent vnto him twelue Sriueling pence, and a paire of sharpe spurres, presently ypon his departure from the King, which he wittily interpreted to be a Symbole of foeedie flight. According whereunto he forthwith iped from London, where K. Edward kept Christmas, shooing his horses backward, that he might not be followed by their prints upon the fnow, and with his owne hand thrust his fword into Cumyn . in the Church of the Friers Alinors at Bunfreis in Scotland , whom two of Bruces friends Hill. Bum. with other mortail thrusts dispatched. Brace knowing now no way to answere the fact, but by open defection, which he did resolute vpon, did thereupon Brace of scaland. procure himselfe to be crowned King of Scotland about our Ladies day in March in the Abbey of An.D. 1307.

(50) Such an attempt as this could not be long hidden from King Edward, who having at the whit-Sontide nextafter honored Edward Prince of Wales, his eldest sonne, with the order of Knighthood at London , fent him against King Robers into Scotland, attended with a troupe of noble yong gentlemen, Aimerie de V alence Earle of Pembroke; Robert de Clif- Thom. VValf. ford, and Henry de Percie being gone before with an Armie, and King Edward preparing to come after, appointing the Rendenous of his owne hoft to be at Carleil. Where, in a Parliament, belides provisions A Parliamenta for the warres, fundry confultations and courses cartes were entred, for repelling another kind of enemic no leffe dangerous to the State, to wit, the Pope, and his*fill continued extortions in this Landwher eof greeuous complaints were made in that Assembly; and both Rens complaints were make in the Appenois; and both the Clergy there? a speaked from the Popes Bull, and his Cardinal-Legats exactions: and also the Kings Conneell Was drines to enact fome orders for brideling their excessiue depilations.

(51) Meane time Aymery de Valence at Perthin Scotland had pur to flight king Robert Bruce, & pursued him so neer, that he tooke his wife, his brother Rie gellus , and others, but himselfe escaped into the vtmost Iles of Scotland. This handell taken at the entrance to his Regalitie, draue his people into such despaire of his future better fortunes, that there remained only two friends vnto him, the Earle of Lenox, and Gilbert Haysthe reft, as the Earle of Athol, at London, (who had twife revolted) and his brother Nigellus at Berwick, were put to death as al others his chiefe partakers were, or else kept prisoners in England. In which number was King Roberts wife (daughter to the Earle of Vifter in Ireland) and his daughter, the Bishops of Glasco, and Saint Andrewes, the Abbot of Scone and others. The Counteffe of Bucquhan, fifter to the Earle of Fife (then absent in England at his mannor of Whitwick in Leicestershire, whose office it was to have crowned the Scottish King) was also taken; and because (in her brothers absence) shee had stolne from the Earle her husband, with all his great horse, to *fet the Diadem vpon Bruces head, it was deuised that shee should be set in a woodden Cage (made * Crowne-wife) vpon the wals of Berwick Cafile, for all to wonder at. This ridiculous reuenge was held sufficient, without taking her life, though shee were a manlike woman, and did herein but the part of a noble spirited Lady. Thus was King Robers (faith the Scottiffs translatour of Boesius) brought to fuch milery , that hee was sometime naked and hungrie without meat, or drinke, faue only water and rost of the hard clause of the hards, and his life perpetually in danger. Howbeit, her muler for fooke himfelfs, but as one that had firme trusk in God, cherished an hope in his minde, at one time or other to recouer the Crowne. In which condition hee exhibited himselfe so noble a spectacle as in

* Holinfh.pag 314

Matwell.

care to prefer mies would make a fonne of the king.

*Peirs Gaueflett

among his laft

warnings.

land, and subdued all his enemies, for that none fhould becable to * ouercome him while his Skeleton marched with him. Moreover, hee com-"manded the faid Prince to loue his * Brethren "Thomas and Edmund; but specially to tender and "respect his mother Queene Margaret. * That wp-on paine of his malediction, and surse, hee should not es presume without common consent to repeale Piers de Gaueston, who for abusing the tender yeares of the Prince with wicked vanities, by common decree was banished. That whereas himselfe, by the conti-"nuall, and new attempts of Bruce, could not in person (according to his vow) make warre in the Holy-land, therefore hee should send his Heart thither, accompanied with feuenfcore Knights, and "their retinues, for whose support hee had proui-"ded thirty & two thousand pounds of siluer. That "his Hart being so by them convaied, he did hope in "God, that all things there would prosper with "them. Lastly, That upon pain of eternall damnati-on, the (aid money should not bee expended upon any o-

(55) With these admonitions dismissing the light young man from his prefence, to accomplish (fo pro-

uident was hee to the very end of his flate affaires) the mariage with the French Kings Daughter, which had beene formerly agreede voon between the Parents; hee aduanced neerer to the enemy vnto Burgh upon Sands, where his lingering Diffentery encreasing (for that was the sicknesse whereof hee died, though one maleuolently fayth, hee died fodainely, without thew of repentance for his finnes) hee tooke his * leave of this world, after no leffe preparation (no doubt) for his owne foules health, Venn then carefull premonition for the carriage of his sonne, and ordering of his Kingdome. Which puisfant Princes raigne and life, wee cannot here shut vp with a nobler Euloge, then that wherewith our Great and Iudicious Antiquary hath already deportrayed him , as a Prince of chiefe renowne, to whole heroicke mind God proportioned (as a most worthy man-sion) a body answerable, so that as well in beauty and goodly presence, as in wisdome and valour, hee was sutable to the height of his Regall Dignity, whose flourishing youth his Destinie did exercise with many warres and troubles of the State, so to frame and fitte him for the British Empire, which, being King, hee so managed with the glory of his Welsh and Northerne victories, that by due defert hee is to bee reputed a chiefe honour of Britan-

His Wines.

(56) Eleanor, the first wife of King Edward, was fifter to Alphonfus King of Castile, Daughter to King Ferdinando the third, and onlie Child of Ioan his second wife, Daughter and Heire of Iohn Earle of Ponthieu. Shee was married to him at Bures in Spaine in the thirty ninth veere of King Henry his Father, 1254, fhee was crowned with him the day of his Coronation, and living his wife (in lovely participation of all his troubles, and long voiages thirty fix yeeres, died at Herdeby in Lincolnsbire, Nouember 29. of her husbands raigne 19. An. Do. 1200. face is buried at Wellminster at the feet of King Henry the third, vnder a faire marble Tombe, adorned with her portraiture of Copper guilt;* other cost-ly monuments of her husbands loue being in euery place erected where her Hearse rested, as it was conueyed from Herdeby to Westminster.
(57) Margaret his second wise being sister of

Philio the fourth, furnamed the Faire, King of France, and eldest daughter of King Philip the Hardy, sonne of S. Lewis, was married voto him at Canterbury, on Thursday, September 8. of her husbands raigne 27.An.D. 1299, after almost eight yeeres marriage. furniting him, thee remained a widow ten yeers, and deceasing 10. of Edward 2. An.D. 1317. was buried at the Gray-Fryers in London before the Altar in the Quire which her selfe had built.

His Ifue.

(58) John the eldest sonne of King Edward and Queene Elenar was borne at Windfor in the raigne of King Henry his Grandfather, before his Fathers voyage into Syria, and in his absence, was commitvoyage into syria, and in insanience, was commit-red to the charge of Richard King of Romans, his great vncle, and others, who procured principall men of euery Hundred in each County within the Realme, to sweare their fealty to his father and him, but hee died shortly after, being a Child, & was buried at westminster by the wall, betweene S. Edmunds and S. Bennets Chappell, August 8.in the last yeere of King Henry his Grandfathers raigne; there is remaining ouer him a Tombe of Marble inlayed with his picture in an Arch ouer it.

(50) Henry the second sonne of King Edward and Queene Elenor, deceased also being a Child, the newes of whose death was brought to his Father. being then in the Isle of Sicill in his returne from the Holy-Land, not long before the report of his owne fathers death came to his knowledge: he was buried SIII

The.VV alfing, 26

* Daniel cap.2

The Lord Web. Bruce, purfues his right to the Crowner.

stmas, caused the Courts of the Bench, and Eschecquer, which had beene feuen yeere kept at Yorke (for the more commodity of his Scottish (xpeditions) to be reduced to London, their ancient relidence. Moreouer he ordained Iufitiars for Trailbafton, who were to inquire of man-flaughters , Ruffians, Diffeifors, the common quiet, and them to punish, by fine, death

rest, and to the King much riches. (47)But, the more to secure king Edward in the Scottish kingdome, it was not long, but that william Walleys (whom an Earle of Seotlana in the beginning of his reliftances had honoured (faith Walfingham)

prisoner to London, being treasonably taken at Glasco by *one Sir Iohn Menteth (though * Polydor Vergil faith the English tooke him in warre) where he had publike triall at Westminster, and * denying that he was a Traitour to the King of England, was there for other his crimes(as burning of Townes, taking of Castles, killing the English,&c.)adjudged to death,which sentence was executed vpon him, and his head and quarters let up in seuerall places ouer the Iland, his right eg at Perth or Saint Johns Towne in Scotland, and his left at Aberdein. This was the end of Wallace, whom his Countrey had once by common confent chosen for their defender, and *Captaine Generall, and, for his deferts towards her, doth place in glory faire aboue the starres, as the only person, by whose exam-

vpon all occasions, by which they might recouer the Gouernment out of the hands of the Engish, whose reigne ouer them this Wallace neither by faire meanes, nor by force could euer bee drawne to endure, or looke vpon with a patient eie; whom though Bellind.lib. 14.

(with Heltors * translatour) we doe not call a Martyr, yetmust wethinke his Countrey honoured in him,

King Edward among the greatest of our English Monarchs, for (belides the whole Ilands of Britaine and Ireland) heeallo held Aquitaine, which about two yeers before, the King of France (entangled with tronbles otherwise) did restore, and the City of Burdeaux of the owne accord submitted it selfe agains to the English Scepter, as that wherewith it had formerlie

Which peculiar art of diuine prouidence you will

mote easily acknowledge, when you shall behould by how naked an instrument he raised againe the Scottifb Common-wealth out of that dust, in which for a little season it seemed to lie buried.

Chap. 10

• Seneca lib.de

King Edward recals his Char-ters of libertie

An.Reg. 35

Braces fortune

& vlt.

which even the * morall Heathen doe teach, that the

Gods themselues took pleasure; how then can Chri-

ftians looke off? Certainly, all generous spirits, whom

cruell injuries oppresse, have reason to dwell in this

(52) King Edward also on the other side (like a

Christian Prince) as hee had some yeeres before, by

his speciall letters (directed to the * Archbishoppe of

Capterbury,) requested that publike prayers should bee

made to Almighty God for him, his Realme and people, that the heavenly Maiesty would direct his way and

workes to the glory of his holy name, and advancement of

the Kingdome; so now repayred hee with his Lords

to Westminster, after this discomfiture of his enemi-

es, there folemnly to render vnto God his humble

thanks for the Conquest, whereof hee thus held him-

felfeaffured. Which confidence drewhim on fo

farre, that now (his turns being ferued, as he thought

against the Scots) hee refused to stand to the con-

firmation which hee had made to his Barons, of fuch

lawes and liberties as haue before beene mentioned.

doubtleffc, as great was the Kings fault thus to re-

nounce what hee had folemnly fworne, (* though in

deed it was on some necessity and enforcement) so the

Popes warranting thereof (which certaintly encou-

raged the King thereunto) is most execrable, who af-

terward absoluted him (as other Popes had done to

53) The miraculous deliuerance of Scotland was

now at hand; for the noble Bruce, not staying till

King Edward were dead(who was now about three-

score and eight yeeres of age,) came forth out of

the Scottish Hands with such powers as hee had got-

ten together, taking the Castles of Carricke, Inner-

nesse, and many other, doing many things about the opinion of his meanes. To put an end to all which

troubles, King Edward refolued once againe in person

(notwithstanding his age,) to enter Scotland with a

mighty hoalt, which hee appointed to attend him at

Carliel in Cumberland, three weekes after Midiom-

mer day: where God viliting him with his laft fick-

neffe, hee commanded his Sonne the Prince to re-

paire with speed vnto him, vnto whom being come,

hee vetered many admonitions and precepts, the

(54) That he should be mercifull, iustand cur

"teous, constant in word and deed, familiar to the

"good, and toward fuch as were in diffresse alwaies pit"tifull. That after his death he should not haften

to take the Crowne of England, till hee had ho-

" nourably reuenged the injuries of his Father, and

"accomplished the present service. That hee

" should carry his Fathers bones about with him in

fome coffin till hee had marched through all Sept-

fumme wherof was* this.

his Predeceffors) from objet Jance of that oath.

pretending that they had forced his confent: and

patterne of Christian magnanimity and patience.

in Saint Peters Church at Westminster, the twentieth day of November, in the first year of his Fathers raign, Ann. Dom. 1272. in the same place, and vnder the fame Tombe where his brother John lies with his picture also in the Arch aboue it.

(60) Alphons, the third sonne of Edward and Queene Elenor was borne at the Towne of Maine in Gafeoigne, as his father and mother were in their returne towards England from Ierusalem, November 23, in the fecond yeare of his fathers raigne, 1273. hee deceased at Windfor, August 4. in the twelfth yeere of his age, 1285, and was buried at Westminfter in Saint Peters Church by Saint Bennets Chappell, where his body lieth under the Tombe of his Brothers, John and Henry, his Image also there portraied with theirs.

(61) Edward, the fourth sonne of King Edward, and Queene Elenor, was borne April 25, in the thirteenth yeere of his fathers raigne, 1284. at Caernar-san in Northwales and after the death of Lewelin an Griffith, in regard of the place of his Natiuity, was by his fathers Creation, with the confent of the welfb made Prince of Wales, the first of the sonnes and heires apparant of the Kings of England, that bare that Title, which afterward became ordinary to most of the rest: hee was also Earle of Ponthien and Chefter, and being made Knight by his father at London on Whitfunday, in the thirty fourth yeere of his Raigne, 1306. Succeeded him the same yeer in the Kingdome of VV ales.

(62) Elenor, the eldest daughter of King Edward and Queene Elenor was borne at Windfor in the fiftieth yeare of King Henry her Grandfather, shee was married with all Ceremonies of Proxie to a Deputy for Alphons King of Arragon, sonne of King Peier, who deceased A.Do. 1292. before the solemnization on of marriage, leaving his Kingdom to his brother I ames, and his new wife to another husband, who was married at Briftow in the two and twentieth yeere of her fathers raigne, 1293. to Henry the 3. Earle of Barrie, whose Earledome lay in the Eastborders of Champaigne in France. Shee had Issue by him Edward Earle of Barrie, from whom descended the Earles and Dukes of that Country, whose inheritance by Heires generall devolved to the Kings of Arragon, and from them again to the Dukes of Anion that were Kings of Smill. Henrie another some of hers was Bishoppe of Troys in Champagny, Helen her Daughter was married to Henry Earle of Blors; and loan to John Warren Earle of Surrey, the was his wife fine yeeres, and deceased 27. of her fathers raigne, A.D. 1298.

(63) Ioan the second daughter of King Edward and Queene Eleanor, was borne in the first veere of her fathers raigne, 1272.ata City in the holy land sometime named Ptolomais, commonly called Acon and Aker, where her mother remained during the warres that her father had with the Saracens : Shee was, at eighteene yeeres of age, married to Gilbert Clare called the Red, Earle of Glocester and Hereford, by whom shee had issue, Earle Gilbert slaine in Scotland without iffue ; Eleanor, married first to Hugh Spences (in her right, Earle of Glocester,) and after to William Zouch of Ricards castle. Margaret, first maried to Peter Ganeston, Earle of Cornwal, after to Hugh Audeley Earle also of Glocester; and Elizabeth Lady of Clare, matried first to John son and heire to Richard Burgh Earle of Vifter in Ireland, mother of william Burgh Earle of Vifter, and Grandmother of Elizabeth, Dur-cheffe of Clarence; secondly, to Theobald Lord Verdon, and laftly to Sir Roger Damary. This loan furuiued her husband, and was remarried to Sir Ralph Monthermere a Baron, father to Margaret the mother of Thomas Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, of whom the now Vicount Mountacute is descended; face lived thirty eight yeeres, and deceased in the first yeere of her brother King Edwards raigne, and is buried at the Fryer Austines in Clare.

(64) Margaret the third daughter of King Ed-

ward and Queene Elenor, was borne at the Castle of Windfor in the third yeare of her fathers raigne, and of our Lord, 1275. When thee was fifteene yeeres of age, shee was married at Westminster, July 9. in the eighteenth yeere of herfathers raign, A D. 1290. to Iohn the second, Duke of Brabant, by whom shee had iffue Duke Iohn the third, father of Margaret, wife of Lewis of Mechlin Earle of Flanders, and mother of the Lady Margaret, the heire of Brabant and Flanders, who was married to Philip Duke of Bur-

(65) Berenger the fourth Daughter of King Edward & Queen Elenor, was born the 4, of her fathers raigne, An. 1276.as Iohn Eueresden the Monke of S. mundsburie in Suffolke, hath recorded in his booke of English Annales, but other mention there is none, but onely from him: whereby it is likely that fhee did not live to be married, but that shee died in her childhood.

(66) Mice the fifth Daughter of king Edward and Queene Elenor, is by Thomas Pickering of the Monastery of Whithy, (who wrote the large Genealogie of the Kings of England and their iffue) reported to have deceafed without Iffue.

(67) Marie, the fixt daughter of king Edward and Queene Blenor, was borne at Windfor, April 22.in the eight yeare of her fathers raigne, 1279. and at ten yeeres of age, A.D. 1289. September 8. shee was made a Nunne in the Monastery of Ambresberie in Wiltsbere, at the instance of Queen Elener her Grandmother, who at that time lived there in the habite of the same profession, although her Parents were hardly enduced to yeeld their consents to that courfe.

(68) Elizabeth, the seventh Daughter of king Edward and Queene Elenor, was borne at the Castle of Ruthland in Flintsbire, in the thirteenth yeere of her fathers raigne, An. 1284. When the was foureteen yeeres of age, shee was married at London to John the first of that name, Earle of Holland, Zeland, and Lord of Freezeland, who died within two yeeres after without Iffue, and fhee was remarried to Humfrey Bohun Earle of Hereford and Effex, Lord of Breknoke, and high Constable of England, by whom shee had Issue John and Humfrey, both Earles successively after their Father ; Edward, that died in Scotland without iffue; and William, who being created Earle of Northampton, while his Brothers lived, after their deceases, was also Earle of Hereford and Esfex, Lord of Breknok and high Constable of England, and father of Earle Humfreythe tenth of that name, and last of that house, who died without Issue male: she had also by him two daughters, Elenor married to Tames Butler Earle of Ormond, and Margaret to Hugh Courtney the first, Earle of Denonshire, Shee was this Earles wife foureteene yeers; liued thirry three, deceased in the ninth yeere of the raigne of king Edward her brother, A. D. 1316. and was buried in the Church of S. Iames, at the Abbey of Saffron VV alden in Effex.

(69) Beatrice, the eight daughter of King Edward and Queene Elenor, bare the name of Beatrice Dutcheffe of Britannie her fathers fifter: fhe is by fome Genealogists mentioned to have lived till she was marriageable, but yet no mention being made of her match it feemeth she died ynmarried

(70) Blanch, the ninth daughter of king Edward, and the last of Queene Elenor, is so mentioned by Thomas Pickering, and some others, but not at all by Thomas Elrahama Monke, who made a Pedegree of the Kings of England, but shee is by the rest reported to have died in her childhood.

(71) Thomas, the fifth sonne of king Edward, and the first of Queene Margaret his second wife, was borne at a little village in Torkshire called Brotherton, Iune 1. in the nine and twenteth yeere of his fathers raigne, Ann. 1300. hee was created Earle of Norfolke, and Earle Marshal of England, which Earledomes the last Earle Roger Bigod, leaving no Islue,

Chap. 10. Edward. J. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 47. left to the disposition of the King his father. He had

two wines, of which the first was elicethe daughter of Sir Roger Hayles of Harwich in Suffolk, by whom hee had iffue Edward, who married Beatrice the daughter of Roger Mortimer the first Earle of March but hee died before his father without Iffue, and two daughters, Margaret twice married, first to John Lord Segrane, by whom shee had Elizabeth Dutchesse of Norfolke, wife of John Lord Mombray (from whom the Mowbrayes & Howards Dukes of Norffolke, and Earles Mariball descended:)lecondly, to Sir V Valter Manny a Knight of Cambray, and by him had Anne wife of Io'n Hassings the elder Earle of Pembroke, and mother of Earle Iohn the yonger, that died without Issue; his yongest daughter Alice was married to Sir Edward Montacute, and had by him three daughters, Elizabeth and loan married to VV alter and VVilliam two of the V ffords, and Mand that diedynmarried. The second wife of this Earle Thomas, was Mary the daughter of PVilliam Lord Ros, and widow of Sir Ralph Cobham, who Iurnining him without Issue by him, shee was married the third time to VVilliam Lord Brerofe of Brem-

(72) Edmund, his fixt fonne by Oueene Margaret, was borne at Woodstocke in Oxfordsbire, August 5 in the thirtieth yeare of the raigne of his Father, A. 1301. Hee was created Earle of Kent, and married Margaret daughter of tohn, and fifter and fole heire of Thomas Lord VV akes of Lydel in the County of Northampton, by her he had Iffue two fonnes and one daughter: Edmund his eldest sonne was Earle of Kem after his father, and died under age without wife oriffue: John the yonger was Earle also after his brother, he maried Elizabeth the daughter of the Duke of Gulike, and died likewise without Iffue; His daughter was Ioan, for her beauty called the faire Maid of Kent, first maried to William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, and from him dinorced, and remarried to Sir Thomas Holland, in her right, Earle of Kent, and by her, father of Thomas, and lohn Holland Duke of Surrey, and Earle of Huntington: and laftly, fhee was the wife of Edward of Woodflocke, the Blacke Prince of wales, and by him, mother of King Richard the second. This Earle Edmund was beheaded at Winehester the 19.0f March, in the fourth yeere of King Edward his Nephew.

(73) Eleanor the tenth daughter & fifteenth child of King Edward, and the last child of Queene Margaret his second wife, was borne at Winchester the fixt day of May, in the five and thirtieth, and last yeere of her fathers Raign, being the yeere of our Lord 1305. thee deceased in her Child-hood, and was buried in S. Peters Church at Westminster, by her brother Iohn, Henry and Afons, under the monument before named with her picture ouer it.

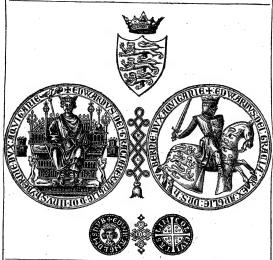
EDWARD

A.D. 1311

Edward II.

EDVVARD THE SECOND LORD OF Monarch 48 IRELAND, AND DVKE OF AQVL

TAINE, &c. THE FORTIE-EIGHTH MO-NARCH OF ENGLAND, HIS RAIGNE. ACTS, AND ISS.VE.



CHAPTER X I.



rived from Parents, cer-tainely the second Edward (called of Caernarwon) might (if nothing else) abundantlie shew, being of a most valiant, wife and fortunate father, an vnlike fonne:

Hat the Mind is not de-

yet not to beginne our description of his courses, with prejudice of his perfon, we will so temper our stile, that by his owne actions fincerely related, rather then by any verball censures the man may beeiudged. This cannot be denied, that whereas from the Conquest till his time, England though it endured (by Gods iust iudgements) many bitter, sad and heavy stormes through some headinesse, ambition, or other sicknesses. fes of mind in the Princes thereof, yet had she Men to fway and gouerne her, and those distempers were

as the perturbations incident to vigorous difpolirions; whereas under this Edward, who could neither get nor keepe, it seemed to endure the leuities of a Child, though his yeeres, being about twenty and three, might have exempted him from so great infancie of judgement, as his raigne discovered.

(2) Neuer came Prince to the crowne with more generall applause then he: so great hopes of doing well, his Victorious father, Edward of * VV inchester had left upon him, befides the right of succession, whose last warning and terrible adjurations you haue heard: with the * vtter contempt and breach whereof, to the destruction of himselfe, and his friends, hee in a manner auspicated his gouerne-

(3) After that Edward had in his best maner prouided for the * affaires of Scotland, where (at Domfrees) many of the Seottifb * Lords did their homage to him, as they had to his Father; the first taske which hee gaue of his future behaulours at home,

"The VV alfag.

* Pol. Virg.fib, 18. Hell. Bee lib. 14

Chap. II. Edward. IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 48. Spint Albana to pay great hee ought to Bishop and king acquited lam, Lib, Mon S: Alban, MS. A.D. 1309. The meeting of 5 Kings and 4 Oncomes. Peirs de Gaursto aThe.Walf. Tood Need. "Bellind tranfl, Eb. 14 csp.9-AQ.+ 34m. "The VVall.

The VVdf.

was a rigorous reuenge taken by him vpon Walter de Langton Bishoppe of Chesser, Treasurer of England, and principall Executor of the last Will of the deceased King, whose body was not as yet interred, but by the care of the Executors, conucied with funerall pompe to VV altham, and (after fixteen weekes) to VV estminster, where vnder a plaine monument the same at this present rests. The Bishoppes crime was a kind of good freedome, which hee vied in the * Thom. Walfage. late Kings daies, in * grauely reprouing the Prince for his misdemeanors, and shortning his waste of coine by a frugall moderation; and particularly, * for that he had complained of Peirs Gauefton, wher-upon enfued Prince Edwards imprisonment, and the others banishment, and therefore comming now to the Crowne, hee arrefted the Bishoppe by Sir Iohn Felian Constable of the Tower and imprisoned him in * VVallingford Castle, seising vpon all his tem-porall goods and * credites, there being not a man in the Realme who durst speake a word on his behalfe, (fo great displeasure hee had conceived, see-king vtterly to ruine him) till afterward by means of the Papall authority, hee was restored, and in a faint fort reconciled. (4) The thing which fuited best with his youth (4) The raing which interdest with an syouth-full affections, to wit, the marriage of young I fabel, daughter of Philip the Faire, King of France, the per-formed with wonderfull magnificence at Bolein, at which folemnity were prefent besides all others, The King of France Father to the Bride, The King of King of France Father to the Bride; The King of Massare his founce; The King of Assains; The King of Saidli; Marse Queene of France; Mangare Queene Demogrape of England, her daughter; The Queene Demogrape of England, her daughter; The Queene of Nasarre. There was also preferr (as no Sunne-fhine but hath flastow) "Perer of Gassfion, the belowed Minion of this Edward, whole reentryture cerouscy rannon or this campa, whose reshirt-tainement the dying King had so feriously forbid-den, whom notwithstanding, together with his own new wise, he brought into England.

(5) This fatall fanourite of this young King was

a stranger borne, but a * Gentleman, and (in regard of good service done by the Father of Peirs in Gescoigne, * brought vp (at old king Edwards owne ap-pointment) with this Prince: from whom not to derogate in any point, as if hee had without some appearances of worth and value embraced Peirs, it appearances or worth and value embraced rens, it is certained by that which a * Knight and feruitor of this very King hath left written) that he had a sharpe witte in a comely shape, and briefly, was such an one, as wee vie to call very fine; Neither yet was he vn-hardie in Arms, but of commendable performance, whereof (faith de la Moore) hee gaue proofe against the Scots, (to whom * hee was alike hatefull as to the English) till hee was recalled to satisfie such as (saith their Courtier) did enuie his graces, and good fucceffe; but of his Christian or morall vertues (which onely make men truly commendable)there is great filence in Authors, though not of his vices, wherof wee shall haue occasion enough to speake hereaf-

(6) At the Coronation of the King and Queen, (which the Lords would have empeached, had hee not promifed reasonably to * satisfic them about Gaueston) none was * neere to Pers in brauery of apparrell, or delicacie of fashion, which (and for that the King gaue him *S. Edwards Crowne to carrie in the King gaue him '5. Easter's Crowne to currie in that pompe,) greatly encreased the offence of the Lords against him: But hee that (hauing a King to backe him) knew no other means to extinguish habacke him) knew no other means to extinguilh have they be daring it to the vetermost, fipared not afterwardes to fooffe and reproach the principall Perers, "a calling "Numer Earle of Lunciffer, Stage-plai-ers, Aimerin de Valence Earle of Pembroke, 10fgh Me. 1em, because the was pale and tall; and Goy Earle of warnische, the black dogg of Ardern: all whom, and others, he at a * Turneament by him proclaimed

and holden, handled vilely.

(7) But King Edward was dayly more and more pofferfed with the familiarity of Peirs, who to esta-

blish his interest in the vnprudent Prince, by sensualities and riotous practiles, filled the Court * with buffons, parafites, and the like pernicious inftruments, drawing Edward from the thought of al great enterprises, in accomplishment of his fathers will, or discharge of his particular dutie, to all forts of vn-worthy vanities, and finnefull delights; while himfelfe in the meane space reuelled in all outward felicity, wasting the riches of the Kingdome, or conuer ting them to his private vies. For (fearing belike that the time might come agains to vndergoe banishment) hee transported much treasure into for raine parts, and much hee had to transport; for not onely by the *fale of his fauour with the King, to which there was no speeding approach but by Game-flow, (who wied to peize the gifts, more then the cau-les) but also by the kings prodigality, hee had whatfocuer could bee powred vpon him for (though it might feeme incredible) he both gaue him his iewels and ancestors treasure, and * euen the Crowne it selfe of his victorious father, not sticking to professe that (if it lay in him) hee should succeed him in the kingdome. (8) The Lords (who for reverence of the King fate

downe by their private injuries, in hope there would be a feafon, in which their Soueraign might by timelie and sweet admonitions recourr the vse of himfelfe,) not thinking it tollerable to bee now any longer filent, (and the rather, left that Peirs, farther a buling his greatnesse, should thring in Forreiners, not onely to the prejudice of the English lawes and customes, but of their authority also and places,) prenailed so much with the King, in a Parliament holden at London (where fundry provisions concerning the liberies of the péople, and execution of luftice, were enacted, and by corporall oach confirmed by the King himleles) that among them, the decree of Gaustinos perpetuall banishment, was by the king (ouercome with a meere necessity for satisfaction of the Kingdome, to whom the faid Earle of Cornwal was odious) vnwillinglie fuffered to paffe; and the king was thereupon regratified with a Subfidie of the twentieth part of the fubicets goods. The king alfo tooke his Oath not to revoke the faid Earle of Cornwall fro banishment (if it may be called a banish-ment) wherin *he had the kingdom of Ireland entruthed to his charge, and for the fecuring thereof against rebels, was turnished with men & money by the king. (9) Yet forgetting, that those affections, which

oftentimes deserue praise in a prinate person, are subject to much construction in a publike, and neglecting both his deceased fathers so solemne adjurations, and also his owne oath, as carelesse of the sequele, hee cals Earle Peirs home, with whose loue heewas most fondly, and most passionatelie transported, and (as if hee had received some diuine benefite) gaue him most ioyous welcome at the Castle of Flant in Northwales and * bestowed upon Latte of Fins in Neptomates, and * bestowed upon him for wife loan of Aeres, Countesse of glosester his fifters daughter, resoluting with himselfe to retain his Gaueston, maugreall his Earles and Barons, or (for the loue of him) to put his Crowne and life in perill when time should serue. In which, whether the king or his fauourite showed lesse discretion, it is not at the first fight easily determinable; it being as vnfafe for the one, with so offensine behauiour, to affect immoderate shew and vie of grace, as for the other, to the injury of his name and realme to bestow the same.

(10) The contemptibilitie and vanitie of this effeminate argument detaines ys longer, then for the qualitie thereof were fitting, did not lo much mifchiefe iffue out of it . For Peirs (of his owne nature infolent)being thus (aboue reason, or his own dareings) advanced to alliance with the bloud royall was fo far from all amendment, as hee rather feemed to ftrine to outgoe himfelfe in his former courses, confuming so much of the kings treasure and meanes. that he had 'not wherewith to defray ordinarie char-SIII 2

Is she third time

The Earle of

556	Edward.IJ. THE SVCC	Œ	SSION	OF	Monarch 48.	Book.9.
	ges, or to pay for the necessaries of his Court. The	: 1	to drive him fro	n his con	nany our of Feelend Bu	-
1	young Queene also tooke her selfe not to be a little	-1	the felfe-wild Kir	z * prefer	ring the dearenesse of one	
1	wronged by this vngracious mans predominancie. &	t i	stranger before th	he loue of	the whole Realme, would	* 48.6 Mm.
ļ	thereof lene her complaints to the king of France her	11	not conditiond.			Pag.401.cot.t.
1	father, which concerned injuries in the highest kind,	,	(14) Afterwa	rd, Peirs(whom * the Earles purfit	*Total Min C.o.
	as in her bed (the King being drawne by Gaueston to		ed with an Armi	e) being	whom * the Earles purfu entrufted for his fafe-	*Polyd Pirg, L. 18
* All & Men.p.	*adultery) and in her honour and *maintenance.	٠/	guard to Aimerie	ae V alence	Lattle of Pembrok was lof	. Dayse.
Febian. *TheWelfingh.	Whereupon the Peeres of the land, animated by	1	Dy nim out one i	nghtata'	Village or Manone collect	76. 1545 10
* The Walfingh.	the King of France, so confidently dealt with Edward, that his Earle now the third time did abiure the		Dathington Detwe	ecne Oxfor	rd and Warmieke Chains a	
	Realme: but (the King of France and his enemies		prace neither + ra	rre enoug	h off, nor ftrong enough)	*Tho.de is Mere
	making forraine parts vnfure for him to abide in) he		to the Callla of	ue contiat	ed him on the next day	1
	returned in Christmas to the generall permulation	.1	meane frace den	raungjora Pringrole	the faid Amerie in the	1
	of the Kingdome, and to his owne certaine ruine, for		who lay hard by	hor the	odge with his Counteffe,	1 1
	that the Barons (his adverlaries) had gotten him ba-	-1	thereat(as our *	Conrrier	faid Amerie conniuing	
* All & Men.	nished with this Prouiso, * that if at any time after-	.[
The VV df.	ward nee were taken in England, hee should be forth-		to doe his beit to	lare-con	duct Gauetten the Line	
	with apprehended and suffer death. But an Angell	1	Purponngm the	: meane (ime to labour his peace	1
	from heaven could not seeme more welcome, then					* Rau, Cefte 1.7.
* Thode la More.	this most faithful friend (as that * Courtier cals him)	1.				Call.
* Continuator	was vnto King Edward, who * forthwith aduanced him to be his principall Secretary.					
Trinet.MS.	(11) Vpop report of Guardens record					*All & Mon, pe.
	(11) Vpon report of Gauessons returne, the chiefe Lords, aswell Ecclesiasticals as temporals (Watter					
	Bishoppe of Couentree excepted, * who allowed the		the bretelice of	ne maries (Of Lancattee Wesmicke	*The de la More. *The UValy.
*The.PV alf.	Kings affections towards Gaueston; and procured him		and here at a sa	or one tha	It had beene a finbuorter	200.00ay.
	to breake the former agreements, which were made	4 I	In which holders	an open T	raitour to the Kingdom.	1
	and fworne in the Parliament at London,) confulted		ded fo much flan	ding for d	mselues (who yet preten-	1
	vpon a delperat course of reformation in this point.		did most vnadnis	edly infe	ne liberties of the land,) nge a Capitall branch of	1
	and made choice of Thomas Earle of Lancafter to be		the same Franchi	iles, in on	tting to death an Earle,	
	their leader. This Thomas was sonne of Edmund Earle	1				* Cantinuates
	of Lancaster, Leicester and Ferrers, second sonne of	1 1				Nich.Tringt.
	Henry the third King of England, and in right of his	1 1				1
	wite(after her fathers decease, which happed about	ı				ł
	this time) Earle of Lincolne, Salisburie, and (besides	ŀ				ŀ
	many other great Lands in rorkeshire, Cumberland, and Wales) hee had the Earledom of * Arroys in Pi-	1 1				
* John Stow.	and water) nee had the Earledom of " Artoys in Pi-	1 1				į
	cardy fo that without comparison hee was the greatest lubiect of the Kingdome.	1				
	(12) The Issue of which combination before we	1				
	purfue, wee may not here in our way ouerslippe a	1 1				
	strange alteration both here in England, and in all	1 1				
	Christendome. by the uniterial extinguishment of the	1 1	finger forme part	of the S	Nobles themselves might	
	Order of the Templars, wrought about this time by the procurement of the French King, who being to		The King was the	nor I and	oueraigne gouernment. m,and the Lords at Dun-	
	the procurement of the French King, who being fo	П	faple: but by th	e continu	all interdealings of the	
Wie Triets ad						
m.1306. In those dayes	Amballadors to crave of his holine le with great impor-					
in thole dayes	tunity, that the bones of his Predecefor Pope Boniface					
it was thought the Pope might	might bee burnt as being an Heretike; so now also he					
be an heretike.	fo farre preuailed with him, that in the Councel at				ken at Newcastle, which	
	Prenna this io nighty encemed Order, was youn clear					- 1
	proofe of their generall odious finnes, and fearfe cre-	H	(16) King Edi	pard neuer	thelesse, as if his soule	ı
	dible impieries, vtterly abolified through Christen-	1				Edward of Wind- for booms.
Fox Martyrolog.	dome. The French King * caused 54. of that Order, together with their Great Maister to bee burnt at					Jar Dorme,
pag-460.	Paris; and though that King hoped to convert all					
	the Lands of that Societie to his fonnes vie, whom					- 1
	hee intended to make King of Ierusalem; yet the					- 1
	Pope and Councell annexed their pofferfions to the	1	cleared the mind	of the Co	me, and at this present rowfull King his father.	- 1
	Order of the Knights Hospitalers, called commonly Knights of the Rhodes. Notwithstanding, in England					- 1
	Knights of the Rhodes. Notwithstanding in England					* Ren.Ceffr.lib.7.
	(where such Papali commands went not alwayes for		reioycing through	the King	iome, Her French kind-	cap.41.
	lawes) the heires of the Donours, and fuch as had en-					Fabias.
	dowed the Templars here with landes, entred upon		of either fexe) & :	mong the	m as chiefe, the Queens	1
	those parts of their ancient Patrimonies after the					
Thomas la More,	diffolution of the Order, and (faith our * Courtier)		haue had the Infan	rat his B	aptilme named Lewis,	- 1
	detained them vntill not long after, they were by					Allerman
lahu Stow.	Parliament wholly transferred vnto the Knights of	- [tore was after his F	athers an	d Grandfathers name,	462 Col. 1.
rpod.Neuft.	the Rhodes, or of S. Iohn of Ierufalem.					
	(13) King Edward was now at Yorke, and Earle					1
A.D. 1312.	Thomas, according to that which had beene conclu-			ons victo	ries in France and elfe-	- 1
.	ded among the combined Lords, who refolued to	- ['				1
	trie all extremities, rather then any longer to endure	1.	mind again 0.	will which	the King bare in his	1
-	Peirs Gaueston, (as being perswaded while that King- bane breathed, peace could neither be maintained in	1	Fortione and al	varous ror	their oner-ruling his	- 1
l	the Realme, nor the King abound in treasure, nor	li	and officer and for	e death	of Gaueston, by fundry	1
	the Queene enioy his love) fent humble * petitions	17	for was rabd 6 km	pnancies	or the French at Wind-	The.VValf.
Thom. Walfingh	by honourablemessensers to their Soueraigne, re-	K	octore it was halfe	u vpon, t	of the French at Wind- hat it grew raw againe Therefore in a Parlia-	1
	quefting him to deliuer the man into their hands, or	ı	nentat London the	inaicu. kina (ho-	I herefore in a Parlia- ely charged those pre-	
1		- 1		great p	ery charged those pre-	- 1
					fump-	

Chap. II.	Edward. IJ. ENGLANDS 1	MONARCHS. Monarch 48.	557
	fumptuous Lords with their contempt against him	more then religon, discipline, and valour,) to hau	
	In the ipolies they had committed at Wencefile and	effected more then it felte did fuffer. But King Ed	-1
	(which most afflicted his languishing spirit) in taking, and wickedly killing Peirs Gaueston. To all which,	ward and his people rather feemed to goe toward	al
AA. or Min.	they floutely answered, that they had not offended	Weading or a Triumph, then to a battell * adorning	• 1 / 2 / 3
WAY COMME	inany point, but deferued his rotall favour, for that	themselues with all forts of riches, gold, filuer, and	
	they had not gathered force against him, but against	the like toies, in a kind of wanton manner, correspon	
	the publike enemie of the Realme, &c. Howbeit, to	dent to the humour of the Prince whom they fol	Scotifb transl Heil Bee, bb.s
	preuent the teared milchiefe of civill Armes, by the	(21) In this journey it was made manifest, wha	Heis Hoe, lib.s
	working of the young Queene, of the Prelates, and	true and fober valiancie could effect against light	
	Earle of Gioceiter, the Lords in open Court at Well-1	brauery and infolency. King Robert lodged with	
	minster humbled themselves to the King, praying	his forces (being inferiour in numbers to the English	51
	grace; and the King granted to such of them, as would	not farre off, where was nothing but a religious	.1
	defire the same, his gracious pardon. The whole	*denour and modeft care, quickned (after manifold	11
	house of Parliament seeing the kings wants, of their own accord granted a Fifteenth & al parts hereupon	calamities, with a most noble delire to recour the	Heff Beet.
	returned with joy and peace, but not long after the	libertie of their Country, and to settle the same in	-
	Lord Guy de Beauchampe Earle of Warwicke, who in	to the hope whereof they were the rather erected by	
	this Parliament was appointed to be of Prinie Coun-	a fresh victorie, which they had obtained that day vpon certaine of the English*horsemen. King Edward	
	cell with the King, deceased, being (as by the Barons	on the contrary part nothing effecting fo fleight	The O'Valfer Heff Beer lab. 1
	wel-willers * it was laid) impoisoned by such of the	prefage, refolued vpon the very next (being Mid-	
The Walf.	Kings fecret friends as did maligne him.	fommer, or Saint Iohn Baptifts day) to take a terrible	1
A D. 1212.	(18) The milchieuous effects of the Kines for-	reuenge vpon the Seats: but how to effect the fame	
D. 1313.	mer milgouernment, beganne now most perillouslie	the care was not excessive; for in his Campe, * was-	* Th.de la Stein
	to discouer themselves. For the seets his neighbours,	faile, and Drinkehaile were thundered extraordina-	Lune in well
	who could not bee ignorant of all such griefes and	rily, as accounting themselves sure of the victory ;	
	maladies as festred in the heart and entrals of Eng- land, had long since made their timely vie thereof.	which kind of impious selfe-trust, if God Almighty	1
	adhering to the vindaunted Bruce, that by degrees	did not fometime foourge with ink and terrible	1
	hee had gotten a great strength and was againe pub.	confusions, what outrages would not bee exe-	1
The de la Ster.	likely receined, and obeied for King of Scotland, from most places whereof hee * draue the English, and (in	(22) Farre otherwise the Bruces Army: which	
his according	most places whereof hee * draue the English, and (in	by his commandement fpent * the euening in ma-	*Bellind. tranft.
Hefter Rection.	contempt of Edward) committed great ipoile by	king humble confession of their sinnes, that they	16.14 cap.t.
.14. hapned D.1309.	flaughter of People, burning of Townes in Nor-	might (faith our Author) beeready on the morrow	1
	thumberland, and other Acts of hostility. The prin-	to receive the bleffed Sacrament, as accordingly they	
	cipall charge of Scotland for King Edward had beene	did. Moreouer to leane nothing vindone which	1 -
	entrufted to the Lord lohn Cumin a Scot, Earle of Bucquhan, whom * King Robert had vanquished in	might advance their cause; the Scots had diaged	* Hell, 3set, 56.
Hell Beet.l. 14.	battell, and was now (while Edward fate bewitched	before their Battalions, certaine * trenches or dikes	caett.
со,Висаналии.	with most vnworthy languishments) grown potent,	*three footdeepe, and three foot broad, which (hauing fixed * fharpe stakes in them with their	tasts. * The de la Hen a Hell Boet, la ge
	fending his Brother Edward Bruce to beliege the Ca-	points vpward) they courted fo with * hurdles, that	fapra.
	file of Strinelin, which was in the hands of the Eng-	fooremen treading warily) might paffe, but not	"Thoda la Man
-	uß.	footemen treading warily) might paffe, but not troupes of horfe. Next to Gods anger against the	
	(19) The King of England awakened out of his	English, (whom courtly Pride and Slath had now ef-	1
n.D.1314.	flumbers with these Alarums, marched thereupon	feminated) this stratageme was the cause of their	l
ing Edward ith a mighty	with a very great Armie toward the faid Castle. It	ruine: for whereas they reposed much vpon their	l
rmy in Scotland	pleafeth Heller Beetins (putting off, as it were the	Canallerie, in these Pis-falles, the fury of their charge	ł
•	Historian) to report maruellous thinges of the num-	was intercepted and broken, the riders being mile-	,
	bers of Souldiers which came with King Edward in this tourney; for (if he fay true) there were not few-	rablic flaine by the Scots, whom King Robert mar-	
	er then one hundreth and fifty thousand horsemen,	ching formoft on foot, had prefented most coura-	-
	and as many thousand footmen; and that we may	giously to the enemy. (23) The King of England not altogether care-	
	not sufpect the multitude to bee far greater then ei-	leffe, neither yet by his care able to doe much (as	The English o-
	ther the cause required, or the realm of England could	one whom God was not well pleased with had or-	merthrowne of
	well afford, hee informeth vs, that belides the Eng-	dered his battels with some advite, but vpon the	Bannech bengue.
- 1	lifb there were in his aid at this time, Hollanders, Ze-	difmall and vnexpected discomfiture of his horse in	1
	landers, Brabanders, Flemings, Picards, Boloners, Gaf-	those mischienous holes or ditches, was enforced,	
	coignes, Normans, with much people of many o-	(after some troubled relistance) to leave to the Seas	
	ther Regions; and that belides these three hun-	the greatest victory that euer they had before or af-	
-	dreth thousand men of warre, there were infinite families with their women, children, seruants, and	ter. *Hardly could K. Edward bee drawne to flie:	"The, VVailer.
1	houshold-stuffe: but because other Writers doe in-	the courage which it became such a Monarch to	Too, PY TURE
- 1	genuously grant, and containe probable matter en-	haue then first disclosing it selfe, till by his friends hee was enforced to seeke his preservation by that	
- 1	ough for the honour of the Scottish Nation in this	more necessary then noble meanes, and with him	
	iourney, wee will as neare as wee can, (being things	(helides others) the lord Hush Spencer (whom our	
1	to vs neither vp nor downe, in regard of the long	(befides others) the Lord Hugh Spencer (whom our *Courtier cals a faint hearted Kite) betooke himselfe	° Thoule la Moir
	time fince thefe hostilities happed.) truely and free-	to like remedie,	Vasors Milum,
	ly, though briefly informe our felues hereof.	(2.4) All things proped unfortunate to the Eng-	,
	(20) The Earles of Lancaster, Warren, Warwicke,	lift in this iorney, for when they perceived their Ca-	
the Walf.	and Arundel (the greatest Peeres of the land) refused	uallerie thus milerably ouerthrowne in the ditches,	
	to attend their King in this service, for that hee had	they that their arrowes compatie, with purpole to !	
	delaied to ratifie the points of their defired liberties,	kill or gall fuch Scots as came to the execution, but	
	and provisions for the pretended better government	did them little or no harme, as they who were armed in the fore-parts, and in fread of that, * flew their	*The de la Moor
	of England, by himselfe so often consented vnto. In	in the tore-parts, and in itead or that, " ilew their	
	which as their loyall affection cannot bee much ad-	friends, whose backes being toward them were yn-	
	mired: foit is certaine, that King Edward hereby vndertooke that voyage with farre the leffe force ey-	(a.c.) The loffe fell much youn the Nobleft, for	
	ther of men or counsell. Neuerthelesse his hoast was	I show ware flaine in this Rarrell *Gilbert Parte of Glant	* Hoff. Boet . 1.14.
	great enough (if numbers did fway in fuch affaires,	there were manie in this Dancer,	The de la Moore. Ypad Neuft,
		Robert	

honourable Scots, belides the new King Edward, and

did God temper one with another, and the inft re-ioycement which the Scots had conceined of their

aboue * five thousand others . his head was cut off

at Dundalke (faith FV alfingham) but Heltor Boeting "The way.

writes that he was flaine in the battell it felfe. Thus Tool Ness.

558

The Walf.

Tpod.Ness,

The de la Mare. The VV46

A.D.1316.

"Ybe.UUall.

creased. The famine was growne so terrible, that horse, dogs, yearmen and children were stolne for

food, and (which is horrible to thinke) the theeues

newly brought into the Gaoles, were torne in pecces,

and eaten presently halfe alive, by such as had been

longer there.In London it was proclaimed, that no

Chap. 11 Edward IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 48. The Walf. Pol Virg.lib.18, * Cap 174 * teb.Stow. Harding 6.172. The beginning The Spenfers ba-The VValle A.D.1321. * Helish p.331. King Edward purious the Lords. Polyd. Verg. li. 8. A.D. 1322.

To happie victory ouer the English at Banocksbourne, was fowred with this losse, (34) But King Robert (as a most expert and vigilant Prince) did not suffer this toy to continue long to the English, for by practise with one * Peter Spal ding to whom King Edward had entrusted the kee-ping of Berwicke, heerecouered it from the English, faith * Harding, By treatie, with Peace, Spalding, and treafon; after it had remained twenty yeers in their possession; which when King Edward thought to haue wonne againe, the Scots diuerted him from the liege, with incursions and slaughters of his people in other parts of England, not failing much of furprising the Queene in a village not farre from Yorke, where the followrned during the fiege at Berwieke, the plot being laid, and drawne between the Scots and some perfidious English, whom King Robert had monied for that purpole, But Spalding after the treason done had the reward of a * Traitour. for King Robert put him to death, (35) To give some breathings after these so manifold troubles, a truce was agreed vpon and confirmed betweene the two Kings of England and of Scotland, for the space of two yeeres, which brought forth confusion and not refreshment. For thus it hapned; The King vpon the commendation of the *Lords themselues, had made Hugh de Spenser Lord Chamberlaine, who being at the least of equall infolence, vices, and ambition to Gaueston, so wrought that hee succeeded in short time to all the graces of familiarity and power which ever Gauefton enjoyed, as in like fort to all his hatred and enuic. Bugh his father an ancient Knight, the better to strengthen his sonnes courses, was likewise imploied, and grew in speciall fanour with the King, who afterward also created him Earle of Winchester, but the father in manners vnlike to the fonne, was ruined rather by a naturall tendernesse, then any malicious will. The fonne, as hee was of shape most louely, so the verie Spirit it selfe of pride and rapine, carried him to all sorts of intollerable behaviours and oppressions, that Gaueston might with good reason seeme to be wished for againe. Against these two, who wholy swaved the vnfortunate King, Thomas Earle of Lancaster and in a manner all the Barons of the Kingdome, (who meant the King should loue none but with Pontfract. (not contented with the wast of their lands) they neuer rested till(by the terror of ciuill Armes) those two fauourites (father and fonne) were banished; they that reuenging under publike pretexts both publike injuries and * their owne. (36) In all contentions which hapned betweene the King and his Lords, Queene Ifabel had euer hithe rung and his Lorus, Queene jaser had ever in-thereto beene a maker of Peace, doing therein wor-thy offices, but the euili flatres of the Earles of Lancafter and Hereford would not fuffer her to continue any longer fo: for the Queene being denied lodging one night at the Castle of Leedes in Kent. which belonged to the Lord of Badlesmere (one of the Earles faction) the withdrew her good conceite, and was an author to the King of presently reuenging that dishonour, who you her complaint, came in person with many thousand Souldiers before the Castle, tooke the * Captaine, and put both him and all the men therein to shamefull death. Moreouer, longing to bee righted against the Lords for their late infolencies, marched on to Circefter taking many Caftles, and besieging others: The Lords (who little Liberties. suspected any such sodaine assaults) providing in the meane time for their defence. (37) Thither repaired to him (at his commandement) Hugh Spenfer the lonne, who had houered vpon the Sca, expecting from thence the successe of things upon the land. The Lords, who had falne from their Soueraignes good conceit, and wanting now their wonted Mediatrix the Queene, lay open to all the mischiefe which enemies could workthem by the King, who (as taking his regall power and au-

thority to be in danger) refolued wifely and manfully, to die in the quarrell, or to bring the Lords to be at his commandement. Meane time the judgement given against the Spensers was reversed as erroneous, and their reuocation decreed at London by the Archbishoppe of Canterburie and his Suffragaus, (18) The Lords not all of a like temper began to mildoubt, and many of them for looke their Chiefe. (the Earle of Lancafter) and rendred themselves to the King, or were apprehended; among which were the two Rogers Mortimers, who were commit-Castle, The faction weakened by this defection made head in the North, under the Earle of Lancafer, who now was to fight for his life. Thither the King marcheth, and with the onely flew of his Ar-mie, made the Earle to flie from Barton upon Trent, whose forces in their retreat or flight behaued themfelues outragioufly. (30) But Gods heavie displeasure, and the Arme of the Kings power left them not so: for at Burrow-brigge, Humfrey de Bobun was flaine by a Wellfman; who thrush him into the body with a Speare from under the Bridge; and the Earle of Lancaster himfelfe with other principall men, Barons and knights, to the number of aboue * fourescore and ten were taken prisoners, by a man of small fortunes, Andrew de Herekley Captaine of the City of Carleil, and Sir Simon Ward.* Captaine of Torke, who with great forces out of those pares, stopt their farther passage at Burrowbrigge, as the Kings forces tooke all safegued from them behind. (40) The third day after their apprehension, the King in person being set in sudgement at Pontfract. and with him Edmund Earle of Kent, Aymerie Earle of Pembroke, John de Warren Earle of Surrey, and among * others, the Lord Hugh de Spunfer the Father, as allo * Hugh Spenfer his sonne; the Earle of Languager was brought before them, and had sentence pronounced against him * by the said Andrew de Herekley(created afterward Earle of Carliel) and the Kings Iusticiar, the * Lord Maplesihorpe, as against an Arch-Traitour; neuerthelesse, for reuerence of his bloud (being the Kings neere Kinsman) drawing and hanging were remitted vnto him, but his head was firicken off the fame day without the Towne of (41) Nor fatisfied herewith, the King gaue full way to reuenge, putting to shamefull death, by drawing, hanging and (as some write) *quartering in sun-dry places, all the Barons (the Lord Roger D'amarie onely excepted, who died of his naturall death) with fundry Baronets and Knights taken at Burroughbrig and elfewhere. The Lord Badlesmere (at whole house this tragicall fire beganne) was executed at Canterburie. And that so great and mighty a man as Thomas Earle of Lancaster, should not seeme to die without a bloudic complement sutable to his conditions there were hanged and quartered upon the fame day at Pontefract * five or *fixe Barons; and the next day at Yorke were hanged in yron chaines, the Lords Clifford, Mowbray, Dej-will; and others afterward in other places to the number in all (though (42(As for the faid Thomas Earle of Lancaster. there are fo many reasons why he cannot reasonably be iudged either a good subject or a good man. that we may worthily wonder why some at that time should repute him a Saint. Certainely, the wife and diferent old Writers are not fo opinionated of him

ted to the Tower of London, and others to Wallingford Too de la More. *Th de la Odori The VV alfag Holinfb.p.330 ol.2. Tood.Neaft. Hollinfb.p.331 40.5 Men. *Holinfb,p.331. tol.2. * All & Hen pe chiefest Captaines of the Realme suffered death for Trines.MS. their difloyaltics. Threefcore and twelue Knights more were dispersed into sundry prisons, who (laith

18. and 5, banithed,

De la Moore) vpon fines paid had afterward their thed, but note his private life for * vicious, himfelfe to be nothing * valorous, and of the publike * not well | Monething * Paylo, 1,7,4,000 deferuing, omitting his contumelious behautours "S. Th. de la More toward the King his Sougraign Lord in his difcom-

550

*Thode la Mare

hee was consinced to have entred into with the

		т	, , , ,
aThe.Walf.	Scots, vpon * whom he had before done special fer-	and negociate her husbands affaire in France. She	
	nices, as having for that cause the Castle and Citie	did fo; and whereas before her departure, things	
	of Carleil committed to his gouernment. The truce	were in great extremity between the two Nations,	
*Tpod.Newft,	with Scotland being thus confirmed, the King makes	informuch that all the French were banished out of	
a pomeroup.	his progresse through the * Counties of Yorke and Lancaster, and the Marches of Wales, from whence the	England, not they who were attendant on the Queen her felfe in neerest place being spared, all matters	i
	late feditious had their nourishments, taking wife &	by her negotiation and fuite were quieted, vpon con-	
	carefull courses for ministration of Justice there, and	dition that King Edward should give to his sonne Ed-	1
	preuention of like inconveniences, by punishing	ward of Windfor (afterward King) the Dutchy of A-	
* Chron. Dunft.	their Authors scuerely. And Justices * void of all	quitaine, and Earledome of Pontine, for which the king	1
apad John Stew.	corruption, were appointed elfe-where.	of France was pleased to accept his said young Ne-	i
	(49) In the meane space, the new King of France	phewes homage,	l
A.D. 1324.	Charles the fifth, a most earnest enemic to the English	(53) This was done, and the Prince fent ouer	
An.Reg. 17.	mens polleflions there, fought occasions of quarrell	for that purpose to his mother, to the vtter vindoing	
The L-Roger Martimerescapes	with King Edward, who while hee confuled at home	of the King his Father, and of all his fauourites. For	
Mortimerescapes out of the Tower *The de la More	how to order that affaire, the yong L. Roger Morti- mer, one whom the Diuell (aith our * Courtier) re-	the heire of England being in forraine parts, among	
" 1 DV AC 14 ONENCE	ferued to kindle new differtion with, and to furre vp	the contrary faction, all the confulration was (vader colour of ruining the Spenfers,) to accomplish far-	
	a most miserable civill warre, having consupred his	ther matters. The Prince, having (at Boys de Vincens)	
	Keepers or (as some others write) having potioned	done his homage for that Dutchie and County to	
·Ypod.Neaff.	Keepers or (as some others write) having potioned them with a sleepy drinke, escaped out of the Tow-	done his homese for that Dutchie and County to his vncle Charter de Valois King of France, was (as also	
	er of London, getting ouer clearely without any em+	the Queene his mother) sent for backe by the King	
	peachment into France.	about Michaelmas; but the Queenes conspiracie be-	
	(50) The Spenfers both father and sonne, the one	ing not yet ripe, thee deferred to obay, detaining her	
	thus created Earle of winchester, and the other Earle	fonne still,	
	of Glosefter, afpiring to the fulneffe of command, and	(54) There went ouer with the young Prince,	Polyd.Verg liats
	defirous to leaue nothing in their eye, which might flumble their fway with the King, failed not to beget	among many others, Walter Stapleton, Bishoppe of	
	immortall enmities both against themselues and the	Excefter, who perceiving into what familiarity the Lord Roger Mortimer was growne with the Queene,	
	King. The Queene tooke their carriage so heinou-	which * feemed greater then either stood with her	* The Walf.
	fly, because (besides other things) they had abrid-	honour or dutic, and feeing both him and other	
	ged her meanes of maintenance, (while themselves	of the Kings enemies, and fugitiucs enioy that priva-	
	abounded in all tiches and magnificence) as free	cie in conniell which was affigued to himieite. Who	
°S,Thedt la More	complained * That the daughter and fole heire of	was now (as being none of theirs) * excluded, retur-	*Tis-de la More
	the king of France was married to a gripple miler,	ned fecretly (though vnfent for) into England, faith-	
	and that being promifed to be a Queene, thee was become no better then a waiting woman, living vp-	fully (as it became a good man)declaring his know-	
	on a pension from the Spensers.	ledge. (55) The King now clearely beholding his er-	
	(51) Thus was the matter, and as it were, the Em-	rour in his dangers * folicited the King of France to	Polyd, Ver.li. 18 The Queens and
	brion, of their common destruction laid, and begun	fend home his wife and fonne, but that not fuccee-	Prince proclai- med Traitors.
	in the impotencie of a womans will, to helpe out	ding, he caused them * openly in London to be pro-	
•	the which with shrewd drifts and directions, they	claimed enemies of the Kingdome, banishing them	Pohd, Verg. kb.18. Fabian. Their death
	encrease her side with Adam Bishoppe of Hereford,	with all their adherents out of the same. For his more	Fabian. Their death
	by ftripping him out of all his Temporalties as a	affurance also hee caused the Ports to bee most nar-	
	Traitour, for that hee had supported the Morti-	rowly watcht. Finally, to draw all his dangers to a	King.
	mers in the Barons quarrell. This Adam (faith our	fhort dispatch, there was (as was supposed) a plot laid for *making away the Queene and Prince, but	* M. Fox. AR,&
	Knight) was a man of most subtle witte, and in all worldly pollicies profound, daring to doe great	Gods will was to frustrate it.	Mem.p.454.cel.1.
	things and factious withall, who for this cause con-	(16) The Queen, on the other lide, fearing that the	
	ceining deepeft hate, and therefore casily growing	* Spenfers gold had laid traines to blow her whole	
	deare to the Queene, made a great fecret party. To	proceedings up in France, kept herselfe out of the	*Tpod.Neuft.
	which Henrie Burwash Bishoppe of Lincoln, who(for	way, till with the Prince, the Lord Roger Mortimer,	
	like causes) had beene kept from his temporalties	and other their adherents, they were fafely gotten	
	(about two yeeres) ioyned himselfe, Neither would	into Hemalt: There might bee some other reason also and necessary to move Queene Isabel to depart	1
	the Spenfers avarice fuffer them to weaken the multitudes of their enemies, for they fold the Kings	out of France, belide the doubt of that kind of cor-	4
	gracious fauour to fuch as had beene in the Barons	ruption in the Peeres thereof: as to turne off a warre	1
	quarrell, at fo great rates that they by granting a-	from thence being her native Country, which for	
	way lands and Manours to the faid Lords Spenfers	her cause was afflicted in the Sea-strengthes theref;	
	for their pardons &c. verie many of the Nobles	for Sir John Oturwin , Sir Nicholas Kiried, and Sir	The English
	were empouerished. To be short, the royall pow-	Iohn de Felton, with the Nauie of the Ports, and of o-	I'm feat,
	er being in the hands of the Spenfers and Roger Bal-	ther places, had by commission from the King fo	
	dock Chancellour, or of their Creatures and Fauou-	scowred the narrow Seas, that they within a short time brought into England as lawfull prize, *an hun-	
	rites; this other faction had the generall discontent-	time brought into England as lawfull prize, an hun-	*Tle Walf.
	ments of the Realme to worke vpon for their ad-	dreth and twenty Norman shippes or vessels. Moreo-	
	(52) The King thus guiding himselfe, and ha-	uer, whereas those two Bishoppes which the Pope had sent, were returned forrowfull out of England,	
An.D.1325.	uing sent his Brother Edmund Earle of Kent (vpon	not onely without doing any good on her behalfe,	
	notice of the first troubles) with Forces into Gaf-	but also without hope of doing any, thee might ea-	
	coigne, who gave fome little flay for a time to the	fily be perswaded that the sword must doe it, or no-	
	French proceedings, till they might otherwise bee	thing.	
	prouided for, it came to this point at last: that	(57) But in Hensult thee found most honourable	An.D.1326.
	whereas the King had a purpole to have gone in	and louing welcome of the Earle, where, therefore	A.reg. 19.
	person into France, the Spensers who were asraid to	(without the confent or aduife of the Peeres of Eng.	
	bee severed from his person, the onely reuerence	land) thee enfured (faith our * Author) that delight and terrour of the whole world, her sonne, being	" The de la More,
ı	whereof they knew to bee their fafegard, and yet not daring to attend him thither, or stay behind, * per-	then about four eteene yeeres old, to Philippa the faid	
1			
* The Walfagio	fwaded the King contrary to the minds of all the	Farles daughter, and with the money of her portion	
* The Walfagh	fwaded the King contrary to the minds of all the	Errles daughter, and with the money of her portion waged fouldiers out of Honault and Germany, to tran-	
* The Welfagh	fwaded the King contrary to the minds of all the reft, that the Queene (who fought it) should goe	Eirles daughter, and with the money of her portion waged fouldiers out of <i>Honault</i> and <i>Germany</i> , to tran- iport	

Chap. 11. Edward, IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 48.

where the King concealed himselfe, were sent with

coine and forces to discouer and take him. The

Outer and forces to uncourt and task inth. The Toolde to Mon Queene and her people lay in the City of Hereford, it him, Omiti the Epifcopall See of that great Arch-plotter of her seven mediately about the Courtes Adem de Orlion, where by adulte and confent Ador was

of the Lords, her sonne the Duke of Aquitaine was doubles Ro er

flos of the same, did sweare him fealty. And here al- caffes or high fothe Bishoppe of Normach was made Chancellor of I

made High Keeper of England, and they as to the Ca-

of the Realme, and the Bishoppe of Winchester (65) What will not money, diligence and faire words doe; with corrupt dispositions, even to everting of all bands of either religious or civill duties? By fuch meanes therefore the desolate, sad, and vuwade his refig-

fortunate King, * came into his colen of Lancasters hands, and with him the yonger Lord Spenser Earle of Glocester, Robert Baldock Lord Chancellour and simonde Reding, there being no regard had to the detention of any other. The King was conneied by the Earle from the place of his furprise to Monmouth, to Ledburie, and so to the Castell of Kenelworth belonging to the Earle of Leicester, who was appointed ging to the East of Letelers, who was appointed to attend him, thatis, to keepe him fafe. The other three, Spenjer, Baldself and Reeding were firongly guarded to Hereford, there to bee disposed of at the pleasure of their most capitall enemies. (66) Before whose comming to satisfie Roger Mortimer, the Lord Edmund Earle of Arundel, and two Gentlemen Daniel and Micheldene were beheaded at Hereford: The Lord Mortimer was fo high in the Queenes fauour, that she could doe no lesse (as week may suppose) then gratifie him with a few hared heades. But (Mortimer) there will bee a time, when the cry of this, and other bloud facrificed to thy private revenge (while thou abusest the publike trust) will neuer give over the pursuit, till it hath deseruedly drawne thine in lieu thereof. (67) The Lord Spenfer and the reft, * on whom Villiam Truffill the ludge gaue fentence of death, being now drawne to Hereford, the faid Lord being clad in his coat-armour, was most despitefully dragged to the place of execution, where being first hung ypon a gallowes fifty foothigh, hee was afterward headed, and cut into quarters; they who brought him to the Queene, having the promifed fumme of two thousand pounds distributed among them for reward. His head was let vp at London, and his quar ters in foure parts of the Kingdome. Simon de Reding was hanged ten foot lower then hee in the same (68) This Execution(faith walfingham) was done vpon a Munday in revenge of the death of Thomas Earle of Lancafter, whose bloud was likewise shed vpona Munday. Robert Baldock late Lord Chancellor was committed to the keeping of the Bishop of Hereford, who after a time caused him to bee brought vp to Hereford-house in London, where the tumultuous people (not without the Bishoppe of Herefords secret approuement as was said) tooke him violently away, and (though he were a Prieft) thrust him into Newgate, where they vied him so vnhandfomly, that albeit they had no accusation, but onely for being faithfull to his Soueraigne, wherewith to *charge him, he not long after died in prifon ; to whom (faith De la Moore) might be applied that of Quintilian, * Torquentem umcit quifquis occi-(69) The mournefull King being at Kenelworth Castle, there repaired thither the Bishops of *Win-chester, Hereford, and Lincolne, *two Earles, two Ab-(as knowing, faith he, that a good shepheard should giue his life for his flocke,) made at the last his anbots, foure Barons, * two Iustices, three Knights for enery County, and for London, and other principall "fwere to this effect, "That hee knew that for his Pol Pirg. 18,18 many finnes hee was false into this calamity, and places (chiefly for the fiue Ports) a certaine chosen therefore had the leffe cause to take it gricuously: "That much he forrowed for * this that the people Thom. a la
of the Kingdome were so exasperated against him, number felected by the Parliament, which then the Queene and her Sonne held at London. The Bishops of Winchester and Lincolne (as it was agreede vpon) as that they should veterly abhorre his any longer came thither before any of the rest, aswell to give the Frule and four aignety: and therefore he befought
Fall that were there prefent to * forgine and fpare, rbs. Praise. King to vnderstand what kind of Embassage was "all that were interepretent to "torgute and ipate [res. Profile
in being for affilied. That neuerthelefte is "point," or in a
""but being to affilied. That neuerthelefte is "point," or in a
""to be in a "point of the in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a ""to be in a "point," or in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be in a ""to be in a ""to be in a
""to be approaching, as to prepare him by the best Arguments they could to satisfic the desire, and expectation of their new moulded common-weale, which could onely be by refignation of the Crowne, that his Sonne (whom the body of the then confused State had elected) might raigne in his stead. their King. (70) When they were admitted to his presence, (the Earle of Leicester being by) they together so wrought him, partly with shewing a necessity, partly

Chap. 11 Edward IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 48. with other reasons drawne out of common places, throughly studied for that purpose, that (though not without many fobs and reares) hee finally did nor diffent, if his answere were truely reported (which *fom doubt of) vnto the Parliament. *For they tolde "Hift, Bruti MS. " him that the Common-weale had conceived so irreconciliable diflikes of his government, the particulars whereof had beene opened in the general affembly at London, that it was resoluted neuer to endure him as King any longer. That notwithstanding, those dislikes had not extended themselves fo farre, as for his fake to exclude his iffue, but that with vniuerfall applause, and ioy, the Commonweale had in Parliament elected his eldest sonne the Lord Edward for King. That it would be a ve-"ry acceptable thing to God, willingly to give ouer an earthly Kingdome for the common good and quiet of his Country, which they faid could not otherwise bee secured. That yet his honour flould be no leffe after the refignation, then it was before, onely him the common-weale would no uer fuffer to raigne any longer. They finally durft tell him, that vnieffe hee did of himfelfe renounce "his Crowne and Scepter, the people would neither endure him, nor any of his Children as their So-"ueraigne, but disclaiming all homage and featry,
"would elect some *other for King, who should not *Polyd. Fer. St. 18 (71) The whole Company fent by the body of The de la Morr. State(if it may bee called a Body which then had no Head there) from London, where it attended their returne, being placed by the Bishoppe of Hereford. according to their degrees, in the Presence Chamber at Kenelworth Castle, the King gowned in blacke came forth at last out of an inward roome, and prefented him felfe to his vaffals, where(as being Privie to their errand) forrow stroke such a chilnesse into him, that hee fell to the earth, lying stretched forth in a deadly fwown; The Earle of Leiesser, and the Bishoppe of Winessester beholding this, ranne vnto him, and with much labour recovered the half-dead king, fetting him vpon his feet. As rufull & heavy as this fight was, we read not yet of any acts or effects of compassion expressed towards him at this present so fetled (as it feemed) was the hatred and auersion. The King being now (we cannot say) come to himfelfe, but to the sense of his misery, the Bishoppe of Hereford declares the cause of their present Embasfie, and running ouer the former points, concludes ne, and summing user the turner points, concludes as before, failing, (as in the person of the common-wealth). That the King must refigue bis Diademete his eldest some, or after the refullit suffer them to elect such as the subject of the best beautiful suffer them to elect such as the subject of the subject of the subject of the Kingdome. (72) The dolorous King hauing heard this speech, sir rbode to brake forth into signes and teares, and being (faith the strength in strengt fice his body for Christs cause, then once to behold the difinherifon of his fonnes, or (through his occafion) the perpetuall diffurbance of the Kingdome.

(73) This being faid, there was forthwith a proceeding to the short ceremonies of his resignation which principally confifted in the furrender of his

Tttt

Tood Neuft.

Councell of warre) taking first her way to Oxford:

where the *whole Vniuerlity being called together,

in the presence of the Queene, the Prince, Roger

Mortimer and the rest of that troope, the Bishop of Hereford(the Queenes bosome Counsellor)preach-

ing to them on this Text, "My head, my head aketh, dc-

liuered to them the reasons of the Queens comming

with her Army, concluding (more like a Butcher then

a Diuine)thatan aking & fick head of a kingdom,was

The PVAS.

* Hif Pret. MS.

Diadem and Enlignes of Maicity, to the vie of his fon the new King, Thereupon * Sir William Truffel (as being a Judge who could fit them with quirks of law to colour fo lawleffe and treasonable a fact) on the behalfe of the whole Realme renounced all homage, and alleagiance to the Lord Edward of Caernar non late King.
(74) The forme of that renunciation, as being ob-

folete, you shall have in the like * obsolete words of Treuisa, which was this; I William Truffel, in name of all men of the land of England, and of all the Parliament Procurator, refigne to thee Edward, the homage that was made to thee sometime; and from this time forward now following, I defic thee, and prine thee of all royall power, co-I shall never be tendant to thee as for King after this time. Which being done, Sir Thomas Blunt Knight, Steward of the houshold, by breaking his staffe, refigned his office, and declared that the late Kings family was discharged.

(75) Edwardbeing thus dekinged, the Embassie

rode toyfully backe to London to the Parliament, with the refigued * Entignes, and difpatch of their employment. Here (for that this feems the laft houre of his raigne and kingly flate) wee will make a stop, referring you for the rest to the next Kings life, ander whose name and abused authority they were acted. (76) Notwithstanding, wee may not forget in all these doings to call to mind, who it was that sate at the helme of State, ouerlooking, and ouerfwaying Queene, Prince and all; to wit, the most ambitious and vindicative man living, Roger Lord Mortimer of Wigmer: for, as for the * Queene, when shee was (God knowes how farre guilty,) aduertised of her husbands dethronization, shee outwardly expressed so great extremity of passion (notwithstanding that at the same time shee was tolde of her sonnes furrogation) as if thee had beene diffraught in her wittes: which the Prince her fonne (then about fifteen veers of age) beholding, hee made an oath, neuerto accept of the Crowne against his fathers good will; and thereupon it was (faith Walfingham a Writer worthie of beliefo) that the faid Embassie was sent to Kenelworth Castle, (where the now no more a King remained) to worke his affent, whose answer thereunto.

(saith "another) was by those Messengers related at full, and fuller then in truth it was sent by the Kingsbut the Peeres then in Parliament made their vie thereof, in procuring such a Prince to take the rule of the,

whom they hoped, by reason of his tender yeeres, themselves should be able to rule and overmaster. His Wife.

(77) Ifabel, daughter to Philip the Faire, King of France (fifter to Lodowicke Hutin, Philip the Long, and Charles the Faire, all Kings of France) was married to Edward the fecond, attwelve yeeres of age, in our Lady Church of Bulleigne, the 22.of January, 1308.

Shee was his wife twenty yeers, and his widow thirty, and lived threescore and three yeeres. Shee died at Rifings neer London, the two & twetterh of August 1357 and was buried in the middeft of the Gray-Fryers 2 sire in London, the 27.0f September following.

His I flue.

(78) Edward (furnamed of VV indfor) the eldeft fon of K. Edward and Queene Ifabel his wife, was born at the Castle of PVindfor, the thirtcenth of October, the yeere of Christ, 1 3 1 2 and the fixt of his fathers raigne: hee was created Prince of Wales, and Duke of Aquitane, in a Parliament holden at Torke, Anno 1,22. and in the troubles of the Realme and ab-fence of his Father, in an affembly of Lords met at Hereford, and in presence of the Queen, was made L VV arden of England by a common decree: vnto whom all the Lords made their fealty, in receiving an Oath of Allegiance to be faithfull and loyall vnto him as to the Lord Warden of the Realm : and shortaim as to the Lord waves of the Realm: and inortly after, the Father deposed, he was crowned King
of England, by the name of Edward the third.
(79) Islam (furnamed of Elitham) the second sonne
of King Edward and Queene I Jabel his wife, was

borne at Eltham in Kent, the 15.of August, and yeere of Chrift, 13 15 and at twelve yeeres of age was cre-ated Earle of Cormuell in a Parliament, Anno 1327. and third yeere of the raign of King Edward his brother: hee died in Seatland vnmarried, in the flower of his youth, the tenth of his brothers raigne, and

yeere of Christ, 1314. (80) Isam the eldest daughter, and third child of King Edward and Queene Ifabel, was borne in the Tower of London; thee was maried being a child at Barwicke the eighteenth day of July, in the fourth yeere of the Raign of King Edward her brother, 1 3 29 to David Prince of Scotland, sonne and heire apparent of King Robert Bruce, whom he succeeded within one yeere after in the kingdome, being but seuen yeares of age, and was the fecond King of Scotland of he name of Danid; thee was his wife twenty and eight yeeres, and being come into England to visite her brother, thee deceated here without Issue, in the two and thirtieth yeere of his Raigne, 1357 and was

buried at the Groy-Fyers in Landon.

(81) Elmo, the second and yongest daughter, & fourth child of King Edward and Queene I fabel, was the second wife of Reynald the second, Earle of Gelder, married vnto him with a portion of fifteen thou and pounds 1332. being the fixt yeere of the raign of king Edward her brother, who being the Vicar ge nerall of the Empire, to the Emperour Lewis of Ba war created him first Duke of Gelder : shee had iffue by him Reinald and Edward both Dukes successivelie after their Father without Iffue; the later of them leaving his Dutchie and his wife to his Nephew Wil. ism Duke of Galik his halfe fifters Sonne.



EDWARD

Chap. 12. |Edward. II J. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 49.

EDVVARD THE THIRD KING OF Monarch 49 ENGLAND, AND FRANCE, LORD

OF IRELAND, &CT HE FORTIE NINTH MO-NARCH OF ENGLAND, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, AND ISSVE.



He fickneffe and wounds which the commonweith fustained by the raigne of the late deposed king, vpon the change of her Leach and Physitian, recouered not onely health and strength, but beautie also and ornament; and

the elements themselves. which in the former times feemed to fuffer and fympathize with the publike grievances of the English grew * gratious and propitious to the vie of man, the Aire becomming more healthfull, the earth more fruitfull as if Nature herfelf were privic to the worth of the succeeding Prince, But this his worth did not display it selfe, vntill hee had plucked the sway of things out of the hands of the Queene his mother and of that aspiring danger and tempest of England, Roger Martimer who wholy possessed her. yeeres of age, when (without any guilty thought in him) his throne was thus established you his Fathers ruine, tooke the beginning of his raign by publike fanction at the * twentith day of Ianuarie, and by direction of fuch as lought to colour their trealons against their deposed Soueraigne, proclaimed God King of England, Lord of Ireland, and Duke of Aquitaine, to N.N. our Sheriffe of S. Greeting,
Because the Lord Edward our Father, late King of 'England, by the common Councell and Affent of the Prelates, Earles, Barons, and other the chiefe dome, did voluntarily remoue himselfe from the gouernment thereof, willing and granting that we as his eldeft sonne and heire, should take vpon vs the rule and regiment of the same, and we with the "counsel & aduise of the Prelates, Earls & Barons beore faid, yeelding therin to our fathers good plea-

(2) This Edward of windfor, being not fifteene

mischiefe, and the young King with griefe returned inglorious after an huge waste of treasure, and peril of

his owne person. (11) For while the English hoast thus held the Se.ts, as it were belieged Sir lames Dewglasse in the dead of night, with about * two hundreth swift horse . Fresherd. affailed the Kings owne Paulion, and miffed fo little of killing him, that a Priest his Chaplaine a stout and oyali man was flaine in his defence, and Sir James escaped backe without hurt, but not without honor for his bold attempt. In the Seets Campe * one noteth, that the English found fine hundreth great Oxen and Kine ready killed, a thousand spits full of flesh, ready to be roafted, fine hundred Cawdrons made of beafts skins, full of flesh, ouer the fire seething, and

*Fex in Alls &

Chap-12 |Edward III. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 49. (17) The case thus seeming plaine; was not for about * ren thousand paire of raw-leather shooes, the fuch accepted by the French, who received to the haire fill vpon them. In King Edwards Armie were

(as *fome write)thirty thousand Archers, and fine Graften hundreth good men of Arms, which perhaps is one of the greatest hoasts that you shall lightly reade to haue been of our Nation, and the reason was, for that the world conceined fuch hope of the young King, that many more went * voluntary then conftrained. All which puissance was notwithstan-

A.D. 1328. The.Walf.in Edw.3 Hell.Bost. Rebert died 7. wee have therein

ding thus eluded. (12) About this time died ftrucken with leprie, Robert Bruce King, and recouerer of Scotland, and the most approved Warriour of the world in that age, by whose losse it was soone found, how much the vertue and fortune of one man are worth in any Nation. But before hee died, that peace was made with the Scots by the meanes of the Queene and the Lord Mortimer, which is fo much dispraised by our Writers, and in the end proued capitall to the principall Actor Mortimer. (13) For at this treaty it was that the King (then

The peace with Scotland at the Parliament of Northampton. The Walf. * All.& Men. * Geor. Buches, Hell. Boet.

*Fox.

in his Minority) scaled Charters to the Scots at Northampton, whole contents were contriued by the Queenc, the faid Lord Mortimer, and Sir James Dowglasse, without the prinity of the English. There was alfo deliuered to them that famous Euidence called the * Ragman Roll, and the King acquited them of all * claime and pretence of right to the Superiority of Scotland, rendring backe fundrie Iewels taken by the English from the Scots, among the which was one fip caill, called the Black Croff of Scotland. There was it also granted, that all Englishmen should leefe their lands in Scotland, vnlesse they would inhabite

vponthem, and becom Liege-men to the King ther-of, belides many other things to the high discontentation(as was the humor of those times) of the English Subjects. Moreouer, under the specious Englin Subjects. Moreouer, vincer the specious colour of refittution of dammages, King Robert was to pay to King Edward thirty thousand Marks sterling, with which (as the meed of treason) the Lord Mortimer was afterward publikely charged, and for the fame, and other his crimes was executed as a Traitour. Finally, vpon the feuenth of Iuly, David Bruce Prince of Scotland, a child of seuen or eight yeeres old, and fonne and heire to King Robert, mar-

ried Ioan, fifter to K. Edward at Berwicke: by which

peace the English were made obnoxious to some re-

proaches, the Scottifb Nation in Scorne, calling the faid Lady, Jane Make-Peace. (14) And therefore sith one of this part of King Edwards raigne: that drawne aside with enile admise E.S.lib.3.com-mentariol.de reb gellu.Brit.

State, at the beginning of his Goneroment: which is also the general opinion of all our Writers, whereunto this verse is by * some applied; V a pueri terra, f.spi(sime funt ibi guerra,

Where Children Rulers are, There oft is woe and war.

(15) There died likewise about this time Charles the Faire, King of France, (to whom King Edward had not long before done homage for his Dutchie of Gastoigne) the third and last sonne of Philip the Faire, King of France, by whose decease the Crown of that noble Kingdome, devolved to this our Edward King of England in right of his mother Queene Ifabel: And because vpon this * Title king Edward did afterward claime the faid Crowne, wee will here once for all instruct you in the instice thereof.

Pantvor.

(16) Three fonnesthere were of King Philip the Faire, (to wit, Lewis Butin, Philiple long, and Charles the Faire) who all incoeffinely raigned in France one after the other; and none of them leaving any Issue, Prince. King Edward not long after with a small companie went into France, and did homage to Phiat fuch time as king Edward made his claime, the whole right seemed to be in Ifabel the onely Child of the faid Philip which had any iffue, for an other fifter which shee had died an Infant.

nenged.

Crowne Philip of Valoys, whose father Charles of Valois was yonger Brother to Philip the Faire, aduancing the Brothers sonne before the daughters son. not following the propinquity or descent of blood. but the meliority of fexe ypon which ground they had also freshly put by Ioan daughter of Lewis Hutin, preferring Philip le long her vncle. The French in barre to her interest, pretended a fundamentall law or entaile, by which * no woman was inheritable to the Crown of France, and in defence of that opinion with their greatest with the greatest with the control of the contro flood King Edward afterward with so much losse and Lawyes since calamity, though that very law made Edwards title whit concerned the ftronger (*as himfelfe truely pleaded) hee being the French the Male, albeit his right descended by the Feengallie.cop.8.
* Chart. Original (18) This Title to fo glorious a Monarchy though

is accrewed to the English, by this match with Queen is accrewed to the English by this match with Queen if abel, yet doth Walfingham * freely pronounce; That Typed Needs. neither that affinity, nor any other contracts with the French, was ever availeable or brought any benefite to England: which opinion as it may feeme strange, so will it answere a wise Readers paine in the froit, to observe through the course of our stories, whether the faid grave Writer had just occasion so to speake or no. Another conceit there was of this Edwards King Edward marriage with Philippa the Earle of Henaults daughthe Earle of the which about this time was confumated, though the Earle of the was also discussed the Earle of the saids a single the saids and the saids and the saids and the saids and the saids and the saids and the saids and the saids and the saids and the saids are said to said the saids and the saids are said to said the saids and the saids are said to said the sai Philip de Valoys (king of France by intrusion as our ter.

Annales repute him) was her vnele, her mother being his owne fifter. (19) There stood now at home against the stream

of the Queene, and her Lord Mortimers absolute fway, some great personages, who did not wholy allow their doings, among which was the Kings vn-cle, Edmund Earle of Kent, whose death they shortly procured. Meane while the more to despite and dare their ouerlookers; Roger Afortimer was created
Earle of the Marches of Walet at a Parliament holden at Salisburie; at which time also Iohn of Eltham the Kings Brother was made Earle of Cornwall and the Lord Butler of Ireland Earle of Ormand. From whence the Lord Hemy Earle of Lancaster, and fundry other of the Peeres, feeing the King * troden (as it feemed to them) under foot, did absent themselues, meditating civillarmes for redreffe, who notwithftanding(by the labour of Simon de Mepham Archbishop of Canterbury) was reconciled: This Archbishoppe very worthily also excommunicated all such as had

any hand in the facrilegious parricide of that noble and loiall Prelate Walter Bishoppe of Excesser, or any and loiall Prelate Water Billioppe of Excefter, or any waies violated him, their aiders, complices or abettors whofoeuer. But after the Coronation of Philip the yone Chapter is and also lip the yong Queene, in another Parliament at Win-chefter, the faid Earle Edmand was condemned for Conspiring to deliuer his brother, late King of Eng-land, whom (likely inough by Mortimers practile)he was drawne into an abfurd beliefe to bee fill alite.

Thus for deuiling to fet a dead man at liberty, this

noble Earle Edmund the kings half vncle had his head ftrucken off, though from * Noone till fine at night,

* The Walf hee stood at the place of death without the Castlegates, none being found to behead him, till a base wretch of the Marshal-sea was sent, and did it so little

(20) To supply which losse to the regal stemme, An.D.1329 with a very large amends, the young Queene Philip Ine Blacke at Woodslocke in Oxfordshire, vpon 15. lune, being Princebone Friday brought forth her first begottensonne, the amiable and famous Edward, by-named (not of his colour, but of his dreaded Acts in battell) the Blacke

liv de Valoys for his Dutchie of Gascoigne. (21) Nemefis, or rather Gods vengeance with swift Vvvv

conscience did the malice and ambition of his po-

tent aduersaries make of shedding the Roiall bloud.

which by Gods inster indgement was not long vnre-

566

r Februa.

King Edwar provided for

practifes.

"Grafton

Annals

dela More, you may reade at large in the collecti-ons of "Iohn Stow) to the Caftle of Barkley, where after many vile denifes, executed vpon him in vaine, they *more then barbaroufly murthered him.

was deliuered by * Indenture, to Sir Thomas de Gour-nay the elder, and Sir John Mattrauers, two mercilesse and most vnworthy Knights, (6) These two Inflruments of the Dinell, hauing conducted him first to the Castle of Corf, then to Bristol, and lastly in great secrelie, and with more The late King villanous despite, then it became either Knights, or

the lewdest variets in the world, as (out of Sir Thomas

Bedford faith

Tood. Neaft.

pace did now approach and fummon Mortimer to a bloudie account; for the yong King addicting himseife to serious thoughts, and putting on the Man before his yeeres required, eafily faw his owne perill in the others potencie. The Queene his mother (to the common dishonour and eriefe of the Kingdome) being generally bruted to be with child by Mortimer, hee vpon ripe aduite fodainely and aduenturouflie furprised the proud man at Parliament holden in Nottinehams with whom were taken the L: Geofrey Mortimer his fonne, and Sir Simon de * Bedford, Adam Merimouth Bertford (21th Holmfbead Burford (21th who all three were fent prisoners to the Tower of London, vnder a strong guard. Which done, the king by common confent of the Parliament tooke into his hands his mothers excessive Dower, & put her to a narrow pension of * one thousand pounds by yeer, Adam Merim. circumscribing her within as narrow * limits for her abode, but doing her yeerely the honour and comfort of once ontwice visiting her, though otherwise scarce thinking her worthy of life, in regard of her

(22) Oh, what enchantments are Honour and Power to the minds of men! how fodainely, and how firangely doe they blow up the same with the contempt of others, and forgetfulnes of themselues? Certainely the fraile effate of mans constitution is clearelie feene in this high Lord, who drunken with felicitie, and fearing neither God nor man fell into vtter confusion when least hee scared. The probable The manner of manner whereof is worthy the relating. There was Mortimers fur-prife at Nottinin the Castle of Nottingham (and at this day is) a certaine secret way or Minecut through a rocke, vpon which the faid Castle is built, one issue whereof openoth toward the river of Trent, which runnes under it, and the other venteth it felfe farre within vpon the furface, and is (at this prefent) called Mortimers Tilde to Crower hole; through this, the young King well armed, and

prinacie with Mortimer, and his many heinous pra-

stronglie seconded, was conducted with drawne fwordes, by some his trustic and sworne servants, (among which was that brave Montacute, whom his vertues under this King raifed to the Earledome of Salisbury () vp to the Queenes Chamber, whose dore(fo feareles is blinded affection) was vnfhut, and with her was Mortimer (the kings Master as the ru-mor forcd him) readie to go to bed, whom with the flaughter of a Knight, and one or two that relifted) they laid hold vpon. This was not reputed a slender enterprife, in regard that in Mortimers retinue were not fewer (they fay) then one hundreth and foure-fcore Knights, befides Efquiers and Gentlemen.

(23) The causes for which hee was condemned in open Parliament at Westminster, these ragged
*verses following comprehend, which without any dilparagement to their makers judgement, might veric well haue beene in Profe, but for breuitie and change wee haue here inserted them.

Fine heinous crimes against him soone were had, 1 First that he caused the King to yeeld the Scot (To make a peace) townes that were from him got. And therewithall the Charter called Ragman; 2. That of the Scots bee had bribed pring gaine. 3 That through his meanes St. Edward of Carnaruan, In Barckley Castle most traiterously was flaine.

4 That with his Princes mother hee had lain, And finally with polling at his pleasure, Hadrobd the King and Commons of their treasure.

But the most barbarous murther of the kings father, and speciallie the dishonourable peace and contract with the then professed enemies of England, were principallie infifted vpon as hainous treason. He was after sentence ignominioussie drawne to Tyburne, the common place of execution, then called the Elms, and there yoon the common Gallowes was as ignominiouslie executed, hanging (by the kings commandement) two daies and two nights, a publike & gladsome spectacle. There died with him Sir Simon de Bedford Knight, & John Deuerel Esquier, aswell for expiation of the late King Edwards death, as in complement, as it were of to great a mans fall, whose liues doe seldome, or neuer perish single.

gaine most grieuous losses and afflictions, an ordinarie effect of Childrens gouernment, whether Children in age, or in discretion: for the Lord Edward Baliol hearing of King Roberts death, and the tender age of king Edward the first had adjudged the Scotist crown, the Baliel and his English with others passing the water of Erne by a Foord in the night, when the enemy little suspected it.

(25) The flaughter even by his report was miferable: for there were flaine (faith he) the Earles of The greatflaugh-Marre and Carricke, and three thousand of the No-ble, beside Commons. Our * Writers agree that this Foord was passed in the night, but that the fight That Valing. endured from Sunne-riling till three of the Clocke afternoone, and that, besides the Earles of Marre, and Carricke, three other Earles, Menteth, Athol. and Marrey, twelue Barons, eight hundreth knights and men of Armes, belide aboue thirteene thoufand other, loftthere their lines. Of the English there were onelie flaine thirty and three *Efquiers: fo that not without cause this victory was attributed rather to power dinine then humane.

(26) Yet this was but the beginning of farther The Ballot ero calamities to the Scotish Nation, which was in it selfe diuided into factions, the one for Bruce, the other for Baliol. The Lord Edward making vie of his Hell Best, good forrune, got himfelfe to bee crowned King of Goog Bach Scotlandat Scone. But king David Bruce with his Queen fled into France to Philip de Valors, who raigned there, & entertained them with much compaffion and honor, giving them Castle Galliard for the place of their abode, till fairer fortune shone. Meane-time the Seets fulfained new dammages; for a prime man among them, the Lord william Dowglasse, was taken priloner by the English, not without losse of many his men. Before which time by * no honourable meanes the new King of Scotland was driven to feeke Tho. Dull.

his fafety by flight into England. (27) King Edward confidering those foiles which his father had endured, and the oportunity of the time, neither holding himfelfe lyable in honour to that contract made on his behalfe by the predominantsway of his mother and her Paramour Mortimer, as wherein hee tooke both himfelfe, and the rights of his Crowne to have beene wronged in his minority, which in point of government hee was more bound to respect then his Sisters estate. and for that hee was informed that the Towne and Caftle of Bermicke belonged to the Crowne of his Realme; hee raifed his power, and having with him Edward the new-crowned of Scotland, hee laid fiege to that Towne and Castel in May. But before hee did this, there is who writes, that he fummoned his Rich. Grafion:

(24) Now came Scotlands turne about to fuffera-

King Danid as son and heire of that Baliel, to whom with fuch voluntaries as hee could raife (though his Father the Lord John had *released his claime to king Robert, and though King Edward in fauour of his fifter Ioan Queen of Scotland, would not openly ar first Support him) embarkt himselfe in Tarkeshire, and in- Heal. Back. naded that Realme, where, vpon his landing, he flew Alexander Setounat Kingorn, and about nine hundred others, putting the rest to flight. Not long after (that no mischiese might come alone) neere to the water of Ern, at a place called Dupline, where the Earles of Mar and March, with two puissant armies The Palliels two of Scots, for the defence of their yong King Dauid lay encamped, the faid Lord Edward (whole small numbers, not exceeding three thouland English, the Earles as securely and as fatally contemned, as the English under Edward the second had contemned the Bruce and his Scots) obtained of them a wonderfull victorie. Boetius (who neuer, or rarely, leaues any ouerthrow purely to the manhood of the English) will needs have this discomfiture effected by a Camifado,

Chapele Edward III. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 49. | 569 brother in law King Danid to doe homage and fealty onto him, which when Danid would not yeeld to doe, nor confesse hee ought, no more then his father King Robert, hee made that a ground for the iuflice of his warre, as reputing the Acts and releases

at Northampton void.

King Edwards

(28) To the rescues of Berwicke, Archimbald Donglas Earle of Angus, Gouernour of Scotland for King Dauid, came with a puissant Army, and gaue King Edward battell at Halydon-hill, where with a lamentable flaughter of his people he was vanqui-flied and flaine. This battell deuoured in a manner all the remainders of the Scottish Nobles which preferued it felfe at Dupline by retrait, or by absence from that field. There * perished besides Archim-bald, the Earles of Ros, Sutherland, and Carricke, three fonnes of the Lord Walter Steward (whose iffue afterward raigned in Scotland, when warre and death had made way to that line, by extirpation of the Male-Competitors in the races of Bruce and Baliel) and at least foureteene thousand others, with the losse (say fome) of one Knight, and ten other Englishmen. Our

Writers affirm that the Scots were at this battell, threescore thousand strong, and that there were flaine eight Earles, 1500, horsemen, and of the common Souldiers five and thirty thouland; which is not improbable, for fo much as Hector confesseth they were stopped in their flight, and put to the sword vpon all fides without mercy.
(29) Hercupon Berwicke was randred, which

the King of England detained as a fur poied parcell of his Patrimony, and dismissed the Baliol to the gouernment of the Scottifb Kingdome, with fundrie Lords and others of the English. And now the blou-dictallies and cruell scores seemed guen betweene the two puissant(though then vnkind) neighbour-Nations, and Edward throughly redeeemed the dishonour sustained at Banechtourn by his lace father, deliuering his younger yeeres from that contempt, in which his enemies might otherwise haue holden him, as they had done at the entrance of his raign.

Fabian.

* Hell Bort.

(30) As for the fubornation of poisoning Earle Thomas Randal, and the hanging of Sir Alexander Setons two sonnes, contrarie to faith and law of Arms, at Berwicke with the like staiges which * one would faine leave vpon this victorious Prince, wee have found no colour of warrant but his owne liberty of auouching, which therfore our freedome of not beleeuing him shall as easily take away and cancell. Neither would wee so farre have touched this iarring ftring of discord betweene these two Nations, but that each out of their owne harms of old, may have the more true sense of their felicity, by their new harmonicalleoncordance.
(51) After that the* Nobles of Scotland had

thereof, and fworne vnto him faith and allegiance at Perth, hee repaired to the King of England at Neweastle vpon Tine, where hee * submitted to Edward King of England, as his Father had done to Edwardthe first, and with the like successe; for by occasion of fuch his submission, our Writers say, the Seots (as before they had done) fell off againe, Which auerlion, or defection was augmented vpon prinate quarrels, and titles of inheritance to lands of great value, betweene powerfull Competitors, and by other particular reuenges, to which a people fo continually exercised in fight and battels were

Hell.Beet.

playing vpon the English with Truffes and Rounds; of which this one is every where noted;

Long beards heartleffe, Painted hoods witheffe, Gay coates graceleffe, make England thriftleffe.

vnanimously confirmed Baliol in the kingdome An.D.1333.

not flowlie prone.
(32) Notwithstanding all which (the Balliols party having once had all the Holds of Scotland at their commandement, fine onely excepted, Dumbritaine, Loughleym, Kildrummie, Vrwhart, and the pile of Lowdon) Edward king of England having with him the Balliol, and a fufficient Army, prevailed to much, that there was no appearance of rebellion; whereupon hee tooke backe with him the Lord Edward Balliol late crowned king of Scotland (of whose ftedfaftnes hee was (faith Hetter)alwaies icalous,& returned, leaving * David Ca min Earle of Athol, gouernour for the parts beyond the Scottifb fea, with fufficient force and authority (as was judged) to take in fuch ftrengthes as yet flood out, but needed not his royall power or presence for their expugna-

(33) The King of England hoping now that all The Lord Rober was well there, had newes brought vnto him not long after, at the Parliament at London, that the the Balid.

Scots were out in Armes againe; whereupon hee obtaines aid of money from his Subjects for repretfing their attempts, promiling to goe against them in perion. The Lord Robert Stewart, fonne of the "Hell Sun Lady Mariorie Bruce, daughter of King Robert (vpon whose line the remainder of the Crown of Sestland had beene estated) was the man that first listed vp the head of his Country in this dangerous, fad, and defolate condities though put into action vp-on a private injurie done vnto him by the Earle of Athol)to whom diucrs did adhere, though the quarrel feemed properly to be the faid L. Roberts, for that if the Bruces were cut off, his hopes perished in them, The Earle of & Marray and he were then chosen gouernours for King Davids party, but by reason of the diligence and power of David Earle of Atholy they were notable as yet to congene, or effect any thing against the English : neuerthelesse it was not long before they flew the faid Earle David, At this Parliament the King of England purposed to * goe value. Menis owne charge into the Holy-Land, and to King Edwards fend the Archbishoppe of Canterbury to deale with Philip deValois King of France, for appointing a certaine time, wherein they two with their valted forces, might take their voyage thither, from which the delire of obtaining the Crowne of France, vpon the fore-mentioned title, did quickly divert him. (34) Mean-while, in accomplishment of the Par-

liaments expectation, King Edward after * Michaelmas marched againe into Seotland with an Armie, and fent his Nauie to the Forth: The Sea-Force wherof spoyled the Coasts on both sides of the Forth, or Scottish Sea, and putting on land in Saint Colms, they spoyled the Abbey; which Sacrilege, * Hect or notes vas senerely punished, the whole Fleete being battered with tempest, and some of the ships perishing.
At another time also the like sacrilege being perpetrated there, (hee faith) that the shippe wherein the vnlawfull prize was, funke fodaincly to the Seaground without any tempest. The King himselfe comming to * Perth, to order the Scottifb affaires, whiles hee abode there, the Earle of Murray one of the Gouernors was taken Prisoner, who was after * deliuered vpon Exchange for the Earle of Namur, (who the Seets by like Art had taken) or as Hector wil the French Stories.

haue it, for the Earle of Salsbury. (35) By the mediation of the French, the Scots had a short truce granted them. But about the end A.D. 1334 of May, the King fent his cofen the Lord Henry, fonne to Henry Earle of Lancaster, with a great Atmy to the aid and service of the Lord Edward Balliol Armie. King of Sestland, which wasted all the Countries about Perth; where, while they lay, the King with a very fmall Company came fodainely vnto them, and from thence pierced farther one way then euer his Grandfather Edward had done, fuffering fire & death(the common furies of warre) to worke vpon all that might suffer destruction to establish a Conquest. Hee marcht vp as farre as * Elgin and Buguhan and in his return to Marre, *burnt the Towne *Adam Merits of Aberden, in revenge for * Sir Thomas Roffelin, a *Heth.Boes, Knight, whom the Townef-men thereof had flaine. The Lord Robert Steward had great landes in those parts, for Murrey and Buquhan were his; which also of Helf. Bost,

The King of England once more with an Armie in Scotland.

Tood New !. Lik te.

feeke the amity of the Emperour Lewis of Bauare, with whom hee made (as by the event was manifelt) but an * vnprofitable confederation, though for the present it seemed to serue his vies with the countenance: more to his advantage were the fingular endenours of some other his private instruments. as chiefly of lames de Artenile, a wealthy Burger of Gaunt, one of a rare dexterity of witte, and so popularly acceptable among the Flemings, that he feemed to fway Flaunders more by far then the Earle thereof, whom they had expelled. By the speciall diligence of this laques van Artenile, and of one * Siger de Courtray a Nobleman of Flanders, there was prepared among the Artizans of those parts (whose chiefe enrichments depended vpon the handling of English wooll, as Cloth-workers, Weauers, and the like a mighty party for the English against the French. This amity with England(as most profitable for the common benefite, and weale of his Country) the

faid Ismes most constantly supported to the death.

(42) Meane-while King Edward (the life of this high affaire) proceeded in all things with ripe deliberation and judgement. Therefore to let the Flemings know the want of his triendshippe, hee had for some yeeres before inhibited the transportation the Flemings. mings know the want of his friendshippe, hec had of his Wools; which, and for that the English were

Chap-12 |Edward III. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 49. in a manner become all one with them, by king Ed-

wards marriage with the Lady Philip, not a little advanced the practife of James on his behalfe; which was fped at laft, by occasion of * an ouerthrow giuen to the French-Flemings, who under the conduct of Guy the Bastard of Flanders, brother to the Earle (both of them being wholy French) were placed in the Isle of Cadfant to empeach the arrival of the English, who tooke the said Gay, and slew the most part of his people. This victory was atchieued in the quarrell of the king of England by the Earle of Derbie, the Lord Beauchampe, the Lord Reynald Cobham, the Lord Walter de Manny (an Hennoway) and other of the English Captaines: Of the fame and lucky fortune whereof the faid D' Artewelt, and other of the kings friends, made so wise and seasonable vsc, by letting them see the English were able to protect them, that the Flemings (without any great ftay) became his firme confederates, in presence of the Earle of Gelder at Gaunt, notwithstanding that at the same time the great K. of France, and their own naturall Lord, the Earle, laboured all they could to the contrary.

King Edwards

* Froffard.) Ia Meir. The Walfingh.

(43) But as king Edward was (in the mean space) wholy intent, vpon furnishing himselfe with all convenient things fitte for his warre, (having Captaines and Souldiers, such as his owne noble heart could wish,) so when hee found that the industrious Dutch by their manuall labours, grew to fo great ftrength and opulencie, that their friendshippe bred riualitie in puillant Monarchés, hee, like a father, regarding the publike wealeof his Country, ordained that al Clothworkers, who would repaire hither out of forraine parts, and exercise their trades, should have free accesse and sundry priviledges.By which inuitation as very many were drawne, to was it the principall cause of advancing that honest, best and most beneficiall Trade in the Kingdome, to the great enrichment, strength, and honor thereof. The English Nation was very desirous to set forward this warre, and therefore contributed plentifully, and

the King made bold with Lombards, and the moueable goods of fuch Priories in England, as were Cels to Monasteries in France, thereby to make his coffers (44) The warre which all this while seemed but to be talked of did now beginne to blaze (and indeed a blazing starre of 30 dayes continuance, was supposed by some to foreshew it) whose first torch was lighted by the * French at Southampton, which they almost wholy consumed to ashes, but they with loffe of their Captaine, (a yonger sonne to the Sicilian King) and about three hundreth others, *were

driuen away the next morrow. The French had

fundry shippes of warre or Gallyes, which vnder

colour of passing to the Holy-Land, the king of France

had(with purpose to affaile our Coasts) affembled, as

the*king of England chargeth him:which loffe, yet

was not long vnrequited, either Nation griening o-

ther with mutuall mischiefes.

Edw.3,and Tood.Neuft Lab.Stow.

The French burne Southams

Tho, VV alf.in

Ta literia ficie

An.D. 1338

(45) To appeale and extinguish this deadly quar-rell, there came from Pope Benedict the 12. two Cardinals hither; but one of them in a fpeech to the Clergie, feeming to fauour the French faction; John Archbishoppe of Canterbury, immediately stood vp, and protested, that the Cardinals Arguments were vaine and friuolous: whereupon they foone after departed, and it was every where published through England, that the King had right to the Crown of France, which also hee meant by honourable force to prosecute. Notwithstanding King Edward for avoiding Christian bloud-shed, gaue instructions to the Cardinals, that vpon certaine equal conditions, hee was willing to make an euerlasting peace with the French, & would have beene verie glad (the hazards of warre confidered) to have taken any honest or proportionable offers; one impediment whereof was this , that the French would include the Scots within the

Treatie, whom King Edward would not admit ther-

unto, as purposing (when he had singled them from supplies) to make a full and absolute annexation of their obediences to the English scepter: so the la-

bour and hopes of the Cardinals proued vaine. (46) Philip de Valoys in possession King of France, had lundry great and high motitees to embolden his tanger reasons for flanding-off. First, the regard of honour, and profite, and the abundant meanes which he had, having the whole puissance of France (the fairest kingdome under heaven) at his commandement. Then a confidence which hee reasonably conceived so to divert. or diffract the English forces, by the assured aid of the Seats, as that it should finally ruine the whole enterprife, if not also the principall Actor Edward himselfe. Againe, considering the vastnes of the enterprife, hee judged King Edwards wealth not to bee proportionable, but did well hope, that a short dalliance would confume his treasures. Moreover, hee judged perhaps, that the very thought it selfe of conquering France, was no better in Edward then a young mans dreame, confidering the Realm of England was farre inferiour in bignesse, and multitudes of Subjects, and that there was a Sea betweene, the crossing whereof must double the charge. Lastly, for the friends which King Edward had procured in Dutebland with wonderfull largesse, he knew, would not be held together but with infinite cost and expence, and that by some good meanes or other, hee should make them in whole, or in part vnpro-

(47) For inftification of his cause he had no slen-(47) For inftification of his cause he had no slen-der colours, or reasons. As the before alleadged law or softoms of Fence which they call the called law or custome of France, which they call the Saliek, by the which the French exclude * Gyneiocracie, or " Bodinde Rep. by the which the French exclude "Green French the Whomens Government in Chiefe. Then an Act of the whole French State, by which his right was acknowledged and chablished. Thirdly, King Edwards birth place, by which hee feemed to them a stranger, and for that cause was farre the lesse capable, or rather was directly incapable of popular goodwill among the French. Laftly, for that King Edward in the * beginning of his raigne (though when hee was as yet vnderage,) did in his owne person, both doe Anteg 3. his homage to this very Philip de Paloys, as to the king of France, for his Dutchie of Aquitaine, and alfo*by his Letters-Patents vnder seale did testific as much.

This homage, (the more to bee remembred because * fome attribute much of K. Edwards discontent-*Iome attribute much or n. Laparas Cancinent-ment to the hauty manner of Philip in taking the fame) was performed at Amiens in Picardie. I trou-lead King Edward greatly, to see himselfe making France, 18 years. fubmission to the viurper of that Soueraignetie, which hee thought belonged to himselfe, but to let the French see what kind of Prince he was, he came in fo royall maner appointed, as if he meant to have flrucken them with feare or admiration: Earles, Ba-

rons, and 1 000, horse hee had in his retinue. At the day, his robe was of crimfon veluet, powdered with golden Leopards, his crowne on his head, a fword by his fide, and golden spurres on his heeles. To receive this Duke for the Dutchie of Guyen and Earledome of Ponthieu, Philip de Valoys sate crowned in violet veluet, femined with golden lillies, with all the other Enlignes of royall maieftie, but the homage was done only by word (if one fay true) and not in that full manner which Serres mentioneth. Probable it is, that the haughty carriage of Philip did Grafism greatly incense the Spirit of King Edward, being one

of the most gallant in the world. (48) There is among Writers much time, and labourspent in description of King Edwards iourney, flay and contracts of amity made in Dutchland; but in regard that no greater matter was effected thereby, then the purchase of an opinion of magnificence & nobleneffe among the Queenes Countrymen and Dutch-landers, few lines shall serue to comprehend the narration. The King (having first in Parliament prouided for the gouernance of his Kingdome) with the Queen (then great with Child)

V v v v 2

Bury Welfing. the

Zab.Stow

The French

571

* A.D.1319. Ani

*Fox. 48.0 Mm.p.

The L.Robert Hell Rest. Gee.Buchen.

The matters of

land from the former expedition, but the Brucea par-

ty (vnder their chiefe leader Andrew Murray) issued

from the Loughes, Mountaines, and other their

places of retreat and taftneffe, to readuance their

cause. King Edward once or twice sent Armies, vn-

der valiant Generals to support the Baliols possessi-

on against their violence, whose si cesse was varia-

ble till the death of Murray. After whom the L.

Stewart tooke charge for the Brucean fide, and (vpon

the advantage of King Edwards flacknesse, to finish his Scottish affaires, the matter of France so far pre-

ponderating it) endeauoured to prepare a quiet en-

trance for King Danid. The aide of the Lord Willi-

am Donglas to that purpose was very available, how-

beit not alwayes fortunate, being onerthrowne in a

fet battell by Sir Thomas Berckley at Blackbourne, ha-

uing there with him King Edwards power. To the

vp-shot, and as it were deciding stroke of these late

mileries, there arrived great store of munition out

of France at fuch time as the Lord Robert Steward

hauing lien ten weeks at the fiege of Perth, was almost ready to haue abandoned the same in despaire. Perth

being rendred, the Baliol (whose the quarrell was)

betooke himself into England having small strength

of his owne in the hearts and affections of the Scots,

570

*Notes of record

Creation of

Helinbead.

572

Captaines, with a gallant Company of men of war, failed to Antwerpe, whom Lewis the Emperour met at the City of Colein, where amity was confirmed, and King Edward was conflicted his Lieutemed, and king Earwara was constituted his Lieute-nant, with full authority to gouerne in his name on this fide Colein. By reason of which Vicegerencie King Edward* made out his commandements, and did many things to his advantage and profit. Howfocuer it neither lasted long (for Lewis within a while dishonourably reuoked it,) and did vndoubtedlie scarce quit the cost: for the brauery of that meeting was fo exceeding great, as Edward eafily wan the ge neral opinio of a very noble & puissant king.* Polydor writes, that Edward refused not the office, yet would not exercise the same because he would not displease Pope Benedict, whose enemy the Banarian was.

in his power, and therefore ought not to submit

himselfe, so much as an other King that was not an-

nointed. After his returne to Antwerpe with his

(49) This Emperour (whom belike the Pope The King of hated, for being as proud as himselfe) rooke it ill (as report went) that the King of England humbled not himselfe (at their meeting) to the kisse of his gatiue The Walfes, foot. But it was answered; that the King of England was a King annointed, and had life and member

new power, hee seriously prosecuted his affaire of confederation with the Lords and people of Dutchland, among whom(with great loue and fauour) he and his royall family abode aboue an whole yeere The principall Nobles which entred into this league against the French were these. The Archbishoppe of Colein Prince Elector; The Duke of Brabant; The Duke Coccin Frince Lectury, The Dunce of Braduary, The Dunce of Gelderland, (who hadmarrica the Lady Ifabel King Edwards owne fifter, and about this feafon was of an Earle created a Dunce; The Marquesse of Gulick, Gr.c. And finally, the Hanse townes.

(50) The Flemings, being the most necessary part of this affociation, in regard of their neerenes to the An.D.1338. French, would not engage themselves in an offensive The first quarte warre against the Crowne of France, vnlesse King Eding of the ward would first assume the Title and Armories of that Realme, as the onely lawfull King therof. This of Manner. Proposition was throughly debated and the law of Armes allowing it, hee with the common affent of Tpod. New P. the Flemings and others, tooke the Stile, and quartered the Flower de Lize with the Leopards, or Lions of England, as here we fee annexed; albeit wee fee his former Seale also adorned with two Lize or Lillies: whether in token of his mothers French descent, or as a couert note of his own right to the Frenchcrown



it is vncertaine.

(51) Polydor * Virgil must have a warie and favourable Reader, or hee will beethought to bee of opinion, that William the Conqueror bare his Leopards quartered, then which nothing is more vntrue, nor more vnlikely. Others againe may suppose, that we have not here described them according to their right bearing, as certainly according to their present bearing wee haue not; but the truth is, the golden Lillies of France, which now are borne in triangle. were in those dayes born, and advanced Semi.

(52) And whereas the Armories of France are placed here in the dexter and more honorable quarter, yet there are probabilities, that it was not fo at France at the this their first conjunction. For in the Seale of Queen Isabel (this King Edwards mother) the Armories of Sin Ribert Letten

If abel (this King Edwards mother) the Armories of lath inch a feale

of O. Utable

Armories of the husbands line

of O. Utable

Armories of the husbands line

of O. Utable

Armories of the husbands line

of O. Utable (and therefore to have precedence) were marshalled where now the Flower de Luces shine. But whether to gratifie the French, or because that was the more

> Kings raignedisposed as here we see. (53) When King Edward had thus affumed the Title and Armes of that Realme, hee published the fame vnder his seale, setting the name of England first, and sent his Letters Patents to the frontiers of the cnemies Dominions, fixing them younthe dores of Churches, aswell to declare the right and reason of his doings, as to exempt fuch from the danger of the comming storme, who vpon this notice would

ancient and greater Monarchie, they were in this

acknowledgehim their Lord and rightfull Soucraigne. These proclamations or admonishments thus disulged, he burnt and spoiled the North parts of France vp as farre as * Turwin, though the time of the yeere were very vnfeafonable, and contenting *AdamMerim himselfe therewith for a beginning, gaue place to the sharpenesse of Winter, returning to the Queen his wife at Antwerpe where hee kept a roiall Christmas. In which Citythis yeere was Lionel (afterward Duke of Clarence) borne.

(54) His affaires growing ripe in those parts, he leaves his Queene and Children in Brahant, as an asfured pledge of his returne, and about Candlemas fured pledge of his returne, and about candemas hippes himselfs for England, where in a Parliament in Programment in the Companies of the Control of the Con Farmers and Accountants till the tenth yeer of his Raigne, and all old debts due to any of his Pre-decessors. Finally, hee confirmed that famous Magna Charta, and of the Forest with Some other.

(55) There was no talke now but of conquering France; Musters taken throughout the Kingdom, Armourers and trades of warre(to be cherished even in the securest peace) were full of employment, and the desire of battell waxt feruent euery where.

Chap-12 |Edward III ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 49. 1

Meane while to hold the world in suspense of the successe, God distributed the fortune of attempts diversly. Burdeaux (the capitall City of Aquitaine, and then English) gaue an excellent testimony of her loyalty, nor lesse of martiall witte and valour. For the French Armie comming before her, she to abuse their hope, set open her gates, and displayed vpon her Towers the golden Lillies, as if shee were theirs; but the French which securely entred found little good hospitality. Sir Oliver de Ingham was Captain and Lord Warden there for King Edward, who with his Garrifon-Souldiers, and aide of the inhabitants, flew of them great multitudes, and preferred Burdeaux. But in the opposite parts, william Montacute
Earle of Salisbury, and Robert Vfford Earle of Suffolke,* after many honourable decdes performed for aduancement of King Edwards affaire, were by the French taken Prisoners, while presuming too much vpon their courages and fortune, they * ran too far into their danger, at the Towne of Lile in

The Walf.

(56) But King Edward being ready now to repassers Seas, had certaine intelligence that the French lay in wairabout Sluice in Flanders, to inretrient, in with a night, Nation 400, hippes, who therefore, prepared accordingly, intending to open his way by force. He fet faile from Harried you Saint khom Baptilis Bear, toward the Coast where his enemies attended, strengthning himselfe with the Northerne Nauie of England, which the L Robert Morley brought vnto him, fo as hee had in all about two or three hundreth faile. His battels having the advantages of windes and funne, hee fet on the French with incredible furie and force, in

the very mouth of the Hauen of Sluice vpon Midfommer day, where begannea most bloudy and ter-rible fight, the end whereof set the Garland vpon King Edwards head. Himselfe was * wounded in that fight, and loft * foure valiant Knights (Montbermer, Latimer, Boteler', Popnings) with fundries other of his English slaine therein, Butthe slaugh

ters of the French party were lamentable, for thirty thouland are confelled to have perished not halfe of their shippes escaped vntaken or vnsuncke. A

greater glory then this, the English are scarse found to have atchieued at any battell at sca.

(57) The Crowne of France seemed already to bee placed vpon King Edwards Temples, fo much was attributed to this great victory, but fuch a Con-queft was not the worke, of one day. Which King Edward well understanding; refreshed his victori-ous Armie, and upon thing if with his Confeeds rates forces (which repaired to him on all sides) matrates forces, when repaired to find on a fide's final-ched forth, hauing one of the most puillanc highs that euer any King of England led, as wherein were neere an hundreth thousand Souldiers English, and Dutch. Hee had also in his Company the Dukes of Brabant and Gelder, and many other potent mem

bers of the Empire, and (as * some write) the imperiall Eagles displayed in the head of his Armie.as hee that was Vicegerent of the facred Roman Empire. In this wife hee approached the Northerlie parts of France, where exposing all to spoile & fire, he fare downe with his whole Forces about Turney, meaning to take in the same, aswell to bee a seate of

meaning to take in the lame, anyel to be a leate of Warre, as place of fure retreat and refuge. (58) Philip, though inftly gricued with his wofull loffe fullained at Sea, yet to encounter, and crash so great an cuill in the first approaches therefore. of, had provided such an Armie, as beseemed the Maiestie and greatnesse of that renowned Kingdom. Writers speake of an hundreth thousand fighting menassembled under his command, and that befides Princes, Dukes, Earles, and other illustrious Persons, there was the valiant old King of Bohemia, and *Lewis king of Nasarre. K.Edward hearing the fame, drew forth his people into the open field with purpose to giue battell:

(19) It may seeme a thing greatly tending to

King Edwards glory, to remember the * offer which the what hee fent to King Philip before hee laid his fiege to Transp. In which without faluting him by any o-ther title then of Philip of Valey, hee challengeth him, for avoiding the effution of Christian bloud, to fight with him hand to hand in fingle battell; or (if that milliked) then each to bring an hundreth to the field, and trie the event with fo (mall an hazard) or otherwife, within ten dayes to joyne full battell with all their forces neere to Turney. Whereunto Philip made no direct answere, neither with his honour could, alledging that the letters were not fent to him, the King of France, but barely to Philip of Valote. Neuerthelesse, hee gaue him to vnderstand, that his meaning was to beat him out of France, hauing hope in Christ (from whom hee derived his power)loto doe.

(60) The honour of the warre in those ages cannot bee enough commended, in which the noble old formes of hostility were put in practife, by defiances, Heraldes, and publike affignations of day and place of fight, and not by skulking surprises and vnder-hand stealthes, more neerely resembling high-way robberies, then lawfull battell,

(61) Thefetwo huge hoafts (which had they beene vnited for the good of Christendome, might haue worthily made the Turke looke pale) being now in fight, and the cloud of warre ready in a manner to diffolue it felfe into showers of bloud doe neuerthelesse without one stroke fall off, and returne to their fenerall Countries, not without the wonder and reioicement of peaceable men, but not of the English and German Souldiers, who propounded to themselues death with glory, or riches by Conquest and victory, who now had scarse their

(62) It is not meet that the name of that person

who did performe to bleffed an office, should bee concealed. It was a woman of honour (but at that time a professed * Nunne in the Abbey of Fontenels) the Lady Inne of Valoys, fifter to this Philip, widdow of William late Earle of Hennult, and mother to King Edwards wife; her charitable endeauors were ftrong ly holpen by * two Cardinals, who follicited peace together with her. Great interest of mediation she had in either respect, here a brother, there a sonne in law, and shee sailed not to plie them both. The Truce was concluded; the rather for that King Philip was aduised from all parts, not to set his whole fortunes youn the Die and chance of a Battell. And Torunes you the Die and chain crow a batten. And Edward (on the other field) meaning nothing lefte, then not to haue profecuted the war you the en-couragement of his late Sea-victorie, was fo defit-tute of money through the fault of fits Officers in England, as heewas the fooner drawne, if not enforced to embrace to honest a colour of returning from the fiege of Turney; which neverthelesse did but deferre the miseries of France, not determine them: & whereas that glory, which the vpper hand in this journey would have brought, could not have beene pure and meere vnto him, because the Dutch (whose aide hee vsed)would have claimed no small

The chiefe Articles of the truce were; That it should endure till Midsommer day then Thechiefpoint next enfuing, and that the Prisoners should be fer of the Truce, at liberty without any ransome on both sides, vpon condition to render themselves againe, or pay their fenerall ransomes, if peace were not in the meane time concluded. By vertue of this treaty and truce, the Earles of Salisbury and Suffolke were delinered.

Here it troubled our *VV alfingham, that King Edward should bee left so destitute, and needy by the anarice or fraud of his officers at home, as for that respect to give oper so faire an oportunity, by which hee might as it were by a continued line, and by infifting and preffing youn the steppes of his late suc-

thare therein, the English Cheualrie onely had the name and burthen of such great Acts as after fol-

74		ESSION OF Monarch 49.	,			Chap.12	Edward II J. ENGLANDS N	1ONARCHS. Monarch 49.	575
1	ceffe haue happily proceeded, when as yet his friends were vacorrupted, and in prefence; and therefore	"full by putting it to any arbitration. That it could not but bee admired, why he should now enter a	1	į.			&c. That their kinimen are in Wales and Cornwall)	his courage know him worthic of fuch a fonne,)	1
j	bemones the vn worthinesse thereof towards so wor-	"mitie with Philip de Valoys the wrong-doer, fith, ha-	Adam, Merim.				was become the field of Mars and martiall furies.	brake irefullie forth into these words. Though	1
	thy a Prince, adding; "That if in very deed they had	"uing scene his apparent right, hee had entred with	in Edw. 3.	l .		- 1	But the powers of those two mightie Kings being	Lewis take the French kings part, I will fight with	
- 1	scanned and exactly weighed with themselves the Acts	"him into league against the said Philip: That it was				1	vpon point, before the City of Nants in high Bri-	them both. And whither he were innited with the	
l	of all the English Kings past from the very first Mo-	"alfo agreed, that he might conclude any tempora-					taine, to cut out their divers shares in fortunes Patri-	fame of King Arthurs Table, and the Knights ad-	A.D. 17
1,	narch, they would not have found that ever this Iland	"rie Truce(though not a finall accord) without his	1				mony, with the edge of the fword, loe againe God	uenterous thereof, or for that he knew honourable	1
- 1	brought forth a Prince of Juch excellency at 6 * vmipe-	"confent, if need should be, as in this case at Turney				1	inclined their hearts (as if he would faine haue done	Company and exercise in Armes, to be the naturall	"Tpod.Nen
ENT.	ned yeeres.	"investigation of the calculation ļ	l		1	nothing but flew his vengeance in the (cabbard) by	parents of excellent fouldiers, it is agreed, that he e-	* }**********	
- 1	(64) King Edward greatly discontented with	"it was, That this renocation feemed to bee made	Ì	1		1	the carefull diligence of two Cardinals, to accept of	rected a building at his Castle of Windfore, which	
ntof	fuch of his officers, through whose default he was	"fomewhatabortiuely, for fo much as the Imperia-		1		1	a truce, which was concluded fanuary the 19. at the	Chould be called the Paum of the sub of sismumber	
at had	thus in a manner constrained to let slip the present	"lifts had promifed the Vicar-shippe should stand	i.	1		1 .	Priory of Malestret, vpon fundry points, whereof	rence was fixe hundred foot, where Knights and	Round Ta
e King	profession of the design of the present	"good till hee had conquered France, or the greater		1		i	these (as to the purpose of our Story) are the prin-	men of warre should have their entertainement of	rected for
füre.	profecution of his designe, returned with his Queen	"portion thereof. Dated thus; Londini, Anno		ł			cipall.	dier, at his charge by one hundred pounds by the	at at the s
1	into England, to take revenge of their mildemeanors,	regninostri Francia, 2. Regni verò nostri Anglia, 15.	"Y pod. Neuft.	i		1	(71) That the two Kings of England and France	weeke, though afterward through occasion of his	ĺ
burie.	where hee committed * some to prison, put others	But Lewis of Bauar to Edward thus * inconstant, and		l			should fend certaine of their blood royall to the	warres he abated that fum to twenty pounds weeke-	1
	from their places, and so bestirred himselfe, that by	faith-breaking, continued toward Philip stedfast,		1			Court of Rome (by a day certaine) there to argue	ly. In emulation whereof, Philip de Valoys (know-	1
- 1	occasion thereof much displeasure grew betweene	without either amending Philips fortunes thereby,	i	1			their feuerall titles, and rights to the French Monar-	ing that all this tended but to preparations against	1
- 1	the King and Iohn Archbishoppe of Canterbury, who complained of manifest violences done against the Li-	or himselfe increasing in Iustice or honestie, that it	1	i		# How was be in.	chy, not as before a Inage, but as a friend * indifferent	him,) erceted the like in his Court, to invite the	ł
-	complained of manifest violences done against the Li-	might eatily bee seene hee was endued with qua-	1	l		# How was he in- different, who interdicted Flan-		mm,) erected the like in his Court, to induce the	
- 1	berties of the Church and English Nation, comprehended	lities, which ill became the Imperial height.				interdicted Flan-	to both, and that the King of Scots, and the Earle	Knights and men at Armes of Almain and of Italie	1
	in Magna Charta. And whereas the King did open-	(68) You have heard a part of great king Filmerde			9	ders for fiding with Edward?	of Henault, should likewise send to give their assent	from repairing to King Edward. One thing Philip	1
- 1	ly charge the Archbishoppe to haue beene a prin-	victorious fortunes in battell, both by land and fea.	ceffione required			MAN SHARING	for so much as concerned them.	did shrewdly and politickly, in giving leave to his	1
- 1	cipall perswader of his entring into league with the	bee not ignorant of his Pietie (the foueraigne orna-	ceffions required of the Bifhops	1		1	(72) That eithers friends, adherents, and sequels,	subjects to fell downe his woods freely for building	i
- 1	Almaines against the French, willing him to take no	ment and latery of Soueraione Princes I whereof in	by the King.	1			should be comprehended in the truce, and that the	of Ships, whereby his Nauie was greatly augmen-	1
- 1	care for treasure, because himselfe would see him abundantly surnished from England, out of the leuie of gran-	one act of his wee will tender unto you in the file of	1	1		1	truce should extend it selfe to the titlers in Britaine	ted, and the rather wrought much mischiese after-	1
- 1	dantly furnished from England , out of the leuie of oran-	that age an Effay and tafte. He having a purpose to	1			1	and their fides; and that the Cardinals should doe	ward. About this time one of the chiefe starres in	1
- 1	ted Subsidies, and profits of the Crown: and that through	pursue his enterprise for France, after sundry Chri-		1			their best to obtaine absolution from the sentence of	the firmament of the English Cheualry fell into the	1
j	defect of the Archbishoppes performance, hee was	ftian and holy confiderations of Gods judgements,		1			Interdict executed vpon the Countrey of Flaun-	Graue, William Montacute King of Man, and marshall	1.
- 1	not onely contrained to give over his hold for the	and of his owne effate and rightfull cause, he turnes	1	}			ders.	of England of * whose noble acts to write worthilie	"Tood D
- 1	present, but also to embogge himselfe in the Bankers	bis forces his Difference in 1 C]			(73) That the truce should continue for three	were a commendable matter.	1
- 1	and Viurers bookes, the Archbishoppe thereunto	his speech to his Bishoppes in these words. Cum "igitur constitutisitis, & Seeing therefore you are	1	1			yeeres; that prisoners or moueables taken on either	(77) But the French King, perceiuing that a terri-	-
. 1	made answere: That hee desired in open Parliament it	igitur confittuititis, &c. Seeing therefore you are		1		l l	fide (hould be mutually discharged; that traffique	ble tempest was likely to fall vpon him from forth of	1
hop	might appeare, through whose default the City of Tour-	"ordained of God on the behalfe of men, that you	1	1		i	and paffages should bee open; and that all other	England, waxed cruell in his icalousie, and * put sun-	*Serres
ie •	nay was not taken, and directly laid the whole blame from	"fhould offer gifts and facrifices for finne, liften wee	1	1		A.D. 1342		dry principall men of Normandy, Picardy, and Guien	
٠ ١	him Gle I C	"befeech you to the premisses, and not to our on-	l .				truce made: which being fairely engroffed in an * In-	to death, for no other crime, but that they were	:1
- 1	bimselfe and from his, upon such as were dayly Courtiers,	"ly, but to the publike dangers, powring forth	1			* The VV alfin. Hardeng,	ftrument, two great Peeres of each part, took oathes	English in affection; among whom are reckoned Sir	-1
- 1	(whom walfingham cale Angliciregy, Englishmen for	"prayers to the molt high for our happy fucceffe.	1	i		marang,	vpon perili of the foules of their Kings, to observe	Oliver de Cliffon * Recen Perfe and Genfrey of Male	
- 1	the King) who serving their owne turnes with the gene-	" Supplying the place of Moses, so that wee and ours	1	i			the contents fincerely.	Oliner de Clisson, * Bacco, Persie, and Geoffrey of Male- fireiet Knights of the best note; Sir Godfrey of Hare-	*Polyd.
- 1	rall abuse, would expose him, and his vniustly to the enuy	"may prevaile against adversaries, in the lifting of		1		1	(74) The possession of the City of Fanner in	court brother to the Earle of Harcourt being also	1
- 1	of their fact. Yea, some there are, who, more then so,	"your hands to heaven; and that God would bee	1	0.1			to C. Print in the Emplifymen Gillians the Gold	fummoned to Paris, appeared in England, whither	
- 1	will have the Archbishop seeme to practise against	"the rather pleased to enlarge his fanour rowards					bale Brittain, the Englishmen still kept, that(if setled	he fled, and became a special firebrand in the ap-	1
- 1	the kings farther good fortunes in France; which, if	"vs,(the number of Interceffors being multiplied,)	1	1			peace followed not vpon this truce) they might	he ned, and became a speciali mediand in the ap-	1
- 1	it be true, it is no hard matter to find out the prin-	"Caule preachings and proceffion and other offices	1	ł			haue some hold and certaine footing-place, from	proaching combustion.	1
- 1	cipall motiue thereunto.	" of appealing his displeasure, to be mercifully exer-	1 .	1			whence to make head againe, and march into the	(78) It was not Pope Clements mediation, or di- ligence in discussing the Titles and Pretences of these two puissant Monarkes, which could preuent	King Ed
. 1	(65) For certainely the Pope (Benedict 12,) was	"cifed through our Cities and Diocesses, that the	,	l			heart of France. In this warre Robert de Artois	ligence in discussing the Titles and Pretences of	clares th
12-	nothing pleafed with the fucceffes of Edward, at least	"God of mercies would extend ouer vs, and our Ar-	1	1		ł	Earle of Richmond, a principall inftigatour of King	these two puissant Monarkes, which could preuent	ken.
:r	wife with the war it felfe, as pretending it was perni-	"mies the hand of his Benediction, and so direct our	l	1		1	Edward, died of a wound, and Iohn of Montford did	the fatall punishment of France, yet according to the	:1
the	cious to Christendomesthe blame wherof the French	"Acts in his good pleasure, that they may redound		1.		. 1	not long ouer-live this truce, after whose death most	Articles of the treatise at Malestroics, either Prince	:
- 1	charged vpon the Englifb, as vnlawfully claiming,	to his glory and our profite, and to the commodi-	1	1		* Falian.	part of Britaine came into the hands of * Charles of	fent his particular Orators, where the difficulties	s
- 1	as the English did vpon the French for vnlawfully	Second arise of all any fairle full Call Commodi-	1	i '			Blois,	rose so thicke and intricate, as Clement * dispairing to	Polyd.
- 1	detaining. This Pope therefore interposeth him-	"ty and quiet of all our faithfull Subjects. This ô	1	l		An.D. 134	(75) King Edward returning home after the	cleare them, put ouer their farther view till another	rl
2.	Colfo and mark The Journal of the Life of the Lorine	Edward, was indeed to beginneat the right end; for		!		A.reg. 17.	Truce, neglected not his domesticke affaires, but en-	time. But King Edward affirming the truce to be ma-	- 1
	felfe, and puts * Flanders vnder Interdict, as having	euen the Heathen taught, * to beginne with God, and	* Ab Ion e princi-	l			acted the Statute of Provisors, vpon this occasion.	nifeftly broken, * by the beheading & perfecuting of	flore .
	difloyally left their own Earle, and their chiefe Lord	euen the Heathen taught, * to beginne with God, and thy following fuccesses declared that thy prayers	pium.	1		Prouifors.	Pope Benedict being dead, Clement the 6, succeeded;	his friends in Normandy & elfwhere, fignifies fo much	h , r
ì	Philip, King of France, contrarie to their Oath and	were acceptable.		Į		-Platina.	a man of *fingular learning, but *extreemely profuse	to the Pope, that Battel and not Parlance should de-	-1
!	Allegiance; but they for their defence and inftifica-	(69) And now once agains the French and Eng-	1	I		*T be. Walf.	in giuing, who, by way of Provision, had bestowed	remine his right and ritle: His promitions of men.	ı. I
. 1	tion answered, that Edward was the onely lawfull	uh powers were at point to tric their forming by	I	1			fundry choice Benefices in England vpon Forrei-	of ships, of weapon, of victuals, of treasure, of al	úl
.	King of France, and Philip (to whom they had Iworn)	battell, vpon fiding with others Claimes as erft they		1			ners. For preuention whereof (as of athing which	things, needfull to so braue and daring an enterprize	
- 1	a meere vsurper, and therefore notwithstanding that	had done for their owne. The quarrell was founded	1			1	the King and Peeres would not endure,) it was made	were worthy of the greatnesse, courage, strength, ri	61
- 1	Interdict, or the Papall decision of the controuersie,	vpon a title to the Dutchie of little Britaine. Arthur		. 💲		Treafon to brig	high Treason by law, for any to bring such Papall pro-	ches, and maiesty of a King of England. Into Gas-	cl
	they perfifted still in their adherence.	Duke thereof had two wines: by Reatric his first				in any Papall	mgn treaton by law, for any to oring such Papali pro-	coigne he fends that valiant great Lord Henry of Lan-	
ip of	(66) But the more to draine and weaken the	wife, her had two former toler of resugged Dules a	1			Prouifions.	uisions into the Kingdome. And for instification	- de Gorde of Darke with anallant company of	F
ra- ra-	mighty streame of the English supportations, Lewis	Guy; and by Iolant his second wife, he had Iolin of						eafter, Earle of Derby, with a gallant company of leaders and troups of fouldiers, where he atchieuce	äl
ung	of Bassar the Emperour fodainely (by fuch practifes	Montfort, Duke John living without Iffue, affured		1		Ward 3.		leaders and troups of founders, where he attituded	41
42.	as were vied on behalfe of the French) recalled his	to /ane (daughter of his brother Graniba diad ha		•			moue admiration, but aftonishment; and indeed	many great things, for the defence and enlargemen of that Dutchie, taking Cities, Cassles and Towne	11
	Vicar-shippe or delegation, which hee had made to	fore him) the Ducall Crowne of livele and in		1		Edward creat	ed this pruned age affords few so graue and solide. In	of that Dutchie, taking Cities, Carries and I owne	15
ı	Edward, to exercise imperial power in lower Germa-	fore him) the Ducall Crowne of little Britaine: vp- on which entaile, Charles of Bloys (Nephew to Philip		1		Prince of Wale	which Parliament also the Lord Edward, the Kings	of which lake the French Kings eldelt lonne recour	:-1
	wie, offering his best helpe notwithstanding, (as ha-	King of France) marrieth the Lader to Philip		I		1	eldeft sonne, was created Prince of Wales. He was	red divers not long atter; and discombited the end	<u>*</u> 1
	uing power from Philip to that purpole,) to procure			ı		1	fo renowned a Gentleman, (why doe we say he was,	red divers not long after; and discomfitted the ene my in battell. The Scots artempting against the	e
	him honorable conditions as a Mediator betweene			1			as if he could at any time cease to be, whom fame	West Marches of England, by the vigilancy and pro) <u>-</u>
1	them The presence of his falling from Vine P	full possession: but Duke tohn being once dead, tohn	1			1	harb made immorrall?) that the high praise before	wolfe of fuch as were in trust for those parts. as the	el
- 1	them. The pretence of his falling from King Edward,	of Montfort raileth warre as the furning heire male.		i i		Wal for	given by Walfingham to his father as * excelling all the	Bishop of Carlil, the Lords Percie, Neuile, and Lucle	6
1	and concluding amitie with his enemie, was for that	Philip King of France tooke part with Charles of Plais				1	Prince which went before him, may be paralelled in the	very valiant gentlemen, were forced to * retire into	O Tool.
1	King Edward without his privitie, had confented to	and Edward king of England with the Lord John of				i i	Sonne, as surpassing in martiall deeds, all the Princes	Scatland It was the practife of either Prince to di	i-
. 1	a Truce at the City of Tourney with Philip.	Montfort.		1	1	1	that haue liued after him.	nort and diffract eithers puillance, we Philips in Gal	<i>(</i> -1
de	(67) To these renocatorie lines King Edward	(70) Great and bloudie mischiefes sprang out of		'		1	(76) His noble father King Edward (who had	legione and hee ours, by his perpetuall, and conitan	181
rour.	" made this wife and noble answere; That the Em-	their firongly improrted factions, which had now				1	(70) Fits noble father King Edward (Who had	confederates, the Scots. Our Edward notwithftan	n-1
	"perours zeale to make attonement hee could not	drawne king Edward thither in person; and little Bris	A kind of VP alez	l		1	ftill his eie fixed vpon France as the marke of his	ding could doe it the leffe, for that his conflar	nel
- 1	"but greatly commend, withing, that at the instance	lathe (which may well in a fort hee called water in	in France.			1	Conquest) having notice among other things, by a	friend I aques van Arteweld (who was become as	ir
1	"offo potent a Mediator, an honourable Peace (if	France, the Britane chieffy the Britant Protessing)		1	messenger from the Pope, that Lewis of Bassar had	mend laques van Arteweia (who was become as	ne
1	"that were possible) might bee made; but his Title	ruder Britons, declaring at this present by their lan-		l		1	whollie submitted himselfe, and was fully absoluted	were the popular Tribune of Flanders) was * flair	ne "face-
	"being cleare enough, he meant not to make doubt-	guage, and fundry locali Names, as Lanion, Triguier,		ł		1	from all censures, with confirmation vnto him of	in a mutiny by fuch as were of the French faction.	
- 1	5 Golden and a control of the	guage, and fundry local Names, as Lamon, Triguier,	1 1			1	the Imperial diademe : the King, (that you may by	(79) Edward not being able to recall his flair	,,e

Saile. No man is faid to know whether he bent his them to fland. We professe that the nature of our course, so well he could trust himselfe, and so wisely undertakings will not brooke descriptions at large a King Edward in France with bloody colours. free his Councels from the possibility of discoucrie. you shall haucit as we may, that is, as remembring; He went not to warre by rote, but by book; wifdome that innumerable great atcheiuemenrs reft behind. was Herbenger and marshall of his valour; who shall fomewhat impatiently attending their relation. The English painted fay he knew not how to conquer? It was not long (87) Therefore, the holy name of God first ritely but he came to anchor in the Hauen of Hogy Saint innocated, King Edward, without shewing the least Vaft, in Constantine, a great cape of land or penile in Normandy. His*land forces did muster twenty and figne of perturbation, but full of an Heroick affurednesse, had ordered his people in three battels, with their wings and fuccours. The Vaward dispofive hundred horse, and thirty thousand foote, most fed into the forme of an Hearle, where the Archers of which were Archers. The lights, and glories of his Armie, were the Prince of wales (then about fixflood in front, and the men of armes in the bottome teene yeers old, who was then by his father knightwas under the yong Lyon of Wales, Prince Edward ed)many braue Earles, Lords, Knights, and expert and with him many of the prime and fagest Captaines: Beauchamp Earle of warwick, Godfrey of Hare. Cheifs, the English going cheerefullie, as having gotten such a King as answered their warlike dispositions. The Earle of Huntington had charge of his court, The Lords Stafford, Laware, Bourchier, Clifford, Cobham, Holland, &c. In the second battell were, The Earles of Northampton, and Arundell; the Lords, Ross, Willoughby, Basset, Saint Albine, Multon, Gre. The third and last battell was commanded in cheise by Nauy : himfelfe takes & were revenge for the blood of his friends upon the Norman Townes and people, protesting he facrificed them * to Cliffon, Baro, Percie, and the reft. Their heads were fet vpon the chiefe King Edward himselfe, with the residue of his No-Gate of Carentine, for which cause hee slew all that bles and people. In every one of these battels, becould be found therein, and turning the whole town fide the wings, were a just proportion of men at armes and Archers, but nothing so thinne and few into Cinders gaue it to their funerall. He tooke the populous and rich City of Caen, & with his dreadfull hoft burning and spoiling round about, marched vp as some of our * writers alledge, who mention not aboue 9000, all together, who were at least thrice almost as farre as the very walles of Paris, brauing as many in their whole numbers, and not without King Philip to neerc.
(74) Who had not flept all this while, but was * purueied of one of the fulleflarmies which euer (88) King Edward closed his battels at their back, (as if he meant to barricado them from flying,) by were seene in France. King Edwards people rich with felling and plashing of Trees, placing his carriage spoile seemed not vnwilling to return. They were now there and other impediments whatfoeuer, having in the enemies Country between the two good rivers of sein and some, for they had passed the sein at Poisse, commanded * all men to put from them their horses, which were left among the carriages. Thus all whose Bridge (as all other betweene Rose and Paris) waies of fafety by flight being preuented, the necel-fity did vndoubtedly double their courages. Thus had beene broken downe by the French, and now (notwithstanding any opposition) in a short space placed to the best advantage, King Edward visiteth repaired. It was thought fit to feeke pallage out of their ftraights, which could not be by Bridges, for they were broken by the French. This search the ranckes in person, riding upon a pleasant * Hob-by, (hauing onely a white rod in his hand, as if hee would chaftise fortune,) betweene the two marshals for paffage, was by the enemy interpreted a kind of of his field; whose very presence, with a few seaso-nable and vnenforced words on behalfe of God and flight, and Edward could not but be willing to nourish their temerity, to draw them on securely to de-firuction by such a seeming searc. his right, in fleed of long Orations, did inspire the (85) The river of Some, betweene Abeuille and the Sea, at a low water bath a paffable and grauellie (89) Our writers describe not vnto vs the quality foord, knowne by the name of Blanch Taque; this or face of the gound of Crefey where this battel was was discouered to him by one Gobena prisoner. But determined (though verie much doth depend vpon choise of place,) neither the exact figures, or severall the French King (best acquainted in his owne Countrey)to empeach this paffage, had before sent thether numbers of euery feuerall battel, their distances, a Norman Baron of special note, one Godmar du Foy, and a 1000 thousand horse with at least 6000 foot; wings or other warlike formes, nor finally what Pallifado, trench, or other denife was in this or that quarter vsed, to keepe-off and breake the furious but Edward, (whom as obstacles made impetuous, fo nothing could dismay,) enters himselfe into the charge of men of Armes, beforethey came at the Archers, principall workemen at this bloody iour-Foord, *crying, He that loves me let him follow me, as ncy. But thus lamely are things commended to Posteone that resoluted either to passe, or die. Who can tell the efficacy of fuch a Generals spirit, but they, who have had the happinesse to follow under the rity, where the Actors themselnes take no careto see the particulars orderly and according to the truth delineated; but either are vnlearned, or give themconduct? The paffage wan, and Du Foy defeated in feluesto the bodily fruition of their passed trauels, a manner, before he was almost fought with, (the incomparable courage of his enemies appalling him,) rather then to exercise their minds in profiting he brought to King Philip fewer by a paire of thouthemselves and others by such relations as are made fands, then he carried forth, besides terrour, and an with life and art. This we find, that the place of euill figne of that which followed. The English, the Englishmens battels was the Towne of Crescie, and Forest, and therefore apt with small labour to be who knew not what it meant to run away, but were made inaccessible, or at leastwife difficult for horse before resolued to line & die with such a Souereigne. had reason now much more to resolue the same, to enter vpon; that also the English battels were marshalled to the most advantage for giving succour one vnto the other; and that there were * Shields (86) King Edward was neere to Crefcie in the County Ponthies, lying betweene the rivers of Some or Pauises to shelter our Archers from the Genoand Anthy (which viquestionably belonged vito him in right of his mother,) there most vigilantly prouides he for his defence. King Philip, fet on fire with this difafter, precipitates to battell for accom-(90) By this time King Philip (whose countenance is * faid to have changed thereat,) was in fight plishment of Godsanger against France; being the of the English. Hee had with him the two Kings of Boheme and Maiorea, and almost innumerable other rather drawne, by the varuly vanity of his huge great Princes, Dukes, Earles, Barons and Gentlemen multitudes, (for by what other words doe * an hun-Serves Faich bus dred or fix-score thousand men deserue to bee calof inferior marke bearing armes; nor those onlie ed?) who never left ouer-taking one the other, French, but very many of them Almains and Dutch, left you should suppose, he had drawneaway Lewis rill the view of the English banners and battels put

Chap. 12. Edward, IIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 49.

reill ard.

Serres

577

(95) Therefore King Edward himselfe was sent vnto, whose battel houered like a tempest in a cloud, resident o aide ouerwhich, vpon the hillocke of a Windmill, with Prince. his helmet on, (which neuer came off till all was done) he indiciously watcht, beholding the whole field, and ready to enter into the conflict when just necessity should inuite. You shall heare a most noble answere: The messenger dispatched from the Earle of Northempto, and others, vpon a render repect to their young Princes fafety, having declared to the King, that the Lords required his presence, for that his sonne was in danger, the bad him return and fay; Let them fend no more to mee for any adven-

hee brought not men to their fuccours, hee brought such accession of courage and spirite, as hee that should say that King Edward failed them at their neede, should neither vnderstand what belongs to magnanimitie, nor the effect of such a checke from so excellent a Generall: of note a current rules to executive who neutriheleste, was maturely watchfull our the good of his childe and people : on the other side King Philip (whose quarted it was) did not forsake the duery of a noble Childe: personaure personaure in the contract of the contract but fo long contended in his owne person, till his greedescapes b horse was * slaine vnder him with arrowes, himselfe "Sorre. horse was *slaine vinder nim with allowes, miniment *twice dismounted, and wounded both in the necke *Tyod.News. Adam Merin and thigh: but then the Lord Iohn of Henault, Earle

Chap-12 Edward III. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 49. 1 of Beaumont, (who had long fince quit King Edwards Server faith, that King Edward came at last to scruice) sets him againe on horsebacke, and the

French (out of a loyall defire to his preferuation) crithe battell, and ed to retire him out of the fight, who rather feemed willing to end his dayes in so noble companie: which ming made an end thereof, The voice was as it were the vp-shot and last Gaspe of that most cruell consist, where none as yet were taformer words fept to his forme ken to mercy vpon any termes. (which are also in Serres) mfinu-are nothing leife. After their King had preserved himselfe, the whole

power of the French gaue away, and fought to faue it lelfe by flight, whom the English, warely fighting vpon the defensive, and loath to hazard such a victory, by breaking their rancks to pursue the enemie too farre in the night time, (which now was come ypon them,) fuffered them to be holden in chase by their owne just feare, contented to make good their ground, by standing still vpon their guard according to true discipline. For they saw not as yet the bottome of their danger, and knew that there were fo many escaped, as might well serue to ouerwhelme their Army with their multitudes. (97) King Edward seeing the coast for the present

cleare of all his enemies, advanceth with his vn-King Edward and the Prince tought battell towards his victorious fonne, & most affectionately embracing and kiffing him, faid, Faire

Holling.

*Grafrent

"Tood Neuft.

Some, God fend you good perseuerance to so prosperous beginnings; you have nobly acquit your selfe, and are well worthy to have the Governance of a Kingdome entrusted unto you for your valour. To which the most cheualrous of young Princes replied in filence, most humbly falling on his knees, before his triumphant farher.

(98) Here there may be some controuersie, whetherehe exemplary manhood of the English, or their fingular pietie, were moreto be commended: but who will not infinitely preferre the latter, chiefly in Souldiers, among whom it is viually most wanting Great was the victorie, great was their proweffe, & great the glory; but they like true Christian knights and Souldiers, forbare all boast, referring the whole thankes and honour of their prescruation to God the true Author thereof. The night was fo very darke, as if it had mourned for the day times bloud fhed, therefore they made * store of fires, lighted torches, and candles, carefully tending their wounded companions, and modestly reioycing in their

owne faire aduenture. (99) But the next morning presented new works for such a mist having overspread the earth, that they could scarse see hard at hand, yet were * new swarms of French abroad, who came from fundrie Cities Holingto.
The French are and good townes, as Roan, Beaucis, &c. to have joy ned with King Philip in the deligned spoile of the againe encoun-tred and viter! English; these being mette with by King Edwards broken.

Paul, Aempl. faith
that the English
fet vp French
Banners, and by
that stratagem
drewthem to
destruction. people, were in fundry places ouerthrowne and flaine, and multitudes of fuch as had loft their way in the last flight, were severely put to the sword, as the English chanced vpon them, * where they lay lurking in hedges, bushes, and by-wayes. The Earles of Northampton, * Suffolke and Norfolke, * had the execution of the French which fled from this laft ouerthrow, for the space of about nine miles English Ypod.Neuftr. from the ground where they encountred.

(100) There was leafure now to take an account of the flaine; which vpon the enemies fide amounted, not onely in the number to very many, but in their quality to very great. For learch hereof, king Edward caused certaine principal commanders, & three Heraldes, (who by the Coat-Armours might iudge of the persons, it being then a thing perpetuall and solemne not to fight without those fignes of Noblesse,) to take an exact view of the field, who about supper time returning, made report to the King, that they found the dead bodies of *eleuen great Princes, and of Barons, Knights, and men of Armes, aboue * one thousand, and fine hundreth. Among the owners of such bodies as were beaten to the Earth vpon the first day, these are worthily reckoned chiefe: The * King of Bohemia, the * King

of Maiorca, * Charles Earle of Alanfon, brother- sir Thode Is German to King Phile, the Duke of Loraine, a the Mere sput Duke of Burbon, the * Earle of Flanders, the * Earle United States of Sauoy (both great Princes,) * the Dolphin of * Serre Viennois, sonne to Himbert, the Earle of Sancerre, and Harecourt (whose brother Godfrey in pirty of his "Poly, Jurg." MALNet ob. house, his two Nephewes being flaine with their houte, his two Nephewes being flaine with their father, forfooke the King of England after this bat-Earle of Eloys flaine at this battell, and returned into Grace with the French, the * Earles of Aumarl, Neuers, &c. fixe Earles of Almaine: beside others of great account of all forts. Vpon the fecond day, the Grand Prior of France, who with his Archbishoppe of Roam, had on the behalfe of their Prince and Country put on Arms. Of the Commons, in a both of these blacke dayes, there fell about thirty thousand, and some say, A.D.1346. foure times more in this last, then in the other.

(101) We finde not one man of honour, or note

*Polid. Pere-

*VV4 Northin

Calais befieged.

* Severe fish: 30
September.
A.D.1346.

flaine upon the English fide', fo that this victorie may fafely bee accounted among the wonderfull. The * fpoiles of the Enemies bodies and carriages. King Edward gaue wholy to his well deferring fouldiers. The rule of their fafety (they being in a most populous enemy Countrie) would not permit them to vie much currefie to others, asthat which might have proved cruelty to themselves, but v pon the fecond day they tooke many * priloners, though none of great name, for they were fpent in the day before. It pleased the conquerour to proclaime a truce now for three dayes in the Country about that the people might come in to burie their dead but the bodies of the most noble, hee himselfe caufed to be conveied to Monstreal, and there (in his

March towards Calais) enterred. (102) Thus by Gods fauour, and the vnresiflable force of the English Archers, (who in a man-ner did * onely fight) was King Edward put into a full and peaceable possession of a perfect victory; which after hee had one night onely enjoyed in the Forrest of Cressis, hee dislodged with his conquering hoaft & marched ftraight toward Calais, which hee a presently inuested, having decreed neuer to rise with his Armie from before it, till without asfault hee had carried the same. For which cause he entrenched and fortified his Camp on all fides, built vp * Sheds couered with Reed and broome, and other places and offices as to dwell in, and stopping all reliefe by Sca, (whereof hee was Matter) with his Nauic. There commanded in Calais for the French Sir John de Vienne, * Marshall of France, and the Lord Dandreghan, with a very strong Garrison, who concluded like good men of war, to trie all extremities, rather then to furrender the Piece, which was

so firong, that to affault the same, otherwise then with famine had beene friuolous. These great Captaines sceing King Edwards resolution, thrust forth of the Towne (for sparing of food) their poorer people, aboue sifteene hundreth; whom hee, like true Christian Prince, turned not backe vpon the Towne, but relected for Gods cause with fresh Charity. victuals, and two pence sterling each; permitting them freely and fecurely to passe through his Camp, to his great glory, and (vindoubtedly) profite also, having their hearty prayers for his happy successe, and God for pay-mafter, and rewarder of fuch his

Beneficence. (103) Many wayes were thought vpon by king Philip to raife this obstinate siege: two principall; wife to succoute an Army of French to fight with King Edward, and a diuersion by inuasion, wherein the Scots (their perpetuall allies) were forward. Both in their senerall times, were put into execution: That of the Scotist invasion was first, but with such succeffe, as well declared it was Gods will (all people hauing their encreasings, zeniths, and declinations) that the English name should now be brought to the verticall point thereof, without any thing being able

(104) For Danid the fecond King of Scots, to gra-Xxxx

to relift it

*Serrer

*Walfingbane.

* Cia Villam. The Genowayes

The Earle of

Alenioss fu

Seren.

commandement(derived from K. *Philip himfelfe)

his horse gaue in among the to drive them by plaine

murther from the honour ofhauing the point, vpon onely pretence that they hindered their race. This

ouer the French hoaft.

hote young Count (contrary to good discipline,) had also otherwise unjustly discontented and disgraced them, euen when they were ready to ioin in battell, whose bodies (being as most write about twelue thousand) bybeating the first brunt might haue

haue hid his face, by thrufting it vnder a partill * E

clypfe; but God (who meant good to the Englifb)

would not fuffer him to withdraw his more necef-

fary office, fo that freed from that temporary fha-

dow, he shone directly into the Frenchmans eyes. At

the same time also * sholes and cloudes of balefull

Rauens, and other birdes of prey and rauin, as fore-

thewing the haruest of carcales at hand, came flying

93) The figne of battell being given by King

Philip, and entertained with shoutes and clamors, all

things showing the horror of war, Drums & Trum-

pets founding to a charge, Banners flying in the

winde, and euery where thining weapons, menacing

brane extremitie, reason her selfe acknowledged it

onely fafe to leage them to their brute faculties, paf-

fion and furie, and the event it felfe to God. The

French calamities began at their Genowayes, who vn-

det * Carolo Grimaldi, and Antonio Dorta their Coro-

nels, being all of them Croffe-bowmen, were to o-

pen a way for the French horse with their shot. This

was the fuccesse of their service : Their Crosse-bow

ftrings wet with the late raine, their bodies wearie

with a long march, their rankes (after the English

had intercepted upon * targets their first volue.) fil-

ledwith innumerable gappes, occasioned by the fall of their fellowes slaine, or ouerthrowne with

home-drawne arrowes, were lastly most outragiou-

fly scattered by Charles Earle of Alanson, at whose

rie, but finding the mettall infinitely more tough which they had to deale vpon, then they could posfibly have supposed, were beaten to the earth in great numbers. The young Princy neuertheleffe

was not without danger, though now the second battell of the English, for preservation of their Prince, dashing in among the enemies, fought most couragionfly.

and thy; Letterm genus memore to more grants autonity that the best letter that may befull, while my spense is thus; but he's him either vanquilly or die, because the homour of this brane day spell hee he is, if of a suffer him speriouse.

(96) The Messenger returned, and though

The first confu-

The French horfe charge the English batta-

His most noble Strres.Helinfo.

* Grafton.

* wil Northi

		_				
580	Edward.IIJ. THE SVCC	E	SSION	OF	Monarch 49.	Book.9
The Scots in-	tific his most deare freinds the French, comming	-	here (se of show	se chieru fon		
The Scots in- uade England and are vanqui-		1	Knight was he	ten our of	one,) affailed that brane he field with maruellous	
and are vanqui-	fand into England, as farre as Durham, fupposing none		loffe of Nobles	and others	laine or taken. Not long	
1	but Priests and Shepheards were left at home, (con-	1	after that the far	ne Sir Thom	as also having only three	bean prowelle in
1	fidering what great numbers were abroad upon fer-	1	hundred men o	Armes, and	foure hundred Archers	
* 17. October	nice, in Pitardie, Britaine, and Gascoigne,) was (vpon	1	in his company	, aliatied the	lame Lord Charles ly.	
Fabian	* Saint Lukes Eue) undertaken and fought withall,		ing at nege of	Roch-Darien	With twelve bundred	I i
Hell neet.	his whole armie by faire force vanquished, and him-	1	Knights and E	iquires, fix	hundred other armed	i t
2.0.27.	felfe taken prisoner at a place by Durham called Ne- niles Croffe. Chiefes among the English at this tri-	1	men,two thous	and Steel-beg	e-men & of other Infan-	. }
*Ypod,Neuft,	umphant iourney were * The Archbithop of Torke,		Charles of The	and tooke	Prisoner the faid Lord	1
	Gilbert Vmfreuile Earle of Angos. William Lord la	1	Durchy of Buys	(wno as you	have heard claimed the	1
	Zouch, with eight other Lords, Percy, Membray, Ne-	1	whole forces wi	thaine againi	h Montford) driving his manhood and great de-	i
	uile, Deincourt, Mauley, Leyburne, Scroop, and Muf-	1	ftruction out of	the field 7	This in Pretains	1
	graue. Six Robert de Bertram Sheriffe of Northum-		(107) In G	Scoiene the	magnificent and noble	
	berland, and other noble Banarets. In this battell al-	1	Henry Earle of	Derby, and	now (by his fathers late	The Earle of
"Pol Virg.lib.19.		1	death)Earle of	Lancaster also	now (by his fathers late , purluing his faire for-	cheiuemenes in
	to whom necessity for defence of their Countrey,		tunes in Agusta	#. X atnet otn	V. Fore drane lake Duke	a lange and
	made the bloody vie of Iron and Steele warranta-	1	of Normanay,cl	delt ionne c	of King Philip, vnfonohr	
	ble: nor could the Seats be accused to have lost any	1	with, troth mer	icge or Aqu	tuon ; though it is faide.	1
	thing for want of manhood, specially the king him-		heleft it, as co	mmanded to	Drepaire to his father for	1
	felfe, who had two speares hanging in his body, his leg almost incurably wounded with an arrow, his	1	Conciett in the	mes i ne alio	tooke fundry places of	*Serren
	fword and weapons beaten out of his hand; who dif-	1	many probable	uice,iome by	ender, some by affault,	1
	deining captiuity, inuited the English by opprobri-	1	triumph remeas	d fafe to 8-	indrich spoiles, and with deaux. Not long before	1
	ous words to kill him, and when Iohn Copland (an E.	(this, at the rakin	agof the gor	od Towne of Brigerae by	
* Heff.Bett.	fquire of the North-country, * Captaine of the Ca-	1	affault, he had p	ermitted en	ery fouldier to feife any	1
King Daud ta-	file of Rexberough in Scotland.) adulfed him to yeeld.		house, and con-	uert all there	in to his proper benefic	1
ken priloner by Ioha Capland an	he stroke him on the face with his Gantlet so fierce-		Hereupon it ha	pned,that a c	ertaine*knight or Soul-	"The Frais.
Elquire.	ly, as that two of his great teeth were fmitten out		dier called + Ke	th, bad bro	ken into a Tenement	Quidem miles
	there with: but feeing he could not force a death but		where the mon	iers had for	fafety stowed the monie	1
	must be Prisoner, John Copland conveighed him away with eight of his owne servants out of this field.		of that Countr	in great lo	ng facks, who (thinking	ł
* Heff,Bost,	There lay dead upon the ground the * Earles of		fire (bould co	renerals int	ention that fuch a trea-	1
111400441	Murray and Stratherne, the Constable, Marshall,		the Lord Henris	ne to appe	rate Share) acquainted what was his answere?	l
	Chamberlaine, and Chancellour of Scotland, with	ı	he with a kingle	magnificer	what was his aniwere?	A Generall
	many other Nobles: There were taken Prifoners	1	" Houfe, and all	therein were	nce told him; That the	worth the fer-
	(befide the king) the Earles of Dowglas, Fife, Souther-					wing.
	land, Wigton, and Menteith. Thus the fortune of king	l	" would. The p	artie return	s and while he is bolic	
. Alte	Edward, by the vertue of his valiant subjects, preuai-	l				1
1		1	more pure filuer	in Come.	that hee could not but	
* Freifferd.	(105) It could not be excused, if we forgat the Offices of Queene Philip in her Husbands absence;	1				1
Philip Oucene	who being then in England, and great with Child of	ı	can be added to	tee nonour	of the aniwere which to d time made ? Why tel-	
of England her princely demea-	a daughter (afterward called * Margaret) rode in Per-		" Left thou mee of	the overtue (of the treafure? go, take	
nour.	for addit the datters of the English, encouraging	1	ec and enior it :	For to vine. A	nd then to take it backe a	1
Tood Neug.	them with lo wife, princely and gratious words, as					
	did not a little tharpen and affure their otherwise		DAILCA MAY NOT	with my hon	once jara it, and my word our be reuoked, were it ne-	
	feruent courages : which done, thee retired her felfe					
	to Newcastle vpon Tine, there to attend the successe		(108) Iohn	Duke of 170	rmandy, comming into	1
	which God would lend. After the battell, vnder- flanding that King Danid was taken, shee by letters		Picardy, had two	o repulles ar	id foiles, being driven	1
	willed the Esquire to render up his roiall Prisoner;		Edwards for	or Caffels	nd foiles, being driven , and Lile, fo that king	"Serres
	which he refuting thee (imparient) lends over a com-	i			le, afwell to his Confe- and now, to confum-	"
* Grafter	plaint to King Edward. At* whose commandement.		mate his plore	e whole no	er of France, led forth	
	repairing to the Campe before Caleis, he to difcreet-		by king Philip to	preferue tha	tele of his Empire	
Records.	ly aniwered, that he was fent backe into England with		was returned wi	mout doing	any thing. For when	
	the reward of *500.pounds land by the yeere, (to lie		mediators could	effect not	hing, and Philip would	
Grafica.	* where Copland himfelfe should chuse, neere to his	Ī	notict vp his tru	it vpon batte	II. left while he fought	
	owne dwelling,) and warrant to deliuer vp his Prifo-		to taue a Towne.	nee (hould	leefe akingdome, hee	1 1
	ner to the Queene, which he accordingly did at the City of Yorke, with to fober and honest an Apology,		mournerully reti	red himfelte	with loffefull haft into	
	as both shee, and the Lords of Councell were satisf		trainer and person	rance, leau	ng his desperate Cap-	
	fied. This Copland (who had lands of King Edwards		cv. So Farmed	hadehe Tou	the Conquerors mer- ne deliuered vnto him,	Calais yeelded
Copland a knight	gift at * Viner flow in Lancashire) was also advanced.		when he had alm	oft abidden	in leaguer before it one	3. August. An.D.1347.
Cambden in	gift at * Viversion in Lancashire) was also advanced, for this most valiant atcheiuement, to the dignity of		whole yeere. I	he picty of	Queene Philip toward	An. Reg. 21.
l ancofhire,	a Knight Baneret, which writers corruptly call a Bare-		the priionersiel	ected to die.	and the worthy demons.	*Tood: Neufle Heimfread.
	net, Honour having at that time no fuch kind of crea-		ment of tome C	<i>alilian</i> Town	elmen, to that certains	Heinfhead.
	ture. King David was lodged vader fure guard in the		perm, for fatilit	action of k	ing Edwards incensed	
The flow of king	Lower of London.		minde, deciarin	e themicius	s thereby to be good !	
ottunes.	106) Wonder it is to confider, with what golden linker one good has more assessed as constant		true and loyall F	rench-men.	are by all Authors cele.	
·····nes.	den linkes one good hap was annexed to another, in this full moone as it were of King Edwards reigne.		praced , finding b	oth buy the	a. and honour for ever 1	1
	For within a small compasse of time, all these great		keeping of this	ung as wile	ly taken order for fafe- as he had costantly en-	- 1
	atcheiuements fell. Sit Thomas Dagworth like ano-		dured to carry is	gramina one	Ta fishfantic! C.	i
Test.Nort.	ther * Machabee (faith an Author) with 8, hundreth				r a fubstantiall Colony aile at last for England,	ı
	men of Armes, and one hundred Archers, in Britain		whether with mu	ch trouble a	Sea (remnelle foden)	ì
	ouerthrew the Lord Charles of Blois, who having	į				1
	twice in one date with incredible ods in the num-		hee had alwaies	faire weath	er at his paffage into	"The Walf.
		- 1			France	

	Edward.IIJ.ENGLANDS M		581
1	France, and foule vpon his returne. (109) Neuer was the English Name so great, and	Lancafter and Derbie, in honour of his princely bloud, and reward of feruice, was created Duke of	The first Duke of
A.D.1348.	glorious as at this time, nor did England her felfe in		An.D. 1353
	any foregoing age enjoy a King more renowned for	ment was his jorney rogether with Pickerd Farle	
	wildome, cheualric, and felicity in actions; the iust	of Arundel, the Bishops of London and Norwich, &	Tood.Neuft.
- 1	brightnesse of his irradiant vertues, not onely ador-	day at Brian to the Romane Court, there to ree that	
- 1	ning her with Garlands, conquered Spoiles, and	Inftrument of a finall peace, which had been drawn and fworne vnto betweene the two Kings, confir-	- 1
	Trophees, but seeming also (such was the abundance of all things) to insufe fertility into the earth it selfe,		An.D.1354
The. PValf.	like some * new shining sunne. Meane while faire	Couen of the French (as our * Writers impute) and	The VVall.
	France (whose wofull turne it was) sate mournfullie	the Pones Conninencie, who fauoured the keeping	Reb. Amesia.
	weeping, and with great anxietie of mind prouided	of France entire, all proued burvapour, and the	1
	the best shee could against such a deluge of calami-	voyage fruitleffe. King Edward greatly kindled here-	
1	ties. Neither yet was King Edwards glorie at the highest, for God was inclined to make him yet more	with, determined to take deepe reuenge, and (as wal- fingham and others write) entred then prefently with	Froifferd.
1	bounden and beholden. Howbeit as it is a mighty	an Armic and walted France.	1
1	worke to ascend to such an eminencie of renown, yet	(112 The Staple of Wools which had beene in	ı
	when the most of man is knowne and done, let none	Flanders, King Edward about this time revoked, e-	l
	therefore loue themselves, or admire others, for nei-	Stablishing the same in Westminster, Canterbury, Chi-	- 1
	ther hath this world any thing permanent to trust	chester, Bristol, Lincolne, and Hull. Hee did not this, (as is probable) without some spleene, aswell	
	vpon, and to God alone belongs the honour. This was found and felt when the celeftiall maieftie faw	for the * death of his deare friend Inques Artenill,	Supra.\$
An valuerfall	the abuse of his good gifts. It rained from Midsom-	as for that the young Farle of Flanders had dilho-	
plagne:	mertill Christmas, and so terrible a plague ranne	noured him, by a flying into France out of Gaunt,	* Serres
	through the world, that the earth was filled with	when he monid have married his daughter.	
	graues, and the aire with cries: which was feconded	(113) It had moreouer beene fignified to King	An.D.1335.
,	with murren of Cattle, and dearth of all things. The	Edward, that Iohn the new King of France (his Fa- ther being dead) had given to Charles the Dolphin	.,,,,
	plague beganne among the Turkes, and pierced by degrees into France, where it mowed downe many	the Dutchie of Aguitaine: whereupon being excee.	
	thousands. In London it had so quicke and sharpe	dingly incensed, hee bestowed the same upon his	
	an edge, that in one yeeres space, there were buried	owne fonne, the Prince of Wales; commanding him	
	it, * one Church-yard (commonly called the Citter-	to defend that right with his fword against hisaduer-	
* Rch. Ausfburis. Iobn Stow.	tian, or Charter-house) aboue fifty thousand, The	faries. All things being ready for his voyage, and having the Earles of warwicke, Suffolke, Salisburie,	The Prince of Wates failes to
Fabian. Holinfb.	French notwithstanding practise to recouer Calais by briberie, but treason being not true to it selfe, King	and Oxford; the Lords * Chandoys, Audley, * Bute-	take poficition of
	Remard came fordainely in person, and preserved the	fort, Lile, & e. athousand men of Armes, as many	
	inestimable lewell by policie, and princely man- hood, killing many of them who came vpon that	Archers with others, hee fet faile towards Aquitain,	letters apad Halinfo
	hood, killing many of them who came vpon that	where hee betooke himselfe to do things worthic of	
	blind aduenture.	his Name and courage. (113) On the other fide King Edward, flirred	1
	(110) This innincible King (one great A& o- uer-taking another) hearing that certaine Spanish	with a falle Alarum, croft ouer the Seas, in hope to	1
An.D.1350.	men of warre, who had in the veere before cruelly	find his enemie King tohn at Saint Omars, but failing	1
A Fleet of Spa- ndn men of war	* flaine fundrie Englishmen, and taken away their	thereof, he hurnt vp to Heldm, and came backe in-	Tamble Simula
vanquith by K.	Wines and other wares, were come into his Seas,	to England to recouer Berwicke, which the Scots had	Ferwicke furpri-
*Trod. Nesft.	hee like a Martiall Neptune encountred them not far	gotten with mutuali flaughter by furprife. He called	"Heller Boet.
	from Winchel-fea in person, with such ships as could	a Parliament at Westminster, where toward the furni- ture of his hostile designes, hee had extraordinarie	
	then bee had; and after a most bloudy fight, (for there was few or none elcaped vnmarkt) tooke	Sublidie granted vnto him for fixe yeeres next to	l .
	twenty and fixe of their principall veffels, funke	come. But Berwicke before King Edward could	i
~	others, and draue the rest away. The gallantrie &	preferr himfelfe before it with his mighty hoart, was	
The Spaniards	foirit of the Spaniards was fuch that dildaining to	burnt and difmantled, and then by the Scots aban-	*Hell ,Beet,
rather die then	ouerline the difgrace of having preferued their lines	doned. The French had fent into Scotland fortie thousand Crownes of the Sunne, and some men of	- [
yceld. "The Walf.	by yeelding, they * all of them to a man either died you the English weapons, or were drowned in the	Armes to maintaine them in comity against the Eng-	1
Rob.Auesburie. Holiofo.	waues. Thus was King Edward dignified with an-	Life while as ver their King Danid the second was pri-	1
1	other Nauall Crowne. In this * yeare Philip de Va-	foner; but King Edward, not contented to have regained his owne, vnlesse hee made his adversaries	1
*Serres An.D.1351	Loss having raigned about three and twenty yeeres,	regained his owne, valefie hee made his adderiaries	
A.D.13)		fmart for their prouocations, proceeded in hostile manner against the Scots both by land and sea. At	
i	merly hee had changed the flampe of his Seale, fo	Roxbrough the Baliol * furrendred to King Edward	*The Wall.
ı	changed the stampe of his Coines, coining (by ad- uife of William de Edingdon, Bishoppe of Winchester,	all the right and ritle which hee had to the Crowne	I HE DELIST COL
	and High Treasurer of England) the groat, and halfe	of centland or any the appurtenances, releving only	m the Crowne o
1	moat, whereas before there was * no filuer coine,	to himfelfe a yeerely pention of * two thouland and	2 tolland to will
* Helisfe.	oroat, whereas before there was * no filuer coine, but the feelings onely.	6 few mounds	Allerand Lat
Sir Walter Bent-	[] [] Let vs draw King Edwards manifold acti-	(114) The Prince of Wales as it were in emula- tion of his Fathers gloric, doth wonders in France;	Patent.25 Jan.
less great vi dos	ons closer together : vnder his fortune and auspicie,	for with his victorious Armie, he recoursed multi-	A.D.1356. The Prince of VV aler his hig
	Sir Walter de * Bendeley had in little Britain(wher-	tendes of Townes and Priloners (while the * Earle	atchieuement i
loin Fox.	of hee was * Warden) a faire day of the Marshall of France, putting his puilsance to slight with much	of Glaffer with the English on behalte of Charles king	2 Comes
1	flaughter. Thirteene Lords, one hundreth and for-	of Western prenailes greatly in Normandy, piercing	*Sir John VV mg
1	er Knights one hundreth Esquiers, & store of com-	like a shunderholt through Languedec, till nee came	beitet merceren.
ı	mon Souldiers were killed : nine Lords, and one	to the City of * Narbon , in light of the Mid-land fea, which City (being little lesse then London) he	
1	hundreth and forty Knights and Elquiers taken pri-	I I force as (beliefe many others) he had done	: 1
	foners; which bred great aftonishment among all	Care Con which for bignetic, itrength and beautie	• 1
l			
	King Edwards enemies. Neither had the French in	avealled (faith our Author) I orke in Estima. I in	? 1
	other places better fortune, fauing that iomewhat	excelled (faith our Author) Torke in England. I in	5
"Enifferd.	King Edwards enemies. Neuther had up Frence in other places better fortune, fauing that fornewhat before Sir * Rasul de Cabors flew in a skirmith the thrice valiant Sir Thomas Dagworth, and about one hundreth men of Armes with him. Henry Earle of	avealled (faith our Author) I orke in Estima. I in	5

worke as yet his fathers liberty . Moreouer, the Eng-

lisb under Sir Robert Knowles, Sir Iames Pype, and

and heaped huge wealth by incursions, ransomes,

and other warlike licence, in Britaine, and Norman

Thomalin Foulk, and others, did commit great wafts, A.reg. 32.

An.D. 1358

ries. The English at this iourney tooke an *hun-

(117) Now albeit nothing wanted to the title of

a perfect victory, yet in two points the incompara-

dreth Enlignes.

* Serres.

pap. 14. 1	Edward. 11). ET CO ETT TE DO TO	OTTITION MONATON 49.	703
14	dy, under the title of feruing the Nauarrois. To bee	hundred Esquires and Gentlemen with the Order	The English be-
[1	briefe all France swarmed with dissolute souldiers of	of Knighthood. Charles the Dolphin, Regent of	fore Paru.
- 14	fundry Nations, which having no Generall, made I	France, was within Paris with a great force, but could	Fourehur dred Knights made at
- 11	hauockeat their pleasure. They were called peo-	not by any meanes bee drawne to hazard battell.	one time.
- 1	ple without an head, and by innumerable infolen-	There were ample conditions in humble manner	
13	cies made the wretchednesse of Amarchy apparent.	tendred to Edward, but he was as yet inflexible and	
	In England also swarmed another fort, no lesse bur-	deafe against any other, then such as himselfe (like a	
1.	thenous to the commonwealth and Church, which	Conquerour) propounded. Paris (vp to whole)	
	were the foure orders of Franciscan Friers, whom the	* very wals King Edward ranne) not being fefible, he	
	* English Clergy found to be so pernicious to the regi-		Polyd, Verg.
Valf. in Ed-	ment of the Church, that they felected that renow-	his returne finding it stronger then before, he turnes	*Serres and Polyd, Verg
		his wrath into the very bowels of France, exercising	evya, vag,
	ned Clerk, Richard Fitz-Ralph (who was Chancelour of		*Paul Acutt.
1,	the valueraty of Oxfora, Archomop of Armaga,	and and an analysis and increasely Codered it	*The.VV affing,
machen in	and Primate of Ireland) to appeare in perion before	ans, and as yet continued inchorable. God was dis-	
Suferio curato-	the Pope, and there alleage the "intollerable narmes		
	by them accrewing to the Laity, the Clergy, and the	he cauled the Minister of his wrath, a terrible tem-	
	Vniuersities, together with their disobedience to Gods	peft, to affaile his Hoaft, and a to kill therein many	*Street
1 13	word, their avarice, and pride. All which that noble	both men and hories. King Edward is ? faid, vpon	Paul. Acmyl. * Tho. Walf.
- 1	Prelate learnedly performed, as appeareth by the	this occasion, to be so wounded with remorse, that	Ran.Ceftr.
- 1	handling of his o, propositions against them, which	repairing to our Lady-Church of Charters, he pro-	
1	are extant. In his second proposition, he sheweth	strated himself to God and forrowing for the blood-	
1	how ordinary a matter at was with them to allure	thed and wast-full burning which hee had made.	
	now ordinary a matter it was with them; to anter	wowed to give quiet to the Christian world upon e-	
1.	shair Orders which made men withdraw shair	quall conditions This and the Duke of I weeklere	
- 1	their Orders; which made men wirndraw their	perferences Comed him to that finally he mediani	
- 1	ionnes from the v niucrities, leaft the r-yars hould		
	fo Reale them away ; whereby (faith he) is came to	on of the ropes Legar one smon at Langres) a peace	rabien.
an ib.	passe, that * whereas in his owne time there were thirty	was concluded at Bretagme neere to Charters vpon	
- 1	thousand Students in Oxford, soone after there were left	the eight of May; and in November following K.	Tillim,
1	but fixe thou fand. But how infinitely these Friarlie	John himielfe was transported to Caleis, and there	
	fwarmes encreased in all lands, may appeare by that	by King Edward (according to the Capitulations of	
belli, sead. 9 l.6.	*Strange offer made by the Generall of this one Order,	the Treatie) fet at liberty, after he had been a prifo-	
10aa. 9 1,0.	to Page Pine mho tramifed to bring him (being then 4-	ner aboue foure yeeres,	
1	hout a Turkilly Expedition thirty thouland cunning warris	(123) Articles of this accord, fo necessarie for	Articles of
- 1	out at a writing Expension plant of thempire Comming warren	the diffrested Effare of France were thefe. I That to	peace,
1	ors, out of the number of Saint Francis Tryars, and feet	the intent thefe conditions which the French condefeen-	,
l	nough house remaine at nome to performe the denotions.	Jalanes Could Lemma forceable and not forme to be an-	1
1	But the Pope had luch vie of thole Fryars, that Ar-	ded onto possed be more jorcesore, and not jeeme to be ex-	1
60,Walf.in	machanus prevailed not in the matter, though he pro-	tortea by aduantage, out; or inquitie of the times) the two	!
ourd 3.	ued the cause stoutly and manifestly against them, because	Edwards, Father and Sonne, bould for ever release to K.	
	(ahfar vity, faith our Authour,) the Clergy Itucke not	I ohn and to his heires, all the right and clasme which they	
,	elate at they promifed, and the Friers had erest flore of	had to the Crowne of France, to the Dutchy and Estates	*Paul. Atmylia
	money to procure favour in the Court of Rome. But here	of Normandy, Aniou, Turain, and Main, as also to the	feach.
- 1	in the Feeliff Court two Cardinals, (one of them.	homages of Britain Armorick and the Earldome of Flan-	Serres Estima
- 1	has of Bigmened, upho had so diligently travelled for	ders. 2. That King John and his fonne, for them and	Halinfb.
1	a conclusion on the bertall of Pairfiers) could not	their heires. Bould by a day certaine reftore, and release to	Pani, demyl,
- 1	a concidion at the batter of restairs to fish on	King Wanged and his beires fore the whole Countries of	
i	with two yeeres labour, draw any thing to facilitate	Aguitain colorned with the hardering and hacious Coun-	l
	head, as the French would, for their kings denue-	Anna Comain Bailles Dispenser Limely Ouerein	
	rance, performe; which put King Eawara into a new	to de Carrente de mith ell the Cities Caffes and	l.
- 1	refolution against France.	Angolejm, Konergne, O'c. With au the Cities, Cajetes, and	
ng Edward 2-	(121) King Edward (houlding himselfedeluded	appurtenances, to be notaten free, without any acpenaence	1
ine in France.	by the French) with a fleete of eleuen hundred Saile	but of God. 3. That the County of Pontheun (the pro-	*The Walfing.
	pafferh oner from Sandwich to a new inuation. Hee	per inheritance of Ifabel late Queene Demager of	
Ottober	arrived at Calais, from whence he let forward in three	Fugland mother of King Edward) the Townes, Coun-	1
	great battels, whereof the first, being least, was under	tries, and Lordships of Calais, Guines, Mountril, Haim,	I
	Henry Duke of Laneafter, the fecond being greater.	Wale, Oye, Merck, S. Valary, & c. and all the Ilands	1
	under the brone Prince of Wales, and the last which	which either the English then held, or which lay before any	1
	was a seed of by King Edward him falls They	of the Premilles with only certaine limitations concerning	1
	was greaten, was red by King Edward initiente, they	private meny interest should remaine in like freedome as	
aul.Aemil.	marched through - Arios to the Citie of Khelmi in	hoftile Actions yas aftereas « Charters, and "Orio- firstand) to oppose ein perfon before thereal leage the 'intollerable harmes' thereal leage the 'intollerable harmes' wings to the Laift, the Clergy, and the together with their displacement of Galt thereal leage the 'intollerable harmes' wings to the Laift, the Clergy, and the together with their displacement of Galt thereal leage the 'intollerable harmes' performed, as appeareth bythe ins p-propolitions gamithtem, which in his fectord propolition, he flewwith, ya matter the was with them, to alluge to and was with them, to alluge to content of their parents, to enter si, which made men withdraw cher the V interfliets, leaft the Fiyrar should many y, wherey (faith he) is came to whereas in his owns time there were librity deaths to Vyrind, some after three were librity deaths to Vyrind the variety librity death to the clean three	I
	Champain, where the Kings of France vie to be crown-	with the hould newfor be renforme (nart shore of to he	1
Serres,	ed and annointed. The City of * Sens (an Archbi-	King tonn inouta payfor his ranjome (parethereof to be	The large ren-
	fhops See) and Nesers doe yeeld without reliftance.	in nand, and part vpon dates jine jumme of *thirty num	forne of Jahr King of France, "Paul Acoupt.
Paradine la les	The * Duke of Burgandy, for two * hundreth thou-	areth thousand scutes of Gold, enerte two of which should	King of France,
imals de Burge.	fand florens of gold, obtained that all Burgundy was	be * fixe shillings and eight pence sterung. And that for	Poled, Ung.
Froissard-	spared from sackage or spoile. It was told the King,	assurance there should be assigned certaine number of Ho-	Fruffard.
ith 100000.	that the Normans had landed at Winchellea in the	Ganet (In Kino Edward named) to remaine in England.	"Tho VV alf.
OWNES.	rime of dinine fernice, and among other their most	That the Evench (hould not aid, nor alst the Scots a-	Fabian. The City of Pan
	limpious ourrages a like execrable villanie, as that!	gainst the English, nor they the Flemings against the	gaue toward
	miplous outlages, anne exceeded vinning, as that	French 6. That it Sould bee lewfull for either Kino	this ranfome
	which discountes, (ionnes of Benan) are recorded to		one hundreth thousand rolals
Bd,19.11, 25.	naue committed vponthe Lentes wite, was more	There were fundry other Ar-	Edw. Grimfian
nd 16.	wickedly perpetrated by them in the Church it	tame as meet pleasures. I store were funding other rate	his English
	felfe, where the woman, being of lingular beautie,	ticles, as in cales of to transcendent quante mut	Serres
	l was by their infariable violations murthered; and	needs happen, but, as these were principall, to the	1
	they got backe to their Ships before the Countrey	of them might have beene well lett out here.	1 .
	could rife vpon them to take due vengeance. Here-	vnleffe they had more exactly beene observed by	
	upon * King Edward presently raised his Standard.	the French. Yet were they ratified with hands, scales,	24 Oftober,
The Walf.	and for forth our of Chempsin (where nor farre from	and Oathes at #Calass, where the Iwo Kings, in Iteau	1360.
	and ict to the out of Champan, (white and the country of	actificathe Pay at matte (either hauing for honors	1
Polyd.Verg lib.		Glarefuedtorake it first) * faluted each the other	-1
19.	ward Paris.	lake returned beatherlie embracement and loning	A
	(122) He came before it with his armie divided		* Pabian per.7.
The VV all.			
r <i>w.vvalf.</i> An.D.1 360.		Kilic,	.1

Chap. 12 | Edward III. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 40. 1

* Rode, San, vbi "Genel,cap.7. The causes of K Peters dilinhei

*The Walfing.

of a Iew fo enchanted a rich Girdle of King Peters, which Queene Blanch had ginen him, that the next time hee ware it, the same * appeared to himselfe and the beholders like a snake. This cursed disciple of * lannez and lambrez hated the vertuous Queene, for that shee had so prevailed with Don Pedro her husband, that no Iew was suffered to beare office, or entoy any fauours in Court, neither wanted shee much of expelling them wholly out of Spaine. But by this practife Maria de Padilla (who * fome erroneously say was a lew) got al the king to her self, and so persecuted the innocent Queene, that it was not long before shee died, the Popes intercessions failing to effect any good with the Tyrant. The Nobles of Spaine who laboured to have brought her againe into deserued grace, are by him pursued as fautors of her supposed witchcrafts. Other things also whetted him to fauage, and Turkish Butcheries, as thirst of Gold, and somewhat which had by diuelish arts beene fore-told him concerning his end. His brothers, kinffolke, Nobles, and others, he causelessely massacreth or forceth to seeke their fafeguard by flight, among which the Lord Henry, his foresaid bastard brother was one. Peter notwithstanding was in the trueth and right of blood King of Spaine, but his faide brother (a Gentleman and or spame, but its laude trottler (a Genterman in whom nothing was to bee taxed, but that which he was not to be blamed for, his birth being worthily popular and potent, had now obtained both the Title of King and possession of the Crowne.

Alfens & Carthag.Reg. Hilp. Anacepool.ca.88. * Polyd.Virg.L19. * Rod. a.cep. 33thewes Cooplance eldest. John Duke of Lencafter marti-ed Conftance. K. Peterreldeft daughter in An D.1372. "Paul, Empl in car. 5. "Serres in his in pentarie of France.
Serves the
French Authous
infily taxed.
** Roder. Same Epifcep. Patent.

rege Hi/p-lib-3. Street.

The Prince of Sparae. *Panl.EavilQueene with that which her selfeacted, by meanes

(132) Peter, before this hapned, fo foon as his wife Queene Blanch was dead childlesse, *married his late Concubine Maria de padilla a woman of a noble house, though not so rarely honest, as to refuse the vnlawful loue of a King: who having iffue by her Alfonso a sonne (who dyed yong) and three daughters * Constance, Beatrix, and Ifabel, made to her and them the belt amends he could for what was passed. It is the fitter this truth should appeare, for that within a few yeeres after John Duke of Lancaster, one of the fonnes of England, married Conflance the eldeft fifter, claiming the Crowne of Caftilia in her right, as *the Earle of Cambridge had another, and for that *fome (either through hatred of a wicked Tyrant, or through haft or milinformation) haue in many points foullie erred, and in particular, vntrulie leaving upon the Lady the Title of a Strumpet, who was honested by lawfull marrimonie. Diners notwithstanding of * the Spanish Lords, like good fubicas acknowledged their duty to Peter (though most violent Prince) nor could the vsurper Henrie but by deepely impairing the reuenewes of the Crowne of Spaine with immoderate gifts, winne anie of them. Peter thus driven from his kingdome, with his wife, children, and (if * some say true) but one servant, repaires to the Prince of wales (at * Bayon)that is to honour and humanity it felfe: who feeing it a dangerous prefident against all lawfull Kings that any one should be so dethroned, and not look ing into his vices but his right; fignified the same to his father: who enioines him to aid Don Peter, lo that now the Prince, (burning with defire of renowne (vpon trust of pay for his Armie and of other com-modities by King Peter, when hee should be reestablifhed in his throne) is ready to passe into Spaine. (133) Hee makes his way through the famous

straites of Rounceuallux in Nauarre by permission of the King thereof, who * yet suffered himselfe (as most men write) to be taken prisoner by the French, and carried into Castile, that he might not in person seeme to crosse the French Kings designes on the behalfe of the viurper Henry. The Prince of Wales had with him an armie of about thirtie thousand men, and in his company besides most of all the prime Captaines of the English, there were in person two Kings, Peter of Caffile, whose the quarrell was, and the King of Maiorea and John Duke of Lancaster who some while after Don Pedro his death writhim-

felfe King of Castile and Leon. On the other fide K. Henry, for defence of his new Diadem, had affembled a very great number aswell of French (vnder Glequin their famous Captaine) as of Castilians and other both Christians and Saracens, not fewer then fourescore, or an hundreth thousand, Vpon the Borders of Callile it came to a battell : where the Prince of Wales obtained a veric great victorie, killing many thousands of his enemies. Henrie himselfe was wounded in the groine but escaped. There The #1. were taken the Earle of Dene, * Bertram de Glegain in Edward, himfelfe (who shortly after by paying a great ran-fome had liberty) the Marshall Dandrehen and manie others. Neither was it leffe worth to King Peter then a kingdome; for the most noble Edward left him not til he had fet him in Burgus vpon his throne

(134) But his falthood and ingratitude were

monstrous: For the Prince notwithstanding his so great goodnes extended towards him, was enforced deathto returne to Burdeaux without mony wherewith to pay his armie, which was the cause of exceeding great mischiese to himselfe, and to the English dominions beyond the Seas; as if God had beene difpleafed for fuccouring such a Tyrant. The Prince to pay his fouldiers (who were not able to tarry King Peters leafure) coined cuen his plate, and when all would not fer ue, fought to lay vpon his Subjects in Gascaigne and thereabout, a new taxation, which bred a most dangerous revolt. God notwithstanding found out Peter, for it was not long but his baflard brother Henry returned with new forces, and by the aid of Glequin and the French , hee both thrust

him againe from the Throne, and * murthered him *Fran.Tárapha de regions Hife, cromes. alfo with his owne hand. The Prince of Wales himfelfe was in this iourny fo poisoned (as was thought) he neuer after had his health. Duke John his brother is not freed from the suspition of having hafte-ned the Princes end, but whether it is meant of anie in Edward 3. practife at this time or no, appeares not. Now notwithstanding he is safe as yet within Burdeaux.

(135) Now beganne the peace between England and France to vnfettle and vntwine. For while King Edward rejoyced in the excellent vertues and actions of his sonnes and people; Charles the fifth, king of France, warned by so manifold calamitics, as his Dominions had fustained by the English in faire warre, & yet most earnestly coueting to recouer the honor of his Nation, betakes himselfe wholy to other arts and traines; neuer aduenturing his owne person, but executing all his designes by Deputie, wherein the feruice of Bertram de Glesquin Constable of France stood him most in steed: neither neglected hee before hand to lay vp colours wherewith to ouer-paint his * collusions and deniles for fauing his honour; infomuch that when it came to fcanning, the loffe was clearely vpon King Edwards fide, and the cause of the breach made at leastwile doubtfull. His practifes notwithstanding were palable, and it must bee confessed that our truly noble King (without suspition of craft) reposing himselfe pon the rules of " magnanimitie, did not reape the ftable effects of so great and important victories, nor of a peace to ceremoniously made, that (in the worlds opinion) it might neuer bee infringed with-out the manifest breach vpon one side of all bonds both divine and humane. The Prince of Walesby letters aduiseth his father not to trust to any faire words, nor ouertures of farther amity made by the French because he said they entertained practises vnderhand, in enery place against him. But the Prince was*iudgedto speake out of arestlesse humour de-

effects disclosed that his words were true. (1;6) For now king Charles furnamed the wife, reigne Empire having by quicke payments, and by one meanes or wadermined by other gotte hom al the hostages which had bin empledged for performance of the Articles of peace

pefore mentioned, fets all his wits on worke to a-

lighting in warre, and therefore prenailed not. The Ramard L.

The English fo

584

Anisa differences
rably fled away,
after he had giue
faith to bee true Paul Armel. Polyd. Vergil Serres. Walfingham.

*The.VValfie, Wil.Lemberd An.D. 1362

Paly. Very. lib. The first rule of the nuber fed by

A.D. 1364.

A.D. 1364 " Hugo of Lufgn lan.6.
Peter , laith
Longlius, in
Charlet ç.
In Rich 1.
Serres, Innen. France.
John King of
France dyeth in
England.
This Pope Viban

faith VV alfingba was an English-man by birth, ence of the King of England, when Lime for was Eng-Life, of which

* seised upon him here in England at the Sawy, From whence by the pietic of Charles his sonne, then king

of France, his body was in most royall manner conuaied to Doner, at the King of Englands voluntarie charge, and entombed among his forefathers at S. Denys with all funerall maiefly, not farre off from the Soucraigne City Paris, feat of the French Menarches, as the other their place of Sepulture. Likewife Inne Queene of Scots comming into England

tyrannical cruelties by the Spanish Stories, are reported fo foule, and fo many, that they * scarce suffer Nero or Caligula to goe before him; though he Hijpen per 4were otherwise a Prince, who had such parts of mind (faith Rodericus) as doe set forth and adorne the Owner, but cannot make him happy. His naturall blood thirstinesse was encreased, and precipitated, fome fay, by the magicall practifes of Maria de Padil-Is his concubine, who (calumniously " charging the

*Pauli Emylin a Carels. Queene

*Reder, Sen, Hill

587

* Inventorie of France in Charle

letters and presents, while in the mean time his plots ripen abroad, and the County of Ponties (the king of Englands vndeniable inheritance) was first surprifed before King Edward heard thereof. And whereas the Prince of Wales had at a Parliament in Gascoigne propounded a demand for fowage, or of money to beclevied by the chimney, the Earles of Armignae and Cominges, and other Lords the Princes Subjects, bearing no found affections toward the English Empire (the leffe for that by the pollicy of Glequin, and the Chancellor of France * Dourmauns, all or most of the Countries and Townes(which by vertue of the peace made at Bretigney) were annexed thereunto, were cliningly wrought to return to their old Lords) repaire to the French Court at Paris, there to purfue an appeale for redreffe of this oppression against the Prince (who was not so happy as to follow the counfell of Sir Robert Knols and other wifest Captaines who diffwaded this impolition,) pretending that hee was to answere before King Charles as before his superiour Lord, of whom (they faid) he held by homage and fealtie. This practife of the diflovall Lords (for what could they bee elfe? feeing King Edward and his heires were absolutely freede (by vertue of the faid Treatie) from all manner of service for any of their Dominions in France) King Charles did openly at last entertaine, and (vpon hope to reco-uer by surprise, and plot, what the English had won by dint of fword and perfect manhood) proceeded to fummon the Prince of VVales to Paris, there to answere such accusations as his subjects made a-

buse the King of Englands credulitie, till hee had got-ten before hand as farre as diffimulations could ad-

uance: hee Courts the good old Prince with louing

(137) To encrease the indignitie of these deni-ses, you should hear the French kings Orators before the Pope and Emperour, to whom king Edward had feuerally fent Ambaffadors, full of complaints against King Charles, laying wholie vpon the French, the blame of the new warre, as vpon open breakers of faith, and violaters of the league, most confidently on the contrary part charge the English.

We had fuffered the French hoftages to visit their

friendes at home vpon the French Kinges word,

that they should come backe by a day, contrary to

which word, they, nor any of them, either were

or are returned. That not fo much as the Law of

"Nations was kept with vs, which ties Princes to

demaund reftitution by their Officers of Armes,

or vpon deniall to defic them, but where (fay we)

*Serret rathly

Pol.Virg.in E.3

are the *Heralds which King Charles did fend?We fay, that without notice hee furprifeth by flealth the Earledome of Ponthies, King Edwards vnque-"ftionable right, and hath diffeifed vs in Aquitame, "which doth no leffe belong vnto vs then Pontheis. That * Margaret the Inheritrice of Flanders, which had beene promifed to the Lord Edmund, one of "our Kings fonnes, was by their injurious practife" wonne away, and bestowed in marriage vpon Phi-"lip Duke of Burgundie. Finallie, wee fay, that Lew-" is Duke of Anion, one of the pledges, making "an escape by that, contrary to honour, and the "league, was by them received, and not returned, which points being all of transcendent qualitie, are "(say wee) directly contrarie to the Treatie and 'fworne agreement at Bretigny.

The French hereunto answere, and charge vpon vs, to shew the fault of first breach, not theirs, but

"That we by vertue of the faid Treaty were bound

of Iohn their King. That the peace was made thereby more noyous and hurtfull then the warre, and that they were faine to purchase the departure of our Souldiers

"immediately to withdraw our Armie out of France, which yet (they faid) we did not during all the raign with a greater charge then would have maintained 'a very gallant Armie: That this breach was ours,

because the Souldiers were ours. That King Ed- Inchesing, ward was bound in an open affembly of the States serrer. of both Realmes, to renounce his right in the

Crowne of France: when (say they) was this done Thus they, and Serres ads that the Effares of those Countries which had beene affigned by the Treatie to the English affeuered, that it was against the fundamentall laws of France to alien anie part, & that they neither could, nor would cease to be members of that Crowne.

(138) So ye behold that the fortune of the great is never to want friends to speake for them, nor occalions to flip out or in, whenfoeuer profit and aduantage doe inuite. Memorable (if true) is that part of the Frenchmens defense, in that polite and learned Italian, P. Aemylius, where it being objected with what honour and clemencie King John was vied by vs, they breake out and affirme, that wee (being their Beneficiaries or Free-holders for such Countries as wee held in France) tooke more gold for the onely ransome of King John, then they paied to re-deeme S. Lewis their king, & his brother, the Peeres, and whole French Army captivated in the Christi. and wrote French Army captivated in the Chrifti, an warres by the barbarous Soldan. But (good Ae-mylius) fay that were fo, yet cannot you fay, that the funded spainfs funded was worth the leaft Countrie in P. Assisius. fumme wee tooke was worth the least Countrie in France, and when all France was ours, was it not great bountie to take so small a pittance? If you replie that we had many Countries besides, wee reioine and trulie fay, that wee quit more then we acquired. But let vs proceed : for now all claimes & quarrels were as open, as if no obstacle had ener beene interposed: the ignominie of their late terrible toiles wounded all true French hearts, and they defire(king Edward growne aged) not to feeme by fitting still vpon so many thornes of disgrace, and loffe, to have beene outwarred, though over-warred. and though in two or three battels inferior, yet not

to have beene clearely debellated. (139) What doth our King Edward now ? Hee An.D. 1369 *cals a Parliament, declares the breach, praies aid, librid Duke of botaines it, and claimes the crowne of France afreft. invade France. John Duke of Lancaster and Humfrey de Bohun Earle of Hereford are lent ouer to Calais with a great force to inuade France. No great matter as then enfued. * Thomas Beauchamp Earle of Warwicke comming o-uer in hope to haue worke for his Curtelax, for the French affronted our armie vnder the conduct of Duke Philip le Hardy (though at this time scarce shewing himselfe worthy that surname) butrosevpon the Earles arrivall, and retired, accused the Lords for floath, and fware he would abroad among them to find fighting, while English bread was as yet vndigested in his souldiers stomacks. Somewhat he did, but death by a pestilential dart presented the rest. This Earle had with him a learned man (as Scipio had Polybiss) to register the acts which hee faw done : Aworthy example ill followed by pofterity. The * Duke of Lancafter peirced vp with fterity. The * Duke of Lancafter peirced vp with his armie so farre as Roan. The same Polydor wonde-Holos, in Edm ring why they of Ponthein having for an hundreth 3 and twelue yeeres (that is, ever fince King Edward the first had it given to him with his wife) been ours, should reuolt, only daring the greatnesse of the Englift, can find no other reason for their doings but this pleasant one, that as dispersed cattell gather to their owne heard, fo Frenchmen flocke to the French,

and English follow English.

(140) Stirring Princes cannot containe themselues within their owne quietly possessed rights: An.D.1370 Otherwife, who fees not how much betterit is for Sin Rabert the people, that their Princes should manage well Resilience the people, that their Princes should manage well Resilience the that which they have, rather then graspe at more?

Parts about
For King Edward (notwithflanding his continual)

Private. manifold victories) comes back to the Subject (who yet had gained hugely by the warres, and therefore might the better doe it) for supportation and they yeeld it, but his age was abused, for the money was not expended as the pretences were made. Pringte

* Polyd.Verg.in

Chap. 12. Edward, III, ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 49.

Paul Emplis

*Paul Emyl. Inc. Meir Holisfis.

leffe, * after Midsomer day, that renowned Captaine Sir Robert Knols, whom martiall vertue had raifed from the lowest rancke to the highest reputation (though some also affirme him * borne noble) was fent by King Edward into France with an Armie, where (while obedience lasted to his direction) all things prospered. But by the instigation of one Sir Iohn* Mensterworth the yong Lords Grandsonne, and Fitzwalter, and other vainelie scorning to be vnder Knols, for that they held themselves his betters, and thereupon dividing themselves after they had done fundry exploits, marching vp euen to Paris, were beaten and foild by the French under Glequins conduct, but Knols wintred fafe in Britaine. Menfterworth comes into England, and knowing accusers have the vantage, complaines to King Edward of Knols: but not altogether beleeved: he ads treason to vntruth, and turning French becomes a wicked enemy to his King and Country, * promifing the French to procure the castisian Nauie to inuade England, for which being in the last yeere of King

turnes were ferued with publicke loanes. Neuerthe-

Edwards raigne taken, hee by due course was con-demned and cut in pieces, dying the death he had descrued. He was laid hould upon in the City of Pampeline in Nauarre, and from thence conveighed to London, vpon whose bridge his wicked head stood

*The Walf in Edward 3

(141) *Pope *Prbsn* the fifth, comming from Rome to Asimton with purpose to vaire these two mighty Kings, their wils, and mights against the common enemy of Christendome, pur off mortality at Marfils, and so that holy intention ceased for the present: but the same being * continued by his next fucceffor Gregory 11. yet tooken o effect, no more then that which the Emperour to like cause would have vndergone: which the French impute to King Edward, who confident by reason of his former atchieuements, would trie it out by the fword. Wherein he seemed to forget the mutable condition of warre, the fearnesse of his bodie, and the greennesse of his Grand-Child yong Richard, who was to succeed, if the Prince of Wales died, as shortly after he did. Neither did God seeme to approue his opinion herein, for that croffes came falt vpon him, both at home and abroad. There is no greater wisdome nor happinesse then to know when we are well, and then to preferue without hazard or empairment, that honour wealth or quiet which we

already haue. (142) Among the States and Townes (affigned

Sentinell.

to the English by vertue of the treatie at Bretigny)
which had revolted to the French, was the Citie of Limoges in Limofin, whither the Prince marcheth, & fits down with his armie before it. Thither * came vnto him out of England his brethren the D. of Lancaster & the Earle of Cambridge, with a fresh supplie of valiant Chiefs and Souldiers. The City stood is out to the vttermost, and was forceably entred, where mercy had nothing to faue nor spare, the fword and fire for terror to other killing and defa-cing in a manner all. Hee* who writes that the Prince flew vp neere to Paris, and scarsely, by reason of Glequins valour, got backe to Burdeaux, seemes to have mistaken therein, as in many other things concerning vs of great importance. After this feruice, the Prince, (health failing him more & more) leaues his Brethren in Aquitaine, and failes into Eng-

(143) The French in the meane time wonne towns and places in Aquitaine, gathering new hopes after folong and perpetuall infelicities. The losse of that expert Captaine Sir Iohn Chandoys (vnfortunately flaine) was a great advantage to their defires, whose whole care for warre rested vpon Glequin (not long before advanced for his military vertue from low estate to so great eminencie, as to bee Constable of France, the chiefest officer for warre which that Kingdome hath) and he a man of much

proofe, in good and euill fortune, so tempered his courage with discretion, that he onely first bad his Country rife againe, and endeauor in despite of euill fortune to reflourish.

(144) The Prince of Wales (wanting health) vp on comming to his fathers fight, rendred up the Dutchie of Aquitaine, to bee disposed of, as to his rolall pleasure seemed good. While King Edward was at Clarendon, there repaired to him the factious king of Nauarre, whole errand was to make an ouerture of affociation against the French; but as his offers were acceptable, fo his cautions not feeming fufficient, hee returned (after great entertainement) without concluding.

(145) John Duke of Lancaster, and his brother the Earle of Cambridge, doe now returne out of A. An.D. 1372 quitame, with the Ladies Constance and Isabel daughters of Don Pedro late King of Spaine, whom they married: The Duke thereupon inftiling himfelfe King, and his wife Queene of Castile and Leon, Nor was the English name onely encreased in titularie ho-nors; for about this time, the Flemings (who had frdat fea in a sharpe fight, shout twentie and fine of their shippes being taken, and all the man share.

Hatisfied. ter with a grieuous loffe; for the French hauing befieged the ftrong Citie of Rochel in Santoin, with the aide by sea of Henry King of Castile; to relieue the English, John Earle of Pembroke was sent with about forty shippes, men, victuals, munition, and mony to the value of twenty thousand marks, for the vies of the warre; but being fodainely affailed with the Spanish Armado, which consisted of many great shippes , under the command of Ambroje Buccani. gra and others, the English after a long and cruell conflict were veterly diffressed, the Earle taken pri- by the Castilla foner, and almost all the rest either taken, or put to the fword. * Rochel held out notwithstanding , to Polyd Perg. 1.19 whose reliefe while King Edward himselfe in person, with an extraordinary force fet faile, the wind (alwayes till that time fauourable to his voyages for green is blom backe into backe. England with great griefe, and the waste (they write) of * nine hundred thousand pounds sterling. Neither did hee so give over the care of that strong Peece, which the English most manfully made good

against the enemie. againtthe enemie.

(146) * Kochel thus perfifting in loyall refolution.

on, Iohn Duke of Britaine (who had married the Rebot contian the Begins Lady Marie daughter of King Edward) a Gentleman of much gratitude toward the English, the authors of his fortunes, refolues to aduenture his state in their quarrells thips away for England: hath aide ministred vnto him: hee returnes, and warres with various euent. But tohn Duke of Lancaster with a very great Armic comes to Callis, and from thence marcheth ouer the whole face of France, and (though with loffe of many thousand . horse in the The Pray. defert countries of Auuergn through famin) came fafe, but with an almost-hunger-starued Army to Bur deaux. Not long after hee drew into the field, and a day was appointed betweene him and the Duke of Anion the French Kings brother, to have tried the quarrell of their Nations by set battell, before the City of Tholonz in Languedoe, but by an untimely & apernitious fhort truce (to which K. Edward yeelded because his son the Prince lay dangerously sick) the hoped victory not onlie flipt out of the English mens hands, but almost all advantage also of doing any thing else seasonably. The French boasted themselues as of a Conquest, who notwithstanding did helpe out their valiancy with policie. Glequin makeshis vie of all occasions, and workes much harme to the English party in Guien and Britaine; But in Britaine" Sir Robert Knols did fo nobly acquit "LTillin chres himselfe on the behalfe of his Souereignes sonne in law the Duke, that he only seemed a fit parallel to Glequin, like as hee flopt the current of his fortune. Yyyy 2

T he Flemith

The English Nauie diffresse

The Walks

An.D.1374.

Some

(147) The next yeere the Duke of Lancaster re turned into England, after whose departure all Aqui-taine almost revolted, and fell to the French, who by the aduantage of King Edwards age, the Princes pining maladie (which some say was not poison but a *dropsie) and the successe of their practices more then of their valour, were growne braue againe: A treatie of peace was holden at Bruges, all was but painted: for even then the French most of all prepared underhand for new attempts. Chiefe commissioners for the English at that conference was Iohn Duke of Lancaster, and for the French the Duke of Anion. The effects hatched nothing but a short truce for our euils to breed in. (148) Among the parties which were prejudi-ced by this hurtfull truce, the Duke of Britaine was

A.D. 1375. Tood Next.

chiefe. He had obtained great assistance from King Edward, and was now with the Earles of Cambridge, March, Warwicke, and Stafford, with many other no-ble gentlemen and fouldiers returned into Britaine, making to themselues a faire way for their maine enterprize, which was to fettle the Duke, and by the commodity of his Dutchies situation to annoy the common enemy, and the better to recouer the English dominions in Aquitaine: But this treatie did that which Glequin, their indeed brave Generall, had not as yet in any fort effected ; for the Duke of Britaine had* driven the French Kings army out of his territories. But who wonders at this truce ? The Prince of Wales was likely to die; plots one foot at home; the Duke of Lancafter had an eye to the Succession: things grew troubled: the Kings age was abused by dame Alice Peirs (a most busic Court-flie) who (after Queene Philips death) kept the old man warme, and the French faw all these matters and slept not. (149) King Edward calling a Parliament, vn-foulding his effate, and wants, with demand of fup-plies, the bodie of the affembly in ftead of contribu-

tions exhibits complaints, directly chargeth the

Kings Officers with fraud, and humbly praieth, that

John Duke of Lancaster, the Lord Latimer, then Lord

Chamberlaine, Dame Alice Peirs (whose * behauiours

respectiesse of her Sexes frailty, would in person,

time fitting by the Judges or Doctors, would also

ard Sturry might be removed from the person of the King. Neuerthelesse the Parliament made offer,

that if the King were indeed out of money, they

would liberally advance toward his vies. The Prince

of Wales fauoured their free dealing, and all the faid

persons were remoued, others more acceptable

(fuch as the Prince and Peeres thought fitter) being

furrogated in their places.

(150) While this Parliament (called the Good) lasted at Westminster, the noble soule of Edward

Prince of Wales vpon Trinity Sunday (which eueric

yeere he vied to celebrate with the greatest honour that might be in due veneration of so diuinea my-

ftery)was presented to the holy and blessed Trini-

ty, after he had lived therein about 46, yeeres, In

necott-plaph of melindh of topedities, the words of Wallingsham thall ferre vs for the prefent, of whose death he writes thus. Luo obemite, &c. With whom dying, died all the hope of Bugliflomen; daving whose life, the English feared no insuefan of the enemy, nor any en-counter in Bastell: For he affailed no Nation which he-

nercame not he befreged no City which he tooke not. And

when this lampe was put out, the effect of this Par-

ed of Epitaph or mention of obsequies, the words

A.D.1376.

*I.Tillion.

ATho.VVallin. they painted forth as most intollerable, for that shee, *The, VV alliss,

Stick Peirs the
old Kings Concubine a most in
folent woman. faid they, come into all Courts of Justice, and someafter a most insolent manner perswade or disswade for her most aduantage) and with these one Sir Rich-

Holinfo.

The Prince of

liament was extinguished. His mortall parts were interred at Canterbury, where his monument standeth, but the renowne of his inimitable vertues hane as large an extent, and space to moue in, as the wide world. The King of France most reuerently celebrated his Exequies within the Chappell of his Palace at Paris. But in England there was a generall forrow, as for one whose worth had begotten a just hope that hee would out-goe* his Ancestors in glorie. Death preventing that experiment of him. he is notwithflanding in full poffession of loue and praise * among all men for that which was passed. The cause of this domesticke mourning encreased with the effects of his loffe, which forthwith difclofed themselves. The Kingrecals such persons as at the petition of the Lords and Commons had beene remoued, and Peter de la Mare speaker of the last Parliament, who had eloquently express the minde of the house in the foresaid reformations, was, at the fuite of the faid bolde Dame Alice Poirs, con- "The vvall. demned by the King to perpetual imprisonment at * Nettingham, chough within two yeeres after by the importune faite of friends hee regained libertie. Meane-while Islm Duke of Lancafter * gets the go-uernance of the kingdome to be instufted to him by nis ratner,
(151) Richard the eldeft sonne of the late most
moble Prince of Wales, for preuention of all debates 7 Richard stage
about the right of succession to the Crowne of
Procedure, and

England, was by his Grand-father first made Earle of and the nobles Chefter, and not long after Prince of wales but for wome to his inscession. more assurance (least the sonnes decease before the fathers should prejudice the Grand-Child) King Edward* caused all the nobles of the Realme to take an Oath to accept and defend Prince Richard, as lawfull heire and King of England, after himselfe was dead: Neither did his*vncles though famous Captaines, repugne. Finally, the good old King, to comfort himselfe in honouring the liuing image of his nobleft Child, the late Prince Edward, and to give the minde of his Grand-Child a feeling of future maiestie, that by the sodeine insolency of the splendor, it might not afterward too much abuse pieneds, a might not atterward too much adult his tender indgement, and to make his vncles ac-quainted with respect of his person, he caused him to stropenly at his Table about all his owne Children in Christmas.

(152) About this time the famous Doctor John A.D. 1377. (152) About this time the tamous Doctor John Wielfy amn of flarpe wire, profound learning, and great judgement, did in the Vinterfact of Oxford publikely maintaine fundry propositions and dogmatical points against the Church of Rome, of which the Pope (forefeeing the hazard hanging ouer his triple Crowne) condemned * three and twenty triple Crowne) condemned three and twenty as hereticall; whereupon the Archbishop of Conten-bury and Bishop of London having attached the body of the said Wielef, did in the presence of the Duke of Causifier and the Lord Herry Periotic 6'this great fa-uourers, Jecelare the indgement of the Pope concer-ning Wielefs doctrine, which had then taken deepe roote both in the vniuerfity. Court, and Countrey. So for a while all was quiet. But (vpon some secret So for a white an was quier. Dut (vpon some secret encouragements) he held not peace long. His fol-lowers were, in the phrase of those darke daies, called *Lolards, whereas, in truth, they endeauoured to extirpate all pernitious weeds, which through time, flouth, and fraude, had crept into the field of Gods Church. The Duke of Lameafter (the rather, fome thinke, vpon private emulations against Court-ney Bishop of London) was engaged so faire in his protection, that he and the Lord Percy hardly efcaprotection, that he and the Lord Percy narrayetca-ped the fury of the Londoners, who would without question have hewed them in pieces in reuenge of fome differacefull speech vettered by him against their Bishop, He norwithstanding diffwaded all violence, and kept them from firing his palace of the Sanoy, but they neuerthelesse did in most despitefull manner reuerse his Armories in the open Market: A

dishonour not to be borne, as that in which the dig-

* Polyd. Vereib

A.reg. 5 1.

Thom VV aifing

* Lelium Genil

Fran.Toyn.

"Hee meaner more able in battell then:

Dattell them

Alachabass, you
must beare with
the breaking of
Priscians head,
for it is written

of a King that

many. "He alludes to

nity of his royall bloud was empaired. By this outrage the people (a most dangerous and heady water when once it is out) made known, what he, and the Lord Percie were to have hoped, if they could have fingred them, before they had gotten to Kenington to Prince Richard, who there remained with his mother: The Duke for this bare the Londoners much euill will; neither rested till (for a commencement of revenge) hee had procured the Maior and Aldermen to be thrust from their places, and substituted others in their flead.

(153) France in the meane time erected with new hopes, breathes nothing but warre. Prouisions in that respect were not neglected here. One of the last publike acts of the old kings life, was the triumphall celebration of Saint Georges feaft at Wind-for, where himselfe had founded the order of the Garter; and at this solemnitie hee bestowed vpon his dearest Grandchild Prince Richard the dignitie of Knighthood, which onely thing in all the patrimo-nie of honour could not differed vnto him.

(154) Not long after enfined the sentence of diuorce which God pronounced betweene the foule and body of this mighty and martiall king, who left the world in the moneth of lune at his Manour of Shene in Surrey: his Acts may give you a perfect Character of his mind; few Princes that had so great and heroicke vertues, had fewer vices: there-fore it was a fault of those times, which abounding in learned men, (and among them Geffrey Chancer Prince of Poets) afforded no better an Epitaph then that which we are faine with pitty to reade voon his Monument at Weltminster : the stuffe neuertheleffe is worthie, though the forme bee rude,

Hie decus Anglorum, flos regum prateritorum, Forma futurorum, rex elemens, pax papularum. Terisus Ewardus, regni complens lubilasum, Imničius Pardus, ** pollens bellis Machabaum.

Here Englands grace the flower of Princes paft, Patterne of future, Edward the third is plaste, Milde Monarch, Subiects peace, warres Machabee, Victorious * Pard, his raigne a Inbilee,

No man of his time could by better experience

teach, what a vaine thing worldly glory (to the height whereof hee had aspired) ought to seeme. His mind (by fundry great checkes of Gods proui-dence) recalled to confider of the foure last things, Death, ludgement, Heauen and Hell, made him betake himselfe to Acts of benignity and denotion. The Chappell at the end of the Abbey-Church at Westminster (fince most magnificently enlarged by King Henry the feuenth) was of his building. The holy quiet of studies, and advancement of good Arts, hee so prosperously fauoured, that besides other great priniledges granted to the Vniucriity of Oxford, (*where himselfe had in his youth beene rained by under the learned Walter Burley), he con-ferred the chiefe rule of that whole City growther for-cellor of the Primerfity, subordinating the Maior and Citizens to his gonernment, in regard of their iniuries offered to the Students. This most mighty Monarch that ever ware the Crowne of England, in many other felicities excelled his Ancestors, as in the victorious valour of his Children, their obedience to him, and loue among themselues. A Lady to his wife(their mother) of fuch excellent vertue and gouernment, as that the K. Edwards fortunes feemed to fall into Eclypse when shee was hidden in her Se-

raigned almost one and fifty yeeres, and * lived about His Wife.

threefcore and fiue.

(155) Philip, wife of King Edward, was daughter

pulchre. Such and greater was this Edward, whose

name among the furniting fpendors of his actions, is

justly transmitted with honour to all posterity. Hee

of William Earle of Henault and Holland, fifter of Earle William the last of that house, and of Margaret the Empresse that succeeded him; her mother was * Ivan, lifter of Philip of Valors king of France, daughter of Charles Earle of Valoys, who was sonne to King Milles Philip the Hardy. Shee was married vnto him at Torke, Ianuary 24, crowned at Westminster the first Sunday of Lent following, 1327. Shee was a Lady of great vertue, and a constant true hearted louer of our Nation, was his wife two and forty yeeres, died August 15. Anno 1369 of her husbands raigne, 43, and was buried at Westminster, where shee hath a faire Tombe, at the soote ofher husband, of blacke

foundation of marucilous state and magnificence. His I The.

Touchstone with the garnishing about it, and the

portraiture ouerit of Alablaster: but shee built to

her selfe a Monument of more glory and durability,

by founding, and richly endowing the Colledge, cal-led of her the Queenee in Oxford, which, if it had beene finished according to the proiect, had been a

(156) Edward, their eldest sonne and first child, borne at woodstocke, July 15. in the third yeere of his Fathers raigne, Anno 1 3 2 2, was created Prince of Water, Duke of Aguitaine and Cornwall, and Earle of Cheffer, hee was also Earle of Kent in right of his wife town (the most admired Ladie of that age) daughter of Edmund Earle of Kens, brother, by the fathers fide, to king Edward the fecond. Shee had beene twice matried before, first to the valiant Earle of Salisburie, frow whom shee was diuorced, next to the Lord Thomas Holland, after whole uorcea, next to the LOTO I month i relation, after Whole deceale, this Prince patitionnelly louing her, did marrisher: by her her had Iffue two fonce, Edward the cledit, borne at Angeloffon—, who died at feuen yeeres of age, and Risburd borne at Bardesage, who, after his futher was Prince Pitales, and the three was prince of the prince had also matural Iffue, Sir Tobis Sander, and Six Reger Clarendon Knights; the latter being attainted in the raigne of Henry 4. is thought to have been an-ceftor to the house of Smythes in Effex. Hee died at Canterbury on Trinity Sunday, June 8, atat. 46. of his fathers raign 40 and was buried at Christ-church

there, 1276. (157) William their fecond fonne, and fourth child, was borne 1335.9. of his fathers raigne, at Hatfield in the County of Hertford, taking his Chriftian name from William Earle of Henault his Grandfather, and his furname from the place of his Natiuity; is reported to have deceased in his childhood, & to bee buried at Torke.

(158) Lienel, their third fonne and fift child, was borne at the City of Annor 13,38, hee married first E-lizabeth, the daughter & heire of william Burgh Earle of Vifter in Ireland, in whole right hee was first created Earle of Vifters and because hee had with her the honour of Clare in the Counties of Townsond, as parcell of the inheritance of her Grand-mother Elizabeth (the fifter and coheire of the last Earle Gilbert Clare, hee was in a Parliament, Anno 1362.created Duke of Clarence, as it were of the Country about the Towne Caftle and honour of Clare: from which Dutchie the name of Clarentieux (being the Title of the King of Armes for the South parts of England) is derived. This Duke had Issue by her one onely daughter named Philip, afterward wife of Edmund Mortimer Earle of March, mother of Earle Rozer, Father of Anne Counteffe of Cambridge, and thee was the mother of Richard Duke of rarke, Father of King Edward the 4. the second marriage of this Duke was in Lumbardie at Millayne, with the Lady Violanta daughter of Galeacio the fecond Duke therofibut through intemperance, he lived not long

(159) Jehn, their fourth fonne and fixt Childe

was borne at Gaunt the chiefe Towne of Flaunders, Anno 1340, and 14, of his fathers raigne. In his Childhood he was created Earle of Richmond, which title was afterward recalled in, and bestowed upon Iohn Duke of Britanny, who married his fifter, to whose Dutchy it had formerly belonged. Hee had three wives; the first, Blanch, daughter and Coheire, and in the end the fole heire, of Henry Duke of Laneaster (sonne of Edmund surnamed Crooch-back) in whose right he was at the first Earle, and after Duke of the same, and with that Dutchy also Earle of Leicefter, Derby, and Lincolne, and high Steward of Eng-land. He had iffue by her, Henry of Bullingbrooke Earle of Derbie, after Duke of Hereford, and lastly King of England, named Henry the fourth, who first placed the Crowne in the house of Lancaster ; Philip, wife of John the first, King of Portugall; and Elizabeth, married first to John Holland Earle of Huntingdon, (brother of Thomas Duke of Surrey) and after him, to Sir Iohn Cornwall Baron of Fanhope. His fecond wife was Constance, the eldest daughter of Peter King of Caffile and Less, in whose right for the time he entituled himfelf King of both thefe realmes; by her he had iffue one onely daughter, named Katherine, married to Henry the third, sonne of King Iohm, in possession before, and in her right, after, King of both the said realmes. His third wife was Katherine the widow of Sir Hugh Swinford, a Knight of Lincolnshire, eldest daughter and Coheire of Para Roet a Gascoigne called Guien King of Armes, for that Countrey, * his yonger daughter being married to Sir Geoffrey Chaucer, our Laureat Poet. By her hee had iffue (borne beforematrimony, and made legi-timate afterward by Parliament holden in the twentimate atterward by Parlament notice in the terms tieth yeere of King Riehard the fecond, John Earle of Sommer fet, Thomas Duke of Exceffer, Henry Bishop of Winchester and Cardinall; and Joane, who was first married to Robert Ferrers (Baron of Wemme and Onefley, in the Counties of Salop and VV arwicke) and fe-condly to Raph Neuil the first, Earle of Westmerland. Shee and all her brethren were furnamed Beaufort, of a Caftle which the Duke had in France* where they were all borne,) in regard thereof bearing the Porcellers of a Castle for the cognizance of their family. This Duke in the thirteenth yeere of his Nephew King Richard, at a parliament holden at London, was created Duke of Aquitaine, but in the fixt yeere after, hee was called home, and this Title recalled in, and in the third veere after, the fixtieth of his age, Anno

honourably entombed in the Quire of Saint Paul. Edmond, their 5. fonne, furnamed of Langley, was created Earle of Cambridge Anno 1 362, in the fame Parliament, wherein Lionel was created Duke of Clarence. Hee was afterward made Duke of Torke, Anno 1286. and married Isabel daughter and Coheire to Peter, King of Castile and Lean. His sonne Richard Plantagenet Duke of Yorke, took to wife Anne Mortimer heire of the forefaid Lionel elder brother to Edmand Langley.

1399. he dyed at Ely houfe in Holborne, and lyeth

William another of their fonnes, furnamed of Wynfore, where he was borne dyed yong, and is buried at westminster.

Thomas the youngest sonne of King Edward and Queene Philip furnamed of Woodflocke (where hee was borne) was first Earle of Buckingham, created by his Nephew King Richard the fecond on his Corona

tion day, An. 1377.by whom, after also he was made Duke of Glocester, 1385. The Earledomes also of Effex and Northampton, and the Constableshippe of England, fell to him by right of his wife Eleanor, the only daughter and heire of Humfrey de Bohun Earle of Hereford and Effex. Hee was a man of valour, wisdome, and vigilancy for the behoofe of the King his Nephewand the State, but those noble vertues (distempered with too much wilfulnesse & froward obstinaty) bred him, first Enuy, and after ruine. For the King furmifing him to bee a too feuere observer of his doings, confulted with Thomas Mombrar Duke of Norfolke how to make him away; whom Mombray vnawares furprizing, contaied fecretly to Callis where he was strangled 1397. 20, of his Nephewes raigne. Himfelfe in his life had prouided a goodlie tombe at Playsie in Esex (his owne Towne, and *theviuall feat of the great Confiables of England "cubid." *where hee founded a Colledge; whither his body is Efec. was brought, and laid with all funerall pompe, but afterward it was translated to Westminster, where also lyeth Eleanor his wife, who dyed 1399. Their iffue was Humfrey Earle of Buckingham, * who dyed at Chefter of the peltilence An. 1400 Anne (married first to Edmund Earle of Stafford, by whom shee had Humfrey Duke of Buckingham, secondly to William Bourchier Earle of Eue, by whom she had Henry Earle of Esex) Philippa, Ioane, Ifabell, who died all iffulcife,
1/abel, the elder daughter and second childe of K.

Edward and Queene Philip was married at Windfore with great pompe to Ingelram of Guifnes, Lord of Coucy, Earle of Soyfons and after Arch-Duke of Auftris, whom K. Edward (his father in law) created also Earle of Bedford 1 265, by whom thee was mother of *two daughters, Mary, (married to Henry of Barre, *Millesp.441; to whom thee bare Robert de Barre, and Ioane, the wife of Lewis of Luxemburg, Earle of S. Paul) and Philip, the wife of Robert de Veere Earle of Oxford, Duke of Ireland and Marquesse of Dublyn; this Robert in the heigth of his fortunes for sooke his noble Ladie, and married one * Lancerona a Loyners daughter (by report) which came with King Richard the seconds wife out of Boheme; and being for his pride and abufing the Kings care to the hurt of the State, driven out of the land by the nobles, hee dyed at Louain, in great vexation of mind, and extreme penury, An. 1392. Ifabel his wives mother was buried in the Church of Fryars Minorites neer Algate in London.

Isane their fecond daughter and third child was borne 9. of her fathers raigne An. 1335. Beng 14. yers of age, thee was defired in marriage by folemne Embaffage, from Alphon the eleuenth King of Ca-file and Leon, fonne of King Ferdinando the 4. was espouled by Proxie, intituled Queene of Spaine, and conveyed into that Countrey, where shee presentlie deceased of a great plague that then raigned; so as the King comming to meete her to folemnize the espousals, with great griefe accompanyed her to Church only at her funerall 22.0f her fathers raigne. An.1348.

Blanch the 3 daughter, died yong and lieth buried atWestminster.

Mary, their 4. daughter was married to Iohn Mont-ford Duke of Britaine.

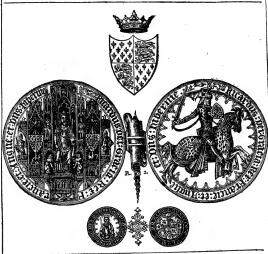
Margaret their youngest daughter was the first wife of Iohn de Hastings Earle of Pembroke, but shee dyed without iffue.

RIGHARD

Chap. 13. Richard. IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 50.

RICHARD THE SECOND KING OF Monarch 50 ENGLAND, AND FRANCE, LORD

OF IRELAND, THE FIFTIETH MONARCH, OF ENGLAND, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, AND TROVBLES.



CHAPTER XIII.

A.D. 1378



chard of Burdeaux, sonne to that Great Star of Eng-The Chevalrie, Edward, by-named the Blacke rince, and grand-child to the most renowned Edward the third (both of them lately deceased) was crowned in the elementh

yeare of his age, and vp-on the fixteenth day of July. Seldome hath been feen fo magnificent a Coronation, as that of this young King, but the thing which gaue a better lustre of hope at his beginning; then the shine and maiesty of that publike Act, was the wife course which in this his childhood was taken; to wit, the reconciliation of the Lord John Duke of Lancaster, and the Citizens of London, with the restitution of Sir Peter de la Mare Knight, Speaker in the late Parliament, (whom King Edward had committed to prison, at the infligation of Dame Alice Peeres now banisht, and confiscated) not onely to former liberty, but likewife to fauour and honor extraordinary.

(2) At this Coronation (which, as matters not vnworthic to bee keptaline, wee following the immethodicall order of the Record, have here for perperuall memory thought good to abridge out of authentike Monuments) lohn the Kings eldeft vn. cle, vnder the flile of John King of Caffile and Leon, and Duke of Lancaster, by humble petition to the King, claimed to bee now Steward of England, in right of his Earledome of Leitester; and as he was Duke of Lancatter, to beare the Kings chiefe fword called Curtana; and as Earle of Lincolne, to cutte and carue at the royall Table before the King. His petitions being found iuft, were confirmed to him, and to his Assignes, the two Earles of Derby and Stafford, the first to beare the Sword, while the Duke should be busied about other offices as Steward, and the other to cut and carue. The Duke then in great estate, held this the Kings high Court of Stewar. Ship The Court of in the V Vhite-hall of the Kings Pallace at Westminster, they XXXX 2

Seruices by nures at the Coronation found and allow ed in that Cour

*Idem ib.

ard of England, that certaine of the faid William his

Fee-simple lands in his towne of A. were holden

of the Kingin chiefe by Sericantie. The words of

the petition, shewing the service, which we (fearing

to erre) leaue for other to interprete, are these. De

trouwer le iour due Coronnement nostre trefredoubte Seig-

neur le Roy, ung homme de faire une mosse quest appelle

Dilgirunt,& fi apponatur languineum adonques il eft

The Kings Waferer, The honoural feruice of the Barons of the fine Ports Ex Chirograph D Rob Cotton The first attempts of the The French take the Abbot of Lewis and others Priloners in Suffix.

appelle Malpygeryn en la Cuisin de Roy. And accorfuch as he did put about him, through whose want dingly the laid William was admitted to that feruice of care, things declining to a fhamefull change, and by his Deputy. Richard Lyons, as Tenant of the the glorious atchieuements of the two late Edwards Manour of L. which tohn de Lyfton and his ancefalling vnder Eclypie, there was onlie found one pristors held by the seruice of making wafers for the uate Citizen of London, that (without regard to the King at the day of Coronation, was accordinglie enuie of the flothfull Lords, or his owne hazards, thereunto admitted. The Barons of the Cinque or of any thing elfe, so much as the good of his neg-Ports, vpon their petition and claime, the matter lected Countrey) put his whole strengths to sup-port the same. This was the worthy I ohn Philpot, being euident, were admitted to beare(and to haue for their Fees) the Kings Canapie of cloth of Gold who at his owne charges mans out a Fleet to the (or of what other stuffe else it pleased the King) vpon Sca, raignes by them therein, and guardes both wa- lobin philipst Cith foure staues of filter ouer the kings head vpon the ter and land from their intollerable violences. Not zen of Landon. day of Coronation, and also to lit at meat in the hall did his so great pietic faile of happy euent, for God at the highest Table on the kings right hand. Iohn (who fauours all vertuous actions) had put into his Fitz-Iohn, in right of his wife, shewed, that the Mahands within a fhort space 15. Spanish Ships fraught nour of S. in Norfolke was holden of the King by with rich merchandize, which the right of warre the scruice of Chiefe Larderer at his Coronation, made his, wherby his great charges were abundantly and that Geffrey Burdeleys did exercise the same at the repayed. Let vs fee his Statue erected now at last, Coronation of King Edward the third: whereupon with the Statues of Walworth, and other honourable Iohn Filz-Iohn was admitted to exercise that office Citizens in London. by himselfe and his Deputies. Richard Hering for (6) What therefore the loue of their Prince and the Mannor of C. in the County of surrey, in the Countrey could not stirre vp in the Lords, that very right of Agnes his wife, claimed to be Viher of the shame and indignation doe. There is consultation Kings Chamber; but because that claime did no way had, and the King of Nanarre (an vnquiet subject of concerne the Coronation of the King, hee was left the Crowne of France) morgageth the Hauen otherwife to purfue his interestiffic to thought good. Towne of Cheirbrough in Normandy to King Richard. These are the scruices which were then claimed be-The occasion was the rather not omitted, for that, fore the D. of Lancaster, Steward of England, which by thrusting into it a good Garrison (which was he with his * owne hands deliuered into the Kings forthwith done, and first Sir Robert Ross, then Sir Chancery there to bee enrowled. At the fame Iohn of Harleston, both worthy Knights, made Cap-Coronation also Thomas of VV oodstocke youngest taines there) the same would at all times serue to fonne of the late king was created Earle of Buckingiue quiet entrance to an inualion of France which gham, Thomas Mowbray Earle of Nottingham, Guy now was medicated. chard d' Angolem Earle of Huntington, and Henry Per-(7) How loofely, the meane while, the affaires of The facrilegion cie Earle of Northumberland. Thus the bounty of the State and Iustice were managed, by reason of bers Haule. the young Monarch imparted large rayes of his imthe varipe yeeres of the King, may appeare by a bloody outrage then perpetrated and vareuenged. periall Splendor to their eminent persons of his The occasion this. In the warres of Spaine, (which Kingdome. Howfoeuer, thefe and the like honours haue not in our Common-wealth either al-Edward the late Prince of Wales made for restoring wayes beene fortunate to the Receivers or without Peter to the Crowne,) the Earle of Dean was taken repentance to the Donors. and adjudged Prifoner (from all others clayming that (3) But the generall State of the kingdome bee-ing implicated, before the late king Edwards deceale, honour) to two valiant Esquires Robert Haule and Iohn Shakell, who both of them belonged to that marby reason of that opportunity and advantage to tiall Knight Sir Iohn Chandos. They free the Earle, their delignes, which the neighbour enemies of taking his sonne and heire for assurance of perforthe Crowne of England found in the oldage of that mances. This young Gentleman(vtterly neglected victorious Monarch, was now no leffe entangled hitherto by his dishonourable Father,) was now dethrough the contempt of king Richards youth. For manded of them in the Kings name, by the Duke of before his Coronation, the French with fifty thips Lancafter, with a purpole (as was thought) the rather either to aduance thereby his (the faid Dukes) title (as Walfingham cals them) thrust into the Hauen of Rie, the towne whereof they rifled, and confumed to the Crowne of Spaine, or to make a peace there, with fire. The Crowne of England was scarse setled with the better conditions. The Esquires refuse, on his head, when the Scots at the other end of Engand thift their Hostage out of the way; are thrust land fet fire vpon the Town of Rockesbrough: but the therefore into the Tower of London; but elcaping French (encouraged by their late exploit at Rie) arfrom thence, take Sanctuary in Westminster. Thither riued in their Gallyes, and tooke the whole Isle of with fifty armed men doth Sir Alan de Bruxhull le-Wight, the Caftle (which Sir Hugh Tyrell manfulcretlie repaire, drawes Shakel by a wile out of the prily defended,) only excepted, lenying upon the inhauiledge of the Church, and expostulates the matter bitants one thouland Marks in lieu of sparing their with Haule in the Kings name; vpon whom (prote-fting against the abuse offcred to that Maiestie in his houses from the rage of warre, and flame. Neither was it long before they landed at Winchelfey, though tender yeeres, and freely taxing his Counfellours being from thence repulled, they burnt the Towne with iniustice, auarice, and euill aduice,) while they of Haftings at that present. fought to lay hands, he with his fhort fword valiant-(4) These petty braues thus given to the king. ly made them all flie off, but in the end they most were farther fortunated with a little victory. For wickedly murthered him in the Chancell:commenthey, emboldened with fuch fucceffes (dishonourading himselfe, in his last words, to God renenger of ble and dangerous to King Richard, who feemed to such injuries, and to the liberty of our holy mother the haue loft the foueraignty of the English Ocean Church. With him was murthered a feruant of his where Pyrates durft fo reuell, and also to haue had thrust in with a Iauelin at the backe. This is that as little counsell, courage or forces left about him Haile whose body lies buried under a brasse-plated vpon the land) come on Shore at Roting dene in Suf stone in the Abbey Church at Westminster, whose fex. The Prior of Lewis with some flight tumultuablood (by the violence of the faid Duke) found nor rie Forces, rashly aduentures himselfe against them that fulneffe of legall vengeance, which so hainous where he with two knights, & some few others were an homicide required. taken prisoners, and about 100. English slaine, but of (8) The North parts of England were about Extract furprithis time greewoully visited with the stroake of pe- zed and recoun the French many more, who returned with their Priftilence, and their lamentable affiction encrealed dates. foners to their Nauie. A.D. 1378. (5) The chiefe charge of affaires lay vpon the Duke of Lancaster, the Kings vncle, or vpon some by the inroads and outrages of the Scots; who had now furprized Berwicke killing Sir Robert Boynton

Chap-13 | Richard IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 50.

The L. Farme Gernice. "Honorefied The Counteffe

Dowager of Pembroke her claime to feruice. The Earle of March. The Seruices of Haftings Earle of Pembroke.

592

England.

The Lord high Marshall of England.

The f ,high Chamberlaine

of England.

The Earle of Krat Deputies a Crizen of London at the Coronation,

The Earle of

Sit lobude Ar-

genthem (or Ar-genten) his fecuice

* This name

bare three cups

Argent in a field gules,

that you may know that anci-

The fertifices of the L.Maior of

eer, who had freed him for one hundreth and foure

pounds) for that time put off, his right to him in the

meane time faued notwithstanding. The Lord

Major and Citizens of London (fuch as were chosen

for that high dayes (eruice among themselues) were

found by good Record to have their severall rights.

The Major to attend in his owne person as chiefe

Cuppe-waiter, (charged with the Cupbord-roy-

Knight the Constable thereof; which yet the Earle of Northumberland upon the ninth day after recourred by force, putting those, who had surprized it, to

A.D. 1379.

(9) Neither was the spirit of the English (after it began to requicken) idle elfewhere; for as Sir Robert Rous had divers wayes vexed the French, and taken Oluer (the brother of that renowned Bertrand de Glequin) prisoner, so Sir John de Harleston, Captaine of Cherbrough after him, flew and took divers French in a skirmish. These the few foregoing drops of greater approaching showers. For Sir Hugh Caluerlee and Sir Thomas Percy, made admirals of the narrow Seas, tooke many rich prizes, and exploited fundry other things very praifeworthily, bringing home the acceptable newes of the diflike which the Britons had conceived against the French Kings Gouernment; for he commanded them to render vp to him all their strengths, Castles, and walled Townes, and many of them, who refused to obey, hee put to death.

The commons

ble younggentle-mans faithskee-

The Britons delike of the French Gouern mentionatter of

for other like, found need of pecuniary supplies; whereupon in a Parliament holden at London, it was agreed, that for supply of the Kings wants, the Commons should be spared, and the burthen be wholie vndergone by the able. The rates then of that taxe were these; Dukes, Archbishops, Earles and Bishops at ten marks each, mitred Abbots at as much, befides fortie pence for euery Monke vnder their fubication. Briefly (faith 7 homas Walfingham) there was no religious perion, man or woman, Iufitiar, Sheriffe, Knight, Efquire, Parfon, Vicar, or * Chaun-"Simplen Capella-nus, Walfing, ry Prieft free from this taxe rated according to the

(10) These emploiments, and fresh designes

A memorable example of a m

value of their yeerely receipts.

(11) We formerlie mentioned, how Iohn Shakell (the other companion of Robert Haulee so execrablic murdered in Gods-house) wastaken. He now voon condition that the King (befides 500 markes in money) should give him lands to the yeerely value of one hundreth markes, and should also found and sufficiently endow, at the Kings cofts, a Chantric with fine Priefts for their foules, whom the kings Officers had wickedly murthered, herendred vp his Hostage, the eldest (but naturall) sonne of the said Earle of Dean. At the discourry and bringing forth of whom, all men were stroken with wonderfull loue and admiration: for the yong Gentleman/ hauing given his faith not to disclose himselfe,)appeared in the shape of a basegroome, in which (vnknowne to all the world but his Master) hee had of his owne accord lurked. An example of fuch a point of perfect honestie as cannot be forgotten without injurie. (12) The same yeere, the Lord John Mountford,

whom the French had driuen out, being inuited home by his Barons, returned into his Durchy of Britaine, accompanied with the valiant Knights Caluerley and Percy aforefaid, where he, his friends, and followers were receized with fingular honor. Soone after Sir lohn of Arundell, brother to the Earle of Arundell, being sent into Britaine to aid the Duke, was with many other valiant Knights and Equires drowned. It is imputed by our Author to a just effect of Gods anger against the said Sir tohn, and his houshold, for their manifold vices and outrages, practifed by him and them, before they fet out from England, for which they had the bitter curses of the people; and the Angell of deftruction to execute those imprecations upon the delinquents.

Other aids An.D.1380.

Aids fent into

(13) But the action of aiding did more deepely import, then that it should bee abandoned for the loffe of that unfortunate fellowship, and the exceedingriches which were with them : therefore the Lord Thomas of Woodflock Earle of Buckingham, with Caluerlee, Percy. Knols, Windlesbores (or Windsor) verie valiant knights & other competent forces, was sent to affift the Duke of Britaine, But because the French Galleys houered upon the narrow Seas, they landed at Callers, and from thence march through France,

spoiling Countries, burning townes, the French not daring to empeach them, and killing people, till "J. Till, in they and their whole equipage came fate into Bri-

(14) There were about these times civill divisions in France; for the Duke of Burgundie, younger ons in France; for the Duke of Emganue, young-brother of King Charles (lately dead) being made Guardian of the person and dominions of his Ne-prosentable to the English. phew Charles then in minority, had the Duke of Anion (being an elder brother to the Duke of Burgundie) a mortall enemie. Their bloudy quarrels fell our luckily for the English aides in the Dutchie of Britaine, out of which as Duke John had beene driven for adhering to his father in law the late king Edward, to the English did their best to vphold him in it, as there was cause.

(15) The French in these extremes are releesed by their ancient discrition: for the Scots entring about that time with fireand (word into Cumberland and westmerland, and the forcest of Inglewood, draue away much Cattle, flew the Inhabitants, rifled the booths and houses of Perith in the Paire time, killing and taking many, and drining away the rest. The Earle of Northumberland preparing a bloudy reuenge, was (not without wonder) prohibited fo to doe by letters from the King, that is, from fuch

to doe by fetters from the same, from from from the Same.

(16) But how coldly foeuer the publike affaires were followed, the want of money for fupplies was a Northumpton. still pretended. And therefore in a Parliament holden at Northampton, was granted to the King a generall supplie of money; the pretended occasion of monstrous mischiese which tollowed, by reason of a clause in that grant of Subsidie, that every one of ech sexe, being aboue a certain age, should pay by the head, or per Polas they call it, twelve pence.

(17) The English Cheualry began now againe to display it selfefarre off, to gratific the private ends A.D.1381. of John Duke of Lancafter, who claimed the Crown The Earle of of Castile and Leon, in right of Constance his wife: with an Armie For John King of Portugalhad a defensive warre against John then King of Castile, who challenged the Crowne of Portugall * in right of Beatrix his wife, (by whom hee had no iffue) the onely daughter of Pertaphik. Hifprepaired the pertaphik hifprepaired the date of the other labor (a bastard sonne of Ferdinands) had by faction vsurped. There were fent to his aide the Lord Edmund de Langley Earle of Cambridge the Kings vocle, and fundry Knights and others of good experience with an Armie. These arriving in Portugall valiantly defended the same for about two yeeres, and were the chiefe cause of gining the Spaniards an ouerthrow in battell, where they lost * ten thousand men. At last the two Kings agreeing together bare the charges of conneighing home the English in common, being both alike icalous of their puiffance. In this time Edward sonne to the Earle of Cambridge vncle to Richard king of England, married the daughter of the king of Portugall, but afterward neither would the Earle leave his sonne behind, as suspe-Aing the Portugeles faith, nor the other entrust his daughter to the Earle, so as they remained dissoined in body, howfocuer vnited by Ceremonie. . (18) Not long after the time of that Earles im-

ployment into Spaine, there fell out accidents which The dangero doe plainely contince their error to bee great, who thinke that any madnesse is like that of an armed & ongouerned multitude, whereof these times (by a kind of Fate proper to childrens raigne) gaue a most dangerous document. The extreme hatred borne by the people to Iohn Duke of Lancafter, calling himselfe king of Castile and Leon, and the discontentment taken at an extraordinary taxe, leuied per Pol. vpon all forts of people, who were abone fixteene yeers of age, which (as all other the cuils of the time) they imputed to the Duke(the maner being to count them the authors of euils, who are supposed to haue the greatest power of doing them) moued the enra-

The Farle of

*Pelpd. Vergib bif.L.10.

Chap. 13. Richard. IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 50.

ged multitudes vpon slight and small beginnings to runne together in so fearefull a Torrent, that it feemed the King and kingdome were fodainely falne under their most wicked fury. There were in this most rebellious insurrection, the Commons and Bondmen(who aspiring by force to a free manumif-fion) principally those of Kent and Essex, whose example was followed in the Neighbour Shires of Surrey, * Suffolke, Norfolke, Cambridge, and other places by incredible heards and droues of like qualified people: who (specially in Norfolke) forced iundry principall Gentlemen to attend them in their madding. (19) They of Kent embattelled themselues vn-

der two Banners of Saint George, and about threefcore and tenne Penons vpon Blacke-heath by Greenewich, and from thence came to London, where, the generality of people inclining to them, they are ma-fters. The Priory of S. Johns without Smithfield they kept burning for about feuen dayes, and the goodlie Palace of the Sausy, belonging to the Duke; with all the riches therein, they confumed by fire, in a kind of holy outrage, for they threw one of their fellowes into the flame, who had thrull a peece of ftolne place into his bosome. The Rebels of Elex came to Lambeth, burnt all the Archbishops goods, and defaced all the Writings, Rowls, Records and Monuments of the Chancerie, as having a speciall hatred to the Lawyers, little to their difgrace, for that they shared herein with good men also, whom they hated. But their desperate wickednesse exten-ded it selfe beyond the spoile of houses and substance, laying bloudy hands vpon the most eminent and worthy men in the kingdome, for that they had diffwaded the King to put himselfe into their hands at Greenwich, where hee talked with them out of his Barge, and thereby had their maine deligne disappointed. Simon Tibald Archbishoppe of Canterbu rie, and Chancellour of England, a right worthy Prelate, and Sir Robert Hales a Knight of high courage, Lord Prior of Saint Iohns, and Treasurer of England, with others, they without respect to the Maiestie of the King, or priviledge of their most honourable dig-nities, most barbarously murthered by beheading them vpon Tower-Hill, among infernall showtes & diuelift yels. For the Tower it selfesfrom whence they had haled them, the young King being there in person) was open to their execrable insolencies. Neither doth the authority of * Polyd. Vergil, affirming that they were not haled forth, but onely ftay. ed by the Rebels, to whom (hee faith) they were fent, induce vs rather to credite him, then Authors liuing about those very times. There was no little flore of other innocent bloud flied by them in thefe tumults. Nor was the Kings own person without manifest perill, against whose life they had damna-bly conspired. It were long to reckon vppe the

kinds of fuch villanics as they wrought, but endleffe to recount the particulars. The common *Annals fet forth this whole Tragicall bufinesse very dili-(20) They had many Captaines of milchiefe, PVat. Tyler the Idol of the Clowner. but two principall, Wat Tyler of Maidstone in Kent, (whom Walsingham pretily cals the Idoll of Clownes) and lacke Straw, who together had followers to the

number (as they were estimated) of about one hun-dreth thousand, and at one Sermon made to them dreth thouland, and at one sermon made to them
by tohn Ball, Walfinghom faith, there were about
twife as many. Their Petitions were full of pride
and malice, but eafily granted by the King, the neceffity of the times extorting them. They had a Chaplaineas gracelesse as themselves, one Iohn Ball an excommunicated Priest, who with his wicked do-Arine nourished in them their seditious furies to his own just destructio in the end: but when a great multritude accepting the Kings mercy were gone, Wat Tyler and his Campedeparted not, but typon pre-tence of diffiking the Articles of peace, lought to winnetime till he might put into full execution his

incredible Treasons, which (as Inche trap at the time of his execution confessed) were vpou that very night of the day, wherein Wat Tyler was flain, to murder the King, and chiefemen, and to erect petty Tyrannics to themselves in every shire: and already one John Littistar a Dyer in Norwich had taken vpon him at Northwalfham in Norfolke, the name of the King of the Commons, and Kobert Wellbroome in Suffolke, to whom John Wram another lewd Priest had affigned it.

(21) Neuer was the kingly race and commonweale fo neere to an ytter extirpation, as at this prefent, which was (wee may truly fay) miraculoufly preuented. The yong king in thefe feares and dangers repairing to Westminster, most denoutly commended his Crowne, Life, and whole estate to God, nor that in vaine. For wat Tyler with his Campe of Rascals esteemed to bee ten or twenty thousand (according to the Kings Proclamation, attending in Smithfield, but cauilling of purpole vpon the conditions of peace, as hee that meant a farther milchiefe, though they of Effex were returned) was entreated to ride to the king, who also sate on horsebacke before Saint Bartholmewes, in whole company was that renowned Lord Maior of London, William Walworth; with many other men of birth and

(22) Wat Tylar scarse at the last comming behaued himselfe so insolentie, offering to murther one of the Kings knights; Sir John Newton, for omission of some punte of respect, which he arrogated to himfelfe in more then a kingly manner, was (vpon leave given him by the king) boldly arrefted with a drawn weapon by the Lord Major, a man(fay Writers) of incomparable courage, which blow was feconded by the faid Lord, and others so speedily, that there this prodigie of a Traitor was felde and flaine. A death too worthy, for that he died by the swords of honourable persons, for whom the axe of an Hangman had beene far too good.

(23) The Commons perceiuling the fall of their Captaine, prepared to vie extreme reuenge, when the

most hopefull young king with a present witte and courage (it being for his life and kingdome) spurred forth his horse, and had them follow him, without beeing grieued for the losse of a ribauld and traitour, for now hee himselfe would be their Captaine, Hereupon they thronged after him into the field, there to have whatfocuer they defired. But the most worthy of all Londoners, Walmorth, speeds with one man onely into the City, raileth a thouland Citizens in armour, brings them (being led in good array by Sir Robert Knolles and others) with wat Tylers head (which the Lord Major had commanded to bee chopt off from his dead carcale) borne before him youn a Speare to the king. That verie head, the curfed to nigue whereof had dared to say, That all the Lawes of England should come out of his mouth.

(24) This act reftored the Crown (as it were) and Realme to King Richard, for the Rebels feeing them felues girt-in with armed men, partly fled, partly fel vpon their knees, and (throwing away all hope in weapon) they answerably to their basenesse, begged their lines, who but even now reputed themselves mafters of the field, and of the king. And albeit there was a generall defire in the hearts of loyall men to expiate so many villanies with the bloud of the Actors, yet thingsabroad in the Realme being as yet vnfetled, they had a generali Charter of par don fealed, and were fo fent home into their Coun-

(25) Certainly although the Citie of London (the most noble and able part of the English Empire) hath otherwise deserued of the Kings of this land very well, yet the honour of this service worthily stands highest in the many great praises therof.
Which the King did thankefully and publikely tefliffe by knighting Walworth, and by beftowing vpon him (when hee modefily excused his vnworthines

Aggaga

Joh Stow.

did fhut vp the matter speedilie before the Scots had Humanity of the

anie intelligence, fetling a two yeres abstinence from lebn Duke of

Hostilitie. The Seets (though they were forrie Lessafter

portunity of making a dangerous impression vpon

the English,) understanding the Dukes perill, offred

him twentie thouland men to defend his honor, but

he loyally refuling that, they gave him leave to come and goe at his pleasure with all other rites of facred

Hospitality.

that by the peace so concluded, they had loft an o- greatest dan-

(23) After

596

*Holinfhedin Rechard 2.

Statut An.6.

I.(ap.23. The ro yall pow er like the Sunn after along darknes puts forth it felle a-

Forty thouland English horsemen in field to himselfe, being mounted on a goodly courser among the armed men, and having his Standard roy-

all advanced before him, daily rode forth to view

his people, rejoicing to becfeene among them, and

acknowledged their Lord. It is faid, that within

three daies space there appeared upon that heath

for the Kings feruice, not fewer then forty thousand

horsemen most brauely appointed.
(29) This force had beene employed against the

Kentish-men, cuen to the vtter rooting out of all

(33) After Christmas King Riehard tooke to wife the Lady Anne, daughter to the Emperor Charls the fourth, and fifter to Wenceslaucking of Bohemia, after hee had performed fundry things very happi-A.reg. 5. ly, taken Graueling , Burbrough, Dunkirke by affault, and beene victor in a fer battell against thirty thougins the yeere at Chuftmas day inclusionly. and called Emperour, which Lady by the Duke of fand abettors of Clements claime, hee was enforced Taßill, was in the name of her faid Father, formerlie to returne, as destitute of those farther succours promifed and affured vnto him, as one whom the which were expected out of England. But the king Kingdid specially affect, though the daughter of Barnabas Duke of Millaine was also offered with a vpon pretence that hee had not obeyed his royall mandate, by which hee required him, (before hee farre greater fumme of gold. Shee was with great transported) to returne, for a while seised upon all pompe and glory at the same time crowned Queen. his temporalities. by the hand of william Courtney(a yonger sonne of (37) But K. Richard having before given the realm Thekings enthe Earle of Denonshire) Bishoppe of London, lately discontentment, by removing Scrope from the Chanpromoued from London to the See of Canterbury. cellorshippe, encreased the same by some manifest pleasant. The Nuptials and Coronation of the beauteous fignes of legity and prodigality toward Strangers. Queene being, the Parliament (which by this great Ladies arrivall was interrupted & prorogued) began then which nothing makes a Prince leffe pleafing to the English: for, in the progresse which with his againe. Where many things concerning the excelle beloued Queene hee made to Bury, Thetford, Norof apparrell, transportation of Coine, &c. were wieh, and other places, gifts were taken on all hands by the King, and they agains through the Queene wholesomely enacted. Sed quid iunant Statuta Parli. " amentoru & c.but to what purpose (laith Wassingham) " are AEts of Parliament, when after they are once past, were powred forth to enrich her Bohemians. (38) Iohn Duke of Lancafer embarkt himfelfe An.D.1384. for France, where hee concluded a truce to endure they take no manner of effect ? For the king with his private Councell, was wont (faith hee) to change, or betweene the two Nations English and French, abolish all things, which by the whole Commons from the present Christmas till Midsommer. At and Nobility of the Kingdome had in former Parhis return, he and his brother Thomas of Woodflocke his return, he and his brotter Thomas of Woodjoeke Earle of Buckingham, went with an Armie into Seof-land, to reuenge the breach of truce: but as it feems by fome, the Duke hadrather an hoaft of men, then liaments beene agreede vpon. (34) Neuerthelesse, it was then prouided, that fuch as had done any thing in their owne defence against the Rebels, or to their suppression, without an hoftile mind; for hee fo ordered the matter (as the ordinarie formes of processe in law, should sunot forgetfull perhaps of curtelies shewed to him in staine no dammage thereby, but for euer bee as his late dangers, when the Commons were out in cleare as if they therefore had enjoyed their particu-Armes,) that the Scots having had time inough to withdraw both their goods and persons, and his arlar pardons; and that all releases, feoffments, and o-The hurling ther acts done in the late rebellions, (during the harmy fuffering farre more loffe by penurie and cold ling times, for so they were called) by way of conthen it could inflict vpon the enemy, returned *fruitftraint of dureffe, thould be vtterly void. leffe and inglorious. (39) Not long after his returne, hee was encoun (35) With the good liking of this Parliament tred with a more capitall and dangerous enemy, then those in Armes: for a certaine Carmelite Fryer, by Sir Richard Scrope Knight, was made Chancellor of the Realme, and Sir Hugh Segrane Treasurer; but it was not long before the Chancelour denying to birth an Irifhman, delinered to the King (in the time paffe such large gifts vnder the Great Seale, as the king in his youthfull humor had imprudently granof Parliament at Salisbury) a writing which contained therin a heinous accusation of the Duke of Lan-The Duke of to crowne himself. The accuser discouered, the day, place, and other circumstances, to induce a beliefe ted, therewith to gratifie his still crauing Courtiers, fell into the kings undeserved displeasure. For al-beit he alledged important causes of such his deni-The Walfing. of the pretended intention, and tooke his oath vpall, (as, that the King was greatly in debt) and thereon the Sacrament, which that day hee had receifore fuch largeffes were fitter to bee imployed in difued, that no one word in that scroll was vntrue. The charging some of his Creditors, that knowing how Dukes Apologic and fauour with the King, preuay the King was intangled with Creditors, fuch crauers were not truely well affected to him, as regarding led aboue the accusers confidence; whereupon the their own private avarice more then the kings pro-Fryer is committed, at the Dukes request, to the L. fite, or the publike wants; that those selfe same cra-Iohn Holland (the Kingshalfe brother by his mo ther) and a day appointed, wherein the accuser was to shew a cause of his crimination. uers, had formerly received fuch gifts of his Maiefty, as were (at least) answerable to their desernings; and (40) But in the night which next forewent the that himselfe, if he should seale those grants (made in the Kings childhood) was like to have fmall thanks defigned day, the faid Lord Iohn Holland (if a man may beleeue, that a thing so villanous could be done of him, when he (hould come to riper judgement; by men of honour) and one Sir Henry Green knight yet thereupon he was twice or thrice willed to fend are reported to have truffed up the Fryer in a cord the Seale to the King, who comming in person by the necke, and parts of generation, laying vpon "furrendred the same, with such like words, That " hee would alwayes beeloyall and true to his Maiestie, his breast a stone of great weight to breake the chine of his backe; and that they also scorcht the soles of "but neuer beare any office under him againe. Not long after which furrender, Robert Braybroke Bishoppe of his feet. By which miferable and quadruple man ner of death, without triall or conuiction, (as alfe London was made Chancellor in his place. This act without * recantation of any thing which hee had . 108,5100. of the Kings was displeasant to the whole Realme, vitered against the Duke) he is said to have breathed and one of the first things by which hee fell into diflike, it being among the infelicities of King Richard. his last. Neither was his death smothered, for the that those times were too full of fower and impatinext day they caused his strangled carcase to bee dragged through the City, that it might not bee thought hee had perished vniustly. But the Lord ent cenfors, for a Prince of so calme a temper, and as ver unleafoned veeres. Thomas of woodlocke (the fame who was afterward Duke of Gloceller) went farther, for hee rusheth in-(36) Henriele Spenfer the warlike Bilhop of Mer-A.D. 1383. wich, being drawne on by Pope Vrban to preach the to the Chamber where the King was, and bound his Crusado, and to be Generall against Clement (whom " words with a terrible oath, That hee would kill afundry Cardinals and great Prelates had also elected "ny one liuing who durft lay treason to his bro-therscharge: neither did hee except the king Pope) having a Fifteenth granted to him for that purpose by Parliament, (after strong * opposition of The Waller. himselfe. In which speeches, as piery and zeale for his almost all the Nobles who resisted this businesse of the brothers honor and fafetie were not wanting, fo cer-Croffe) went with Forces into Flanders to Support rainly duty to his Prince was exceedingly forgotten. the cause of Vrban against the Antipape; from whence

Chap-13 Richard IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch so. 1

Lineafter fuspe-cted for pertwa-ding the King to passe the Scot-tish Sca.

doubtedly full of delignes, and of cares, how to at-

chieue to himselfe the crowne of Spaine.

(42) There were then fundry incursions made by the English and Scots, each into the others country, the Earle of Northumberland being leader to the Enelifh, with little advantage to either. But to take away the very cause of this continuall bad neighbourhood, or to leffen it by an effablished peace with France, the Duke of Lancaster layled to Callis, about the beginning of Jugust, there to treat with the Duke of Berrie, on behalfe of the young French King Charles 6. but after he had in that voyage expended (as was faid) fifty thou fad Marks, he brought into England nothing backe, except onely a truce, to continue till the first day of May next. His desire to haue procured a furer peace both with the French and Scots, seemes to have beene great, that so hee might the more freely purfue the conquest of Spaine which he intended.

(43) Whiles hee was absent in this Ambassage towne once Lord Major of Lorden, confined and conficated. there enfued the arraignement of a great fauourite of the Dukes, John Northampton, alias Comberton, whom his aduerfaries by-named Cumber-towne. This man

"Thom.VV aifing

is by them reported to haue exceedingly troubled the City of London, during his late Majoralty there, nor leffe afterward; for that being followed with many abettors, hee publikely disturbed Sir Nicho-las Bramble his successor, (but a * bloudy minded man by report,) and wrought other maisteries, till Sir Robert Knowls caused one of the busiest companions to bee drawne out of his house, and (as some fay) fhorened by the head. This Comberton was by his houshold Clerke accused, as privite to some practifes, in prejudice as well of the King, as the City; and when sentence was to bee pronounced in the Kings presence (being then with greatstore of his Nobles at Reading,) hee durft (as is faid) affirme, That fuch judgement ought not to proceede against him in the ablence of his Lord the Duke. This againe unraked the burning coales of enuic, and fufpition against the faid Lord Duke; and perhaps malice to the Duke procured this hatred against his fauourite. Whereupon hee was confined to the Caftle of Tyntagel in Cornwall, and all his goods feifed vpon by the Kings Sermants, whom Walfingham expreffeth, by calling them after the name of those Poeticalirauenous Birds, Harpyes.
(44) That here which Polydor Vergil (alsigning

reputation re

causes to actions, not alwayes such as are, but such as seemed to him most probable, not seldome confounding and changing persons, times, names, and things) telles vs concerning a combate within lifts, betweene Sir John Aunsley Knight, and one Carton hath little ground, (so farre as wee can find) in historie. He faith they were teterrima capita, both very wicked men,& that there was a real plot to murther the Sir Ishn Anfleys king. We can neither find the crime nor the methere had beene a folemne combat long before betweene fuch a knight and one * Katrington an Esquire, in which the knight was Challenger and victor, but Veuft. AH.1380. the crime was not treason against the kings person, nor for any thing done in his time, but in his noble Grandfathers. Neither was Ansley, teterrimum caput, but a valiant and loyall man of Armes. The crime which he objected to that Efquire (his kinfman) was, that for money he had traiteroully given over the Castle of Saint Sauiour in the Land of Constantine in Normandie, when he had store of victual and munition. The Esquire was vanquished in faire fight and died frantick the next day. Polydors errour therefore is joyned with manifest wrong to the knights name, wherein wee ought to bee very circumspect, for that, honour is inestimable and descenderh to posterity. There was indeed, at the time he speakes of, another combat, fought also within liftes before the king, (for Duels then were performed, not on private choice or quarrell, but on publike appointment) betweene Henry Knighton one tohn Welfh an Equire of England, and one * Martilet a Gentleman Manarrois, who in revenge against Welsh, for having at Cheirbrough (where the faid E-

squire was vnder-captain)comitted (as Martilet said) adultery with his wife, accused him of high treason against the King and Realme. But Welsh prevailed; and the Navarrois, at his execution (for hee was drawne and hanged after he had beene foild in bartel,)confessed the cause of his euill will, and the inno- in Richard 2, cency of Welshin the matter of treason. (45) The Scots had this while by practife and

noney gotten the Castle of Berwick, whereof the Custody belonged to the Lord Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland. The Duke of Lancaster was not fad at this, but so pursued the matter, that the Earle lad at ents, but no pursued the matter, that the state (saif by his negligence and printry the fame royall the Date and Caftle had beene loft) was condemned in Pariament. But the king relieued him with extention of fauour. This was a great cause of confirming the rancour alreadie kindled in the hearts of these two principall Peeres. But the Earle to wipe away all blemishes of disgrace, encloseth the Castle with a fiege both of forces and large proffers, so that after formetime spent therein, he had it redeliuered upon read by the Earle. paiment of two thouland marks.

(46) The Flemings had heretofore in the fifth A.D. 1385. yeere of this King, sent Ambassadors at the time of Parliament, to submit themselves and their Country to his dominion, renouncing alleageance to their naturall Lord the Earle, whom they had by force of Armes expelled, vpon pretence of oppression vsed by him, and for other causes; but because they seemed not either persons sufficient, or sufficiently instructed with authority, to transact with the King in a matter of so high nature, they were commanded to returne, and fetch more ample power, and to bring certaine men of euery good Towne in Flanders. Now againe, the Citizens of Gaunt, though they had in battell against the French King, (who was there in person on behalfe of the Earle,) * lost twenty thousand men not long before, delired of K. Richard, that they might have an English Generall to comard, that they might have an English General to com-mand in their warres; to whom was fent a with and valiant Gentleman, the Lord Edward is Bourfer, who demeaned himselfe in that charge with much com-mendation. And when afterwards he went more abundantly and Grosolie to keep abundantly and strongly to have supported them, they sodeinely turnd French, shewing Senescire (faith

Walfingham) vni amico, vel domino, fidem diu feruare. (47) The Duke of Lancaster (whose, or the like A. D. 1386. greatnesse may perhaps seeme more, then can stand | The Duke of with the narrow limits of England, which, without danger to the common wealth, can hardly afford fuch a proportion of effacto any Subject) was about this time enformed, that the King had a purpose to arrest his person, and to trie him vpon capitall points before Sir Robert Trifilian, his Chiefe Infitiar, a man ready, (vnder the Kings protection) to deliner judgement without respect to Titles. The King was nourished in this *deliberation by yong men, who combined against the Dukes life. This is Rich 2. ad. drawes upon his guard to his Castle of Pomfret in

the North; neuertheleffe the hopes of wicked men, delighting in their Countreys miseries, and civill combuftions, were made void by the great diligence of the Kings mother, the Princesse Ioan, who spared not her continuall paines and expenses, in transiling betweene the King and the Duke, (albeit shee was exceeding tender of complexion, and scarce able to beare her owne bodies weight through corpulency)till they were fully reconciled. (48) It had indeed beene a most wretched time for a civill warre, not only because the French Admirall, Iohn de Vienna, had beene sent with forces

[Chap. 13. | Richard. IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch so.

Tilium. *Paul.Acusyl.

ed out of Scotland against the English, but for that the French prepared a generall invalion of England, having in hope already as it were deuoured it. There reigned at that time in France, Charles the fixth a yong and foolish Prince, (faith Tilius) who having in his treasury, left to him by his prudent father, * eighteene millions of Crownes, (and not only eighteene * # + Record. # \$100 hundred thousand, *assome, fearing perhaps that the other fumme might feeme incredible, have written,)and being moreouer fet on fire with an inconfiderate loue of glory, rather then vpon any found aduife (though * some impute the Counsell to the faid Admiral) would needs undertake the conquest

of our Countrey. These newes stirred all the limbs and humors thereof, though the event (God not fauouring the enterprize) was but like that of the Mountaine, which after long trauaile brought forth a ridiculous mouse, neuerthelesse it had beene a most desperate season for a citall warre to haue broken forth in England. (49) The preparations of the French doe hold notwithfianding, and the generall Rendeusu of them

huge forces was at Slufe, in the Port whereof, and other places about, there were affigned to affemble for their transportation, * twelue hundreth saile of fhips. At the same time (as if the two young kings had beene riuals in thew of men) Richard raifeth fo great an army to ouerrun Scotland, as the like for beauty and number was neuer feene together, confifting wholy of Englishmen. But may wee beleeue that England could spare three hundreth thousand men, and as many horses for the vie of a warre? Certainely a needlesse multitude, but only to terrific the French with the fame, for there might have beene fewer, for any great Act which Richard (full of icalousie against his vncle of Lancaster, wherewith his head and heart were full,) effected. But we may the rather beleeve the account, for that Walfingham youcheth*Serieants at Armes (if he meane not Heralds by those words) whose office (he saith) it was to number the Hoft, and they affirmed the same. This

is fure, that *among other the arguments vied by the

Duke of Bury (one of the French Kings vncles) to

frustrate this enterprize, he alleaged that the King of

Bugland had muftred ten thousand horsemen, and

one hundreth thousand Archers for his defence;

whereas the Admirall John de Vienna affirmed, that

hauing feene the forces of the English, they were

but eight thousand horsemen and threescore thou-

fand foot; and he might well fay having feene: for,

though Emplus bring him in speaking to the

French King, and vaunting that he had encountred

them, yet nothing is truer, then that the English re-turned out of Scotland without the least offer of bar-

tell. The Admirall was willing indeed to have fought,

but when he faw our Armie from the hil-tops, his

(50) While the Armie was vpon the way to

ward Scotland, the Kings halfe-brother the Lord

Iohn Holland wickedly flew the Lord Stafford, fonne

to the Earle of Stafford not farre from Yorke, being v-

pon his iourney to the Queene, whose favoured

Knight he was. For which heinous homicide the

King scised vpon his whole estate, denying to his

mothers most earnest praiers any pardon or grace for his brother. Which was to her so grecuous,

furie gaue place to reason.

*Sernientes ad

John Tyllins in Chron, Paul, Aemyl,

Ghost at Wallingford. The young Lord tooke Sanctuary at Beuerley, and the King by his instice herein wanne the hearts of the faid Earle of Stafford, the Earle of Warwick, the Lord Baffet, and other great men of Staffords kindred and friends; neither did this empeach at all the prefent voyage. (51) The Scots and French in Scotland, freing themselues vnable to withstand such forces, had so retired themselues and all their goods, that when the English should come, they, (as Walfingham pleafantly faith) could fee no quicke things left but onlie embarckt in threescore saile of Ships, to be emploi-Owles. That which was greene in the fields, the

horses denoured or trampled down, yet such harme, as the materials of buildings were capable of, was done. Edenburgh also and the * noble Abbey of Mailroffe were fired. The Duke of Lancafter per- The Duke of fwaded the King to march beyond the Frith or Scottish Sea (as his great Ancestors had done) to seeke out his enemies; but he, very suspicious that the Duke gaue him this counsell with a purpose to betray him to destruction by famine, and want, which he wasthere to looke for, expressed much displeafure and returned. The Dukes wordes notwithstanding and behaulour were tempered, with much duty and modesty; but that would not serue, till the Lords peeced their affections together by interceffion in the best manner the time would suffer. But the English host was scarce returned and discharged, when the Scots and French fodeinely powred themfelues forth vpon our Countrey, and did whatfoeuer

that within fine or fixe daies after face gaue vo the

(52) To refift and endammage the French, there were appointed Admirals for the narrow Seas, the were appointed. Admirals for the narrow Seas, the Marker of Saint Inlens, and Sir Thomas Periek Knight, (the Earle of Northumberlands brother.) who did nothing worthy their fame or place. Only the Towneinen of Part/month and Dart, maund forth a few flipsattheir owne perill and charge, wherewith entering the riner of Soin (vpon which therewith . The verme of nowned Citties Roan and Paris are fituated) funcke fome of their enemies ships, tooke others, and a-mong them one of Sir Oliver de Clisson's, the goodlieft that France had. The successe answered their hopes, and they were enriched with the spoiles of

their aduersaries, whom thus they compelled to

beare the charge of their proper mischiefe.

hurt the fhortnes of time in their incursion could

(53) Meanewhile that the French lay at Slufe,

attending the approch of their kings vncle the Duke of Burie, (who fauouted not this enterprize of inuafion, but fought as well by delaies, as by perswasion and authority to make it frustrate,) they of Games had gotten the Towne of Dam by the good liking of the Inhabitants, to whom the French gouernment was odious. For recouery whereof, the French King drew his armie (prepared against England) to the liege of Dam, which (the same being first secretie abandoned, after a moneths fiege and many repul les giuen to the French) was by him recourred. This, and other things, did to protract the great expedition intended, that (after walt of infinite treasure) Charles returned home, without having scene England, which was by these meanes most graciouslie freed by God from so dangerous, and greatly-feared an impression. But that the English might the better endure the fame, Iohn King of Portugall, hauing larely in great and bloodie battell (where some of the English and the English

(54) Of those French, which (after the Cloude of warre at Sluce was dispersed into ayre,) passed ouerland into their Countreys, many were taken and flaine by the Gauntiners. Their nauie was not leffe vnfortunate; for at one * time the English of Callis tooke of them eighteene, and the rage of weather Bbbbb

The Kings mo-ther dyeth being denied a pardor for her fonne the Lord Jobs Hol-

lift deserved well of him,) overthrowne the Castilians, and thereby fetled his estate, fent into England fixe Galleys throughly well appointed, for Sea-fer-

uice, though (as God would) there was no need of

*Infellents.

Earle of Suffolke, with the yeerelie pension of 1000

Markes, was matter of more enuie; because he was

not descended of such honourable Parents : a defect

(if it bee a defect) which none more willingly vp-

braid to men of worth, then who themselves are

terward created Earle of Huntington) was Conflable

of the hoft, and Sir Ishn Mereaux (who had to wife

one of the Dukes illegitimate children) was one of

his Marshals. There were in this noble and excel-

lently-well appointed Army, the Lords Talbot, Baf-fet, Willoughby, Fitz-walter, Poinings, Bradfton, Fitz-

warren, Beaumont, Beauchampe, the Lord Pomiers à Gascoin, G.c. with very many worthy knights & valiant Esquiers, and achoise number of men of Arms, Archers and other Souldiers, to the number of *twenty thousand. The Duke tooke also with him his wife, the Lady Constance, and two daughters, which hee had by her, as * one relateth. (60) It was now the moneth of May, when the great Duke of Lancaster comming to take leave, had of the kings gift a Diademe of gold, and his Dutcheffe of the Queene another: he also commanded the English to call, and hold his vncle for a King. and to doe him answerable honour. But after all this, hee lay for a wind so long, till his whole prouifions were almost spent; at length yet, hee set forward. The first land they touched was neere to Breft in Britaine, where Sir Iohn Roch the Gouernour against the French, complained of two Forts built about him to empeach his quiet egresse; whereupon the Duke of Lancafter caused the to bee assaulted so both of them being taken by surrender, were ra wed to the ground, though some English first lost their lines, among which, was "Sir Robert Swimer ton, avaliant Kuight of Staffordfire, and John de Bolton a couragious Equier of To keffire, whom the foddine ruine of a Tower (ouetturned by mining) whelmed and flew outright. Sharpened with the fucmedand lew outright. Sampened with the ful-ceffe of this victorie, they commit themselues to God, and the Sea, and prosperously arriue with the whole Fleet in the Port Corone, or the Groyne, * in (61) The French (belike)thought England could not furnish an other Army for France, as the had for Spain: wherupon there was now no false nor vain rumor spread again, that the French would besiege Calis. The King to secure that pretious transmarine part of his Dominions, fent thither store of men and of all prouisions. The most eminent perfon was Henry Lord Percie, fonne to Henry Earle of Northumberland. This was hee whom the Scots Advision of the Scots

I fine was the witten in each of the Scots

(faith Walfingham) the patterne of all vertue and martiall promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and promple (bined: and indeed his nature did and bined: and indeed his nature did and bined: and bin (were his by-name; for hee made fuch ridings into the quarters about Calis, that they could neuer wish the quarters about Caus, mat they could neuer win a worse neighbour. After which, when the same went that the French king would not delay, or (as they call it) beleaguer Casis, but rather inuade Eng-land, hee returned to bee present where the greatest danger was expected. At this time, the English Sea men of warre, brought two French prizes to Sand-wich in which was taken a part of an hage ftrong Timber-wall, which the French king, preparing now for England; musifon, had caufed to bee built in length three miles, in height twenty foot, which had at euery twelve paces a Tower (ten foot higher) and each capable of ten men, the whole to be a detence for the Frenchencampments against our shot. and a thelter for theirs, there was also in the same Ships the Enginer and mafter workeman, who was an Englishman, and great quantities of powder, and store of Ordinance, together with the French Kings Master * Gunner. (62) There was in this time a great resemblance betweene England and France in the chiefe points of State. As England had Richard, so had France her Charles, both young Kings. Charles with an huge armie had prepared to inuade England, but did no-thing: Richard with no leffe forces entred Seatland, and did no great thing. 'Richard had vncles which bare great sway in the Realmes so had Charles. Richard had his vnde lohn more potent then the reft; Charles had his vacle Lewis. Isha vpon his wives

Chapeta Richard IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch so. ning; John prenailed fo farre as to fettle his child by marriage. The King and great Lords of France were glad(with any charge) to enjoy the absence of Lew-is, and Richard and his fauourites were not sad, that the Realme was for the present rid of Iohn.

(63) The forces of the French provided for this inuation of England, were reported in open Parliament (which the King held about Michaelmas in London) to confift of *15 Dukes, 26. Earles, two hundreth Lords, & an hundreth thouland fouldiers, and a thousand Ships, affembled about Slafe; with full purpose to take reuenge of all the euils which the English nation had formerly wrought in France; and to destroy the English kingdome. But though thefe reports were not fained, (for the French attended nothing in a manner but a faire gale of winde to bring them,) yet could not the King, without Capitulations made by the Duke of Glofter, obtaine any aides of money; fo that, whereas it feemed to the King, that by the Duke of Lancasters departure, he was become more free, yet had he left behind spirits much more stiffe and intractable, O deare Countrey, hadft thou not then beene apparantlie in Godsprotection, (for the French having stayd for a wind till Hallontide, and then having it halfe-way, were beaten backe, and the voyage made vtterly voyd) certainely thy ruine had then beene certaine. What shall wee thinke or say of those popular Lords, by this gentle King armd (to his owne bane) with power and greatnes, who under the spe-+ VigilS, Lauren, cious pretext of reforming abuses, did satisfic their enuic and inbred infolency ? (64) The King tels them, that England is, as they law, in manifest danger, and prayes their succour in money what is the answere? That the Duke of Ireland (for now the Marquesse of Dablin was made a Duke,) and Michaell at the Pole (so they scornfully called the Earle of Suffolke) and other must be remoued. Things are badly carried at home , fay they; (and they perhaps faid truly,) but where was The Lord Hear now the care of our Countrey ? God indeed turned Percie by-named Hotfor (ent to from vs the mercileffe point of the French iword: but here began the feeds of innumerable worfe miferies, neuer to be remembred without fighes and (65) The feedes (we fay) of those fearefull cala mities were then first here sowne, whose sum a flourifhing *VVriter in our age (willing neerely to have imitated Lucan, as hee is indeed called our * Lucan) doth not unfortunately expresse, though hee might rather have faid he wept them, then fung them; but fo to fing them, is to weepe them, I fing the civillwarres, tunneltuous broiles, And blondy factions of a mighty land; And commy jacous of a megaty and person services, Proof people heavy, proud with forraine spoiles, Proof themselves turne backe their conquering hand; While kinne their kinne, brother the brother foiles, Like Ensignes, all against like Ensignes bands Bowes against Bowes, a Crowne against a Crowne, While all pretending right, all right throwne downs. Megifter Gun-But Robert de Vere Saith Thomas Duke of Glocefter and his parry, was vinworthily created Duke of Ireland A Parallelizatio and De la Pale the Lord Chancellour feemed to the of the English onely great Lords (for fo they would feeme) to be in States in thefe the Kings debt. Strange colours for Subjects to capitulate with their Kings vpon giuing their joynt aides against the common enemy, now ready with one deftruction to operwhelme them all. The time they tooke to worke this pretended amend-ment in flate, was not well fitted. It fauoured of somewhat else besides the lone of common-weale Private ambitions and passions could not bee wan title claimeth the kingdomes of Caltile and Leon, Lewis by the gift of loss the Queene, claimes the ting in such oppositions. This is some mens judge Kingdomes of Naples and Sicil. Lewis went with ment let the lequels flew how just. Pari, Acryl. an Army of thirty thousand horse into Italie to at-(66) There were called up at this Parliament for defence of the Realme innumerable people out of al chieue his claime; with what force tolm fet forth Shires, which forces lay about London within twenyou have heard. But Lewis died without obtav-

The kings reply

"The Walfing.

tie miles round, and had no pay but lived vpon spoile. These at last were licenced to depart to be ready at warning. There was also the Lord Chan-cellour acctifed, of (we wot not what) petty crimes (for the abuses of following ages have made them feeme fo,) as for paying to the Kings Coffers but * twentie markes yeerely, for a fee-farme, whereof himfelfe receiued threefcore and ten, and fome fuch other. To pacific these great Lords, the Lord Chancellour is difgraced, and the feale taken from him, against the Kings will, and given to Thomas Arundell Bishop of Elye, and then the houses of Parliament yeelded to give halfe a Tenth, and halfe a Fifteenth, but vpon condition that it should be disposed of, as the Lords thought fir, for defence of the Realme. The money was thereupon deliuered to the Earle of Arundell to furnish himselfe for that purpose to the Sea. But to rid the Duke of Ireland out of the realme, the Lords were willing he should have those thirtie thousand markes, for which the heires of Charles of Blois, (who heretofore challenged Bri-ssine) were transacted to the French, vpon condition that the fayd Duke should passe into treland before the next Éaster. (67) The Parliament was no fooner diffolued,

but the King recals the Earle of Suffolk to the Court, keeps both him, the Duke of Ireland and Alexander Nenile Archbishop of Yorke about his person, in greater fauour then before. Infomuch that at Christmas he made De-la-Pole to fit at his owne Table not in the viuall garment of a Peere but Princely robed. Surely therein not well; for fome of those great Lords, (though not by fo fweet meanes as were fit) did defire to waken him out of Courtly drowfinesse, and (as men that knew not what peace meant) to put him into actions worthy of his name and greatnes. These other persons were not so friended, or qualified, that they could support a King against an universal eagthact they could upport a king against any nucrai millike. But the King vpona stomacke doth it; so that saint wrassing some shere for some the Kings shared against the Peeres, that from thence forth he never, as it is sain, regarded them but fainedly. So much more dangerous sometime is the remedy then a very gree-(68) King Richard (whose ago and place stood in

need of wifer instructions) not thus contented to haue whetted the displeasures of the greater Peercs, as if he had faid to himfelfe, Rumpatur « quifquis rum-pitur inuidià ; is further drawne, as was faid, to plot the death of his vncle, Thomas of Woodstocke Duke of Glofter, and other enemies of De-la-pole; who together being inuited to a feast (by the bloody deuise of Sir Nicholas Brambre late Lord Maior of Lon-The Lord Major of Long should together have perished. But the present Lord Maior Nicholas Exten (whom the conspirators would have had their Partaker, if it may be beleened)honeftly refused to affent. The Lords hereupon having admonition, refrained to come.

(69) The persons which were in the publike An.D.1387 enuie for their ouer-swaying grace with the King, were (asyou hanc heard) Robert de Vere Duke of Ire-

"Ypod, Neuft,

*Martial

land, Michael de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, the faid Archbilhop, Sir Simon Burley Knight, and Sir Richard Stury: These men hearing that Richard Earle of Arundeland Thomas Earle of Nottingham, Marshall of England, * had encountred with a great Fleete of Aprilia,24 Frenchmen, Flemmings, Normans, and Spaniards, and taken aboue one hundreth faile of ships, and in them nineteene thousand tunnes of wine, deprayed the victorie, saying, that the vanguished were but Merchants, whose loues had beene more profitable to our Countrey, then so to stirre them to inexorable hatred. But these (saith one) who thus judged, were of King Richard chiefe fauoritei

any matter which befermed fo potent a Prince, wee fay not (quoth our Authour) as concerning the ofe of Armes, but not even concerning those very recreations, which most of all become great spirets, as hunting hawking, and the like. But the Earles did more then meddle with Merchants (who yet were able to make dangerous refistances) for they landed at Brest in Bretaine, and with flances) for they innoce at prept in primine, must want great difficulty deliuered it againe from 10 bad neighbours as the two woodden Forts neerely built, where the other had flood, one of which they fired made of the most of the control of the and the other they mand with the English Garrifon of delisternice. Breft. Then stuffing it with all forts of provisions for a yeere, and furnishing the wants of the Souldiers with all necessaries, they returned, having worthily wonne the lone and praises of the people, Which, as they were also due to them from the king, yet comming to his presence, they (by these mens euill offices) had so cold entertainement, as they estfoones withdrew themselues from Court to live quietly vpon their owne at home. After them the braue young Henry Hotfpur, Lord Percy was fent (ill prouided) to the Sea; neuertheleffe he ventred, and returned (when his commission was expired) with ho-(70) One thing done by the Duke of Ireland

was furelie full of wickednesse and indignitie. For the hauing to wife, a young, faire, and noble Ladie, way bis wife the and the Kings necre kineswoman, (for shee was Grandchild to king Edward by his*daughter Isabel,) did purher away, and took one of Queene Annes women, a Bohemian * of base birrh, called in her mother
in Rich. 3. tongue Lancecrone. This intollerable villanie offea Salina daugh red to the blood royall, King Richard did not encounter; neither had the power, some say, who dee med that by witcherafts and socreties (practifed what had been a proposed to the power of the Third following the proposed to pon him by one of the Dukes followers) his indgement was so seduced and captinated, that he could not see what was honest or fit to doe. But where Princes are wilfull or flouthfull, and their fauorites flatterers or time-feruers, there needs no other enchantments to infatuate, yea and ruinate the greatest

(71) The Duke of Glocester tooke the matter famy and confusion, which was brought thereby very low for the King how to bring the more to heart, refoluing to be reuenged for the in- A new confule pon his noble kinfewoman. Meanewhile the king, popular Lords as if he meant to conduct his deare friend, the Duke to a uiul. toward Ireland, went with him into wales. There the King deutleth with him, the Earle of Suffolke, Sir Robert Trefilian and others; (who were equally affrayd of the Lords) how to destroy the Duke of Glocester, the Earles of Arundel, Warwicke, Derby, Nottingham, and fuch others, as from whom they thought fitte to bee cleare. Much time being trifled thus away in Wales, they come together (as if the Dukes appointed voyage, or rather ba-(as it the Dukes appointed voyage, or rather pa-nifhment into Ireland, were quite forgotten) to the Castle of Natingham, there more freely to deliberate. A searefull estate of a Monarchie. Hee among a few, generally ill beloued, and ill aduised, and ill prouided; for their whole strength was the king, and these emulations made that force feeble both to him and them : the Lords, potent, martiall, rich, and popular, heat Notingham, they not neere him: but abroad farre-off, the Duke of Laneafter with the flower of the English forces, and mighty neighbours watching for the ruine of all. The course agreed vpon by the King and that illchosen Senate, was first to have the opinion of all The Lawyers the Chiefe Lawyers concerning certaine Articles of fent for to make Treason, within whose nets and sprindges they prefumed the reforming Lords were; and if the Lawyers (who seldome faile Princes in such turnes,) did conclude, that those Articles contained treasonable matter, then under a flew of inflice they flould bee proceeded against accordinglie. These Lawyers who were the very men, which in the last seditious Parliament, gaue aduise to the Lords to doe as they did) now meeting, were demanded, whether by the

the last Parliament : they jointly *answered; he might because hee was about the lawes: confessing that themfelues had in that Parliament decreed many things, and giuen their iudgement, that all was acording to law, which Bift Leceftrenf. now they acknowledged to be altogether unlawfull. The King thus enformed, appointeth agreat Councell to be holden at Nottingham, and lent for certaine Londoners, some of them such as were beholding to the King for mercie in cases of attaindour, to be there empanelled for Quests of Inquirie. The Sheriffes of Shires (being questioned)denied, that they could raise any competent forces against the Lords, their whole Counties were foaddicted in their fauour: & being further willed to fuffer no Knights to be chofen for the Shires, but fuch as the King & his Councell fhould name, they answered that the election belonged to the Commons who favoured the Lords (72) Vponthe 25.0f August there met before the King at Nottingham these Lawyers, Robert Trifilian his chiefe Luftitiar, Kobert Belknap chiefe Luftitiar of the common Pleas, John Holt, Roger*Stile-thorpe, & William Burgh Iustitiars in the Jame Court, "Fultherp vide Book: of Statut" A.11.Rich.2. and John Lokton the Kings Serieant at Law: all which being upon their allegiance charged to deliuer their *Those Arricles opinions, whether fuch * Articles as were there in the Kings behalfe propounded (which Articles comtu.A.s..R.s.c.12 prehended all the points of advantage taken against the proceedings of the last Parliament, and the displacing of the Lord Chancellor, Michael de Pole) contained matter of treason, they all of them anfwered affirmatively, and subscribed; which after-ward cost them deare. Judge Belknap foresaw the danger, and therefore was very vnwilling to put his for Crass in likelihood.

feale to the answeres; saying; there wanted but a *hurdle, aborse, and a halter, to carrie him where hee might suffer the death hee deserved; for if I had not done this (quoth he) I should have died for it, and because I have done it, I deferve death for betraying the Lordes. The King in the meane space puruaies himselfe of people to fight, if need required. (73) The Duke of Glocester (sadded with these newes, sent the Bishoppe of London to bring his purgation vpon oath to the King, who inclining to credite the same, was in an enill howre diverted by De la Pole. The Duke makes his and their common danger known to the Earles of Arundel, Warwicke, & Derby, eldeft sonne to the Duke of Lancaster. They

Chap. 13. | Richard, IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 50.

law of the land the King might not difanull the Decrees of

fenerally gather forces, that vnited they might prefent their griefes to the King, who to keep them from ioyning, fends the Earle of Northamberland to arreft the Earle of Arundel at Reygate in Surrey, where hee abode. But by reason of Arundels power, it was too dangerous a worke. Northumberland returnes and Arundel (admonished by the Duke of Glocester of his farther perill) escapeth in post to Haringey, where the Duke and Earle of Warmicke had store of (74) As yet no bloud was drawne Peaceable men

procured that the Lords should repaire safe to Westminster, and there be heard. Thither approaching they are advertised by the Bishop of Elie and others (who had fworne on the kings behalfe for good dealing to be vied during the Interim) that, at the Mewes by Charing Croffe, a thousand armed men (which without the Kings prinity Sir Thomas Trinet and Sir Nuholas Brembre Knights were reported to have laid for their destruction)attended in ambush. The find for their definitions, the Lords come frong and truft no longer. The King royally adorned keepes state in Westminster Hall with manie his Prelates and Peeres about him; the Lords prefent themselves upon their knees, and being required by the Eishop of Else the Lord Chancellour (for The popular Lords bold and inverse to the king the Lord Dela Pole neuer had that place againe) why they were in warlike manner assembled at Haringey Parke, contrary to the lawes, their joint answere was, That they were affembled for the good of the King and

bee continually held with him. The traitors they named to bee, Robert de Vere, Duke of Ireland, Alexander Neuile Archbishoppe of Yorke, Michael at the Pole Earle of Suffolke, Sir Robert Tressian that false suflitiar (quoth they) and Sir Nicholas Brambre that falle Knight of London. To proue them fuch, they threw downe their gloues, as gages of challenge for a triall to bee had by the fword. The King hereunto replied, as knowing that they were all hidden out of the way: This shall not bee done so, but at the next Parliament(which shall be the morrow after Candlemas) all parties shall receive according as they deserve. And now (faith hee) to yee my Lords; how or by what authority durst you presume to leuie force against mee in this land? did you thinke to have terrified mee by such your presumption? have not Imen of Armes, who (if it pleafedme) could enuiron, and kill you like Cattle ? Certainely in this respect I esteeme of you all no more, then as of the basest scullions in my Kitchens. Hauing vsed thefe, and many the like high words, hee tooke vp his vncle the Duke from the ground, where all this while hee kneeled, and bad all the other rife. The rest of the conference was calme, and the whole deferred till the next Parliament, then fhortly to be holden at Wellminster. In the meane time (that the world might see how little able the King was to equall his

king dome, and to weed from about him fuch Traitors as

words with deedes) a Proclamation is fet forth, in which the King cleareth the Lords (before any trial) of treason objected, and names those persons for vniust accusers, whom the Lords had before na (75) The factious Lords neuerthelesse thought not good to feuer themselues, but to keepe together for feare of the worst, which fell out to their aduantages for the Duke of Ireland (with the Kings prinitie)had gathered a power in Wales and Cheshire which they intercepting neere to Burford and Bab-blake, flew Sir William Molineux leader of the Che-Shire men, and some others, and made the Duke to flie in great feare. Among the spoiles of the Dukes carriages there were found (as the Diuell would have it) certaine letters of the King to the faid Duke of Ireland, by which their counsels were plainely difcouered. The Lords hereupon march with speede vp to London, having an Armie of about forty thoufand men. The King shuts himselfe vp in the Tower, but is glad before long to admit them to his presence. There they (vnreuerently inough) obiect mutability to him and his vnderhand workings; they obiected also, that hee had secretly practised to flie with the Duke of Ireland into France, and to deliuer vp to the French Kings policifion Callis, & fuch pieces as the Crowne of England held in those parts:to proue which dishonourable act, they (as some write) produced the French packets intercepted. This wrung teares (perhaps of disdaine) from the King, and hee yeelded to come to VV estminster vpon the next day, there to heare and determine farther. The King in figne of amitic stayed his Cosen the Earle of Derbie (the same who afterward dethroned him) to

Supper. O where was the courage of a King? The

Lords in their owne quarrell could draw vp fortie

thousand men; but in the generall danger of the

Realme, when the Commons were vp, and the

French hung ouer their heads, with no leffe harred

then preparations, no such numbers appeared. Was

it fortheir honour or praise, that their most rightful

by their accesse, which drawne by just feare was

contented to open the gates and harbour the Lords

and their partakers. These Lords, who so often are

King should by their violence be driven to consult vpon flight out of his proper Kingdome? The Citie | An.D.1388. of London was also in no little perill at this present | An.Reg. 1 1.

called here the Lords, are named in our * Statute *Stat, 4 mu. 1 1, c. 1 bookes to be but thefe five; The Duke of Glocefter, the Farles of Derbie, Arundel, Warwicke and

Marfbal. (76) The next day, hee would have deferred his Bbbbb a

drowste when they should come to doe them. Such there-

The PV alfin, in Richard 2. ad A.D. 1386. fore conversing with the King (not * without Suspition of fowle familiaritie) neuer tooke care to put into his mind

rather the Knights of Venus then Bellona , fitter for a Canapie then a Campe, for language then a lance, as they who were awake to discourse of martiall actions, but

604	Richard. IJ.	THE SVC	CESSION OF	Monarch 50.	Book.9		Chap-13	Richard IJ. ENGLANDS I	MONARCHS, Monarch so.
	repaire to westminster. The Kings Lords (for so they n	is being fignified to the	that they forthwith return (80) But these unneigh	ned. abourly hostilities soone	A. D.1389.			of foode. Thus having faid, he held downe his !	clap, fent with all speed into England, to perswade the
1	more Masters then the Kin	g) they labour not, by	after found some surcease,	there being a meeting at	A.reg. 12.		The Duke of Lancafter in his diffreise calleth	head, as he fate on horfebacke, and wept most bitter- ly, fecretly powring forth his praiers to almighty	King, that fuch Statutes as had beene thus made in
1	humble words, and duti-	ous reasons to perswade	Calis betweene the English	and French, about esta-	1		diffresse calleth	God, and most humbly beseeching mercy. From	their prejudice, who followed the Court of Rome, and fuch other clauses as tended to the dammage of
	the vic or necessity of his p			eit, because the French			vpon God, and is heard.	which time forward his affaires in Spaine succeeded	that See, should be made void; whereto the Kings
	him word, That if hee can	ce, and all good order lend	would have the Scot and S the conclusion was deferre	paniard included therein,			i	happily.	aniwere was, that the Popes Nuntio must expect till the
The rough and harth behaulour	appointment, they would choo	e them another King, who	resolued vpon for three ye	cres, the Scots being com-			"Roder.San.qua	(85) The warres had beene * sharpe and tedi- ous, but the end acceptable. For Don Inan king of	next Parliament. At which Parliament the King as
of the Lords	both would and thould obey	the counsell of the Peeres	prehended therein.		1 1		faşıd.	Castile, a Prince of no cuill conscience, seeing the	alforthe Duke of Lancaster, seemed to have some re- spect to the Pope, (whose messenger was their Pre-
	They had him indeed amo	ngst them, whom (belike)	(81) King Richard (bei himselfe free to gouerne o	ing now of age) declares	The King de-		Conditions of	right which the Duke of Lancaster vrged, and fore-	fent) but the Knights of the house would not in any
1	they cuen then meant to h fay, the before faid Earle of	aue lurrogated, that is to	controlement, or help of a	t himielte, without either	to be of age, and		perpetualiamity betweene the K.	feeing what calamities might happen hereafter,	wife give their confents, that fuch * Rome-padders (hould
1	of Lancaster. The Lords	certainely had to behaued	felected to that place, and	in token that he was at li-	ment vpon him.		of Sprine and the Duke of Lanca- Her.	if (as was feared the French should match with him,	without due punishment pur sue their wonted cour le langer
1	themselues towards the	King, that they well faw	berty, he takes the Great S	icale of England from Tho-			Her.	fought and obtained a firme peace. The Principall conditions were: That the Lord Henry, his fonne	then till the next Parliament. To furnish the Duke of Lancaster into France, to treat of a peace, and your
1	they must bee masters of h	is perion and power, or	mas Arundel Archbishop o	f Yorke, (Alexander Neuill				and heire, should marry the Lady Katherine, daugh-	condition that the King should that yere inuade seet
1	themselves in the end per	riin. Apreposterous and inuer	being attainted and fled) Councell Chamber. Af	and departs out of the	1 1		1	ter and heire to the Duke and Constance his wife;	land, large contributions were there made, both by
1	ted manner) attending h	us Subjects pleasures a	· I and gines is backers willia	m Michhau (sho * nam	1		1	That the Lord Henry (during his fathers life) should	Clergy and Laity. Hereupon the Lord Henry Percy
1	Westminster, heavily and	vnwillingly is drawne to	ned Bishoppe of Wincheste	r) who was vnwilling to	of the two fa-			be called Prince of Afturia, and Katherine his wife Princesse: That * for default of issue betweene	Hollpur (who had redeemed himfelf) was called from his charge at Callia, and made Warden of the Mar
Persons remo- ued from about	disclaime Alexander Neuil	Archbishoppe of Yorke, the	ned Bishoppe of Wincheste haue accepted the same.	Hee also puts out sundrie	in Oxford and		*The VValfa.	the young Princely couple, the Crowne should	ches against Scotland; Thomas Monbray Earle of Not
the King.	Bishops of Duresme and C and Beaumount with funds	hichefter, the Lords Souch	Omcers, reductioning fact	others as beit liked nim.	Wincheller.		26 A.c.a.	the young Princely couple, the Crowne should come to the Lord Edward Duke of Yorke, who had	ting ham succeeding in the Captaineship of Calve. The
1	Male-fexe onely suspected	to these curious pruners	From the Conneell Table he mas of Woodftocke Duke of	Gloceller the Forle of war			*Febian.	married the other daughter of King Peter. That	Dukes chargefull emploiment in France bare no o-
1	the Lady Poinings, and o	ther Ladies were also re-	wicke, and others; which	(as it might) encouraged			Caxton.	the king of Spaine should lade *eight Cars with wed- ges of gold for the Duke, or (as * some write) pay two	ther flower, then a yeeres short truce. (89) The Kings wants still encreasing with his
1	moued, and put vnder ba	ile to aniwere fuch thing	the Dukes enemies about	he King, to doe cuill offi-			*Holinfo.	hundreth thousand nobles, toward the defrayment	imploiments; the Londoners (carried away with e-
1	as should bee objected. am Elinham, Sir Iohn Beau	Sir Simon Burley, Sir Willi	ces betweene them. Yet	the king did not present-	1 1		Pag. 450.	of the Dukes huge charges; That finallie he should	uill counfell) did a thing moft vnworthy of their Ci-
1	Salisbury, Sir Thomas Triu	enampe Of Holf, Str 10th	ly credite what was whifp ning a purpose suggested to	ered into his eare, concer-			" Tood.Neugl.	give sufficient Caution for an Annuitie of ten thou-	tie and themselues, and it might to them have pro-
ł	Richolas Dagworth and Sin	r <i>Nicholas Brambre</i> knight	forces againe , but acqua	inting him withall, was fa-				land pounds, during the liues of the faid Duke and Dutchesse, to be duly paid to their vies at the City of	ued as hurtfull, as it was vnworthy, at fuch time as
1	with certaine Clerks wer	e apprehended, and kep	tisfied. Neuerthelesse, he v	vould not fuffer the Duke			*stalinfied	* Bayon in Gascoigne,	the King * desired the loane but of one thousand pounds: which was not onely churlishly denied but
1	in straite prison, to answer	e fuch acculations (what i	f to purfue an orderly or a	ny reuenge vpon the Au-	-		"Helinsbed. The Duke of	(86) The King, at fuch time as the Duke of	a certaine Lumbard, honeftly offering to lend the
1	meere calumniations?) a Westminster should be obi	is in the next Parliament a effect	thors, whom indeed it had punished in an exemplary	beene wildome to haue		1	Lancefler doth	Lancaster returned, was at Reading, whither he had	fame, was badly vied, beaten, and almost flain. Their
1	(78) The Parliament	began at Candlemas, wher	(82)Michael de la Pole la	tte Earle of <i>suffolke</i> (whom		1.	ľ	commanded the Peeres to repaire. To that meet- ing the Duke makes haft, aswell to present his dutic	liberties for that and other *diforders are feifed, and
	the King was vnwillingly	present: The first day o	f the popular Lord shad n	nade most odious to the			1	to his Soueraigue, as to be an authour of loue and	their proper Magistracy dissoluted, (Guardians being given them, first Sir Edward Dallinging, then Sir
Historia Lecustren.	the Seffion, all the Judges	Fulthrop, Belknap, Care	English) died at Paris in o	xile, bequeathing such	1 1		1	peace betweene the king and Lords, against some of	Baldwin Radington) and their Maior, and some chiefe
1	Hott, Burgh, and Lockton in Judgement on the Ben	were arrested as they lat	goods as hee had there to ! also breathed out his grief				ĺ	whom the King was not thought to be verie fauou-	Citizens layed in prisons farre off from London. The
ı	to the Tower. The cause	ealleadged was, that ha	at laft in Brahant.	es in Daniminent, and the	1 1		1	rably disposed. Which he gratiously effected, as seeming to addict his mind to offices of piery and	punishment brought the fowlenesse of their errors
1	uing first ouerruled them	with their counsels and di	(83) The Dake of	Lancafter the meane while,	.1 1		The Duke of	publike benefit, Certainely the wifdome and mo-	to their fight; but by the Duke of * Gloefters inter- ceffions (who did not vnwillingly lay hold vpon
1	rections, which they affur to law, they afterward at	ed them to be according	returnes into Gafcoigne ou	t of Spaine, and not long			Yorkes carriage worthily praised.	deration of the Duke of Torke his brother, were	such occasions of popularity) the king and Queene
1	iudgement to that which t	worung nam gaue contrari	after into England. The i	uccelic of that voyage (be-				fuch, in all the late, and other tumults, that he is not	are wonne to enter the City, which gaue them tri-
1	red. Tryfilian the chiefe	Iuftice preuented then	was briefly this. John Kin	owne of Caffile * alledged that			1	fo much as once named among the factious; which	umphall entertainement. The sea is not sodainely
i	by flight, but being appr	rehended, and brought to	Constance the Dukes wife	was not right heire. hur	2 Pader Carries			Christian spirit if it had raigned in all the rest, Eng- land had never beene polluted with such infanite	calmed after a tempest, neither a Princes anger. By degrees yet, and not without deare repentance, they
1	the Parliament in the for	renoone, had fentence to	he. For, albeit the Lady o	constance was eldest daugh-	Archiep. Toletan. Hij.Hift.part.4		1	bloodshed of her noblest Children; neither had the	were at last restored to their former condition in all
	be drawne to Tyberne in to to have his throat cut; wi	ne arrernoone, and ther	ter and heire to Peter fonn	e of Aijonje, whole father ane of Sanchez the fourth.			1	goodlie fabricke of state, laden with innumerable	points.
The Dake of	ly. Six Nicholas Brambre	turne was next. Thi	and he sonne of Atfonse th	e tenth, all Kings of Spain	:		j	trophees, falne vnder that most hideous Chaes, which	(90) The king declaring his purpose to crosse in-
new Troy or	Brambre(faith Walfingham)	was faid to have imagine	fucceffinely;yet,that neith	er Constance, Peter, Alfonse.			A.D.1390.	fucceeding ages faw and fighed for,	to Ireland, had an aide of money conditionally granted: four yeeres truce by the trauaile of the
1	to be made Duke of new Tr	oy (the old supposed nam		ad the right. His reason			i An.reg. 12.	(87) The King vpon the Duke of Lancasters returne, whether hee felt the keeping of Aquitaine	two Dukes of Lancaster and Glocester being conclu-
	of London) by murthering (whose names hee had billed	tnoujanas of juch Citizens for that purpole \across fur	of Almaine) had, before he	enth, (choien Emperous			The Duke of Lancafor made	an unprofitable burthen, or the abtence of his uncle	ded in France. This yeere was farther notable
1	pected of likelihood to refift h	im. Then Sir John Salis	- elder sonne called Ferdina	nd de la Cerda, who marri			Duke of Aqui.	the Duke, a thing worthie to be purchased at anie rate, certaine it is, that in a Parliamene held at Lon-	for many great Funerals. Conftance Dutcheffe of A
1	bury, and Sir James Berne	es two young Knights, Si	r ed Blanch the daughter	of Saint Lewis King of			teine.	don, he vested in him that famous Dutchy, by deliue-	quitaine and Lancaster, a Lady of great *Innocency and deuotion: the Counteste of Derby her daugh
1	Iohn Beauchamp of Holt, Sto the King, and Iohn Blake	eward of the Household t		rended Alfonse de la Cerda				ring the Cap of State, and Ducal Rod; whither hee	ter in law. If abel the Dutcheffe of Torke, and a Lady
1	crificed to reuenge. Sir	Simon Burley onely had th	e (ine) and Fernand who	King, but died without if			F	fhortly went to take possession. His sonne, Henrie of Bullingbroke Earle of Derbie, loath to spend his	noted for too great a finenesse and delicacy, yet a
1	worthippe to haue but his	s head strucken off.Loe th	e Iohn, tonne of the Infant o	f Portugali Emmanuel.mo-	.[1	houres in floath, but defirous to purfue renowne by	her death shewing much repentance and forrow for her loue to those pestilent vanities, left this present
1	noble respect which the g	entle Lords had to inflic	e ther to the Lady Iname w	ife of King Henry the fe-	.]		ł	martiall Acts in forreine parts, failed oner to the	life. But all the griefe for their deaths did in no for
į.	and amendment. This weake or flothfull Princ	was no age (wee lee) tor	a cond, father of John King	of Castile defendant.	1		f.	warres in Prusia, where in fundry enterprizes against	equall that of the kings, for the loffe of his owner
1	the people, and then the i	Peeres, foile and tramp	would not ferue : for king	made by the Castilian, adomes are not vied to be			Beary of Bulling. brake fockes ad- uentures into Germany.	the Lithuanians, he wan great honor, which, by com-	Queene Anne, which about the same time hapned a
1	the regall authority vnde	rfoote: the Duke of In	pleaded for by Bil and Ai	were: The English and			Bentures into	parison of King Richards Calmnes, prepared a way for him in the Englishes affections, to points more	Sheene in Surrey, whom he loued even to a kind o madneffe: but Ladies onely died not; for Sir John
	land, the Archbishoppe	of Yorke, the Earle of Su	Portugals ioine their force	es. To the Duke(by rea	.1		Germany.	cminent.	Hawkwood, whose cheualrie had made him renow
	folke and others, had thei	reltates confiscated to th	e fon of his wives presence	e,) manie did voluntarily	/ [l .	(88) The Pope now understood that the Eng-	ned ouer the Christian-world, did in this yeere de
# .48.10.0 11.	Statutes may bee feene,	ament, as in the * booke o	of submit themselues; all di de Perez on the behalfe of	d not; for Don * Aluarez	Polyd. Perg. 1, 20		1	lish State began againe to be sensible of Romish en-	part an aged man out of this world in Florence, where
K168.2.	of the whole proceeding	s.		Duke in his march to Bur			"A.R.13. Vol.lib.Stat.	croachments; and as in a * former Parliament they had enacted against all Collations of Bishoprickes	his after remaine honoured at this prefent with a ftately Tombe, and the statue of a Manat Armer.c
	(79) These troubles be	oiling and burning within	ges, and was ouerthrowne	. Other aduentures that	:		1	and dignities by the Pope, with banishment to all	rected by the gratitude of that State and City, which
1	in the Bowels of the Stat	e, the Scots abroad had o	warreafforded, but fick	seffe happing in the Fig.	En. 10. 1		ł	which did accept fuch Collations, and death to althat	chiefly by his conduct, courage and valour (to this
1	the conduct of Sir William	North of England, vnde	mong them the Lord Fit.	my of the principall, and a	-		1	brought in any excommunications from the Pope, to hin-	day admired amongst them) was preserved. The Ita
1	knight, a parallel and riva	all in the honour of Arme	Knights, Efquires, and n	nen of armes almost chree			*Yood, Neuft.	der the execution of that AEF; fo in this last Parliament,	lian Writers, both * Historians and * Poets, highlicelebrating his matchlesse prowesse entryle him,
1	to Henry Hotfpur, Lord	Percy, whom Hot/pur figh	hundreth. Moreouer t	he penurie was fuch, that			544	*another seuere Act was made, against such as went to the Pope to procure any such provisions. A Proclama-	-Anglorum decus & decus addite genti
1	ting hand to hand flew in	battell: but the Earle of	f fundrie revolted to the e	nemy to get reliefe which	x I		ibid.p.\$45.	tion also was made at London, * that all beneficed men	Italica, Italico prasidiumo; Solo.
1	Dunbar comming with an tooke Botfpur and his bro	excessive number of Scot	s, being * scene of the King Duke he would set vpon	them as Francisco I	" The Walf.			tion also was made at London, * that all beneficed men then being in the Court of Rome, should returne by a day	
	ny English, not without	fuch loffe to themselves	faid no, for that he knew	they did it onely for lack			stanes frigore	prefixed, or loofe all their liuings. The Pope himfelfe (laith walfingham) troubled with * fo great a thunder.	Englands prime honour, Italies renowne,
	1		-1 ,				furbatm.	(lauch wayingham) troubled with - jo great a thunder.	Who upheld all Italie from finking down. Bu

of foode. Thus having faid, he held downe his head, as he fate on horsebacke, and wept most bitterclap, fent with all speed into England, to perswade the A.D. 1391. King, that fuch Statutes as had beene thus made in ly, fecretly powring forth his praiers to almighty their prejudice, who followed the Court of Rome, God, and most humbly beseeching mercy. From and fuch other clauses as tended to the dammage of which time forward his affaires in Spaine succeeded that See, should be made void ; whereto the Kings answere was, that the Popes Nuntio must expect till the The warres had beene * sharpe and tedinext Parliament. At which Parliament the King, as ous, but the end acceptable. For Don Inan king of also the Duke of Lancaster, seemed to have some re-Castile, a Prince of no cuill conscience, seeing the spect to the Pope, (whose messenger was their Preont of all amity right which the Duke of Lancafter vrged, and forefent) but the" Knights of the house would not in any fecing what calamities might happen hereafter, wise give their consents, that such * Rome-gadders should if (as was feared the French should match with him, without due punishment pursue their wonted course, longer then till the next Parliament. To furnish the Duke fought and obtained a firme peace. The Principall conditions were : That the Lord Henry, his sonne of Lancafter into France, to treat of a peace, and vpon and heire, should marry the Lady Katherine, daughcondition that the King should that yere inuade Scotland, large contributions were there made, both by ter and heire to the Duke and Constance his wife : That the Lord Henry (during his fathers life) should Clerey and Laity. Hereupon the Lord Henry Percy. be called Prince of Afturia, and Katherine his wife Princesse: That * for default of issue betweene Hospur(who had redeemed himself)was called from his charge at Callis, and made Warden of the Marthe young Princely couple, the Crowne should ches against Scotland; Thomas Monbray Earle of Notcome to the Lord Edward Duke of Yorke, who had tingham succeeding in the Captaineship of Calys. The married the other daughter of King Peter. That Dukes chargefull emploiment in France bare no othe king of Spaine should lade *eight Cars with wedther flower, then a vecres short truce. ges of gold for the Duke,or (as * some write) pay two (89) The Kings wants still encreating with his A.D. 1392. hundreth thousand nobles, toward the defrayment imploiments, the Londoners (carried away with e-Landau in de of the Dukes huge charges; That finallie, he should uill counfell) did a thing most vnworthy of their Citie and themselues, and it might to them have progive sufficient Caution for an Annuitie of ten thoufand pounds, during the liues of the faid Duke and ued as hurtfull, as it was vnworthy, at fuch time as Dutchesse, to be duly paid to their vies at the City of the King * defired the loane but of one thousand * Bayon in Gascoigne, pounds: which was not onely churlishly denied but (86) The King, at fuch time as the Duke of a certaine Lumbard, honeftly offering to lend the same, was badly vsed, beaten, and almost slain. Their Lancaster returned, was at Reading, whither he had commanded the Peeres to repaire. To that meetliberties for that and other *diforders are feised, and *Fabian & Can-ton; bur. Stom millukes their ad-ditions of other ditorders. ing the Duke makes haft, aswell to present his dutie their proper Magistracy dissoluted, (Guardians being given them, first Sir Edward Dallinging, then Sir to his Soueraigue, as to be an authour of loue and peace betweene the king and Lords, against some of Baldwin Radington) and their Maior, and some chiefe whom the King was not thought to be verie fauou-rably disposed. Which he gratiously effected, as Citizens layed in prisons farre off from London. The punishment brought the fowlenesse of their errors *Tood.Neuff. feeming to addict his mind to offices of piety and to their fight , but by the Duke of * Glocefters interpublike benefit, Certainely the wifdome and moceffions (who did not vnwillingly lay hold vpon deration of the Duke of Yorke his brother, were (uch occasions of popularity) the king and Queene fuch, in all the late, and other tumults, that he is not are wonne to enter the City, which gaue them tri-umphall entertainement. The sea is not sodainely fo much as once named among the factious; which Christian spirit if it had raigned in all the reft, Engcalmed after a tempest, neither a Princes anger. By land had never beene polluted with fuch infinite degrees yet, and not without deare repentance, they were at last restored to their former condition in all A.D. 1393. bloodshed of her noblest Children; neither had the goodlie fabricke of flate, laden with innumerable trophees, falne under that most hideous Chaes, which (90) The king declaring his purpose to crosse infacceeding ages faw and fighed for, to Ireland, had an aide of money conditionally (87) The King vpon the Duke of Lancasters returne, whether hee felt the keeping of Aquitaine granted: foure yeeres truce by the trauaile of the two Dukes of Lancaster and Glocester being concluan unprofitable burthen, or the absence of his uncle ded in France. This yeere was farther notable the Duke, a thing worthie to be purchased at anie for many great Funerals. Constance Dutchesse of Aquitaine and Lancaster, a Lady of great *Innocency and deuotion: the Counteste of Derby her daughter in law, stabel the Dutchesse of Torke, and a Lady rate, certaine it is, that in a Parliamene held at London, he vested in him that famous Durchy, by delinering the Cap of State, and Ducal Rod; whither hee noted for too great a finenesse and delicacy, yet at shortly went to take possession. His sonne, Henrie of Bullingbroke Earle of Derbie, loath to spend his her death shewing much repentance and sorrow for houres in floath, but defirous to purfue renowne by her loue to those pestilent vanities, left this present martiall Acts in forreine parts, failed ouer to the life. But all the griefe for their deaths did in no fort warres in Prusia, where in fundry enterprizes against equall that of the kings, for the losse of his owne the Lithuanians, he wan great honor, which, by com-Queene Anne, which about the same time hapned at parison of King Richards Calmnes, prepared a way Sheene in Surrey, whom he loued even to a kind of for him in the Englishes affections, to points more madneffe: bur Ladies onely diednot; for Sir John Hawkwood, whose cheualrie had made him renow-(88) The Pope now understood, that the Engned ouer the Christian-world, did in this yeere delish State began againe to be sensible of Romish enpart an aged man out of this world in Florence, where croachments; and as in a * former Parliament they his ashes remaine honoured at this present with a had enacted against all Collations of Bishoprickes flately Tombe, and the flatue of a Man at Armes, c. and dignities by the Pope, with banishment to all which did accept such Collations, and death to althat rected by the gratitude of that State and City, which chiefly by his conduct, courage and valour (to this day admired amongst them) was preserved. The Itabrought in any excommunications from the Pope, to hinder the execution of that All; fo in this last Parliament lian Writers, both * Historians and * Poets, highlie Frank, Joseph *another seuere Act was made, against such as went celebrating his matchlesse prowesse enstyle him, to the Pope to procure any such provisions. A Proclama--Anglorum decus, & decus addite genti tion also was made at London, * that all beneficed men Italica, Italico prasidiumo; Solo. stem being in the Court of Rome, spould returned by a day prefixed, or loose all their linings. The Pope himselfe (laith wassingham) troubled with * so great a thunder. Englands prime honour, Italies renowne, Who upheld all Italie from finking down.

An.D. 1396.

the vanity of worldly ambiti-on in Princes.

Little did he then thinke, that within leffe then fixescore and three yeeresafter, an * Ambassador of King Henry the 3. Should write thus of Burdeaux it selfe, the Capitall City of Gascoign and Guien: Anglorum nulla ferè vestigia remanent, & c. There are (saith that learned Gentleman) scarse any soot-prints of the Englishmen remaining. In the Churches, and o-ther places newly restricted and reedified, such Armories of the English as stood, were utterly blatted and defaced: yet in the Church of the Fryers Preachers, the Armories of the Duke of Lancaster stand entire in a Glasse-window, and in the oldest wall of the City those alfoof England though confumed in a manner with age: The Lawes, Statutes and Ordinations which were made

(as * Polydor censures him,) a most fierce man, and of an "Hiff. Aug lib. 20 headlong wit, thinking those times, wherein he had mastred the King, were nothing changed, though the King was aboue thirty yeres old, forbare not, roughly, not so much to admonish, as to checke and schoole his Souereigne. The peace with France displeased him, that therefore he calumniates. The King had restored Brest in Britaine to the Duke, vpon reembursements of the money lent; he tels the King that hee should first conquera Towne, before he parted with any; yet the King answeres, that he could not in conscience detaine the same, now that the Duke had

repaid his loane. There were other things which

could not so well be answered. For a vaine rumor

A.rcg. 21:

*Libr. Stant. Anns. Rich."

ton; Thomas Beaufort Earle of Somerfet, John Monta-eute Earle of Salisbury, Thomas Lord Spencer and Sir william Scroope Lord Chamberlaine.

(100) In September begins the Parliament at London, where the king had a great guard of Cheffbire men to secure his person, and the Lords attended also not without sufficient numbers. The Kings chiefe Agents were Sir Iohn Bufby, Sir William Bagod, and Sir Henry Greene knights. In the first act (after the liberties of the Church and people confirmed,) we find thefe words. The commons of the Parliament have shewed to our Souereigne Lord the King, bow in the Parliament holden at Westminster, the fir

day of Ottober, in the tenth yeere of his reigne; Thomas

Dake of Glocester, and Richard Barle of Arundell, tras-

as Traitors. But the King, to content all parts, and to kindle new lights in the place of fuch as he had to kindle new lights in the place of their as nemate extinguished, hauing first created himselfee * Prince of Chester, made his cosen Henry Earle of Derby, Duke of Hereford; the Earle of Rusland Duke of Ammari; Dukes and State of the Chester Earle of Rusland Duke of Ammari; the Earle of Nottingham Duke of Norfolke; the Earle states, of Kent Duke of Surrey; the Earle of Huntington, Duke of Excester; the Earle of somer et Marquelle Derfet, the Lord Spencer Earle of Glocefter; the Lord Neuile Earle of Westmorland; William Strope Earle of wiltshire; Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester. The King alfo (faith Walfingham) added to his Scucheon Royall, the armories of Saint Edward King and con-

A 2222 2

(103) The formost in this goodly ranke, being Henry Duke of Hereford, not long after accused

Thomas Duke of Norfolke, of certaine words founding to the kings dishonour, which hee should priuately viter to the faid Henry. *Polyder (though very negligently hee makes Mombray the Accuser, and Hereford Defendant) may yet be heard in reporting the effect of the words, as That King Richard held the Peeres of the land in no account, but as much as lay in him (ought to destroy them, by banishing some, and putting others to death. That hee neuer troubled his mind with confidering how his Dominions were diminished through his I dienesse. Finally, that all things went to wracke, as well in peace as war. But the Duke of Norfolke, (who vnleffe it had beene to feele how the Duke of Herefords heart was affected to the king had little reason so to complaine) most constantly denying that euer he spake such wordes; it should have come to a combat within lifts; but the king to auoid(as hee pretended) fuch deadly fewds as might rife in the families of two such potent Peeres, but (indeed to bee rid of an enemie with the losse of a friend) banished Norfolke for cucr, and Hereford first for ten yeeres, then for fixe. Walfingham faith that this confure was given against Norfolke, vpon that very day in which the yeere before, he(by the kings commandement) had taken order for putting to death the Duke of Glosester at Callis, whereof the faid Duke of Norfolke had the Captaineship.

An.D.1300 An.Reg.22

"Ypad News.

(104) Fearefull were the tragedies which enfu-ed these times; and heare now what is written of some Portents or wonders, presaging the same. The * Bay or Laurell trees withered ouerall England, and afterward reflourished, contrary to many mens opinion; and vpon the first of Ianuary, neere Bedford towne, the river between the villages of Swelflow and Harleswood where it was deepest, did vpon the fodgine frand ftill, and fo divided it felfe, that the bottome remained drie for about three miles space, which seemed (faith Walfingham) to portend that revolt from the King, and the division which

(105) Roger Mortimer Earle of March, Lieutenant of Ireland, having in the yeere before, while he too much* trufted to his owne Forces, been flaine with very many others, by * O-Brin, and the Irish of Lein-ster, at a place called Kenin; King Richard determines in person to reuenge the bloud of his Noble kinfman, being the man to whom hee meant the Crowne of England, if iffue failed to himfelfe. Hee remembred not how broken an estate hee had in England, where the peoples hearts were firongly alienated, not onely for the death of the late great Lords, and banishment of the Duke of Hereford, (whole calamitie encrealed his popularity) or for the like paffed exasperations, but for that (to furnish his Irish voyage) he had extorted money on al hands, taking vp carriages, victuals, and other necesfaries, without any recompence; whereby the hatred of his government grew vniucrfall.

(106) But the euill fortune which hung over his head, laid forth an alluring batte to hafte his destru-Ction, by occasion of the Duke of Lancasters decease, which hapned about Candlemas, and the absence of his banished sonne and heire Lord Henry. The king (most vniustly) seizeth vpon the goods of that mighty Prince his vncle, & as if all things now were lawfull, which but liked him, he determines to banish the new rightfull Duke of Lancaster Henrie, not for a few yeeres, but for euer; for which cause hee reuoked his Letters Patents granted to the faid Henry. by which his Atturnyes were authorised to sue his Liverie (and to compound for the respite of his homage at a reasonable rate; whereby he made it seem plaine to the world, that hee had not banished him to auoid diffentions, but (as many faid) to fill vp the breaches which his riote had made in the roiall treasures, with plentifull (though an vindue) Es-

cheate, as that of his deceased uncles fortune.

(107) The one stedfast base and buttresse of all lawfull Empire, is Iustice; that supports the kinglie throne. This he ouerthrew, and how then could himselfe hope to stand long? He lands at Waterford . Annal. Hibers. in Ireland with a Nauie of * two hundreth ships, ha- apad Cambd. uing with him the sonne of the late Duke of Glocester, and of the now Duke of Lancafler, to secure himselfe the rather. * His forces consisted much of Cheshire men. But that king is deceived, who repofeth his safetie in violence. It was no great matter hee did there, that which fell out to bee done elsewhere, was great indeed. His warre in Ireland was more dammagefull, then fifting with an hooke of gold, for here the baite and hooke was not onely loft, but the line, rod, and himselfe, were drawne altogether into the depthes of irrecoverable ruine. Duke Henry fees the advantage which King Richards absence gaue him, and vseth it. In his Companie were Thomas Arundel the banished Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and his Nephew the sonne and heire of the late Earle of Arundel, and not aboue fifteen Lanciers. His Brength was (where the Kings should have beene) in the peoples hearts. Neuerthelesse, the Duke did not fodainely take land, but houered vpon the Seas, shewing himselfe to the Country people in one place now and then in another, pretending nothing but the recouery of his rightfull Heritage.

(108) Edmund Duke of Yorke, whom King Richard had left behind him to gouerne England, hearing this, cals vnto him Edmund Stafford Bishoppe of Chichefter, Lord Chancellor, the Earle of Wilifhire, Lord Treasurer, and the Knights of the Kings Councell, Bufnie, Baget, Greene, and Ruffell. Their conclusion was to leuie a force to impeach Duke Henries entrance. The affembly was appointed to bee at S. Albans, which came to worse then nothing, for the protestation that they would not hurt the Duke, whom they knew to bee wronged was generall. This made the Treasurer Sir Iohn Bushie, and Sir Henrie Greene flie to the Castle of Bristoll, Sir William Bagot to Chefter, from whence he got shipping into Ireland. Meane while Duke Henry lands at a village heretoforecalled Rauenshire, towhom repaired Hen-ry Earle of Northumberland, his sonne Henry Lord Percie, lands at Newill Earle of Westmerland, and many others, who (saith Walfingham) greatly feared King Richards tyrannie. With an Armie of about threescore thousand (multitudes offering their seruice) they come to Bristoll, besiege the Castell, take it, and in the same the foresaid Treasurer Bushie and Greene, whose heades (at the cries of the Commons) were the next day after their surrender seuered from their bodies.

(109) King Richard was in the City of Dublin, when these most heavie newes arrived. His courage which at no time feemed great, was shortly none at all. Somewhat must bee done : hee leaues the sons of Duke Henry, & of his late vncle of Glocefler (which hee retained as pledges for his owne indemnity) in the Castell of Trim, and returnes himselfe into England, entending to encounter the Duke before his force should bee too much established. The great names which accompanied him, were his late noble Creatures, the young Dukes of Aumarle, Excester, and Surrey, the Bishops of London, Lincolne and Car-leol, and many others. There had beene some more hope for vpholding his right, if hee had not made the worlde know, that tenneyeers space was not able to burie in him the appetite of reuenge, which made many forget their owne loyalty to him, and the Crowne. Princes fee in him the vse of obliuion: but some conscience of cuill deserts seeming to haue taken from him all confidence, he dismisseth his Armie, bidding his Steward Sir Thomas Percy &

others to referue themselves for better dayes. (110) His last refuge is in Parlea. For that cause there repaired to him, at the Castell of Conway in Northwales, (for thither he was now come) the late Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and the Earle of

Northumberland at the Kings appointment : The fum of his demaundes were, that if hee and eight, whome he would name, might have honourable allowance, with the assurance of a quiet private life, he would resigne his Crowne. This Northumberland did sweare should be: whereupon he forthwith departs to the Castle of Flint in their company. After a short conference there had with the Duke, they all ride that night to the Castell of Chester, being attended by the Lancafirian Armie. If, to spare his peoples bloud, he was contented fo tamely to quit his royall right, his fact doth not onely not feeme excusable, but glorious; but men rather thinke that it was floth, and a vaine trust in diffimulation, which his enemies had long fince discouered in him, and for that cause, both held his amendment desperate, and ran themselues into these desperate Treasons. (1,11) The King did put himselfe into the Dukes

Chap. 13. Richard. IJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 50.

hands vpon the twentieth day of August, beeing but the forty and scuenth from the Dukes first landing. From thence they trauell to London, where the King lodged in the Tower. Meane while writs of Summons are fent out in King Richards name, for a Parliament to bee holden at Westminster, Crastino Michaelis. The tragicall forme of Resignation, you haue * had already in Edward the second, of whom this King is a Parallel. There are named to haue been present at this wofull-ioyfull Act, Arundel Archbishoppe of Canterburie, Richard Scrope Archbishoppe of Yorke, Iohn Bishoppe of Hereford, Henry Duke of Lancaster, (who in this serious play must seeme as if hee were but a looker on) the Earles of Northumber-

A.D. 1340.

* Fabla.Concord, bid.faiththirty and eight,

land, and Westmerland, the Lords Burnell, Barckley, Ros, Willoughby, and Abergeuenie, the Abbot of Westmin-(112) In their presence Richard as yet a King, and in his Tower of London, but not otherwise then as a prisoner, reades the Instrument of his surrender, with a feeming chearefull countenance, as if he were glad the hower was come, in which hee might talte what it was to be a prinate man, and (having otherwife first done and said what then he could to put all right out of himselfe) subscribes it with his hand; but prayes, that his Cosen the Duke of Lancaster

might fucceed him in the regall gouernement, and

in token that it was his defire (for he must seeme to

defire what hee could not hinder) hee* plucked off

his Signetring, and put it vpon the Dukes finger.

Then did he constitute the Archbishoppe of Yorke, and Bishop of Hereford his Procurators, to declare to the whole Body of Parliament whathe had done. & how willingly, where euery on e(*except the loyal & *D.Hayward.is Has.4. magnanimons Bishop of Carlest) being particularly asked, did particularly accept of the relignation. Ne uerthelesse, it was not thought inough to have his Crowne, vnleffe they also published his shame. Thirty * and two Articles are therefore openly (but in his absence) read; of all which, it was said (for then men might fay what they lifted) that he had confeffed himfelfe guilty. In the front was placed his a-buse of the publike treasure, and vnworthy waste of the Crown-land, whereby he grew intollerably grieuous to the Subjects. The particular causes of the Dukes of Glocester and Lancaster, the Archbishop of Canterburie and Earle of Arundel filled sundry Articles. They charged him in the rest with diffimulation, falshood, losse of honour abroad in the world, extortions, rapine, deniall of Inftice, rafures, and embezelling of Records, dishonourable shifts, wicked Axiomes of state, cruelty, couctousnesse, subordinations, lasciniousnesse, treason to the rights of

the Crown, periuries,; and briefly with all forts of vnkingly vices, and with absolute tyranny.
(113) We may be assured, that nothing could then be objected so vntrue or incredible, but would have gone for current and undenyable with affections fo throughly prepared. Hereupon it was * concluded, that in all those thirty and two Articles , hee had broken the Oath of Empire taken at the Coronation ,

& al the States of the Kingdom (strange that so many should so concurre in disloyalty under pretence of equity) being asked what they thought; did hold that those causes seemed notorious, and sufficient to depose King Richard. Commissioners were therefore nominated by confent of the whole house, to pronounce the sentence of Deposition; which were, the Bishop of Asph, the Abbot of Glassenbury, the Earle of Glacefter, the Lord Barkly, William I hyrning, Chiefe Iustice of the common Pleas, and some others. The forme of pronuntiation was, IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN. We tohn Bishop of Saint Afaph, Iohn Abbat, &c. Commissioners speci ally chosen by the Lords spirituall and temporal to the Realme of England, and Commons of the said Realme, representing all the States of the said Realme, sitting in

place of indgement. Oc. (114) The definitiue sentence of Deposition given thus in open Parliament, there were further named certaine persons, amongst whom * William Thirning Chiefe Inflice of the Comon Pleas was thought the fittest Tred. Neuff. man, by whose lawlesse mouth that vniust doome should be deliuered to the King, and who on the behalfe of the Realme, should renounce to the said Richard the fealties and homages heretofore made vnto him, and to make relation of the whole manner and causes of their proceedings. The Regall seate was now reputed void; whereupon Duke Henrie rifeth from his place, and flands vpright, that hee might be feene of the people, then * figning him-felfe with the figne of the Croffe vpon the forchead and breaft, and innocating the name of Christ, he

challenged the Crown and Realm of England, with all the members and appurtenances. His words are faid to be thefe. In the name of God, Amen. I, Henry of Lancaster, claime the Realme of England, and the Crowne, with all the appurtenances, as comming by the bloodroyall from King Henry, and by that suffice which God of his grace Tred.Nenft. hath sent to me, by the helpe of my kinfolke and friends, for recourry of the said Realme, which was in point of perdition, through default of Gouernment and breach of (115) Which challenge and claime being thus

made, all the States of the Kingdome doe with one

made, all the states of the Kingdome goe with one confent grant, that the faid Lord Duke should reigne ouer them. The Archbishop of Canterbury (brother to the late Earle of Arundal) takes him then by the right hand, and the Archbishop of Yorke (the late Earle of wiltshires kinseman) being his assistant, placeth him in the royall throne, with the generall acclamation and applauses of the people. Lastly, in full complement of the present solemnity, the Archbishoppe of Canterburie (that we may see how the Diningly as well as the Law of those times were degenerated into temporizing Policie) made a Sermon upon these words in Samuel, A Man shall raigne over the People. By occasion whereof * hee describeth out of the holy Scriptures, the happinesse of that Kingdom which is governed by a man, and the infelicity of those aom wosten is governed by amm, and the injection) of the Realmes where a Child (whether in age or difference) weeldes the Scepter. The entil whereof as they had dan-gerously felt under the late King so they hoped abundantly to enjoy the other in King Henry, To all which the whole Auditorie ioyoully answered Amen. Then rose the affable new Monarch, & among a few other words, hee gaue the world to understand, that none should thinke hee would as by way of Conquest, disin-herste any man, certaine bad members onelie ex-

(116) From henceforth hee was taken for King and all Writs iffued, and went forth in his name which disorderly matters being orderly related to the deposed Prince in the Tower, by Thirning the Chiefe Iustice, hee onely vsed these words; That hee that (after all this) my cofen will be my good Lord and friend. The Archbishop (otherwise inexculable in

The Helf.

A necessary pro

those proceedings) yet in his said Sermon seemeth

Book. 9

* Varia Wiclift M.S.in biblioth. Oxen.

*An.1385.

*Walfi 9.312.

gravely and truly to have described the cause of this effect; for (quoth hee) the shild or insipient (which are with him æquiparable) drinketh the sweet and delicious words unaduifedly, and perceiveth not insoxication, which they beene mingled with, till hee bee emvironed

and wrapped in all danger, as lately the experience thereof hath beene apparant to all our fights and knowledges, and not without the great danger of all this Realme.

Being thus brought downe to the show, and littlenesse of a private man, wee leave him to draw his comfort out of holy meditations, as one whose violent death ensued before long, and turne ouer to

his politike and martiall Successor.

*into Bohemis,

pera Io.Huff. To.1. *Walfi.p.105.

* Ibid.p.285.

* 2.3174

*0285

p.186.

(117) Yet in our way, wee may not quite ouer-passea cursory consideration of the affaires of the Church under this King, which, for auoiding often interruptions of other argument, we have put off to this last place. For albeit the Kingdome indured great croffes in the affaires of State, yet * fome have thought, that it found as great blessings in matters of religion, which in those daies tooke so deepe root in

this our land, by the preaching of Iohn Wicliffe, that the branches thereof did spread themselues even ouer the Seas: Nor were the common people only allured with his doctrine, (though the *Londoners funouring of him is thought by Walfingham to haue de-

Houring of mm is thought by reaging moments to induce the terred the Prelates from proceeding against him, and a scholler of his in Leizesterfbre, is said to have drawn by his preaching, *all the Layment that Country) but (as the same Authour reporteth) fundrie of the Fry. ars themselues fell to him and imbraced his opinions, amongst whom one * being also the Popes Chaplaine, so discourred by preaching the murders, luxuries and treasons of Fryars of his owne Habit, that the common people were assomed with the horror thereof. and cried out to have them all otterly destroicd; which his accusations he particularlie instified by publi ke writing, professing he came forth of that Order, as

much more * admires , is, that Wieliffes opinions were nuclinate animes, so that recupies symmons were not onlice attentioned in ordinary cities, but evenine the vinuerfity of Oxford it felfe, where was * the very top of widows and learning: and where not only two Chancellors successively. * Doctor Nichelas Hereford. and * Robert Rugge were most earnest maintainers of wieliffer doctrine, but alfo, when the pope (to sup-presse the same doctrine) sent his * Bull to the V niners. Bulla Gregory.ib.

out of the Dinels neft. But that which Walfingham

ty threatning the prination of all their principes, the Proters and Regents thereof were very doubtfull, whether they should receive the Popes Bull with honour, or rather reiect it with open diferace. Yea, the whole body of that glorious V niversitie (as the Pope there cals it in his Bull) gaue a glorious * Testimony (vnder their Vide op. Job. Hull 10,2. publike leale) of Wieliffes religious life, profound learning, orthodoxe opinions, exquifite writings, all

farthest from any staine of heresie.

(118) And therefore no marueile, if not onely the Duke of Lancafter, with sfundry Peeres and great ones, but King Edward 3. himselfe, were (as Capgrause Procesum & mi, testifieth) a fauourer of him, and * King Richard 2. and lium. Praise. the whole Parliament did (according to his inftructions) much labour to abrogate the Popes Transcendent power, which was a principall cause of the Popes harred against him. Notwithstanding to discountenance the truth which he taught, in defence of Regall Supremacy against Papall y Jurpation, (as allo against the Masse, Transubstantiation, Merit; against Adoration of the Hoast, of Saints, I mages; and Reliques; against Fryarly Orders, Pilgrimages, Indulgences,)many lewd opinions by misconstruction (as his bookes yet extant, euince) are fathered on him, yea some fo monstrous and diabolicall (as, *,that Men ought, 6 monfrous and disbolicall (as, "that are ongon," yes, "that God bimjelfe ought, to buy the Diucil) that that any man which heareth them, will prefer the perfect of the control bear of the perfect of the control bear of the co malicious figments. This famous Doctor *dying of a palife, hath this charitable Euloge or Epitaph beflowed on him by a * Monke; The Dinels Infrument, Churches Enemy, Peoples Confusion, Heretikes Idole, Hy-poerites mirrour, Schismus broacher, harreds sowers, tys-forger, Flatteries sincke; who, at his death dispaired like Cain, and stricken by the horrible indgement of God; brea-

the wicked, nor to respect after their death ought else but their flanderous rancor, And thus we conclude the raigne, though not the life of King Richard: His fort wife.

the forth is wicked foule to the dark massion of the blacke diuell: Whereby, Gods best children may learne, not to regard, whiles they live, the malice of printed copies.

(119) The first wife of King Richard the second, was Anne, daughter vnto the Emperour Charles the fourth, and fifter to Wenceflans Emperour, and King of Bohemia, who was crowned Quene the 22. of Ianuary 1384. Having beene tenne yeeres his wife thee dyed, without any iffue, at Sheen in the County of Surrey, 1394, whence her body was consayed and buried at Westminster, the seventh of the Ides of

His fecond Wife.

(120) Ifabell, daughter vnto Charles the fixth King of France, was a virgin about seuen yeers of age, when thee was affianced voto King Richard. 1396. Neither had her husband (it feemeth) anie nuptiall fruition of her, by reason of her tender age, before fuch time as his traiterous Lords, (to compasset tach time as instractions being a specific an vsurpers ambition) had dethroned him. What became of this young Ladie, we shall further see in the enfuing storie.

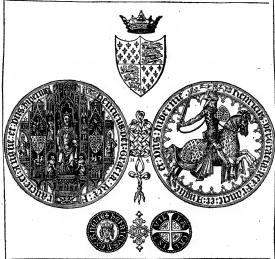


HENRIE

Chap. 14 Henrie III]. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 51. 611

HENRIE THE FOURTH, KING OF ENGLAND, AND FRANCE, LORD

OF IRELAND, THE FIFTIE ONE MONARCH OF ENGLAND, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS. AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER XII II.



ENRIE of that name the fourth, having thus obtained the title of king, in full accomplishment of all rites peculiar to Maiefty, had the Crowne of England set upon his head, with all worldly magnificence and honour at Wellminster, by Thomas Arun-

del Archbishoppe of Canterbury, vpon the * selfe day banished under Richard the second. Power and fauour can fet up and maintaine a King, though they cannot create aright. But fuch transcendent couries deuiating from all due regulation of Iustice, haue been too frequent in this Kingdome. What right had William (urnamed the Conquerour? what right, (we speake of a right of Equity,) had his sonnes William the fecond, and Henry the first, while their elder brother lined? what right had that valiant and

princely Stephen? what was the interest of Hemy the fecond, during the life of his mother Mathildis? or that of King John, till his Nephew Arthur Duke of Britaine died?, yea, or that of Henry the third, till Arthurs fifter died in her prison at Bristow? Howbeit, in this present case, not only Richard the late king, but the house of Mortimer, claiming from the one-ly daughter and heire of Lionel Duke of Clarence (an elder brother of Iohn D. of Lancaster) doubly might have withstood the legall challenge of this Prince? That obstacle which grew by kichard, was in apparance greatest, but the other was onely dangerous. Richard had no iffue but the line of Mortimer (engraffed by marriage into the house of Yorke) feeling it (elfe ynable to preuaile, and during Richards life time, having no right, fecretly fostered in it selfe those fires, which afterward brake forth, and taking hold of the roofe-tops of both the royall houses, neuer left burning, till no one principall timber was could claime by a direct line, vtterlie lopt downe

(2) But this wife and valiant Prince Henry, be-

fides all other helpes toward the possession of the

Crowne in present, had as much strength, as the vn-

ordinate affections and fiding of a factious greater

part could give, for translation of a right from one

familie to another; which strength (as the basis of

his vniuftly reared building) he endeauoureth by all

the politike meanes he may, to make perpetuall.

During therefore the former Parliament, (for Par-

' liaments, as Kingdomes, giue their voice with power, ' and he who hath the force, doth commonly carry the ef-

feet of right) he * provided for their indemnities,

who either came in with him, or did afterward ad-

here to his fides, and doth vtterly abrogate, and make

void the Acts made in the one and twentieth yeere

of the late King Richard the second, for so much as

concerned the Attaindors difinherisons, or other

forfeytures of any persons therein named, or (in ge-

nerall words) compriled. Thereby, his vncle, Tho-

mas Duke of Glocester, who had been put to death at Cales without any orderly condemnation, Richard

meanes left to worke mischiefe to the Pecres and

people: and that wee may fee the constant humor

" Tib Statut. An

An.Rec. 27.

"So is he and the reft called. Lib.

of Wates, Duke of Aquitaine and Cornwali, & Earle of Chefter, by * affent of all the States. To his friend *Holings. the Earle of Northumberland hee gaue the Isle of Mann, as that which he had atchieued by Conquest, (fo the * cited Record speakes) of Sir William le Serope Knight Earle of Wiltsbire, beheaded at Bristol. The In Britannian, Earle of Northumberland had it granted to hold by pag.847. the feruice of bearing Lancaffers fword on the left hand of the King at the Coronation. Vpon the Earle of Westmorland, hee bestowed the Earledome of Richmond. Lastly, as a binding knotte, hee cauleth the * Crowne to bee entailed vpon the heires . *Halinth. ex Hal of his body, having at that time foure fonnes a- PRESTA. liue, Henrie Prince of Wales, Thomas, John and Hum-(7) Now, as in the workes of nature, what the Sea drawes from one Coaft, it cafteth to another; fo, others were diminished, as these encreased; the King | bled and deple bereauing enemies, to enrich his friends and followers. From Aumarl, Surrey and Excester, the titles of Dukes were taken, and generally all the great ones of that colour or faction, were reduced to the same estate (for honour and fortune) in which they

Earle of Arundel beheaded at Tower-hill, and others, were freed from the infamie of that corruptiflood, when first the late Duke of Glocester was arreon in bloud, which followes executed malefactors. fted. The Caftels, Honours, Mannours, and the rest of things, which afterward grew to them out of the ruine of that Duke and his friends, or otherwise And the Statute made in the eleventh yeere of the faide Richard, was againe fully fet on foot and reby the late Kings gift, from the day of that arrest, were by authority of this Patliament taken away, (3) In these things King Henry did(as it were) sa-crifice vinto the people, as well as to the weale pub-like: The said Thomas Duke of Gloeester, meaning or put into the present Kings mercy. It was likewife made valawful for them to give liveries or badthe reformation of the State, in that elementh yeer of ges to reteiners, or to keepe any about them but ne-King Richard procured (as is before touched) an Act ceffarie servante: They were also forbidden, vnder of Parliament, to * fettle a Superroyall power for a paine of high Treason, to goe about by any way to yeere, in certaine Pecres, by vertue of which comreenable the late King against the authority of this mission the intended reformation was so farre pro-Parliament, in which the sentence of his depolitifecuted, that fundry great persons and others (fauoon was given and enacted. Finally, (a thing which laid them open to infinite vexations) whereas, in rites of the vnfortunate King) were put to shamefull death banished and confiscated. the time of their late greatnesse, they and theirs (4) But Richard *afterward(by the Duke of Anwere charged to haue done, and patronized manimarks instigation) reexamines all the former passafold wrongs and oppressions, all people (vpon pro-clamations to that purpose) were willed to come ges and proceedings, and fatisfied his pleafure and displeasure, as already hath beene shewed; The Ar-ticles in those times sentenced for treasonable by the in, and declare their gricles, to the intent they might haue redresse and remedie. With these punishments most eminent Lawyers, did extend themselves so of his aduerfaries, King Henry contented himfelfe; but * not the Commons who inueighed against the 'Thought farre, that the Prince feemed to have too great

in Lawyers to judge with the will of the greatest. faid Aumarl, Surrey, Ge. were not also put to death, as persons who stoode deepe in the peoples ha-*the Lord William Thirning Chiefe Iustice of the common Bench, the Lord Walter Clopton Chiefe Iuflice, and others, being demanded their opinions vpon the same Articles, for which Sir Robert Triss-lian had lost his life, and for the which others had so (8) These prouisions for his honour, safety and aduantage, King Henry very seeingly contriued, and established at home; but not ignorant under what terribly beene censured by the Glocestrian faction, grieuous constructions his actions might fall in forrain parts, fends honorable Ambassadors to * Rome, " Holiasber. affirmed (as Trefilian and others did) that the faid Commission was against the royall Prerogative, and France, Spaine, and Germany, to give a reason of his Thomass.

To *Rome, the Bishoppe of Hereford, Sir Iohn Cheney Knight, and Iohn Cheney Esquier. To the procurers therof were all Traitors, (5) King Henry therefore, in this his first Parliament, reduceth the state of treasons (being crimes France, the Bishoppe of Durefme, and the Lord Thoof the highest and fowlest nature) to a more certaine mas Percie Earle of Worcefter, and * william Heron . Tob Stow Am

to Spaine, the Bishop of Saint Asaph, and Sir Willihead, vtterly abolishing all such as were established by the late King Richard. The words of the * Staam Par Knight. To Germany, the Bishoppe of Bantute it felfe are; Whereas, in the Parliament holden the gor, and others. These were armed with all forts of one and twentiethyeere of the late King Richard, diners instructions for instification of their new advanced paines of treason were ordained by Statute, in as much as there was no man which did know how he ought to be-(9) In France* was worthily found the greatest have himselfe, to doe, speake or say, for doubt of such paines. It is accorded, and assented by the King, the difficulty of giuing satisfaction, for that the French Pulyd. Ving. Las. Kings daughter (the designed wife of the late King) Lords and Commons, that in no time to come any treason bee sudged otherwise, then it was ordained by the Statute, in the time of his noble Grandfather, King Edward the third, whom God affoile. So was that net bro-ken, the perilous estate of Subjects relieved, the peo-

ple well gratified, and the King hereby became gracious and popular. (6) And that his indulgent magnificence might aswell appeare, as his civill prudence, hee (in this Parliament) created *Henry* his eldest sonne Prince

did thereby leefe the honour, profite and pleasure of a Monarchies fruiton. Shee was a yet Cafed twelpe yecres of age, and therefore, "till thee attained to "stinden more maturity, the late King had the rather ablented himselfe in Ireland. France therefore tooke the these newes roughly, and it seemed that matters tended to Armes, which yet came to nothing, for that King Charles relapted into his old difeate of frenzie. and a warre to bee made against so politicke a Captaine as King Henry, required a lober man, and not

Archbishoppe of Canterbarie, the Earle of Northum-

berland, and other Lords of Councell, because the

a mad one. Certainely, in the death of Richard which shortly followed all those tumultuous designs for reuenge, immediately expired. (10) They of Aquitaine (among whom the vn-They of Agri-taine disconten-ted and reletled fortunate Richard was borne) bare the late king great

exclaime, calling to God for vengeance with one

voice. Neuerthelesse the French were deceiued in

hoping to conuert these popular passions to their aduantage; for partly by the chiefe * Magistrates wildome, and principally by the comparison which the people made of the two sortes of gouernment,

English and French, that of the English being farre

the more sweet and gentle, they continued firme.

Much good labour, and many faire promises Lewis

Duke of Burbon was forced to spend in vaine, who

by fuch baites cast into the troubled wits of the Gas-

coignes, trauailed to drawthem to a reuolt. The

mischiese was the better, and more strongly encoun-

tred, by the arrivall of Sir Thomas Percy . Earle of

Worcester with competent numbers of men, sent thitherto withstand the French practises, and cure

the peoples affections, by applying to them the fo-ueraigne balme of reason, or with force to compell

(11) The first prouocation which was given to

King Henrie was by the Scots, who during the last

Parliament exercised themselves in England, and took

the Castle of Wareke; whose Captaine Sir Thomas

Greyat that time gave his attendance at Parliament

about the common affaires; and the whole North

of England being also infested with pestilence; the

Scots had the more oportunity to range vnencoun-

tred. . Cause of other ensuing enmities which af-

terward brake forth, was (as it * feemeth) for that

King Henry tooke into his protection George Earle

of Dunbarre and other Scots, who fled out of Scot-

land to avoide the displeasure of Robert their King,

and partly to take open vengeance for wrongs done

vnto them. Such oftentimes is the corruption of

humane nature, that it will not pardon pritiate in-invies for the publike benefite, but thruth the pi-tle due to our Country vnder the inferior refpect of particular intereffes. Princes alfo you oblique realons of flate (fo bad men call them) which is

neuer well founded vpon iniuftice, are (for their

owne feeming good) contented to hold their neigh-bours in awe, by poffeising meanes of their diffur-bance, which when time ferueth allo, they are not

flacke to vie, the profite whereof is feldome or ne-

(12) But King Henry was scarce warme in his new atchieued soueraignty, when a nest of pow-

erfull enemies beganne to hatch his destruction

under the shadow of his owne winges. The de-

posed Richard was yet aliue, and howsoeuerrough

and headstrong men of the Kingdome approued

his downethrow, all others did not; for some mo-ued by negrenesse of bloud, as the Earles of Kent

and Hantington his halfe brothers by one mother;

fome doubtlesse in conscience (because howsoe-

ner Richards actions were vnworthie of the Scep-

ter, yet the right was onely his, and besides Henrie

feemed to them not the next heire) others tran-

sported with enuie at Henries supereminency, and

not a few with remembrance of received bene-

fites, or hope of better fortunes in the change of times, inclined to fet him againevpon the English

loue, as being their Countriman. These discontentments were so publike, that Burdeaux (the capitall Citie and Prefidentiall feat) stucke not openly to fay, (as * Polydor hath it) that fince the world began ther was never a more cruel unresonable nor wicked fact done; that the good Prince was betrayed by *faithleffe leb,Stow. Annal men, and that all law was violated. Thus do they

The English go-

nernment better

*Helinfo.p.518.

The Scott.

" Hedl, Boet, lib. 16,Goor, Buichan

An. Reg.1.

obedience.

uer durable.

of a Captine Prince, doe commonly nothing else but haften his death.

throne. But they who oeuer seeke the deliuerance (13) It was our purpose in many great things to haue forborne the testimony of Walfingham (other-

Chap. 14. Henrie. IIIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 51. wife a great light of these times) as one who dedi-cating his workes to King Henry the fifth, sonne to this Henry, may be feared to speake the best and most

he can, for letting forth the honour of that line; but the leuity and diffonance of later writers, enforceth vs (though with some warinesse,) to follow his light, for that, concerning this great conspiracy it felfe, our late Authours doe fondlie encounter one the other, and some of them (as it must needs be) the truth. The principall Conspirators (if such in to iust a cause may be so enstilled) were such, whose lives

others, but those Earles and others first named, were

(14) The maine point of the plot was to *kil king

to his rightful dignity; which the more powerfully to

effect, (because, though Henry were murthered, yet they were affured that the businesse would not take

ued, that the pretence of some extraordinary shew in

pils Princes are) having delivered the King out of

that most certaine perill, did also sodeinely dissipate

the further enterprises of the Conspirators. The Lord Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington, one of the

chiefe, was not in this defeat at Windfore, but houe-

red in London, attending the successe, there to raise

meanes and men, and to worke fuch other maifteries

as he could, and afterward (for we credit Walfingham

who lived in that time, and neere the place, and faw,

from such as wore them, saying King Richard was at libertie, and in the midst of an army of one hundreth

fought to flie away by water.

vndoubtedly the chiefe.

Christmas was the fittest.

in the last Parliament had beene spared, though manie lockes in their periwigs of worldlie honour were plucked away. Iohn Holland Earle of Huntingdon, Thomas Holland Earle of Kent, and (as * fome fay) Edward The chiefe Con Earle of Rutland, (three the late Dukes of Excester, pirators names. Surrey, and Aumark) Iohn Montacute Earle of Sa-

risbury, Thomas Lord le Spencer, late called Earle of Glocester, the Bishop of Carleol, Sir Bernard Brokes, Sir John Sheuele, (or Shelley) Knights, John Maudler, the

Pfeudo-Richard, or * Counterfet King Richard, whose * Ishn Stones An Chaplaine hee had been, and resembled him verie the practile, as mouing the reft; and with him they adde to the former, Sir Ralph Lumley, Sir Thomas Blunt, Sir Benedick Celie Knights. There were fundry

The chief points Henry and his sonne, and thereby to restore Richard

cic. *Thom, Walfing Pol.Verg.lib,21.

end in a day, or a death) they resolved * to call the French into their succors, which they had reason to expect, for that the young Queene I fabel daughter to the French king remained at that prefent in Eng-

land. There was nothing feeble or improbable in all this deuise; the difficulty was how to come so strong into the presence of King Henry, that they

might ouerline the Affafsinate, thereby to finish their enterprize, which as they could not hope for, but with the helpe of a multitude, nor a multitude bee assembled without convenient Colour, it was resol-

(15) Not long before the time of intended ex-ecution, the whole Conjuration was discouered, fome say by the late * Duke of Aumarl, and afterward by the Maior of London. Discouered it was, but with fo short a warning, that the Kingscarce found himselfe out of danger, when the Earles of Kent and Salisbury, (not vnderstanding that the bad odour of their conspiracy was come to the King) enter with 400. armed men about * twylight into

Windfore Castle, from whence hee was departed to *Thomas Walfing Stow fasth in the Octave sof Chil London. But God(whose peculiar Wards and Pu-

and diligentlie noted things, rather then some + others) vpon the certaine report of the Kings safetie

(16) The two Earles missing their hoped pray, course upon their plots dif-

though greatly greened, yet necessitie and new hopes bid them to date farther. They therefore come to

Sunnings. There the young Queenc(King Richards [poule]) asy, where having [poken certaine big words, to little other purpose then to give the poore Ladie

a short comfort, and taken King Henries Badges

614	Henry. IIIJ. THE SVC	C	ESSION OF	Monarch 51.	Book.9	i
	thouland friends at Pomfret; they proceed to sud- lingford, then to Alingdom, and to to Greefler. The rumors wied by them to encrease their numbers were; that Henry of Lancafter (meaning the King) was fed with this forms and friends to the Tower of London, and that King Richard was of esped. Mandlen also,		be called vnheard-of torments) hand fet before him in the wor he was not fuffered either to t Idle therefore feemes * his di was murthered in the Tower, *theirs, who tell vs of Sir Peir	nted Princely manner, afte, or touch thereof, eame, who writes hee and not more credible of Extons affault, and	The fiction of Tanielse verified in King Richard Lanquets Chron- in Hen. 4. *Fab. Conc. Chron.	
Anonym. io.Stow. il. fls p.51 5. Verg.lib.21.	one of Richards Chapleins, tooke vpon him the sper- fon of his faid Lord, the more fitrongly to feduce the multitude, by fo bold and perilous a fiction. Thus feemed they to fit their words and fure their Arts to		the murther basely by him miserable Princes person: but to blame who negligently for a Walsingham, in whom no syll	much more are* they redit of the fable quote	*Holiesh.p.517.	
•	the place. At Sunning, Richard (they faid) was at Pomfret, for there the guile had beene transparent; but at Circester, Richard was not at Pomfret, but prefent.		found. Onely * Hector Boe that Richard fled difguifed in uered to King Robert, and ho	tius wils vs to belieue to Scotland, was difco- nourably entertained,	*Lib.16-	
l.Chien,	(17) Howbeit the successe was not answerable to the deuise; for, besides that King Henry was in the heart of his strengths at London, where sixe * thou-		but Richard who would no me himfelfe wholy to contempla died, and was buried at Striue ble hath neuertheleffe formew	ition, and both lived, ding. Which fond fa- hat in it, for that some	A counterfet King Richard bu- sied in Scotland, Tho. VValf. in	
	iand men were put into a readines, and would come vpon them like a florme, the Townsfimen of Cirecfler adialled the Lords, tooke them, and (because their Town was fired of purpose by some of their follow- ers, the better to recouer them while the quenching		personated Richard might so ble, nor improbable, and ind (19) The late King Richa nously murthered (for in reg seeming sable of his sight with	eed it was fo. rd thus cruelly and hei- ard of pining death the h Sir Peirs of Exton was	Hen.4.ed An.D. 1044. Richards dead body thewed openly at Landon,	
flie, as	found the people employment,) haled them forth, and without longer tarriance feuered their heads from their bodies: The Earle of Huntington, with a truftie Knight of his, Sir Iohn*Sheuele, hauing (after		a sport, it being both noble as a man of honour and courage hand) King Henry causeth brought up to London. O H	to die with weapon in his dead body to bee tenry, if thou wert Au-		
ts hauç it. 5,Cons,Hift.	the faile at Windfore) in vaine attempted to escape by Sea, was taken by the Commons at * Pitwel (perhaps		thor, or but privie, (though ded fafetie, and for that error	for thine owne preten- es cause which is lewdly		
	Prattlewel) in Effex, brought first to Chelmsford, and Lassile to Plessie, the houle of the late Duke of Glore. #for (whose Ghost a tragicall Poet would suppose did haunt his perfections for reuenge, where, partile also by this Earles instigation, the faild Glorester was first arrested. The Commons (out of whose hearts		mif-called reason of state) of sinot see, how the shewing of ired see in Pauls, did either corexectable crime. But to let the was no hope nor place for a R vsed, which may the rather co	ich a murther; we doe the people his vncouc- nceale or extendate the world know that there ichard, that course was		
ff.cep.119.	the image of that Duke was not vanished) at * the Countesse of Herefords instigation who was the Dukes widdow, tooke satisfaction whom the Farle		enfamishment; for a violent d not but deforme him too m bable that such a death would	eath by braining could uch : and it is most pro-		
-1	dred from his shoulders. The Lord Spencer called	1	least appeare. Surely he is no port of so exquisite a barbar	taman, who at the re-		
	execution done upon him by the Commons at Bri- fiel. Some other of them were put to death at Ox-		mithment, feeles not chilling be what if but for a justly cond dying? but how for an annoi	norror and detestations demned galley-slaue so nted King, whose Cha-		
	ford, and some at London; where Iohn Maudlen (the Counterfeit Richard, who as it leemes was a beautiful and goodlie person) and one William Ferby were drawne, hanged and headed. The Bishop of Carled		racter (like that of holy Order gicall spectacle of his dead bo moued too much both pittie while transported without ho	dy (perhaps because it and enuie) was after a	From thence is carried to Lang- ley, and after- ward to Well-	
l. Chron. 16. p. 516.	neuerthelesse was by the Kings elemencie preserved alive after the condemnatory sentence. There were * nineteene in all (whereof two had beene Dukes) put to death for this conspiracy, most of which were		fordshire, where the last rites w Bishop of Chester, the Abbas tham, but neither King Henry	were performed by the is of S. Alban and Wal- prefent, (as at the exe-	ward to Weft- minfler.	
	men of special note. (18) The designes and missortunes of King Richards friends being made known vnto him, could not		quies in London) and the great as were had * not fo much as a on them for their labour. Bu	funerall feast bestowed t Henry the fifth, in the	* Thom, Walfing. in Henrot.	i
	but worke strongly in a foule oppress with griefe; but whether so strongly as to make him resolue by		first *yeere of his raigne with ward cause those royall remain Sepulture of his Ancestors at	tes to be interred in the	*Fab.Cenc.Hift.	
.Walfing.	voluntary ablimence to starue himfelse(as* the same went) may bee doubted, though it be past doubt that King Henry was not forrie hee was dead howfoe- uer. That he was starued seemes verie plaine; though,		the riming Latine verses of his uell to reade these, considerin was triced out of Maiestic and	g vpon what points he l		
late King and starued ath,	as it is not certaine, (neither yet vnlikely) that King Henry was pring to so foule a particide, so neither is it knowne, but that Richard might as well be flarted		Ecclefiam fauit,elatos fu Quemuis prostrauit, reg			
d.Neuft. ud. in H. 4.	or purpole, "as flarue himfeife." Mafter stow (a man for honest industry very prasificourchie) faith that king Richard was fifteene daies and nights together kept in hunger, thirst, and cold, till heedied.		Fabians English of The Church he fauoured, casti And all that would his ros	ng the proud to ground.		
lobs For-	How true that was in the circumstance, who knows? but in the point of starting hee is clearelie with Wal- Ingham: and a "Knight living about those times cal- leth it a death neuer before that time knowne in		The faid Author therefore uing the scope of those lines (Robert Fabian, obser- to dampe their force)		
88,6,200. Yorkshire 167.	England. Harding * alfo, living vnder King Edward the fourth agrees of the rumour of starving. * Master Cambden saith of Pomfret Castle, that it is a place prin- sipum eade & languing infamis. but Germes to influn-		doth vnderwrite and annex t greater diferetion then elegan But yet alas shough that this Thus doth amballish this no	cie: meeter or rime,	·	

But yet alas, though that this meeter or rime, Thus doth embellish this noble Princes same, And that some Clerke which favoured him sometime. List by his cunning thus to enhance his name, Tet by his Story appeareth in him some blame: Wherefore to Princes is surest memory, Their lines to exercise in vertuous constancie.

Chap. 14 | Henrie I III. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 51. More tart and seuere is the censure of Gower vpon

this Prince, one of whole verles * Stow gines vs thus, So God doth hate such rulers as here viciously do line.

That beautifull picture of a King fighing, crowned in a chaire of chate, at the vpper end of the Quier in Saint Peters at Westminster, is said to be of him, which witneffeth how goodly a creature he was in outward

(20) King Henry to divert the humors and eyes of the people from the remembrance of this Tragedie, prepareth now a puissance, therewith to inuade Scotland; some subject's whereof, together with their Admirall Sir Robert Logon a Scotish Knight, were taken at Sea by certaine English ships. But K. Henry may seeme to have done any thing rather, then to haue made a warre; for albeit hee did fome hurt by

Tood News.

by Betindens division.cap.13

after the King with such riches and spoiles as those Parts had afforded, returnes, His next most stored action was peaceable. For one of the house of Palur-logue, and Emperour of Conflantinople, came into Eng. land to pray some succour against the Turke, and vpon the day of S. Thomas the Apostle, was met at Blackeheath by King Henry, highly feasted, richly presented, and his charges borne till departure. But as Tileus * faith of his successe in France, verbis & *Chron de regili promisis tantum adiutus est, so here his speed was not Francoum. much better, the point of armed aides; being only

therein assisted with words and promises. (23) In a Parliament held the next yeere, * by An.D.1401 reason of the numbers of Lolards, (so called) encreasing, the punishment for them enacted, was burning. An. Reg. 2 And in the same yeere also, the Articles of peace 43.1.6.15. beeing first agreed upon betweene the two Nations, English and French (notwithstanding that they had denied to match with the young Prince of Wales. *Polya.Verg.Hif because the former marriage with Richard thriued

* wasting the Country, yet did not the Scots offer battel, and the rest will wel appear in these words of *Escius. He did small initivies to the people thereof: for he defired nought but his banner to becereted on their wals. He was ever a pleafant enemy, and did great humanity to the people in all places of Scotland where he was lodged. Finally, hee shewed to the Lords of Scotland, that hee came into their Realmerather by counsell of his Nobles, then for any hatred he bare to Scots. Soone after heereturned into England. Whether the remembrance of the curtefies shewed to his Father Duke Tohn, or the feare of his owne great state so neere to an ouerthrow by the late furious conspiracy, wrought these gentle effects, it was not long before the euent fhewed, that his providence in not creating new acerbi-

ties was therein needfull. (21) For albeit the face of England feemed fmooth yet God thrust athorne into King Henries side, when and where he little expected; for the Welf, whom former Kings of England had so yoaked, and subje-&cd, did contrary to all mens expectation, breake

the mightiest, those chiefly at whose amendment God aimes by chastisement. The original of so

* Sir East. Cooke Epift,part,

great an cuill was in the feed but little, as but this Owen Glendowr, * whom the Welfa call the sonne of Gruffith V schan, descended of a yonger son of Gruffith ap Madoc, Lord of Bromfield, was at first a Student of the common laws, and an Vtter Barifter, (but not therefore an apprentise of law, as Doctor Powell mistakes, for an apprentise of the law, is hee that hath been a* double Reader) did afterward serue the late King Richard in place of an Elquier, & was well beloued of him, but in King Henries time (re-tiring himselfe as it seemes to his Mannour of Glendourdwy, the L. Gray of Ruthen entred vpon a peece of common, which lay betweene Ruthen and Glen dowr, which Owen (despite the Lord Gray while Richard continued King) had formerly holden, though not without contention. Owen (a man of high courage, and impatient of force) armes hereupon, and encounters the Lord Gray in the field, where he

forth into open acts of hostility, vnder the conduct

of a Gentleman of that Nation furnamed Glendowr.

of the Lordship of Glendowr in Merionithshire, whose owner he was; the wrath and inflice of heauen is alwayes so well furnished with meanes to exercise

had troden law under foot fo did he also cast off loyaltie, burning & destroying the Lord Grays inheritances, and killing fundry his feruants. The King King Hearie enters North-VVales with an aduertised hereof, passeth with an Army into wales, burnes, kils, and takes such revenge as that time

scattered the faid Lords people, and tooke him prifoner, as hereafter will elfe-where bee touched. (22) It seemes herein that hee had forgotten the lawes which he had formerly studied and wherin hee had been a licentiate; for shortly after, as hee

marrie so after hee was also overthrowne by the faid Owen with the flaughter of about a thousand would permit. Meanewhile, owen (whom pride & folly armed to the farther ruine of his Country) with his truftieft friends(which were not few)withdrawes into the inexpugnable fastnesses of Snowdon, where during this tempest, he kept his head safe. Shortly

fo badly) the Lady I fabel who had beene crowned Queene of England, as Spoule of the late King, was now fent backe into France after a most princely maner, fhee being not as yet * twelue yeeres old, had The VVIII * no dowrie allowed her in England, for that the matriage was neuer confummated. Before shee was restored to her friends, the Lord Hemy Percie, before the Ambassadors of both the Nations, where they were met betweene Caleis and Boloigne, protested, That the King of Englandhis Master had sent her to be The forme of delinered to her Father cleare of all bonds of marriage, or otherwise, and that hee would take it upon his soule, that shee was sound and entire, even as shee was the same

day shee was delinered to King Richard and if any would Say to the contrary hee was ready to prove it against him by combat. But the Earle of Saint Paul laying, hee beleeved it to be true, the Lord Pereie tooke her by the hand, and deligered her vnto the Earle, and then the Commissioners of France deliuered certaine letters of receipt and acquitall. She was afterward married to Charles Duke of Orleance.

(24) Owen Glendowr perfifting in his pride and disobedience made incursions upon the English, doing them great harme, and returning himfelfe with out any; but K. Henries danger was greater at home; for treason had crept into his most secret Chamber. In his bed there lay hidden a Galtrop or Engine with three small yron pikes, long, slender and passing fharpe all of them with their points fet vpward, but (God so disposing it) the King before hee laid himfelfe downe, perceived them, and thereby avoided that hidden mischiefe, but who was actor therein it

doth not appeare.
(25) This appeares that the iplendors of his new regality had drawne vp many thicke and poisonous cloudes of enuie and practife, to darken if it were possible the farther brightnesse thereof. Neither was it long before it grew to fome extremity. For Owen Glendowr ypon the causes beforesaid, wasting the Lord Reynald Grayes lands, was encountred by him, as prefuming that Owen and his friendes might easily be ouercome, but the contrary hapned, for there in fight hee loft very many of his companie, and was himselfe taken Prisoner. This fortune made the swelling mind of owen overflow in vaine hopes, who compelling the faid Lord to marry his daugh-ter, yet obtained hee not his liberty the fooner, but died(fay *fome) in the power of Owen, if perhaps our Author militake not the Lord Gray for Edmund A.D. 1400, Lord Mortimer Earle of March, who indeed did

principall persons of Herefordshire, assembled under his conduct, to result the Wells invasions, and there also himselfe was by trecherie taken prisoner. (26) Walfingham doth " write, that about this time fundrie conspiracies were discouered in the yolke (asit were) or embrion; the whole hopes whereofrested vpon calumniations, and forgery, for

Ddddd

*Tht.

"Hall.

orber

Fab.

The la

*Sir L

* Chran pag. 567.

cipum cade & fanguine infamis, but feemes to infinuate, that some other torments were most wickedly

practifed vpon this King, as made out of the way

with hunger, cold, and vulcard-of torments. * Polydore therefore may in this bee believed, who writes of

this poore deposed Monarke, that, (which may well

eritiom in the fummer time betweene Bedford and

lours, in the shapes of armed men were controlled to iffue out of the woods at morning and at noone; laging apparition of war.

Bickleswade, where sundry monsters of divers co-

file, and were now vpon returne; Henrie Percie Earle

of Northumberland, the noble Henry Hotfpur Lord Percie his sonne, and George Earle of Dunbar (who

fled as you have heard out of Scotland) with the for-

ces of the Countries there about not meaning to let

Chap. 14. Henrie, IIIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 51. one the other in most terrible manner, but when Nero, was so backt and countenanced by the Parthi-ans, and others, * that not without much difficulthey drew neer, nothing was to be found. Of another nature were the fiery attempts of the Percies. ty the Romans could get him into their hands, The first of them who discourred in armes his mor-(34) On the other fide King Henry affailed with tall harred, was the noble Hotfpur, who (vnder *coso vnexpected ieopardies, defends his cause by letlour of the Scottish warre) made head about Chester ters, and strongly puts the blame vpon the accusers, laying, That he maruelled exceedingly, seeing the Earle of Northumberland, and Henry his Sonne had the greatest and the marches of Wales. To him (by the private of Hotspurs father,) repaires the naughtie old man the Earle of Worcefler, leaving the young Prince of part of the publike money: delivered to them, for defence Wales and the Princes houshold, ouer both which of the borders against Scotland, why they should make that a quarrell, which was a meere calumnie. And to take a-(for their better Gouernment) the King had placed him. Now was the torch of warre lighted vp, and way all pretence of feare from the Conspirators, hee began to blaze, for though the chiefe plot-mafter fends to the Earles of Northumberland and Worceffer, the Earle of Northumberland was not joined to and to the hot Lord Percie, a fafe conduct vnder his them, as hee did intend, yet were their numbers roiall Scale, by which he fecures their accesse, but vngrowne mightily, with which they meant to enter bridled rashnesse (Bith Walsingham) despising the rotall the Towne of Shrewfbury, to make thereof a Seat of clemencie, did put on the rigour of rebellion. Meane while the King armes with all foeed against the enemie, the (32) Colourable causes of their armes were the rather at the counsell of George Earle of Dunbar, who ordinarie paintings of the like attempts. Care of (like a valiant man at Armes, and a wife friend) adcommon-wealths reformation, and their owne fafeuised him so to doe, before their aduersaries numbers ties; for having first protested their intentions not to were too mightily augmented. The King with his be the breach of loyaltie, they pretend and by letters fonne the young Prince of Wales, and a very noble fencabout, doe fignifie. 1. That * the publike monit fellowship, was now advanced within fight of Shrews was not employed upon the pretended defence of the king-dome, but unduly wasted. 2. That by reason of bad bury, as the gallant Percie stood ready to assault the Towne. But so soone as the roiall Standard was distongues about the King they dust not approach him, to declare their innocency, unlesse the Prelates and Peeres of the Realme did first intercede for them. 3. That they couered, that enterprise was left off, and he drew out his people (being about fourteene thousand choice and hardie bodies of men) to try the fortune of war tooke armes onely to guard their owne heads, and to fee the against a well tride warrior. Kingdome better gouerned. These Articles had the place of the Huske, but the kernell of the enter-(35) Peace notwithstanding (by the exceeding tendernesse of the King) had ensued, but that the misprize had principallie these. I. To shruft King Hen-ry out of his seat, and consequently to deprine him of life. 2. To advance the title of the Lord Mortimer cheeuous Earle of Wortefler, by mifreporting and fal-fifying his Soucraignes words, did precipitate his Nephew into fudden battell. If there were any praife battell at Shrew Earle of March their * necreft Allie: for the Earle of or good example to bee drawne out of so detested Northumberland had married Elizabeth the daughter bloodshed, as that of einill warre, we would willingly of the Lord Edmund Mortimer the elder, Earle of describe vnto you the order and actions, but we can-March, by Philip daughter to Lionel Duke of Clanot too soone passe ouer such mournfull objects, CM areh, by Philip daughter Liberty for feeking rence. 3. To take renenge of King Henry, for feeking to drawe the chiefe benefit to himselfe of the victory at Halidowne hill, whose principall prisoners he required, and for such other private grudges. 4. To share the which are rather to bee celebrated with teares then triumphes. There is no doubt but Percie, Dowglas, and the rest fought terrible. Why should we admire that in them? So doe Lyons, Tygers, & Beares, Kingdome betweene Mortimer, Perey and Owen Glenand yet wee admire them not, Where was dutie, dower. Concerning which partition it is in some found written, that Indentures tripartite were seawhere conscience, where the other respects, of which onely we are called men ? Let none of vs honour, led, showing that South-England should remaine to Moror imitate them, in whose eyes the price of English timer, North-England to Percy, and Wales beyond Seuern to Glendower. But Archembald Earle of Dowglas blood is so vile, as that (for private fansies) they can bee content to confound all regards, and make sport (who did his Countrey good feruice by making one in our Combustions,) by common consent was alfor common foes, with mutuall massacres. Therefore wee will content our felues with the knowledge lowed for his share to be free from ransome, and to of Gods part in this daies worke, who gaue the garland to the King, though the first arrowes flew from haue Berwicke. (33 This (in our English Adages) is called to reckon without our host, or to count our chickens before they are hatched. But though at this time the Percies Archers. (36) The Kings courage was not finall in the The terrible fight as neither was the danger, the yong Prince of God would haue it fo, yet who doth not eafily fee wales also (being then first to enter himselfe into the what a wild horse a kingdome (so gotten) is, and how schoole of blood and battell,)gaue no small hopes of that perfection which afterward shone in him, being hard to fit, and not to manage onlie ? Yet it feemeth, that if Mortimer , having so iust a title to the wounded with an arrow in the face. The Lord Per-Crowne, had openlie professed the cause of his ateyand Earle Dowglas (then * whom the wide world tempt against King Henry, it might inflie hane beene exempted from all staine of disabilitie. But this had not two brauer Champions)in fleed of fpending *Thomas Wilfing themselues vpon the multitude, set the point of their Hosperre and partition is * faid to have beene wifely built vpon a hopes vpon killing the King, as in whose person they were sure tenthousand fell. For this cause they Dangles onely found Weish prophetie of Merlins : asif King Henry were the Membrane conference and Registers, were the Membrane careful of Gods worm ensuit, and Continue, Percy and Glendower, the Dragon, Lyon, and wolfe, which flouid think that Redme betweene them. Surely the Welfin hauing any hand in tich a particlen, its not likelic they could thinke it had the right most furiously rushed forward with speares and person. fwords; but the noble Earle of Dunbarre, discouering their purpole, drew the King from the place which he had chosen to make good, and thereby in likelyhood for that present saued his life, for the on, its not nece they come timine a nature right teete, if it flood not vpon the supposed Asterlass having it dictious cosenages and riddles. The English (not to be behind in leasings,) doe in the meane time every where spread that * Rithard was safe alian and in Standard royall was ouerthrowne, and (among other valiant men) the * Earle of Stafford, Sir Walter Blunt, the Kinges Knight and the Standard-bearer himfelfe was flaine, fuch was the fury of these sodaine thunthe Castle of Chester. Who can wonder that this name derbolts. That day the Dongles flew with his should be so gratious, as if alone it were enough to owne hands three in the Kings Coat-armour, (perhaps some in Heralds Coats) though * Boetsus yet have shaken Henry out of his! State ? when Ners faw a fourth. Sure it is, that manie of the subiects himselfe had so many fauorites, that twenty yeeres thought the King was flaine, and not a few * ranne Vyalfingham after his death an obscure fellow faining himselfe

Cau'es of the Lord Percies da gerous recellio

*Cambd. in Nor-

The Kingdome of England to be thated among the conspirators

The late dead King Riebard a-gaine affiifteth

VVilford a Sea

of money, but with much distast, the Peeres of the

land riling from the last Session thereof meanely

Marshall, one of the chiefe men which disliked the

carriage of publike matters, drawes Richardle Scrope

contented, as it well appeared not long after, though to the enterprifers ruine. Thomas Mombray Earle their leads,

out of the field. Who notwithstanding, like a valiant Prince, did reenforce the fight, performing maruels in armes with his owne hands. The flaughter could not be small on both sides, the Archers shooting so continually, and the men of armes doing their vtmost for about the space of three whole houres.

(37) That which gaue an end to this wofull worke was the death of Hotfor, who ryding in the head of the battell in defiance of danger and death, was (by an vnknowne hand) fuddenly killed, with whole fall (as if his whole army had had but one heart)the courages of all others fell into feete, which now altogether they trusted to. But the King abhorring to make farther execution of the milguided multitude, fuffered them to shift for themselves. The Earles of worsefter and Donglas, Sir Richard

Vernon, the Baron of Kindlaton, and diversothers were taken. Of the Kings side was slaine (besides the Earle of Stafford)ten new Knights, whose names (as dying in an honest cause) deserue immortality, and were Sir * Hugh Shorty, Sir Iohn Clifton, Sir Iohn Holinfb. p. 513. Cokain, Sir Nicholas Gausel, Sir Walter Blunt, Sir John Caluerly, Sir Iohn Massie, Sir Hugh A. ortimer, Sir Robert Gaufell, and Sir Thomas Wendesley, who dyed of lels not Gaufels, but Gentels and his hurts not long after, as most of the other did about the Standard; all which fighting for their spurs, (as being knighted but that morning) bought them with the honourable loffe of their whole bodies a there were also slaine many Esquires, & Gentlemen, and about one thousand and five hundreth common fouldiers . besides three thousand forely wounded.

On the other part, (omitting that second Mars, the Lord Percy (who drew a ruine after him surable ro his Spirit and greatnesse) there fell most of all the Esquires and Gentlemen of Cheshire, to the number of two hundred, and about five thousand common fouldiers. This battell was ftricken neere to Shrewfbury upon a Saturday, the one and twentieth of July, and the Euc of Saint Marie Magdalen,

(38) The Earle of Worcefter (the feducer and destroier of his noble Nephew Hotfpur, and therefore if but for that, very worthy to have dyed) Sir Richard Verson Knight, and the Baron of Kinderton had their heads cut off vpon the Monday following. Helfpurres body had beene buried by permission, but vpon other aduife, the King caused it to be drawne out of the graue, beheaded, quartered, and the parts sent into divers Citties of the Kingdome. The Earle of Northumberland (pretending to come with forces to the Kings aide) was empeached by the Earle of Westmorland, and Robert Waterton who had raised a great hoft. Northumberland taking neither of them for friend, wheeles about, and returnes to his Castle of Warkworth. But what can be secure to a subject against the victorious armie of a martiall King? The Earle knew as much, manifeftly feeling the irrecouerable maimes of his house in the losse of his sonne and brother, and therefore shaped his course accordingly. The King therefore being altogether as prudent as fortunate, having fetled the state ofthings in the Marches about Shrew bury , fets forward to the City of Yorke, from thence to take order for fuch perils, as he foresaw might happen. He setled himfelfe the more feriouslie and entirelie to this needfull worke; for that his Ambassadors had effected an abstinence from warre with France, till the first of March, which pauling space though it might seeme little, was not a little welcome to the King, the Realme of England being then fo full of dangerous perturbations. While hee was at Torke, he commands the Earle of Northumberland to come thither in person, which he accordingly did vpon the morrow after the day of Saint * Laurence, and that also with a small traine in the nature of an humble sutor. He could not in reason hope for the wonted familiar fauour of the King, neither had he yet, for it was accounted matter of grace, that his life was pardoned,

though his meanes and liberty was abridged, the

King allowing only necessary maintenances. The

life of Princes is like a perpetuall motion. The Northerne Countreys are now fetled, but hath the King therefore any the more reft? Nothing leffe; for Wales & the troubles thereof call him thither. What fhould he doe? Money the Cement and foldure of all fuch actions, (for Armies cannot otherwise bee held together) vtterly failes. The Archbishop of Canterbury fees the needs and vies of his Soueraigne, and like a Father supplies him with a Tenth, which the Clergy at their Metropolitans motion, consent to gine: vpon the strength whereof, the King knowes how farre hee may proceed against the Welfb in his

(39) Toward the reliefe of these his necessities, the valiant exploits of William de Wilford an Esquire, who was in the meane time abroad for the King vppon the narrow Seas, brought some assistance, certainely store of contentation; for he tooke forty lawfull prizes laden with yron, oyle, sope and Rochell wine, to the number in all of a thousand tunne youn the Coastes of Britaine, and in his returne set fortie faile on fire; and to make the Britains know that hee was not only a man of his hands at Sea, he comes on shore at Penarch, burnes Townes and houses about fixe leagues into the Countrey, and afterward did as much for them at the Towne of Saint Mathewes, which he confirmed with flames and wasted the land for three miles about. The French not to feeme flow to like mischiefes, land at the Wight, but were compelled with loffe to betake themselves againe vnto their Fleet, with farre worse successe then the Britons vnder the conduct of the Lord of Castell had not long before, who landing at Plimmouth inua-

ded, tooke and burntit. (40) The King haning humbled the Earle of A.D. 1404.
Northumberland in fuch fort as you heard, lookes areins upon him with an eye of compatision and fagaine upon him with an eye of compassion and fanour, not without a secret respect to his owne safety; and he had little appetite to augment enmities, but to allay them rather, whereas by this gratious vfage of that Earle, (for he restored him fully to all) he now thinkes those North parts sufficiently secured. This restitution was made to the Earle in the Parliament holden at London about the midst of

Ianuary, where the King obteined an vnusuall Taxe or Subfidy, of which (that it might not be drawne into example) no record, nor writing was fuffered to remaine. Some part of the gold which the king thus drew into the Efchecquor, he had occasion to bestow at this time. For there presented themselues vnto him, a boisterous troupe of plaine Western-men. The Country-men about Deri worth kill the French General who brought to the kings view three Lords, and twenty knights of note; These were prisoners, whom the Country people about Darimouth in Deuonline had gotten in plaine fight. The king was therefore given to underfland, that the Lord of Caflel the Briton, who had formerly burnt Plimmouth, thinking to doe the like at Dartmouth, came on shore with his forces, where these and the like people fiercely encountred him; at which time their women (like Amazons) by hurling of flints and pebles, and by such other artillery, did greatly advance their hulbands and kinsefolkes victory. The Lord of Castel himselfe and many besides were slaine, these other were faued as more of them might have beene, but that the ignorance of language alike confounded the cries of indignation and pitty. They there-fore in reward of this hazard and feruice, doe pray they might reape some commodity by their Captiues. It was but reason; wherefore the King, who tooke pleasure to talke with the lusty Western-men, himfelfe,causeth their purses to be stuft with golden Coyne, referring the prisoners to repay himselfe with aduantage out of their ransomes. The like good fortune against owen Glendowr and the Welsh would have gladded him indeed; but they burne and destroy the Marches, they kill and captinate the people, and partly by force, partly by fraud, get many Castles, some of which they rase, and fortisse

Owen Glendow and the Welfare walte the Mar-ches.

nd prefent the

others. Neither came these enils fingle, for the Flemings and Britons tooke certaine Merchant ships of A new falle king

England, and either flew or hung the Sailers. (41) It is more strange that King Richard was not fuffered to be dead, after he had fo long a time been buried, Serlo, who had beene a Gentleman of his Chamber, having heard that King Richard (his royall and gracious Master) was secretly abiding in Scotland, left the fauour of the French Court to fee him, but it was not worth his fo much loue and labour; for hee that bare the name, was but an Impostor. Loath yet to let the opinion die, because it might do King Henry harme; Serlo affirmes that Richard was aline. What conning madneffe is so great which hath not some great fooles or other to support it? The old Countesse of oxford (mother to the late Duke of Ireland) will needs perswade her selfe and others in Effex, that Richard was aliue: certaine it is, that flee delired it might be true. To make others more firmly belecue the same, she secretly gaue filuer and gilt Harts (the badges which King Richard

chacrea to the

Archbishoppe of Torke into a conspiracy, in ful hope that Henrie Percie Earle of Northumberland, the Lord Bardolf, the Citizens of Yorke, and the common people would affift their cause, which was glosed with the specious pretence of redressing publike abuses, hapning through the Kings default. The Earle of Westmerland hearing of this attempt, wherein the Earle Marshall and the Archbishoppe were leaders of the people, gathers a force to encounter them, but perceiving himfelfe too feeble, he betakes himfelfe to fraud, and by faining to like the quarrell, got them both into his power, and prefented them as an acceptable oblation to the King, who about Whitvied to bestow vpon his followers) as tokens. Hithereothe deuise held out, for it had no great danfontide comes to Yorke, where (albeit the Earle of westgerinit; but Serlo feeing the necessity of greater merland had promifed them their lines) aswell the Archbishoppe, as the Earle Marshall were beheaded. friends, which appeared not grew weary, and knowing that Sir William Clifford knight, Gaptaine of Ber-But the next yeere the Pope excommunicated all wicke had received fundry favours from King Richfuch as had a hand in putting the Archbishoppe to ard, hopes by him to bee furnished with money, to death. It was faid of Tiberins *Cafar in a Satyricall . Sunton Lib. 4. beare his charges out of Seotland into France. Clifford libel, -regnabit sanguine multo, farre otherwise minded, seizeth vpon serle, as a fit meanes to reconcile himself with the King, in whose

Adregnum quifqus venit ab exilio. Who, first Exil de,is after crown d, His raigne with bland will much abound.

high displeasure he stood, (for that hee had continu-(44) This the King verified in his person, who ed his charge in Berwicke contrary to expresse comcomming out of banishment, could not support his The King purmandement) and carrieth him to the King, who was then come to the Castle of Pomfret, beeing weakened with these rumors, and suspecting that the Fitle and estate, but by shedding much bloud of subjects. For not contented with those two lines, chiefe nest of danger lay in the North; whither the he pursueth the Earle of Northumberland and Lord Earle of Northumberland brought his grandchildren Bardolf with an invincible Armie of feuen and thirty (as pledges) to affure the King of his loyalty : thither thousandmen: but they vnable to make head against so mighty a force, take Berwicke for refuge. also Sir William Clifferd brings poore Serlo, who both confesseth the practise, as also that hee had a guiltie Thither the King marcheth, at the found whereof hand in the murther of the Duke of Glocester, which they both distrustfull of their safety, flie into Scotmade him farre more odious then the other forgery. land, where the Lord Flemming entertaines them. Berwicke vpon hope of fuccours out of Scotland, (which The crimes being manifest, Serlo is drawn fro Pontefratt beginning his pain, where he had his doom,& gladly nourished the English miseries, and the Engat London knits vp the Tragedie in an halter. The lish theirs) refused to render, whereupon the King Couteste of Oxford for this falshood loft al her goods plants a battering piece against a Tower in the wall; which as it threw downe the halfe thereof being moreouer committed to close prison. To with one shot, so did it quite ouerthrow all the de- The fire time make this imposture the more probable & passable, fendants courages, who prefently yeelded the place that a gunne is veed in England to proper your hard and desperate terms, for they were partly "The NV alfag." Serlo had caused K. Richards ligner to bee counterfei-

fuccesse of certain in the Parliament (held this year at Conentry & called the * lack learning Parliament, either for the vnlearnednesse of the perions, or for their malice to learned men) where, to supply the Kings wants, a bill was exhibited against the Temporalties of the Clergie; but by the courage of the Archbishop of Canterburie, (who told them, it was the enriching of themselues, not of the King, which they respected in their faerilegious petitions) and by the gracious care of the King, (who vowed to leave the Church in better flate then he found it, rather then in worfe,) their motion vanished to nothing, but the infamous memory of the attempters. It is observed, that * a Knight the chiefe speaker in this bill against the Clergy, had beene himselse a Deacon, and so himselse first aduanpeene nimicite a Deacon, and in nimicite first addanced by the Clergy. With great reason therefore did our forestanters distinguish the people into the learned and lend, inferring truely that such commonlie

were lend, who were not learned, and that lend and

wicked were but two words of one fignification, as in

this Parliament well appeared, whose Commons might

enter Common with their cattel for any vertue which

they had more then brute Creatures,

ted, wher with he scaled fundry consolatorie and ex-

hortatory letters to his friends, indited in K. Rich-

ards name; wherupon many in Effex gaue credit to

the Counteffe, & among the rest fom Abbots of that

Countie. Into this smokedid al the deuise euaporate.

(42) And no lesse smokie was both the deuise &

the aid of Owen, having well neere first lost all their The French with horses in the passage for want of fresh water. The Lord Berkley and Henrie de Pay (by what meanes to aid owns appeares not) burnt fifteen of that number in the G harbour. They made the entrance of their warre by laying fiege to the Towne of Carmarden in South-

part with bagge and baggage, was yeelded, (45) The King being againe in need of money, after long vnwillingnesse and delay, the Parliament A.D. 1406. furnished him, rather ouercome with wearinesse in An. Reg.7 contradiction, then for any great good will. Some of his treasure was employed, as it seemes, upon se-cret practises with the Seoss, that the Earle of Northumberland, and the Lord Bardolfe might bee deliuered into his hands, in exchange for some Scots;

D d d d d 2 where

hanged, and partly emprisoned. After *Berwicke was In Hen.4.

thus recourred, the king takes Alawicke, & all other

Castles belonging to the Earle, and thinking the like

happines would thine vpon him in Wales, he croffeth

ouer thither, where it fell out far otherwise, not by

the manhood of the Wellb, but by the fodaine rage of

waters which destroied his carriages and about fiftie

wains(as was faid)laden with much treasure:therfore

he returns to W'orcester. Owen Glendowr the chief cap-

tain of the Welf natio, expecting & fearing a reuenge

had before this time confederated himselfe with the

French, who in 140 hips arrived at Milford haven to

Wales, which, the Garrison being permitted to de-

(41) Twife after this, betweene Christmas and | An. 1405. Palmefunday, the King affembled the States againe: once at London, and then at Saint Alban, for the cause Marihall and Scrope Archbi-thop of Yorke rife to redrette

whereupon they fled into Wales, and the Seots miffing their purpole, flew David Lord Flemming for discouering their intention to his distressed guests, (as by the lawes of honour and hospitality he was obliged which filled Scotland with civill discords. To avoide the dangers whereof, and to better his education, the King of Scots fent his sonne and heire by sea into France, whom, together with the Bishoppe of Orkney certaine Mariners of Cley in Norfolke surprized at sea, and presented to the King, who committed him priloner to the Tower of London. Meanewhile the French profecuting their affaires in Wales, fent thither eight and thirty shippes full of souldiers, of which number the English tooke eight (the rest escaping in great feare to Wales,) and not long after other fifteene faile laden with waxe and wine. This

A.D. 1407. fortune though good, was nothing in regard of the service which Henry Pay, with certaine shippes of the Cinque Ports, and about fifteene other, exployted vpon a great Fleet, containing fixfcore

death for having in many places of London, dared fecretly to fet vp bils, containing newes that King Richard was aliue. The fearefull plague of peftilence flew multitudes of people through the Realm, chiefly in London, where, within a fhort space it defiroyed thirty thousand. That most renowned Cap-sic Rabart Knolles taine Sir Robert Knolles, who had led so many liuing men to their honourable deaths in battel, was now captined himselfe by death upon the fifteenth day of August. His fame grew principally by martiall deedes in the great warres of France, under Edward the third, but spred and setled it selfe by good workes, among which the goodly frone-bridge at Rochester in Kent was one. (46) In the meane space, the wars of Wales were

faile, whose ladings were yron, salt, oyle, and Ro-

chel wine. The same times was a felon put to

managed by Prince Henry, who tooke the Castle of Aberistwith; but Owen Glendowr Soone after got it againe by faire fraud, and thrust into it a Garrison of his owne. Thu's Owen prospered for a time; but the Earle of Northumberland and Lord Bardolf for saking wales, and seeking to raise a force in the North. were encountred by the Sherife of Torkesbire, who after a sharpe conflict slew the Earle in the field, and fo wounded the Lord Bardolf, that hee died thereof. The Earles head was cut off, which being first ignominiously carryed through London, was fixed vpon the Bridge. The King having thus vanquifhed his chiefe enemies, went to Yorke, where inquiries were made for the Earles adherents, of which he condemned, ransomed, and emprisoned many. The Abbot of Hales, because hee was taken fighting on the Earles behalfe, had sentence to die, which was executed upon him by hanging. In forraine and transmarine parts, the Kings affaires had mixt successe; for Edmund Earle of Kent, at the siege of Briant in Britaine, was strucken with a quarrell into the head, whereof hee died; but yet after he had first taken the faid Castell, and leveld it with the earth,

(47) The peace of Christendome having beene

long tempestuously troubled by a Schisme, raised

by ambition of opposite Popes, wherof the one was

chosen at Rome, the other at Autinion, by contrarie

factions of the Cardinals; A generali Councel was

fummoned to bee held at Pifa in Italie, whither the

King of England fent his Ambassadors, and the Cler-

er elected Robert Alum * Chancellour of Oxford, &

Bishoppe of Sarum, to fignific, * that whele both

the Popes would give oner their Papacie, neither of them should thenceforward be acknowledged for Pope. The

King in his letter then fent to Pope Gregory, char-

geth him (as Platina likewise doth) with Persury,

and that this Papall emulation had beene the cause

thousand Christians staine in warres. There assembled

a great number of Cardinals, Archbishops, Bishops,

and mitted Prelates, who elected a new Pope, A-

An.D. 1409. Platina

"Ygod Newl. p.566.
* Antiq.Britan.

walfag. Yestic. of the murther of * more then two hundreth and thirty

lexander 5. (a man* trained vp at oxford, where hee

tooke degree in Theologie) reieding the two o-thers, who long and bitterly had contended for the state of the Darlingent Rolling of the Darlingent Rolling of the Darling of the State of the place. The King also cals his Parliament to find out meanes for more money, to the custody and charge whereof hee ordained Sir Henry Scrope creating him Treasurer, as Thomas Beaufourt the Kings halfe brother, Lord Chancellour. In which Parliament was reuited the facrilegious Petition of spoiling the Church of England of her goodly patrimonies, which the pietie and wildome of fo many former ages had congested. But the King(who was bound by oath and reason to preserue the flourishing estate of the Church) detested their wicked propofition, and for that cause denied all other their requests. The Duke of Burgundies provisions which he had made to reduce Caleys to the French dominions,& stored at Saint Omars, were consumed with cafuall fire to afhes.

(48) About these times the great and bloudy sactions betweene the Dukes of Burgundy and Orleance brake forth. The cause was for a murther committed upon Lewis (brother to the French king, and father of the faid Duke of Orleance) as he came late one night from the Queenes lodging, who at that time lay in of a child. The murtherers*to preuent pursuit, strewed galthrops behind them. The Duke of Burgundie iustified the fact, forthat Lewis had (as hee faid)laboured with the Pope to put the King from his feat, vpon pretence that hee was as vnfit to gouerne as euer Childericke was, whom Pope Zacharie pronounced against. This prepared the way for that scourge wher with God meant to chastice the pride and finnes of France. Each partie fought to fortifie it selfe with friends, aswel at home as abroad. The Duke of Burgundie had the King and the Dolphin on his fide; the other had the Kings of Nauar King. and Arragen, the Dukes of Berrie and Britaine with many of the mightieft Earles and Lords. The Duke of Burgundie, (who together with the King and the face of gouernment, kept in Paris) perceiuing his aduerfaries ftrengthes to bee more then his owne, offers to the King of England, a daughter of France in marriage with the Prince, and many great promifes, fo as hee would io yne in defence of the King & send ouer competent forces; whereunto hee is faid to have answered: Our aduise is, that you should not in this ease aduenture battell with your enemie, who seems

perated yong man, by all the good meanes which are possible. If that cannot bee, then stand upon your guard, and draw into place of most safety, with such force of men and any interpreted more spects, with many orce of mone as may belf crue for your defence. After all this if he will not bee appealed, you may with the better conficence encounter him, and in such case wee will not faile (more fully) to assift, according as your equest. For the present he sent over the Earls of Arundel and Kyme, present he sent ouer the Earls of Arundel and Kyme, and many men of Armes, with plenty of English

Bowsman who came fife as B Bow-men, who came safe to Paris, where they in nothing diminished the ancient glory of their nation, but behaued themselues valiantly. (49) The Duke of Orleance, and the Peeres of his faction, seeing their successe, consult how to draw the An.D. 1412

King of England from their enemie, and thereupon fend ouer one Falconet and others, with folemne let- to the King for ters of credence, whom they made their irrenocable fuccount "Procurators, to entreat, agree..., and conclude, (on "The work their behalfes) with the most excellent Prince, Henry the Dukes by the grace of God King of England, and his most no-letter. "ble sonnes, &c. for the restitution and reall redelineric of the Dutchie of Aquitain, with all the rights and 'appurtenances, which (as it affirmed) are the inheri-

tance of the said most excellent Lord the King of England, by them to bee made and done, Ge. The Am baffadors having shewed forth this Proxie, exhibited Thegress offers the points of their negotiation in these Articles, by of the Orleanse faction to the which wee may fee how farre the defire of reuenge King. will transport great minds. I They offer their bodies to be imployed against all men for the service of the

An.D.1411. *,Paul.Aemyl, is The Duke of for aid to the

The Kings wife and Christian answere to the to projecute a sust renenge for the death of his Father; but abour to asswage the displeasure and anger of the exas-

King of England, fauing their faith to their owne Soueraigne, as knowing the King of England would not o-therwise desire them. 2 Their sonnes, daughters, nephemes, Necces, and all their Cofens to bestow in marriage at the King of Englands pleasure. 3. I heir Castles, Townes, treasure, and all their goods to be at the service of the Sayd King. 4. Their friends, the Gentlemen of France, the Clergy and wealthy Burgers; who are all of their fide; as by proofe (they faid) fiull well appeare, 5. They finally offer to him the Dutchy of, Aquitaine entire, and in as full a manner as ever his Predeceffors enioyned the same, without excepting any thing \ so as they themselves will hold, and acknowledge to hold their lands in those parts, directly of the faid King, and deliuer as much of them as they can into his possession, and will doe their utmost to conquer the rest for him. Vpon condition on the other fide. I. That the King of England and his Successors should assist the said Lords, against the Duke of Burgundy for the murther committed upon the

person of the late Duke of Orleance. 2. That he should assift against the said Duke of Burgundy and his fauourers, till they had repaired all the loffes which they, their friends and tenants had susteined through that ccasion. 3 . That he should help to settle the quiet of the realme . c. (50) These Offers being put into the balance with the Articles, vpon which the Duke of Burgandy had obteined succours, ouerweighed them so The King for-fakes the Duke

farre, that about the midft of August, before all those which had beene fent with the Earle of Arundel to the contrarie part, were returned into England, aydes were decreed to the Duke of orleance, to the wonder of all men, who vnderstood not the fecret, so that Thomas Duke of Clarence, Edward Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Darcet, and very many other principall men with a competent puissance were sent ouer to avde the Duke of Orleance, the Earle of Angolesme remaining hostage in England, for the sure payment of one hundred and nine thousand Crownes for performance of the other Articles : They came on thore in Normandy; but, whither the confederates moued with the perill into which their Country & Nation should by these meanes be precipitated, or for some other causes, (though none indeed so inft, as the sor-

(51) The vulgar Chronicles tell vs a ftrange

ters. The King, fay they, lying dangerously sicke.

caused his Crowne to bee set on a Pillow at his beds

head, when suddainely the pangs of his Apoplexie seizing on him so vehemently that all supposed him

The English burne and spoile in Normandy till the Duve of Or-

homines de

A.D. 1413

but vpon the twentieth day of March finished his short, but politicke and victorious reigne, in peace hauing reigned thirteene yeeres and fixe moneths wanting fine and honour, had not the injustice of his first entrance left a dishonorable stayne vpon his worthiest acti daica, faith VV elfing Story, the truth whereof must rest vpon the repor-

raigne Father to weare it your selfe; but all men deeming you were departed to inherite another Crowne, this being my right, I tooke as mine owne, but now doe acknowledge for none of mine; and thereupon he set the Crowne againe where he found it. Oh sonne, (quoth hee) with what right I got it, God onely knoweth, who forgive me the linne, howfocuer it was got, fayd the Prince, I meane to keepe and defend it, (when it shall bee myne) with my fword, as you by fword haucobtained it. Which the King hearing, hee entered discourse of aduise. flewing him that hee feared some discord would arise betwixt him and his brother Thomas Duke of Clarence, who with better respect had borne forth his youth then Prince Henry had done, and whose distemper was like to breed great troubles, if it were not in time stayed. If my brethren (quoth Henry) will be true fubicets, I will honour them as my brethren, but if otherwise, I shall alloone execute instice vpon them, as on the meanest of birth in my Kingdome. The King reioycing at this vnexpected anfwere; both prudently and Christianly charged him before God, to minister the law indifferently, to ease the oppressed, to beware of flatterers, not to deferre iustice, nor yet to be sparing of mercy. Pu-' nish (quoth hee) the oppressors of thy people, " fo shalt thou obtaine fauour of God, and loue and feare of thy Subjects, who whiles they have wealth, so long shalt thou have their obedience, but made poore by oppressions, will be ready to make infurrections. Reloyce not so much in the glory of thy Crowne, as meditate on the burthenous care which accompanieth it; mingle loue with feare, so thou as the heart shalt be defended in the midft of the body: but know, that neither row and fhame for their fo difloyall a combination with the Capitall enemies of France,) the Duke of Orleance (contrary to agreement) came not at the appointed time and place, whereupon the English burnt spoiled and tooke much riches in the Castles, Countrey and good Townes, therewith to satisfie themselues, till the Duke of orleance should see them payd. At last yet the Dukes of Clarence and Orleance came to a treaty, after which the English campe rose peaceably and marcht into Aquitaine there to winter it selfe, the Duke of Orleance returning to his owne. While these matters were in hand, the Lord of Heyle Marshall of France with many other Lords, and about foure thousand * men of armes layd siege to a certaine strong place in Gascoigne; which Sir Iohn Blunt Knight, with three hundred fouldiers not onely defended, but draue them also from the siege, taking prisoners twelve of the principall and about fixescore other Gentlemen. * The King lived not to see the carriage, and fortune of these warres, for falling ficke at Eltham in the Christmas time (at which our ancient authors begin to draw the circles of their yeeres) but recouering himselfealittle, he repaired to London about Candlemas, there to hold Parliament; the end whereof he lived not to fee,

the heart without the members, nor a King without his Subjects helpe is of any force, Lastly " my fonne loue and feare God, afcribe all thy victories, strength, friends, obedience, riches, honour and all, vnto him : and with the Pfalmift fay with all " thankes, Not unto us Lord, not unto us but to thy holy name be given the land and praise. (52) Vpon what foile these most Christian, true and excellent Councels fell, the following life will fhew, being nothing eife, but a full representation in act, of fuch things, as are here in precept only, shewing to the world how divine a beautie Christian goodnes bath.

which, his father reuiuing, foone miffed; and calling

for his fonne, demanded, what he meant, to bereauch

him of that, whereto hee had yet no right? The

Prince boldlie replied ; Long may you live Soue-

His Wines.

(53) The first wife of King Hemy the fourth, was Mary one of the daughters and heires of Humfree de Bohum, Earle of Hereford, Eßex and Northampton, Constable of England, &c. Shee dyed An. D. 1394. before he came to the Crowne.

(54) His second wife was toane, Queene, daughter to Charles the first, King of Nauarre, thee being the widow of John de Montford, Sirnamed Stream, Duke of Britaine; and died without any Children by King Henry, at Hauering in the Bower in the County of Effex 1437. the tenth day of Iulie in the fifteenth yeere of Henry the fixt, and was buried by her husband at Canterbury.

His Children.

(55) Henry, the Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornewall. Earle of Chester, and afterward King of England, whose glorious life and acts next insue. (56) Thomas, Duke of Clarence, President of

the Councell to King Henry the first (his brother,) and Steward of England. He was flaine at Beaufort in Anies without any iffue. He married Margaret daughter to Thomas Holland, Earle of Kent, the widow of Iohn Beauford, Earle of Somerfet.

(57) Iohn Duke of Bedford, Regent of France in

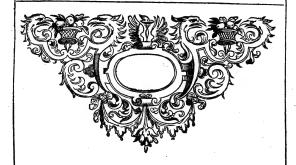
624

the time of King Henry the fixt, Duke allo of Anion and Alanson; Earle of Cenomannia, Harecourt, of Kendall and Dreux, Viscount Beaumont. He married first with Anne, daughter to John Duke of Burgundy, Secondly with I acobs, daughter to Peter de Luxemburgh Earle of Saint Paul. And died without any iffue.

(58) Humfrey, was by his brother King Henry the fifth created Duke of Gloceller, was Protectour of the Kingdome of England for 25, yeeres, in the time of King Henry the fixt, in whose first yeere hee styled himfelfe in his Charters thus : Humfrey by the grace of God Sonne, brother, and uncle to Kings, Duke of Glocefler, Earle of Henault, Holland, Zeland, and Pembroke; Lord of Friesland, Great Chamberlaine of the Kingdome of England, Protector and Defendor of the same Kingdome, and Church of England. Hee was a man, who nobly descrued of the common wealth and of learning, as being himfelfe very learned, and a magnificent Patron and benefactor of the Vniverfity of oxford, where hee had beene educated; and was generally called, the Good Duke. Hee married first Iscobs, heire to William Duke of Banaria Earle of Holland. who (as after was knowne) had first beene lawfully troth-plighted to Iohn Dake of Brabant, and therefore was afterward dinorced from the faid Humfrey. His second wife was Elianor daughter to Reginald, Baron Cobham de Searborough. Queene Margaret, wife to King Henry the fixt, repining at his great power in swaying the King & state, secretly wrought his ruine, hee being murthered in his bedat Burie, dying without any iffue, 1446. His body was buried at Saint Albans, yet the vulgar error is that he lyes buried in Saint Pauls.

(59) Blaunch married to William Duke of Banaria, and Emperour.

(60) Philip married to Iohn King of Denmarke and Norway.



HENRIE

ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Chap.15 | Henrie V. Monarch 52. 1

HENRIE THE FIFTH, KING OF Monarch 52 ENGLAND, AND FRANCE, LORD

OF IRELAND, THE TWO AND FIFT IETH MO-NARCH OF ENGLAND, HIS RAIGNE,



CHAPTERXV.



Mongst the many Monarchs of this most famous Empire, none is found more complete with all heroicall vertues then is this King, of whose life by order and successe of flory wee are now to write; which is Henry of that name the fifth, the

renowne of England, and glory of Wales. Of whom, what was spoken of Titus in the flourishing times of the Romans, may for the time of his raigne be truly verified in him: both of them being the louely dar-lings, and delightfull ion of Mankind. But as Titus is taxed by his story-Writers, in youth to have been riotous, profule, waltfull and wanton, for which (as he faith) with the diflikes of men he flept into the throne; to if wee will beleeue what others have writ, Henry was wilde whiles hee was a Prince, whose youthfull prankes as they paffed with his yeers, let vs haue

leage here to rehearfe, and leage them motiges to our owne vie as hee made them for his.

(2) His birth was at Monmouth in the Marches of wales, the yeer of Christs assuming our fiest, 1388 Edw. Hale and the eleventh of King Richards raigne, his father then a Subica, and Earle of Derbie, Leicester; & Lin- Hemy borne colne, afterwards created Duke of Hereford, inright a Acomount in of his wife, then of Lancafler, by the death of his father; and lastly by election made the Soueraigne of England, (that vnfortunate Richard) being deposed the Crowne. His mother was Mary lecond daughter and coheire of Hamfrey Bahun Earle of Hereford . and Northampton, high Constable of England, *as we *Recor of Tower

hane faid. (3) His young yeeres were spent in literature in the Academie of Oxford, where in Queenes Colledge he was a Student under the tuition of his uncle Henry Beauford, Chancellour of that V ninerfity, afterwards Bilhoppe of Lincolne and Winchester, and last ly made Cardinall by the title of Eufebius. But his Father obtayning the Crowne, and himfelfe Educati

Ccccc 2

a father, the suspition of disloyalty, and disulged And for a further testimony of his tender and comreports of my dangerons intendmentes towardes your royall Person and Crowne, hath enforced at passionate heart, the slaughtered body of K. Richard ouer-meanely enterred at Langley, in great estate he this time, and in this manner, to present my selfe and life at your Maiesties dispose. Some faults and remoued into Saint Peters Church at Westminster, and there laid him enshrined by Queene annehis first "mispent time (with blushes I may speake it) my wife (as himfelfe had defired and prepared) foun-"youth hath committed, yet those made much more by such sleering pickthanks, that blow them stronding a weekely memoriall to bee celebrated, and fix shillings eight pence thereon distributed vnto the "ger into your vnwilling and distastine care. The poore, and yeerelie twentie pounds given vpon his name of Soveraigne ties alleagiance to all, but of a Rob, Fabian. anniuersarie day, besides foure tapers to burne be-"Father, to a further feeling of natures obedience; fore his monument day and night for eyer. And fo "fo that my finnes were double, if fuch fuggestions neerely did his death touch this innocent King, that possessed my heart: for the Law of God ordayhee sent to Rome to bee assoyled from that guilt of neth, that he which doth presumptuously against his fathers Act, by the Popes holinefle, then acthe Ruler of his people shall not live, and the child counted another God; whose penance enjoined, he Deut.17.12. [that fmiteth his father shall die the death: so farre willinglie performed, and afterwards purposed to therefore am I from any difloyall attempt, against haue made warre in Palestina against the enemies of the person of you my Father, and the Lords an-Christ; for which end, hee lent Sir Hugh de Laury "nointed; that if I knew any of whom you floode of Henault to Ierusalem, to discouer the state of things in the least danger or feare, my hand according to there, but before his returne he was departed to the "duty shoud be the first to free yoursuspition; yea heavenly terufalem himfelfe. " I wil most gladly suffer death to ease your perplex-(12) The obsequies of his Father being solemni-Vpon Trinky Sunday. "ed heart; and to that end I have this day prepazed at Canterbury, and the King in person attending "red my felt, both by confession of my offences past. the Corps, fitte occasion was given vnto Archbithoppe Arundell to complain of the Wickliftans, (then bill det Belife, "and receiving the bleffed Sacrament, Wherefore I "humbly befeech your Grace to free your suspicion termed Lollards) great rubs in the wayes of the Clerfrom all feares conceined against mee, with this gies pride and proceedings; whereof Sir tohn Old-"dagger, the stabbe whereof I will willingly receive eastle was thought a chiefe, who by his marriage con-"here at your Maiesties hand, and so doing, in the presence of these Lords, and before God at the day tracted with a kinfwoman of the Lord Cobhams of Cooling in Kent, obtained the title thereof, a man " of judgement, I clearely forgine my death But the ftrong and valourous, and in especial fauour with King melting into teares, cast downe the naked his Prince. This Knight in their Synode affembled dagger(which the Prince deliuered him) and raising at London, immediately after the Kings Coronatis his proftrate sonne, embraced and kissed him, conon, was accused by them to haue rent Christs seamefessing his eares to have beene ouer-credulous that leffe coat, in maintaining VV ickliffer doctrine to bee taught, especially in the Diocesse of London, Rocheway, and promifing neuer to open them againe against him. But the Prince vnsatisfied, instantly fler, and Hereford: against whom also some choise Fex in Acts and Inquisitors at Oxford, appointed for Herefies (though operation of the whole Vniuersity had formerly vpheld both Tais defired, that at least his accusers might be produced, and if conuicted, to receive punishment, though not Wiekliffe and his doctrine,) informed and presented to the full of their demerites; to which request the King replied, that as the offence was capitall, fo his name with two hundred forty fixe conclusions The Otterhers should it bee examined by the Peeres, and therefore which they had collected to be hereticall. willed him to reft contented vntill the next Parlia-(13) The King incensed (by the Archbishoppes ment. Thus by his great wildome he fatisfied his Thom, Walfing. fuggestions) against these discontented discipliners, father from further suspition, and recourred his loue that neerely was lost. Hetherto of Hemy as he was was further made beleeue that they themselues had fet vp billes in divers places, threatning that an hun-Prince (some other of whose youthly actions we aldred thousand persons were ready for armes, against fo touched in his fathers raigne) and now to his Acts all that withstood their reformation, and among after he was King.
(11) Henry ordained fucceffor, and ouerfeer of thefe that Oldeaftle his Knight was reputed the chiefe. The King graciously inclined, heard the Archbi-Ex Retord. his dying Fathers Testament, had in his entrance so shops complaint, and being at Kennington promi-fed to conferre with the Lord Cobham himself, which fortunate proceedings, as hee feemeth to exceed all his Predecessors; his Nobles proffering the oath of accordingly hee did, inftantly willing him to fubmit their Alleagiance, before himfelte had made his for himselfe to the censure of the Church and obedience the just gouernment of the Common-weale, which so of the Archbishoppe: but Cobham, no turne coate farre was from acceptation, that hee defired God ne-uer to admit him to the Crowne, vnlesse he should from his profession, humbly told the King he owed his subjection only vnto his Maiesty whom God had to his glory raigne, and rule the Scepter to the good of the Subject. The day of his entrance and of his Fathers death, being the twentieth of March, and placed in thefe his Dominions, as his onely vice-gerent to gouerne his people and Subjects, and that himselfe forced nothing Romes leaden sword, vnsheayeere of Christs Incarnation, according to our account, 1412. on the ninth of Aprill following hee thed by the Pope (that Antichrift) against the Lords feruants, nor would fuffer the key of Canterbury to An.D. 1413. was solemnly crowned at Westminster, Thomas Arun-del Archbishoppe of Canterbury performing the roiopen the closet of his conscience, where the spirite of God was reliding, bearing witnesse with his, that hee stood in the truth, for whose defence as his Chamall Ceremonies: which no fooner was ended, but to beginne a good government, hee beganne with pion, he was ready to line or die. himselfe, banishing from his presence and Court the (14) This answere received, was so delivered unbridleled youthes which had beene his conforts. vnto the Archbishoppe, with power to cite, exacommanding them either to change their manners. mine and punish, as their owne Canons in such caor neuer to approch within ten miles where hee lay. fes had decreed. The Lyon thus laid for, whose paw they ftill feared, was ferued by proceffe to ap-Then chose hee worthy and prudent men for his Titus Liuš. The Walfing. Councell of Estate, and advanced his Clergie with digpeare in the Archbishops Court, and the same delinity and power: being himselfe as zealous in denouered by one Butler a seruant of the Kings Priuy Acts and Mone tion, as liberall in building, and indowing of places Chamber, forthat the bold Sumner durft not doe for denotion of others. His lustice was found of ir himselfe, and the Archbishoppe (diligent lest he should forget the day) caused his letters citatorie all that fought it; for every day after dinner for the pace of an houre, his sustome was to leane on a cushion set to be fet youn the gates of the Cathedrall Church by his cupbord, and there himselfe received petitions of of Rochester, which were presently tornedown and the oppressed, which with great equity he did redresse. others againe fet vp, were againe pulled off, to the

Job, Stow.

Chap.15. Henrie V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 52.

626		CESSION OF Monarch 5	1. Book.	9	Chap.15	Henrie V.	ENGLANDS	MONARCHS.	Monarch 52.
	great offence of the Clergies eye, and the rather, for that the Actor could not be knowne. The Knight	Halidon) the king restored him not only in bloo and to grace in his Court, but also innested his pe		-1		" the title of Pepine,	the Claime of Capet, the poffer-	(if a daughter or the form	dved) belonged onely
Ouldeaftle pre	not appearing (as knowing their malice and his own	fon with the Title and State of his Grandfather,	-		į		of the French Kings themselues ue their onely rights from the	vnto him as the next in	blood. The state thus
nounced and	danger) was condemned of contumacie, and after- wards in a Synode at Rochester, was by the Archbishop	his owne no little honour, and faithfull fernice area	i-			" heires female, an	d that this pretended Law Sali-	flanding, and a daughter bo proclaimed King, no othe	rright allegoed then this
Tho waif.	pronounced an Heretike, where himfelfe then enti-	ned of that honourable family. (17) Vpon Archbishop Arundels death, sta				" aue was but a fhif	ting denife to debarre the Eng-	foifted and falfely termed f	undamentall law Saliane.
Antiq.Britan.	cted that hereticall decree, that the haly legistures	ued by famine as wee hane faid * Henry Chickeles	2 Honry Chicheley	,	1	" lifh Kings from th	ne claime of the French Crown. howsoeuer they pretend to bee	for no otherwise doth other	man the French famous
- 1	Joouta not bee translated into the Enolish tongue But	flout Champion also against Wieliffes doctrine, wa	s fhop of Canter		1	" right, yet the law	of God (faid he) hath made it	Lawyer efteeme of that ve nance, if any such had been	igodiy and viiiiit Ordi- icordained.
Ex libro	marke the judgement that fell vpon his own tongue, whose rootes and blade shortly after (as is recorded)	with the Kings confent, by the Monkes of Canterbu, elected their Archbishop, which the politicke Elec	oary.		i	" meere wrong, wh	ich with better regard of the Sex	(22) The Kingsrightt	hus apparant, and fuffici-
Wigork,	grew to big in his mouth and throate that he could	neither accepted nor refused, but left it to the wi			1	" alloweth the won	nan to inherite her fathers pol-	ent possessions to be had in	France: the Bill of com-
Archbithop -	I neither ipeake nor Iwallow downe mean but in bor	and picalure of the Pobe: who helt tooke for the the	+ 1	5	1	" of Christ himfels	the practife of that state, where- ic is called king, where the fine	plaint against the Clergies and all mindes addicted to	excelle was quite daller,
1	ror lay languishing, till lastly he so dyed started by	If to faire proceeded without his direction w	- 1		l	" daughters of Zelop	phehad for want of heires males ,	thinking it vnreasonable	to pull the Pronitions
*See it in Fexa Mattytologie	(15) In the meane time the Lord Cobham wrote	was soone pacified by Chicheleys submission, and (a faith mine Author) with other Gratulations beside			Numb.27	were admitted to	o fucceed in their fathers inheri-	from their natiues and bret	hren, when as the Circuit
marryrologie	his bettere, which was very Christianlike and pre-	I he man though not to rich by hirth as drawd	la 1		Numb.17-		min the Tribe of Manasses; and Lord himselfe, that if a man di-	of their inheritance extend paffe; and therefore with the	ded more large in com-
- 1	fented it himselfe to the King, who (being much pre- possessed) in no wise would receive it, but suffered		-		1		mes, then his inheritance should	ned no longer to fit fo pent	with increase decing God
- 1	I DIM to bee immoned in his prefence and prints	ous with his Prince as the sequele proued. (18) The first affaics of both was made known	_			" be transferred vpc	on his daughters. Neither is it to	had given them another K	ingdome, but would free
The offers of	Chamber, when the Knight for his purgation offered				An addition.	" be doubted but t	hat the daughter of Shefbam was	their own ftraitnesse by di	nt of fword, and spread
1	an hundred knights and Equires, which would not be accepted; then, according to his degree of Order,				į	" without iffue mal	her fathers patrimony, he dying exthough thee married an Egyp-	their Tents wider in the Co	more forceable in confe-
- 1	and law of Armes, he required the finale Combar to	Lands given to religious houses and spiritual per fons for devotion were either superfluous, or disor			1,Chro,2,34.	" tian, whose poster	rity had their possessions among	rence, then was the fucceffe	
1		Qcriv Dcnt : whole renember / if become malaised	N I		10,110,1-341	". the Tribe of Iuda	b cuen to the Captinity of Babi-	ces, who affaied the Crow	ne by that vniuft claime
1	then in the quarrell of his faith, the King and Councell onely excepted. This notwithstanding could	would thinke for the defence of the land and hono	- 1		1	"no fuch better we	a law were, as in truth there was re the breach by the warrant of	of law Salique. (23) For did not the fw	ord of Cod /washon shop
1					1	"diuine direction,th	en the continuance by colour of	man) in the hand of King	Edward the claimer cut
- 1	the Archbillion his Indge-uphere of or divisor are	fixe thousand two hundred Esquires, and one hundred Almes-houses, for the reliefe of impotent and			1	" fuch prescription,	feeing God hath ordained afwell	downe the flower of France	e in the Battell of Crecie,
Rob. Fabian.	nations (in all which hee most religiously instified himself & his profession) he was condemned of Hore-	uncated perions, and vnto the kings Coffee twons	.		1	for the daughter a	is for the fonne. chbishops vnexpected but not	with the flaughter of Len	is King of Bohemse, of
- 1	Use, and committed Priloner unto the Tower of re-				1	vnpremeditated Or	ation thus ended, so stirred the	Charles the French Kings be of Viennois, the Dukes of L	ortaine, or Tames Delphin
1		made the fat Abbats to sweat, the proud Priors to frowne, the poore Friers to curse, the filly Numers to	•		1	blood of the young	Couragious King, that his heart	Earles of Aumarle, Sauov. e 2	Conthilliard Flanders Ni.
1					1		and so tickled the eares of his	uers and Harecourt, the Gr.	and Priour of France, the
Touching Out	fpecially of the Clergy, the causers of his troubles, and mortall Enemies to him & his welwillers, for the king				1 .	Auditory,astney pr	efently conceined that France was le whereof defeen ding from 1/a-	Archbishop, and Zanximus a rons, and Gentlemen to the	nd Noyone, of Lords, Ba-
from Treefon	was confidently (but as it seemeth malitiously) infor-	(19) To stop the breach of which searchin spring, no better meanes could be found, then to d	3		1	bell, the mother of	the famous third Edward, and	thousand of the French So	puldiers, and Philip nor
from Treason, fee Foxes defen against Cope in Marsytologie,	med; that Oldcafile with his adherents laid for his life,					fhee the daughter a	nd furutuing heire vnto Philip	able of himselfe to defend h	imfelfe,inciting David of
Martytologie.	& that in S. Giles Fields neere vnto Holborne twenty thousand were to assemble in hostile manner, with an	I dille other projects into the kings minde. who			1	the faire; his right	was lineally deriued thence as ip by Joane his first wife incitu-	Scotland to inuade and weal	con England, therein did
1	intent to destroy the Monasteries of Washington Coins				1	led Oueene of Nan	sarre, had three sonnes and one	but only vexe his owne fp the Scottish King was taken	prifoner and brought fo
i		" had the best right to the Crowne of France: So not onlie the Dutchies of Normandy, Aquitaine and Agricus the Court			1	daughter, namely L	ewis, Philip and Charles, all three	to London, leaving Philip to	oftruggle with his hard
1	thedrall Church of Saint Paules. The King there- fore in person himselfe after midnight with a great				1	fuccessively Kings,	and this Lady I fabell, by whom	fortunes in France, which w	rith bad fucceffe hee did
1					i		his fecond wife was Constance e King of Sicil, who bare him a	to the day of his death, (24) Iohn his sonne by	the fame title and claime
Iohn Scow		" detained) inheritance; but therewithall the whole Realme of France, as true heire vnto his great		1.1	Lewis Harine.	fonne after his own	e decease which sued not many	felt the fame stroake of justi	ce from the hand of that
1	feeke the Lord Californ But as the and they came to				Linya manat.	daies after his fath	cr. Lewis his eldest sonne and	thunderbolt in warre Edwa	ard furnamed the blacke
1	from more ancient times hath observed, that in				1	tenth of that name	fucceeded Philip in the King- by Margaret his wife the daugh-	Prince, the fonne of England riour to the French in numb	ds Mars, who farre inte-
Ithn Fex in Ac		" faid French king. As for the land filling of the		\$ \$ \$	1	ter of Burgundy ha	nd his daughter tane intituled	in marshall power, when	
*then called Thulet fields,	wife they could not enjoy. Granted, which other-		The Law Salique.		1	Queene of Nanarre	, who made claime also vnto the	the French royall Standard	was stroke downe, an
Thicket fields.			1 1		1	French Crowne, bu	nt neuer attained it; so that her death. Lewis by his second	hundred Enlignes wonne b ble, Marshall and great Chai	y the English the Consta-
1		king Charles the green who Sala conquered by	1 1		1	wife Clemence of Sici	L, had a fonne named I ohn borne	fifty two Lords and scuent	een hundred Gentlemen
1	agodly man their Preacher, without any intent of treason, having for their Chieftaines no greater persons then Sir Research Chieftaines no greater		touchedthe		1	vnto him, but prefe	ently both father and fonnede-	flaine in the field. King I	ohn himfelfe, hisfonne
1			Geymanı.	1.7		parting this life,	left the Scepter to his fecond	Philip, two Bishops, thirte	ene Earles, and one and
*See Fox at		" fallly expound for the what I have the Gloffe did	1 1		1	wore the Emperial	e name of <i>Philip</i> the fift, a while Crowne of <i>France</i> : his wife was	thirty Lords taken prifone great praife and confirmati	on of his inflicance
large.	could not be found though the Vine Lord Cobham		1 1		1	Iane the daughter	of Burgoine, who bare vnto him	(25) Nor was the pur	ishment of the fathera-
1		"the contrary, by many experiences both in king			1	only foure daughte	rs.	ny whit leffened in King	Charles the fonne then
	befides many liberties to the City or Towne, that	heire Generall (as de Cond.) Control of			1	(21) Vnto Kir	ng Philip succeeded his brother fourth of that name, whose first	raigning, who besides the in dominions was by Gods in	
Tpodig Neufl.	he shelled that them late very (laith Walling:) it may		Their claiming		1	wife was Blanch .	detected of incontinency and	to a Lunacy, being vnabl	e to gouerne himfelfe
1	ced his apinione milial days a my gaome, well neere, embra-		by the lame		1	brought him no fre	ite, his second wife was Marie	much leffe his Kingdome, v	pon which aduantage(as
1	ty scauen of that assembly were condemned, where-				1	daughter to Henry	Luxenbourg the Emperour, who at dyed foone after birth, and	the French would haue it) though it be most certaine	King Henry now plaied:
		tarke naught derined him 646-					st dyed soone after birth, and shortly came to her graue. Mar-	otherwise, for so it standed	
The west	and war were likewise executed.	"dy Lingard, daughter to Charlemaine, fonne to			1		to the Earle of Eureux, was his	ninth of February and fi	rft of Henry the fift his
The Walf, Bithops of Saint Daniels	ded for his fauours towards his Clergy, fo is his					third and last wife,	, who at his death hee left with	raigne, that he sent his Amb	affadors vnto the French
Daniar.	Princely pittic in the commiferation of young Per-	" the heirero the wint par that Garage Who was			1	Child, and thus the	three sonnes of Philip were bran- lied, whom Queene Isabell their	King, who could not bee a	amitted to his preience,
[bury (as we have (aid) and hard the first				1.	fifter furnined, and	in that right her sonne King Ed-	was by the French committ	ed to Prison : whereat
1	fent into Scatland for Gonnie		1		1	ward the third, by	his royall confanguinity whilft	King Hemy most justly cone	ciued a grudge, Paulus
1	ding deteined a Prifoner, for that Iames their King	"I pinstructed that Ifabell his Grandmother was a lineally descended of the Lady Ermengard daughter to the lady Ermengard da			1	the Crowne stood	thus at suspence, till a Prince	Emilius their owne Story	writer faith, that Henry
1	was forcibly kept in England by Henrie, and as they tooke it against all Instice. But fit occasion being				1	regress and in the	aimed to be Regent in the Inter- nonage of the looked for iffue,	King of England Sent honorab	erine daughter unto the
1					1	against which, Phili	ip de Valois sonne of Charles the	French King: which (as he fa	ith) was neglected with
1					1	hardy, who was br	other to Philip the faire, being a	this answere, that the King h	ad no leafure to thinke on
1	basy (who had been etaken prisoner at the Battell of	"fored to the Crowne of France. Whereby (laid the Archbishop)it most manifestly appeared, that				rhe blood of France	Hugh Capes, and first Prince of maintained that the Regency of	that bufine fe: whom Francise inlarge, laying, the King see	us kojienius doth tutther
		the				themale (if so he w	ere borne) as also of the Realme	that France was neither destit	ute of Dukes, nor hee at
		the			1	1 , "			ece leafure
						1 2			

fearing to nourish a snake in his bosome, King Hen-

ry forbad the French from all preferments Ecclefia-

flicall, and those Priors Aliens conventual, who had

institution and induction, to put in security, not to

disclose, or cause to be disclosed, the counsell nor le-

crets of the Realme: and that the French might

granted and appointed, Searchers.

To put back the Scots, Sir Robert V infreuile was sent

who in a skirmish vpon Mary Magdalens day tooks

amounted to of

552

Chap.15. Henrie V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 52.

and piteous grace, thinking yet will of your great goodnes

my Leige Lord : my full trust is that you will have con-

sideration (though that my person be of none valew,) your

high goodnesse (where God hath set youin so high estate)

nggo genanesse (were com musico) promo positive to enery Leigenman, that you longeth, plent, only to give; that you like to accept this my simple requell for the love of our Lady, and the blessed holy Ghoss, to whom I pray that

they moneyour heart ener to all pittie and grace for their

high goodnes. Notwithstanding this his humble peti-

tion vpon the fixt of August following, hee, with

Scroope, and Grey, were beheaded, and his body with

head enterred in the Chappell of Gods-house in South-

hampton; whose apprehentions, arraignements, and

deaths, were so followed each after others, as the

couer his right, making Proclamation yoon paine of

death, that Churches should be spared from all vio-

lence of spoile, that Churchmen, women and Children,

fhould not be hurt, abused or wronged : then gining

and courage, which done he tooke the hill neere ad-

ioyning, and thence fent his spiall to the Towne of

Harflew, making that the first aslay of his fortunes

in France. But before we enter any further discourse.

in the affaires of that Kingdome, it shall not be amisse

to speake of things commenced in England before

nine yeers, and now growne invollerable, through the schismatical ambitions, maintained by three Pa-

pall Monarchs, mounted into Saint Peters feate, each

of them grasping the Chaire with so fast a fift, that

the toints thereof were forced afunder; and the tri-

ple Crowne fo battered with their thunderbolts

of their curses that it was flatted and made vnfit

for any of their heads. The persons arreared were

gery 12. whom the French had fet vp; and the 3, was

Benedict 13. preferred to the place by the Spaniard.

These striuing for the helme, the ship was so steered,

that her wracke was apparant vpon these raging and

vinquiet Seas. To preuent which the Christian

Princes put their helping hands, and by a generall

confent, ordained a generall Councell to bee held at

fnops, one hundred and fixty Bishops, Princes, Barons

and Gentlemen with their attendants aboue thirtie

that King Henry tooke to the Seas.

lous defire.

hold his dealings honourable, and open, hee fent Antilop his purseuant at Armes, vnto King Charles with letters of defiances: next making Queene Ioan his mother in Law the Regent of the land, he drew his forces vnto Southampton, commaunding his followers there to attend him in readinesse by the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist ensuing.

(30) Charles the French King expecting present

inuation, fent his Ambaffadors vnto John the fixt Duke of Britain, who had married his daughter with an hundred thousand Crowns to leuie forces for his aide, and a Iewell worth fine thousand Crownes more to himselfe, which the Duke promised to come in person to performe. And as it is reported. King Charles sent to Scrope, Grey and Cambridge (all An ancient three in especiall fauour with the King) a million of gold to betray Henry into his hands, or to murther him before hee should arrive in Normandy. These to make their faction ftronger, though Scroope was Lis Linius Lord Treasurer, Grey a Prinie Councellour, & Cambridge the sonne of Edmund Duke of Yorke, meant to

draw in, Edmund Earle of March the sonne of Roger

Mortimer, and lineally the heire vnto Lionell Duke

of Clarence, the next in succession for the house of

Yorke, and reuealing their intended purpole, forced

him to sweare to their secresse, which if hee refused

(31) The parties apprehended and brought

Job Stow.

H. Enfe.

Lit, Original,

they threatned his death; whereupon he required but an howres respite, which hardly granted, he went to the King and renealed the conspiracie, even the night before the day that hee meant to put to fea.

before him in presence of many nobles, King Henry thus spake; With what horrour O Lord may anie true English heart consider that you for pleasing of "a forreine enemy, should imbrue your hands in "our blood, as also in the blood of our brethren. "to the ruine of your owne native foile! revenge herein touching my person though I seeke not; "yet for the fafegard of you my deare friends, and

"and office to minister remedy against these Offen-"ders; Get you hence therefore you miserable "wretches to receive the just reward of your de-"ferts, wherein God gine you repentance for your fo foule finnes. (32) Notwithstanding this their offence, their

"for due preservation of the Realme, I am by place

inditement as it frandeth in the Record, includes matter of other quality : that, Richard Barle of Cambridge of Conesburgh in the County of Yorke, and Thomas

Grey of Heton in the Countie of Northumberland Knight, for that they in the twentieth of Iuly and third of King Henry the fifts raigne, at Southampton had conspired together with a power of men, to have lead away the Lord Edmund Earle of Marchinto Wales, and to have procured him to take the Government of the Realme, in case that King Richard the second were dead; with a purpose to have put forth a Proclamation in the name of the faid. Earle as heire to the Crowne, against King Henry by the name of Lancaster vsurper, and surther to have convayed a Banner of the Armes of England, and a certaine Crowne of Spaine fet upon a Pallet (layd in gage to the fayd Earle of Cambridge) into Wales; As also that the said conspirators had appointed certaine into Scotland, to bring thence one Trumpington, and another resembling in Shape, fanour, and countenance, King Richard. And Henrie Scroope of Masham in the Countie of Yorke was likewife indited as consenting to the Premisses. Thus well appeared their purpose, though Richard Earle of Cambridge, confidering the possibility of his owne iffue had fecretly carried that bulineffe : whose forrowfull letter of his owne hand writing, as it came to

ours, we thinke not amiffe here to infert. Most dreadfull and Soueraigne Liege Lord, I Richard Torke your humble subject, and very Leigeman, beseech you of grace, of all manner of offences which I have done or affented unto, in any kind by stirring of other folke, eg-

to your Highneffe, befeeching you at the reverence of God,

that you like to take mee into the hands of your mercifull

ging me onto, wherein I wot well I have highly offended

thonfand.

(35) Vnto this Councell King Henry fent Rich-ard Clifford Bishop of London, Robert Halam Bishoppe of Sausbury, made Cardinall, and diedar the fame Councell, John Keterich, Bishop of Couentree and Lichfield, Nicholas Bubwith Bishop of Bath and Wels, John Wakering, Bishop of Norwich, Robert Mafeall, Bishop of Hereford, Stephen Patrington, Bishop of S. Davids: the Abbot of Westminster, and Prior of Worsefter, in company of whome, and for whose greater

French knew not, but that the treason had successe, and their returned Ambassadours told it for certaine, that King Henry had either dismissed his Army of (which was thought more true) himfelfe was flaine by the Conspirators; so case an entrance hath babling report into the wide cares of credu-Harding 1500. Job. Stow. 1600. Holinfh. 1000. Grafton.140. Ould-Manufer. (33 But King Henrie now ready to embarke his men, vpon Wednesday the seauenth of August with fifteene hundred Saile tooke to Seas, attended

with fixe thousand speares, and twenty foure thoufand footmen belides Gunners, Enginers, Artificers Cartent 100. and Labourers a great number, and the fifteenth of Nichol Giles. the same month cast Anchor in the mouth of Segne,

at a place called Kideaux, about three miles from Harflew, where he landed his men; and falling de-

uourly ypon his knees, defired Gods affiftance to re-

the order of Knighthood to many of his followers Titus Link. hee affigued his Standards to men of most strength

(34) The Churches throughout Christendome, having beene disquired the space of twentie and History. Positif.

John 23, by the Italians elected; the fecond was Gre- Platina.

Constance in Germany, which began in February 1414 and continued about the space of three yeeres; Wiest Do-lise whereunto were assembled besides the Emperour felder Print. Nicol. Doelien i Theatro Vanes the Pope and the Palfgraue of Rheine, foure Patriarks, twentie seauen Cardinals, forty seauen Archbi-

630	Henry V. THE SVO	0	CESSION OF Monarch 51.	Book.
	honour, Richard Earle of Warmicke was fent, them-		Sea, his horses, munition, and victuals all brought	:
	felues and arrendants amounting to eight hundred	1	a shore, with his whole armie, the King marched vp	1
	horfe : fo as it ftood in fuspence whether their hono		the hil, and from the height presented himself before	1
	rable prefence more graced the affembly, or their		Harflew. His brother Clarence hee fent with cer- taine Regiments of horse and soote, to lodge vpon	1
	the Councell: infomuch that two of these Bishops		the other hill, which before he could approach, (by	1
	were there made Cardinals, and of the thirty in bef	Ė	reason of the nature of the ground and way) hee was	I
	elteeme appointed to alsoft the Cardinals in their E.	-	forced to march fullie nine miles : which hill attai-	
	lection of a new Pope, London , Couentree, Bath, and	1	ned, he commanded his fhips to cast anchor as neere	
	Well were choich, wherein Robert . Billion of London	4	the Towne as with lafety they might, whereby the	
	was hirst nominated for Pope, and he first nominated		place became befreged both by land and Sea, then	
	min that fucceeded, which was othe Collowna by the	1	niounted he his Artillery, began his mines, brought	
La mor,des Liftor	name of Martin the fift, Whole Coronation		his workes close to the Counter-scarfe of the dirch,	1
upor.	with great magnificence was celebrated of the fluo		prepared faggots to fillit, and presently wanne the	
	nations affembled, and this honour given to the		Date 1 owne.	
	English that the Prior of Saint Johns was a supported of the triple Crowne. Touching the decrees that		(40) Within the Towne it selfe Mounsieur Gra-	Le tiers de conque
	this Councell enacted, let it suffice vs to know that	1	court was Generall accompanyde with Gwylwy de	
Wical Darlie	Wieliffes bookes were condemned for herericall, that		Stonteuile Chastellaine de Beauuais Lionet de Brueque- mount and others to the number of an hundred	1
Cical Doglia. Sebaß. Munster	Iohn Hu (notwithstanding the Emperours fafecon-		Knights and Squires, who with the Townef-men	
	duct) and I erome of Prage, were both of them burned,		iffued out of the Belife woon that quarter where	1
	the holy maide Bridget canonized a Saint, and	1	iffued out of the Bastile, vpon that quarter where Huntington, and Cornvall lay, by whom with losse	ł
	that England was made a nation in rancke before	1	on either fide, they were beaten backe, the gates fi-	1
	Spaine.	1	red, fome breaches made, and fireworkes shot into	1
	(36) The deaths of these two dinines manie		the streetes, to no little annoyance of the besieged; but	1
	lamented, especially the Bohemians, who had reaped	1	nothing difmated them more, then did the Mines	Tiene Linine
	much fruite from the feed they had fowen, for whole		made vinder the wals: against which though they	1
	doctrine they fent a defence vnto the fame Councel,		within countermined, and came to fight hand to	}
	and often became humble Petitioners for their		hand with the beliegers, yet they law it little pre-	
oxin Acts and	liues, as largely appeareth in their letters written on		uailed, the wals being ready to fall, and such batte-	
fonuments.	their behalfe; in whom may truly bee verified that the blood of the Martyrs is the feed of the Church,	1	ries therein already made, as they well perceived K.	
	which fo increased in the parts of Bohemia that Pope		Henry was resolued to carry the towne by affault:	
	Martin fearing all would be mard (Zifes the fourge	ı	wherupon Monfieur de Gracourt forefeeing the emi-	
	of the Papacy then in Arms to defend them) fent for		nent danger, demanded a Parley, promising to ren- der the towne if it were not relieued by a certain day	
	aid out of England, to represse the Lollards (as hee ter-		affigued.	
	med them) and published his Buls against those Hull	!	(41) And albeit that I chan de Boneigunts, and	
icol. Vignieur.	fites, with as terrible roarings as viually were his Croy-		Charles de Albuet Marshall, and Constable of France,	Alain Chartier
1.	/agoes against the Turkes.		the one at Caudebue Castell, the other in Harflew,	Charles a King of
1	(17) His Legate for these holy warres, he made		citner of them having in their companies one thou-	Frances
dwin.Catal	mentie beaufort, the rich Cardinal of wincheiler, who		fand and fine hundred men at Armes, were yet fo	d Alain Cheritor for certain to for the for certain to for
English Bbr.	with foure thousand English assisted with a subsidie		curbd by the English, that no great scruice they did.	
- 1	of the Clergies Grant, did there verie valiantly for		and lette hope was looked for from the French king.	
- 1	certaine months together, vntill hee was recalled by		whole arengthes were not ready as the Dolohia re-	
- 1	the Pope: wherein Countie Zises (though euer a vi-		turned aniwere, either to remoue or relieue the fiege	
	ctor) loft both his eyes, and being blind led forth his army with fuch terror to his foes, as his name be-		at Harflew, whereupon the twenty two of September,	Hifloric of
	came fearcfull, and oft-times was sufficient to at-		Gracourt the Gouernour with twenty foure felected	Normandy.
	taine victory without any throake, infomuch as hee		Captaines and Burgeffes came to King Henry, who	
- 1	commanded his owne skinne to bee flead off after		fate in his Pauilion vnder a cloth of estate, his Noble-	
	his death, and to bee made the head of their drum		men about him, and the Earle of Kyme vpon his right	lobs Harding
1	amening that the very found thereof would drive		hand, bearing his casket, whereon was an imperi- all Crowne fet with ftones of great price: The Go-	
1	the enemy out of the held. But from these Church			
			Kings feet, deliuered vnto him the Keyes of the town,	
l l	trong whence we name nept, and continue the affairs		acording to the couenants betwirt them comprised	
	of our fathous K. Frepry natting now let footing in		which was a respite for fine dayes, and then if no fire-	
1	France.		cour came to infrender the towne vnto the king. &	Holirft.
ward Hall.	(38) His followers and fellowes in these new		to delider into his hand thirty of their chiefest ner-1	
	begunne warres were his two brethren the Dukes of Clarence, and Glocester, as also his vncles the Duke of		ionages to itand for life or death at his own pleafure. I	
	Yorke, and Earle of Dorfet, accompanied with the		the rest to depart without armor, weapons, or any of	
-	Earles of Kent, Cornewall, and Huntington, besidesa		their goods,	
			(42) Harflew thus furrendred in fo fhort a fiege	
	and men at armes: with thele from Kideaux hee mat-			Septemb, 11
	ched towards Harflew, affecting that Towne the		with fufficient troupes to possesse the Gates, who	
	first, being a port commodionally fested upon the		then crected the Kings Standard, and Saint Georges	
- 1	mouth of the Kluer Seyne, and a late entrance unto 1		banner vpon the principall Ports, and affured the Towne with guards competent. Moreouer, he sent	
mirrater	and mended Conquett, atwell for the landing of his		the faid Monsteur de Gracourt, and with him Gwyen	
	men, as to minder the panage vnto Roame and Paris.		Aing at Armes vnto the Doinhinto let him brow	William Car.
a Harding	both which received traffique by the fame R sucr.		Inal nee would flay eight dayes in Harflem to ever the	History of Nor-
Transmit .	(39) The Towne being feated herwire two	1		7.
- 1	hills, that next the Seathe King tooks, at the foots	-		
	whereof, he cauled a deepe trench to be caft, bring-		nate, for his purpole was not to demand more than 1:	
	ing in water to impeden the bottome and rating the		nate, for his purpose was not to demand more then his right, and if they could not accord, for the sparing of	
1	rampier to a great thicknes, whereon he erected ma. I		Christian bloud, he was pleased to decide the answall	
	by iconces of carrn like vnto Callies, fet thicke to.		Christian bloud, he was pleased to decide the quarrely by single combat between them two.	Wil. Paradin in
				Annal de Bare
- 1	ofte wide, for the Souldiers to fally as occasion fer-		Jars into Kome with Coroners. Entiance and Tail	geyste.
- 1	ued : the trench thus finished, from the rocke to the	ı	umphes , attending his Chariot, but in a more	1
1				

humble

humble manner hee passed along the streetes bareforfame of which piety moued the people (albeit they ted, vntill hee came to the Church of Saint Martin. were forbid by the French King) plentifully to where with great denotion hee gaue most humble supply the fainting English with their owne prouithanks vnto God for this his first atchieued enterprife. Then that the Towne might be English, and (47) But the Nobility understanding that the free from French dangers, hee made proclamation, English had got ouer Soam, the Constable, the Dukes that who foeuer of his English Artificers would tran-Iobn Harding of Orleance and Bourbon, Sent vnto Henry an Herald fport themseluesynto Harflew, houses should there with defiance, demanding battell vpon Thursday following; which the English King granted, but bee giuen to them and their heires; whereby in short time the towne was repeopled with English Artitherein failed, faith the French Secretarie, and tooke fans. Here King Henry abode the space of twelve his march towards Callis without any Ray. True it The fight was no or fiftteene dayes, expecting an answere of his mesis, that Henry was not desirous of fight, his impedi- of Henries feeks fage fent to the Dolphin; but the time prefixed (and ments being fuch as wee haue faid, and therefore remore dayes exspired) hee commanded his souldiers turned answere, that he meant to keepe on his march to furnish themselves with victuals for eight dayes lahn Harding. vnto Callis, and would not feeke them: but if they leaving his vncle Thomas Beauford Earle of Dorfet would disturbe him, he committed the issue thereof Alain.Chartier. Gouernor of Harflew, himselfe with two thousand to God, affuring himfelfe that it would bee to their horse, and thirteen thousand foot, marched towards October firft. owne great danger and perill, and so passing for-Callis through the Counties of Caux and Eu. ward to Forceuil, to Bonyers-Lest aillon, to Baugy, vpon (44) The French Court notwithstanding it thursday the 24. of October, hee came to Azincourt, fwarmed with factions (whileft under a weake and where the French in a field of advantage (purposely braine-ficke King) the great ones fought to make chosen)in the County of Saint Paul, and necre vnto Paul themselues greater, and the common enemy endan-Azincourt) had pitched their Banner royall, with an gering all, King Charles, the Dolphin, his brother of infinite hoaft, whereof the Conftable of France had Ponthieu, the King of Sicil, the Dukes of Berry and of the conduct. Bretaine, with the whole force of France affembled at (48) His power(faith Parradin) confifted of an Roan, and in Councell concluded, that the English hundred and fifty thousand horse (besides them for | Burg. Denis Sauage in Chron.of Flaunfhould bee fought with, before they got Callis, and forthwith decreed to endammage King Henry on carriages which were innumerable) wherein were ten thousand men at Armes, all of them (a very few conquez de Franhis way, which presently was attempted. For besides excepted) Princes, Noblemen, Knights, and Elquitheir continuall skirmishes vpon his marching Arers. The Vantgard was led by the Conftable, the my, they brake down the Bridges, plashed the woods, intrenched the wayes, strucke stakes in the Foords, Dukes of Orleance, and Bourbon, the Earles of Ew and Bouciquals the Marshall, Dampier the Admirall, Guyand in places of aduantage, laid store of souldiers to The chiefe comchard Dolphin de Auuergne, and Clunet of Brabant. empeach his passage, and conuayed all victuals out The maine battell, by the Duke of Barre, the Earles of the Countries, through which hee should goe; of Alenzon, Neuers, Blaumont, Salines, Grandpre, and whereby they well hoped, as a Deere taken in the toile, so both hee and his hoalt should have been Lewis de Bour-Rousse. And the reregard by the Duke of Brabant Earles of Marle, Furquenberge, and Mounsieur de Lorinfinared, who now was approached to Virron, with purpose to haue passed the river Soame at Blanchenay; the right wing was commanded by Arthur Earle of Richmond, and the left by Lewis de Bourbon. tague : but there the French had fortified against Count de Vendo me great Mafter of France, whose parhim, so as hee well saw that was not the way; and Wil. Parradin, Thidem. ticular retinues Franciscus Rossenius doth largely Their number thereupon changing his Counfell, hee marched by *declare : all ranged rogether in their array appeared Wormes, and lodged at Baillew, with an intent to have to the eye (faith Parradis) fixe times to exceed the to theeye (faith Parradin) fixetimes to exceed the English, but a Peter Dinors esteemed them to bee ten 'In Summata' passed the river at Port le Remy, but that also guarded, he kept along the River to Hargest, the French Ar-Barri Ducum. my marching vpon the other banke, vnder the lea-(49) King Henry feeing himfelfe fo farre inga-*In Rerum Bra banticayum. ding of Charles de Albret Constable of France. ged, and many of his men ticke of the fluxe, fent the (45) Henry still seeking to get ouer Soame, meant second time vnto these assembled Princes his prof-Paul.Aemil. to affay it, even to the head, and paffing by Amiens. fers, to furrender Harflew, and what elfe he had won. Bowes, and Corbie, in a valley adjoyning, there lod-ged his hoaft, where heecommanded his Archers fo as without difturbance he might depart for Cal. is. Whereunto the Conftable and Marshall were to prouide stakes sharpened at both ends, which afwilling, but the other young Princes despising the terwards stood them in singular good stead: Then fmall number of their adueriaries, refused all condihearing by his spials that the water was passable at Bertrand de tions of peace, and were not onely negligent in the Bethencourt, by the negligent guard of them of Saint duties of Commanders, but with an affurance of vi-Quintins, hee got ouer the river. His fouldiers both Gory divided the pray, disposed of prisoners, and weary and faint, many of them ficke, and their proprepared a Chariot to carry the captine King in triuisions spent some twelue dayes before, were forced umph; commanding the Citties and Townes adioyto feed upon nuts, roots, and Berryes, fuch as they The Erench ning to ring their bels, and to render thankes vnto thought them-felies inuincibl could get, and their drinke was the water that ranne God, who had deliuered their enemies into fuch in their way. place of aduantage as an affored victory must pre-(46) The day they spent with great toile and lently follow : and so confident were they thereof, long march, the nights were cold and wet, and no that they fent to King Henry to know what ran-Henry for his res where good lodging, alwayes standing vpon their fome he would give. But faith Chartier, what answere fome as if they were fure to owne guard, and the French alwayes swarming athe King made, is vncertaine: for that all who were conquer. Alain Chartier Secretary an Roy bout them without intermission. These things moprivie thereunto, were flaine, the Duke of orleance ued Henry as the French Writers report, to proffer. only excepted, and he a prisoner retained in Eng. the restitution of Harslew, with other holds in Norman-Argentre, Payland. They also sent for King Charles, and the Dolphin his sonne (then residing in Roane) to come in their persons vnto the battell, that so they might die, and to make satisfaction for the harms done in France. to suffer him free passage unto his Towne of Callis. But certaine it is, that great reliefe hee got by the iuflice haue the honour of the field. Whereat the Duke The Counfell o of Bery was highly offended, and admifed the contra-King Henries care that the Church might not be spilled, and piety that hee vied in those parts: for albeit hee was in the middeft of his enemies, and his Souldirie, laying beforethe King the hazard of warre, out ers pinched with penury and want, yet made hee of his owne experience, being himfelfe at the battell Proclamation vpon paine of death, that none of his Army should rob any Church: wherein a soulof Portiers, where King John unfortunately was taken by the English, which proued (as he alleged)a Fran, Rollings dier offending, hee caused restitution to be made; great breake-necke vnto France. and commanded the stealer to be put to death: the (50) The face of these hosts were divers and Fffff

Chap.15. Henrie V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 52.

Pelychnes

641

632	Henry V. THE SVCC	ESSION OF Monarch 52.	Book.		Chap.15	Henrie V. ENGLANDS	MONARCHS. Monarch	h \$2. 633
	indifferent, the French gallant, fresh, and through	1 of is now come, and your worke the nobleft in the			King Henry re	, ded and ouerthrew him, to whole refere if Henry	elfe to depart the field either of which if the	1111
The French glo-	vaine hope of honour, already mounted aboue men	" world; poure forth therefore your vtmost forces,	1		King Henry re	had not come, he had died more honourablies han		
but the Eaglifb.	of meane rancke, the English weake, weary and fore	"that ages may know what the lance, the Axe, the	1		ther the Duke of Glosefler.	afterward hee did, for King Henry bestriding him,		
conquerers	starued, made no such shew, and yet their courage no	" fword and the bow can doe in the hand of the va-	1				their hearre were to demand at a 110	
	leffe then the other. The one ipending the night be-	"liant : Whosoeuer therefore desires riches, ho-	i		1 -		I thonour they departed the fold The Local	
Caxion.Chron.	fore Battell, in Feafts, Triumphes, and other like	"nour, and rewards here he shall find them. Nimi-			1	coped with King Benry in fight, and with his Axe		
	sports, distributing their Captines, diniding their	"rum hae medio posuit Deus omnia Campo. When hee			Alengos encom	cut a part of his Crowne, which blow was so surelie laid on, that there with his helmet was battered vnto		
	fpoiles, and decreeing none to beefaued but the King, and his nobles; all others must die or be incura-	had thus faid, his army fell proftrate on the ground, and committed themselues vnto God every man	1		puttethhim in	his brow, but the Lyon enraged, with redoubled		
		taking into his mouth a peece of earth, in remem-			fome danger,	ftrength, stroke the French Gallant vnto the ground,		
1	bly maimed : the other trimming their arrowes, fharpening their speares, buckling their armours,	brance of his owne mortality, (being thereof			1	and flew two of his men that seconded their Master.	minded to have put them to death, had not his the Count of Chareless mediated for them, whom they preferred kine Herris with C.	fonne Burgundy in
	andrefreshing their bodies for the next day; and	made) or of the holy Communion whereof hee was	l		1	The Dake thus down, cried to the King, I am Alen-	whom above to Charoloss mediated for them,	vnto foneth the
The English dif- erned what was	besides other observances, by the light of the great	incorporated to be a partaker; and fo refolued, ari-	Stores Annal,		1	1200, Whom Henry lought to have found and to had	whom they presented King Hemies rich sword guards whereof was gold set with stones of	d, the ries carriage
lone in the	fiers made in the French Campe, the English decerned	fing, the King with cheerefull countenance comman-			Rich. Graftoni	I done, had not the deate eares of renence flore all	price.	great but pardons
rench army.	what was therein done, and tooke the aduantage of	ded his Standard to advance forward faving because			1	found of life, against him, that so had endangered	(60) The day almost Grand G	their lines a
	their order and ground,	our insurious enemies doe attempt to fint up our way,	7°6. 200.1		1	their Souereigne Lord.	(60) The day almost spent in spending F blood, and euening approaching neere the set	rench request.
1	(51) The morning approached, the French tooke	let us upon them in the name of the molt glorious Trinity.	100,774.		The French	(58) The French Reregard furprised with feare,	Sunne, the field cleared, and no enemy feene, th	of the 1 poorg. 2(cup
1	the field, thronging forward, who should be first to	and in the best houre of the wholeyeere.	i	<	maine battell	at the dilafter of the vantgard, and the maine barrell	treate was founded, and all were affembled to	ne re-
1	this most casie and certaine victory (as they tooke it)	(55) The ranging of the Battell King Henry	1		put to flight.	I fled, not itriking one itroake/except fome principall	thankes vnto God; which done, while his foul	giue
- 1	their greatest strength consisting in horse. Against	committed to an old experienced Knight called Sir	Denie Sauage in Cron. Fign.		1	leaders and they not many) the English horsemen	triankes vinto God; which done, while his foul pillaged the dead. King Henry fent for Montie rault at armes in France, and for other heraulds. English and French: vinto whom he faid, we have now following felling made this	King Henry
1	whose violence King Henry commanded two hun-	Thomas Erpingham: who with a warder in his hand	Crow. Pigs.		ł	tetched a compatie and wheeled about your their	rault at armes in France, and for other hersulde	both God the gin
	dred strong bow-men to lodge in a low meadow,	lead the way, which when he faw time hee threw vp			Piha Varg.	Dackes, which no looner was perceined burcharchail	English and French: vnto whom he faid me have	of victory.
u les Annales le Bretagne,	where a deepe ditch full of water might secure them	into the aire, whereat the whole army gaue a great			.	taxe of fighting was ended, and the worke of killing		
1	from the horse, and the bushes couer them from	fhout; which done, he alighted fro his horse, & came to the King, who was in his place on foor. The	Enguerrant de		1	Degan; as DV the words of Wallingham dock mani.	Our weake hands hath laid at our feete but the and	
	fight. These having stakes prepared and shod with	to the King, who was in his place on foot. The			i		Goa for the offences (no doubt) of the French hath do	meit. God deline
with Stakes,	Iron at both ends, were appointed to sticke them	French beholding this Offer, kept ftill their owne	The English		i		whole blood let now reit upon their owne heads and	anation into
- 1	flope-wife in the ground, yet fo that they might bee removed as occasion was ministred, to guarde them	itanding, which the Engulb perceiping, made forward	proffer Battell.	. \	1	dead to the earth: for when they faw those beaten indeed under foote, whom they reputed inuincible, their minds	Suittleffe in following our right : and then den	mands of the
	from the danger of the horse: which policy accom-	and came on, giving another shoute, when immedi-			1	forthwith grew amazed, and fuch an iciefeare flyd through	ung the name of the place, was answered it	woo finnes
	plished,King Hemy(whose hope was in God, and the	ately the Archers, layd in the meadow, darkened the			Walfinghams de			
inil Parradyn.	goodnesse of his cause) about ten of the clocke raun-	aire with a shower of sharpe arrowes, most fearefull to the sight, but more deadly to be felt, and withall,	Their Archers		feription of the	while our men wrested weapons out of their hands, and	This Battell (hall be called the Battell of Arincourt T	Chue
1	ged his English, against the French then in field : he di-	the English charged their Rossell with an admiral l	put the enemy to		throw.	flew them therewith as beafts. Slaughter then had loft the		
	sposed his host into three battels, placing his bow-	the English charged their Battell with an admirable Courage; the most of them for nimblenes being but	parme.		1	flay of it felfe, and fight did follow no longer, but all the	where he lodged the night before. The ipoile	Was Enguerade ON
	men on both fides of the maine.	halfe clothed, without hat, and bare-legged. And			1	warre was made at throates, which (as it were) offered	great, and the pray rich in armours, iewels, and a	nna. Brilet.
no Walting.	(52) The vantgard, confifting of Archers, was led by Lord Edward, (his cosen) the Duke of Torke, &	luch was their courage notwithstanding their wante			j	I them icines to be cut, neither can the Buolilh bill in mania	rell, for which by the Countrey Peafants many	(left
be chiefe Lea-	led by Lord Edward, (his cosen) the Duke of Torke, &	as he that ere while could fearcely hend his Row is	You die was 8		1	of the enemies, as may bee killed. Thus therefore the whole glory of the French name is almost perished, by the	as dead) were stripped starke naked, who after	ward
ers of each part	with him the Lords Beaumont, Willowohler, and Fan-	able now to draw his yard-long arrow to the verie	1 hourd treater		1	whole glory of the French name is almost perished. In the	crept from the place, but most of them more wounded without reliefe, lay in great dolor and	tallie
my.	hope. In the maine Battell all in compleate and	head, whole roaning marke was the flancke of the			i	hands of those few, whom immediately before they held in	in the ditches : fo certaine is the calamity of wa	died
4	bright thining armour, the King rode himfelfe, his	French, forightly aimed at, and fo ftrongely flucke			After fome tharp	molt extreme contempt. But the figord now made	and vncertaine the fword till it bee quietlie fl	arre,
	fhield quartered with the royall atcheiuements of	1 Off a Chart their tides were altropether landed with an			execution the English thew	weary and drunke with blood, all danger past, and		
100	England and France, vpon his helmet he ware a Co-	rowes, whereby the vantgard was infrantly diffreft			mercy to the	humanity retired , priloners were taken and	(61) King Henry loft his cofen Edward Duk	
he roble abilia-	ronet, the circle whereof glittered with pearle and				Frence.	liues ipared, which hitherto was neglected, least	Torke, and the Earle of Suffolke that day, besides so	Wich. Gille.
tents of King	stones of an vnestimable price : his horse of a fierce	were not able to vietheir weapons at any aduantage.		1	1	mercy might have proved the deftruction of them-		
terry in the naine Battell.	courage carreird as he went, the bridle and furniture				1	felues.	yet Caxton will have them but twenty and fixe :	and
1	of Gold-finithes worke, and the Capatifons most richly embroidered with the victorious Ensignes of	but Mounsieur de Lignie in the one not well seconded	Enguerrant,		Enguerrant de Monfiretet	(59) Whilft the King was thus bufied, & the fuc-		
i,	the Englift Monarchy: Before him in gold and glori-	by his troopes was forced back; and Guilliaum de Sur-	The wings of the		an-squares;	cesse of the battell in dispute, his carriages (but scien-	Knights and only ten private fouldiers, without a	mic Oct of English
i	ous colours the Royall Standard was borne, and	rerescharging home, in the other, was flaine. The Bat-	French battell		1.	derly garded) by the French were affailed, & all made		
1	many other banners in warlike order waned with the	talions now broke, for fafety fled to the Main, where they breed both feare and confusion by the vnruli-	discombred,		1	spoile of that was to be had. The Captaines of this	* David Gam an Elquire, and twenty cight prin	10to Ex Manuferia
1	winde.		l		Tpod.Nevft.	cowardly enterprize, were Robinet de Bourneuille, Rif-	louidiers, affirming confidently, that no more of	che
1	(53) The French had framed their Battels into	neffe of their wounded horses so galled with arrowes as they could not be governed.			ł	flant de Clumaffe, and Ifambert de Agincourt, with fixe	English died that day.	1
icus Linius.	two sharpe fronts, as intending with their points to	(56) The first troope of the French horse, were			Certaine French rob the Kings	hundred Pealants, who had turned their faces at the first brunt of Battell, as men of better practise to pil-	(62) A farre larger role is writ of the Free	nch,
	haue runne through the English squadrons; altoge-	exquilitely appointed, whereon their riders much	The Walling.		carriages,	fer, then to purchase by manhood the spoiles of the	flaine at this Battell, yet divers and different ame	ong
1	ther relying yoon their horfemen, and fhining in bra-				1	field. Where among other things they found a	their owne Authors, the true Catalogue as week	can-
1	uery with an incredible exceffe. And furelic the				1	rich Crowne and fword, which they bare away in tri-	not certainely fet downe, yet as wee haue many (ol-
1	beauty and honourable horror of both the Armics.				71	umph-wife, fayning that King Hemy was taken, and	lections we will deliuer the same in part, and refe	erre
	no heart can judge of vnleffe the eye had feene it, the				They fleale a Crowne and a	as a prisoner followed their troopes, the fight of cer-	the reft to be seene upon the record : Only name	ther Thenames of
The admirable	Banners, Ensignes and Penons streaming in the ayre,	had fled, came on with their horse ypon the spur, and	T. B. T.			taine English prisoners by them taken and led away	the Officers and Leaders in the same field ent slaine, or taken Prisoners, by this samous King He	ther great performs
ndglorious ght that both	the gliftering of armours, the varietie of colours, the	that in fuch heat, as the earth feemed to tremble	ane English Ar-		that King Henry istaken prifo-	cofirming the report more frongly in the beholders	in this his triumphant and fortunate day.	taken prifoner
urmies made.	motion of Plumes, the Forrests of Lances, and the	had fled, came on with their horse vpon the spur, and that in such heat, as the earth seemed to tremble vnder their thundering feet, and being forced for-	back the French			conceit. But King Henry breathlesse, and in heat		taken priloner
1	thickets of shorter weapons, made so great and				History of Ner-	of blood, seeing certaine new troopes of the King of	Charles D'Albert, high Lewis de Bourbon.	Francisco de
- 1	goodlie a flew ; but the filent expectation of the	productions into the lawes of delirination + for fall	the tharpe poin-		,	Sicils appeare in the field, and the same strong inough	Constable of France. Sig. de Preaux.	Enguerrant de
	bloody blaft was as the bullet ramd into the Canon,	ling by troopes upon thoic goaring flakes they were	ted stakes.		1	to encounter with his weary men fearing (as hee had	Geoffrey Bouciqualt Mar- Robert de Barre.	1
	whose roaring voice is not so soone heard, as the stroate of death self by the aimed at marke.	milerably operationing and paperhad to dear			Pol. Verg	cause) that the Bourbon Battalion upon light of fresh	shall of France. I ehan de Barre,	1
	The Person short armed at marke.	The tempelts of arrowes still whisling in the aire			1	luccours would gather into a body and agains	Jaques Chastillon Admi-	1
o.Sarres	(54) The Battels thus raunged a while flood fill, and faced each other euen in the face: The	I IDAIRICO ATC IN their tals from the helmete of the			1	make head, confidering withall how his men were	rall. Great Lords.	1
	French (whether vpon errour like to that of Pompeis	French, and with their steeled heads, rang manie		4	A new power of	ouer-charged with multitudes of Prisoners, who in	Guiscard Daulphin of Ar-	1 -
	at the Battel of Pharfalia, where Cafar was victorious,	thousands their knels that dolefull day, who like to			Frenco appea-	number furmounted their Conquerours : that	ragon great Master of the Sig. de Crov.	1
	or to draw the English farther from their aduantage				caufeth all his	the charge would be double at once, to guard and to fight, and that the prisoners would be ready upon	Kings Horfe. Sig. de Helly.	1
1	of ground is altogether vnknowne) but certaine it is	in that fatall field; the English still following the ad- uancage: against whome Inthoine Duke of Brabant,			prioners to bee	ngnt, and that the priloners would be ready vpon	Edward Duke of Barre. Sig. de Auxi.	1
	that King Henry was refolued to open his way for	hoping by his example to encourage ast and	Encuerant Ja			euery aduantage to take armes and free themselues	Anthoine D. of Brabant. Sig. de Brimeu.	Enguetrant.
and a selfe	Callis ouer the Enemies bosome, or else to die and	hoping by his example to encourage others (follow- ed with a few) turned head, and brake into the Eng-	Menfirel.			from their takers : these and other necessities con-	Duke Alencon. Sig. de Poix.	1
Calla.	thereupon with a cheerefull countenance and words	life Battell, wherein manfully fighting hee was	•		Enguerrant,	firayning, King Henry contrary to his wonted ge-	Count Neuers. Sig. de Louroy.	1
1	tull of courage, he comforted his followers and faid.	flaine.	,		1	nerous nature, gaue present commandement that	Count de Marle. Sig. de Rainenalt.	1
	"My most faithfull Companions and worthy soul-	(57) With the like manhood Date down	Guil Parados.		ı i	euery man should kil his Prisoner, which was imme-	Count de V audemont. Sig. de Longueuall.	1
	"diers, we now goe into the field of honour, and to	a mity French Lord, prefled into the Rattalian	inter Annals, de] [diately perfourmed, certaine principall men excep- ted. Which done, and falling againe in Order, hee	Count de Blaumont. Sig. de Inche.	ı
		where King Frame fought and into the Dattation	Bing.		Time Zinim	fent his Heraulds vnto these troopes assembled, com-	Count de Grandpre. Sig. de Neufielle.	1
	"the worke of manhood, which your great valours							
The Walfing.	"the worke of manhood, which your great valours follong have expected and praied for; loe the day	where King Henry fought, and incountering Hum- frey Duke of Glocester the Kings brother, both woun	-		Treeses	manding them forthwith to	Count de Roussie. Sig. de Dampierre.	1
	"the worke of manhood, which your great valours follong have expected and praied for; loe the day	frey Duke of Glocester the Kings brother, both woun-			Ziming	manding them forthwith to come vnto Battell, or	Count de Farquembourg. Sig. de Moreusil.	

flowing the cause for which he came, hee instantlie

vrged the peace for France, wherein he was gentlie

The King is re-ceined of London, his entrance into London, four hundred Citizens

with great flate. riding before him in red and white hoodes, the gates

Voon an vnexp King finieth tur March 14. Nichal.Gilles Alain Chartice Secretarie au Roy Charles 7. "Hift.of Norm by the French both by land and The Emperous out of hope to make attone ment for France entreth league with England. *Titus Lini.

Chap.15. | Henrie V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 52. The King willing- heard by the English King, burvpon new displeafures for some losse of men in the Territories of Roane, the motion at that time was dasht, and would not proceed, least (as King Henriealleaged) the Frenth should suppose that a small losse had weakened his spirits: yet the Emperour continuing his intercession for peace, had brought it to that passe by his pithy periwalions, as had not the Frenchat that verie instant besieged Harstew both by Sea and land, it had beene effected. (34) For not long before Thomas Earle of Dor A.D. 1415. fet, hauing made a roade into the County of Canx, was fet vpon by the Earle of Armigrace Constable of France with other ftrong men at Armes neere vnto Vademont, who so distressed the English, that Dorfe tooke into a Garden for defence, and having had private conference there with the Conflable, early before day, departed with the loffe of * foure hundred men. Armigrace puffed vp by his got victory, with his French powers followed the English in a hasty march toward Harstew, and vpon the lands intercepted their passage, where betwixt them a cruell conflict was perfourmed, with the ouerthrow of the French, and flight of the Constable, who retired to Monstrevillier for safety. (35) This his valucky attempt he tooke greatly

to heart, and therefore purpoling to repurchale again his honor, he determined for Harflew, where hee fet downe his land fiege, before the English Garrison within, were well aware, when also the Vicount Narbon Vice-Admiral of France, with a Fleete of tall flips entred the hauen, so that the Towne was begint on enery fide as we have faid. King Henry hearing of these newes, called home his Ambassadours, which were the Bishop of Normich and Sir Thomas Erpingham in commission then at Beauueis, and in conference for a Peace; and the Emperour well perceiving that the French plaid vpon advantage, and that King Henry was not of temper to turne edge at their strokes, faw it vaine to prosecute the peace for France

further, and therefore fought to enter league with the English himselfe, vnto the which King Henry was fo willing as he confirmed the same upon these Articles following, (36) That the faid Emperour & King, their heires

& fucceffours * should be friends each to other as Allies and Confederates against all manner of persons of what estate or degree focuer, the Church of Rome. and the Pope for the time being only excepted (for he was the Maker Beethat then lead the fwarme.)

(37) That neither themselues, their heires nor fucceffours fhould be present in Counsell or other place, where either of them their heires or fucceffours might fuftaine dammage in lands, goods, honours , states or persons : and that if any of them should understand of losse or hinderance to be like to fall or happen to the others, they should impeach the same, or if that lay not in their powers, they should advertise the others thereof with all convenient speed. That either of them, their heires and fucceffours should advance the others honour and commodity without any fraud or deceit. That neither of them, nor their heires or fucceffours should permit their subjects to leavy warres against the others. That it should be lawfull and free for each of their subjects to passe into the others Countrey, and there to remaine and make merchandize either by Sea or land, paying the Customes, gables, and duties due and accustomed according to the Laws, and Ordinances of the places, and Countreyswhere they should traffique. That neither of the saide Princes, nor their heires, nor fucceffors should receine any rebell, banished man, or traitour of the others willingly, but should cause eueric such person to avoid out of their Countreys, Realmes, dominions, and Jurisdictions. That neither of the said Princes, their heires nor Successors should begin any other watres against any other person, other then fuch as they had warres with at that present without

defence of themselucs, their Countreys and subjects in case of inuation made upon them. That it should be lawfull for the King of England to profecute his warres against France for the recourry of his right, as should seeme to him expedient, and for the Emperour, for the recourry of any part of his right receined by the French. Laftly, that either of them should assist other in recovery and Conquest of their rights, lands and dominions, withheld and kept from them, by him that calleth himfelfe King of France, and othets, the Princes and Barons of France. These conclusions and agreements bare date the 19 of October , in Anno 1416. In the meane while the French that had felt the hard hand of the English, and feeing that Henry had with-drawne his commissioners for peace, King Charles made a league with the flates of Genota, requiring their aide against this dan-gerous enemic, who supplyde him with sixehundred Croffe-bowes, and eight tall ships of warre, and as many gallies with munition and victuals. These wafting the Seas with many brauadoes, King Henrie in perion meant to have mette with himseife, but the Emperour diffwading his purpole, the charge of that Enterprize was committed to John Duke of Bedford, accompanyde with the Earles of March, Marfball, Oxford, Warwicke, Huntington, Arundell, Deuon-fbire, and Salisbury; these falling vpon the County of Narbon, a fierce encounter was begun, and long fought, till at length the victory fell to the English. fo that the French Nany was most of them battered, funcke and taken 3 amongst others three great Carricks of the Geneaes were sent to England, with whom the bastard of Burbon was brought away Prisoner; & the Viscount de Narbon, Le Sire de Montaine, and Le Sire de Berrar chased into Britaine. This victorie obtained; the Duke past forward to the Towne of La Mer des Hife Harflew, and refreshed it with victuals without anie impeachment; for Armagnae the Constable hearing how his Conforts had kept tune on the Seas thought it not best to set to their note, least his meane would not be heard, the base of this musicke soun ding too deepe, and therefore he put up his pipes and got him to Paris. This service perfourmed was to commended by the Emperour, as he openly faid, that Realme was happy that had fuch a King but the King more happie that had fuch Subjects, and cuer after held Bedford in a most speciall ac-

the consent of the other his Confederate, except in

(38) His affaires now finished, and Princely entertainements thankefully received, he prepares for his returne toward Germany, and King Henry to doe him the more honour would needs accompany him to his Towne of Callis, whither after their arrivals the Duke of Burgognerepayred to doe his homage vnto the Emperour, which Burgoone some moneths before, had concluded a peace with the Earle of Warwick in the behalfe of King Henry, for the Counties of Flaunders and Arthois. Henry therefore in hope of a further friendship with him, sent his brother the Duke of Glocester, and the Earle of March vnto Saint Omers to lye hostages with the County Charrolois, for Burgognes paffage and fafe returne, with whom hee fent warwicke to conduct him to

(49) His entertainement was honourable both The Duke of by the Emperour and King, which as acceptably he Bargande doth homoge to the Emperour and received, and vnto Sigifmand performed his homage, and with Henry renewed the truce for the time of two yeres, both which were so distastine to the French with K. Hemie. ftomackes, that the Emperour is taxed, he came not with an intent to worke the good of France, but rather to augment her miferies by animating Burgundy to bandy against Orleance: and that King Henry was puft with an humor of pride, his affaires to profperous against a weake King. But this busines ended, Burgundy returned to Graveling, Henry into Eng. land, and the Emperour toward Germany, being waf ted into the low Countreys with the Kings Fleete

Charles 6.

Agoflino Giufli. mano Vėjcono di

French Nauy

History of Mer-

He prepareth fo

Denis Sauces Chro. de Fland.

match for the state of the stat	adatended yon by the Kings ferants. (19) At Calls King Henry had made great profits with Bangundy to enter with him into the warres and France, promiting him part of his Conqueths, deto spare and funoural lins vassalis, allyes, and ends, but Bangundy feeling the offers, remained senemy for France, howbet the sent Embassishors to England to treat a continuance of the truce, thich was granted to his Commissioners to indure om the next Michaels-tide with Gaster enslings, hich was confirmed at Partselfer the 23, of sule dayeeted Christ 14,17. For the signing where King Henry sent the keeper of his priny Seale to miness where the Duke of Bangund Selizared the eme signed, which beganne in this sort. Inhames were the sent and the sent sent sent sent sent sent sent sen	ap puffant armie prepared his fecond expedition into France, his Fleete conflitting of fifteene hundred faile, many Lords and men at Armes, the mufter role ingroffed with twenty fine thousand fine hundred twenty feature fine little from the first hundred france	Time Linius. A.D. 1417. Stower denal. dain hecker. danke Brei. Palykrenicus. Riffer, Norm. Desis Stange. Crande Flan,		Polishennicas. The Bory of Sil John Outdonfte. Scrucked freed pictures flowed as Paules Craffe.	diffurber in the South, who no contented to fee the God of Romeat nought, but likewife defeared the face of this Sains, trimly limmed in their Leranyes and other like mafile bookes; a matter indeed of fuch moment, that the Abboot of Sain Albauti in whole precinct they were taken) fent thefe poor emitted and ferarched faced pictures, to complaine of their interest work of King, but his peace on to broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and punithment thereof your Chief. A webside.	as of the remnant of my foreign Profiner; has well as of the remnant of my foreign Profiner; as yeld a from the theories I mills but the Duken for teams be kept of the minus the Coffe of Pomedie without gan to know the profiner without gan to know the profiner without gan to know the profiner without the the profiner without the the profiner without the the profiner without the the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner without the profiner with the profiner with the profiner with the profiner without the profiner with the pr
agai and different from the best of the be	and France, promiting him part of his Conqueths, do for para and favoural his valids, allyes, and dot of para and favoural his valids, allyes, and dot of para and favoural his valids, allyes, and dot of para and favoural his valids, allyes, and conds, but Bargundy refuling the offers, remained stempt for France to his Committee of the truce, his charge and to treat a continuance of the truce, his charge and the truce and the truce of the truce, his charge and the truce of the truce, his charge and the truce of the truce, his charge and the truce of truce of the truce of	ingrofied with twenty fine thousand fine hundred twenty leasen fouldiers, eurory fourth being a horseman, besides at housand Carpenters, Artilicers and Labourers: But before his departure heverdained his brother I subs Duke of Bedfwalto be the Procector of Englands his subsence, which done you have a soft substantial his before, which done you have a soft substantial his before, which done you have a soft substantial his before, which done you have a soft substantial his before, which done you have a soft substantial his before, which do not not be substantial his before, which do not not be substantial his before, which do not have been dead to the fine of Englands and the fine of a line but and the fine of the substantial his before the fine of the substantial his fine subs	A.D. 1427. Stores Awal. Amates bres. Polyhernicus. Blifter, Norm.		Scratched faced pictures showed	worthy Generals fo dannet the seast, that leaving their ladders and other origins of warre, in the night hey brokey their figes, and well was he that could first attaine Seatland. (40) The Kings affaires thus effected in the North, the Clergies eye-fore was also fomewhat cack by the apprehension of Sir to also Ouledgift their disturber in the South, who not concented to fee the Godd F. Romest anought, but likewife defaced the face of his Saints, trimly limmed in their Leranyes and other like malle bookessa matter indeed of fach moment, that the Abbot of Saint Albasti (in whole pre-cinct they were taken) fen the fee poor emidled and feratched faced pictures, to complaine of their iniuries won to the King, but his peace not broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offens and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we believe and punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment thereof your Cheffed we have the punishment the	fill within the Coffle of Pamelre without gaing to ke- borts place, or to any above villent, for it is letter be lacke to stiplent, for the without gain go ke- borts place, or to any above villent, for it is letter be lacke to alpha, the owner were decented; 5 fall the Remnant dath a yet kinketch. (48) Wherein we fee the Complot, but heare not a word that it fhould be of Cobbans composing. But as I affect not to distill the wicked, not to make crooked things fitting to am I farre from distrediting authorities; only the eye of those times looking through the thicke foogy Cloudes, made the Sunne (which is bright in it felfs) to feeme in their fights all bloody and darke. (49) The like croubles (though not for the like cause) happened vinto Queene Jane in the Kinga- bence, and time of Raefford tegency, whose offence was Capitall, if the accutation were true, that feel flood liby forcery of the third.
and in friend his control with the service of the s	de of pare and fauoural lin s vaffats, allyes, and ends, but Barupas/refuing the offers, remained senemy for France, howbet the fent Embaffadors to England to reast a continuance of the ruce, thich was granted to his Committioners to indure om the next Michaels-tied ven to Ender entition, thich was confirmed at Particleffer the 21, of fulled queen of First 14,17. For the figning where the pulse of Bargandy deliared the eme figned, which beganne in this fort. Inhames, we was the Duke of Bargandy deliared the eme figned, which beganne in this fort. Inhames, the Bargandia, Particular, Michael of Armedenia, Calcaling the Grace defire his Madra fradto make accept that the French, which their King notwithming reflieful and againt the law of Armedenia, Occasion, Michael of Armedenia, Particular, Michael of Armedenia,	wenty feauen fooldiers, euery fourth being a horfieman, beifdes a thouland Carpenters, Artificers and Labourers: But before his departure he ordained his brother I shar Duke of Bedfard to be the ProceCtor of Englandin his abhence, which done upon the 28. Of fulle he took to Seas, the filles of this owns (his, being of purple fille most richly embroydered with gold; and the first of August arriard in Normandy to fich terrour of the Inhabitants that they find further into the maine, leating the Countrey bate of men and bestial: Instomuch that eventue finethousand families of them repayred into British; of dreadfull wast the approach of the English. (42) No sooner King Hemist Stote had ouched the floare, but to the incorrangements of his Marshal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then flending to view Barliera list his siege against Cangust, the strongest Cashlein Normandy, which her cooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demaines belonging, wnto his brother Thomas Duke follcareace: And vuto Saisbury the leader of his second bartell, he gaue the Casific Annabellurs, which at the flame time he had woone, a salic both arof Lawar vuto the Easle Marshall, and these were the first that were innessed with any recuence in the first that were innessed with any recuence in the first that were innessed with any recuence were the supplies of the contribution of the con	A.D. 1427. Stores Awal. Amates bres. Polyhernicus. Blifter, Norm.		Scratched faced pictures showed	their ladders and other engins of warre, in the night hey brakes their life, and well was he that could find act the post of their life, and well was he that could find act the post of their life, and well was he that could find act their life, and their	to tris place, or to a year depend without game, to ke- to trist place, or to any other diplace, for it is their the lacket that diplace where decelorad is yell allike Remman dath asysthiched. (48) Wherein we fee the Complet, but heare noca word that it flould be of Cochioms compossing. Bur as I affect not to intitie the wicked, nor to make crooked things theirie, golden, and the deciding authorities; i only the eye of those times looking through thethicle togget cloudes, made they almost the which is bright in it selfer to feeme in their lights all bloody and darke. (49) The like roubles (chough not for the like cause) happened winc Ouern? Jesse in the Kingsab- lence, and time of Redjout regency, whose offence was Capitall, if the action were true, that hee thould by Gorery for failed with the self- should by Gorery for failed with the composition of the flow of the failed with the composition of the flow of the failed with the composition of the flow of the failed with the composition of the flow of the failed with the composition of the flow of the failed with the composition of the flow of the failed with the composition of the flow of the failed with the composition of the flow of
frien his se into which his se into which he se into which he se into which he se into he se into his	ends, but Bargundyrefuling the offers, remained senemy for Funes, howbeit he fen Emballidors to England to treat a continuance of the truce, birch was granted to his Commildioners to indure men the was continuance of the truce, birch was granted to his Commildioners to indure on the next Michaels-tide vano Ealter enfling, hich was confirmed at Particular the 23, of fluid lydered of Christ 1417. For the figning where-tiking item; better the keeper of his priny Seale to missis where the Duke of Burgundy delinered it emissis where the Duke of Burgundy delinered it emisses where the Duke of Burgundy delinered it emissis where the Duke of Burgundy, Petronian, Dominu de Salma to "Mutellians ownerf" in the finite Duke recurred just in November of the Michael William, Dumen de Salma to "Mutelliam ownerf" in the finite Duke recurred just in November of the Michael Michael William of the Michael William ownerf in the William ownerf in the William ownerf in the William ownerf in the William o	man, befides at housend Carpenters, Artificers and Labourers: But before his departure heverdained his brother I shan Duke of Bedfurd to be the Procector of Englands his shekene, which done upon the 28. of Julie he zooke to Seas, the failes of his owne (his, being of purple filke most incibly embroydered with gold: and the first of August arriard in Normandy founds, to crour of the inhabitants that they fled further into the maine, leasing the Countrey fled when the control of the English. (42) No Sooner King Hemiss floore had touched the floare, but to the incouragements of his Marihal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then fending to view Haffens all his fiege againt Conguest, the firongest Cashein robe to the Country of the Cooke the 16. of August, and gave both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother I homes Dake of Clarence: And vinto Salisary the Lease of his fecond baxeel, he gaue the Cashe Amedellors, which at the fame time he had wome, a salfo had the France vinto the East Marihall, and these were the first that were innested with any received in France. (43) Casto to withfland the enemie was fitrongly fortified, well mand, and vichauled, for hat northing was warning needfull for of ferice. Vert he Kirch in the Marina and the control of the control	A.D. 1417. Stowe formal. Alast Bencher. Amalet brei. Palykrenices. Hifter, Norm. Desit Sanage. Grande Flas.		Scratched faced pictures showed	they brokery their fiegs, and warres, in the night they brokery their fiegs, and well was he that could first artaine Sealand. (46) The Kings affaires thus effected in the Nerth, the Clergies eye-fore was also somewhat caled by the apprehension of Sir to nhouleass the third disturber in the South, who not contended of eith disturber in the South, who not contended of eith disturber in the South, who not contended of eith of the Saints, trimly limmed in their Letanyes and other like malle bookesay matter indeed of fisch moment, that the Abbot of Saint Albasti (in whose pre-incit they were taken) fin the fep poor missed and faracted faced pictures, to complaine of their iniuries with the King, but his peace not broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offere and panishment thereof your Checked weeks the second	this differs, them we true decided by all the Remmans and the way reliabels. (48) Wherein we fee the Complot, but heare not a word that it flouid be of Cobbams composing. But as I affect not to infiltie the wicked, nor to make crooked things fitatic fo am I farre from differed ting authorities; only the eye of thole times looking through the thicke forgey Cloudes, made the Sunne (which is bright in it felfs) to feeme in their fights all bloody and darke. (49) The like croubles (though not for the like cause) happened wino Queene Jasse in the King ablence, and time of Resignate tregency, whole offence was Capitall, if the accutation were true, that feel flouid by forcery force the second and the secon
makeh his c into white the service of the control o	scnemy for France, howbeit he fent Embalfidors to England to treat a continuance of the truce, the Mass granted to his Commillioners to indure om the next Michaels-tied win to Ender ending, hitch was confirmed at Parthelfer the 21, of fulled queen of Lind 14,17. For the figning where the distribution of the Michaels of Bargonia, but was confirmed at Parthelfer the 21, of fulled queen of Lind 14,17. For the figning where the Duke of Bargonia folluted the eme figned, which beganne in this fort. Inhames, the Was Bargo. Charles Hannia, Arthild & Dangonia, he was been designed the state in the Mass and the	Laboueres: But before his departure hewediand his brother 1 shen Duke of Bedyards to the Protector of Englands in his ableace, which done you have for fulle he tooker to Seas, the diles of his own (hip, being of purple filke most richly embroydered with gold: and the first of August arrived in Normandy to Sich terrour of the inhabitants that they field further into the maine, leading the Country have of men and heftill : Informach that twention the total families of them repayred into Britain, fo dreadfull was the approach of the English. (42) No Sooner King Jemus 1 Soote had ouched the shower, but to the incouragements of his Marihal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then flending to view Harliers laid his tigge against Cangust, the throught Castlein Normandy, which het cooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother Thomas Duke of Cleavese: And vinto Sailbury the leader of his second bartell, he gaue the Castle Annelleurs, which at the flame time he had woone, as all of that of Lawar vinto the Eastle Marshall, and these were the first that were innessed with any reuenew in Franse. (43) Cast to withfland the enemie was fitrongly fortified, well mand, and vichaulted, for hat nothing was wanting needfull for defired; worthe Kins time.	A.D. 1417. Stower dend. Alain hecker. Amate Bris. Paychersicus. Hifter. Norm. Denis Sunago. Cron.de Fins.		Scratched faced pictures showed	fifthatraine Footland. (49) The Kings affaires thus effected in the North, the Clargies eye-fore was also somewhat each by the Clargies eye-fore was also somewhat each by the gaste, who no contented to set the Goalf, who no contented to set the Goalf F. Roma of the World, but the wisit defaced the faces of this Sains, triming that the wisit defaced the faces of the Sains, triming the state of the Monte of the Company of the World of the Monte	dath say rhisherh. (48) Wherein we fee he Complor, but hear noca word that it hould be of Cabhans composing. Bur as I affect not in intitle the wicked, nor to make crooked things that on intitle the wicked, nor to make crooked things that on the crooking through the chief of the country of the crooked things that of the country of the crooked things that of the country of the crooked things that of the country of the crooked things that the country of the crooked things that of the crooked things that of the crooked
match into white Egg into the E	to England to treat a continuance of the truce, bitch was granted to his Committeeness to induce on the next Michaels-tide wine Ealter enfuing, bitch was confirmed at Partschife the 23, of faller dyetre of Christ 1417. For the figning where-King Heavy fear the keeper of his priny Seale to mions where the Duke of Burgandy delinered the medigand, which begame in this fort. Inhamet was Burg. Count Elandra, Arthrift & Burgandia, Patients. Dominand & Jahina & Deschifting owner fail of the Committee of the Control of	nis brotter I sum Duke of Bedgwat to bethe Protector of Buglundin his ablence, which done upon the 28. of fulic het ooke to Seas, the failes of this owne (hip, being of purple filke most richly embroydered with gold: and the first of August arriard in Normandy for the terrour of the inhabitants that they field further into the maine, leaving the Countrey field further into the maine, leaving the Countrey fine thousand families of them repayred into Britain, of dreadfull was the approach of the English (422) No Sooner King Hemist Soote had rouched the floare, but to the incouragements of his Marthal followers, he dubbed forry eight knights, and then fending to view Harflens laid his fiege againt Conguest, the frongest Cashlein Normandy, which he cooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother T homas. Duke of Cleavese: And vinto Saisbury the leader of his second bartell, he gaue the Casilie Annabellary, which at the fame time he had wome, a salic to har of Luwer vinto the Eastle Marshall, and these were the first that were inuested with any recuese in Franse. (43) Cast to withfland the enemie was firongly fortified, well mand, and vichaulted, fortat continued was wasting needfull for define? *verthe* Kins time.	A.D. 1417. Stove: dend. dain heckert. dain heckert. Polychronicus. Hifter, Norm. Denin Sanege, Cron.de Sane.		Scratched faced pictures showed	(46) The Kings affaires thus effected in the Arth, the Clergies eye-fore was allo fomewhat acted by the apprehention of Sir tohn Oulsedful their diffurber in the South, who not contended to the the God F. Romat an ought, but likewife defaced the faces of his Saints, trimly limmed in their Leranyes and other like malle bookesay matter indeed of fach moment, that the Abbot of Saint Albasti (in whole pre-cinet they were taken) fen the fep poor milited and faracted faced pictures, to complaine of their initeries with the King, but his peace not broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offene and punifiment thereof your Cheffeth are the North Control of the Control of t	(48) Wherein we fee the Complot, but heare not a word that it fhould be of Cobbams composing. Buras I affect not to infinite the wicked, not to make crooked things fittate, 50 am I farre from diferediting authorities; only the eye of those times looking through the thicke foggy Cloudes, made the Sunne (which is bright in it left) to feem in their fights all bloody and darke. (49) The like croubles (though not for the like cause) happened winto Queene Jasse in the Kings before, and time of Basiforst regency, whose offence was Capitall, if the accutation were true, that free though dy forcers (see the single seed).
white the service of the control of	hich was granted to his Commissioners to induce om the next Michaels-tide van Galdre ensling, hich was confirmed at Parthelfer the 21, of fulled queen of Fall 1417. For the digning where we have been a subject to the first of	of Englandin his ablence, which done upon the 28. of Sulpice hosolero Seas, the failes of his own en hip, being of purple filke most richly embroydered with gold : and the first of August arrived in Normandy rosses, and the first of August arrived in Normandy rosses, and the first of August arrived in Normandy rosses, and the first of Leasing the Country have of men and befulled : Insometh that revents incertosland families of them repayred into Britain, fo dreadful was the approach of the English. (42) No Sooner king demies foore had ouched the shoure, but to the incouragements of his Marihal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then flending to view Harliers laid his fiege against Cangust, the strongest Castlein Normandy, which her cooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother Thomas Duke of Cleares et al. And vinto Sailbury the leader of his second bartell, he gaue the Castle Annabellers, which at the fame time he had woone, as also that of Lawar vinto the Eastle Marshall, and these were the first that were innested with any reuenew in Franse. (43) Cast to withfland the enemie was firongly fortified, well mand, and vichaulted, for hat nothing was warning needfull for defired; worthe Kins time.	Stowes Annal, Alain Rocking, Annalet Bree, Annalet Bree, Palychronicon, Higtor, Norm, Denis Sanage, Cron.de Flan,		Scratched faced pictures showed	(46) The Kings affaires thus effected in the North, the Clergies eye-fore war allo formewhat earled by the apprehention of Six 1-th Oulteelfit their diffurbre in the South, who not contended to fet the God of Rome at nought, but likewile defaced the faces of his Saines, strinly limmed in their Leranyes and other like maffle bookes; a matter indeed of fuch moment, that the Abbot of Saint Albanti in whole pre-cling they were taken) fent thefe poore midited and feracted faced pictures, to complaine of their inviews with the King, but his peace no broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and but mithment thereof your Chief America and so mithment thereof your Chief America he should be a simple of the simple	Buras I affect not to infifte the wicked, not to make crooked things fitaite, fo am I farre from diferediting authorities; only the eye of those times looking through the thicke foggy Cloudes, made the Sunne (which is bright in it left) to feem in their fights all bloody and darke. (49) The like croubles (though not for the like cause) happened wino Queene Jasse in the Kings ablence, and time of Intelligent Engency, whose offence was Capitall, if the accutation were true, that free though dy forcers free the wind.
minches in the second of the s	om the next Michaels-tide vnto Eafter enduing, bich vas confirmed at Partschift the 23, of filmed piece of Christ 14,17. For the figning where-King Heavy fent the keeper of his priny Seale to mions where the Duke of Burgandy delinered the medigand, which begame in this fort. Inhames we Burg. Count Elandra, Arthift 60° Burgandia, Patting. Dominued a Salar Arthift 60° Burgandia, Patting. Dominued a Salar Arthift 60° Burgandia, Patting. Dominued a Salar Arthift 60° Burgandia, Patting. Dominued a March 1417. This notwith anding the fail Doke recurred jain in November 100 wing manded league; Observation with 1417 this individual of the March 1417. This notwith the King and Daulphin of France against Eag-sal, which his doings King Henry tooke nothing elled a Patilament at London, where the Lord Chamber, Henry Beaufing, Bishop of Wheelfer and Cartally, in the Kings behalte made an eloquent Cratiquetum for the prace of the water than 1518 and	of Julie he tooke to Seas, the failes of his owne (hip, being of purple filke most richly embroydered with gold: and the first of August arrived in Normandy founds to crown of the inhabitants that they fled further into the maine, leasing the Countrey fled further into the maine, leasing the Countrey bare of men and befuild! I findowach that wente finethousland families of them repayred into Britain, of dreadfull wast the approach of the English. (42) No Sooner King Hemiss floore had touched the floare, but to the incouragements of his Marihal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then fending to view Barllers lish siftegs againt Congust, the firongest Cashlein Normandy, which here tooke the 16. of August, and gave both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother Thomas Dakes of Clareses: And vinto Sailway the leads of his fecond barrell, he gaue the Cashle Amabellurs, which at the fame time he had wome, a salf of his from the time of his fecond barrell, her gaue the Cashle Amabellurs, which at the fame time he had wome, a salf of the write the first that were innested with any receive with Fanac. (43) Cast to with fland the enemie wast frongly fortified, well mand, and vichalled, for her worths (which were wast frongly or was wasting needfull for of ferrie. Very the King to the salf was wasting needfull for of ferrie.	Stowes Annal, Alain Rocking, Annalet Bree, Annalet Bree, Palychronicon, Higtor, Norm, Denis Sanage, Cron.de Flan,		Scratched faced pictures showed	cafed by the apprehention of Six rabn Oulzeight their diffurber in the South, who not contended to fet the Gold Flower an ought, but likewide defaced the faces of his Saints, trimly limmed in their Letanyes and other like malle bookesay matter indeed of fisch moment, that the Abbot of Saint Albasti (in whose precinct they were taken) fien the poor emitted and faracted faced pictures, to complaine of their interes who the King, but his peace not broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offere and parithment thereof your Chief American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and parithment thereof your Chief and the American and your chief and your chief and your chief and your chief and your chief an	Buras I affect not to infifte the wicked, not to make crooked things fitaite, fo am I farre from diferediting authorities; only the eye of those times looking through the thicke foggy Cloudes, made the Sunne (which is bright in it left) to feem in their fights all bloody and darke. (49) The like croubles (though not for the like cause) happened wino Queene Jasse in the Kings ablence, and time of Intelligent Engency, whose offence was Capitall, if the accutation were true, that free though dy forcers free the wind.
makech white defects the second of K to the second	hich was confirmed at Parthelfor the 2,1 of fulled upwered Christ 14,17. For the digning where we have a confirmed to the confirmed when the keeper of his priny Seale to minus where the Duke of Burgundy deliment die mei figued, which beganne in this fort. Islammes, we was the submission where the Burker Agnithia Christ Indiana, Arthibia Christ Burgundia, Parthibia Christianus, Dominus de Salimis Co Astachismo will minus promisus de Salimis Co Astachismo will minus modarine the fail to Duke recurred, and in November despited in 17, site Astachis and in November (and the Christianus, Duke recurred, and in November (and the Christianus, Duke recurred, and in November (and the Christianus and Arthibia Christianus and Andrews (and the Christianus and Landan, where the Lord Charles, Hann Passach, Bishop Of Windelfor and Carlo Landan, Hann Passach, Bishop Of Windelfor and Carlo Christianus and Carlo Landan, Hann Passach, Landan Hann Landan, Landan Landan Landan, Landan Landan, Landan Landan, Landan Landan, Landan Landan, Landan Landan, Landan Landan, Landan Landan, Landan, Landan Landan, Landan Landan, Landan Landan, Landan Landan,	being of purple filke most richly embroydered with gold: and the first of August arrived in Normandy to Such cercour of the inhabitants that they find further into the maine, leading the Country bare of men and befuild: Informach that twentle incethousfand families of them repayred into Britain, fo dreadfull was the approach of the English. (42) No foomer king Henries foore had touched the shoare, but to the incomagements of his Marilal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then fending to view Haffees laids his fiege against Cangust, the strongest Castle in Normandy, which het crooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother I homes. Duke of Clearese: And vinto Sailbary the leader of his second barrell, he gaue the Castle Annuelleurs, which at the famer time he had wome, as also that of Lawer vinto the Easte Marihall, and these were the first that were insuefed with any reuenew in Franze. (43) Cast to withfund the enemie was fitongly fortified, well mand, and vichualled, so that nothing was wanting needfull for define to wer he kine that we was wasting needfull for define.	Stowes Annal, Alain Rocking, Annalet Bree, Annalet Bree, Palychronicon, Higtor, Norm, Denis Sanage, Cron.de Flan,		Scratched faced pictures showed	diffurber in the South, who not contented to fet the Godef Romet nought, but likewife defaced the faces of his Sains; trimly limmed in their Leranyes and other like mafile bookes; matter indeed of fuch moment, that the Abbot of Saint Albant (in whole precinct they were taken) but the fet poor entitled and ferarched faced pictures, to complaine of their interest with the King, but his peace on to broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and punishment thereof your Chief Areshibus.	crooked things fit are found in first from differed things fit are found in first from differed things authorities the following through the following the
and and the state of the state	dyecte of Christ 1.417. For the figning where- King Heary fear the keeper of his priny Seale to misns where the Duke of Burgans's delinered it em figned, which beganne in this fort. Industria we Burg. Camet Handris, Artholic & Burgansia, Pa- titus, Dammus de Salmis & G. Mcchiller where fin- ginetts three sufficies. Johnston, Co. Astronia villa mistanos for 7. de Mongis Ang. 1.47. This notwith- nating the faid Duke recercity and in November Howing made a league view entered against Eng- stance of the Mongis Ang. 1.47. This notwith- nating the faid Duke recercity and in November Howing and Daulphin of Pronze against Eng- stance of the Mongis Ming. Henry tooke nothing elled a Patiament at London, where the Lord Chan- ler, Henry Beasing, Bishop of Winesfer and Car- nall, in the Kings behalte made an eloquent Orati- quedaring the great offer his Maderhald to make ace with the French, which their King notwith- nding resisted, and against the law of Armes deni- yon ransome to render his prisoner staken at A- neward, that the peace which was to be expected ut be with the sweet he was to be expected ut be with the sweet he was to be expected.	with gold : and the first of August arriared in Normandy to that cerour of the inhabitants that they fled further into the maine, leasing the Country fled further into the maine, leasing the Country bare of men and befuild! I finomach that wente finethousland families of them repayred into Britain, of dreadfull wast the approach of the English. (42) No fooner king Itemize foote had touched the thoare, but to the incouragements of his Marihal followers, he dubbed forty eight kingibts, and then fending to view Barllera lidh is figer againt? Conguest, the firongest Cashlein Normandy, which the cooke the 16. of August, and gave both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother I homeof his fecond barrell, he gaue the Cashle Aumbellury. Which at the fame time he had wome, a salf of his fecond barrell, he gaue the Cashle Aumbellury. Which at the fame time he had wome, a salf out of Lawers vinto the Earle Marihall, and these were the first that were innested with any receive in France. (43) Cases to withfland the enemie wast frongly fortified, well mand, and viciousled, footat continue, was wasting needfull for offerie. Very the King vince.	Stowes Annal, Alain Rocking, Annalet Bree, Annalet Bree, Palychronicon, Higtor, Norm, Denis Sanage, Cron.de Flan,		pictures showed	God of Romeat nought, but likewile defaced the faces of his Saines, trimly limmed in their Letanyes and other like malle bookesay matter indeed of his homens, that the Abbot of Saint Albasti in whole pre-cincit they were taken) fur the depose milited and farached faced pictures, to complaine of their interes wint be King, but his peace on or broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and punifiment thereof your Chief As architecture.	authorities; only the eye of thole times looking large through the thicke foggy Cloudes, made the Sunner (which is bright in it left) to feem cin their fight all bloody and darke. (49) The like croubles (though not for the like cause) happened vinto Queene Look in the Kings ablence, and time of Looking tregency, whole offence was Capitall, if the accutation were crues, that free though they force the control of the contro
Amman Amman	i King Hemy fent the keeper of his priny Seale to mines where the Duke of Burgandy delisered the eme figued, which beganne in this fort. I obsames we was the Bush of Burgandy delisered the eme figued, which beganne in this fort. I obsames we was Burg. Comes Hamins, Arthinghe Co. Burgandis, Petitions, Dominus de Salimas Ov. Akuchlima vinnerfu fenteut terus miferia: Halatem, Oct. Adatum in villa midisamoli vi 7, des Anopis von 14,17. This notwithmediang the faild Obse recurred, and in November Illowing madea league (whereunto he was (worne) that he King and Daughim of France againft Eug-ad, which his doings King Hemy tooke nothing elled a Patianent at London, where the Lord Charler, Hemy Bushey, Bishop of Winshefer and Carlandianent at London, where the Lord Charler, Hemy Bushey, Bishop of Winshefer and Carlandianent Kings behalte madean eloquent Orntinall, inthe Kings behalte madean eloquent Orntinall, calcaring the great offer his Madreh rada to make acc with the French, which their King notwithmiding reflieft, and againt the law of Armes dening the third with the fivency, found the two was have been to be expected ult be with the fivency found using with this laying.	mandy to sinch cerrour of the inhabitants that they field further into the maine, leading the Country bare of men and beftiall. Informach that twentle incethouland families of them repayred into Britain, fo dreadfull was the approach of the English. (42) No floomer king Henris foote had touched the shoare, but to the incomagements of his Maribal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then fending to view Haffers laid his fiege against Cangust, the strongest Castle in Normandy, which her clock the 16. of August, and gase both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother I homes. Duke of Clearese: And vinto Saishusy the leader of his second barrell, he gaue the Castle Annuelleurs, which at the flame time he had wome, as also that of Luners vinto the Eastle Marshall, and these were the first that are erin unded with any reuenew in Franse. (43) Cast to withfland the enemie was fitongly fortified, well mand, and vichualled, for hat nothing was wanting needfull for defined to were the first that excellules the control of the con	Stowes Annal, Alain Rocking, Annalet Bree, Annalet Bree, Palychronicon, Higtor, Norm, Denis Sanage, Cron.de Flan,		pictures showed	some at noise, not the wife defaced the faces of his Sains; trimly limmed in their Letanyes and other like mafile bookesa matter indeed of fach momen, that he Abbot of Sains Albam (in whole precinct they were taken) fent these poore missified and fraatched faced pictures, to complaine of their interes with the King, but his peace no broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and punishment thereof wino Chief Arebabiles.	through the thicke foggy Cloudes, made the base of which is bright in it felfs to seeme in their fights all bloody and darke, (49) The like troubles (though not for the like cause) happened vinto Queene Josse in the Kingablence, and time of Bodylow tregency, whose does not come as a contain ower true; that shee should by foctory feets whose the Market Sch. 32.
dentary and the back	miens where the Duke of Burgandy deliacred the me figued, which beganne in this fort. Johanne we Burg. Comes Handris, Arthufish & Burgandis, Petantu, Dominu de Salmis & G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis of G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and infection the salmis de G. McKollin sowner() and the salmis de G. McKollin sowner()	ified further into the maine, leaving the Countrey bare of men and bettial! Infomuch that twentie finethousand families of them repayed into Britain, for dreadfull wast the approach of the English (42) No fooner king Itemize foote had touched the floare, but to the incouragements of his Marihal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then fending to view Haffleral his fiege againt Conguent, the frongest Cashein Normandy, which had tooke the 16. of August, and gave both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother I formate. Dake of Clearese: And vinto Saisbury the leader of his fecond bartell, he gaue the Casilie Aumbellury, which at the famer time he had wome, a salic hard. Lawers vinto the Easte Marihall, and these were the first that were inuested with any receive if the theory of Lawers in the Cashein that were inuested with any receive if (43). Cast to withfland the enemie was fitting. If you was wasting enedfull for office worth & Kinn to.	Stowes Annal, Alain Rocking, Annalet Bree, Annalet Bree, Palychronicon, Higtor, Norm, Denis Sanage, Cron.de Flan,		pictures showed	other like mafie bookesa materie deed of theh mo- ment, that the Abbot of Saint Albant (in whole pre- cinct they were taken) fent thefe poor midited and (aracted faced pictures, to complaine of their inti- tes with other King, but his peace on ob robeen, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and put niffment thereof ymore briefly a webshire.	(which is bright in it felfe; to feem can their fight sall bloody and darke, (49) The like troubles (though not for the like cause) happened vnto Queene Louw in the Kingsablence, and time of Bodford regency, who for offerce was Capitall, if the accutation were true, that face though they for the control of the control
tame balance b	we Burg. Comes Handries, Arthufiel & Burgundie, Pe- tiums, Dominu des Salmies & O-Mechium owner() and institus, Dominu des Salmies (D-Mechium owner() and inferite titer as inflictens: Industries, Contended in Nouember Illowing made e lague (whereunt on the was fevores the think thing and Doubpius of France against Eug- ods, which his doings King, Henry cooke nothing ell. Bort his proceedings profering in France lee led a Parliament at London, where the Lord Chan- lur, Henry Busgirt, Bibliop of Windelfer and Cat- nual, Inter Kings behalfe made an eloquent Orati- quedaring the great offer his Maderhald to make ace with the French, which their King notwith- nings refilled, and against the law of Armes deni- yoon randome to render his prifoners taken at A- tenut, I hand the peace which was to be expected ub be with the fivord, concluding with this laying, 14 was the warm that we may have the lover the lower of the other to make ware that we may have the lover the lower of the other than the control of the control of the control of the con-	bare of men and beftiall: Infomuch that wentie fuerthouland families of them repayred into Britain, fo dreadfull was the approach of the Englift. (42) No floomer king femenie foote had touched the floore, but to the incouragements of his Marthal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then fending to view Barflers laid his fiege against Cangueff, the flronged Cathle in Normandy, which here tooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother 1 homes. Dake of Clearnes: And vinto Sakhsary the leader of his fecond baxtell, he gaue the Castle-Annellellers, which at the flame time he had wome, as all of that of Lawer vinto the Earle Marthall, and these were the first that were insuefied with any reuenew in France. (43) Canto withfland the enemie was flrongly fortified, well mand, and vichualled, for hat nothing via was marking needfull for define ver the Kins the.	Atmis Atmis, Alais Bouches, Atmalet Bres, Polychronicus, Histor, Norm, Donis Saunges, Cron. de Flan,		pictures showed	ment, that the Abbot of Saint Alban(in whole pre- cinct they were taken) tent thefe poor mifuled and feratched faced pictures, to complaine of their iniu- ries who the King, but his peace not broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and pu- nifhment thereof whore Chiefle and the face	caufe) happened wnto Queene Joane in the Kings ab- lence, and time of Bedfords regency, whose offence was Capitall, if the acculation were true; that shee should by forcety feels the death of the Niese
latin professage age finance	timus, Dominus de Salmis Go Astachlims omner fui feinte Litte simpliere: islatere, Go-c. datumis viuli mbiasmoli 17, die Actopit Aug. 1417. This notwith- nading the faid Duke recurred, and in Nouember llowing madea league (whereunto he was (worne) the he King and Daughisin of France againt Eug- ad, which his doings King Hemy tooke nothing ell. Bur his proceedings profepring in France he lled a Patiament at London, where the Lord Char- lar, Hemy Besuffy, Bilhop Of Winebelfer and Car- land, which the Kings behalte madean eloquent Orni- tial, charing the great of the his Madre Act acc with the Franch, which their King notwith- nding reflield, and againt the law of Armes deni- upon transome to render his prilomers taken at A- tewort, for that the peace which was no be expected ut be with the livered, which with this kinging.	hinethouland families of them repayred into Britain, for dreadfull wash teap prosch of the English. (42) No sooner King Hemise Stote had rouched the shoze, but to the incouragements of his Marthal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then fending to view Harllers laid his fiege against Conguest, the strongest Cashlein Normandy, which he crooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother Thomas. Duke of Cleavese: And vinto Salishary the leader of his second bartell, he gaue the Cashle Aumbellury, which at the fame time he had wome, a salic but of Lawes vinto the Earle Marthall, and these were the first that were inuested with any recuese in France. (43) Cases to withfland the enemie was fitrongly fortified, well mand, and vichauled, so that nothing was wanting needfull for define to ver the Kins to.	Annales Brei, Palychrenican, Hifter, Norm, Denis Saunge, Cron, de Flan,		pictures showed	cinct they were taken) fent these poore missied and scratched faced pictures, to complaine of their iniuries with the king, but his peace not broken, for no blood wasdrawine, he remitted the offence and punishment thereof wino Chiebles & Schilles & Schi	caufe) happened wnto Queene Joane in the Kings ab- lence, and time of Bedfords regency, whose offence was Capitall, if the acculation were true; that shee should by forcety feels the death of the Niese
profession of the control of the con	efente literas inflictions. [Soliton, Core. Automin wills missions [1] and Amplitange [1] A. This notwith-inding the flaid Duke recurred, and in Nouember [1] [Soliton and the Amplitange [1] Amplitange	(42) No sooner King Itemize Sooce had rouched the shoare, but to the incouragements of his Marlhal followers, he dubbed forty eight knights, and then sending to view Haffens alid his fiege againt Conguest, the strongest Cashein Normandy, which bee tooke the 16. of August, and gave both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother Thomas. Dake of Clearese: And vinto Sakibury the leader of his second barrell, he gaue the Casilie Aumbellura, which at the fame time he had wome, a sall of his cond barrell, he gaue the Casilie Aumbellura, which at the fame time he had wome, a sall of his of Lawar vinto the Easte Marshall, and these were the first that were inuested with any reunew in France. (43) Cast to with stand the enemie wast frong-ly fortified, well mand, and vichaulted, for hat nothing was wanting needfull for define very the King to the conditions of the condition	Histor, Norm, Denis Saunge, Cron.de Flan,		pictures showed	Cratched faced pictures, to complaine of their iniu- ries who the King, but his peace not broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and pu- nifhment thereof vance chiefle Archieflen e. 6.	caufe) happened wnto Queene Joane in the Kings ab- lence, and time of Bedfords regency, whose offence was Capitall, if the acculation were true; that shee should by forcety feels the death of the Niese
Ambiliand in the control of the cont	mbiamofi 17, die Monfi Mag. 1417. This nowith- nding the fail Obse recurred, and in Nouember llowing madea league(whereunto he was (worne) the he King and Daubhim of France againft Eng- ad, which his doings King Henry tooke nothing ell. But his proceedings profepring in France he led a Patiament at London, where the Lord Char- lar, Henry Besuffy, Bilhop Of Windelfor and Car- land, and the Carlo and the Carlo and the Carlo and Land and the Carlo and the Carlo and the Carlo and account the Franch, which their King notwith- inding refilled, and againt the law of Armes deni- upon transome to render his priloners taken at A- teours, I do that the prace which was not be expected ut be with the Word concluding with this laying.	the thoare, but to the incouragements of his Mariha followers, he dubbed forty eight huights, and then fending to view Barller laid his firege againft. Canqueft, the froncoght Cafelio in Normandy, which her tooke the 16. of August, and gave both it and the whole demaines belonging, vinto his brother Thomas Dake of Clarence: And vinto Salisbury the leader of his fecond baxeell, he gave the Castle Annellelors, which at the fame tellener, but do not come to the first that were insufed with any recenew in France. (43) Caen to withfland the enemie was frongly fortified, well mand, and vichalled, for hat nothing was wasting needfull for define; were he kine to the medium of the control of the	Histor, Norm, Denis Saunge, Cron.de Flan,		pictures showed at Paules Croffe.	ries vnto the King, but his peace not broken, for no blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and pu- nishment thereof vnro Chiefles Archides and pu-	ience, and time of Bedfords regency, whose offence was Capitall, if the acculation were true; that shee should by forcery seeke the death of the Vitan sheet should be sometimes.
flanc follow with Land, well with Land, well caller	anding the faid Duke recurred, and in Nouember llowing made Jeague (whereun to was fwome), the he King and Daulphin of France again Eng- al, which his doing King Henry tooke nothing ell. But his proceedings profipering in Prance hee leded Parliament at London, where the Lord chan- lar, Henry Beaufort, Bithop of Winshelp and Car- lall, in the Kings behalle made an eloquent Orati- dick and the Pranch, which their King nowith- nding refilled, and again the law of Armes deni- yoon ranfome to render his prilioners taken at A- researt, for that the peace which was to be expected ulb be with the fivord, concluding with this laying.	ifollowers, hedubbed forty eight knights, and then fending to view Harflera laid his fiege againt Congueft, the ftrongeth Caffle in Normandy, which he tooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demaines belonging, vino his brother Thomas. Dake of Cleavese: And vino Saishury the leader of his fecond bartell, he gaue the Caffle Annehellers, which at the fame either he and wome, a salfo that of Lawers vino the Earle Marfhall, and these were the first that were inuefled with any reunew in France. (43) Cast to withfland the enemie was ffrongly fortified, well mand, and vichualted, fortat continue, was wasting needfull for define to very the Kinn to.	Denis Sausge, Cron.de Flan,		at Paules Croffe.	blood was drawne, he remitted the offence and pu-	should by forcery seeke the death of the Vine of
in in in in in in in in in in in in in i	llowing madea leggue (whereunto he was (worne) the king and paulpin of France againft Engad, which his doings King Henry tooke nothing ell. But his proceedings profepring in France he led a Patianment at London, where the Lord Charling, Hong Office (18) for the Control of the led a Patianment at London, where the Lord Charling, Hong Office (18) for the Office (18) for the Control of the led a Patianment at London, where the Lord Charling, Hong Office (18) for the Control of the Con	aguil, the strongest Cassile in Armandy, which hee tooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the tooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demains belonging, winto his bother Thomas. Dake of Clarence: And vinto Saislawy the leader of his fecond battell, he gaue the Cassile Annobellers, which art the sime time he had wonne, is allo that of Lower vinto the Earle Marshall, and these were the first that were insuelted with any recurence in France. (43) Caen to with stand the enemie was strongly fortified, well mand, and victualled, so that nothing was waiting needfull for define to ver the Kins the.	Denis Sausge, Cron.de Flan,			nifiment thereof vnro Chieffer Archbiffer a for	
with land, well well called a	th the King and Doubpins of France againt Eng- ds, which his diong King Henry tooke nothing ell. But his proceedings profpering in France hee lled a Patiment at London, where the Lord Chan- lar, Henry Beaufort, Bithop of Virebeifler and Car- lall, in the Kings behalle made an eloquent Oraci- qued and the Strate and the made and coquent Oraci- qued and the French, which their King nowith- nding reflietd, and againt the law of Armes deni- yoon ranfome to render his prifoners taken at A- researt, for that the peace which was to be expected ulb be with the fivord, concluding with this laying, to make ware that we may have the local collection.	aguil, the strongest Cassile in Armandy, which hee tooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the tooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demains belonging, winto his bother Thomas. Dake of Clarence: And vinto Saislawy the leader of his fecond battell, he gaue the Cassile Annobellers, which art the sime time he had wonne, is allo that of Lower vinto the Earle Marshall, and these were the first that were insuelted with any recurence in France. (43) Caen to with stand the enemie was strongly fortified, well mand, and victualled, so that nothing was waiting needfull for define to ver the Kins the.	Denis Sausge, Cron.de Flan,				thought of the death of the King, thee
Land, well calle c	ud, which his doings King Henry tooke nothing ell. But his proceedings profesting in France he called a Patianent at London, where the Lord Charler, Henry Besuffey, Bishop of Windelpfer and Cartallall, in the Kings behalte made an eloquent Orntinall, in the Kings behalte made an eloquent Orntinall, in the Kings behalte made an eloquent Orntinall, occlusing the great offer his Madfer had to make ace with the French, which their King notwithmiding refilled, and againt the law of Armes dening the second of the work of Armes dening the second of the work of the second of the work of the second of the work of the second of the work of the second of the work of the their the word, concluding with this laying, to make ware that we want have the Mental Patients.	tooke the 16. of August, and gaue both it and the whole demains belonging, vinto his bother I homat Dake of Clarence: And vinto Salishury the leader of his fecond bastell, he gaue the Castle Aumbellers, which at the same time he had wonne, is allo that of Lower vinto the Earle Marshall, and these were the first that were insueled with any recurence in France. (43) Casm to withstand the enemie was strongly fortified, well mand, and victualled, so that nothing was waiting needfull for define to ver the Kinst the.	Cron.de Fian.				
well, well, well, and a caller adjusted a caller adjusted and a ca	ell. But his proceedings protecting in Pranse hee lied a Parliament at Landan, where the Lord Char- lar, Henry Beaufort, Bithop of Winscheffer and Car- nall, inthe Kings behalfer made an Couptent Oraci- declaring the great defire his Matherhad to make ace with the French, which their King notwith- nding refilled, and against the law of Armes deni- ypon raniome to render his prifoners raken as A- tenary, for that the peace which was not be expected ulb be with the fiword, concluding with this laying, to make ware that we may have the local field.	whole demaines belonging, vinco his brother *1 homes. Duke of Claresee: And vinco Saishary the leader of his fecond battell, he gaue the Caffie Annabellors, which at the fame eitime he had wome, a salfo who fame of Lawers unto the Earle Marfhall, and these were the first that were inuested with any reuenew in France. (43) Cast to withfland the enemie wast frong-ly fortified, well mand, and vichualted, so that nothing was wanting needfull for define. Very the Kine time.	Cron.de Fian.				therefore was committed to fafe keeping in the Ca-
grandinal on, de de la della red la de la	lied a Praitament at London, where the Lord Cham- lur, Hamp Beaufip, Bilbop Of Windelpfer and Car- laul Junthe Kings behalle made an eloquent Orati- tal Lindon, Carlotte and Lindon, Carlotte and Lindon, account the French, which their King norwith- nding refilled, and again the law of Armes deni- yoon raniome to render his prilones taken at A- tessors, for hat the peace which, was no be expected ulb be with their word, concluding with this laying, to make ware that we may have be. Incombine	Duker Clarence: And vino Salishury the leader of his fection disartell, he gaue the Caffle Jamballors, which at the fame time he had wonne, as also that of Learn's vino the Earle Marthall, and these were the first that were inselfed with any reuenew in France. (43) Cann to withstand the enemie was strongly fortified, well mand, and vichualled, so that nothing was wanting needfull for define 'vert he King to.	Cron.de Fian.		1		tended only with nine of her formance to Pemfey at-
gran- gran-	In., Henry Besufors, Bishlop of Wisseheffer and Car- nall, into Kings behalfe made an Coupern Crazi- declaring the great defire his Mafter had to make ace with the French, which their King notwith- nding refitled, and against the law of Armes deni- yoon raniome to render his prifoners raken as A- tessent, for that the peace which was no be expected ulb be with the feword, concluding with this laying, to make ware that we may have now. Incombine	his iecond bazrell, he gaue the Calife Annehelms, which at the fame time he had wome, as allo that of Loues vinco the Earle Marfhall, and these were the first that were inuested with any reunew in Franze. (43) Case to withstand the enemie was frong-ly fortified, well mand, and vichualled, so that nothing was wanting needfull for define for worth the first free.					rended only with nine of her feruants : her Confessor
grandon de de la del de la de la de la de la de la de la de la de la de la de la de	nail, the langs behalte made an eloquent Orati- doctaining the great define his Maker had to make ace with the French, which their King notwith- nding refitled, and again the law of Armes deni- ypon ranfome to render his prifoners taken at A- sears, for that the peace which was to be expected with the with the floord, concluding with this laying.	which at the same time he had wome, as also that of Lower vito the Earle Marthall, and these were the first that were inuested with any reuenew in France. (43) Casts to withstand the enemie was strong- ly fortified, well mand, and victualled, so that nothing was wanting needful for defense . wet the King fore			1		Frier Randolph a Doctor of diuinity was likewise apprehended asher Counsellor and worker in this division of the state of
on,d Peace fitance ed vy gines gines mufit Let v confice confice Beauf did c ten t (44 King in Five cenfor correc which Daulip wast fiath	Acclaiming the great defire his Mather had to make ace with the French, which their King notwith- inding refilted, and against the law of Armes deni- ypon ransome to render his prisoners taken at .A- recent, so that the peace which was to be expected with be with the fivord, concluding with this saying.	Leners vinto the Earle Marfiall, and these were the first that were inuested with any reuenew in France. (43) Carn to withstand the enemie was strongly fortified, well mand, and victualled, so that nothing was wanting needfull for defense. yet he king sea.			Ex.Record.Parla.	1 (4/) A Parliament attembled by the December 1	uelift are for which he was a worker in this di-
Peace franched and the second of the second	ace with the French, which their King notwith- inding refiled, and againft the law of Armes deni- ypon ranfome to render his prifoners raken as A- neourf, to that the peace which was to be expected with be with the liword, concluding with this laying. It as make ware that we man have none headed for	the first that were inuested with any reuenew in France. (43) Caen to withstand the enemie was strongly for tissed, well mand, and victualled, so that nothing was wanting needfull for defense, were the King for			5. H. 5.		er, where falling at words with the Parfon of Saint death
gran- gran-	inding relified, and against the law of Armes deni- vyon ransome to render his prisoners taken at A- secourt, so that the peace which was to be expected us be with the sword, concluding with this saying, it as make ware that we may have been because the	France. (43) Caen to withfland the enemie was ftrong- ly fortified, well mand, and victualled, to that nothing was wanting needfull for defense: yet the King Green			1	warres in France, a matter of as great importance was	er, where falling at words with the Parfon of Saint each Peters (the Church of that place) he was wounded to death; and Queene Ioans thereupon preferries
grandon for configuration of the configuration of t	vpon ransome to render his prisoners taken at A- neonst, so that the peace which was to be expected uith be with the sword, concluding with this saying, the symbol warre that wee may have peace, hereals the	(43) Caen to withstand the enemie was strong- ly fortified, well mand, and victualled, so that nothing was wanting needfull for defense; yet the King (are					to death; and Queene Ioane thereupon presentile deliuerd.
grander of the control of the contro	neourt, to that the peace which was to be expected uff be with the fword, concluding with this faying. It is make warre that wee may have peace, because the	ly fortified, well mand, and victualled, fo that nothing			The Lord Cab.	and judgement of the Lord Callian mini Ci 1	delinerd
mult Let z gran- endog gran confer co	ult be with the word, concluding with this faying.	was wanting needfull for defense ver the King fare	Polyd.Verg.		ham taken by the Lord Paweffe,	ration of reward for his taker the Lord Poweffe in	(50) King Henry proceeding in his Conquest of Normandy, about Hollantide laid slege to the strong
grander of the management of t	t us make warre that wee may have beace, he coule the	was wanting needfull for detente: yet the King fate			Lord Paweffe,		Normandy, about Hollewide loid Gonnes of
gran. and of the control of the con	to the state of th		1				
market configuration of the co	dof warre is peace. Whereunto the whole body	downe before it, and his battery not working the ex-	l		1 1	hisconnictions would not thereunto answere in his	
Tent too fil force Beauf did c ten the confirmation of the confirm	niented, and granted to the King a Subfidie and a	pected effect, he attempted it by mine, and ruinated fome parts of the Wall: Notwithstanding the de-	1		1 1		not able longer to refift, demanded and had Parley, King.
too if force Beauf did c ten th (4 King in Fracenfor correct which ad ad- ad- ar the pue- see. Wasti fraftu	nth which was graciously accepted, but was farre	fendants made fiffe defence and market					
torce Beauf did c ten th (44 King, in Free enfor correct which ad- ad- arthe pue- wee. liaftn	fhortto defray the great Charge, fo that he was	fendants made stiffe defence, and manfully put backe the entrance or scale. Neuerthelesse Henry seeing			1 1		
Beauf did c ten the (4 King, in Fr. enfor correct which ad- put the correct which ad- put the correct which ad- put the correct which ad- put the correct which ad- put the correct which ad- put the correct which ad- put the correct which ad- put the correct which ad- put the correct was to the cor	ced to paune his Crowne vnto the faid Bishoppe	the chitance of leafe. Neuerinelelle Henry leeing			Fox. Alls and		ton Knights wereby the King appointed Commissioners who after to me confirmation the confirmation to the c
did c ten th (44 King in Fr enfor correct which ad- pue- suce. finding	usfore his vncle, for a great fum of money, as he	that they could not long fubfift, vinwilling to carrie	1		Menuments.	the miceles viito Saint Giles helds and there to bee I	
ten the (44 King in Free enforcement which adopted and the same.	certaine Iewels to the Lord Major of London for	it in fury, which must beethe destruction of the	Kine Henes offer		The reulew by		on these conditions. 1. That if the King of France, furrend
King, in Fr. enfor correct which add add add add add add add add add ad	thousand Marks.	Inhabitants, when he fought to fauc, and to make his true subjects, summoned them by an Herault, and promised them provided them	reth great mercy			done. That N. D. author of the three convertions	I the Dolbhan, or Contrable did not by force with at 1 That if
in Free enforcement which ad- pue- pue- pue- pue- pue- pue- pue- pue	(40) Money thus got and the Seas made fafe,	and promised them mercy: which they in hope of	to the belieged.				liege before the tecond of langary entiting that the
in Free enforcement which ad- or the que- twee. was ti	g Hemy purpoied further to follow his fortunes	reliefe vtterly despised :hereupon his entry was for-	ŀ		1 1	bell, and his authority taken from the Stage-plaiers,	Towns should bee rendred to Henry. 2. That all should relieve the first should be the
correct which correct which can be correct which can be correct was the correc	France, his aduantages many (as the French would	ced, and great flaughter made, till the King flaied his			1 1	is more besitting the pen of his slanderous report,	the firangers that were not properly Inhabitants of
y bad which ad- for the que- auce. Was to	Office) through the weake-braind King, not able to	fouldiers furies, and caused the Citizens to disarme		1 .			the strangers that were not properly Inhabitants of Fallais, and had formerly fought against King Henrie in any place, belieged and taken within Normandy thould be the strangers.
or the Daulp que- auce. was t	rect the Factions of the Rurgundian and Orleance	themselves, setting a strong guard aswell to keepe	i .	}	Papilts and Po- ets of like con-	ded from this Papift and his Poct, of like conscience	in any place, belieged and taken within Normandy heleix fhould be left to his mercie, 3. That all English Pri
or the Danip que- zed b was t	ich troubled all France; and the death of Lemisthe	the spoilers from pillaging, as the Townsfmen		1 }.	frience for ficti-	for lies, the one euer faining, and the other euer falli- fying the truth: that Copus hath made the Lord	inodid be lett to his mercie, 2. I hat all Fnolish Dei
que- was t	#IPBM Whole funerall might have been Colemnial	from all hostile attempt: and they that did, were ei-				Cohbam a Traisons, and Same Grant made the Lord	foners which were in the Towne fhould bee fet at li- That all
flaffu	by the mourners from Agincourt, his death (as)	ther pur to death or ranfome, which was freelie di-			Thomas Otter.	Cobham a Traitour: and Stom from Otterborn allea- geth Indentures drawne betwixt him and the Scots,	Derty, rantome tree and acquirred of their Cost - Priloner
l Haftu	Sthought \happening immediately upon the di I		l		1	to bring in a Counterfeit Richard, and to inuade the	made vnto them whose Prisoners they were. 4. That
	flure: and to heave more differ the manner of the	which regular action King Henrie cor him the			1 1	land with forraine power, that he acknowledged no	
miler	lerable French, John the Kines (econd forme and	estimation of a great Captaine, and an vpright	-		1 1	King but the lame Counterfeit in Scotland, and	
		Prince.	1		1 1	made himselse a falle Christ in rising againe the third	5. That neither Captaine, Burgeffe nor Towner- Inflice.
lite,	who together were entombed at Compaigne	(44) But whether by the working of the French,	The, Wal.				man of Fallays thould give any relieferothe Caffell That no
Inci	icle, lay the French, were the bane of the stare and	or by initigation of the discontented reformations			The Walfing.	but his attainture of Treafons, I leaue it to the an-	of viction of municion, during the truce accorded take Con
) the pa	Dalts that made King Heary to hite: Notwith then						
ding	g wee shall finde them but curtaines to shadow	In reuning a dead King Pickerd shorthands. 7.			1 11	his combination with the Scate, vnto the leres of	Persons or Goods of any within the Castell, where-
the le	light if we looke into the project with an indiffe-		Thomas Otterber.		1 (1	and repression of the ligence is	by they or their goods might be protected. 7. That the Captaines and Souldiers flould receive new them.
rente	t eye, for the Kings weakenes was supported by				1 10	of the Scots intent, and the meanes by which they	the Captaines and Souldiers should receive no pre-
	gogne Armagnae and other potent effates; Bur-				1 17	meant to worke, fignificth vnto his brother and	iudice in their Horfes, Armes, or Goods; great Artillery, Shotte, powder and Croffe-bowes excepted; but he first specification of the capacitation
n. Henry	dy by Oath, made a mortall enemy against King	there his emulating neighbours, and his confines in			1 1	encle in these wordes, as from the Originall is	tuicry, Snorte, powder and Croffe-bowes excep- dealt with
u. 226(W)	mry. Orleance in England a prisoner and without	HORRIG Manner entered your by the Duke of all.			1 1	aken,	
tho E	ket in hand could not bandy the Ball to marre		Stowes Amale		1 1		cond Article were exempted from that fanour
the r	French plea: and as touching the deathes of the	ucis: I neie bringing with them their flagge like K	Stower Atmate		l I	Part of a letter written with King Henrie 5.	8. That the Artillery, Powder, Shot, and Croffe-That the
thata	o Daulphins their raked up aftes kept in the sparke it afterward was the only light of France, for these,				Out of the Ori-	his owne hand to the Duke of Excepter.	8. That the Artillery, Powder, Shot, and Crosse- bowesafore mentioned, should not, during the truce, bee embezelled, wilfully broken, or made away.
(tho	nough Crowned) were not at a siller of trance, for thele,	wicke, where all allaies were arrempted by un J		1	1		That during the rules of a made away, not be in
able :	ough Crowned) were not the pillars of ftrength	mining tile wais, and turrets, all extremities yied and			"Esdford	Furthermore I will that ye commune with my * brother,	
The	e to sustaine the great weight of that Empire : ne first a Prince of little valour, and great toyle,	nothing lett vnattempted, that might annov either			Darijas, 2	With the * Chancellour, with my Colen of Novelment.	not beerepaired, and no new workes of defence ere- ded. 10. That no oppression be vied by the sayd
nrefit	firming to know much and amailling at				1 14	and and my Colen of Wellmorland and that wee fet a good	Souldierymon the Buygette and if any of the fayd ded.
hofici	fuming to know much, and vnwilling to learne,	(45) But Beauford Duke of Excesser being at	Titus Link			raer and or amance for my North-Marches, and alleri	Soudier vpou the Burgefff, and if any were found fatathal faulty and net prefently banifled for the fame, they flood look the benefit which otherwise they flood have by the accord. 11. That no Captaine, foul-face, or Townelman floud I methand county away the mene. When the fatathal county away any Prifoner, ornaments, Iewels, or Church Religious, either belonging to Fallis, or to any other fatathal county and the fatathal county and t
encus	rying nimialta wish his falfa and L. C. C. C.		I TEMP LINE		1	will the Duke of Orleance, and for all the Remnant of	thought look the benefit which or the same, they getter the
orber	lying himlelte with his felte, and by his info fici.	newes of this present necessity, and therefore former			1 /	by Prisoners of France. And also for the King of Sent.	have by the accord I There of their foul
thath	lying himlelte with his felte, and by his infuffici-				1 14	and, for as I am fecretie informed by a man of viole	dies on Townsform (bould and and a Captaine, foul- for the tir
ofani	tying himselfe with his felfe, and by his insuffici- ty rather troubled then managed the estate. The	and tooke to his armour, which was not rules			1 1	able estate in this land, that there hath heene a man of	any Dei Congress Congress of the Congress of the truce.
Greh	tying nimitelite with his felte, and by his infuffici- ty rather troubled then managed the effate. The lart, none of the wifeft and of nature for emiffe, tithe was energedy (as ways) to sake the flame.	I lying, to lately but off, neitherdid Jane Dalescon, I			1 150	of Dake of Orleance in Scotland, and accorded with the	ligures either belonging to 7 "
Frenc	lying nimetre with his felte, and by his infuffici- yr arther troubled then managed the eftate. The set, none of the wifeft and of nature for emiffe, the was ener ready (as waxe) to take the flamp anic impreffe, but as the propure he is let the loa-	The state of the s			1 12	THE OF Albam that this next (women hee thall being in)	inques, cittler belonging to Fallais, or to any other by thing
	ying nimicite with his felte, and by his infoffici- ye rather troubled then managed the eftate. The let, none of the wifelt and of nature for remiffe, it he was enerteady (as waxe) to take the flamp anic impresse, but as the prouer bein, let the loo- shaue leaue to speake, and yst or elate our Enphili	ford the Protector, forellow any time bur wish Gas			i ti	he manuell of Scotland to fturre what he may. Also that	If hurch or religious House when were burned at the China
۱ '	ying nimetre with his felle, and by his infoffici- yr ather troubled then managed the eflate. The set, none of the wifeft and of nature foremiffe, the was enerready (as waxe) to take the flamp anic impreffe, but as the pronerbes, let the loo- shaue leane to fpeake, and vs to relate our English with buffelfes.	thousand firong, repaired into the North when					ther for Gery 12 That no coods ft 11
	ying nimicite with his felte, and by his infoffici- ye rather troubled then managed the eftate. The let, none of the wifelt and of nature for remiffe, it he was enerteady (as waxe) to take the flamp anic impresse, but as the prouer bein, let the loo- shaue leaue to speake, and yst or elate our Enphili	ford the Protector, foreslow any time, but with fixe thousand strong, repaired into the North, where, with the Earles of Westmerland and Northumberland,			1 1	here should bee founden waies to the having away special-	injurs, cither belonging to Falkiri, or to any other is Church or religious Houfe, that were brought thin ther for fafety. 12. That no goods should be pulloined or carried out of the Town during the treaty, is considered in the treaty.

giue ayde, the vantgard was broken, and most of them flaine, and taken Prisoners. Vpon this difafire the fouldiers within mutined against Guy de Bontellier their General, murmuring that he had contriued the breaking of the bridge.

(56) In these distastures King Charles returning

tainement, he caused two tents to be set vp at Port S. Hillarie. Their Commissioners were two gentle- The Rose men, two Clergie-men, and two Burgesses of the desire apatley. Towne. Commissioners for the King were the the demands of the Rosennois were many, but their answers were short; that no conditions would be accepted, but fimply yeelding to the kings mercy; whereupon the conference brake vp, and thefe returned into the Towne, bred fundry diffractions, some value fleed. crying to yeeld, and other some crying to die like men, but Hemie defirous to be Mafter of the Towne. and fearing it would be fired by themselues, if he wan it by force, made the Archbishop of Canterbury his Instrument, whose vocation was fit for it, to call again | The Articles of the Commissioners, and againe fell into treaty of the composition, which lastly was agreed, ypon these Articles as follow. I. That the Burgestes should

2. That Robert Limet vicar generall to the Archbifhop of Rouen, Iehan Iourdan who commanded the Ganoniers, and Alen Blanchart Captaine of the Principal Information of the Infor Common people, should be left to his mercy without condition, 3. That all the people should sweare All to sweare faith and loyalty to Henry and his Successors, 4 That feeler to King

Chap.15. | Henrie V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 52. That their pri-Henrie should protect and defend them against all men, and confirme vnto them their priniledges, franchites, and liberties, which they had enjoyed euer

them. That who fo fince the time of Saint Lewis king of France. 5. That would,might de all fuch as had defire to leave the Towne, might freenace but their goods should bee forfeit, The fouldfers to ly depart, with his garments upon his backe only, and his goods to be confilered vnto King Henry, 6. That the fouldiers should bring all their Armes to a place refigne vp their affigned, and should depart out of the Towne vnarpart, promifing twelve months med with a Cudgell in their hands, first taking their Oath not to beare Armes against Hemy, for a twelue truce. month next enfuing. (57) This agreement was concluded the 16 of

June Anno 1418, when as the hungry Citizens in The hungry Ci tizens plentifu relieued from Henries campe. A far mutton fould for 6, foufes. King Henry roi-ally entreth the

4

multitudes came to the English Campe to buy victuals, which so abounded with Provisions, as a fat mutton was fould for fixe foules of Paris money. Vp. on the next day following, Henrie triumphantlie made his entry into Rowen; the Ecclesiasticks of the Towne, in their miters and vestures, with their reliques, finging of Hymnes, conducted him to the Cathedrall Church, where before the high Altar, vpon his knees, he gaue thankes to God for the

Conquest of this Towne, which had remained two hundred and fifteene yeeres in the possession of the French, euen from the time when Philip King of France wan it from king Iohn of England. The day Philip from King Jobs of England. following, Alain Blanchart the Captaine of the common people was beheaded, Robert Linet, and lehan Tourdan, put to their high ranfomes, the French Gar-

risons pillaged, vnarmed, and put out of the Towne, but fafely were conducted ouer Saint Georges-bridge to goe whither they would. Guy de Bouteliter, who was Captaine generall of Rouen, became King Henries leigeman, vnto whom he gaue all his lands, and a charge under the Duke of Gloucester. Immediately Many Townes yeeld after the farrender of after the rendering of Rover, fundry other places of note yeelded themselves, as Caudebee, Monstrevillier, Diepe, Feschamp, Arques, Neuschastell, Deincourt, Eu. Moncheaux, Vernon, Mante, Gorney, Harflewr, Ponteur-de-Mer, Mollineaux, le Treict, Tancaruille, Abre-

chier, Mauleurier, Valemont, Neufuille, Bellaucombre,

Fontaines, Le Boure, Preaux, Nouvonder-wille, Lovem-

Henries rifing fortunes, held it best to vphold his

pree, Saint Germain, Sur Caylly, Baudemont, Bray Vil'eterre, Charles-Maifmill, Les Boules Guillen court, Fantfontaines, Le Becq, Crepin, Backeuille, and divers other places wherein Henry placed his Garrisons. France generally troubled, and trembling at the loffe efpecially of Ronen, Henrie ready to pierce forward, and Charles declining through his infirmities encreafing; Bargegnt ende-noteth to make a the Duke of Burgogne (who bare all the fway vnder that infirme King, and therefore much hated by the Peace between Charles and Daulphin, whose reuenge he feared,) much doubting

own greatnes, by mediating a peace betwixt the two Polyd.Verg. Kings. For which end he fent his Ambaffadours to Henry, praying personall Conference; to which he affented and affigued the place, which was at Melun. The place of where in a field well trenched, and ramparted with

ftrong Gates, two pauillions were arreard, the one for the Kings to repose themselues in, and the other for their counfell to confult in.

(58) Charles, I fabell, Burgogne, and Katherine, the Count Saint Paul, with a thouland horse garding them The French flates came firft. thether, came first King Henry with his brothers of Clarence and Cloucester, attended vpon with a thoufand horse, held the appointment; and now met, the two Kings embraced each others; Henry kiffed I-Henry meeteth with a thouland horse. fabell and Katherine, who indeed became a precious pearle in his eye : Burgogue a little bending his knee, did his reuerence to Henry, who tooke him in

his Armes: and the two nations though mortall enemies, demeaned themselves so civilly, as no cause of quarrell was offered on either fide, much conference Their follows paffed, but nothing concluded; Hemies demands on both parts though enemics demeane themfeeming to the French to bee fo vnreasonable. The treaty thus diffolued, and all ready to depart, King Henry not well pleased, spake thus vnto Burgogne, cofen, I may not wel digest this refusall, but be you assu-

610 ec red, that either I will have your Kings dainghter, and all | King Heavy dif-'my demands, or elfe I will banift both you, and them, out " of France. You speake your pleasure said the Duke, but before you shall thrust the King, them, and me jout of the refulall. The Dukes reply. Realme you will be weary of the enterprize.

(59) The treaty thus broke, and danger nothing leffe, the Burgundian altogether French, and in heart Burgogne Gdeth with the Daufno triend to the English, reconciled himselfe vnto the Daulphin, which deed was foone after the cause of his ward flew him. owne death; and Henry displeased with this combination, quickened his thoughts (full of renenge) to profecute the warre more sharpely then heretofore; the first enterprize he made, was vpon Ponthois, vnto which Towne the last day of Iulie hee fent three | ged,

thouland foote, which before the breake of day, and not discouered by the Centinels, set their Ladders to the Wals, mounted vp, crying Saint George, and fo opening a Port let in their Companions. The signeur de L' Iste-Adam Marshall of France and Gouer-

nour of the Towne, affrighted at the surprize, fled out at another Port towards Paris, after whose exam ple aboue ten thousand Inhabitants did the like, so as the English without reliftance were Mafters of the The fouldiers

Towne, wherein great riches fell to the fouldiers shares. When King Charles at Paris heard of the got prentriches loffe of Ponthois, in great feare with his wife, daughter, Burgundy, and many noblemen, to be further from the fire fo neere at hand, went vnto Trojes eh-Champagne, leaning Paris vnder the Gouernment of the lose of Pate

the Count Saint Paul, and Euflach de Lactre Chancel. thou flieth from lor of France, whilft Henry went forward with his intended enterprizes. (60) For his brother of Clarence by three weekes fiedge wan the Castell Gizers by composition, the

wholy neglecting the common cause, which gaue

the English surer footing in France: but the Daulphin

to make good what he had done, leades the King in

iealously that the Queenes delignes were dangerous,

and altogether fet for the alienation of the Crowne,

which he weake man, no fooner heard then belee-

ued, being cuer ready to take her at the worst and ne-

strait guard, three Gentlemen in Commission to take

care of their fafeties : till then her fauours had gone

with Orleance, and with him had contested euer a-

gainst Burgogne, but now to quit her imprisonment, shee reconciled her selfe vnto him, and sollicited his

assistance for her deliucrance. Burgogne well percei-

uing how much it would aduance his part, to draw

the Queene to be of his faction, brake up his fiege

then laid before Corbeill, and with certaine choise

Eccee 2

uer ouergone in her loue at the best,

Earle of Huntington facked Preaux, burnt Bretwiell, Clermont, and the Castell of Venducil, and Henry himselfe besieged the Castell of Guillart, and Rochguien two of the strongest holds in Normandy; which vp-Guillart and pon compositions were surrendred, and further preuailed more then the French wished. For the Daul-

phin, the only man that flood for the publike defence of France, was milerably poore, and for want of pay could make no great flew of followers in the field,

whose chiefe Counselior was the Constable Armag. me an old craftie foxe, that had ever fided with orleance against the Burgundian. And now fearing least his owne effecte fhould be leffened, or that Burgun-

dy should be the Archite to crosse him the wife Achitopbel, or rather indeed thrust forward by destinie to be the scourge and fall of France, he counselled the

young Daulphin to seize upon his mothers money, Queene Ifelell robd of her lew-els and plate, iewels and plate, for his further supply to the publike vie, (which immediately he did) to advance the estate : but Queen I fabell impatient of these wrongs received,in a womanish splene studies the reuenge,

The Daylekin

(61) These sparkes of sedition thus blowne Annals of Bur in the Court, suspitions increasing, and maligners | sund),

fill working, Queene Ifabelt with her fifter in law, the Dutchesse of Basier were sent prisoners to Blois, and from thence to Eours where they were kept with

Queene Ifabei

Shee folliciteth Surgogne for he delactance.

troopes repaired toward Trours, from whence im-- Condest to the Queene. mediately he sent the Queene word of his comming. Shee

The City of Roams befreged.

be hollages. The Caffelire-

paired, the Go-uernour should be setat liberry.

Pcbru.16,

Polyd Vere.

Ouguerrant de Manfirell,

Coop Cirizene well trained within Rooms

The River Seins

blockt vp with I ron-Chants.

for ten months continuance; notwithstanding K. Henry quartered about the Towne, and for his fafety cast vp a Trench betwixt the wais and his men: the

River seme hee blockt vp with three Iron-Chaines, one of them layd two foote aboue water, another with the leuell, and the third two foote under the water, to forbidde all reliefe vnto the Citty by Boats.

(53) With the English, fixteene hundred Irish

fiege, and leave it in the same fort as it was before

the same was belieged. 4. That for the perfour-

mance of these Articles, eight Gentlemen should re-

maine Hoftages with the King. 5. That when the

Castell was prepared, Sir Oliner Manny, and al his

Company (hould be fet at liberty, and varill then to

remaine the Kings Prisoners, Geoffrey de Chasteaux

aboue mentioned only excepted. These agree-

ments concluded the Indenture Subscribed and king

Henries feale of Armes thereunto fixed, at the * pre-

fixed day according to these Articles the Castell of

Fallais was rendered vnto him : which done, he dini-

ded his Army into manie parts, vnder the feuerall

conducts of the Dukes of Clarence, and Glouceffer, and

the Earle of Warwicke: who wan diners Castels,

himselse the while marching to besiege Rouen, where

he fet downe his fiege, and began the affault in a fu-

rious manner: the defendants as obstinately bent

to hold him out : fo that to winne the Towne by

torce , Henry found it very difficult , aswell for the

ftrength of Bulwarkes and Ramparts as for the num-

ber of hands within it, to make refistance, and

(52) For Burgogne from King Charles had lent

many worthy Captaines with a thouland felected

Souldiers to defend the City, and within it belides

were fifteene thousand Citizens well trained and

furnished: and the Towne stored with victuals

therefore to reduce them by famine was his only de

towards Paris, fent the belieged word to make what thift they could, which vnexpected meffage stroake a fad feare into the miserable defendants hearts, who weake in men and victuals, knew no way to fubfift, and thereupon in Counfell concluded to fend vnto Henry, which prefently they did. For whose enter-Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Earle of Warwick:

giuevnto Henry towards his expense in tolling the fiege, three hundred fifty fixe thousand Crownes of gold,

That Robert Limet vicar generall to the Archbi.

Henry. Henry

Service for the control of the contr	640		CESSION OF Monarch 52.		Chap.15	Henrie V. ENGLANDS	MONARCHS. Monarch 52.	. [
And the contraction of the contr		Shee faining denotion to the Abbey of Marmonstier	in regard of his health, the fummer extreme hot, and	Notwithftan-		breach of promise, for that the ciuill warres and his	rence, and Gloucefter his brethren the Duke of Freefte	·
service for the conting the sharper and the property and the property of the p		leated lomewhat without the Towne, made it known	his blood as then ouer (ubiect to dangerous foner	ding his tickne	1	garrifons were not forceast and withdrawne, the	the Earles of Warwicke Huntingdon Salishury Quienn	
street of the complete graph at short piece of the control of the		to ner keepers, and they not daring to contradict lo	New deuiles were wrought to ftay him at home, g	- lourney.	1	Dukes word hanging too farre backe, and fome-	and many other nobles. This guard confifting of five	r_
we was a continuence and and progress on operation and in a continuence and in the continue		great a Princelle, milituiting no danger, attended her	UIDZIC forth that Crass was fled Reitsions and in As	_1		what troubling his kneeling, he put his hand vpon	teene hundred Launces and Archers)departed from	mt.
The company of the co		thitnerward with a competent guard as they suppo-	rages was imprisoned by the Queene. All this not	_	1	the hilt, to put it more forward, whereat Robert de	Rouen to Ponthois, to S. Denic, and from thence into	n [
And the standard program of the prog	anner of	led, where Folseux and Vergie two especiall men in	withitanding, needes would be forward to forward i	s		Lorre standing by, sayd, doe you draw your sword a-	Prosins, where he was met neere unto Treves by the	
The control of the large state of the control of th	ane from	the Dukes truft, were laid in the Ambush neere vnto	man when his fate will lo haue it.		He isflaine by	gainst the Lord Daulphin? at which words Tanneguy	Dake of Rurounds and many other French Lands and	4
begage with in pricine on interest for feature. For the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the visible distinction of the properties and the pro	bers*	the Abbey, and having notice the Oueene was come	(46) He departed Means in Julie: the vere ve	- m	Tannegay de (ha-	de Chaffell with a battle-axe stroke him on the face	with all Princelie attendance was conducted in	4
Aborger with profest to attend for force. Here an emodificacy dult the Queen of Land and the Company		to Church, came to falute her, and to fignific that the	I'v hot, his head coursed with a great Can of Carlos	.	fiel and others.	and cut off his Chin and others with other wounds		
skeptscheduling bed ficknown was not growed by the control of the		Burgogne was in person to attend her service. Her	his body wrapped in a thicke veloci lerkin warma	?	l .	made an end of his life before he could arife from	received of scielly of the View of the	15
and the second district and the second control aname and the second control and the second control and the second		keepers conceining their feconds were nor farre off.	nough for winter his mind differenced with the ile	. T	1	his knee or get out his finand	receited, especially of the King, the Queene and Lad	9 н
design of the ment in terms a traveral metal-dependent of the layer spectrum of the laye		as men difmayed, told the Oueen of fome fear. & that	griefe and despite and his body meaning mich	,	Ourene Kakel	(co) Oungro (Glall annulus annulus annulus annulus		
standard proposed and she players betti- liver to trapped to better and why the part of any of the control of the part of the start of the start of the start of the part of the part of the start of the part of		an enemie was necre at hand; wheren no fhee answe-	chine diffasture and want of suft. Thus and		incres his forme,	who come i work and the criteria weara and	pecting his comming, where forthwith he and the	e
de ferministration propriedend for his progregal march of a Como chien ringer, and by his mours want the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and the Region of The Region and The Regi		red. I am not ignorant who they are and therennon	forma of Manual and Want of reit. I has entring th	Cherles in the	to revenge it,	vinaturali mother, habing a double offence done	Lady was affianced; and falling effloones into confe	-
ments of the production of the		commanded to apprehend those her keepers, her li	ded and have been der poone-tide, a man bare-hea	- forieft, at Noon-	and moties	ner, redoubled her wrath and continued her tragick	rence of the conditions of amity, thele were confen	14
with another was much that graph of Fare's, told (2). By his motive was much that graph of a search of the search	made	berriethus got thee became whole for Berganus and	ded, and trare legged attired in a Coat of white rugge	Parizian	herite the Daul-	pations against her sonne the young Daulphin, who	ted vnto by the French and King Henry,	1
where the process of the State	ofFrance,	by his meaner was made the P count of Towns and			aqobe bne side	not only incites Philip now the new Duke of Bur-	I. That K. Henry thould take Lady Katherine to wife	c.
Configuration for contract and despited and reconstruction for contract and contrac		her picture framped upon the Sanla of the Con-	caught hold of his bridle, flaid his horse, saying, Kin	7 .	King Hairy.	gogne to reuenge his murdered fathers death, but tor-	2. That Charles &: I fabel froud retaine the name of	of T
of the blanks, and if other memor afind accounts of the control of		De bisch Comme Scale of that State.	ride no turther but returne hacke for thou art between	i I	1	ments her poore husbands spirits, in perswading him	King and Queene and should hold all their dignities	5. 8
of the behalf, and (a the same af mid-decoded with present of the behalf, and (a the same af mid-decoded with present of the behalf of the beh		(42) By birth line was a Germane, and daugh-	Charles whole ipirits were otherwise dulled, and hi	s ·	1	to differite Charles their fonne, and to give in marri-	rents, and possessions belonging to the Crowne of	Fin
of the behalf, and (a the same af mid-decoded with present of the behalf, and (a the same af mid-decoded with present of the behalf of the beh		ter co stepnen Duke of Bamer, of an imperious spirit,	blood greatly diffempered, was amazed at the voice	• 1		age Lady Katherine vnto King Henry, who now had	France, during their naturall lines	K
and protection with following a billionized as wholl are the content of the foliograph of a form with the content of the foliograph of the content of the		and vireconcileable enuic, not ouermuch beloued	which feene, his fernants ranne to this man, and with	. 1	Guil Parradon .	fet his foote farre into France. Duke Philip for his	2 That the Lada Katherine fould have her Down	
and who the control the thought are the first control the man variable of the control that		of her husband, and (as the nature of most women	blowes forced him to leane the reines of the horfe	:1	Canal annual	part ready for revenue fent the Rithon of dever with	in Tuelendes Ousenshauer Commence Inch	
sample of the control		l are not ouermuch fauouring his fanorites whose fee	and to without any further fearch the man vanished	il		other his Ambaffadors vnto Forento King U	that is to fav. the firmme of farm should will	2 14
And the commendation of the control of Corona which her was a control of C		mail authority and hatred against her owne sonne	away.	•1		entrear a neace and agains not many daise after about	that is true to a noble	>
of the dath, Sug-factors are followed by the Page design for the process of the p		Daniphin Charles fore bruiled the Crowne which her		. [returns (ant backe the faid Bifton ant -	LIBRUIS, TWO TO A NODIC.	1
of the Chamber and so correlating with the intercured of the first profit in the intercured of the intercured	ifes why	weake husband ware: his foregone infirmities and	of the duft King Charles and fall and the	1		was fo pleafing that Henry Court Did	4. I nat the lame lumme of forty thouland iceu	4
part for your laws, according or law middle for process and the didding of Frame, breath that filled, but for the form of the	ch were	incr new iprung Regency, were now as two find.	ofhis Chamber who or and an animowed by the Page	1		des about the first state of the state of th	tes yeerely, inali bee confirmed vito Queene Kathe-	-
to the pipe of the mean of the purple in the process of the purple in the process of the purple in the process of the purple in the process of the purple in the process of the purple in the purple i	er con-	gates fet open to let in the deluge of France here is	from personal outercharged with heat and di	· [1	fter, the Larle of Warwicke and Guten vnto Arras, who	rine by our lawes, according to our vivall rights, at	١.
magazimen has beere, but not madel, however too meet it came it street a which the table, before we provide the street of the st	ny King	to be spoken of in the interconfe of the Facilit. his	horfo fo there there is no great paines to guide their	1		were as welcome vinto Duke Philip; to that betwixt		1
and covered to the control of the language of the season of the control of the language of the		manie times hath beene but not medale	inoric, to that infonging together he which horsely	. !	1	Rosen and Arras messengers continually passed till	5. That the faid Lady Katherine fo ouerli-	-1
position forward unthat place, it we read what combined to the lings good and a street of the place of the pl		it came : therefore a while in the fishing 1 . C	Aings Lance, let it fal vpon him, who had on his head	His followers	A peace conclu-	a peace was concluded; which was proclaimed to	uing vs, from the time of our death, shall have	e l
(4) This Clarke for their, and finke brained king for the form or the form of his production of the manufacture of the form of his production of the manufacture of the form of the form of his production of the manufacture of the form		naffa forward in this -1-		thronging con-	ded betweene K.	annium of the makes day to be a because to find a feet of	for her Dowry in the Kingdome of France, the	e
(4) This Clarke for their, and finke brained king for the form or the form of his production of the manufacture of the form of his production of the manufacture of the form of the form of his production of the manufacture of the form		have serie	ring noile. The King much musing your the words	doe difference	Henry, K. Charles,	Epiphany) vnto mid-March enfuing, betwixt King	fumme of twenty thousand francks veerly, ou	-
of this question, where a small self-self program is a first time mittency juilding the program is a first time mittency juilding the program is a first time mittency juilding time program is a first time mittency juilding time program is a first time mitten program is a first time mittency juilding time program is a first time mittency juilding time program is a first time with a commendable in juilding and mind great hopes of a valiant, moderns and soon is supplication, only inclined confidence and commendable in light of the program is a first time			I IDOKCH . and now withall hearing this ungune O	him the more	Duke of a sessed	Henrie King Charles and Philip Duke of Rurgagne	of the lands piaces and Lord hips that Planck forms	.
wife, who with Schome his wifer might have death of the flower of his youth and commendate in finesy date of the flower of his youth and commendate in finesy date of the flower of his youth and commendate in finesy date of the flower of his youth and commendate in finesy date of the flower of his youth and commendate in finesy date of the flower of his youth and the case has a small to great and the great and the great and the great and the gre	.19.	(43) This Charles the lixt, and ficke-braind King	Bolle, was from a pentine melancholy finddain at.	1		(c) King Heem thus form gong in his affoirme	rima wife to Blillis Paraifell bald and aniaid	1
de danis que fino y mode and havefar his formed part of the flower of this youth and commendable dispositions of his middle age por this manifest can be introduced and mode that the flower of the fl		of France was the sonne of King Charles surnamed the	ftrucke into a raging Lunacy (uppofing him follows	1		foreher Crowne fore his Amballadore unto the new	The Greek Land of Column Cit Column	۔ او
Section questions, where and whetche holy found allied commendable dispositions of the history contained and commendable dispositions of the history designation of the history of the contained and particular and the personal contained an	- 1	wife, who with Salomon his wifer might have deman.			- 1	Tor that Crowne, icht his Ambanadors viito the new	6. I hat after the death of Charles our laid father	F
shipman at flowle for the flower of his youth and commendate displacements from the properties of the state of the cauch harded among them, whom charled the the cauch harded among them, whom charled the the cauch harded among them, whom charled the cauch harded among them, whom charled the cauch harded among them, whom charled the cauch harded among them, whom charled the cauch harded among them, whom charled the cauch harded among them, whom charled the cauch harded among them, whom charled the cauch harded among them, who can be called the cauch harded among them, who can be called the cauch harded among them, who can be called the cauch harded among them, who can be called the cauch harded among them, who can be called the cauch harded among them, who can be called the cauch harded among them, who can be called the cauch harded and the cauch harded among them, who can be called the cauch harded among them, and cherred him in the called the	- 1	Ged this question: who can tell mhether his forms O. It.			i i	made Pope Martin the nrit, luch was the fate of	the Crown and Kealme of France thall with all right	
the case of particular of moderate and most in whom Carlor like, with the like agreement as it was closed to provide particular of the like of particular as it was closed for the most particular of the like of particular as it was closed for the like of the like of particular as it was closed for the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of particular of the like of the	- 1	4 wileman or a foale? for the flower of his would and	with a maina cria . Lis break and towards his Pages	1	1	Romes Aportolicali fathers in those faire Sun-inine		8
beigni-Perland, modeller and moths and mother policy of the property of the pr	- 1		the can't hadred a service or teamer not knowing		1	and Golden dates, that the greatest Monarch was but	for cuermore,	1
happie Pinner, only inclined on holler and currenge, as by the occasion of his lange, is estimated and his horder as the control of the contr			the cause, haired among them, whom Charles like-	1	1	a valial to attend vpon their stirrop & their Crownes	 And for as much as our faid father is infirmed 	e
as by the occasion of his imane; a still incomplication of the distinct of the charge		hannie Prince only inclined to choller and more	wite puritied, and with the like rage ranne at his un-	i .	1		by realon of fickneffe, and may not entend in	n l
the distanced on this manner. (44) For Comas Courterly, his minion, and an interference during the difference milks betwix place and factors of the Duke of Corlessore the Kings bearing and fare factors and Courter of the Duke of Corlessore the Kings bearing and fare factors and Courter of the Duke of Corlessore the Kings bearing the Courter of the	- 1.	as by the occasion of his lanear is a Clic C	cle of Burgogne, thus ipending himselfe and his horse	1	1	therefore minding to ftop the violence of these nar-	his owne person to dispose of the affaires of the	e l
the office of the Date of Ordersee the King Horsy had going the Carrier from his failts on both filed ammentary times to kind words, but the Target of the Date of	- 17	changed on this manuacy is callife teene, which		He runnerh AL	1	row Seas, and to make the ftreame milde betwire	Realme therefore during the life of our faid father	-
with famourie of the Dake of ortonee the Kings burners, babbled out most recept of the fail Dake of motion and vine all surface time famous particular to the control of the famous and the control of the famous and the control of the famous and the control of the famous and the control of the famous and the control of the famous and th		(44) Ruman Company			1 .		the faculties and exercise of the government and dis	
brother, blabbed out forme fercety of the fail Deke amore compations vepon warmed and forme fercety of the fail Deke amore compations vepon warmed and formed amore the modified maximum and the market of the presentation of the	fion of	(44) Feler Craon a Courtier, his minion, and an in-		cuery one with	1	that was all in all and have an Oare in every mane	nofition of the publike utilizie of the Realme	f aff
anomonispations on electrical feed and Dakes and Chair with a could a maximum mouse both body and cheffer Jacking who but have considered on the Case who can the cross with and in gained an anzerom mouse both body and the control of the case who can the cross with and in gained to the patients of the Dakes and the cross with and in gained to the Dakes and the cross with and in gained to the Dakes and the cross with and in gained to the Dakes and the Case who can be cross with and ingrained to the Case who can be cross to the King Herry had giane, and cinetic water the Case who can be completed to the Dakes and the Case who can be completed to the Dakes and the Case who can be completed to the Dakes and the Case who can be completed to the Dakes and the Case who can be completed to the Dakes and the Case who can be completed to the Dakes and the Case who can be completed to the Dakes and the Case who can be completed to the Case who can be comp	ap) di-	ward tauorite of the Duke of Orleance the Kings	words, his brother and vncles fainted him bush-	ms iword.	King Henrie falls.			a satt
cheff Faloning who but lately married and fo fion decision of body to the two more posteron of the marriage, and peace conducid before the minimum milery that was to prove the minimum milery that was to be proven the minimum milery that was to make the provided of the marriage, and peace conducid between the minimum milery that was to be provided of the marriage, and peace conducid between the minimum milery that was to make the provided of the minimum milery that was to make the provided of the minimum milery that was to make the provided of the minimum milery that was to make the provided of the minimum milery that was to make the provided of t				(cires the Pope		France man be, and abide to vs, to that thence forth	
head, fo that all ligner of Phrenice and the counter woman to fine the mortage of the marriage, and to give his holy bleking for the confirmation of the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage, and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the marriage and peace conducted to the peace was present conducted that the conduction of the marriage and peace conducted the threat the marriage and peace conducted that the conduction of the marriage and peace conducted that the conduction of the marriage and peace conducted that the conduction of the marriage and peace conducted that the conduction of the marriage and peace conducted that the conduction of the marriage and peace conducted that the conduction of the marriage and peace conducted that the conduction of the marriage and peace conducted that the conduction of the marriage and peace conducted that the conduction of the marriage and the conduction of the marriage and the conduction of the marriage and the conduction of the marriage and the conduction of the conduction of the marri	1:	amorous palsions vpon a wanton Lady, vnto his Dut-		1 1	to confirme him			
poor Prince, and the eminent mility that was to poor Prince, and the eminent mility that was to a certain the Cash who can there co well knew, a man of peace of the cash of t			head forhar all figures of Dhanes out Dody and	1 1	King of France.	conient, to admit him his more Christian tonne of	Councell and alsittance to the Councell of France	4
fall yon Frame very apparant to theinfering State that his faults on booth files of his head, the state of th		deceilled of bed, took the wrong no leffe show in	Boore Drives and star	1 1				
Duke could not hide whe fixe too well knew, and therefore fought to distlife her with complements of kind words, but the Caracan ferrors in significant the property of the fixed words, but the Caracan ferrors in significant the case of the country of the largest vigoration for the country of the largest vigoration for the case of the country of the largest vigoration for the case of the			fall man from the eminent milery that was to		1	mation of the marriage, and peace concluded be-	8. That also we of our owne power shall cause the	e
(43) John Dake of Burgogue ill diffeding the therefore to loghe to faithful for with complement of kind words, but the Curtaine-fermous nighty enlarged you he fairner ext, made him many inverse in easel the With Intel education (God wot) to heare, and often on the fine text, made him many inverse in easel the With Intel education (God wot) to heare, and often on the fine text, made him many inverse in easel the Court and fairner on the words fairned and elegated the Court and fairner on the fine text of the fairner of the fai			ran vpon France very apparant to the infeeing Sta-	1	- 4	twixt those two famous Princes. King Henries right	Court of France to be kept and observed in as ful	li I
threats that King Horn/ had given, and discharding the had words, but the Curried Fermons nightly en larged yoon the fame text, made him many times to lie awake with little devotion (God word) to heart, and often to nice when he would faine have flept, which caused him lailty to complaine to the King that Crass had, and would berray their outermach ring. The cause in ome, but yet to more made against a prince, Crass with all digrace was discharged the fallers. Court, who not able to brooke such an omaining to mount for chaire where pointing of the interest that would have a such as the business. The court of the business is not in the digrace, and efcaping Parts, she dim to Parts in Champages to onstead that would have a such as the business is not on the state of the parts in Champages to onstead that would have a such as the business is not on the court of the parts in Champages to onstead that would have a such as the business of the fail of the such parts in the parts in Champages to onstead that would have a such as the form the fetted Less for the Dushpiss, and therefore he fails with the parts of the parts in Champages to onstead that was to only many fails the court of the first the Dush would be tray with the Dusk was his kinderina, and an enemy to the Conflable in a murrhering manner garts to only many fails the only the parts in champages. A such that would have a such as the parts in the parts of the parts in the parts of the parts in the parts of the parts in the parts of the parts in the parts in the parts of the	her.	Duke could not hide what these are will be	thits: but now to proceed.	1	The Caleminies	to the French Crowne they plainely laid forth.	authority and in all manner of places, that now or it	n!
kind words, but the Cutraine-fermon nightly enlaged upon the fame extr., made him many interest league with the Daughin, as we have failed as was not lie awake with little deutoin (God woot) to have, which caused him hally to complaine to the King that Grass had, and would herray their outermoch truth. The cause momer, but yet too much gaint a a Prince, Crass with all distinct the failed of the prince of the continued of the prince	- 17	therefore fought to fatific horseith	(48) John Duke of Burgogne ill difgefting the	1	of France for	what calamities France had felt in their reliftance.	rime comming, is, or shall be subject to our said fa	الما
Start, and often to rifewher he would faire have form to rifewher he would faire have and easy that Grass had, and would herry their orders, comminate and flighters was difficult for the faire where the Daulphin and therefore here the Daulphin and therefore here the Daulphin and the chaire where the Daulphin and the from the Duke would fair the house of Berry and his difference, and effecting of their affected accord, as all for important the decarding of the decard goilty of high Treaton, and enemies to the Course of the Courte where the Courte of the decard goilty of high Treaton, and enemies to the Courte of the Cou	- 17	kind words but the Correins Complements of	threats that King Henry had given, and joined in		withflanding the	"Anincourt. Normands and Aquitaine (as they shew-		1
State_and as the Gains are faine to be great enemy to the can be with little devotion (God wot) to heart, and often to rise when he would faine han elley, which caused him lastly to complaine to the King that Gram had, and would herry their outside the would make the mental price of the state of the truth. The cause more, by tyet too much against a Prince, Craw with all distance was discharged the state of the court, who not cable to brooke sick and a price of the court, who not cable to brooke sick and one in the chairst where the Daulphin and the chairst where the Daulphin and the chairst where the Daulphin and the chairst where the Daulphin and the chairst where the Daulphin and the state of the Daulphin and the state of the Daulphin and the state of the Daulphin and the state of the daul to the Daulphin and the state of the daul to the daulphin and the state of the daulphin and the daulphin and the state of the daulphin and the state of the daulphin and the state of the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and the daulphin and	- 11	arged your the Came town med-bin	league with the Daulphin, as we have faid . was not-	John Duke of	lift.	ed him) were most lamentable witnesses, and the		d
and often so rife when he would faire hane flept, which cauded him laftly to complaine to the King that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outermach that Cross had, and would berray their outer that Cross had, and would berray their outer that the County of the County of the County of the County of the County of the County of the County of their thanks the County of the County o	- 13	ic awake with little devest	withitanding suspected to be a great enemy so sho	Burgogne Suspe-		holde that the Lyon had got (at that day) of the	helpe all, and enery of the Peeres Nobles Cities	
which caused him lastity to complaine to the King that Crass had, and would berray their outermacht in the claim and the companies of the control of the con	1:	and often as wife at the denotion (God wot) to heare,		cted of the State,		Elemen de Luce was not to be wrested one of his fast		
out of his throne, fo by finiter Councillors Burgary and and would berray their outer meaning to mount the Chair what and finite Count, who not able to brooke facts an open indig- nity, allaude cliftes the Countable in a muterite further typon the clift. Court, who not able to brooke facts an open indig- nity, allaude cliftes the Countable in a muterite further typon the clift. Court, who not able to brooke facts an open indig- nity, allaude cliftes the Countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the countable in a muterite further typon the clift of force of the clift of the Duke was the kindeman, and an enemy to the Confighe the configuration of the clift of force of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the configuration of the clift of the configuration of the clift of t	1:	which canded him 1-01.				grafned names Rut his dult save was deafa have	intime to come (ithicate to our forber in staining	.1
And the factors and an would berray their outermoch and a far would be tray, the cause on more, but yet cuto much the Chair where the Daubjun and therefore the Court, who not able to brooke fuch an open in all manner of places, now from the Court would first a charity affairled Court, who to able to brooke fuch an open in all manner of places, now from the common cennic the whole Dave was his kinderman, and an enemy to the common cennic the whole Dave who for Dave was his kinderman, and an enemy to the common cennic the business of a reconciliation to a failure of the state of the st				1	. La legende du	grapes and waring than this man care was undivided		
maning to mount the Chaire where the Daulphin all Prince, Craws with all dispace was dicharged was dicharged was dicharged was dicharged with a point of the Chaire where the Daulphin all Prince, Craws with all dispace was dicharged was dicharged with a point of the Chaire where the Daulphin all difference from Months and the Duke was princed with the Chaire where the Daulphin all the place for the Daulphin white place for the Daulphin white place for the Daulphin white place for the Duke was his kinleman, and an enemy to the Conflable. (45) King Chair transported with choller of into Office was his kinleman, and an enemy to the Conflable office, mindes of awar Yrope in Champy of the Conflable office, mindes of awar Yrope in Champy of the Conflable office, which was to hase him his means for a reconciliation to his double office, mindes of awar Yrope in Champy of the was to hase him his means for a reconciliation to his double office, mindes of awar Yrope in Champy of the was to have him his means for a reconciliation to his double office, which was to have him his means for a reconciliation to his double office, which was to have him his means for a reconciliation to his double office, which was to have him his means for a reconciliation to him his means for a reco	- 11	and would betray their ouermuch		[Flamens,	viito, aniwering that this peace was prelidicialito	anomes, prinneuges, recuonies, tranchiles, belon	-
frame, Crass with all digrace was difchasged the Court, who not able to brooke fuch an open indignation of the court of the pute with the Court of the court of t	4 A. I	Tult Income no more but was see 1 a			The Pone Good		ging, or que vinto them in all manner of places, nov	7
failt yours at Towne in Brit, faint yours at Spring for the Duke your part of the Spring for the Duke your part of the Spring for the Spring	elling 8	I'I'llice, Craon with all diforace was difcharged the			for the Daniphin.	denied to confirme it.		1
Trype in Contable in a murthering manner, sut configurate to confirer further except the full field by the Contable in a murthering manner, sut configurate to confirer further except the full field the Contable in a murthering manner, sut configurate to confirer further except the full field the Contable in a murthering manner, sut configurate to confirer further except and for implicit which officer whic				Charles		(52) But with what quill thele wines were ven-	10. Allo that we thall to our power trauell truly	1.
manner, as the only man (as bet though), that wrought is diffured, and decipate gravit, fled into Thirding whose Duke was his kinfeman, and at enemy to the Configulation of this double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw Crass by force as it is double offence, mindes to draw the man could pacific. 445) King Charlet transported with challed of the whole the keep and hold be offence, mindes to draw the fine was to have him his mannes for a reconciliation to him man could pacific. 445) The Duke miltrufting no finake in the graffs, thought all things as fure as they were faire in the continuation of the fine was to have the fine was to have the fine was to have the fine was to have the fine was to have the fine was to have the fine was to have the fine was to have the fine was to have the fine was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine without was to have the fine withou		ity, allaulted Culton the Conflable in a must wine		thin feet on Li-	1		& diligently, to see that Instice be administred in th	e
his difgrace, and efcaping Paris, fied into Taxindgen who for Duke was his kindman, and an enemy to the companied with could be considered with called fixed from the common enemie the graph, a third cane fixed graph and the counter of the common enemie the graph, a third cane fixed graph and the counter of the common enemie the graph, a third cane fixed graph and the part of the counter of the common enemie the graph, a third cane fixed graph and the part of the counter of the coun		namerals the only man(as he thought) that we one he	foling of the in Conterre further vpon the ef-	remouall.		was the golden vice, (a powerfull key indeed to vn-	same Realme of France according to their lawer	5,
whofe Dake was his kinfeman, and an enemy to the Confignate Configuration of Configuration	- 11			,	Alsin Chertier.	locke the Popes filent lips,) I know not; most true it	Customes, and rights of the same Realme withou	t
Confiable. (4) King Charles transported with choller of law was to have the first the first control of the first	- 15	whose Duke was his binseman and an an	their vnited forces vpon the common enemie the	j	Enguerrant de	is the conditions went forward and the place for the		
(45) King Charle transported with choller of this double of offence, mindes of draw Crass by force that so dusbe offence, mindes of draw Crass by force of this double of offence, mindes of draw Crass by force of the state of the course of France, and residues in perfect on the Crowne of France, and residues in perfect to the Crowne of France, and residues in perfect to the Crowne of France, and residues in perfect to the Crowne of France, and residues in perfect to one can design of the Crowne of France, and residues in perfect to one can design of the Crowne of France, and residues in perfect to one can design of the Crowne of France, and residues in perfect to one can design of the Crowne of France and manner of violence and oblement, the control of the control of the Crowne of France and the Crowne of Franc	- 18	Con fishle			animperes.	confirmation of conenants was Traves in Chambaone	the Subjects of the faid Realme in granquiliry and	dĺ
which Burgages, Gaises, the Lord Raffs, and others are conditional form the Burgages of the Burgages and the Burgages of the B	- 1	(As) King Charles and Company		1		where King Charles, and his Oucene then law and	peace to our power, and shall defend them against	αĺ
man double offered, mindes to draw Crass by force cut of Britaine to inflife-infinitelly, whom the Coun- cell land declared guity of high Treaton, and enemie to the Cowne of France, and refulous in perfon to enter into Britaine forthwith the expedition for men and manner of proceeding made Charles to loof to make the did forthe Daubhar and the Coun- to the Counter of proceeding made Charles to loof to enter into Britaine forthwith the expedition for men and manner of proceeding made Charles to loof to enter into Britaine forthwith the expedition for men and manner of proceeding made Charles to loof to enter into Britaine forthwith the expedition for men and manner of proceeding made Charles to loof to enter into Britaine forthwith the expedition for men and manner of proceeding made Charles to loof to the Counter of the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of France, and the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Counter of the Counter to the Co	pur.	his double offense with choller of	mamother the Regent, whole wrath belidge him and	. 1	- 1	whicher Burgague Guien the I and Balle and achan	all manner of violence and oppression	~
cult of Britanet coultin himselfs, whom the Council had declared guilty of his Treation, and engine to the Crowne of France, and refules in person to enter into Britanet coultin the expedition for men, and manner of proceeding made Charles to loofe both meast and steeper, for as the vextation of minde and distingent to the country of the proceeding made Charles to loofe both meast and steeper, for as the vextation of minde and distingent to the country of body, carried paparant there is not much that the Dukes of Barry and Barggar approached, kneed that as it is not much that the Dukes of Barry and Barggar approached with most provided that his tourney might be shaded in the Bulkes of Barry and steepers to this ward, charged that much form the good and peaceable Indice of the fame, and dulting the country and the state of the good on a finall peac, where Late Referring the state of the country of the country of the position of the good on a finall peac, where Late Referring the state of the country of the country of the country of the country of the position of the good on a finall peac, where Late Referring the country of the country of the position of the good on a finall peac, where Late Referring the country of the position of the good on a finall peac, where Late Referring the transfer of the country of the position of the country of the position of the state of the position of the state of the position of the state of the position of the position of the country of the position of the pos	into t			1	Ambaffadore	winder Day gogne, Gones, the Lord Rolle, and others	All that we to our nower thall second exha-	١.
the Crowne of France, and resions, and ensuic to the Crowne of France, and resolutes in perform to the Crowne of France, and resolutes in perform to the Crowne of France, and resolutes in perform to the Crowne of France, and resolutes in perform to the Crowne of France, and resolutes in perform to the Crowne of France, and resolutes in perform to the Crowne of France, and resolutes in the deform the Crowne of France of the Realme of France in the deform the Realme of France in the History of Normalization of the Crowne of France in the Crowne of France	10	out of Britaine to within him electrons the County	(40) The Doke -: 0	Falm Corner		G. L Come Plant In the share and the L. C	attend profeshie perfore (bull every	:
flow. and accompanied with many noble-men, fine that find for the Daulphan pade and departed upon composition. The committee of the fame, and departed upon composition. The committee of the final department upon the final department upon the final department upon the final department upon the final department upon the final department upon the final department upon the final department upon the final department upon the final department upon the final department upon the fina				J-an arres,	1	ladors from Henry. In their way they belieged	apic and promatore perions mail execute the office	1
enter into Britisme forthwith the expedition for men and manner of proceeding made Charles to loofe and two hundred Arcters; he repair to hundred processing made Charles to loofe to loofe the continuous wind the content of the continuous many noble-men, flue hundred horfe, and two hundred Arcters; he repair to loofe the continuous made Charles to loofe to loofe the continuous made Charles to loofe the continuous made Charles to loofe the continuous made Charles to loofe the continuous made Charles to loofe the continuous made Charles to loofe the continuous made Charles to loofe the continuous made Charles to loofe the demands of the Revenue of Practice of Practice of the demands of the Revenue of Practice - 10	Othe Crowne of France, and refolues in person so		- 1		(and atter hitteene dates wan) the Towne of Creffie	atwell of futices and other offices belonging to the	-	
and manner of proceeding made Charles to loofe both mesta and fleepe, foas the execution of minde and diffemperature of body, carried apparant heves in his face; in lo much that the Dukes of Barry and Bargager militruling the work, counsiled that his tourney might be flaid, his Phyfitrians diffwade him I age the wals, and departed vpon composition. These comming to Trapes were honorably received mining the four mining the properties of the state of the st				ł		that held for the Daulphin , demolished the Castell,	gouernance of the demaines of the Realme of France	
both meate and fleepe, fo as the vextation of minde and different personal properties of the control of the con				1		razed the wals, and departed upon composition.	for the good and peaceable Inflice of the same, and	1
and diffemperature of body, carried apparant flewes in his face: in fo much that the Dukes of Berry and Bargegar approached, kneeled downer upon one knee, and with an honourable result and the body of the Bardies of	- 1	both meate and fleene for se the very rion of		- 1	History of Ner-	These comming to Troyes were honorably recei-	for the administration that shall be committed vnto	ı
in his face: in fo much that the Duke's of Earry and Bargage mituriting the word, counfielded than his tourney might be flaids, his Phyfitians diffiwade him I Lab flatherine was attended as the Englis Resent, Bargage mituriting the word, counfielded than his tourney might be flaids, his Phyfitians diffiwade him I Lab flatherine was attended as the Englis Resent, Bargage than Bargage mituriting the word, counfielded than his tourney might be flaids, his Phyfitians diffiwade him I Lab flatherine was attended as the Englis Resent, Bargage than with the Duke's Countreys and believe to the tourney and the Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than Bargage than barga	- 1	and difference at the day serviced and of minde		1		ned and louingly concluded on a finall peace, where	rhem	1
downe vpon one knee, and with an honourable re- large green mittruling the work, counfilled that as is to come failed him most humbly, the Daulphin nge- tourney might be flaid; his Phystirans diffwade him it is to the bath of the property of the propert	- 13	in his face in formuch there's		- 1	Ladia Katherine	Lady Katherine was attended as the Fnoith Quanna	12. Also that we of our power, so some as it	ıl.
tourney might be flaids, his Phyfitians diffwade him Southing all courtefues to diffusion the flaids of the flaids have been seen to be defined to our flaid tather, all manner of Little, and affection to be defined to our flaid tather, all manner of Little, and the flaids have been to be defined to our flaid tather, all manner of Little, and the flaids have been to be defined to our flaid tather, all manner of Little, and the flaids have been to be defined to our flaid tather, all manner of Little, and the flaids have been to be defined to our flaid tather, all manner of Little, and the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaid that the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaid that the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaids have been to be defined to flaid the flaid that the flai	- 1	and the Dukes of Rerry and	downe vpon one knee, and with an honorest	Bargogne repai.	arrended as	and Come lafe to guard her by King Hamis com	may commodionally be done. Thall transile to pur in	.1
perion to Trees. enflamed, himleste attended with the Dakes of Cla- Townes, Calters, places, Country's and perions	- 1	buryogne mittuiting the worst counselled that his		ring to the Deal-	Queene of Eng-	and tome terr to guard her by King Hemies com-	may commodity be done, man tradalle to put in	1
perion to Trent, enflamed, himilelfe attended with the Daket of Cla- Townes, Cantels, places, Country's and perions		ourney might be staid; his Physitians disswade him	lecting all courtefies to him-ward at an allphin neg-	pour ,is charged	Henry open in	mand. His Ambaliadors returned, and affection	to openience of our laid faction, all manner of Littles	2
breach within	- 1			Dirach at	perion to Traver	entiamed, himielte attended with the Dukes of Cla-	Townes, Castels, places, Countreys and perion	5

0+4	Henrie V. THE SVCC			1-	. Henrie V. ENGLANDS M		
	within the Realme of France, disobedient and rebels to our sayd father, slyding with them that bee called the Daulphin or Armagnae. 13. And that we may the more commodiously	pence to be made by our faid father, without die nution of the Crowne of France to persons obey	ni- ng		with their Counsels, helpes, and common assistance against all men that enforce them to doe over image.	Iune, (being the morrow after Trinity Sunday) the marriage of King Hemy and Lady Katherine, with a pompous foleranity was celebrated, in Saint Peer Church at Tropes, the Bishop of that See, doing the Comment of the Marriage of the See, doing the Comment of the See, and the See of the S	all K
	and freely exercife and fulfill these things aforesaid, it is accorded, that all worthy Nobles and estates of	Lands, Lordfhips, Rents and poffessions belonge	els (1	them or either of them, and that they (hall be son		
worne t	the same Realme of France aswell spirituals as tem-	the Realment Frances				affembly King Bank institute of the rotal	all "
uy.	por als and also the Nobles, Citizens, Burgesses and			1	paying the Customes due and accustomed, and that all the confederates and allyes of our said father and		
	Cominalties of France in obedience at this day to our faid father shall make these Oathes vnto vs.	dients to him and iffo he about a	e-				
	14. First to vs having the faculty exercise, dispo-				Realme of England thall in eight mouth (co	and demorit their love	lc,
	fition, and gouernance of the foresaid common pro-				the time of this accord of peace, as it is notified to them, declare by their letters, that they will draw to	(54) "As the chiefe monte whenever	
	fit at our hefts and commandements, these shall meekly and obediently obey in all manner of things	happeneth by Cadarana places of goods, when	it			"cares and endeuors have hitherto levelled, hath beene, to vnite and concorporate these two King-	th I
	concerning the exercise of Gouernment in the same			ł	cicatics and accord of this peace, faning neverbe, i	"domes of France and England into one, which now	5
	Realme. 15. Also that the worthy great and noble estates			.	lesse their obedience to either of the same Crownes, and to all manner of actions, rights, and reuenues,	"domes of France and England into one, which now by Godsgoodness is most happily effected; so is i	ie
	of the faid Realme aswell spirituals as temporals.	the faid Dutchie and other places, bee not give by vs, the same persons shall be referred to ther	n			"still, and euer shall be, both my desire and care, that write posterity we may leaue it setled in the same	
	Citizens, Burgeffes, and Comminaties of the fame			1.	to vs, and our Subjects against all manner of such Allies and Confederates.	1011, and tree from all embeachments, of faction	Dà l
	Realmein all manner of things well and truly shall keepe and to their power shall doe to be kept in as-	23. And during the life of our father in all place now, and in time to come, subject to him, letters of			30. That our father peither out heart and	"" dlicords: that being act it is the greatest it may	au 1
of the	much as to them belongeth, or to any of them, all	common inflice, grants of offices, giftes, pardon remilsions and priniledges shall be written, and pre-	t)		Duke of Burgundy, shall begin nor make with Charles calling himselfe the Daulphin of Viennes, any treatie,	"be also the happiest Monarchie of Europe. For the cleere accomplishment of which worke, there rest	ie
	those things that be appointed and accorded be- tweene our foresaid father, our mother, and vs. *	remitsions and priuiledges shall be written, and proceed under the name and seale of our said father	's Letter, Grane, - gifts, &c. fign	No peace with the Daulphin.	peace, or accord but by Counfell and affent of each	"now nothing, but the depressing of the Deulohin	. I
	16. And that continually from the death, and				Of V5 three, or of other the three efferes of sich arch a	"who is by your doome aircady, not only deprined of that dignity, but of succession to the Crowne	d
	after the death of our faid father Charles, they shal be 1			.	faid Realmes about-named. 31. Also that we with the affent of our brother	and projecticed as a Traitor to the State and of	of I
	our true liegemen, and our heires, and they shall re- ceiue and admit vs for their liege, and Soueraigne,			. 1	of Burgandy, and other of the Nobles of the Realme	"Whom this we must be assured, that while he lines	s. I
	and very King of France, and for fuch to obey well	letters; in such case if any hap for the good and sure ty of our father, and for the gouernment that belon			Of France, which ought thereinto to be called that!	"France cannot but be in a perpetual combustion "For preuenting whereof, I both need and intreate	- 1
	without opposition, Contradiction or difficulty, as they be to our father during his life. And neuer af-			1	ordeine for the Gouernance of our faid father; fure- ly, louingly and honeftly, after the degree of his roy-	"both your Counfels and aide, nothing doubring	10
	ter, this Realme of France shall obey to man as King	otherwise might fall to the preindice of our said fa ther, to write our letters, by the which we shall com	1	1	all efface and dignity in fuch wife, as thall be rocked	" of your readines in either; for how can we expect any fafety, or you any goodnes at his hand, who	AΙ
	and Regent of France, but to vs. & to our heires. Alfo	mand, thange and detend after the nature and quality	4	. 1	worship of God, of our said father, and of the Realm of France.	in his young vecres did to perfidiously marder the	h# I
	they shall not be in Counsell, helpe, or assent, that we loose life or limme, or be taken with eurll taking, or	ty of the need in our fathers behalfe, and ours, as Re	-		32. Also that all manner of persons that theil	Duke of Burgundy his vncle? I am now, you fee	e. 1
	that we luffer harme or diminution in person estate.	24 Alforbat during and Cut and UC and			De our tather to doe him perionall feruice, not onlie	"your Regent in present, and Successour to the Crowne i nhope; Let it not therefore sticke it	in
	worship, or goods, but if they know any such thing to be contriued or imagined against vs. they shall let				in office, but in all other attendances, aswell the No- bles and Gentlemen, as others, shall be such as haue	"Your hearts, that I am an Englishman borne, for	or I
- 1	it to their powers, and shall doe us to witten thereof	fleine from that name, folong as our faid father	1.		beene borne in the Realme of France, or in places I	"you know I have much French blood in my veines, which warmes my affections as well to French as	5
í	as hashily as they may by themselues, by message, or by letters.	25. Alfothat our faid father during his life, shall	l		belonging to France, good, wife, true, and able to doe	"English, but looke on me as the lawfull heire to the	ne l
- 1	17 That all manner of Conguette star (t. 111	Native felice for Hamman Park In this manner			him feruice, and our faid father shall dwell in places vnder his obedience, and no where else, wherefore	"Diademe, both by just Title, and your owne con-	1-
-	made by vs in France voon the dischedient in the		V	1	we charge and command our faid liege (phiests and	"fents, who therefore am, and ought to be, wholly yours; and your kindnes and infedealing bind me	/
	Dutchies of Normandy, shall be done to the profit of our said father, and that to our power, all manner of			1	other being vnder our obedience, that they keepe, and doe to be kept, in all that belongeth to them,	"lo to be. Yours also am I now by fresh alliance.	: I
- 1	Lands and Lordinips, that he in places to be conque.	ons to charge the Subjects of our Girl Col.	1		this accord and peace, after the forme and manner	se as sonne in Law to your King, vnto whom I will be performe all offices of loue and honor, as to mine	1
- 1	red, belonging to persons, obeying to our forefather, which shall sweare to this present accord, shall be re-			The punishment of the peace- breakers,	as it is accorded, and that they attempt in no manner	owne tather and you his subjects shall I love and	d I
1				breakers.	wife, any thing that may be prejudiciall, or contrary to the same accord, and peace, ypon paine of life and	cherish, as mine owne children, and will defend	1
		according to the Lawes and Customes prouided for the same Realme,	i	1	limme, and all that they may forfeit vnto vs.	"France and the French, so long, as you defend my	
	beneficed in the Dutchie of Normandy, or any other places in the Realme of France, subject to our father,	27. Alfo that we shall travell to our power, to		1	33. Also that we for the things aforesaid, and e- uery one of them shall give our affent by our letters	"right with your louing aide, and will deferue my loue with your loiall affection.	١,
- 1	and fauouring of the parts of the Dukes of Ruraunda	Realmes of England and France all manner of the	1		Patents, lealed with our leale vnto our faid father	(55) These affaires thus accomplished at Trojes, the Kings, the Queenes, and the rest of the Peeres in	
-	which shall sweare to keepe this present accord, shall peaceably inioy their benefices of holy Church in			1 .	without all approbation; and confirmation of vs.	great estate rode vnto Paris, where all faire counte-	М
- 1	the Dutchie of Normandy, or in other places next a.	be ordeined and promided, that from the time, that it we, or any of our heires come to the Crowne of		1	and all other of our blood resell, and of the Cities and Townes to vs obedient, fealed with our great	nances were shewed, and great entertainement given to the English. But the Daulphin and his followers	n I
1	forclaid.			1	icale, thall make or cause to be made letters approba-	neither feared nor fainted, though the present cour-	3 3
1	19. Likewise that all manner of persons of holie Church obedient to vs, and beneficed in the Realme				tory, and confirmed of the Peeres of his Realme, and of the Lords, Citizens, Burgeffes of the fame under	fes pleafed not their palat. Their first Counsell	
- 1	of France, and places (ubject to our father that that)	and from the terme of our life thence forward in at	Crownes, -	-1	his obedience, all which Articles we have fwormero	therefore was how to preferue themselues in soe- minent danger; to sit still and doe nothing, they knew	
- 1	weare to keepe this present accord, shall enjoy peace- ibly their benefices of holy Church, as is afore-			1	keepe vpon the holie Euangelifts, Yeuen at Traies	it was but to increase and advance the successes of	f I
	aide,	time that we or our being thail be gouerned from the		1	the 30. of May, Anno 1420. And the same were proclaimed in London the 20, of Inne following, for	the English; and to rise without strength, was to fall into further milfortunes, having no meanes to hold	1
1.	20. Alfo that all manner of Churches, Vniuerfi-			j	the Copies of this treaty, the French King fent to e-	warre with so potent an Enemy. In this diffraction	١ŧ
	ries and studies generall, all Colledges of Students, and other Colledges of holy Church, being in places				uery Town in France, as King Hemy didlikewise into England, there to be published by Proclamation.	their voice was best heard, that spake most for the safety of the Daulphin (whose only lifegaue breath	
. !!	low, or in time comming, lubiect to our father, or in	Gid Leaning and our Soucraigne Lord, as is afore-		Helin(b.	These Articles were concluded between the two	latety of the Daniphin (whole only life gaue breath wnto theafter-hopes of France) and for the strengthe-	l.
1	he dutchy of Normandy, or other places in the realme of France subject to vs, shall enjoy their rights, pos-			Heliafe. The teffies of these Anicles.	Kings, in the presence of Queene I fabell, the Duke	ning of those places which might be of most aduan-	٠1
- [1	elsions, rents, prerogatines, liberties and franchifes	customes, viages and lawes, not making subject in any manner of wise, one of the same Realmes to the		Wil, Parradin, Annals of Burg,	of Burgundy, and the Kings Councell, the Prince of Orange, Seigneur Chastelleux, Marshall of France, with	tage to themselues, and offence to the Enemie. This then past by decree in that Counsell of warre, that	
18	elonging or due to them in any manner of wife in			,	many others the prime Nobility, both of England	the Daulohin should at no time hazard his person	1
1	he faid Realme of France, saving the right of the Crowne of France, and of every other person.	28. That then coford u a us	2		and France, both the Kings with the Queene, taking their folemne oath there, ypon the holy Euangelifts.	in field, and that a leuy of Souldiers should be had,	
-1	21. Allo by Gods helpe, when it happenerh ve	rancours envise and amount of wile, diffentions, hates,	Thomas of a	l	as did likewise the Duke of Burgundy, and the rest.	to lie in Garrison in places conucnient; for Time, which never stands still, they well hoped might yet	1
t	ocome to the Crowne of France, the Dutchy of Vormandie, and all other places conquered by vs in	Realmes of France and England, and the people of	The vision of the Subjects.	"Titus Lingus fers downe his Oath perbatim.	Burgundy* being the first man that laid his hand on l	turne the rice for them, fortune being (faid they) as	: 1
_li	he faid Realme, shall bow under the Commande-			Verbatim, "Enguerrant. Nicholm Pigneur,	the booke, and * sware homage to King Henry; who thereupon was stiled and proclaimed Regent of	fubiect to fawne, as to frowne; in which resolution	1
an I	nent, obeijance, and Monarchy of the Crowne of	29. That from honoeforth for many		1		each man tooke to his charge, and all to withfland the doings of <i>Henry</i> .	1
1.	France.	and tranquinty, good accord and affection, and ftable		Hellinft.	(53) In whose presence also vpon the third of	(56) As these consulted for the state of the	
		friendship		-		Ggggg French	

644	Henry V. THE SVC	CESSION OF Monarch 52.	Book.	Chapon	Henrie V. ENGLANDS	MONARCHS. Monarch 52.	.16
	French to in Paris a Parliament of the three chates	phin his kinfeman by Queene I fabell his mother; the			rode together vader a rich Canonie. Henry vann i	Paris. For therein alto was the finall accord betwix	
usge to land.	was affembled, wherein fuch as were guilty of the	Prince of Orange likewife came thither vnto Henry,	1		the left hand, next vnto whom followed the Duker	the two Kings, openly acknowledged by the French	
	death of Burgundy, were justiced, the disherizing of	but because he required an Oath of him, as a subject			of Clarence and Bedford, and vpon their left hand the	King, as made by his free affent, and with adulte of	c
	the Daulphin confirmed and warres prepared against	of France, he went away displeased, saying, he was a	İ		Duke of Burgundy clad all in blacke, the Princes and	all the Councell of France; whereupon it was there	-
	theic Townes which held for him. Against Sens	free Drings and anothe neither abedience to England			Nobles of either Nation mingled together in their		
	the two Kings with their Queens, Clarence, and Bur-	nor France. At which time the Parilians with more			degrees, the Clergy with processions and their vene-	fworne vnto particularly vpon the holy Euange-	1
ė	gundy, marched; which after 12 daies was rendered	respect of their owne safety committed their City	to King Hine	The two Que	ens rable reliques, going before them to Noftre dame	lifts, by all their Nobles and Magistrates, spirituall	:1
	vpon composition of life, those excepted as were	vnto K. Henries deuotion who deputed his brother	to any	enter Paris.	Courts : and the next day the two () meenes entred	and fecular who also for their feel and it	1
efee	guilty of the Duke of Burgundies death, Monfireau	Clarence (though Count Saint Paul with his French dif-	1	Denis Saunge.	the City with as great a shew. King Hemies Pal-	and fecular, who also set their seales to the Instru- ments thereof, which were sent into England to be	-1
ten.	was the next, which by force was entred, where the	pleated) Gouernour thereof, and put Gatrisons in-	1		lace was prepared in the Loure, which was most rich	kept in the Kings Exchequer at westminster. King	:
	body of the Duke of Burgundy, vndecently buried by	to the Bastile of S. Anthonie, the Lowre, and the Hostill	1		and magnificent, and Charles his Court in the Hostel		
	the Daulphinois, was taken vp, and by his sonne Philip	de Nesle. During this siege, mandatory * letters	l		of Saint Paul, being but homely and meane; for (faith	Henries glory thus ascended to the highest verticall in France, his Court was not only honoured daily	yerre
	fent in great pompe to Diion in his Dutchy, and there	were lent by King Charles into Picardy, to put all pla-	*Dat,23. Julij.	Mallet.	(Millet) young Henry commanded all and his breat	both with County was not only honoured daily	Holles
	honorably interred. The Towne being taken, the	cesthat held for him in the faqueters into Hamile	Denis Sanare.		thren exercifed supreme authority, whiles olde	both with Courtly and military shows and passimes,	
	Caftle held out : vnto whose Captaine twenty Cap-	possession, and to take the Outh of their obedience	Picardy Investe		Charles stood as a Cypher, and the French Nobilitie	but also was still frequented both with forraine	1
	tiue Gent.emen were fent, whose lines from King	vnto him as to the only herre, Successor, Regent, and Go-	fealty to King		had nothing to doe.	Ambaffadors, and domefticke Commissioners,	,
	Henries mouth (fay the French) were fentenced to	nernour of France; the execution whereof was com-	many.	Rzefferrant d	(62) During the two Kings abode here, a great	whose directions depended only vpon his voluntary	7
	death, vnleffe they could perfwade the Castellan to	mitted to the Count of Saint Paul, the Bishops of The-		Manfir.	Affembly was called as well of the Spiritualty, as of	affigne, himfelfe redreffing all things at his pleature,	,
	furrender; but those men (say our English, to mollifie	reserved and transfer of Saint Pant, the Bijnops of The			the fecular Nobilitie, in whose presence, in the great	placing and displacing Officers and Gouernors, cau-	-
		rouenne and Arras, the Vilame of Amiens, the Lord of	1		Hall of the Hostell, a State for Iustice was prepared,	fing alfoa new Coyne to be made, called a Salute,	
	that seuere doome) were all especial friends of that Captaine and such, as had given opprobrious words	Vendweill, the Governour of Lifle, Pierre Marigny Ad-	1	The two Kins	where the two Kings fitting as fupreme ludges, vn-	wherein were the Armes of France, and the Armes	1
	to the Kings Herauld, being fent vnto them in the	uocate of the Parliament, and George Oftend the Kings	1	fic personally indgement.	in der one Cloath of effort the Court was Court	of England and France, quarterly framped. King	. 1
	fiege of Monstream. How loeuer, in this extremity	Secretary, beginning thus; Charles par le Grace de	1	iudgement.	in der one Cloath of estate, the Court was furnished with Princes and Officers in most solemne wife.	Charles the while in his Palace, was but for fathione	-1
	they follicited Gullay vpon their knees, vrging their	Dieu, Go.	FRENERICE		Refore whom Misselve Relieved	fake visited, and but by some of his olde servants,	1
	ownedgeths and his areas danger if he had a set a	(60) The distresse of Melun, was wonderfull	Cognerians.		Before whom, Nicolas Rollin advocate from the Duke	his Sunne was drawne to neere vnto the ferring. The	1
	owne deaths, and his great danger if he held our; but	great aswell vpon the seegers, as defendants; the one	I		of Burgundy, and the Dutcheffe his mother, craued au-	great affaires of France thus fetled. (as well as that	ł
	Guilay, a true Frenchman, and friend to the Daulphin,	arnicted, and their troupes fore weakened with mor-	1		dience(and had it granted) vnto an inuectine and	valetied time would permit.) King Henry minding	1
	withstood the assault, and thereupon these Gentle-	tality, the other oppressed with famine, and other	1	Processe agai	long Oration against Charles V ifconte Narhone, Tan-	to Crowne his Onegne in Fugland ordained his bus	1
	men Petitioners were presently hanged in the fight	detects incident to a long indured fiege. In this	1	the musthere	the last the state of the crack married of	ther of Clarence, (2 wife, valiant and a great Capraine)	King
	of the defendants: so bloody is Mars to maintaine	State eighteene weekes were spent, and more had	1	of the Duke o	f Iohn Duke of Eurgundy; and not only that the mur-		
	his owne Lawes, and so eager was Henry of his full	beene, but that the English were supplied with soul-	1	Eargundy,	therers might be accordingly executed, but withall,	Duke of Exeter with 500, men of warres to keen Paris:	cagia
	Conquest of France, whose thirsting sword had here-	diers out of Picardie, whose colours displaied a farre			that a Church might be founded and furnished	and to attended with great state, he came to Amiens	
į	tofore beene somewhat ouerlauish in blood, but ne-	off, put the Towne in hope of reliefe, as fent from	I		with facred Ornaments for twelue Channons, fixe	and Callais, where taking to Sea he arrived at Douge	1
	uer more (perhaps) then in this bloody act; which I	the Daulphin, but vpon their neerer approach, Melun	I		Chaplaines, and fixe Clerkes to pray for his foule	vpon the third of February, and was received of his	Ener
i	with might be obliterated from the number of his		Enguerrant de		for euer, euery Chanon to have yeerely two hundred	Subjects as an Angell from heaven, or another vi-	Mang
	other glorious actions. Yet at length was that Ca-	Towne and Castle should be deliuered to the King.	manpretet.		pound Paris money, euery Chaples one hundred, and	Ctorious Calar on Earth	1
1	the entorced to furrender your composition of life	2. That a fixed the man of grown as at a D	1		enery Clerke fifty, to be leuted vpon the Lands of	(64) All things in a readines for his faire Queens	1
1	excepting the guilties of Burgundies death.	[fionid (nhmit them (eluge to King grown to be deale	1		the Daulphin, and his affociates in the murder: that	Coronation, vpon the foure and resentith of the	
1	(57) Then was the siege remoued to Melun, a		1		the fame foundation should be engrauen vpon the	fame month, with all roialty the fame was folemnia	1
1	Towne of great firength, and made more ftrong by	or found guilty of the Duke of Rurgundier murder	l		Porch thereof, and the like infeription fet vp pub-	zed at Wellminster, and the English rich diademe for	1
ĺ	the valours of her commanders, who were Seigneur	hould fuffer death. 4. That all the reft of the foul-			likely in the Cities of Paris, Rouen, Graunt, Dison, Saint	on her head. The feast was great, with all Princely	
-	Barbalon an ablolute fouldier Pierre : de Reurhana	diers should be received to mercy, but to be prifo-	I		James of Compostella, and Jerusalem. This motion was	feruices, and the flate fuch as deferueth the report;	D.Rob
ı	Prince of the blood, Preaux, and Bourgeois, whole	ners vntill they put in good caution for their true	1		feconded by a Doctor of Diumity appointed by the	for the Queene sitting at Table, at the right side of	-
- 1	Garrion was letten nundred Daulphmais and indeed	ODECIENCE in after times c That the Marines of			Rector of the V ninersity, who concluded with an hum-	her Chaire, kneeled the Earle of March holding a	
- [no default in defence, could anie wife be imputed.	France should be sent home to their owne Coun-	l		blerequest to the King and those Princes, that inflice	Scepter in his hand; the Earle Marshall kneeling on	
1	but the Canon Opening a breach, the English and Rura		1		might be done. Whereunto the Chancellor of France,	the left fide, held another; and the Counteffe of Kent	
1.	gundians made an entry into the Bulwarke, and ouer	the Towne should bee carried into the Cassle.			in the behalfe of King Charles, promised that no en-	fate vnder the Table at her right foote; vpon her	
- 1	the Riucr Seine built a bridge with Boates . C. that	7- That all the Prifoners they hadtaken either be-			deuour on his part should bee lacking; and thereu-	right hand at Table Grathe Bifters a C	
-1	from either quarter they had paffage one to the	fore or during the fiege, should be enlarged ransome-	1		pon caused his sonne to be solemnely called to the	right hand at Table fate the Bishops of Canterbury	
1	other without impediments, and encamped theme		l	}	Marble-Table, to answere his accusation, by the	and Winehefter, and vpon the left the King of Scots,	٠.
ĺ	felues for their beft advantage; vpon whom the ene-	the performance of the for Aminton	l	John Strees.	name of Charles Duke of Touraine, and Daulphin de	the Dutchesse of Yorke, and the Countesse of Hunting-	
- 1	mic neuerthelelic made diners fallies with the lottal	the performance of these Articles, 12, of the principal Captains and a fairless, 12 of the principal Captains and a fairless a	l	The Daulphin ei	is fact, and a little damage are Commelled many and Transport	ton; the Nobles giving their attendance, each man ac-	l
- 1	Of either parties King Henry informal Lie C.		l	ted to appeere and difinherite	Vienne, which done three feuerall times, and he not	cording to his office and place,	
1	the vimon, and made a myne vinderneath the wals,	thould deliuer themselues in hostage. 9. That all	l	and difinherite	appearing, by arrest of the same Court of Parlia-	(65) Presently, after Easter, in the month of	
1	which being perceived, the defendants countermi-	the English, and Stors, inouid be delivered to Henry			ment, he was banished the Realme, and judged vn-	May, a l'aritament was held at Wellminller, whose	
. 1	ned against him; where the King(too forward) as the	and left at his disposition.			worthy to fucceed in any of the Seignories as well	chiefest intent was to have meanes to continue the	
1	very first man entring his myne, and Barbasan like-	These things accorded, an English Garrison was			present, as to come. But the Daulphin appealed from	Kings Conquett in France ; but fuch was the frate of	
-	wife his within the Towne, met each other at point		1		this sentence to God and his sword, and still was the	those lauish times, that, to stop the current of this	
ı	of f.word, where they performed nobly the parts of	or our par ben, Sett near de l'Yeaux, and valiant Day-			fame, though his fortunes were changeable. Moun-	melting mint, fome, minding more the heapes of	
1	prinate fouldiers, (nobly indeed, if prinate fouldiers	loajon, with like hundred Priloners of quality were		King Heurs him	fieur de Barbason was vehemently accused to haue	their money, then the spreading abroad of Englands	
1	they had been but Princes (1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-	lent with a lirong guard voto Paris. The multipe of	l.	King Henry him felfe giues fen-	his hand in the murder, and therefore King Henrie	faire Monarchy, exhibited their Bils vnto the three	
-	they had been, but Princes flould remember they are	Buryunder murder were all of them must J t		tence iudicially	l accordingly gaue fentence on him to fuffer to death :	estates in Parliament, and petitioned vnto the King.	
1	not fuch) till laftly they agreed to discouer them-	mongit whom were two Monkes, and Restrand de			but he in open Court defended himselfe, not to bee	to commiferate the pourty of the commons, which	Ex.Rec
1	feines, and first Barbason made known his name, then	Charlement a Galcount. (a man in great fanour with			guilty of the crime, although he confessed to be a	(as they faid) were beggered by these warres. For	9.Hcu.
1	King Henry did his, whereupon the French Lord fud-	King Henry) for that he at King Henries energ inco			true fergant to the Daulphin. Notwithstanding, had	which cause as it seemeth no subsidy or ayde was de-	
1	dainely getting backe, caused the Barriers to be clo-				he not appealed to the Officers of Armes. King Hen-	manded, but the King againe pawning his Comme	
1	fed, and Henry returned to his Campe.	who was proved guilty of Rurgundies death. The			ries judgement of death had gone against him : for	manded, but the King againe pawning his Crowne to his vncle Beaufort, the rich Cardinall, for twenty	TL . 1"
1	(58) This enterprize failing. King Charles hime	Duke of burgungy nimiette, as also Clarence earnafile.	Engecerant.	Holinfb	the Law Military, as he thereallegged, forbiddeth.	to his vncle Beaufort, the rich Cardinall, for twenty thousand pound, before the said month was expired, with four thousand horse and some and twenty	ane Kir
1	lette came into the Campe to induce the defen	labored with King Henry for Restrands pardon has		A quirke of He raldy to ouer-	that any man, having his brother in Armes within his	with foure thousand horse and foure and twenty	for mon
١	dants to render, at the presence of their naturals			raidy to ouer-		thousand foote returned into France to follow those	Pontas I
J	Lord; which neuerthelette was little relipected; for	he had rather have loft 5 0000. Nobles, yet was refol-		throwa Iudicia fentence,	or quarrell, and proued himselfe to be the Kingsbro-	warres.	
-)	answere was made, that if their King were at liberry.	ned he should die for example and set was refol-		-cutchee,	or quarren, and product municine to be the Kingsoro-		
١	and free from King Henries power, short would don	ued he should die for example to all such, as should	A noble exam.		ther in Armes, for that he had in the Countermine coa-	(66) Neither was his halt more then needed:	
0	him the duty of naturall fubiects, and yeeld him	dare to offend, vpon prelumption of their nearenes	ple of luffice.		ped in combat with the King. Thus by a quirke of	for Iohn Earle of Buequhanan , and Archbald Dowglas ,	
io.			-		Heraldry acquitted from death, he was neuertheleffe	two valiant leaders of feuen hundred resolute Scots,	
1	they defired to be excused, for to the mortall enemy	(61) Melun being rendred, and these things			retained in prison the space of nine yeeres, and lastly	repaired into France to ayde the Daulphin, and ioi-	
1	of France they would not yeeld.		Isbn Millet,		at the winning of Caffle Galliard from the English, was	ning with the French in Aniou, meant to haue furpri-	Alain Cb
1	(so) While Vine Translater of C	molt honorablic attended, returned to Paris before			delinered out of most strait imprisonment, to the	[20d the Dake of Clarence Delote he had beene awate;]	rain Cb
1	(19) Whilest King Henry lay at the siege of				greation of the French	in which enterprize, foure stragling Scots, taken and	
1	Melun, the Duke of Bauier (who was Palfegraue of		Iohn Millet		(63) This execution of Inflice on those Mur-	brought to his presence, *as he sate at dinner, reuea- +	Vpon E
	Rhyne Elector) came to King Henry having married			A Parliament a	therers, was a great, but not the only act of K. Henry	led the intent and ftrength of the Enemy, whose ap-	Eue.
	his fifter, and thence fent a defiance vnto the Daul-	the freetes wherethey should passe. The two Kings	The two Kings	Paru. Halinib.	at this great Parliament of three Estates of France in	proach was verie neere at hand. This newes no foo-	~
1			entred Peru.	Holinth.			

1	ner came, but the Duke overhaftily got to horse (lay-)	ched to Monstrelet, and there lodged, quarterin	Boo	Chap.15	. Henrie V. ENGLANDS M	ONARCHS. Monarch 52.	64
	ing, they are all ours) leaving his troupes to follow him	his Army in the villages about, where he found th	e l		(75) But Henries liege leffened through thefe ftirs		
	with almuch celerity as they might. His luddaine	Duke of Burguene formewhat impaired of health-three	-	Enguerrant de	in Normandy, and his mind busied upon his affaires	themselues to Henry, whilest the true Dolphinois si fare on theirs, before hee could attaine to the	èt
and valo	oked-for approch, caused the Seets to take Church of Bargie for their lafety, where	daies Ipent in conference, King Henry marched int	>	atmirate.	that way fitted opportunity to Seignieur de Offement,	liege.	
while they were makin	g defence, the rest tooke the	Ponthies, and the Duke to Abbenill vpon Some, to incilitate his passage there to be made, whereof som		. 6	vnto whome the belieged had many times made	(77) Queene Katherine in England daily hearing	10
Alarme, and the Ear	rie of Bucquhanan manned the	doubt was held by reason of the Inhabitants dispo	1		knowne their desires to have him their Gouernour;	of the Kings (ucceffe, defired greatly the fight of hi	is Manifes 6
Bridge, to whose ayde	, Hugh Kennedie with an hun-	fition, altogether unfetled, and as ready to offend a			on a night therefore (ladders made readie to put o-	perion, and to that end prepared her voyage for	or I
dred horse presented	himfeife,	affect. Herry in his way tooke the Fort called I	. 1		uer the wals to receive him) he fecretly approached	France, vnder the conduct of Duke Iohn the King	rs I
(67) T h	e Duke of Clarence seeing no possibilitie	Ferte, commanded by the Bastard of Relley which			the place, but being discouered by the Centinels, and the alarum taken, he not able to recouer the lad-	brother, then Regent of England, who deputed for)r
to free the	passage with his slender troope of horse,	vpon lummons rendered, and being committed to	. 1	1	ders, fell into the ditch, whence by reason of his hea-	the time of his abience, his brother Humfrey Duk	ic
alighted on	foot, & gaue forthwith a furious charge,	the United of Rarifletta Dicard age between and	. !		uy armour hee could not free himselfe, and in taking	of Glocester, and tooke shippe at Southampton. The winds prosperous, the 2 1.0f May she landed at Har	
where the E	arle of Bucquhanan came to blowes, be- d by two hundred horse; and either side	by him vnto the Daulphin: from hence departing	. [was wounded in the face: the King effecting the	fleur, and with ftil-encreasing troupes of Noblemen	A.D.
	with equal courage and rancor. Clarence	he passed the river at Abbeuile, where he was roialling received, and richly presented, whence he marches	:1		taking of so braue and valiant a Capraine, as a prize	by calle journeyes came to Rosen, and thence to Ros	2
gaue fingula	ir demonstration of his great valour, vn-	to Beaunou, Gifors, and fo to Bou-de V incennes, where			of much importance. The Defendants now hope-	de Vincennois, whither her husband , her father and	ď
till, as he was	remounting, one Iohn Swinten a Scot,	Charles and his Queene relided, and received him			leffe of fuccour, and finding themselves not able to	mother with great state came to meete her, of al	11
wounded	him in the face with his Launce, and threw	with great honour, and lastly to Paris where he was	Hiftory of No.	*Called the	hold out, carried all their goods from the towne into	whom shee was received as some Angelical person	١, ١
him to the groun	d, being the first man of the English	received in triumph.	,	March-Engue	the *Castel; but the assailants discovering their ac- tions, and perceiving their feare, gave a fierce assault,	who together remoued to Paris, where King Henr	9
that there w	as flaine, where likewife died the Earle of	(72) But more minding a Conquest then the	. [vant,	and by force made way into the Towne with their	and Queene Katherine in the Lowre, vpon the felti	i-
Kyme, the L	ords Gray, and Roffe, besides other men of	delicate pleasures of Court, after he had consulted	1		fwords: then Henry planting his Canons, began to	uall of Pentecoft, fate in their royall roabes, with their	ir
marke, an	d fifteene hundred common fouldiers, the Huntington, and Sommer fet, with Thomas	vpon his affaires, and leuied French forces to adde	1		batter the Castell, and shortly brought it to that ex-	imperial Crownes on their heades, and kept their Court with great confluence of people, K. Henry al	ir
Resulant his h	rother, were taken prifoners. The				tremity, that besides want of bread, most of their	figning the affaires of the Provinces.	-1
* cause of th	is ouerthrow, is imputed to the Dukes	(in reuenge of his brothers death) to fight with the			hand weapons were broken, and all of them in a ma-	(78) But though Champaigne, Picardie, Brie, and	4
haft in no	t staying for his Horsemen. Clarence that I	(pace of three weeker, and given it foul howard)			ner dangeroully wounded; yet delifted they not to	Normandy with the life of France were in Henries	C Merile
day vpon	his Crest ware a Circlet set with precious	come into the field. But hearing of King Henries			prouoke the English with opprobrious words, which	DOUGLESTON wer was not all enduced so his anion a	1 .
flones, whi	ch being taken off his Hitmet by a 'est, o Ishn Steward of Derby, torathouland	comming, and that his Armie by the accesse of sup-			caused such heavy conditions to be elaid on them, as	beyfance, a great and ftrong part holding out fill for	-
was fold	e to Iohn Steward of Derby, for a thousand	Diles from Paris and Narmenda was much in one	1		the like had not beene of any furrender before. 1 That the March of Means: should bee rendred	the Daulphin, with twenty thouland ftrong be	-
Angels.	For this fortunate dayes successe, (where-	fed, he brake vp his fiege and departed, which newes related, Henry marched to Dreaux and fate downers	Enguerrant de	Anguerrant de Renfirellet.	vpon the eleuenth of May next enfuing. 2. That	beyfance, a great and firong part holding our fill for the Daulphin, with twenty thouland firong be fleged La Charify upon Loire, and tooke it, from	1
in yet th	e Enemy also lost eleuen hundred, and sun-	related, Henry marched to Dreams and fate downer	Monfirelet.	Sittafrener.	Messier Louis de Gast, the Bastard of Vaurus, Iehan de	i whence he marched to Come voon the lame river.	
ary or the	m men of principall note,) the Daulphin Earle of Bucquhanan Constable of France.	before it. I he innabitants and Garrion lenible	1		Ramieres, Tramagen and Rarnard de Meureuille (hould	whose Defendants agreede, that if Bargundy did no	: 1
This loffe	received, the Earle of Salisbury, (who fol-	of the danger, praied parley, and accorded to render			be left to K. Henry to execute. 3. That Guicehard de Sifsayi, Pierron de Luppe, Robert de Geraines, Philip de Gamaches, and Iohn de Ouraye should be at the kings	raise the siege by the sixteenth of August, they would surrender; which the said Duke accepted, and there-	1
lowed with	the other forces, but came too late to	the Towne, if the Daulphin did not relieue them by	1		de Sisavi, Pierron de Luppe, Robert de Geraines, Philip	upon fent profer of battell to the Daulphin, who was	:
the encour	ter.)thought to require and bringing for-	a certaine day, which expired, the Towne was deli- uered, and eight hundred of the Daulphins souldiers			de Gamaches, and Iohn de Ouraye should be at the kings	likewise as readie (and by his Herauld gaue his faith)	3
ward his tro	upes, the enemy gaue ground, whereby	permitted to depart vpon their Oathes, not to beare			will vntill they had rendred or cauled to be rendred	to trie his fortune in the field: The day assigned	1
yet he reco	outred the dead bodie of Clarence, and	Armes against King Hemy, nor his allies, for the			all the Townes, Castels and Fortresses which they	and preparation made, the Duke of Burgundy fent to	1
lent it to Re	ewen, from whence it was conveyed into	I IDace of one yeere: then following the Devlokin/who	1		orany of them held in France, and then to be secured	King Henry for his assistance; whose answere was	.1
England.		ned ittli before him) in his march he tooke Rausency.			of life. 4. That allthe English, Welfb, Irish & Scots	that himlelfe and his forces would not faile to bee	: 1
(68) Afre	r this victory the Dolphinois belieged	APPLIENT, and Other places of detence	1		that heretofore had beene in the Kings obedience	with him that day, and run the same fortunes with	1
Aunzon, Whi	ch the Earle of Salisbury with his belt	(72) Seeing his purfinie of the future must !!	1		fhould be left to the Kings discretion. 5. That all the rest, as well Souldiers as Burgesses should bee left	him in the field.	. 1
forces lought	to releeue; but finding the enemie too to the Abbey of Beegin whole retreat	De truttlelle he diverted his Army unto Luismus	Enguerrant de		to the Kings pleasure, their lives onely excepted. 6.	(79) But great Henries stout mind was crossed	K.Henri ficknelle
the French c	harged vpon him, and flew three hun-		* Circa finens		That the Earle of Conner fon, who had beene prisoner	with his now crazy body, his health being fo empai-	ficknelle
dred of his tro	opes, but finding no meanes to pof-				to Pierron de Luppe, and at the beginning of the fiege	red with a burning feauer and fluxe, that he was dif- fwaded from the March; fo the command of the	
fesse Alenzo	",railed their fiege & returned to Anion.	having a defigne to beliege Meaux in Brie, and infest the Faulxboarg, sending before him the Duke of Exce-		ii .	of Means, was deliuered at the instance of Henry for	Army was committed to his brother John Duke of	
(69) Ki	ing Henry therefore vpon notice of his		1	11	a ranfome, should now bee freede without ransome.	Bedford, and the Earle of Warwick, who ioyning their	1
brothers deat	h, was much perplexed, for belides the				7. That al the Armes and goods in the March should	forces for avoiding of contentions, through all their	1
naturali affec	tion of a brother, his wildome, valour.		*6.ORebrit.		bee brought to one place there safely guarded, and	rankes intermingled the English, Burgundians, and Pi-	1
and countell	in the warres was highly entermed by	to recure his Armie, by entrenching his Quantum			an Inventory of the same delivered vnto King Hen-	sardes together, and so the night before the designed	1
nim,and to	Speake truth, there were very few Princes				ry. 8. That all the Reliques and Church orna-	day of battell, came to Cone and encamped neere to	1
daining bic	be equalled vnto him. Wherefore or- other brother, John Duke of Bedford his				ments should likewise be put in safety. 9. That all the Prisoners as well in the March, as in any other	the Towne; yet vadaunted Henry, who never mif-	1 1
Lieutenan	r, and leaving his faire Queene most hono-			14.	place vnder any of their commandements should be	carried in any of his personall enterprises, taking	1
rably attend	led, vpon the tenth of June he landed at 1	and within, the Baltara of Vagras with many men of			fet at liberty, ransome free, and acquitted of their	his leaue at Senlis of K. Charles, and the two Queens, in his horse-litter (with a guard for his person) mar-	1
<i>Callis</i> hauir	ig in his companie James King of Seatland	ned fouldiers were as buffered and a thouland trai-			promifes. 1 o. That no man vntill the assigned day	ched(though weake) after them; but at Melan find-	I
in hope cith	er to draw the Seets vnto his feruice, or			10/	of rendring should goe out of the March, and that	ing his ficknesse to encrease, and himselse (who erst	ı
tle to wit	hdraw their aides from the Daulohin, by	of the Daulphin, with feuen hundred fouldiers harra-		1 The second	none should bee admitted to enter into it, but such	could endure all things) now vnable to endure tra-	1
he fight o	f their owne King under his roiall Gan.				as King Henry assigned. 11. That these Articles	well he returned to Bois de Vincennois.	ı
lard. Butti	ne Scots, constantly French, being de-	lifb Garrisons thereabout, assembling, flew three			should be subscribed and sealed by an hundred of the	(80) The English colours displayed in the Dani-	1
nanucu s	why they would fight against their Soue- nswered directly that they might not ac-	life Garrisons thereabout, affembling, slew three hundred of his retinue, himselfe bardly escaping by the swiftness of his house.			best men amongst them. 12. That for the true per-	phins eye, and his power inferior in thew vuto them,	
mowledo	e any duty vnto Iames, who as yet lived vn-				formance of the concord, foure and twenty perions	howfoeuer hee had vaunted, he thought it not best	l
ler the obo	dience of another. His defigne thus	(74) Whilft King Henry lay in his fiege before	•		elected by King Hemy should remaine in ho sa ge. (76) The place thus rendred vnto the King, hee	to aduenture the field, and therefore dislodging	1
avling his co	onfidence was in his right and his Grand		Anno 1421. Decemb.6.	Enguerrant de Romfreier.	presently sent eight hundred selected persons priso-	trom Cone, ne marched to Barry, Both to protract	
(70) TI	he morrow after his arrivall he dispar-	the Castle of Windfore was deliuered of a sonne, na- med also Henry, whereat he exceedingly rejoiced,	Decemb.o.	ounderen.	ners to Paris, Rosen, and England. The Bastard of	from Conche marched to Barry, both to protract time, and to weary the enemy. Cone thus relieved, the Dukes marched to Tropes in Champaigne, and let	1
ned the E	arie of Dorlet, and the Lord Clifford with				Vaurus, and the Gouernour of Meanx, the King cau-	down their Army for the fiege; but before the cords	
welue hu	ndred horse and foot vnto Paris, to releeue		Holinff.		fed to be hanged before the Towne on a Tree, na-	of their tents could bee sufficiently made fast, the	1
he Duke	of Excepter, who was straitned of victuals phinois, that harrased the Countrey adioi-	the contrary, and prophecying, that what Henry of Monmonth fhould get, Henry of Windfore would loofe. At the fame sime liberals to the fame sime liberals to the fame sime liberals.			med (by the Bastard himselfe) Vaurus, whereon hee	Duke of Bedford had heavy newes of Great Henries	
y the Da	ig Bonnesal, Galandon, and some other forts,	Monmouth Should get, Henry of Windfore would loofe			had formerly hanged many English and Burgundions,	encreased sicknesse, and danger of death; wherefore	
ng,caking	ortunate successes, and new conceined				and his head was fixed vpon a pole on the toppe of	leauing the Duke of Burgundy with the Armie, hee posted to Bois de Vincennois, where finding the relati-	
one then	marched to Chartiers with feuen thousand				the fame tree. Messier Louis de Gast, Denis de Van-	posted to Bois de Vincennois, where finding the relati-	
ien at Arme	e fours thousand Cuaff- barren and				rus, brother to the Bastard, Iehan de Romieres, and Barnard de Meurenille were sent to Paris & there ex-	on too true, hee greatly lamented his dying brothers	
xe thous	and Archers strong, where he began the	to the tword, or taken Priloners: to temedy which			ecuted; the goods of the March were distributed	eftate: but the King much reloycing of his brothers comming, cheerefully comforted his mourning	His ch in his fi
coc, min	mi the Danard of Thian Drauely relified.	King Henry fent part of his owne Armic vnto the Earle of Salisbury his Lieutenant of Normandie, who			by Henry amongst his Captains, and deserving men.	friends and Nobles, and made unto them this graue	ra tire th
nd lent to	King Henry for aide	Within few daies reconcred			Then order was taken for repairing of breaches, and		
(71) H	my, after a few daies stay in Callais, mar-	within few daies recourred Auranches and reuenged the death of the furprized.			a strong Garrison Left in Means and the March. After	and his last dying speech. (81) I well see you lament my death; but I doe	
					whose surrender, Crespi, the Castell of Pierrepont,	(81) I well see you lament my death; but I doe "not so: for this short life of mine shall leave behind	His laft
		(75) But			Merlan, Offemont, and fundry others submitted	"mee the witnesse of my faith, integrity, instice, ho-	CELLOID.
		•			, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , ,	1	
						Hhhhh "nefty,	

then probable.

(83) His workes of pious affection were shewed

in erecting the Monasteries of Bethlem & Briget, neere

vnto his Manour of Richmond, as also his princely

all pompous celebrity was enterred in the Church

at Westminster (for so Henrie had by his last will com-

manded) next beneath King Edward the Confe for

vpon whole Tombe Queene Katherine caused a roi-

all picture to bee laid, coueredall ouer with filuer

Chapets | Henrie V.

ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 52. | 649

plate guilt, but the head thereof altogether of mallyfilmer. All which at that Abbeys suppression, (when the battering hammers of destruction did soundalmost in every Church) were sacrilegiously broken off, and by purloining transferred to farre prophaner vies, where, at this day, the headlesse monument, (worthy to be restored by some more Princely and facred hand) is to be feene, and with thefe verses written vpon his Tombe.

Legend des Flantess

Dux Normanorum, verus Conquestor corum. Hares Francorum, decessit & Heltor corum.

Here Normans Duke, fo stiled by Conquest iust, True Heire of France, Great Hector, lies in dust. His Wife.

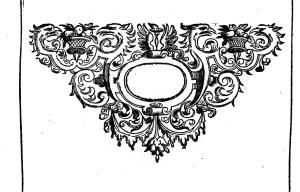
(86) Ratherine, daughter to King Charles the fixt of France, vpon an agreement of peace forementioned, was married vnto King Henrie at Troyes in Champaine, Iunii 3. A.D. 1420, and after Febr. 14. was Crowned at Westminster with all solemnities. Shee was his Queene two yeeres, and about three months, and furniting him, was remarried vnto owen Theodore of Wales, vnto whom thee bare three fonnes, Edmund, Iasper, and Owen, and a daughter who liued not long. Owen tooke the habite of religion at Westminster , the other two by King Henry the fixt (their halfe brother,) were honorably preferred . Edmund was created Earle of Richmond, and marrying Margaret, the fole heire of John Beaufort Duke of Sommerfet, was father by her vnto Henry (the only heire of Lancaster,) afterwards King of England. Iasper, the second brother was created the same yeere, Earle of Pembroke, who required his brothers kindnes

with continuall affiftance against the house of Yorke; and when that faction prevailed, he was forced to flie into Flanders, but it againe waning, he was both reftored, and to his greater honour created Duke of Bedford, dying without any iffue legittimate. This Queene, either for denotion, or her owne fafety, tooke into the Monastery of Bermondsey in Southwarke, where dying Ian.2. A. D. 1436. fine was buri-ed in our Ladies Chappell whith S. Peters Church at the fining fer; whose Corpstaken up in the raigne of King Henry the feuenth her Grand-child, (when he laid the foundation of that admirable ftructure,) and her Coffin placed by King Henry her husbands Tombe, hath euer fince fo remained, and neuer reburied: where it standeth (the Couer being loose) to be feene and handled of any that will; and that by her owne appointment, faith Report, (which doth in this, as in most things, speake vntruth) in regard of her disobedience to King Henry, for being deliuered of her sonne at the place hee forbad.

His Sonne.

(87) Henry the only child of a roiall couple, borne at Windfore, and not nine months old at his fathers death, succeeded in his dominions, though not holding his Empire with the like glory. Crowned he was with the Crownes of two Kingdomes, but vnable by much to weild the scepter of one, that of France was loft by the factions of his Nobles, before it was well wonne; and Englands Crowne twice pluckt from his head before his death. Of whole aduentures and variable raigne (the times when England lay goared in the blood of her civill warres) we shall speake in the insuing relation of his innocent, but vn

HENRIE

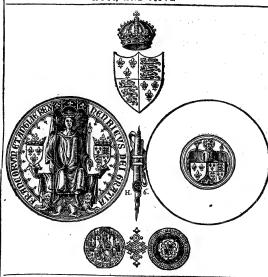


429

Hemy VI.

HENRIE THE SIXTH, KING OF Monarch 93 ENGLAND, AND FRANCE, LORD

OF IRELAND, THE THREE AND FIFT IETH MO-NARCH OF ENGLAND, HIS RAIGNE. ACTS, AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER XVI.



Ad God almighty (the *giuer and transferrer of Kingdomes) thought good that the English should have settled in the Continent of Europe, and nor haue beene fhutte vp within their Ilands, hee would not fo foone have deprined them of their

late incomparable Captaine and Soueraigne Henry the fifth. But it seemes that God having humbled she French Nation under Henries victorious hand, ment now again to restore them to his wonted fauor by taking away their terrour & triumpher, substituting his fon(an Infant) in his place, Henrie of that name the 6.born at Windfor, who was crowned about the eight month of his age. The prety hands which could not feed himselfe, were yet made capable to weeld a scepter, and heethat was beholding to nurfes for milke, did neuerthelesse distribute the fustes

nance of law and inflice to so great and warlike Nations. Counsell supplies the defect of age. At his fathers death hee had vncles, menofapproued valour and differeion, to whom the principall care of all publike affaires by the fathers laft prouisons was committed. Humfrey Duke of Glasefler (theyonger brother of two)had the * gouernement of England entrusted to his fidelity: the regency of France was affigned for Pronince to John Duke of Bedford, the eldest lining vncle of the King, as to a Prince of much magnanimity, prowelfe and felicitie in conduct, with whom was rioyned Philip Duke of Burgundie. The guard and custody of the royal! Infant was assigned to Thomas Duke of Excester : the nurture and education to his * mother, the Queene Downger: vpon billing. the two vncles (as betweene the two Poles of the Englis Empire) the whole globe of gouernment moued: whatfocuer is done by the kingly power is faid to be done by the King. We shall behold notwithstanding in the tragical glasse of this Henries raigne, how farre the imbecility of the kingly per-

Chap.16. Henrie VI. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 53.

fon may affect the body politicke with good or euill. If histories were ordayned to stirre affections, not to teach and instruct, neuer any Princes raigne fince the Conquest did better deserue to bee described with a tragical ftyle and words of horror & forrow, although the beginning (like the faire morning of a most tempestuous day) promised nothing morethen a continuance of paffed felicities. (2) For the State of the English affaires was great

and flourishing, England without turnult, the natu-

rall fierce humors of her people confuming or exer-

cifing themselues in France, and France herselfe (for

the nobler parts together with the grand City of

Paris head of that Monarchie) was at their denotion. There wanted nothing which might advance the worke begunne. Most noble and expert Leaders as those which had bin fathioned in the schoole of warre, under the best martiall master of that age, the late Hemy, arms full of veterant fouldiers, most of which were of skill sufficient to be commanders themselues: their friends sirme, no defect nor breach (by which dissipation might enter to the ouerthrow of the English greatnesse) as yet disclosing themselues. Wildome, pierie, riches, forwardnesse at home, courage and like forwardnesse abroad. It is a fruitfull speculation to consider how God carrieth his part in the workes of men, alwaies inftly, fometimes terribly, but neuer otherwise, then to bring all worldly greatnesse and glory into due contempt, and loathing, that the soule may bee erected to her Creator, and aspire to a Crown celestiall. The first disaduantage which hapned to the English cause (after the late Kings decease) was the death of Charles the French King, who furnised the other but *fiftie and three dayes. This wee may worthily call the first (as it was a great, aswell as the first) disaduantage, for the imbecilities of that Prince were a stregth to the English; On the other side (God observing a talio and parilitie) the infancy of young Henry was an advantage to Charles the Daulphin of France, now by them of his faction called King of France, as the English vied in derifion to enftyle him King of Ber-

(3) In England (whose condition the order of na-A Parliament at rure wils vs first to describe, because there was the scat of counsell, by which all the actions of the generall state were directed) a Parliament was affembled to establish the Crownevpon the Infant, and to prouide for the publike vies and necessities of *The leuie ther- State. Money* (alwayes one of them) was liberalby granted. It was a frange fight(and the first time that euer it was seen in England) which in the next yeere hapned, an infant fitting in the mothers lap, of was 5.Nobles on enery facke of before it could tell what English meant, to exercise the place of Soueraigne direction in open Parliament. Yet foit was, for the Queene to illumine that publike convention of States with her Infants presence, removed from Windfor to London; through which Citie (her selfe roially seated with her young fonne vpon her lappe) passed in maiesticke manner to Westminster, and there tooke seate among all his

Lords, whom (by the ordinary mouth of that high

Court) hee saluted and spake to them at large con-

cerning the premises; where, as hee vettered the

mind of his place by anothers tongue, so hee eife-

where profecuted all affaires by other mens hands

rie, because little else was left vnto him,

and Organs. (4) The Duke of Bedford (as the nature of his place exacted) to fettle and preferue the State of France for his young Nephew the King, together with Philip Duke of Burgoigne, who as yet continued a stedfast friend to the English Soucraignety (knowing the Daulphin busie to recouer France) strengthned the confines of their gouernment with Garrisons, afsembled their powers, and laboured to retaine the hearts of their owne party. The Duke of Bedford Regent of France, had * words to them to this effect in open affemble. That they should not violate their plighted and sworne alleagiance, neither by them-

*Palplyorg.

Selues endeauour nor endure, that by others their Soucraigne Lord young Henry (bould be defrauded of his inheritance, or that the hatreds and comities which now begame to die betweene the French and English names; (hould through the practices of most faithlesse men berenued, and reinflamed: That they would remember how (by Gods speciall favour and goodnesse) the two Kingdoms of France and England were united under one mol faire and goodly Monarchicin an eternall league, and lately so established that no hamane force could refist . That albest they had sustained dammage by the warre, yet the same would be recovered with advantage, if they honored loued and obeyed their lawfull Soueraigne Lord King Henry, and profecuted his enemies with extremity, according to bounden duty. This Oration found plaufible admission in shew: Henry is proclaimed King of England and of France, and fuch chiefes as were present did their homages, taking oath to be true: The like Obligation and Sacrament of alleagiance was put vpon all the French through the English Dominions in France. (5) Charles (who as fonne and heire to the late

King entitled himselfe King of France, by the name

of Charles the feuenth) being then about the feauen and twentieth yeere of his age, full of courage and new hopes, gathered what force he could; his chiefe Leuies were made in Daulphynois and Italy, from whence(for money)he drew fundry troupes. But the best finews of his Army moued in certain thoufands of the Scotifb Nation, which ferued under him. The first steppe which the Charolines, or forces of Charles made into hostile action was unfortunate, for comming to raife the fiege which the English held about * Crepan they were put to flight, with the loffe of about two thousand of their numbers. This was noble in Charles, and his Charolines, that their minds funke notat the horrour of fuch an euill omen. It was faith Emplius of them, refounded to encounter ad-uerfe fortune with encresse of courage. The Regent on the other side was vigilant upon all occasions: the power of his Regency extended it felfe without contradiction * through Vimew, Pontieu and Picardie, from Paris to Reines, Chalons and Troyes, up to the water of Logr and the Sea: A goodly scope of territory, and absolutely the best of France. That late losse & soile of the Charolines was repaired thorrly after by an ouerthrow in skirmish which they gaue to the English party, from whom (with the flaughter of about fifteene hundreth)they recourred a great booty, specially of Cattel which the English had gotten in the Countries of Nugion and Main, but thus intercepted voon their return into Normandy. Charles (which Paul Emplies omitteth) doubteth that successe; for * Meulan vpon Sein is by him taken where all the Polyd. Forg. 1.33 Englifb are put to the fword : but the possession was thort, and the reuenge speedy : Thomas Montacute Earle of Salisbury (a man (faith Polydor) more like the old Romans then people of that age, so great was his vertue and cheualrie) hauing with him Iohn of Luxemburg, Generall of the Burgundian horsemen, reco-uers the place, killing all the French which were found therein.

(6) At the Citie of * Amiens in Picardie the three great Dukes of Bedford (Regent of France) Burgoign and Britaine meet to consult of the whole course & fumme of affaires. There they renued the League, adding, that each should be others friend, and that all of them should defend King Henries right with their best forces. For the better assurance of this profitable amity, the Regent (then a Bachelour) tooke to wife the Lady Anne, filter to Philip Duke of Burgundie: while the Regent was ablent from Paris vpon thele iust occasions, the Parisians (who not long before had * fent Ambaffadors into England, to acknowledge their obedience to King Henry) practifed with Charles to deliuer their City. The Regent had no-tice of this dangerous treason, and with his presence retained them in ducty. The chiefe Actors paied their lines for satisfaction of the trespasse. In good

Hhhhh 2

in Car.y. *Cyanant.laith Polyd.who pla-

eeth this action

in the following

the English Re-

Bency in France

*Polyd, Verg. 1.23

Duke of Burgain held with Brabant. This bred bit-

ter humor in the Duke of Glocester, who being not

vied to meet with any rubs or confrontments, and

now when in person he came with an armie to take

652

The whole fields

English in France

vader the Dake of Eedford,

Bob.Fak

Polyd.Verg.

*Gagwin. *Paul. Aemil. *Hell.Batt L.16,

The Regents

victory at Ver-

Stones Annal.

Hell Bost, U.16,

This battell wa

fought, 7.0f Aug. Anno Domini, 1425. Skith Stem.

Poly Vere lives

" Ja Cerol.y.

The murrhere

Bargain excepted a capitulations.

* R. b. Fab. Chron.

Ismes the first King of Scots

for at liberty or of England.

ly thefe.

during these happy proceedings in France, were brief-

Ismes Steward the young King of Scots, having

beene casually taken upon the Sea, in the reigne of

feison of Henault in right of his supposed wife, finged by the Duke ces were equally thrust into one sacke, to be sealed ding himfeife hard fet vnto, by the aids which Barvp for euer by obliuion, and without mention of and the Bishop mends on either fide, the Duke and Bishop (the one made friends. goin ministred to the Duke of Brabant, he challenol Gleeffer to geth Combat of the Duke of Burgundy, calling him hauing sworne by his * Princehood, the other by his *Holings. traitour. It was accepted and the lie ftrongly thrust Priesthood, truly to obserue the award,) shooke vpon Gloucester, who (leaving the light Lady at her hands, and were fully for that time reconciled. After Towns of Monts in Henault) returned into England, which holy and necessary worke of private attonedoing nothing of that for which at that time he ments, enfued acts of fertiuitie and honor. For in The Kingrecame. Mediation tooke vp the quarrell afterward the fame Towne of Leitester the young King, not hood and dubbetweene the Duke of Burgundy and him. Not long then fine yeeres of age, was at the high feast of Pente. beth Kithard after the returne of the Duke of Gloncefter into Engcoft dubbed Knight by the Regent of France. Im-Duke of Yorke. land, the first marriage which had beene made and mediately whereupon the King honored Richard consummated betweene the Duke of Brabant, and Earle of Cambridge, (who by the fatall errour of the the faid Lady Laqueline, was pronounced lawfull by Pope Martin the fifth. Hereupon the Duke of Glo-Counsell was at this Parliament created Duke of An.D.1425 Yorke, the same who was father to Edward the fourth) A.Rcg.4. cefter(having fusteined many losses aswell of friends with the order of knighthood, and about forty more as treasure in punishment of that great finne, in tawith him. This Richard Duke of Torke was hee, king anothers wife) forthwith marries Eleanour who brought vpon this Kingdome and nation most daughter to Reignald Lord Cobham of Sterborough dolefull divisions to the veter extirpation of all the whereby he made her amends for that * vnlawfull male lines of either house, that is to say, his owne, familiarity which had formerly paffed betweene and that of Lancafter, whereof the young King was head. From Leicester the King was conveighed to Meanewhile the Court of England doth well shew Court-factions Killingworth, and Thomas Duke of Excefler dying, that the King was an infant, for it was full of dange in England, Beauchamp Earle of Warwicke, was constituted Guardi rous emulations and fidings, the Duke of Gloucelles an and Tutor to the King. (whose high office it was to tender the welfare of (12) The Regent having thus worthily provided A.D. 1427 the King and State) laying fundry grieuous accusati-See Feechis for the quiet estate of the King and Country, returns A. reg. 5. ons against the Cardinall Beaufort (sonne of John to his charge in France. There went ouer at the fame Duke of Lancaster) Bishop of Winchester and Lord time a choife and great number of fresh men, vnder with fresh force Chancellor as being a person very dangerous vnthe conduct of that immortally renowmed, the L. palleinto France to both. Talbot, whose victories (faith Polydor) were so many, (10) The news of these home-contentions comthat his name was not onely most dreadfull to the ming to the Duke of Bedford into France, easily drew him home, though the state of that Realme could French, but most famous through the world, even at this present. That yee may know the man not not well want his presence. For John Duke of Britaine to have beene fludious of fine Phrases, vpon the one Talben and (notwithstanding his late renouation of league with side of his sword-blade was engrauen, Sum Talboti, the Regent at Amiens) lealous of the * English greatand voon the other this boifterous blunt sentence *Polyd, Verg. nes turned fodeinely to Charles, and with him , Arthur, Earle of Richmond his brother. This puts fresh Pro vincere inimicos meos. spirit into the drooping Prince. Arthur is by Charles made Constable of his France, in place of the The Duke of Alanzon (taken at the Castell of Ver-Scottish Earle, who was slaine at the bloody Battell noil) was fet at liberty vpon payment of two *hun-dreth thousand Scutes of gold. At Mountarges aof Vernoil. The Duke of Britaine ouerlines this reuolt but a small time. Arthur to declare his for-wardnes on the behalf of Charles, assembleth about bout Orleance the English received an overthrow with the losse of about sifteene hundreth of their numtwenty thouland men, and with them sodeinely be-The new Conbers , and in Britaine the French fuftained great damflable of France flegeth S. Iean a Towne of Normandy, vpon the fronmages by a Captaine of the Duke of Sommer fets tier of Britaine; which Edmund Duke of Sommerset, Gouernour of Normandy, had lately fortified and his first enter-Thele were petty matters: They of Mantz in Maine had drawne in the French by night, who massacred the English. William Earle of Suffolke Captain of the stuft with souldiers. The vnexpected arrivall of the French, did greatly at the first perplex the English. place fends to Iohn Lord Talbot for fuccour. It came, but voon better aduise, they valiantly sallied out vp and that fo vnexpectedly, that the French were alike on them, both before and behind, which stroke so diffrest. All but fouldiers were spared, and many algreat terrour into the enemy, that with loffe of their fo of them, though thrust into prisons. The Trai-Artillery, and many of their people they forfooke tours which had caused so much mischiefe, had their the fiege. To redeeme this dishonour, he turnes his deserts by death. From hence the Lord Talbot marfury vpon the Countrey of Angion, which in many ched to other enterprifes. The quality of our taske parts he depopulates and spoiles. The Regent becals vs to the maine. ing resolued to returne into England, seases behind (13) Thomas Lord At ontacute Earle of Salisbuhim Beauchamp . Earle of Warwicke ; as licutement, who 77, being with the Regent at Paris, and confidering was lately arrived in France, having fix thousand fresh what forces of men, and all provisions the English Souldiers in his company. then enioied, bethought himselfe of some action The Dake of (11) The presence of the Duke of Bedford Regent which might answere the greatnesse of his owne Bedford returner of France, was to the State of England very necessary, name, and of the publike meanes. The fiege of For the wisdome and authority of so great a Prince. Orleance is by him propounded to the Councell being eldeft uncle to the King, and one whom many The credite of the Motioner was alone an argument great deedes made famous, allaied the diftemper which he found at his arrival. It was a worke worof power to contince the possibility. His desires were therefore furnished with all competent prouithy of his labour, and he also found it to be a worke fions. They of Orleance hearing what a storme was indeed, and not eafily effectuable. The differences comming (for the name of this Earle was worthily were debated first at Saint Albans, then at Northamp. terrible) with great diligence ordaine for their de ton, laftly in a Parliament at Leicefter, which continufence. The *Suburbes (answerable in bignesse to a *Paul, Atmil. ed there till toward the end of June. The Duke good City) they levell with the carth, that the eneof Bedford himselfe, to avoid the note of partiality. mie might not from thence annoy them. Men, vi- The fiege of Gr. for that his brother of Glocester was a party did not Auals, munition, and conftant intentions to fight for teamer. intermeddle otherwise then as in Generall words to their liberty, and fafegard abounded. The Earle of perswade amity, but the whole cause was referred to Sarisburie, the Lord Talbot, and a dreadfull puillance arbitrators of greatest Nobility and prudence: by under most expert commanders present themselves whose endenours all those differences and greenanbefore it. orleance was and is an Episcopall Sce, a Parliament

Lib.zz.

"Holiaffe.

Chap. 16 Henrie VJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 53.

Polyd.Pire.1.22

The Earle of Salisbury flair

with a great the before Orleans Heliafo

*Pohl.verg.

*Paul_Aemyl

The firge continued notwithe flanding the Earles death,

Orleans offers

to become Bur-gundian, but the English would

cafts vp ramparts and other works, one of which (by

reason of the hugenesse thereof) was called London,

by the name of the chiefe City of England. The Fort

which stood at the Bridge foot beyond the Logr, hee

feiseth vpon and closeth them vp on euery side-

Charles of France could minister no sufficient succor-

God, when mans helpe failes interpoleth his hand,

which as all of vs daily feele, so is it most conspicu-

ous in the deliverance of Nations. The City is dri-

uento some miserie through the beginning want of

all things; for the siege had now endured about 60.

daies * not without much bloudshed on both sides .

The Earle of Salisburie impatient of fuch delay, pur-

poseth to give a generall assault. The better to con-

fider upon the course, hee stands to take view at a

window barred with Iron which ouerlooks the Ci-

ty toward the East. Behold how God began to vn-

cutte the knot of those bands with which the English

held France bound, a bullet of a great piece (which

lay ready leueld at that window) discharged by the

Gunners*fonne, a lad, stroke the grates, whose splin-

ters fo wounded the Earle, and one Sir Thomas Gar-

grave, that they both dyed of the incurable hurts

within few dayes. Heare now the common judge-

ment of Writers concerning this Earles loffe: * Pre-

sently after the death of this man the fortune of the war

changed.* Now both mortall and immortall powers be-

ganne to looke fanourably upon the State of France. This

to the * English was Initium malorum: for after this

mishappe they rather lost then wanne, so that by little and little they lost all their possession in France: and albeit that

formwhat they got after, yet for one that they wan, they loft three. So that Polydor not without cause (after many

other great praises) doth elsewhere call him the man

in whom the lafety of the English state consisted. The

vertue therefore of a fortunate Generallisinestimable.

(14) Howbeitthe siege did not determine with

his life, William Earle of Suffolke, the Lord Talbot &

wants of the Campe were relieved from Paris by a

connov, under the guard of Sir tohn Faltolfe and fif-

teene hundred fouldiers who arrived fafe in defpite

of all the attempts to distresse the, which the French

made. The City would yeeld it felfe, but not to the

English. The Duke of Burgundie they were content

should haue the honour. A subtle stratagem, rather

then an offer of yeelding, for there was likelihoode

in it to breake thereby the amity betweene the Eng-

life and him. The Regent and his Counfell being

ignorant how to remedy so neere a mischiefe; there

presented herselfe vnto him at Chinen a yong maid

about eighteene yeeres old, called Ioan of Loraine,

*daughter to James of Arck dwelling in Domremy

neere Vaucaleurs, a * Shepheardesse vnder her fa-

restore him to the sulnesse of his fortunes. Shee was

not forthwith credited; but when the wife of both

forts, newell Clerkes as Souldiers had fifted her with

manifold questions, the continued in her first speech

fo stedfastly, vetering nothing but that which was

the rest maintained the same all the winter. The

ginen vnto her fayings. An *old woman directed her. Joan armes her felfe like a man, and requires to have that fword which hung in * S. Katherines church of Fierebois in Touraine. This demannd encreased their admiration of her; for fuch ax fword was found among the old Donaries or Votiue tokens of that Church. Thus warlikely arrayed the rides to Blois, where forces and fresh victuals lay for the reliefe of Orleance. Shee with the Admirall and Marshall of France enters lafe. This did greatly encourage the fainting French. Joan the maide of God, fother calledher, (though * fome have written that it was | Gard Seg de a practife or imposture) writes thus to de la Pole Earle

Heilim,& fome other French Authors.

*Serres Innentar

* Polyd ,Verg.

of Suffolke, who succeeded Salisbury in the maine

The Virge her

letter to the English General

England: I am the chiefe of this war, wherefoeuer "I encounter your men in France, I will chafe them wil they or no. If they will obey, I will take them to mercy. "The Virgine comes from heauen to drive you out of France. If you will not obey, shee will cause so great a stirre as the like hath not beene these thousand yeeres in France, And beleeue certainly, that the king

of heaven will fend to her and her good men of Arms, more force then you can have. Goe in Gods name into your Country: bee not obstinate, for you shall not hold France of the King of Heauen, the sonne of S. Marie, but Charles shall enjoy it, the King and "lawfull heire to whom God hath ginen it. Hee shall enter Paris with a goodly traine ; you William de " la Pole Earle of Suffolke, John Lord Talbot, Thomas L.

leance in liberty. If you doe not reason to them whom " you have wronged, the French will doe the goodliest " exploit that ever was done in Christendome. Vinder-"frand these newes of God, and of the Virgine, Yet Charles had at this time to whole Countries against which both the Sausyard and Burgundian pre-

with laughter. Ioan reputed no better then a Bedlam or Enchantresse. Though to some it may seem more honourable to our Nation, that they were not to bee expelled by a humane power, but by a diuine, extraordinarily renealing it felfe. Du Serres describes this Paragon in these words. Shee had a modest councourtly lightnesse. Let vs not dissemble what wee duct the English had Orleance pluckt out of their hopes, after they had suffered the Duke of Alanson to enter with new force, and with much loffe were driven to raise the siege. Ioan herselfe was wounded at one fallie in which sheeled, being shot through the arme with an arrow. Iudge what she esteemed of that hurt, when shee vsed these admirable and terrible words. This is a favour, let vs goe on; they cannot escape the hand of God. In all aduentures the was one and formoft. The Englift loft at this fiege, the Earle of Salisbury, the Lord Molins, the Lord Poynings, and many other. But doe not rashly beleeue Serres in saying, that of all forts were flaine in fuch Sallies as the

The description maid of God.

fent vnto, thought it not reasonable (Emyline erroniously makes the late Earle of Salisbury the Author of that refusall) neither indeed was it, theirs having beene the coft and labour. The Duke of Euroundy construcd this repulse sowerly, which marred his talte of the English friendshippe euer after: yet the Regents answere was just and honest. That the warre was made in King Henries name, and therefore Orleance ought to be King Henries. Among these difficulties stood the French affaires. Charles of France vnderstanding the miscrable straites of his deare City, &

Scres Lamber "Seent zunit by Edwerd
by Edwerd
ber, whole flockes fine tended, bids him not finn,
Jon themachia
maid macaubafly fent to del.

lister the Realine of France from the English yoake, and uer Oricance and France.
*Paul.Acmyl.

*modeft, chaft and holy, that honour and faith was

charge of that flege. (15) King of England do reason to the Aing of one
"urn, for his blond repails, yeeled up to the Virgine the
Original Copie
"keyes of all the good Cities which you have forced. She
Limbur towall and is
"Aborting the (15) King of England do reason to the King of heais come from beauen to reclaime the bloud royall, and is "ready tomake a peace, if you bee ready to doe reason:

yeeld therefore, and pay what you have taken, King of

"Scales Lieutenauts to the Duke of Bedford, and you Duke of Bedford terming your felfe Regent of the Realme of France, spare innocent bloud, and leave Orunder his obedience, * but Languedee and Daulphin

pared, but miscarried, the Prince of Orenge the third confederate being discomfited. (16) This letter was entertained by the English

tenance, sweete, civill, and resolute, her discourse was temperate, reasonable and retired, her actions sold, shewing great chastity without vanity, affectation, babling, or finde written. By her encouragements and conmartiall Virgine made eight thouland. Our Writers fay but * fixe hundreth. The Lord Talbot marched away with aboue nine thousand, whom I pan would

not suffer the French to pursue. In memory of this

admirable delinerance, they of that City erected a

Chap.16. Henrie VI. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 53. monument, where Charles the feuenth king of France

ebbe of the Eng-lish greatnesse in

and Ioan the Martiall maide were represented kneeling in Armour, elevating their eyes and handes to heaven, in figne of thankes and acknowledgement. (17) There was an interchangeable taking and recourring of Townes and places of importance vp-

on both fides. The Lord Talbot tooke Lanall, and the Earle of suffolke puts himself into lergeaux. Thither the Duke of Alanson with Ioan and other great Captaines come, which they force by affault. Sir Alexander Pool the Earles brother was flaine, with many others in the fight, the Earle himselfe remained prisoner. The Duke added some other places to this Conquest: soone after his numbers are augmented by the repaire to him of Arthur Constable of France, the Earle of Vandome, the Lord Dalbret and others, so that now their whole Army contayned about twenty and three thousand men. With these they encounter the Lord Talbot (who had scarce the fifth part of their numbers) at a village called Patay, whom they charged fo fodainely, that

his Archers had no time to fortifie their battels (af-

ter their manner) with a Palizado, or empalement of

stakes, so that the chiefe fight must bee made upon

horsebacke. After three houres bloudy resistance,

the English were put to the worst. * The Lord Scales,

the Lord Hungerford, Sir Thomas Rampstone, and e-uen the Lord Talbot himselfe (being first wounded

in the backe) were taken. The footmen enforced

to trust to their * swords under the shelter of such

horsemen as remained, retreated in order, and came

Palyd.Verg.

The L.Talbot

Polyd.Verg.

to a place of fafety. The English lost about a thoufand, the French aboue 600. This blow shooke the whole fabricke of the English greatnesse in France, at the very foundations, awaking multitudes (euen of those who before had vowed fealty to the English and now had colour of divine warrant for violating that vow) to ioyne with the victors for the recoue-

revolt of fundry townes; neither was it long before Charles himselfe iffues out in Armes, recouers the City of Junerre and Reims; where according to the Maides direction, hee was folemnly crowned King. Hitherto shee might bee thought propheticall and fortunate. It should seeme now that the chiefe part of her imployment was accomplished, yet she flou-rished a while longer. The Duke of Bedford to buttreffe the shrinking state of English affaires in France and to encounter euill fortune in the face, vpon the unpleasant newes of Orleance rescued, and Talbots

ry of common liberty. There followed the present

taking, musters his whole present forces which made aboue ten thousand English, besides certaine wings of Normans: with these he marcheth out of Paris, and opposeth himselfe to the Current of Charles his new hopes who meant to attempt that City, some of whose Citizens held strict and secret correspondence with him. But vpon this affrontment he suspended the execution of that delign, having as then no hope to atchieue it. The Regent returnes to Paris Joane

(18) Places of speciall note as Campeigne and Beausois yeelded themselves voluntarily to Charles. The Regent having fetled the Estate, and Garrisons of the Chiefe City, paffeth into Normandy, to prouide for a safe retreat there, if perhaps the English (by the ineuitable will of God) should be enforced to quit their other holdes and dominions: which hee began to suspect, for that he had intelligence of a fecret purpose, which the French pursued to winne the Burgundians from King Henries fide, While the Regent was absent upon this occasion, Charles got

the Pucell diffwaded Charles from fight.

the Towne of Saint Denis, (a neighbour to Paris) though hee held it not long by practife. From thence he lends the Duke of Alanjon and Ioane to trie their friends and fortunes at Paris. They found not hoped successe, for the English gave them so rough an encounter, that ion her felfe was * wounded, and the rest with much slaughter driven to fall off. The Regent hearing of these attempts, entru

fleth the Coast-Townes of Normanay, to the care of Richard Dake of Yorke, and Roam (the Capitall City of that Dutchy)to Edmund Duke of Sommerfet, himfelfe peedesto Paris, where he commends the fouldiers and Citizens for that they had not imitated the difloyaltie of their Neighbours. New supplies came out of England. The next enterprize was to reduce Campeigne to obedience. John of Luxemburg with Burgundians and some English beliegeth it, Here the glory of Ioan unfortunately ended, for comming to the rescue shee entred indeed, but afterward fally-Jam taken priing forth,her troupes were beaten, and her felfe (being betrayed, say her fauourers) taken prisoner Chron.de Bretain by the faid Burgundian * Knight, who for the value of her ransome(ten thousand pounds Turneys, and three hundreth Crownes yeerely rent) deliuered her vnto the English. The fiege was notwithstanding thebastand of Vendene.
Heliesfied. rayled; they lent her to Roan, where the about nine or ten moneths after) was burnt to death. Clelia was faued by * Porfenna; and it is not to be doubted, a witch at Roan, "Tit. Lis. Patau, Decad, 1. but that the magnanimity of the English would hauespared her, had they not found it necessary to deface the opinion which the French euen with fuperflition had conceived of her. Our *Writers shew how the course of her life being legally examined Sec Helieft in by the Bishoppe of Beausis (in whose Diocesse shee was taken) and thee thereupon for forcerie, bloud- this fentence fhed, and vnnaturall vsc of manlike apparrell, and be reuersed by habiliments contrary to her fex, condemned to yeeres after, die, was notwithstanding vpon her solemne abiuring of fuch her lewd practifes, pardoned her life,

Paris would be much more.

received the Crowne of England at Westminster

waxen age for all impression either of good or bad.

The next yeere after his Coronation in England, he

of Feuersham in Kent Notaric, accused John Down

of the same place Gentleman, That hee and his com-plices did imagine the Kings death at his Coronation.

The combat was granted, and in Smithfield (the

Duke of Torke exercifing the office of high Confta-

ble) they fought in lifts. In the end the Kings name

was vied to part and forgine them. It is a vice to

suspect too farre. The Duke of Yorke (a most subtle

man) seemes neuer in heart to have beenea true sub-

iect to King Herry: yet no man faith, hee was any

author in this. Henrie (the common wealth having

yeelded to liberall grants of money) is now ready to

enter Paris. England remained vnder the gouern-

full shew. The yong King attended vpon with two

English Cardinals, Yorke, and winehester, and great

Princes of his blood, Dukes, Earles, Barons, Prelates,

and the flower of our nation, with many afwel French

and Burgonians, as Normans and others, excellentlie

well appointed, makes a triumphant entry into the

head City of that most noble Monarchy. There

ned King of France, by the * Cardinall of Winchester,

his great vncle, in the + Chiefe Church of Paris, called

ment of the Duke of Glocester.

Hen.6. The French go till againe connicted of periurious relapfing, though acknowledging her felfea * ftrumpet, and fayning to be with child, the deseruedly underwent that punish-

ment which she sought to delay. The rumor of her end, and the ignominious cause thereof was somewhat incommodious to the affaires of Charles. It what incommodious to the affaires of Charles. It was thought that the comming of King Henry to come in performer.

aved Helie,h.p.

Serres faith by

(19) Hee had already with great solemnity

being about nine yeeres olde, a most fashionable and

paffeth ouer into France there also to receive the diademethereof. The Constableship of England, was before his departure, assigned by Patent for terme of life to Richard Duke of Yorke (which gaue him a more feeling of greatnes and fecretly whetted his ambittous appetite,) vpon this occasion. One Iohn V pton

(20) There is no doubt that the English there A.D. 1431. at their Kings presence, fet forth their greatnes to the A.Reg. 10.

was no figne in the People but of ioy and welcome; King of France the showes were many and magnificent. Vpon the second of December, he was solemnely Crow-

of our Lady. The Duke of Bedford entertained the Ggggg 2

* Paul Acmyl.

Chap-16 | Henrie VJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 53. anchorage at right or inflice. Neither was England her-felfe woide of these mischieses, who every day heard the newes of her valiant childrens surerals, slaine in perpetu-French, English and Burgundians to end all quarrels by some good composition. The City of Arras is allowed of them all to treat in: From the * Pope *Esteniss 4. all skirmishes and bickerings, her generall wealth continuand Councell of Pifa, there came the Cardinals of S. Commissioners Craff and Copres, with twelue Bishoppes. For the King of France, there was the Duke of Bourban, the Earle of Richmond Constable of France, the Archimental Cons ally ebd, and wained, so that the cuils seemed almost equall, and the whole Westerne world eschoed the groanes and fighes of either Nations quarrels, being the common argument of speech and compassion throughout Chri-stendome. bishoppe of Reims, Chancellour of France, and many Burgundian t, others, great, noble, wife and learned men. For the King of England, the two Cardinals of Yorke and (22) The course certainly which the English held, Winchester, the Earles of Suffolke (* John Holland Earle Holland did only faintly keepe aliue the Generall State of the Regency, without giuing period to the warre, either by finishing the Conquest, or setling that which was conquered. Some would have had large of Huntington) the Bishoppe of Saint Dansds, John Rateliffe Keeper of the great Scale, the Lord Hun-gerford, Ralfe the wife Officiall of Canterbury, and fome Doctors of Diuinity. For Philip Duke of Bur-eundy, the Duke of Guelders, the Earle of Nasau, supplies of men, and treasure leuied, that King Charles might no where have any reft : Of this opithe Bishoppe of Cambray, Count Vernamburg, nion were Bedford* himselfe, the Dukes of Yorke and *Poly. Perg. Sommer/et. This Counsell was not followed, but the Bishoppe of Leige; fine other great Earles, be another, in flew more frugall, which fed the cuils. fides the Deputies of many his best Townes, sufficient to flew, that though hee was in title but a but redressed none, Present sparings doe oftentimes draw after them infinite wafts, and no husbandrie Duke, yet that his greatnesse was equalito a King. proues fo ill, as vnfeafonable Parfimony. In the mean When it came to communication, the English being time, the Earle of Arundel and the Lord Talbet, caralso in possession, orged farther for themselves the right ry about victorious Armes, and terrifie Angion, of descent, and the act of Charles the fixth, father to this Charles, by which act the Crowne of Prance was setled Main, and other places with their successes. In "you Henry the fifth, and the issue of the Ludy Kathe-rine his wife, and cherefore they propounded no other condition of peace, but that Henry their King might have all, and * Charles to hold of him. I be French offered Nor-Normandie, neuerthelesse the common people drew together in huge multitudes. There were three-*Serres Innent fcore thousand of them rebelliously knotted together in Vexin, Norman, and twenty thousand in mandie and Guien. There ended the hope of agree- lib. 33. Caux. Their purpose was (through dislike of the Englifb Gouernment, or practife of the French) to have ment betweene them, for neither party would accept. King Charles therefore refoluing to maime the Englifi faction vpon any termes (how base foe-uer) fends Duke Philip a blanke, bids him therin to reacht one hand to King Charles, and to have thrus King Henries officers out. What is a multitude withiores in ther. 7 out aduise? To stoppe their insolency and course which * they held toward Caen, the Earle of * Arunprescribe his owne conditions and demands: he did del, and Robert Lord Willoughby, with about thirteen hundred light horse, and fixe thousand Archers, io : and his Conditions were to unreatonable, and to many, euen a great volume full, (laith a French man) arit is strange, so great a Monarch should stoope so much to his subject and wasall, but that necessity hath no law. march against them, by direction of the Dukes of Yorke and Sommer fet, who had the chiefe Leiutenancies in Normandy. They divide their forces to vie They * ioine hereupon most firmely, and the Duke The French and them with the more aduantage. The Earle Rayes in (a man wholy transported by profite) declares him-(a man wholy transported by profite) declares that felfe a publike enemie to all the enemies of King Ambush with two parts, the Lord Willoughby drawer them into it with the third. A thousand of the Re-Charles, and friend to all his friends. This was the "serrer first parting stroke which seuered the French Domibels were cut down before the fouldiers hands could nions from the English Soueraignty: the euent de-clared, that the English had done more wisely, if be ftayed to spare the rest, who basely (as it became them) threw away their weapons, and fell to the earth, crying mercy. The multitudes were suffered to returne, their ringleaders lost their lines. All that they had accepted Normandy and Guyen; but as the cale flood, then they could not in honour doe it and Councels are not to bee measured by euents; for so the most foolish may sometimes passe for prudent. the world could collect by this popular infurrection was, that the Normans would be gladly rid of the Eng-lift. Northing else was done. This Earle of Arun-dell having done fundry noble deeds during the wars King Henry not onely loft now hereby a most need-The Earle of full friend, but was compelled to relie vpon his fingle strengthes, as well against King Charles his na-turall enemie, as against the Duke of Burgundie, who in France, received his deathes wound shortly after in a skirmish at Gerberoy in Beaunoisine, where La plainely feemed to have betrayed the cause. To set *PathAVerg.

a glosse vpon this sact, the Duke * dispatcheth Am- *3a Gerel 7. Hire (a famous Captaine among the enemies) had the day.
(23) The Regency yet held, and the mileries of bassadors into England to King Henry (who as * Ae-mylius erroneously saith was present at this treaty of France (being burnt vp by the fiery reflections of two Counter-Sunnes) were nothing diminished: Who should give to them a Period? while the Duke Arras) to make known the reasons of his peace with King Charles, and to perswade the King to entertaine the same. This Ambassage was so odious to of Burgundy continued English, it could not be. To prepare therefore a separation betweene them, such of the Nobility as went ouer to the Burgundian the English, that they forbare not to call the Duke a deceitfull man, a turn-ferner, a perinted person, and a Duke told him, * That King Charles upon all occasions (when speech was ministred) spake of him honourably, and Traiter Pal.Angl. (24) The popular hatredalfo was fuch against inwardly wished him well, and that he neuer heard any mention of the murther committed upon the Duke his fathe Dukes Subiects, reliant in London, that they were beaten and flaine many of them, before the futher, (cause of the somes hatred to France) but he heartirie thereof could be stayed by Proclamation. The ly fighed, protesting hee was neither party nor pring thereunte. These and the like mollitying salues ap-Ambaffadors returne with honest admonitions to their Master, against which, his eares and senses were ftrongly mured; for King Charles had fet about The Incredible plyed to the tumors of his reuengefull affections them as it were a Barricado of royalties, priuiledges, honours, money, Cities, Townes and whole Prodid worke strongly, the rather for that his minde heretofore possessed with the English amity, was now vacant in that part, the same (by the means of uinces, which he confirmed to the Duke, onely to withdraw him from vs. The whole Counties of Peal Aconst. fundry jealousies and auersions) lying open to con-Auc. Erre, Ponthieu, Bolein, Artois, the towne of Poyd. Derg. trary impressions. There wanted but an outward ho-Abbenille, and other lands, the Cities and Townes in nourable meanes to fashion him entirely to the French partie. Let vs heare * Serres in this point : Picardy, vpon the water of Some, Amiens, Corbie, Peron, S. Quintin, but thefe laft as it were in gage till The Deputies of the Generall Councell presse both

* foure hundreth thousand Crownes were satisfied: Briefly, what not? the Charity of King Charles was so feruent to make the Duke of Burgundy a true Frenchman once againe: hee paide fo deare for it, that wee may thinke him worthy to obtaine his defire; yet was it worth his coft; for Emplies faith most truly, that the ceasing of that indignation did releeme the French from a forraine government, as the first assuming thereof had made the English, Lords over France. But, howfoeuer the high and suft displeafure, which this Prince tooke for the wicked murther of his father, (aboundantly fatisfied for by this treatie) moued him first to embrace the English amity, hee afterward most subtilely connerted the reuenge(by way of taking amends) to the enlargement of his proper riches, power and amplitude. After his Ambassadors returned, hee sends backe all contracts to the Duke of Bedford at Paris , and renounceth the alliance of England with a watchword, that every one (bould looke to himfelfe.

(25) Each man hercupon(faith * Serves) fhar-

Insent of Fe

A. D. 1435.

A.reg · 14.

The Burgundian

renouncearo the Regene his friendship with

England,

pens his fword and scoures his Armes, to recouer that by force which they could not obtaine by reafon; Serres might better haue faid, reasoning. All things certainly favoured the French designes; for this was the generall estate of the English affaires. King Henry scarce out of his Child-hood; and when he came to mans age, not Man enough to manage fo turbulent occurrents; the Princes of the blood weakely vnited in love, for the common good; the Protector vigilant ouer England, the Regent carefull for France, but both privately enuied; Richard Duke of Yorke (whose strengths daily increased, which in time he meant nothing leffe then to vie for the be-nefit of King Henry,) ambitioully referring himfelfe for a deare day; most of the great warriours slaine; and in briefe a great inability (forwant of a Soule, willing and fit to looke fo sterne and dismall aduentures in the face) through the whole body of the English forces; which though otherwise they might haue lingred out the warre, and kept their footing, yet the death of the great Duke of Bedford Regent of France doubled the difficulty, or rather the impossibility. In taking this triumphant Peere away, God made it manifest, that he held the English vnworthy and vnfit to continue their Empire among the French any longer. This Prince not long after this reuolt of Duke Philip, died at * Paris, vncertaine to some, whether through griefe of the euils he forefaw, or other malady. But the Avalogy and colour of his whole former life, doth contradict, their conceit, who think that fuch a grief should determine his daies, because it could not but proceed from a kind of feare and despaire, an humor absolutely opposite to Magnanimitie, wherein hee abounded. How mighty a Prince he was this his * (tyle theweth : Regent of France; Duke of Bedford, Alanson, and Aniou, Earle of Maine, Richmond, and Kendale; and Constable of England. But (which excelleth his greatnes) he was one of the best Patriots and Generals, that ever bloffomed out of the roiall Refiar of England, His valour was not more terrible to the enemy, then his memory honorable. For (doubtfull whether with more glorie to him, then to the speaker) * Lewis the eleuenth being afterwards counselled by certaine enuious persons to demolish and deface his stately Tombe, (wherein, with him, *faith one, was buried all the Englithmens good frame in France) which was ere-fred ouer his body in the Northfide of the high Al-tar, in our Ladies Church at Room, vied these indeed

* Cambden in Bedfind@ire:(aid

most Princely words. (26) What honor shall it be to us, or you, to breake this Asonument, and to pull out of the ground the bones King Lewis his Princely telli-mony of the late Regents vertues, of him dead, whom in his life-time, neither my father, nor your Progenitors with all their puissance, were once able to make flie one foot backward? who by his strength pollicie, and wit kept them all out of the principall dominions of the Realme of France, and out of this noble Dutchy of Normandy? wherefore I say first, God saue his soule; and

let his body now lie in rest : which when he was aliue. would have disquieted the proudest of vs all: And as for the toombe, I assure you, it is not so worthy, or convenient as his honor and acts deferued.

(27) The Regent being now dead, the late peace made at Arras betweene King Charles and Philip Duke of Burgundie, presently disclosed, and put forth effects most dangerous to the English; for many Townes voluntarily yeeld, and multitudes of the French (who hitherto through feare contained themselues) starting away , all the English dominions were full of private conventicles, practifes, and correspondences with the Enemy. Such English as then were in France, are not altogether floathfull, but yet, through a fatall either fecurity or negligence at home, there was not speedy sufficiencies of resiftance ministred. Richard Duke o

(28) Richard Duke of Yorke, (whose services neucr did good to the English common-wealth) is created Regent of France, and Edmund Duke of Sommerlet (his perpetuall riual, or perhaps an intelligent cenfor of his manners) continues his commands in Nor-

mandie. The Duke of sommerfet* opposed the aduancement of Yorke to that slipperie dignity. He was no babe in fo doing, but more fore-feeing then the Protector, and all the Councell of England. Yet his opposition was vnseasonable, and fruitlesse, for the others carriage had woonne fuch a party about the King, (whom he meant by embracing to pull down) that notwithstanding the disaduantage of his silenced title, which was alone agreat cause to have made him enertaftingly incapable of so great trust and meanes, he prevailed. But before he could arrive, Paris was loft, Robert Lord Willoughby was Gouernour there for the English, who had with him but about two thousand, the faith of the Citizens was presumed vpon to make vp the rest at a pinch, for a common resistance. On the contrary, they perceiuing vpon what termes the English affaires stood in France, chiefly after the late Regents death, conspire against them. The treason was carried so cunninglie by some of the principall Magistrates of the Towne, who capitulated for a generall pardon from King Charles (which was gladly yeelded vnto,) that the mischiefe sooner tooke effect, then it could be discouered. Thomas Lord Beaumont began the losse with his miffortune; for Arthur Earle of Richmond, Constable of France, houering about Paris, in hope to recouer the same, the Lord Beaumont with certaine toreconer the same, the Lord Beammont with tertainte hundreth of English, fell into his danger about Saint Denis, and were diffressed. While as yet the terror of this discomfiture (not great in regard of the numbers flaine, but in regard of the Circumftances) was freshest, the French advance their Banners up to the City, where a gate was opened vnto them by their partifans. What should the English doe in this generall mischiese ? The townesmen, lately vassals, turne enemieson a fodaine: women and children affaile the English from their windowes with all forts of misfill things. Many are beaten downe and maffacred in the streetes. The Lord Willoughby Gouernour of Paris, Lewis of Lucemburg Bilhop of Thereuan, Chancellour of France for the English, the Bishops of Listenan and Meanx, with other, flic to * S. Anthonies gate *Paul. Acres! and the Bastile, places which they had reserved for defence till extreme necessity. Many more had been faued in those places, but that the perfidious Citizens drew chaines thwart the streetes, and empea- Serres Innent ched their retreat. Heare the rest in a * Frenchmans by Edw. Gring!

(19) All runne to the Bastile. The Tournels are resently seized, and all approaches unto the Bassile are Some won. Such as were within it, at first made some shew of defence, but all things were prepared to force them : they demand a Parlea, and agree to depart with The Cay of Paris their lives and baggage. They are conducted about the yeckled up to Towne beneath the Loure, to embark upon the River of Sean, and sopasse to Roan. They could not well have pasfed through the City. The people hereof aduertifed runne

The Parissans

Chap.16. Henrie VI. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 52. to the walles, and cry out with great shoutes, * baiting the English like Dogs, whom a little before they had feared, and honoured as their masters. Who of the English reades thele things without indignation? but they are the perpetuall manners of the base multitude, &

the fortune therin of the English, the same which fol-loweth all like accidents. Some will thinke that the Lord willoughby, and his people might have done more nobly, to have taken vp their graves in the place which they preteded to make good against the French. Fortitude is neuer separated from Prudence, Succour was despaired. The Duke of Torke was not as yet arrived, and in maintaining their strengthes against the whole City of Paris, and all the present French forces for the space of about ten dayes, they sufficiently cleared themselves both in point of honour and loyalty. Paris * is thus loft in the worst time for an Army to march in. They did wisely to choose so vnscasonable a scason, their market might haue else beene marred; for the new Regent (not so much hindred from sooner comming

The new Reger Army into

A.D.1436.

Gagwin.

by the Duke of Somerfets emulations, which some affirme, as by the very quality of the winter weather) arriued afterward, accompanied with the Earles of Salisbury and Suffolke, the Lord Falconbridge, and other worthy perions, with an Army of eight thoufand men. But this Regent did neuer good in France; Hee who so writes, might have also safely added nor elsewhere. The English affaires were not as yet come to the very breake-necke point. They held (in the late conquered parts of France) Normandy entire, though not without much trouble; for the people againe rebell in Caux: but that mischiefe was destroied with the greater and more mercileffe confusion of the Authors and Actors, then the former. A bout fine thousand of them were trampled to death by the just fury of the English, under the leading of the Lord Scales, the Lord Houand others. They burnt all their dwellings, made booty of their goods, draue their whole numbers out of the Country. The Lord Seales not long after discomfitted La Hire, and his Companie not farre from Roan. The war was handled on all fides without full or complete armies, Skirmishes were the ordinarie formes of fighting, The French were schooled from setling their rest vpon a pitcht field. Thus houered the affaires. (30) Philip Duke of Burgoigne had as yet in person ginen no proof against the English of his affection to

King Charles. Now hee addresseth himselfe to an

of Calais. You would suspect that hee continued

Calais befreged by the Bargun enterprise worthy of that expectation, the recovery

> stilla friend to the English, in making choice of a seruice, wherein hee was most likely to waste, his time in vaine, and yet make thew of much forwardnesse; but hee was reall, though the rather stirred therunto by the desire of private revenge. The Eng-4/b, vpon his forfaking their alliance, had attempted to kindle the Gauntois, and other of the Flemile townes (Subiects to the Duke) to rife in rebellion: but the opinion that K. Henries fortunes in France were desperately stooping, made their wils too dank to take fire. The notice not with standing of this attempt came to the Duke, which sharpened him to reuenge, whereof (as the former passages abundantly declare) hee was not ordinarily thirfty. He brings his Armie before Calais. Chiefe commanders there for King Henry were the L. Dudley who had charge of the Castell, and Sir John Rateliffe of the Towne. The Dukes purpose was to have cloyed the harbour by finking thippes laden with frones, and fuch like choaking materials; but vpon the cbbe-water the Califians delivered the haven from that perill. The King of England advertised that his precious Fort and Towne of Calair were thus emperilled, Humfrey Duke of Glocester the Protector comes in person with a very great Fleete (some write fine hundreth faile) to the rescue, and in it a great puisfance, with full purpose to give battell, glad perhaps that hee might now reuenge old grudges. It

is able to moue choler, to confider how Writers torture vs with the diverfities of reports; but the generall agreement is, that the Duke of Burgundy did raise his liege before he was fought with. Some fay the very rumor of the Protettors approach drawe him away, and that the Protector came the next day after the Burgundians flight. Others excuse him (probably enough) in faying that the Flemings grew vnweildie to his commandements, and would needes

(31) The Protector was master of the Dukes Camp, and spent eleuen dayes in his Dominions, burning Peppering and Bell, and greatly damnified him about Grauelin and Bolognois, then fetleth hee the state of Calis, and * returnes with great honour to his charge into England. But the English were thought to have created ftore of worke for this busie Duke at home where many great tumults role, in * one of which, his owne person was endangered at Bruges, Liste Adam the Captaine of his guard being there prefently flaine. Hence it came perhaps that a meane was found by contracts made with I fabel the Dutcheffe his third wife (a most wirty woman a Portugetse) to hold a league with England, and yet no breach with France.

(52) These haue hitherto beene theactions of Men, let vs not neglect two great Ladies, because much concerning our historic depend on their courfes. Queene Katherine, the widdow of King Henrie the fifth, and mother by him of this fixth Henrie, about this time departed out of the world. This most noble Lady, when her husband the King was dead, being not of judgement (by reason of her tender yeeres to understand what became her greatnes, or having found perhaps that greatnes was no part of happinelle,) fecretly marrieth one owen ap T heedore or Teder * the most noble and most goodlie gentleman of all the Welf nation, and endued with admirable vertues, who drew his descent from holie Cadwallader, laft King of the Britaines. This husband had by her fundry children, two of which, Edmund and Gafper doe beare a part in the royall history, and King Henry the fixth (their halfe brother) created the first of them Earle of Richmond, the other of Pembroke. This Edmund is he, who by Margaret the daughter of Iohn Duke of Somerset, (grandechilde to Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster) had Henry the 7. the most famous and prudent King of England. (33) In that yeare in which this excellent Queen

died, the young Dutchesse Dowager of Bedford (wid dow to the late Regent of France) married also (be low her degree) a vigorous English Knight, one * Sir Richard Woodnile, of which match yet Serres needed not to have spoken so contemptibly, calling him an English adventurer, of small account; shee thereby (faith he) gitting cause to laugh at her: which centure tafteth perhaps of the French leuen and preiudice, because the Lady was lister to the Earle of S Paul, who would not make one in the peace of Ar ras, but held with the English,

(34) But let vs fee the fequell. Out of this Matrimony also sprung Queenes; for her husband (af-terward made Earle of Rivers) had sundry children by her, whereof Elizabeth being one, had the honour to marry Edward the fourth King of England, and hereby was both herselse a Queene and a Progenitresse of those glorious Kinges and Queenes which followed for from her and this match sprang another Elizabeth, the renowned wife of King Henry the seauenth as King Henry himselfedid of the former: both those marriages proued most fortunate to England: but another marriage which then threatned present danger to King Henry, was that which Tames the first King of Scots made with France, who gaue his daughter the Lady Margaret, to Lewis the Daulphin for wife, and fent new supplies of men against the English: hee meant also to have attempted some personall hostility, but that hee was most wickedly murthered by certaine bloudy Traitors in Lilli

Polyd, Verg. 1.1

Polyd, Verg. La.

An.D. 1437

Polyd.Verg.

* Stowes Anna! The Dutchelle Dowager mat:

#lizebeth wife t

K Lemerate firf

Perth

Christian Prince, but onely the King of Portugall(be-

it was not fafe for his Maiestie to deliner him, that

ing but of tender yeeres and farre off:) And therfore

Campes. King Charles dislodgeth so fearefully, that

the French doe not ouer boldly excuse him of *fly

ing. The Duke having had the spoile of the French

ENGLANDS MONARCES. Chap. 16. Henrie VI. was likely to proue his Capitall enemie, and to I feeke meanes to depriue him of those lands which his noble father had left him. That if any of his Maiesties kinred, or other Lords on that side the Sea, should happen to be taken prisoners, the said Duke of Orleance might ransom 4 or 5 of them. 9. That it were fit to take adule of the Lords. and other his Maiesties subjects in the Realme of France, and dutchy of Normandy, whether they

thought it expedient that the faid Duke should be deliuered or not. Otherwise the world might crie fhame thereon, when men should call to minde the loffe of his brethren of Clarence , and Bedford, and other noble Personages, in defending and keeping those Lands. 10. If he (the faid Dukeof Glowcester) should con

upon, should be imputed to him. (38) Notwithstanding the weight of so many

in the body of France, but not with so sharpe teeth nor fo full engorgement as before. Townes and peo ple are taken on both fides. The Countie of Ami ens was spoiled by the English Lords, Willoughby and Talbot; The Regent and the Duke of Sommerfet, march into Angion, where they charged their carria-ges with much spoile and returned. Then the Duke of Sommerfet seuers himselfe, and doth sundry exploits in and about Britaine. Diep in Normandy being befieged, was refued by the Dolphin of France to our losse. The contemplation of these mutuall violences touched all Christendome: for the Turke, common enemie thereof, encreased. Ambassadors aresent from all parts, to determine these bloody differences. William de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, was A flortmeet and a sunch condi-old for king flower than the sunch condi-ded for king flower than the sunch that the sunch tha contracted for King Henry, with Margaret the daughter of Renate, titulary King of Secile, Naples,

and Ierusalem, Duke of Angion and Lorrain, Prince of the blood. To effect this, the Earle couenanted that the English should abandon the possession of Angiou, and Main to her father. A strange purchase of a wife, who though thee brought youth, beauty and hope of a perpetuall peace with France, (the more profitable opportunity whereof, the English had more brauely then happily neglected) yet was shee otherwife without portion. The Earle notwithstanding (whose drift herein could not be without manifest ambition, to make himselfe one of the greatest of England, by this gratification of the French, with his Makers charge and dishonour) is not abashed to expect publike thanks for this high scruice, and an whole fifteene for the charge of her transportation. Sundry Lords of Councell and the King himfelfe thought him worthy, and according to his denife and ouerture, the whole affaire was carried, Suffolke made Marqueffe is sent ouer with many honorable persons, both men and women, to conduct the faire and goodly (but most vnfortunate and fatall) Bride into Bugland. * Polydore giues vs no vnfitting Cha-racter of this Lady. Shee was prouident enough, very defirous of glory, abounding in discourse, counfell gracious behaujour, and manly courage; but not free from womens humour, which (faith he) is viually wehement and apt to change. In England ye may eafily suppose, that shee was most roially entertain ned; Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, among others, mee-ting her with a traine of * fine hundred horsemen in a livery, that worthy Poet John Lydgate Monke of Burie, denifing the speeches for such gratulatory triumphs as were made at her entrance into London. The King being married lawfully enjoyes her em-

bracements, from which he was often afterward vio- Shee is married lently separated by the miseries of a most cruell water, wherein shee had her piteous portion Suffolke in the meane time having the most assured favour of the Queen pursues his ambitious purposes. Shee in the meane time was folemnly Crowned Queene of England at Westminster upon the * thirtieth of *A.D. 1445

Monarches 51

A.reg. 23. (39) Would to God it stood now with the quality of this argument, to turne our eies from the view of those actions which ensued; for here the mournefull tragedies of our poore Countrey began. But we cannot but open those olde and most execrable fores, that, in their example, all true English blood may the rather be tender ouer their bowels, beholding fuch effects as the diuell and all the furies of hell were (by Gods feuere permission) Actors in. Fabian giues vs the causes and contents of those effects, in these grave and few words.

(40) "It appeareth that God was not pleafed with Fabian. that marriage: For after this day, the fortune of the "world began to fall from the King, so that helost his friends in England, and his renennes in France: For [horsly after, all was ruled by the Queene and her Counfell, to the great disprofit of the King and his Realme, "and to the great mauger (it is Fabians word) and ob-'proued) had many a wrong, and false report made of her. All which miserie sell for BREAKING OF THE PROMISE, made by the King unto the "It is E. F. O. M. I.S. E., made by the King onto the I his course of Eurole of Armanesk's Angelies, a mostly writers again to be proceed to be proceed to the control of the Complete of Nemanday (agail thing) selle, except Called on the control of the Complete of Nemanday (agail thing) selle, except Called on the control of the Complete of the Comp the King deposed, and the Queene with the Prince faine to flee the land, and lost the rule thereof for euer. Thus he: but all this farre short of the enils that were the prood and offpring of the following times. The Parliament in the meane time grants aides of money. that vpon expiration of the truce there might bee present abilities to maintaine warre. The Duke of The Duke of Torke is renoked, and the Duke of Sommer (et (in an euill houre) is fent in his place, with fuch provisions gent of English

by his prudence, as also by the honor and authoritie

of his birth and place, seemed to empeach that so-

ucraigne command, which they pretended to fettle

in the Kings owne person, but meant indeed (as the manner is vnder soft Princes) to reigne themselves in

anothers name. Many great Lords were drawne on

(at the time of a Parliament then * holden at Saint

dmunds Bury,) to concurre for his ruine, not per-

ceining, that thereby they pluckt vp the floodgate,

at which the Duke of Yorke entered, overwhelming

all of them in a deluge of blood. Whether they had

any true or iust feare of Gloncefter himselfe , least per-

haps he should take reuenge vpon some particular persons among them, is doubtfull, though it be pro-

bable enough, that they had. Heare some things

that forewent this Parliament. About fine or fixe

of which crimes thee was appealed by one Boling

brook an Astronomer , and Thomas Southwell's Cha-

non, which Southwell was charged to have faid Maf-

fes ouer certaine instruments, by which the Astrono-

mer should practife Necromancy against the life of the King. These being taken, accused her as accessa-

as were reputed competent,

(41) Humfrey the renowned Duke of Gloucefter, The Duke of Lord Protector, felt the first stroke of the euili An-

gell, which was fent to punish England, and to roote AD. 1447. out her Nobles. This Duke was much hated of the Queene, and her faction, as the onely man who

This comment

yeers before, *the Dutchesse of Gloucester Eleanor, was *snown.amd.
convented for witcherset; and sorterward
endited of treason in the Guild-Hallin London, before
tained of treason in the Guild-Hallin London, before

the Earles of Huntington, Stafford, Suffolke, and Nor-tember Land, and certaine Lords, as Fanhope, and Hun-gerford, with others, and Iudges of both benches;

fent to the faid Dukes deliverance (the same being also quite-contrary to the last will of his Maiesties Father) such inconveniences, as would ensue there-

thousand Crownes ouer peyfed all these important and ponderous reasons; and the warre eates on still

Ä.D. 1444. A.Reg. 22.

Hiff.Angl.li.23.

ion and Main vpon the marriage, concluded (for the

good of England, if others had not inverted or inter-

rupted the fucceffe by their temerity) with Renate,

reuenging hand shall not leave vnpunished.

(50) The Yorkills having thus rid Suffolke out of

the way, thought it now a fitte feafon to ipring their Kkkkk

*A.D.1448. (43) The Marquesse * of Suffolke, prime man in

grace, was created Duke, which made him a more

A.reg. 26.

his cause the quarrell of right and instice, as preten-

ding that the Crowne of England appertained to his

(46) But

name and familie.

the euent. At Senenoke Cade abides, probably not without encouragement from fecret Traitours, conflict under this King, where Cade bath the victorie. and after long fight flew Sir Humfrey with many others. Hee armed himfelfe in the dead Knights abillements with guilt fourres. The King and Queene hearing of this mishappe, leave the Tower of Lon-don to the custodie of the Lord Seales, and of that renowned Esquire Mathew Gowgh; and London it selfe to the Lord Maiors fidelity, themselues departing to Kenilworth. The headlong crewes of London fauour the Rebell, and give entrance, Robert Horne

Horne a worth Alderman of Lendon periwa-dung the refi-fixance of Cade is in danger of his

The first civill

Alderman, like an honest wise man, would have had them resisted. This free necessary speech endangered his life; honourable in his memory for the hazard onely, what should hee haue beene if hee had gloriouslie lost it? but money buyes out his perill with the Tyrant, who fined him at *fine hundred Markes. The time was very flippery and loofe; for the Effex menallo were encamped vpon Mileend by London: All men are afraid of their ownecstates; such secret well-wishings attended upon the Arch-Rebels pretences. The King before hee had

ted new troubles) are promifed to him, who kils or takes this counterfeit Mortimer. Alexander Eden, a Gentleman of Kent, had the happinesse to discouer and kill him at Hothfield in that County: his wretched carkale was brought to London, where his falle head was set sentinell vpon London-bridge, and his quarters were aduanced for terrour in seuerall parts

their shirts to the King on Blacke-beath, humbly praying mercy which they obtained. (54) The Kentish rebellion thus pacified, farre greater and farre more dangerous troubles enfued, as it* fareth in humane bodies, which relapsing into sicke-nesses, are shaken so much the more terribly. These troubles had their fountaine and mediate Originall, from Richard Duke of Yorke, no degenerous sonne of that

Richard, whom King Henry the fifth had created

Earle of Cambridge, and enriched with much wealth,

honoring him aboue others in regard of his blood

Suffex. The multitude it selfe * came naked in *Ftb.12.

of Kent. There died also by the stroke of instice

twenty and fixe more, whereof eight were executed

at Canterbury, and the reft elsewhere in Kent and

*Polyd.Verg.l.13

ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 53 Chap. 16. Henrie VI.

*Tio, wal in H.s. and parentage sbut "no bountie, nor benefits could change King is not flow, but leaving his march toward a treacherous disposition, for (as you have heard before) Wales , pitcheth vp his roiall pauilion vpon Blackhe conspired to murther his benefactor King Henry Heath, with a purpole to teach his coten of Tarke moreduty. Behold the fortune of England. God being greater of puts an excellent opportunity into the Kings hands the fifth, as the Duke of Yorke (his true progenie) labored to depose this King Henrie his advancer. The humors of the popular body, were, in the last commotion, not obscurely discourred. The Common weale had perhaps some few enormities, through the therefore as fecretly fauoured him, fearing his ouer-

abuse of Magistrates and men in place, but yet such, as the maladie was infinitely leffe pernicious then Torke comes out

the remedy. Vpon this intelligence the Duke comes sodeinely out of Ireland, and to begin his vcomes toueners out to retain a man to organize inpredending this pand dictature, apprehends * Iohn Satton Lord Dadley, Respudd Abbot of Saint Peters, at Glastenbury, and another, whom he imprisonerh within his Castle of Ludlow. Intollerable beginnings of more intollerable sequele. Edmund Duke of som-

merfet was the man, who (after Suffolks death) most supported the Kings side by this vigilancie, caresdangers, and good Counsels, endeuouring by all meanes to cleare the Realme from factions, and to preserve the King

and state in quiet.
(55) Torke seeing this, doth find that Suffolke perished in vaine, if Sommer fet held like grace; against whose person he had a particular pretence of quarrell, for that the City of Caen in Normandy, which was the Duke of Yorkes charge, was rendred up to the French by him, when the English affaires grew desperate in those parts; Sir Dauid Hall Knight, being at that time Captaine there for his Lord and Master the Duke of Yorke, and not allowing it, although the renowned Talbot himfelfe was present at the render, and became an hostage for performance of the Capitulations. Yorke hereupon consults with his speciall friends, Richard Earle of Salisbury, and Richard his fon, (who was afterward that most feditions & great fighting Earle of Warwicke,) Thomas Courtney Earle of Deuonshire Edmund Brooke Lord Cobham, and others, how Yorke might get the Crowne of England, and for that cause how to ruine or fret out the Duke of Sommer-

fet, who standing, they were to looke for strong op-position. In the end, they conclude to take armes, but yet to Smother the mention of the Duke of Torkes title, giving out to the world for the reason of their doings, that they meant all honour and obedience to King Henry, and only to remoue extaine bad men from about his person, who afflicted the people, and made a pray of the Common-wealth: which, to gaine the more credit, and to blind the good King, the subtile Duke declares by Proclamation; *wherein, thus fpeaketh that Ambitious Hypocrite. God knoweth from whom no thing is

He publisherh declaratory (che-dule in his justi

The Duke of

Terke armes wn

A.D. 1452.

hid, I am, have beene, and ever will be his true liege man; Oc. And to the very proofe it is so, I offer my selfe to sweare that on the bleffed Sacrament, and receive it, the which I hope shall be my faluation, at the day of doome. merset, that Normandy was lost during his Regencie, his enemies had the more commoditie to incommodate him with the people, who forbare not at his re-turne to offer to him fundry dishonours and injurics, till upon paine of death they were restrained, for that the publike faith seemed to stand engaged for breach of which Proclamation, one had his head cut the Dukes indemnitie, he having come in vpon the Kings word, and also for that the hearts of men were

off in west Cheap London. The King mar-cheth against the Duke of Tarts.

(56) The King (notwittmanning at the Society arts and dissimulations) seeing the hooke through the baite, and the snake through the graffe, by the the baite, and the fnake through the graffe, by the aduile of histrusty friends, chiefly of Edmund Duke of Sommer fet, thinkes not fit to relie vpon his enemies good nature, but having a strong power, and store of honorable men to conduct them, he marcheth toward Wales against the Duke. The King did herein wifely, but not fo much as the cause required. Yorke having notice of the Kings approach turnes afide, and with all speed marcheth toward London. That City, (the vaine hope of all Rebellions,) would not harken; Thereupon he flides with his people into Kent, the neft of his hopes, and at Brent-heath neere Dertford (a towne about twelue miles from London) encampeth, meaning to fight. The

of tearing vp the danger of his house by the rootes, posee is vnhap-for the Duke was farre inferiour in numbers. Such throw, were willing to aduite a reconcilement. Meffengers goe betweene the hofts. The Duke,in his wonted manner, pretends localtie and particular iniu-

"Ru literia Regia

refreshment, affirming that he (the Duke of Yorke) wa against the Kings intent and as a Traitour. The King fourpes fo much as to answere the letter, letting him to knowe : That the suspition universally conceived of his behaviours moved those effects: neverthelesse, in re-gard of the humble obedience which was now protested, he, for the easing of the Dukes heart, doth declare, repute and admit him as a true, and faithfull (ubicet, and as his welbeloued Cofen. The Duke then aduanceth his prachile one ftep further, and writes to the King, that Inflice might be done vpon all persons of what degree foeuer, which were guilty, or noised to be guiltie of treason: aiming at the Duke of Sommer fet, whom he doubted not to ouerwhelme with fleights and calumnies, as hee and his had done the Duke of (57 The King is contented (fuch weake of treacherous counsels he relied vpon) that Sommer (et

on his enemic all the enuie of the people, and left him

fingle to withstand the effects, 'Sommerfet(a Prince

of great spirit and wit) not thinking it reasonable,

as well in regard of his owne honour as the Com-

monwealthes interest, to endure such indignity, pre-

fents himfelfe to the King against his accuser, and

refoluing not to be tender-mouthed in the fo appa-

not well affured to the King, which by executing Yorke would perhaps have beene more vnfetled, be

cause (not looking into the depth of the Kings perill) it would have beene thought that he had beene de-

stroicd to gratific Sommerfet, and not to secure the Realme. There was hope likewise to recouer A-

quitain, for that Burdeaux had offered to returne

Lastly, the Dukes sonne and heire, Edward Earle of

March (afterward King) was reported to be ready

with a great force of Wellhmen to fuccour his father.

Vpon these and other reasons, the Duke is no lon-

ries, as that the Kings fernants, Sir I ohn I albot at Holt

Castell, Sir Thomas Stanley in Cheshire, and others in o-

ther places, were fet to harken upon him. That by two

of the Norrices, Bulkeley, Gruft, Bould (and other Gentle-

men)he was forbidden to land at Bewmaris, or to have any

(for his fatilifaction) should be commanded Prisoner to his *owne house, and Yorke (having first dissolved Poly. Verg. 4. 13. his armie) should come in person, and put himselfe into the Kings hand. When he was come, he exhibites great complaint against the pride and anarice of the Duke of Sommerset, and cunningly accusing mone but him, he seekes the good-will of all others. A cunning drift as any, considering that hereby he deriued vp-

rent perill of the King and Realme, whose quiet was vndermined, answeres Yorke face to face, and, in plaine termes accuseth him of highest treason, as having conspired to depose the King, and take upon himself e the ower aignty : vehemently vrging : That the Duke of "The Duke of Torke might be committed and arraigned, to the intent dently accusely that by his defermed death, and the disenselement of his the Duke of

one of one agreement cases, and are assenteness of my the Duke of fomes. Chaill warre might be extinguished, projing foully fret of treation, that God would not suffer the enemic of the King dome to effect be hand of suffice.

(58) This had in Inclinood been edone, but

ger reftrained, as vpon Sommer fets most weighty acculations he had beene, and to affure the gentle and indulgent King, of his allegiance, he makes his fub- The Dake of mission, and solemnely TAKES HIS OATH to bee Out to be true, faithfull and obedient subject. This was done to King Henry.

Hope conceine to recourt Gale

men in other more honest things, the Earle of Candal (sonne * to Captal de Budie who had vpon necessitie Submitted his Seignouries to Charles the French King, but referued his person out of that obedience) and the Lord L'Esparre, come secretly from Burdeaux and pray an Armie, for that Burdeaux and the Gas-

created Earle of Warwick in a most vnhappie houre both for the King & kingdome, being inuitioanimo (62) The

and heire of the whole blood to Henry Beauchamp.

Duke of Warwick) was by this King Henry the fixth

Chap. 16. Henrie VJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 53

(63) The King in the meane space, while the by little and little displaced the ancient Counsellors, and Duke of Sommerfet was thus endangered, lay ficke; Substituted their assured favourites. Another Act of and Torke (as Regent) swayed and ouerswayed in that absolute force and fraud, which they exercised Court; but when the king (perceiuing malice and in this dreadfull perturbation of all things, was the practife to be the chiefe bases of Yorkes accusations) drawing of John Holland Duke of Exceller oue of had recourred his health, and resumed the gouern-Sanctuarie at westminster, convaying him to Pomfret ment, Sommer fet is set at liberty and made Captaine Castle in the North. of Calleis; Torke and his adherents repaire to open force: They leuy their armie about the Marches of Wales, with which they repaire toward London, the fonne and heire the Earle of Stafford was flaine at S.

The King marthe Duke of

maine object of Pretendents. The King hearing of his enemies approach, is accompanied with Hum-frey Duke of Buckingham, Edmund Duke of Sommerset, Humfrey Earle of Stafford, Henry Percie Earle of Northumberland, I ames Butler Earle of Willsbire, and Ormond, Beaufort Earle of Dorcet, Iasper Theder Earle of Pembroke the Kings halfe-brother, Thomas Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, the Lords Clifford, Sudley, Berners, Roffe and others, and with them enters into Saint Albans in warlike manner, having certaine thoulands of common fouldiers. Thither also the Duke of Yorke and his adherents came. This was toward the end of May: The Dukes request to the King was that he would deliner such persons to be deservedly punifhed as he would name. The King (to let them know who he was)returnes this confident answere. That hee and the rest were Traitors, and that rather then they (bould have any Lord from him who was with him at that time, hee himselfe would for their sake in the quarrell upon that day line and die. (64) The Yorkifts hereupon affaile the Kings peo-

The Duke of

ple within the Towne, and Warwicke breaking in through a Garden, a sharpe battell is begun. The loffe fell lamentably vpon King Henries fide; for befides the Duke of Sommerfet, there were flaine the Earles of Northumberland and Stafford, the L. Clifford, with fundry worthy Knights and Esquiers, of which forty and eight were buried in Saint Albans, there being flaine aboue five thouland of K. Henries party, and of the Yorkifts about fixe hundreth. The King himselfe was shot into the neck with an arrow; & other of his chief friends were likewise fore wounded and taken. The Earle of Wilishire, and Thomas Thorpe, Lord chiefe Baron of the Exchequer, with others faued themselues by flight. The Duke of rorke, the Earles of Salisbury and Warwicke with the King, (whome they in shew did vse most renerently, and as if they had meant nothing vnto him but good faith) vpon the morrow ride to London , where in Inly immediately following, a Parliament is holden in King Henries name. The fore-runner whereof was a Comet, or blazing starre, which appeared in the moneth of Iune, the beams whereof extended themfelues into the fouth. The first popular act of this affembly, was to restore the memory of Humfrey Duke of Glocester to honour, declaring him to have beene a true Subject to the King and Realme. (65) The next prouisions which the Torkifts

Humfrey Dukeo Glocefter declared to have been

made, were for themselves, and their owne security, willing and commanding that the Duke of Yorke & his partakers (bould incur no blame by reason of the tour. ney at Saint Albans: the whole fault whereof was laid upon the dead Duke of Sommerfet, the Lord Chiefe Baron, and one William 'ofeph Esquier, who (say they) kept from the King a pacificatory letter which the Duke of Yorke had fent. It is a wonder and a shame to reade how officiously these violent Lords (meaning nothing leffe) behaued themselues to the King, of whose maicsty they will needs seeme to be the onely Champions and conservators. The Duke of Torke in the same Parliament creates himselfe Protector of England, the Earle of Salisbury is made Lord Chancellour, and the Earle of Warwicke (his

fonne) Captaine of Caleis: they spared as yet to touch King Henries life, because the people did wonderfully honour, esteeme, and renerence him for his singular holinesse, and for that he had great friends left aline, and a fonne. In the meane space, that they might without trouble, and at their pleasure, vncrowne or kill him, they (66) Hemy Beauford Duke of Sommerfet, (fonne of the former) the Duke of Buckingham, (whole

Albans) and other the Kings triends, perceiuing whereunto this faire shew tended, consult with the Queene at Greenewich concerning her husbands dan- The Dake of ger, and how to preuent it. Hereupon the Duke of Torke is displaced from the Protectorship; a ridicus ped Protectorship. lous title to be affumed, where the king was aged about fine and thirtie, and had no other fault or vnfitnes, but that he was too good to live among them. The Earle of Salisbury was also deprined of his Lord Chancellor Ship.

(67) The King having thus recovered his dignity and authoritic, but not sufficient meanes to sup- sandwis in The French take profie his dangers, the French take courage at our intestine divisions, and landing at Sandwich with fifteene thousand men (part of their forces) they kill

the Maior, Bailifs, and other Officers of that Towne. with fundrie Gentlemen of the Countrey, spoile all they could lay hand upon, and among all they rob two great veffels laden with merchandife, which lay there bound for London and departed. Another part of them, burnes Fowey and certaine other townes in Denonshire. On the other fide the Seots hostillie entred into Northumberland, but vpon notice that the Duke of Yorke approached with a power, they returned, having not as yet done any great harme.

(68) These indignities and losses might have vnited the disioned affections of true English hearts, which was greatly defired by fuch as loued their Countrey : For which purpose the King, Queene and their chiefe friends, being at Couentrie, the Duke of Tirke, the Earles of Salisbury and Warmicke ate The Kirg at Co. fent for by the Kings letters under his prinie Seale, to give their attendance, whither they come, but Duke of rolle they (either warned of some plot contributed against departs of the contributed against them,or fearing it, or faining to feare) fodeinely leave the Court, without leave, the Duke departing to Wigmore in the Welfb marches, the Earle of Salisburie to his Castell of Midleham in the North-Countrey, and the Earle of Warwicke to Calleis, whose bodies though thus divided, their mindes continued most

firmely factionated. But the King (a patterne of *Camb.in Suthrey * Christian goodnes) being tender over the generall | paga14. estate of his Countrey, and wonderfully desirous to reconcile differences among his subjects, that they might the better withstand their imminent forrein

enemies, returnes to London there to confult how to effect his holy wishes. The great Lords are perfwaded to meete there; which they did but yet not without flore of followers, for the Duke brought A.D. 1458. with him fourehundred men, the Earle of Salisburie A.rcg.36. fine hundreth, the Earle of Warwicke fixe hundreth: The Dukes of Excester and Sommerset eight hun- The Lords meet

dreth , the Earle of Northumberland, the Lords Egrethe King at Lonmond and Clifford fifteene hundreth. This was the all quartels. fashion of that swording age,

(69) In March the king and Queene with a very roiall company alight at Westminster, to accomplith, if it were possible this charitable and necessary worke of attonement and reconciliation. Godfrey Bolein was at that time Lord Maior of London , (being the ancestor of two renowned and vertuous Queenes this time Mission of England, Anne second wife to King Henry the

eight, and Elexabeth their daughter,) through whole great vigilancie and prouidence, the City stood so well guarded, that the Kings peace was dutifullie kept, notwithstanding the great Lords of both the factions (Yorkists and Lancastrians,) were with so

great troupes of followers lodged within, and about Kkkkk 2

ing at Westminster, there hapned (or perhaps * was plotted) a fray betweene one of the Kings seruants and a follower of the Earle of Warwicke, who hurt the Kings servant. Hereupon his fellowes of all forts (as Cookes with their ipits &c:) in great disorder assaile the Earle himselfe, as he was comming from the Councell, and had there flaine him, but that the cuill fate of England and his owne, referred him to Werwick affaul doe and fuffer greater mishiefes. The Earle hardly predet to ching gets to his Barge, and requiring all things predet to the barge. gets to his Barge, and reputing all things vnfure achoise Souldiers, comes to the general Rendeuou of the Yorkists, the Castell of Ludlow. The King in the meane space, (and not before it was need and time) hath affembled a great puiffance of faithfull Subjects, and being * attended with the Dukes of Sommerfet and Excester, and other of his chiefe friends marcheth against his enemies. His first worke was, to offer them generall pardon. It is refused, and called by them a staffe of reede, or glasse Buckler. The sword must decide the quarrels, wherupon the king commands his Standards to aduance: "Dated at Ladwhile he was in his March, *a letter fraught with the wor to. October.

Chap.16. Henrie VI. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 53.

A. D. 1459. wonted hypocrifies) is delinered to the King. There are in it among many other infinuations these also: Moft Christian King, right high and Mighty Prime, and our most dread Soueraigne Lord, Orc. Wee fent onto your good grace by the Prior of the (Cathedral) Church (of Wor-cefter) and divers other Doctors, and among other by M. William Linwood doctor of Dininity, which ministred vn-

The horrible abuse of Christi-an Sacraments to beguile the King.

to us severally the blessed Sacrament of the body of lesus, whereupon wee and every of us deposed of our faid truth

and duty (74) Thus these prophane and ambitious men play with God, who in the end will scuerely bee a-

uenged on them for their impietie; but the letter made no ouerture of any course, vpon which they would yeeld to lay downe Armes, alleadging, the wold but make their way to the king for redreffe of abufes, & that they were enforced to stand together for their own defence, against such great Courtiers and Fauourites, as (lay they) intended their destruction; meaning indeed fuch persons whose vigilancy and manhood might protect and guard him from their practife and vio-

warwicke and Salisbury, with much difficultie escape

to Caleis, which place (as * one faith probably) if

Henry had in time taken from his enemies they had with out question beene forthwith irrecourably ruined.

(75) The multitude which ferued vnder Torke

found mercy, but their Tenants were many of them

executed, maimed, or generally rantackt. The town

of Ludlow it selfe was spoiled to the bare wals, and

Dutchesse of Torke deprined of all her goods. What

leffe could bee the effects against the friends of such

aduerfaries, vpon so publike an act and aduantage?

The point is followed more sharpely uppon the

great Offenders in the next Parliament which was

nolden at Couentree; there Richard Duke of Torke,

Edward Earle of March, Richard Earle of Warwicke

Edmund Earle of Rutland, Richard Earle of Salisbury,

Alice Countesse of Salisbury (in whose right her

husband was Earle)two or three Lords, 9. Knights,

and certaine other, were openlie of high Treason at-

(76) Caleis, a most important piece, being in the

meane space violently possest by Warwicke, the Duke

of Sommerset, the Lords Rosse and Audley, are sent with forces to take it; their successe was euils for the

Duke was glad to flie, his Souldiers were robbed by

Warwicks men of their harneffe, the Lord Andley is

taken into the Towne, and the Lord Roos hardly ef-

caped. Letters are hereupon written into forraine

parts, entreating * that no reliefe bee ministred to the

Traitors who kept Caleis against the King, and all men are at home forbidden totransport any victuall or re-

resoment thither. Euident it is, that the Councel of

Englandrather wished that the Town and Castel had

beene French againe, then as it was ; neither therein

erred they, for it could not be so mischiegous to the

maine of their cause, as now it was. The Duke of

Sommer fet being in Guines, a neighour Caftle, doth

daily by his Souldiers skirmish with the Califeans:

Warwicke meditates other things. Hee must speake

with the Duke of Torke, at whose commandement

tainted, and their whole estates conficated.

Grafton Chron

Captaine An-drew Trollep forfakes the Triumuits or Yorigis Campe.

Poly Verg. 1.13.

The Duke of York and other

attainted of hie treason by Par-liament,

all Ireland (where hee abode) feemed to be readic ; but is aduertifed that the King had certaine shippes; which lay at Sandwich to transport supplies and succours to the Duke of Sommerfet. Hee meanes not many segment to leave such a perill behind him vnremoued; hat take the Lord uing therefore espied his time, hee wils his people Rerr and some ofthe Kings to suppe ouer in the night to Sandwich, which they Name at Sandaccordingly did, tooke the Lord Rivers, and his fon with Anthony Woodnile prisoners; and brought away all the shippes, except one called Grace de Dieu: one Sir Baldwine Fulford Knight, hauing (after this) affu-

med to doe fernice upon the Earle of Warwicke, and

to take him, returnes empty. Warwicke failes now to take him, returnes empty. Warnitet lattes now to Ireland. The King makes the Duke of Excepter Admirall, and gives him commission to apprehend to Sea but can not take the the Earle of Warwicke. The Duke with a great na- Earle, who uie puts forth to Sea from Sandwich. Behold the ill carriage of things. At Dertmouth many of his Soul-

diers, pretending want of money and victuals, forfake him. Meanewhile the Earle of Warwicke paffeth by the Duke, not daring to affaile him, nor he willence. The King is now in fight, whom the Tri-umuirs Torke, Warwicke and Salisbury being strongling to affaile the Duke, for that hee was Admirall and of the Kings bloud. Such was the act and cunly entrenched before Ludlow,* meane to affaile. An ning of the Yorkists to pretend reuerence vnto, that drew Trollop (who had in the Kings pay done great which most of all they thirsted to shed : Fine hunferuice vpon the French) was acquainted with all dreth fresh souldiers attend at Sandwich to bee shipt their counsell, and finding himselfe extreamely deouer to the Duke of Sammerfet for safe-conducting ceiued, (for hee thought and fo by the Earle of Warhim into England. Warwickes men fodainely come wicke was made to belieue, that the preservation of vpon them, flew Montfort their Captaine, and mathe King was intended, and not destruction) abanay other, and disarmed the rest. Such was the didons the Yorkifts Campe at midnight, & with a choise number of trusty men presents himselfe and services stracted estate of our poore Country at this time, through the pride and restlesse ambition of one or to the King, who graciouslie received him and his. two vnhappy men. But though nothing was more The truth of the Triumuirates plot, and bottome of plaine then that the Duke of Yorke fought the crown their conspiracies was thus made clearely knowne : of England; yet nothing is truer, then that they as The Torkists vpon notice of Trollogs act, despairing yet pretended nothing leffe for the veneration of of successe, at that present flie. The Duke of Torke King Henries purity of life, would have prevailed with the Earle of Rutland his youger son into Ire-land, the Earle of March his eldest sonneand heire. with the people greatly to their preindice.

(72) The King failing thus to obtaine the per-

they were the onely Patriots and best Subjects of the

world) they complaine of certaine generall enormities concerning injuries done to the Church, and the ill fend ouer Arministration of suffice, abuse of purueyers and takers, ticles to sed the Kings pourty by the corruption of his officers, and the like plausible stuffe: where they speake of the King, they sequester him from all exception, as being of so noble, so vertuous, so righteous, and so ble fed disposition: (these are their words and the truth) as any Prince earthly. Where they speake of their enefull subjects) they name the Earle of Salisbury, the Earle of Wiltshire, and the Lord Beaumont which must euer becan honour to their memories, and put the blame (if it were blame-worthy) of such attaindors which were enacted against the Yorkists at Conentree, vpon these three Lords specially. Where they speake

ion of Warwicke, or his Towne of Caleis, the Yorkills

lend ouer certaine Articles into Kent, in which (as if

of themselus & their intentions, they profess als singers-ty and loyaltie to King Henry, and that they onelie meant, to come vpon their guard to speake with him concerning the common-wealth, and their owne fafeties, and that now they would attempt the same againe, in the name of the Land, and not to suffer such mischiefes to raigne vpon them. The conclusion of their cunning and painted pretences hath these fained holy words: Requiring you (the people) on Codischalle, and prajing you in your owne, therein to affift os, doing alway the duety of Liegemen in our per-lons to our said Soucraigne Lord, to his estate, prerogative and preheminence, and to the surety of his most no

ble person, whereunto wee have ever beene, and will bee as true as any of his Subjects aline: whereof we call God our Lady Saint Marie, and all the Saints in heaven, to witneffe, andrecord. But of the thing it felfe (that is to Crowne the Duke of Yorke) they make not the least mention: what wanted in these men to the

height and depth of humane malice? They preuaile with the multitudes; a shallow braind, but a I efle, in lam.

An.reg.39.

to claime the

* Rob. Fafe.

The Earle of Warmute lends his side an Oath.

*The Battell at

Northampton where the King is taken.

bridge is sent to sound their affections, and to draw the purplent matter to an head : he finds great forwardnesse. The Earles of March, warwicke and Salisburie aduertised of all things, land in Kent. But the people onely were not deluded; for Thomas Bourchier Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and other graue men, beleeued they meant footh; which that they might the rather doe, the Earle of Warwicke made open oath vpon the Crosse of Canterbury, that they had encrborne true faith and alleagiance to King Henry. A strange humor in the English, that could neither brooke bad nor benigne Princes. The King had before their comming quit the City of London, as not greatly trusting the affections which the people thereof bare toward such as the Yorkish taction had made odious about him, and appointed the Rendenow of his forces at Northampton where he abode. The enemy (hewing friend) advanceth thither. It is a shame to reade that some of the great Prelates would fimply bee drawne to countenance fuch an enterprise : but their intentions were different; they hoped to reconcile enmities, the Earles, to make Torke King. Mcanewhile their complices labour to take the Tower of London, within which there were for King Henry these loyall Nobles. The Lord Scales, Hungerford, Vescie, Louel, Delaware, and Candal a Gascoigne with fundry others.

great and many headed beaft. The Lord Faucon-

(78) At Northampton things were carried thus: The Ki ng meaning there to abide his aduerfaries, when it was not thought meete to admit the Earle of Warwicke to his prefence, (which thing was coulourably fued for to raife a ground of inftification for battell) they prepare on both parts. The Earles of March and VV arwicke (with like or greater cunning, then they had defired admission to the Kings (peech) let cry through the field, that no man should lay hand vpon the King, nor common people, but vpon the Lords, Knights and Equiers.

(79) The hoafts ioy ne. No stroke they gave but feemes to wound vs alfo. Let vs swiftly turne our eyes from fo vnnaturall flaughters. The * L. Grey of Ruthen began the discomfiture of the Kings fide,

for hee (let the world judge with what commenda-tion,) having the point, did quit his place and fled to the Earles. The kings armie is defeated, and vrterlie broken. Many were flaine and drowned. Polyder and Grafton fay ten thouland: The chiefe of the Nobles who there loft their lines, were the Duke of Buckingham, John Earle of Shrewsburie (a * moft oStowes Annels who varieth in hopefull young Gentleman, and in all points like his heroicke Ancestors) John Vicount Beaumont many circum-flances of this battell from Thomas Lord Egremond, and among fundry other prime men, * Sir William Lucie, who making halt fome other writo the fight, was vpon his first approach chopt downe with an axe. The Kings Ordinance could

ters " Polyd. Ferg. Graft, Glyon, not play, there fell so great a raine.
(80) This wofull battell was fought pon the

ninth of July. The King (as a man borne to all calamities and mileries, though he not therefore the An.D. 1460 leffe, but the more happy through that excellent fortitude of mind, with which hee intincibly fu-A.reg.38. stained them) comes into his enemies hands; but the Queene and the Prince, and the remains of their scattered fortunes flie into the North, there to reenforce their powers, and to * fubdue (as shee caused Rob Fab. (bron. them to be proclamed) the Kings Rebels and enemies. The Tower of London after this milfortune renders it selfe. The Lord Scales is wickedly murthered voon the Thames by Wherrimen, belonging to the Earle of Warwicke, as hee intended to passe to * San-* Stower Annal. Etwary at Westminster. The Earles when they were possessed of the King, continued their admirable hypocrifies (which God will terribly plague them

for) thereby to leade the people on, and had to him (81) Most noble Prince, displease you not, though it bath pleased God of his grace to grant vs the victorie The Earls word of our mortall enemies, who by their venemous malice

have untruly flirred and moved your Highrefle to exile wout of the land, and would have put wito finall fhame and confusion: wee come not to unquies or gricue your faid Highnesse, but to please your noble person, desiring tenderly the high welfare and prospersty thereof, and of all your Realme, and to be your true Liegemen while our lines shallendure. Our soules are amazed at these arts. and men bluft to publift to the world things fo vn-

(82) The * Florentine Secretary was scarse borne at this time, but the Dinell was as great a Master then as afterward. The King and Earles in the meane time goe to London, where a Parliament was fummoned in his name to be holden in October following. The Duke of Yorke (advertised of his victoric) speedes from Dublin, the chiefe City of Ireland. to bee at that Parliament, where wee shall at last see the true face of his purpose, his owne selfe taking 2way the maske which hitherto concealed it.

(83) Scotland, by reason of late affinity with the house of Beaufort, whose chiefe and toppe was the Duke of Sommerfet, (descended from John Duke of Lancaster by the Lady Katherine) was a special The humanity of Scotland to K. backe , and Second to King Henry in all his sympestuous adverticies; but now that refuge was also hazarded: for King lames the fecond, partly in fauour of King Henry, and partly as making vie of the troubies in England, laieth Gege to Rocksbrough (Bellenden the Scot calleth the fame Cattle* (Marchmont) being tranft.lib.17.c. in the custody of King Henries enemies, where while himselfe (whose *skill and delight in shooting of Ordinance was great) comming down the trenches to fee the * Lion (a new great piece which had lately beene caft in Flanders) and the other Artillery difcharged, one of them brake, and with a filture thereof flew the king, and dangerously wounded the
diane with the Easte of Ingus. This vnhappy accident happed vp-on a Sunday, the *third day of August. The Queen A.D. 1460. of Scotland neuertheleffe maintaineth the fiege, and *Lefte in Inc. .. aswell obtaines that place, as the Castle of warke both which shee (in reuenge) threw to the earth-I ames the third, a child of feuen yeers old succeeded to his father, as well to the cherishment of the distresfed English, as to the Crowne.

(84) The Parliament being begunne, about the

cight of October at Westminster in King Henries

name, thither comes with flying speed, Rishard Torteretur Duke of Torke, who brake open the Kings lodging out of freiand Chamber, and placed himselfe therein, suffering the King to prouide elsewhere. Then makes hee his claime to the Crown of England, and publisheth it in open Parliament together with his pedigree. The whole houte (tuch among them excepted as were priuie to the Dukes intention) was * greatly dismayed both for that hee did set himselfe in the Kings seate and for this his vnexpected challenge: But the Duke though at first hee greatly meant to have deposed King Henry, and with speed to bee crowned himfelfe at Alhallontide next, yet finding fuch amasement and filence, hee fends them his pedigree and his claime in writing, that they might the better confider yeelding (as it feemes) to be ordered therein, according to their generall agreement during the treaty whereof he would not visite King Hemie, alleadging himselfe was peerelesse in England. The maine points of his Title were as followeth. King Edward Themsings the third had iffue, Edward Prince of VV ales, VV illiam in the Doke of of Hatfield, Lionell Duke of Clarence, John of Gaunt Tom Pedegree D. of Lancaster, Edmund D. of lorke, Thomas D. of Glocester, and VVilliam of VV indsor. Edward Prince of Wales dyed, living his Father, and left iffue Richard the second King of England, who died without I flue : as did alfo William King Edwards fecond fonne.

(85) Lianel the third fonne had sffue Philip his daughter and heire, married to Edmund Mortimer Earle of March, who had I sue Roger Earle of March, who had I fue Edmund Earle of March, Roger, Anne, and Eleanor, which Edmund, Roger and Eleanor died without Ifue. Anne (the heire of that house) marrieth Richard

fifth fonneto King Edward the third, which Earle of Cambridge had Richard commonly (faith the Booke,) called Duke of Yorke.

(86) John of Gaunt the fourth Jon and younger brother to Lionel, had I flue Henry, who immediately after King Richards resignation, unrighteously (faith the Booke) en-tred upon the same, for that Edmund Earle of March. Sonne of Roger Earle of March, and of Philip daughter and heire of the before faid Lionel Duke of Clarence, elder brother to Iohn Duke of Lancaster was then aliue, and that aswell the faid Henry, eldest son to John Duke of Lancaster, as his descendents have hitherto holden the Crowne of England, oc. uniustly, for that himselfe the said Richard Plantagenet Duke of Yorke was the lawfull heire, being the some of Richard Plantagenet Earle of C ambridge, and of Anne before faid. (87) This was the effect of the Duke of Torks ti-

tle, which for the points of the Pedegree was very

true, though in barre thereof the friends of King

be honestly denied) had not a little to say for him :

ty at large; and that none elfe making claime but Hen

ry Dake of Lancaster, hee was thereunto by the consent

of all the three Estates admitted; that Kichard Earle of

Cambridge was for high Treafon attainted and executed

and his I sue made incapable of am inheritance, that this Richard his sonne now challenging the Crowne of Eng-

land, being restored by the meere clemency and goodness

of this King Henry the fixt, had voluntarily acknowled

ged him for his lawfull Soueraigne, and sworne the same

and that the faid Richard was finally for treafen attain-

ted, and adjudged winheritable: they could hereunto

have added fundry Acts of Parlsament, made to establish

the right of the Lancastrian line, the succession of three

Kings, all leavies, that is to far, the fourth, fifth and facth; the politicke addresses of the first of those Kings, the noble victories of the second, and the holy life of the third; which there kings this contained of raigns about three-scores, in which there is, in which much the time and thirdsee, in which not the nine and thirdsee, the second is the nine and thirdsee.

tiethof King Henry the fixth, who was descended of the

male line, and the Duke of Yorke but of a female: of which

female line none had ever been in possession of the Crown.

Great and weighty points, (if any) and the rather to bee confidered, for that King Henries person beeing

(in very truth) Prisoner, no act of his to establish

Yorkes title could bind in law or conscience and the

leffe, for that hee had a wife, and by her a fonne,

who was at liberty, and ready with Armes to free

his father, or hazard to destroy the whole English

name.But they who (on Yorks behalfe) abstractivelie

disputed these highest questions, knew a rule of law, which saith, Inva [anguinis millo inve civili dir simi possible of the Lancastrians were not without their

speculative and remote considerations, to counte-

nance the particulars of their cause. Thus we see

that in Monarchies (though the noblest forme of

Regiment) where lineall fuccession is the rule of in-

heritance, there fometimes fall out as great and as

indeterminable difficulties as where Election defig-

noth the Successor: whereof the Prench tragedies

which our Nation made among them, and now these

in England, are without all exception, the most feare-

full instances. For France had heretofore her time

ofaffliction, but now (O dearest England) it was

(88) While this weighty controuerfie was deba

ted, a Crowne which hung for garnifhment in the

middle of the roofe, where the Knights and Burges-

les of the Parliament met to confult, and the crown

which for like cause stood upon the highest Tower

of Doner Castell, * fell sodainely down, which were

vulgarly construed* to portend That the raigne of K

Henry was at an end, and that the Crown (bould be tranf-

ferred from one royall line to another. But the Qucene,

her sonne Prince Edward, and her fast friends in the

Earle of Cambridge, the sonne of Edmund Duke of Yorke,

Henry (without denying any part of the premiles being all of them more euident then that they could Allegations for K.Heary the 6. and the Lanca-striantitle. for they could among other things alleadge, that Richard the second resigned up his Crowne and Regali

forces they can to recouer K. Henrie and the Kingdome; which thing whiles they are pursuing , the conclusion of the Parliament concerning the crown was, That theny the fixth hould raigne, and bee King Beny nbeeking during his life, the remainder to reft in Richard Duke of Terte, and the lamful herees of his body in general layed 7 wire site to King Henries here: to be excluded. The Duke in the day the layer of King Henries heires to bee excluded. The Duke in the meane time is proclaimed heire apparant, and called Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, Earle of Chefter, and Protector of England. The agreement was en-groffed, fealed and sworn vnto. The Queene will haue nothing to doe in this bargaine, being so dangerous and prejudicious to her felfe, her husband. and her fonne; and therefore when the King (at the Duke of Yorkes instigation) sent for her to repaire vnto him, shee relying vpon the Dukes of Sommerfet and Exceller, and other the Kings friends, veterly refuseth: Henry continueth king. The Armes therefore, which she taketh for his deliuerance, haue the more inftice. The Duke of rorke milling the prey hee expected, leaves the king with the Duke of Norfolke, and the Earle of Warmicke at London ; himselfe with the Earles of Salisbury and Rutland, and certaine forces, * fetteth forward to Wakefield to purfue the Queene and her fonne, sending direction to the Earle of March that hee thould follow with all the Queenein his power. The Castell of Sandall standeth pleafantly vpon a small hill, in view of the faire town of VV akefield; there the Duke of Yorke (comming thither vpon Christmas Eue) reposeth himselfe. and expecteth the encrease of his numbers. The Queene aduertised, thinkes it wisdome to fight before the Duke grow too firong; and thereupon marcheth forward, hauing an Army of eighteene thoufand men, led by the Dukes of Sommerfet and Excefter, the Earles of * Denonfbire and * Wiltfire, the Lords Neuill, Clifford, Rosse, and in effect all the Graft Chron. of as they thought necessary to shew) presents it selfe before Sandall, to prouoke and dare the Duke The Queenes to battell. His bloud impatient of these braues, & ignorant perhaps that the enemy had so great a multitude, will needes fight, though the Earle of Sa-lisbury, and Sir Dand Hall (an ancient scruant of his, and a great Souldier) gaue him aduise to flay, till his fonne (the Earle of March) approached with fuch Welfhmen and Marchers, as hee had in great numbers affembled, But God would forbcare him no longer, but like a feuere Master meanes to take a present account: at which he found whether all the kingdomes of the earth are worth the least sinne. much leffea wilfull periurie.

North(the leate of their hopes) being nothing dif-

couraged at their late ill fortunes, prepare all the

(89) The Queene therefore addeth stratageme and wit to her force, to the entent hee might not escape her hands; whereupon the Earle of Wiltsbire vpon one fide of the hill, and the Lord Clifford vpon the other, lie in ambush to thrust between him and the Caftell; the Dukes of Sommerfet and Exce ter, fland embattelled in the open field. Their policy had the wished successe; for the Duke being not fully fine thousand strong, issueth out of the Castle downe the hill. The battels which flood in front ioyne furiously, when sodainly the Duke of Torke fees himfelfe inclosed, and although hee expressed great manbood, yet within one halfe houre, his whole Armie was discomfitted, himselfe and divers They openhase the Duke of lay dead about him the Lord Harington, Sir Thomas Neuill sonne to the Earle of Salisburie, Sir Dauid Hal, with fundry Knights and others about two thoufand, & two hundred; among which were the heires of many Southern gentlemen of great account, whose bloud was shortly after reuenged. Let vs not linger youn the particular accidents of this battell, but confider what it wrought for King Henries advance-

ment; yet these few things are not to bee vnremem-

bred. The Earle of Rutland (a yonger sonne to

Iiiii 2

the North

"Graft, Chroy.

Signes forego-ing the end of King Henries raigne,

the daughter of Reyner King of Ierusalem, Sieilie, and Arragon, Duke of Andegania, Lorraine, Barre, and Calabria, Earle of Prouince, Cenemania, and Guize. Shee by proxie was espoused vnto King Henrie, at the Citie Towers in Towame in the Church of Saint Martin; Villiam de-la-Poole being Procurator to the king in the presence of the French king and his Queen, which king was vncle to the Brides Father, and the Queene Aunt vnto her mother. Shee with great pompe was conveyed to South-hampton, and thence to the Abber of Tichfield, where the yeere of grace 1445. and twentie two of Aprill, thee was folemnly married to king Henry; and honorably attended by the greatest Eflates of the Land, was crowned at Westminster the thirtieth of May following. Shee was exceedingly beautified in face, and of goodly feature, of a great wit and deepe pollicie, but of fromacke farre aboue her fexe, as in the managing of those troublesome times did too well appeare. Shee was his wife twentie fixe yeeres, and twentie nine daies : and (after her husbands depulsion from his regall throne) her forces being vanquished at the battell of Tewksburie, in a poore religious house, whether shee had fled for the safetie of her life, was taken prisoner, and so carried Captine to London, where thee remained in durance, till Duke Reiner her father did purchase her liberty with great fummes of money, vinto whom shee returned, and lastly died in her natiue

His I The.

(95) Edward the only Child of king Henrie and Queene Margaret his wife was borne at Westminfler the thirteenth day of October, the yeere of Christ 1453, and the 31. of his fathers Raigne, and the next yeere following vpon the fifteenth of March, by authoritie of Parliament, was created

dron or battalion of the Kings, wherein there were about foure or five thouland men, which made good The second bar The lecond bat-tell at S. Albert where the Queene is victo-rious and recotheir ground for a while with great courage, but in the end the Openes fide clearely wanne the day. There perished in this conflict about two thouuers the King. fand. This papned vpon Shrone-tuefday, the senenteenth of Februarie. The King, Queene and Prince meet ioifully, where he knights his fonne, (being eight yeeres old,) and thirtie others. The Lord Bonnile and Sir Thomas * Kiriel of Kent being taken in the fight, were beheaded, but all the other great men cicape. The common people of London doe notwithstanding stand wholy for the beautifull Earle of March , and stand the more confidentlie, because they had fure intelligence, that he had vanquished the Earle of Pembrooke in the Marches of Wales, and that the Earle of warwicke , cleaping from S. Albans, had met with the Earle of March neere Costwold, and that both with ioint forces were marching toward London. These newes made the King and Queene The King and Queene return into the Merib, retire into the North, and leave that Citie and the Southern Countreys to their Enemie , till they might recouer a fairer opportunitie or more suffici encies. Edward vpon notice of the Kings departure, entreth London, and gives period to Henries reigne, which is accounted to take end after he had succesfinely ruled this Land the space of thirtie eight yeeres, fixe moneths, and foure daies. His Wife. (94) Margaret the wife of King Henrie, was why he vied for his Badge, or roiall denile, the Sunne in his full brightnesse. The Battels maintaine their fight with great furie ; but, in the end, the Earle of

Clifford to speake. (90) That mercileffe propolition was common (as the euent will shew) to either faction. The Duke of Yorkes head, crowned with paper, is presented to the Queenc. Cruell ioy is feldome fortunate. Cafar wept ouer Pompeis head, but the Queen (ignorant how manifold causes of teares were referued for her owne share) makes her selfe merric with that gastly and bloody spectacle. The Earle of Salisburie, after wounds received, being in this battel taken prisoner, is conneighed to Ponfract Castle; from whence the common people (who loued him not)
*violently haled him, and cat off his head; which perhaps was not done without the good liking of others. The Dukes head, together with his, were fixed on poles, and fet vpon a gate of Yorke, and with them (if Grafton lay true) the heades of all the other prisoners which had beene conducted to (91) This battell (called of Wakefield) was fought vpon the last day of December ; of whose weathers complexion if their courages had participated, mischiefe might have made her stop here, which now is in her fwifteft courfe. (92) For the Earle of March, sonne, and heire to this late valiant Dake of Yorke, hearing of this tragicall aduenture, gives not over : but having gathered an armie of about twenty thouland to march against the Queene, he findes emploiment neerer hand : being certified, that Iaspar Theder Earle of Pembrooke (halfe brother to King Henrie) and James Butler Earle of Ormand and Wiltshire, had with them a great force of Welfb and Irifb to take him. The youthfull and valiant Earle of March, whose amiable presence and carriage made him gratious with the people, (and the rather for that he had the generall good word of women,) meanes to try his fortune against the said Earles. He sodeinely therefore turnes backe from Shreusbury, and at a place called Mortimers Crosse necre Ludson, where the enemie abode, he sets upon them; It was Candlemas day in the morning, at which time there appeared (as some write) three Sunnes, which fodeinely joined in one, This luckie prognosticon, and ominous Meteor exceedingly fired the Earle of March, and was (some say) the reason,

A.D. 1461.

A.reg.39. The Earle of March purfues

*Phil. Camin.

The battell at

* Greft, Chron. Stowes Annal.

March obtaines the victorie, killing of his enemies

three thousand, and eight hundreth men; the Earles faued themselues by flight. The sonne of ho-

nour and fortune did thus begin to thine through Clouds of blood and mileric, vpon Edward, whome

shortly we are to behold King of England. There

were taken * Sir Owen Theder (tather to Iasber Earle

of Pembrooke,) who was beheaded by Edwards com

mandement, as also Sir John Skudamor knight with

(93) The Queene on the other fide (having or-

dered her affaires in the North, lettled the effate there-

of, and refreshed her people,) within a while after

drawes necre with her Northern armie to S. Albans There came before them an euill fame of their behauiour to London, whose wealth lookt pale knowing

it felfe in danger; for the Northern armie, (in which were Scots, Welfb, and trifbalwell as Englifb,) made bold by the way with what they liked, making small

distinction of facred or prophane, after they were

once past the river of Trent, Captaine Andrew Trolop

being their Coronell. King Henry himselfe in per-

fon, with the Dukes of Norfolke and Suffolke, the

his two fonnes, and other.

Prince of Wales & Earle of Chester; For the title of Duke of Cornwal(as it is noted by warrant of record) is reputed vnto the Kings eldest sonne, the very day of his natiuitie, and by vertue of a special! Act is presumed and taken to be of full and perfect age, so as he may fue that day for his liverie of the faid Dukedome, and ought by right to obtaine the same; having his roialties in the Stannary, wrackes at Sea, Customes &c : the first Duke thereof was Edward commonlie called the Blacke Prince, whome his Father, King Edward the third created in great Effet. Diske of Comput by a wreath on his head, a fing on his fin-ger and a fluor verge. He proved a Prince of great hope and forwardnes, being stiffull in martiall

knowledge, matters of gouernment, and Lawes of

the Realme. At the age of seuenteene, the better to

Henrie VJ.

Chap. 16.

bandic against his Fathers Competitor, King Edward, (the Maul of the Lancastrians claime) affianced in France, Anne the fecond daughter of Richard the Make-king, Earle of Warwick; whose other daughter was married to George Duke of Clarence. This Prince when the day was loft at Tenkesburie, fought to escape thence by flight, but being taken, was brought into the presence of king Edward, whose resolute answeres enraged the Conqueror so much, as he dashed him (an inprincely part) on the mouth with his gauntlet, and Richard the crooke backe ranne him into the heart with his dagger. His body was buried without all folemnity among the poore and meane persons slaine, in the Monasticall Church of the blacke Friers in Tewkesburie. Anno Domini 1471.

ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 53

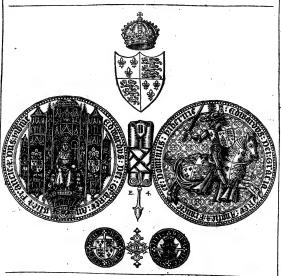
EDWARD



Edward IIII

EDVVARD THE FOVRTH, FIRST KING OF THE HOVSE OF YORKE,

KING OF ENGLAND AND FRANCE, LORD OF IRELAND, THE FIFTIE FOURTH MO-NARCH OF THIS LAND, HIS RAIGNE. ACTS, AND ISSVE.



CHAPTER XVII.



Dward, borne at Roan in formandy, and bearing the title of March in England, having wunne he battellat Mortimers Croffe (though the Lords is Confederates had loft that of Saint Albans) from Ludlew hafted towardes London, & on his way was

seconded by Richard Neuill, the stout Earle of Warwicke, to the great encrease of his number and power, which so terrified Queene Margaret, now ready to possesse the South, that with her husband and fonne, in a perplexed feare, the returned againe into the North; vpon which advantage Edward

consulted for their safest estate; when on the suddaine Edward with VV arwicke entred their gates, whose warlike visages so daunted the aduerse affected, that they beganne with the first to make him way to the throne, & the Noblemen likewise made him offers of their feruice, to establish his claime, neither were the Clergy to learne the observance of time, or to fivey with the man vpon whom the world finiled. All these series Counsellto confer of the state, Duke Edward made knowne his title to the Crowne, and in well fet termes declared. how the body of the whole Parliament formerly had thereunto confented, and Henry himfelfe fubscribed with his owne hand; whose title, though now carried through three descents; yet what right Lancaster had they all knew, and how insufficient this last man was for rule, France to their dishonour did witnesse, where all was lost through his neglect, whose simplicity euer minded more his pri-

The City of

Chap. 17. | Edward IIIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 54. uate denotions, then the potent managing of a So-

(2) These things veged (and most of them erne) their voices went current, that Edward was the vndoubted King, whereunto the Londoners the fooner yeelded, for that his dreaded Northerne Army was then encamped in Saint Johns field: neither was any reference made (as before) of Henries naturall life, but hee is now absolutely neglected as vnworthy of his Crowne, how acceptable soeuer he had raigned till then, whose following mileries were not so much lamented, as his constant patience was admired in vindergoing the same. Edward thus mounted, before his foot had well touched the first steppe, was voon Sunday the second of March, among his Northerne Souldiers proclaimed King; William L. Fauconbridge Earle of Kent declaring his claime, and disabling K. Hemy of stile or Gouernement, whose weake head(as hee alleadged) had ouer long blemi-

ueraignes command.

March 3.

(3) Vpon the next day, with all pompe hee was connected to Westminster, and set vpon the Kings seat in the Hall, where holding the scepter of Saint Edward in his hand, the voice of the people was againe demanded, and againe granted; fuch was the hap of unfortunate Henry, and condition of the multitude euer to dislike the present, and to affect the new but no interm left to disswade or attempt, the next day his stile and title was again proclaimed by the name of King Edward the fourth, being the fourth of March and *about the 20, yeere of his age. (4) These sodain alterations made the richer fort

A. D.1441.

Edward Duke fhed the English Crowne.

> fomewhat fearefull, especially, those whose heart frood firm for K. Hemy, (who was now in the North new mustering of men) and among those, London afforded many, as King Edwards icalousic suspected. whereof one Walker a fubfianciall Citizen and Grocer was a sufficient proofe, who for wordes spoken concerning his owne sonne, that beeseould make bim herre of the Crowne (meaning his house having that Signe) was the eighth day of this Kings raigne apprehended, and beheaded in Smithfield. And albeit his words intended no treason, (the Grocer not once dreaming to touch King Edwards title)yet the time being when the Crowne lay at stake, the tenture of the Law made them his death. This rough beginning moued many to doubt, that they had wronged themselves in wronging King Henry which opinion was more confirmed in that hee retained * a great fumme of money borrowed of the Staplers-Merchants, and disburfed in his affaires, whose restitution he veterly denyed with an austere commandement to furcease the demand. But hearing how Henry was beloued in the North, & what followers were gathered to recouer him the Crown, vpon the twelfth of March with a complete Armie hee sets forth of London, accompanied with his brethren, and many other Nobles: with whome marching towards Pomfreit, he there appoints the Lord Fitzmater to keepe the passage of Ferribity, o-mitting no directions of a worthy commander.

(5) King Henry for his part though nothing so warlike, yet thought it best policy to imploy such leaders as defired renenge against the house of Torke fuch were the Duke of Sommerfet, the Earle of Nor-thumberland, and the Lord Clifford, whose fathers had been flaine in the first battell of S. Albans, which last, though in degree the least man, yet sought to raise his same with the first, and therefore to leaue no attempt vnaffayed, hee fo fodainely charged vpon the Troupe appointed for Ferribrig, that the L. came hastily to the Brigge, thinking a fray had been among his owne Souldiers, where, with the Baftard of Salisbury, hee and many of his men were flaine by

(6) The brute of which guft blowne into front Warwickes eare, hee mounted his Courser, and pofling to Edward, puffing, blowing, and almost out

of breath, faid, Sir I pray God have mercy on their foules which in the beginning of your enterprize have loft their lines; I feeno succour in the world, but in God, to whom Iremit the vengeance. And so alighting, forthwith flew his horse with his sword saying, Let him flie , that slie will, I will earry with him that will tarrie withme: which hee confirmed by kiffing the croffe of his fword, the viual complement of couenants made by martiall men. The valiant Lord . Fauconbridge feating left this beginning would give an edge to the fequal, got over the river at Caffleford, three miles from the bridge, meaning to inclose the ta-kers vpon their backes, which cufferd perceiving, foughtto avoide, and whether for hafte, heate, or paine, put off the gorget he wore, when fod ainly an arrow without an head, thot from the Bow of fome laide in ambush, pierced through his throat, and stucke in his necke, which set a period vnto his

(7) The next day more fatall for Englands bloud. was celebrated with speares in stead of palmes, vsually borne on * that Saboth of Lent, in whole dawning, the Lord Fauconbridge, who commanded the foreward (the Duke of Norfolke being licke) tooke the field on a plaine, betwixt the townes of Towton and Santon, where King Edward ioyning his whole forces (being forcy eight thou and, and fix hundreth fixty persons, as King Henries were also threescore thouland) caufed proclamation to bee made, that hee who feared to fight, might forthwith depart, but if any Souldier abiding, should seeke to file or turn backe, hee should bee slaine by his next fellow, and the flayer to receive a great reward, befides the flipend of a double pay.

(8) Both Armies ready to joyne, a small sleet of fnow hapned to fall, which with the wind was carried into the face of the Lancastrian host, whereby their fight was much empeached, which aduantage Fauconbridge soone espying, forthwith commanded his Archers to shoot each man a flight, and then to ftand without further proffer. The Northern men feeling the arrows, but not feeing the Archers, made haste to acquire them with the like, and shot their whole sheates of arrowes without intermission, but short of the marke by threescore yeards at the least: which frome being paft, and all their flore spent, the worthy Fancoubridge advanced forward, and within reach of his Archersfore galled the enemie, making a double aduantage of what they had done; for their owne quiuers being full, when the others were empty, they gathered up & thot theirs, against their owne shooters, yet left lome of them sticking

(9) The fight was bloudy, and continued tenne howres, for all being Englith, acquir themselves Engish-like, no taking of prisoners, nor looking for ransome, but all to retaine, and to get honour that day; wherein died the Lords Beamont, Nenill, Willonghby, Wells, Scales, Gray, Darres, Fitzhingh, Be-kinghum, and Clifford, who died the day before) the two baftards of Exceller, Knights, Equiers & Gen-tlemen a great number, and in all (on both parts) thirty five thousand ninety and one; so that not onely the field lay stained with English blood, but the rivers ran red for a great distance, so markable is this battell of Englands civill wars.

to gall the legges of their purfuers : by which onely

ftratagem, as was confiantly auerred, the battell and

day was loft and wonne.

(10) Hemy, who never was victor wherefoeuer hee came, hearing this loffe which feemed irrecouerable, with his Queene and sonne hasted into Scotland, where, of I ames the young King hee was royally entertained, with comfort of alsistance to recouer his efface, in regard whereof he furrendred the frong rown Barwicke into the Scots hand and concluded a marriage betwixt Prince Edward his sonne, and Lady Margaret the fifter of the faid King. Thefe things thus effected, milde Henry concrined some new budding hopes, and Queen Margaret his wife,

A.D. 19613 Difference of

The battellas

now Duke of Torke, prefently played. For London vnresolued whether Prince to obey (the one very powerfull, and the other in possession) dayly

afterd Ogle o-

May.15.

Book.9

indeed the better warrier) paffed thence into France, where of King Lewis and her father Reiner thee obtained more men, then her coffers were able to relieue with paysthe bane of all courage in aduentures of warre.

(11) Victorious Edward, after those his prosperous successes in the North, in triumph returned to London, and the eight & twentith of June with great folemnity was Crowned at Wellminster, wherein S. A.D. 1461. Peters Church, the next day it was againe most folemnly fet on his head, and the third day fo Crowned he came to Saint Paules in London, and therein

King Edward was cenfed with great applause of the People. In No. uember following a Parliament began, wherein King King Henry and Prince Edward difherited by Parliament. Henrie, Queene Margaret, and Prince Edward their fonne, were disherited of their right to the Crowne; the Dukes of Exceller and Sommerfet, and the Earle of Denonshire, with an hundred and forty moe, were attainted also and disherited; so fortune dallieth in set-

Edward IIII.

ting the dice of her fauours, or frownes. (12) Queene Margaret stored with men, but in want of money, with her French powers made in-A. D. 1462. Queene Marga-ret teturned into Scotland. to Scotland; whole comming was most welcome to the two Kings there, and thence, with great flew of enterprize, hoised her failes for England, but having touched the bay of Timmouth (whether

vpon better aduise, or feared with their owne shadowes,) thee with her French put backe to the Sea, where such a fore tempest tooke them, as had not Queene Margaret in a small Caruell got vnto Barwicke, fhee had not lived to vexe the new King, nor seene the vnfortunate losse of her husband, her fon, and Realme, nor the miscrable calamities of her owne old age; her French by Bastard Ogle were beate into Holy Iland, many flaine, and foure hundred of them put to their ransomes. (13) This fainting French enterprise, though it dulled the edge of some spirits, yet did it nothing

An.D.1463. daunt the courage of the Queene, her better hopes being fixed upon the Seots valour; fo, (leaving Prince Edward for lafetie in Barwicke,) with her husband and Scots shee entred Northumberland, tooke the Caftle of Bamburgh, and so passed forward vnto the Bishopricke, their forces daily increasing through the confluence of such English, as fauoured King

King Zdward North, made his preparation both by Sea and Land, and with his brethren and Nobles came to Yorke, from whence he fent John Nenil Lord Montacute, with a power of men, as somewhat mistrusting the loialties of the Northumbrians, who passing forward, vpon Hegely- Moore was sodeinely encountred The skirmish vpon Hegely More, by the Lords Hungerford and Ross, with whom was Sir Ralph Fercie, a most valiant Knight: but Montacute, accompanied with fuch as would neither looke backe, nor fland gazing on, abode the encounter, and at the first push put backe the two Lords, and finallie flew the faid Percie, who no waies would depart out of the field; but in dying faid, I have faued the birde in my brest, meaning his oath made to King Henrico.

(14) King Edward hearing these stirres in the

(15) Lord Montacutes Sunne thus mounting in the Horizon, cast forth the rayes of his rising fame, which as he well hoped would higher ascend. And therefore learning by espials, that Henries host lay incamped vpon a plaine called Linels, necreanto Hexham by the Water Dowill, he hafted thither, and fo valiantly affaulted their Camp, as after great flaughter,in chase were taken Lord Henrie Dake of Sommer. fet, the Lords, Roos, Mollins, and Hungerford, all which were beheaded, and Sir Ralph Gray, who first solemnly difgraded, his guilt spurres cut from his heeles, by the Master Cooke, his sword broken ouer his head, his Coate armour rent, another reuerfed put on by the King at Armes, was fo led to his execution. King Henrie himselfe got away (as Ston faith) into Lancabire, where, with some few he lived full hardly in

Caues, and vnknowne, morethena yeere, but

(faith Grafton) hee fled into Scotland which is more | Rich. Grafton, ikelie.

THE SVCCESSION OF

(16) Edward thus cleered of the Cloud threatning forme, thought best ere others did light, to proukle for himselfe, and therefore he raised Bulwarks, care and prouis built new Fortresse; in places of danger, put forth his espials upon the Marches of Scotland, and commanded that none should keepe Henrie or Margaret in secret, whose fight, he feared, would draw the affections of many, which otherwise stood in case of obedience. But ouer-borne Henrie (whether paft al feare, or inforced by defkinie) in difguiled apparell King Restrict dif-past into England, where he was soone apprehended guiled comments into England, and by one Cantlow; but Stow faith by Thomas Talbot in is app Cletherwood besides Bungerley Hopping stones in Lansalbire, being betraied in Waddington Hallas he fate at dinner, and thence brought to London with his legs

bound to the furrups, arrefted by warwicke, his guilt by vied, arrefted by war wicke, his guilt by vied, arrefted spurres taken off, and committed Prisoner to the and committed Tower of London. Prifoner to the Tower. (17) The Lyon thus pent, his pawes cut or pa-red, and Queene Margaretin France with her father Reiner; King Edmard now quiet fet his minde vpon

Gouernment for the good of his Realme. In his Court of Kings Beach he vied to lit in person certaine daies together, to fee how his lawes proceeded with Indice; ordained penall Statutes against excel- King Edward fine pride in Apparell, especiallie against long picked fise pride in Apparelle, ipecasitie against roug proceed indoors then visually worne, which grew to fuch an extreme, that the pikes in the Toes were turned vp-ward, and with filture chaines, or filtle faces ried to the ward, and with filture chaines, or filtle faces ried to the ward, and with filture chaines, or filtle faces ried to the ward, and with filture chaines, or filter faces ried to the ward, and with filter chaines, or filter faces ried to the ward, and with filter faces ried to the ward, and we w knee. But among many good prouifions, one pro-ued very bad, as the fequell shewes; for concluding a league with King Henrie of Castile, and John King of Arragen, he granted a licence to transport certaine

numbers of Cotefwold Sheepe, which are fince growne to fuch an exceeding increase, as the Clothes made of verie but full in their woolles is a great hindrance to our Marchants, to England. which aduenture in the Leuant Seas. (18) His next care was to finde a fit Queene, both | Ring Mawards for the hope of iffue to succeed, and for alliance and care for choice of his Queene.

power to affifi(ifneed were) against Henries claime. Fift therefore minding to fend into Scotland, to defire in marriage the Ladie Margaret, (lifter to king lames the third) thereby to frustrate Hemies further hope; was made to believe that the faid Ladie was, by reafon of fickenesse, not capable of conception, which altogether declined his affection from that way. Next, as some say, a motion was made for Lady Eli-zabeth lifter and heire apparant vnto Henrie king of zabeth lifter and heire apparant water Hearie king of led for a match Caffile, as a match most connenient, confidering king Rich Grafian. Edward had thereunto a Claime, whose great Grandmother was one of the heires of Caftile, being the daughter of Den Peter the king, besides which high match, and combination of Alliances, a hope was conceiued that the Dutchies of Guien and Aquitaine,

might be recovered by the affiftance of thele Caffill ans, without great charge or travell to the English.
But the tender spring of the one, and the lufty growth of the other, would not be grafted into one stocke to beare fruite, shee little aboue sixe, and he about twenty three, farre vnfit to abstaine till shee (19) A third Princesse was assailaid, against whom could be no exceptions, for birth, beautie, yeeres, or

alliance, which was Lady Bona, daughter of Lewis for a wife. Duke of Saury, and fifter to Carlot the French Queene, at that time reliding in the French Court. This double firing was thought most fit for king Edwards bow ; for the Duke more remote, might ftrengthen him abroad, and the French neerer home would be made a good neighbour, having the night-bird fill The allegation finging in his eare: especially to cast a rubbe in king for the b Henries way , whose hopes lay most voon Lewis, forminemarria for that Reiner of Aniou, ftiling himfelfe king of Na- | 800. ples, Siciland Ierusalem, had more honour by that verball stile, then rents or reuenues to maintaine his

estate, or any subjection acknowledged by them; so

as if king Lewis were Edwards, Anion was not to be

could give him content.

Lady 2002 fixed feared. This match being most approved in coun-quenefor fell, none was held more fix to solicite the businesse Neuil the great Earl of Warwick. then Lord Rithard Neuil the great Earle of Warwick. a man esteemed for power a Demy-King, and for magnificence and hospitality matchlesse: in whose house at London (as some haue verified) sixe oxen were spent every day, and most Tauernes in the Cirob Feb. ty full of his meat.

(20) Warwicke in great state arrived at Tours, & his meffage knowne, was accordingly entertained in the French Court, where he wrought the Queen her felfeto be the chiefest Agent, who drew on her fister Bons, with recommending the state and stile of a magnificent Queene (a found very tunable in a Ladies care,) and her husband Lewis, with affurance of a potent and wife Allie, a pleafing theame to foft natured Princes, as the French King was. And indeed to all shee vndertooke all good contentments; fo as on that fide all things were cleare, and warwicke dismissed with Courtly French complements, the Earle Damp-martin was to passe into England for the finall confirmation. (21) But whilest warwicke had beene industri

Admired talk & todaine chois of his wife.

How and vner

whom it was o pedient for a

Job.Hardings

oully wooing in France, King Edwards affection in England was working another way; for being on hunting in the Fortest of Wychwood beside Stony-Stratford, hee there found other game, that made game in his eye, which was the Lady Elizabeth Grayattending the Dutcheffe of Bedford her mo-

ried vnto lohn Gray Esquier, knighted, and slaine at the battell of S. Albans vpon King Henries part, TheLady Elizawho now was a fuiter vnto the King, for some thing taken away in the extremity of that time to beere flored towards the maintenance of her estate. But howfoeuer her fuit pierced his eare, her fweetly composed feature strangely affected his heart; more formall thee was, and louely in countenance, then either tall or exceedingly faire; yet both sufficient to meete in one person, of an excellent witte, a sober demeanour, a modest looke, a seminine smile, and The beauty and feature of the her speech vetered in such a naturall eloquence as Lady Elizabeth her answeres euer seton edge King Edwards desires, which howfoeuer distassfull to the appetite of his wanton bed, (affirming with blufhes, that as thee accounted her selfe most vnworthy of the name of his Queene, to thee held her selfe of more worth, & her chaft honour dearer then to bee his Concubine) yet held they him in chase till shee had taken him in the fnares of her louc.

(22) Their many meetings and louers complements, made the old Dutchesse of Yorke (the Kings mother) much to suspect it would bee a match : to hinder which, with a parents authority shee entred discourse, alleadging it honourable, safe, and of much profite to linke with some great Princesse in The counfell and conference of the old Dur-cheffe of Torice with her fonne K.Sdward. forraine lands, both for the increase of possessions abroad, and (as the case stood) to bee assisted as home: that warwickehad gone fo farre in his fuite in France, as if in himselfe now were the stay, the feared their displeasures would not bee staied. To marry his Subject shee held it unprincely, especially one without reuenewes, alliance, or riches, no other

be milliked, yet was there nothing so excellent, but the same was incorporated in farre greater Ladies. more meet as shee thought of a Queenely estate. A virgine (quoth she) is most fitte for a facred Prince his fide, whose head is annointed with holy Oyle and whose Maiesty is outwardly more sublime then the Leuiticall Priefts: yet were they forbidden to make widdowes their wives, left the holy callings should bee defiled with the staine of Bigamie, K.Edwards rea for for his own

thing mouing, but a wanton dotage on the person;

and although that in Lady Elizabeth nothing was to

(23) When his Mother had faid, and expected his answere, the King who had taken counsell of his

mothers rule, partly in earneft, and partly in pleasiance, made her this reply: That marriage being a spirituall type, ought rather to be conjoyned where God had framed the parties to consent (as this of his was) then in regard of any temporall respect whatfoener. That his choice was pleafing to himfelfe, and would be to his subjects he certainly knew, whose amiry before all other Nations hee most preferred and defired; neither could be give them better occasion of love then in this, that being their So4 ueraigne, hee disdained not to marry into their Tribes; and so likewise for his Issue, there could not any Prince be better beloued then he that was their naturall Prince so borne of both parents. That if forraine alliances were so needfull, hee had many of his kin, to contract them, and that with content of all parties: but for himselfe, to marry for posfessions, or to please others with displeasing his own affections, hee law it no wildome, having already fufficient of the one; and the other offended, even fweet pleasure would seeme sowre pils; especially the choice that is made by another mans eye. That there are many comparable to her, faid hee, I make no question, and am the more glad, let them have them that like them, I will not repine, neither I hope will any abridge mee of that which I allow vnto others: the Prouerbe is (Mother) that marriage goes by Deftiny, but to be wined against a mans own ther, who then foiorned at his Mannour of Graf liking is an earthly Purgatory. And therefore my Cosen Warmicke I am sure, neither doubt me so litton, whither hee repaired for his recreation. She had beene attendant vpon Queene Margaret the tle, to grudge at that I loue, nor is fo vareasonable wife of King Henry the fixt, and had beene marto looke that I should in choise of a wife, rather be ruled by his eye, then by mine owne: as though I were a Ward, that were bound to marry by the appointment of a Gardian: I would not bee a King with that condition, to forbeare mine owne libertie in choise of mine owne marriage. As for possibili-ty of more inheritance by new affinity in forraine land, it proues oftner the occasion of more trouble then profite; and wee have already title by that meanes, to fo much as sufficeth to get, and keep well in one mans dayes. That the is a widdow, and hath

owne defires, and knew himfelfe to becout of his

I neuer wift, that it was forbidden a Prince, (24) The Dutchesse seeing the King so set on his owne choice, that she could not pull him backe, tooke it in such disdaine, that vnder pretext of her His mothers denife to croffs his purpose of duty to Godward, the denifed to frustrate the match, and rather gaue furtherance that Lady Elizabeth Luey should bee his Queene, whome not long before hee had with wanton dalliances enticed to his bed; for which act, under pretence of a contract with her. whose husband hee was before God, (as shee alleadged) his mother openly objected against this his intended marriage, in the discharge (forsooth) of her owne conscience, which was the cause of such an obflacle, as either the Bishops durft not, or the Kings proceed to the folemnization of this wedding, till the same were clearely purged, and the truth openly testified; whereupon Dame Elizabeth Lucy was sent for; which Lady albeit shee was by the Kings mother, and others to averre the fame, yet when shee was folemnely sworne to speake truth, the confessed that they were neuer affured indeede, howbeit

thee affirmed his Grace spake so louing words vnto

her, as the verily hoped he would have married her.

and that if it had not beene for fuch kind words thee

would neuer have shewed such kindnesse vnto him.

This point cleared, and no impediment resting, the

already children, by Gods bleffed Lady I am a Ba-

chelour, yet have fome too, and so each of vs hath a

proofe, that neither of vs is like to bee barren. And

therefore (Madam) I pray you bee content, I truft

in God, thee thall bring a young Prince that thall

play on your lappe to your great pleasure, and your selfe shall blesse the wombe that bare such a habe

and as for your objection of Bigamie, let the Bi-

shop hardly lay it in my way, when I come to take orders; for I vnderstand it is forbidden a Pricst but

Lady Luty infil gated to claime

678	1	CESSION OF Monarch 54. Book 9
K.Edward marri		for the depoling of Edward, and reltauration of Hen-
ed Lady Eleze- beth Grey.	Grey, who had beene formerly married vnto his e-	ry, whose wrongs (as healleadged)did crie for right plotteth K.
	nemy, and many times prayed full heartily for his	at their hands. The Bishoppe lightly consented to
	loffe, in which God loued her better then to grant	I lide for King Henry; but the Marquelle would hard. [100]
	her her boone, referuing greater honour for her felfe	ly bee drawne from King Edward, which War-
	and her posterity. (25) She was honourably descended, especially	wieke perceiuing, laid his lime twigges yet another
The descent and	by the furer fide, whose mother was I aquellin daugh-	way.
arentage of the Lady Elizabeth	ter to Peter of Lucemburg, Earle of S. Paul, and Dut-	(28) For being a man of a deepe reach and witte, hee well law that George Duke of Clarence the Kings
Grey.	cheffe to Iohn Duke of Bedford Regent of France;	Geood brother bare not the best lilian and C
	after whose death shee married Sir Richard Wooduile	fecond brother, bare not the best liking to the sway of the times: him therefore hee sought to allure to
	knight, and among others bare vnto him this Eliza-	his fift, which once mand, Edward should loose the
	beth, Englands faire Queene, who being privately	best Faulcon for his game; him therefore by Pro-
	married at the Manour of Grafton, was afterwardes	blemes hee meant first to proue and according to
	crowned Queen at Westminster with all due celebra-	their digest, purposed to proceed. So falling in fa-
Decenc Eliza. eth crowned,	tions, upon the fixe and twentieth of May, Anno,	
a.p crommen,	1465. Her father then by this new made fonne in	1 .: CC Comment to Court eth Clarence inter
	law, and Soueraigne Lord, was, created Lord Rivers,	of some promises, and staine of his honour in the the King his
	and made high Constable of England, her brother	French Court. The Duke as discontented as war-
The Queenes	Lord Anthony, married to the fole heire of the Lord	wicke, interrupted his tale before it was rold, why l
preferred.	Scales, and hersonne Thomas Grey borne to her first	my Lord (quoth Clarence) doe you looke there I ac
	husband, was created Marquesse Dorset, and married	pard inould have no ipots in his skinne, or a Came.
	to the hetre of the Lord Bonnile.	nonno colours, but one, in faith you are deceited.
	(26) But when Warwicke had knowledge the wan-	ARG 1001C Dut Von I shour to walk the natural Dlack 1
	ton King had got a new wife, and his courring of	amore: for will you have him kind that is by na-
	Lady Bona, to bee but a ball to make Edwards play;	tare vinking and to be respected of him, that respects 1
atle Warnicke	hee stormed not a little, whose credite hee rooke to	1 not his owne bloud; or thinks you (a Colen and
ore offended	be crackt in the French Court, and himselse rather	Allie) to be railed by him, that leeth (if not feeketh)
gainst K.Ed. pard,	thought to have dallyed in this motion, then to	
	deale by commission from his King, for which cause	Scales (you see) hee hath married to his wines bro-
	hec conceived to inward an indignation, that his af-	ther, the heire of the Lord Banuill and Harington to
	fection was withdrawne from King Edward,, and	his wireslonne, and affianced the heire of the Lord
	thenceforth ranne vpon Hourie retained in prison;	Hunger for a to the Lord Hallenge marriages indeeds
	to which end he temporized with the present king,	more meete for his two pretnien and kinne, then for i
Compositolas	applauded the Queene, and bare countenance in Court with no discontented shew: The King as wa-	IUCh new tondlings as hee hath beftowed them you
Comporizing setwint the king	ry as Warwicke was, caft no eye of diflike, or of any	on. But by my George I sweare, if my brother of
and Earle of Varwicks.	suspition, gaue him countenance in Court, and in	Guerrer Would loving with mee, were would make I
maner.	familiar conference heard him before others; yet left	
	the stem of his greatnesse should overtop his crown	of one and the tame mother.
	and his brethren the spreading branches shadow	(29) Earle Warwicke having that which hee gree-
-	his delignes, hee tooke the Chancellorshippe from	dily fought after, seconded the resolution with his
	George Neuill, the one of them, then Bilhoppe of Ex-	owneasisitance, imparting now boldly what con-
rancis Goolwin	cefter, afterward Archbishoppe of Yorke, and from	redetates he tial made, and to loine more tairbinily
stal of Esstille	the other Iohn Neuill Baron Montacute, the Earle-	in this his deligne, hee proffered Clarence his eldeft
tal of English. Supp.	dome of Northumberland, bestowing the same (at	
	the fuite of the Northumbrians, fet on by himfelfe)	lified with the one halfe of his wines inh lance, the
İ	vpon Henry Percy, whole father was flaine at Touton,	being fole heire vnto Henry Beauchampe Earle of
	and himselfe at that present fled into Scotland for	Warwicks her brother, and nothing inferiour to any of those whom Edward had bestowed upon others,
6n Ntull crea-	falety. Whereupon Montacute was removed, and	which no fooner was factor but and others,
d Marquelle	to anoid impition was created Marquelle, a greater	which no fooner was spoken, but was as presently embraced, and the plotte conferred how to proceed,
lontacute.	name, but farre lelle in power. And to have a flake	which was concluded; forthwith to faile vnto Cal-
	in fore howfoeuer the dice chanced to turne hee	
	lought to ioine friendlhippe with forraine Princes	the virgine Lady lay) afwell to confirme the con-
	naturing Offended France for the retuling of high	tract betwirt them, as to be absent whe the commo-
	Queenes fifter: fo as hee fought, and obtained the a-	rion mould beginne, as the later from fusition and
i	mity of Henry King of Caltell, & of John King of Ar.	
- 1	rages, and tooke a truce with his neighbourghe	which, the Archbishoppe and Montacute were ap-
ſ	Scotijo King for fifteen yeers following.	
cb.Graften.	Scotifb King for fifteen yeers following. (27)But these confederates for the more part too	(20) The occasion picks as make 34-1
D 1468.	tarre to be called for by whittle, fortune beyond	was the abuse of Charity vito an hofpiral dedica-
	expectatio let him another even at his elbow, which	1 CO to Saint Legard in the Circ of Parke who form morion.
	Was Philip Duke of Burgandy, Prince of Flanders Res.	ucnew stood most vpon corne yeerly received from
	vans, and Zealand, whole onely fonne legitimate	
marriage mo-	(Charles Earle of Chareleys a widdower, and withour)	2 graine. I his the tactions made their onely owned.
rle Charles and	any fonne) hee fought to conioine to King Edwards	viluer a noisy pretext (forgoth) that the moore were
ly Margaret.	faire fifter, not fo much for any loue hee bare to	detianded, and the Matter and Priests onely fed & I
ilip.Com.l.3.	The notice of forke, himfelfe being a Fancefore but	Waxen fat. Lo redreffe which one Robert Hulderne
P. 4 .	his mothers fide, as to bandy against Lewis King of	entred in action, and with fifteene thousand from taine of the
	2 7 mme, who in he had lately other come in a battell at 1	enterprised for Torke, in which Ciry the Lord Mar. Commotion,
	Montleherry, and asthen stoode vpon his defence,	Quelle Montacute was Prefident for King Edmand
		who with a imail number, but well cholen, iffred our
	Edward and his Councell well liked, only Warnieke	against the enemy, put them backe, and firely of i
	withthought in raugur of the French; but the Lady i	the head of their Captaine before the gates of Yester
he mariage	Margaret fent ouer according to her estate, and	Dut whether hee did it in policie to grow more in
elebrated.	Warwicke left turning with a discontented mind, af-	truit with the King, or elle of duety of oblige not
- 1	ter tome complements of mirth with his brethren	moulded throughly to the commotion, is vaccing in
	the Archbishoppe and Montacute at his Towne of Warwicke, brast forth into warlike consultations	But certaine it is, the Rebels were nothing daunted at Hulderner death, but rather made resolute

Chap. 17. Edward III ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 34 to continue what they had begunne, uant to Warwicke displaied his Lords Colours with his white beare, and from an eminent place cried a A.D. 1469: (31) To which end they choose them two Chieftaines, of greater account, and eminent calling Warwicke, a Warwicke, whereat the welfh were fo terriwhich were Henrie sonne and heire to the Lord Two Captaines made by the rebels, which were Henrie some and heire to the Lord the fied, as they turned and fled, leaving their Generali and his brother alone in the field, who valiantly fighthe Lord Latimer, the one of them being Nephew, ting were incompassed and taken with the death & the other Cosen-germane vnto the Earle of Warof flue thousand of their men. The Earle with his wiekesthese but young, and not altogether experienbrother Sir Richard Herbert were brought to Banbery, ced in Armes, choole for their Tutor Sir Iohn Com where with ten other Gentlemen they loft their ers a Knight of fuch courage, skill and valiantnes, as heads, Conyers and Clappam being their Judges.
(35) This second victory thus got, and the Nor- Rober of Made. in the North-parts few were his like: who meaning to strike at the head, determined to march forthwith thern now fleshed; vnder the leading of Robbin of the Robbinman to London proclaiming in his way; that Edward was Riddifdule, hafted to the Kings mannor of Grafton, neither a iust Prince vnto God, nor a profitable King where the Earle Rivers father to the Queene then vnto the Common-weale. lay , whom with his fonne lohe, they fodeinely fur-(32) King Edward hearing of these Northern The Lord Her-bers Earle of prized, and in Northampton strucke off their heads proceedings, and that his brother and Warmicke The Earle Rines without any indgement. The deathes of these were preparing against him, fent for the Lord Her Lords the King greatly lamented, and fought to rebert whom he had created Earle of Pembrooke, to be nenge: first therefore writing his Commissions for his Generall in the Warth (who partly to deferue the the apprehension of Lord Humfrey Stafford of South Ki ga! berality in advancing him to such honour, wicke (who by diligent fearch was found at Brentand partly in emulation he bare toward Warwicke, march and beheaded at Bridgewater, as he worthily Lord Stafford be being the fole obstacle (as he tooke it) why he obtaidescrued) next he prepared a mighty Armie, and with the same marched towardes Warwieke, his comned not the wardship of the Lord Bonnils daughter and heire for his eldest sonne) did not a little resoice pany increasing euer as he went. of that it imploiment. And therefore accompa (36) King Edward fet downe his tents at Wolney Jo. Store, nied with Sir Richard Herbert his brother and eighfoure miles from Warwicke, where the Duke and the teene thousand well furnished Welfinnen, marched Earle of warwickes hoft lay readie for Battell, but by towards the enemie, and after him was fent Humthe mediation of friends a peace was intreated, and frey Lord Stafford with fixe thouland Archers to letters written from either parties, expressing the second him in his warres. These Lords meeting togriefes and wrongs fustained, with proffers of regether, bad notice by espials that the Northern made dreffe, in amending all, and in flew fo farre it proforwards towards Northampton: to intercept whom, ceeded, as the King conceining a certaine hope of the Lord Stafford lately made Earle of Deuonshir politique Warnitek (byhis fpiall perceiuing) thought it not wildome to loofe the advantage, and thereup-on in the dead of the night with a felected Company was imploied and sir Richard Herbert, who with two The Lard Staf-ford repulsed. thousand horse laid themselues couertly by the side of a wood, and fodeinely fet vpon the rereward, the rest having passed : but the Northern verie nimbly he entred the Kings Camp, killing them that kept the turned about , and bad the Welfbmen fuch wel watch, tooke the king in his bod, and brought him his prisoner to his Castle of Warwicke, and thence come as few of them returned to tell of their entertainement. by easie iourneys in the night had him conueyed (33) The King understanding of this hard be to Midelham Castle in Torkesbire not farre from K. Edward ginning, mustred his suberets on everie side, intenprepareth a-gainft the Earle Richmond, where wider the custody of his broding to cope with the Northern himselfe. And ther George Newill Archishop of Yorke hee was Earle Warwicke as forward to forward his fortunes. gathered is friends, with purpose to encounter with Pembrooke and his Welfb. But before any supplies (37) His viage was Princely, and according to his estate, which he often acknowledged to the Archcame to either of both; it chanced the Armies to bishop with all kind thankes, and complements of meete at vnawares, vpon a faire plaine called Danes wordes, whereby he wrought himselfe into such trustand fauour, as he had the Forrests to huntin, more necre to the Towne Hedgeest, three miles from Banburie and presently fell to a bickering, wherein and the parkes for his pleasure, whose pales are well Sir Henrie Neuell Knight, fonne of the Lord Latimer. knowne, vnithicient was to pen the lyon in, as appeared by this King, who being abroad and on hunting, Sir Fritten Stanly, with Sir Thomas Burgh vpon a lufty courage, venturing fomewhat too farre was taken prisoner, and notwithstanding he veelded himselfe to his Takers, was cruelly slaine, which vnbrought him fresh horse, and such a crew of followers martiall act refted not long vnrepaied with the losse that his keepers more feared their owne lines, then of most of the Welfb the next day. For the field were forward to force him backe againe to prison; withdrawne the Lord Stafford repaired to Banberie and so let the game goe without further chase, King and there tooke his lodging, where his affections were much enamoured vpon a faire damfell in the Edwardehus escaped, VV arwicke like a wild man furioully raged, but feeing no remedy made vse of ne-cessity, and gaue forth that himselfe so cansed it, ha-Inne. But the Earle of Pembrooke comming to the same Towne, tooke into the same Inne, and commanuing power to make Kings and to vnmake them aded the Lord stafford to prouide him elsewhere contrary to their agreements made before, wherear (38) The King forthwith repaired to Yorke Stafford was displeased, and departing thence with where with great honour lice was joifully received his whole Band, left the Earle naked of men in the and abode certaine daies, which made him well hope Towne, and disabled the field of the Archers, whereof a further supply of friends and men, but fayling by the day was loft upon the kings part, for which he of a unitate in the probability of the state of the control of the shortly lost his owne head. (34) The Northern enflamed for the death of young Newill, the next morning most valiantly set nicd for his Conucy : his spirits then reuiued, and vpon the Welfhmen, and by the force of Archers, traine daily increaling, with speedic journeyes hee draue them from their ground of advantage which came vnto London: where all his findies and con-Pembrooke wanting, supplied with his owne prowfultations were, how to be reuenged vpon these difloiall Lords, his brother, and Earle VV arwicke, and made way through the battell of the Northern, withthey againe fretting at the Archbilhoppes follie out anie mortall or deadly wound: fo that by their fought to make stronger their factions against the valours it was verily supposed the field had beene wonne, had not Iohn Clappan an Esquire and ser-(39) The Land thus rent by these vnnaturali Mmmmm

.680	'	ESSION OF Monarch 54	Book.		Chara	Ittl		
The miferies of	diuisions, and no estate sure to enjoy what was theirs, the Nobles anew began to sollicite the parties vnto	franding his marriage, thought now a fittime to re quite the discourtesse; and therefore sent man	,		Coap.17.	Edward IIIJ. ENGLANDS		681
cium warren.	a Peace, having first obtained libertie to post to and fro without their impeachments, and so effectually	chankes vnto Fancler, with promise of a thousand Crownes pension by yeere, if he stood firme for hi	i		1		fured them should receive the like reward in the	ië
1	laid downe the state of the Land whose ruines now	wines brother King Edward himfelfe laving the			1	dubitate Heire of the Kingdome, bur that K. Henris	(50) Thefewith the like diffedures distributed	
	were to eminent by thefe inteffine warres, that the	wives brother King Edward, himselfe laying the Coast to impeach his arrivage. But how Monnsieu	The double dea		1 .	himselfe had discharged his Issue from claime, as it standeth(said she) vponRecord to be seene, contrary		
1	Natiues lamented, the Forrein reioiced, and God they faw highly displeased, whose sword thus gi-	Vanciere stood affected, whatsoever shew he made Comines the French Kings Historian doth tell, who			1	Which, as he might well perceine this marriage of		
1	tien into their hands was so he feered would be she	fent Warwicke word the danger he ftood in, of the			f		were made; in euery Church bels rung, Ditties were fung at euery meeting, and euery man cried K. Hen	e
ı	destruction of the English as Nabneadnez zars of Ba-	Mid Duke, and of Duras inc Kings Admiral lose re	.)		j	aime and intend to the vtter extinct of the house of		
		l land, would be his final confusion . His Council	1 (1	Yorke, whereof himselfe was one, and in neere possibility of the Crowne, Edwards Issue young, and		
	that the Duke and Earle vpon perfect confidence came to London, accompanied with a small number	therefore was that he should make into Prance, who whose King he should be most welcome; and as for			1	not many, and the King very wanton a finne com-	the rumor, thought it not fafe any learned hearin	8
į .	in respect of their great danger : where falling into	the town of Calles, he willed him to take no shoughe	1		1		therefore with those truffy Lords and some others	K Edward is for
The King and the Lords meet	conference with the King, he tasked them with di- floialtie, and they him with ingratitude, fo that their	but promiled to make him a good reckoning there	1		1	fo chanced, then hee, or his were the next. These reasons wayed, so ouer-wayed the Dukes further		
at London.	folenes were nothing appealed but much more in	or, when time should best serue. Whereupon the	Forle Mornish		1	defignes, that hee promifed thereafter a more bro-	the Washes towards Lynne with greater difficultie then was besitting a Prince to aduenture; and thu	
i	splenes were nothing appealed, but much more in- creased, and with high wordes departed, the King	Earle waied anker for Normandy, and in his way tooke many rich Ships of the Duke of Burgundie.	. mandig.		The Duke of Clarence incli-	therlike affection, as (faide hee) Remard should	Without any order taken for his Realmo in con-	-1
ł	vnto Canterbury, and they agains to FV armicke	rubiccis, which netted him not a little, but yet found			neth to his bro-	inid; with which good newes thee returned into		
A.D. 1470	(39) The front Earle whole fromacke must have went, otherwise the Caske must needs breake,	and dockero rad out the imare.	1		1	England, Warwicke vtterly ignorant what was faid or done.		
A commotion is	caused new stirres to be raised in Lincolnships worder	(43) King Lewis hearing of the arriuage of war wicke, and knowing his troubles to arife for his Am	·/ `		Warwicke and	(47) All now in a readineffe for the return thing	and in the way was encountred by the Eafterlings Englands great Enemies, having much adoctoclean	
Lincolnpone,	the leading of Str Robert V Vels, an expert fouldier.	Datiage to Bone, and faith vnto France Controversing	.1		Clarence returne into England.	I money and men impolied by the French King, the	I Dimicite from their (urprile	get of taking on
1	and ionne of the Lord VVe's who with thirtie though					Admirall of France was sent to secure them from the Duke of Burgundies Fleet, which with an extraordi-	(51) In these times of misery the Oueenes whose	Queene Eliza
1	fand Commons, disturbed the Countrey, and in eue- rie place proclaimed King Henrie; setting downe		ucth Warmiche,			I Dary number and nower lay in the mouth of come	marriage was the onely cause of all these stirres) vpor the first of October had stolne out of the Tower, and	Success wings
1		himselfe and traine most honorable intertained wherearche Duke of Burgundy sore repined, and	el .			to light with Warwicke when he should look out of	taken Sanctuary at Welminster, where like a woman	Sunctuarie in VVeftminfter.
ı	the encounter of his oppolers; which when the King I	lient Lewe word that he dilliked his doings wish				Harborow:but fee how the heatens fauoured, and frowned upon the parties, for the night before they		
1	heard of, he sent for the Lord VVels his father, com- manding him to write to his sonne to surcease the	Illicate of revenge, if healthed him again the wine	. (1	fhould house saile, such a stormy tempest tooke the	of November following was delivered of a fonne	.1
i	warres, and so marching toward Stamford tooke	brother. This, notwithflanding the French King	Reversely office.		1	Dukes Fleere, lying more remote from the Lee.	which without all pompe more like a private mans child then a Prince, was there also baptized by the	
1	1 / / 65 in nis companie , with a good hone that the	gaue all comforts to these fugitues, and prepared his affishance for their restorations, and the raising a- gaine of godly King Henrie.	ded with Level		l	I that they were (carrered afunder, force into Seate)		
}	fonne would not beare armes against his own father in field, but how foeuer he had writ, or the King con-	gaine of godly King Henrie.	enemie.		1	land, some into Denmarke, and many of them drow- ned. But the Seas calmed, and the wind serving	was King of England, as shall be said; other Sanctu- aries were full of King Edwards friends, that praied	1 1
l	ceined, Sir Robert went on in his former delignes,	(44) Queene Margaret having fled England	Reinernferess		Septemb,12.	faire, the English set saile and landed at Dartmouth		
The Lord Witt	Which to fore moved Edward that he beheaded I and I	and fotourning in France with her Father Reiner (a King in name, but fearcely able to beare the Scare of	fishe and jessii		A.reg.10.	whence they had shipped into France almost six mo-	the world would againg turne, as fhorely it did One	
The Lord Wels and Sir Thomas Dissorbe behan- ded,	VVels with Sir Thomas Dimocke that had married his daughter, although he had given them promife		Posts.		1	noths before, (48) King Edward relying vpon Burgundy abroad,		
ded,	i of latety and lite.				King E dwards focurity.	and thinking all friends who fawned at home, gaue	whose conditions are mutable at the change of Prin- ces, came to seeke prey in Landon, where they knew	donmach house
1	(40) Young VVels then hearing of his farhers	Earle of Oxford, and I after Earle of Pembrooke (who latelie had escaped out of prison in England) came	4			himielfe daily to follow the hound and the hawke.	it was to bee had Rateliffe, S. Katherins, and South- warkethey robbed, and within the City did some	EDOLE ZARREN
l	death, lought the revenge voon this vormily Prince					and nightly to his court pleasures in dancings and da- liances with damfels, little minding their approach	warkethey robbed, and within the City did some	1 1
	and not flaying for VV arwicke who was in preparing to come, fet manfully vpon the King and his	same a combination of Amance was confirmed be-	A matriage roll.			that meant to marre his mirth . for Westicks now	hurt besides, yea and surely more had done, had not Earle Warwicke in good time come to the rescue	1
	power, where betwixt them was performed a most	twist the Prince of Wales, young Edward, and Anne the second daughter to the Earle of Warwicke, then prefent with her mother and sifter in France: That King Heavy should be coming reformed the reference with the coming reformed the reference that the second reformed the reference that the second reformed the reference that the second reference the reference that the second reference the reference that the second reference the reference that the second refe	cluded betwise		Earle Warwicke in the West pro-	landed, proclaimed King Henry, commanding all	which encreased his name, that was great enough	
The battell at Stanford, Sir Robert Wels	Dioody fight till at laft cir Rehert was taken with air.	present with her mother and lifter in France. That	and Aure daugh		claimeth king Hem?	from insteene to fixty, whom a great penalty to take	before.	
Sir Robert Wels taken,	Thomas Deland and others, whereat the Lincolnshire men were so terrified, that casting off their Coares.		miche.			Armes against Edward Duke of Yorke, the most va- inst vsurper of Henries rightfull Crowne, and vncre-	(52) EarleWarwicke accompanied with his brosther the Archbishoppe of Yorke, the Prior of Saint	
	they all ranne away, in regard whereof this barrell roll	Clarence, and the Earle tooke a folemne Oath never to defift whiles they had power, and in the nonage				dible it was, to see the confluence of them which		
Lofceatheld,	this day is called . the battell of Lofcoat field, wherein	I of the Little they follitly were to be denoted his				came armed to him, who ere-while applauded &	ric., Baltard Fallconbridge., Lord Stanley, and other Gentlemen, some for love, some for feare, &	The States
	were flaine ten thousand men at the least after which victory the King commanded VPsk with many o-	Triotectors, and the Langs lole Canternors.				approved none but King Edward. Thus making to-	ther Gentlemen, some for loue, some for feare, &	out of the Town
Sir Robert Wels	ther of note to be put to death, as the chiefe causers	(45) Edmard in England hearing what Queen Mar-			K.Edwardson-	wards London, his company daily encreased; which the youthfull King seemed little to regard, but veri-	fome to gaze at this wanering world, vpon the fixt of oftober entred the Tower of Lenden, where-	ct.
put to death.	or their dangerous Commonons.	garet, his brother Clarence, &t front Warwicke in the	King Raward		nion touching Wetwicker ap- proach.	ly supposing hee had now Warmicke in his trappe, wrote to Burgundie to secure the seas, left he should	In King Henry had beene retained prifoner al-	1
	(41) This vntimely conflict and vnfortunate	French Court had done, was strucke into a sodaine dumpe, being as doubtfull of friends, as fearefull of	dumps,		proach.	escape againe into France, and to his Lords of Eng-	most the space of nine yeeres, and there again elec-	- 1
	ouerthrow, made Clarence, and V Varwicke, at their wits end, who vaprouided to field against Edward.					land, to attend him in his wars; but very many neg-	ted him for their lawfull King, and forthwith con- usied him robed in a long blew veluet gown through	- 1
	gaue way to necessity and from Dersenwelin De	Ariam, or fanourits of the down-caft K. Hemie, he began fomewhat roughly to deale with: many there-	•	,		lected his commaund, and few or none made their	London unto the Bishons pollace where a nampour	
	non/bire embarked themselves and wives for France					repaire. Which when Baward perceined hee was	Court was kept vntill the thirteenth of the lame	K.Herry agains reflored goeth
- 1	both to infligate king Lewis no friend vnto Edward, and to secure themselves in Callis (whereof VV arnick	ded themselves to his mercie, among whom loke			- 1	strucke into a great feare, and with his brother of Glosester, the L. Hastings his Chamberlaine, and	moneth, vpon which day hee went in proceffion crowned to the Cathedrall Church of S. Paul, the	crowned to Pauls
	was captaine) till fortune had changed the hand of	Marques Montacute brother to Warwicke was one,	Marques Monta-			the Lord Seales the Queenes brother, hee hafted total	Earle of Warwicke bearing his traine, and the Earle	1
Warwick- and: Clarence fice into		What gues Mantaune brother to warmicke was one, who with faireft words of promities, was received into fauor, and vpon whole example many others came in, which notwithflanding meant to frand out	King Kabuara		ı	wards Nothingham there to determine what was to be done.	of Oxford the fword the people on cuery fide crying.	- 1
France.	tore the Towne of Callis, and gaue notice they were ready to land, but the Lord Panclerea Galesigne,	came in, which notwithstanding meant to stand out	favor.			(49) In the mean while the baftard Faulconbridge	God faue K. Hemy. (53) Thus farre proceeded, and Hemy reefta-	- 1
		if occasion should serve. But no busier was Edward to keepe the Crowne on his head, then these Lords	- 1		1	in the west, and the Earle of Pembroke in Wales, eue-	bliffied, a Parliament was beginne at Wellwinker	- 1
- 1	Charged diners peeces of Ondinens annial L.		1		Sunday after Michaelmas	ry where proclaimed King Henry; and to forward	the fix & twentieth of Nouember following, wher-	1
This comings	and left word natile they should not comethers.		1		Stomes Annal.	the matter, D. Godard preaching at Pauls Croffe decla- red by reading of Billes, and divers other proofes.	in King Raward was declared a Traitor to his coun- try, an viurper of the Crowne, and all his goods	
Phil. Comines lib,3.cop.4.	meane while the Dutches of Clarence fell in trauell,		A maid Ambac			that King Henry was the vindoubted and true heire	conficated; the like indgement paffed against all	arred from gag
The Dutches of	and was there on Shippe-board delinered of a faire fonne, which Child the Earles deputie would fearer	fell belonging (as fice faid) to the Dutches of Clarence, who figured water Monsieur Famelere that	fador vnto the Duke of terrace.		Marquesse Men- facate revolveth from K. Edward,	vnto the English Crowne. Neither is the L. Men-	try, an vulrer of the Crowner, and at n is goods conficated; the like indgement paffed againff all his partakers; wherein allo it was enacted, that all floth perions as had taken Armes in his quarrell, all hooid bee feurerly punithed; among whom. John	arliament
	ly suffer to be baptized in the Towne, nor without				from K. Edward,	tacate now the man that he was, who having muste- red fixe thousand in the name of King Edward, and	fuch perions as had taken Armes in his quarrell, should bee senerely punished; among whom, Iohn	he Parliamene
red of a fon vpon shipboard.	great entreaty permit two flagons of wine to be con- ueyd aboard to the Ladies lying in the hauen. For	peace, which hee tearing to impart the conditions	1		li li	brought them forward almost to Nottingham, on	Typtoft Earle of Worsester, and King Edwards Licu-	
- 1		to other, had made her the inflrument, the better to paffe without any suspect, and he glad to heare for			- 1	he sodaine drew backe his forces, alleadging that	tenantin Iroland was attainted, who being found hid !	er beheaded.
- 1		the Paries take(whom he ensuels affect at	1	•	11	Edward was ungratefull, & regardleffe of his friends as himfelfe faid, himfelfe was the example, who ha-	in the toppe of a tree, in the Forrest of Washridge, not	1
be Duke of	and discharged the Earle as a Traitor or Rebell a-		The conference		- 1	sing ferued him in many bloudy battels, was rewar-	farre from Hantington was brought to London, and vpon Tower-hill beheaded. Moreouer, all Sta-	1
argundy bends	(42) Charles Duke of Burgundie, being then at S.	the told, that it was neither natural nor honourable for him to take paraging the house of the	of the demfell with the Duke		- 1	led with a verball word. Marqueffe, without any	trates made by King Edward were clearely renoked	- 1
arle Warwicke.	Omers, owing Earle Warwicke an old grudge for gaine-	ble for him to take part against the house of Torke;	el Clarence.			naintenance at al, no not fo much as Pyes poor neft:	abrogated, and made frustrate: the Crowns of Eng- land and France critayled to King Henry, and the	he Crowner
		that	- 1		1	R therfore he had just cause never to draw his sword n his quarrell any more, and them that did, hee as-	Heyres-male lawfully begot of his body, and for the	tenerentalled
					- 1		want	- vately.
							.,,	

and his hele to all forke, di to forke, di to forke, di to forke, di to retue of h broke, toko the virage tics, and an wishe theg ucrous of to whom which was tingham. (54) Q to England, fuccelle, no her husban winner blaff Edward hie that wished forced to ret the that wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished forced to ret the fire wished for woughts for woughts Earle Warm and filter is report was b prepared for for woughts for woughts	c of fuch heires vato Grozge Duke of Cuterone, in his heire males sturfully produced, and the faid at the beth next heire to his father Richers Duke orke, diffibling his older brother chawer A by the use of his Atteindor; and soften Earle of Former, I show Earle of Confroid with other actainmed by lutter Esthersed, to be reflored in bloud, dignizated and action profifeitions; and finally, Earle ware the good common-wealthen man, made Good of the Confroid with the control of the Confroid with the control of the Confroid with the control of the Confroid with the control of the Confroid with the control of the Confroid with the Confroid	faid uergaue the leaft, and to Edward no comformable	le l	.	7. Edward IIIJ. ENGLANDS to draw Warnieke into the same traine, to whice end he fent certaine messengers vnto him; first to er	h companie; And the rereward was comman	
Duke to be do if rorke, and in the virgent ites, and an wise the great current of to whom we great Easier which was timplement of the which was timplement of the which was timplement of the which was timplement of the which was timplement of the which was timplement of the which was timplement of the which was timplement of the which was timplement of the which was timplement of the which was timplement in the characteristic of the which was timplement in the control of the which was timplement of the which was timplement in the control of the was timplement of the	er ob et henext heirer o his father Richers Duke wirk, difabling his older brother Edward, by the use of his Atteindor; and safer Earle of Pen- t, John Earle of Oxfraw with, other attained by ulurper Edward, to be reflored in bloud, digni- and ancient poffelfions; and finally, Earle war- ethe good common-wealthen man, made Go- our of the Realmein in the furthellent times, vin- hom was affociated George Duke of Chroscethis Earles Jonne in Jaw and Wessell.	and to Edward no comforcable	. 1			bythe land the rereward was comman	
were per lead to the per lead to the very large to the very large to the very large ties, and an wisher the go unrour of to whom we wish has a tragken. (54) Qt to England, faccelle, no her husban winter blaff leads and large with facts to England, faccelle, no her husban winter blaff leads and large with facts to England, faccelle, no her husban winter blaff leads and nor leauch it entire the fact with facts to forced to retain the fact of large with facts to forced to retain the fact of large the large fact with the fact of large the large fact of large	orks, disabling his older brother Edward, by the use of his Attention; and Laffer Earls of Pena- try, John Earls of Conford with other attainmed by vitroper Edward, to be rethored in bloud, digni- and ancient poffettions; and finally, Earls war- ethe good common-wealthes man, made Go- our of the Realme in these turbulent times, vin- hom was affociated George Duke of Cleanees this tearls from in Law and West-like brothers.				and Line Co.		ided -
vertue of a broke, tokin the viurper ties, and an wishe the go ucmour of to continue the total the state of the continue the total the state of the continue the total the state of the continue the that wished of new Reg with fuch te forced to rether the time, the the state of t	ue of his Atteindor; and Infpre Earle of Pemps, John Earle (ON print with other attainted by furper Edward, to be reflored in bloud, digniand ancient poleffions; and finally, Earle ware the good common-wealther man, made Gour of the Re almein thefe trublent times, whom was affociated Gorge Duke of Currente this Earles from in Law and Krewicks whether	Duke words of supply, and yet underhand he hired him				. I die Lord Hallings, cher molt firme for the L	
vertue of a broke, tokin the viurper ties, and an wishe the go ucmour of to continue the total the state of the continue the total the state of the continue the total the state of the continue the that wished of new Reg with fuch te forced to rether the time, the the state of t	s, John Earle of Oxford with Tother attained by Witpper Edward, to be reforced in bloud, digni- and ancient possessions; and finally, Earle war- ethe good common-wealthes man, made Go- our of the Realme in these trubulent times, vo- hom was associated George Duke of Clarence this tearles some in Law and description beaches.			Clarence Seeke	cufe his owne fact, as too vnnaturall for him to ve		Suite
broks, John the viarper tics, and an wiske theg uernour of to whom w which was tingham. (54) Ot to England, faccelle, no her husban winter blaff Edward her that wilhed of new Reg with fuchte forced nore ther time, t like perple neither dur French and nor leauch it cent floodid therefore to of Callisi fin mans, he fee Hiltorians, chi file faffer, nor i this did the wearthe Eau be gallant i faffer, nor i faffer, nor i faffer, nor i file for the control and of the con	s, John Earle of Oxford with Tother attained by Witpper Edward, to be reforced in bloud, digni- and ancient possessions; and finally, Earle war- ethe good common-wealthes man, made Go- our of the Realme in these trubulent times, vo- hom was associated George Duke of Clarence this tearles some in Law and description beaches.			to draw Warred	theath his fword against his owne brother, as also h	fhould ferue.	HOR!
the viarpet tites, and an wiske the guernour of to whom we great Eastle. Washington, and the strength of the which was tingless. (14) Or England, directifie, no her installed the characteristic strength of the strength of	viorper Edward, to be reflored in bloud, digni- and ancient possessions; and finally, Earle War- ethe good common-wealthes man, made Go- our of the Realme in these turbulent times, vn- hom was associated George Duke of Clarence this Exarles some in Law, and Warnish to the base	feafon feruing for warre, K. Edmard with two thou	e	vato K, Edwa			
usies cheg guernour of cowhom we wishe cheg guernour of cowhom we wish has been a support of the common of the com	and dancient policinons; and finally, Earle war- e the good common-wealthes man, made Go- our of the Realme in these turbulent times, yn- hom was associated George Duke of Clarence this t Earles sonne in Law, and Warmiesie brother	icaton teruing for warre, K. Edward with two thou	4-	1			ain.
usies cheg guernour of cowhom we wishe cheg guernour of cowhom we wish has been a support of the common of the com	and dancient policinons; and finally, Earle war- e the good common-wealthes man, made Go- our of the Realme in these turbulent times, yn- hom was associated George Duke of Clarence this t Earles sonne in Law, and Warmiesie brother	fand firong befides his Mariners made ouer for Eng	K.Edward paf-		Edward he promifed to worke, and that with fuch	tained by the proweffe of oxford, vpon that par	1111-
uenour of co whom we great Earles and a series of the control of t	our of the Realme in these turbulent times, vn- hom was associated George Duke of Clarence this t Earles Sonne in Law, and Warmicker brooker	War Land, attempting to take land in 11 CH 1	feth into Eng. land, pretending a more then to be Duke of Yari	1	Land to profitted to worke, and that with fuch	the Kings, against which he fought, which with gr	cor
uernour of to whom we to whom we wish was tingham. (54) Qt or England, fuccelle, no her husban winter biall Edward he that wilhed of new Reg with fuch te forced to rether time, the state of the wilhed the rether time, the thing will be the ten floodly the rether time, the forced to rether time, the forced to rether time, the forced to rether the rether during the rether than the forced to rether the rether than the forced to rether the rether than the forced to rether the rether than the forced to rether than the forced to rether than the forced than	our of the Realme in these turbulent times, vn- hom was associated George Duke of Clarence this t Earles sonne in Law, and Warmicker brother	Go- Coalts guarded has moffed	e Mans, pretendin	1			car
to whom we great Eastie- are the state of t	nom was affociated George Duke of Clarence this	chtring Humber, landed at Runenspur in Yorkeshire	d homore then b	1	a father to Clarence, but likewise vnto Edward great		
great Earsie: Which was tinglams. (54) Ot to England, fuccelle, no her husban winner blaff Edward he that withed of new Reg with flochte forced to re ther time, t like perple neither dur French and nor leauch teen floudid therefore to of Calleis he that withed of Calleis he were and with the control the c	Earles lonne in Law, and Warmicker brother	, vn- entring Humber, landed at Rauenfour in York office	De Dure of 1 this	1	Fright King Vines all artist	to London, bringing newes that with Warwickew	
great Earsie: Which was tinglams. (54) Ot to England, fuccelle, no her husban winner blaff Edward he that withed of new Reg with flochte forced to re ther time, t like perple neither dur French and nor leauch teen floudid therefore to of Calleis he that withed of Calleis he were and with the control the c	Earles lonne in Law, and Warmicker brother	when laying afide al claim to the Crown, and preten		1	Englands King. Vnto all which motion Warwick	the day: and furely in great forwardnes it was, I	cut
which was tinglism. (54) Q to England, discertle, no her husban wince biall Edward her that withed of new Reg with fuche to forced to rether time, to like the return the forced to rether time, to like the return the forced to rether time, to like the return to force the return the ret		ther ding nothing but his Dutchy of York, he shewed the	-1	The words of		not forement was 1.	130
wintut was tingdams. (54) Qt or England, discerile, no her husban winner biall Edward her that wither of new Reg with license and the control of the contro	tacute vpon his submission obtained his pardon,	rude multitude the letters, and feale of the Earle of	e l	Warwicke In an		found de la competent contraction de la contract	ce :
timphom. (54) Q to England, incerdit, no her husban wince blaff Edward her that withce of no her husban wince blaff Edward her that withce to force to return the forced to retu	h was the collision comes for this fair to	and feale of the Earle of	£	Swer to Clarent		lossy othis loggy, and ouercast with mi	ae 1
(54) Od to England, facceffe, no her husban winter blaff factored her har wilhed of new Reg with fuchte forced to rether time, the factored her has a factored her has a factored her her has been factored her her factored her her factored her her factored her his pold-th (53) Contact for her factored his pold-th (53) Contact factored his pold-th (53) Contact factored his pold-th (53) Contact factored his his his her has he had to who had to her had been her his for her had been her his for his factored his his his his his his his his his his	h was the easilier gotten for his service at Not-	Not- Northumberland, which as he affirmed, & made them beleeue was four for his 66.		1	Gell Les Cicci !	hindred their eies of any farre fight. Commission	,
to anguna, to anguna, to anguna, to anguna, to anguna, to contend to the contend	an.	beleeue was fent for his fafe conduct to enjoy the	4	1	shall bee falsified (as his apparantly is) I will lay downe	embroidered vpon the Earle of Oxfords mens Coat	are
to anguna, to anguna, to anguna, to anguna, to anguna, to contend to the contend	4) Queene Margaret appointed to follow in-	win- fame, and in euery place where he came proclaimed	2 A D	1	" J " J " " J Chemics (oute, Winter) I doubt not but hall hee	were mistaken for the Sunne, which King Edwa	rds
Juccelle, no her husban winter biall her has a winter biall her has a winter biall her has a winter biall her has a winter better the trime, the her has a winter during her her her her her her bid her her her her her her her her her her	ngland, if fortune did fauour these great Lords	King Henry himselfe, wearing an Estrich feather	A. D 1471	1			rds
her husban wince blaß Edward her knar wihred blaß Edward her knar wihred of new Reg with fuch te forced to ret, the time, the time, the time, the time, the time, the time, the time, the time, the time flood therefore to of Calleis fin anota, he feel his fold-this fo	To nomborn of the fair of	which was Prince Edwards Linery, and passing to	March 14.	K. Edward mar-		men wore, in which errour Warnickes Battell let	Ai.
winter biall Edward he that wilhed of new Reg with fuchte forced to rei ther time, t ilike perple neither dur French and nor leauch it tent Bould therefore to of Callies he mans, he fee Hiltorians, the is pold-in (53) Ca the fequency wearthe Eau be egallant i flafte, nor i ted with his himfelfe har french sin gold-in (75) Ca the frequency white ragge ethers his fol and filther; a preport was b prepared for the frontiers of an oughte Eat Hemp, where ragge ethers his fol his birtherd a for the french fr	effe, now hearing of the faire Sun-fhine, wherein	rein Which was Prince Edwards mery and or	,	cheth forward.	(01) I his front retolution made Eaward more		
winter biall Edward he that wilhed of new Reg with fuchte forced to rei ther time, t ilike perple neither dur French and nor leauch it tent Bould therefore to of Callies he mans, he fee Hiltorians, the is his gold-in (53) Ca the fequency wearthe Eau be gallars i flaffer, nor i wearthe Eau be gallars i flaffer, nor i ted with his himfelfe ha prepared for the frontiers of an oughe the frontiers of an oughe the frontiers of the force for the force of the force for the force of the for	nusband King Henry was fet, amidft the stormie	mie Toke in no other thew then a Subject, his oath first	١	cucuiotrate,	walle, and incretore to obtaine I made the only box	nes to have woone at a dev	.d-
Edward het that withed of new Reg with fuch te forced to ret the time, the time the running with fuch te forced to ret the time, the time the running	er blafts which the feafon afforded, with Prince	ince then so hearner weren a Subject, his oath firf	t l		that opened the dore to the Crowne he hafted the	and they not know	ng
that wilhed of new Reg with fuch te forced or te ther time, the forced or the time, the forced or the time, the forced or the full time prejent either dur. French and nor leauch it cent floudid therefore to of Callies find nanes, he feel Hilforians, this gold-thi (53). Can the forguence where the force force for the force for the force force for the force fo	ard her fonne, fet faile from France, towardes	taken to be true to King Henry, entred the City	, K'Edward	1	therward, whose Citizens hearing of the increase of	nes to have wonne the day, and they not know the cause of the error cried, treason,	, ñ l
that wilhed of new Reg with fuch te forced or te ther time, the forced or the time, the forced or the time, the forced or the full time prejent either dur. French and nor leauch it cent floudid therefore to of Callies find nanes, he feel Hilforians, this gold-thi (53). Can the forguence where the force force for the force for the force force for the force fo	in de de de la come, ict faite from grance, towardes	which presently hee surprised and assumed to him-	trainer bis out	1	his hold and anning of the increase of	betraid. Whereupon the Earle of Oxford with eigh	T"
with fuch te forced to reit forced t	withed and temperate climat, where the foring	ring felfe.	to minner his out)	1	his hoft, and waying that Henrie was but a milke-		
with luch te forced one time, the time, the time, the time of the time of the time of the time of the time of the time of the time of the time of time	W INCREMENT DECIMANDED TO DUD TOPPH. And was mer !	mer (58) Equip III	City of Tarke,		lop to him, thought it most (afery to faile with the	forest of the field, leaving the chance to be of	
tocced to retter the content of the	fuch tempefts and forming feas, as thee was	met (58) Earle Warwicke now hearing that Edwara	d on the sec	1			ed!
ther time, the control of the contro	description and norming leas, as thee was	was landed before he had marched very farrein the	.1	1	with publike analysis of the open their Gates, and	with words like a fouldier, he incouraged his me	-1
ther time, the control of the contro	d to returne and deferre her journey vntill ano-			London recesued			
like perple- neither dur Freueb and nor leaue hi tent fhould therefore to OCalleis fin nanes, he ce Historian, to his gold-wild (\$53) Co the fequence wear the Eat- bee gallant flaffe, nor i ted with his him folde hac white ragged the white ragged the fine his prepared for the fine his him folde the white ragged the fred white flaffe, nor to do with flaffe, nor to flaffe, nor to the fred white flaffe, nor to the fine flow flaffe flow	time, to net great gricle and fore discontent. In	In Montaguestan and I has brother the Marqueste	el	King Bdward.			
neither dur French and nor leauch it cent floudid therefore to of Calleis find find the control of the control of Calleis find the control in gold-thi (53). Con- the (equency warthe Earle be gallant it fallei, nor it cell with his his most of the control water to the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the man on who be liance in the of the control of the control of the control of the control of the man on who be liance in the of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the man on who be liance in the of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the man on who can be control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control perplexity was the Burgundian Duke, who	Montacute then reliding at Pomfret (with a fufficient		i	tend the innocent King Henry beard about And Co.	vnto fight, he furioullie rufted into the midft		
resulter our French and nor lease hit tent Boold therefore to of Callisis the Institute of Callisis the Institute of Callisis the Institute of Callisis the Institute of Callisis the Institute of Callisis the Institute of Callisis of the Institute of Callisis of the Institute of Callisis of Cal	or during the will burguindian Duke, who	Army to fecure those parts) that hee should not suffer his accesse your role land.	writes to his bro	1	their lines, and left him in the Pict They ned for	their Battell, wherein he aduentured fo farre as h	oi t
Freeto and nor leaue hi cent floodid therefore to of Calleis fits nanes, he feet Historian, to his gold-this	er durft gine Edward his outward affiftance(the	(the fer his accesse vito to parts) that hee should not suf-	ther Marqueffe	1	their lives; and left him in the Bishops Palace at Lon-	could not be refered, but valiantly fighting wi	10 1
nor leauch it cent floodid therefore to of Calleis find find nanes, he feel Hilborians, which is gold-thi (53). Go the fequency wearthe Earle Warner Laffet, nor red with his inimifelt has white ragges there his following the finding of the finding to the findin	th and Warwicke being to mighty opposites)	then was to hea with a live grew more potent,	to impeach King	1	where his Competitor King Famus cooks	frucke downe, and among them flaine, having re	.15
tent fiscold therefore to of Calleis fin nanes, he fee Hillorian, to his gold-this (53) Cart for the feet of the feet of the feet of the feet of the feet of the feet of the feet of the feet of the find filler; and filler; a feet of the feet of the feet of the first of the feet of t	eaue him in distresse, lest the sparkes of discon-	and with all nothing himselfe making ready	Edwards pallage	1			
therefore to of Calleis find manes, he feel hillorians, which we can be come to the common to the co	fould flie from the ever - Chi Con-	with all possible speed, to repaire into those parts;	.			paid his danger with many a wound. The	ė. I
of Calles into Innex, be 6c. Hillorian, to Innex, be 6c. Hillorian, to Inis gold-thi (53) Cart be gallant in the factor of the f	fhould flie from the eyes of his faire wife, and	but whether the Marquefle purposely winked, or	1	K. Henris againe	led which Galacha Dam a Cabain Co		-112
of Calles into Innex, be 6c. Hillorian, to Innex, be 6c. Hillorian, to Inis gold-thi (53) Cart be gallant in the factor of the f	efore to know whether Wamelere the Gouernor	mor else (and that rather) would not see at all, hee made	4	to the Town	led, which feeke the Port of their fafety by the affe-		
nanis, he icc Hilborian, which we have been continued to the country of the count	illeis flood resolute for him according to Coue-	no greet had a commodity would notice at all, hee made	. 1	to the Tower of	t ctions of the people for even the fame doubled you	Fine of Fart had beene the Mars and Mak	A- 16
Hillorian, ich is gold-wild is	s,he fecretly fent Philip Comines the hony-mouth	no great hast to forelay his way to Torke, neither	. f	Linese,	rie beene carried through the Citie (as it were) in		<u>ا-</u> د
his gold-thi (53) Cen the (equence) wearthe Ear be sgallant it laffe, nor it ted it his limited to any the distribution of the control and filter; a prepared for the frontiers fo wroughte Earle Warmy encerptic, I Earle Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, See Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, See Earle, Earle, E Earle, E Earle, E Earle, E Earle, E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E	the recreity lent Pully Commer the nony-mouth	uth lought to empeach the paffage . when when the	1		triumph, and had heard the shoutes of the Com-		
his gold-thi (53) Cen the (equence) wearthe Ear be sgallant it laffe, nor it ted it his limited to any the distribution of the control and filter; a prepared for the frontiers fo wroughte Earle Warmy encerptic, I Earle Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, See Earle, Warmy encerptic, I Earle, See Earle, Earle, E Earle, E Earle, E Earle, E Earle, E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E E	orian, to drop some of his sweet eloquence into	outh fought to empeach the passage: when Edward from thence marched in a more bothle.	1		triumpir, and had heard the moutes of the Com-	whereby was ended that bloody daies taske,	*
(5) Cost the fequence of wear the East the feature of the feature	Old-thiriting care.	Azatting Law and a month frontile manner towards	. 1	1	mons in cuerie ftreete crying ; God faue King	(6c) In this Power!	1
the tequency wearthe East be sgallant it lattle, nor it ted with his himfelfe has white ragges there his his prepared for the frontiers fo wroughte Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warny encerptie, I Easte Warn encerptie Easte W	5) Comines comming to Calleis, and observing	. Caking his way not farre from Pameret	1	1	Henrie.	(65) In this Battell vpon King Edwards par	t.l.
be galları in fatife, nor i ted with his himfelfe hac white ragged the his himfelfe hac white ragged the his fold and filler; a report was be prepared for the frontiers fo wroughty. Earle Warw, (10) Kin, Burgumby his birtiends in delay, left feame; and town of Sa man on who liance in the other orders his which was Gartar and B. Burgumby at the feame; and the work of Sa man on who liance in the other orders his which was Gartar and B. Burgumby at the feature of Sa man on who bill him the same of the orders his which was Gartar and B. Burgumby at the first of the orders great are members of the same of the orders which was great and the same of the orders his which was carried and the same of the orders his which was considered the same of the orders his which was carried to the orders his which was carried to be same or the same of the orders his which was carried to be same or the same of the order of)) Sommes continuity to cauers, and objecting	and as it were through the middelf of his enemies;	1			died, the Lord Cromwell, the Lord Bourcher, the Lor	d
be galları in fatife, nor i ted with his himfelfe hac white ragged the his himfelfe hac white ragged the his fold and filler; a report was be prepared for the frontiers fo wroughty. Earle Warw, (10) Kin, Burgumby his birtiends in delay, left feame; and town of Sa man on who liance in the other orders his which was Gartar and B. Burgumby at the feame; and the work of Sa man on who liance in the other orders his which was Gartar and B. Burgumby at the feature of Sa man on who bill him the same of the orders his which was Gartar and B. Burgumby at the first of the orders great are members of the same of the orders which was great and the same of the orders his which was carried and the same of the orders his which was considered the same of the orders his which was carried to the orders his which was carried to be same or the same of the orders his which was carried to be same or the same of the order of	equence for which he was fent, faw euery man	which encouraged many to fauour his delignes, hol-	1	Ed.Hall.	(62) But Earle warwieke hearing how things		
lee guanar lafe, nor ted with his himslife has white ragge-thers his fol and filter; a report was by prepared for the frontiers fo wrought a leaf was the frontiers fo wrought leaf with the frontiers fo wrought his briends in delay, left fleeme, and towne of Saman on who liance in the other orders his which was Gartar and Bungand; at the flee for the orders his which was Gartar and fifty flee, colon-ge great enemy himslife or the flee, colon-ge great enemy himslife or the flee or the colors.			1	1	went in London, and now fully conceiving that the	Life Knight . In the grown !! . Car	
trane, nor ted with his himfelfe hac white ragged chers his fol and filter; a report was b prepared for the frontiers fo wrought value for the frontiers fo wrought value for the frontiers fo wrought value for the frontiers fo wrought value for the frontiers fo wrought value for warmen frontiers for wrought value for warmen frontiers from the frontiers for the orders his which was Garrar and Bungmay at the following frontiers for the orders his which was Garrar and Bungmay at the following frontiers for the frontiers for the orders his which was Garrar and Bungmay at the following frontiers for the orders his which was Garrar and Bungmay at the following frontiers for the orders his which was Garrar and Bungmay at the following frontiers for the orders for the order for the orders for the order for the order for the order for the order for the orders for the order for the		. I was either a triend or should	1	1	nazard of pattell mult determine either with on a	Lifle Knight: In the quarrell of Henrie died Richar, Neull Earle of Warwicke, and John Neuil Marques	d
white ragge chers his fol and filter; a report was b prepared for the frontiers for wrought set Earle Warm, encerptic, I Hump. (50) King Tangaugh his friends in delay, left freement and towne of Sa man on who list which was Carrat and B. Burgundy at the of the orders his which was Carrat and B. Burgundy at the free control of the orders of the orders his which was Carrat and B. Burgundy at the free color for the orders of the order	nor no done frame and the min ragged	ged to deale against so powerfull an enemy.	1	1	gainst him, being come to Saint Albans, fell into a		
white ragge chers his fol and filter; a report was b prepared for the frontiers for wrought set Earle Warm, encerptic, I Hump. (50) King Tangaugh his friends in delay, left freement and towne of Sa man on who list which was Carrat and B. Burgundy at the of the orders his which was Carrat and B. Burgundy at the free control of the orders of the orders his which was Carrat and B. Burgundy at the free color for the orders of the order	not no dore trequented that was not pain-		.t	Ratle Warmiche		Montacute his brother, and you both fides of common fouldiers faith Hall ten thousand, Stow faith	1
white ragge chers his fol and filter; a report was b prepared for the frontiers for wrought set Earle Warm, encerptic, I Hump. (50) King Tangaugh his friends in delay, left freement and towne of Sa man on who list which was Carrat and B. Burgundy at the of the orders his which was Carrat and B. Burgundy at the free control of the orders of the orders his which was Carrat and B. Burgundy at the free color for the orders of the order	ith his white Crotie. Infomuch that Vawelere	falling his leafe, all tooke the time of this pleafant fpring, and flocked to Edward as to this pleafant	1	comment to S.	deepe consideration what was to be done: His af- sistants were token pake of Exessism, the Earls of Ox- ferd and Sommer sis, and Marque sis the tests of Ox- ferd and Sommer sis, and Marque sis the tests of Ox- tonic and the sistant sistant sistant sistant sistant being alwaies too fauourable to the contrarie faction. The feir Compellibed in half well- sistant on fouldiers faith Hall ren thouland ou con	äL.	
white ragget there his color and filter; a report was b prepared for the frontiers for wrought the frontiers for wrought the frontiers for wrought the first fair Wargundy his his friends in delay, left feame, and towns of Saman on who liance in the other orders his which was Garrar and Burgundy at the first force for the orders his which was Garrar and Burgundy at the first of the first first of the first first of the orders in the first fi			K.Edwardt Army	Albana.	initiants were low Duke of Exceller, the Berles of Ore	mon fouldiers faith Hall ten thouland, Stow fairt foure thousand, as Fabra faire lefte: all which were buried ypon the same Plaine; where afterwards a Chappell was built: the Duke of Excelle being left	i Be
and filter; and and filter; are port was b prepared foo the frontiers fo wrought was the fact of the frontiers for wrought for mereprife, I. Henry. "Burgundy ha fis friends is delay, left freemen, and towne of Sa man on who liance in the other orders his which was Garrar and B. Burgundy at the free free free free free free free fr			encreafed.		ford and Sommerfet, and e Merane Co Mentente his	toute thousand as Fabian tarre lelle : all which were	Lob
and filter; and and filter; are port was b prepared foo the frontiers fo wrought was the fact of the frontiers for wrought for mereprife, I. Henry. "Burgundy ha fis friends is delay, left freemen, and towne of Sa man on who liance in the other orders his which was Garrar and B. Burgundy at the free free free free free free free fr	Line College Mante, Children With gold, and o-	who now more able, and therefore more bold made		f i	hearhan mhammanish and It I to the	buried vpon the fame Plaine; where afterwards	Kal
report was be prepared for the frontiers of prepared for the frontiers for wrought was prepared for the frontiers for wrought was prepared for the frontiers for wrong of Sanganday hat feature and towne of Sanganday hat for the orders his which was Gartar and R Burgundy at the first prepared for the frontiers for the	his followers the like wrought in filke, gold	ing wicke and Oxford with a cree ore the Earles of War-	1		brother , who this not with training needed not greatile	Chappell was built: the Duke of Excessor being left	181
prepared for the frontiers for wrought was to prepared for wrought we fearle Warm, (16) King Rangandh haf his friends in delay, left fearmer, and towns of Saman on who liance in the otthe orders his which was Gartar and Rangandh at fift, colenge great enemy himselfer or himself	iuci i anu to trampe the print deeper a litima i	ding mishand o C. I . I Strate the Latter of Ware	1	1	truit, being alwaies too fanourable to the contrarie	for dead in the field recovered and Last fit Dellig lett	-1
prepared to the frontiers fo wroughte venterprife, I Hemy. (\$6) King Burgundy ha his triends it delay, left freame; and towne of Saman on who liance in the of the orders his which was Gartar and R Burgundy at fet, cofenge great enemy himfelfe to the frontier or the same and th		a la la la la la la la la la la la la la	1 .			for dead in the field, recoursed, and tooke Sanctuarie at Westminster. Edmund Duke of Sommer set, and John	4
fowroughev Earle Warm enterprife, I Hemy. (\$60 King Burgundy haf his friends it delay, left freame; and towns of Saman on who liance in the of the orders his which was Garrar and R Burgundy art fet, cofenges great enemy himfelfe to the orders.	red fourethouland valiant men to warre vpon	had cause Clarence was absent, they let Edward hold on without any encourage	John Stew.		follow the Enemie, and before the bodie grew too	at Westminster. Eamand Duke of Sommer Set, and John	al i
io wrought v Earle Warne enterprife, I Hemy. (\$60 King Burgundy ha his triends it delay, left feame; and towne of Sa man on who liance in the of the orders his which wa Garrar and R Burgundy att fet, colen-ge great enemy jimfelfe to the	red lodge chouland valiant men to warre vpon	on without any encounter whee and a noid on	1 '	1 1	amos as las - Cal - Land betote the bothe grew too	Earle of Oxford elegated the field, and fled into Wales	Th
Earle Warm, enterprife, I Hemy. (\$6) King Burgundy ha his friends in delay, left freames and towne of Sai man on who liance in the of the orders his which wa Garrar and R Burgundy at the fet, colenger great enemy himfelfe not			1	1	great, to lop off the branches, leaft they should shad-	where with Talker Forle of Beatle of and	See
enterpriie, I Henry. (56) King Burgandy ha his triends if delay, left freame; and towns of Saiman on who liance in the of the orders his which wa Garrar and R Burgandy at fet, colenges great enemy himfelfe not	bught with the Councell, and they againe with	was like to a river that in the running is ever encrea-	1	1 1	dow their Sun-shine too farre. In which resolution.	Earle of Oxford escaped the field, and fied into Wales, where with I after Earle of Pembrooke they fill plotted to set you have my thought they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they fill plotted to set you have they have the have they have the have they have they have they have they have the have the have they have the have they have the h	the
Henry. (56) King Burgundy ha f his friends in delay, left fleame; and towne of Sa man on who liance in the of the orders his which wa Garrar and R Burgundy at t fet, colen-get great enemy himfelfe to the	Warmicke on he muse a mile they againe with	ith led with new springs, which Warwicke perceiuing,	1	1 1	they hasted forward, and came vnto Barnet, with a		fore
Hemp. (56) King Surgundy ha his triends in delay, left Acame; and towne of Sa man on who liance in the of the orders his which wa Garrar and R Burgundy at the fet, colenges great enemy imfelfe to the	Warwicke as he was contented to leave off the	the thought it more then time to give battell, well	1	1 !	full purpo face receives 2 and a 1		Wa
(\$6) King Burgundy had his triends in delay, left feame; and towne of Sai man on who liance in the of the orders his which was Gartar and R Burgundy art fet, colen-ger great enemy himfelfe to the orders which was constructed by the colen-ger great enemy himfelfe to the orders.	prine, Duke Charles promiting to fide with K	K knowing shee his to time to gine battell , well	. '	1 1	full purpose to recouer London : but Edward well	(66) The fame King Edward	1
(\$6) King Tangundy the his friends in delay, left freame; and towns of Saiman on who liance in the of the orders his which was Gartar and R Burgundy at the colenger great enemy himfelfer or in the same and the sam		butters forbearance had ginen	1	1 1	knowing the flate of the City vnfurnished for fiege,	as an ab Column Committee ame day	1
his friends in delay, left freame; and towne of Sai man on who liance in the of the orders his which was Garrar and R Burgundy at the colenger great enemy himfelfer or in the state of the colenger great enemy himfelfer or in the state of the same and t	Ning Edmand have and a second	nim that head. And to that end fent were cla	1	1 1	and readic to take itampe of any impreffer monage	as an absolute Conquerour, lead the vnfortunate	Ri
his friends in delay, left freame; and towne of Sai man on who liance in the of the orders his which was Garrar and R Burgundy at the colenger great enemy himfelfer or in the state of the colenger great enemy himfelfer or in the state of the same and t) King Edward hearing what his brother of	him that head. And to the end fent vnto Cla- remeethen about Lendon in leuying of men, but hee	1	1	to be pent within those weake wals; and therefore		1
delay, left feame; and towne of Sai man on who liance in the of the orders his which wa Gartar and R Burgundy at the fet, colen-get great enemy himfelfet or i		om lomewhar too backen and a law men, but nee	Warwicke taketh	1 1	relia with the weake wais; and therefore		
Reame; and towne of Sai man on who liance in the of the orders his which wa Gartar and R Burgundy at to fet, colen-get great enemy himfelfet or		mand soul since ward, and Warwicke too for-	into the City		taking with him vntortunate Henry leaft any confo	Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul, whither the flaine	Ī
towne of Sai man on who liance in the of the orders his which wa Gartar and R Burgundy at t fet, colen-ge great enemy himfelfet or		the City Concerns, meaning from	Coventree,			bodies of several de samt Paut , whither the flaine	1
towne of Sai man on who liance in the of the orders his which wa Gartar and R Burgundy at t fet, colen-ge great enemy himfelfet or	et and sharefore service growth to a bigger	ward, tooke into the City Concurry, meaning from thence to let on the enemy. But Edward whole flar that now pair the dayle should be a sho	March,19.		With all noffible baff to encounter his and Co 1		
liance in the of the orders his which wa Gartar and R Burgundy at v fet, colen-get great enemy himfelfetori	, and therefore repairing to his brother in the	the had now paff the darks the same whole ttar	1 7	1	formshor come and forms and insuppointes, be-		
liance in the of the orders his which wa Gartar and R Burgundy at v fet, colen-get great enemy himfelfetori	es and therefore repairing to his brother in the	. I I	1 /	1	forethey came too farre, and vpon Gladmore neere		5.0
of the orders his which wa Gartar and R Burgundy at t fet, colen-ger great enemy			1 1			made that they were not dead. After which they	100
his which wa Gartar and R Burgundy at to fet, colen-gen great enemy himfelfe to the	in the marriage of his 60 IS SOUND OF 21-	al- valiantly bad the Earle come to battell. But he then	1 7	1 1	the eue of Christstefurrection to careles is a great of	After which they	i i
his which wa Gartar and R Burgundy at t fet, colen-ger great enemy himfelfe to the	in the marriage of his fifter, as also in regard		1	1 1	diuine celebrations, that the holieft feaft is propha-		t.
Gartar and R Burgundy at t fet, colen-get great enemy himfelfe to t		neffe of Fameral was ball to	K. Edward chal-	j 13	ned when his Ground in desire Hollett Teatr is propha-	Priorie among their Anceffors	í.
Burgundy at the fet, colen-get great enemy		was Dackt DV 2 Clarence Lengtofo	Marmistra f	1 1	ned, when his fword is drawne.	(67) Edwards affaires thus farre prospered at	(
fet, colen-ger great enemy himfelfetor			- www.congdb	1.	(61) The next day being the Patchall subseque	Landay shawinday shart atte prospered at	10
fet, colen-ger great enemy himfelfetor	when the court of	of world would goe.	, 1	Apr. 14.	Christ rose from death, which with due reuerence'is	-prouse, the windes that had croffed Queene Maron-	- Cu
great enemy			, 1	1	colobrated in all the Chaining with due reuerence'is	London, the windes that had croffed Queene Marga- ret before, came fauourably about to fill her Sailes	FA.
himfelfetori			i I				25
			K.Edward draw-	1	contenders for a terrettrial Crowne wish Inches	heaven had appointed a firm the decree, which	1
	fe to thwart King Edwards fuite, alleadging,	fet Warwicke, vnto which Townelikewise his brother	eth towards	Barner fietz 1	hearts and hands as readic, made ready to digge each		i
		Clerence with former 1 C 110 Inc. whe his brother	London,	Barner field It fought vpon Ea- fler day.	others orange s for as breaks - (1- way to digge each	Edward and their French followers landed upon to	,
			, 1	for day.	others graues: for at breake of day Warminke began		
			, 1		to Marthall his Army, which he divided into three	or Parte/mouth who have	
		he Towne fertheir Ranglain A	, 1	1 16	battalions . The right wing use led by at a sell	at Porte/mouth, who hearing the forrowfull newes of	
		of have fought but the meant to		1 1	and his brooken with the Total Co. (y the Mar-		
			, 1	1 19	me je ins orother, with the Earle of Oxford, confifting	Abbey of Beaulieu. And Queene Margaret vnder-	
ries title hold	e held good in hon hand	Lord Rivers, Haffings, and others, without any gard	: 1	j . 1è	queffe his brother, with the Earle of Oxford, confiffing chiefly of horsemen, himselfe with the Duke of Exce-	Bonding of the loffe of m	
		a- made rowards Clamers which it without any gard	, I				
	Bood in tier promer, and his Grandfa-	Gelfe accompanied which when he beheld, him-	, 1	1 (2	man lad bur has the tile maine Datten was com-	to the Abbey of Ceerne, vnto whom prefently referred !	
	le, held good in her brother, and his Grandfa- nd in her Nephew his father without all ex-	accompanied with iome of effateencempred		n	manded by Edward Earle of Sommerfet , which was	Edward Duke of Continue for with a will a	
((2)		his brother with a louing comprehensive	, 1	Ot met mak # Ot 15	upplied for the most part with Archere K wamer 1	Edmund Duke of Sommerfet, with Lord John his bro-	, he
(57) The	ns.	his brother with a louing countenance and friendly		the barrels.	ibenife ordered his many tree C	Ther: John Courtney Earle of Decombing tother Earle	TOLES
	ns.) The Duke perployed between the Common test.	as no that ke of Harred was perceived be	. 1	11	ikewise ordered his men. The foreward was led by	of Pembrooke, I ohn Lord Wenlock, and John Long frother	May
) The Duke perplexed betweene these great	and the state of t	K Edward and		Richard Dake of Gloucester his brother, a good fouldi-	Prior of Saint Johns,	
	The Duke perplexed betweene these great cants did then, as many doe now, speake and meane perhaps to the feet the second to the feet to the second to the feet to the second to the seco	dinto amiria and passes 1111	his brocher Cla-	e	rand fufficient for aduife, the middle by himfelfe,		
meatic to doc	The Duke perplexed betweene these great cants did then, as many doe now, speake and meane perhaps to the feet the second to the feet to the second to the feet to the second to the seco	the confess, which afterwards proued	react meet and	1 12	and his brooker Classes have	(68) These with many words of hope, comfor-	
	The Duke perplexed betweene these great cants did then, as many doe now, speake and meane perhaps to the feet the second to the feet to the second to the feet to the second to the seco		are reconciled.	[au	and his brother Clarence, having King Henry in their	ted the forrowfull Queene, and proffered her their	
) The Duke perplexed betweene these great	and committee Duke, Clarence thus por founds					
	The Duke perplexed betweene these great cants did then, as many doe now, speake and meane perhaps to the feet the second to the feet to the second to the feet to the second to the seco	the confusion of the Duke. Clarence thus got sought				Mmmm 2 affiftance	

.

and themselves would undergo the charge and bur-

den thereof, by whose valor and power, they doub-

ted not to daunt the pride of the vourping Edward; who now held himselfe sure, and beganne to grow

careleffe. To these their resolutions the warlike

Queene most gladly contented, and gaue all encou-

ragements vnto them shee could; when falling in

counsell how to proceed, her care (according to the

natural affection of a mother) was most upon the

fafcty and life of her fonne; and therefore aiwel for

their owne parts (if fortune flould faile in this their

first attempt) as for the feare which the Yorkift

would possesse (who whiles Prince Edward his cor-

riuali hued could not account the Diadem his Bride)

sheethought it best to send him backe againe into

France, till God had fet the Crowne where it should

stand: whence heemight supply them with new

forces, or at least wife ouer-awe Edward for tyranni-

zing too farre. But the Lords contrariwife allead-

ged, that Prince Edward being the morning Sunne

of the Lancastrians hopes, and the raves very splen-

dent to most English eyes, was to be present in field himselfe, whose sight would both heat the courage

of his owne Souldiers, and attract the glance of his

aduerfaries hearts, either to fight faintly, or elfe, and

that rather to come to his fide. Thus their counsel

at that time preuailed; and thus refolued, every man

departed to make ready his power, the Queene with

in reft, before hee heard of Queene Margarets arri-

uage, and the confluence of people out of Cornwall, Deuonsbire, and of the Westerne parts, which houre-

ly flew to giue her assistance; wherefore commit-

ting to the Tower King Henry, and George Archbi-

shoppe of Torke with a selected company, he march-

ed to meet them, intending to cut off many fprings

before they should toyne to the body of a river,

whose streams without danger could not be passed: therefore from windser, Abington, Chichester, and

Mamesbury hee proceeded, feeking and vrging

his enemies to battell: but the Queene and her for-

ces fearing to abide in Bath, remoued to Briston,

Berkeley, and Gloceller, and laftly at Tewkesbury, Duke Sommerfet her Generall puched down his Tents not flaying the comming of the Earle of Pombroke: his

battell he marshalled into three fights, whereof him-

felfe and his brother John Lord Sommer fee lead the

foreward; the middle Battalion was commanded

by Baward the young Prince, under the conduct of

the Lords Saint Iohn and Wenlocke, and the Rere-

ward governed by John Courtney Earle of Denonshire.

(;o) King Edward who was come now within

light of his enemies, divided likewife his Army into

Battalions, comitting the Foreward vnto the gui-

dance of his brother Richard D. of Glacefler a good

Souldier, and of a deepe reach and policy: the Main hee undertooke to governe himfelte, and the Rere-

ward was commanded by the Lord Hallings his

Chamberlaine. The field thus marshalled, and the

figne of battell being given, a most blondy fight be-

ganne, the King had planted his Ordinance at most advantage, which Gloseller frankly bestowed among

the Dukes men, and they lodged betwirt ditches,

bushes and hedges, with their showers of arrowes galled Glocesters followers, so as by his command his

battell gaue backe, as though they would shrinke,

which Sommer fet no fooner perceiued, but that be

came on, and ouercome with courage, came out of his strength, when by a certaine passage before hand

prouided, he came vnto the place where King Ed-

ward was embattelled, thinking verily that wenlocke

mortallenemy against the house of Yorke.

(69) But Edward in London had not fate two daies

her French repairing to Bath.

Lord flaine at

. . . .

5

good hisretreat, and with fresh supplies of two hun- This battell was dred speares to charged Sommer fet, as his battell was difordered, and purto fearefull flight, himselfe re- of May, the it. courring the Midle-ward, found there the L. Wenlock of K. Edwards idle, whileft others were thus working for their lines, of Card, 1471. whom he most opprobriously reuiled in the termes of a Traitor, & with his Battell-axe ftroke his brains L. Wenlocke flain out of his head; when prefently Glocester, and after Sommerse. him the King entred the French, wherein all of the Que nes part went to wracke; for there were flaine

in this battell on her fide Iohn L. Sommerfet, Iohn Courtney Earle of Denonshire, the Lord Wenlocke in Temperary. manner as wee have faid, Sir Iohn Delues, Sir Edward Hampden, Sir Robert Whittingham, and Sir John

Lewkener, with three thousand others belides. (72) Among them that fled, Prince Edward was Prince Edward one, whome Sir Richard Crofts apprehended be- apprehended fore hee got to Tewkesbury, but Edmund Duke of-Sommer fet, John Long frother, Prior of Saint Johns, many Knights and Elquiers tooke Sanctuary in the

Abbey, and other places of the Towne, not withftanding they were taken forth and arraigned before Richard Duke of Glocester, who that day face Con-Rable of England, where they were condemned and The Duke of had indgement of death, which they immediatelie fuffered vpon a Scaffold fet vp in the Town. With these two Lords died twelne worthy Knights, befides others of inferior degrees. (73) Then was Proclamation made for the apprehension of Prince Edward, promising to his taker

an annuitie of an hundred pounds during his life, & if the Prince were lining, his life to be spared, vpon which promiles Sir Richard Crofts prefented young Prince Reward Edward vnto the King, whom with a sterne counte-nance hee a while beheld, and as sternely demanded, how he durft to prefumptuously with Banner difplayed enterinto his Realmes, wherunto the Prince made this reply; to recouer (faid bee) my fathers Kingdomes and his most rightfull inheritance possessed by his Father and Grandfather, and from him immediately belonging vnto me; how dareft thou then which are his Subject display thy colour against him thy Liege-Lord? which answere moued King Edward to much, as with his Gantlet hee dalked the Prince on his mouth, whom Richard Duke of Glocefer with others of the kings feruans most shamefully murchered, euen in his presence, and at his feete: whose body was buried without all solemnity among other poorcand meane persons, in the church of the Monastery of the Blacke-Fryers in Temberburie.

(74) Queene Margaret in this fatall day of battell fled towards Worcefter, and by the way tooke into a poore religious house in that her present diftreffe : but three dayes after fhee was apprehended and brought vnto worsefter: to King Edward, who committed her to fore and firaite keeping, in which City she a while remained But sodain news brought him, that the Northern men were in Armes, and meant to adventure for her liberty, the Conquerous marched to Couentrie, and there made preparation further to proceed: which when thefe hote fpires pefectly understood, their courages grew.colder, & their weapons cast away, they came thronging to Edward to offer him fubicction; yet the Lancastrians were not fo minded, but rather insended once The Northerne more to trie whether fortune would afford them her K. Edward.

(75) A fitte instrument they had to forward the enterprise, namely Thomas Nemil bastard Fancou-bridge sonne of Lord Fancoubridge Earle of Kent, a great supporter of King Edwards Crowne: howbeit this Bastard being a man of a turbu'ent spirit, bridge Capting and forward for action, Earle Warming had made of the Langlei him his Admirall to keepe the narrow feas, that none fhould have way to strengthen King Edward which his office he executed beyond his Commitsion, and became a taker of all Merchants goods, being aided with 300. Malecontents from Calleis.

Chap.17. | Edward IIIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 54. (76) His enterprise desperate, and his name growne fearefull at sea, hee meant to make it no lesse on the land; for putting in at Douer, many misgouerned and loose personsdayly drew to him, so as his power grew to bee seuenteene thousand strong with these through Kent he made his way towards London, meaning to doe much, the land so molested with intestine warres; and lodging his hoast on the Southfide of London, commanded the Cirizens to gine him accesse, that with King Henry (whom hee meant to release from the Tower) he might passe through their streetes, to meet and encounter the viurping Edward. But the Londoners knowing the rudenesse of these Rakehels kept their gates shut and garded the same with sufficient strengthes: whence fome Lords of the royali bloud therein residing, sent

vnto Edward of their present danger, who presently fent them fifteene hundred of his best Souldiers, after whomin person hee warily marched, leading with him his prisoner Queene Margaret, whose bounds hee well knew, gaue him the full scope of (77) Fauconbridge in the meane while thirsting after spoile with his shippes secured the Thamesis ato polic with in impress returned the 1 moment aboue S. Kathermer, purposing with his land Forces to passe the Riveran Kingson: but hearing that Editoral ward was on his March, and searing to bee cut off

from the benefite of his ships, hee altered his mind; when to open his way into London, hee caused the Bridge to bee fiered, and three thousand of his men being set ouer Themesis by his ships, divided themseluces into two Companies, the one affaying to enter at Algate, and the other at Bishopigate, both which they likewise set on fire, so that the Citie was in three places fired and affaulted at once, but with such euill successe to the affailants, that seuen hundred were flaine, and the bold Baitard driven to (78) Vpon the twentieth of May the Conque-

rour Edward with his Caprine Queen Margaret entred London, and so into the Tower the one in pomp commanding the place at his pleasure, the other in reares to remaine a most pensive prisoner, where her husband, the downcast King Henry was kept in hard durance. The place being thus charged with the presence of two Kings and their Queens: the Crokebacke of Glosefter intended to cleare by taking him away, that flood in his brothers way, whose successor as is thought hee then meant to bee; and making his

inward mind more deformed then were his outward lineaments, without regard of bloud-defiled hands Kir g Heary the thered in the Tower by Reb-ard Duke of flabbed the most innocent Henry to the heart with his dagger, in which act at once beganne the ones happy rest, and the others foule guilt, which accompanied his confcience to the day of his death. (79) The body of this murthered King was vp-on the Acception Euclaide in an open Coffin, and K. Henry carri bare-faced through the fireetes of Lanfrom the Tower guarded with many bils and glaues, was fo carryed through the fireetes vnto the Cathe-

drall Church of Saint Paul, where it refted vncoue-

red one day, and beganne to bleed againe afresh, a forrowfull spectacle to most of the beholders, and thence was it carried to the Blacke-Fryers Church where it likewise lay bare faced, and bled as before, all men being amazed at the forrowfull fight, and lastly, it was put in a boat without Priest, Clerke, Torch or Taper, finging or faying, and was ferried wnto the Abbey of Cherifey in Surrey, & there without pompe enterred. But afterwards King Henry the seventh translated his body vnto his Castle of windser, where in a new Tombe at the entrance into the Chancell of the Chappell, and fouth dore of the Quier, it was princely bestowed, but fince the Tombe is remoued, and where the Corps is now

laid is not vulgarly knowne. (80) Thus lived and thus dyed this innocent and inft King, who had beene proclaimed in his Cradle, crowned in his Infancy, and agains at more age had the Emperial Diadem of France fet on his head, li-

ning vprightly, louing his Subjects, and raigning thirty eight yeeres, was in that time toffed with variable successe, for twice he was imprisoned, and deprined of his Crowne; betrayed, mitten, and wonnded, and in all things became a worthy example of fortunes vnconstancy : hee was of stature very seemly, of body flender, of face beautifull, and by a naturall inclination abhorred all vice, farre from pride, given to prayer, well read in the Scriptures, ving K.Hom. works of Charity, and so chast, as no suspition of incontinency could be conceined in him: nay, for farre to the contrary, that when certaine Ladies precented themselues before him in a maske, with their haire loofe, and their breafts vncoueted (hee then a Halinfeet, Bachelour, and able of matriage) hee immediately rose vp, and departed the presence, saying, sie, sie,

for footh yee are to blame. Oath he yied none, but in weighty matters, his affirmation was for footh. and forfooth, very mercifull to the poore, and fo pictifull to Malefactors, as he commanded the quarters of Traitors to be taken downe from the Gates, and buried, and so farre from reuenge, that hee willingly pardoned the greatest offences against him; for a Ruffian intending his death, wounded him in the fide with his fword, what time he lay prisoner in the Tower, and being restored to his kingly estate; he freely forgaue the fact; and another like Russian striking him on the face, hee punished with this onely reprebension, for footh you are to blame to strike mee your annointed King : for thele and his other patient vertues, King Henry the 7. affayed to haue Comb. Brit.le him canonized a Saint: but Pope Julius the 2.demanding too great a fumme, the King went no further in the fuite: notwithstanding in the repute of the vulgar hee was taken for no lesse, so as his red hat which

hee had worne, healed the head-ach, when it was put on, as the fimple beleeved. (81) The monument of his zeale to true piety, and care for posterities, are his famous Colledges of Eaton and Cambridge, the Chappell of which last, shewes the magnificence that the whole should have beene of, had their Founder raigned to have finished them himfelfe: for the performance whereof hee enfeoffed certaine Bishops with other noble personages by his letters Patents with lands and poffeffions, to the yeerely value of thirty foure hundred pounds very neere : but as his life ended, before that nature had thereunto fet her owne feale; fo thefe remain unperfected of the excellent beauties intended. which their zealous Founder means to have adorned them withall.

(82) And his forrowfull Queene Margaret, who Kings Colledge twentie fixe yeeres before this his death, with all in Cambridge
pompe and royalty had beene crowned Queene of
Batkling,
Batkling, England, and had ruled all in all, now a poore Prifo- ded by K. Henry. ner in diftreffe and wants, weares out her time in teares and laments, and wisheth for nothing more then the day of her death; which Duke Reiner her Father well understanding, made suite to King Ed-ward to have her released by ransome; and lastly, retrans Queen Moresbought her liberty at to deare a rate, as hee first pawned, and afterward folde to Lewis the French King. the Kingdomes of Naples, and of both the Siciles to

flard Fauconbridge departed, from London; as we have

faid)and withdrew vnto Sandwich with his disquiet

crew, made thew to doe much, and did fomewhat

more then befitting, by rape, and robbing, where those rude Mariners came, which Edward hearing

of, hafted to Canterbury in person himselfe, fully re-

folined to weede up by the rootes those new sprow

pay and repay the price of her redemption, vnto which poore father, this forrowfull daughter returned and ended her aged dayes, where shee had be gun the dayes of her life. (84) Victorious Edward thus leading Mars chained to his Chariot, and now himselfe led by Fortune to the high chaire of Effate, fits an absolute Monarch fure, and without opposite, vnto whose rayes all eyes tume a fubmiffine afpect : onely ba-

K Edwards

The battell at

Queenr Marga

Quecas Maga-

King Henry com-

initted to the Tower of Lende

Edw.Hall.

nothing leffe,

had followed at his backe, who as it feemed meant (71) The advantage espied, Duke Richard made

Lillia

686

Bafturd Fancon

bridge with his varuly crew yeeld to King Saward,

Baftard Faucon

Rob. Fabian.

Baflard Faucenbridge beheaded,

A.D. 1472.

Heary of Richmove fled into Britains

The florie of

loba Stow.

The Earle of

. 688	B Edward IIIJ. THE SVCC	ESSION OF Monarch 54.	Book 9		Chap. 17	7. Edward IIIJ. ENGLANDS	MONARCHE	
	thrust in his Arme, couered with boords ouer head to avoid the raine, & the bridge so broad that twelve	were fore displeased with Stillingtons simplicity; yet the promises that the Duke of Britains had made	1		1	(caped) hee had gorren an avenue lic		54 689
	might stand in a rancke on both sides. (98) The day approched, and the two Kings	much mitigated and eafed his mind.	1		1		working for his sonne another way: First to make him with Mary Datches of Burgundy, but that refu	atch
A.D.147	(98) The day approched, and the two Kings	(101) And now the Realmequiet, no warre in				male, the faid Duke and his being found iffue	with Margaret of Flaunders daughter to Duke M	led,
Aug. 19.	come to the place, hee of France came first to the Grate, accompanied with twelue personages, as was	hand, nor none towards (but such as no man loo- ked should happen;) hee framed himselfe so to the	1		1		the world from 6.6	old
1	the appointment; wherof John Duke of Bourbon and	peoples affections, and held their hearre not in a	tring Dawara		1	high man and a languary he was attainted of		
l l	the Cardinall his brother were the chiefest : King	constrained feare, but with as louing and ready obe-	fubicets and lo-		A.D. 147	high treason: but whether guiltie or guilties, to men (faith Grafton) that have made large inquisition, yea and	Elizabeth the Infanta of England was in the Fre. Court viually called Madame the Daulphin, and things in France lofoundly carried, as Edward ful.	all called Madama
	Edward entring the bridge on the other end, with his brother the Duke of Clarence, the Earle of Nor-	dience as any King attaining the Crowne by his fword ener had. Nor was ener any Prince more	ucth his lubiects.		Rich Graft.			
- 1	thumberland, the Lord Hastings his Chamberlaine,	familiar with his Subjects then this King Edmand	l				vnable for poince ball to now growne far a	nd
	and the Lord Chancellor, himselfe apparelled all in	was, who now having histribute truly paid from	1		1	but by consectures, which as often deceive the imaginations of fantalical folke, as declare truth to them in their	mous victories at home archieued, and feemed fu	fia-
	cloth of gold, with a rich lewell of precious flones, in forme of a Flower de Luce: aduanced forward,	France, and all things prospering as was desired, he set heart vpon pleasure, which hetherto had beene			j		was formly paid	nce
The falutati	and within fine foote of the Grate, put off his cap.	at hicked with continual turmoile : yea and often			A falle prophe- cie of G. E.	(105) I am not ignorant that some have alleaged the cause of this Noble mans death to arise from a		
of the two kin	gs. and bowed his knee within halfe a foote to the	1 1410 from film the trate of Prince and would accom-			cic of G. E.	100llin propheciel whereat faith Comment if - no	(109) At the same time I ame: the third of the name King of Scotland, sent his Ambassadors vn Edward to obtaine the Lady Cuesie the Kings second augher to be somed in	to 10.1480.
- 1	ground. King Lewis as readily doing his likely re- ucrence vnto Edward. Where, after imbracements	pany and connerse with his meane subjects: a load- stone that doth naturally attract the English hearts;			Phil, Camin.		daughter to be joined in marriage with his fon	I ady Citely mo-
- 1	through the Grate, the Chancellour of England who	among many others we of Landau remembership to	1		lib.4 cap.10.	vied to make an art of their letters, gaue forth for- footh that a G. should raigne after an E. which must		
1	was Prelate and Bilhop of Ely, made an eloquent and learned Oration, which done, he read the Articles of	our grace. Vnto Windfore he feat for the Lord Maior	To Stone	-				!
1	peace and demanded the Kings whether these were	of London, the Aldermen and others, ypon no other occasion, then to huntin his company, and himselfe to be merry with them: A salfo at another time he did the like in Wallbarn, where he gauge them most fea-	K. Edward Sent		1			
1	done with their full confents. Which granted by	to be merry with them . As also at another time he	and Aldermen		1	and her blood much more a little, but the Queene	the Scottifb King with this condition, that are certa time appointed, it should be at K. Edwards choil	
The Kings (w	both: either of them laying their one hand vpon the Miffall, and the other vpon the Hob-Croff, tooke				1			
the league,	their folemne Oathes to obserue the same. And	miliar intertainment, and fent to the Lady Maireffe and her fifters two harts, fixe Buckes, and a Tunne of			1		or elfe to have the faid fumme againe repaid. A gainft which alliance and league (as Lefly reporteth	S
1	then failing into a more familiar and Courtly Com-	wine, which wanne more love then manifold their	1		İ	widower (for warmicks daughter was dead) fent vnto his filter Margaret the Dutchesse Burgundie,		
1	plementaliconference, King Lewis told K. Edward that he would one day invite him to Paris, there to	worthes.			The Duke of Cle			
1	Court his faire French Ladies, with whom if hee	(102) Somewhat he was given to Court and con- uerse with faire Ladies, which fault was well noted	K. Haward fom.		vato Marie the	daughter the Lady Marie. Against which the	gainst England	Mergeret,
i	committed any finne, he merrily told him that Car-	and preuented by King Lewis, for his French dames.	flie giuen.		rence isfuirer vato Marie the daughter of Eur- gendie,	Queene most earnestly interposed her selfe, and solli- cited the Ladie in the behalfe of Lord Inthonic	(110) Theferro Desce makes for al 101 . c	
1	dinall Bourbon, should be his Confessor, whose pe- nance would be the easier, for that Bourbon vied to	Dut in Expland he had liberry with very large Come				Earle Rivers her brocken sub-makes and the	brands of Belial, blew the imothered iparkes of di fention into a flame of bloody warre, which fell th	
1	buile faire Ladies himfelfe; which no fooner was fpo-	for besides the Lady Lucy and others, by whome he had issue, three concubines he kept, and those of	K. Edwards three		1	was ministred to the Duke, and new lealousies daily bred in the Kings breast.	more heavy ypon Scotland, for that K. James much	h I same View of
1	ken, or howioeuer meant, but Edward was as for-	three divers, and leveral dipolitions, as himfelfe	Concubines,		1	(106) Jahn Serreethe French Lliftonian insulation	more heavy vpon Scotland, for that K. I ames muc wedded vnto his owne will, and altogether ruled b	h lamer King of Scotland much wedded to his
	ward of thankes and acceptance, and indeed fo rea- dy, that King Lewis rounding Commines his bosome	would often confesse, one the merriest, another the wiliest, and the third the holiest harlor in his realme,			BiSmer.		from nothing, had not only need to deal advance	d owne will
K. Lewisloth that Edward should visite	icruant in his eare, told him flatly he liked not Ed.	143 One Whom no man could get out of the Church	1		ľ			
should visite	Ps. wards forwardnes to Paris, too many English Princes	valeficit were to his Bed, the merrieft was closes				fo much affected the league and alliance with France, as that he caused his brother Clarence to be put in	Realme of Scotland, Alexander Duke of Albany hi	S Alexander Dake
	having beene there before and thus the con- ference ended, and king Edwards busines in France.	wife, of whom hereafter we shall speake, the other two were greater Personages, but in their humili-			Clarence imprife- ned by his bro- ther King Ed- ward.	prinon, because he intended to have past the Seasto	gations are lone or his Nobles, but allo banished th Realme of Scatland, Alexander Dake of Albary his second brother; and had caused the veines of I sole Earle of Marre his other brother, to be opened whereby he bled to death; these and other discon- ternal length is Suited.	thed Scotland.
A.D. 147	hee returned into England, and into the City of London was received little leffe then in triumph-	ty are content to bee nameleffe and to forbeaus			ther King Ed-	fuccour the Dowager of Burgandie Ladie Margaret his fifter, vpon whose Territories King Lewis en-	whereby he bled to death; these and other discon-	Marre bled to
Sept. 28.	London was received little leffe then in triumph-	the prane of those properties.				croacned, after the death of Duke Charles has but I		
	(ee) But though Edwards forming this outperd	(103) This fault of the King did not greatly of- fend the people: for one mans pleasure could not					laid the land more open vnto the English Inuaders and yet to draw them more deadly against him, rely-	
	by Hourithed ver inward fearer ninned his Oil	extend to the displeatures of manie. If he no done				(107) But how foeuer Clarence had offended, cer- taine it is, that he was found guilty by the forefaid		
1 .	bled mind, one branch hauing sappe, whose growth hee much teared would shadow his Crowne, which	Without violence, and in his larger dains leftened and					he fent word vnto Edward, that he should not aid his owne fifter of Burgundy against K. Lewis, being the	
	was remy Earle of Kichmond, aline and at liberty in	well left. But a farre more greater finne and re- proach he fell into, among his other Princely dif-					Sees Allicias allo with threats of warre commanded	K.lametchroon
	the Duke of Britaines Court. To bring therefore his	DOTE: For being on progrette in seconicle dia.			George Duke of	of London, was drowned in a But of Malmeler, whose body was buried at Temkesburie in Glocestershire, by	nim to deliuer to his Ambaffadors, the Duke of Al-	methwarre a-
Henry Earle of Richmond foug	ht Amhaffadors unto France Duke of Paissing	hunting in Arrow Parke, belonging to Thomas Bur- det Esquire, with the death of much Game he flew	Thomas Burdet		demned by Par-	suc Dodic of his Dutchelle Ladie Habell Connections	banie (then reliding in the English Court) and lastlie to make good and repay dammages done vpon the	
niter by K. Ed	ftore of gold and good words, as that hee mount to	1 a White Bucke greatly effected of the fold Poulse	accused of trea-		demned by Par- liament. And drowned in	Warwicke, who being with Child, died of poison a little before. And although the King had consented	2 sorrigo Dorders.	1 8
An intent pro-	match his eldest daughter Lady Elizabeth vinto the young Earle of Richmond, whereby all cause of	I will vingeritanging increat wither his hornes in his	Enguerre.		a But of malme- fey.	to the death, yet no looner was it done hurshas he l	(111) King Edward not a little inraged at these double dealings, even in the winter season mustered	
ter came to	diffentions might at once be one off-the Dukockink	Belly, that moued the King to kill the same Bucke, whereof he was accused and condemned of treason,	Pollotine'			William It agains vindons. and was to greened as the	his men, prepared his arrillery and rigged his thing	1
palle.	ing no danger where the water went (month, easily	I has wordes being drawne . to with the hornes in also	. 1			remembrance, as when anie made fuite for the life of	that nothing igould be viready at the next Spring .	1 4
1	consented to shippe him thereon; but ere the prey was embarked, hee had knowledge that the voy-		Regider of Gray-Friens Lag-		K. Edwards re- pensance for his beothers death.	a condemned, he would openly fay: Oh unfortunate brother for whose life no man would make saite. This	which no fooner was come, but that he ordained for his Lieutenant his brother Richard Duke of Glouce-fier, who with Henric Forle of Northworkerland The	1
1	age mould colt young Henry his life: wherefore in	burne, and buried in the Gray-Fryers Church at London.	den.		onounces death.	good Duke (for 10 was he called) left iffine hehind !		
Ralph Holinfo.		(104) But a more lamentable tragedie happened			The Duke of Clarence his iffice.	afterwards Countrolle of Selichum back of them	mas Lard Stanler the Lard Louell Gueiffack and others	the Kings Lieu. I
psg.701.	uent it, who secretly told Riehmond what marriage- bed Edward intended; whereat the distressed Earle	vnto the land, by the death of George Duke of Clarence the Kings fecond brother, who being accused of high Treason was committed to the Townson	The flory of			tants, and followers of their fathers fortunes, heal	(the Duke of Albany marching vnto Gloncesters ban- ner) with twenty thousand strong repaired into the	Sequeng,
Henry Karle of Rechmond take	amazed, was pur to his shifts and for warm of house	high Treason was commissed as about	Clarence.				North: and first belieged the strong Towne Bermick, then entring the chiefe City Edenberough, vrged K.	
Rechmend take Sanctuary.	tooke Sanctuary at S. Malos, where the English his conductors lay for a wind.	ne toone after ended his life. His arrainderway			shildren of Cla-	age vnder Hemy the seauenth, was beheaded vpon the Tower-hill; and shee at sixtie two, lost hers	then entring the chiefe City Edenborough, vrged K.	The Duke of
The English	(100) The Earle thus elegand the Amhalfadom	that the faid Duke had caused discrete of his servants to enforme the people, that Thomas Burdet his ser-	The setainder			within the Tower, and time of King Henric the	James to performe his conenants, concerning the marriage betwixt Prince James his sonne, with Lady	Gioceffer entreth Scotlands
	COmplained to the Dake impuring the foulers for		of the Duke of	i i		(108) But how dainty focuer King Edward was	Cicely before agreed upon, threatning destruction if	1 1
complaineth the Dake of A			John Stew.		King Edward de- ceited in King Lewis	Of the breach of amitie, betwirt him and the Evenel	the match went not forward. The Scottifb Nobility confidering the eminent danger, put to death the	
saine,	the wares; his answere was the delinery was good	world beleeve, that K. Edward wrought by Nigroman- sie, and vied to poison such subjects as he hated: And			Levu.	King, in regard whereof he fuffered (Mary the yong)	wicked Couniciers of their King, ordained the	
His Aniwere.	Dut incraicines negligent Factors what made not	also that the said Duke vpon purpose to evalthim	1			Dutchesse of Eurgundy the daughter of his owne si- fters husband to bee molested by intrusion of the	Duke of Albany the Victorent of Scotland, and pro-	
	the commodity to their best advantage. And yet for the loue hee bare to their King, hee wndertooke	also that the said Duke vpon purpose to exalt him- selfe and his heires to the Regall dignitie, most falsely	- 1		1	French and all in favour of the comme the comme	mised to repay the money received according to Couenants; after which with the delivery of the	1
	that Astanting House be fure kent either in Nanchia.	and therefore not capable of minns.)	betweene the Daulphin & Lady Elizabeth his daugh- ter, yet did Lewis for his part but dally and drive		Berrylchy delless
1	ry, or elle in prilon, whence as hee promiled hee		1		1	outtime: For Ambassadors imploied for the full	Exelsily possession the space of one and twentie veers.	red to the Hag-
	they returned having cleared Edward or his money,		l		i	accomplishing thereof, they of France came either	Realmes Whereupon not long after, Gertar King	
	and care for fure keeping of Hemy, who though hee	him and his heires, without any other refernations of their allegiance: for which intent (asthere was al-	- 1		1	without commission, or those recalled, the new were	at armes was fent into Scotland, with an Infrument	ı
1	4	leaged)	1			fent without instructions, while indeed Lewis was	in writing viito the Prodottand Durgelies of Each-	ł
		5:0)					burgh,	
,	•			j -				
•				Y' .				
				7 .				
				i I				

Pb.Com.l.6.c.s. raigne. (119) Edward the eldest sonne of K. Edward

Chap. 17. Ed ward IIIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 54. commended where he auoided, then is his manhood (121) George the third sonne of K. Edward the fourth, by Queene Elizabeth his wife, was also borne when he vanquished: eight or nine bartels he won, wherein to his greater renowne he fought on foote, in Shremsburie, and being a yong Child was created and was euer victor ouer his enemies : much gi-Duke of Bedfard, but liucd not long after, and lieth uen hee was to the lusts of youth, and in his latburied at Windfore. ter time, growne somewhat corpulent, which rather adorned his graner yeeres, then any waies dithe fourth, by Elizabeth his Queene, was borneat fliked the cies of his beholders. Westminster the eleventh of Februarie, and fifth of her fathers raigne; being the yere of Saluation 1406. Shee was promiled in marriage to Charles Daulphin Hù Wife. of France, woed and Courted by her vncle Crouche

burke, when he had murdered her brothers and vour-(117) Elizabeth the daughter of Richard Woodwill ped the Crowne, but better deftiny attending her. Earle Rivers by his wife laquelana Dutcheffe of Bedfhee was referued to joine the vaion and marriage ford, who was the daughter of Peter Earle of S. Paul, and he the sonne of Peter de Luxembourg, was first with the onely heire of Lancaster, which was Henrie of Richmold, afterward King of England, from whom is branched the roiall stemme that spreamarried vnto Sir Iohn Grey flaine at S. Albans, where he was knighted the day before his death by King deth his beauty in this 2 orth-West world , euen Henry the fixt, vuto whom shee bare two sonnes James our dread Soueraigne, and great Brittaines Moand a daughter, after whole death shee was prinately remarried vnto K. Edward the fourth, the first day of (123) Cicely, the second daughter of K. Edward the May, at his mannor of Grafton in Northampton bire fourth by Queene Elizabeth his wife, was fought vn-Anno 1464, and in the next yeere following vpon the fixe and twentith of May, was crowned Queen at to, by Iames the third of that name, to be joined in marriage with James his fonne Prince of Scot'and, westminster with al due solemnities. Shee was his wife and Duke of Rothfay, which match was promifed vp. eighteene yeeres, eleuen moneths, and nine daies, no on conditions and choise of K. Edward, who lastly more fortunate in attaining to the height of all brake off from further proceeding, and the Lady married vnto Iohn Vicount Wels, whom thee outworldly dignity, then unfortunate in the murther of her fonnes, and loffe of her owne liberty: For in the beginning of K. Edwards raigne, shee was forced lived, and was againe remarried, but by neither to take Sanctuary at Westminster, wherein her first husband had any iffue, and therefore leffe noted; her body lieth buried at Quarrena in the ife of fonne Prince Edward was borne; and at his death did Wight. the like in feare of the Protector, and lastly having all (124) Anne the third daughter of K. Edward the her lands and possessions seized upon by K. Henrie fourth, by Queene Elizabeth his wife, was married the seauenth, lived in meane estate in the Monastery unto Lord Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolke, Earle of Bermondsey in Southwarke, where not long af-Marshall, and high Treasurer of England : vuto ter shee lest the troubles of her life, and inioi-

whom shee bare two sonnes both dying without ifed a quiet portion or burying place by her last husband King Edward at Windfore. füe, and her selfe without more fruit of wombe. left her life, and lieth buried at Framingham in Nor-(118) Elianor Butler, as we find it recorded voon 125) Bridget the fourth daughter of K. Edward the Parliament Role, was contracted vnto King Edthe fourth by his wife Queene Elizabeth, was borne ward: but how true confidering the occasion, and at Elthamin Kent, the tenth of November and yeere time of the Act, we leave for others to indge, onely of Grace 1480. being the twentieth of her fathers this is most certaine that this Lady Elianor was Raigne. Shee tooke the habite of Religion, and bethe daughter of Iohn Talbot Earle of Shrewsburg, and came a Nun in the Nunnery of Dartford, in the fame the wife of Sir Thomas Butler Knight, sonne and heire County, founded by K. Edward the third, where to Ralph Butler Baron of Sudley, which Elianor died thee fpent her life in contemplations vnto the day of the thirtieth of Iune, the yeere of Christ Iefus, 1466. her death. and the eight of King Edward the fourth his (126) Marie the fift daughter of K. Edward the fourth by Queene Elizabeth his wife, was pro-

His Iffec.

the fourth by Queene Elizabeth his wife, was borne in the Sanctuary at Westminster the fourth of Nouember, and yeere of grace 1471. being the tenth of his fathers raigue, at that time expulled the Realme by the powerfull Earle Warwicke ; but fortune changed, and the father restored; the sonne, the first of luly and yeere of Chrift was created Prince of Wales, Duke of Comwell and Earle of Chefter; and had not the ambitious hand of his vncle beene defiled in his innocent blood, he might have worne the Diademe manie yeeres, whereas he bare the Title of King not many daies. (120) Richard the fecond forme of K. Edward the

fourth by Elizabeth his Queen, was borne at Shrenf

Iohn Mowbray Duke of Norfolke, by which he was

intituled Duke of Norfolke, Earle-Marfball, Warren,

and Nottingham, but injoying neither Title, wife, or

his owne life long, was with his brother murthered

in the Tower of London, and in the prison of that

Tower, which vpon that most finfull deed is ever

fince called the bloody Tower, their bodies as yet

vnknowne where to haue buriall.

Infant without other mention i your Authors. (128) Katherine the feuenth daughter of King Edward the fourth, by Queene Elizabeth his wife, and the last of them both, was married vnto William Courtney Earle of Dewonshire; and Lord of Ochampton, vmo whom fhee bare Lord Henrie after the death of his father Earle of Deuonshire, who by King Henrie the eight was created Marquesse of Extester in Anno 1525. bury, and in his infancy was created Duke of Torke, he was affianced vnto Anne daughter and heire to

1482.and was buried at windfore.

His Concubines.

miled in marriage vnto the King of Denmarke, but

died(before it could be folemnized) in the Tower of

Greenewich, the Sunday before Pentecoff the twentis

eth two of her fathers raigne, and yeere of Grace

(127) Margaret the fixth daughter of K. Edward

the fourth, by his wife Queene Elizabeth, died an

(122) Elizabeth the first daughter of K. Edward

(129) Elizabeth Lucic is certainly known to have been King Edwards Concubine, though nothing fo certainly mentioned, whose Ladie, or of what Parentage thee was; that thee was conceived by him with child is before declared , but who that child was , is as obscurely laid downer therefore in these things we must be filent, and leave the doubts to be resolved by others. Three other concubines this king had, whereof Shores wife was not the least beloued, whose life

Nnnnn

A.D.1478.

falleth further to be spoken of in the Raigne of the vsurper Richard, where her storic shall be shewed more at large.

692

His naturall Issue.

(\$50) adribur, furnamed Plantagenes, the natural Donne of K. Edward the fourth, (whole mother as is supposed, was the Lady Edizabeth Luciy was created in London, the twentie first hot dyrid, and yeare of Salsation 1332. which title was conferred upon him in right of this wife Lady Edizabeth, fifter and heire woto Indon Gray Vilcount Life, and the late wife and then widdow of Edmand Dudley: who barevnto this Vilcount three daughters, which were Bridget Plantage and Edizabeth and the Control of the

ried. This Arthur Lord Life was made Lieutenant of Callb by the idial K. Horay, which Towns fome of his fernansintended to haue betraied to the Fronch, for which their fach fainfelfe was fent to the Tower of Lordon-but his truth appearing after much fearch, the King fent him a rich ring from his owne finger, with fact comfortable wordes, as at the hearing thereof a fudden loy overthanged his heart, & was foi immoderately received, that the fame night: made an end of his life, whole body was honorably buried in the fame I ower.

(151) Elizabeth the naturall daughter of K. Edmar'd the fourth, was married to Six Thomas Lamile;
Knight, the fonne of George, Lord Lumies, who died
before his father: thee bare wnto the faid Six Thomas,
Richard, afterward Lord Lumles, from whom the late
Lord Lumley did defeend.

EDWARD



Chap. 18. Edward V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS.

Monarch 55 69

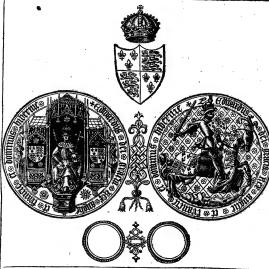
Monarch te

Edward 5.

EDVVARD THE FIFTH, KING OF ENGLAND AND FRANCE, AND

LORD OF IRELAND, THE FIFTIE FIFTH MO-NARCH OF THIS LAND, HIS RAIGNE, AND DEATH.

For the most part written by Sir Thomas Moore.



CHAPTER XVI II.



He father thus dying in the firength of his yeeres, and the flome left to rule before he was ripe, the Synders of diffentions which the ficke King had lately raked vp, prefently brake forth him to a more raging flame; for the king

and Queenes blood that floudd haue fupported young Edwards efface, the one fide being infpicious, and the other prounked by the execrable defire of foueraigmy, left the teacher king (a Prince of finch towardness as his age could conteine) defiture and wnarmed, which if either kind or kindred had holden place, mult needes haue beenet the furch pillars of his defence. The raigne

of this King(if we may fo cal the fhort time of his Soueralgny) began the fame day that his father died, though he was never Crowned, nor yet commanded the affaires of the Kingdome as as a biolute Monarch, his young brothers fortunks being ballanced with his, (2) For Rehard Duke of Glaucefler, by nature their wnde, by office their Protector, to their Father

all the whole matter whereof the raigne of this yong and fift Edward must intreat, it is therefore convenient, somewhat to shew you ere we goe further, what

A. D. 1483,

Richard Duke of

Tonly,

their vnde, by office their Proceedor, to their matter beholden, to themsities by Oath and Alleugiance bounden, all bands broken that holderh man and man rogether, without any respect of God or the World, vantaurally contrained to betrease them, no onlie of their dignity, but also their lines. But for formuch as the Dukse demeanour ministrects in effect

King Edwards raigne vnfortsnate and short.

Richard Duke a Tarke was the fa-ther of Rich-ard Duke of Gis-sefter.

694

could find in his heart fo much mischief to conceive. (3) Know first then that Richard Duke of Yorke, a noble man and a mighty, beganne news by warre, but by law to challenge the Crowne; putting his claime into the Parliament; where his cause was (either for right or fauour) so farre soorth advanced that King Henries blood (albeit he had a goodly Prince) was vtterly reiccted, the Crowne by the authoritie of that high Court intai-led to the Duke of Torke, and his iffue male in remainder, immediately after the death of King Henrie. But the Duke not induring fo long to tarrie, intending under pretext of diffention and debate arifing in the Realme, to prevent his time, and to take vpon him the rule in King Henrics life, was with many other Nobles slaine at wakefield, leaving three ionnes, Edward, George, and Richard; all of them as they were great states of birth, so were they great and stately of stomacke, greedy and ambitious of authority, and impatient of partners.

man this was, and from whom he descended that

(4) For Edward revenging his fathers death deprived king Henry, and attained the Crowne; The second, George Duke of Clarence, was a goodly Noble Prince, and in all things fortunate, if either his owne ambition had not fet him against his brother, or the enuic of his enemies, his brother against him. For were it by the Queen and Lords of her blood which highly maligned the Kings kindred (as women commonly, not of malice but of nature hate them whom their husbands loue) or were it a proud appe tite of the Duke himselfe, intending to be King: at least-wise hainous treason was laid to his charge, and finally were he faulty, were he faultleffe, attainted he was by Parliament, and judged to death, as we have

The description of Richard Duke of Glassfler.

faide. (5) Richard the third fonne, of whom we now entreat was in wit and courage equall with either of them, in body and proweffe farre under them both. little of stature, ill-limmed, and crook-backed, his left thoulder much higher then his right, very hard fauoured of vilage, and fuch as in States is called warly , in other men otherwise : he was malicious , wrathfull, and enuious, yea and from afore his birth euer froward. For it is for truth reported, that the Dutchesse his mother had so much adoe in her tras uaile, that thee could not be deliuered of him vncut, and that he came into the world with his feete forward, as men be borne outward, an 1(as the fame runneth) also not vntoothed; Whether men of hatred report about the truth, or elfe that nature changed her Course in his beginning, which in the course of his life many things vnnaturally committed.
(6) No euill Captaine was he in the warre, as to

Richard Creoke backe a good feuldier.

which his disposition was more inclined then for peace; fundry victories he had, and fometimes onerthrowes, but never in default as for his owne person. either of hardines, or politike order; free was he of his dispence, and somewhat about his powerliberall: with large gifts he gate him vnitedfast friendthip, for which he was forced to pill and pole in other places, which gate him fledfast hatred. He was close and secret, a deepe dissembler, lowly of countenance, arrogant of heart, outwardly familiar, where even now he hated, and not letting to kiffe whom he thought to kill; despitefull and cruell he was, not for euill-will alwaies, but oftner for ambition, and either for the furety, or increase of his cltate. Friend and foe was much what indifferent; where his aduantage grew, he spared no mans death, whose life withstood his purpose. He slew with his own hands, King Henrie the fixth, being Prisoner in the Tower, as men constantlie said, and that without comman dement or knowledge of the King, who undoubted-ly if he had intended his death, would have appointed that butcherly office to some other then his owne brother.

(7) Some wife men also judge, that his drift couertly conneied, lacked not in helping forth his bro-

ther Clarence to his death; which he relifted openly, howbeit somewhat (as mendeemed) more faintly, then he that was harrily minded to his wealth: And they that thus judge, thinke that long time in K. Edwardslife, he forcast to be king, in case that his brother (whose life he looked that euill diet should shorten) Rithard of Gigs. thould happen to deceafe (as indeed he did) while his effer intended should happen to accent as much need that for to be King coten children were young. And they deeme that for whiles Kind were this intent he was glad of the Duke of Clarence bued, death , whole life must needes have hindered him to intending, (being his elder brother) whether the same Duke had kept him true to his Nephew the young king, or enterprized to be king himselfe. But of all this point, there is no certainty, and who so diuineth vpon coniectures, may aswell shoote too farre, as too fliort. Howbeit this haue I by credible information learned, that the same night, in which king Edward died, one Misslebroke long ere morning, came in great hafte to the house of one Patter dwelling in Red Croffe ftreet without Greeple-gate in London: and when he with hafty rapping quickly was let in, he shewed vnto Pottier that K. Edward was departed. By my troth man quoth Potier, then will my Mafter the Duke of Gloncefter be king: what cause The Speech of he had fo to thinke , hard it is to fay , whether being Edwards death, toward him knew any fuch thing intended, or otherwife had any inkling thereof, for it was not likely that he spake it of no ground.

(8) But now to return to the course of this History; were it that the Duke of Glocester had of old foreminded this conclusion, & was now thereunto moued, & put in hope by the occasion of the tender age of the yong Princes his Nephewes (as oportunity & likelihood of speed, putteth a man in courage of that he neuer intended) certaine it is, that he contriued The vacle con their destruction, with the vsurpation of the regall dignirie vpon himselse, and forasmuch as he well wift, and holp to maintaine a long continued grudge and hartburning betweene the Queenes kindred, and the Kings blood, either part enuying others authority; he now thought their diuisions should be (as it was indeed) a forward beginning to the pur-(as was mosecy a covarious egiming to the pur-plice of his intern, and aims ground for the founda-tion of all his building, if he might fift, where the precext of recenging old dipleature, but fer anger and ignorance of the one party, to the defired in of the other and then winne to his purpole as many policy. as he could, and those that could not be wonne, might be loft before they were aware; for of one thing was he certaine, that if his intent were percei-ued he should soone haue made peace between both

the parties with his owne blood. (9) King Edward in his life, albeit that this diffention betweene his friends somewhat greeued him, vet in his good health he somewhat lefte regarded it, because he thought whatsoener busines should fall betweene them, himfelfe should alwaies be able to rule both the parties. But in his last sicknes, when he perceived his naturall strength so fore infeebled, that he dispaired all recourie; then considering the being the that ne duparted in recourse; since confidenting use possessions youth of his Childern about he nothing left militure. The child has been provided by the children from the children hould lacke differentially while they out of his children fhould lacke differentially while they out of his children fhould lacke differentially the children from the childr tion of themselues, and good Counsell of their friends, of which either party fhould counfell for their owne commodity, and the rather by pleafant adule to winnethemselues fauour, then by profitable aduertisements to doe his children good, hee called some of them before him that were at variance, and in speciall the Lord Marquesse Derset, the Queenes sonne by her first husband, and William Lord Hastings a noble-man, then Lord Chamberlaine, against whom the Queene especially grudged, for the engret fauor the King barehim: and also for that the great fauor the King barehim: and also for that the great fauor the King barehim: and the fauor the fauor than thee thought him fecretly familiar with the King in wanton company. Her kindred also bare him fore, aswell for that the Kinghad made him Captaine of Callie, which office the Lord Rivers, brother to the

Chap. 18. Edward V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 35 895

Queene claimed of the Kings former promise, as for divers other great gifts which he received, that they looked for. These were the grudges which the king on his death bed fought to remoue, and they in shew feemed to cancell, as we have faid, though the sparks of these displeasures burst afterward into a dangerous flame, which confumed most of them, as after-

ward shall appeare. (10) For assoone as the King was departed this King Edward cellife, his sonne Prince Edward drew towards Lonpaireth tewards don from Ludlow in Wales, which Country being farre off from the law, and recourse to instice, was become to be farre out of Order, and growne wilde Robbers , Rouers walking at liberty vncorrected: for which cause this Prince in the lifetime of his

father was fent thither , to the end that the authority of his presence should refraine euill disposed perfons, from the boldenes of their former outrages, To the gouernance and ordering of this young Prince at his sending thither, was there appointed Sir Anthonie Woo luil Lord Rivers, and brother vnto the Queene, The Queenes kindred only aa right honorable man, as valiant of hand as politick in Counsell; adioined were there vnto him others of the same partie, and in effect enery one as he was neerest of kin vnto the Queene, so was he planted next

about the Prince.

(11) That drift of the Queene not vnwisely deuiled, whereby her blood might of youth be rooted in the Princes fauour, the Duke of Gloucester turned vnto their destruction, and vpon that ground set the foundation of all his vnhappy building. For whomfocuer he perceived either at variance with them, or bearing himfelfe their fauour, he brake vnto them; some by mouth, some by writing and secret messengers, that it was neither reason, nor in any wise to be suffered, that the young King their Master and kinseman, should be in the hands and Custody of his mothers kindred, fequestred in manner from their Company and attendance, of which every one ought him as faithfull service as they, and many of them farre more honorable part of kin then his mo-The Duke fee-keth to displace the Prince. thers fide : whose blood (quoth he) saving the Kings pleasure was farre vnmeet to bee matched with his which now to be as who fay remoued from the king and the leffe noble to be left about him, is (quoth hee) neither honorable to his Maiestie nor vnto vs. and also to his Grace no suretie, to have the mightiest of his friends from him, and vnto vs no little ieopar-

dy, to fuffer our well proued euill-willers to grow in ouer great authority with the Prince in youth, who

is light of beliefe and soone perswaded. Ye remem-

ber I trow K. Edward himfelfe, albeit he was a man

of age and discretion, yet was he in many things ru-

led by the bend, more then flood either with his

honor, or our profit, or with the commodity of any

man elfc, except only the immoderate advancement

of themselves. Which whether they forer thirsted

after their owne weale, or our woe, it were hard I

weene to geffe, and if some folkes friendship had not

held better place with the King, then any respect of

kindred, they might perhaps easily haue intrapped

and brought some of vs to confusion ere this; why

not as easily as they have done some other alreadie

as necre of his roiall blood as we? But our Lord hath

wrought his will, and thankes be to his grace, that pe-

rill is past: howbeit as great is growing, if we suffer

this young King in our enemies hand; which with-

out his knowledge might abuse the name of his

commandement, to any of our vindoing, which thing

God and good prouision forbid.

The crafty complaints of Ri-

> (12) Of which good provision none of vs hath any thing the leffe neede, for the late made attonement, in which the Kings pleasure had more place then the parties wils : nor none of vs. I beleeue, is fo vnwise ouer soone to trust a new friend made of an old foe, or to thinke that an howerly kindnes, fodeinly contracted in one houre continued yet scarce a fortnight, should be deeper setled in their stomackes. thena long accustomed malice many yeeres rooted.

With these wordes and writings and such o ther, the Duke of G'enzester soone set aftre them that were of themselves apt enough to kindle sespecially two, Edward Duke of Buckingham, and William Lord Haflings Chamberlaine, both men of honor and of great power. The one by long fuccession from his Aunceftry: the other by his office; and the Kings fauour; These two not bearing each to other so much lone; as both of them hatred vnto the Queenes part, in

this point accorded together, with the Duke of Glonthis point accorded together with the Duke of Glou-cefler, that they would verefly remove from the Kings Company all his mothers friends under the name of their enemies.

(13) Vpon this conclusion the Duke of Glouteor vnderstanding, that the Lords which at that time were about the King, intended to bring him to London to his Coronation, accompanied with fach power of their friends, that it should be hard for him to bring his purpose to passe, without the gathering a great affembly of people, and in manner of open warre, whereof the end hee wifte well was doubtfull, and in which the King being on their fide, his part should have the face and name of a Rebellion; part flould haue the face and name or a revenue of the facety therefore by diuers meanes, caused the Queene to be perfuseded and brought in minde, policy of Duke diverse, and also should be icorpar. dous, the King to come vp ftrong. (14) For whereas now enery Lord loued other,

The effect that

and no other thing fludied vpon, but about the Coronation and honor of the King: if the Lords of her kindred should assemble in the Kings name much people, they should give the Lords of the contrary faction cause to feare and suspect, least they should gather this people not for the Kings lafegard, whom no man impugned, but for their destruction, having more regard to their old variance, then their new attonement for which cause they should affemble on the other party much people againe for their defence, whose power shee wist well stretched farre; and thus should all the Realme fall on an vproare; and of all the hurt that thereof flould infue, which was likely not to be a little, & the most harme like to fail where shee least would, all the world would put her and her kindred in the blame, and fay that they had vnwisely and vntrulie also broken the amity and peace, which the King her husband to prudently made betwirt his kin and hers on his death bed, and which the other party faithfully observed.

kingham came thither, where remained behind the

Lord Rivers the Kings vncle, intending on the mor-

row to follow the King, and bee with him at Stony-

Stratford, twelve miles thence, earely ere he depar-

ted, So was there made that night much friendlie

cheare betwire these two Dukes and the Lord RL

wers a great while : but incontinent after that, they

were openly with great curtefie departed, and the

Lord Rivers lodged, the Dukes fecretly with a few

of their most priny friends, set them down in Coun-

cell, wherein they spent a great part of the night : &

at their rifing in the dawning of the day, they fent

out privily to their servants in their Innes and lod-

gings about, giuing command to make themfelues

fhortly ready, for their Lords were to horfe-ward:

vpon which meffages, many of their folke were at-

tendant, when many of the L. Riners fernants were

(16) Now had these Dukes taken into their cu-

forth without their licence: and besides this, in the 00000

nade betware me au ...

(15) The Queene in this wife perfivaded, fent the first the word vnto her fonner and vnto her brother between word vnto her fonner and vnto her brother between word vnto her fonner and vnto her brother between word vnto her fonner and vnto her brother between word vnto her fonner and vnto her brother between word vnto her fonner and vnto her brother between word vnto her brother between word vnto her brother between word vnto her brot fuch word vnto her sonne; and vnto her brother being about the King: besides, the Duke of Glocester, himselfeand other Lords the chiefe of his bend, wrote vnto the King so reverently, and to the Queenes friends there to louingly, that they nothing earthly mistrusting, brought up the King in great hast, but not in good speed, with a sober company. Now was the King in his way to London, gone from

Northampton, when the Dukes of Glocester and Bue- The Lords meet

Inne kept by Richard Duke of ftodies the keyes of the Inne, that none should paste Gloucester.

Thames full of boates of the Duke of Glocesters fer-

uants, watching that no man should goe to San&u-

ary, nor none should passe vnsearched. Then was

there great commotion and murmur, aswell in other

places about, as especially in the City, the people di-

his owne Table to the Lord Rivers, bidding him be

of good cheere for all should be well. But the Lord

Rivers thanking the Duke, prayed the Messenger to

beare it to the Lord Richard, with the fame melfage

for his comfort, as one to whom fuch advertity was

The Duke of Gioseffer lends a dith of meat vote the Lord Einers.

uerfly divining ypon this dealing. And some Lords, I May, the first and last yeere of his Raigne. The King Knights and Gentlemen, eyther for fauour of the was lodged in the Bishops Pallace, where was kept a Queene, or for feare of themselues, assembled in sungreat Councell, and there was sworne to the king, dry Companies, and went flocke-meale in harnesse: the Duke of Gloncester, the Duke of Buckingham, and ce ined of the all the Lords. But the Duke of Gloneefter, bate him and many also, for that they accounted this demeaouermuch mu musing made. nour attempted, not so specially against the other in open fight fo reuerentlie to the Prince, with all femblance of lowlines, that from the great obloquie
in which he was so late before, he was sodeinely
Potetor of the Lords, as against the King himself in the disturbance of his Coronation. (22) But then, by and by the Lords affembled falne in fo great truft, that at the Councell next af-King and Renim. together, towards which meeting, the Archbifembled, he was made the only man, chofe & thought shoppe of Yorke fearing that it would bee ascribed most meet to be Protector of the king and his realm. (as it was indeed) to his ouermuch lightnesse, that fo that (were it deftiny, or were it folly) the lambe hee so sodainely had yeelded up the great Seale was betaken to the wolfe to keepe. At which Counto the Queene(to whom the custody therof nothing cell alfo, the Archbishop of Torke Chancellour of appertained) without speciall commandement of England, which had delivered up the great Seale to the King fecretly fent for the Seale again, & brought the Queene, was thereof greatly reproued, and the it with him after the accustomed manner. And at the great Seale Seale taken from him, and delivered to Doctor Rufthis meeting, the Lord Hastings, whose truth toward (ell Bishop of Lincolne, a wife man, and of much expc-The great Scale the King no man doubted, nor needed to doubt, rience, and vindoubtedly one of the best learned men the Archbishoe perswaded the Lords to beleeue, that the Duke of that England had in his time: divers Lords & Knights of Yorke. Glocester, was fure and fastly faithfull to his Prince, were appointed vnto diuers Roomes, the Lord and that the Lord Rivers and Lord Richard, with Chamberlaine, and some others, keeping still their the other knight, were for matters attempted by offices they had before. them against the Dukes of Glocester and Buckingham (25) Now although that the Protector, fo fore the L. Haffings put vnder arrest for their furery, not for the Kings thirsted for the finishing of those designes which he that noth ing wa icopardy; and that they were also in safeguard, & had begun, and thought cuery day a yeere till they were atchieued, yet durit he no further attempt, fo there no longer should remaine, then till the matter were, not by the Dukes onely, but also by all long as he had but halfe his pray in his hand . well the other Lords of the kings Councell indifferently witting, that if he deposed the one brother, all the examined, and by other diferetions ordered, either Realme would fall to the other, if he either remained iudged or appealed. But one thing he adulted them in Sanctuary, or flould be conneied to his further beware, that they judged not the matter too farre The Pentr Store liberty: wherfore, incontinent at the next meeting of forth ere they knew the truth, nor turning their prithe Lords in Councell, he proposed vato them, that it was a heinous deed of the Oueene, and proceeded perfuation to uate grudges into the common hurt, irking and Sanchuary the prouoking men vnto anger; and disturbing the kings yong Duke of of great malice towards the Kings Counfellers, that Coronation: towards which the Dukes were comthee thould keepe in Sanctuary the Kings brother from him, whole special pleasure and comfort were ming vp, that they might peraduenture bring the matter to farre out of joynt, that it should never bee to have his brother with him : and that by her done. brought in frame againe. Which strife if it should was to none other intent, but to bring all the Lords happen(asit were likely) to come to a field, though in obloquie, and murmur of the people, as both parties were in all things equall, yet should the though they were not to be trusted with the Kings authority be on that fide where the King is him brother, who by affent of the Nobles of the land, were appointed as the Kings neerest friends, to the (23) With these perswasions of the Lord Hatuition of his owneroyall person. The prosperity fings, whereof part himselfe beleeved, of part he wist whereof standeth (quoth hee) not all in keethe contrary, these commotions were somewhat apping from enemies or ill viand, but partly also in pealed, but especially by that, that the Dukes of Glo-cester and Buckingham were so neere, and came so recreation, and moderate pleasure, which hee in his tender youth cannot take in the company of ancishortly on with the King, in none other manner, with ent persons but in the familiar conversation of those none other voice or any other femblance then to his that be neither farre vnder, nor farre aboue his Coronation; causing the fame to be blowne aage, and neuertheleffe of effate convenient to acbout, that these Lords and Knights which were ta company his noble Maiefty; wherefore with whom ken, had contriued the defituation of the Dukes of rather, then with his owne brother? And if any rather, then with his owne protners rand n any man thinke this confideration (which I thinke no fetch out the Gloucester and Backingham, and of other the Noble man thinketh that loueth the King) let him confider Duke, blood of the Realme, to the end that themselves that formetimes without finall things, greater cannot fland. And verily, it redoundeth greatly to the dishonour both of the Kings Highnesse, and of ve would alone demeane and gouerne the King at their pleasure. And for the Colourable proofe thereof luch of the Dukes scruants as rode with the Carts of their stuffe that were taken (amongst which stuffe all that are about his Grace, to haue it runne in eno maruell though some were harnesse, which at the uery mans mouth, not in this Realme onely, but also in other lands, (as euill words walke farre) that the Kings brother shall bee faine to keepe Sanctuabreaking up of the houshold, must needs either be brought away, or cast away) they shewed vnto the people all the way as they went; faying, loe here be ry; for enery man I deeme, will suppose, that there the barrels of harneffe, that these Traitors have priis occasion given, why it should so be: and such euily conucied in their Carriages to destroy the Nouill opinions once fastened in mens hearts, hardly ble Lords withall. This deuise, albeit it made the can bee screwed out againe, and may grow to more griefe then any man here can diuine. Wherefore matter to wifemen more valikely, well perceiving that the intenders of fuch a purpose, would rather thinke it were not the worst to send vnto the haue had their harnesse on their backes, then to be Queene for the redreffe of this matter, some honoubound vp in barrels; yet much part of the common rable trufty man, fuch as both tendreth the kings How foome the Commons are brought into fooles Paradife people were therewith verie well fatisfied, and faid it weale, and the honour of this Councell , and is also were almes to hang them. in fanour and credence with her. For all which (24) When the King approched neere to the confiderations, none feemeth to mee more meete. City, Edmund Shaa Goldsmith then Major, with willithen is our reuerend Father here present, my Lord King Saward am White and John Matthew Sheriffes, and all the o-Cardinall, who may in this matter doe most good zens, and accom-panied by them into London, ther Aldermen in fearlet, with fine hundred horse of of any man, if it please him to take the pains, which the Cittizens in violet, received him reverently at I doubt not of his goodnesse hee will not refuse, for Harnefey, and ryding from thence, accompanied him the Kings sake and ours, and weale of the young into the City, which he entred the fourth day of Duke himfelfe, the Kings most honourable bro-

Chap.18. Edward V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 55.

697

The true vie of the Sanctuary. Neither Pope nor King can al low Sanctuary men to confuce other mens substance.

Chap. 18. Edward V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 35 690 fay, they dare not abide with their husbands for beating. Theeses bring thither their from goods; and liue thereon rio toully : there they deuise new robberies, nightly they steale out, they rob and riue, killand come in againe, as though those placrs gaue them not onely a safeguard for the harme they have done, but a licence also to do more; howbeit much of this mischiefe, if Wisemen would set their hands to it, might bee amended, with great thankes of God, and no breach of the Priviledge The relidue, fith fo long agoe, I wot neere what Pope, and what Prince more pitteous then politicke hath granted it, and other men fince, of a certaine religious feare, haue not broken it; let vs therefore take paine therewith, and let it a Gods name stand in force, as farre forth as reason will, which is not fully so farre forth, as may serue to let vs of the fetching forth of this Nobleman, to his honour and wealth, out of that place, in which he neither is, nor can bec a Sanctuary man. A Sanctuary scrueth alwayes to defend the body of that man that standerhin danger abroad, not of great hurt onelie, but also of lawfull hurt; for against vnlawfull harmes, neuer Pope nor King intended to priniledge any one place, for that priniledge bath euery place: knoweth any man any place, wherein it is lawful for one man to do another wrong? that no man vnlawfully take hurt, that liberty, the King, the Law, and very nature forbiddeth in enery place, and maketh to that regard, for every man, euery place a Sanctuary : but where a man is by lawfull meanes in perill, there needeth hee the tuition of some special priviledge, which is the onely ground and cause of all Sanctuaries from which neceffity this noble Prince is farre, whose lone to the King, nature and kindred proueth, whose innocency to all the world, his tender youth proueth, and fo Sanctuary, as for him, neither none he neederh nor none can hee haue. Men come nor to Sanctuary, as they come to Baptisme, to require it by their rumor of the people, and their obloquic, but also Godfathers; hee must aske it himselfe, that must to the importable griefe and displeasure of the kings haue it; and reason, firh no man hath cause to haue royall Maicfly, to whose Grace it were a fingular it, but whose conscience of his owne fault maketh him faine need to require it: whanwill then hath yonder babe? which and if he had discretion to require it, if neede were, I dare fay would now bee right angry with them that keepe him there; and I would thinke without any scruple of conscience, without any breach of Priuiledge, to bee somewhat more homelic with them, that be there Sanctuarie men indeed: for if one goe to Sanctuary with another mans goods, why should not the King, leauing his body at liberty, satisfie the party of his goods, euen within the Sanctuarie? for neither King nor Pope can give any place fuch a priniledge, that it shall discharge a man of his debres, being able to pay. And with that divers of the Clergy that were present, whether they said it for his pleasure, or as they thought, agreede plainely, that by the law of God, and of the Church, the goods of a Sanctuarie man, should bee delivered in payment ations; which thing the Lords effeemed not flight, of his debts, and stolne goods to the owner, and though it seemed light; well pondering, that their onely liberty referued him, to get his living with the labour of his hands. Verily (quoth the Duke) youth without recreation and play, cannot endure, nor any stranger, for the conjecture of both their a-I thinke you say very truth; and what if a mans wife ges and citates, fo meete in that point for any of would take Sanctuary, because the lift to runne from them, as eyther of them for other. her husband? I would weene if the could alleadge none other cause, hee may lawfully without any displeasure to Saint Peter, take her out of Saint Peters Church by the arme. And if no body may be taken out of Sanctuary, that faith he will bide there, then if a child will take Sanctuary, because hee feareth to goe to schoole, his Master must let him a. lone. And as simple as the sample is, yet is there leffe reason in our case then in that; for therein, though it be a childish feare; yet is there at the least wife some feare, and herein is there none at all. And verily, I have often heard of Sanctuary men, but

I neuer heard earst of Sanctuary Children. And

therefore, as for the Conclusion of my mind, who fo may have descrued to need it, if they thinke it conclusion for their suretie, let them keepe it; but he can be no Sanctuary man that had neither wildome to defire it, nor malice to deserue it, whose life or libertie; can by no lawfull processe stand in icopardie : and hee that taketh one out of the Sanctuarie to do him good, I say plainely that he breaketh no San-(28) When the Duke had done, the temporall men wholy, & most part of the spiritual also, thinking no hurt carthly meant towardes the young babe, condifcended in effect, that if hee were not delivered, hee fhould bee fetched; how beit they delivered, hee fhould bee fetched; how beit they all thought it beft, in the auciding of all maner of remember of them all. to get him with her good will. And thereupon, all the Councell came vnto the Starre-Chamber at westminster, and the Lord Cardinall leaving the Protector with the Councellin the Starre-Chamber, departed into the Sanctuary to the Queen with divers other Lords with him, were it for the respect of his honour, or that fhee should by presence of so many, perceine that this crrand was not one mans mind; or were it, for that the Protector intended not in this matter, to trust any one man alone, or elle, that if shee finally were determined to keepe him, some of that Company had happily secret instructions incontinent, maugre her mind to take him, and to leave her no respite to convey him, which shee was likely to mind, after this matter broken to her, if the time would in any wife ferue (29) When the Queene and those Lords were come together in presence, the Lord Cardinall

shewed her, that it was thought vnto the Prote- The Cardinall ctor, and vnto the whole Councell, that her keeping of the Kings brother in that place, was the thing which highly founded, not onely to the great

comfort, to have his naturall brother in Company, as it was both his dishonour, all theirs, and hers also, to suffer him in Sanctuary, as though the one brother flood in danger and perill of the other. And hee shewed her, that the Counsell therefore had fent him to require her the delinery of the yong Duke, that hee might bee brought vnto the Kings presence at his liberty, out of that place, which they reckoned as a prison, and there hee should bee demeaned, according to his effate: and flee in this doing should both dor great good to the Realme, pleasure to the Councell and profite to her selfe luccour to her friends that were in distresse; and befides that (which he wift well fhee specially tendred) not onely great comfort and honour to the King but also to the young Duke himselfe, whose great wealth it were to be together, aswell for many greater causes, as also for both their disports and recre-

(30) My Lord (quoth the Queene) I say not nay, but that it were very conuenient, that this Gentle- The Queenes man whom yee require, were in company of the and King his Brother; and in good faith, I thinke it were | Cardinall, as great commodity to them both, for yet a while to bee in the custody of their mother, the tender age confidered of the elder of them both, but speciallic the younger, which besides his infancy, that also needeth good looking to, hath a while been to force dealed, vexed with ficknesse, and is so newly rather a little amended, then well recourred, that I dare put no person earthly in trust with his keeping but my felfe onely, confidering that there is (as Phy-000002

would be as loth to fuffer him from the King, as any Oneene Hire. | Would be as loth to inner thin from the Chings beit beld to have of vs bee. For, if shee haue wit, (as would God shee had as good will as thee hath threwd wit) thee reck-

spend, and bid their Creditors goe whistle. Mens

wines runne thither with their husbands plate, and

Richard Dure of

firians (av) and as wee also find, double the peril in the recidination, that was in the first ficknesse with which disease, nature being fore laboured, forewearied and weakned, waxeth the lesse able to beare out and sustaine a new surfeit. And albeit there might be found other that would happily do their best vnto him, yet is there none that either knoweth better how to order him, then I that so long haue kept him, or is more like tenderly to cheriff him then his owne mother that bare him.

Edward V.

(31) No man denieth good Madam (quoth the Cardinall) but that your Grace were of all others most necessary about your children, and so would all the Councell not onely bee content, but glad that you were, if it might fland with your pleafure, to bee in such place as might stand with their honor: but if you doe appoint your felfe to tarry here, then they thinke it were more convenient that the Duke of Yorke were with the King, honourably at his liberty, to the comfort of them both, rather then here as a Sanctuary man, to both their dishonour and obloquie, fith there is not alwayes fo great a necessity to haue the child with his mother, but that occasion may sometimes bee such, that it fhould bee more expedient to keepe him elsewhere, which well appeareth in this, that at fuch time as your dearest sonne then Prince; and now King, should for his honor, and good order of the Country, keepe his residence in Wales, farre out of your Company, your Grace was well contented therwith your felfe.

(32) Not very well contented (quoth the Queen) and yet the case is not like, for the one was then in health, and the other is now ficke: in which cafe I maruaile greatly, that my Lord Protector is fo desirous to have him in his keeping, where if the Child in his sicknesse miscarrie by nature, yet might hee runne into flander and fuspition of fraud. And where they call it a thing fo fore against my Childes honour, and theirs also, that hee abideth in this place: it is all their honours there to suffer him abide, where no man doubteth hee shall be best kept, and that is here, while I am here, which as yet intendnor to come forth, andieopard my felfe after other of my friends, which would God were rather here in furety with mee, then I there in icopardy

(33) Why Madame(quoth another Lord) know you any thing why they should bee in icopardy? Nay verily (quoth shee) nor why they should bee in prifon , as now they bee. But it is I trow no great maruaile though I feare, left those that have not letted to put them in durance without colour, will let as little to procure their destruction without cause: The Cardinall made a countenance to the other Lord, that hee should harpe no more vpon that ftring, and then faid hee to the Queen, that he nothing doubted, but that those Lords of her honourable kinne, which as yet remained vader arrest, should upon the matter examined doe well inough, and as towards her noble person, neither was, neither could be any icopardy.

(34) Whereby should I trust that (quoth the Queene?) in that I am guildesse? as though they were guilty: in that I am with their enemies better loued then they? when they hate them for my fake; in that I am so neerca kin to the King? and how farre they be off if that would helpe, as God grant it hurt not, and therefore as for me, I purpose not as yet, to depart hence. And as for this gentleman my sonne, I minde that he shall be where I am till I fee further: for I affure you, for that I see some men so greedy, without any substantiall cause to have him, makes me much more fearefuli to deliuer him. Truly Madame (quoth he) the more vnwilling that you be to deliuer him, the more vnwilling other men be to fuffer you to keepe him, least your cause lesse feare might cause you farther to convey him: and many there be that thinke he can haue no priniledge in this place, which neither can have will to aske it, nor malice to deferue it, and therefore they reckon no priviledge broken though they fetch him out, which if you finally refule to deliver him, I verily think they will: fo much dreadhath my Lord his vncle, for the tender love he beareth nim, left your grace should hope to send him away.

THE SVCCESSION OF

(35) Ah fir (quoth the Queene) hath the Protector so tender zeale that he feareth nothing, but least he should escape him? thinketh he that I would send him hence, which is not in plight to fend out, and in what place could I account him fure, if he be not fure in the Sanctuary? which there was never Tyrant yet so divelish, that durst presume to breake And I trust God is as strong now to withstand his aduerfaries, as euer he was. But my fonne can deferue no Sanctuary, and therefore he cannot have it. Forfooth he hath found out a goodly gloffe, by which that place that may defend a thiefe, may not saue an innocêt: but he is in no ieopardy, nor bath no need thereof: would God he had not. Thinketh the Protector, (I pray God hee may proue a Protector) thinketh hee, that I perceive not whereunto his painted Processe draweth ? It is not honorable that the Duke abide here : It were comfortable for them both, that he were with his brother, because the King lacketh a play fellow forsooth. I pray God fend them both better playfellows then him, that maketh sohigh a matter, vpo so trifling pretext, as though there could none be found to play with the King, but his brother, (that hath no lift to play for ficknes) come out of Sanctuary, out of his fafe gard to play with him. As though Princes, as yong as they be, could not play but with their Peeres, of as they be, could not play but with their kindred, with whom for the most part they agree much worse then with strangers. But the Childe cannot require the priniledge: who tolde him so? he shall heare him aske it, if he will. Howbeir, this is a gay matter, fuppose hee coulde not aske it, suppose hee woulde not aske it, suppose hee woulde aske to goe out, if I say hee shall not if I aske the priviledge but for my felfe, I fay he that taketh him out against my will , breaketh the Sanctuarie. Serueth this liberty for my person onely, or for my goods alfo? you may not take hence my horfe from me : and may you take my child from me ? He aifo is my ward: for as my learned Councell showeth me, fith he hath nothing by discent holden by Knights scruice, the law maketh his mother his Gardian. Then may no man I suppose, take my ward from me out of Sanctuary, without the breach of Sanctuary. And if my priniledge could not ferue him, nor he aske it for himselfe, yet sith the law committeeth to me the custodie of him, I may require it for him, except the law giue achild a Gardian only for his goods and lands, discharging him of the cure and safe-keeping of his body, for which only both lands and goods serue. And if examples be sufficient, to obtaine priuiledge for my child, I need not farre to feeke them, for in this place in which now we be (and which is now in question, whether my child may take benefit of it)mine other fonne now King, was borne, kept in his Cradle, and preserved to a more prosperous fortune, which I pray God long to continue. And as you all know, this is not the first time that I have taken Sanctuary. For when my Lord my husband was banished, and thrust out of his Kingdome, I fled hither, being great with Child : and here I bare the Prince: and when my Lord my husband returned fafe againe, and had the victory, then went I hence, to welcome him home, and from hence I brought my babe the Prince vnto his father, when hee first tooke him in his armes. And I pray God that my fonnes Pallace may be as great a safegard vnto him now raigning, as this place was sometime to the Kings enemie. In which place I intend to keepe his brother, fince mans law ferueth the Gardian to keepe the Infant. The law of nature wils the mother to keepe Chap.18. | Edward V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 55.

her child, Gods law priviled geth the Sanctuary, and the Sanctuary my fonne, fith I feare to put him in the Protectors hands, who hath his brother already, and were (if both failed)inheritour to the Crowne: and the cause of my scare, hath no man to doe to examine But yet I feare no further then the law feareth, which as learned men tell me, forbiddeth euerie man, the custody of them by whose death hee may inherit lesse land then a Kingdome. I can no more but who foeuer he be that breaketh this holy Sanctuary, I pray God shortly send him need of a Sanctuary when hee may not come to it, for taken out of Sanctuary I would not that my mortall enemy were.

(36) The Lord Cardinall perceiving that the Queene waxed euer the longer the further off, & also that shee beganne to kindle and chase, and speake more biting words against the Protector, and such as he neuer beleeued, and was also loath to heare, hee faid to her for a finall conclusion, that he no longer would dipute the matter, but if thee were content to deliver the Duke to him, and to the other Lords present, he durst lay his body and soule both in pledge, not onely for his furery, but also for his estate; And if she would give a resolute answere to the contrary, he would forthwith depart therewithall, and fhift who so would with this businesse afterward, for he neuer intended more to moue her in that matter, in which thee thought that hee and all others also faue herselfe, lacked either witte or truth; wit, if they were fo dull that they could perceiue nothing what the Protector intended : truth, if they should procure her sonne to be delivered into his hands, in whom they should perceive to

wards the Child any euill intended. (37) The Queene with these wordes stood a good while in a deepe study. And for as much as her feemed the Cardinal ready to depart, and the Protector himselfe readie at hand, so as shee verily thought the could not keepe him there, but that he should incontinent be taken thence, and to convey him elfewhere, neither had sheetime to serue her, nor place determined, nor persons appointed, all things vnrea dy, this melfage came on her fo fuddainly, nothing leffe looked for, then to have him fetcht out of San tuarie, which she thought to be now befer in such places about, that he could not be conneyed out vntaken, and partly (as flice thought) it might fortune her feare to be falle, so well shee wishit was either needlesse or bootlesse: Wherefore, if shee must needs go fro him, the deemed it best to deliver him, & besides the Cardinals faith, she nothing doubted, neither some other Lords, whom she saw there prefent, which as the feared left they might be deceived. fo was the wel affured they would not be corrupted: and thought it would make the the more warily to looke to him, and the more circum(pectly to fee to his furety, if with her owne hands shee betooke him to them of trust. And lastly taking the young Duke by the hand faid vnto the Lords.

(28) My Lords, and all my Lords; I neither am fo vnwife to mistrust your wits, nor so suspitious to mistrust your truths; of which thing I purpose to make you such a proofe, as if either of both lacked in you, might both turne mee to great forrow, the Realme to much harme, & you all to great reproch. For loe, here is (quoth fae) this Gentleman, whom I doubt not, but I could heere keepe safe if I would, whatfoeuer any man fay : and I doubt not alfo, but there bee some abroad so deadly enemies vnro my blood, that if they wift where any of it lay in their owne bodies, they would let it out. We have also experience, that the defire of a kingdome knoweth no kindred: the brother bath beene the brothers bane: and may the Nephewes be fure of their Vncle ? Each of these children is the others defence, whileft they are afunder, and each of their lives lieth in the others body: keepe one fafe and both be fure, and nothing for them both more perillous then to be in one place. For what wife Merchant aduentu-

reth all his goods in one ship ? All this notwithstan-ding, I deliuer him, and his brother in him, to keep, into your hands, of whom I shall aske both, before God and the world. Faithfull ye be, that wor I well; and I know well you be wife, power and strength to Torre delucred keepe him, if yee list, neither lack yee of your selfe, to the Cardinal, nor lack helpe in this case. And if you cannot elsewhere, then may you leave him heere: but onely one thing, I befeech you, for the truft that his father ever put in you, and for the trust I now put you in, that as fatre as you thinke I feare too much, bee you well wary that you feare not too little: and therewithall thee fayd vnto the child, Farewell mine owne fweet son, God send you good keeping: let me kisse you yet once, ere you go; for God knoweth when wee shall kiffe together againe. And therwithal she kiffed him, and blessed him, turned her back and wept, and went her way leaving the child weeping as faste. When the Lord Cardinal, and those other Lords with him, had received the yong Duke, they brought him into the Star-chamber, where the protector tooke him in his armes, and kiffed him with these words : None welcome my Lord, even with all my beart : In which faving, it is like hee spake as he thought. Thereupon foorthwith they brought him vnto the King his brother, into the Bithops Pallace at Paules; and from thence both of them through the Citie of London honourably attended into the Tower, out of which after that day they never came againe, (39) The protector having both the children now in his hands, opened himfelf more boldly, both to certaine other men, & also chiefly to the Duke of

death. But others againe, which knew better the

fubtill wit of the protector, deny that he ever ope-

ned his enterprise to the Duke, vntil he had brought

to paffe the things before rehearfed. But when hee

had imprisoned the Queenes kindred, and gotten

both her fonnesinto his owne hands; then he ope-

ned the reft of his purpose with leffe feare to them

whom he thought meet for the matter, and especi-

ally to the Duke, who being wonne to his defignes,

he held his firength more then halfe increased. The

matter was broken unto the Duke by subtil persons,

and fuch as were their crafts mafters in the handling

of fuch wicked deuises who declared voto him

that the young King was offended with him, for his

kinstolkes fakes, and if he were euer able he would

ber their imprisonment) or else if they were put to

death, without doubt the yong King would be care

ful for their deaths, whose imprisonments was grie-

uous vnto him. And that with repenting the Duke

fhould nothing auaile, for there was no way left to

redeeme his offence by benefits, but he flould foo-ner destroy himselfe then saue the King, who with

his brother, and his kinsfolkes he fawe in fuch places

imprisoned, as the protector might with a beck de

ftroy them all: and without all doubt would doe in

indeed, if there were any new enterprise attempted

And that it was likely as the Protector had prouided

privie gard for himfelf, so had he spials for the Duke

and traines to have caught him, if he should bee a-

gainst him, & that peraduenture from them whom

he least suspected. For the state of things, & the dispo-

fitions of men were then fuch that a man could not

well tell whom hee might truft, or whom hee might

feare. These things and such like, being beaten into

the Dukes minde, brought him to that point, that

where he had repented the way that hee had entred,

yet would he goe forward in the same, and since hee

had once begunne, her would fourly goe through.

And therefore to this wicked enterprise which hee

Bucking ham. Although I know that many thought that this Duke was priny to all the protectors counfell even from the beginning, and some of the protectors triends sayd, that the Duke was the first mouer of the protector to this matter, fending a priuie meffenger vnto him ftreight after King Edwards

reuenge them: who would prick him forward thereunto if they escaped (for they would remem-

702	Edward V. THE SVCC	ESSION OF Monarch 55.	Book 9
11	peleeved could not be avoyded, hee bent himfelfe,	fo special trust, the Lord Stanley and hee had depar-	
	letermining, fish the common mischiefe could not	ted with divers other Lords, and had broken all the	
10	be amended, he would turne it as much as he might	dance, for many ill fignes that he faw, which he now	
1	o his owne commoditie.	confirmes all to the beft. So furely thought he that	
wixt the Pro-	(40) Then was it agreed, that the Protector hould have the Dukes aide to make him King and	there could been o harme towards him intended, in that counfell where Catesby was. And of truth, the	
Porandithe (•	that the Protectors only lawfull fonne should marry	Protector and Duke of Buckingham, made very good	
	the Dukes daughter; and that the Protector should	femblance vnto the Lord Haftings, whom vndoub-	
	grant him the quier possession of the Earldome of	tedly the Protector loued well, and loth was tohaue	
1.	Hertford, which he claimed as his inheritance, and	loft him, but for feare, leaft his life should have quai-	
	could never obtaine it in King Edwards time, Besides	led their purpole; for which cause hee moued Ca-	
1	these requests of the Duke, the Protector of his	tesby to proue with some words, cast out a farre off,	
1:	owne accord, promifed him a great quantitie of the	whether hee could thinke it possible to winne the L.	
1	Bottomario, and of the treatment trans-	Chamberlaine to their part. But Catesby whether	Cately fee to
	when they were thus at a point betwixt themselues, they went about to prepare for the Coronation of	hee affayed him, or affayed him not, reported vnto them, as hee found him fo fast, and heard him speake	found the Lord
- 1	the yong king as they would have it feeme. And that	fo terrible words, that hee durft no further breake.	
1	they might turne both the eyes & minds of men fro	True it is, that the Lord Chamberlaine, of very truft	
į.	perceiuing of their drifts otherwhere, the Lords were	shewed vnto Catesby, the distrust that others began	Lord Heftings
ı	fent for from all parts of the Realme, and came	to have in the matter: & therfore Catesby fearing as	speeches conce
1	flocking vnto the folemnitie. But the Protector and	he affirmed, least their motion might with the Lord	ning the plot.
wo counfels to	Duke after they had fent the Lord Cardinali Arch-	Haftings diminish his credence, whereunto only all	
man ande	bifhop of Torke, then L. Chancellor, the Bifhop of	the matter leaned; hee counfelled and procured the	
	Ely, the Lords Stanley & Haftings, then Lord Cham-	Protector hastily to rid him. And much the rather,	Catesby falle to his founder.
1	berlaine, with many other Noblemen, to conferre	for that he trufted by his death, to obtaine much of	ms commer.
- 1	and deuise about the Coronation in one place, as fast they were in another place contribing the contrary,	the rule that the Lord Hastings bare in his Countrey: the onely desire whereof, was the allestime that indu-	
1	to make the Protector king: to which counfel, albeit	ced him to be partner, and one special contriner of	
I	there were adhibited very few, and they very fecret;	all this horrible treason.	
1	yet began here and there, some muttering among the	(42) Soone after this, yoon Friday the thir-	The counfel fa
1	people, as though all fhould not long be wel, though	(42) Soone after this, vpon Friday the thir- teenth day of June, many Lords aftembled in the	in the Tower 6
1	they neither knew what they feared nor wherefore :	Tower, and there fate in counfel, denifing the hono-	the ordering of
	were it that before such great things, mens hearts of	rable folemnice of the Kings Coronation; of the	the yong Kings Cotonanon.
. !	a fecret inflinct of nature milgiue them, as the Sea	which the time appointed was so neere, that the Pa-	
The mistrust of he cimes.	without winde fweileth of himfelfe fometime before	geants and subtilities were in making day and night	
de ciuca-	a tempest; or were it that some one man happily somewhat perceiuing, filled many men with suspiti	at westminster, and much victuall killed, that atter- ward was cast away. These Lords sitting together	
1	on, though hee shewed fewe men what hee knew.	communing of this matter, the Protector came in	
1	Howbeit iomewhat the dealing it felte made men	amongst them about nine of the clocke, faluting	
1	to mule on the matter, though the counsell were	them courteously, and excusing himselfe, that he had	1
	close. For by little and little, all men withdrewe	beene from them follong, faving merrily, I have bin	The Protector
. 1	from the Tower and repaired to Crosbies in Bishopf-	a fleeper this day. And after a little talke with them.	diffimulation,
	gate streete, where the Protector kept his house in great stare. So that the Protector had the resort, and	he faid to the Bishop of Ely, My Lord, you have ve-	4
	great flare. So that the Protector had the relort, and	ric good Strawburies at your Garden in Holborne, I	
All flocke to the	the King left in a manner desolate. And whilest	pray you let vs haue a messe of them : Gladly my	
Presector.	fome for their businesse made suite to such as were in	Lord, faid the Bifhop, would God I had fome better	1
	office for the King, fome were fecretly by their friends warned, that it might happely doe them no	thing as ready to pleafure you as that: and there- with in all haftehee fent his fernaunt for a meffe of	.}
	good, to be too much attendant about the king with-	Strawburies. Whereupon the Protector fetting	
	out the Protectors appointment, who then began to	the Lords fast in conference, prayed them to spare	
	remotie many of the Princes old feruants, and in	him for a little while, and departed thence. But	.1
	their flead to place about him new.	foone after, betwixt ten and eleven, hee returned	
	(41) Thus many things meeting together, partly	into the counfell Chamber amongst them, with a	
	by purpole,& partly by chance, caufed at length not	wonderfull lowre and angry countenance, knitting	
	onely the common people that more with the	the browes, frowning and fretting, and gnawing on	1
	winde, but wifemen alfo, and fome Lords likewife,	his lippes, fate him downe in his place, all the Lords	
Lora Stanleyes	to marke and muse at the matter; insomuch, that the Lord Stanley, who was after Earle of Darby, said to	much difmayed, fore maruelling of this his fuddaine change, and what thing fhould him aile: He fitting	The Protecto
foeach to the	the Lord Haftings, that he much mill ked these two	thus a while, began thus to speake, what are they	HORD.
Lord Chamber- lain.	feuerall counfels, For while we (quoth he) talke of	worthy to have, that compasse and imagine the destruction	
	one matter in the one place, little wor we, whereof	of mee, being so neere of blood unto the King, and Prote-	1
	they talke in the other place. My Lord (quoth the	ctor of his royall person and his Realme? At which one_	.1
	Lord Hastings) of my life neuer doubt you: for	ftion, all the Lords fate fore aftonied, musing much	
* Casefby.	while * one man is there, which is neuer thence, ne-	by whom this question should be meant, of which e-	. [
,	uer can things be moued that should found amisse a-	uery man knew himfelfe cleare.	
	gainst me, but it shall be in mine eares ere it be well	(43) Then the Lord Chamberlaine, as hee that	Lord Haffing
	out of their mouths : this ment he by Catesby, which	for the love betwixt them, thought he might bee	Protectors qu
1	was of his neere counfell, and whom hee very fami-	bouldeft with him, answered & faid. That they were	ftion.
i i	liarly vied, and in his most waighty matters put no	worthy to be punished as haynous traitors whatfoe	1
1	man in fo speciall trust, nor no man so much beholden you him as Catesha was A man indeed well	uer they were : and the fame all the other Lords af-	
1	den voto him as Catesby was. A man indeed well learned in the Lawes of this Land, and by speciall fa-	firmed. That is (quoth the Protector) yonder force	-
1	uour of the Lord Chamberlaine, in good authoritie,	refle my brothers wife, meaning the Queene, and o- thers with her: at these words many of the Lords	
1	and bare much rule in Leisestershire, where the Lord	that iauoured her, were greatly abashed: but the L	'
1	Haftings power chiefly lay. But furely great pittie	Haftings was in his minde better content, that it was	:1
1	it was that he had not had either more truth or leffe	moued by her, then by any other whom hee loued	il
of much mil-	wit. For his diffimulation onely kept all that mif-	better : howbeit, his heart formewhat orudged that	. !
chiefe.	chiefe vp: in whom if the Lord Haftings had not put	he was not afore made of counfell in this matter, as	s
1	1	h	- 1

Edward V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 35 hee was of the taking of her kindred, & of their puttaffeth, or doe rife in the nights rest, by reason of ting to death, which were by his affent before deuithe dayes thoughts? Tell him it is plaine Witchfed to bee beheaded at Pomfret the felfe fame day, in crait, to beleeue in such dreames, which if they insure to were tokens of things to come, why thinketh hee Lastwices with the same to be the same to be same to be the same to be same to be the same to be same which hee was not aware, how it was by other deuifed, that himfelfe should bee beheaded the same day not, that wee might be as likely to make them true, at London. Then faid the Protector, yee shall all fee by our going, if we were caught and brought back The Queene ac-enfed of Sorcer; in what wife that Sorcereffe, and that other witch (as friends faile flyers) for then had the Bore a cause of her counsel, Shores wife, with their affinity, haue likely to rase vs with his tuskes, as men that fled for by their forcerie and witcheraft wasted my body. some falshood: wherefore, either there is no perily And therewith he plucked vppe his doublet fleeue nor none there is indeed, or if any be, it is rather to the elbow vpon his left arme, where he shewed a in going then abiding. And if wee must needs fall weartsh withered arme, and small, as it was neuer inperill; one way or other, yet had I rather, that men should see, it were by other mens falshood, then (44) And thereupon every mans mind fore mifthinke it our fault or faint-heart. And therefore gaue them, well perceining that this matter was but goe to thy Mafter man, and commend me to him; a quarrell. For they well knew, that the Queen was and pray him to bee merry and haue no feare; for I too wife to go about any fuch folly: & if the would affure him, I am as fure of the man that he worterh yet would shee of all others, not make Shores wife of, as I am of mine owne hand. God fend Grace Sir of counsell, whom of all women shee most hated (faid the Messenger) and went his way. as that Concubine whom the King her husband had (46) Certaine it is also, that in riding towards Predictions tomost loued. And also no man there present, but the Tower the same morning in which hee was bewards the Lord knew well enough, that his arme was ever fuch fince headed, his horse twice or thrice stumbled with his birth. Neuerthelesse the Lord Chamberlaine, him, almost to the falling; which thing, albeit each (which from the death of King Edward kept Shores man knoweth daily hapneth, to them to whom no wife, on whom hee somewhat doated in the Kings fuch mischance is toward, yet hath it beene of an life, fauing as it is faid, that hee forbare her for reolderite and custome observed, as a token oftenuerence towards the King, or else of a certain kind times, notably foregoing some great missortune: of fidelity to his friend) answered and faid: Cer-Now this that followeth was no warning, but an tainely my Lord, if they have so heinously done, enuious scorne. The same morning before he was they bee worthy of hainous punishment. What vp, came a Knight vnto him, asit were of curte-(quoth the Protector) thou feruest mee I ween with fie, to accompany him to the Counsell; but of ifs and with ands, I tell thee they have so done, and truth fent by the Protector, to hafte him thitherthat I will make good on thy bodie Traitor. And wards, with whom he was of fecret confederacy in therewith as in a great anger, hee clapped his fift that purpose, a meane man at that time, but now vpon the board a great rap: at which token given, of great authority. This Knight, when it hapned one wirhout the Chamber cryed, treason, wherethe Lord Chamberlain by the way to stay his horse, with a dore clapped, and in came rushing men in and commune a while with a Priest whom hee met harnesse, as many as the Chamber might hold, and in Towerstreet, brake his tale, and faid merily to anone the Protector faid to the Lord Haftings, I arhim; what my Lord, I pray you come on, wherto talke you so long with a Priest, you have no need of rest thee Traitor: What mee my Lord quoth hee? The L. Cham-berlain arrested. yea thee Traitor quoth the Protector; and another a Priest yet, and therewith laughed vponhim, as let flie at the Lord Stanley, who shrunke at the though hee would fay, yee shall have soone. But stroke under the Table, or else his head had beene so little wist the other what hee meant, and so little cleft to the teeth: for as swiftly as hee shrunke, yet mistrusted his present perill, as hee neuer was mercame the bloud about his eares. Then were they rier, nor never fo full of good hope in his life, which all quickly bestowed in divers Chambers, excepting selse thing is often seene a signe of change; but I Councell Table. onely the Lord Chamberlaine, whom the Protector shall rather let any thing passe me, then the vaine bad speede and shrine him apace, for by S. Paul said furety of mans mind so necre his death. Vpon the hee, I will not to dinner till I see thy head off. It very Tower-wharfe, so neere the place where his booted him not to aske why, but heavily tooke a head was strooke off soone after, there met he with Priest at aduenture, and made a short shrift, for a The Lord Heone Hastings, a Purseuant of his ownename, And fings (peech to longer would not be fuffered; The Protector made of their meeting in that place, hee was put in reso much haste to dinner, which hee might not goe membrance of another time, in which it had happeto, till this was done for fauing of his oath. So was ned them before, to meet in the like manner togehee brought forth vnto the greene, before the Chapther in the same place. At which other time the l. pell within the Tower, and his head laid down vp Chamberlaine had been accused vnto King Edward on a long logge of timber, and there strucke off, and by the Lord Rivers the Queenes brother, in fuch afterward his body with the head, was enterred at The L Chamwife as hee was for the while, (but it lafted not Windfor, belide the body of K. Edward. long) farre fallen into the Kings indignation, and (45) A maruailous case it is to heare, either of stood in great feare of himselfe. And forasmuch the warnings that hee should have voided or the toas hee now mette this Purleuant in the same place, kens of that hee could not avoid: for the felf night that icopardy fo well paffed, it gaue him great pleabefore his death, the Lord Stanley lent acrusty fecret fure to talke with him thereof; with whom hee had Messenger vnto him at Midnight in all the haft, rebefore talked therof in the same place, while he was quiring him to rife, and ride away with him, for he therein. And therefore he said, ah Hastings, art thou The L. Stanleys was vererly disposed no longer to abide, hee had so remembred that I met thee once here with a heavy fearefull a dreame: in which he thought, that a Bore heart? yearny Lord (quoth hee) that remember 1 with his tuskes, to razed them both by the heades, well, and thanked bee God, they got no good, nor that the bloud ranne about both their shoulders. you no great harme. Thou wouldest say so (quorh And foraimuch as the Protector gaue the Bore for he) if thou knew fo much as I know, which few his cognizance, this dreame made so fearefull an imknow elfe as yet, and more shall shortly. That ment preffion in his heart, that hee was throughly deterhee by the Lords of the Queenes kindred, which mined no longer to tarry, but had his horse ready, were taken before, and should that same day bee if the Lord Haltings would goe with him, to ride beheaded at Pomfret: which hee well wift but was yet so farre the same night, that they would be out nothing aware, that the axe hung ouer his owne of danger before it was day . Ah good Lord (quoth head; In faith man (quoth he) I was neuer fo forthe Lord Haftings to the Meisenger) leaneth my ry, nor neuer stood in so gre-did when thou and I met her And loe, how the Lord thy Mafter so much to such trifles, and hath faith in dreames, which either his owne feare fanworld is changed, now stand my enemies in the dan-

Nnnnnz

fuddain ftate of

The defeription of the Lord Ha-

Citizens feat for into the Tower to the Protector.

(47) But the Protector immediately after dinner, intending to fet some colour vpon the matter, fent in all haft for many substantiall men, out of the City into the Tower, at whose comming thither, himselfe with the Duke of Buckingham, stood harnesfed in olde rufty briganders, fuch as no more, man should weene, that they would vouchfafe to have put on their backes, except that some suddain neces fity, had conftrained them thereto. And then the Protector shewed them, that the Lord Chamberlaine, and others of his conspiracy, had contrined to haue fuddainly destroied him and the Duke there the same day in Counsell. And what they intended further, was not yet well knowne. Of which their treason he neuer had knowledge, before ten of the clocke, the same forenoone, which suddain seare droue them to put on for their defence, such harneffe as came next to hand: and fo had God holpen them , that the mischiefe returned vpon them

ger (as thou mailt hap to heare more hereafter) and

I neuer in mylife fo merry, nor neuer in fo great fure-

ty. Oh good God, the blindnes of our mortall na-

ture, when he most feared he was in good sureric,

when he reckened himselfe surest, he lost his life, and

that within two houres after. Thus ended this

honorable man, a good Knight and a gentle, of great

authority with his Prince, of living somewhat disso-

lute, plaine and open to his enemies, and secret to

his friends, easie to be beguiled, as he that of good

heart & courage forestudied no perils; a louing man,

a paffing well beloued : very faithful, and trufty e-

nough, trufting indeed too much. Now flew the

fame of this Lords death swiftly through the Citie,

and from thence further, like a winde in cuery mans

The fained feare

fthe Lord Pro-

A Proclamatic made to publi

that would have done it and this he required them (48) Euerie man answered him faire, as though no man midrufted the matter, which oftruth no man beleeved; yet for the further appealing of the peoples minde, he sent immediately after dinner, in all hafte, an Herauld of Armes, with a Proclamation to be made through the City in the Kings name, conteining that the Lord Hallings with divers others of his traiterous purpose, had before conspired the same day, to have slaine the Lord Protector, and Duke of Buckingham, fitting in the Councell, and after to have taken vpon them, to rule the King and the Realme, at their owne pleafures; thereby to pill and spoile, whom they lifted vncontrolled. And much matter there was in that Proclamation, deuifed to the flander of the Lord Chamberlaine, as that he was an euill Counseller to the Kings father, entiling him to many things, highly redounding to his great dishonour, and to the vniuerfall hurt of his Realme, by his euill company, finister procuring, & ungratious example aswell in many other things, as in the vicious liuing, and inordinate abulion of his body, both with many others, and especially with Shores wife, who was one also of his most secret Counsell, in this hainous treason, with whom hee lay nightly, and namely, the night last past, before his death, so that it was the lesse maruell, if vngracious living brought him to an vnhappy ending which he was now put vnto, by the most dread commandement of the Kings highnesse, and of his ho-norable and faithfull Counsell, both for his demerits, being so openly taken in his fallely conceined treason, as also least the delaying of his execution, might have encouraged other mischieuous persons partners of his conspiracy, to gather and assemble themselves together in making some great commotion for his deliuerance, whose hope being now by

and peace (49) Now was this Proclamation made within two houres, after that he was beheaded, and was fo curiously indited, and so faire written in parchment,

his wel-deferred death politickely repressed, all the

Realme should by Gods grace, rest in good quiet

in so well a fet hand, and therewith of it selfe so long a processe, as every child might perceive, that it was prepared before. For all the time between his death, and the proclaiming, could scant have suffiled vnto the bare writing alone; had it beene but in paper, and scribled forth in hast at aduenture. So that vpon the proclaiming thereof, one that was Schoole-mafier of Paules, of chance standing by, and comparing the (hortnes of the time, with the length of the matter, faid vnto them that ftood about him ; Hereis a The Schooles gay goodly east, foule cast away for hast : and a Merchant makers opinion answered him, that it was written by Prophecie. Now then by and by, as it were for anger, not for couetousnesse, the Protector sent the Sheriffes of London, into the house of Shores wife (for her husband dwelled not with her) and spoiled her of all London carrie that shee had, aboue the value of three thousand Shores wife to markes, carrying her through London vnto the Tow- prifor. er, and there left her Prisoner, where (for fashion sake) he laid to her charge, that thee went about to bewitch him, and that shee was of Counsell with the Lord Chamberiaine to destroy him : in conclusion, when no colour could fasten vpon these matters, then laid hee hainoully vnto her charge, the thing that her felfe could not deny, that all the world wift was true, and that neithleffe euery man laughed at, to heare it then so suddainly, so highly taken, that thee was nought of her body. And for that cause (as a good continent Prince, cleare and faultlesse himselfe, sent out of heaven into this vitious world for the amendment of mens manners) after thee had laine Prisoner in Ludgate, hecaused the Bishop of London to put her to open penance, going before the Crosse in procession vpon a funday, with a taper in her band. In which shee went in countenance and pace demure so womanly, and albeit shee were out of all array faue her kirtle only, yet went shee so faire and louely, namely while the wondering of the people caft a comly rud in her cheekes (of which before thee had most mist) that her great shame, wan her and paie Shore much praise, among those that were more amorous wife, of her body, then curious of her foule. And many good folke also that hated her living, and glad to see finne fo corrected, yet pitied the more her penance, then rejoiced therein, when they confidered that the Protector procured it more of a corrupt intent, then any vertuous affection.

well married, fauing somewhat too soone; her hufband an honest Citizen, young, and goodly, and of good fubstance. But for almuch as they were coupled ere shee were well ripe, shee not very feruently oned, for whom shee never longed; which was hapy the thing that the more made her incline vnro the Kings appetite, when he required her. Howbeit the respect of his roialty, the hope of gay appa rell, ease, pleasure, and other wanton wealth, was able soone to pierce a soft tender heart. But when the King had abused her, anone her husband (as he was an honest man, and one that could his good, not prefaming to touch a Kings concubine) left her vp to him altogether. When the King died, the Lord Chamberlaine tooke her, which in the Kings daies, albeit he was fore enamoured vpon her, yet he forbare her, either for reuerence, or for a certaine friendly faithfulnes; proper shee was, and faire; nothing in her body that you could have changed, vnleffe you would have wished her somewhat higher. Thus they fay that knew her in her youth. Albeit some that now aken out of the Charnell house : for now thee is olde, leane, withered, and dried vp, nothing left but riueled skinne, and hard bone; and yet being euen luch, who to well aduite her vitage, might gelle and

deuise, which parts how filled, would make it a faire

(50) This woman was borne in London, wor- The defeription shipfully friended, honestly brought vp, and very of lane Share. fee her (for as yet face liueth) deeme her neuer to shee died the haue beene well vilaged, whose indgement seemeth eighteene year to me somewhat like, as though we could gesse the the eight said. beauty of one long before departed, by her scalpe interior

face. Yet delighted not men, so much in her beau-Shores wife did much good, but noman burt. The flate of the

The Lords of th

The Procedure fought to firite whiles the yrun was hote.

ty, as in her pleasant behaviour, for a proper wit shee had, and could both reade well and write, merry in company, ready and quicke of answere, neither mute nor full of babble, sometime taunting without difplcafure, and not without disport: in whom King Edward tooke it eciall pleasure, whose fauour to fay the truth (for finne it were to belie the Diuel) the neuer abused to any mans hurt, but to many a mans comfort and reliefe, when the King took difpleasure, shee would mirigate and appease his mind; where men were out of favour, shee would bring tnem in his grace, for many that highly offended shee obtained pardon. Of great forfeytures shee gate them remission. And finally, in many weighty fuites shee stood many men in great stead, either for none, or very small rewards, and those rather gay then rich, either for that the was content with the deed it selfe well done, or for that she delighted to bee fued vnto, and to shew what shee was able to do with the King, or for that wanton women and wealthy, bee not alwaies couetous. I doubt not fome shall thinkethis woman too slight a thing to be written of, and fet among the remembrances of great matters: which they shall specially thinke that happily shall esceme her onely by that they now fee her. But to my feeming, the chance is so much the more worthy to be remembred, in how much the is now in the more beggerly condition vnfriended, and worne out of acquaintance, after good

substance, after so great fanour with a Prince, after so great suit, and seeking to, of all those, that in those dayes had businesse to speede, as many other men were in their times, which bee now famous onely by the infamy of their ill deedes: her doings were not much leffe, albeit they bee much leffe remembred, because they were not so euill: for men vsc, if they receive an euill turne, to write it in marble: and who so doth vs a good turne, we write it in the duft; which is not worst proued by her: for at this day shee beggeth of many, at this day lining, that at this day had begged if shee had not been. (51) Now it was so denised by the Protector and his Councell, that the felfe fame day in which the L.

Chamberlaine was beheaded in the Tower of London, and about the selfe same howre was then (not without his affent) beheaded at Pomfrait, the foreremembred Lords and Knights, that were taken from the King at Northampton and Stony-Stratford; which thing was done in the presence, and by the order of Sir Richard Ratcliffe Knight, whose service the Protector specially yied in that counsell, and in the execution of fuch lawleffe enterprises, as a man that had beene long fecret with him, having experience of the world, and a shrewd witte, short and rude in speech, rough and boisterous of behaviour, bolde in milchiefe, as farre from pitty, as from all feare of God. This Knight bringing them out of prison to the Scaffold, and shewing to the people present, that they were Traitors, not fuffering them to speake, or declare their innocency, left their wordes might have inclined men to pirty them, and to hate the Protector and his part; caused them hashily without Iudgement, processe or manner of order to bee beheaded, and without all guilt, but onely that they were good men, too true to the King, and too nigh to the Queene,

(52) Now when the Lord Chamberlaine, and those other Lords and Knights were thus beheaded and ridde out of the way: then thought the Protector, that while men muled what the matter meant. while the Lords of the Realmewere about him out of their owne strengthes, while no man wist what to thinke, nor whom to trust, before they should have space to dispute, and digest the matter, and make parties, it were best hastily to pursue his purpole, and put himselfe in possession of the Crown. ere men could have time to deuise how to refist. But now was all the fludy, by what meanes the matter

being of it selfe so hainous, might be first broken to the people in such wife as it might bee well taken; To this counsell they tooke divers, such as they thought meet to bee trufted, likely to bee induced to that part, and able to fland them in flead, eyther by power or policy: Among whom they made of counfell Edmend Shaa Knight, then Maior of Lon- The Milorof don, who vpon trust of his owne advancement, wher-of he was of a proud heart, highly desirous, should from the City to the heart, and the front from the City to the first own felt. frame the City to their appetite. Of Spiritual men they tooke such as had wir, and were in authoritie among the people, for opinion of their learning and had no scrupulous conscience. Among these had they John Shaa Clerke brother to the Major. and Fryer Pinker Provinciall of the Augustine Friers, both of them Doctors in Divinity, both great Preachers, both of more learning then vertee, and of more fame, then learnings for they were before greaters. ly effeetned of the common people; but after that neuer. Of these two, the one made a Sermon in prayle of the Protector before the Coronation; the other after, both fo full of tedious flattery, as no mans care could abide them.

thinke, that Pinker was not of counfell in the mat-

ter before the Coronation, but after the common

manner, fell to flattery after: namely, fith his fer-

mon was not incontinent vpon it, but at S. Ma-

ries Hospitall in the Easter weeke following. But cer-

raine it is, that Doctor Shee was of counsell in the

beginning, so farre forth as they determined that he

should first breake the matter in a Sermon at Paules

Croffe, in which hee should by the authority of his

preaching, incline the people to the Protectors

ghostly purpose. But now was all the labour and

study, in the deuise of some convenient pretext :

thing and the weightieft of all, the invention refted

in this, that they should alleadge bastardy, either in

X. Edward himfelf or in his children, or both. So that hee should seeme disabled to inherite the Crowne,

by the Duke of Yorke, and the Prince by him. To

lay bastardie in King Edward, sounded openly to the rebake of the Protectors owne mother, who was

mother to them both: for in that point could bee

none other colour, but to pretend that his own mor

ther was an adultreffe, which notwithstanding to

would that point should bee leffe, and more fauou-

rably handled, not fully plaine and directly, but

that the matter should be touched aslope, and craf-

tily, as though menspared in that point to speake all the truth for feare of his displeasure. But the o-

ther point, concerning the bastardie that they de-

hee should bee openly declared, and enforced to

the vetermost. The colour and pretext whereof,

was a contract pretended to bee made by King Edward vnto the Lady Lucy, whereof we have spoken

in the raigne of the faid King : which invention how

fimple socuer, yet it liked them, to whom it suffi-

ced to have somewhat to say, while they were sure

to be compelled to no larger proof then themselves

uised to surmise in K. Edwards children, that would

(53) Pinker in his Sermon fo loft his voice, that (33) Pinner in his Sermon to loft his voice, that he was forced to leave off, and came downe in the middeft. Doctor shas by his fermon loft his hone fly, and foone after his life, for very finame of the world into which be durft navarafure man what would into which be durft navarafure man what we have the same about the same flower of the world into which be durft navarafure man about the same flower of the s world, into which he durft neuer after come abroad. But the Fryer forced for no shame, and so it harmed him the leffe. Howbeit some doubt, and many

for which the people should bee content to depose the Prince, and accept the Protector for King. In which divers things they denifed: but the chiefe teftor to the

further the purpose hee letted not : but yet, hee The some mi

K Edward and

lift to make (54) Now then it was by the Protector and his Councell concluded, that Doctor shan thould fignifie in his fermon aforefaid, that neither King Edward himselfe, nor the Duke of Clarence were lawfully begor, nor were the very Children of the Duke of Torke, but begot vnlawfully by other persons, by adulterie of the Dutches their mother. And also

which in his noble perfon fingularly abound, the

onobles and commons also of this Realme, and spe-

cially of the North part, not willing any baftard

blood to have the rule of the Land, nor the abufi-

ons before the fame yled, any longer to continue,

have condifiended, and fully determined, to make

humble petition to the most pullant Prince the

"Lord Protector, that it may like his Grace at our Ppppp

grudge of the world, he would importunately pur-fue his appetite, and have her, to the great destru-

thion of many a good woman, and great dolour to

their husbands and other their friends, which be

"ing honest people of themselves, so much regard

the cleannesse of their house, the chastitie of their

wives, and their daughters, that they had rather "loose all they had besides, then to have such a vil-

The text and

contents of Da

Show (barneleffe affections,

The Presche

effe, which aswell in all Princely behaulour, as in the

lineaments and fauour of his visage, representeth the

very face of the Noble Duke of Torke his father : this

is the fathers owne figure, this is his owne counte-

nance, the very print of his vilage, the fure vndoub-

ted Image, the plaine expresse likenesse of the noble

Duke, whose remembrance can neuer die while he

ing of the Lawes of this Realme for the Princes

that judgement. What Cooke your owne worthip-

full neighbour, Alderman and Maior of this noble

pleasure : with no lesse honour to Markham then

chiefe Iustice, that left his office rather then hee wardshisseb-

would affent to that judgement, then to the difho-

nesty of those, that eyther for feare or flattery gaue others.

708	Edward V. THE SVCC	Œ	ESSION OF Monarch 55.	Book 9	-3
 	" humble request, to take you him the guiding and }	_	much let by your friendship, that wee would not		1
	" gouernance of this Realme, to the wealth and en-		willingly do without you the thing which is for our		-
	" crease of the same, according to his very right and		honour and your wealth, which as it feemeth either		i
	"institle. Which thing I know well, hee will be loth to take vpon him, as he whose wisedome well		you fee not, or wey not; wherefore we require you,		1
	"perceiseth, the labour and study bosh of minde		giue vs answere, whether ye be minded as all the no-	l	1
1	" and body, that thall come therewith to whomfor-		bles of the Realmebee, to have this noble Prince now Protector, to be your King or not.		i
	"uer lo will occupie the roome, as I dare fay he will, "it hee take it. Which roome, I warne you well,		(58) At which words the people beganne to		1
	"it hee take it. Which roome, I warne you well,		whilper among them ledues fecretly, that the voyce		1
Optures 2-	"Is no childs office; and that the great wifeman		was neithe loud nor diltingt, but as it were the		ı
fed.	" well perceived, when hee fayd, Varegno cuius Rex		lound of a fwarme of Bees, till at the last, in the ne-		1
	"puer est: Woe is that Realme that hath a childe to their "King. Wherefore so much the more cause wee				1
	"haue to thanke God, that this noble Personage.		uants, and Nathfields, and of others belonging to		1
	"haue to thanke God, that this noble Personage, "which so righteously is intituled thereunto, is		the Protector, with some prentises and laddes that thrust into the hall among the press, beganne so-	Prentices and	i
	of 10 12d age, and 10 great wiledome, loyned with		dainely at mens backes to cry out as loud as their	Seruingmen the	1
	"fo great experience: which albeit hee will be loth		throats would give, King Richard, King Richard, &	first proclamers of K. Reshard.	1
	"(as I haue (ayd) to take it upon him, yet shall hee "to our petition in that behalfe, the more gratiously		threw vp their caps in token of iov. But they that		1
	to our petition in that behalfe, the more gratioully		stood before, calt backe their heades, maruelling		1
	"incline, if you the Worthipful Citizens of this the chiefe Citie of this Realme, ioyne with vs the		thereat, yetnothing they faid. And when the Dake	{	1
	"Nobles in this our fayd request. Which for your		and Mayor faw this manner, they wifely turned it		1
	" owne weale we doubt not but you will, and naythe-		to their purpose, and said it was a goodly cry, and a ioyfull, to heare every man with one voice, no man	-	1
	"leffe, I heartily pray you fo to doe, whereby yee		faying nay: wherefore friends (quoth the Duke)		1
e Dukes pithy	"leffe, I heartily pray you fo to doe, whereby yee fhall doe great profit to all the Realme befide, in		fince that wee well perceiue that it is all your whole		i
isvalions vnto	choosing them to good a King, and visto your		minds to haue this noble man for your King, where-		1
	"felues speciall commoditie, to whom his Maiestie		of we thall make to his Grace to effectuall report.		1
	"Ihall euer after beare fo much the more tender fa-		that we doubt not, but it shall redound vnto your		1
	"uour, in how much he shal perceiue you the more "prone and beneuolently minded towards his ele-		great wealth, and commodity: we require that to		1
	"ction. Wherein deere friends, what minde you		morrow you goe with vs, and wee with you vnto		1
	"haue, wee require you plainely to shew vs.	-	his Noble Grace, to make our humble request vuto him in manner before remembred. And therwith		ļ
e Landoners	(57) When the Duke had fayd, & looked that the		the Lords came downe, and the affembly disfolued		1
nithed ar	people who he hoped the Major had framed before.		for the most part sad, some with glad semblances,		1
chinghams atton.	should after this proposition made, have cryed, King			The affection of	
	Richard, King Richard; all was huft and mute, and		with the Duke, not able to diffemble their forrow.	the election	1
	not a word answered thereunto: wherewith the Duke was marutailously abashed, & taking the Maior		were rathe at his backe to turne their face to the wal.	feene by the	1
1	neerer to him, with other that were about him privile		while the dolour of their heart burft out of their eyes.	Affembly.	1
1	to that matter, faid vnto him foftly, What meaneth		(59) On the next morrow, the Mayor with all		1
1	this, that the people bee so filent? Sir (quoth the		the Aldermen, and chiefe Commoners of the City	The Nobles and	
kinehem .	Maior) perchance they perceive you not well; that		in their best array, allembling themselves cogether.	Citizens assem- ble at Bajnsrás	-[
eth ouer his	inall we mend (quoto nee) if that will helpe. And i		reforted vnto Baynards Castle in Thames street, where	Caftle,	1
en againo,	by and by fornewhat lowder, hee rehearfed them the		reforted vnto Baynards Castle in Thames street, where the Protector lay. To which place repayred also		1
- 1	fame matter againe, in other order and other words, fo well and omately, fo enidently and plaine, with		according to their appointment, the Duke of Bus- kingham, with divers noble men with him, beside		ı
	voice, gesture, & countenance so comely, that every		many Knights and other Gentlemen. And there-		I
- 4	man much maruailed that heard him, and thought		upon the Duke fent word vnto the Lord Protector,		1
e reward of	man much maruailed that heard him, and thought they neuer had in their hearing, so enill a tale so well		of the being there of a great and honourable com-		I
itery.	told. But were it for wonder or feare, or that each		pany, to moue a great matter unto his Grace-wher-	The Protector made it firange	
1	man lookt that other speake first; not a word was		upon the Protector made difficultie to come out vn-	to speake with	1
	there answered of all the people that stood before,		to them, but it nee first knew iome part of their er-	iuch a multitude	1
	but was as full as the midnight, not so much as row- ning among themselves, by which they might seeme		rand, as though he doubted, and partly diffrufted		1
	to commune what was belt to doe. When the Lord I		the comming of such a number vnto him so sodainly, without any warning, or knowledge whether		1
	Major faw this, hee with the other parmers of that			,	ļ
	countell drew about the Duke, and fayd, That the		nee had thewed this viito the Majorand other than		ı
e Recorder	people had not been accustomed there to bee spo-		they might thereby lee, now little the Protector		1
mmanded to	ken vnto, but by the Recorder, who is the mouth of				1
ake to the	the Citie, and happely to him they will answere.		the Menenger inch louing meliage againe and ther-		1
olum!	With that the Recorder called Fitz-William, a fad man and an honest, who was so newly come into that				1
	office, that hee neuer had fpoken to the people be-		they might refort to his presence, to propose their intent, which they would not impart to any other		ļ
	fore, and loth was with that matter to beginne; not-		person; that at the last hee came out of his cham-		1
	withitanding, thereunto commanded by the Major.		ber, and yet not down vnto them, but flood aboue		1
	he made rehearfal to the comons, of that the Duke		ma gattery outer them, where they might lee him &		ł
e great filence	had twice renearied to them himfelte. But the Re-		ipeake to him, as though hee would not ver come		1
the people.	corder fo tempered his tale, that hee shewed every		too heere them, the tild entrood what they meant.		1
	thing as the Dukes words, and no part of his owne.		And thereupon the Duke of Buckingham first made		İ
	But all this noting, no change made in the people,		humble petition varo him on the behalfe of them		ĺ
	which stood gazing at the bench as men altogether amased. Whereupon the Duke rowned vnto the		all, that his Grace would pardon them, and licence them to propose vnto his Grace, the intent of their		ĺ
	Maior, and laid, I his is margailous obitinate filence,		comming without his difficative, without which	Palpable differa-	t
	and therewith hee turned vnto the people againe			the Protectat	
he Duke spea-	with these wordes: Deare friends, wee come to		nim in their fuite. In which albeit they meant as	and Buckingoas	1
th once more.	moue you to that thing which peraduenture we not to greatly needed, but that the Lords of this Realme		indentification our to his Grace, as wealth to all the	-	1
	and the Commons of orthograms		Realm Dende; yet were they not fure how his Grace		
	and the Commons of other parts might have fuf-		would take it, whom they would in no wife offend.		
	ficed, faning that wee beare you fuch lone, and fo		Then the Protector (as he was very gentle of him-		i

felfe, and also longed fore to know what they meant) gaue him leave to propose what him liked verily trusting for the good mind that he bare them all, none of them would intend any thing to himward, wherewith hee ought to be grieued. (60) When the Duke had this leave and pardon to speake, then waxed hee bold to shew him their entent and purpole, with all the causes mouing them thereunto, as you have heard before: and finally, to befeech his Grace, that it would like him of his accustomed goodnes and zeale vnto the realm now with his eye of pitty, to behold the long continued diftreffe, and decay of the same, and to set his gratious hands to redresse an amendment there The Protector of, by taking vpon him the Crowne and gouernincreased to ac ment of the land; according to his right and title lawfully descended vnto him, and to the law of God, profit of the Realme, and vnto his grace fo much the more honour, and leffe paine, in that, that neuer Prince raigned ouer any people that were so glad to line vnder his obeisance, as the people of this land vn-(61) When the Protector had heard the proposition, he looked very strangely thereat, and answered: That albeit it were, he partly knew the things by them alleaged to be true, yet such intire loue he bare vnto King Edward and his children, that so much more he regarded his honour in other Realmes about, then the Crowne of any one, of which he was neuer defirous, that he could not finde in his heart in this point to incline to their defire. For in all other Nations wherethe truth was not wellknowne, it would peraduenture be thought, that it was his own ambitious minde and deuise, to depose the Prince, The Protector and to take himselfe the Crowne, with which infamie he would not haue his honour stained for anie Crowne, in which he had euer perceiued much more labour and paine, then pleasure to him that would so vie it, as he that would not, were not worthy to haue it. Notwithstanding he not only pardoned them the motion that they made him, but alfo thanked them for the love and harry favour they bare him, praying them for his fake to give and beare the same to the Prince, under whom hee was, and would be content to live, and with his labour and counsell, as farre as should like the King to vie him, he would doe his vttermost endenour to set the Realme in good state, which was already in this little time of his Protectorship (the praise be giuen to God) well begun, in that the malice of such as were before, occasion of the contrary, and of new intended to be, were now partly by good pollicy, partly more by Gods speciall prouidence, then mans prouifion repressed, (62) Vpon this answere given, the Duke by the Protectors licence, a little rowned, aswell with other noble men about him, as with the Maior and Recorder of London. And after that, vpon like pardon defired and obtained, he shewed aloude vnto the Protector for a finall conclusion, that the Realme was at a point, King Edwards line should not any longer raigne ouer them, both for that they had so farre gone, as it was now no furcty to retreat, as for that they thought it was for the weale vniuerfall to take that way, although they had not yet begun it. Wherefore if it would like his grace to take the Crowne vpon him, they would humbly befeech him thereunto; if he would give them a refolute anfwere to the contrary, which they would be loth to heare, then must they needes seeke, and would not faile to finde some other noble man that would.

Chap. 18. | Edward V. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 55| These words much moued the Protector, which else as euery man may know, would neuer of likelihood have inclined thereunto But when he law there was none other way, but that either he must take it, or elfe he, and his both goe from it, he faid vnto the Lords and commons, (63) Sith weewell perceive that all the Realme is fo fet, whereof we be very forry, that they will not fundamentally active the fundamental than the copied the copied the copied to the them, whom no earthly man can gouerne against Crowne. their wils, and well we also perceine, that no man there is to whom the Crowne can by just title appertaine, as to our felfe, as very right heire lawfully begotten of the body of our most deare father Richard late Duke of Yorke, to which title is now joined your election, the Nobles and Commons of this Realme, which we of all title possible take for the most effectuall: we be content, and agree fauourably to incline to your petition and request, and according to the same, we here take vpon vs the roiall estate, preheminence, and kingdome of the two noble realmes, England and France, the one from this day forward, by vs and our heires, to rule, gouerne, and defend; the other by Gods grace, and your good helpe, to ger againe and subdue, and establish for euer in due obedience vnto this Realm of England, the advancement whereof we neueraske of God longer to live, then we intend to procure. With this there was a great shout, crying King Richard, King Richard. And then the Lords went up to the King (for fo was he from that time called) and the people departed, talking dinerfely of the matter, every man as his fantaliegaue him. (64) Much was talked, and maruelled at the manner of this dealing, that the matter was made so firange vnto both parties, as though they neuer Diuen opinion had communed either with others before, when as themselves wift there was no man so dull that heard them, but perceived well inough, that all the matter was fo made betweene them. Howbeit, some excused that againe, and said all must be done in good order : And men must sometimes for manners fake, not be acknown what they know for at the confecration of a Bishop, euery man wotteth well, by the paying for his bulles, that he purposeth to be one, and though he pay for nothing elfe, and yet must he twice be asked, whether he will be a Bishop or no, and hee must twice say nay, and at the third time take it, as compelled thereunto by his owne will. And in a Stage-play the people know right well, that he who plaieth the Sowdaine, is percase a fowter, yet if one should know so little good, to shew out of season what acquaintance he hath with him, and call him by his owne name, while he flandeth in his maielty, one of his tormentors might hap to breake his head worthily for marring of the plaie.

(65) The raigne of this yong King may well be

ned without Scepter or ball, all which Richard aimed

at, and perfidiously got, before they could come to his head; or into his hands. His age at the death of

his father and entrance into his throne was eleuen yeeres fine monthes and fine daies, and within three

monthes after, was with his brother im othered to

death in the Tower of London, as shall be shewed in

his Raigne, of whom we are now by order of success

fion to write.

accounted an interregnum without King, aswell for his minoritie being vnder the rule of a Protector The Raigne and himselfe, as for the short time wherein he continued the name of a King; which onlie was two monthes and fixteene daies, and in them also he sate vnctow

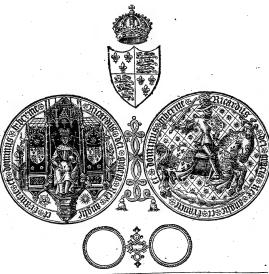
RICHARD

Richard III.

RICHARD THE THIRD, KING OF ENGLAND AND FRANCE, AND

LORD OF IRELAND, THE FIFTIE SIXTH MO-NARCH OF THE ENGLISH, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, ISSVE AND DEATH.

For the most part written by Sir Thomas Moore.



CHAPTER XIX.

and Dukes of Glecefter came

desthes. Richard t. flain

with an arrow.

the ed at Pom-

frais. The West orbit

mo acres to death. Humfres murde red a: S E i-

Aubaid e flaine L'Esperte field

to Vatimely

Ichard, the third fonne of Richard Duke of Yorke born at Fotheringhay Ca-file in the County of Northampton, was first ho-noured with the title of Glocester, being the third Duke of that number, & confequently by wfurpation crowned King of Eng-

land, the third of that name, a name indeed noted to the Kings fo called, to bee euer ominous; and the title of Glocester to those Dukes ever fatall, all of them both, dying violent and untimely deathes, which ought to have beene the more fearefull vnto Richard, now having policifion and interest in them both. But that not regarded, or destiny enforcing,

his aspiring mind gaue him no rest, till his restlesse body found it lastly in the graue. For his brother deceased when his life was most desired, no man in flew tooke his death to heavily as himfelfe, or ten-dered the young King with a more honourable refpeft, when as (God knowes) his mind ranne vpon deepe reaches, how to compasse the wreath for his owne head; which the better to fashion, hee withdrewa while into the North, and at Yorke in most fad and folemne manner observed the Funerals of the dead King: but howfoeuer the Maske concred this fubile Dukes face from the eie of the multitude; ver Buckingham well knew the ambitious defire of The Dake of his afpiring heart, and indeed was the Dedalus that Buckensham made him the wings, wherwith he mounted to neere of the Protector. vnto the Sun, as that the wax melting (like the highminded young Icarus) he caught his last fail.

The Protector faced himfelfe to the people

By Perful, Bus-

ding the Citizens, working the Nobility: and all this done, to fet the Crowne vpon crookt Richards head, and fo moulded their minds vnto the man, as they all became humble petitioners vnto him for to accept of the same; who in the meane while had well conned his owne part, by profuse liberalitie, by passing great granity, by singular affability, by ministring of instice, and by deepe and close deuifes, whereby hee wonne to himfelfe the hearts of all, but the Lawyers especially, to serue best his turn, which was so affected, that in the name of all the States of the Realme, a Petition was drawne and presented him to accept the wearing of the Grown: the true copy wherof as we find it recorded in the bited to the Parliament Rol, we have inferted, & is as followeth, In Rotulo Parliamenti tenti apud Westm. die Veneria Vicesimo tertio die Ianuarii, An.Regni Regis Richardi 3. primo inter alia continetur ot fequitur. Memorandum qued quedam billa exhibita fuit coram

Domino Rege in Parliamento pradicto in hat verba: Where late heretofore, that is to say, before the con-

fecration, coronation, and inthronization of our fo-

Chap. 19. Richard IIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS.

(2) What intendments they had before the

Kings death, is vncertaine, though it may be suspe-Ated: but furcitis; he now gone, the Duke of Buc-

kingham twice follicited Gloucester by his messengers in the North , met him at Northampton himselfe, ac-

companied him to London, forwarded him in Coun-

fell, and was the first Actor in this following tra-

gedy. For, first making him Protector, procuring his young Nephew forth of Sanctuary, disabling the young King, bastardizing them both, perswa-

ueraigne Lord the King, Richard the third, a roll of parchment containing in writing certaine Articles of the Tenor underwritten on the behalfe, and in the name of the three Estates of this Realme of

All doubts taken

England, that is to witte, of the Lords Spirituall & Temporall, and of the Commons by name, and divers Lords Spirituall and Temporall, and other Nobles and notable persons of the Commons in great multitude was presented and actually delinered vnto our faid Souersigne Lord, the intent and effect expressed at large in the same roll : to the which Roll, and to the confiderations, and inftant petition comprised in the same, our said Soueraigne Lord for the publike weale and tranquility of this land benignely affented. Now foralmuch as neither the faid three Estates, neither the said persons which in their name presented, and delitered as it is aforesaid, the said Roll vnto our said Soueraigne Lord the King, were affembled in forme of Parliament: by reason whereof divers doubts, questions, and ambiguities beene moued, and engendred in the minds of diucrs persons, as it is said : Therefore to the perpetuall memory of the truth. and declaration of the same, be it ordained, provided, and established in this present Parliament, that the Tenor of the faid roll, with all the contents of the same, presented as is about faid, and delivered to our foresaid Soueraigne Lord the King, in the name and in the behalfe of the said three Estates out of Parliament, now by the same three Estates assembled in this present Parliament, and by authority of the same bee ratified, enrolled, recorded, approued, and authorized into remouing the occasions of doubts and ambiguities, and to all other lawfull effects that shall now thereof ensue: So that all things faid, affirmed, specified, defired and remembred in the faid rol. & in the tenor of the fame underwritte in the name of the faid 3. Estates, to the effect expressed in the same roll be of the like effect, vertue & force, as if al the same things had bin so said, affir-

med, specified, desired & remembred in a full Parlia-

ment, and by authority of the same accepted & ap-

proued. The Tenor of the aid Roll of parchment,

wherof aboue is made mention, followeth, & is fuch.

Richard Duke of Glocester.

Please it your noble Grace to vnderstand the confi-

To the high and Mighty Prince

derations, election and petition underwritten of vs, the Lords Spirituall & temporall, and Commons of this Realme of England, and thereunto agreably to give your affent to the common and publike Protedor. weale of this land, to the comfort and gladnesse of all the people of the fame. First, we consider how that heretofore in some pailed, this land many yeers flood in great prosperity, honour, and tranquilitie, which was cauled, forformuch as the King then raigning, vied and followed the adulte and countries certaine Lords spirituall and temporall, and other on soule pretention policy. & ning, vied and followed the adulfe and counfell of persons of approued sadnesse, prudence, policy,& experience, dreading God, and hauing tender zeale and affection to indifferent ministration of inflice, and to the common and publike weale of the land Then our Lord God was dread, loued and honoured, then within the land was peace and tranquitity, and among neighbours concord and charity, then the malice of outward enemies was mightilie relifted and repressed, and the land honourably defended with many great and glorious victories, then the entercourse of Merchants was largely vfed and exercised: by which thinges aboue femenbred, the land was greatly enriched, so that aswell the Merchants and Artificers, as other poore people labouring for their liuings in diuers occupations, had competent gaine to the fustentation of them & their housholds, lining without miterable and intollerable pouerty: but afterward, when that fuch as had the rule and governance of this land, delighting in adulation and flattery, and led by sensuality and concupifcence, followed the counfell of persons infolent, vicious, and of inordinate auarice, despising the counsell of good, vertuous, & prudent persons, fuch as about bee remembred; The profestity of this land dayly decreafed, so that felicity was turned into milery, and prosperity into aduersity, and the order of policy, and of the law of God and Man confounded, whereby it is likely this Realme to fall into extreme misery and desolation (which God defend) without due prouision of couenable remedy bee had in this behalfe, in all goodly haft,

(3) Ouer this, among other things more speciali wee confider, how that the time of the raigne of K. Edward the fourth late deceased, after the vngracious pretented marriage (as all England hath cause fo to fay) made betwixt the faid King Edward, and Elezabeth fometimes wife to Sir John Gray knight, late naming her selfe, and many yeeres heretofore Queene of England, the order of all politicke rule was peruerted, the lawes of God, and of Gods Church, and also the lawes of nature, and of England, and also of the laudable customes and liberties of the same, wherein enery English man is inheritor, broken, subuerted and contemned, against all reafon and iustice, so that the land was ruled by selfewill and pleasure, feare and dread, all manner of equity and law laide apart and despited, whereof enfued many inconveniences and mischiefes, as murthers, extortions, and oppressions, namely of poore and impotent people, so that no man sure of his life, land or livelyhood, ne of his wife, daughter nor fernant, euery good maiden and woman standing in dread to bee rauished and defloured: and besides this, what discords, inward battels, effusion of Christian mens bloud, and namely, by the destruction of the Nobles bloud of this land, was had and committed within the same, it is enident and notarie through all this Realme, vnto the great forrow and heavinesse of all true Englishmen. And here also wee consider, how that the said pretended trarriage betwixt the aboue named King Edward and E. lizabeth Gray was made of great prefumption with-out the knowing & affent of the Lords of this land. and also by forcery and witchcraft committed by the faid Elizabeth and her mother Jaquet Dutchesse of Bedjord, as the common opinion of the people, and

the publike voice and fame is through all this land: and hereafter if the cause shall require, shall be pro-Qqqqq

The petition of the kings electi-on made lawfull,

	Richard IIJ. THE SVCC	E	ssion	OF	Monarch 56.	Book.9	
	ned sufficiently in time and place connenient. And here also wee consider how that the said pretensed	-	most noble Grac	e, that acc	ording to this electio of ind, as by your true inhe-		
	marriage was made privily and fecretly without e-		ritance, you will	accept and	d take vpon you the fayd	1	-
	dirion of banes in a private Chamber, a prophane		Crowne and to	yall dignitie	, with all things there-	l	
	place, and not openly in the face of the Church af- ter the law of Gods Church, but contrary there-		belonging afwel	l by inheri	ing, as to you of right rance as by lawfull eie-	1	
	unto, and the laudable custome of the Church of		ction: and in ca	se yee so d	ne, we promife to ferue		
	England. And how also that at the time of con-		and affift your H	ighneffe, a	strue and faithfull fub-	All promies	
	tract of the same pretended marriage, and before and long time after the said King Edward was and		in this matter an	d in enery o	o line and die with you other inft quarrel. For	were not kept, as afterward it pro-	
12-	flood married and troth-plight to one Dame Eliener		certainile, we be	determine	d rather to aduenture &	ued.	• .
EΩ	Emiler daughter of the old Earle of Shrewsbury with				our lines, and icopardic thraldom and bondage		
197	whom the same Edward had made a precontract of Matrimonie long time before hee made the saide				ne heretofore oppreffed		
	pretenced marriage with the faid Elizabeth Gray, in		and injured by e	xtortions a	nd newe impolitions a-		177
	manner and forme aforefaid: which Premisses be- ing true, as in very truth they beene true: it appea-	1	gainft the Law	of God and	man, and the libertie, old Realme, wherein enery		47.5
	reth, and followeth euidently, that the faid King		Englishman is	inherited	Our Lord God,	The Lord our God is a confu-	75%
	Edward during his life, and the faid Elizabeth lined	1	King of all K	ings, by v	vhole infinite goodnefle	mingfire,Dett.	
£	together finfully and damnably in adultery against the law of God and of his Church: And therefore				things beene principally lighten your foule, and	4.34-	
агр	no maruell that the Soueraigne Lord, and the head	1			ell in this matter as in all		1
	of this land being of fuch vngodly disposition, and				ng to his will and plea-		
	pronoking the ire and indignation of our Lord God; fuch hainous mischiefe and inconveniences as are a-	l	Land: forhat a	common a frer opear c	ind publike weale of this londs, trouble, frormes,		
	boue remembred, were vied and committed in the	1	and tempelts, t	he Sun of I	ultice and of Grace may		
	Realme among the Subjects. Also it appeareth				fortand gladnesse of all		1
ke	cuidently and followeth, that all the Issue and chil- dren of the said King Edward, beene bastard and		ritle. & effase.	igii amen. vhich our S	Albeit, that the right, oueraigne Lord the King,		
	vnable to inherite, or to claime any thing by inhe-	·	Richard the this	rd hath to, a	and in the Crowne, and		
	ritance, by the law and custome of England. (4) Moreover, we consider how that afterwards		rotali dignitie	of this Rea	lme of England; with all		
	by the three Eftates of this Realm affembled in Par-		out it vnited, at	io within th inexed & a	e fame Realme, and with- ppertaining, bin suft and		1
	liament, holden at Westminster the 17. yeere of the	:	lawfull as grou	nded vpon	the lawes of God and of		İ
	raigne of the faid King Edward the fourth, hee thes being in possession of the Crowne and royall estate		nature: and all	o vpon the	ancient lawes and lauda-		
	by A& made in the same Parliament, George Duke		reputed by all f	ich perions	Realme; and so taken and as beene learned in the		
of his	of Clarence brother to the faid King Edward now	1	aboutfaid lawer	and culto	mes: Yet neuerthelesse,	A charitable	1
AB-	deceased, was consisted and attained of high trea- fon, as in the same Act is contained more at large		for afmuch as i	tis confide	red, that the most part of y learned in the abouefaid	minde in thew, but in truth a	
36	by cause and reason whereof, all the Issue of the	:	Lawes and cufb	oms, wherb	y the truth & right in this	crafty intent.	
	faide George, was and is dilabled and barred of al	1	behalfe of like	lyhood may	y be hid and not cleerely		
	right and claime that in any case they might have or challenge by inheritance to the Crowne and dig		knowne to all	And over	& thereupon put in doubt his, how that the Court		
-	nity royall of this Realme, by the ancient law and		of Parliament	is of fuch a	uthoritie, and the people		1
	custome of this same Realme.	١,	of this Land of	fuch a nati	are and disposition, as ex-		1
	Ouer this wee confider that ye be the vndoubted forme and heire of Richard late Duke of Torke, very	7			ifestation and declaration e by the three estates of		į .
	inheritor of the fayd Crowne and dignitie royall	,	this Realmean	lembled in	Parliament, and by the	The effect of	1
	and as in right King of England by way of inheritance: and that at this time the premiffes duely con	-			eth before all other things	our English	
	I fidered there is none other person fusing but we only	y	removeth the	certaine, an	d quieting of mens minds, all doubts, and feditious		1
daie de bot	that by right may claime the faid Crowne and dig	-	language. Th	rerefore at t	he request, and by the as-	-1	
bot by Par	hitieroyall by way of inheritance, and how that ye be borne within this land; by reason whereof, as w	2			this Realmer that is to		1
Pa	deeme in our mindes, yee be more naturally encl	i-	mons of this I	and affem	id temporall, and Com- bled in this present Par-		
	ned to the prosperitie and common weale of th		liament, by au	therity of t	he fame be it pronounced,	,]	
	fame: and all the three estates of the Land have an may have more certaine knowledge of your bird				it our faid Soueraign Lord ry yndoubted King of this		
	and filiation aforefaid. We confider also the gre	at			all things thereunto with-		1
	wit, prudence, iuftice, princely courage, and the m		in the same R	ealm, and w	ithout it vnited, annexed	,)	
	morable and laudable acts in diuers battels, which wee by experience know you heretofore haue don		and appertain	ing aiweil b	y right of Confanguinity		
	for the faluation and defence of this fame Realm	e;	on, and coron	ation. An	douer this, that at the re-		
	and also the great noblenesse & excellencie of yo		queft, and by	the affenta	wfull election, confectation douer this, that at the re- ind authority abonesaide		1
	birth and bloud, as of him that is descended of the three most royall houses in Christendome: that is		be it ordained	, enacted an	d established, that the said y of this Realme, and the	1 }	1
e th	at lay, England, France and Spaine. Wherefore the	ie	inheritance of	the fame, a	nd all other things there	The Growne	
	premifies by vs diligently confidered, we defiring e	:f-	unto within th	e Realme 10	r without, is vnited, an	- entailed to king	
d a	fectually the peace, traquilitie and weale-publique this Land, and the reduction of the fame to the a	n-	perfor of our	w apperta aid Souera	ning, rest and abide in the igne Lord the King during	heires,	
	cient honourable estate and prosperitie, and hauit	ag	his life, and a	ter his dece	afe, in his heires of his be	-	
	in your great prudence, inflice, princely courag	e,			ciall at the request, and by		
	and excellent vertue, fingular confidence, have ch fen in all that in vs is, and by this our writing choo	ie	nacted, effabli	fhed, prono	efaid, bec it ordained, e ounced,decreed,and decla		
	you High and Mightie Prince our King and Sou	ic-	red, that the h	igh and ex	cellent Prince Edward for	1	1
	raigne Lord,&c. To whom we know for certaine	ıt	of our faid So	ueraigne Lo	ord the King, becheire ap	Prince Edward made heire ap	-

parant of the fame our Soueraigne Lord the King to aranth Par

fucceed to him in the abouefaid Crowne and royall hament.

K.Edward aces

fed to haue bee

the Lady Eliens

The tongue of flander is a than

They have taught their

tongs to speak

As badbis el

appertaineth of enheritance to to beechofen. And

hereupor wee humbly defire, pray, and require your

(Chap.19. Richard III. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 56. dignity, with all things as is aforesaid thereunto to the Tower, where he created Eftates, ordained A.D. 1483, the Knights of the Bathe, fer at liberty the Archbilhoppe of Iorke, and the Lord Stanley, more for by Kausbard. vnited, annexed, and appertaining, to have them after the deceale of our faid Soueraigne Lord the King, to him, and to his heires of his body lawfully feare then for loue; whose sonne the Lord Strange was then faid to be gathering of men in Lancafaire; Que quidem Bills Communibus Regni Angl, in where those Lords have great command. dicto Parliamento existent. transportata fuit. Cui qui-(8) But Morton Bishop of Ely a firme man vndem bille i dem Communes affenjum fuum prabuerunt to King Edward, and unpossible to bee drawn unto sub hijs verbis. A Ceste bille les Communes sont assenthe difinheriting of his children, as was well perceitus. Quibus quidembilla, & affensu coram Domine ued by the Protector, among others, at the Coun-Rege in Parliamento pradicto lectis, auditis, & plenimo cell held in the Tower, was left there priloner, and intellectis; de assensu Dominorum spiritualium, & temaccused of many great, but vnlikely treatons. This man borne in Dorsespire, and brought up in the V. poral um in dicto Parliamento similiter existent ac Comunitatis pradicta, nee non authoritate eiusaem Parliamenniuerlity of Oxford, was from a Doctor of the Arches ti prominciatum, decretum, & declaratum existit, ommade a priny Councellour vnto King Heary, and nia & singula in billa praditta contenta forevera & inafter his death allured by King Edward to serue him, dubia. At idem Dominus Rex de affensu dictorum was sworne likewise of his Councell, and made one trium Statuum Regni, & authoritate pradicta,omnia & of the Executors of his will: whose insight into the singula pramissa in bella pradicta, contenta concedit, ac ea intended defignes, the Protector much feared, and provero & indubio pronunciat, decernit & declarat. therefore having him fall, minded fo to keepe him, (5) These things I have laid forth more at large when nee released others laide in the Tower for the What cumous! out of the Parliament Roll, that ye may understand like feare. But the reuerence of the man, or vndeserboth what and how great matters, the power of a uednesse of his wrongs, moued so the affection of Prince, the outward shew of vertue, the wily fetchthe Oxford Academians, that they directed to the es of Lawyers, fawning hope, pensiue feare, desire King (who professed much loue to that Vniuersitie) of change, and goodly pretences are able to effect, in that most wife affembly of all the States of a a petitory latine Epiftle, no leffe eloquent & pithy, ex Regift.0 xm. then circumspect and wary, wherein they thus plea-Kingdome,euen against all law and right, so that the ded for his liberty. faying of Salamon in this State feemed most true Eccles 9.4. (9) Though many important motiues wee that a lining dogge is better then a dead Lyon. But this haue most Christian King, earnestly to recommend A letter written Richard is not to be accounted worthy to have been "to your princely clemency, the Reuerend Father for the views in Christ, the Lord Bishoppe of Ely, as being nor the behalfe of the views in Christ, the Lord Bishoppe of Ely, as being nor the behalfe of a Soucraigne, had he not beene a Soucraign as Galba was reputed; who, when he was a Soueraigne, deonely one of the most eminent Sonnes of our V. D. Morten, ceited all mens expectation; but most worthy inniu rifry, but a loa fingular Patrone and induldeede of Soueraignty, had hee not beene transporgent Father to vs all; yet could not these induceted with ambition (which blafted all his good parts) ments (howfocuer very ponderous with all grateby lewde practiles, and by mischienous means, made 'full mindes) perswade vs to become interceffors foule way thereunto: for that by the common confor his pardon, but ener with due regard both to fent of all that are wife, he was reckoned in the ranke "your owne honour and fafety; the greatneffe of of bad men, but of good Princes; as indeed King your princely fauours having more obliged vs. Richard through his short time of raigne is accounthen of any your royali Predeceffors : whiles therted to have beene. fore wee flood in some doubt, how hee flood affe-(6) The Crown and Scepter accepted as is faid, ted towards your Highneffe, wee held it an high King Richard vpon the twentie fifth of June, went in " offence, if by tendring his fafety, wee should any King Richard great pompe vnto Westminster bail, and there in the way hazard yours: but now understanding, that accepteth the Crowne, and beginneth his Kings Bench Court tooke his Seat, faying, that he his offence proceeded, not of pertinacy, but huwould take vpon him the Crowne in that place, mane frailety; and that hee hath alwayes humbly where the King himselfe ought to sit, whose chiefest fued for pardon thereof, the bowels of our moduety was to administer Iustice to his people, and ther Vninerlity, like Rachel weeping ouer her with a pleasing Oration to tickled the eares of his Children were moued with compassion ouer the Auditors, that hee fulled the rurall to thinke that deplored diffresse of this her dearest sonne; wherehis like had neuer raigned in England; and to bein yet(as wee hope) her affection deserues no iust ginne himselfe with a pretenced elemency, he proreprehension. For if a pious affection be pravienounced pardon of all offences committed against worthie, euen in an enemy, much more is it in this him; for confirmation whereof, hee fent for one our Academy, full of due observance towardes Fogge whom he deadly hated, who for feare of him your Maiesty, and professing the study of all verhad lately taken Sanctuary at Westminster, and there tues. These things so being, wee thought fitte, in fight of the people with semblance accordingly, tooke him by the hand saying, that hee would bee "(without longer delayes) to flie vnto your clemency, as humble Suppliants, that your Highthence forth his affured in affection; wherear the ec nes already hauing in part inflicted (thogh mildly) com chafticemet on his fault would turn your roi-Commons greatly reioyced, and with applauses extolled, though others wifer among them tooke K. Richards des "al aspect towards him, & impart to him the bounit to bee but fained to serue his owne turne. And "ty of your gracious clemency; wherein, you fhal not onely perform an act most acceptable to him, in his way homeward, whomsoener hee met, hee saluted: for a mind that knoweth it selfe to bee "to vs, and the whole Church, but very honoursguiltie, is in a manner deiected to a feruile flatble & aduantagious also (as we hope) to your own terv. person. For, vpon notice of the readmittance of (7) King Richard whole guilty heart was full of "fo great a Prelate into your grace, who is there, that The Northerne fent for to the Kings Cotona-tion, fuspition, had sent for five thousand Souldiers will not extoll with prayles vnto the skies your fo egreat, and even divine elemency? Thus gloried out of the North to bee present in London at his Coronation; these under the leading of Robin of the Romans, to haue it marshalled amongst their Ridsdale, came up both euill apparrelled, and worse "prayles, that * Submissue wights they spared, but " virgit." crusht the prond; and this also they challenged as Panere Subiciti, lohn Hardings harnefled, in rufty Armour, neither defencible for proofe, nor fcowred for fliew: who mustering in "their peculiar horiour, that they were readier to Saing, Finesburie Fields, were with disdaine gazed upon by remit, then to revenge wrongs. Now if you will

aspire to this high honour, (as easily you may, by

being gracious to this man) you shall surmount

"the Romanes them selves by so glorious a deed. As

" for the great benefite which may hereby accrue to

the beholders. But all things now ready for his

Coronation (and much the fooner in that young

Edwards provision was conferred upon his) upon

the fourth of July, he with his wife by water came

The King and

your highnes, albeit (as we suppose) we can sufficiently conceine thereof, especially if wee call to " minde his fingular vertues; vet had we rather leave that point wholly to your fecret confiderations, "then puriue it with a discourse tedious to you, and "cnuie-breeding to him: least happily by infisting in his praises, it may be thought, that we seeke ra-"ther by violence to extort, then by submissioners to beg his pardon, and or elfe to relie more on the greatnesse of his vertues, then of your Clemency, or aftly to appeale rather to your Inflice, then to "your mercy. Wherefore (most puissant Prince) "thus periwade your felfe of vs, that whatfoeuer we have spoken in the Bishops behalfe, we doe it "rather out of a sense of our dutifulnes then any diffidency of your Gratiouines: and therefore omitting all things which might be alleaged, either to "leffen his offence or augment his vertues it is your " fole mercy wherein we repose all our hopes; vow-"ing , howfoeuer other meanes of gratitude may be

Det Overris Vug.4.Sextilu.

Pithon Martes

7:4

"extinguished amongst vs. (10) King Richard, after this, intending some eafier restraint, though not liberty vnto the Bishop. was content to release him out of the Tower, and committed him to the custody of Henry Duke of Buckingham, who senthim to his Castle of Brecknocke committed to the in Wales, there fafely to be kept, vntil himfelfe should come thither.

wanting to vs, yet we shall neuer suffer the remem-

" brance of fo great a fauour conferred on vs to be

(11) The next day with great pompe, state and The great efface of King Richard attendance of the Nobility, the King rode through

Backinghem most richly attired at the kings coro-

London, so as a more royall had not beene seene at any Kings Coronation, for there attended him, three Dukes, nine Earles, two Vicounts, twenty Lords, feauenty eight Knights, all of them most richly furnished, whereof the Duke of Buckingham so farre exceeded, that the caparison of his horse was so charged with embroydered worke of gold, as it was born vp from the ground by certaine his footemen thereto appointed. And contrary to my owne affections,

The order of the

Rich. Grafton.

or manner of my former proceedings, I will yet continue the most honorable offices performed at his roiall enthroning with no little Admiration, how these Lords affembled to set the Crowne vpon the young Princes head, were fo fuddainly carried to Crowne his Protector, and that vpon such faile and flanderous pretences, as every one of them faw his title to be meerely an vnivit viurpation, but in them may be seene, that we are all the sonnes of Adam, and in times of extremities, foreslow all publike regard, as ouermuch fearing our private and prefent (12) Vpon the fixt of July, King Richard with Queene Anne his wife fet forth from White-hall towards Westminster, roially attended, and went into the Kings bench in the great hall, from whence himselfe and Queen vpon ray Cloth, both of them barefooted, went vnto King Edwards shrine in Saint Peters Church, all the Nobility going with him in their degree, the trumpets and Heraulds marshalling the way, the Croffe with a folemne procession followed, the Priefts in fine furpleffes and gray Amyffes vpon them, the Bishops and Abbots in rich Copes all of them mytred, and carrying their Crosses in their hands; next came the Earle of Huntington bearing a paire of gilt fourres, fignifying Knighthood; after whom came the Earle of Bedford, wno bare Saint

Edwards staffe for a Relique, then followed the Earle

of Northumberland with a naked pointles fword in his

hand betokening mercy, next whom the Lord Stan-

ley bare the Mace of the Constableship, vpon whose right hand the Earle of Kent bare a naked pointed

(word, and on his left hand the Lord Louell the like

naked pointed (word, the former fignifying Instice to-

wards the temperalty, & the other Inflice to the Clergy;

the Duke of Suffolke then followed with the Scepter,

which fignified Peace: the Earle of Lincolne bare the

Ball and Croffe which fignified a Monarchy: Then

came the Earle of Surrey bearing the fourth (word theathed in a rich scaberd, and is called the sword of Estate, next whom followed Gartar King at Armes, vpon whole right hand went the Gentleman Viher of the Kings priuy Chamber, and on his left the Lord Major of London, with a Mace in his hand; Next vnto whom went the Duke of Norfolke bearing the Kings Crowne betwixt his hands, and then King Rechard himselfe came, in a Surcote and Robe of purple veluct; having over his head a Canapie borne by the foure Barons of the fine Ports, the Bilhop of Bath on his right hand, and of Durham on his left. The Duke of Buckingham bare the Kings traine, and to fignifie the office of high Steward of England, he bare a White Staffe in his hand.

(13) Then followed the Queenes traine: before The order of the whom was borne the Scepter, the Juorie Rod with the Queenes pro-Done, and the Crowne, her felfe apparelled in Robes like the Kings under a rich Canapie, at cuery corner thereof a bell of gold. On her head shee ware a circlet let full of precious stones, the Countesse of Richmond bearing her traine; the Dutchesse of Norfolke and Suffolk in their Coronets attendants, with twenty Ladies of estate most richly attired. In this order they passed the Pallace into the Abbey, and ascending to the high Altar there shifted their Robes, and having other R obes open in diners places from the middle vpward, were both of them annointed and Crowned, he with Saint Edwards Crowne, hauing the Scepter deliuered into his left hand, and the Ball with the Crosse a token of Monarchie in his right, the Queene had a Scepter given into her right hand, and the Ittory Done in her left; then after the Sacrament received (having the hoft devided betwixt them) they both offered at Saint Edwards shrine, where the King left his Crowne and pur on hisowne; and thus done, in the same Order and State as they came, returned to Westminster hall, and there held a most Princely feast. Whereof let Hall and Grafton tell you for me.

(14) But this his faire Sunne was soone ouercast with many darke Cloudes and mischiefes, which sir Thomas fell thicke upon the necke of each other, for as the Moore thing euill gotten, is neuer well kept:through all the time of his raigne there never cealed death and Thetime of King flaughter, till his owne destruction ended it. Yet as full of calamihe finished his daies with the best death , and the ties. most righteous, that is to say, his owne: so began he with the most piteous and wicked, I meane the lamentable murther of his innocent Nephewes, the young King and his tender brother; whose deaths and finall misfortunes have nevertheleffe come fo farre in question, that some remaine yet in doubt, whether they were in his daies destroiced or no. Not for that only, that Perkin W arbecke by the malice of many, and the folly of more, fo long a time abuling Doubts made the world, was aswel with Princes, as the other poore people, reputed and taken for the younger of these two: but for that also as all things were in late daies so couertly demeaned, one thing pretended and another done, that there was nothing so plaine and openly proued, but for the common custome and close couert dealing, men had it euer inwardly in suspect, as many well counterfeit Iewels make the true mistrusted. Howbeit concerning the opinion with the occasions moning either party, we shall haue place more at large hereafter to intreat of: in the meane time for this present matter shall be rehearfed the dolorous end of these young Babes, not after euerie report 1 haue heard, but by such men, and by fuch meanes, as to my feeming it were hard butit thould betrue faith Sir Thomas Moore.

(15) K. Richard prefentlyafter his mockish Electio & glorious Coronation, made his progresse towards | wards Glorifles Gloucester, to shew (as was thought) in that City his new Kingly estate, which first had vouchsafed him his old honour in bearing her Title; or elfe, and that rather, to be sequestred from other busines, the better to attend that, vpon which his thoughts most busily

King Rickard completteth the death of his

letter to Sir Rebert Brakenou-

King Richard his

being vnder gale, and at fortunes dispose, he feared the gust of cuery wind: at leastwile suspected that his young Nephewes living would ftay the course of his deepereaches, as doth the little fish Remora, who holdeth (as at Anchor) the biggest shippe vnto nane men frength, as it will der faile. His inward frudy therefore ftill forged, howfoener his outward countenance was carried of any this vader to cleare his paffage by taking those dangerous lets away, wellknowing, that his little Nephewes enioying their lines, men would be medling with their The feares of K. downe cast catife, and account him an viurper without all rings to the Realme. To ftop which streame, no other course could hee find, but to cut off the current by which it ranne, as though the killing of his Kinimen could better his bad claime, or vnkindly murther make him a kindly King. But being resolued, he forth with sent one John Greene, a seruant in especiall trust vnto Sir Robert Brakenbury Constable of the Tower, with a letter of credence,

ranne. For albeit the Barke of his begunne aduen-tures, had without perill well passed the straightes,

that the same Sir Robert should in any wife put the two children to death. (16) This Greene thus posted to London, delinered his errand vnto Brakenbury, whom hee found kneeling at his Orizons before the Image of our Lady in the Tower, the businesse being of such weight as the King must bee served before hee had ended

with his Saint The Constable reading the letter,

to King Richard being at Warwicke, yet in his way

to Glosefter, wherewith he was maruelloully per-

plexed, and thereat tooke such displeasure, that the

fame night hee faid to a fecret Page of his : Ah whom

shall a man trust? those that I have brought up my selfe.

those that I had weened would most surely serve me even

tho(e faile me, and at my commandement will do nothing.

Sir quoth the Page, there lyeth one on your Pallet

without, that I dare well fay, to doe your Grace

pleasure, the thing were right hard that hee would

refule; meaning this by Sir James Tirrell, who was

a man of a goodly personage, and for Natures gifts worthy to have served a much better Prince, if he

had well ferued God, and by grace obtained as

much truth and good will, as hee had ftrength and

(17) The man had an high heart, and fore Ion-ged vpward, notrifing yet to fast as hee hoped, be-

ing hindred and kept vnder by the meanes of Sir

Richard Ratelsffe, and Sir William Catesby, who lon-

ging for no more partners of the Princes fauour, and

namely, not for him, whose pride they knew would

beare no Peere, kept him by secret drifts out of all

fecret truft, which thing this Page had well mar-

ked and knowne: wherefore this occasion offered of

very speciall friendshippe, hee tooke his time to put him forward, and by such wise to doe him good,

that all the enemies he had, except the Diuell him-

felfe could neuer haue done him so much hurt. For

vponthis Pages words, K. Richardarose (forthiscom-

munication had hee fitting at the draught, a conne-

nient Carpet for such a Counsell) and came out in-

to a Pallet-Chamber, where hee found in bed, Sir

Iames and Sir Thomas Tirrels, of persons much like,

and brethren in bloud, but nothing of kin in con-

ditions: Then faid the King merrily to them, what

Sirs, bee ye in bed to foone and calling vp Sir Iames,

brake to him fecretly his mind in this mischienous

matter, in which hee found him nothing strange

Wherefore on the morrow hee fent him to Braken-

bury with a letter, by which hee was commanded

to deliuer Sir Iames all the keyes of the Tower for

one night, to the end hee might accomplish there

the Kings pleasure in such things as hee had given

him in commandement. After which letter deli-

and perceiting the bloudy intent of the King, answeburies answere vitto Iehu Greene red plainly, he wold never put those innocent babes vnto death, to die therefore himselfe. With which answere Iohn Greene returning, recounted the same

King Richards

Sir Robert Braben.

Lames Tirrell The parts of Sir Iames Tirrel

King Richard confu sed spon his Naphewes

King Rieberck

Sir lames ready tofulfil the kings mind in the mur-ther of the Princes.

Chap.19. Richard IIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 56. uered, and the keyes received, Sir lames appointed the night next enfuing to deftroy them, deniling be-

and now got fea-roome to spread faile at will; yet fore and preparing the meanes. (18) The Prince in the Tower flenderly attended; and altogether neglected by the Nobility, lailly, had newes that his vncle had left the name of Protector, and taken upon him the Title of King, who with full confent of the Lords was to be crowned within a few daies following, with the same Crowne, and in the like estate as had beene prouided for his folemnity, wherear the dejected Innocent det for ins toutinity, systematic the words of more entry my life jet, though I toglobut my Kingdome Prince Edwar and Crowne. Which words hee pronounced with this words in the words of th

fuch a feeling feare, as much moved the Relater to should be sing. pitty, and to perswade him with the best comforts hee could: but forthwith the Prince and his brother were both thut vp, and all attendants removed from them, onely one called Black-will, or William Slaughter excepted, who was fet to ferne them, and Prince remoue fee them fure. After which time the Prince neuer tied his points, nor cared for himfelfe, but with that young Babe his brother lingered with thought and heauines, till their traiterous deaths delinered them our of that wretchednesse: for the execution whereof, Tirrell appointed Miles Farrest, one of the foure

that kept them, a fellow fleshed in murther before | Six The More. time. To whom hee joined one Iohn Dighton his horfekeeper,a bigge,broad,fquare knaue.

(19) About midnight (al others being remoued from them,) this Miles Forrest, and John Dighton, and his brother came into the Chamber, and inddenly wrapped vp | murthered in a the feely children in the Bed-clothes, where they lay keeping by force the feather-bed and pillowes hard vpon their mouthes that they were therein smothered to death, & gaue vp to God their innocent foules

the Tormentors dead in the bed : which after these monfirous wretches perceived, first by the strugling with the paines of death, and after long lying full to be thorowly dispatched, they laid their bodies naked out vpon the bed, and then fetched Sir Iames were busied vi their infligator to fee them, who caused these mur-therers to bury them at the staires foot, somewhat

deepe in the ground, under a great heape of flones. Then rode Sir Iames in haste to the King, vnto whom he shewed the maner of their death, and place of buriall, which newes was so welcome to his wicked heart, as he greatly reioiced, and with great thankes dubbed (as some hold) this his merciles Instrument, knight. But the place of their buriall hee liked not, faying, that vilecorner should not containe the bodies of those Princes, his Nephewes, & commanded them a better place for burial because they were the fons of a King. Whereupo. the Priefs of the Tower tookevp the bodies; and scretly interred them in

into the ioies of heaven, leaving their bodies vnto

fuch place, which by the occasion of his death could | knowes where, neuer fince come to light. (20) The continuer of Iohn Harding tels vs from the report of others, that King Richard caused. Sir Robert Erakenburies Priest to close their dead corps in

hooked at the ends with two hookes of iron, and so to cast them into a place called the Blacke-deepes at ti Thames mouth, whereby they should never rise vp, or be any more seene. Wheresoeuer they were buried, thus they died, and by these murtherers. For very certaine it is, and wel knowne, that at fuch time as Sir Iames Tirrell was in the Tower, for Treason committed against King Henrie the seventh, both Dighton and hee were examined, and confessed the murther in manner as is faid, but whether their bodies were removed they could not fay. And thus as

lead, and so to put them in a coffin full of holes, and

I have learned of them that knew much, and little cause had to lie, were these two noble Princes, these innocent tender children borne of most roial blood brought up in great wealth, likely to haue liued, to haueraigned, and ruled in the Realme, by traiterous tyranny taken, deprined of their estates, shortly shut

The faithfull fer ants of the

Herdings consi-

The murtherers confesse the deed, and mane of their death.

Qqqqq2

reuenge vpon Miles Forrest at S. Martins, peece-mealer otted away; Sir James Tyrrell died at Tower hill for treason. Dighten indeed walketh on aliue in good possibility to be hanged ere he die , liuing at Callis no lesse distained Io.Harding. and hated then pointed at of all. King Richard himfelfe as ye fhall hereafter heare, was flaine in the field, Revenge of mur hacked and hewed of his enemies hands, carried on horsebacke dead, his haire in despite torne and tug-

gedlike a Curre dogge : and the mischiese that he tooke was within leffe then three yeeres of the mifchiefe that he did, and yet all the meane time spent in much paine and rouble outward, and much feare, anguish, and forrow within. For I have heard by The guilty con-frience of King Tichard credible report of fuch as were fecret with his Chamberlaine, that after this abhominable deed done, he neuer had quiet in his minde : he neuer thought himselfe sure ; but where he went abroad his eies euer-whirled about, his body priuily fenced, his hand euer on his dagger his countenance & manner like one alwaies readie to strike againe, he tooke il reft a nights, lay long waking and musing, fore wearied with care and watch, rather flumbred then flept, troubled with fearefull dreames, fuddainly sometimes frart vp, leapt out of his Bed, and ranne about the chamber. fo was his restlesse heart continually toffed and tumbled with the tedious impression and flormy remembrance of his abhominable deed. Neither had he in his best, any time of quiet, for Outward enes mies arite against King Richard. immediately began the conspiracy (or rather good confideration) betweene the Duke of Buckingham,

and divers other Gentlemen against him. The forward of (21) Which Duke affoone as Gloucefter woon the fection of the Duke of Buckin-gham towards the Duke of Glodeath of King Edward came to Torke, fent thither in fecret wife a trufty feruant of his, named Perfall, to affure him, that he would take his part in this his new world, and if need were, would waite vpon him with a thousand good-fellowes: and againe sent offers of the like vnto Nottingham, whither the Protector from Yorke, with many Gentlemen of the North Countrey was come, and on his way to Londonward in fecret manner met him himfelfe, but at Northampton openly with three hundred horse; and from thence still continued with him, being a parener of all his deuises, till that after his coronation they de-The Duke of Buck nobles fals in diff he of king parted(as it feemed) very great friends at Glocefter: fro whence as soone as the Duke came home, he so lightly turned from him, and so highly conspired against him, that a man would maruell whereof the change grew. And furely the occasion of their variance is of divers men, diverfely reported; Some have faid, that the Duke a little before the Coronation, a mong other things, required of the Protector, the

Duke of Hertfords Lands, to the which he pretended himselfe iust inheritor. And forasmuch as the Ti-The occasions the Kings and tle which he claimed by inheritance, was formewhat interlaced with the title of the Crowne, by the line of King Henry before deprined, the Protector conceiued fuch indignation, that he rejected the Dukes request, with many spightfull and minatory wordes, which so wounded his heart with hatred and mifirust, that he neuer after could indure to looke aright on King Richard, but ever feared his owne life, fo farre forth, that when the Protector rode through London towards his Coronation, he fained himselfe Ruckingbam fai-ned hunfelte fick ficke, because he would not ride with him : And not to attend K. the other taking it in cuill part, fent him word to rife, and comeride, or he would make him to be carried. Whereupon hee rode on with an euill will, and that not withstanding on the morrow rose from

the Feast, faining himselfe sick, whereat King Richard faid it was done in hatred and despite of him. And they fay that euer after continually each of them liued in such harred and diffrust of other, as the Duke verily looked to have beene murdered at Gloucester: from which neuertheleffe he in faire manner departed. But furely fome right fecret at this day denie Duke of Eurly a. this: and many right wife men thinke it vnlikely Shame (the deepe diffembling nature of both those men confidered, and what need in that greene world the Protector had of the Duke, and in what perill the Duke flood, if he fell once in suspition of the Tyrant)that either the Protector would give the Duke occasion of displeasure, or the Duke the Protector No such fusiti. occasion of ampliants of the Dank en Frotterin Cocasion of mistrust. And verily menthinke, that if King Richard had any such conceiued opinion, he would neuer haue suffered the Duke to haue clear to be well as a was faid to be. ped his hands. (22) The very truth is, Buckingham was an high minded man, and could cuill beare the glory of an-

other; so that I have heard of some that saw it, that opinion of Euc. the Duke at such time as the Crowne was first jet vp. on the Protectors head, his eye could not abide the fight thereof, but wried his face another way. But men fay, that hee was of truth not well at eafe which | The divers opito King Richard was well knowne, and nothing ill nions of the to King Rienara was well knowne, and nothing ill king and Duke taken, nor any demand of the Dukes vincourteoutly falling out, rejected, but he both with great gifts and high behefts in most louing and trustie manner, departed at Gloucester. But soone after his comming home to Brecknock having there in custody by the commandement of King Richard, Doctor Morton Bishop of Ely, who (yee before heard) was taken in the counfell at the Tower, waxed with him familiar: whose wisedome abused his pride to his owne deliuerance, and the Dukes destruction. (23) This Bishop was a man of great naturall

wit; very well learned, and honourable in behaulour, lacking no wife waies to winne fauour : he had been The flory of fast vpon the part of King Henry, while that part was Bishop Meria in wealth; and naytheleffe left it not, nor forfooke it in woe, but fled the Realme with the Queen & the Prince, while King Edward had Henry in prison, and neuer came home but to the field. After which loft and that fide veterly subdued, the other for his fast faith and wiledome not only was content to receive | Martin wood him, but also wood him to come, and had him from who king Edthence forth both in great fecret truft, and very fpeciall fauour, which he nothing deceived. For he being (as you have heard) after King Edwards death, first taken by the Tyrant for his trueth to the King, found the meanes to fet this Duke in his top, joined Gendemen together in aide of King Henry, deuifing first the marriage betweene him and King Edwards daughter: by which his faith, he declared the good Lancafter and fernice to both his mafters at once, with infinite benefit to the Realme, by the conjunction of those two by Bishop Morbloods in one; whose severall titles had long time difquieted the Land; hee fled the Realine, went to Rome, neuer minding more to meddle with the world, till the noble Prince King Heavy the feuenth got him home againe, made him Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancellor of England, whereunto the Pope ioined the honour of a Catdinal! Thus Archbiboo of living many dayes in as much honour, as one man canterbury, Lote might well with, ended them fo godly, that his death Chancellor, and with Gods mercy, well changed his life.

(24) This man therefore, as I was about to tell you by the long and often alternate proofe aswell of prosperitie as aduerse fortunes, had gotten by great His wiledome experience (the very mother or miltrefle of Wife- and experience dome) a deepe infight in politicke worldly dritts-Whereby perceiuing now this Duke glad to commune with him, fed him with faire words, and many pleafant praifes. And perceining by the processe of their communication, the Dukes pride now and then balke out a litle bread of enuy, rowards the glory of the King, and thereby feeling him easis to fall The deepe polout, if the matter were well handled: hee craftily liey of B. Marion, fought

Chap.ig. | Richard III. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 56. fought the wayes to pricke him forward, taking alwayes the occasion of his comming, and keeping things and fuddaine stopping in your communica-

feemed to follow then to leade him. For when the Duke first began to praise & boast of the King, and thew how much profite the Realme should take by his raigne; Morton answered thus: Surely my Lord, The communifolly it were for me to lye, for if I would sweare the Cation of the Duke and D. contrary, your Lordship would not ween I beleeue, but that if the world would have gone, as I could haue wished, King Henries son had had the Crowne, and not King Edward. But after that God had ordered him to lose it, and King Edward to raigne, I was neuer fo mad, that I would with a dead man firiue against a quicke. So was I to King Edward a taithfull Chapplaine, and glad would have beene, that his child should have succeeded him. Howbeit, if the fecret indgement of God haue otherwise provided, I purpose not to spurne against the pricke, nor labor to fet vp, that God putteth downe. And as for the late protector and now King; and even there he left: faying, that hee had already medled too much with the world, and would from that day meddle with his Booke and his Beades, and no further. (24) Then longed the Duke fore to heare what he would have faid, because he ended with the king and there so suddainly stopped, and exhorted him

so familiarly betweene them twaine, to be boide

to fay whatfoever hethought, whereof he faithful

ly promifed there should never come hurt, and per-

aduenture more good then he would weene, and

that himselfe intended to vse his faithfull secretad-

uise and counsell, which he said was the only cause

for which he procured of the King to have him in

himselfe fo close within his bounds, that hee rather

to reueale his

It is dangerous to deale in Prin

A pretty tale pithily applied.

his cuftody, where he might account himselfe at home, and else had he beene put in the hands of them with whom he should not have found the like fauour. The Bishop right humbly thanked him and said: In good faith my Lord, I loue not to talke much of Princes, as a thing not all out of perill though the word be without fault. Foralmuch as it shall not be taken as the party meant it, but as it pleaseth the Prince to construe it. And euer I think on Afops tale, that when the Lyon had proclaimed vpon paine of death there should no horned heast abide in the wood, one that had in his forehead a bunch of flesh, fled away a great pace. The foxe who saw him runne so fast, asked him whether, he made all that hafte? and he answered, In faith, I neither wot, nor recke, so I were once hence, because of this Proclamation made against horned beasts. What foole (quoth the Foxe) thou maist abide well enough, the Lion meant not thee, for it is no horne that is in thy head. No mary (quoth he) that wot I wellynough, but what if he call it a horne, where am I then ? The Duke laughed merrily at the tale, and faid, my Lord I warrant you, neither the Lion nor the Boare shall picke any matter at any thing heere spoken, for it shall neuer come to their eares. In good faith Sir, faid the Bishop, if it did, the thing that I was about to fay, (taken aswell as afore God I meant it) could deferue but thankes; and yet taken more to wit what it was; whereupon the Bishop

as I weene it would, might happely turne me to litle good, and you to leffe. Then longed the Duke vet faid, in good faith my Lord, as for the late Protector. fith he is now King in possession, I purpose not to dispute his title, but for the weale of this Realme, wherof his Grace hath now the gouernance, and my felfe am a poore member, I was about to wish, that to those good abilities, whereof hee hath already right many, little needing my praise, it might yet have pleased God for the better store, to have giuen him some of such other excellent vertues meet for the rule of a Realme as our Lord hath planted in the person of your Grace; and there left a-(25) The Duke formewhat maruailing athis fuddaine paules, said: My Lord, I note your often brea-

come to any direct or perfect fentence in conclusion, whereby either I might have knowledge what your intent is now towards the King, or what affe-Gion you beare towards mee. For the comparison of good qualities ascribed to vs both, maketh mee not a little to muse, thinking that you have some other printe imagination imprinted in your heart, which you bee abashed to disclose, and specially to me, which on my honour doe affure you to be as fecret in this cafe as the deafe and dumbe person to The Duker pre the finger, or the Tree to the Hunter. The Bishop testation being somewhat bolder, considering the Dukes promile, but most of all animated; because hee knew the Duke desirous to be magnified, and also he perceined the inward hatred which hee bare towards King Richard, hee opened his stomacke to the bottome, and faid: My fingular good Lord, fith the time of my captinitie, which being in your graces custodie, I may rather call it a libertie, then a strait imprifonment, in avoiding of idleneffe mother of all vices, in reading bookes and ancient pamphlets, I have founde this tentence written; that no man is borne free and at libertie of himselfe onely: for one part of dutie he oweth to his parents, another part to his friends and kindred; but the native Countrey The delite of all in the which he first rasted this pleasant & flattering world, demandeth a debt not to be forgotte. Which faying, caufeth mee to confider in what cafe the Realme, my native Countrey, now standerh; and in what estate and assurance before this time it hath continued; what gouernour we now haue, and what ruler wee might haue; for I plainely perceive (the Realme being in this case) must needes decay, and be brought to confusion : but one hope I have that is, when I confider your noble personage, your juflice and indifferencie, your feruent zeale and ardent loue towards your natural! Countrey; and in like manner, the loue of your countrey towards you, the great learning, pregnant wit, and eloquence, which to much doth abound in your person; I must needs thinke this Realme fortunate, which hath such a Prince in store, meete and apt to bee Gouernour. But on the other fide, when I call to memory the good qualities of the late Protector, and now ealled King, so violated by tyranny, so altered by vsurped authoritie, and so clouded by blind ambition, I must state voder the needs fay, that hee is neither meet to bee King of for tyranny of the noble a Realme, nor fo famous a Realme meet to be gouerned by such a tyrant, Was not his first enterprise to obtaine the Crowne, begunne by the murther of divers personages? did hee not secondarily proceed against his owne natural mother; declaring her openly to be a woman given to carnall affection and diffolute living? declaring furthermore, his two brethren and two Nephewes to bee bastards, and to bee borne in adultery? yet not contented, after hee had obtained the Garland, he caused the two poore innocents his Nephewes, committed to him, to bee most shamefully murthered: the blood of which Blood cryeth littie babes daily cry to God from the earth for vent for bloody rengeance. What furery can be in this Land to any per- geance, ion, either for life or goods, vnder fuch a cruell Prince, which regardeth not the destruction of his owne blood, and much leffe the loffe of others. But now to conclude, what I meane towards your

noble person, I say & affirme, if you loue God, your

linage, or your native countrey, you must your selfe

will refuse to take vpon you the Crowne of this

Realme, then I adjure you by the faith you owe vn-

to God, to denile fome wayes how this Realme may

bee brought to some convenient regiment, under

fome good Gouernour. When the Bishop hap

tion; fo that to my intelligence, your wordes neither

717

take vpon you the Crowne of this Realme, both for the maintenance of the honour of the fame, as also The Bishop per for the deliuerance of your naturall countreymen. Duketo take the from the bondage of fuch a tyrant. And if your felfe Crowne vato

Edward Hall

and truly obserue, except he be elected of God.as K.

waighty charge of a King. (27) But further-I remembred, that if I once took vpon me the Gouernance of the Realme, the daughters of King Edward and their Allies, being both for his fake much beloued, and also for the great injurie done to them much pittied, would never crase to barke at the one side of me. Semblably my cosin the Earle of Richmond, his aides and kinifolkes will furely attempt cither to bite, or to pierce me on the other fide, to that my life and rule fhould ener hang

Henry Exple o

must make the

more of that matter, and now am bent, that the Earle of Richmond heire of the house of Lancaster,

who ever favoured the house of Lancaster, was wondrous joyfull, for all his imagination tended to this effect; and left the Dukes courage should affwage or his minde alter, he faid to the Duke: My I ord of Buckingham, fith by Gods provision, and your in-

Reinold Evay, the

the Bishop ere the Dukes company were affembled.

fage to the Counteffe, no meruaile if shee were glad; wherefore

er. Thus standing in a wavering ambiguity, I considered first, the office, duety, and paine of a King, which furely I thinke that no mortall man can justly

unquiet in doubt of death or depolition: And if the faid two linages of Torke and Lancaster should joine in one against me, then were I furely matched. Wherfore I have cleerelie determined, vtterly to relinquish all imaginations concerning the obtaining of the Crown. For as I told you, the Counteffe of Richmond in my returne from the new named King, meeting me in the high way, praied me first for kindreds the communitate, secondly for the loue I bare to my Grandfather easien of the Lake, recondly for the love I bare to my Grandfather

Duke Humfrey, who was fworne brother to her father, to move the King to be good to her former Kern

Richmond with ther to moue the King to be good to her some Hen- the Duke of Busry Earle of Richmond, and to licence him with his fa- kingham. uour to returne againe into England, and if it were his pleafure to to doe, thee promifed that the Earle her fonne should marry one of the Kings daughters at the appointment of the King, without any thing demanded for the faid efpoulals, but only the Kings fauour, which request I soone ouerpassed and departed. But after in my lodging I called to memory

fhall take to wife Lady Elizabeth eldest daughter to King Edward, by the which marriage both the houses Ladie Elizabeth of Yorke and Lancafter may be vnited in one. (28) When the Duke had faid, Bifbop Morton

comparable wildome, this noble conjunction is first moued, it is necessary to consider what persons we shall first make prime of this politicke conclusion. By my troth (quoth the Duke) we will begin with my Ladie of kickmond the Earles mother, which knoweth where he is in Britaine; fith you will begin that way (faid the Bifhop) I have an old friend with With whom and the Countesse, called Reinald Bray, for whom I shall how to begin the fend, if it be your picafure : fo the Bishop wrote for figues. him to come to Brecknock, who straite came backe with the messenger, where the Duke and Bishop declared what they had deuised for the preferment of the Earle of Richmond, fonne to his Ladyand Mistresse: willing her first to compasse how to obtaine the goodwill of Queene Elizabeth, and also of her eldeft daughter : and after fecretly to fend to her fonne in Britaine, to declare what high honour was prepared for him, if he would sweare to marrie the Ladie Elizabeth affoone as hee was King of the Realme. With which conclusion, Reinold Bray with a glad heart returned to the Counteffe his Lady. Bray thus Inf departed, the Bishop told the Duke, that if he were in his Ifle of Ely, he could make many friends to further their enterprise. The Duke knew this to bee true, but yet loth to loofe the fociety of fuch a Counfellor, gaue him faire words, faying, he should shortly depart well accompanied for feare of enemies, but

secretly disgnised, in a night departed and came to E-ly, where he found money and friends, and then sai-preciously disled into Flaunders, where he did the Earle of Richmond guiled (29) When Reinold Bray had declared his mef(hap.19. Richard IIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 56.

Lewis 2 Phifician another Juftru-

wherefore thee denifed a means how to breake this which the Duke promifed, & afterwards performed: wherupon the Earle fent back again Hugh Conway, & matter to Queen Elizabeth, being then in Sanctuary at Westminster, and having in her family a certaine Th.Ramney to declare his coming shortly into Englid. Welshman called Lewis learned in Philicke, now having oportunity to breake her minde vnto him, declared that the time was come, that her sonne should be joined in marriage with Lady Elizabeth, daughter and heire to King Edward : and that King Richard should out of all honour and estate be delected, and required him to goe to Queene Elizabeth not as a messenger, but as one that came friendlie to visite her, and as time and place should serue to make her priny of this deuise. This Philitian with good

Lewis breaketh

diligence repaired to the Queene, and when he law time convenient faid vnto her : Madame although my imagination be very simple, yet for the entire affection I beare to you and to your children, I am fo bolde to vtter vnto you a secret conceit, which I haue compassed in my braine. When I remember the great loffe which you have fustained by the death of your louing husband, and the great forrow that you have suffered by the cruell murder of your innoing wordes, commanding him without delay to cent 'children, I can no leffe doe, then daily study repaire to his presence : vnto which the Duke made how to bring your heart to comfort, and also to rea determinate answere that hee would not come to | fusesh to come uenge the quarrell of you and your children, on that his mortall enemy: and immediately prepared war to the Court, cruell tyrant King Richard. And first consider what again@him. Whereupon Thomas Marquesse Dorbattel, and what mischiese haue rifen by the diffenfet came out of Sanctuary, and gathered a great band tion betweene the two houses of Torke and Lanca of men in the County of Yorke, Sir Edward Courtney Commotion and Peter his brother, Bishoppe of Excester, raised a- begun. nother Armie in Deuonsbire and Cormwall, and in

fler, which two families if they may be joined in one I doubt not but that your line shall be again restored to your great toy & comfort: you know Madam, that of the house of Lancaster, the Earle of Richmund is danghter to her next of bloud, & to the house of York your daughters now are heirs. If you could denife the means how to couple your eldest daughter with the Earle of Rich. mund in matrimony, no doubt, but that the viurper

should shortly bee deposed, and your heire againe to her right reftored. (30) When the Queene had heard this friendly Motion, thee instantly befought him, that as he had beene the first inuentor of so good an enterprise,

should assist and take part with the Earle of Rich-

mund her fonne, so that hee would take an oath, that

after the Kingdome obtained, to espouse the Lady

Elizabeth her daughter, &c. M. Lewis fo fped his

busines, that he made a finall end of this businesse,

betweene the two mothers: fo the Lady Margaret

Countesse of Richmund, brought to a good hope of

the preferment of her fon, made Reinold Bray chiefe

soliciter of this conspiracy, giving him in charge se-cretly to inucagle such persons of Nobility to soyne

(31) This Reinold Bray within few dayer

him that the Duke of Buckingham was one of the first

that now hee would not defift to follow the fame, requiring him further, that he would refort to the Counteffe of Richmand, mother to the Earle Henrie, and to declare to her on the Queenes behalfe. The Queenc that all the friends of King Edward her husband

The two mo-

with her, & take her part, as he knew to be faithfull brought to his luer Sir Giles Daubeny, Sir John Cheinie Knights, Richard Guilford, and Thomas Ramney

Esquiers, and others, In the meane while the Coungainst K. Richard teffe of Richmund fent one Christopher Vrfewicke, a Vr/wicke fent in-Priest into Britaine, to the Earle of Richmund her fonne, to declare to him all the agreements between her and the Queene agreede: and with all to shew

Hugh Courses fent into Britain.

Earle Richmand

the Duke of

Inuenters of this enterprife: fhee likewife fent Hugh brought up tenderly by him, and rifen to great Conway an Esquire into Britame with a great summe wealth and esteeme, his name was Humfrey Baniof money, giving him in charge to declare to the Earle, the great loue that the most part of the Nowhither the distressed Duke in disguise repaired, inbility of the Realme bare towards him, willing him tending there to remain fecret, vntil he might either not to neglect fo good an occasion offered, but with raife a new power, or elfe by some meanes conuay ail speed to setle his mind how to return into Enghimselfe vnto Britaine to Henry Earle of Richmund: land, and therewithall admising him to take land in but as soone as the others which had attempted Wales. When the Earle had received this joyfull mefthe same enterprise against the King, had knowledge fage, hee brake to the Duke of Britaine all his fecrets. that Buckingham was forfaken of his Company, and advertifing him thathe was entred into a fure & fledfast hope to obtaine the Crown of England, defiring

(32) In the meane season the chiefe of the conspiracy in England beganne many enterprises, which being neuer fo privily handled, yet knowledge therof came to King Richard, and because hee knew the Duke of Buckingham to be the chiefe head, and aide of this combination; he thought it most necessarie to plucke him from that part, and thereupon addreffed his louing letters vnto the Duke, requesting him most carnestly to come to the Court, whose The Deke of graue aduise for counsell hee then stood much in Exchingham is fenz for by the need of; with many words of kind complements to bee vttered from the mouth of the meffenger: but the Duke mistrusting those sweet promises proceeded out of a bitter intent, and knowing K. Rithard to speak most fayrest when he means foulest play, defired the king of pardon, excufing himfelf that he was fickly & not wel able to trauel: which excuse the king would not admit, but fent other letters with check-

ched towardes Salisbury, thinking it not best to

disparkle his power into small parts in pursuing

his enemies every way at once, and therfore omit-

ting all others with a great puissance went to set vp-on the Duke of Buckingham, the head of the spring.

The Duke hearing of the Kings approach, made out

had enforced to follow him, more by his Lordly

commandement then by liberall wages, which thing

indeed was the cause that they fell off, and for sooke

him. His march was through the forrest of Deane,

intending for Glocester, where hee meant to passe se-

uer, nor his complices any wife come vnto him .

during which time the Welfhmen lingring idle, with-

our wages, or victual, sodainclie brake vp Campe

and departed; whereupon the Duke was wonde-

rously perplexed, not knowing how to recouer this

unfortunate chance, and destitute of power, to shew

himseife in field, sought to secure himselfe in secret,

(34) A servant he had in especiall favour & truft

till deftiny affigned him a better day.

uerne, and so have joined his Army with the Court-

The Duke of

Kent, Sir Richard Guilford, and other Gentlemen raised a Company, and all this was done euen in one (33) King Richard rouzed from his pleasures in

progresse, sent forth commission to muster his King Rieborth men, and with a great preparation from London mar-

to meet him before hee came too farre, accompani-The Duke oreed with a great power of wild Welfinnen, whom hee

neys, & other Western men, which had he done, no doubt K. Richard had been in great icopardie. But before hee could attaine the Seuerne side, by force of continual raine the river rose so high, that it o-uerflowed all the country adjoyning, and was not letted that the againe bounded within his owne bankes for the space of ten dayes, so that the Duke could not get o-

The Dake of fler, and place of residence necre vnto Shrewsburie, peth in secret.

could not be found, as men ftrucke in foodaine feare The Confpira-

- emphass.

7:8

The next dayer

The Doke dif-

ynto the Bishop

The Protector

crowne till the

Prince came i

The Proceeding

Change of State

change of man-

Whysuckingham fell from the

defined the

(26) The next day the Duke fent for the Bishop,

to whom hee faid, My Lord of Ely, I must needs in

heart thinke, and with mouth confesse, that you bee

a fure friend, a truftie counsellor, and a very louer of

your countrey. And fith that at our last commu-

nication, you have disclosed the secrets of your hart

touching the now viurper of the crown, & also have

alittle touched the advancement of the two noble

families of Yorke and Langaster, I shall likewise de-

clare vnto you my privie intents and fecret cogita-tions. And to beginne, when King Edward was

deceased, I then began to studie, and with delibera-

tion to ponder in what manner this Realme should

be gouerned: I perfwaded with my felfe to take part

with the Duke of Gloucester, whom I thought to be

as cleane without diffirmulation, as tractable without

iniurie, and fo by my means he was made Protector

both of the King and Realm; which authoritie being

once gotten, he neger ceased printly to require mee

and other Lords aswell spirituall as temporall, that

he might take vpon him the Crowne, till the Prince

came to the age of foure and twenty yeres, and were

able to gouerne the Realme as a fufficient King:

which thing, when hee law me fomewhat flicke at,

hee then brought in instruments, authenticke Do-

ctors, Proctors, and Notaries of the Law, with depo-

fitions of divers witnesses, testilying King Edwards children to bee bastards: which depositions then I

thought to be as true, as now I know them to bee

fained. When the faid depositions were before vs

read, and diligently heard, he flood up bare headed,

faying: well my Lords, even as I and you would that my

Nephewes (bould have no wrong : (o I pray you doe mee

nothing but right, for these witnesses and sayings of fa-

mous Doctors bee true: For I am onely the undubitate

heire to Richard Plantagenet Duke of Yorke, adjudged to

be the very heire to the Crowne of this Realme by autho-

ritie of Parliament. Which things fo by learned men

for veritie to vs declared, caused mee and others to

take him for our lawfull and undoubted Prince and

Soueraigne Lord. So againe by my ayde, hee of a

Protector was made a King: but when he was once

crowned King, and in full possession of the Realme,

hee cast away his old conditions. For when I my

felfe fued to him for my part of the Earle of Hert-

fords Lands, which his brother Edward wrongfully

deteined from me, and also required to have the of-

fice of the high Constableship of England, as divers

of my noble ancestors before this time have had,

and in long discent continued; in this my first fuire,

hee did not only first delay mee, and afterwards deny

me, but gaue mee fuch vnkinde words, as though I

had neuer furthered him: all which I suffered pa-

tiently. But when I was informed of the death of

the two young Innocents, O Lord, my heart inward-

ly grudged, infomuch as I abhorred the fight of him;

I took my leave of the Court, and returned to Breek-

nocke to you, but in my iourney as I came, I had di-

ners imaginations how to deprine this vnnaturall

vncle. First, I fantasied, that if I list to take vpon

me the Crowne, now wasthe way made plaine, and

occasion given. For I well faw bee was disdained of

the Lords Temporall, and accurfed of the Lordes

Spirituall. After divers cogitations of this matter,

as I rode betweene Worcester and Bridgeworth, I en-

countred with the Lady Margaret Counteffe of

Richmund, now wife to the Lord Stanley, who is the

very daughter, and fole heire to John Duke of Som-

mer fet my Grandfathers elder brother, so that she &

her sonne Henry Earle of Riehmund be both between

me and the gate, to enter into the Maiestie roiall, &

getting of the Crowne; and when wee had a little

communed concerning her fonne, and were depar-

ted, I then beganne to dispute with my selfe, wha-

ther I were best to take it vpon me, by the election of

shifted every one for himselfe, many of them taking him of help towards the archieuing of his enterprise, Sanctuary, but the most of the chiefest took into Bri-Ppppp 2

		all night, and in the morning arrived in the mouth		i i	the Dukes Court, could have no communication		
. 0	The state of Day	of Page in the County of Deriet, where nec might			with him he lying extremely ficke, and his wire road		h of
rle "		behold the Shore full of men thining in armour, to	- 1	i i	weake to entertaine discourse. Wheremon Peter	all shart and and want due teleplation amo	ngſŧ
. #		his great amalement, whereupon hee fent out his	1	Peter Landa (e.		all that honour antiquity and glorious fludies.	But
		hippe-boat toknow whether they were friends or	A fubile traine	Peter Landoje.	great authority, tooke the motion into hand water		icto
E	Wall House Hinging brother to Ci- to Dawn	enemies . their answere was, that they were thither	laid for the Earl.	1	whom the English Ambassadors promised all		
I	LOIG WELS, Sil Root Williams 1.11 Cin	appointed by the Duke of Buckinghm, to attend the	1		the Earles Reuenews if he could bring King Richards	(41) Whose beginnings thus forwarded by	the
10	Cin william Berke	comming of the Earle of Richmund, to conduct him	1		request to passe. He greedy of gaine, and being in	Duke of Britaine and the French King; drew m	any
I	THE CHEMIC WILLIAMS ENG DICEITE IN OUR TO THE	in fafery to the Duke, who lay encamped not far off,	1	Lando (e promi-			
14	y, 311 Alenara Lageroniot, and on it many	that following their forces, they might profecute	1	fed to deliuer th	the conditionally that King Rechard would make good	per with an extreme leare; therefore to accomp	li fb
1	amara rumingi ali caccinene Captaningano	Richard the viurger, who being in a maner defticute	1	Earle.	his offer. Thus whilest messengers posted betwixt Pe-		
١,	(3)) Buthar a thus tutte product at 1 Comes doi	of men was fore distracted, and deliberate in his	ì	1	ter and Richard, Iohn Bishop of Elie being then in	to batte his hooke yet another way. The rirle	ĭ
1	ly lectic, his hopes were encicaled, and land he	owne defignes. These smooth vutruthes notwith-	i	1	Flaunders, was certified by Christopher Vr wicke of all	knew stood with the daughters of King Edward (sonnes being murdered) and among them to La	his
.]	icite, yet being at thee posterior	Sanding Forle Henry applied, and with a forward	- 1	Eishop Morton		fonnes being murdered) and among them to La	die
1	Offinialided the Poles to be received and and	gale returned to Normandy whence he tent Metten-	Earle Henry res	grueth Henry no tice of his dan-	Richon with all a office for the whereupon the	Excapero the eldert, whole marriage he well few m	ան
- 1	no that Ruckingham was not ned with the icu, made	gers vato young Charles King of France, whole fa-	turneth into	ger.	Bishop with all possible hast, fent the same intelli-	bring rest the Crowne. But that once differ	ed
1	proclamation for the apprehending of that Duke,	ther King Lewis was lately departed this life, to have	Britaine-	544-	gence the fame day, and by the fame man vnto Barle	his fireame of it felfe could beare no great floate	105
-	promiting a thousand pound to the man that could	his fafe conduct to returne into Britaine, which easi-			Henry in Britain, willing him to shift himself and fol-	bring any inundation into the I and and theref	nea.
		ly was granted with fauourable complements retur-	! !	1000	lowers into France: who forthwith fent Fr fwick vnto	Queene Elizabeth in Sanctuary must be Court	ed
		ned to the Earle. Lord Henry thus croffed by fea,		King Charles	King Charles to have his licence that he might with	that her daughters might come to Court, and the	ore
- 1	Construct hee made tree. Bamiter minding the pice	had prefent news of Bucking hams furprife and death,	١ ١	granteth his fafe conduct to Hes-	1 815 2000 liking come into his dominions which he	be regarded according to their degrees. This	6
- 1	Gene, and forgetting what was pait, ipread his	had present news of bucking wars the price and death,	1	ria.	ing obtained he called the other Lords under near	cunningly was carried, by men that could car	10
- 1		with the flight of the Nobles escaped from Richard:	The Lords meet		tence to vitite the licke Duke to escape into Ariou	themselves to fit womens affections, that the Ki	ry
- 1	of this gaine, made no confeience to betray his own	who meeting with Eichmundin Britaine, fell forth-	ia Eritaine.	1	and two dates after changing his Apparrell with his	was purged of the murder of her fonnes; thee ma	ug
	I ord who had now laid his life vpon truit in his	with into Countell: where first it was determined			leruant waited upon him seupon his Mades and	to beleene that her felfe was respected a Dowag	qe
i		that Earle Henry should take his oath to espouse the		Earle Henry hard- ly escaped.	" ited thence into France: whose escape when the	Oneene and Geerin lawrent and a Dowage	cr
۱ ا	Shrewsbury, reuealed the Duke, who difguifed like a	I adv The shatheldest dangheer unto King Edward.	! !	-Jerespee	I I traducer neard or, he lentalter to annehend him	Queene, and lifter in law to the present King, ar	id
icd		and the immediate heire to the Crowne, which hee			and that in such hast as at his entrance into the	I that fithlelle had a Prince and many Princely Deep	-
in-	vnto Banisters house, was apprehended, and with a	folemply did in the Church at Rhedon; and they	The Lords wear	1	French dominions they were hard at his heeles	most fit matches for those Princes her daughter	5;
	great guard of men was brought vnto Salisbury,	for their parts (ware vnto him feaky, doing him ho-	fealty vato Heavy	. 1	(40) This fuddaine flight of the Earle and of the	that her some Thomas Marquesse Dorset, whilst	he
-	where King Richard then lay, and where without	mage with no leffe respect then vato their sole and	į į	1	other English Lords, the Duke of Britaine (being form-		
	where king kithara then ray, and where when the				what recourred of his dangerous ficknes) tooke very	ferments intended to himward; and laftly requiring	ıg İ
	arraignement or indgement, vpon the fecond of	(27) Of these proceedings King Richard 100ne		1	green on the impuring it a green differ a comment	a reconciliation with the Queene, forgane all ini	1-1
٠	Nouember he loft his head: whose death was the			1	greeuoully, imputing it a great dishonour vnto him- selfe, to suffer the least suspect of breach betwist him	Fice vitered against him out of her womenish - of	n i
	leffe lamented, for that himfelfe had been the chiefe	and all pension and sad he returned out of the West		The Duke of Bri	and the Earle, and therefore fore offended at Landofe	ons, with a most willing heart; and indeed the	C
	Instrument to set the Crowne wrongfully vpon	towards London, where to cut off the hopes of Rich-	Henry & others	taise displeased at Landose,	whom he for and therefore fore offended at Landofe	Inchengers were tuch Crates-matters as they be one	1+1
	Ruhards head: and yet the treachery of Banifier				whom he suspected to be deepe in the deed, he sent		
		affembled at Westminster, and therein attainted the	Parliament.	The honorable	for Edward Woodsile and Edward Pownings two Eng-	her beleeve that their words were his heart. Where	-12
	ned not onely in the lotte of his reward production.	faid Earle Henry himfelfe, and all fuch as had flee	il	dealings of the Duke of Britains.	lish Esquires, vnto whom he delinered a summe of		
	which he never had and infamy received, neuer ar-	the land in his behalfe, enacting them enemies to	3	Duke of Britaine.		der of her fonnes, the dishonour of her husband, th	_ d
h		the land in his behave, enacting twent the mes to		1	a conney vnto all the rest of the English, to depart	baftardy of their Children, and her owne feanda	1
it h-	are thus reported; his eldeft fonne and heire tell	their naturall Country, their goods to be confilea			Vannes, Dearing all their charges till they came to		
n-		ted, and all their lands and possessions to be seised	1		their Earle in France. Neither was King Charles	the made to I adv. Manager Full The	e l
	Gecond forme became deformed in his limmes, and	vpon to the Kings vie, which was so forwarded by	1	1	backward to forward Earle Richmond against the	for Sorcery: nor remembring the faithfull promif fhee made to Lady Margaret Earle Henries mother fhee delinered her fine daughters as lambes commit red to the rauening wolfe, in which act of hers i	> K
	fell lame, his third (onne was drowned in a imail)	his lewd Counsellors, and so executed by his faw	-	1	Tyrant and Viurper of the English Crowne And	and so shareness and the daughters as lambes commit	- a
	Julia a Countries his eldels danghter was localised	ning followers, that some better affected, set forth	1	Isin Farle of Or-	the more to loy Henry, John Earle of Oxford impri- foned by King Edward the fourth in the Cassle of Hammes; with Cappaine Blust his because and Sign	ted to the rauening wolfe, in which act of hers i feene the weakenes of that Sexe, and the ambition	5 T)
	strucke with a foule leprosie, and himselfe being of	the present and oppressed estate in these scoffin	3	ford commeth to	1 10000 DV King Edward the fourth in the College		
	extreame age, was arraigned and found guilty of	rimes, to their further difgrace, disulging the	r	Earle Henry.	Hammes, with Captaine Blunt his keeper, and Sir	whereunto by nature they are inclined, for present	-
	extreame age, was attaigned and round garay	names in manner as followeth;	1	1 1	Iohn Fortescue Porter of Callis, came vnto Earle Hen-	ly vpon the delinery of her daughters, thee fent pri-	-
	murder, and by his Clergy faued his life. (36) An other Commotion at the same time	The cat, the rat, and Louell the dogge,			y to take their fortunes in following of his. This	uily for the Lord Marquesse Dorset her some, there residing in Paris, willing him to design from the	
on.	(36) An other Commotion at the Mail time	Pule all England under a hoppe.	1		Earle of Oxford, 2s we have feene, was a continual	reliding in Para, willing him to delift from the	1 60
э.	was in Kent, where George Browne and John Gilford	Alluding to the names of Ratcliffe the Kings mi	[-]	1 1	aider of King Henry the fixt, against his opposite K.		
	Knights, Foge, Scot, Clifford, and Bonting, with fine	chieuous Minion, and of Catesby his secret traduce	. 1	1 1	Edward and had descent the opposite K.	promised him preferment, and that her selfcand	i be
	thouland men attempted great matters at Granes-	and to the Kings cognizance, which was the Boare		1 1	Edward, and had done many services in the Lancastri-	daughters were in high fauour, all injuries on both	ıl.
	end, but hearing of the Duke of Buckinghams fur-	for which William Callingharne Elopier, who ha	d william Colling-	Iohn Earle of Ox-	ans cause, till destiny had cast downe the hopes of	parts forginen and forgotten.	1
		for which William Collingborne Esquier, who ha been Shiriffe of Wilssbire and Dorfetsbire, was con	perme executed	fordin great fa-	their fide. Him therefore Earle Henry made his	(42) This entrance made vnto the Tragedy in	-1
	King Richard perceived how hee was every where	demned, and vponthe Towerhill executed with	for the time.	ford in great fa- nour with Hen-	chiefe Counsellor for warre, as for experience, poli-	tended, to furnish the flore and finish the Score of	cł .
d bc	hefer, he lent one Thomas Hutton vnto Francis Duke	demined, and spontage I ower man executed with	-1	rue,	cy, valour, and faith in that butines, no man was		
ac Mis	- Frank in with proffers of gold to circumitent and	extremity. (38) King Richards state standing in dangers		1 1	more meete. Whose prowesse further appeared	WAO ONCIVIOW ROOD IN the I vrants way, her death	
	imprison Farle Heary, who as hee feared was too	(38) King Kieneras trace transing in dangers			when Earle Henry wan the wreath at Bofworth field,	he meant should give life to his intruded regencie,	K
		broad, and not altogether free from conspiracies	-		where, in the Front of that Battell he lead the band	and adde a further Claime and firength to the pof-	1
	doed this Hutton well perceited, and to to the King	home heethought it belt policy to enter amit	ie i	1 1	of Archers, and euer after lived in orear fanour with	fession which he already had, by matching with his	1
	reported that the Duke was nothing forward to	with Scotland, which heedid for the terme of the	e i	1 1	this King Henry the feuenth, and in great honour	Neece the next heire vnto the Crowne the Lady E-	1
	hire at this baite, wherenpon, thole that lately fied !	yeeres, and the more firme to affure himfelfe	ot K Richard ma-	Biftop Fax in	died the fourth yeere of King Henry the eight. In the	lizabeth, the let onely resting that himselfe had a	1
	England, were indited of treason, and other of Hen-	that King, hee intreated a marriage betwixt th	ne seatend	great factor with	like trust for Counsell and fauour with these Kings.	wife the let onery reiting that himlelte had a	1
	ries factions beheaded, whereof Sir George Browne,	Duke of Rothfar the kings elder ionne, and the L	2-	King Howy.	was Richard Fox Doctor of Diminitie, who being	wife, her death therefore must immediately bee	1
	and Sir Roger Clifford Knights with foure others	dy de la Pole daughter to John Duke of Suffolke, ar	d)	1 1	then a student in Paris, was found by Earle Richmond	fought, yet so as the honorable repute of his name	
	and Sir Roger Cuffora Kinglis With Toute believe	to the Dutchesse Elizabeth king Richards owne	î-	1 !	to be the chiefest man for imploiment in his French	flould no waies be impeached, euer carrying him-	
	were beheaded at London, and at Exceter for the like	ther whom hee to much favoured, as that after the	ne i	1 . 1	busines which he so mandends and Sint Call	selfe in outward semblance for a good religious ho-	
bre-	cause dyed Sir Thomas Sentleger, who had married	death of his owne fonne, he proclaimed lohn Ear	le l		bulines, which he fo prudently and faithfully effe-	neft man, and much delirous that his people should	I
be-		of Lincolne, her sonne and his Nephew, heireapp	a-	1	cted, as the Earle being King, acknowledging him	account him to. First therefore he began to lamenr	
		rant to the Crowne of England, disinheriting Kin	19	1	one of his principall advancers, made him of his Pri-	the parrennes of his wines wombe, and the orear	Ki:
	winted Crowne: and that nothing include later [Edwards daughters, whose brothers hee had before	o Iob de la Pole	1	uie Councell, Lord Privie Seale, and raifed him to	dangers that the Realme was like to fustaine if	, tai
	t to unpromident torelight, the coalls nee mored with		proclaimed	1	very great places in Church and Common-wealth,	himselse should die Issulesse, complaining often	}
	Armier of men furnished the Ports with Hore of	murdered.	proclaimed heire apparant	The preference	and lastly to testifie in what deere esteeme hee held	thereof viito his Nobility, but most especially unto	
	Propision, and made all things ready to withitiand	(39) His feares nothing leffened, but rather da	. y ;	The preferments of Bithop Fax.	him, made him Godfather to his sonne Prince Hen-	*Archbishop Rotheram lately released out of prison,	
	Farle Henries arrivall. Who now having gotten	increased, he attempted once more to stop the Cu	п- :	1 1	rte, who was after King of England with whom in	whereby the Prelate coniectured Queene Anne had	* C
n (bi	1 . 1 CC Cond Paissings with forty velicis Wei	rang which ied to the fpring, to which end he fent !	its	1 1	great reuerence he lined a long time, euen till his eye-	not long to line. Then refrained he her bed vnder	
r) (hi sg <i>l</i> az	"I furnished for faile from thence the twelttii of other	Ambassadours loaden with gold, and many g promises vnto Francis Duke of Britaine, offring	ay Offers made	1 14	fight failed through age, and did many workes of	prefert of Penancy rabing be defeated or	Kin
	ber, but was taken with so terrible a tempest, that his	promises vnto Francis Duke of Britaine, offring	to the Duke of Er	Corpus Christs	piety, whereof Corpus Christi Colledge in Oxford, is	pretext of Penancy, taking her defect as a scourge	
	Fleet was disparkled, some into Normandy, and some	oine him all Richmands lands, and yearely reuent	es	Corpus Christis Colledge in Ox- fird tounded by	and shall be for euer a noble witnes; and his honora-	for his owne finnes, which day and night he fought	Qu
	Piece was disparkied some into wormand, and tone	if he would either fend the faid Earle into England	or	Bishop Fox.		to expiate by praiers: His next pollicy was, how her	
	compelled to returne into Britaine, only the Earles thip with one other kept the Seas, being fore toffed	commit him there vnto prilon. These comming	to		bones of many Saxon Kings, and by him bestowed	death might be wrought with the least suspect of wrong, and how taken when shee was gone: There-	
			he	1 14	bones or many saxon trings, and by mm bettowed	Wrong and how taken when they was as as . The	

22	Richard III. THE SVCCE	SSION OF Monarch 56.	Book 9.	1	flantly intended to revenge it himfelfe; then having	MONARCHS. Monarch 56	
. !	Richard IIJ. TITE 3 VCCE		2001 9.		notice the Earle was at Lithfield, and his partie in-	of the Kings Tenns and all Kings to the keeps	
£	ore as an affay to the Peoples take, he caused it to be	and brought backe againe, though much against,	į	1	creased by daily repaire, incontinently hee marshal-	of the Kings Tents, and the Kings holy vow the broke, the Lord Strange escaped with life, by this ba	15
giuen! o	inen forth that Queene Anne was dead, which was	his will. Thefe things confidered, King Richard to	1	1	led his followers ; and like a valiant Capraine and	tyrants too good a death.	d
AT IS	o commonly divulged, that the rumour thereof	Laffen his array charges diffeharged his Name or fore	King Richard dif.	King Richard fer	s politike leader fet forward his Battailes fine and	(S2) But now the sime on the CD	
	ame to her owne eare, and shee having had suffici-	commanding the welf to watch the shoare; Bea-	chargeth his	forward to mee	fine in a rancke. In the middeft of his moones		
- 1	nt experience of her husbands proceedings, feared		Nauie.	his enemy.	he beltowed the Carriages belonging to his Army:		
- 11	his to be one of his plots, mistrusting (and not with-	call; then giving his affections leave to entertaine		1	and number mounted your white Courier invite		
- 1	out cause) that her life was in danger, whereupon all	more fecurity, faw not the fword that hung ouer his			roned with his Guard, followed by his footmen and	terror in the Beholders hearts, in whose forestront h	С
	difmaid with a lamentable countenance, shee came	head.	1	1	the wings of Horfemen ranged on every fide, with		
	to the King, and with weeping teares demanded,	(46) But Earle Hemie deliuered from the feare		1	2 frowning iteme countenance, but yet in great		
2006	what offence shee had done, that the sentence of	of the Marquesse, thought it not best to prolong		1	Pompee, ntred the towne of Leicester after the Sun	Norfolke, with whom was Thomas Earle of Surrey	t
ath.	death was given against her already. Richard	time, left others vpon like purpofes should bewray		King Richard co mein to Leice-	Was let, being full of indignation and fwelling in	his some, his owne Battaillion was furnished with	9
	made it ftrange to see her so perplext, and with lo-	his intents; and thereupon obtaining a fmall aide of		Metro to Lotte-	anger, which fomewhat he affwaged with threats of	his best approued men of warre, having Horsmen	ןו
1	ning words and smiling semblance, bad her line to	the French with a certaine fumme of money, for		, ,	reuenge.	for wings on both fides of his battel; and being	1
ļ	scandalize report, and to thinke that many yeeres	which the Lord Marquesse (whom he much mistru-	1	1	(49) Earle Richmund from Lichfield departed for	thus ordered for their further incouragement Kin	3
1	were veradded to her life. but whether in conceit!	fted) and Sir Iohn Bourchier were left in pledge, hee		Sir Thomas and	Tamworth, and in the way mer Sir Thomas Rourchier	Richard mounted in place as her hard agement King	3
	for forrow, or of poison, I cannot say, the died short-	fet forward to Ross, and prepared his shipping in the	Fule Bug to	Set Walter Hun-	and Sir Walter Hungerford going towards the King	Richard mounted in place to bee heard, thus faid to his Souldiers.	١,
	lie after, and was solemnely buried in the Abbey of	mouth of Seyn: whither tidings was brought him of	teth forward his	gerfield, turne to	who you this valooked for occasion and knowing	(ca) was continue of the	1
h and	Weltminster	Queene Annes death, & that King Richard purposed	iourney.	Eauchtery.	themselues in what suspition they stood, secretly left	(54) "My faithfull followers, friends, and fe "lected Chieferaines, I contelle by your puiffan 'y lours I first strived to the contest in the contest of the	- 1
	(43) The King thus deliuered from the bands of	to marry Lady Elizabeth: a feare indeed farre excee-	1	1	the company of their Captaine Brakenbury the night	tribunated Chieferaines, I contelle by your puillan	t
	Matrimony, and now a widower at liberty to choose	ding the former. Thee being the Princeffe by whom			following, and wandring in waies vnknowne, with		
	where he would, cast glances of loue towards the	hee must claime, whereupon much distemperature	A fudden force	1	much adoe gotte fa:ely vnto the Earies Com-	IN Obtaining & wearing this I listerne of Imperiol	1 1
hard Lady	Lady Elizabeth his owne brothers daughter, and	arose, enery mans braine working vpon the newes.	a madenicate.	1	panies.	vialetty, and maugre the feditions arremote of al	и
. I	began to court her for his fecond Queene, but the	But after much consultation, it was held the best to		1	(50) In the like danger through darkenesse of	Canacied adderlaries, by your prudent & policile	. 1
1	thing was so offensine to the law of nature, and so	make ouer into England, to interpose the procee-		Hom Earle of	night, Henry himselfe chanced to come; for albeit		
1	directly against the Law of God, as all men abhor-	dings ere the match was fully made, whereupon		Rehmand lefeth	he was a man both valiant and forwad, and by his	"Subjects, as I have omitted nothing I hone appear	. 1
.14:	red the motion, and most of all the maiden her selfe,	Earle Richmund with two thousand men onely, and		Rebmand lofeth	owne wildome could manage his weightieft affaires;		
- 1	which Richard perceiving, hee forbare over earnest	a imall number of thips, fet fayle from Harflest the		ı	Yet now having notice that King Richard with a	mitted anything belonging to the name of Just	1
	pursuite to gaine his time and all fit occasions; but	fitteenth of August, and the seventh day following	Howar of Birk.	1	from army was peere and all the time with a	"of most prudent Counsellors. And albeit, that in the getting of the Garlad I was prouoked by finisher "Counsell and Galand I was prouoked by finisher	P
	most especially, having no leasure to woo, his sub-	arrived at Milford haven in Wales, where taking	mend gritteth at		ftrong army was neere, and that his father in law, the Lord Stanley stood as a Neuter, he was strucke deepe	the gerting of the Garlad I was prouoked by finister	6
	ie to on al fides daily repoliting and his Nobles more t	land hee came vnto Dale, and thence the next day	Milford hauen.		in his dumps, and wish trucke deepe	i Counter, and requeed by a diapolical tempration	14
	and more had in (i) fned - among whom one was	marched to Hereford west, ten miles into the Maine.			in his dumps, and with twenty light Horfe-men lin-	1 TO COINE 2 most wicked & detellable A.A. the wish	
Earle of	and more had in suspect; among whom one was Lord Thomas Stanley Earle of Darby who had mani-	from thence he marched to Cardigan, where he had		1	gering behind, fo terioufly musing what was to bee	"talt feares and straite pennance I have. I rouft ex-	1
uch ful-	ed Lady Margaret Counteffe of Richmund, Earle	newes that the Country was forelaid against him	1	i	done, as laftly, he loft the fight of his Hoft, and by the	i " Plated that hamous offence - which shoming he	1
uch fuf the	Henries owne mother: him therefore hee most mi-	but finding that vntrue, he made still forward, bea-	1 .	1	darkeneffe of night miffed his way; neither durft he	ctime, I delire you as clearely to forget as I daily	
	frusted, and before he would admit his departure			1	for the Kings Scout-watch demand direction to	"remember to deplore and lament. If you will now	ı
	from Court, he commanded him to leave his fonne	ting downe such Houlds as held against him: then fending secretly to Lady Margaret his mother, to	1	1	Tamworth, but lay in a small village about three	"Vonchiate to call to minde in what do G me al A J	1
	and heire George Stanley the Lord Strange for his ho-	tending recreaty to Lady On angaret his mother, to	Henry lent word	1	miles distant, to his no little griefe, and his whole	"and in what doubtfull perill wee are intrapped, I	1
Lord	stage, which he did, though it little availed to binde	the Lord Stanley, Talbot, and others, fignified vnto them, he meant to paffe Seuerne, at Shrewesbury, and	Mother and	i		1 "QUUDE DOE DUE ED22 VOII Will with me contelle shae	
delitte- ledge to chard,	Darbies affection vnto his side.	them, he meant to pane severne, at surewesoury, and	others.	1	to be a prefage of an ill beginning, and the other	"if euer amity preuailed betwixt the raifed, and the	1
edgeto	(44) In this while King Richard hearing that	thence to march directly towards London. In hi			doubting forme detriment of their Lord. Dur in the	"raifers, betwixt the Prince and his Subjects, this	ı
uaru.	Oxford had escaped out of the Castle of Hammes,	way to Shrewesbury, there mette him Sir Rice ap Tho	Sir Rice ap The-	Howies excuse.	dawning of the next morning coducted by good for-	"day requires as much in vs both. For it wife men	
	Oxford had escaped out of the Calife of Hammes,	was a man of great command in Wales, with a num ber of men to fide in his quarrell, which Henry af	Bears.	Mental except.	tune he came to his Hoft, excufing that his absence	"(au true that there is not fo much a sure is	
	and that he, with the Captaine thereof Iames Blant,	ber of men to fide in his quarrell, which Henry af	- 1	1	was to have conference with his fector friends, and	"fay true, that there is not fo much power in get-	
	were fled into France and ioined with Richmund;	terwards requited in making this his first aider the	=	1	then printly departing to the Lord Stanley, had con-	"torrupes change the action (C)	
	thought it high time to quench the sparkes in those	Gouernour of Wales.		1	ference with him, and was put in good comfort.	"tortunes chance, the other wildoms deepe infight,	
	parts, before they should rife to a higher flame; and	(47) The Earle more boldly from Shrewsburie	. 1	1	(C1) But contrariwise King Richard mac mran and	"then I with you, and you with mee this day must	
	therefore hee appointed (which was prefently ac-	held on his march to the Towne of Newport, whi		1	and perplexed with feare, not onely with the depar-	"needs take labour and paines, to keepe that prehe-	
er befie-	complished) the Garrison at Callie to strait the faid	ther Sir Gilbert Talbot with two thousand strong	bet joineth with	1		"minence & possession by force, which by your pru-	
the Gar-	Castle with a hard siege, being well assured that ma-	from the young Earle of Shrewsbury gave him hi	S Earle Henry.	Time Pickenden	mond Digby, in whom he had reposed great trust, but	"dent labour I have obtained. The divel, you know,	
		aide. Then passed he forward to Stofford, and ha	i	King Rickard ter- tified with dread- full dreames.	alfo in the dreadfull dreames which nightly he fuffe-	a continual enemy to humane fociety, a diffurber	
	harboured, who vpon the least advantage would be	conference there with Sir William Stanley, and pro		full dreames.	red, wherein to his feeming, terrible dittels fo pul-	of Concord, and a fower of fedition hath entred	
	ready to play. But Henry not vnmindfull of his di-	ceeding forward was honourably received into th		4 1	led and baled him, as by nomeanes he could take a-	"into the heart of an vnknowne welfbman (whose	
	ftreffed friends, nor Oxford forgetting his kinde Ho-	City Liebfield, where Thomas Earle of Darby with			ny reft, which fearefull imaginations fitrucke to deep	"father I neuer knew, nor him ouer personally faw)	ı
atle of Afreeth his	stesse Captaine Blunts wife, made vnto the Peece,	five thousand armed men had beene some few daie	S to Liebfeld	1 1	an impression unto his bears then the G	"exciting him to alone and coper our Realme and	
freeth his nds from	and on the fudden put Thomas Brandon, with thirty	before, but hearing of Earle Henries approach remo	-	1	an impression vnto his heart, that the fignes there-	Crowne, to the differiting of vs and of our no-	1
es.	approved Souldiers into the Castle, who from the	ued to Ander fon to avoide suspition of the jealou	s	1 1	of appeared in his countenance, howfoeuer hee fought to put them off in flew.	1 "Herry: Voll ice further how a company of Train	1
	walles plaied vpon the befeigers, whiles Oxford an-	King that kept his fonne Hoftage for his further	T	1		tors, Theeues, Out-lawes, and runnagares of	
	noied them vpon their backes, fo that prefently	truth.	1	1 1	(52) But being determined to put himfelfe to	Our ownervation, belies a number of heaverly	
	they offered, and came to a composition, which	(48) King Rithard at this time helde his Cour	t		the triall of battell, or elfe, (and that rather) en-	Britaines, and faint hearted Frenchmen are auders	
	was, that they within should safely depart, but the	at Notingham, where being informed that Earl	King Riebard st	1	forced by dinine Inflice to pull the revenging	"and partakers of this his wicked enterprize, ready	
	Castle to remaine in Subjection to the King.	Henrie with a fmall company was landed in Wale.	Tanagara.	1	hand of heaven against him, in the morning he mar-	at hand to opprefic and fpoile vs. our lande our	
	(45) Hammes thus restored in danger to be lost,	made small account of what he could doe altogethe	2		ched toward the enemy, and vpon a faire plaine cal-	wives and children; which eminent mischiefes.	
	and nothing had thence befides a woman and a few	relying vpon the Lord Walter Herbert, and Sir Rin	C.I		led Redmore neere vnto Bosworth about seuen miles	I t we then will withit and and relift was much line l	
ichards	fuspected persons, King Richard thought himselfe	ap Thomas two principall men, in whom hee cor	11 /	Reamore	west from Leicester he pitched downe his Tents, and	"and die together as brethren, fight together as I i.	
t.	now fure of all, and fearing no inuation at home,	ceined no little truft, ver left this new rifen forin	-1)	thence fent a Purseuant to the Lord Stanley, com.	"ons, and feare not to die together like men; thus	
	imagined that much harme could not bee done a-	might gather in more heads, he fent to Iohn Duke o	5	1 1	manding him to addance forward with his compa-	reloused, believe me, the fearefull Harranese And	
	broad : for Henry in France (as he thought) found	Norfalk Henry Farle of Northumberland and ort.	Isha Duke of		nie, and to come to his prefence, which if hee retu-	"fafter before the greedy Grayhound, the filly Larke	
	very few friends, and was fully perfwaded that the	Norfolk, Henry Earle of Northumberland, and Thom, Earle of Surrey willing them with a felected pow	Earle of Nor-	1 1	fed to doe, he fware by Christs passion, his somes	before the foar-hanke or the famile theene before I	
	French Kings affiftance flood more of words then in	errorentelle the infoler fabi-t 1 0.	thumberland,	X 100 1	head should off before that he dined. The Lord stan-	"the Wolfe, then these proud bragging enemies	
	deedes. And indeed fome occasion of such suspi-	er to represe the infolency of this head-strong Earl	The Earle of	fwere vato the	ley answered the Purseuant, that if the King did so, he	will run out of the Field at the fight of your manly	
	tion was ministred, for King Charles but young, and	moreover he lent for Sir Kobert Brakenburte Lieut		Kings meffage.	had more formes alive : but to come to the King hee	"vifages. For have we not already manifest tokens	
		nant of the Tower, Sir Thomas Beurchier, and Sir Wa	I- to the King. Brakenburg.		was not at that time determined. This answere de-	"of victory and triumphs? Is not the Captaine of	
folicitet	and make fuite and other man by man Defide. The	ter Hungerford Knights, all of them in great iealor	1- Bourchier.	The Lord Strang	clared, King Richard commanded the Lord Strange	the Rebellion Richmund a Welsh milke-sop, of no	
esch, co an	to make fuite vnto them man by man. Befides Tho-	treand militruft, commanding them with their for	Hawgerford,	commanded to	incontinent to be beheaded, at the very feafon, when	(6 annual of annual avein mike-top, of no	
n. uesse Do	mas Marqueffe Darfet fent for by his mother the	ces to come and attend upon his person which a	c-	be beheaded.	the two Armies came in fight each of others, but his	courage and leffe experience in Marshall feates of	
keth to fró Hem	Queene, fuddenly in the night made an efcape from	cordingly they fet forward to doe, meane while fe	n-	1	counfellors tolde him, that the time was now to	war, brought vp by my brothers means, and mine,	
HO HEN		ding his Spials to know the way Henrie went, he	id l		fight, and not to execute, which might better bee	"like a birdin a cage, in the Court of the Duke	
	feare among Earle Henries part, chiefely for that all	intelligence that hee was past Shrewsbury with	1-			" of Britaine, neuer faw Army, neuer wore Armour,	
	their Counfels were knowne vnto the Marquelle,	out any impeachment; whereat florming	in King Richard	()	done when the field was fought: whereupon the	without practile, and theriore without knowledge,	
	which if he should reueale, their designes were made	choller and curling their vitruthes whom hee h	d Put in choller.	11		Rrrrr "how	
	desperate. To preuent which, hee was posted after,	put in truft, craued vengeance from heaven, and i	n-	-			-
	1	ftan	. 1				

Chap.19. Richard III. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 56.

frushed their feathers attentiately listening when the Trumpet should give the sound of Battell. note Sir welliam Brandon was the best, in all to the number of foure thousand men. This battell was (57) Betwixt both the Armies there lay a great fought the two and twentieth of August, and yere of marish, which Earle Henry left vpon his right hand, with purpose to have that for a defence, as also the Sunne at his backe, and face of the enemy, which when King Richard perceived, with found of trum-

Chrift lefus 1485. in the field Redmore, neere vnto Thenumberflein Bosworth, in the Countie of Leicester; after which Earle Henry gaue thanks vnto God, & highly commending his Souldiers, gauethem the spoile of the per and shout of his Army, hee passed the Marish, field, where bee dubbed many of them knights: all when the bow-men on both fides let freely flie their which his doings were so acceptable to the whole Ararrowes: the reft comming to encounter with my, as with great applause they all cryed King Henstrokes: but the Earle of Oxford fearing to be enry, King Henry; whose forwardnesse to him-ward, compassed by the enemy, commanded enery of his when the Lord Stanley perceived, hee tooke K. E. Heavy procise chards Crowne, found among the spoile of the field, field. rankes to keepe within ten foot of his Standard which being accomplished, and their fight a while and fet it vpon the Earle of Richmunds head, thereby stayed, their opposites mistrusting some fraud or deconfirming the election of the people, at which inceit, cealed likewise from theirs, many of them stant beganne the raigne of this new King. willing inough so to doe; notwithstanding, the L. (59) The flaine body of the viurping Tyrant, all tugged, and torne, naked, and not fo much as a clout body flarke left to couer his flame, was truffed behind Blanch of the naked, was truffed belind blanch of the naked, was truffed belind blanch of the naked, and the naked, was truffed belind blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked, was truffed blanch of the naked of the Stanley at the same time ioyning with the Earle, a

cruell battell was againe begunne, and manfully continued upon either part. Till lattly, King Richard Seint-Leger (or White Bore, a Purseuaut at Armes,) having intelligence that the Earle of Richmund was like a hogge or Calfe, his head and Armes hanging on the one fide of the horfe, and his legges on the obut slenderly accompanied with men of Armes, and them also bussed in their owne guardes, meant by ther, and all besprinckled with mire and bloud, was his incounter to finish the day, as the onely man, vp-on whom stood all the hope of his enemies successe: so brought into Leisester, and there for a miserable spectacle the space of two dayes lay naked and vnbuand therefore having the markes of Earle Henry, ried, his remembrance being as odious to all as his made from the range of his owne battell, and vpon person desormed, and lothsome to be looked vpon: the spur with his Speare in his Rest, ranne violentfor whose further despite, the white Bore his cognily towards him in a furious spleen; in which rage zance was torne downe from enery Signe, that his monument might perifh, as did the monies of Caat the first brunt, hee bare downe and ouerthrew the Earles Standard, and flew Sir William Brandon ligula, which were all melted by the decree of the the bearer thereof; next matching with Sir Ishm Senate: Laftly, his body without all funeral folem-Cheines a man of great might, manfully threw him nity was buried in the Gray-Friers Church of that to the ground, thereby making an open passage by Towne.ButKing Henry his Successor, of a princely dint of fword vnto the Earle himfelfe: Richmund disposition, caused afterward his Tombe to bee beholding the high valour of Richard, most lionmade with a picture of Alablaster, representing his like coped with this cruell Bore, and held him manperson, and to be set up in the same Church, which gre his tuskes at his (word point, betwixt whom the at the suppression of that Monastery was pulled fight was so desperate, that Henries company were downe, and vtterly defaced; fince when his graue ftrucke in great despaire; at which very instant Sir ouergrowne with nettles and weedes, is very obscure William Stanley came in with three thouland tal fresh Souldiers, who entred the battell with fuch couhis corpes lay, is now made a drinking trough for made a drinking rage and valour, as they bare down all before them horsesata common Inne, and retaineth the onely where they went, whereat the Kings fide began to memory of this Monarches greatneffe. His body al-fo(as tradition hath deliuered) was borne out of the faint, and to give over fight, but the more resolute a while maintaining their ground, and now mistru-fling treason among themselves, turned their backes Towne, & cotemptuously bestowed under the end of Bow-Bridge, which giveth passage over a branch and ran away, whereby King Richard prefently perof Stowre vpon the west side of the Towne. Vpon this Bridge(the like report runneth) stood a stone ceined the downefall of his ill raifed giory, and the full period of his short raigne: and all hope of restof some height, against which King Richard, as hee passed toward Bosworth, by chance strucke his spur, stance now past, a swift horse was brought to escape the field, with comforts that another day might and against the same stone as he was brought backe. fet the victory on his fide: but with a mind vnhanging by the horse side, his head was dashed and matchable in hatred against Hemy, or rather to haue broken, as a wife woman(forfooth) had foretold, who, before Richards going to battell, being asked of his successe, said, that where his spurre strucke, his head should be broken; but of these things, as is the report, so let be the credite. Dead he is, and with his death ended the factions a long time continued betwixt the Families of Lancafter and Yorke; With Richards in whose bandings, to bring, set & keep the Crown on their heades, eight or nine bloudy set battels and Langager. had beene fought, and no lesse then fourescore perfons of the blond-royall flaine, as Philip Commines Phil. Com. 1.5.7.

his death registred in fames honorable role, whose life had beene blotted with the penne of disulged infamie, hee hastily closed his helmet, saying, that that day should make an end of all battels, or cise in this now in trying he would finish his life, which last was presently performed; for thrushing into the middest of his enemies, and there valiantly fighting among the thickest, hee obtained more honor in this his two howres fight, then he had gained by all the actions of his whole life. (58) There died that day with him Iohn Duke Men flaine in the of Norfolke, Walter Lord Ferrers of Chartley, Sir Richard Ratcliffe Knight, Sir Robert Brakenbury Lieutenant of the Tower, and not many Gentlemen more : Sir William Catefby one of King Richards chiefe Counsellors with two others, were taken and

n with new fup-

Courage of King

King Richard

Catesby behea-

two daies after beheaded at Leicester, among them

that escaped were Frances Vicount Louell, Humfrey, and Thomas Stafford brethren, which three tooke Sanctuary at S. I ohns in Glocefter. Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey though he submitted himselfe vnto Henry, yet was hee committed to the Tower and therein a long time remained. Vpon Earle Henries part onely ten men were flaine, as Sir Gilbert 1 al-bet wrote the newes from the field, whereof for

(60) Hee was of Stature but little, and of shape (60) Hee was of Stature but little, and of shape The description deformed, the left shoulder bunching out like a ofk Richard. Mole-hill on his backe, his haire thinne, and face to Harding hort, a cruell countenance, in whose aspect might bee perceived both malice and deceir. When hee flood musing (as hee would doe oft) his vie was, to bite and chaw the nether lip, his hand euer on his dagger, which ever hee would chop vp and down in the sheath, but neuer draw it fully out. Pregnant

the French Writer faith; many of them being wel

knowne to himselfe: after which stormes, and this

Tirants death, a bleffed vnion enfued, by ioining

those houses in Henry of Lancaster, and Elizabeth of

these wordes he vttered in all their hearing. (56) If ever God gave victory to a just quarrell, if euer he aided watte for the tuition of a kingground, then a Carpet prisoner kept aliue for redome or Countrey, or ever fuccoured them that proch. Aduance therfore forward like true hearted "tought for the reliefe of poore innocents, oppref-"fed by tyranny, then no doubt my friends and fel-

"low fouldiers, but that this day he will give vsa

"triumphant victory. For if we confider for what,

" and against whom we fight, we may not doubt but that God himselfe will fight for vs. The thing

Englishmen, display your Banner in defence of your Countrey get the day and be Conquerors, loofe the Battell, and be villaines; God and Saint George giue vs a happy successe. Which no sooner was said Earle Hearing

but that the Souldiers buckled their Helmes, the fouldiers. Archers Rript up their sieenes, beat their bowes and

The ditters opi-mious of King Ri-chards hoft,

Lord Stanley fent

The Earle mat-fhaleth his bat-calsons.

The Earle of

Oxford Captain

Henry Earle of

K.Richards mo-

fed vp to Leice

King Richard

feens of all.

and not to befound. Onely the stone chest wherin K. Richards coffin

in wither was, wily to faine, apt to diffemble, and

Libn Stow. John Pers.

haughty of Stomacke, an expert Souldier, and a better King then a man. He founded a Colledge at Middleham beyond Tork, and a Collegiat Chauntery in London, neere vnto the Tower, called Our Lady of Barking; he endowed the Queens Colledge in Cam-bridge with fine hundred Marks of yeerely renew; and difforrefted the great Field of Wichwood, which Kinz Edward his brother had inclosed for his game : heraigned two yeeres, two moneths, and one day, and was buried, as we have faid.

His Wife.

(61) Anne the second daughter and Coheire to Richard Neuil, the front Earle of Warwicke and Salefbury, was first married to Edward Prince of Wales, the fonne to King Henry the fixth, and after his death was remarried to Richard Duke of Gloucester, Anno 1 47 2. afterwards by viurpation King of England, with whom in great State and folemnity flee was Crowned Queene the fixth of tuly, and yeere of Saluation, 1 4 8 3. She was his wife to the last yeere of his Raigne, and then leaving her husband to choose another Queene, was laid at rest in the Abbey of Westminster, in this thing happy, that she saw not the death of the Tyrant.

His Isuc.

(62) Edward the sonne of King Richard, and of Queene Anne his Wife, and the onely childe of them both, was borne in the Caftle of Middleham, neere Richmund, in the Councie of Yorke Anno I 47 3. and Isb.Roff Warwie. being under foure yeeres of age was created Earle of Salisbury by his Vncle King Edward the fourth, the Camb. Brit. senenteenth of his Raigne; but his father King Richard in the first of his vsurpation created him Prince of Wales, the foure & twentieth of August, and yeere of Christ, 1483, he then being about ten yeeres of age, vnto whom also the Crowne was intailed by Parliament; but this Prince dying before his father, and much ypon the time of his mothers deceale, law not the reuenge that followed the Tyrants Raigne, whose bad life no doubt hath made doubtfull the

place of this Princes buriall, and other Princely offi-ces done him in his life, and at his death.

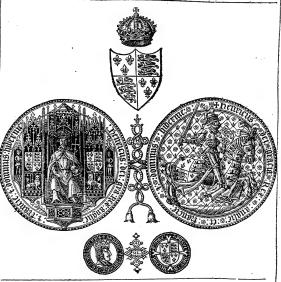


HENRY

Chap.20. Henry VIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 57.

HENRIE THE SEVENTH, KING Mobiarch 57 OF ENGLAND AND FRANCE, AND

LORD OF IRELAND, THE FIFTIE SEVENTH MO-NARCH OF THE ENGLISH, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, AND ISSIVE.



CHAPTER X X.

22. August.

ENRIE of that name the seauenth, hauing by fuch mixt meanes of valor and *practife* as are alreadie described, obtained the possession of Englands Crown, we must now prefent vnto you his actions in the person and state of a King, maintained by him

with like mixture of courage and skill as it was atchieued; to the verification of that rule, That things are kept by the same Arts whereby they were gained. In de-scribing whereof, wee meane nothing lesse, then for humoring the vaine admirers of phrase and conceit, to mount vp into Panegyricall flourishes, in honor of the man, though his excellent vertues would worthily beare, if not duely also exact them: yet may

wee not omit to observe, that as in his attaining to Generall obserwee not offine to offere that as in his accarding to the Crowne, there was (through divine providence) a concurring difpolition of all important Circumfacts, without which his attempt might have proble course. nances, without within attempt might have pro-used difafterous; so hee, having now possessed the Soueraigne power, and mastered the State in the maine pointes, cassly made circumstances waite

vpon his wildom, and to take their forme from his directions: Of the first kind, wherein his feliciity deserues to be celebrated, were these. That he by the Male-line a meere stranger to both the roiall houses, as descended from the Welfb and French, and by the female springing out of such a family of Lancaster (the Beaufords) as by the same law which enabled it to inherite in ordinary estates, was made Concurrence of incapable of succession in the Regalitie, should so surcherances to fafely be contained away into forraine parts, there lefigues. to continue an head of expectation and revolt, dustrit

eustable here at home. Secondly, that the Reaime

of England should bee so auerted from Richard,

ring the intestine troubles and dangers, to him in-

'as he that knew himfelfe sufficiently to make ofe of their them himselfe.

(though a very honorable, wife, instand necessary Prince, after hee was somewhat setled) as for his fake, to neglect (in a fort) fo many natural! heires of the house of Yorke, some of them in right preceding Richard, such were the children of Edward the ction) truly noted concerning his atchieuement of fourth, and George Duke of Clarence, Richards elder brethren, and all of them inft barres to the Earle of obstacles, to sway this Scepter, when neuther Title, neraigne change of fortune, with such moderation, and

Richmand, who scarce had any thing of a legal title, or of a warrantable intention; but his purpose to remove an V surper, and marry the Lady Elizabeth, the rightfull inheritrice. Thirdly, a long and fatall Sacknesse of Richard in his warlike preparations, through the meer contempt of his enemy the Earle, which was the cause, that both hee landed securely and Richard was driven to fight in a manner with tumultuary, rather then trained forces. And finally, that a principall, potent, noble, and yet a deepely fuspected Conspirator, (as being Father in law to the Earle) should have charge, vnder Richard, ouer a chiefe portion of his Army at the very instant of ioyning battell.

(2) These considerations (among many other) had in them such an aptitude to his designe, as no humane wit could fashion, and without the which a man of equall starres and parts to Hemy, or Henry himselfe, might in vaine haue beene wife, in vain, industrious and valiant. Circumstances of the other fort shall plentifully occurre in the whole carriage of his ensuing actions. In both which, are verified two contrary rules; for the state of the first observations teacheth vs with Plantus, that Centum doctorum hominum consilia hac vna vincit Dea, This one Goddesse can effect more, then the wits of an hundred learned men; foeaking as an Heathen man of that famous Idole Fortune; and in the second, that which Iuuenall excellently noteth; Nullum numen abest si sit prudentia sed te Nos facimus Fortuna Deam, caloque locamus.

No Goddesse wants, where Prudence guids, though Chance A Godde fe deemd fond Mento Heaven advance.

(3) Now for the Character of this famous

wife Prince (which with reason ought to bec set in

front to his actions, as certaine lights of the mind

by which to discerne the fountaine of counsels and

causes) a * learned, eloquent Knight, and principal

The description

* Fabies faith, Richard fearing

minde and qua-lities, "Sir Fr.Bacon. fing. MS.

Lawyer of our time, gives vs many things, of which "these selected, are very regardable. This King (faith he) attained unto the Crowne, not onely from a "private fortune, which might ender him with a modect ration, but also from the fortune of an exiled man, which nad quickned in him all the scedes of observation and industry. His wisdom (speaking thereof, as "it was in his raigne) feemed rather a dexterity to « deliver himfelfe from dangers when they pressed him, then any deepe forefight to preuent them a farre off. Lealous hee was ouer the Greatne fe of his Nobility, as "remembring how himselfe was set up. Great and de-"uout reuerence hee bare onto religion, as hee that " employed Ecclefiasticall men in most of his affaires. In his government hee was led by none, Scarfely by his lawes, and yet he was a great observer of formality in " all his proceedings, which notwithstanding was no impediment to the working of his will. In his wars (meaning domesticke) he was rather confident then enterprising, by which also hee was commonly not the poorer. Generally, her feemed inclinable to live in peace, and in the quenching of the Commotions of his Subjects, hee was ener ready to atchieue those wars in person, fometimes referring himfelfe, but never retiring him-

Selfe. Of nature becourted to accumulate treasure : in

expending whereof hee never spared charge that his af-

faires required, and in his foundations was magnificent

enough. He chole commonly to employ cunning persons,

vttermost reaches without danger of being abused with

(4) * Another having a purpose to write in Eng. *10h.Dt.of Here. for the worthy doing thereof, requires as wife a man as Henry himfelfe,) hath among many extraordinary praises (most what framed out of his strong affethe Crowne: That the Almighty hand of God brought him ouer the toppe of the highest and most dangerous Power, nor (great) Probability could give him so much as one found push to set him forward. And of the man himselfe. That bee entertained that, as sodaine as So-

untransported discretion, as it well appeared hee had throughly conquered himfelfe, before hee subdued the V Jurper his enemy. What could bee added greater to fo true a prayfe? nothing certainely; for that he (as elfe-where that Writer faith) was the Salomon, who brought peace to this Kingdome', long before appreffed by warre and tyranny: it was onely an excellent effect of that excellent moderation. Other Authors of our times concurre in the same judgement of him, whom they prayle * for fingular wifdome, excellent . All and Man temperance, and moderate frugality; for * policy, iuflice, 10.55cm.in
and granity: which princely vertues caused him to Hea.7. bee highly reuerenced of forraine Princes. These honourable Eulogiesafter to many yeeres from his death, juftly countenance their relations, who *wri- Ber. Andr. Mis. ting, in or about his ownedayes auerre no lesse; a verter. mong whom, Bernard Andreas of Tholouz is most flowing and abundant. This Andrew (as himselfe writes) was afterward entrufted with the instruction of Prince Arthur (eldelt sonne to King Henry) in good letters, though hee was blind; and having afwell the title of Poet Laureat, as of the Kings Hiftoriographer, (how hardlie soeuer those two faculties meet with honour in the fame person) meant to have historified and poetized the Acts of this king, but (for want of competent and attended instructions in many places of chiefe importance) left his labour full of wilde breaches, and vnfinished; yet in fuch points as he hath professed to know, not vnworthy to bee vouched : for there is in him agreat deale of cleare elocution, and defecated conceit aboue the ordinary of that age. Hee, among other

Princeps ingenionitente praftans, Fama relligione, comitate, Sensu, sanguine, gratia, decore.

A peerele fe Prince for wifdome rare, Fame, piety, courtesie, debonaire, Knowledge, birth, grace, and feature faire.

verses in honour of this our Henry (whom he ensty-

leth the most sapient King) hath these not hyperbo-

licall, but proper, wherein hee salutes him.

Whereby also, after these pourtracts of his inward faculties, and gifes, may be gueffed that a body they had for their mortall manfion, no way vnfurable; and it feemes by that Maiefly (fo they call the Images of our Kings, which are carried for representation in their funerall Chariots) which at this day is extant, that hee was of flature tall and flender, fomwhat round visaged, and though in * his childhood west. fickly, yet of afpect in all his outward lineaments, * zangd. drdn. fo noble and gracious, as well prefaged, and afterward fitted the most fortunate height to which he was now ascended. But notwithstanding these great praises, there want not some who think him to have been an heavy Father to the common wealth, which by fundry courses he greatly laboured to bring vnder, as a sceming ground-worke of his owne, and his posterities security. And in his last dayes Auarice, (the naturall maladie of age) tooke him strongly, the enuy whereof he partly discreed from himfelfe

Chap.20. Henrie VIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 57.

By the iplendor of some few publik buildings, which ! as they gaue the people cause to talke of their braueric, so they also intentibly wrought in their light minds a mittigation of their burthen. (5) Let vs now behold his vertues as they are shi-

ningly deduced into action. After the Batteil he haonsaiter his ysuing truly first ascribed the whole good of his succeile to God, commanded, that to the body of * his Bon. Andr. enemy King Richard, an honourable interrement should be given in the Friers at Leicester, where notwith-* Fabian. standing * hee was with little reverence buried. From thence the King made speed to London, as to the

Reen Ande MS and wpon the aS. of Aug. lanin Fabian, *Fab. Slow.

Henriet fielt afti

chiefe feat and Epitome of the English Monarchie. whithout which no Prince found himfelfe heere fecure enough : he entred the Citie vpon a * Saturday, as vpon a Saturday he obtained his triumphall and Crowning victory. The Mayor of London and his fellowship, * received him in violet at Harn. Sey Parke, but his entrance (which was at * Shordith) was honoured with a very great troope of the His entrance in-Peeres, and Nobles in his traine, at which our Poeticall Historian Andreas was present, and faluted the victorious Prince with certaine Latine Sapphicks, which he fung vnto him as himfelfe writeth. But Henry staied not in Ceremonious greetings and po-

pular acclamations, which (it seemes) heedid pur-

posely eschue, for that (Andreas faith) hee entred

couertly, meaning belike, in an Horse-litter or

close Chariot. His lodging was in the Bishoppe of Londons Pallace, where (after publike offertories and folemne thankes given to God in the Cathedrall Church of S. Paul) the businesse of his Coronation was seriouslie consulted of; which was afterward See Camb. (vpon his remoue to the Tower, where hee * crea-

Mills.dec. 30. Offober M. Stowe ted his vacle Iafper Earle of Pembroke, Duke of Bedford, and other Estates) with due pompe and rituall His Coronai His Matriage with the Lady Elizabeth debated.

ment, which must make this Kingdome stand, was his marriage with the Lady Elizabeth, eldeft daughter of the late Edward the fourth. This as a point of most importance was with great maturity and iudgement againe thought vpon, when Henry was now already crowned. The remoter danger, suppo fed to relide in the person of Edward Earle of War wick(only sonne and heire, euen in his infelicities, to that vnfortunate Prince George Duke of Clarence) was preuented; for he had beene, by King Henries direction, brought vp priloner from the Manour of * Sherif-hutton in Yorkshire, (where aswell he, as the

Lady Elizabeth were kept by King Richard vnder

(6) But the naturall folder and indiffoluble ce

magnificence * accomplished at Weltminster.

* Helinfb. Edward Earle of guard) and immediatly that vp within the Tower of London. * Ber**s. And**r. MS.

(7) Frances * Duke of Britaine had offered Hen-rie before his departure to match him with the Ladie Annehis eldest daughter and sole heire, but hee was otherwife affected, as placing his lone where it might afford him greatest& presentest strengths, Andreas addeth, that King Edward himselfe destinated his eldest daughter vnto Henry then Earle of Richmund, and fought in his life time to have effected it: but his meaning being (belike) suspected, as but a drift to get Henry into his hands, the motion tooke no hold as referred till God had cleared the way of all such impediments, as might hinder the confolidation of both the Royall families, Torke and Lanca. fler. (after their fo mortall and confusiue maffacres) in the person of one Soueraigne.

(8) The Lady her selfe, besides youth and beautie (precious Ornaments of that Sexe) had in her Lady Florabeth deferibed.

Bern, Andr, MS

from her * infancy a wonderfull feare, and care to please God, and a like dutieous and humble carriage toward her parents: her brothers and sisters shee did exceedinglie loue, and as well toward the poore, as all the Seruants of Christ, thee bare a fingular affection. * Her Vnclefthe late viurper) in contempt of God and man (whose Lawes he was so long accustomed to violate, till the justreward thereof did at the length ouertake him) incestuously meant to have defiled her, under the a-

bufedname of Matrimonie. When therefore the newes of his death came to her eare, the loy of her heart brake foorth into these words. * So yet at the "Birm, Andr. MS. last thou hast of God regarded the humble, and not despised thate median their praiers. I well remember, neither shall I at any time on about main-be weary to remember, that my most noble Father of samous memory meant to have bestowed me in mariage upon this most comely Prince. O that I were now worthy of him; but my Father being dead, I want such good friends as should motion so great a matter : and perhaps hee will take a wife from forraigne parts, whose beauty, age, fortune, and dignity shall bee more then mine. What shall I

Say? I am all alone, and dare not open my minde to * any. * How then did What if I acquainted my mother therewith? Ballifulne and and ask now it forbids: What if some of the Lords? Audacity wanteth. Othen that I might but confer with him! perhaps in dif clie had it from course I might let slippe such a word as might discour my her after-relatio. intention. What will bee I know not : this I know, that Almighty God cannot tell how to ablent himselie from them who trust in him. Therefore I make an end of think ing, and repose my whole hope upon thee, o my God, dee with mee according to thy mercy. Shee fecretly thus reuoluing all matters, and refoluing of them in her minde, was heard from aboue; for King Henry hauing vnderstood the honour, chastity, and singular vertues of the maiden Princeffe, the rather inclined

to make her the Soueraigne of his affections : affig-

ning therefore * a day, wherein (for the viter abolish-

Families by contunction of their two persons in

the maine, which confifting in fetling the generall

state, and securing his owne person, he, for the one,

ther, institutes a certaine number of choise * Ar-

Yeoman of the Guard, he affigued to that feruice, for

him and his fucceffors, Kings and Queenes of Eng.

land. In the Parliament was attainted Richard late

Richard the third; and with him by name many other

of the Nobility and Gentry. And yet withall to lay

a foundation for his green Government in love and

clemencie, hee, during the Parliament proclaimed

free pardon and entire restitution of their fortunes,

to all fuch as submitted themselues to his mercy

and made oath of Fidelity. A feafonbale and negeffa-

rie Act; Whereby hee greatly weakened ma-

licious humors, and wanne to himfelte no fmall

accession of friendship and services; for many for-

fooke Sanctuaries, and tooke vp their refuges in his

goodnesse and most gracious tauour. And to re-

(10) After diffolution of which Parliament, the

King redeemes such pledges, as he had left in France

for money borrowed, and affumes into his Coun-

cel those two renowned agents in advancing his for-

tunes, John Morton and Richard Foxe, as the most ne-

ceffarie parts and supports of his State; the former

of which, not long after (Thomas Bourchier dying)

was elected and enthronized Archbishop of Canter-

bury, the latter, was toorthwith adnanced to be Lord

Keeper of his Priuy Seale, & fucceffinely preferred

to the Bishoprickes of Exeter, Bath and Welles, Dur-

(9) The meane while he wifely goes on to fecure

marriage.

heires for euer.

ham, and Winchester.

loba De of He ment of all Hostilities betweene the two Roiall houfes of Yorke and Lancafter) to establish an union of

holds a Parliament at Westminster, and for the o-*7. Womens. * Hollinfts. * The Kings chers, with allotment of fees and maintenance, Guard firthinwhich under a peculiar Captaine, and the name of finated.

Duke of Glosefter, stilling himselfe by vsurpation, King others attained,

moue all fcandall and danger from his friends, he reuerfed and reuoked all former Acts, hurrfull either to himfelfe, or to them for his caufe, the whole house to himselfe, or to them for his caule, the whole nouse | The Crowner the of Parliament, * concurring finally in establishing | tailed you king by a folemne Act, the Crowne vpon him, and his Henrand his

The King mari-(11) The most wished and most welcome * day of marriage betweene King Henry and the Princeste lezobeth. Elizabeth being now come, was celebrated by them with all religious and glorious magnificence, and by the people, with * fires of ioy, dancings, longs and

* Bern, Andr.MS

bankets through London, all forts and fexes befeeching

common toy by bestowing upon them a young Prince and

other I flue at his good pleasure: Which prayers (faith Andreas) our Lord lesus Christ vouchsafed to heare:

the Queene within a while after, prouing with

Child, of whom thee was happily deliuered in the

moneth of September following at Winchester, which

to the most fortunate King was a new happinesse, to the

Queene a great reioycement, to the Church a foneraigne

delight: to the Court an exceeding pleasure; and in

briefe to the whole kingdome an incredible contentment .

Northat without reason, as it afterward appeared;

for (if God had beene pleased to have granted ion-

ger life) not England onely, but the whole world should

in such a pleage have had cause of eternall reloycement.

But God who gouernes all thinges, and in whole

hand are aswell the Scepters of Princes, as dates of

(12) Meanewhile there were not a few who did en-

nie to King Hemry this vnexpected height of felici-

tie; but they who first discouered themselues, were

certaine remaines of the late ouerthrow at Bofworth,

whose diffidence, or early will, was greater then to

relie vpon King Henries clemencie, or to behold the

dazeling brightnes of his new atchiened glorie; and

for that cause refused to forsake the Sanctuarie.

which they had taken at Colchester. These were the

Lord Louell, Sir Humfrey Stafford, and Thomas Staf-

ford his brother. Who, while the King, secure of

dangers behind him, was in his Progresse at Torke,

meaning by affability, bountie and other his wifest

courses, to gaine the good wils of the Northern peo-

ple, (with whom the memory of King Richard was

very deare)and to weaken the strengths and hopes

of all future conspiracies, for sooke their refuge, and

fecretly in fenerall places gathered forces, therewith

to surprize and dethrone the King. The Lord Lo-well raised his forces with such speed, that the King

who at Lincolne first heard of his escape, and lightly

regarded the same, was no sooner setled in Yorke.

but certaine intelligence came that he approched

fast with an Armie; and withall, that the Staffords

the King (who never dreamt of fuch a darling) was

about him of his fure triends, nor could inftly repose

confidence in the Northern men, whose love to King

cted. But danger quickeneth noble courages, and

therefore vpon due recollection of himfelfe, hee

armes about three thousand men, (if tanned leather,

whereof the most of their breast-pieces, for want of

other stuffe, were framed, may be called armour)

and fends them under the leading of Lafper Duke of

Bedford, with commission to pardon, or to fight. The

Duke offering pardon, the Lord Louell fled by night

to * Sir Thomas Broughton into Lancashire, where hee

lurked certaine monthes; the headlesse multitude

yeeld without stroake, and the felicity of King Henry

prevailes in every place; for the Staffords hearing

what had hapned to their Confederates, disperse

Colnham a village about two miles from Abingdon

and conveighed to the Tower of London, from

whence Sir Humfrey Stafford was drawne and execu-

ted at Tiburne, but his brother Thomas by the Kings

mercy had his pardon. These short dangers and

troubles, by reason of their suddainty did worthily

make the King wakefull euen ouer smaller accidents;

this blaze being kindled from fo neglected sparkles.

But there followed deniles, which in their owne na-

ture were to ftrangely impudent, and in their vent to

firengly bolftered, that if Louels enterprise made

Richard their late flaine Lord, made them ftill fuspe

their liues, disposed otherwise.

(13) The records are immortall, which testifie,

that the erection of Idols and Counterfeits, to dethrone them who are in possession, is a veric olde sues. in Ner, Stratagem. What troubles a Pfeudo-Nero wrought, Counterfeit by support of the Parthans (who wonderfully fa- Princes erected uoured Nero liuing,) the Romane writers teach vs. to defeate the Neither hath the Dinell (Father of Impostures) any true. fo folemne practile, as Personation and Resemblan. ces of true, whether men or things. Infomuch that fome Divines have thought, that as he can, and often

doth trans-shape himselfe into the forme of a Celeftiall Angell, fo that he also deceived our first mother under that resplendent but assumed habit. And what mischies he wrought, in this very kind of thrufting out into the world falle pretenders, the speech of wife* Gamaliel teftifieth, who rehearfeth the names *A& 1. of Theudas and Iudas Galilaus; but the world hath fince had more woefuil experience hereof, in that

execrable Impostor Mahamet, pretending to bee the Mesiah. In England it selfe (before the time of this Henry) what strange practices and confipiration where the same practices and confipiration of the Henry) what strange practices and confipiration where the same from the same strange of the same str Histories haue sufficiently opened, so that this Prince person of King encountred nothing new in the Generall howfocuer peftilent and extraordinarie in the particular. Indeed his raigne (more perhaps then any other of his predecessors) afforded plentifull matter for such devises to worke vpon there being many then, who having beene *conceased (as it were) in the bowels of Sedition, and nourished with the bitter and pernicious milke of dis- 30.5. fention, were not onely apt to embrace, but also, where they were not offered, even there to beget occalions of confounding all. Men, *who could neither endure warre, nor peace long, nor any lawes in either, Hen as defirous to enion the licentious violences of ciusll warre; a* misery, which all wordes (how wide soeuer) want compaffe to express. The strange attempts of which M.S. kind of men (or rather Monsters) wee shall see exemplified in the subsequent tragedies. Richard Simon, an ambitious and imposterous wretch, and withall a Priest, neither vulcarned, (the sacred shaking Henry.

dow of which name the rather countenanced his practifes) in hope to make himfelfe the principall Bishop of England, plotted the advancement of Lambert Symnell (being his pupill in the Vniuerfitie *Polyd. Pergin of oxford) to the Crown of England; instigated thereto by the diuell, and suborned by such as fauoured the White-rose faction, vpon this occasion. There went a rumour, that Edward Earle of Warwicke, sonne and heire to George the late vnfortunate Duke of Clarence, second brother of King Edward, *was either al*Psyd Forg. 1.25 ready murthered, or should shortly be. This Architect of guile, Simon having this Symnel in tuition, (the *fonne of a Baker, or Shoomaker, but a wel-faced

and Princely-shaped youth, of no very euill nature, Bem. Andr. M.S. but as it was corrupted by his Tutor,) meanes our of this rumors aeric lubitance, to produce an apparition and prodigie, which in Title, behauiour, and artificiall answers (infused by his Tutors practises) should resemble * one of King Edwards children. Here we must confesse that our authors leade vs into a perplexitie: Some* affirming, that this counter-fet was exhibited to the world vnder the name of Edward Earle of warwick, sonne of the Duke of Cla-

rence, by the most turbulent and fatall Earle of War-

and fifter and next heire to Edward the fifth ? Nei-

concurring to buttreffe this affirmation. For, if at

wicke flaine at Barnet-field. But hereunto reason Lambert Simuels fecmes repugnant. For what ground of claime Hittorie rectified and vindica could that Gentleman haue, not onely for that his ted. Father was attainted, but much more for that the Queene of England then in being, was the indubitate eldest daughter and heire of King Edward the fourth,

ther wants there ancienter authority then any of the gern, dade, MS. others, affirming, that this Idoll did vsurpe the name of one of King Edwards sonnes; many arguments

him suspitious, these other might justly fill him with innumerable icalousies.

A falle Edward

*Polyd.Ver. ibid.

Chap.20. Henry VIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 57.

the same time (as Polydor writeth) it was bruted, that the somes of King Edward the fourth bad not* been muroften heard to maintaine this

thered under their vsurping Vncle Richard, but weree-scaped, and lived in obscurity beyond the Sea; how can that betrue, which Stop and the rest (who follow Polydore therein) affirm, that Lambert was crowned King of England at Dublin in Ireland, as heire to George Duke of Clarence ? For with what injurie to the roiall brethren (fained to be aliue) was that? Verily there seemes no coherence in the circumstances, nor apparence of truth in the fubstance. And how much stronger to the purpose of the Conspirators was the fiction of an Edward, the Kings sonne, and himfelfe once proclaimed King, then of an Edward, who was but an Earle, and a Duke of Clarenees heire? But you will aske, what was the poore Earles part in this tragedie? what other? then that

fon of King Henry into common dereftation for his crueltie; for clearing whereof the King publikelie afterward shewed the Earle to the view of all. And albeit the vulgar fame is, that Lambert was called Edward, yet * one who then lived, faith directly that this Cypher was dubbed & mounted from his owne meane ranke to the title of a King, under the name of the second brother, who for certaine was called Richard: but what Record there is to the contrary, is to vs as yet vnknowne; for our vulgar Bookes extant can hardly passe with a Jury of ordinary Criticks, and Cenfors for vnchallengeable eni-

(14) This acry Typhon (which grasped at the em-

by rumoring his murther, they might bring the per-

bracement of the two Kingdomes of England and Ireland) thus throughly schooled and instructed, is fecretly conneighed by his Sinonian Tutor to Dwblin, the chiefe City of the Irish, where he was con-

Haied into Fre-land and recei-ued. fident of partakers, as amongst the hereditary Clients, and adherents of the house of Torke; which affection was first breathed into them by the cunning popularities of the Lord Richard Duke of Yorke, the first of that line, who publikely claimed the English Crowne. His hopes deceived him not, for the Lord Chancellor of Ireland, Thomas Fitz-Gerald(of the *Pelpd.Perg. Stow cals him Extle of Kildere

noble Familie of the Geraldines) presently professed himselfe for the plot, and by his authority and and Lord Depu perswasions drew the generality of the Irish after him into it. Messengers are hereupon dispatched vpon all hands both into England, to fuch as they

had hope of, and into low Germany to the Lady Margaret, lifter of King Edward the fourth, Dutcheffe Dowager of Burgundy, a most mortall enemy of the Lancastrian family. In both places the lighted matches of fedition found powdry spirits, and wonderfull correspondence. There is flocking from all parts to support the quarrell, and the Irish (to hauesthe glory of giuing England a King) proclaim &

reuerence this painted puffe, & flying bubble with royall Style and honors. (15) Henrie seeing the fire so strangely kindled

round about the wals of his best hopes & firengths. fals feriously to counsell at the Monastery of Carthufian Monkes neere Richmund, where after exact deliberation it was decreed, I. That general pardon (to flay

the minds of as many as it was possible) (hould with-Conclusions in the Councell of out any exception bee proclaimed to such as from thenceforth (bould continue dutifull. Which was principally done to temper, and affure some private persons, as Sir Thomas Broughton and others, whose forces, willes, and wealth were held most in suspicion. 2. That Elizabeth late wife to Edward the fourth, and mother in law to Henry now King of England, should forfeit all her lands and goods, for that (contrary to her

faith given to them, who were in the plot for bringing in King Henry) she hadycelded up her daughters to the hands of the Tyrant Richard. 3. That Edward Earle of Warwicke then Prisoner in the Tower, Should bee openly the wed aline in London. All which was ac-cordingly executed, but without any great fruit, for ftill the plot went on,

ned among the chiefe of his errors. But as in the times of her flourishing estate, she founded and endowed a faire Colledge for Students in Cambridge which of her is called the Queenes; so we will leave to those her Beneficiaries the farther search of this Argument, and deploration of her fortune, which feemes fuch to vs, as if King Henry affected to leave fomewhat in this example, wherewith to oppose & amase the world. Valesse perhaps it were, that having proclaimed a generall pardon for all offences without exception to fuch as in future should remaine loyall, and forefeeing that fome, who might be willing to lay hold of that benefite, might alfo bee cunningly practifed with to fall away, vpon diftrust of his word, when once hee had ferued his present vies, hee therefore meant (by so cleare a de-

Etedpardons with seuere executions. Neverthelesse, (hie

wisdome considered) it could not be imputed to any ine

quality, but to a discretion, or at least to a principle, that

hee had apprehended, that it was not good, obstinately to

pursue one course, but to trie both wayes. Howsoever

that was; certainely, fince being foint an object of

his commiseration, who had married that daugh-

ter, by which hee enjoyed a Kingdome, and gotten

that verie power, wherewith he ruined her : it can-

not bee reasonably thought, but that there were o-

ther most important motines, perswading such a

fharpe course, or otherwise, that it must bee recko-

emprisonment of his wives owne mother,) to give

hem affurance, that hee, who vpon her person had

beene so seuere a punisher of faith-breach, would

SIIII2

inlaw inferred a breach of pietie, and the in igement it felfe did also want example. The instice was doubtfull both in regard of the cause, and of the proceeding. Of the cause, for how could shee have defended her daughters by the priniledge of landuary from such a Wolfe and Tyger, as would have infringed it for her fons, had they not been quietly deliuered to his bloudie hands? The fame Tyrant doth now demand her daughters as to honour, not to flaughter; but if it had beene to flaughter, what helpe? the terrified with the motion, after much deliberation yeelds them to him, when thee neither could, nor durft detain them. But you fay fhe violated her faith, and hazarded thereby the lines and hopes of all that were in the plot for her cause. A great crime certainely. But Richard was in title, and powers King, and hung ouer her head with ineuitable terrors; when Henry of Richmund was but an Earle, and he farre off, and in banishment, and without any apparence of prevailing, and her selfe a friendlesse widdow. The manner or procee ding was no leffe ftrange; for by what law or triall was fhee condemned in a Præmunire? Shee neuer-Ouetne Flink theleffe is put out of all, and confined to the Monaftery of Bermondfey in Southwarke, where finally the ended her dayes, borne to bee an example of both Monaftery, fortunes, having from a forlorne widdowes estate beene raifed to the bed of a Bachelour Monarcke a and in his life time beene reduced to the feeming of a private fortune, when her Lord was driven to flie theland; and afterward faw those turnes and varieties as few Queenes euer felt, or faw fo many, or more contrarie; whether we regard the heighth of worldly felicity, when shee did behold her sonne a King, or the depth of milery, when the Tyrant inuaded his Crowne and life, or now her daughter being Queene, and her felfe a miferable prisoner. The confideration whereof, as it may worthily

(16) The condemnation of Elizabeth Queene

Dowager, rather moued enuy towards Henry, then

relieued his cause; for to many the instice of that

fentence was doubtful, the circumstance of a mother

mortifie ambitious affections, fo the ftrangeneffe of the sentence verifies that collection among others.

which*that learned Gentleman makes of this Kings raigne in these words. Hee had (saith hee) a very strange kind of interchanging very large and unexpe-

monfiration, as the vtter vndoing, and perpetuall

Prince Arthur

the Kings malig-

The Lord Louel, had assembled forces in Worcester shire, meaning to assault the City of * Worcester. The extremity of and the Staffords rebell. Hardings conti-nuer laith they had taken Gosenot fmall, for neither had he any fufficient numbers

Pelyd Pergia

Poplarag.

their Cloude of rebels, and speedily take refuge at in Oxford/bire. But the priviledges of that place Hany 7. Anno 2. * being juridically scand in the Kings Bench , they were found vnable to afford protection to open traifrom Sanctuary and punified. tors, whereupon they were forceably taken thence,

Lo d Stefferd by

come on fhore in Lancafbire at a place called the pile of Fondray, where they foine with their affored confederate Sir Thomas Broughton, and his fequele; andafter some short refreshment in those partes, march with erected courages against King Henry, 12. king their way through Torkesbire (the hoped nursery of their furest friendshippes) and gloriously pub-

lishing their new King every where, though without any increase of force by concourse, (for King Henries wildome had marred their errand,) their journey was directed toward Newarke vpon Trent. (19) The King then at Couentree, being by fuch scowtes as hee bad appointed for that service, prefently advertised of Lamberts arrivall, and having his forces ready under the conduct of Iafper Duke of Bedford, and the Earle of Oxford, because delay Nattingham the Rendenow of in this case was on all hands reputed mischienous, fets forward to Mettingham, and by a wood fide K. Menyies army. called Bours, encampeth his people; in whom there appeared a gallant forwardnesse to reuenge themselues by the sword of that indignity, which was offered to the English name by ftrangers and rebels, who durfthope to give them a ruler. Thither repaired George Talbot Farle of Shrewsbury, George L. Strange his fon, Sir Iohn Cheinie, and other noble and valiant Gentlemen with their numbers, which addedno small sinewes to K. Henries musters. Polydor hath diligently let downe the names of such principall men in those parts as repaired thither, partly voluntary, partly fent for to the common defence of the King and Kingdome; but without due additi-Great repaire of the noble and ons of each mans degree and place of precedency yet their names doe well deferue to be remembred, people to his sid both for the honour of their Families, and examples of loyalty. He recounteth fixty fine Captaines which Polyd. Utrg. affembled from places thereabout, under whome there cannot probably be thought fewer Souldiers then eight or ten thousand, the English vsually, till of late, having commonly an hundreth and fifty in Company, Their furnames (befides Edward Lord * Haftings) are in him as followeth; Longford, Mont omerie, Vernon of the Peke, Shurley, Folgehan, Grif-Emerica, Vernowy the cree, country, Commung, Commung, Chey, Sutton, Stanley, and Stanley, Houghton, Meryng, Stanley, Clifton, Stayleton, Willoughby, Perpoint; Babington, Bedyll, *Brudenel, Markham, Merbury, Bo-

rough, Tyrwit, Hufey, Shefeild, Newport, Ormeston, Tempest, Knyuett, Willoughby, Dygby, and Dygby, Harrington, Sachenerel, Pyllers, Pylding, Poultney, Tartingson, current of pairs, spanies, 10mm, 19 Yang, Gryna, Gryfin, Lucy, Belknap, Throgmorton, Gray of Ruthin, Wolfion, Fynder, Philips, Cheney, Caston, S. Iohn, Mordant, Terell, Rainsford, Paynton, Daniel, Marney, Armidel. From the vetermoft bounds of the North, there repaired also other chiefe persons and leaders (faith he) as * Ogle, * Newyle, * Latimer, Bulmer, Langford, Norres, Newyle of Thortinbrig and Williams. The Earle of Lincolne neverthelesse comes as them who forward with his Counter-king, nothing perhappes principa viri. adding greater courage to that fide, then the example of Hemy himselfe, who with leffe numbers (but much more fecret Art) prevailed in a pight field at Bofworth : his meaning was to get into Newarke. The King wakefull vponall advantages, and perfectly infirmated of his enemies courses (whom despera-tion did thrust forward to a daring hope) dislodgeth with his Army, & passeth through Newarke, leaving it behind him about 3. miles, to intercept the Lam-

bertines, and there fits downeagaine. The Earle of Lincoine encamps with great brauerie and thew of courage in the face of the Kings forces. (20) The next day both the Armies are brought forth to fight, neere to a little village called stoke. The Earle of Lincolne marshalled his people by the adule

Chap.20. Henrie VIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 57. of Coronell Swart and others, to the best advantage, Bers. Andr. vpon the * Brow or hanging of an hill expecting the charge. The Almaines were all of them hardie and approued men, and throughly well-appointed, and fo in likelihood were fuch English as Rood for that fide; but the Irish, besides multitudes and siercenesse, had small provision, save (after the rude manner of their Nation) darts, skeins, or the like. The maine of the Battell refted wholly vpon the English and Almains. King Henry on the other fide, (as hee that thirsted for an end of this bloody daies worke,) speedily disposed his whole numbers into three Battailions: the Voward whereof was best replenifhed with store of choice and picked men, well armed and appointed, and fortified with wings. The armie being thus ordered, Andreas faith that King Henry vieth this speech. (2 I) Most faithfull Lords, and you most valiant

King Henries O-ration before the battellat \$/sig. "Companions in Armes, who have (together with "vs) endured fo great perils by Land and Sea; lo, we are againe against our wils, drawne to trie our "fortunes in another Field. For the Earle of Lincoln (a periured man) without any occasion mini fired by vs, defends an uniuft quarrell against vs "neither doth he it differablingly, but most openly impudent, without any feare of God; not so much onely to endammage vs, as to fulfill the humor of a a giddie, and intemperate-tongued woman, who is notignorant that her blood was extinguished by her brother Richard; but because that line did al

waies maintaine a most deadly fewd against ours. face (without any great regard to her Neece, my dearest Confort) affaies to destroy aswell vs as our posteritie. Yee see therefore how often wee are prouoked by them; but they shall not carrie it away vnreuenged. God therefore and his holy Angels we first call to witnes, that we are provident both night and day for your safetie, and for the Common quiet; though thus the ancient enemy repugneth. But God, a fult, ftrong, and patient , Judge, will also bring a remedy to this euill. In the or the extraordinary reuerence borne to his functimeane time we exhort and admonish you that the confideration of our just inheritance be at this prefent more forceable with you, then their wicked-

the former warre made vs victorious, will enable vs to triumph now also ouer these enemies. Let vs therefore let vpon them courageously; for God is vpon our fide to affift vs. (22) The Earle of Oxford (on the behalfe of the whole Army) was prepared to make answere, but the King haftening to the proofe, brake off all Ceremo=

nies; and the figne of Battell given, they thunder for-

ward with showts of people, and sound of martiall musicke, and like a blacketempest, powrethem-

nes; neither doubt, but that the fame God, who in

selucs upon the Front of the Enemies Battels ; who

ternerd.Andr.

The hatself of

rushed forward with equall violence and furie, as men that at once encountred against feare and fortune. The fight continued doubtfull aboue*three houres. Along space for men of courage to be emploied in killing one the other, and fit to glut the hunger of furie. The Earles English wanted nothing but a good cause, and the Almans gave not place to the Kings people in any point worthy of gallant Souldiers, but fold their lines dearely, and their Coronell Swart had scarce any before him in personall performance. Neither were the Irish behind for their parts, if their skinnes had beene sword-proofe, for the contempt of death was alike in them as the rest. Briefly, the wonder of that daies worke was, that Christian men, in no sounder a quarrell, could

dare to die fo boldly, such chiefly, as the Earle of Lincolne and some others, who knew the secret of that desperate enterprize. But God, the Lord of revenges: punishing their untust malice, with a suddaine whirle-winderising in the heat of the Battell, (even as when Constantine fought against the Enemies of the Church) our souldiers, who seemed vanquished, became victorious For the Kings vantgard's reenforced it felfe, and

tgaue fo furious a recharge, (in likelihood vpon this | The King proencouragement fent as it were from Heauen) that it usiles, vtterly brake the Enemies squadrons, and giving in among them with full randon, slew * first such Captaines as resisted, and put the residue which yeelded not, either to the sword flight. Herewith the whole Armie * shouted, the trumpers sound victorie, and the generall crie runnes King Henry, King Henry, When the battell and chase were ended, so that there was time and leafure to view the field, it then appeared what mindes the flaine bodies carried for all the chiefe Captaines, the Earle of Lincolne himselfe The Earle of (shough the King would gladly have had him fa-ued, to come thereby to a greater light of his dan-the chiefe leagers) the Lord Laud!, Sir Thomas Bronghine, Germell disconfination war and "Lettarite Sirs-Thomas, Generall of the Little, were (like "catime and his Complices) found and "significant coourt those places dead, which they defended live to court those places dead, which they defended live they are those places of the confined which which confidence in the confidence of th were flaine vpon that fide. The King at this battell loft*almost halfe the People in his Vantgard, and Surgeons had frore of worke among the Surgeons had frore of worke among the Surgeons had frore of worke among the Surgeons had from the surgeons had from the surgeons had found that the Garland gained at this journey was not dank, faith that forhatthe Garland gained at this journey was not very few were vindipt in blood; Howbeit there is no mention anne. that any man of honor or speciali note, fell upon the Kings fide.

did but lately fo adorne) was condemned to *the

Kings kitchen, there to manage spits at the fire, who

if his wit and spirit had answered his late Titles, would

have chosen much rather to have beene turned from the

Ladder by an bangman. But * having in this abiect

condition ginen sufficient proofe that he was but a Puppet, or a property in the latetragical motion,

*he was at length (promoted wee cannot say) made one of

the Kings Falconers, in which estate it seemes he lined

and died inglorious. This battell was fought vp-

on a* Satterday, a day of the weeke which is obser-

ued to have been fauourable and luckie to this Hen-

rie. His first care after the victory fetled, was that

which most became a religious Prince, the humble

and ioyous acknowledgement of thankes to God, in

where he spent three daies in publike supplications.

processions, and thanksgiuings, and sent his Standard to our Ladies Church at Walfingham in Norfolke, there

to remaine as a Monument of his victorie and grati-

tude. Such as were taken in the Battell or chafe, are

then executed. From Lincoln he progresseth into

Yorkeshire, where hee tooke a seuere course aswell by

execution, as ransome, for purging those parts from

fuch as were culpable, or probably dangerous. At Newcastle about * the middle of sugust, he dispat-

cheth his experienced and trufty Agent Richard Fox

Bishop of Excester, and Sir Richard Edgeombe Knight

into Scotland, there to fettle a peace with King Iames

the third, to empeach the retreat and protection,

which his enemies and rebels found therein. Him-

(23) Among the Prisoners was the Counterfeit himselfe, and the lewd contriner of this wicked Stratagem, Richard Simon, who with little change may most truly be called another Sings. The King (who referred himselfe in this battell, (as in others, but

*neuer retired) made both their persons examples of *Fragm.MS. his clemency. For Lambert being questioned, how fuch a* breeching-boy as he was a durst attempt so great a wickednes, dinied not, that hee was compelled thereunto, by certaine bad persons, who were of that conspiracie; and as for his parents quality, bee confest them to bee such as indeed they were; altogether of base and defice-ble calling. "Sim subject of the Simen the

Prieft, whether for discouery of some great secrets, *10.De.M\$.

Polyd. Verg. Lamberts for-

476.1m. 4 D. Bern And M

the very place. From thence he paffeth to * Lincoln, "Pope Vorg.

in the end come to a field: for which cause he takes order for the leuie of an Armie, refoluing to gine his enemies battell with the first opportunity, it being the ancient and manfull fashion of the English. (who are naturally most impatient of lingring mis-

Bern Andr.

732

Polyd Perg

Cambdin Not.

ting. * Io.Lefte. * Ber. Andr.

Phil, de Com.

Iohn Da. 345.

*Polyd. Pergil

fummo genera natua.

Iohn Stows

mas Broughton (another principal Confederate) tern-

porized in England, there to remaine a flay to the

businesse, as well for mutuall intelligence, as receit of

an Army when it should arrine. This Earle of Lin-

colne, befides that he could not with any patience

beholda Lancastrian weilding the English Scepter

was also of a " sharpe wit, and high reach, and there-

fore not without an ambitions sensibility, that in countenancing King Henry, hee wronged that ex-

pectancie, and relation to the Crowne, which hee

had in right of his mother, fifter to King Edward

the fourth, and to King Richard the third, who had

* deligned him for heire apparant, & contracted his

fifter the * Lady Anne dela Pole, to James Prince of

Scotland: was also the rather animated by *letters re-

ceiue d from his annt the Dutcheffe of Burgandy, ear-

nestly calling upon him for his presence. This Duc-chesse was the second wife of Charles Duke of Bur-

gundie, * flaine by the Switz at the battell of Nance,

by whom thogh he had no iffue, yet by reason of her

great dower, & wife behauiour among the Dutch

fhee was firong in money and friends; all which

fhee was willing to conuert to the vtter subnersion

howfoeuer of the Lancastrian line. Though there-

fore, shee well knew that this Lambert was but an

Idoll,* hammered out of the hote braine of that

Boutefew Richard Simon, yet the embraceth the occa-tion, countenanceth the Imposture, and leaves no-

thing vnsaid or vndone, which might give life and

fucceffe to the enterprise. The Earle, the L. Lonell, and others shee furnished abundantly, and ioyneth

vnto them a renowmed Coronell Martin Swart, a

Gentleman of * honorable birth, exemplary valour, and fingular experience, and certain felected com-

panies, to the number of about two thousand Al-

maines, which soone after arrive at Dublin Lambert

who before was but proclaimed, is now in Christs

Church there folemnly by them crowned King of

England, *feafting and triumphing, rearing mighty

showtes and cries, carrying him thence to the kings

Caftell vpon tall mens shoulders, that he might be

feene and noted; as hee was furely (faith Stow) an

honourable boy to look vpon though nothing leffe

was meant, then that hee should enjoy that honour

if they preuailed; as meaning then to erect Edward

Earle of warwicke. Posterity might worthily doubt

of the truth of these so desperate impudencies, and

ridiculous Pageants, practifed in the highest affaires of mankind, but that the thing is so vniuersally te-

ftified, and also that the highest affairs of the world

(when once they are paffed) are little better then

(18) K. Henry (on the other fide) though he had

by most diligent espials endenoured to know the

truth of Lamberts quality, to divert the fiteame of

affections, which he faw inclined that way, for that

the practife was carried with fuch wonderfull art,

as that very many (otherwise discreet and sober

men) were induced to beleeue that hee was indeed

King Edwards sonne; and although the generall

pardon proclaimed by King Henry, did vndoubted-

ly ftay very many from open reuolt, but much

more the carefull watch which was kept at the

Ports, to hinder the escape of Malecontents or fac-

tious Fugitiues: yet he manifeffly faw, that it wold

fuch like Pageants.

chiefes) to put their publike quarrels to the trial of

Hill. Ang. L.

Bern, Atte.

felfe having spent a great part of Summer in this progresse, or rather itinerary Instituting, returnes by Leicester toward London. Those prudent Ambas-

ments were immediatly fent ouer under Robert Lord

which was to annexe Britaine to the Crowne of

France. Howfocuer, Henry, though he well enough

of King Hearies Regality.

Henry VIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 57. Chap. Broke Generall, Sir John Cheiney, Sir John Midleton. (27) The visworthy death of the Earle of 2007-Fight thouland Sir Ralfe Hilton, Six Richard Corbet, Six Thomas Leigh thamberland was feconded by a more vinworthy, of ton, Sir Richard Lacon, and Sir Edmund Cornewall I ames the third King of Scotland, fo as King Henrie die into Britaine Knights, and Coronels. The whole Army contain loft at home a most honourable stay of his Northerne ned eight thousand men. These march toward the affaires, and a fure Ally abroade. This vntortunate enemy; who, acquainted with the temper of the Prince, having * by fome irregularity of life, and Left sin Lactb. English, whiles they are fresh, as * being then almost in-uncible, contains themselves within their Campe; partialities, and errors of government (amplified *PoydVerg.1.26. perhaps by the conftructions and reports of his mabut yet * molest the English with continuall skirlighant Subjects) incurred extreme harred with milhes on horfebacke in feueral places at once; finalmany of the Nobility and people, laboured with ly to the profit of the French, who were alwaies King Henry, as also with the Pope, and King of put to the worse, the Archers received them with France, to make an accord betweene him and his Musuch perpetuali stormes. In the meane space, Frantinadoes, for that they had compelled Prince James eis Duke of Britaine dies, leaving in effect, one only his fonne, to be the titular and vnnaturall Head of daughter, the Lady Anne, (for the other, being the younger) deceased not long after. This altered the whole state of the case. The British Nobility *Polit. Pag. King Hearyla Vaine leekes to tholearmes, which traiteroully (as pretending to haue a right on behalfe of the Common-weale to de-The Duke of pose an euill King) they assumed against him. The (vnder their young Mistresse) immediatly fall at va-Kings accordingly interpoled their mediations by tac English 10riance among themselves, and the English thereby earnest Ambassadors, but could obtaine no other were on enery hand in danger : fo that God (as it then this outragious answer: That there was no talappeared by the fequale) had destined Britaine to bee king of peace unlesse he would resigne his Crowne. King annexed to the Crowne of France ; for the English Henry and King Charles vehemently protested a (after fine moneths flay) were in wildome compelgainst these their whole proceedings, declaring by led to returne; the rather, for that Winter now was their Ambaffador, that they thought the same to be as a In Left Bith of come vpon them, and Britaine, destitute of compecommon iniury done unto them selves or the example to be tent defence, (her Rulers difagreeing among themvery wicked and pernicious, and not sufferable by Princes, (elues) was finally by the marriage of King Charles that Subjects should be permitted to put hands onto their with the Lady Anne, made a parcell of the French Sourraigne, Hereupon it came to a Battell at Banocks-Monarchy, as hecreafter will appeare. born by Striuelin, whereat K, Iames (rashly fighting be-The beginning (26) King Henry the while was againe in danger fore his whole numbers were come) was (notwithof new thirtes in Tarkefbire. to have had prefent vie of Souldiers at home. Wee standing the contrarie commandement of the shewed, what care was heeretofore taken by him to Prince his fonne) flaine in the Mill of that Field, King of Scotlata flaine in battell by his Subjects, weede the North, and free it from lurking enemies. whither he fled after the battel ended. By reason of That notwithstanding, when the Earle of Northumthis infortunate precipitation of the Scotish King, berland, (Lieutenant of the North) fignified at an Hadrian de Castello an Italian Legate, whom Pope In-Job. Stower Job affemblie (according as the truth was) that the King secontius the eight had fent to take up the cruell quar-(though the Northern people had befought it) would not remitte one penny of fuch Subsidy, as was granted in Parrell, came too late, (for he arrived not in England till the battell at Banocksborne was passed,) but not too *Polyd Verg 1.26 liament for Supportation of the warres in Britaine * left late to receive honour at the hands of King Henry, the Acte of State (bould beereuerfed at the rude peoples who respecting his wisdome and excellent learning, pleasure; but that on the contrary Commission and war-(vpon the speciall commendations first * of Johns Io.Stow Ama rant was sent downe for him to see the same levied by di-Morton Archbishop of Canterburie, but afterward The Earle of streffe, or otherwife : the desperate multitude, falsely vpon his owne experience of the man in fundry em-Norsoumberla flame by the supposing that the Earle was the occasion of such an ploiments to the Roman Sea,) bestowed vpon him answere, did suddenly fer vpon him at the incitement . werries born the Bishoprike of Hereford, and (after relignation ie to a stranges of one Iohn & Chamber, and furiously murdered him, thereof) the Bishopricke of Bath and Weller; who for Learnings with certaine of his feruants in a place called Cockwas also at the length created Cardinall by Pope A. lexander the fixth. * But who is hee among many thoulegge by Thrusk, eighteene miles from Yorke. They Potyd.Verg.l.st fands (faith Polyd.) that weth not to admire these ont-ward honours which may alike be given to the unworthy to carry their wicked attempt through, make head under Sir Iohn Egremond, a discontented Knight of those parts, openly declaring where they came, that aswell as to the wel-deserming, and may alike be taken a-The first reuj their meaning was to fight with the King in defence way from either? But the praise of this Hadrian is of an-other farre more noble kinde and eternall: for he was the in this age of pure Larme and choife learning of their liberties, as if the causelesse killing of a most noble Lord had beene one of them. Thomas man who first revived the glory of the ancient Latine ela-quence, and of all other forts of abstruce and exquisit lear-nings, as in which himselfe excelled. Thus doth Polydor Howard Earle of Surrey fent from Court with some forces to represse their increase, skirmisheth with aroute of these Rebels, beats them away, and takes (himfelfean Italian,) celebrate the learning of his Iohn a Chamber prisoner. The whole swarme flockes Country-man, of whose other qualities, yet others The King in per-log in Tolkt Bire. to Yorke, where they roofted about three or foure write more harfhly ; as that out of meere ambition daies, when hearing of the Kings approach (who was euer one of the first in the necke of such occasito be Pope (without any other grudge) hee confpi Gadwins Catal.o BB.in Bath, & c. red, with Alphonso Petruccio, and other facred Carons) they feattered themselues, but the ring-leaders dinals, to murther Pope Leo the tenth : induced were hanged and quartered, and Iohn a Chamber, with thereto by fuggestion of a Witch, who foretold him that one Hadrian, an old man, of meane parentage, fome others, were executed at Yorke after an extraorof great Learning and wildome, should succeed in dinarie manner. Sir Iohn Egremond escaping, fled Sir Ish Egremend to the common Center of all King Henries dangers the Papacy. The man thought it must needs be himand enmities, Margaret Dutchefie of Burgundy, fo felfe, as being though of very base Parentage, Hadrion 6 that though the colour of rifing was about money, yet of fomenoble qualities : but another * Hayet Egremond at left had reference, it feemes, to drian, the sonne of a Dutch Brewer, and instructer of Charles the fifth the Emperour, prooued to be the man; and this our Hadrian lost by deprithe generall perturbation of the Kingdome, vpon the old ground of quarrell (hatred of the Lanea-(trian Familie) and this to bee but a sparke or nation all his promotions whatfoeuer, for his nefarious attempt. Into such extreeme folly is learning flash of that great and troubleous fire, which afterand wildome metamorpholed, where it is tainted ward brake foorth and blafed fo prodigioufly. The Bern Andr. MS. Earle of Surrey is left by the King (having * fewith Ambition, or wants a Religious difcretion to uerely punished the murtherers) Lieutenant of the manage it aright. (28) And albeit the King himselfe could verie North, and Sir Robert Tonftall Knight, as chiefe Commissioner for leaving the taxe or subsidie. gladly haue spent his time in the fludies of peace, as Rrrrr 2

725

thole which were farre more apt for the feruice of God, and for attaining of knowledge, then in martiall rumults; yet the quality of his supereminent place enuied vnto him that felicitie; for he was necessarily drawne into a warre with France vpon leffe occasi-The yong Dut-

of marriage with

Pohl Verg.

ons. Anne the young Dutcheffe of Britaine, (by their aduife, who affected to preferue the liberty of that Dukedome, which by vnion with France, would be abforpt & extinguished,) had so farre entangled and engaged her selfe with the Procurators of Maximilian King of Romans, that shee was not only publikely cotracted but cocented (for vttermost performace of those rires whereof marriage by proxic was honorably capable) to take upon her the Bride, and being folemnly bedded, to permit Maximilians Deputie, in the presence of fundry Noble witnesses aswell men as women, to put in his legge, ftript naked to the knee, betweene the spousall sheetes, that ceremony feeming to amount to a Confummation. Charles King of France, notwithstanding these solemnities, and his owne particular engagement with the Lady Margaret daughter of Maximilian, (whom for the purpose of marriage he had already entertained into France,) did so ambitiously and vehemently couet rogaine Britaine, that vpon confidence of his force, hee refolued to breake through all refpects. and not only to offend all his forreine friends, but to make them his just enemies, rather then to faile in effectuation. Inftruments are therefore very fecretly fet on worke, and batterie is placed with bags of gold at all the opportunities which might let in his purpose. Ambassadorsalso (the Lord Frances of Lutzenburg, Charles Marinian, and Robert Gagwine *Generall of the Order of the holy Tranitie, are dispatched to Henrie, praying that with his good will he might dispose of the body of the Lady Anne in matriage according to the right which he had thereunto. as the chiefe Lord of whom shee held the Dukedome Henry deried the request, but yeelded not withstanding to send Ambassadors into France there to Capitulate about a peace. The French carried this affaire with notable Art, for to divert the world for looking in to the depth of their drift. King Charles still detained the young Lady Margaret, Maximilians daughter; fo as at most it could be but suspected, that Charles meant to match her with some of his blood, and all the entercourse of orators and Ambassadors yield in the meane time, tended but to hold the English bufied vpon other objects, till they had wrought their feate in the Court of Britaine. For Maximilian, (to let the world see what injuries shall be offered even to Kings, that are not ftrong) him they alrogether neglected; King Henrythey plaied with, and Ferdinando King of Castile (who was ready to joine with Maximilian and Henrie against the French) they refolue to appeale, with rendring vp vnto him the Counties of Ruscinson, and Perpinian; as accordingly they *did, without *reemburgement of one penny of those 300000. Crownes, for which Iohn King of Arragon (father to Ferdinando) had morgaged them. The young Ladies doubts, riling either out of religion, or point of honor, his cunning Agents, and Emissaries wipe away with these solutions. That Maximilians daughter was not of yeeres to consent, and therefore the contract betweene King Charles and her did not binde either in law, or conscience: That her owne contract with Maximilian was void, for that it was done without the consent of her Soueraigne Lord, King Charles, whose ward or Client shee was. The Ladie vanquished in her judgement with these reasons, attracted with the present greatnes of King Charles, and loath by refusall to make her Countrey the seat of a long and miserable warre, fecretly yeelded to accept of another husband. Thomas Goldstone Abbot of S. Augustines in Canterbury, and Thomas Earle of Ormond in Ireland, King Henries Ambassadors into France, having beene dandled by the French during these illustue practises, returned without other fruite of their labors.

(29) What could now the most patient does leffe then take iword in hand vpon to palpable and vnworthy illusion? But Maximilians wrongs were too impudent and intollerable; for Charles fent homethe Lady Margaret, and married the Inheretrix of Britaine, annexing it to his owne Realme: whereas King Hewie found himselfe rather mockt, then otherwise empaired. Iames Contibald hereup to France, on comes Ambassador from Maximilian, and obtained his request, which was, that they with ionst forces (bould by a certaine day prefixed invade the French, in full reuenge of these their bold prouocations; Maximilian for his part, promiting to support that warre with at least ten thousand men for two yeeres. King Henry having formerly in abundant manner provided himfeife of treafure, was ready before the day with a roiall army: but Maximilian (whose will to worke the vttermost mischiefe to France was not doubted, being sent vnto by King Henry, signifying ioine with Henry, his forwardnes, was found vtterly vnfurnished. Causes of Maxamilians weakenesse in state, were the rebellions and diflikes of his Flemish Subjects cherished by the French, the lealousie of Princes neighbourhood making them uninftly glad either of others moleflations. For subduing whereof though King Henry had heretofore given him good and fucceffefull affiftance vnder the conduct of Giles Lord Dambeney Gouernour of Callis, the Lord Morley and others, whereby he the rather ouercame; yet was hee the feebler, as then, by reason of so fresh exhaustures. King Henry with good cause was not a little troubled at these newes, secretly signified by his trustie Almner M. Christopher Privick, and Sir Richard Rifley knight, his Ambassadors to Maximilian; For hee was very loath to vindergoe fo great an Action voon his particular strengths, though he doubted not to findea potent party among the Britaines, (whose affections were as yet but loofely fetled toward King Charles,) and yet farre more loath to deceine the expectation of his owne people, who had to largely contributed; Chiefly the City of London, out of which, even in those daies he received for his furniture in that voiage almost * ten thousand pounds from the Commoners, and (2s it feemes by our Author) two hundreth pounds besides from enery Alderman, where the same King could not, but with large countributions to the king fome difficulty, leuie in the third yere of his Reigne a loane of foure thousand pounds, whereof three of the best Companies are noted (as for having done and described extraordinarily) to have lent about nine hundred. And verily this wise King (knowing how great a strength that rich City was vnto him) humored that people with all forces of popularities, for himfelfe did not onely come among them, King Heariespa and cause himselfe to beentred a brother, in *one pulsations in Low of their Companies, but warethehabiteat a publike feaft, and fare as Maifter, as is verie credibly re- Taylors, ported out of the Records of their Hall. His wifdome therefore faw, that in giving over the invalion of France; he should stoathfully abandon a goodly occasion of making himselfe vniuersally acceptable to his people. His resolutions therefore are by him at leastwise pretended to continue, and for that cause he sufficiently encreaseth his numbers, that he might feeme able to goe through with that enterprize alone; and though the time of yeere were too farre fpent (for he landed not at Caleis, till the fixth day of October) yet marcheth he with his whole forces to- A.D. 1492. ward Boloigne, being wel affored that with this trow. An.reg. 8. ell he fhould at once plaister two wals, that is, humor his English subjects, and for a peace draw to himselfe ftore of Crownes from the French. (30) He had with him befides the flower of his Nobility, and Captaines, answerable numbers of The chief Lords

People fit for the feruice. The most named persons ued in this voiwere thefe, Jafper Duke of Bedford Lieutenant Gene- 180. rall of the Army Thomas Marque fe Dorfet the Earles of Arundell,Oxford, Suffolk, Shrewsburie, Derby, Kent, Deuonsbire, and Ormond, sundry Barons, as Dawbe-

Britains appeared

ney, Abergenny, Delaware, South, Hastings, Cobham, Butitis needlesset over your selves with long relations of a short voyage; for King Henry, before hee fet forth out of England, was secretly dealt with by the Lord Cordes Gonernour of Henault, according to instructions on the French Kings behalfe, to accept of conditions, which till Boloigne was be-

fieged(as now by him it was) was not knowne. The ignorance of this mystery made many forward Gentlemen to morgage their lands, and runne into much debt for their fuller and brauer furniture, in hope to get great matters in this warre, whereof to their griefe they found themselves deceived. In the mean time the L*Cordeshauing met at Caleis with Richard Fox Lord Bishoppe of Excesser, and * Giles Lord Dambeney, the Kings Commissioners, after inst and

long debatement, concluded vpon Articles of peace betweene the two Kings. (3 I) Boloigne was brought to some distresse, when by interuention of this agreement it remained fafe and quiet : King Charles was chiefly moued to buy his peace at a deare rate, both for that the flate of

Britaine was as yet unfetled, and for that hee meant

forthwith to march into Italy for the * conquest of

the Kingdome of Naples; and K. Henry on the o-

French elsewhere, whereby he should farre the bet-

ter bee able to withftand all forrain practiles, or do-

mesticke outrages. As for the preserving of him-

felfe, and his honour with his Subjects, hee wan-

ther fide was not vnwilling, because Maximilian had failed, and Britaine feemed clearely past possibility of euiction. To which may be added, a naturall, noble, and religious inclination in King Henry, to live in amity with his neighbours; the inck-* Arnol. Ferron. Hig.ad A.D. ling of new * dangers, then in brewing against him by the turbulent, and vnappeaseable Dutchesse of 1492. Polyd.Vergilin Burgundy, and * cherified by King Charles; and laft-Hen 7.
* Stew-Annal. ly, the enrichment of himselfe by reembursing the charges both of this, and the British warre out of the

ted not both true and honourable gloffes: Such as were the care to anoid vnnecessary effusion of Christian bloud: the vies of his presence at home, befides many other: but his wisdome in the carriage of this right weighty action was chiefly eminent in this, That hee would not enter into Treaty, till The high point of wildome pra-ctifed by King Henry in atchie-uing his ends. he was in the field; and that with such a puissance, as was likely enough to force his owne conditions; nor suffer the least signe of his secret willingnesse to peace, or inward doubt of troubles at home, to creepe out at any crany or chinke of his discourse or carriage, whereby he as farre outwent the French fairely, as they formerly seemed to have ouerwrought him subtlely. Had

they truly beene informed in those points, it is pro-

bable they might have gone a cheaper way to work:

for, besides what other Articles soener, it was con-

amity with England. There were moreouer(by Hen-

ries confent, who was thus content to gratifie his

Peeres at anothers coft) not onely present rewards,

but also certaine annuall pensions allotted to the

chiefe Lords of his printe Councell. A course of

bounty which might otherwise have proued preiu-

dicious to the feruice of the King of England, by en-

gaging his Counsellors affections to the French

cluded, Thar Henry should a not quit his claime to Berti. Andr. MC France; but that for a Peace, which by the contract was only to continue during the two Kings lives. Charles of France (hould pay in present to Henry for his

charges in that warre, * feuen hundred, forcy and five One hundret thousand . Duckets, and twenty fine thousand Crownes yeerely toward the expenses, which hee dreth and fifty pounds English, J.Da. of Her. MS had heretofore been at in aiding the Britons. Which (by the English called Tribute) was duly paid during all this Kings raigne, and also to Henry hisson, till the whole debt was run out, thereby to preferue

Forrainepen-fions of what vie or hazard.

The fiege of Boleine lasted till the eighth day of No-Ber Andr uember, & Henry (w hom his Queens most * tender, frequent and louing lines, did the rather inuite to speediest returne,) hauing setled all his transmarine 17 Decemb. J.Sto Annal. affaires, * arrined at Doner, from whence hee iournied to Westminster; there to celebrate the Feast of Christmas. This voyage into France, affording no greater exploites then wee haue heard, was celebrated by blind * Bernard with hyperbolicali and well- * And The Off borne verses not ordinary, in which directing his speech in honour of Hemy, to the Howres he con-

Effugite igniuomos celeres coniungere Solie Quadrupedes: Hora protinus ecce parant; Non opus est vobu; quia si prinatus Apollo, Panerit Admetirurfus & ipfebones, Principis hic nostri vultus Ionialis abunde Lumina, crede mihi. Phaberecede dehit

(32) The famous counterfeisance of Perkin War.

becke, with which the brainc of the Lady Margaret

Dutchesse Dowager of Burgandie had long travelled.

doth now beginne to disclose it selfe, and make new businesses for King Henry. The inglorious glorie of the first invention in his raigne of this kind of vexation. Lambert Simmels person had given to his Mafter the wily Simon, so that our Dutchesse was but an imitatrix, and yet perhaps thee gaue not place in any point to the first example, or Archtype, neuertheleffe the fortune of the first deuise, being no more successefull then it was, might reasonably have deterred her from the edition of a second: but whether it were an immortall enuie toward the Lancafirian race, or a burning zeale of advancing one that might at leastwife beare the name of a Plantagenet, though by any finister practises; as if it had beene lawfull to attaine her ends (admitthem just) by any iniurious courles, fhee resolues to erect another Idoll, as perceining by the first, how notable an engine imposture was, to trouble Henry; being well affored, that England was ful of corrupt humors, and ill affections to worke vpon, not so much through the defert of her present King, as for that the dregges which naturally relide in the bottom of mens hearts, where most bloudy and barbarous factions have for along time weltered, and wurried one the other with various euent, were not clenfed and avoided. The Dinell therefore ready to furnish all attempts which may raife trouble, and mischiefe, easily fitted The Dutcheffe her. There was come therfore to her hands a youth of Burgundy ad-dreffech a Pfeu in adorned with fuch a shape, as might easily perswade the beholders was worthy of a noble fortune: he had thereunto a naturall fine wir, and (by reason of his abode in England in K. Edwards dayes) could speake our language, as also some other, which hee had by a kind of wandring travell obtained. This youth was borne (they say) in the City of Torney, and called "Polyd Verg. Bern Andr. MS. *Peter Warbecke, the *fon of a converted Icw, whose Godfather at Baptisme King Edward himselfe was. The English in * contempt (and for a note perhaps *Tolyd. Verg. of his forraine birth) did afterward call him by a diminuriue of his name, Peterkin or Perkin. Him the Dutchesse (as a fitte peece of timber, out of which to carue a new Idoll) moulds by degrees, & makes him take shape according to that Idea, which shee had prefigured inher working imagination, before the which the late honours of her house conspicuous in three Princes (which altogether made not twenty and fine yeeres of raigne) did so perpetually houer, as her foule could neuer take contentment but in the hope that the house of Yorke should againe

be the dwelling place of Maiefty.
(33) Her offence against Henry wanted not ma-Caufes moning ny feeming reasons, but none so great, as that hee the Dutchesse to had flaine her own brother King Richard, who albe-it he was there reputed murtherer of her Nephewes, fo mortal hatted, yet were they a degree more removed from her, and fo leffe deere in likelihood then a brother; and how focuer shee might secretly detest, or believe the commitmet of that parricide, yet could the neuer brooke (seeing they were gone) that the reward of her brothers death, and that cuen to him who flew him

should beethe Crowne of England, whereby not

onely her brother, but the whole male-line of her family was for euer to bee excluded; much leffe could finee (a Plantagenet) abide that Henry, who brought to the Crowne the furname of a newly raised Familie. These and other considerations in the breaft of a Lady, bred vp in a dominating Family, her felfe a Dowager, in fuch a fortune, as in which face was Paramount for the time, and absolute without controlment, being carelesse withall of sauing for posterity, because shee was without a child and in that regard the more abundantly stored with treafure; all which made her fpirits ouer-boile with impatience and virulency; to farre forth, that hauing infused al her principles into Peter her creature under the Title of Richard Plantagenet, second son of King Edward the fourth; the most couertly sends him into Portugall, from thence to take his learean flight, as *elfewhere is related. Neuerthelesse, there will not (perhaps) want some, who in defence of the Dutchesse, hadrather referre it to Magnanimity, and Noblenesse of Spirit, in seeking the honour of her house; which, if it might passe for such among the heathen, yet can it not among Christians; much the leffe, for that her duty to England, & the royall flourishing estate of her own Neece, the right heire, exacted at her hands a greater tendernesse. (34) That Peter Warbecke should bee inflamed

by her fauours, and encouragements, to dare in earnest the personation of a Kings sonne, seemes not a thing to beeadmired; for there is in humane nature (which ties not her felf to Pedigrees, nor Parentages) a kind of light matter, which will eafily kindle, being toucht with the blazing hopes of ambitious propositions. He therefore you the first difclose of * himselfe, did put on so excellent a seeming Perkix Warbecke fits the Dutch-cheffes turne, by as might inftly mone King Henry to bee icalous, whereunto the pernitious practife might come at last; for there wanted nothing in the whole forme of the young vpftart, but onely the conscience of a truth, and truth it felfe: which makes me call to mind * what one hath written of a goodly white Saphyr in Venice, made by art so neerely to resemble a true Diamond, that with much difficulty, and but by one onely lapidary, it was discouered; which if it had beene graced with some great Princes, wearing, what could want to have made it paffable for a very Diamond of greatest value? Perkin came such from out of the Burgundian forge; and (if his parentage beerespected) assumed the image and resemblance of a king, being otherwise not so much as a meane Gentleman. Neither can it be maruclled at, if such a Phantasme as this, did abuse, and crouble the common people of that time; for even to fuch as do write thereof, it begets a kind of doubt (which without some little collection of their spirits doth not easily vanish,) it seeming almost incredible, that fuch a bloudy play should meetly be difguifed and fained; the discouery therefore was worthy fuch a wit as King Henries, and the push it gaue to his foueraignty did throughly try his litting, being of force enough to have cast an ordinarie rider out of fadle.

> (35) Therfore, it was the Dutchesses missortune, that her inventions (if they were hers) had to encounter so politicke and constant a man as King Henry; whose prudence searcht into the abstruses ferrets, and whose diligence ouercame all difficulties. Yet the Lady Margarets course to vent her Creature at the first was exquisite; for the (as in a Magicke practife) having kept him fecret till shee faw her time canfeth him to bee closely conuayed into * Portugall; from whence (attended with fitte affociates and Priuadoes) hee failes into Ireland (the Foster-place and nursery of immortall good will to the house of Yorke) where (notwithstanding their late calamities,)he so strongly enchanted that rude peo-ple with the charmes of false hopes, and mists of feemings, as he was fure of partakers in great plenty. Charles the eight, King of France, hearing (and

perhaps beleeuing) that the Duke of Torke was aliue, Asummarie read and glad to have so probable an occasion of doing full forume as full forume as mischiefe to Henry of England, in regard of these flagrat enmitties which as steen remained vnquench: liked, let be was published. betweene them, inuites Duke Richard moit officioully to Paris, and belides all other honours, affigned him (at his comming) a guard for his person, whereof the Lord Congreshall was Captaine. Afterward there repaired to this new Duke, Sir George Neuill Knight, (a * bastard of the noble house of the stow Annal. Neuils,) Sir lohn Taylor, Rowland Robinson, and about an hundreth English, to whom (as a principal) wee may adde * Stephen Frion, French Secretary to King Henry himselfe; all which, together with the whole Strategeme, was smoakt out of France with the first graine of incense sacrificed upon the Altars of Peace at Boloign, after the same was once made and ratified (as you have heard) between the French and vs. The Dutchesse then iceing her artificiall creature thus turned againe v pon her hands pretends an extreame ignorance that ever shee had seene him before that present, and an excessive ion for his mir aculous escape, and prefernation, which feemed fuch to her (as face pretended) as if hee had beene reuiued from death to life, and that the fable might want no quickning, which her personall countenancing, or her Court could afford, shee openly salutes him by the delicate Title of the * White Rofe of England, and questi- ders with the Dutcheffe. ons him of the manner of his escape, with such like, Stow done to beget a firme beliefe in the hearers, that the neuer had seene him before that time, and that he was indeed her Nephew Richard Duke of Yorke. The No. bility of Flanders accordingly, doc vnto him all honour, and thee environs his person with a guard of thirty men in murrey and blew. Neither was hee in any point wanting to his part; but fitted fuch likely answeres to all questions, and such princely behauiours to all occasions, as made fame bold to publish him with the fullest blast of her Trumpet, for no other then a true Richard Plantagenet; and as it is so observed of some, that by long vsing to report an vntruth, at last forgetting themselues to bee the Authors thereof, beleeve it in earnest; so these honors making our Peter to bury in vtter obligion his birthes obscurity, he seemed to bee perswaded; that hee was indeed the felfe partie, whom hee did so exactly personate. Nonelty, and impudency were scarce euer knowne to haue found more applause, or beliefe, euen among many verie wife, and (otherwise) worthy men; who moued in conscience, and not onely vpon discontent, inclined to partake with this new Plantagenet, as the onely right heire of the English Diadem, as if, whether he had beene the true one, it was past dispute. This intoxication, & abulion of the world, was wonderfully encrealed by the secret renolt of Sir Robert Clifford Knight, whom(as one that had feene, and knowne the true Richard) the cunning conspirators in England had fent over, to informe himfelfe, and them, whether be was indeed as bee feemed. Sir Robert (whose presence and errand were to the Dutchesse most welcome,) Sir Rob Liffing being brought to his fight, did forthwith gine credite, and constantly fignifie, that this was indeed Richard Plantagenet, the true Duke of Yorke, and that he well knew him for Such. Money and encouragements, were hereupon fent out of England, from fuch as fauoured him; among whom was * Sir william Stanley Lord Chamberlain to King Hemy (by whose punctual revolt from K. Richard, he had principally atchieued the Crowne of England) * Iohn Ratcliffe, L. Fitzwalter, *Sir Simon Montfort, Sir Thomas Polyderag. Thwates Knights, and others; but the maine countenance of the cause in forraine parts was Sir Robert Clifford (a knight of an honourable fame and family) which moued the secret friends of the new Duke to fet the rumor so cunningly on foot among the English, that * Sooner might a cloud, which causeth thunder, bee caught or knowne, then the Author thereof; and multitudes beeing weakened there with, flore of

land that Perkit

Bern, Andr. MS.

+Iobs Ds.of Her-

(bap. 20 Henry VIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 57. humor, dangerously prepared to mutation, did e-

King Henriet

S.Robert Clifford

wan away from the Durcheffe,

Perkin, as a King

Lico MS penes

Sir hot. Cattan.

like against the English. uery where discouer it lelfe. (37) Let vs come now from the addresses of (36) For prevention therfore of all those effects things, to their doing. The high prudence and inwhich might iffue out of these causes, (being in their dustry of Henry having thus discovered the founproper nature most generative of sedition, and of all dations of Perkins hopes in England, and the hugainst this Pfends Torts of civill furies) King Henrie diligently causeth the coasts of England to be well and strongly watcht. aswell to empeach the landing of enemies, as the efcape of fugitiues: but about all, he writes letters to his best friends in forraine parts, & also emploies nimble wits with feueral inftructions; fome to affaile the constancy of Sir Robert Clifford, (the maine stay) and credite of Perkins caule) with promise of immunity and fauour if hee would returne into England in quiet; others, to find out the truth of Perkins quality, being furnished with treasure to draw and require intelligences; and all of them (as occasion should serue) to pretend themselves vehement fauorers of the new Duke. These necessary hypocrites and double faced Ambidesters, called Spies, (whose feruices, howfoeuer conducible to fuch as fets the on worke, yet their perfidious quality comonly partakes with that of Indes I fearing, and often meetes with like reward,) doe plie their charge fo roundly that * Sir Robert Clifford is secretly drawne off, the new Duke is discourred aswell by them as by *sundry letters from friends abroad, to bee but Perkin Warbecke, and many other mysteries are reuealed. This gaue to the wife King great fatisfaction, who to weaken the enemies practife the more, not onely diuulgeth the fraud, but sends ouer sea Sir William Pointings Knight, and Sir William Warham his Ambaffadors to the Arch-Duke Philip, Duke of Burgundy (then gouerned by others by reason of his tender age) who promifed not to affift the faid Perkin. but if the Dutchesse Dowager would doe any such thing to the prejudice of King Henry, it was not in him to hinder her, for that the might dispose of her owne. A maine argument vsed by these Ambassa-dors before the Archdukes Counsell to convince.

The maine argament prouing that King Ed-

The Dutcheffe

of Sargenties two monifrous bitthes.

*Lambert and Perkin werea-bout fifteen

time of their

der (who seemes to have had good means to viider stand these times) rehearseth it, was, That their uncle Richard Should in vaine have made away the elder bro. ther, if the younger had beene Suffered to Surviue, for that the right of the elder, was immediately upon his death in the younger, and that consequently during his life, King Richard could have no more a surance, then if the elder were still aline: which Argument notwith standing deth at most prove nothing but this: That their concle the V surper might intend, that both his Nephewes (bould bee murdered, and that bee knew nothing per haps to the contrary. Whereas facts are to bee proued by confessions of parties, by witnesses, or vehement prefumptions, (though vehement prefumptions are faid to constitute but an half proof)al which are "otherwhere so supplied, as leaus smal cause to doubt of both their deathes. But Warham (a learned Prieft and Doctor in the lawes) the mouth of that Ambalfage lent to the Arch-Duke, in the end of his oration vied this bitter icoffe, and Sarcaime against the Lady Margaret: That thee in her old age brought forth two Monsters within the space of a few yeeres, and both of them not in the eight, or ninth moneth after their conception, as naturall mothers, but in the one * hundred and eightieth moneth, and whereas other women brought forth infants otterly unable to helpe themselves, these yeeres old ('aith Polydor) at the birthes of hers were tall striplings, and as soone as they were borne, offered battell unto mighty Kings. And albeitthe Arch-Dukes answere seemed reasonable, ver was not King Henry fo fatisfied, but that within a while after, for * that the Arch-Duke had fecretly Erra. Andr. MS. furnisht Perkin with leaders, hee tooke occasion to banish all Flemings, and Flemish wares out of his Dominions, and inhibited his Subjects to trade in any Countries within the obedience of Maximilian King of Romans, or of the Archduke Philip his

sonne, who by way of talio and requitall did the

that Richard the very Duke of Yorke was murdered

as well as King Edward his brother German as Poly-

mors which were most vnfound, made it his first worke to raze those groundworks, and purge the veines of his Realme from that corruption by needful! Phlebotomic. The " Lord Fitzwalter, a principall conspirator, being condemned, and sent Peyder cale him to Caleis, lived there in hope of pardon; but for practifing with his Keepers to elcape, hee finally payed his head for fatisfaction . Sir Simon Mont fort, Robert Ratcliffe, and William Dambener (Gentlemen of noble houles) as Captaines and Authors of the confpiracy were beheaded, but all the rest alwel Clerkes as Lay-men had their pardons. Not long K. Henry expects Clerkes as Lay-men had their pardons, the King vpon Sir Rab-Clifford after these executions and pardons, the King vpon in the Forest of inter Forest of fure intelligence, that Sic Robert Clifford (in whose London, bosome the secret of all Perkins plot lay) was arrived. entred the Tower of London, and there continued; that fo, if Clifford should accuse any of the great (and whom hee then would accuse, it is probable King Henry knew) they might without suspicion. or tumult bee attached; the Court, and publike prison for crimes of highest nature, being then with. in the cincture of one, and the same wall. Sir Robert Cliffordathis comming into the Kings presence, (though hee was secretly before assured of his life) most humbly praying and obtaining pardon, appeached (among many others) Sir William Stanley Lord Chamberlaine. The King would not at first giue credite (or at leastwise pretended, not to giue credite) to the acculation of a Peere lo great, and so neere vato him: but vpon farther search, finding the same confirmed with circumstances, and particularly, for that he faid to Clifford, * Hee would neuer beare Armes against the young man, if he knew him for certaine to be the sonne of King Edward, hee resola ueth to vie feuerity against the delinquent. (38) But Bernerd Andreas directly faith, That

(belides bare words and purpoles) Sir William had supported Perkins cause with treasure, wherein hee is recorded for to have abounded, as that in his Castle of *Hole he had in coine and plate to the value of forty thousand Markes, besides lands of inheritance in fundry places about; to the yeerely value of three thousand pounds (a prety stocke in treasure at those times, to vphold the first brunt of a warre, and a large extent of land to furnish the wing of a powerfull battell with able fouldiers out of Tenancies with all which the same Author in plaine wordes faith, That hee promifed to defend the faid Pretender, and bring him into the Kingdome. And if we have any inlight into King Henries disposition, it seemes to vs, that before he entred into the Tower, he not ony knew the Lord Chamberlaine vnfound, but alfo that for his quiet apprehension hee chiefly repaired thither. Stanley being hereupon attached and referred to farther examination, is laid * To have denied nothing of all that wherewith hee was charged, which he perhaps the more confidently did, in hope that king Henry would pardon him in respect of passed seruices, they (in their effects confidered) being the greatest whereof mortality is capable, prefernation of life, and gaining of a Kingdome. But the poore gent man found himselfe farre deceived in his politicke Lord and Maiter, who (to teach mankind thereby, how dangerom it is to make a King) was not vinwilling to cut him off, as perswading himselfe, that those feruices proceeded of ambition, not of affection, or if of affection, the cause now ceasing, the contrary effects might proue as pernicious, as the other had been aduantageous and auaileable. The King was

Sir Willeam Stanley Lord Chamber laine

*Illatii tutari &

Polyd, Vere.

exact represen-tation of a Ri-chard Plantagene "Uideinfra S

Prox.
* Pancerellus.

ment; but rigour finally prevailed, and hee was at westminster openly arraigned, connicted, and after-Ttttt

vnwilling to displease his Father in Law, Thomas

Earle of Derby (brother german to Sir William Stan-

ley) and did therefore for a while suspend his judge-

euils, but if our simmes have deserned to Suffer, doe thon, ô Lord, thy good pleasure. Neuerthe effe wee owe to thy Grace immortal thanks, which though with our tangue we cannot otter worthily enough, get must they bee rendred. We are alwaies of good courage, and so minded for certain, that no prosperity, no advertity, no chaunce, no distance of places, or times, shall once make us of thee unmindefull. The most modest King having ended his speech, doth foorthwith (faith our Author) scriously deliberate with his Councell what was to bee done heereafter. It may probably feeme, that he had withdrawne into the North, to innite Perkin(by occasion of his absence) the rather to take Land, that so hee might draw all his dangers into one place, and decide them in a Bartell, if his Subjects should revolt to Perkin in any numbers, or if they did not, then might he fall into his hands, by landing vnwarily vpon truft of the peoples fauour, and fo by a more compendious, and calle way fettle his Estate; of which he failed but little, by the faid counterpolicy of the

Kentishmen. In regard whereof, in the first Act of

Councell, praise and thankes were decreed to them,

with which Sir Richard Cylford Knight was prefently

fent away, and order taken for the erection and war-

(41) The Dutchesse on the other side, seeing the

ching of Beacons upon the Coasts.

To Street Annal

South of England proue fo drie, and barren to her Perkin Giles into driftes, conucighes againe her Idoll into Ireland, where shee well knew there could not want partakers, and Perkin himselfe daring to entertaine the hope of a Crowne, (for by fo long personation of a Kings fonne, and heire, ambition had throughlie kindled his youthfull blood) was now no little cause of bringing things to an iffue by his owne for wardneffe. * Maximilian King of Romans, whither as *Rem 4nd 245 one willing to keepe the English bufied (* Henry haone willing to keepe the English bulled (* Henry ha-ling forbidden his Subices all traffike with the raigne friends. Flemmings, and all other of his sonne the Archdukes Subjects,) or as crediting the fiction, and therefore led thereunto in honour and conscience; Charles also King of France, but specially the Dut- 10. Left. Epis. cheffe of Burgundy, (by whom this bubble was first soft. blowneyp, and put abroad) did concurre to the molestation of King Henry; Maximilian, and the French King, more secretly, but the Dutchesse with all her Oares and Sailes plied it in open view. Borne vp by these supporters he the rather easily drew the Irish to affent to his pretext; but his counsell weighing with themselves that the Irish-mens friendship, how firme to euer, was infufficient in respect of their nakednesseand pouerty to worke their withes, hee according to fach aduites as were taken before his departure from his Creatrix, croffeth into Scotland, Perkin failes to for feare of punishment, faith * Andreas; if perhaps by the Kingstrue Subjects within Ireland hee should chaunce to bee apprehended; but the eyent flewes, that it was not onely for his more fecurity, but principally to strengthen his enterprize with the Scotish aide, whereof in those daies here had finall reason to bee doubtfull; and his case was such, that no third course

(42) James the fourth, a yong Prince of great hope was at that time King of Scots , to whom this bold counterfeit (being specially recommended, for the true Richard Duke of Torke, by the * King of France, * Bern, Asir. and endoubtedly much more by the Dutcheffe of Burgundy,) repaires; and had most courteous entertainement, and audience, the effect whereof Anareas thus coucheth : That the King was finally decei- Perios successe ued by errour, as most of other, though most prudent Prines, had beene before. But the rare impudency of

was left vnto him, but either to fight and conquer-

or liue branded with immortall infamy both of Co-

wardize and imposture. Hemy hearing these things

was not flacke to prouide for his just defence, greatly

carefull yoon what coast this wandring clowd would

at length diffolue it selfe, in what offects soeuer; and

therefore observed all his waies with as much curio-

fity as was possible.

Chap.20. Henrie VIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 57. the Lad,& that connexion which his darings had with fo many great Princes, deserue not to bee so slenderlie ouerpassed. Hee therefore being in honourable I. Lelle. Epif. Roff. manner ac companied, and brought to the prefence of King I ames, had words to this effect. That Edward the fourth late King of England, leaving two sons The effect of The effect of Perkins speech to lawes the fourth King of Scotland. Edward and Richard Duke of Yorke, both very young, Edward the eldest succeded their Father in the Crowne by the name of King Edward the fifth: that their vncle Richard Duke of Glocester to obtaine the Kingdome, purposed to murder both, but the instrument emploied by him to execute the execrable Tragedy having cruelly flaine King Edward the eldest of the two, was mooued to saue Richard his brother, whom neverthelesse the world supposed to have beene alike barbarously made away; though falsely supposed; for that himselfe there present, was that very Richard Duke of Yorke brother of that unfortunate Prince, King Edward the fifth, now the most rightfull and lineall surviving heire Male to that victorious and most noble Edward of that name the fourth, late King of England. * That hee in his tender age thus escaping by Gods mercy out of the County of London, was secretly conveied over the Sea, * whither when hee was brought Polyd Verg. 1.26. the party who had the conveiance of him in charge, suddenly for sooke him, and thereby forced him to wander into *diverse Countries, where he remained certainyeeres as MS. Perkini onknown, * til at lingth he came to the true under standing Proclamati. «Polydor lib. 26 of himfelfe. * In which feafonit hapned one Henry, fon to Edmund Tydder Earle of Richmund, to come from France, and enter into the Realme, and by subtill and fowle meanes, to obtaine the Crossne of the same which to him the faid Richard rightfullie appertained That Henry as his extreame and mortall enemie, fo foone I has steery as me extreame another them is planted as he had knowledge of his being also, imagined, and wrought all the subtill wates, and meanes he could, to denife his finall destruction. That the said mortal enemie hathnot only falfely surmised him to be a fained person, giving him nicknames, so abusing the world, but that also, to deferre, and put him from entrie into Englad, hee hath offered large summes of money to corrupt the Princes, with whom he had beene retained, and made importune

labour to certaine fernants about his (the faide Kichards)

secons to certaine jerusous acous ms (include activaria) person, to murder or poisson him, and others, to for-sike and lease his righteous quarrell, and to depart from his service, as Sir Robert Clifford, and others.

That every man of reason may well under stand, that the

(aid Henry needed not to have moved the forefaid Cofts,

and importune labour, if he had beene such a fained per-son. That the truth of his cause so manifest * moued the

most Christian King Charles, and the Ladie, Dutchesse

Dowager of Burgundie, his most deare Aunt not onely to acknowledge the laid truth, but louingly also to assist him.

That now because the Kings of Scotland (Predecesfors of

the faid King lames) had oftentimes supported them, who

were reft and spoiled of the faid Kingdome of England (as

in freshest memory King Henrie the sixth,) and for that he

(the faid King Iames) had given cleare signes, that he was

in no noble quality, onlike to his royall Auncestors, he so di-

streffed a Prince was therefore moued to come, and put

himselfe into his hands , desiring his assistance to recouer

the Realme of England promising faithfully, to beare him-

(elfe towardes the faid Scottish King ,no otherwise then as

if he had beene his owne naturall brother, and would (upon

recovery of his inheritance) gratefully doe to him all the

(43) Perkins speech ended, and his amiable per-

fon being fitted with so many countenancing cir-

cumstances of state, and seemings, (by the recom-

mendations of great Princes, aide from the Irifh, af-

fured hope of aide in England, and his owne wel-ap-

pointed company,) made so strong an impression in the young Kings conceit, that, albeit there wanted

King to repute all but for a meere dreame and illusion , his

person was honorably received, as it became the per-

he gaue his consent, that the said Duke of Yorke

pleasure which lay in his otmost power

daughter to the Earle of Humley, being necre cofen to the King himfelfe, a young maide of excellent beautie and vertue. By which marriage as the gentle King abundantly declared that he tooke him for the very Duke of Yorke, to Perkin, * (diffruftfull of the *zen, sade. Scots, * and desirous to gaine the love and favour of the "Egil. Region. Nobles of the Realme) cunningly ferued his owne ends for the present, passing current for a Prince of high blood, and roiall hope. Vponthis ground a warre was prefently undertaken against Henrie, and en- Northwinberland tred into; the King of Scots in person, and Perkin, fol- in Perkin quan lowed with great numbers, specially of Borderers, fell vpon fundry parts of Northumberland, which they most grievously afflicted, burnt and spoiled. publishing neuerthelesse by Proclamation made in the name of Richard Duke of Yorke much favour and immunicie to all fuch as would adhere to his suft quarrell, and a thousand poundes in money, and one hundreth markes by yeere, of land of inheritance to the meanest person, that could either take or distresse his great enemy, who (he laid) was flying the land. But King Henry by his diligence, and wildome had so setled the mindes of his people in those parts, that there is no mention made of any one perion which offered his feruice. This vnexpected auersion to blankt and dampt the Scottish enterprize on Perkins behalfe, that the King offended therewith, retired with his armie (laden with booty) into his Realme, and from thenceforth esteemed of his new Cosen the leffe. But King Henry not minding to forgine fo vnleffe. But King Henry not minding to forgue to vn-inft and caufeleffe outrages, cals a Parliament, opens his gricfes, and praies aide for an invalide warre against Scotland, which was generally affented vnto, there being fcarce anie more gratefull propolitions to the English in those swording times, then warre with French or Seets: an humour, vpon which this King did practife to enrich himfelfe. For the publike monies by these occasions came into his Exchecquer , with a small part whereof he flourished out a show of hostile provisions, and the Remainder thereupon (if peace enfued, which he alwaies knew how to bring about with honour) was cleerely his owne without account. The fumme affented to be gathered was*fixescore thousand pounds, and for collection thereof were granted two diffnes, and an halfe, and two fifteenes. But the leuie of this money fo granted in this Parliament, kindled a dangerous blaze in England; in fo much, that the Lord Dambener being fent Generall of the Forces against the Scots, and vpon his way thither, was recalled by occasion of intestine troubles. (44) Which troubles had their Originall from

the leuie of fuch payments among the Cornilh, as were affested for the Scottish warres. When therefore the Collectors came among them, the People (being a front, bigge, and hardy race of men,) tumul-tuously affembled; whom one Thomas * Flammock a lawyer, and Michaell I ofeph, a blacke-finith or horse-farrier of Bodnim, like firebrands of rebellion inflamed, and were followed as Captaines, not without fecret and filent relation (as it may be suspected)to Perkins pretences, and that hope of redreffe (if he were King,) which, by his Proclamations he had colourably given to the people, at the time of the Scotrish Inuation; where, among manie other things

(tending to humour fuch as were maleuolent , by making the person and government of King Henri odious,) this we find. (45) Our great enemie (faith the Proclamation) Perkins Procla to fortifie his false quarrell, hath caused divers Nobles of this our Realme, whom he held suspect, and stood in dread of, to bee cruelly murdered : as our cofen Sir William Stanley Lord Chamberlaine , Sir Simond Montford, Sir Robert Ratliffe, William Dawbeney, Humfrey Stafford, and many other, besides such as have decretic bought their lives, some of which Nables are now in the Sanctuary. Also he hathlong kept, and yet keepeth in prison our right intirely wel-beloued Cosen, Edward, sonne and here to our Vncle Duke of Clarence, and other, with-

The Scots inuade

Proc. Per MS

Add to Fab.

The Cornish t

Polyd Verg.

The Earle of Warwicks empt

Bernard Andr.

740

derate man succeeded. This sharpe instice exercised

vpon so eminent a person, was of great vse in the

stay of peoples minds through the Realme of

England. But in Ireland they were not so settled, or

reduced, but that for the better and fuller ourging

thereof, Henry Deney (a Monke of Langton Abbey)

was sent Lord Chancellour thither, with orders and

directions, and Sir Edward Poinings Knight, with

fouldiers; whose greatest diligence and cares

were not wanting, to punish such as heretofore

had aided Perkin, or might hereafter. The Earle of

Kildare Lord Deputy, falling into suspition with

Poynings, was by him apprehended, and fent pri-

foner into England; where the King did not onely

gracionsly heare and admit his defences, but also

returned him with honour, and continuation of au-

thority. In the meane time (the errour, or weaknesse

of the Burgundian Dutchesse and her Perkin, suffe-

ring their enemy in this fort, to puruey for his own

fecurity, and their depulsion) hee yet for farther affu-

rance of himselfe makes a progresse into Lancashire,

there to recreate with his Father in law the Earle,

and the Counteffe his mother, where among all o-

ther his secret purposes, he throughly satisfied the Earle, both for the inflice and necessity of Sir William

(39) These certainely, were perillous times to

liue in, and vindoubtedly full of infinite lealousies,

and hypocrifies, nor valike to those lately passed,

* wherein there was nothing so plaine, and openly proued, but that yet for the common custome of close and concre

dealing, men had it ever inwardly suspect, as many well-

counterfeited iewels make the true suspected: these generall distrusts being among the strange gradations,

by which the incomprehensible prouidence doth

vie to chastife infolent Nations and to make regular

Princes, meer and absolute. But the Dutchesse and her

Perkin knowing al things as they passed in England,

refolue notwithstanding to proceede; and there-

fore taking aduantage of the Kings absence in the

North, he with a force of broken and discontented

persons, sets faile for England, and approacheth the coasts of Kent about Sandwich and Deale, there to

beginne his enterprize for obtaining the Crowne of

England, under the borrowed name and title of Ri-

chard Duke of Torke, if he found the Commons for-

ward. But they, though doubtfull at first whatto doe, yet at the last considering that his Souldiers

were for the most part of desperate fortunes, and

felonious qualitie, (though hardy otherwife, and

appropued men of warre,) remembring withall

the mischiefes of part-takings, would not adhere

but training them within danger vpon promise of

faccour, affaile, and drive them to their shippes, take

tiue of the Captaines, Mountford, Corbet, Whitebolt.

Quintin, and Genin, and * one hundreth, fixty and

foure others, which were all of them afterward exe-

cuted. Perkin himselfe who would not trust his per-

fon on shore, being worthily troubled at the inau-spicious fortune of his followers, presently hoised

failes, and returned to his Lady Patroneffe and Crea-

(40) These newes being brought to the King,

Stanleyes death,

bro.I related Chamberlaine baheaded.

* Sir Tho. Most in Rub. 3*

Palyd Verg. Stower Annal.

trix, into Flanders,

where he was then in the North, he is * faid to have giuen God thanks, and declared his ioy in these words. I am not ignorant (most mercifull Iesu) how

The Kings prai-

great victories thou halt given mee, upon the Saturday at the praiers of thy most gracious Mother, all which I a-scribe not to my deserts, but to the bounty of thy celestrall

grace. Thou feeft, o most benigne Iefu, how many fnares, how many deceits, how many weapons, that terrible Iuno hathprepared no withflanding that after my marriage bee faining herselse infull, hath faithfully promised to beare toward vs all favour and good will, but shee, more changeable then the winde peruerting all things afwell divine as humane, feares not God, but in her fury feekes the otter raine of her owne blood. Thou, o God, who

notfome, who with many arguments adulied the Polyd Fere Las.

Epif.Roff

fon of Richard Duke of Yorke, and his quarrell entertained; which the more to grace in the Worldes eye, and aided marshould take to wife the Lady Katherine Gordon. blood roiall of

holding fro them their rightfull inheritance , to the intent they (hould never be of might & power, to aid and afift ws at our need after the dutie of their leageances. He hath allo married by compulsion certaine of our Sisters, and also the Sister of our foresaid Cosen the Earle of Warwicke, and disters other Ladies of the blood rotall, unto certaine his kinfemen and friends of simple and low degree; and putting apart all wel-disposed Nobles, he hathnone in fauour, and trust about his person, but Bishop Fox , Smith, Bray, Louel, Oliaer King, Sir Charles Sommer fet, Dauie Owen, Ryfley, Sir Iohn Trobutuile, Tyler, Chamley, James Hobert, Iohn "villaines of birth: which by subtèle inventions, and pilling " of the people have been the principall finders occasioners, and counsailers of the misrule, and mischiese now raigning in England, &c. We remembring these premises, with the great, and execrable offences daily committed and done by our fore [aid great enemie, and his Adherents, in breaking the liberties, and franchises of our mother the holy church; to the high displeasure of Almighty God: besides the manifold treasons, abhominable murders, manflaughters, robberies, extortions, the daily pilling of the Popular in inua tions by Perkin. ce people by dismes, taskes, tallages, beneuo!ences, and other unlawfull impositions, and greeuous exactions, with ma-

Cut, Garth, Henry Wyot, and fuch other Caitiues, and ny other hainous effects to the likely destruction and desolation of the whole Realme, O.c. Shall by Gods grace and the helpe, and assistance of the great Lords of our blood, with the Counsell of other sad persons, Oc. see that the commodities of our Realme bee emploied to the most aduantage of the same, the entercourse of Merchandize betwixt Realme and Realme, to be ministred and handled. as shall more be to the Common weale, and prosperitie of " our fubietts: and all futh difmes, taskes, tallages, bene-uolences, vollawfull impositions, and greeuous exatti-"ons as be aboue rehearfed, to be foredone, and laid apars,
"and neser from beneeforth to be called upon, but in fuch
causes as our Nobla Progenitors, Kings of England have of old time beene accustomed to have the aide, succour, and helpe of their subjects, and true liegemen. (46) The tide of people being thus vp:Flammock and the blacke Smyth (having firme promise of the

Lord Audleys personall helpe lead them forth toward Kent, where they doubted not greatly to encrease their numbers; and had in likelihood so done, but that the fingular diligence and wisdome of the King, frustrated their hopes by fundry Princely Arts. Yet they flow on; and to fliew what they durft doe, they flew in their way at Tauntford the Prouoft of Perin, one of the Commissioners for the Subsidie: and marching forward without offering other violence, I ames Tuichet Lord Audley joines himselfe at the City of Wels vnto them, according to secret agreement, and becomes their Generall. From Wels they proceed to Salisbarie, thence to Winchester, and so toward Kent, where the Countrey was fetled and prouided. But the King farther doubting that the Scots would take fresh occasion, by these seditious vproares, to inuade the borders of his Realme, dispatched Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey (*a Peere of excellent vertue) to defend those parts, with the helpe of the Bishopricke of Durham, and the Marches, till these homecommotions were appealed; that then the Lord Dawbeney might with a just and full Army profecute the warre against the Scots. But Iames their King, perceiving the end of the English intestine warres, would be the beginning of his troubles,

thought it best by way of anticipation to weaken

his enemy before hand as much as hee could, and

thereupon fiercely inuaded Northumberland againe,

and belieged Norham Caffell belonging to Richard

Fox, whom the King for his noble feruices and de-

ferts, had now advanced from Exceter, and Bath

and Wels, vnto the Bishopricke of Durham. But the

Scotish King, hopelesse to winne the Castell, though

having done much hurt both to it and to the coun-

try, withdrew his people before the Earle of Surrey

could approach with his Army, wherein was the

Earle of desimorland, the Lords Dacres, Strange,

Neuil, Lat mer, Lumley, Scrope, Clifford, Comjers,

Darry, the Baron of Hilton, and many Knights, as Percie, Bulmer, Gascoigne, Penington, Bigot, Bowes, Elarker; Parr, Wharton, Strangwith, Constable, Ratcliffe, Sauile, Gower, Mufgraue, Mallerie, Loder, Eueringham, Stapleton, Wortley, Pickering, Heron, Gray, Ridley, Griffith, Fenwicke, Ward, Strycland, Bellingham, Curwen, Warsop, Tempest, Metcalfe, and others; who milsing the enemy, marched after into

Scotland, and tooke such revenge as the shortnesse of their iodaine pronisions would enable. (47) The Rebels on the other fide, (whom king Henry thought not good to encounter in their first heates; but fuffered them to tire their fury, and furbate themselues with a long march, the countries as they past being forelaide from loyning with them) comming neere to Kent, found few, or no partakers there; but the Country strongly defended against them by the Earle thereof, the Lords Abargenie and Cobham, with other principall men and their followers; which made divers of the Rebels fecretly shrinke and abandon the enterprise. But the Lord Audley, Flammocke, Michael Isfeph, and the rest, kept on their way, and encamped vpon Blackeheath, between Greenewich and Eltham, from the top whereof they might behold the Citie of London, & the whole branery of that Horizon. Here they refolue to abide the King, or to affaile London. The King on the other fide, by the diligence of the Lord Maior, and other the Magistrates, scured the City, which was full of feare and bulineffe; himfelfe enuironed with his Nobles, & the choice of the South. hearing where the Rebell was encamped, refolued by dint of fword to deliuer his people from tiring expectations, and for that purpose marcheth out of London, and encamps in S. Georges field, where he * lay that night. The next day when he understood that the Enemie had drawne forth his People, and fet them in Battell-ray, he fends out Henry Bourchier *J. Storp Arnel. A.D. 1497.

Earle of Effex, Edmond de la Pole Earle of Suffolk, Sir Rice ap Thomas, and others, with certaine Cornets of horse, and Companies of Archers, to beset the hill, Iun. An.Reg.12. and the descents thereof, while Giles Lord Dambeney with the strength of his Armie, chargeth the Enemy in Front, whom with some slaughter they draue from the Bridge at Deepfora strand; and then moun- Blacksheath ting the hill, he and the Earles charge the maine field. iquadrons on all fides, and without much labour breake and defeate them. The number of the Rebels flaine is vncertainely reported, the ods being betweene*two thousand and * three hundreth. The Kings armie returned fewer by three hundreth, Fifteen hundred rebels were taken Prifoners, & the ta- "10.5tom. Amel kers had their Prisoners goods granted them. Iames

was the comfort, with which this Blacksmith is said

to have cheered up himfelfe at his being drawne to

execution, faying, That yet he hoped thereby, that his

name and memorie should bee euerlasting. Who

could beleeve, that the defire of a long-lafting name

howfocuer should take the affections of so meane

a person? Such therefore was the end of this insur-

rection; but the times being quealy, the King wife-

lie forbare to take any scuere reuenge vpon more

then onely upon the chiefe Leaders, for he was tru-

lie informed that this calamitie had not broken the

willes of the Cornishmen, who remained ready for

any desperate sudden occasion, and therefore he ab-

stained from needlesse exasperations, insomuch as

that the quarters of Flammocke, and the Smith being

once appointed to have beene fet up in Cornwall

for terror, were onely fixed about London, the King

thinking good to temper his justice even in such a

Lord Audley , Flammocke, and the Smith were taken and executed. To all the rest mercy was seasonably extended. The Lord Audley led from Newgate to Towerhill in a coate of his owne Armories painted on a paper, reuerst and torne, there paid his head, for being a Head to that heady Route: Flammocke and the Smith were quartered. Memorably *ftrange *Polyd Verg.

The Blacke

Chap. 20 Henry VIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 57. miles, inuectine proclamations, and strong impu-

(48) His next care was so to order the warre against Scotland, that the Peace whose foundations he had laid a far off, might bee made to his more honor: & because the injuries sustained by the youthful errour of King Iames, were too publike to becaltogether forgotten ; hee sent the Earle of Surrey, the Lord Neuell, and others, to invade the Scotish borders with an Army, who purfued the reuenge with great vehemency. Meane-while there arriveth in Scotland Peter Hyalus an Ambassador from Ferdinando and Elizabeth, King and Queene of Spaine, as from friends equally well affected to both parties, to mediate a peace between the two Kings of England and Scotland, which perhaps in their owne perfons would not easily have beene brought about,

the point of honour might thereunto have given fuch empeachment. But this was the way to a peace which King Henry forefaw; there being not onely a strict bond of lone betweene him and Ferdinando, but an ouerture, if not a * fecret conclusi-A Spanish Am-batiador pro-cures a truce be-tweene England and Scotland. on, to match his eldest sonne Prince Arthur with the young Lady Katherine daughter of Spaine; who for her excellent vertues was well worthy to be the

happy wife of any Prince then breathing. Hyalus fo handled the point of his emploiment, that an honourable truce followed. This Ambaffador was a practicke man of much experience, and knew the better how to deale on the behalfe of King Henry against Perkin Warbecke, (* an imaginary and Stage-play Prince) for that his Soueraigne Queene had also uonfo re,Imaginabeene exceedingly molested by a Counterfeit. For Henry the fourth, King of Castile, and brother to Ine Queene of Elizabeth, being vinable to begette children, Isan bya councereit. (daughter of Edward king of Portugall) his wife found meanes notwithstanding to beare one, by

occasion whereof, after King Henries death, for

that it was borne in marriage, a dangerous warre

• Franc, Tarapha in Hen 4. Luc Marinaus Suul, was vndertaken by * Alfonfo King of Portugall, on behalfe of I fabel the supposed inheretrix but Truth, partly by force, and partly by mediation, was in the end victorious; and Elizabeth, or I shells fifter of Hemy fucceeded to her brother, and brought the inheritance of the Kingdomes of Castile and Leon. with her to Ferdmando King of Arragon. The chiefe point of this truce with Scotland was, That Perkin Warbeeke should leave that Kingdome, seeing king Ismes, standing vpon his honour, would not deli-

uer him vp to King Henry. Perkin hauing now no remedie, did accordingly, taking with him his Perkin Warbecke practifed out of wife, the Lady Katherine Gordon; and with fuch few as remained to him, past into Ireland, where hee had not continued long, but the Cornish-men The Cornish call in Perkin Warbeck offer to rifeat his arrivall, and to adventure their fortunes, and lives in his quarrell: Which moti-

on Perkin gladly entertained, as perceiving yet fome little hope left to maintaine himfelfe, by the troubles, and hazards of others: but the policie and fortune of King Henry were growne fo venerable with the Princes his Neighbours, that Ambassadors came from France, and from the Arch-Duke of Burgundy; the one to ratific amity, the other to request the restitution thereof; both which K. Henrie (who reposed his whole trust next vnder God, vp. on the amity of his neighbours) granted, and the English Merchants (who had been somewhat long forbidden by their Soueraigne to trade in the Arch-Dukes dominions) * returning to Antwerpe were

received into the same with Procession: fothat Per-

kin could scarce cast his eye voon any place, not

onely where to raise aides, but not where to rest his head, vnlesse perhappes in the Court of the Dutchesse of Burgundie; neither in all his fortunes did any thing feeme miferable or vnworthy, but the great infelicity of his wife, whose beauty, birth, and honourable qualities ought not to haue beene fo betrayed by her friends temerity. Perkin hereupon

Pertin flures the landing at Whit fand Bay in Cornwall in September, found meanes afterward at Bodmin to raile some thousands of people, whom with most lauish pro-

dency, he held together under the Title of Richard the fourth King of England, whose fate was none of the happiest, while the maiesty of her name might so bee played with by impostors. Perkinthus accompanied, marcheth toward the City of Exceter purpofing if hee could winne it by force, to enrich his Souldiers with the spoiles thereof, and to inuite all other loofe or lost people to his service by the hope of like booties, and by taking into his possession such places of strength as lay in his way to fecure his retreat, if (according to the ordinary fortune of warre) any thing should happen to (50) But the King (hearing that the variet was landed, and againe made head against him in Armes vpon trust of the Cornishmens assistance) is said to have smiled, vsing these words; * Loe, wee are again

can. Reason hee had to smile, for now he seemed

to see the bottome of his perill, and as it were to

hold his enemy empounded within the English

and make a very valiant defence against the Rebell

and in stead of quenching the fires kindled by the

Rebels at this affault they valiantly draue them.

Carew, Fulford, Halewell, Croker, Edgecomb, Semar, fol-

owed with great store of Souldiers, saued him the

(51) Perkin hearing thereof, rifeth from before

Exceller, and marcheth to Taunton (a goodly town

not far off) there to take the musters of his Armie,

and to prouide for encounter, where he found very

many blanks in the lift of his numbers, for that they

had fecretly shrunke away, as misdoubting the se-

quell, the Earle of Denonshire being so neere at hand

with the power of the Country, and the King vpon

his way against them, with the maiesty and terrour

of a roiall name and Armie, none of the Nobilitie

which was chiefly hoped comming to their aide.

Perkin neuerthelesse makes shew of standing, with

fuch as were left vnto him. The Earle of Denonshire

marching towards Taunton, in the way there came

vnto him Edward Duke of Buckingham, a *young

Lord full of great honour and courage, followed by

a goodly troupe of Knights, and others excellentlic

well appointed, both for their owne persons, and

VVVVV

labour of a personall rescue by timely approch.

prouoked by this Prince of Rakehelles, but left my people should through ignorance bee drawne into destructi on, let us feeke to take this Perkin by the eafieft wayes we

Ocean, it being a perpetuall and noble wish of his, that he might looke his dangers in the face, and deale with them hand to hand, as the neerest cut ouer to a full conclusion. Hee therefore prouides accordingly, affembling his forces, and his wits (no leffe to bee dreaded then his forces) fending forth his espials into all parts to observe the tracke, and hopes of this empty cloud, which is now seene before Excesser. a principall strength and ornament of the Western parts of the Kingdome. Parlea, and the allurements of wordes vnder the guilt title of King Edwards sonne, prouing vnauaileable with those re-solute and faithfull Citizens, Perkin forthwith betakes himselfe to violence, sets fire on the gates, mounts his scaling ladders against the wals, and with his vemost fury labours to force a suddaine entrance, for that as hee fulpected, fuccours could not long bee wanting. The Citizens on the other fide, and such of the Country, as came in, prepare,

enemy at the gates, to open a paffage (for they had not Canon or any other Ordinance) the Citizens threw on great store of fagots and fuell, and so with | The Excessions flame did flut up the way, when the gates themsclues were now consumed; and in the mean while they cast vp trenches, and man their walles, from whence, with the flaughter of about two hundred

Such meffengers as by cords flipt downe the walles to fignifie their perill, fped toward the King; but the loyall diligence of * Edward Courtney Earle of * Polyd, Verg. Describire, the Lord William his sonne, with many principall Gentlemen of those parts, as Trencherd,

*Polyd. Dire.

The Seatsing tolide Verg.

* Pelya Derg Principen pre-

yleniffina virtu tt praditum.

1 11					Henrie VIJ. ENGLANDS		1
	heir peoples. These wee finde named as principall; ridges, Bainham, Barkley, Tame, Wise, Poyntz, Vernon,	hee had. Thus was this so dreaded a blaze of re- bellion suddainly and finally quenched; but not		ined Mercick	before the Gate of Westminster Halls and the next	Earle of Desmond and Kildere should doe th	re l
gand D	Mortimer, Tremail, Sutton, Paulet, Bricknell, Sapcott,	without the teares of many in Deuon and Somerfet-		Ergl. Meroich.	day to be alike exposed in * Golden Cheape, to the ba- fest of all contempt and scorne, so fettered, stockt,	iamc.	
ema,ch U	usterell, Wadham, Speck, Beauchamp, Cheney, Tokett,	(bire, whose estates the Kings officers scruzed and		1 "	leit of all contempt and icorne, to fettered, flockt,	(58) For they forced not what part they took	.
12	ong, Latimer, Turberuile, Stourton, Newbrough, Mar-	drained, in reuenge of their partaking, and suppor-			& Scaffolded as before, to the great wonderment (faith	10 that they might bee renenged on the King of	·61
12	n, Lynde, Rogers, Hungerford, Semar, Darrell, Ba-	ting the Cornish Rebels, either in the field, or			*Stow) of many, as either infinuating that all were not	· Languard : and to against my will made make here.	1
1"	ow, Norres, Langford, Corbet, Blunt, Lacon, Cornwal;	flight. Henrie hauing Perkin in his power, gaue way			perswaded of the imposture, or that it seemed strange	English, and taught mee what I should doe and say	
70	nd many other prime and valiant men of Armes.	to all such scornes and scoffes, which his Courtiers			that one lately of to great Prowelle (hould undergoe)	And after this they called me Duke of Torke, (econo	il The
lai	The King laft of all (to permit as little to fortune as	or others were pleased to passe vpon him, the more		1	10 del Dicable a principment Rur fore Coale and areal	fonne to King Edward the fourth, because King Re	Dus
		to make his person contemptible, who well watch-		Perkin fet openly	in the or all ignominy and fhame (fuch as no face)	chards bastard sonne was in the hands of the King	-
19	was possible) fent Robert Lord Brooke, Giles Lord	ed followed the King to London, whither as he pro-		in the Stocks, &co. * Hollmfb.	c did eact beare greater) he read his owne confession	OI England. And unon this the faid 25 case case!	7.1
14	Dawbeney, and that renowned and trusty Weishman	greffed, multitudes flockt about to behold the Cai-	ĺ	* Нойтб.	Written with his owne hand *as followerh	Positron, John Tiler, Hughbert Burgh, with many o	75
15	ir Rice ap Thomas, with the marrow and firength of	tife, * who being a ftranger nor any way (what soeuer hee	The king returns		(54) It is first to be knowne than I was borne in	thers, as the foresaid Earles, entred into this falls	2-
h	is Army before, himfelfe following in person with		to fanden with	Perhis maketh	the I owne of Turney in Flanders, and my fathere	quarrell, and within fhort time others. The French	el
fi	uch as hee thought good. Neither was his care	boasted to the contrary) descended of Nobles, had dared to trouble so great a Kingdome, and by his crafty conuctan-	Peren.	an anatomic of his defent or	Haine is 1000 Osbecke, Which laid John Ochecke was	King fentan Ambassador into Ireland, whose name	h)
7g. C	ausclesse, for the Cornishmen were come to that	to trouble jo great a Kingdome, and by his crafty conuctan-	Postar org.	lineage.	controller of the laid Towns of Turner, and my mo-	whole name	2
″s. b	neight of desperate obstinacy and malice," as not one	ceshad induced fo many Princes and Nations (not with-			thers name is Katherme de Fara. And one of my	was Loit Lucas, and M. Stephen Friham, to aductife	e
0	f them but resolved to conquer, or to leave his carcase in	out mischiefe and ruine onto divers) to beleeve of him, that	1		Grandhres vpon my fathers fide was named D sinke	meto come into France: and thence I went into	5
t	he place. But God loued him and them better then	which hee neuer was. And that he might in no part	l		Osbecke which died. After whose death my grand-	France, and from thence into Flanders, and from	1
from D	to fuffer it to come to farre; for Perkin, whether ica-	beevnknowne, hee is leafurely conucied on horse-	*10h,Stow Annal.		mother was married vnto Peter Flamin, that was re-	Flanders into Ireland, and from Ireland into Scotland	5
1-	ring treaten in his owns Army or otherwise tought	backe from the furthest part of * London, through	18 Namemia		ceiuer of the forenamed Towne of Turney, & Dean	and io into England.	
- 17	with the confcience of his quality, and damnable	Cheapside and Combill to the Tower, & backe from	4		of the Botemon sheet armed to whe of I woney, of Dean	(59) From having thus beene made a publike	e
- 12	eftate of the quarreli, wherein it was horrible to die,	thence through Canwicke-fireete to Westminster, as the	1.		of the Botemen, that row vpon the water, or river		
li	hauing in his troupe but threefcore horfe, fecretly	subject of wonderment, and of all reproach and infa-		1	called Lescheld. And my Grandfire vpon my	and imaginations tired with thinking: hee is con-	-1 0
- 17	fled from the seduced Commons. Which when the	mies. The King having in this fort taken revenge of	1		mothers fide was Peter de Faro, which had in his kee-	dated to tile Tower of Landon: where it had been	
1:	King heard, hee presently sets out fine hundreth	his fo ftrange an enemy, and by curious and often		ł	ping the keyes of the gate of Saint Johns within the	1 Dad DDV, it hee had onely prought his owne defen	Tam
1,5	horse to pursue and apprehend him, before hee	examination comming to the full knowledge of	1	j		tion; but the bloudy fate (for the freshe of his diffe.	Tragi
- 15	fronte to purite and apprehend min, before nee	that his foule defired, did fet fuch to attend, as ne-	1		led M. Iohn Stalin, dwelling in the Parish of S. Pias,	fterous birth) would not fuffer him to perish single.	effect
1	fhould get to the fea, and fo escape. Perkin and his	uer went an inch from Perkins fight, (though hee		1	within the laine Lowne, which had married my fa-	In the same Tower was prisoner Edward the young	:1
ļ.	remaines thus streightned, tooke Sanctuary at Beau-	feemed to goe at liberty) lest through the slipperie	1		thers lifter, whole name was lone or lane with	Earle of Warwieke, having so beene from the first	1
16	lies, arcligious house within New Forrest, (not farre	reemed to goe at interty) left through the implement	1		Whom I dwelt a certaine legion.	yeare of Henry to this prefent, for no fault of his, but	1
l f	from Hampton) where the Kings Cornets of horse	Arts of his tempting speech and behaviour, hee	1		(55) And after I was led by my mother to Ant-	for there are more Tielenes to Contain of his out	
1 f	found them already registred; but according to in-	might vanish into forrain parts, and raise fresh storms	1	Perkins educaci.	werpe for to learne Flemith, in a house of a cost of	for that, as a neere Titler to the Crowne, he carried	1
11	ftructions they befet the place, and maintain a ftrong	in England, & bring new comfort to the Lady Mar-	1	en or bringing	mine, an officer of the faid towne, called John Stien-	in his living person inseparable matter of danger &	1
- 1,	watch about it day and night. The other Rebels	garet Dutchesse of Burgundie, the sinnefull counte-	1	vp.	becke, with whom I was the space of halfe a yeere; and	fedition. Of his fimplicity, by reason of his educa-	1
- 11	the while without stroke stricken, humbled them-	nance of all this curled Stratageme, whose heart was	}	1	after that I returned agains to Twrney, by reason of	tion in priion from his intancy, there is a report, than	- 1
- 1	felues to their Soueraignes mercy, and found it in	now almost riven in sunder with the newes of her	1		warres that were in Flanders: and within a yeere	as one who lined out of the view of the world, hee	:1
- 1	vndeserued measure. Other strong troupes of	Perkins most hideous shame and misery to the whole	1		following, I was fent with a Merchant of the faide	knew not an *henne from a goose, or one fowle or	Pal
- 11	horse are at the same instant dispatched to S. Mi-	blushing tenour whereof might easily come to her	1		Tourne of Tourney and Bard and Barde	Creature from an other. To haften the ruine of for	
	chaels Mount in Cormuall, where the beautiful Lady	handes at once; for Hemy caused so much of the			Towns of Turney named Berlo, to the Mart of Ant-	innocent a daunger, behold there breakes foorth a	.1
urably	Katherine Gorden had beene left by her lewde huf-	principall matter, as Perkin had confessed, to bee	-1		merpe, where I fell ficke, which ficknesse continued	counterfeit Earle of warwicke, as if all that which the	
King.	band. Her without refiftance they brought fafely	*committed to the Printing Preffe, (an Art then first	Bern And MS.		vpon mee fiue moneths. And the faid Berlo fet mce	I WOITUIAW HOTTIDIC IN Perkins darings had been him	1
- 1	band, Her without relitance they brought lately	appearing among vs.) and published. None can inft-			to boord in a Skinners house, that dwelled befide	ladocument to inftruct others in the like and shoul	1
- 11	to the King, whose beauty the whole Court prai-	ly wonder, that wee haue dwelt fo long in this won-	1		the house of the English Nation. And by him I	Inothing were to be rayed therein has made and	1
- 11	sed, and pittied; but the King most gratiously com-	ly wonder, that wee hadedwelt to long in this won-		1	was from thence carried to Barow Mart, and I lod-	Successe, which whosoener could propound to him-	A con Earle
- 1	forting her, fent her away well attended to the	derfull Storie, but rather perhaps wish that more			ged at the figne of the old man, where I abode for	selfe all things else, were full of encouragement and	Earle
- 10	Queene his wife, and for her birthes sake allowed	particularities (though with more prolixity) had bir	1		the space of two moneths.	rencon This series were full of encouragement and	execu
. 11	her * maintenance, which in honourable manner	vsed . And though some other Actions as * Sebasti	•		(56) After this, the faid Berlo fet mee with a	reason. This counterfeit was a * Cordwainers son	
- 14	supported her during the Kings life & many yeeres	an Cabots discouery, and ouertures of marriages with	*English voyage by Rich, Hackl,	1	Merchant of Middleborow to feruice, for to learne	of London, aged about twenty yeeres, and called	* Ada
- 1.	after. Her fairenesse was such, and her presence so	Spaine and Scotland, came betweene this apprehen-			the language, whose name was Iohn Strew, with	* Ralfe Wilford, who for falfly affuming the name &	Hou
- 1	amiable, that shee deserved to be commonly cal-	fion,& the execution of Perkin, yet have we thought	:		whom I dwelt from Christmas to Easter, and then I	title of the faid Earle, being thereunto taught and	
- 1	led The white Rofe; whose formnes (being so far vn-	it best, (the sooner & at once to tid our handes of a	* Bern Andr. MS.		went into Portingall in company of Sir Edward	suborned(a practise which well declared that the	1
	worthy either of her birth, her fingular modestie,	*knaue, as K. Henry inftly called him) to couch al that	: Dermonnunt		Bramptons wife, in a shippe was called the Queenes	malitious Dutchesse of Burgundie did still line) was	
- 1	or winely faith, norwithstanding the so abicat con-	which concernes him, here together, not fearing to	.	i	Ginna And I a limppe was called the Queenes	hanged at S Thomas Waterings by Southwarke vpon	l
- 1	dition of her husband) as they moued inft commi-	incurre among the learned, the taxation of commit-		1	shippe. And when I was come thither, then was I	Shronetuelday.	
- 1	feration foward her, fo they doubled the luftre of	ting therein contradiction, and confusion of	r l		put in service to a Knight that dwelled in Lusborne,	(60) This new denife to vncrowne King Henry	
		times.			which was called Peter Vacz de Cogna with whom I	so wakened his owne feares, and the eies of the Casti-	1
	her prailes.	(52) Perkin being thus guarded, doth notwith-	_		dwelled an whole yeere, which faid Knight had but	I #485. (who had lecretly spreed to marry their Drin.	1
at	(52) In the meane while the King makes a reioice-	flanding attempt to escape. And, if it were lawfull to]	Perlina notable	one eye. And because I desired to see other coun-	Ceffe Katherine to our Prince Arthur than there for	Thet
- 1	full entrance into Excesser, to testifie his princelyloue	icinding attempt to elcape. And, in it were lawrente	1	land-loper.	tries, I tooke licence of him, and then I put my felfe	med no fure ground of fuccession, if that the Earle of	of #'a
-	to the Citizens, whom he highly commended and	infert particular coniectures, drawn out of the con-	i i		in terrifice with a Britaine, called Pregent Meno, which	Warwicke were not made away. A fearefull case,	ignee
- 1	graced, both for their courage and loyalty; com-	fiderations of circumflances, we should perhaps no	1		brought mee with him into Ireland. Now when me	where the false reason of State shall faine to it selfe	1
1	manding some of the Cornin Kebels to be execu-	ipare to fay, that his attempt for escape, was not with out the Kings privity; ving such instrumentes to	-1		were there arrived in the towne of Carke, they of the	an impossibility of well doing, without shedding	
-	red there, which did the better let-off the others	out the Kings privity; ving luch initrumentes to	1		I I Owner because I was arraved with tome clother of	innocent blood, and shall therefore resolute to found	
- 1	contrary condition. There also hee gaue directi-	perswade, or furnish his flight, as might withall be	-1		filke of my faid Mafters) came vnro me and threat.	upon fo crying a finne the bear of	
- 1	ons, to offerlife, and oblinion of all crimes to Per-	tray him, that so by degrees (occasion taken to cutte	-		ned vpon me, that I should bee the Duke of Cla-	vpon fo crying a finne, the hope of perpetuity in	
1	kin, if he would voluntarily quit the Sanctuary, and	him off) the Realme might be ridde from such per	- 1		rences fonne, that was before time at Dublin.	succession; fith nothing is truer, then that finne	
- 1	submithimselfe. Perkin being now without hope,	petual matter of trouble. For the deprayed witte	:1	The Jrish would have Perkin take	(57) But forsomuch as I denied it, there was	was euer an unsure basis to settle lasting workes	
rg fine	without abode, without effate, most gladly came forth,	and will of man might find or faine reasons to abuse	:	haue Perkin take	brought vnto mee the holy Euangelists, and the	upon. But o the narrow capacities of the most	
de,fise	and did put himfelfe into the Kings hands. Reasons	the world still , if Perkin were at liberty; as that the	•	Vpon him to bee the Duke of	Croffe, by the Major of the town, which was called	feeing men; the confidence whereof did vndoub.	
	leading that wife Prince to extend this fauour, were	confessions were extorted by feare, or forged by Henry to ferue his turne, and the like. Therfore Perkins inten-	,	clareners fonno	Tale to make and above in the cown, which was called	tedly lead this King (heerein not instifiable, howfo-	
1	drawne out of the depth of true indgement, cleared	ferue his turne and the like. Therfore Perkins inten	-1	1 1	Iohn Lewelin, and there in the presence of him and	euer excusable in respect of humane frailty, which	
elds to the	from vulgar perturbations: first; it was not altoge-	tion and escape (for hee was escaped) being discoue	-1		others, I tooke mine oath (as the truth was) that I	might propound to it felfe many feares, and respects	
- 120	itom vargar perturbations: ming it was not altoge-	red to the King, all the wayes were belet, and hee fo			was not the foresaide Dukes sonne, nor none of his	both publike and private) to connine at the plor-	
,	ther impossible, but that Perkin might escape him,	close pursued, that in the end betaking himselfe to		They beare Ter.	bloud. And after this came vnto me an English-	zed death, or rather formall murder of this harma	
1	(though by offering felfe-violence) and fo the world	religions house of Carthusian Monkes, hee declared	11	fin downe with	man, whose name was Stephen Poitron; and one John	leffe Gentleman, whose wrong may yet moue the	
	should leese the light of satisfaction in so profound	rengions floure of Cartifulian Workes, fice declared	: 1	din downe with oathes, that hee	Water, and laid to me in swearing great oathes, that	hardest to compassion, as it afterwarde stirred	
1	and perhaps a matchleffe imposture; then againe	who hee was, and befought their Prior in the humblet	1	is King Richards	they knew well that I was King Richards ba-	God in inflice to reuenge, prospering no part of that	
- 1	his youth might merite iome compaision; but the	manner he could, for Gods fake to begge his life, which	1	Daitard.	stard some; to whom I answered with like oathes,	great worke which was thereupon thus corruptly	
- 1	infinite defire which Henry had, from the mouth of	at the Priors suite was granted; but the Kings wrat	1		that I was not. Then they aduled me not to be a-	fought to be perpetuated. That noble Lady Kathe-	
- 1	the party himselfe to learne all the secrets of the	being kindled, or the passage of his suppressed wrati	1		feard, but that I should take it upon me boldly; and	rine herselfe was hereof so sensible, that when the	
,	plot, and who they were that lay vndiscouered, and	opened thereby, he banisht all former respects, com	-1		if I would to doe, they would aide and affift me with	discuss was accounted to ichildle, that when the	
,	yet had finger in the mystical practise, moued him to	manding him to be fettered, and let (for an whol	e		all their power against the King of England; and not	disorce was afterward profecuted against her by	
1	affect the possession of his person aliue; which now	day) in a paire of Stockes, mounted on a Scaffol	d		onely they, but they were well affured, that the	King Henry the eight, her fecond husband, shee is	
		befor	e	1 1	onery mer, out they were wen anured, that the	reported to have faid, That it was the hand of God,	
	,					for	
				· 🔍			

1	for that to electe the way to her marriage that inno-	ftrangenes of which dangers made him thinke no-		*Polyd.Verg.		TYTOHATCH	
11			!	i:Hen.7.	die, whose * like the Christian world had seldom a	in Scotland knowing his deepe wildome and	
1.	cent Earle of Warwicke was put to vnworthy death.	thing fafe. This Earle was the last heire male of the			ny of that wisdome, granity, chastiry, and of: so la borious a deuotion, that * soe did not onely day by da	grace with his Soueraigne) which King Henry	great
	Neither let licentious Practifes vouch the fingu-	blood, and furname of Plantagenet; whose race as it	1	transplace of	borious a denotion, that * fbe did not onely day by da	ly affented vitto. The meeting was at Melro	
18	ar Act of Salomon in taking away the life of his el-	was a long time glorious for giuing Kings to Eng-	1	Dec Marin. S			e, an
10	der brother Adonias to colour this homicide: for he	land, (euen from King Herry the second) so in the	1			who having roundly was where the King at	bode, Bittop Fox
10	hat will argue from particular facts in Scrip-	end (chiefly for the house of Torke) it became hate-					e his preience d
1 1	ure, shall not onely leaue no Adonias living, but per-	full (as it seemes) to God and man, for the most hor-		Prince Arthu	(63) The Lady Katherine being about eighteen	doncerated for the breach or good term	
] h	naps no Salomon. To worke this young Warwickes	rible and inextinguible deadly fewdes, murder, per-		married,			tore- Ming.
) !	uine, the mischeinous and dismail wretch Perkin	iuries, and other horrors committed within it selfe,					d his
16	pecomes an occasion, if not an instrument, for he by	which (as then not fully expiated) lay heavily vpon	1	* Addit to Fa			c king
b	his supple insinuations and flowing promises had	the head of this Earle, and finally threw open all	í I	day the feaft of		of the guitte would be pleased to give to him in marta	
10	corrupted his keepers, the feruants of Sir Iohn Dig-	those fences, which the possession of Maiestie and	1 1	S.Erhenwald.			diffo-
Stowes Annal. b.	ie Knight Lieutenant of the Tower; who (as * was	numerolitie of iliue had for lundry ages calt about it.	í I			luble amitie. The Bithoppe promited his best	dıli-
	firmed) meant to have murdered their mafter, and	letting in thereby the furname of Tydder being but	!			gence, and accordingly after his returne, labo	ured
Į t	hen to haue fet Perkin, and the Earle at large, to	two descents English and which now after three def-	1 1			therein with king Henry, who moit gladly hea	
estin condem-	which practife of escape the poore Earle is said to	cents and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, a-	1	4.0		ned thereunto. Whereupon the Scotish King	ferit
erion condent- ed & executed.	naue confented. Perkin for this conspiracie had his	mong those few great workes of peace which ensu-	1 1			the racinonhoppe of Glaico, the Parle of Parle	mall:
	riall at Westminster, and hee together with one Iohn	ed their firebrands of warre, we must remember the	1 1			and others to demand the Lady in marriage. T	heir
d	Waters, who had beene sometime Major of Corke in	marriage of Prince Arthur, with the Princesse of	1			cite realisement was hearty and princely. But u	vhen l
I	reland, were condemned, and being drawne to Ti-	Spaine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warwicks				proposition came to scanning at the Counce	Hro.
1 5 6	borne, had the sentence of death executed vpon them.	death till then, brought forth a verie great plague,	1 1			at had not current passage at first for there y	were
1.D. 1499. I	Perkinat the Gallowes did reade his former confession,	whereof in London there are faid to have died about			the Brideand Bridegrome, to hinder actuall con-		
m.ncg. 1). /	taking on his death that the fame was true, and	thirtie thouland. The King and Oneene remone	1 1		fummation, in regard of the Princes greene estate	riage the Crowne of England might come to the Sc	atish
lv	vuder-went his punishment with parience wel-	to Callais in May and returned in June. The maine	, ,			rias ine Crowne of England might come to the Sc line, by the iffic of Lady Margaret, Whereunto Gaid, King Henry made this answere Whatifit for for it can Gold time death of the Come of the School	it is
t	ter Blewet, and Thomas Astropod (being two of	*Dulines was to remiew and ratifie the flare of amiry	1 . D. I		ofbody; but others alleadge many arguments to	laid, King Henry made this answere * What if it On	uld? King Herrie
it	the configurators, for the other two. Strangenaire and	and negociations, betweene the English and the Duke	. s.ja.og.		proue that matrimonial performance was between the, howfoeuer her felf, (when that afterward came	for if any fuch thing (bould happen, (which Omen God	for- fwere to an o
1	Long Roger, being the Lieutenants men alfo, were	Of Burgundies lubicets. Shine also was horne and		*la,Stows Ama	in question) * appealed to the conscience of K. Herry	bid) I feest will come to paffe, that our Kinodome	Chall iection again
ī	not executed, nor for fo much as wee haue read, ar-	being new builded, called Richmund; for which and				for if any fuch thing flouid happen, (which omed obtain) I feet will come to passe, that our Kingdome, lees anothing thereby, because there will not be ean action of Bouland to Scalland, but contents.	cel Scotland
r	raigned) not long after received the reward of their	the like, it will be fitteft to have recourse to vulgar	1				
le.	offence at the fame place.	Annals.		n			
1	(61) Iustice thus tooke hold at last of Perkin	(62) The Coast of State now feeming clearefrom	A.D. 1501.	Prince Arthur dieth.	a very short while, for in Aprill following hee died	ble head of the whole I land, feeing that missle I.M.	
11	Warbecke, on whom, the Prouerbe which fairh that	al thickning weather, Ferdinando and I fabella King &	An.Reg.17			ble head of the whole I land, seeing that which is less seeing that which is less seeing that which is less seeing that which is less to the ornament and honour of that will a much the greater, as Normanda hours of that will a much the greater, as Normanda hours of was	ve Epifc.Reff.
17	Pride is the Viber of shame, was worthily verified. Nei- ther could the world accuse King Henrie for his		1		a Prince, in whose youth the lights of all noble ver-	is much the greater, as Normandy heretofore came to	ole Palyd. Derg.
1	ther could the world accuse King Hemie for his	between them and King Hemry, concerning their	1 1		tues did cleerely beginne to fine. His aptnesse to	under the dominion and power of the Funlish and for	aC.
10	death, valetie it were for that he had not hanged him	fourth daughter the Lady Katherine (borne at Aleala	The Lady Kas			where the dominion and power of the English our form thers. When this was faither whole board of col	74-
1 1	fooner, but fuffered him to line till hee had drawne	de Finari of Completum) fent her royally appointed	therine of Spaine	*,Bern.Andr.MS.			
Ja	after him a greater ruine in Warwicks person, then in	in a goodly Flete to England, there to fulfill in per- fon, what hitherto had beene onely treated of, who	landed in Eng-		otherwise studiously turned and revoluted with his		
The Forle of	all the former tragedies. For this Earle being a	fon, what hitherto had beene onely treated of who	* Polyd. Verg. is	. 100	own hands of the miele authors following in Gram-		
Varwickt ruined (chiefe Prince of the blood, and next being Male of	after many difficulties tooke land at * Plimouth in	Heniro,7 .	Prince Arthurs	war 3 day to, Ferot, Supretus, Gentus and Valla . In Do.	Scottish Ambassadors were sent home, w	ine
by Persons com-	his house to the Crowne of England, (2 crime of	October. Ferdinando her father was the fonne of lake	Add. to Fab.	bookes and lear-	etric, Homer, Virgil, Lucan, Ouid, Silius, Plautus,		
	Which his pitth one v made him only and not any	King of Arragon and Sicilia, and although he was vn-	1	Ring,	and Terence: In Oratorie: Tullies Offices, Epifles,		
l t	fact of his) being thus charged to have ginen affenr	learned, as being brought vp among armes and	1 1				
11	to Perkins plot of eleane, he was publikely arraigned	fouldiers, yet by ving the familiarity of wilemen he also	1 1			rances at Paules Croffe. It was a principall Articipation of the same a	lu-
1 t	before the Earle of Oxford (then High Seguard)	became very wife, and proued that great Prince which	1 1			in this agreement, That me Fred ?	cle
10	Of England) by the name of Edward Plantagings Forla	first in these latter times recalled the old glorie of	1 1		I wee name beene particular, to fignific when A. I	in this agreement. That no Englishman should em Scotland, nor Scot into England without commendate	ter
10	or warmiere, and indired for minding to have eleaned	Spaine, and reared it to such an envious magnitude,	l i			letters from their Commendate	iry .
10.2000 ABBELL ((45 They 1444) out of the Tower, and confequently	as that the lealousie thereof hath bred no small quar-	1 1			letters from their Soueraigne. Which Article was i	re-
. [2	according to the dreadfull licence of inference a	rels in Christendome. For by his marriage with I-	1 1			puted aspeciall meane to preserve the peace inuitable.	0-
1 1	mong our English pleaders in cases of death) to de-	fabella, (sole fifter and heire to Hemy the fourth King		1			1
11	pride King Henry of his royall Crowneand dionicy	of Castile and Leon,) he raigned in right of his wife,	!		steamdatous and miturious to the honour, and vie of	(65) But crethe young Lady her felfe was con	n- A D
1 1	and to viurge the Title and foneraigne office pro-	and jointly with her, oner those two Kingdomes and	1			usied into Scotland, her brother Prince Arthur dies	A.D. 150
3.6	lectiffing their bloody Poerry with the like Gamming	their appurtenances who together (Sight a staringue	• Res admirabiles		(64) But before the vntimely expiration of this	and in * February next enfuing, their mother all	O MILKEG. 13
ı	ry syllogismes, though vtterly without measure, or fashion. The Earle doubly betraied, first by the set-	of Sicilia) did admirable things and workes most holy.	& opera Sandifi-	A.D. 1501.	great Hope of England, King Henry Weary of warmen	Queene Elizabeth, as finee lay in Child-bed with	in Widdower and
f	fashion. The Earle doubly betrated, first by the fer-	They * recomered the huge Ciry and Kingdoma of	ma. * Franc. Tarabbs.			with free and Change to repaire his min	d Henry his fonn
Wash she an	ters of the mare, and then by their filly or deceirfull	They * recovered the huge City and Kingdome of Granada, and part of Andaluzia from the Moores, af-	de Reg. Hifp.			the Tower of London. The King to repaire his min with fresh consolations, in advancing his onely remaining some. Herry Duke of Yorks.	e- of Wales,
direment.	Deriwalions who were pur shout him confederal	ter they had beene in violent possession thereof se-				maining fonne, Henry Duke of Yorke, created his	m """"
1	the enditement, and submitteth himselfe to the	ten hundreth and fourescore veeres, and having	The briefe of		Trangalet his cident daugnter, and Temes the formel		
	Kings mercie: that is: offered up his head to be a	purged those places from the fifth of Mahamete fit-		tweene temer		within it w dayes after his mothers decease. The	·e
11	ilipperie toundation of King Henries farther pur-	perititions, built Churches to the honour of Teles	Habellas greatest	King of Scots and	lished in the February next before Prince Arthurs death at Paules Crosse; in rejoycement whereof,		
- 11	poles; for lentence of death was thereupon pro-	Christ, by occasion whereof Ferdinanda was firma-		King of Scots and Lady Margaret published.	dearn at Paules Croffe; in reloycement whereof	Prince, espoused soone after (*though with much	h See in the life
11	nounced as against a Traitour. This one practife	med the Catholike King. The walles of the Cirie of	1	Paolitica.	Te Deum was fung, and other fignes of publike ioy declared. The **Bishoppe of Rose saith, that the Earle of **Bathwell did openly handled over the saith.	Teluciation) the Lady A atherine his elder brother	of HERry the 8
11	icemes iumcient, if not to cast voon Henry the Ti-	Granada at the time of the intrender which defrer	1	*1oh.Stow Annal.	declared. The * Bishoppe of Rose faith, that the	widdow, a voon the nile and twentieth of Inne	-1.
		about tenne veeres warres) was by Vashdelie King		in 124.4.	Earle of Bothwell did openly handfaft, or espouse the	the Bishoppe of Salisburies house in Fleetstreet, And	
Sir F. B. MS.	whether (* as one writes) hee was more fineere and en-		* Zue Marie			in this wife, by prouiding fo worthy a wife for him	,
1	tire then Ferdinando King of Spaine, vpon whom (faith that Authour) he did hand somely bestow the ennie of the	innes in compane, and in the same twelve Gares	Sic,Lib.so.			1 (though to lay truth, her great I lower was the chief.	- f
	that Authour) he did hand somely bestow the enuie of the						
Reboard Earle of		red with building, innumerable people, and inefti-					
Warwiche laft Male Planage- set beheeded.	lite therefore of this Prince (according to rigour of	mable riches, & the Spanish forces at this conquest				to the accomplianment of affinity with Scotland hee	
furnite i maninge.	lawe being thus in his power, the King gently par-	wereabout 12000. Horse & one hundred thousand	1 1	4 1	INATIONS, If Chanced certains of the Scote by abain	most superior with the analysis of the second and the most superior with the second and the seco	K. Henry brings his daughter the
1	goned all the paines, but the loffe of his head, which	toot. The faid King and Queene, befides many o-	1			Riefman I a Company of himself in person trauelled fro	Lady Margaret
	Was cut off young (caffold at Tower Lift and then (a	ther their mighty actions, did also first discover .				Attendanta as farre with her as Coleweston beside Nor-	on the way to
1	nother gratious fauour) his body was not buried in	merica, by Christopher Columbus, & thereby brought a				thampton, where his mother the Counteffe lay: after	*Epsf.Roff.
	the Chapper of the 1 ower or in any other common	Whole new world to the notice of Christendom, 7.6.	Mahella Oucene				1
*IshStow Annel. *Six Fr.B. MS.	place, but at * Bilbam by his Ancestors, Tealons	bells her left, descended of the blood rois of England	of Speine delcen-				, ,
Sir Fr. B. MS.	(laith * one) the King was oner the greatnes of his	being daughter of loba the lecond King of Callila &	ded from our			Committed the guard and conduct of her porton	1 I
	Nobilitie, as remembring how himselfewas let vn:	Leon, fon of Henriethe third King of Caffile and Leon,	Edward the 3.			principally to the Carles of Nurrey and Marchant	: I
	and much more did this humour encrease in him I	and of Ratherine his wife (daughter of * 10hn Duke	King of England				, ,
1	atter he had conflicted with fuch Idols and Conn.	of Lancafter, third sonne of our Edward the third	Decad 1.lib.1.			appointed to that feruice; a great company of Lords Knights, Flouiers & men of Marke assentional	Tue
,	terfeits as Lambert Simenel and Perkin Warbeck. The	of triumphall and neuer-dying memorie) was a La-	1 1	150000000000000000000000000000000000000	and inclined, and having tome matters of farra area	Anights, Equiers,& men of Marke attending them	Nerthumberlant
,		die.	1		er moment to impart, desired the Bishops presence	appointed to that fertiles a great company of Lords Knights, Efquiers, & men of Marke attending them as farre as Berwicke. At S. Lamberts Church in Lamer Moore within Scotland, the King attended by the	deliuers her to
-		die,	,		dented the pimobs bieleuce	Moore within Scotland, the King attended by the	King Lames with-
						yvvv2 princi-	in Scotland.

Natural determined to the true of true of true	or thacto electe the way to her matriage that inno- me Earl of Braniele was put to vinvothy death in Earl of Braniele was put to vinvothy death ichter let licentious Practities vouch the fingu- râte of Salomon in taking away the life of his el- related braniele to colour this homicide for he at will argue from particular false in Scrip- re, final not onely leaue no Adoniai lining, but per- pa no Salomon. To worke this young Warniele pa no Salomon. To worke this young Warniele not the microbia and difficult worker per per pa no Salomon. To worke this young Warniele no consended the salomon of the salomon of the per pa no Salomon. To worke this young Warniele no confeited, Perkin, and the Earle at large, to hich practife of eclape the poore Earle is faid to near to hause for Perkin, and the Earle at large, to hich practife of eclape the poore Earle is faid to net confeited. Perkin for this confipirace had his ialla Welphinoifler, and hee together with one take waters, who had beene fometime Maior of Corke in island, were condemned, and being drawn to Tr- men, had the fentence of death executed you then, when the Gallowes did reade his former confifien- merhina the Gallowes did reade his former configlian, were and Thomas Affonod of being two of the Confirmore, for the other two, Strangerwaies and mong Loger, being the Licutenants men allo, were to executed, nor for for much as we have erad, ar- igned) not long after received the reward of their fience at the lang lance. (61) Luthee thus tooke hold at laft of Perkin arkeeke, on whom, the Prouverbe which faith, thas	firangenes of which dangers made him thinke no- thing fale. This Earle was the lash their male of the blood, and furname of Plantagenes, who firance as it was long time glorious for gluing Kings to Eng- land, ceun from King Henry the fecond, fo in the end (chiefly for the houf of Totel; it became hate- full fast feener) to God and man, for the most hor- rible and inextinguible deadly fewdes, murder, per- ionies, and other horrors committed within it felfe, which (as then not fully explaced) lay heatily typon the head of this Earle, and finally threw open all those fences, which the possession of Maiettle and numerositie or Gillise had for finally ages call about it, letting in thereby the furname of Tydade being but two defences English, and which now after three def- cents and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, a- mong those few great workes of peace which ensi- ed their firebrands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince Arshur, with the Princes of Spine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warniede death till then, brought forth a verieg great peng- whencos in London there are faid to have died about thirtie thousand. The King and Queene remove to Callas in May and securated in Isms. The maine "bullnes was to reulev and traisfe the fate of aminy, and negociations, between the English and the Dake of Burgundies Isbiectes. Sinne also was burnt, and the like, it will be fitteft to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Paya Ung.	"Fapil. "Est.Ma Prince a murida, "Althous a fishen fishen day to S. Sirkyn	y of that widdoms, granify, chaffity, and of borious adeuction, that "fire did not mith gain a feel by Friefly, but many others, and brought ve children accordingly. Arthur 18 and the characteristic state of the children accordingly. 18 Tail.	stace with his winding the depth without his his plant of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of goode Norham Callell, and yet being finally pleaf to good the depth of the depth of goode Norham Callell, and yet being finally pleaf to good the depth of the depth of goode Norham Callell, and yet being finally pleaf to good the depth of the depth of good the depth of the depth of good the depth of the depth	nd great my glad wye, an gabode, gabod
In a condemia of the characteristic of the c	icither les licentious Practifies vouch the fingu- Ath Of Salmoni naking away the life of his ele- trother Admiss to colour this homicide: for he as will argue from particular fielts in Scrip- re, shall not onely leaue no Admiss living, but per- penson Salmons. To worke this young Warnites- time, the mischeirous and dismall wretch Pertin comes an ocacion, it from an instrument, for he by a supple infuncations and flowing promiss had trupted his keepers, the fervants of Sit Islan Dig- knight Lieutenant of the Tower; who (a* "mes- formed) meant to hate murdered their maller, and then to hate for Perkin, and the Earle at large, to hich practife of cleape the poore Earle is faid to use consense. Perkin for this conspirate had his taill at Welphinniffer, and hee together with one Islan Waters, who had beene sometime Maior of Corke in talmal, were condemned, and being drawn to Tr- men, that the fenence of death executed you then write the Gallowes did reade his former consistion, which are the state that the fame was true, and oder-went his punishment with patience. mal- related, and Thomas affeword (being two of the conspirators, for the other two), trangewaies and ong Leger, being the Lieutenants men also, were occecuted, nor for so much as we have read, ar- tigned) not long after received the reward of their finence at the fame place. (61) Islitice thus tooke hold at last of Perkins (62) Islitice thus tooke hold at last of Perkins	blood, and furname of Plantagenat; who firece as it was a long time glorious for guing Kings to England, (even from King Henry the Second) foin the end (chiefly for the house of 2 rake) in became hatefull gais feemes to God and man, for the most horrible and inextinguible deadly fewdes, murder, periories, and other horrors committed within it felle, which (as then not fully explaced) lay heavily vopon the head of this Earle, and finally threw open all those fences, which the possession of Maiethe and numerostice of tillse had for sindry ages cast about it, letting in thereby the furname of Tydar'e being but woo decents English and which now after three decents and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, a mong those few great workes of peace which ensuring of Prince Arstow, with the Princed of Spaine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warmiele death till then, brought forth a verie great plane, whereof in London there are faid to have died about thrite thousiand. The King and Curence remove to Callasi in Mag and secondarion, between the English and the Disk of Burgunder Subsections. Since also was burnt, and being new builded, called Richmand; for which and the like, it will be fitteft to hause recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Peyd.Urg.	"Let.Ma Prince muricid. * Addit fathous day to fa	special content of the state of	stace with his winding the depth without his his plant of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of the depth of goode Norham Callell, and yet being finally pleaf to good the depth of the depth of goode Norham Callell, and yet being finally pleaf to good the depth of the depth of goode Norham Callell, and yet being finally pleaf to good the depth of the depth of good the depth of the depth of good the depth of the depth	nd great my glad. Bittop Fort prefere de fort
lar decirch christian decirch	r Act of Salomon in taking away the life of his el- tro brother Admiss to colour this homicide: for he ar will argue from particular facts in Scrip- re, fiall not onely leaue no Admis it luing, but per- tips no Salomon. To worke this young Warnicke ince, the micheinous and diffinal wretch price to subject in the content of the salomon. To worke this young Warnicke incomes an occalion, if no an infirmment, for he by supple infinacions and flowing promities had turupted his keepers, the fernants of Sir loba Dig- Knight Lieutenant of the Town for at mar frome) meant to have murdered their malter, and en to hause for Perkin, and the Earle at large, to hich practice of eclape the poore Earle is faid to huc contented. Perkin for this compiracie had his alla Wyfishnight, and her cogether with none tobs Waters, who had beene fometime Maior of Corke in dead, were condemned, and being drawne to Tr- war, had the fentence of death executed youn them. Frish arth Gallowes did reads his fromes confision, hing on his datath that the fame was true, and one-went his punifiment with patience. wal- related, and Thomas Affwood (being two of the confisions, for the other two, Strangewsia and ong Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were occurred, nor for for much as we haue read, ar- tigned) not long after received the reward of their fence at the fame place. (61) Indice thus tooke hold at laft of Perkin waterstand the street of the confision of the whon, the Prounter which flight, thar waterstand the content of the confision of the place.	was along time glorious for guing Kingsto England, euen from King Henry the Econd) fo limite end (chiefly for the houfe of Torke) it became hateful (as it Eemes) to God and man, for the most horrible and inextinguible deadly fewdes, murder, periories, and other horrors committed within its felfe, which (as then not fully expiated) lay heatily upon the head of this Earle, and finally threw open all those fances, which the possibility ages cast about it, letting in the reby the formame of Tydder being but two defents English, and which now after three defents and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, among those few great workes of peace which entitle the formation of the princes of Spaine Lask Statemias. The theterins from Warnieks death till then, brought forth a verie great plague, whereof in London there are fail to hance died about thirtie thousand. The King and Queene remous to Callain in Cally and report and the United Statement of the English and the Duke of Englands in the Callain in Callands and the Dike, it will be fitteft to hause recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Peyd.torg.	Prince a married, * Addit, faith on a day the f	Jeaby Priefls, but many others, and brought v. children accordingly. Arthur Carlot Ca	post of the state	my glad by g. an gabode, Bittop, For I gabod
hais condems of the condens of the c	re brother Adonis to colour this homicide: for he are will argue from particular facts in Scrip- re, shall not onely leave no Adonise living, but per- pin on Sadomos. To worke this young Warnicket- time, the mischeirous and dismall wretch Perkin- comes an occasion, if not an instrument, for he by- s supple infinuations and flowing promises had trupted his keepers, the fervants of Sit Ioha Dig- striped his keepers, the fervants of Sit Ioha Dig- striped his keepers, the fervants of Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers, the fervants of Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers, the fervants of Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers, the fervants of Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers, the fervants of Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers, the fervants of Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers, the fervants of the Sit Ioha Ioha Dig- striped his heepers of the Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers of the Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers of the Sit Ioha Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers of the Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers of the Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Dig- striped his heepers of the Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Ioha Sit Ioha Ioha Ioha Ioha Ioha Ioha Ioha Ioha	land, (even from King Henry the fectors) for inter- tial (size if the from the ord of Tarke) is became hate- full (size if the from the ord of Tarke) is became hate- full (size if the from the first of the ord ord ord ord ord ord ord ord ord ord	* Peyd.Urg.	Prince a martied, * Addit, faith on a day the f	Jeaby Priefls, but many others, and brought v. children accordingly. Arthur Carlot Ca	Abbey of Ciftertian Monkes, where the King of the breath of the Billio offinee conceined for the breath of good te Morbam Cafell, and yes being finally placed circu fastisfation, the their facety of Horbam Cafell, and yes being finally placed circu fastisfation, the time whereof was, "that of England would be placed to give the bins in marse and the state of England would be placed to give the bins in marse and the state of the st	tryle, an gabode, ppe his trues at his presence de by the section of the section
characteristics of the control of th	ar will argue from particular facts in Scrip- re, finall not onely leaue no Admire iliunite, but per- teps no Salomans. To worke this young Warnickei incomes an occasion, if no an inframent, for he by sipple infinacions and diversity perity formed his keepers, the fertuants of Sit Islas Dig- Knight Lieutenant of the Tower; who (a " nut formed) meant to hase nurdered their malter, and ent to hane for Perkin, and the Enric at large, to hich practife of cleape the poore Earle is faid to the contented. Perkin for this compirate had his tell all Wyfishnight, and he conjected with one take Waters, who had beene fornetime Maior of Carke in tell all Wyfishnight, and he conjected with one take Waters, who had beene fornetime Maior of Carke in tell all Wyfishnight, and he reconcert with one take Waters, who had beene folke the excepted upon them. Frist arth Gallowes did reads his former confission, hing on his datash that the fame was true, and one-went his punishment with patience. real- related, were confort for much as we have read, ar- igned) not long after received the reward of their fence at the fame place. (61) Inlice thus took hold at last of Perkin Arbeeks, on whom, the Prounter which faith, thar Varbeeks, on whom, the Prounter which faith, thar Varbeeks, on whom, the Prounter which faith, thar	end (chiefly for the hour of Torke) is became hate- full (as it feemes) to God and man, for the most hor- rible and inextinguible deadly fewdes, murder, per- niers, and other horrors committed within it felle, which (as then not fully expiated) lay heatily upon the head of this Earle, and fully threw open all those fences, which the possession and about it, letting in thereby the furname of Tytake being but two decens English, and which now after three del- cents and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, a- mong those two princes is also vanished. Now, a- mong those two princes is also vanished. Now, a- mong those two princes is also vanished. Now, a- mong those two princes is also vanished. Now, a- mong those two princes are the princes of Spinne Lays Katerine. The therein from Warnieks death till then, brought forth a verie great plague, whereof in London there are fail to hane diedabout thirtie thousand. The King and Queene remous to Callas in Cally and returned in Innet. The maine "bullines was to retieve and ratific the flate of amity, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burganskes fubiceds. Shine also was burnt, and the like, it will be fittest to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Payd.Uurg.	married, * Addit, faith on a day the f	childrenaccordingly. (63) The Lady Katherise being about eigh yeers old, and borne of fo great, fo noble, for rous and vertuous parents, is with infl matich following openly "arried in Paulec Churt arthur Prince of Walet, a ged about fifteen evaluated the prince of Walet, a ged about fifteen evaluated the wind the wind. The Archbilth Canterbury affiled with nineteene Bifiops and bots, mittred, loyaed their hands, and perform the other Church rites vponthat great day, valgar Annals can tell you the fiplend or and a thereof, in apparell, iewels, Pageans, banq guefts, and other princely complements, the owighty bufineffic of many weaker braines. A gl	who having rodnelly vetered to the Billion offence conceived for the breach of good te center of the state of	gabode, ppe his presence de tores at dores en de tores
hain fruit beet his condems of the condens of the c	re, intal not onely leave no Adomasi imings but per- psy no Salomos. To worke this young Warwickes line, the mischeirous and dismail wretch Perkin comes an ocasion, if no can instrument, for he by s supple intinuarious and flowing promises had turputed his keepers, the servants of Sir Ioha Dig- ck night Lieutenant of the Tower; who sar "must formed) meant to have nurdered their maller, and en to have for Perkin, and the Earle at sirge, to hich practice of cisape the poore Earle is said to tue consented. Perkin for this conspirate had his tue consented. Perkin for this conspirate had his tue consented. Perkin for this conspirate had his tue consented. Perkin for this conspirate had his tue consented. Perkin for this conspirate had his stall a Wefthingher, and her to expert with one Iohn Waters, who had beene sometime Maior of Corke in dund, were condemned, and being drawne to Tr- turne, that the sent her fame was true, and deter-went his punishment with patience. Perkin the Gallowes did reade this primore configura- tions, for the other two, Strangensiar and ong Leger, being the Lieutenants men also, were to conspirators, for the other two, Strangensiar and ong Leger, being the Lieutenants men also, were to eccounty and the place. (61) Indice thus tooke hold at last of Perkin arkeeks, on whom, the Prounter which flight, that	full (asi téemes) to God and man, for the moft hor- rible and inextinguible deally fewdes, murder, per- iories, and other horrors committed within it ellic, which (as then not fully explaced) by heaulily ypon the head of this Earle, and finally threw openall those fences, which the possistion of Maisetine and numerofitie of iffile had for fandry ages cast abour it, letting in thereby the furname of Tydate being but two ofcients Englis, and which now after three def- cents and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, a- mong those few great workes of peace which enfu- ed their firebrands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince. Arthur, with the Princesses of Spaine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warwicks death till then, brought forth a verie gear place, whereof in London there are faid to have died abour thirtie thousand. The King and Queene remove to Calkein in Many and secturated in Isma. The maine "bulines was to retieve and ratifie the fate of aminy, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burgundies fubicets. Sinne allo was burnt, and the like, it will be fittest to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Payd.Ung.	married, * Addit, faith on a day the f	dribar (6:3) The Lady Katherine being about eight years old, and borne of 6 great, fon oble, for irous and verenous parents, is with infl maich? I state of the property married in Paulet Church of the Paulet of t	Norham Caffell, and yet being finally oleaf circum facts of the to the total of the	rmes at bythe Section of the king ringethe finds for the king ringethe finds for the king for th
haj ruibee his coolem- in condem-	193 no Salomon. To worke this young Warnickes, tine, the mischeinous and diffinall wretch Perkin roomes an occasion, if no an infirument, for he by simple infinuacions and flowing promities had rurupted his keepers, the fernants of Sit Isha Digner shad rurupted his keepers, the fernants of Sit Isha Digner shad rurupted his keepers, the fernants of Sit Isha Digner shad to the no haue for Perkin, and the Earle at lairs, to hich practife of estage the poore Earle is said to use conferned. Perkin for this conspirate had his tail at Welphiningher, and her together with one taken Waters, who had beene sometime Maior of Corkein teland, were condemned, and being drawne to Triven had the stoneous death resource of the promote configuration, which was the state of the state of the promote configuration, and the state of th	rible and inextinguible deadly fewdes, murder, per- niries, and other horrors committed within it felle, which (as then not fully expiated) lay heatily upon the head of this Earle, and finally threw open all those fences, which the possession of makethe and numerostice of tillse had for sindry ages cast about it, letting in thereby the forname of Tydder being but two deleents English, and which now after three def- cents and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, a- mong those few great workes of peace which ensi- et their internation of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince Arthur, with the Princesse of Spaine Lass Katerina. The theretim from Warnieks death full then, brought forth a verie great plague, whereof in London there are fail to hane diedeabout thirtie thousand. The King and Queene remous to Callain in Cally and returned in June. The maine "bussines was to retieve and tastife the flate of amity, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burgunites fubicets. Sinn also was burnt, and the like, it will be fittest to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Paya.cong.	married, * Addit, faith on a day the f	ious and vertuous parents, is with infil maickly sense of the control of the cont	Norham Caftell, and yet being finally oleaf circum facts of the to the total of the	rmes at bythe Section of the king ringethe finds for the king ringethe finds for the king for th
rui bech his che his che his condem- his condem- his condem- his condem- his condem- his che h	ine, the mikheirous and difinall wretch Perkin comes an ocalion, if noran infurment, for he by a fupple infuncations and flowing promifes had turqued his keepers, the fervants of \$Sir Bh Dig-Knight Lieutenant of the Tower; who far "mat formed his heat lieutenant of the Tower; who far "mat for no haue for Perkin, and the Earle at large, to hich practife of eclape the poore Earle is faid to tue confented. Perkin for this confipirace had his tule confented. Perkin for this confipirace had his alla Weffunight, and her cogether with one taken Waters, who had beene fomeetime Maior of Cerk in claud, were condemned, and being drawne to Time, had the fenence of death executed youn themerina the Gallowes did reads his former confiftunities whis data the has the fame was true, and other-went his punifiment with patience. Perkin Elevel, and Thomas Affwood (being two of confipirators, for the other two, Strangewaie and mog Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were confipirators, for the other two, Strangewaie and mog Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were confipirators, for the other two, Strangewaie and mog Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were confipirators, for the other two, Strangewaie and mog Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were confipirators, for the other two, Strangewaie and mog Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were confipirators, for the other two, Strangewaie and mog Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were confipirators, for the other two, Strangewaie and mog Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were confipirators, for the other two, Strangewaie and mog Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were configuration, which was not the model of the two the lieutenants men allo, were configuration and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and the second men and th	iories, and other horrors committed within it felfe, which (as then not fully expired) lay heatily ypon the head of this Earle, and finally threw open all those fronce, which the position of Maietic and numerofitie of ifflice had for fundry ages cast about it, letting in thereby the furname of Tydate being but two olecents Engliss, and which now after three defects and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, among those few great works of peace which enfined their firebrands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince Arthur, with the Princesse of Spaine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warwicks death till then, brought forth a verig gear playen, whereof in London there are faid to have died about thirte thousland. The King and Queene remove to Callais in May and recrumed in Issue. The maine 'builines was to retieve and ratifie the state of aminy, and negociations, between the English and the Dake of Burgundies fubices. Sinne allo was burnt, and the like, it will be fittest to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Poyd.Urg.	* Addit faith on a day the f	ious and vertuous parents, is with infil maickly sense of the control of the cont	ceite fatisfation, het then ferretly diffcour in to to to to the fatisfation, het then ferretly diffcour he for the fatisfation of the fatisfation of the fatisfation for the fatisfation of the fatisfation of the fatisfation for the fatisfation of the fatisfation of the fatisfation for the fatisfation of the fatisfat	ried his the king riage the finds [6- cit dili- boured hearke- hear [6- hea
been his cold in cold	roomes an occasion, if no can infirmment, for he by a simple infinuacions and flowing promities had rrupted his keepers, the feruants of Sit Islam Dig-frond, he had been to have fer Perkin, and the Earle at laire, to hich practice of effects the poore Earle is faid to une conferned. Perkin for this Conspirate had his italia Welfminifer, and her together with one take with the presentation of the Welfminifer, and her together with one take where the welfminifer, and her together with one take where the welfminifer, and her together with one take where the mention of Corkein Wester, who had been formertime Matior of Corkein takens, were condemned, and being drawne to Trivers, and the fentence of death executed you not hem with at the Gallowes did read his former configuration, which we have the state of the takens of the well to the takens of the well to the takens of the well to the takens of the well to the takens of the well to the takens of the well to the takens of the well to the takens of the well to the takens of the well takens of the	which (as then not fully expiated) lay heatily youn the head of this Earle, and finally threw open all those fences, which the possession of maketise and numerodise of fillse had for skindy ages cast about it, letting in thereby the furname of 7 ydarb being but two offectors. English and which now after three decements and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, a mong those free great workes of peace which enfort their firebrands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince arthur, with the Princess of Spaine Lass Statemer. The interim from Warnieks death till then, brought forth a verie great plague, whereof in London three are fail to hance died about thirtie thousand. The King and Queene remove to Callas in Cally and record only the three thousands. The King and Course remove to Callas in Cally and report and the Dake of Burgandies fubiceds. Stime also was burnt, and being new builded, called attenuand; for which and the like, it will be fittest to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Poyd.Urg.	faith on a	As Pak. Columnity openly "married in Paules Churchinder State Prince of Wales, a ged about fifteen eye and cledf (florance of Leary the Genenth, King of Land, and of Elizabeth his wife. The Archbilin Canterbury affilted with nineteene Bilhops and bots, mitred, joyned their hands, and perform the other Church rites you that great day, valgar Annals can tell you the fplendor and g thereof, in apparrell, iewels, Pageants, banq guefts, and other princely complements, theo weighty bufuneffoof many weaker braines. A gl	of England would be plasfed to give to him in many crees; Eng- Eng- India Amagaret his tidely daughter, as a pledge of lable amilie. The Bilhoppe promited his be gence, and accordingly after his returne, lat deal and therein with King Henry, who modt gladly hied therein not him to the court his time. The history of silico, the Earle of Bo and others to demand the Lady in marriage, and the state of the court history of the proposition came to featuring at the Countries and the state of the countries of the co	riagethe findsfi- eft dili- boured hearke- ng fent othwell Their t when
his coolem his coolem	s fupple infinuacions and flowing promites had prirepted his keepers, theferants of Sit Isla Dig-Knight Lieutenant of the Tower; who (as * mat format) mean to have murdered their mather, and ent co haue fer Perkin, and the Earle a Liarge, to hich practile of elcape the poore Earle is Said to nue conferned. Perkin for this confiprace had his tall at Welphanifer, and hee together with one Islan Waters, who had beene fometime Maior of Corke in cland, were condemned, and being drawn to Trumps, had the fennee of death executed you then, the tall the thing of the water of the many land of the men was true, and other worth in punishment with patience. Fallengt and Thomas Affrond I being two of the conspirators, for the other two, strangerwise and mong Loger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were outexcuted, nor for so much as we have read, arigned) not long after received the reward of their finees at the fame place. (61) Luttice thus took hold at last of Perkin arbeets, on whom, the Prourer which faith, that Twheets, on Woon, the Prourer which faith, that	the head of this Earle, and finally threw openal those fraces, which the position of Maietie and numerofitie of tillie had for fundry ages cast about it, letting in thereby the furname of Tydder being but wo defeents English, and which now after three defects and fine Prince is also vanished. Now, a mong those few great workes of peace which enfield their firebrands of warre, we must remember the attraige of Prince Arthur, with the Prince of Spaine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warwiest each till then, brought forth a verie great page, whereof in London there are faid to have died about thirtie thousland. The King and Queene remose to Callais in May and recurred in Lond. The maine "builines was to realise and the late of Burgundier fubices. Since also was burnt, and the like, it will be fitteft to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd.Urrg.	faith on a	Arthur Prince of Wate, aged about fifteen ye and deld flours to Heart Church King of land, and of Elizabeth his wife. The Archbilth Cantribury affilted with ninceene Bifinops and bots, mitted, loyaed their hands, and perform the other Church rites vpon that great day. vulgar Annals can tell you the fiplendor and guetts, and other princely complements, the owighty bufineffic of princely complements, the owighty bufineffic flow weaker braines. A guetts of the princely complements, the owighty bufineffic flow weaker braines. A guetts of the princely complements were not to the princely complements where the princely complements were being the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were being the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements which were the princely complements where the princely complements were the princely complements which were the princely complements which were the princely complements which were the princely complements where t	of England would be plasfed to give to him in many crees; Eng- Eng- India Amagaret his tidely daughter, as a pledge of lable amilie. The Bilhoppe promited his be gence, and accordingly after his returne, lat deal and therein with King Henry, who modt gladly hied therein not him to the court his time. The history of silico, the Earle of Bo and others to demand the Lady in marriage, and the state of the court history of the proposition came to featuring at the Countries and the state of the countries of the co	riagethe findsfi- eft dili- boured hearke- ng fent othwell Their t when
was attack. in condemnia	purposed his keepers, the feruants of Sit Ishan Dig- Knight Lieutenant of the Tower; who (as "mat- formal) meant to hade murdered their maller, and hen to haue for Perkin, and the Earle at tairge, to hich practife of escape the poore Earle is said to use confenced. Perkin for this conspirate had his italia Welfminiffer, and her together with one taken Waters, who had beene Sometime Maior of Corkein italian, were condemned, and being drawne to Tr- vrach had the steneous death executed you them- retin at the Gallowes did reade his former configura- king on his death that the Jame was true, and oder-went his puniliment with patience. Iral- vallent, and Thomas Africans Strangewise and ong Eager, being the Lieutenants men also, were occecuted, nor for so much as we have read, ar- igned) not long after received the reward of their finence at the lame place. (61) Institute thus tooke hold at last of Perkin wheeker, in whom, the Prouver which faith, that	thoir fences, which the politifion of Maiettie and numerofitie of tiller had of Kundry ages calf abour it, letting in thereby the furname of 774der being but wo defeents English and which now after three defects and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, a mong thoir few great works of peace which enfield their firebrands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince **rhor**, with the Princeste of Spaine Lask Ratherine. The interim from Warmiets death till then, brought forth a vertice great plagou thirtie thousand. The King and Queene remove to Calles in Calfornia Calfornia of the Calfornia Calfo	* Polyd.Urrg.	day the f	and cldeft some to Heavy the Geneth, King of Land, and of Elizabeth his wife. The Archbish Canterbury affilted with nineteene Bishops and bots, mitred, ioyned their hands, and perform the other Church rites vpon that great day, vulgar Annals can tell you the splendor and ghereof, in apparrell, iewels, Pageants, banq guetts, and other principly complements, theo weighty businesses of the work of the property of the weighty businesses of the work of the weighty businesses of the weig	Lady Margare his stadef dangiter, as pleage of lable amitte. The Biftoppe promited his be applied to the mitter. The Biftoppe promited his better in with King Henry, who most gladly herein with King Henry, who most gladly herein with King Henry, who most gladly herein with King Henry, who most gladly herein with King Henry, who most gladly herein with King Henry, who most gladly herein with King Henry has been demand the Lady in mariage, and there is odemand the Lady in mariage, and the state of the state o	riagethe finds[6- cht dili- boured hearke- ng fent holtwell; Their t when
win stead. bit a sin condemn with the condemn of th	*Knight Licuteinant of the Tower; who (a* "mat firmal") mean to have murdered their maller, and formal mean to have fire Perkin, and the Earle at large, to hich practife of eletape the poore Earle is faid to the continued. Perkin for this confiprace had his tall at Wighthington, and hee together with one token Waters, who had beene formetime Maior of Corke in eland, were condemned, and being drawn to 77-map, that the fentence of death executed upon them. The material of the state of the material of the ma	numerofitie of ifflie had for fundry ages caft about; it, letting in thereby the furname of Tydder being but two defeents English, and which now after three defeents and fine Princes is also vanished. Now, a mong thois few great workes of peace which enfield their fierbrands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince. Arthur, with the Princesse of Spaine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warwigks death till then, brought forth a verig great page, whereof in London there are faid to have died about third then, brought forth a verig great page, whereof in London there are faid to have died about third the north of the spain and Outener remove to Callain in May and returned in Inne. The maine business was to cuite wand traisfie the fate of aminy, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burgundies fubices. Sinne allo was burnt, and the like, it will be fittest to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd.Usrg.	S.Eriyan	hand, and of Elizadoth his wife. The Archbilds Canterbury affilted with nineteene Biftops and bots, mirred, loyard their hands, and perform the other Church rites vpon that great day, valgar Annals can tell you the fiplend or and a thereof, in apparrell, iewels, Pageans, banq guefts, and other princely complements, the o weighty bufineffic of many weaker braines. A gi	lible amilie. The Bishoppe promised his be grouped of all therein with King Hamy, who moltgadily hed therein with King Hamy, who moltgadily hed therein with King Hamy, who moltgadily hed thereinto. Whereupon the Scottish King Hamy, who moltgadily hed thereinto. Whereupon the Scottish King Hamy, who was the there and others to demand the Lady in marriage, and others to demand the Lady in marriage, testing the state of the second the seco	tridiffe- ceft dili- bourred hearke- ng fent vibruell; Their t when
affect of the condems	promed) meant to hade murdered their maller, and one to hause for Perkin, and the Earle at airge, to hich practife of escape the poore Earle is faid to use confience. Perkin for this conspirate had his iail at Welfminifer, and her together with one taken where you had been sometime. Major of Corkein Waters, who had been sometime. Major of Corkein waters, and the sentence of death executed you nitemark where condemned, and being drawne to Triver, had the sentence of death executed you nitemark where the sentence of death executed you nitemark when at the Gallowes did read his former configuration, and advervent his punishment with patience. Peals allowed, and Thomas Affeword (being two of configurators, for the other two, Strangewaie and now Eager, being the Lieutenants men also, were occurred, nor for so much as we have read, arigined) not long after received the reward of their finese at the same place. (61) Institute thus took hold at last of Perkin wheeled, we whought the that the streets, and whom, the Prounter which faith, that	letting in thereby the furname of Tydair being but two defents English and which now after three defects and flue Princes is also vanished. Now, a mong those few great workes of peace which enfued their fitebrands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince Arthur, with the Princed of Spaine Lady Ratherine. The interim from Warniele death till then, brought forth a verie great plague, whereof in London there are faid to have died about thrive thousiand. The King and Courence remove to Callasi in May and securated in Issue. The maine boulines was to rettieve and rathie the flace of amity, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burgunder fubices. Shine also was burnt, and the like, it will be fittest to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd.Urrg.		Canterbury affifted with inneceene Bifhops and bots, mitred, ioyned their hands, and performe the other Church ries wyon that great day, vulgar Annale can tell you the fplendor and g thereof, in apparrell, iewels, Pageans, bang guedts, and other princely complements, the weighty bufinefficof many weaker brains. A gl	Ab- d all d all d ferreun converted to the converted to t	ncarke- ng fenc othwell Their t when
the the third in condems in conde	en to have fit Perkin, and the Earle at large, to thich practice of clape the poore Earle is faid to two conferred. Perkin for this confipirace had his talla Weyfhanight, and her cogether with one taken Waters, who had beene fometime Maior of Corke in claud, were condemned, and being drawne to Triwar, had the fenence of death executed youn themerina the Gallowes did reads his former configuration with a death that the fame was true, and other-went his punifiment with patience. Perkin Elevel, and Thomas Affwood (being two of confipirators, for the other two, Strangewaie and most Reger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were conceptions for for much as wee haue read, arigned) not long after received the reward of their fience at the fame place. (61) Inflice thus took hold at laft of Perkin Warberks, on whom, the Proureth which faith, that	two defeents Englift, and which now after three defe- cents and five Princes is allo vanished. Now, a- mong those few great workes of peace which ensi- ed their firebrands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince Arthur, with the Princesse of Spaine Loaf Katherine. The interim from Warmigke death till then, brought forth a verie great page, whereof in London there are said to have died about thirtie thousland. The King and Queene remove to Callacin in May and returned in Lone. The maine bushess to review and ratisfe the state of aminy, and acgociations, betweene the English and the Duke of Engmander Isbicces. Sinne also was burnt, and being new busileded, called Extensional for which and the like, it will be fittest to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd.Uerg.		bots, mirred, loyned their hands, and perform the other Church rites vponthat great day, valgar Annals can tell you the filendor and g thereof, in apparrell, iewels, Pageans, banq guets, and other principly complements, the owighty bufinefile of many weaker braines. A get Ladviss from horse.	Ab- d all d all d ferreun converted to the converted to t	ncarke- ng fenc othwell Their t when
which is condemned to the condemned to t	hich practife of cleape the poore Earle is faid to use confience. Perkin for this configurace had his italia LW (phinning)er, and her together with one take in italia, were condemned, and being drawne to Travent, had the fencence of death executed you them, that the fencence of death executed you then retain at the Gallowes did reade bis former configuration on his datah that the fame was true, and deder-went his punithment with patience. Parallel P	cents and five Princes is alfo vanished. Now, a mong thos few great workes of peace which endued their firebrands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince. Arshur, with the Princed of Spains Lady Katherins. The interim from Warwiels ceath till then, brought forth a verie great plange, whereof in London there are faid to have died about thirtie thousiand. The King and Queene remove to Callaci in May and recrured in June. The maine boulines was to retieve and ratific the flace of amitty, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burgundies fubicies. Shine also was burnt, and the like, it will be fitteft to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd.Utrg.		the other Church rites won that great day, vulgar Annals can tell you the fplendor and g thereof, in apparrell, iewels, Pageans, banq guefts, and other princely complements, the oweighty buffineffeof many weaker braines. Ag	d all ned thereunto. Whereupon the Scorith Kir the Archbihoppe of Gloso, the Earle of Bo and others to demand the Lady in marriage. International content and the state of the	ncarke- ng fent othwell; Their t when
Semectical D. 1499. Reg. 15. Reg. 15. Reg. 16. Annual Control of the Control	nuc conferred. Privise for this configurace had his alial Weyfininger, and her cogether with one takes Waters, who had beene fometime Maior of Corke in claud, were condemned, and being drawne to Trivate, had the fenence of death executed youn themerisa at the Gallowes did reads his former configuration white death that the fame was true, and other-went his punifiment with patience. Prairie Render, and Thomas Affwood (being two of configurators, for the other two, Strangewaie and most Reger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were conceptioned for for for much as wee haue read, arigned) not long after received the reward of their fiftence at the fame place. (61) Inflice thus took hold at lish of Pertin Warberks, on whom, the Prounter which flight, that	mong those few great workes of peace which ensighed their fite-brands of warre, we must remember the marriage of Prince Arthur, with the Princesse of Spaine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warmight death till then, brought forth a verie great page, whereof in London there are said to have died about thirtie thousland. The King and Queene remove to Calbarin CM49 and seturned in Lone. The maine bushens was to review and ratifie the shar of aminy, and negociations, betweene the English and the Duke of Burgmailer solviers. Sime also was burnt, and being new busilede, called Richemads for which and the like, it will be fittest to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd. Urrg.		vulgar Annals can tell you the splendor and g thereof, in apparreil, tewels, Pageants, banq guests, and other princely complements, the weighty businesses of many weaker braines. A gu	The drief the Archbishoppe of $Glafo$, the Earle of Bo and others to demand the Lady in marriage, entertainement was hearty and princely. But the proposition came to featuring at the Countries of the Countri	ng lent othwell; Their t when
tris 2 V Pre Pre Pre Pre Pre Pre Pre Pre Pre Pre	ialla Welfminifer, and her together with one take Westers, who had beene formetime Maior of Cerke in takens, were condemned, and being drawn to Trunt, that the fennence of death executed you them, which the Gallowes did reade his former confision, king on his taken that the fame was true, and order-went his punishment with patience. wal- taken a superior of the su	ed their fitebrands of warre, we mußt remember the marriage of Pinice Arthur, with the Pinicelle of Spaine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warwiese death till then, brought forth a verie great plague, whereof in Zomdon there are faid to haue died about thirtie thousiand. The King and Cycente remove to Callea in Mayand sectured in Juna. The maine boulines was to rettieve and ratific the flace of amity, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burgundies fubictes. Shine also was burnt, and the like, it will be fitteft to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Pohd.Ung.		thereof, in apparrell, lewels, Pageants, banq guefts, and other princely complements, the o weighty bufineffe of many weaker braines. A gu	and others to demand the Lady in marriage. entertainement was hearty and princely. But the proposition came to featuring at the Coun state had not converted to the country.	Their t when
D. 1499. Reg. 15: WW PP PP Pr th de for far far far far far far far	Waters, who had beene fometime Maior of Corke in alloud, were condemned, and being drawne to Travan, had the fenence of death executed you then the retrievant the Gallowes did reads his former confifting, king on his death that the fame was true, and other-went his puniliment with patience. Frallest, and Thomas Affwood (being two of confipirators, for the other two, Strangerwäte and mog Leger, being the Lieutenants men allo, were concentration for for much as wee haue read, arigned) not long after received the reward of their fiftence at the fame place. (61) Inflice thus took hold at laft of Partin Warberks, on Whom, the Prourber which faith, that	marriage of Prince Arthur, with the Princelle of Spaine Lask Staterine. The interim from Warwicks death full then, brought forth a verie great page, whereof in London three are fail to o hau cided about thirtie thousand. The King and Queene remove to Calles in Lawy and returned in Inste. The maine 'bullnes was to retieve and ratifie the flate of amity, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burganites fubicets. Sinne also was burnt, and being new builded, called kitemans! for which and the like, it will be fitteft to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Pohd.Ung.		guefts, and other princely complements, the o weighty businesses from any weaker braines. Agu	entertainement was hearty and princely. But	Their t when
D. 1499. P. P. P. P. P. P. P. P. P. P. P. P. P. P	eland, were condemned, and being drawne to Tramp, had the fentence of death executed you network that the Gallowes did reade his former confision, king on his leads that the fame was true, and older-went his punishment with patience. Palaret, and Thomas a flywood f being two of conspirators, for the other two, strangewaies and now Refer, being the Lieutenants men also, were concepted from for for much as wee haute read, artigued) not long after received the reward of their fience at the fame place. (61) Institute thus took hold at last of Perkin Arbeeks, on Whom, the Proureth which faith, that	Spaine Lady Katherine. The interim from Warniek death till then, brought forth a verie great plague, whereof in Londom there are faid to hane died about thirtie thouland. The King and Queene remote to Callais in May and returned in Long. The maine "builines was to retieve and tatifie the flate of aminy, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burgundies fubicels. Sinne allo was burnt, and being new builded, called kriemmaf for which and the like, it will be fitteft to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd.Verg.		weighty businesse of many weaker braines. Ag	proposition came to scanning at the Countries	t when
D. 1499. J. Reg. 15: Leg. 15: Leg. 16: M. P. P. P. C. C. C. C. C. C. C. C. C. C. C. C. C.	was, had the fenence of death executed you them entire at the fallowes did reads his former confision, king on his death that the fame was true, and other-went his puniliment with patience. **ral-ralend**, and **Thomas **affwood** (being two of econfipiators, for the other two, **strangerwise* and now, **teger*, being the Lieutenants men allo, were coxecuted, nor for for much as were haue read, arigned) not long after received the reward of their fiftence at the fame place. (61) Inflice thus took hold at laft of **Pertin Tarketek*, on whom, the Prouter which faith, that	death till then, brought forth a verie great plague, whereof in London there are faid to have died about thirtie thousand. The King and Queene remove to Callas in LMay and secured in Issue. The maine boulines was to retieve and taileft the flate cofamity, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Engrandies fubices. Since also was burnt, and being new builded, called Richmund; for which and the like, it will be fitteft to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Pohd.Ung.		Lady(as for have written)	ratie Countries to Icanning at the Coun	
D. 1499. Pep. 15. W. Variation of the Lot o	refinate the Gallowes did reade his former confision, and thing on his data! that the fame was true, and adder-went his punishment with patience. spal-relatest, and thomats Afmood (I being two of the conspirators, for the other two, strangewaies and now Reger, being the Lieutenanus men allo, were to executed, nor for for much as were haue read, artigued) not long after received the reward of their fience at the fame place. (61) Luttice thus took hold at last of Perkin Arbecks, on whom, the Prouerbe which faith, that	whereofin London there are fail to haue died about thrite thouland. The King and Queene remous to Callain in Mayand seturned in Long. The maine bulines was to reuiew and ratific the flate of amity, and negociations, between the English and the Duke of Burgandier Inbiects. Sinne allo was burnt, and being new builede, called Riemand; for which and the like, it will be fitteft to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd.Utrg.		Lady (as for haue written) was laid in hed been		
R.Reg. 15. And the second of	king on his death that the Jame was true, and oder-went his punishment with patience. **pal-valued**. **pal-va	thirtic thouland. The King and Queene remove to Callais in May and returned in Inne. The maine bulines was to retieve and statific the flate of amity, and negociations, betweene the English and the Dake of English fibitics. Sime allo was burnt, and being new builded, called Richmund; for which and the like, it will be futefit to have recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Pohd.Ung.	4.1			
von tertito the te	nder-went his punifilment with patience. **psd- **Pslemet*, and Thomas Affrosod* (being two of **psc- **ps	to Calais in Mayand returned in Inne. The maine bufines was to retiev and ratife the flate of amity, and negociations, betweene the English and the Duke of Burgundies fubicets. Sime allo was burnt, and being new builded, called Richmund; for which and the like, it will be fitted to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd.Ung.			I will objected as an incontrenience That Land	
termination of the Last Company of the Last Earle of the Company o	r Elemet, and Thomass Affrond (being two of the conflictators, for the other two, Strangermaies and ang Roger, being the Licutenants men alio, were occessed, or for for much as wee haue read, artigated) not long after receitued the reward of their filtene at the lame place. (61) Luthice thus tooke hold at last of Perkin Arbeets, on whom, the Prouerbe which faith, that	*bulines was to reulew and ratific the flate of amity, and negociations, betweene the English and the Duke of Europanites fublices. Shine allo was burnt, and being new builded, called Riehmund; for which and the like, it will be fitteft to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Pelyd.Utrg.		fummation, in regard of the Princes greene ef		Scotiff
the Land of Market Control of State of Control of Contr	ne configurators, for the other two, strange-mine and nag Reger, being the Lieucenans men allo, were on executed, nor for fo much as wee haue read, arguned) not long after received the reward of their frence at the fame place. (61) Luftice thus took hold at laft of Perkin Arbecks, on whom, the Prouerbe which faith, that	and negociations, betweene the English and the Duke of Burgundies fubicies. Skine allo was burnt, and being new builded, called Richmund; for which and the like, it will be fitteff to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.	* Polyd.Utrg.		of body; but others alleadge many argument		
Lo nor rain of nor rain of nor rain of nor nor rain of nor nor rain of nor nor rain of nor nor rain of nor nor rain of nor nor rain of nor nor nor nor nor nor nor nor nor nor	ang Roger, being the Licutenants men allo, were contexectured, nor for so much as wee haue read, arigined) not long after received the reward of their fience at the same place. (61) Lustice thus rooke hold at last of Perkin Furbecke, on whom, the Prouerbe which saith, that	of Burgundies subicets. Skine also was burnt, and being new builded, called Richmund; for which and the like, it will be fittest to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.			proue that matrimonial performance was betw the, howfoeuer her felf, (when that afterward ca	faid, King Henry made this answere What if it for	
no raid off off off off off off off off off of	ot executed, nor for so much as wer have read, ar- igned) not long after received the reward of their frence at the same place. (61) Iustice thus tooke hold at last of Perkin Varbecke, on whom, the Proverbe which saith, that	being new builded, called Richmund; for which and the like, it will be fitteft to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.	i i	*la,States A	the, howfoeuer her felf, (when that afferment on		odfor- frere to anob
rai off off off off off off off off off of	igned) not long after received the reward of their fience at the same place. (61) Iustice thus tooke hold at last of Perkin Varbecke, on whom, the Proverbe which saith, that	the like, it will be fitteft to haue recourse to vulgar Annals.		-10,51005 A	in question)*appealed to the conscience of K. He	me bid) I fee it will come to paffe, that our Kingdom	
off off W W P P P P P P P P P P P P P P P P P	ffence at the same place. (61) Instice thus tooke hold at last of Perkin Varbecke, on whom, the Prouerbe which saith, that	Annals.	1		the eight (her second husband) if hee found her		accef- Scotland.
Protection of the control of the con	(61) Iustice thus tooke hold at last of Perkin				a maide. But Prince Arthur enjoyed his marri		
Process Armal.	arbecke, on whom, the Prouerbe which faith, that		4 D - car	Prince Arti	avery short while, for in Aprill following hee d		oft mai
E Ente of Favilet rules of the Control of the Contr		(62) The Coast of State now seeming clearesfrom al thickning weather, Ferdinando and I fabella King &	An Pana	dicth.	at Ludion, being under fixteene yeeres of age: bei		
e Earle of for all all all are resident ruined characters of factors denoted by the control of t	ride is the V fber of fbame, was worthily verified. Nei-	Queen of Spain, according to the points of agreement	An. Keg.17.		a Prince, in whose youth the lights of all noble v		
e Earle of affine privilege residence of a limited regions considered and his factory of a constant of the con	her could the world accuse King Hemie for his	because a share and Vine The			tues did cleerely beginne to finne. His aptneffe		
e Earle of all all are respectively acid. chem are acid. who acid. so of of acid. so of of acid. so of acid.	eath, vnleffe it were, for that he had not hanged him	betweene them and King Henry, concerning their fourth daughter the Lady Katherine (borne at Aleala	Theres w.		learn was almost incredible, for (by the report of		orefa.
e Entle of rwitely ruined prejon con- acie. will fact to be of of of accordance. Sour Annal. (accordance)	boner, but suffered him to live till hee had drawne	de Finari or Complatum) fent her royally appointed	therine of Seaine	* Bern. Andr.	* Mafter) hee had either learned without booke,		
E Ende of all all and accie. Accie.	fter him a greater ruine in Warwicks person, then in	in a goodly Flore to England of one of Citilian and	therine of Spaine landed in Eng-		otherwise studiously turned and revoluted with I		
micher unined chemicacie. Profess con- in facie. With fact to be of of of (acc min face min	Il the former tragedies. For this Earle being a	in a goodly Flete to England, there to fulfill in per- fon, what hitherto had been e onely treated of, who	land, Poled, Vers in				
hinacie. hinacie. whin fact to be of accordance.	hiefe Prince of the blood, and next heire Male of	after many difficulties tooke land at * Plimouth in	Hening.	170.00		land. With this answere and other instructions	the
factor of of of of of of of of of of of of of	is house to the Crowne of England, (a crime of	October. Ferdinando her father was the fonne of lehn	*Add. to Fab.	Prince Arthubookes and le	etrie, Homer, Virgil, Lucan, Quid, Siline Plante		
factor densels. (4	hich his birth onely made him ontly and nor any	King of Arragon and Sicilia, and although he was vn-		aing.	and Terence: In Oratorie: Tullies Offices, Epifile	afterward returned into England with full auth	loris
of accordance of the control of the	ict of his) being thus charged to have given affent	learned, as being brought vp among armes and			Paradoxes and Quintilian. In Historie, Thueydiden		
of of accommendation of accomm	Perkins plot of elcape, he was publikely arraigned	fouldiers, yet by ofing the familiarity of wilemen he also			Liute, Cafars Commentaries, Suctonius, Taction Di	upon enfued the before faid publishment of a	affir-
of of of of according to the control of the control	etore the Earle of Oxford (then High Steward)	became very wife, and proued that great Prince which			Liuie, Cafars Commentaries, Suetonius, Tacitus, Pl nius, Valerius Maximus, Saluft, Eufebius. Wherei wee haue beene particular to Genetic allowers.		
ot accordingly for an fee	England) by the name of Edward Plantaginet Forle	first in these latter times recalled the old glorie of			wee haue beene particular, to figuifie what At	in this agreement: That no Englishman should en	
pr	Warmicke, and indired for minding to have escaped	Spaine, and reared it to fuch an envious magnitude,			thors were then thought fitte to bee elementary an		
m pr an fec	as they [and) out of the Tower, and confequently	as that the lealousie thereof hath bred no small quar-			rudimentall vnto Princes; and by their example, t		ire.
pr an fee	cording to the dreadfull licence of inferences as	rels in Christendome. For by his marriage with I-			all of Noble or gentle birth, whole superficiall bold		io.
pr an fec	iong our English pleaders in cases of death) to de-	fabella, (fole fifter and heire to Heary the fourth King			neffe in books in these frothy dayes, is become most		
fee	riue King Henry of his royall Crowne and dignity,	of Castile and Leon,) he raigned in right of his wife,				(65) But ere the young Lady her felfe was co	On-
fee	nd to vitting the Title and forgeraigns office man	and iointly with her, oner those two Kingdomes and					
	cuting their bloody Poetry with the like Gnaning.	their appurtenances, who together (faith Marineus	Res admirabiles		(64) But before the vntime! y expiration of this	I college their mother a	16 MU.K.CZ. 18.
fa		of Sicilia) did admirable things and workes most holy.	& opera Sandifii.	A.D. 150	great hope of England, King Henry weary of warred	Queene Elizabeth, as shee lay in Child-bed with	nin King Hemya
e Earle con-	alhion. The Earle doubly betraied, first by the fer-	They * reconcred the hore City and Kingdome of	* Franc. Taraphs.	An.Reg. 1	7. and tumults, and delirous to lay the beginnings of	the Tower of London. The King to repaire his mi	Middower, and
		They * recourred the huge Ciry and Kingdome of Granada, and part of Andaluzia from the Moores, af-	de Reg. Hifp.		a long peace by most inward friendship with all his	with fresh consolations, in advancing his onely	rea created Prince
ement. Do	crivations who were put about him . confesser !	ter they had beene in violent possession thereof fe-	1		great neighbours, had concluded a match betweene	Queene Elizabeth, as fine lay in Child-bed wirt the Tower of London. The King to repaire his mi with fresh confolations, in aduancing his onely in maining sounce, Henry Duke of Yorke, created his sindayed Deirocky.	im of Wales,
		uen hundreth and fourescore veeres, and haning	The briefe of	PT	Margaret his eldeft daughter, and James the fourth		
1 K	lings mercie: that is: offered up his head to be a	purged thole places from the filth of Mahamets fil-	Ferdinandos and	*The cotract be tweene lames	the allerance whereof was nul		
1 111	appetre toundation of King Henries farther pur.	perhitions, built Churches to the honour of Ielus	Habellas greatest	King of Scots an	listed in the February next before Prince Arthurs		
l Di	oles; for lentence of death was thereupon pro-	Christ, by occasion whereof Ferdinanda was forma-		King of Scots and Lady Margaret published	death at Paules Croffe; in reloycement whereof,	Prince, espoused some after (*though with muc	
100	founced as against a Traitour. This one practile	med the Catholike King. The walles of the Citie of	1		Te Deum was fung, and other fignes of publike in	reluctation) the Lady Katherine his elder brothe	
110	eemes tumcient, it not to call vnon Henrythe Ti-	Granaga at the time of the intrender, which (after	1 1	*10b.Stow Annal	declared. The * Bishoppe of Rose faith should	widdow, * vpon the five and twentieth of June,	
[2]	le of a brewd and perillausman verto raile a doube	about tenne yeeres warres) was by Voahdelie King		in lag.4.	Te Deum was fung, and other figues of publike ioy L declared. The *Bishoppe of Rese faith, that the Earle of Bothweld did openly handraft, or espoule the laid faire Lady, in the name of Figure services.	the Bishoppe of Salisburies house in Fleetstreet. An	
		thereof made to Ferdinando and If shells had * swelve	" Zue.Merin.		faid faire Lady, in the name of King Iames at Pauls	in this wife, by prouiding so worthy a wife for him	
ti	the then Ferdinando Kinz of Spaine, vpon whom (laith that Authour) he did hand somely bestow the ensite of the	miles in compalle and in the fame tureline Cores	Sic.Lib.so.		Croffe, being Saint Paules day. This contract was		
ti	that Authour) he did hand somely bestow the enuie of the	and a thouland towres enclosing feuen Hilles cone-					
dwerd Earle of		red with building, innumerable people, and inefti-			the storme of warrehad (by mediation as hef-		
armicke left 11	the therefore of this Prince (according to rigour of	mable riches, & the Spanish forces at this conquest			the storme of warrehad (by mediation as before faid) beene throughly laid betweene the two sister.	to the accomplishment of affinity with Scotland, her	
min : munage. 10	lawe / Denig tilusin his bower. the King centiv nor	were about 12000. Horfe, & one hundred thou and	1				
	doned all the names but the lotte of his head which	toot. The faid King and Queene, belides many o-	1			ter for her iourney,& himfelf in person travelled fro	his daughter the
10	was cut off vpona icattold at Tower-hill, and then (a-	ther their mighty actions, didallo first discouer . A.	1		the Garrison of Norham Caffile to iffue, who in the	Richmund as farre with her as Colemeston beside Nor-	on the way to
		merica by Christopher Columbus, & thereby broughe a			bickering flew and hurt fome of them and drawer	thampton, where his mother the Counteffe lay: after	Scotland.
10		whole new world to the notice of Christendom. 1/4-	Mabella Queene	*Pale 2	the Garmon of Appearant Lattice of fine, who in the bickering flew and hurrfome of them, and droue the rest away. King * Iamer expostulates this violence very sharply by letters with King Hemry, who returned most fatisfactory answers. Richard Fox Bishop of Durbany (whose the men and Cash) letters.		
IOB.STOW Annal	the Chappel of the Tower or in any other common	bella her left, descended of the blood roial of England	of Speine deicen-	"Polyd. Dirg. Epife.Roff.	very sharply by letters with King Henry		
SET Pr.B. MS.	the Chappel of the Tower, or in any other common place, but at * Billiam Ly his Anceftors. Jealous	being daughter of John the second King of Callila &	ded from our		ned moft farisfactory answers Richard Paris		1 1
11	in the Chappel of the Tower, or in any other common place, but at * Biffam by his Anceftors. I calous (faith * one) the King was ouer the greatness of his	Leon, fon of Hemie the third King of Caffile and Leon,	Edward the 3. King of England Antes, Nebrif.		of Durham (whose the men and Castell were) wrote		
19	inducting gradious ratious; his body was not buried in the Chappel of the Tower, or in any other common place, but at * Bifbam by his Ancestors. Icalous (faith * one) the King was ouer the greatness of his Nobilitie, as remembring how himselfe was fer you.	and of Katherine his wife (danohrer of * 1 alex Dake			alfo many depressed the and Canch were wrote		
18	inducting gratious ratiour) his body was not buried in the Chappel of the Tower, or in any other common place, burat * Biftom by his Anceftors. Icalous (faith * one) the King was ouer the greatnes of his Nobilitie, as remembring how himfelfe was fer vp; and much more did this humour energie in him and much more did this humour energie in him	of Lancafter, third sonne of our Edward the third	Decad Lib.I.			appointed to that feruice; a great company of Lords Knights, Equiers, & men of Marke arranding of	11
15	in the Chappel of the Tower, orin any other cosmon place, but at * Bifam by his Anceftors. I calous flith no one) the King was ouer the greatnes of his Nobilitie, as remembring how himfelfe was fet vp; and much more did this humour encreafe in him after the had conflicted with fuch Idols and Countries.					Knights, Equiers, & men of Marke attending them	The Earle of
	inducting gratious ratiour) his body was not buried in the Chappel of the Tower, or in any other common place, burat * Biftom by his Anceftors. Icalous (faith * one) the King was ouer the greatnes of his Nobilitie, as remembring how himfelfe was fer vp; and much more did this humour energie in him and much more did this humour energie in him	of triumphall and neuer-dying memorie) was a I a-			end inclined, and having fome marrers off		
	in the Chappel of the Tower, orin any other cosmon place, but at * Bifam by his Anceftors. I calous flith no one) the King was ouer the greatnes of his Nobilitie, as remembring how himfelfe was fet vp; and much more did this humour encreafe in him after the had conflicted with fuch Idols and Countries.	oftriumphall and neuer-dying memorie) was a La- die] !		end inclined, and having some matters of farre grea- ter moment to impart, desired the Bishops presence	as farre as Berwicke, At S, Lamberts Church in Lamer Moore within Scotland, the King attended by the	deliuers herro

yvvv2 princi-

*Sir F. B. MS

The foule pra-ctifes vied to

empouerith the

* Cor. Terit.

Polyd. Verg.

LIQ.Stow Aun:

Chap. 20 Henry VIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 57. of the prison of his flesh. Before he departed, * well

borne at Winchester the twentith day of Septemdisposed persons tendering the health of his soule, did both ber, the yeere of Grace, one thouland fourchuuin fermon , and otherwise, informe him of the exclamadred eighty lixe, and the second of his Fathers tions against informers; Wherefore he of his bleffed raigne. In whose fifth yeere he was created Prince disposition, granted to all men generall pardons, cerof Wales, Duke of Cornewall and Earie of Chester, done granted by taune onely excepted. In his life time hee founded and at the age of fifteene yeeres, one month and the goodly Hospitall of the Sausy, built fixe religitwenty fine daies, vpon the foureteenth of Noous Houses for Franciscan Friers, three of them for nember, in the yeers of our Lord, one thousand Observants, and the other three for Conventuals. Of fiue hundred and one, espoused the Lady Katherine his building also was Richmund Pallace, and that daughter to Ferdinando King of Spaine, shee being most beautifull peece, the Chappell at Westminster, then about eighteene yeeres of age, in the Cathethe one the place of his death, and the other of his drall Church of Saint Paul, London; and presentburiall: which formes of more curious and exquily sent into Wales the better to gouerne that princifire building, he and Bishoppe Foxe, first (as is repality by his owne Presence, enjoyed his marriage ported) learned in France, and thence brought with bed onely foure moneths and ninteene daies, dethem into England. He died about the age of fiftie Io.Stow Amal. The yeer of his two yeeres, vpon the two and twentieth of * April parting this life at Ludlow the second of Aprill, the geere of our Lord, one thousand fine hundred and having raigned twenty three yeeres and eight two, of his Fathers raigne scuenteene, and of his moneths. Aright noble, wife, victorious and reowne age fifteene yeeres, fixe moneths and thirnowed King, and one whose piety would have teene daies. His body with all due funerall fobeene farre more eminent, then all his other ver-

tues, if from the beginning the malignant quality of the times, would have permitted him to live in quiet. He specially honoured the remembrance of that Saint-like Man, Henry the fixth, the founder of his Family, and Propheticall fore-teller of that fortune which now hee died feifed of, whom also want of pay. See more Supra in Edward 4. his principall glories, that three Popes, Alexander \$. 79-8280. "Addit.to Fab. the lixth, Pius the third, and Iulius the second, did King Henry falu-ted Defenfor of Christs Church

by three Popes.

he laboured to haue * Canonized for a Saint, but that Pope Iulio heldthathonour at two high a rate. It is reckoned by some writers * of that age among in their feuerall times, with authority and consent of the Cardinals, elect and chose him for chiefe defensor of Christs Church, before all other Christian Princes. In his last will and Testament, after the disposition of his soule and body, hee denised and willed Restitution should bee made of all such moneis. as had uniustly beene leuted by his Officers. A most pious and truly Christian care, wherby also appeareth, that hee hoped the wrongs done under him were not so enormous nor innumerable, but that they might fall within the possibility of redresse. The description of his whole man, is had in the beginning of his life, and the course thereof described in Lis Actions. There remaine of his wildome many effects, and those as his fame likely to continue for

His Wife.

(71) Elizabeth the first Childe Legitimate, and eldest daughter of King Edward the fourth, was at the age of ninetcene vpon the eighteenth of Ianuarie and yeere of Christ Iesus, 1485. married vnto King Henrythe feuenth, whereby was vnited the long contending Families of Lancaster and Torke, and the Roses red and White joined into one, to the greatioy of the English Subjects. Shee was crowned at Westminster vpon the fine and twentieth of Nouember, the third of her husbands Raigne, and of Grace 1487. Shee was his wife eighteene yeeres and twenty foure daies, and died in childebed in the Tower of London, the eleventh of February, euen the day of her owne Natiuity, the eighteenth of her husbands Raigne, and yeere of our Saluation, 1503. and is buried at Westminfer in the most magnificent Chappell and rich Monument of Copper and gilt where thee with her husband lie entombed.

His Iffue.

(72) Arthur the eldeft sonne of King Henrie the scauenth and of Queene Elizabeth his wife was

lemnities, was buried in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Maries in Worcester, where, in the South fide of the Quire he remaineth entombed in Touch, or lette, without any remembrance of him by

(73) Hemie the second sonne of King Hemie the seuenth and of Queene Elizabeth was borne at Greenwich in the Countie of Kent, the two and twentieth of June, in the yeere of Grace, one thous fand foure hundred ninery and one, being the fewenth of his Fathers raigne. In his Infancy he was created Duke of Yorke and Marshall of England, and forrained up in his youth to literature as hee was rightly accounted the best learned Prince in Europe, and by the death of his brother fucceeded his Father in all his Dominions; whose Raigne

and Acts are presently to be related. (74) Edmund the third sonne of King Henry and of Queene Elizabeth, was borne in the yeere of Christ, one thousand foure hundred ninetie fine, and in his young yeeres was created Duke of Sommerset, which Title hee no long time enjoyed, being taken away by death at Bishops Hatfield be-fore hee attained fully to fine yeeres of age, the yeere of Grace, one thousand foure hundred ninetie and fiue, and fifteenth of his Fathers Raigne, and his body lieth interred at Saint Peters in West.

(75) Margaret the eldest daughter of King Henrie and of Lady Elizabeth his Queene, was born the nine and twentieth day of Nouember the yeere of Christ 1489 and fifth of her fathers raigne; slice at the age of foureteene was married vnto lames the fourth King of Scotland, the yeere of our Lord one thousand fine hundred and three, vnto whom shee bare Iames the fifth, Arthur and Alexander and a Daughter : which last three, died all of them young ; and after the death of King lames (being flaine at Flodden Field in fight against the Engelilh,) shee was remarried vnto Archibald Douglas Earle of Angaisse, in the yeere of our Lord, one thousand fine hundred and foureteene, vnto whom shee bare Margaret, afterward espoused vnto Mathen Earle of Lennox, Father by her of the Lord Henrie, who died at the age of nine moneths, and yeth interred in the vppcr ende of the Chancell in the Parish Church of Stepney neere London, vpon

whole Graue is engrauen in braffe, as followeth: Heere lieth Henry Steward Lord Darle of the age of three quarters of a yeere, late Sonne and Heire of Mathew Steward Earle of Lennouse and Lady Margaret his wife, which Hemie deceased the XXV III. day of November in the yeere of our Lord God. I 545. Whofe Soule Iesus perdon.

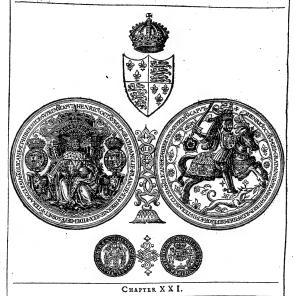
Her second sonne was Henrie Lord Dernley a Noble Prince; and reputed for person one of the goodliest Ttitt 2

72	Henrie VIJ. THE SVCCESSION OF Monarch 57.	Book.9
	Gentlemen of Europe, who married Marie Queene of sceiland, the royall Parents of the most roial Mo- narch Lames the flit King of great Britanes, and of the Britaine World. And her third some was Char- let Eatle of Lennes Euther vust Lady Arbella. (75) Elexabeth the second daughter of King Henry and Lapy Hizabeth bits Queene was borne the second day of Ind., one thousand foure hundred ninety two, and died the sourcement of Seymber and yeere of Christ, one thousand foure hundred ninetie fine, and is interred at Vielminster. (77) Mary the third biossome of the Imperial)	
	•	
		1,1
	HENRY	

Chap. 21. Henrie VIII. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 58.

Hemp VIII. HENRIE THE EIGHT OF THAT NAME, KING OF ENGLAND, FRANCE,

AND IRELAND, DEFENDER OF THE FAITH, &c. THE FIFTIE EIGHT MONAR CHOFTHE ENGLISH, HIS RAIGNE, ACTS, WIVES, AND ISSVE



A.D. 1500.



He rich and wife King Henry the feuenth) gone (as is faid) the way of all flesh, his sonne bearing the same name, a most magnanimous & heroical Prince, succeded in his Throne over al his domi. nions, as the only true heir

Duke of Torkes, at Cwelley eetes (lus prother decea-fied) Prince Offwales, and act eighteen became fole Monarch of the land, when at welphinifer youn Sonday the twenty fit fol I not, eue the fethical of Saint I den Baptiff, and yeere of Christ I felius, 1509, the with his beauteous Queene Katherine resultations are the their Crowns at the hands of William it arkson Archivnto the Crowne by both the houses of Lancaster and Torke. His birth was at Greenwich in the yeere of Grace, 1491. the twentieth bishoppe of Canterbury, no Prince giuing better hopes vnto inflice, or feeking the wealth of his sub-iects more then himselfe.

(2) His Counsellors he chose of the grauest ditwo of June: and his youth so trained vp in literature, that he was accounted the most learned Prince of all Christendome, induced with parts most befitting a King, both in lineaments of body, and libera-

flourishing age, as hauing not attained vnto nineteen at his fathers death. In his infancy hee was created Duke of Yorke; at twelve yeeres (his brother decea-

lity of minde, belides his ripe knowledge in politicke affaires, and was made the more agreeable to the affections of men, by the confideration of his

the Banner of Saint George, and tooke the oath of al-

leagiance of all the French Citizens, to acknowledge Termin wonne

King Hemytheir supreme Lord: This done, the and the Crezens

King as a Conquerour entreth Termine, fent thence Henry.

Dailey,

Empfort

Ish.Stow.

Holinfb.

Turnay(most dangerously performed) was manife-

fled vpon them that underwent his heavy hand : for

at Tilt hee bare downe a man at Armes both horfe

(hap. 21 Henry VIII. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 58. 755 their Ordinance, dismounted the Turrets, cast hoaft had taken the advantage of the ground: vnto downe the walles, filled up the dirches, and fired the Towne, excepting onely the Cathedrall Church King Iames, Thomas Earle of Surrey fent Bouge Croffea Purseuantat Armes, with proffer of batand Bifhops Pallace. tell to bee done vpon Friday the ninth of Septem-(10) Then was the fiege removed vnto Turnar: Lord Howard t dw. H.II. Turney beficged by K. Henry. ber, if so it pleased his Highnesse, who withall profereth batte! about which City King Henry commanded divers carryed this meffage from the L.Admirall, that he Trenches to bee cast, and placed his Ordinance to was come in person to instific his Act against andrew fuch advantage, that none might enter in, or come Barton, and would abide the last drop of his bloud in out of the same. Into this Towne a great number the Vant-gard of the field. of the French from the Countries adjoining had (14) King lames most readily accepted the offer, lately fled, relying much vpon the ftrength and fafery of the place, which indeed had euer beene and by his Herauld Hay fent the Earle word, that if he were as then in Edenbrough, yet would hee most accounted to inuncible, that this fentence was engladly come to fulfill his defire; and withall fent The firength of graued ouer one of the gates. I annes ton me a perden his letters for the just occasions given him to invade ton pucellage, thou hast never lost thy maiden-head: England as hee did. The day approached, and the Notwithstanding, it was yeelded vp vnto Hemy Scots keeping the higher ground, the Earle marched vpward along the riner, and by two Bridges with ten thousand pounds sterling for the Citizens redemption, who to the number of fourescore thoupaffed ouer with his hoaft, making ftill forward. fand, then tooke their oathes to become his true as thogh he ment either to have taken into Scotland. Subjects, and foure of their principall bare up the or elfe to circumuent K. Iames his returne, which Canopie vnder which the King in triumph-wife enhee perceining, hafted downe the hill, putting from Octob.2. tred, having born before him his sword, axe, speare, him his horse, raised his roial! Standard, and as a and other abiliments of warre, euery Citizen holmost valiant Chieferaine encouraged his Souldiers ding a staffe-Torch for his light. The safe keeping to the fight. of this City, the King committed to Sir Edward Poi-(15) The Scotish Ordinance discharged from a-The fight begun, nings Knight of the Order of the Garter, whom hee boue, ouershot the English with very small damthere made his Lieutenant, and ordained Thomas mage, and the ground of no difficult ascent, gaue Wolfer his Almoner the Bishoppe of Turnay. The them the easier accesse, so that Sir Edmund Howard, yeere now ipent, and leafon wifit for the fielde, a who lead a wing to the Vant-gard (whereof his brofurcease from warre was determined vntill the next ther the Admirall was Captain) got almost to the Paulsu Journ spring; whereupon all were shipped for England height; against whom the Earles of Lennex and Arwith full payment, and praise, but Terwin and gile, with their Battels of Speares on foot fo vio-Turnay stucke heavily vpon the French mens lently encountred, that they beat down, and brake The Scots at the hearts, the wing of the English, wherein many were slaine, (11) King Lewis thus endammaged in his owner and the horsemen disbanded, and pur to flight; but beat the Suglife Dominions, thought it best policy to pay like for presently recalled, iouncd themselves againe to the Joh, Leffy. like, to which end at the first attempts against Tergreat battell, which by this time had attained to the wine hee folicited I ames the fourth of that name, toppe of the hill. King Iames that saw this first brunt performed, made full account that the day King of Scotland (though brother by marriage vnto King Henry of England) to disturbe the peace of was his owne, supposing verily the English had his Subjects, that so hee might bee drawne out of fled, and therefore most valiantly he aduanced for-France; which Iames for his part put prefently in ward, not staying for the reregard to second his K. Iames of Scot practife:for writing his letters to Henry in the French The barrels inic battel, and encountring the Earles Battalion, a bloothe French Kings behalfe, charged him with breach of Truce, dy fight was performed, with the loffe and life of King. Edw.Hal. Holinfb. See the conte both in the case of his Scots slaine at the sea as also many a man: but strength neere spent, and the against his Confederates the Duke of Gelder, and Scotish somewhat dissoyned, through force of a King of France, against which last he desired him to great shore of arrowes falling among them; Sir of this letter in delift, otherwise hee should bee forced to reuenge Joh Leffie Bifbe Edward Stanley having three bands referred for the Ich. Leftic Bisho of Roffe, dated at Edenbrough the twenty fixt of Isly in A.D. 15:3. the Frenches wrongs upon his English : and to give like purpose, with a fresh onser invaded the open letters of Mart to recouer the loffes of his Subfides of the enemy, whose force was so violent, that the Scots no longer were able to fland, but tooke (12) King Henrya Prince of a Maiesticall spirite, most highly offended at these his brothers requests, downe the hill vnto flight, which the Earles of Len-The Scots put to nox and Argile perceining, did their beft to flay them, and threates, was so farre overgone with fury and and fighting most valiantly themselves were slain in Lions terrified K.Hewies answeres. rage, that Lions King at Armes the bringer, was the same place. thereby fomewhat daunted at his present answere, (16) King James then perceiuing the wings of which he defired might be fent in writing, refufing his Battell distressed and gone, and that the enemy See the contents of this letter in Holis/hed, dated from the to carry in words his reply to his Soueraigne. This began to enclose him about ; with a flour resolution Heralds wife and weighty request, was forthwith The valiant co incouraged his men, willing the to regard the pergranted, and letters framed to King Iames demands, fon of their King, their own honor, their valiant An-Campe at the answering those imputations with rough and round ceftors, and now their present imploiments; that fiege of Terwin the 12 of August words, which notwithstanding hee neuer read or their blood might bee bought deare to the English, A,D,1513. faw, being flaine in the battell of Flodden, before and the Scotish valours recorded for euer in the vothat Lions could come to deliuer the fame. lumes of fame for this their one daies work; & there-(13) For James King of Scots preparing for war, upon rushing among the thickest began a most eager had in the meane while entred the borders, and with & bloody battel, and piercing through with a ftrong Lames King of his Ordinance battered and wonne the Castell of hand went so far, that he had almost overthrown the Norham; making still forward vpon the English. A. Earles Standard: thus busied in doubtfull chance, gainst whom Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey made the Lord Howard and Sir Edward Stanley having difthe Kings Lieutenant of the North, at his going incomfitted the enemy in cither wing, returned in the face of the maine battell, and the Lord Dacres with to France, affembled an Army of twenty fixe thoufand ftrong, vnto whom came his sonne the Lord his Horse-mencame vpon their backes, so that the Admirall of England, with a great supply of good Storish were forced to fight in a round compasse, but fouldiers well appointed for warre. The Earle from nant maketh tobeing oper-laid, the Kings Standard was ftrucken Neweastell came vnto the water of Till, and pitched downe, and himfelfe most valiantly fighting slaine his battell belides a little Towne called Brankeston, in the middest of his enemies: with whom died sort fame with three Bishops, whereof one was Alexander Archbiunder Flodden hill, a mountaine lying in the North 17-Lords. of Northumberland, betwixt the rivers of Till and thop of Saint Andrewes the Kings base sonne, two Tweed, where voon a rifing banke, the Scottish Abbots, twelue Earles, and feuenteene Lords,

Xxxxx

750	namie viij. THE SVCC	ESSION OF Monarch 58.	Book.	·9	Tienne VIII. ENGLANDS	MONARCHS. Monarch 58.	757
•	Knights and Gentlemen a great number in all about	of Councel given him the Title ChristiansSimo	in Confil.Late		for the Schoolemaster no sooner was mounted into	of an equal, hee obtained the purse with the broade	
;	eight thouland, and almost as many taken prisoners	which were received with great thanks, and folemn	-		the Chancellorshippe of England, but that hee laid		
1	faith Paulus Ionius.	I ties. I ne rrench kings delire was to marry the fair	1 /		his command upon Paulet, and retained him as Pri-	emoyed long before the death of King Henry the	
1	(17) The next day when the Scouts had found the field cleared of enemies, and the English bussed	Lady Mary, whole dowrie hee affigued to bee thirty			foner in the Middle Temple the space of 6. yeeres:	leachth, and was made Lord (hancelone in his	à
ì	to burie their dead : the body of King lames was	two thouland Crownes by yeere, during her natural		IXt	but in the meane time Marquesse Dorses dying, left wolfeyer pillar of hope altogether vnpolished, and	roome; to that belies the purfe and mace of that	+1
	found flaincamong the reft, haning received many	life, couenanting further to pay vnto King Hem- her brother, the fumme of one hundred thouland	Lady Mary.	nd l	the base thereof it selfe vnsetled vpon any firme	monoutable Office, nee had two Croffee and two	i 1
1	bloody wounds, and most of them deadly : for his	Crownesannually for fine yeeres continuance.	1		ground . fo that Welfey now fought his fortune in		
1	i liges were imicke thicke with tharpe arrowes his	(21) Peace thus concluded, the Lady Marie with	Lady Mere 6		France; who comming to Calleis, became feruant	that were to bee found in the Realme. To the bet-	1
1	necke cut into the middelt, and his left hand in two				to Sir Iohn Naphant the Treasurer of that Towne.	ter maintenance of his chargeable estate, the King bestowed on him the Bishopricke of Winchester, and	
King Jawer bod embalmed and		Duke of Norfolke, the Marquesse Dorset, and the	:		where hee carried himselfe with so great discretion.	in Commendam the Abbey of Saint Albanes, and	.1
buried at shine.	standing he was descried, and knowne by the Lord	Earle of Sausbury, Deing her chief conductors, who is	• 1		as shortly his master preferred him to the King.	with them nee new in Farme, the Rithannicker of	Tab. Stere
1	Dates and others to bee the King: and thereupon his body bowelled, embalmed, and wrapped in	I liedt nad not balled two leagues at Neas but that	- 1	Wolfey intertain	(24) This Scholler having thus caft Anchor at		
1	lead, was folemnely brought vnto the Monastery	a sudden tempest arose, and so violently raised the waves, as their Ships were severed each from others		i the state of	Court, the hauen of hope, was more then double diligent in the Kings eye, and very feruiceable also	gers incumbents, not reliding in the Realm, lo that	3 Yerke.
į.	of Shine in Surrey, where no doubt it was honoura-	fome into Flaunders, some into Callis, and hers with			both to Doctor Fox Bishoppe of Winehester, Secreta-	gers incumbents, not refiding in the Realm, fo that now feeming a monfter with feuen heads, and each of them crowned with the Miter of a Bithonnes, let	4 Wincheffer.
i	Dly enterred: but at the diffolution of that House.	I RICHE CHIECHIEV STRICKE IN at Rullen where by	I adv Mem lo		ry, and Lord Prinie Seale, as also to Sir Thomas	of them crowned with the Mitter of a Bishoppe; let	6 Werteller.
	In the daies of King Edward the fixth, it was (as al-	Doates her traine was landed, and her felfe horne to	ded at Bullen.		Louell Master of the Wardes, and Constable of the Tow-	vs thus leaue him dandled in Dame Fortunes lap, till surfetted with dalliance shee cast him from	
1	moltail other Monuments were) diffurbed of reft.	the more in the armes of a Knight. Thence with	i		er: but most of all vnto Fortune, that now fitted	thence,	4
1	and throwne into a wafte roome among old timber,	I EDITED IT I adves all their Dalfreis room and in anim Co.	1	Sleidens Com', l.6	occasion to make her selfe famous in this poore But-	1 cm P	
1	ftone and lead, which Iohn Stone the Relater faith, himselfe so saw: and further declareth (let him bee	Veluet, embroidered with gold, her selfe all in			cherssonne. For King Henry hauing vrgent busi-	Dered under his great nelle nothing (o mall for fort	[A.D. 1517.]
1 .	the Author) that the feruants of Launcelot Toung Gla-	Ciota of mucr, her nories and Charlore in Tilling	. 1	Wal/cy ferm to the	neffe with Maximilian the Emperour, fent this his		
1	I Herto the late Oncone being at China in now als	cloth of Gold, and Crimfon veluet fet with Gold-		Emperour,	Chaplen vnto him in Post, who posted againe before		
1	lingthe windowes, either voona foolish pleasure	fmiths worke, morelike an Angell then a humane	Take me		hee was thought to bee gone, and with al concluded fome points forgot in his directions, to the high	the English, openly in the markets kept from a Ci	The Part of
1	or demediate Lead, cut the head from the relt.	fmiths worke, morelike an Angell then a humane Creature, mette with King Lewis at Abuile, and there the ninth of October the marriage was solem-	ried vnto King		content of his Sourraigne Lord the King: for the	tize it the owne wife with his plate, yea, and pair with	apatent by titati-
John Ston Sur-	but imelling the (weet perfumes of the halmes cone)	Dized: where the French to gazed at the name			which hee bestowed vpon him the Deanrie of Lin-	a man pennance for killing an Englishman. Their	
usy of London in Criplegate Ward,	it to their Mafter, who opening the lead found ther-	Queenes beauty, as they could not cast their	I		coine, the worthicst promotion under the degree of	first were complained of in a Sermon at Saint Ma- rees Spittle, and afterwards assaulted, and much	
Ward,	I ill till Ficad of a man retaining tanone though the	cies woll acr attractive raies, nor the infirme	1		a Bishoppe: then was bee made the Kings Almo-	hurt done to their substance and houses, for which	
1	moisture were cleanedried vp, whose haire both of Head and Beard was redde, which after he had well	King bee lattified with any other object whileft		Wolfey a Priny Counfellour.	ner, and presently following one of the Priny Coun-	riotous offence Iohn Lincolne the onely infligator	
1	I VICWED, and a while kept, be caused to bee busied	fhee was in presence; for (so faith Guicehardine)	Guitthard.		cell; wherein his aduise was so wife, and his per-	was hanged; and foure hundred men boyes and e-	com.Grafien.
1	in Saint Michaels at Woodstreet London, the Church	hee gaue him felfe over to much to behold her most excellent beauty, not considering her young yeeres,	1		fwalions fo weighty, that hee was continually im-	leuen women led in ropes along the City in their	. 1
i		being not yet eighteene, with the unequality of his			ployed to be their expositor to the King, alwayes carrying a most speciall regard, to preferre his Ma-	thirts, and halters about their neckes to the Kinges	1 1
1	(18) Notwithstanding this faire tale of raba	owne expired; nor the constitution of his weake de-			iefties will howfocuer it went; fo that his mouth was	Hall at Westminster, where his Maiesty sitting vn-	
1	[51010 51 000 Lesby Dilliop of Rolleamrmeth, that if was]	take obay. For nauing beene licke before this his			the onely Organ that euer founded his pleasure,	der a cloath of effate, pardoned the offences to the great reloying of the Londoners.	1 1
1	neid for certaine, the hody thus tound may the hade of the				and freedome from troubles of all State affaires.	(29) But the loffe of Turney flicking fore vpon	1 1
1	Laird Bonehard then flain in the battel; and that K. Iames				(25) But warres having beene commenced be-	the ftomacke of the French King, hee fought to re-	A.D. 1519.
i	was seene alsue the same night at Kelso, whence bee passed unto I erusalem and there spent the rest of his dases in ho-		Lewis the Free		twixt England and France, and Turney loft from the	deeme it againe with money, and to that end fent	
	lisecontemplation: but how foeuer it is (laith he)he neuer	and then by his death left her to choose another	was dreitti.	Welfey made Bithoppe of	obedience of Lewes, King Henry gaue his Almoner	his Ambassadors into England, where it was con-	1 1
Isan Sleidan.		husband to her best liking, which shee shortly did in her second match.		Bithoppe of Turney, Lincolne,	the Bishopricke thereof, and changed his Deanery	cluded, that the City should bee deligered vnto	1 1
Phil. Comin.	Duke of Burgundy was in his Country after the Rattell of	(22) For thus left a francasia share and C		and Yorks	of Lincoln into the Bishopricke of the same Diocesse;	Frances Valors then King of France, paying for the	i I
1	NANZe: howbest his people held a naine animon that has	(22) For thus left a stranger in the French Court, and desirous to return e againe into England; King			and not long after set also the Miter of Yorke vpon Wolfeyes Wise-head: whereby hee became (as it	fame vnto Henry fixe hundred thouland Crownes	
1	escaped, and would againe shortly returne. This barrell				were) three Bishoppesat once, and now being Pri-	in twelue yeeres continuance, that is to fay, fifty	Turney delivered
1	was tought voon the ninth of September, the veere				mas Anglia, carried himselfe accordingly, by ere-	thousand Crownes a yeere, that the Duke of Alba- nie should be erecalled out of Scotland, and that the	vpon composi-
	1513. and is commonly called the battell of Floddon	of accident of France. I his Duke a gallant and of			cting his Croffe in the Kings Court; albeit it were	Daulphin should marry the Lady Mary King Hen-	
1 1	or Flodden Field: whence with victory, the Earle		Queene Mary		within the Iurifdiction of Canterbury, which feemed	ries young daughter, which marriage if so it hap-	1
Edward Hall,	Generall departed, with the embalmed Body of King Iames, whom hee presented vnto Queene Ka-	fied dimieste in the ele of her melring affactions	With Charles	, i	vnfufferable; the dignity of the Church held then	ned not to take effect at the veeres of confent then	Articles of
1	therine, who with the Gauntlet of the flaine King	as instructed decided into her tender heart .	Duke of Sufface		much by Precedency of place, and the giuing way	Turnsy should be redeliuered to the English; nei- ther was this forgotten, that the Cardinall should	agreement be-
1 1	fent the newes of the victorie vnto her Lord King			betwixt the	to inferiours, accounted the infringing of all religi- ous liberties; Wherefore William Archbishoppe	ther was this forgotten, that the Cardinall should	and K. Lewis
1	Henrie, then lying in his fiege before the Towne	for which cause, as was thought, hee raised him to the grace of a Duke; howsoeuer the Gemme thus		Archifhopoes of	of Canterbury found himselfe for eagreemed to have	receive a thousand markes yearly for the revenewes	
	Terwine,			Tories T	the Croffe of Yorke (which owed him obedience)ad-	of the laid bilhopricke, and vpon their Couenants	1
	(19) But as these his proceedings went prospe-	owne, by celebration of marriage before her non			panced with his, and that in his presence, for which	were hoflages for further affurance deliuered. (30) But peace much affected among Christian	1
The Flemmings fall off from king	roully forward, and his fame daily spread in further			1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	hee greatly checked the prefumption of this proud	Princes, and daily increased of most potent Estates,	- 1
fall off from king Hearig.	parts, fo the Flemmings (who hitherto had held fide with his failes) began to fal off fuddenly, & vpon the			{	Prelate.	was very much feared would worke alteration in	1
	occasion as followeth. It had beene concluded be-				(26) But Wolfey not wanting wherewithall to	the authority, abuse, and great riches of the Clergy.	ThePopean
	twist King Henrie the feuenth, and Philip King of	their nuptials. But her downie kept backe by the		R.Grafton.	mate him by the instigations of the Kings both of	if Kings might have leafure to looke into their own	enemy to Chri- ftian peace.
1	Spaine, that Charles his eldest some should marry				England and France; Obtained to bee made Priest,	charges at home. To busie their heads therefore	ftian peace,
Helin/h,psg.\$30.	Marie the younger daughter of the English King.	be related in place connenient. In the		##/cymade Car- dinall,	Cardinall, and Legatus de Latere, vnto whom Pope Leo sent a Cardinals hatte, with bulles of authori-	from all inspition or icalousies, Pope Lee the tenth	į.
itmio,pag.ego.	with a Princely Dowry agreed yoon, but thee being			dinali.	y in that behalfe, yet were these high Presents	denifed the meanes, by a preparation intended for	- 1
{	young, and not tenne veeres of age, and the Callelian				brought in no better a case, then in a mean budget,	the holy lands warres, a fubicatin flow very religi- ous, howfoeuer the former fuccesses had proued it	1
1 1	vnable to give afturance of her pention aftigned than				which seemeth somewhat disgracefull in the new	not pleasing to God, when to recour the City once	1
1	match went not forward during the life of her fa-	had their events in the Acts of this man, who with	Etaj. Ret.		Cardinals eye; wherefore hee commanded a stay	holy, and to build up that which Christ by prophe-	The warren for
1 1	ther, howbeit King Hemie her brother regarding greatly her honour, prouided for the marriage, and	The stangard together as Ning. It not before him		t t	to bee made of the bringers approach; and for the	fie had caft downe, as much Christian blond was I	ternjelem emplean !
1	fignified fo much to the Counfell of Flanders: who			The great fe-	greater honour to this honourable present, arrayed		ingto God
. !	dallied him off with many excuses. & lastly sent him	(23) His birth was at Ipfwich in the County of	Thomas Wolfey	lemnity in	nim in most costly silkes, beseeming so great an Am-	i laid to lagen the itones of their first building.	
1	word they could not receive her that yeare.	Suffolke, his parents poore, but of an honest report, and himselfea good Philosopher, very eloquent and full of his his his district.	his rifing.	lemnity in tectium of the b	paffador, who aduancing forward, hee caused to be encountred by a number of gallant Gentlewomen,	(31) To this end therefore three Legates were	1
A.D. 1514.	(20) This therefore gaue Lewis King of France			Cardinagnac, C	and a great affembly of Prelates upon Blacke-heath,	fent from the holy See of Rome, one into France, an-	Cardinali
1 7	occasion to hammer at a peace, and making Pope	Maudin Colledge, and his first preferment from the		l a	by whom hee was conducted with much honour		
	Leo his, they both together put it in practile, the			1	hrough the City of London, and his Present deline-	England, with whom was joyned Wolfer in Commif- tion, who hearing of the ragged retinue of his fellow	.egateinto
1	readier was Henry to liften thereunto, both for the	benefice in his gift, in regard that hee was tutor vn-	Marqueffe Dor-	re	ed at Westminster, attended by many mitred Bi-	Cardinall, fent there of red cloth vnto Calleis, to make	
Great fauoues	loue he bore to his fifter, and for the great regard he held of the Apostolike See, whence Iulius the se-		referrer.	l la	hoppes and Abbots, with a rich flew of Copes, as if	them meet followers of fo great a Lord; and Cam-	1
betwixt the	cond, and this Popes Predeceffor had lately fent him			it	thad been a Kings Coronation.	pius landed at Douer Wolfer caused the Townes tho-	1
Henric.	a Cappe of maintenance and fword, and by decree				(27) Thus got before Canterbury by his power	row which he should passe, to receive him with pro-	1
1		ther his deedes, whereor he had tuit caule to repent :		į L	egatiue, to weare now his hatte without controll	ceffion : and to being brought by the Gentility of	Í
		for		·	i	Kent	!
		-					

Kent vnto Black-heath neere vnto Greenewich, was The Hopourable there mette and received by the Duke of Norfolke, many Knights, but many more Prelates, where in a Tent of Cloth of Gold, he shifted himselfe into his Cardinall Roabes, which was edged about with most rich Ermine, and thence rode to London, in Katth. 21 o. when Hofanna was fung.

Tacinic Viii

more pompe and effate then Christ did to Ierusalem

(32) Eight Mules hee had laden with necessaries belonging, but those made no shew in proud Wolfers eies, therefore twelue more hee fent him to furnish his Pageants through the streets of London, these either wanton, or ashamed to bee wondred at, plaied the skittish lades indeed : For in Cheape-lide, as this Triumph foorth paffed, these beasts by breaking their Collers and escaping their Leaders, cast their Carriages and Cof-The Cardinals fers upon the cold ground; whose lids flying open rich treasures shewed in Cheap side. laid most of their riches to the fight of the people. For, from some of them fell olde Breeches, Bootes and broken shooes, from others torne Rockings tot-

tered ragges, olde Iron and horse shooes, and for fainting by the way therein was bestowed, and now cast abroad, broken meate, mary-bones, rosted egges, and crusts of bread, ywiffe worth the keeping: this Shipwrack made vpon the Shelues of Chcape-fide, no need it was to bid the muliters to bestirre them, who like good thrifty marriners faued from spoile as much as they could, and truffing vp their trinkets, laded againe these wantons, with the wealth of the Cardinal, who (good man) was logging on afore with his Croffes, Pillars, Gilt-axe and Mace, vnto Pauls Church, where hee was mette with many mitred Bishops, and attended upon to Bath place, where we will leaue him, and returne to the place where wee (33) The vnity agreed vpon betwirt England and France, a meeting was motioned for the two Kings, and to that ende great preparation made afwell of the one as of the other. But in the heate of

this businesse, King Henry had word that Charles, his Charles the Em Queenes Nephew, and new made Emperour, would visit him in England, which accordingly hee did, acperour com-eth into England companied with the Queene of Arragon, and a most Royall Traine, and was as Roiallie entertained by Zoba Ştew. King Hemy: the cause of his comming was to hinder the peace concluded with France, for although, this Emperour were young, and but newly established; yet was hee wise and well foresawe the hurt that this amity with France, would bring him, and therefore came in person of purpose to disswade the Kings mind and to flay his cutrance with the French if he could, but finding Henry so forward in those proceeds,he baited his hooks with golden gifts to the Cardinall, and wanne him wholly to his (34) King Henry passing the Seas vnto Callis, met Rich. Tarpin.

with King Frances at a place appointed, and for that King Henrie gos purpole newly built betwixt the Townes of Guifnes. and Arde: where to describe the Iufts, Banquets, and Maskes were to fill vp (with Hall, Grafion and Holinsbed) whole sides of excessive great Cost. At Rich. Grafion. Callis also the same time the Emperor, with his Aunt the Lady Margaret Dutcheffe of Sauoy landed, whither King Henry and his Queene repaired, to the no Edw. Hall. little grudge of the French King, though he kept it to himselfe, and consented vnto the ancient league tripertite betwixt these three Monarches, which done the Kings returned into their owne Realmes, (35) Displeasures shortly arising betwixt the Emperour and the French King, King Henry affaied to bring the to peace, but that failing, fell himfelfe from

A.D. 1521. An.Rcg. 13. the French, imputing the fault vnto Frances for fub-Variance be-twist England and France. orning the Scots against him, and King Frances againe laid all the blame in the Cardinall, accusing him of dissimulation, abhorred practifes and what not : but lebu Strae. wheresoeuer lay the defect, the Duke of Albany was sent into Scotland; the French followed a Spa-R. Grafton, nish ship fraught with the goods of English-MerKings streams, in both which King Frances excusing himselfe with ignorance alleaged no breach of truce (35) Then was it thought best by the Cardinals Taken out of the aduct to repay like with like, and therefore countries dated leaves to the state of felled his King, to reare Charles Duke of Eurben a- many 16, Anno.

uader: but now the Emperour being inuaded by baffages into

the French Kings Captaines in the Realme of Na- forrame States.

and to the dishonour of the Queene mother, had

broken by him.

gainst France and to perswade him to inuade the ve- 1524. ry heart thereof, incouraging him with sufficient pay, and making him his Champion generall of the Field; whilest the Emperor likewise held him play against Millan. And to that end was sent in way of in Caprame loane to the Emperour a great summe of money, Instructions of and forreine Princes follicited to take armes against King Henry dated France, for effecting which, King Henry fent his Am- in Anno 1524. baffadors to the States of Venice and Swifers with Rich Pace Scare these instructions as followeth.

(36) That whereas in a treatic of peace it was concluded betwixt the Emperor, King Henry, and Frances the French King, that if any Controuersies should arise betwixt any two, the Prince not inuading should give aide and assistance against the in-

warre, and in his owne Countrey by Robert de la March, and others by his procurement, and our king (faid they) being often called upon by the Emperor, hath often entreated the French King to surcease but hath nothing obtained besides faire words and detraction of promises. Complaining likewise that The wrongs in the intercourse of these businesses, the French done by the King contrary to his Oath had fent the Duke of Al- Front vnio the bany into Scotland (in contempt of King Henry) and to the great danger of the yong Kings death or deposition, he being the next in blood to succeed,

The Emperour

affianceth Lody

caused a separation betwixt her and her lawfull husband the Earle of Angus. That the French King had deteined the payment compounded for the delinery of Turnay; and kept backe the dowry of his fifter Queene Dowager of France, that he had entertained the rebeilious Subjects of King Henry, and Downy vopuid. spoiled his Merchants both by Land and Sea. Nei-

ther was voremembred the danger that the Venetians ftood in, if the Realmes of Waples, and Sieilie, the Seigniories of Ieans, and Millane were lost from the Empire. These therefore seemed faire projects vnto King Henry for him to warre against France, and to A.D.1523. that end, a generall Muster by Commission was taken of all able men from fixteene yeers and vpward, of enery Hamlet Village, Burrough, Citie, Hundred, and Shire, throughout England, which seemed to many another Domesday Booke: and yet was there nei-

ther peace nor warre against France. (37) In this great and hasty preparation, Charles the Emperour, as he passed toward Spaine, landed at | Charles the Em-Douer, where King Henrie mette him, and in greate flate brought him to London; which was fo prepaflate brought him to London; which was fo prepared with Ornaments and Pageants, as if it had been the Kings Coronation, and in the Blacke-friers the Emperour was lodged in a most Princely Palace

new built by the King; then was he feafted at Winfor, where he fate in his state, in his Mantle and Garter, and by receiving the Sacrament these two Potent Monarches tooketheir Corporal Oathes to observe the Couenants concluded betwixt them: whereof one was, that the Emperour Charles agreed to ftay Holings. in Anna for, and take to wife the young Princesse Lady Marie, King Henries then onely daughter; and in such golden bands of lone, Charles and Henrie, seemed to be linked, as in London this sentence was set up in the Guild hall over the doore of the Counfell Chamber, where it still remaineth.

Carolus, Henricus, vinant, defensor vterque Henricus fidet, Carolus Ecclefie.

(38) Why the Titles defender of Church and Faith, were attributed vnto these two Princes

to extell your Matesty with worthy and immortall praiscarsly confirmed, but to purchase the Popes fauor, fes, for your high and immortall deferts and labours tohe directed forth a folemne Writ of Out-lawry awards vs, and this holy See, wherein by Gods permission gainst Martin Luther, who then had given a great blow to the Papall Crowne. And King Henry likewee fit, to grant unto it those things for which it ought to watch, and drive away the Wolves from the wise was renowned in Rome, for writing a booke a-Lords flocke, and to cut off with the material fword gainst the said Luther: vnderpropping the tottering rotten members, which infect the my sticall body of christ; or downe-cast countenance of the Popes pardons; and to confirme the hearts of the faithfull in soundnesse K.Henry wrote which Luther shrewdly had shaken; the Pope thereof beliefe. Now where of late our beloued fonne Iohn fore to shew himselfea kind father vnto those his Clarke your Maiesties Orator with vs, being in our sonnes, gaue them these Titles; which in truth Confistory before our venerable brethren of the holy Rowere none other, then the same which they sware mane Church, the Cardinals and many other Prelates vnto, when the Crownes of their Empires were of the same, exhibited a booke unto us to bee examined first set voon their heades. But with what accepand allowed of us, which bookeyour Maiesties selfe (who tance his Holinesse receited King Henries booke, doth all things with diligence and nothing amisse) enhis owne Oration folemnely made at the delinery flamed with charity and zeale to the Catholike faith . thereof vnto M. Iohn Clarke the presenter and Kings and with ardent denotion toward us and this holy See; Ambassador, in his Consistory, and in presence of hath composed, as a most worthy and soueraigne Antihis Cardinals fufficiently doth thew, the translation dote against the errors of divers heretikes, often conwhereof we have inserted as we finde it in the Origidemned by this holy Sce, and of late stirred up and nall it felfe. prought in by Martin Luther: And your faid Orator Wee doe receive this booke with all alacrity: it is hath also largely declared onto os, that your Maiesty is indeed such as there could not bee any thing sent ready, and purpofeth, like as you have confuted the notori-« vs, and our venerable brethren, more acceptable ous errors of the faid Martin, by true reason and inumthen it is. For the King himselfe, a most mighty, cible authorities of sacred Scripture, and ancient fathers, " most prudent, and most truely Christian Prince. oyou will punish to the ottermost of your power, all those of your whole Kingdome, that shall presume to follow, or wee know not whether wee may more prayle or defend them: and we have diligently and exactly perused

Sx Original. admire, being the first that by warre with happy fuccesse hath subdued the enemies of the Church of Christ, that seeke to rend Christs coat, and at elast ouercomming the enemies, hath restored peace to the Church of God, and to this holy See. But onow against so foule a Monster, both to vnder "fland, to bee able, and willing to write this book, hee hath shewed himselfe no more admirable to "the whole world for his elegant style, then for his wit. We humbly give thanks to our Creator for giuing fuch a Prince to defend his Church, and this holy See, desiring the same God to grant to "this his King a happy life, and all his defires, and after this life in his heavenly Kingdome, to keepe "for him an cuerlasting Crowne. And we so farre as wee are able to entreat of God, will neuer bee wanting to the faid most wife King in the faculties granted to vs of God.

> of the Faith, health and Apostolicall Benediction. Wee by divine permission, the chiefe overseer for the govern-ment of the vniversall Church, though vnsufficient for so great aworke, doe powre forth the cogitations of our heart, that the Catholike faith without which no man can attaine to saluation, may receive continuall increase, and that those good lawes and constitutions decreed by the that thele good lawes and confitutions derecally the wifalme and learning of juch as serio authority, offecially the faithfull in Christ, for refreshing the attempts of all that labour to opprefe the fame, no by wicked layer of Filium school in the labour and object it, may profier with progradial thereast, due before our paines and vimility profits and vimility profits and vimility of the series of the series and definitely. Analise as the Romane Bishops our Predecessors, were wons to shew especiall fanour to Catholike Princes (according as the quality of matters and times required) especially to them that in trouble joine times, when the madne seand perfi-dious dealing of Schismatikes and heretikes most of all a-bound, did abide constant and vinnoueable, not onely in foundnesse of faith and pure denotion to the holy Romane Church, but alfo as the most legitimate sonnes and va-

and leaden scale it selfe, as followeth.

and viewed the admirable doctrine of your faid booke, watered with the dem of heavenly Grace, and doe heartily thanke Almighty God, from whom every good and perfect gift doth come, who hath wouch fafed to inspire your Noble mind, inclined to every good thing, and to endue you with fo great Grace from heaven, as to write those things; whereby you are able to defend his holy faith, against such a new Innovator of damned errors; and also incite by your example all other Christian Kings and Princes, to he willing to fauour and further with all their best aides the Orthodoxall faith, and Euangelicall truth, when loeuer it bee brought into danger or doubt. And wee thinke it also meete, that they who baue ondertaken such godly labours for the defence of the faith of Christ, should have lations you the defence of instantio of curry, possus name and lip rople and homoure of vs., and were are definent, that not only the things themselves which your Natively has written, being both of mill flowalderine, and no leftelloquenes, found be excetelled and magnified with condique commensations, and allowed and compressed by our active commensations, and allowed and compressed by our active thin the homour and the character of the conditions of the condition of the condi (40) To manifest which his readinesse, himselfe among his Cardinals decreed an augmentation vnto King Henries royall Stile to bee annexed vnto his others; confirming the same by his Bull, which that such an honour, and such a Title, as that both for our time it perish not by the denouring teeth of Time, wee and euer hereafter all men might perceive how gratefull haue here published from the original Parchment, and acceptable this gift of your Maiesties hathbeen onto vs, especially offered unto us now at this time. Wee, who (41) Leo Episcopus seruus seruoru Dei & c. Leo Bishop be the true successors of Peter, whom Christ at his afcenferuant of the feruants of God; to our most dearely besion into heaven left his Vicar on earth, and to whom hee loued Sonne in Christ, Henry King of England defendor committed the care of his flocke: We I say, who sit in this holy feate, from which all dignities and titles doe flow, upon mature deliberation had with our faid brethren about these things, hear by the sentral agreement, and consent of them decreed, to bestow upon your Maiestie this title, namely, THE DEFENDER OF THE FAITH. And accordingly by these Presents doe institution with such a title, commanding all fatthfull Christians, that they name your Maiesty with this Title, and when they write to you, that after the Word KING, they adioine DEFENDER OF THE FAITH. And truely wee diligently considering and weighing your singular merits, were not confidering and weigening your jungs us merits, were not able to bethinke wo of a name more worthy and conumi-ent for your Maiesty, then the excellency and dignity of this Title, which so often as you shall be are and reade, so often you may call to mind this your singular vertue and great desert, nor may you by this Title puffe up your self in pride, but according to your wonted prudence become more humble, and bee more valiant and constant in the faith of Christ, and in denotion to this holy See, by which you have beene exalted, reioncing in the Lord the giver liant Champions of the same, opposed themselve: both with mind and body against the surious madnes of Schisof all good things, leaving this as a perpetuall and immortal monument of your glory to your children shewing them matikes and heretikes : so likewise also doe wee desire the way unto the like, that if they shall defire to be graced

0	Henrie VIII. THE SVCC	Ŀ	SSION OF Monarch 58.	Dook.9			
	alfo with fuch a Title, they must labour to do such works,	í	made Gouernour of Scotland with an Armie of	Palyd.			
- 1	and to follow the excellent steps of your Maiesty, whom,	- 1	fourescore thousand drew vnto the Borders, whence	The Duke of		-	
- 1	accordingly as you have well deferued of vs, and this faid	- 1	hee sent into France for six thousand Almains, which	Alban commeth			
- 1	See, together with your wife, and all your Children that		were promifed, and daily expected though in vain,	to the Borders.			
	shall be borne of you, or of them, we bleffe with our Bene-	1	for none came at all. The Earle of Shrewsbury with				
- 1	diction, with a large and liberall hand in the name of	1	eight and twenty thou fand strong, drew like wife to- wards the Borders, but the Scots lying still, without				
- 1	HICM, from whom the power of granting this blessing	- 1	further inualion, an abstinence from warre was be-				
	is given unto us, praying and befeeching that Almighty One, who faith, By mee Kings raigne, and Princes	- 1	twixt them concluded, which how the English kept,	A furcease of			
]	rule, and in whose hands are the hearts of Kinges,	- 1	the fequell well shewed; for the King ordaining Hen-				
- 1	that hee will confirme your Maiesty in your holy purpose,		ry Percy Earle of North mberland, Lord Warden of				
- 1	and encrease your denotion, and by your worthy ende-		the whole Marches, he either refrained to impeach				
- 1	uours for the sacred faith, so to illustrate your renowne,	- 1	his honor by breach of truce, or elfe loth to be dif-	i			
- 1	and make you glorious through all the world, that this our	- 1	quieted of his fost rest, made meanes to the King, to bee discharged of the office, which was forthwith	- 1			
- 1	Testimony which wee have given of you, adorning you		bestowed (and thankefully accepted) vpon Thomas	1			
	with so excellent a Title, may never bee inaged by any to be false or vaine. Lastly, wee desire God, that after this life		Earle of Surrey lately returned out of France, who	Thomas Lord			
- 1	ended, hee would make you partakers of his eternall glo-		deliuered the charge of the East & Middle Marches	Aomiral made			
	rie. Given at Rome at Saint Peters, in the yeere of the		vnto the Lord Marqueffe Dorfet, and the West vn-	Lord Lieutenant of the North.			
	Incarnation of our Lord God, 1521. the fift Ides Octo-	1	to the Lord Dacres, who presently made a road in-				
1	ber, the ninth yeere of our Papacy.		to Scotland, and returned with booty.				
- 1			(46) France and Scotland thus affailed at once, a			-	
	Thus subscribed,		Parliament was affembled at Blacke-Fryers in Lon- don, wherein Cardinall Wolfey moued, and with				
	Ego Leo X. Catholica Ecclesia Episcopus Sanctif.	1	much adoe obtained, the halfe of the yeerely reue-				
	With twenty five other Cardinals and Bishops,		newes of all spiritual linings, to bee paid for fine	A greet fubfidy granted.		33	
- 1	underwriting their feuerall names with their	-	yeeres continuance, and the tenth part of all tem-	Stanted			
	owne hands.	į	porall substance to maintaine this great charge of				
- 1		1	the King, for the exact collection whereof the Car-				
	(42) But from these Priestly and Papall gratula-		dinall was fo forward, as he moued, and would have				
	tions, let vs returne to leade our Story vnto tempo- rall Princes affaires. How the Emperour Charles		had euery man sworne for his wealth, had not the Citizens of London vtterly refused it, which when		-		
rour	had been entertained in King Henries Court, wee		the King heard of, he was highly displeased with	Pelyder.			
	haue faid, and now ready to depart with many rich		Wolfey, and faid, that erc long hee would looke to	12-7420-			
	gifts, hee repaired to Southampton, where hee tooke		thinges himfelfe without any Substitute.				
	his shippes for Spaine, whose conductor through		(47) Among other great effectue of this magna-				
	the narrow Seas was Thomas Earle of Surrey, Lord		nimous Monarch, it was not the least that the Em- perour in person had twice come into England to vi-	The Kingand	1		
i	high Admirall of England, who having wafted him vnto Bifeny with a gallant crew of Gentlemen, made		fite him, and even at this time Christian King of	Queene of Des- marke came into	1		
- 1	thence faile into France, and in Britaine belieged &		Denmarke with his Queene, vnto whom Queene	England. Edw. Hall, f.111.			
mirall	wonne the strong Towne Morleis, and with the		Katherine was Aunt, landed at Doner, and was ho-	Eus, Hau, Litt.	1		
forlete	Garrison Souldiers of the Marches dayly bickered		nourably brought vnto London, where they were				
	with the heart-burning French, and dayly went a-		royally feafted, and after two and twenty dayes in-				
	way with the better, but new firres arreared by the Scots, the Lord Admirall was recalled, and came		tertainement, receiping great gifts of the King and Queene, they returned to Flanders, where hee re-				
	to the Court, where hee declared to his Highnesse		mained as a banished man out of his owne Coun-				
	what hee had done in Britaine.		try.		1		
	(43) King Henries businesse thus on foot in		(48) King Henry purpoling his further pursuits,				
	France, hee thought to pursue it with all the ad-		fent a great Army into France, vnderthe leading of	The Duke of			
	uantage hee could, and first to find the Scots play,		the Duke of Suffolke Charles Brandon, attended vpon	Suffolic lent into	1		
	who were ever fast friends to the French, he sent the Lords Rosse and Dacres to secure the North-borders,		by the Lords Montacute, Herbert, Ferrers, Mar- neie, Sands, Barkley and Powis, nineteen Knights, fix				
of	appointing for his Lieutenant in those partes the		hundred demi-lances, two hundred Archers hor-		1		
of at of	Earle of Shrewsburie, and sent the Lord Admirall of		fed, three thousand more of them on foot, fine thou-				
	England againe into France, who divided his Army		fand Bill-men, and seventeene hundred Garrison				
	into three Battalions, the first whereof, was led by Robert Rateliffe, Lord Fitzwater; the Middle, the		Souldiers, with one thousand fine hundred labou-				
	Earle conducted himselfe, with the affiltance of his		rers and Pioners. These departing Calleis, first besieged, and wan Bell-Castell, and then entring Pi-	Places wen by the Duke of			
	brother Lord Edmund Howard, and the Rereward		cardy, there iouned vnto him three thousand foot,	Suffolice.			
	was gouerned by Sir William Sands, and Sir Richard	}	and hue hundred horse of Almans and Spaniards;				
ıll	Wingfield both of them Knights of the Order, the		with their hee affayled, and tooke the Caffell of				
einto	Colonell of the horse was Sir Edward Guilford.	1	Bounegard, wherein hee put Garrison, wanne Braye,	The Duke of			
	(44) Thefe in September entred into the French Pale, and made toward the Castell of Heding, vnto		Roie, Lihome, Montdedier and Boghan: but the winter come on, & the weather extream in wets and frosts,				
P 875	whom ioined the Burgundians, fent from the Lady		belides other wants ener following the Winters	neth into Eng-			
	Margaret then Regent of Flanders, vnder whose co-		Warriers, the Duke was enforced to breake vppe	-			
	lours ferued many Spaniards; Surrey thus fet for-	1	Campe; and from Calleis came fafely to the				
	ward, burned all things where he came, demolishing	1	Court, where, vnto King Henry hee was very				
	the Castles and Townes of Sellios, Brumbridge, Se-		welcome, but much more vnto the French Queen				
ids at	nekerk, Botingham, Manstier, Nerbins, Dauerne, Cu- lumberge and Fringes the Townes and Churches for-		his wife. (49) The Scotifb (as we have faid) keeping the				
rat France,	tified of Boards, Vaus, and Saint Mary de Bois: but		Borders, and the English making inroades, where the				
	laying his fiege against Heding was forced for want	1	places were weakest, the stirres betwixt them began				
	of battering peeces, to breake vp againe and depart:		daily to increase. In so much as the Duke of Alba-				
	In whose returne hee burnt the Townes and Ca-	1	my fent a Herauld vnto the Earle of Surrey the Kings				

Lieutenant of the North, to offer him Battell, pro-

miling on his honour if he tooke him Prisoner. his ransome should be easie, and his person courteously dealt with; who returned as rough an answere, courteous offer,

760

The Emperadeparteth

The L. Adm

The Zarle o Ehrersburg Lieurenant the North

T. Admiral1

fent againe

Holinford,p

The English

make great fooiles in F

stels of Dorlens and Darrier, and comming to Calleis,

fet faile for England with a wonderfull great

(45) In this while the Duke of Albanie being

as the offer was kinde, saying hee would abide Battell if he durst give it, and if the Duke were taken either by him or his, hee would strike off his head and send it for a " fee what the English men intend. Letd Admirals rough antiver. (52) But Margaret Queene of Scots folliciting Margaret time, as those in France did florrise after, by the working who in the first who in the first who in the form affects. present to his Master the King of England. So netled was the Earle against the French, that had raised Alking wit of Cardinall Wolfey, who in the State affaires bany thus against England, and King Henry (as Bishop was euer one, which made him the more emulated, The hard viage of the Sous. Lefly reporteth) tooke from the Scots inhabiting and the grievances of the commons ever cast vpon England all their goods, sending them into their him; in so much that it was commonly spoken he Cardinall wolfey was the causer of the heavy imposition granted to Countrey on foote, with white Croffes fewed your their vppermost Garments by which they were maintaine the kings warres, which was so importa-ble to the poorer sort of Subjects, as the paintent knowne and suffered to passe. The Scots vpon the Earlesanswere were wonderfully enraged, and seekthereof was veterly denied to the appointed Colleing the revenge, some of them passed over the wactors, with weepings, Curlings, and great acclamations, yea and almost grew to an open rebellion : for Warke Castle besieged by the Scots. ter, and hotly befreged the Castle of Warke, which the Englishmen as valiantly defended, and in their Kent denied it to the Lord Cobham : Effex refused to reliftance flew almost three hundred of their French commune with the commissioners : Huntingtonhire refifted, and would not heare them, London hields de-Souldiers, the Scots retyring againe to their Campe. would be taxt by none but their Aldermen: and Suf-(50) The Regent not able to digeft the Earles folke role vp in Armes, making pouerty their Cap-taine. Of these stirres when King Henry heard, he pill, commanded his Armic to march forward into the English Marches, wherewith the common Soulhad great indignation, blaming the Counfellors, diers much rejoiced, but the wifer of the Nobility vrged this in their Counsell, that having displaied and wrote his letters vnto enery County, that no fuch demands should be paid: and the Cardinall to in warlike manner, their Banners vpon the Verge of curry fauours with the Commons gaue it forth forthe Borders, and defended their Countrey from the footh, that at his intercession the Offenders were spoile, they saw no great reason further to proceed, pardoned, and the money remitted. no necessity or cause moning, besides the Quarrell of (53) And now more to thew his owne power, then any great cause; hee beganne to alienate the A.D. 1525. the French: and therupon repayring to the Regent, they demanded why they should proceed further, heart of King Henry against his Nephew the Empe-The Scatiff No-bliry expostula-tesh with the alleadging that at his commandement (yea and that ror, and caused him to withhold pay from the Duke rour. willingly) they had so farre passed, for the defence of of Burbon his late made Generall : which was the their Countrey, which was sufficient without furcaule of the French Kings Captinity. For Burbon Guicebard, ther invalion of the others, the time so convenient in incamped within the Towne of Paula, and belicthe nonage of their young King, and the action to ged by the French in most warlike manner, was for want of his said pay so desperate of life, that heest-tempted a most dangerous escape. In the dead of dangerous, wherein all the Peeres of Scotland were affembled, to attend and fuffer the doubtfull iffue of the night he fet a part of his Company to affaile the attempt, warre, which euer is vncertaine, and more loffe in one battell many times fuffred, then gaine can be enemy on that fide of the Towne which was left ftrong, himselfe issuing secretly out of a Posterne on the contrary side; The watch but slender and gotten in manie: whereof roo too lamentable experithen gotten by victory. ence(faid they) we have had by King James, that by peace and life, brought Scotland to her best, but by the Souldiers afleepe, a great terror arofe, in which his warre and death almost to the worst, therefore the belieger turned their Ordinance to the place of would we know (faid the Nobilitie) whether this the crie, when as fuddenly Burbon was at their backs. your intent stands with the weale of the King and and winning their Ordinance discharged them avs, or elfe is profecuted in the cause of your selfe and gainst their owners, slew their fouldiers, cut downe The King of the French. their Tents, and by the Vice-roycof Naples was the The Duke of (51) The Duke making some pause, lastly re-plied and said; "This question would have beene French King taken prisoner in the Field. (54) This fortunate successe made these Aldemanded ere now : for well you know that from naines more bolde, who presently with the Impetoward Rome Scotland I beare my name, honour and lineage, riall Enfignes marched towards Florence, and thence haue passed the Seas from the noble Realme of to Rome, vnto whose walles in one day they gaus "France, for the loue of my Countrey, to fet you in three affaults, in the last whereof Charles Duke of amity which were at diffention, by whose division Burbon their Generall was flaine; notwithstanding | zurion flaine the City was taken and facked; Pope Clement in the vour Realm lay proftrate to destruction and Conqueft, for whole aid you see I have procured the meane while, to make all fure as he thought, thun-"French to joine with you against the English. Adred our his Curfes, and with Bell, Booke and gaine, when these warres were determined by Par-Candle, committed those Lutherans to Hell, who "liament, you made me your Captaine, authorizing neuerthelesse broke down that windy Bulwarke, and me to inuade England with Banner displaied, then with great flaughter forced him with twentie three Pope Clement and his Cardinals imprisoned was no question or demand of the cause; neither Cardinals, into the Castle of Saint Angello, where haue I entred the quarrell without your agreethey kept them belieged from the fixt of May, vnment; and therefore may I justifie my present doto the tenth of December : in which time, in mocings, and yet to me it feemeth there is cause sufficiking of the Pope the fouldiers to make folace, would ent, with fire, fword and blood to enter England, apparell one in Pontificall attire, who formtime should bleffe them, and sometime accurse them, and "if we be not too forgetfull, and will submit our "felues to dishonour and reproach: for we all know that the Realme of Seotland is ours by inheririding on Horse-backe with a Whore set behind him Steiden, Com.li. 6. should so passe the streets, that the Pope and Cardinals might see him. These contumelies and Papall tance, and that portion of the world allowed to our Nation to enjoy; how can we warre better, Captinities were grieuously taken by many Chri-Charles the Em-" then to maintaine our naturall inheritance against ftian Princes, infomuch that Cafar in Spaine forbad perour fore grie-ued at the Popes all Enterludes to be plaid, and Pageants prepared which the English give daily attempts, with mancaptunity, flaughter, murthers, thefts and spoiles: have we not for ioy of the birth of his fonne, Prince Phillip, to be pulleddowne. In France by the Court of Parthen(thinke you) just cause to make warre? The defence of a kingdome, is the office of a king, the holiament the Duke of Burbon was condemned of nour of the Noble, the service of the Souldier, and Treason, his name and memoriall accursed, his the duty of a naturall Subject. But beit as you Armes puld downe, and his Lands and goods conwill, yet having so puissant an armie to avoide our fifcated; neither would King Henrie of England anowne reproach, and encouragement of the Enewer the Emperours letters, wherein hee excused mie, let vs campe here still on the Borders till we himselfe from having any hand in the action: (55) Whilest

Chap.21. Henrie VIII. ENGLANDS MONARCHS, Monarch 58.

Regent.

762		ESSION OF Monarch 58.	·	9	Cbap.21.	Henrie VIIJ. ENGLANDS	MONARCHS. Monarch 58.	1 533
Troubles in Tre-	(55) Whilest these things were in working at Rome, arose great troubles in Ireland, the Kerns ca-	"had you loft but a Cow or a Horse of your own two hundred of your retainers would have com	21			" uie to Defmond, or some body bewraied it to them, " or they themselves were my Carriers or vicege-	the Councell board, and committed the Farleyn	
,	I liting off all obedience, and killing the Kings inhierts !	at your Whiftle to rescue the prev from the writer	-1		1	"rents therein: which of these parts wil they choose,	to prison, against the minds of most at the Table	,
i	where they found them : against whom Thomas Ho-	" most edge of Vister : all the Irifb in Ireland mu	3 }		. 1	"for I know them too well: To reckon my felfe	willo knew well; that this his acculation was more	2
i	Wara, Earle of Survey. Lord Lieutenant of that I	"haue given you the way. But in purfning to need	_		ł	"connict by their bare wordes, or headleffe fayings,	of hatred borne by the Cardinall, then any occasi	ted to prilon.
1	kingdome, made foorth his power, and followed	"full a matter as this was; mercifull God, how	v		1	"or franticke oathes, were but meere mockerie. My	on given by the accused late Deputy. Whereupon	
!	them nimicite with fuch danger of life, that the vi-!	"nice, how dangerous, how wayward have you	1		1	"letters were soone read, were any such writing ex-	Thomas Duke of Norfolke Stept to the King, and cra	-
i	for of his Helmer was fhot oif, as hee purfued the e-	beene? One while hee is from home, and and	-		1	" tant, my feruants, and friends are ready to be fif-	ued that Kildare might bee his prisoner, offering to bee bound in goods and body for his forth com	'
i	nemy through the defert woods: but these Rebels	"ther while hee keepeth home, fometimes fled			1	"ted : of my Cosen of Defmond they may lie	ming, whom hee obtained, though with no grea	
1	cut off by his high valour, and warres proclaimed	"fometimes in the Borders, where you dar	é		ı	contrary fince no man here can well contrary	liking of the L. Chancellor who daily arramaind non	-1
	at one time against Scotland and France, the Lord Lieutenant was recalled into England; and Piers	"not venture. Ywiffe, my Lord, there bee shrew	1}		1	them . Touching my felfe I neuer noted in	plaints against him, till at last hee pressed him for	9
	Butler Earle of Oforie made Deputie of Ireland in his	"bugges in the borders, for the Earle of Kildare to	>		1	"them much wit, or so fast faith, that I would have	with letters fent to Oneale and Ocener, to encourage	Kildere accuse
Halings oug.84.	fread; betwirt whom, and Girald Fitz-Girald, Earle	"feare; the Earle, nay the King of Kildare: fo	r]		i	"gaged on their filence the life of a good hound,	their rebellions against Office the Lord Deputy	for Suborning o
tompo pagat.	of Kildare, whose sister hee had married, arose no	"when you are disposed, you raigne more like ther "rule in the land: where you are pleased the Irif	?!		1	"much leffe mine owne: I doubt not, may it please		
;	little strife and debate, which grew to that height	"foe flanderh for a just Subject : hearts and hands	2		1	"your honors to appose them, how they came to	ter and their lifters, the Lady Elice Fitzgirald wife to	
Difcention be-	as King Henry fent Commissioners to trie and exa-	" itues and lands are all at your courrefie . who form	. 1		1	"the knowledge of those matters which they are so	the Baron of Slane.	
rwixt the Lord Deputies of Jeland,	mine the differences, which was so cleered on Kil-	"neth not thereon, cannot rest within your fruel, and			1	"ready to depose: but you shall find their tongues "chained to another mans trencher, and as it were	(19) This presumption being vehement, th	e
freland,	dares behalfe, that Oforie was discharged of his Of-	your imed to rancke that you tracke them out a	- 1		1	"Knights of the Poft, suborned to say, sweare and	King suspicious, the Cardinall cager, and his friend	s
	fice, and the Lord Fitz-girald (worne deputy in his	"pleasure. Whilest the Cardinal was speaking	.1		1	"ftare the vttermost they can, as those that passe not	faint, Kildare was fent to the Tower, where he com	Kilder commit-
1	place; whereat Cardinal Wolfer (whose hand chiefly	the Earle chaired and changed colour & at last brake			1	"what they fay, nor with what face they fay it, fo	mitted himselfe to God, and expected dayly hi	Tower.
1	feered all states affaires, a deadly enemy to the Earle	Out, and interrupted him three	1		1	"they say no truth:but on the other side, it grieueth	death, but with fuch couragious resolution, as he being in play with the Lieutenant ar slide-groat	e
1	of Kildare) was highly offended, and to vndermine	(57) 6 My Lord Chauncellor I befeech you	Kildere inter-		1	"mee, that your good Grace, whom I take to bee	when the mandate was brought for his execution	2
1	the foundations of this his new Gouernment, gaue eare vnto Oforce, who accused the new deputie of	"pardon me, I am short witted, and you I perceive "intenda long tale: ifyou proceed in this order, half	rupteth the Car		1	" wife and fharpe, and who of your bleffed disposi-	on the next morning, and feeing the Lieutenan	
Kildere accused	many mildemeanors, among which these were the	micenda long tale: ifyou proceed in this order, half	dimis cale.		1	tion without mee well, thould bee to farre gone in	ftrucke into a fuddaine fadnesse; by Saint Bride	1
to the Cardinall.	principall; that he winked at Defmonds escape	iny purgation wil be lott for lack of carriage. I have	·i		1	" crediting these corrupt Informers that abuse the	Lieutenant (quoth the Earle) there is some madd	ě l
1	whom he should have attached by order from the	"no Schoole trickes, nor art of memory: except you "heare me while I remember your words, your fe	1		1	"ignorance of your flate and Country to my peril.	game in that scrowll; but fall how it will this throw	
1	King: that he grew ouer familiar with the native I-	cond processes will hammer out the former. The	1		1	Little know you (my Lord) how necessary it is,		
	riff; and that he put to death the Kings heft fishel	Lords affociate, who for the most part tenderly lo-	The F		1	"not onely for the Gouernour, but also for enery	now I pray thee (quoth he) doe no more but learne	Holin (bed, Hift,
1	iects for these the Lord Deputie was commanded	ued Kildare, and knew the Cardinall his manner of	der Kildare.		1	"Nobleman in Ireland, to hamper the vnciuill		
1	into England, in whole ablence Olory his enemie was i	[[20] Its 10 ready being ingred therewith many years	. 1		1	" neighbours at discretion, wherein if they waited " for processe of law, & had not those lines and lands	Highnesse be witting thereto or no; the Lieute	-
	againe chosen Lord Deputie by the Kings Coun-	together, humblie belought his grace to charge him	1		1	"you speak of within their reach, they might hap to	nant louing his prisoner well, repaired to the King	• [
1	feil, but himselfe none of the wischt for politicke		1		1	"loose their own lines & lands without law. You	and shewed him the Cardinals warrant, who their controlled the sawcines of the Priess (for those wen	1
i	Gouernment, was altogether therein ruled by his	matter vntill it were examined throughly	1		1	" hear of a case, as it were in a dream, & feele not the	histearmes) and gaue the Lieutenant his Signet fo	
1	wife, and thee made it no courtefie to abuse her huf- bands honour against her natural brothers folly:		1		1	"fmartthat vexeth vs. In England there is not a mean	a countermand, whereas the Cardinall stormed, bu	:1
1 1	who now in England must answer his demeanour	"Earle) that your Grace beare the mouth of this	He answereth		In what cafe	"Subject that dare extend his hand to fillip a Peere	Kildare delivered from his eminent death, and no	:
1	before the Lords of the Counsell, and to their Ta-	boord: but my Lord, thole monthes that put thefe	THE OWNERS		thand the Noble-	"of arealm. In Ireland except the Lord have cunning	long after from his imprisonment also, was sent in	. 1
1 1	ble was hee brought, where the Cardinall Lord	"things into your mouth, are very wide mouthes: "fuch indeed as have gaped long for my wracke:			men of Freland with Rebels,	d to his strength, and strength to saue his Crowne,	to Ireland, where at his entrance into Dublin, he was	
1 (Chauncellor made his faults nothing leffe and thus	and now at length for want of better stuffe, are	-		1	" and sufficient authority to take theeues and variets	met with a folemne procession, and so brought into	procession.
1 1	addressed himselfe against the Earle of Kildare.	"faine to fill their mouthes with smoake: what my	1		ı	when they flir, he shall find them swarme so fast	the City; so welbeloued was this Earle abroad, and	
1 1	(56) "I wot well (my I ord) that I am not the	"Colen Delmond hath compassed as I know nor to	1			that it will be etoo late to call for inflice. If you will have our feruice take effect, you must not	at home.	1
The Cardinals	"meeteft at this boord to charge you with these	Delhrew his naked heart for holding our follows	ł		1	"tie vs alwayes to these indiciall proceedings wher-	(60) But the French Kings fortunes were nothing	The French
fpeech at the Counfell Table	treatons, because it nath pleased some of your	"If he can be taken by mine agents that prefentlie	1		j	"with your Realme (thanked be God) is inured.	fo good, who was straitly imprisoned at Madrillin Spaine, and great suite made for his deliuerance,	king imprisoned
against Kildere.	"Pew-fellowes to report, that I am a professed ene-	wait for him, then haue mine adversaries bewent.	l	1	1	"Touching my kingdome, I know not what your	which not with standing would not be heard. The	Guichard,
1.	"my to all Nobilitie, and namely to the Giraldines: "but seeing enery shrewd boy can say as much when	ed their malice; and this heape of heipons worder	l		1	"Lordshippe should mean thereby; If your Grace	Queene mother then Regent of France, wife of her	
1	"he is controlled, and these points so weighty, that	"fhail refemble a fcarre-Crow, or a man of ftraw	l		1	"imagine that a Kingdome confideth in feruing	felfe, and forwarded by others, faw no better means	ļ
1 1	"they should not be diffembled of vs; and so appa-	that teemeth at a bigin to carry tome proportion			1	"God, in obeying the Prince, in governing with	to free her sonne the King, then to enter amity with	ļ
1 1	"rant, that they cannot be denied of you : I must	"but when it is felt and peized, discouereth a vanity "seruing onely to feare Crowes: and I verily trust	1		I	uloue the common wealth, in supporting subjects,	England, which to accomplish the folicited King	Queene mother
1 1	hane leave (notwithstanding your stale slander)to	your honours shall see the proofe by the thingit	l			in suppressing rebels, in executing instice, in bride-	Henry; working upon the occasions then ministred,	foliciteth King
1	"be the mouth of these honourable Lords at this	"felfe, within thefefew daies. But goe to: suppose he			i	" ling blind affections, I would bee willing to bee	which was some vnkindnesse growne betwixt the	
1 1	" prefent, and to trumpe your treasons in your way,	I lieuer be had? What is Kilding to blame for it			1	"inuefted with so vertuous and roial a name: but if otherfore you tearm me a King, in that you are per-	English King, and the Emperour, the one of them	l
ł I	"howforner you take me. First you remember, how				1	cfwaded that I repine at the gouernmet of my foue-	morestrange by the greatnesse of his fortunes, and the other in icalousse of lessening renowne. The	
1 1	"the lewde Earle of Defmund your kinfeman (who	"withitanding his high promifes, having also the			1	"raign, or winke at malefactors, or oppreffe civil li-	forker of which Cinders were fleared to flame by	Difliker betwixt
1 1	"paffeth not whom he serveth might he change his "Master) sent his Confederates with letters of cre-				1	"uers: I vtterlydisclaim that odious term maruelling	sparkes of which Cinders were steared to flame, by Wolfey that ouer was in the eare of the King: allead-	and K. Heary.
1 /	"dence vnto Francis the French King : and having	"fure ? Cannot the Earle of pefmond thift but I			(" greatly that one of your Graces profound wildom	ging his potency, fo much eftermed of all Christian	,
1 1	"but cold comfort there, went to Charles the Em-	"must be of Counsell? Cannot he hide him except			1 :	" would feeme to appropriate fo facred a name to fo	Princes (a found very runable in Henries wide eare)	ł
1 1	" perour proffering the helpe of Mounster, and Co-	"I winke? If he be close am I his mate? If he be frien- ded am I a traitor? This is a doubtie kind of accu-			1	wicked a thing : but how foeuer it bee (my Lord)	would bee leffe regarded by the Emperours late vi-	ĺ
1	"naught, towards the Conqueft of Ireland if either	"fation which they vrge against me, wherein they			1	"I would you and I had changed Kingdomes, but	ctory; who now beganne to carry himselfe with	1
	of them would helpe to win it from our King How	"are stabelled and mired at my first deniall. You			T s	"for one moneth, I would trust to gather vppe	another refpect, and neuer after that victory got-	1
1 1	many letters, what precepts, what meliages, what	would not ice film (lay they); who made them for				"more crummes in that space, then twice the reue- "newes of my poore Earledome: but you are well	ten subscribed his letters to King Henry, according	
	threats, have beene fent you to apprehend him	"familiar with mine eje-fight? Or when was the				"and warme, and so hold you, and vpbraide not	to his accustomed manner, your sonne and Cofen;	1
1	and yet not code? Why to ? For footh I could not	Edit Within my view ()rwho Hood by when		7	1	"mee with such an odious terme. I flumber in a	but to the draught of his Secretaries, infixed his hand	
, 1	"Catch him! Nav nav Farle forfooth you would!	1 let him ilip? Or where are the tokens of my			1	* hard Cabine, when you fleepe in a foft bedde of	with the word Charles and no more. (61) These dissilies and other intercourses of	
1 1	of not watch him: If hee bee infly supperted, why	wilfull hudwinke? But you fent him word as			1 1	"Downe: I serue vnder the Lings Cope of hea-	State, drew Henry shortly to a peace with France.	Peace betwint
	are you fearefull to bear him mid ! You for it	"DCW2feOf VOII! who was the mollonger? Whome			1	" uen, when you are serued ader a Canopie: I	In the exemplification of which league the Veneti-	
	"are you fearefull to have him tried? Yea, for it will bee (worne and deposed to your face, that for	are the letters! Contince my negatives fee how			1	"drinke water out of my ski il when you drinke	ans, and other Princes were left to their choife,	erance.
1 1	"feare of meeting him, you have winked wilfully.				1 1	"wine out of golden cups: my Courfer is trained	whereof himfelfe notwithstanding would bee stiled	
1	"fhunned his fight, altered your courfe, warned	"not taken: well, you are infault: why? Because you are: who proueth it? No body: What Conie-			1	to the field, when your Gennet is taught to am-	the Protector. And to his leaguer Ambaffadors	
1 1	"your triends, flopped both eares and eies, against l	tures? So it femeth: To whom? to your ene-				" ble: when you are graced & belorded, & crouched	fent these instructions to moue the States to consi-	Signed with life
1 1	his detectors, and whenformer you took your you	mies, who fold it them / They will bycome in			1 1	"and kneeled vnto, then find I finall grace with our	der the Emperours afpired greatnesse, who now	Anna 526,
1 1	"TO DURE DIM OUT then was be fore afore hand to be!	"What other ground? None: Will show C			1	"Irifh borderers, except I cut them off by the knees.	commanded the Kingdomes of Naples, and Sieilie:	
1	"Out of your walke, Surely, this incline and falle	Lord : Why then of like they know it either they			1	At these girds the Lord Chancellor much fretted, and finding Kildare to bee no babe, deferred the hea-	the Dutchie of Millan, the Seignioric of Iean, the Countie of Alt, and other possessions in Italie, the	
		1 " Hade mine hand to linew. Or can bring forth the				ring of his cause, till more proofes were produced	whole Country of German, being the greatest	The great Do-
1 - 1	"fuch houour, or a Noble man put in so great trust:	" meffenger, or were prefent at a Conference, or pri-			1		part of Christendome, already cirher torally in he	minions of the
		"gie			<u>. </u>	,	Y v v v v 2 posses	Amperour.
		11						
1	, participation of the second					from treland; then in a great fume hee arofe from	part of Christendonie, arready tither totally	y in his posses-

possession, or facilly might bee at his command, hauing likewise the lower parts thereof, as the Countries of Artoys, Flanders, Zeland, Holland, Brabant Henault and others; from the which also a direct pailage lay vnto the Dutchie of Burgonie, Auerne and Burbon, besides the Realmes of Castile, Arragon, Granate, Galice, Afturia, Perpynyon, Rußinian, and other parts of Spaine; whereupon hee with some other Princes complained, and fought the French Kings deliuerance, which when it was gotten, King Frances acknowledged Henry next vnder Godto bee Sleidan.com.l.6 the onely meanes: * but was fo flacke in performance of Couenants, that when the Emperour fent to hauethem accomplished, he with vnprincely termes returned the answere, with challenge of combate, which when the Emperour had accepted;

hee shrunke backe, and made meanes of a league. (62) But howfoeuer the vnconftancy of our king Henry hath beene blanched forth for not holding himfelfe in his leagues or couenants of amity with other Princes; yet the cause being so as some have observed, there were occasions given aswell as oportunity taken: for Charles the Emperour contrary to couenant received Grancetor a taiterous rebell condemned by Parliament, whom hee refufed to deliuer, though the King made earnest fair for the man. Moreouer by his Ambassadors in a Treaty of perpetuall peace, holden at Windfor Castell, A.D. 1522.

the nineteenth of Iune, and foureteenth of King Henries raigne; it was concluded that Charles the Emperour should contract the young Princesse the Lady Mary, and take her to his wife, when shee came to able yeeres, which (as Holinfbed faith) himfelfesought, at his being in England, promising to remaine vnmarried, till that Princesse had past her Minority, and againe before the battell of Passa (the now grownevnto fixe yeeres of age) fent his Ambassadors to have her stiled Empresse, and to bee made Gouernesse of the low Countries; all this notwithstanding after that victory against the French King, hee beganne to recall, and to make small

account of that match, pretending the defire of his inbiects to have an heire of his body, which for long The Emperotte time hee could not by Lady Mary; but rather as the English judged, the cause was the money receiued in loane from King Henry, whereby (as hec thought) the greatest part of her portion was already paid; and the Emperours wants being great, *1fabel the fifter of Portingall was much affected: with * The daughter of Emanuel, and fifter to Ioha, both of them Kings of Pertin-gall. whom plenty of gold was expected, and great liberality offered by the Emperials in desire to have an

Empresse of their owne Nation. (63) Belides, against this marriage with Mary, his Counsell of Spaine also excepted, alleadging her to bee begot of his brothers wife, whereby her legitimation might bee called in question, as also the iffue of her body, which they in their wildom thought meet to preuent; these no doubt were the causes that the negotiation of these two Potentares grew daily more desperate. And for his falling off from the French King, these occasions may well bee

The occasions

All and Mon.

king Herries despleasure.

May ftyled Em

excele for nor

Alls and Mer.

Lady Maries legicimation cal-led in question.

pag 1192.

(64) That whereas it had beene couenanted at the marriage of Lady Mary vnto King Lewis departed this life, one hundred thousand Crowns should King Heary had against France bee paid to King Henry, and thirty two thousand Crownes yeerely for her Dowry, during terme of life; both which notwithstanding were retained and kept backe vnpaid. 2. That the faid French King had liftned vnto Cardinall Poole, who was fent to him from the Pope to stirre warres against England. 3. That contrary to his Couenant hee had entred alliance with the house of Medicis, and had married his daughter Magdalen vnto James the fift King of Scotland, then an hostile enemy vnto King Henry. 4. That hee had made fuit to match his fecond sonne Henry Duke of Orleance, with Lady Mary, the onely then Heire apparant of England, which when it came to conclusion, was put in suf-

pence by Anthonie Vefeie one of his French Commiffioners, who then made doubt whether the marriage of her mother being wife to the Kings owne Maries legitimabrother, could bee dispensed with, or the Children tion. begot in this second bed legitimate, or by law allowed to succeed in the throne. (65) These considerations no doubt drew the King to bee visconstant to them that were viscon-

ftant in themselves, and the question of Lady Maries King Henry put legitimation ferued fuch doubts in his melting con-fcience, as neuer after could be made follid: whereof Doctor Longland his Confessor, is said to bee the first man which told the King that his marriage was vnlawfull, vnto whole opinion other great Clerkes did likewise consent; whereupon a rumor ran that Loby Storp. the King would be disorced from the Queene, and the occasion thereof altogether cast upon the Cardinall of Yorke, in displeasure taken against the Emperour, vnto whome hee had beene fuiter for the Archbishopricke of Toledo; whereof failing, hee re- Cardinall offen. uenged his spleene vpon his innocent Aunt Queene ded with the Katherine, in moving the King to cast her off, and to become Suiter vnto the Dutcheffe of Alenzon, fifter Pelyd Vag. vnrothe French King; thefe ramors King Henry 10, Stow. himselfe forbad; but with no better successe then

which lamentable accident my penne must now (66) King Henry ouercome by the adulle of his Councell(left fo great a Dowry affighed should in- King Henries dammage England, if Lady Katherine of Spain mar-ried elfewhere) preferrly upon the doubth of the ried elsewhere) presently upon the death of his fa-ther, and not fully forty dayes after he had begunne his raigne(by the difpensation of Pope Iuly the second) tooke her to wife, shee having beene wedded and bedded with Prince Arthur his elder brother, as wee have faid. (67) This match made by king Henry the fementh, and Ferdinando of Spaine their parents, Prince

Henry having then attained but to tenne yeeres of

age, when he came to foureteene, profcribed against

was the report of Queene Annes death, the wife of the Viurper; both events following before the The More.

monthes of those relaters could be stopped; vnto

it, as by a deed under his own hand, I have here inferred, the tenor thereof faithfully translated out of Latine, is thus as followeth. In the name of God, Amen In the presence of you renerend Father and Lord in Christ, Lord Richard by the grace of God, and See Apostolike, Bishoppe disclaimed his of Winshesser. I Henry Prince of Water, Duke of Cornnall, and Farle School. Cornwall, and Earle of Chefter doe fay, affirme, and by these Writings declare; That although in the rime of my Minority, and when I was vnder yeares of marriage, I absolutely contracted matrimony with the most vertuous Lady Katherine, daughter of the King of Spaine, and although also the saide

Contract by reason of my being under age, dorh now appeare of it selfe insufficient, weake, and of no force, vigour, or efficacie: yet forasmuch as that now I am come to perfect yeeres, and that thereby the faid Contract may peraduenture bee thought & feeme, by filent confent, mutuall abode in one house, by giving and receiving gifts and tokens, or by any other way whatforeer, to becapparantly sufficient, and confirmed: Therefore I Herry Prince of wales doe here protest, and make knowne to all men that intend not to approue, ratifie, or confirme in any fort this pretended contract by any thing that I have said or shall say, haue done, or shall doe: but do at this present renounce the same, freely, and of mine owne accord, vaconstrained either by force, fraude, entreaty, or any way elfe : and I deny it, and wholy purpose and intend, quite to relinquish this pretended contract of Matrimony by the best wayes and meanes that by law more fully, effectually, and fuf-

ficiently I may or thall bee able to doe: and expresly

doe disauow the same, according as by these presents

I doe disclaime it, and disanow it; and I protest that

I neither will nor intend to consent vnto the said Contract, or vnto the faid Lady Katherine as my espousall and wife, by any word, deede, act, or gesture to be spoken, done, performed, or acted by me, or in my name, by any whomfoeuer, whenfoeuer, or howfoeuer for the time to come. In wirnesse whereof I desire, require, entreate, and adjure you all to give testimonie heereunto. By me Henry Prince of Wales.

The above pritten Protestation was read and made by the aforesaid Noble Prince Lord Henrie, in the pre-Sence of the reuerend Father and Lord in Christithe Lord Richard by divine permission Bishop of Winchester suiting indiciously in his Court; and I the Notary under-written. at that time present, the writer of his Acts in this behalfe appointed, and in the prefence of the under-named witnes les:in the yeare of our Lord God, 1505 the eight Indiction of the most holy See, of our father and Lord in Christ. by distine providence Pope Iulius the second, in his second yeere, and 27. of the moneth of lune, in which day the saide worthy Prince was of perfect yeeres of marriage, as then he did there affirme : in a certaine outward Court with in the royall Palace of Richmond, situate in the West-part of the said Palace: Concerning all and fingular which things, the aforesaid most noble Prince instantly required and entreased me the aforesaid Notarie to frame an instrument and likewise the witnesses underwritten to give testimonie. In instification of all and singular the premisses, the aforesaid Roble Prince hath superscribed his

name; and the witnesses as aforesaid entreated and requi

red have subscribed their names, with their owne hands. Miles Danbney. So it is as aboue faid C. Sommer fet, which I Iohn Read doe witnesse by my hand Thomas Rowthale. and Seale. Nicolas West.

> Harry Mainy. The second protestation when he came

to yeeres of marriage. Notwithstanding this prescription foure yeeres

after, and the first of his raigne, hee tooke the faid Lady Katherine to wife; and without all exception enioied her nuptial fociety the space almost of twenty yeeres; in which time shee had borne him two fonnes, both of them in their infancy taken away by death, and one daughter Lady Mary growne now The King refu-feth the Queens vnto tenne yeeres of age. But the scruple of Conscience increasing more tender in the Kings breast,

he first refused the Queenes bed; and then mouing the doubt vnto his owne Dinines, sent for the opinions of the most Vniuersities in Europe, as to Paris, Orleance, Bononie, Burges, Aniou, Padua, Telonz, Vin-centia, Vauia, Foro, July, and others, which how loc-uer they then food for the Pope, and hee allowing (by his Predecessors dispensation whose doing could not erre) the Matrimonie lawfull, yet these Academickes concluded against it, and fignified the contraric vnder most of their common Seales as the relation of the Kings Agent imploied youn the fame purpose for that of Padua doth import, which writing vnder his owne hand I have feene, and heere wil infert his words, as followeth.

Pleaseth it your Highnesse to bee advertised, that as this day I obtained the Common Seale of the vniver fily of Padua in substantiall and good forme; for all the Doctors were affembled upon Sunday, and the cafe was amongst them, solemnly and earnestly disputed all Monday, Tuefday, Wednefday and Thurfday, and this prefent Friday in the morning. And thereupon they concluded with your Highnesse, and desired a Notary to set his signe and hand unto an instrument by Leonicus and Simonecus deuifed in Corroboration of your cause, and thereby to testifie that this instrument was their deed, deuise, act and

conclusion. And more credece to be given to the said instru-ment they caused the Chancellor of the Potesta e here to set his hand and seale for the approbation of the Authority of the Notary : A Coppy of all the which things I fend onto your Highnesse by this Bearer, in most humble wise befecching the same to be advertised that the Generall of the Blacke Friers hath given commandement that no Blackefrier dispute the Popes Power: Notwithstanding Prior Thomas Omnibonus procureth daily new superscriptions, and will doe till the briefe of contrary commandemens shall come unto his hands. My fidelity bindeth me to advertife your Highnesse that all Luther and bee veterly against your Highnesse in this cause, and hath letted as much with ries disorce. their wretched poore malice without reason or authority, as they could and might, as well heere as in Padua and Ferrara, where bee no small company of them: I doubt not but all Christian V niversities if they bee well handled.

Austrich, Hungary and Scotland, I think it maruellous expedient for the preferment of this your most honourable At Venice the first of July

at night, Anno 30. And in another letter dated from Venice the xiii. of July the faid Agent thus writeth. I have procured onto jour Highnes as appeared by the Originals being in my hand alone, the Subscriptions of an hundred Disines, beside the conclusion Collegij Theologorum Pacamnot. under their common Seale, whereof I have fens your Highnesse a Copy &c.

will earnestly conclude with your Highnesse. And to ob-

taine their affent as well through Italie, France, Almaine,

and high caufe.

Now as touching their determinations, these are the abstractives taken out of larger discourses, whereof you may reade, if you please more in Hol-

The decree of the Lawlers in the Vni-uersity of Paris.

We the Deane and Colleage of the Vniversity of Paris. after many disputations and reasons, made upon both sides, turning and searching of Bookes, both by the Law of God, the Popes Law and the Civill Law, we say, that the Pope hath no Power to dispense in this case of Matrimo-Teouen under the Seale of their faculty at Saint Iohn Lateranense in Paris, May 2. 1530.

The Indgement of the Dinines in the Vninerfity of Paris.

The Deane and the faculty of holy Divinity in the Vni-uerfity of Paris to all them to whom this present writing shall come, wisheth Safety in Christ ; For the Question propoled we came together in the Church of Saint Martin, and there for the same cause had a solemne Masse of the Holy Ghost, and upon our oathes determine, that the forefaid Marriage with the Brothers wife departing without children is so forbid by the Lawes of God and Nature, that the Pope hath no power to dispence with such Marriages, whether they be contract or to be contracted; to which this our affertion we have caused the Seale of our faculty, with our Notaries signe to be put to this present writing. Dated in our Generall Congregation July 2. Anno 1530.

The determination of the Civilians of the Vniuerfity of Aniou.

After weethe Doctors and Rector had discussed and examined many places aswell of the Law of God as of mans Law, opon sufficient deliberation taken, wee define and determine that neither by the Law of God nor of Nature, st is permitted for any Christian man, no not with the authority of the See Apostolike, or with any dispensation granted by the Pope to mary the wife that his brother hath left. In witne fewhereof wee have commanded the Seribe of our Vniuersity to signe this present publike instrument with the great Seale of our faid Vniversity

AR and Men

The Determination of the Vniuerfity of Burges.

We the Deane and facultie of Dininity, in the Vninersity of Burges, after the example of Saint Paul the Doctor of the Gentiles, begin with praser to the quieting of the conscience to whom this our writing shall come; the Quesion moved is whether the brother taking the wife of his dead brother, the marriage confummated, and perfect, be a thing lawfull or no. We by much labour and turning of Bookes, every one of os a part by himselfe, free from corruption, the ett. to obey the truth, finde it forbidden by the Leuiticall law which is Gods, and that such marriage is an abhominable discouering of his brothers shame, which cannot be allowed by the authority of any man: which our determination we have caused to be signed with the seale of our faculty, the tenth day of I une, and yeere of our Lord. 1530.

The opinions of the Dinines in the Vniuerlity of Bonomy.

All wee Doctors of Divinity in this Vniversity, vonto whom this Question was propounded, whether it was forbidden only by the Ordinance of the Church, or elfe by the Law of God, that a man might not marry the left wife of his brother departed without children, and having examined the matter enery one of vs alone, lastly came altogether, and as it were line by line, and rule by rule, brought forth thereasons for the contrary part, with those of the most Reverend Father Cardinall Casetaine, yea and of the dispensation for raising up seed to his brother, spoken of in Deuteronomie; thus we determine, give indgement, and say, and confidently doe hold and witnes that such marriage is horrible accur fed, and to be cried out uppon, and utterly abhominable not only for a Christian man, but for an Infidel unfaithfull or heathen: and that it is prohibited under greeuous paines and punishments by the Law of God, of Nature, and of man, and that the Pope, though he may doe much, unto whom Christ gaue the keies of the Kingdome of Heauen, hath no power to a dispensation to anie man to contrast fuch marriage: In witnes whereof we confirme this our sudgement, both under the Seale of our Vniuersity, as also with the Ser's of our Colledge of Do-ctors of Dininity, and have subscribed it in the Cathedrall Church of Bonony this tenth of Iune, the yeare of our Lord. 1530.

The determination of the University of Padua.

Seeing that certaine great Orators and Ambassador occup tou certaine great orains and a monthlater did humbly require of vs. that were would workfafe to fearch out with all difference this question following, whether to marry the wife of our brother departed without children is fordiden such by the Law of the Charch, or by the Law of God also: and if forbid by both the Lawes, whether the Pope may dispence with any man for such Matrimony or no? which Question we have discussed and as farre as we can have made it chere, both private euery man by himselfe and after al together openly we say, indge, decree, witnesse, and for truth affirme, that such marriage is no marriage: yea and that it is abhorred and cursed of enery Christian man, and to be abominate as a greeuous sinne, and that it is cleerely forbidden under cruell penalty by the Lawes of nature, of God, and of man, and that the Pope unto whom the keies of the Kingdome of Heaven are committed by Christ the Sonne of God bath no power to diffense by the right of Law for any cause, suggestion, or excuse, that any such Matrimony should becontracted. In witnesse whereof wee have made this verting, and have authorized it, with the accusional visions writing, and have authorized it, with the accusional Scale of a sincersity, dated at Padua in the Church of the Heremites of Saint Augustine the first of Iuly, and secreof our Lord: 1530.

The determination of the Vniuerfity of Tholouze.

It was treated in our Vniversity of Tholouze : whether it were lawfull for a brother to marry her which had beene wife to his brother now departed, and without children : as also whether the Pope which hath the cure of Christs flacke allowing it by his dispensation, it be lawful. toresolue which, the best Doctors of Disinity, and the Laws, did sweare that they would obey the sacred Counfels, and would follow the holy Decrees of the Fathers and falling to conclusion stucke fast upon this point, that it is lawfull for no man, neither by the Law of God, nor by the Law of nature, to take her to wife that his brother hath left: neither can the Pope dispence with this law of God: as touching the commandement in Deuteronomy that the brother should marry his wife to raise up seede unto him, that his name should not perish among the Tribes of Israel, we answere that that Law was but a shadow and figure of things to come, which vanished away as soon as the substance of the Gospell appeared. Thus have we given our sentence, which wee have signed with our Authenticall Seale of this V niversity. Yeonen at T holouze the Calends or first day of October, the yeere of our Lord, 1530.

These and many more were read by the Lord Chauncellor vnto the lower house of Parliament that they might report in their countries, the Kings infrance of dinorie. To forward which as thought) Cardinall Wolfey the faid Lord Chan ellor was fent Ambaffadour into France, laden with Rich. Tarpia Crownes, as Guicehardine faith, and with forpaffing G. canen. Pompe as London behelde, who with 900, Horle passed the Bridge toward Doner, and so into France.

But rumors in England still spreading of the good | A.D. 1528. Queens dinorfe, about a yeere after, K. Hemy to fatisfie all, fent for his Nobles, his Councellers, Judges, The Kings Orac and many wife Commoners vnto whom he made bility. most pithy Oration, showing them with what care he had ruled almost twenty yeeres with honour and victory, which as he faid, would shortly be clouded, if he should die and leave them a liti- Edward Hall, gious Heire, examples he shewed of the wofull experience of Lancaster and Yorke, in whose dissentions the Realme was like to haue beene vtterly de-"ftroied:and although (faith he) we have a daugh-"ter to the great comfort of her mother and me, "yet it is told vs by great Clearkes, our marriage is "not lawful, but that the flands in case of illegitima-"tion; and we both, are said to liue in abomina- plaint, "ble Adultery; thinke you (my Lords) that these "words doe not touch my very foule, the perill "whereof we venture, as you doe also your inhericance, for which cause I have asked counsell of the greatest Clearkes in Christendome, and haue likewise heard the opinion of mine owne. But as touching the Queene, if it bee judged by the Law of God that the is my lawfull wife, there thall be nothing more acceptable vnto mee, whose noble conditions, I assure you, (besides her great Parentage) is most gentle, louing and obedient, whereof I have had a true experience almost these twenty yeeres and were I to choose a wife (if the 'marriage might fland with Gods Law' my Choife should be of her, before any other woman in the world, and if it shall otherwise be prooued, I shall not onely be most forrowfull for parting with so louing a companion, but much more have occasion to lament my chaunce, and life in so foule a fine

these thenare the sores that torments my minde

for the fauing of my foule, and for which cause I

have heere affembled you, that you may declare

to our louing Subjects this our true meaning, and

of to flay if it may be the rumors of vnftaied reports:

and this being faid, he let them to depart, each man

bewraying in countenance the affection of his mind,

fome pirrying the King to see him so perplexed, some

fanouring the Queene forrowed her case, and some

fighed deepely at this strange speech and sudden al-(68) But the Cardinall of rorke fearefull to wade George Course. too farre alone in these troubled waters, desired the affiftance of the learned in the Realme, and thereto affembled to decide the Kings marriage. got the Kings licence, which with his Legatine authority, commanded many learned men both Diuines & Lawyers, from Oxford and Cambridge, with the presence of many Bishoppes besides. These affembled at London, were shewed the Instruments and Seales of many forraine universities, all of them disabling the marriage, and holding the dispensation (allowing it) vnlawfull: but because that string The sestimonies of many Vniuer ficies fent vnio could not bee touched without found of reproch to the Pope, as also to cleare the King from calumnious reports; it was thought fittest to send the saide instruments to Rome, whereunto these so appointed set their owne seales, with an humble request to his Holinesse, that an indifferent Judge might be fent them, to determine this great and strange cause of the King; which was so followed by his Ambassadors in the Popes Court, that Laurence Campeius a Cardinall Com Cardinall of great credite and wildome, from their Confistory was sent into England, vnto whom, wife into England. Wolfey Cardinali of Yorke was joined in commission, with power to erect a Court, to heare the cause pleaded, & to gine sentence definitive, as they found

The Kine and Queene fummo-ned to appeare perfonally in the Court at Blacke

Queene Kathe-

the equity of law.

(69) To that end therefore a place was ordained at the Blacke-fryers in London, and the King with the Queene removed themselves vnto his palace of Bridewell necreadioining, whence ere long they were fummoned by Processe personally to appeare in Court, which accordingly they did, having scueral seates ordained under clothes of estate, mounted somewhat higher then the two Cardinals, the Prefidents, under whose feet sate the Scribes and other Officers; the Court being framed Confistorywise, was furnished with Bishoppes, Doctors, Lawyers, and learned Counsellors, in most solemne wife: the Doctors for the King, were Simpson and Bell, and his Proctors Peter and Tregonell: for the Queene were Filber, Standifb, and Ridley, a very little man but a great Dinine, the Court thus fet, and Commission read, the Cryer called the King, by the name of King Hemy to come into the Court, who forthwith an wered and faid, Here. Then was the Queene called by the name of Queene Katherine to come into the Court, who made no answere at all, but presently rose vp, and going about the Court to the King, fell down on her knees, before his feet, and

in the hearing of the people spake thus in effect.
"Sir, I desire you to take some pitty vpon mee, and doe mee Inflice and Right: I am a poore woman, a stranger borne out of your Dominions, having here no indifferent Councell, and leffe af-"furance of friendshippe. Alasse, wherein haue I " offended, or what cause of displeasure haue I gie uen, that you intend thus to put mee away! I take "God to my Judge, I have beene to you a true and humble wife, euer conformable to your will and plealure, neuer gaine-faying any thing wherein you tooke delight, without all grudge or discontented countenance; I have loved all them that loued you, howfoeuer their affections haue beene "to mee ward, I have borne you children, and bin your wife now this twenty yeers, of my virginity "and marriage bed, I make God and your own "conscience the Indge, and if it other wise bee proued, I am content to bee put from you with "shame. The King your Father in his time for wis-Ferdinando of Spaine my Father, accounted the wiser and more learned men, then at that time were? furely,it feemeth wonderfull to mee that "my marriage after twenty yeeres should bee thus

"who neuer intended but honefty. Alasse Sir, I fee I am wronged, hauing no Counfell to speake for me, but such as are your Subjects, and cannot bee indifferent vpon my part. Therefore I most "humbly befeech you, euen in Charity to flay this "course, vntill I may have aduite and counsel from Spaine; if not, your Graces pleasure be done. And rest departed the therewithall riling, and making lowly obeylance to the King, departed thence, leaning upon the Arme of her receiver, each man expecting shee had returned to her feat, when as shectooke directlie out of the place, which being perceined, the Cryer againe called her by the name of Queene Katherine to come into the Court; Madam quoth her guid, you are againe called; on, on, faid shee, it maketh no matter, this is no indifferent Court for me; therfore goe forward.

(70) The King perceiuing that the was departed, presently spake thus vnto the assembly. "I will The Kings re-(quoth hee) in her absence declare before you all, that thee hath beene to mee a most true, obegient and comfortable wife, endued with all vertuous qualities and conditions, according to her birth; and in lowlinesse equals any of baser estate. With that Cardinal! Wolfey made vnto the King an humble request, that his Maiesty would bee pleased to declare before that honourable audience, whether hee had beene the causer of this his intended dinorce, wherewith hee was charged in the opinions

My Lord Cardinall quoth the King, I can well reactive excuse you in this, and rather affirme that you fethibe Cardinally

have beene against mee, in attempting it thus far : | nal. but the chiefest motive for this matter, was the "scruple of conscience, conceined vpon certaine words spoken by the Bishop of Bayon, the French "Ambassador, sent from the King to conclude a marriage betwixt Prince Henry his fecond sonne, Duke of Orleance, and our onely daughter Lady "Mary, which Bishoppe made doubt, and desired respire to bee satisfied for the legitimation of our e said daughter, in respect of our marriage with this woman, being my owne brothers wife, which pre-" sently engendred such scruples and doubts in me, that my conscience hath beene continually vexed, * left by continuing in that finne after knowledge, I King Hemits draw Gods indignation against me, which I feare conscience and

wee haue already done in that hee hath fent vs no 'Issue male, and them that were begot in this nuptiall bed, no sooner came into the world, but were taken againe thence, and hopeleffe now of more issue by her, it behoueth me to consider the state of this Realme, and the danger that may follow

for lacke of a lawfull Prince to fucceed, This burden too weighty for my weake conscience (not in any dislike of the Queenes age, or person, with whom I defire onely to continue, if our marriage may ftand with the law of God) I have in this place affembled you our grave Prelates, and learned Diaines, to determine of, and will God willing lubmit my selfe to your judgements. My doubts in this case I moved in confession to you my Lord of Lincolne, and ghoffly father, whereof your felfe being fom what trobled, faid you would aske counsell of you all my Lords. Then of you "my Lord of Canterbury being Metropolitane, I got licence to put the matter in question, to which grant you all put your scales, as here in this Court the same is to bee seene. True it is said the Lord

Indeed faid Canterbury you did it not your felfe, but admitted mee to subscribe your name, and allowed Retrifer contra The Bishoppe of

fer that is not fo; Well, well, (quoth the King) you Archaelop of Canterbury. are but one man, against whom at this time we will

"dome was knowners been fecond Salomon, and wisest among their Kings; could they in this match bee so farre ouerseene, or are there now

mee your Seale; under your correction faid Roche- dicteth the called in question with new invention against me nor dispute, and so rose vp, and the Court adjourned

X X X X X 2

of Canterbury, and I doubt not but that all my bre-

thren here present will acknowledge the same. Not

so my Lord said the Bishoppe of Rochester, you ne-

uer had my hand to that Instrument, nor neuer shal,

and Monuments Forty Monafte

railing of his new Colledges , erected at Oxford and Ipfwich, by the licence of Pope Clement 7. Suppressed Mr. Fex in Acts forrie Monasteries of good fame, and bountifull Hospitalitie, converting all their goods and moveables into his owne Coters ; which were to ftuffed by Cardinall with treasure, that twelve Barrels full of gold and

by his faculties, licences, and other legantine exacti- Edw. Hall. ons did equalize the Kings yeerely Reuenewes, and laftly his pride fo intolerable, as no leffe then twelve hundred horse for his retinue, fourescore Wagons for his carriage, and threefcore Mules for fumpter horfes attended him into France. But sie transit gloria mundi, and the highest floud is subject to

Doctor Cranmer

Doctor Cratter

while, to grace Cranmer the more, he gratified him with the office of the Penitenciariship, and so dismisfed the Ambassadors : who all, saving Craumer retur-

Counfell Board, (both which commonly breede

lerable pillings, who to patch vp his pride in the

emulation vnto the man so estated) but for his intol-

Court, whether Queene Katherine had made her appeale: and Cardinall Campeius admitted to depart, went away in no such estate, as was held fit for a man of his place, but rather as one suspected to

carry with him more then his owne, had all his

"to answere such noble and wife personages as ye be, I have need of counfell, and they be in Spaine; "for thinke you my Lords, that any English subjects, "will bee for me against the King? for footh I know

Henrie VIII. THE SV CCESSION OF Monarch 58, Chap.21. Henrie VIII. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 58. ned to England; but he tooke his way towards the, enough to bee enuied at, by the Bishops of that Emperour (to whom the cause somewhat apperof Henton in Somersetshire, who by his visions from in his wisdome would have downe, lest his deliue-(82) Her, the King inuested Marchionesse of tained being then at Vienna in his expedition against Edward Duke (82) Her, the King inuested Marchionene of Pembroke with Mantle and Coronet, both in regarde ated Marchio. heaven forfooth, heartned him for the Crown; but rance from the bondage of darkeneile should be at- Queene Anna of Buckengbass beheaded. the Turke, vnto whose learned men he offered disbefore his owne Coronet could aspire to that toppe, tributed to any fleshly arme, or that shee who then dead Child. of her Nobilitie and many vertues (for forunne the nelle of Penputation, and in private conference to fatisfied Corne-Cornelius Agriphee worthily loft both head and all vpon Towerfate in the throne of the worlds full felicity, should lius Agrippa, the most respected for learning in the wordes of her Patent) which done, he tooke the feas, broke. hill for his treason, Ann. Dom. 1521. Vnto such fixe her senses on so fickle a Center, who having Emperours Court, as he held the Proposition most for France, accompanied with fuch a traine of his finnes the world was then subject, and into such had experience what it was to bee a Prince, must Nobles, as the like had not been feen, and among A.D. 1532 true. Whereupon others learned were discouraged Holiz (bed. conceites their reputed holines had brought them, henceforth practife the patience of a poore prisoner, Odob. 11. to dispute, and suffered Cranner to depart without amany Ladics Anne Bullen was one, where hee comnot onely among the fimple and vnlettered, but ewhich in the third yeere of her marriage, and feplained to the French King of the great wrongs offeny further proceedings. uen with them that seemed to bee learned indeed: cond of May, to act the wofull Scene of her Tra-(80) The matter thus manifested in most parts red him by the dull Pope as hee called him, who for by certaine predictions foreshewing a great degedy, shee came vpon the Stage, being sent to the of Christendome, this Gordians knot was lastly viloowould have Kings in person to attend his leasure at | dull Pope. The vaine feare luge, Prior Bolton of Saint Bartholmewes in London Tower of London, and charged with high Treason Rome, and contrary to their Kingly dignities, to ex-Tower of London, and charged with ingu A reason against the King: at whose first entrance sheef fell on Chancellor, sent to the sed by King Henrie himselfe, who now besides this of Prior Belten. was to fearefull, that hee built him a house your his marriage, beganne to call in question, what aupose themselues and affaires at his will there, to bonthe height of Harrow hill, storing it with proussions thority the Pope had in his dominions, which being dage and great danger; and therefore he earnestly necessary, to keepe himselfe from drowning, in A. the Dake of Norfolke; and Thomas Cromwell Secrerequested that the Pope might bee summoned to a The Popes vforafterwards debated in Parliament, an Act passed a tary her bringers, desiring God so to helpe her as she pation forbid by Parliament. gainst his vsurped Hierarchy, and all persons forbid-Councell, to answere the many abuses that hee had (84) But the Popes Holinesse feating the eyent was guiltleffe of those things whereof shee wastacden to appeale, or to make any paiments vnto offered vnto most of the Princes in Christendome, The Popeinci-King Henris 21-lowed the Pop of the game, if every man might fet and cast at his cused, befeeching those Lords to bee Petitioners Er Part 24 H.8. teth James King of Scotland a Rome. The Kings marriage with Lady Katherine, was and vnto himfelfe not the leaft; who for his part had K. Hewries mar-rage diffolued by Parliament. Crowne, thought it high time to lay hand on his unto his Maiefty in her behalfe, who lamenting her 60000. Angels by the same Parliament dissolved, and his separatiallowed him threescore thousand Angels monethly gainst England. own State, and to keepe what was left, left al would case, left her Prisoner with Sir Welliam Kingfen Conon from her, made by the Archbishop of Canterto maintaine an Army for his deliverance out of the bee gone; to which end he follicited many Christian stable of the place, Castle of Angell; where the Emperials under the burie to stand good, and effectuall by Law, and that Princes to fland on his part, and among them fent Fox Mart.1197 (88) I will in no wife excuse her guilt, having had Prince of Orenge kept him. Which his bufincffe be- Inha Stew pa. 945 Queene Katherine from thenceforth should be calhis Brief vnto I ames the fift king of scotland, defiring indgement and death by law, though others, and ing ended in France, and the King againe returned Amo Dom. 1733. led Princesse Dowager, which doings shee tooks so Katherine Down his affiftance against King Henry of Englan 1, whom in into England, he prefently (though printity) married into England, he prefently (though printity) married the faid Lady Marchionesse in his Closet at White-ball, in the presence of many; the Lady Anne Sauge the Ball in the presence of many; the Lady Anne Sauge the Ball in the presence of many; the Lady Anne Sauge the Ball in the presence of many; the Lady Anne Sauge the Ball in the presence of many and Dockor. Lad doing the Greften. that vpon inft occasions before mee hane done, but to hart, as fiee procured the Popes curie against King his Confiftory hee had pronounced to bee an Herewill peake from them what they have faid; and Henrie, and his Realme, which curse was set vp at tike, a Schismatike, a manifest Adulterer, a publike namely one, that wrote thereof vitto a worthy and Dunkirke in Flaunders, for that the bringer thereof murtherer, a committer of Sacrilege, a Rebell, and renerent persons in whose defence his wordes are bearing her Traine, and Doctor Lee doing the King Henry ma durst come no necrer. And the Pope in reuenge of Helinfo.peg 936 convict of Lafa Maiestaris, for that hee had risen athese: Is feemeth very plaine, that the crimes supposed Mych. Sandi. himselfe, being set in his Consistory accompanied rites of their conjunction, who was afterwards con- ried Anne Bal. gainst him who was his Lord. And therefore he had against this Christian Queene Anne, were matters contriued by the deuise of the Pope, and his Instruments with his Cardinals, proceeded to the Censure of these fecrated Bishop of Chester, Conentree; and Lichfield, inftly deprined him of his faid Kingdom, and would Pope (lement 7 adjudgeth the great Princes marriage, which he then adjudged and President of Wales. dispose the same to him and other Princes: so as her enemies. None of them all that were accused in the to stand most firme and Canonicall, and ensoyned (83) The Romanists much fearing that Babel matriage lawhat could get it. they would affift to recouer the same, a very good Same Treason, confessing the Act even vnto death, but King Henry to hold matrimoniall fociety with the would downe, if Queene Anne might bee heard aprouision, and very well foreseene; for notwithhave left direct Tejtimonies in writing to the contrary; faid Katherine his lawfull wife and Queene, and in gainst wicked * Haman, sought to underproppe the standing these boisterous blasts from Rome, the King * The Pope. one meane Groome excepted, namely Marke Smeton that estate to account and maintaine her as it became foundations thereof, with certaine deniles of their kept his Crowne, and was rather feared of the made confession vpon some promise of life belike, but had a King and louing husband to doe, and if he refuled owne; and that the same might passe without note Popes best Abetters, then did feare any potent his head cut off before hee was aware or had time to re-call what he had faid. The like did Cromwell the Stto accomplish these premisses, then to be compelled of suspition, they laid their forgery even upon power that the world could afford, whose thoughts thereunto, and neuer after to be heard in any Court Heauen it selfe; whose pretended Oracle Elizacretary fignifie to the King, after the priloners had derhis who had were now busied for the Coronation of his Queen. as touching the inualiditie of the faid marriage, and The thunde beth Barton (commonly called, the holy maide of (85) For Queene Anne conceived, and perceived beene throughly examined in the Tower by the rings of Pope to pay the expences of the faid trauerfe, as he the ho-Kent) was made to bee; and the pillers of this god-Queene Ame of the Roma. with Child, her royall Coronation was forthwith Councell, who wrote thus in his letter on the same ly father should limit and thinke meete. This was leffe Fabricke were Edward Bocking, a Moncke by profession, and doctor of Divinity, Richard Masters, prepared, which with all royall observances upon day; many things have been objected; but nothing done a yeere after that the King had married Queen the first of Iune, being Whitsunday was performed; confelled, onely fome circumstances have been ac-Anne, and bare date from Rome, the 23, of March Parson of Aldington, the Town wherein she dwelt, Richard Deering a Monke, Hugh Rich a Frier, John phetes and the seventh of September following, shee bare knowledged by Marke. And fo doth Cranmer Arch- Archbifton and yeere of Christ 1534. For in the meane while into the world that excellent Princesse, which af-Adestone, and Thomas Abell, Priests, put to their helbishoppe of Canterbury in his letter of comfort vnto Cramers let'er King Henry had fet his affection vpon the Lady Anne Stelden com G terwardes proued the mirrour of the world, euen A.D. 1533. the King, who fore lamented that fuch a ftarre was Bullen a Phenix indeed in his Princely eye, and anoping handes, and Henrie Gould Bachelour of Divini-Lady ELIZABETH, our lare and most famous failen, if her gilt could bee proued, and willed his ther Hester for Englands saluation, both in her selfe ty, with Iohn Fifter the Reverend father of Rochefter, Quceле. Read S:atur. Highnesse to stand in defence of the Gospell as shee and roiall Bud succeeding, as the heavens and world imploied their paines to daube these downe-falling (86) True it is, that the zealous conversation of doe witnes to this day. Shee was the daughter of had done, without any report of confessing or acwalles, with their vntempered Morter. The Scribes The difeest of this godly Queene gaue great encouragements vnto knowledging any fuch Acts as were objected, which Sir Thomas Bullen Viscount Rochford, Earle of Wiltthat let their pens for her Miracles, were Edward many, more publikely with boldnes to professe the as Sleidon writeth , were Adultery, and incest , but on-Stre, and of Ladie Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolke. This Earle Thomas Thwaites Gentleman, and Thomas Lawrence Register, Fox Martyr. Gospell; so that the Ministers formerly fled in case iustly (faith he) as it is supposed and proved since: With Steidans com 1. 20 belides Haukherst a Monke who writte a letter that of Religion, returned againe into Fngland, where her were executed certaine Gentlemen of the Kings Priher father was the fonne of Sir William Bullen was forged to bee fent her from Heauen; and Rithe new Testament (translated by Tyndall) was read, uie Chamber, namely, Norris, Weston, Brewton, and one whose wife was Lady Margaret, the second daughshard Risby and Thomas Gould, were the men which Marks, which contrary to his conscience (as it is reported) 2. Rachford. but with such dislikes to the Bishoppes, that they dispersed her Miracles abroad to the world. This ter and Coheire of Thomas Butler Earle of Ormand, got it to be burnt. Notwithstanding, to tickle the for hope of preferment sufferibed to a bill, whereby hee Norm western and the faid Sir William was the sonne of Sir Godfreholy maide Elizabeth made a Votarisse in Canterbury, Kings care, they preached against the Popes supre-Six Godfrey Ba len Lord Maior condemned both himselfe and all the rest. was taught by Bocking her Ghoftly Father, and ful-Bullen Lord Maior of London, who lieth buried in macy, and tooke the oath for the King themselves; (89) For vpon the leuenth of May, her brother Saint Laurence Church in the Iewrie, pictured in his winding sheete vpon a Plate of Brasse, and about pected Paramour, to counterfeit many fayned tran. The con abolished his authority by Act of Parliament, and George Bullen Lord Rochford, for his supposed offence ces, and in the fame to verer many vertuous words tings of Ebze 40.10 suppressed many Monasteries; leaving their revewith these foure before named, were all of them behis Graue-stone vpon a border of brasse in many for the rebuke of finne, vader which, more freely newes to the Kings will; faire introductions indeed shee was heard against Luthers Doctrine, and the headed upon the Tower hill, but none of them places these words are written. Now thus, Now thus, for what they intended, as the sequell of the fixe confessing the Action; I have heard it reported that Now thus, whose Charity was extended upon the Scriptures translation, then defired of many: nei-Articles by them procured, doth manifestly shew: Rochford the Queenes brother comming to her bed ther so onely, but that shee gaue foorth from God, poore housholders of that Citie, in distributing a and those purposely made against the maintainers and his Saints, by fundry fuggestine Renelations, Edward Hall. fide to folicite a fuite, leaned thereupon to whilper mong them a thousand pounds. His Lady was of the Golpell, whereof Queen Anne was the chiefe, her in the eare; which the Spials gaue forth that hee Anne, eldest daughter and Coheire vnto Thomas that if the King proceeded in his dinorce, and second who first was most fauourable to those learned Didid so, to kisse the Queen, howsoever, they are dead, Lord Hoo and Halling, and his difcent out of the marriage, he should not raigne in his Realme one uines, that laide mans faluation voon the Rocke and the Queene must die, who two dayes before moneth after, nor rest in Gods fauour the space of house of the Bullens, an ancient Family in the Coun-Christ, next in procuring a tolleration from the king had been arraigned in the Tower, the Duke of tie of Norfolke; accurfed therefore be the pen, that an houre. But the truth discouered by Gods true Norfolke being her Judge; to her inditement shee Ministers, this Oracle gaue place as all other such for them, whole doctrine did daily vndermine the flanderoufly bringeth this rose from a defiled Bed Papall foundation: & laftly, she by no means would answered so effectually, that thee seemed to cleare Queene Anne did, when Christ by his death stopped their lying whose Serpents mouth to vphold his God the Pope, all matters laid to her charge; yet was shee found condemned and beheaded, consentto marry the King, vntill a lawfull dinorce mouthes: for her selfe and * seuen of her Disciples hath spewed out his poison of vntruthes, and made was had for his separation from Lady Katherine; guilty, and vpon the nineteenth day of May, was his tongue a sharpe sword against the Lords annoinwere executed for Treason at Tiborne, and the ohis brother Arthurs wife, which thing this Pope brought to a Scaffold erected on the Greene within ted; let him therefore receive his portion with the ther fixe put to their fines and imprisonment. With Edward Eaching. Richard Detring. Richard Stibly. Richard Maifter. greatly withftood: these were causes sufficient to the faide Tower, where, in prefence of many no-Serpent of deceir, and his reward with Satan the fathe like counterfeit reuelations and fained predictible men, the Lord Mayor of London, the Shiriffes, moue his Holinesse to bend his brow, and by his ons this Generation of Hypocrites had brought ther of Lies. Inframents in Court to cutte off the principal moand some principall commoners, shee is said to have (81) This Ladies religion was different from all Edward Lord Stafford, Duke of Buckingham unto his Aune Bullen: ner, who foreflowing no time tookethe Ball before spoken these words in their presence. Papall indulgences, imbracing the Gospell that then vnhappy ende, when as by the working of John de le A.D. 1536. hisrebound. (90) Good Christian people, I am come hither Robert Greene, began in our vulgar language to bee read, for which Court, his own Confessor, together with Nicolas Hop-(:7) For the Queene deliuered of a dead Child. to die; for according to the Law, and by the Law Queene Anne Ian. 29. cause saith Sleidan she was accounted a Lutheran, cause kins a Monke of the Carthufian Order, in the Priorie "I am judged to death, and therefore I will speake speech at her and the Kingsaffection wandring elfewhere, gaue them occasion to worke on that Subject, which God se nothing against it; I come hither to accuse no Aaaaaa

Brewion &c Mark

772	Henrie VIIJ. THE SVCC	ESSION OF Monarch 58.	Book.	-	(bap. 2	Henry VIIJ. ENGLANDS		
	"man, nor to speake any thing of that whereof I am	hands, charged herin the presence of God and his	1			as for helping and relicuing of our children, which wee haue had by the sufferance of your lawes by a	threatned foarer flormes by the Skies ouercaft : fo	
	"accused and condemned; as for mine owne offen-	Angels, as the would answere her before them, when	· I		İ	long continuance, which as we thinke is great hurt		
	"ces God knoweth them, and vnto God I remitte	all should appeare in judgement, that shee should so	1		i	and discommodity to the Common-wealth.	nished with Horse, Armour, Artillery and Abille-	-
	"them, befeeching him to have mercy vpon my	fall downe before the Lady Maries Grace her daugh-	· {		1	Theolini A 1		
	foule; and if any person will meddle in my cause,	ter in Law; and in her name in like manner, aske her	1		Taxe of quistle	a taxe, or quindecim granted vnto you by Act of	vpon the props of their giddy inuentions. Their pretence was Religion, and defence of holy Church,	
	I defire them to judge the beft; and fo I take my leave of the world, and of you all, and heartily do	forginenesse for the wrongs shee had done her, for till	1		1	Parliament, payable the next yeere: which is, and e-		
	"besecch you to pray for mee; and I besecch Iesus	that was accomplished (she said) her conscience could			1	uer hath been leueable of schepe and catall: And the	their Banners painted with the fine wounds of our Lord, the Challice, the Cake and other like inuentions of Power and the Challes and other like inuentions of Power and the Cake and the Cake and the C	
	" faue my Soueraigne and Mafter the King, the most	not bee quiet: what her offence was to her ward,	. [1	schepe and catall of your Subjects within this saide		
	"godied robled and anal-0 Di	wee know not, but may be supposed not to bee ca-	1		1	Shire, are now at this instant etterly decayed and	name of the Lord: and fo forward, and fo feruent	1
	"godlieft, nobleft, and gentleft Prince, that is, long "to raigne ouer you. These words she vitted with	pitall, the Queenes case wayed, the time considered, and her enemies none of the meanest, onely	.}		1	gone. Whereby yff your Grace will take the faide		
	"a smiling countenance, which done, sheekneeled	this I observe, that as shee cleared her conscience	1		1	taxe, Your faid Subjects should be constrained to		
	"down, and with a feruent Spirit faid, to Iefus Christ	of the leffer crimes, so vidoubtedly would she have			1	pay iiij.d. for a beaft, and xii.d. for xx. fchepe: And		
	"I commend my foule, Lord lefus receine my foule	done of the greater, if any had been committed, and	1		1	that would bee an importunate charge to theym.		
	and repeating those words very often, surdainely	fo as herfelfe instantly defired, I count her case to be	1			confidered the pouerty that they bee in already, and		
	the stroke of the sword sealed the debt that she owed	charitably spoken of, and leave her and them vnto			1	the loile which they have suffained these two yeeres		
	vnto death; whose head and body was buried in the	the Lord.			1	Dy-pait.	constrained by the Rebels as the said Archbishoppe	t
	quier of the Chappell in the Tower.	(94) But as one pillar for the Gospels desence was	1			The fowrt Article is, that wee your trew & faith-	testified vnder his owne hand : but voluntary and	1
	(91) Now that her death was rather fought for,	fallen by the death of Queene Anne, so another was	ł		Counfellors dif	full Subjects, thynkes that your Grace takes of your	most forward were the Clergy of those parts, the	
na Maria mas.	then any wife deferred, doth witnesse the fworde	railed, by raising Cronwell from the base of his	The tiling of			Councell, and very nyghabour you, fuch Persona-		
g Henry mar-	whole edge was not wiped from the bloud of her	birth, no better indeed then a Blacke fruithes for	Cromwel.		i	I ges as be of lawe birth, and finale reputation which I	Robert Conflictle, Sir Francis Bigot, and Sir Robert Ne-	Robert Costes
Queene es death,	death, before the marriage bed of the King was pre-	who feruing great wolfey in the office of his Solici-	1		1	haue procured the premyffes, most especiali for their	uil all of them Knights, Iohn Lacy, Richard Beamond	brary.
es death,	pared for another wife, which was Lady Lane Seimer	tor was sample red by him for the Commerce of			1	lingler jucte and advantage: the which wee furnect i	and Robert Bowes Esquires; the Bailiffes of Sneythe	
	in vertues her equally who you the next day fold	forty Monasteries, to the erection of his Colledges			1	to beethe Lord Cromwell. & Sir Richard Rich Chan		
	Howing being the twentieth of May, was married un-	at * Oxford and Tolmick by which he manual to Co	* S.Fridefwide		1	celler of the augmentations.	Generall, was Robert Aske a meane Gentleman, and	1.
Stow.	to the King, and succeeded this vnfortunate Lady in	at * Oxford and Ipfwick; by which he mounted those steps of estate, which set (but not kept) him in the			Tenthes of fairi	The fift Article is your Gracero banasha with	one Rudstone his Affociate in the Field. Other Com-	1 .
	place of his Queene.	high Chaire of his authority; first by King Henrie	1		Tenthes of spiritual limings.	and first fruits of every spiritual promotion, of the	mandersthey had out of the Commoniort, as I ames	1
	(92) Andalbeit Queene Anne in her life time had	hee was made Master of his Iewell-house, then Ba-			1	I value of XX,1, and about. And of all other under the 1	Diamond General of the Foot and announ Either	1
	finned as David; or by frailety fell as who finneth	ron of Okeham in Rutlandfire, then Knight of the	1		1	faid value which doe not keepe refidence and hofpi-	man, filed by himselfe and others, the Earle of Po-	1
en Ame	not; yet that it should be solicentious and vnnatu-	Garter, ere long was created Earle of Elex, then was	1		1	tality of their faid Benefices,	uerty. What authority these bare, among these rude	l
ght to die leffe,	ral, the quiet of her conscience at her death, did well	hee made I and green Chemberlaine and I all a	1			The fixt Article is, that wee your true Subjectes	multitude may partly bee perceived by their Man-	
	witnes the contrary, & her innocency fo much more	hee made Lordgreat Chamberlaine, and laftly or- dained the Kings Vicar Generall; and thus farre	į .		Diflike of Bi- shops.	find them grieued, that there be diners Bishoppes of	dates, and Commissions, sent foorth in their names,	1
	apparant, asher Christian modesty, in excusing her	fortune brought him from the forgefor a fail.	1			Ingland, of your Grace late promotion, that have	and subscribed with their owne hands, as from the	1
	Soueraigne, and yeelding obedience to the law how-	(ar) For Vine (I Circle)	1		1	fubuertyd the faith of Crift, as we thinke, which is	Originals of some of them is heere to be seene.	
	foeuer Poole and Paulus Tourus from their Cardinals	(95) For King Henry vnstaied in religious resolu-	Statut.in An. 31.		•	the Archbyshoppe of Canterbury, the Byshoppe of	Lords, Knights, Masters, Kinsmen, and Friends, wee	The Captai
	Dicence have filled their pennee to bloss how fairs	tion (the Supremacy ferled where hee would have	H.8,c.13		1	Rochester, the Byshoppe of Salesburie, the Byshoppe	perceine that yee bee informed that this Affemble our Pil-	of the Cor
Va .p.1234	name, whose death notwithstanding was so grieuou-	it, and the Reuenewes of all Monasteries given him	l		ł	of S. Daueys, and the Bishoppe of Deuelyn. And in	grimage, which we by the favour and mercy of Almightie	tions letter
wa.p.1134	fly taken among the German Protestant Princes,	by Parliament) fought no further to reforme the	1		Í	especiall as wee thinke the beginning of all the tro-	God intendyth to proceede in; is because the King our So-	1
	who were minded to haue made K. Henry the head	Churches abuses, but onely gaue way that the	i		1	ble of this Realme, and the gret exactions that hath	neraigne Lord hath had much inpocessions of us, wee	
	of their league, that thereupon they vtterly brake	Lords Prayer, the Creede, and Commandements	1		I	beene taken of your poore Communalty, have ry-	doubt not but yee doe knowne and remember that to our	
- 1	off, and refused him, onely for the cause and death	might be read in English, which Cromwell procured	The Lords		1	fen by the occasion of the Bishoppe of Lincolne : by	powers we have beene alwaies as ready in paiments and	
)	of this most Christian Queene, whose religion and	to be enacted by Parliament. The Commons then			ł	whole officers, and by other of the Lord Crompels	feruices to his Highnesse as any his subjects: and further	ĺ
per to the pticke of efter.	vertues dayly shewed forth the fruits of her life, both	misliking that their mumblings must downe, and	Creed,and		1	feruants, a great rumor & noise is risen, and the com-	to accretaine you of the cause of our said assemble and pil-	
pticke of	in preferring the best men of gifts vnto the best be-	the Monkes fore troubled to mingle English in their			I	mune voce is, that fuch Iowellys, plate, and other	grimage is this, That for somuch that such simple and e-	l
exten to the	nefices, and also retaining for her Chapleins them of	Masses, the Lincolnshire men beganne a Commo-	English tongue.		1	anornaments of our Parish Churches, which we oc-	uill disposed persons being of the Kings Councell, hath not	
opricke of	good fame, whose godly exhortations shee did not	tion under the conduct of D. Mackarella Monke,			1	cupie in the service and honour of God, should bee	onely incensed his Grace with many things which bee con-	
bery.	onely follow, but would will them freely to tell her	who named himselfe Captaine Cobler, and his fol-	Lincoln (bire.		1	taken from vs and spoiled in lyke maner and facion,	trarie to the Faith of God, honour of the Kings Malefty,	
codly life of	what they faw in her amiffe. So merciful fhee was	lowers were growne well neere vnto twenty thou-			}	as the housys of Religion hath bene. For a reforma-	and the Common wealth of this Reaime: and thereby hath	
odly life of ne Anne.	to the poore, that thee spent almost her whole reue-	fand. Against these, the King in person prepared,	1		1	tion of all and syngler the aforesayd abyses, Wee	destroied, and yet otterly intendeth to destroy the Church	
- 1	new for their reliefe, and in nine moneths space di-	fending forth his command vnto fenerall Counties,	l .		{	your poore and trewe subjects humble requirys	of Final and and also seeing and color	
1	ftributed among them to the value of fifteen thou-	to charge them with a taxation of furnished Souldi-			i	your grace and maiesty, that it might please your	of England, and the Ministers of the same, as yee know so wel as we: but also the said Councel hathrobbed & spoiled,	
nd Mm.	fand pounds, intending likewife to befrow a great	ers to meet him at Amphell, as by * one we have feen	* King Henries letter dated at		1	highnesse to call vnto you the Nobility of this your	and further intendyth veterly to robbe and spoile the	
ng owns	stocke into the foure quarters of the Realme, to fet	figned with the stampe of his hand, and fent vnto the	Windfor 8. of October, and 27		1	Realme, to see such Order and direction concerning	whole body of the Kings Realme, and that as well all you,	
	poore Artificers on worke. Now if the tree bee	Bishoppe of Excesser for foure hundred able men,	October, and 27 of his raigne.		1	all and fingler the premiffes, as may frand with ho-	as vs, if God of his infinite mercy had not caused such as	
3.78.	known by the fruits, as truely it is then these were	whereof fixescore to be Archers, which great prepa-	of the rangue.		j	nor and fewerty of your grace, the welthe and pro-	hathtaken, and beereafter shall take this pilgrimage up-	l
	her lights that flined before men, and the workes	ration being knowne to the Rebels, they fent to his			1	sperity of your Realme, and the contentation of vs	on them to proceede in the same : and whether all these	1
	that showed the fruites of her faith farre from such	Maiefly these Articles subscribed with many of their			1	your poore Subjects, and other the whole Commu-	things be true or not, we put it to your conscience. And if	l
	finnes, as the fway of those times charged her with.	hands, the tenour whereof out of the Originall it selfe was as followeth.			1	nalty of this your Realme. Whereby wee shall not	yee thinke it bee true, and fight against vs, which inten-	1
!	(93) And by the working of the same faith, her	as as tonoweth.	Ì		I	onely accept your Grace to be the Head and Sone-	deth the Comes mealth of this Rading and making all	
fehe relati-	penancy was feene, in her forrowes conceined and	Tathe Fine am Conseign I			1	raigne of vs your Subjects, but also accept and take	me trult ve hall have final freed . For this citarian	
a noble	thirfting reconciliation vnto them whome shee had	To the King our Soueraigne Lord.			I	your Grace to bee Supreme head of the Church of	we trust ye shall have smal speed: For this pilgrimage we have taken hytt for the preservation of Crysts Churche of	
	any wile offended as by this worthy example is an	Pleaforh ir wour Wighness hand	-		1	Yngland, which wee doe knowledge your Grace	this Realme of England, the King our Soueraigne Lord	
	parant; when the day before the fuffered death, be-	Pleaseth it your Highnes to be advertised, that your	The aggreusn-		l	trewe inheritance and right,	the Robility, Barony and Comens of the Same, and to the	
	ing attended vpon with fix Ladies in the Tower, fhee	poore Comminalty, true and faithfull Subjects, in	mons of Lincoln-		1	Alfo your faide trewe and faithfull fubiects, with	intent tamake petition to the Kings Highnesse for refor-	
	took the Lady Kingfton into her Presence Chamber,	your County of Lincolne, at this present time assem- bled, findeth our selues grieued in these Articles	fbirc.		1	the hole affent of all your Communatrie of the	mation of that which is amife within this his Realm. And	
	and there locking the dore vpon them, willed her to	hereafter following.			\	faid Shire, most humble besechith your gracious	for punishment of Hereticks & Subuerters of Lawys; and	
	110 downe in the chaire of Effate: whereanto the an-	First for the finance for the			The Commons	Maiefty, to perdon this poore bearer in doing this	neither for mony makice, nor displeasure to any person, but	
	fwered, that it was her duty to fland, and not to fit at	First, for the suppression of so many religious hou-	Suppression of		request for the	his meffage to your Highnesse, who is your trewe	fuch as be not worthy to remaine neere the King our Soue-	
	all in her presence, much lesse vpon the seat and state	les, as be at this instant time suppressed. Whereby	Monasteries -		pearer.	and faithfull fubicet, and hath taken this mellage	ragne Lords person. And further we know if yee should	
	of her, her Queene. Ah Madam quoth fhee, that ti-	the service of God is not onely minished, but also the poorealty of your Realme bee vnrelieued, and			1	vpon him for the feruent loue that hee hath to your	obtaine as we trust yn God ye shal natt, then ye put both vs	
	tle is gone. I am a condemned perfore and her law	many perfore been prefer at air liniary and			1	Grace most in especiall, and for the staying of your	andyou, your heires and ours in bondage for ever; and	
	hane no estate left me in this life; but for clearing of	many persons bee put from their livings, and left at			I	Cominaltie euer fens this ruffull began, hath bene as	further yee are fure of the interdiction of Crysts curse,	
	my conscience I pray you sit down; well said the	large, which we thinke is a great hinderance to the			I	gladde with all his diligence to stay the commune	and we clere, and out of the same: And if wee ouer come	
	Lady Kingfon, I have often plaide the foole in my				l	people for the effusion of blood, as beeall his powre	you, yee shall be in our wylls; wherefore for a conclusion,	
	youth, and to fulfill your command, I will doe it	The fecond Article is, that wee humblie befeech	Act of View		1	he might. The King with good words pacified these	if you willnot comen with vs for a reformation of the	
	once more in mine age, and thereupon fate downe	your Grace, that the Act of vies may bee repealed,			ł	Commons, who laying afide weapons imbraced	Premises, we certific you by this our writing that we will	
	vnder the cloth of estate, which no sooner was done,	because we thinke that by the said Act we be cleare-			1.	their pardons.	feycht and dye, both against you, and all those that shalle	
rample of ne Auses	but that the Queene most humbly fell vpon her	ly reftrained of our liberties, in the declaration of our			Commotions in Yorie-foire.	(96) But this cloud scarsly ouerblowne, ano-	about pards to stoppe vs in the said pilarymage: And	
nci c ,	knees before her, and with teares, holding vp her	Willes, concerning our lands: aswell for the pay-			· orge-poire.	ther more dangerous arose in the North, which	God shall show his Grace and mercy therein: And then	
	, and wan ceases, nothing up tier	ment of our debts, for doing of your Grace service,]	, which		
		as			'		Jee Jee	

Came.

By mee Robert Aske vn the name of all the Comynalty and Ba-

bled in pilgrimage, For the Barony and Cominalty of the

Ex MS. Of fuch terrour and haughty spirit was this Captaine Aske, that when Lancaster an Herald at Armes, was sent to declare the Kings message in Pomfret Castle (which the Rebels had got by surrender from the Lord Darey) hee so blustred out his answers, that the daunted man exculing himselfe to bee but a meffenger, fell before him on his knees; till the Archbishop of Yorke tooke him vp, saying, it was not befeeming the Coate hee wore, to prostrate to The audacious any, but onely to his Soueraigne. Reade likewise if dealings of the you please this strange Mandate from some meane

> recorded by themselues in these very, words. To the Commyns of Hawkefide parish Bailiffs, or Constables, with all the Hamlets of the same.

man among them; the falle suggestion that they pos-

sessed the ignorant with, and the Oath whereunto

these holy Pilgrimes were sworne, as I finde them

Welbeloued we greet you well and whereas our brother Pouerty, and our brosher Rogers, goith forward, is openly for the aide of afistance of your faith, and hon Church, and

for the reformation of f ch Abbeys and Monasteries, now Jot in regormation of a nower was cruinages is never disjoined and subpressed without any suft cance, is herefore guidebrethers, for squared now so we say therefore had so out for a yell and helpe, we doe not onch effectivally desire you, but also under the pains of deady some wee comaunde you, and every of you, to bee at the stoke Greene beside Hawkeside-kirke, the Saturday next being the

xxviij. day of October by xi. of the Clokke, in your best array : as you will make aunswer before the heigh ludge at the dreadfull day of Dome, and in the payne of pulling downeyour Houses, and leasing of your guids, and your bodies to be at the Capteyns will: For at the place aforelaid, then and there, yee and we, shall take further direction concerning our faith, so farre decayed, And for gudde and laudable Customes of the Country, And such naughty inventions and strange Articles now accepted and admitted, fo that our faid brother bee subdued, they are lyke to goe furthwards to otter undoing of the Commvnwelth. (27) And the more to drawe forward the rude truths against

multitude which were forward enough of themfelnes, they et forth in writing these slandcrous vntruthes against the King. 1 The first is that no infant shall receyue the bleffed Sacrament of Baptiline, bott onleffe an trybett to bee payd to the King.

2 The second is that no man vnder xx1. Landes shall eyee no brede made of Wheate, ner Capon, chekyn, gois, ner pigge, bott onleffe to pay a rybett to the King.
3 The third is that for every ploghe land the King will have en trybett, with other diverseex-

treme vrgent causes, and hertely fare ye well. The Oath of the holy Pilgrimes.

Te shall not enter into this our Pilgrimage of Grace for

The oash of the Pilgrims.

the Commyn weith , but only for the love that you doe bere unto Almyghty Godde, his faith, and to holy Churche militant, the maintenance thereof, to the prefernation of the Kings person, his islew, to the purifying of Nobilitie, and to expulse all vilayne blode, and euill Councellers agaynst the Commyn welthe, from his Grace and the privile Counsel of the same, and that ye shall nat enter into our e faid Pilgramege, for no particuler proffice to your felfe, nor to doe no displeasure to no princy person, but by Coun-

Monarch 58. cell for the Commyn weithe, ner slee, ner murder for no enuye, but in youre hertt: put away all feare and dread. and take afore you the Crosse of Criste, and in your herts his faith, the restitution of the Churche, the Subpression of these Herytyks, and their opymons, by all the holle contents And for the observation of this Oath, heare ano-

ther commande of the Commissioners, as we find it recorded.

To the Bayliffes and Communes of the Towne of skarbora.

Welbelouyd, we Francys By god Knyghte, and I ohn Ha

lom yoman, in the name of all the Communes, commande and charde you, that ye a semble your (elues together mediately upon recepete hereof, and fo take thys othe wychys we here send unto you, and then after in all haste possible to assift and hayde theis ower brethern, wome wee fende to you to keepe, and make fure the Castell, Towne, and Port of Skarboro, that no man enter into the same Castell, that belongys onto Rafe Euers the yonger Knighte, nor any outher whiches did no: take full parte with the Com-munes, at ower fust and last assemblyage in who; s name, aethority, or attorney socuer they cume, walt fe they have licence of all the communes in like manner, yee shall truely keepe all sichys or dinance, and shippe to the vse of the Com-munes, with enyches wee charde you at our late being here, and thys not to faile, upon payne of yower lyues gee hall refer credence unto this meffingeres, thus in halt Fare yee well, from Settrynton this Mondaye Sancte Mapris daye.

Francis Bigott Knight in the name, and by Commandement of al the Communes. Against these rout of Rebels , George Earle of

Shrewsbury, not flaying for the Kings commission The Earle of mustred his men, mildeemed of many, that he meant keth against to be a Pilgrime himselfe, vnto which suspectors hee the Rebels, made a loyall Oracion, disclaiming all intention against their attempts, how colourable so euer they laid their pretence, which done he caused his Chaplen to minister him an Oath of his loyaltie, before them in the Field. It was likewise reported that the Earle of Darby was fet forward towards them, whome the Pilgrimes well hoped would have fided Zx MS-R. Cor. with them, as by their mandate sent to the Brethren appeares, where is forbid that none of them should aide him, vnlesse he tooke the Oath : which he never meant to affay or fweare to. (98) Buttrue it is the King fent Thomas Duke of Thomas Duke of

Norfolke, Lord Generall against them, accompanied Norfolke Lord Not joice, Lord General against them, accompanied with the Marquesse of Excessor, the Earles of Humingdon and Ratland; who ioining their powers made towards Donesser, where the Rebels then lay in their Randiuou; in whose fight immediately they set up their Tents, and determined battell vpon the next day; but on the night betwixt, such fluds of water fell, that the river Dun ouerflowed his bancke, and admitted no paffage outr the Bridge, which thing was taken as a token from God; and thereupon the Lord Generall offered them Conference, alleaging that the King was tender of his Subjects lines, Pardon and

the Kings mercy; that this their rebellious procee-

dings, was not onely the foretunning messenger of

and very visualling to fied Christian blood: that tothe Rebels. their cause should be fauourably heard, and just complaints redreffed, if with submission and duty of Subjects, they would yeeld themselves & affaires to

58, Monarch 58, the Commons, for the safe returnes of their assigned Commissioners, which were these by name. Lord Neuill. Sir William Constable. Lord Darcy. Sir Raufe Constable. Lord Strellre. Sir Rich : Tempeft. Lord Lumley. Sir Ranfe Romemer. Lord Latimer. Sir William Eustan. Sir Thomas Percy. Sir George Lawton. Sir George Darcy. Sir Thomas Hylton. Robert Aske Captaine. M. Robert Constable. Sir Raufe Clayer, Seni. M. Richard Banner. Sir Raufe Clayer Iun. M. Wiseroppe. Sir Raufe Euers. Ex Original 345. Whose Articles and demands were these, as followeth. The instruction for Sir Thomas Hilton

and other Companyons. I First to declare to the Duke of Norfolke, and other the Lordys, that thentent of our meeting of our partie, surely is meant and thought of a fared troth, without

any manner of discerte, or male engune, 2 The second is to receive the Kinges Sauecundyth, under the Brode Seale of Englande, and to deliver our (auecundyth, and promise, undre owre hands, for the Lordys there. 3 The thirde to entreate of owre generall perdon, for all causys, and all persons, which be within the Realme wyche in herte, word, or deed affentyd, edyter protured, the further ance in this our quarrell, may be pardoned life, lands, goods; and that in the fayd perdon, nor other the Kingsrecords, we be not witon reputed, ne taken, as Re-

bylleous or tretors, nor reherfyd in the same.

4 The fourth that Thomas Cromwell, nor any of his bande or serte, bee not at owne metyng at Doncastre, but abcente themfelfe from the Councell. 5 The fift, to receive the Kings answere by the declarations of the Lords, and to certific the vere etent thereof tans there. Also to know what authority the Lords have to etreate

in promes with vs ther, as well of owre promes of other Also to know what plage the wyll deliner for owr Ca-Also of thes pertyculars be concluded, then for to conofficed of other periodians occumulated, then for to condifferent of other periodians.

The whole drift
was to down
with the Coffel,
ther, Wychf, Husse, Melancton, Ecolampadius, Bufirs, the Confession Germane, the Applege of Melangton, the werke of Tyndale, of Bernys, Fryth, of Marshall, Rastell, the Bookes of Sent Germane, and such other

of any manner Hereste, without the Realme not to be kept,

2 The secund to have the supreme of the Chyrch toching cure of sowlle to be reserved to the See of Rome, as byfore byt whas accustomyd for to be; and to have the consecration of Bylooppys from bym without any fuft fruits, or pencyons to him to be paid out of thys Realme, or ellys a pencion reasonable for the outwarde defence of our fayth. Also we beseke humble our most drade Soueraign Lord

but otterly to be dystryed.

that might incur to the Crown by Scotland, and that to be by Parliament. Also to have the Abbeys that bee suppressed to be restoryd to their Lands, Howfys, and Goods. Also to have the Tents and first fruts clearely discharged, onles the Clergy will of their felfys grant a

that the Lady Mary may be legetymate, and the estatutes contrary to the same to bee anuly d for the dome of the tytle

An vacharitable and vachriftian

The demands of

Rent or Charge to the augmentation of the Crown.

Also to have the Freres observans restoryd to their houses againe. Also to have the Heretiks Bishoppys, and temporalmen of their feete, to have condigne pons (ment by fire, or such other; or ells to trie ther quarrell with us and our parta-

rests and Parkes to kyllers of Deere. Also that Doctor Lee, and Doctor Leyton, may have condigne poms sment for their extortions in time of visita. contages pensymment on total extensions on time of vijita-tion, in brybes, of some religious bouses, x.4. xx.4. and for other sammes, beside hors, vonviens, leases, vader co-uent seallys, by them taken, and other abominable. Acts by hem committed and done. Alfo to fee reformation for the election of Knightes of shire, and the Burgys, and for the vie among the Lords in the Perlament after the ancient custome. Alfothe Statute for inclosing Intackes to bee put in execution, that all Intacks, Inclofys fith Anno quarto Henrici septimi be pullyd downe exceding Forests, and Parkysto be dystrud of their quition, and tax now granted

Also to have the Lord Crumwell, the Lord Chance-

ter, and Sir Ryc. Rych Knight to have condigne ponyf-

nent, as subverters of the gualawes of the Realme; and onetemers of the slefe fett of this false heretykes first in-

Alfo that the Landys in Westmorland, Comberland,

Kendale, Dent fyd, Furnes, and the Abbeis lands in Yorke,

Worsaidyshire, Kerbyshire, Neuerdale, mayne bee Ten-

nant Right, and the lord to have at every change two

geeres rent, in the name of a agar summe, and no more,

according to a grant new made by the Lords to the Com-

mens under their Seales, and this to be done by Act of

Alfo the hand-gunnys and Croffe-boys, with the penal-

the of the same to be revelled, onles by t be in the Kings for-

wenter and brengers of them.

Also to have the Parlyament in a convenient place as Nottingham or Yorke, and the same to bee so moued Also that it may be enacted by authority of Parliament, that all recognisans, statutys, penaltyes, newly forfeyted during the tyme of the Commission may bee pardoned & discharged, as well against the King as stranger. Alfo the Privilege of the Ryght of the Church to be conarmed by Act of Parlament, and Prysis not to suffer onles

they be degraded; a man to bee faued by his Booke; Sanctuary to faue a man in all causes in extremenced, and the Church to faue a man for forty dayes; and further according to the lawes as they were wied in the beginning of the Kyngys dayes. Also the libertyes of the Church to have their old Cuflomes, as the County Palatine of Durham, Bewerley, Reppon, S. Peter of Yorke, and such other by Act of Par-Also to have the Statute that no man shall declare his will on his land to be repelled. Alfo the Statute of treason for Wurdys, made sith Anno

xxi. of our Soueraigne that now is to bee in like wife re-Also that the common Law may have place as well as was vsed in the beginning of your gracious raign, and that all Iniunations be cleerely denied, and not granted, vollesse the matter be heard in the Chancery, and there determi-Alfo that no man upon fub poena, or Priny Seale from Trent Northward, appeare but at Yourke, or by Atturney

onleffeit be directed upon pene of allegyance, or for like matter concerning the King. Malic concerning see Ling.

Also aremidy against Exchequor for fining of false Offices, and extortions in taking of Fees, for that which is not held of the King, and against the Promoters there-These were the Instructions given to their Commissioners to be conferred upon, all which as it should seeme, were drawne into foure Articles or heads, as by the mynute of the Kings answere thereunto doth appeare which Originall in many places with his owne hand is interli-

corrections and additions is varied from the rest by a seuerall Character. [Petitions] An Answere to the demaunds of the Rebelsin Torkeshare, by the Kings Highnesse. Выыыы

First

med with so wise and learned additions, as doe confirme

his Kingly care, both for the Church and common weale:

the true copy whereof to his great fame is as followeth: his

destruction to themselues and partakers, but gaue alfo a great aduantage vnto the Seots, the dangerous enemie vnto the Land, and them all : with these and the like perswasions the matter was so forwarded, that a conference was appointed at Dontaster, and foure piedges were lent from the Lord General vnto

First, as touching the maintenance of the Faith, the termes bee so generall, that it would bee very hard to make certaine answere to the same; but if they meane the faith of Christ, to the which al Chriften men be [wonly] bound: wee declare and protest our selfe to be that Prince, that doth entend, and hath alwayes minded to line and die in the mainte-[of the]
nance, defence, [and] observation [and] purity of the same. And that no man can or dare set his foote by vs in prouing of the contrary. Maruelling therefore much that ignorant people would goe about to

take vpon them to instruct and reach vs (which hath [fomethin?"] beene noted [to be] learned) what the faith should be: And also that they being ignorant people be so prefumtius (feeing that wee and our hole Clergy in Connocation hath in Articles declaryd it) wold take appon them to correct us all therem.] Or that they would bee so ingrate and unnaturall towards vs their most rightfull King, and naturall Soueraigne Lord, without any our defert, vpon faife reports or furmiles to fuspect vs of the same, and give rather credence to forged light tales, then to the very truth by vs thefe twenty eight yeeres vied, and by our deedes approued. To the second which toucheth the maintenance

of the Church, and the liberties of the sames we say it is so generall a proposition that without distinctions no man with trouth can answere it, neither by Gods lawes, nor by the lawes of the Realme. For first, the Church which they mean must be known: Second, whether those things which they call liberties, and fay they would maintaine, be things lawfull and beneficiall to the Princes comen wealth, or otherwife. And these knowne wee doubt not but they shall bee answered according to Gods law, equity and inflice. Neuerthelesse for all their generality this wee dare affirme, that (meaning what Church they lift) Wee have done nothing that may not be abiden by, both by Gods lawes and mans lawes, or that is prejudiciall to our common wealth, if our proceedings may bee indifferently confidered. And in our owne Church of England, whereof wee be the supreme head on Earth, we have done [onerous and chargeable to them,]

nothing fo [extremely and as many of our Predeceffors have done, vpon much leffer grounds. Wherefore fithens this Article partaineth nothing to any of our Commons, nor that they beare any thing therin, we cannot but reckon a great vnkindnesseand vnnaturalnesse in them, which had leuer a Chorle or twaine should enjoy those profites of their Monasteries, for the supportation and maintenance of abominable life, then that we their Prince should receive the same towardes our extreme charges, doon, and daily sustained for their defence against forraine enemies. The third Article toucheth three things; the first

is the lawes, the fecond is the common-wealth, the third, the directors of the lawes under vs. Touching the Lawes, as it becommeth not blind men to judge any colours, ne to take vpon them to beeindges of the same: so wee dare expressy and boldly affirme as a thing that may bee easily and duely proued; that there were neuer in any One of our Predecessors dayes, so many wholesome, commodious and beneficiall Acts made for the common wealth, as have

bin made in our time, & firhers fome of them had [eredite] [our affaires] [experience]& doing[in the world,]that wold now parchance fain pycke them thanke without desert. For our Lord forbids that both wee and our Councell should have lost so much time, as not to know better now then weedid in the beginning of our raigne; what were a Common-wealth, and what were against the good and commodity of the same, feeing wee have beene a King thefe twenty eight veeres, and by experience learned the perfitenesse thereof: and although the folly and vnkindnesse

of some will not perchance let them so knowledge it, yet wee truft and doubt nor, but the most part of our louing Subjects, speciallie those which bee not seduced by talse reports, doe both thinke it, accept it, and finde it fo. Now touching the Common wealth, what King hath kept his Subjects fo long in wealth and peace, so long without taking or doing wrong one to another; so indifferently miniftred inftice to all estates both high and low; so defended them from all outward enemies: fo fortified the frontiers of his Realme to his no little, and in manner ineftimable charges, and all for their wealthes and fureties? What King hath given among his Subiects moe generall or freer pardons? What King hath beene lother to punish his Subiects, or shewed more mercy among them? these things being so true, as no true man can deny them: It is an unnaturall and an unkind demeanour of you our Subjects to beleeve or deeme the contrary of it: by whose report somer it should be set forth against vs. And the beginning of our raigne, where it is faid that so many Noblemen were Counsellors : we doe not forget who were then Counsellors: for of

called Noble, the oon, the Treasurer of England, the other the high Steward of our houshold. Others, [meane] as the Lord Marney and Darey but [cant wel] born [nor]
Gentlemen,[and]yet of no great lands, till they were promoted by vs, and so made Knights and Lords; the reft were Lawyers and Priefts, fauing the two

the Temporalty there were but two worthy to bee

Bishops of Canterbury and Winehester: If these then bee the great number of Noblemen, that is spoken off, and that our Subjects seemed then contented withall, why then bee they not now much better contented with vs, which have so many Nobles indeed, both of birth and condition of our Councell, For first of the Temporalty in our Priny Councell, wee haue the Duke of Norfolke, the Duke of Suffolk, the Marquelle of Excefter, the Lord Steward (when hee is present) the Earle of Oxford, the Earle of Suffex, the Lord Sandes our Chamberlaine, the Lord Admirall Treasurer of our house: Sir William Paulet Comptroller of our house. And of the Spiritualtie, the Bishoppes of [Canterbury,] Winchester Hereford and Chichester: [And for because it is more then necessary to have some in our Preuy Councell lernyd in our laws, and pacts of the world: wee by the adulte of our hole Councell aforenamyd, did elect and choose into our Preue Councell, and also into they roomes our Chanceler Kings hand, and Privice Celle, thynking them men in all our opinion, most meetest for the same roomes; and wee with our hole Councell thinke it ryght strange, that yee, which bee but bruts and inexpert folke, doe take aponyow to appoint os,

who be meet for our Counfell and whoo bee not. Now therefore now how thefe feditions perfors which how farre be thus wrongfullie have borne you thus in hand have fallie abused you,]

fons abused, sthat recken there were then more Nobleme in our Priny Councel then be now buryer thogh of our great clemency & princely goodnes, we declare now the truth, to pull our fubicates from that errour and blindnesse they were led and trained into, by false and vntrue surmise and report: Wee would again that every of them knew, that it appertaineth not to any subject, to presume to take vpon him, th'appointment of his King and SoueraigneLordsCouncell. Ne for our part wee woll cake any such thing at any ofour Subjectshands. Wherefore wee would that from henceforth they

towards their natural! Liege Lord, and meddle no further of those or such like things, as they have nothing to doe withall. To the fourth Article, where the Commens doe

should better remember the duties of good Subjects

5" MONARCHS. Monarch 58. name certaine of our Councel to be subuerters both feft by his free perdons fent vnto the offenders, by of Gods law, and the lawes of this Realme: Wee Proclamation disulged by his messenger at Armes doe take and repute them as just and true Executors and his trumpet throughout the North parts, the both of Gods Laws, and as ferre as their Commiffions vnder vs doe extend. And if any of our Subiects can duely prooue the contrary wee shall pro-

ceede against them and all other offenders therein

according to instice, as to our estate and dignity roy-

all doth appertaine. And in case it be but a faise and

an vntrue reaport, as we verily thinke it is, then it

were as meet and standeth aswell with instice, that

they should have the selfe same punishment, which

wrongfully hath objected this to them, that they

should have had, if they had deserved it. And oon

thing among others causeth vs to thinke that this flander should bee vntrue, because it proceedeth

from that place, which is both farre diffant from that

where they inhabite, and also from those people

which neuer heard them preach, nor yet knoweth a-ny part of their connerfation. Wherefore we exhort

all 10 our Commens to be no more so light of credit

in the beleening of yuel things spoken of vs your na-

tural Prince and Soueraigne Lord: Nor of any of our

Prelates and Counsailors, but to thinke that your

King having so long raigned over you with the ad-

chuse his Counsailors, as those who so ever they bee

that hath put this in your heads [or ye other being but

tenour whereof from the Originall is; as fol-Allbee 9t, that your the Kings Subjects and Com-mons awelling and inhabiting in the Shires of Torke, Chim-pardon by Pro-berland, Westmerland, Northumberland, the Bilbopricke clamation, Allbee yt, that yowe the Kings Subjects and Com-

berland, Westmerland, Northumberland, the Bijhopricke of Durham, the Citty of Yorke, and the Shire of the fame, the Towne of Kyngfton upon Hull, and the Shire of the Same, the Towne of Newcastle open Tine, and the Shire of the same, and in other Shires, Towns, Dalis, Plaresprintledged, the Fraunthifes and Liberties within the limits of the Said Shires, Citties, and Townes, or any of umning of the jame sources, sum a towner, we are well them, or being reputed or taken for any part, parcell or number of any of them, and such other the Kings said Subtects, imbabited in the Towne of Lancaster, or elsewhere

by North, in the Shire of Lancaster, have now of late at-

tempted and committed manifest and open rebellion, e-

gainst his most royall Magesty, whereby was like to

hole Cuntreis, to the grete comforte and auancement of

your awnicient enemies the Scots; which as his Hienes is

credably enformed, doe with a great Redines wache opon

the same, and to the high displeasure of God, who streitely

mmandethyou to abay your Soueraigne Lordand King,

naue ensewde, the otter rewin and distruction of their

in all things, and not with violence to refift his will or Commandement, for anie cause what souer it be: Neignorant people and ought off all experyens off prynces uerthelesse the Kings rosall Magesty, perceiving as well Heere in this finall point which yee our Comens by the Articles of their partners fent to his Hyenes : As of Yorkeshire, Westmerland, Cumberland, the Bishop-riche of Durham, Richmondshire, Crauen, Dent, Sedalso demy enformed by credible reports, that their faid of-fences proceeded of ignorance, and by occasiom of fandric falletalis neuer minded or entended by his Hienes, or any barre, and all other places that have been eleduced to this Insurrection doe desire; and also in the matter of his Councell, but most craftely contriued, and most spite. of the whole discourse of your Petitions. We verifully set abroade amongs you, by certaine malitious and selie thinke that the rest of all our hole Commens of July jes auroaue emong, yw, oy cer same mansiwa ana je-datious per fant; and thereupon his Hyghnes inclined to extend his most gratious mercy and pitty towards you, having chefe charge of you under God, both of your sowles many Cuntreys to whom you be in maner but an handfull, will greatly disdaine and not beare it, that you take vpon you to fer order to vs and them, and and bodies, and desiring rather the preservation of the same, and your reconciliation, by humerciful meyns, than specially to vs being Soueraign Lord to you both : [you being rebelles]
And that[because you be rebells,]you would make by the order and rigour of Instice to punish you according to your demeryts, of his inestimable goodnes, benignity, mercy, and pety, and at your most humble petitions and subthem as bearers and pertakers of your-mischief, willing them to take perdon for Infurrections which verelie we thinke and doubt not they never minded: missions made unto his Highnes, he is content & plaifed to gife and grant and by his prefent Proclamation doth gyfe or grant unto you al, and to al or eneric your confederates but like true Subjects to the contrary have both with heart and deede been ready at our call to dewhere soener they awell, of estate, degree, or what conditifend both vs and themselves : and now for our part on soener you or they bee, or by what name or names soener they or you be, or may bee called, his Generall and free paras to your demands, we let you wit, that perdon of such things as you demaund lyeth onely in the will don for all manner of treasons, rebellions, insurrections. and pleasure of the Prince: but it seemeth by your am for an manner of tresions, reccuens, supercessions, missercessions, missers, reccuens, missers, reclaims, and of all accessions of the same, and of cuerie of them, unlampful affembles, unlampful Consensieles, unlampful Gensensieles, un gensensiel lewde proclamations and falfe conductes, that there beeamongs you which take vpon them both the parts of Kings and Counfailors. Which neither by wordes, confederacies, riots, rowts: And all other trespass vs nor by the Generall confent of our Realme harb ses, offencies and contempts, done and committed by you, been admitted to any fuch roome. What arroganor anie of you against the Kings Magestie, his Crowne gr dignitie rotall within and from the time of the beginning cie is then in those wretches being also of none expe-

rience, to prefume to raife you our Subjects without

Commission or authoritie: yee and against vs vnder

a cloked colour of your wealth and in our name, and

as the fuccesse and ende would declare if wee should

not be moremercifull vato you then you have de-

ferued to your owne veter confusions. Wherefore

wee late all you our said subjects againe witt, that

were it not that our Princely heart cannot recken

this your shamefull insurrection and most ingrate

and vnnaturall rebellion to bee done of malice or

rancour, but rather by a lightnesse giuen in manner

by a naughty nature to a Comunalty, and a won-

The effect that the Kings reply wrought, is mani-

them: And also his Highnes is pleased, and contented, derousfuddensurreption of Gentlemen: We must that you and everie of you from time to time, hall and may needs have executed an other maner of punishment, have apon your sewies to be made hereafter in his Chaun-cery, his said and most gracious and free pardon under his then if you will humbly knowledge your fault, and submit your selfe to our mercie, wee entend to doe great Seale concerning the premisses, without any further Bill or Warrant to bee obtained for the same, and without [as by our proclamations we dowght yee be informed.] paying any thing for the great fealethereof : And that you and everie of you from time to time, may freely and liberallse sewe for his said pardon, when and as often as it shall like you, without anie trouble, vexation or impeachment

of the faide Rebellion when somer it was, unso the present

day of proclaiming of this Proclamation, and of all paines,

sudgements, and executions of death, and all other penal-

ties, forfeitures, fynes, and forfeitures of Landes, Tene-ments, Hereditaments, Goods or Cattels by any of your

forfeitures incurred by reason of the premises, or any

of them ; which Fines, Forfeitures, Lands, Tenements,

of them; which eines, corjetines, sames, comments, Hereditaments, Goods, and Cattels, the Kings faid Highnes of his/fecially race, and mere motion by the/e pre-fents, giveth to fach of you, as baue or should have forfi-ted, or lofteshe fame, by occasion of the premisfes or any of

1		4				- 1	
	for the premisses, or anie of them, by his heires, or by anie	Monasteries, whose number (as Cambden doth ac-	Cambd. Brit. 645. Monaste-				thers in ot
	his Officiaries, Ministers, or Subjects, by aniemanner of meanes or in anie manner of wife. Prouded alwaies,	countries, were mis manared route, mac, beinges	Tics in England			Many fuffer death for th	_ Lienij Lile
	that you and enerie of you in token of a perfect declaration	fourfcore and tenne Colledges, them of oxford and Cambridge not accounted: of Holpitals one hun-				Gospell bef	ore to death fo
1	and knowledge, that ye doe hartilie lament and be ferrie		Hospitals, 2374 Chaunter			ther wrote,	defence, in
	for your said offencies, shall make your humbly submission	pels two thousand, three hundred, seventy foure.	fres and free		5	ı	the raigne
1	onto his Highnes, in the presence of hisright trustie and	all of them almost were then borne downe with the	Chappels		,	1	daies of Ki
1	right intirely beloved Cosens and Concellairs: the Duke	fudden deluge of those tempestuous times, whilst the				1	of King H
1	of Norforlke, and the Earle of Shrewfourie his Liente-	world frood amazed, King Hemie proceeded, and				1	gainst the p
1	nants Generall, or any of them, or to their Deputy or De- puties of them, or any of them, or such other person, or	the Clergy men groaned under their owne destru- ctions; among these the Shrine of Thomas Becket was				1	them being
1	persons as the Kings Highnes shall appoint for the same :	defaced, which did abound with more then Princely				1	wrote. At
1	Furthermore the Kings most rotall Magesty, streitely	riches: whole meanest part was pure gold, garni-				1	anenched
į.	chargesh and commandesh, that you and every of you, shall	thed with many precious frones, as Erafmue that faw	Eraf. Dialogue.			Queene Ana	f of good O
l	from hanceforth,like trew and faithfull Subiects we your	it, hath written, whereof the chiefest was a rich				of the Goine	ted higher
l .	Selues, in Gods peace, and his, according to the dueties of	Gemme of France, offered by King Lewis, who af- ked and obtained (you may be fure, he buying it so	W. Lamb. Perami	1		of the Goipe flaied the rag	ea. because this
1	alleagance, and that you (hall in no wife hereafter, attempt to make or procure, any such rebellion, intent, wnlawfull	deare) that no passenger betwixt Douer and White-				grinst the Pr	and feemet
1	Assemblies, Riots, Rowts, and Conspirations, nor at the	fand should perish by shipwracke; his bones by				1	will referre
ł	Commandement, nor by the Authority of any person, of	Stephen Langton had beene laide in a golden Shrine	The flate and o.			1	dustrious p
	what estate or degree, or for what cause soeuer it be, shall	his name canonized, and the day of his death made				1	Ecclesiastica
1	arife in any forcible manner, and array, unles it be at the	annually holy, such concurse of Pilgrime, such	Beefets Shrine.			Kint Horries	T (101)
l	Speciall commandement of the Kings Highnes, or his Lieu-	pressing to touch him, and such creeping and knee-				deings disple- ted many Ch	- Renenewes
1	tenant sufficiently auctorised for the same. In witnes whereof the Kings most royall Magesty, hath caused this	ling to his Tombe, that the prints of their denotion in the Marble stones, remaines to this day; energy			ı	ftian Princes.	1 ming michily
1	his Proclamation to be made Patent, and fealed with his	Pillar refounding the miracles of this reputed Mar-			a i	1	who with C
1	great fayle at Richemounte the IX. day of December in	tyre, and the Church it felte dedicated to Christ.				1	in Christend
1	the XXVIII. yeere of bis Reigne, 1536.	forced to give place to the name of Saint Thomas.				1	his faith: Ye
1	Pexfall.	The Timber worke of this Shrine was couered with	Ishn Stow,			1	I courie for Pa
1	Namida dinati Cafaan	plates of gold, damasked and emboffed with wires of				1	fought to de
	Notwithflanding this Generall pardon and merci- full dealings of the King a new Infurrection was	gold, garnished with broches, images, angels, pre- cious stones, and great Orient Pearles: all these de-	The great riches of Beckets Shrine,			1	nold Poole vni
l	railed in the North, wherin many of the former were	faced filled two Chefts and were for price of an vn-				1	Lord Henry
Holinfo.psg. 944.	now againe Actors, as by name Robert Aske whom	entimable value. But in freede of these Dagons, the i	1			1	of Deuenfair
1	the King had not onely pardoned, but also highly	Bible in English was commanded to bee read in all		1		1	uenth daugh
1	rewarded, the Lord Dacres, Sir Robert Constable, Sir	Churches, and Register Bookes of weddings, Chri-	į			1	Poole Lord M
Aste executed.	Francis Bygod, Pulmer, Percy, Bamilton, Tempest and	stenings and Burials in cuery of them to be kept. (101) The yeerely reuenewes of these, as they	1	1		1	and Sir Edw
]	Lumley, all of them put to death; as they well de-	were valewed by the Commissioners, at their sub-	The great reues	1		1	gaverny. The
1	(99) In which Commotions those men whose	uersions amounted to an vnestimable summe, as ap-	newes of the Mo-	1		1	George Duke
	profession was onely the Booke and their Beades,	peareth by the Original Booke it selfe presented to				1	once Deane o
Luk.12, 36. Spirituali meti	mistaking Christs meaning, who bad his Disciples	the King, whereof more shall be spoken in the end of				1	was accounte
Spirituali men Commotioners.	to fell their coate, and to buy a fword, came armed a-	this chapter, and yet most of them rated at Robin-	Supplication of			1	(104) A
Commission	mong the Rebels into the Field, and with them were taken as Traitours against the Crowne: for which	hoods penny-worthes, what their rents were, a libell feattered abroad, and read to the king, by demonstra-	Beggats.			1	formerly beer
	offence many of them suffered death: namely, Iohn	tion did proue, wherein was accounted, that unto I				Camb, Brit.	at his going in apparant, tho
Monkes hanged	Pastew Abbot of Whaley in Lincolneshire, John Caste-	the fine Orders of Friers, (every housholder paying	- 1			Camo, Syrr,	tion, heefaw
for rebellion.	gate and William Haydocke Monks of the fame house,	them due pence the Quarter) the lumme of tourry	The great reue-			l	then was vied
	Robert Hobs Abbot of Woborne in Bedfordsbire, Adam	three thousand, three hundred, thirty three pound,	newes of the Friers,		6	ł	part vpon tha
	Sudbary Abbot of Geruaux with Astheed a Monke of that house; the Abbot of Sawley in Lancashire and	fixe shillings and eight pence sterling, was paid them by yeere, besides the reuenewes of their owne lands,	*			1	as much troul
	the Prior of the same place, William Wold Prior of	which was not a little, fo that not without cause ma-	1			1	Torke had done parant, which
	Birlington, the Parson of Pudington, fine Priests of	ny entred into a Monasticall life, rather to line at ful.	f			ł	raiter King Her
l	Lincolnshire, and with them their chiefetaine, Cap-	and without cares of this world, then to feede the	1			Lord Marqueff and others be-	his Abetters v
•	taine Cobler, and Iohn Allen Prieft.	flocke of Christ, or to winner them, and not theirs, after the example of the Apostle. For the Testa-	2,607,12,14.			headed.	cure his owne
Idols and Mona-	(100) These stirres thus quieted and the States- men at leasure to preuent the like, a Commission	ment of Christ, was vinto most of these, as a booke		-		A.D. 1539.	Lord Marquel
fterses suppres.	came foorth to purgethe Churches of Idols; and		Dau: 25.4.			lan. 9.	Edward Neuill (105) The
fed by Parlia- ment-	to suppresse the Monasteries to the Kings vse, gran-	led they did denoure, but not tread out the Corne.	Dear,23.4.				death of Quee
l	ted vnto him by Parliament : the one of them, the	so that the Sunne by their doctrine seemed to be					veeres before.
	onely working cause, through the gaine that was got	darkened, as with smoke, and themselves to be the	Apoca-sa				done, mangrea
ì	by ignorant denotion, and gadding on pilgrimage, and the other, the Nest and very receptacle of all	Locustes that ouerspread the superficies of the Earth, whose faces were like men, pretending huma-	1				rect, by the Co
1	traiterous attempters, against the peace of the Land	nity, their haire like women in flew of modelty, their					and obtained to my, and heard to
10.00	and Supremacy of the Crowne. The abuse of the	Crownes of counterfeited gould, fignifying their v-	• [John Steiden.	dy Anne lister to
A.D. 1538.	first was folemnly shewed at Pauls Crosse in London,	furped authoritie, their teeth like Lyons shewing					fifter Fredericke
1	vpon Sunday the twenty foure of February, by Do-	their Tyrannie, their force like horses prepared for	i	E			facourer of the
The Roode of	Cor John Fifher Bishop of Rochester, where the Roode	battell, their habergions of Iron betokening their					Luther the zeale
Pauls Croffe.	of Boxley in Kent, commonly called the Rood of Grace, made with divers vices to bow downe and to	firength, the found of their wings, the thundering out their mandates like to the rumbling of Chariots	1	1	1		But whether for
Lamb. Peram. in	lift vp it selfe, to shake, and to stirre both Heads,	in warre, their Tailes (the falle Prophets) having	. 1				hee would hau at home(which
Bexcley.	hands, and feet, to rowle the eies, moone the lippes	itings like vnto Scorpions, and their King the bad A-					er hee was of th
	and to bend the browes 3 was then broken and pul-	badden, even the Angell of the Bottomeleffe pit. All	-			King Heary mar- ried Anne of	England, and m
Our Lady of 1924	led in peeces. So likewife the Images of our Lady of	those allusions most aprly fitting these Cloustered	İ			An.	thing pleafing i
fingham and o- ther Images	Walfingham and Ipfwich, let and besprinkled with Ie- wels, and Gemmes, with divers others both of Eng-	Friers, who now grown to the height of their sinnes, their skirts were discouered, that their shame might	Jere.13 16.			1940	then Bilhoppe
point.	land and Wales; were brought to London and burnt	appeare; being the only men then laid open to the			1.	- 1	a fitte subject for Lord Cromwell to
1	at Chelfey before the Lord Crumwell. Then the Axes	world.	'		1	oxe,76ert, 1296,	fore infligated i
1	of the hewers began to cast downe the walles of all	(102) Against whose doctrine, (besides many o-	1			1	first exasperating
1	1	thers	1		, '-		
		-					

fourth, the first English King that put anie my to him-wards, and especially of Duke Fredericke, his compulsiue brother in Law, the Emperor, French for the doctrine of Rome; (omitting Sir Kings, Scots and the Pope, all feeking at once to aftle and others, that died for the Gospels raife their powers against England. The civill tun the daies of King Henry the fift) foure in mults lately paffed, and new commotions greatly to of innocent Henrie the fixt. One in the be feared, hee letted not to remember, and all to nip ing Edward the fourth; and tenne in the time the spring of the new spreading Gospell, whereby The fixe Articles Tenry the seauenth, sealed the doctrine athis wife Politician in the end got fix fuch Articles papall religion with their bloud; all of againstit, as the Consistory of Hell could denise ig martyred before that Martin Luther no worse. Whose cruelties were such that not long nd in the raigne of this King twenty fixe after, and in the dayes of this King, some of those he fire, before the flames thereof could be Acts were againe repealed, and some of them qua-32 H.S.chap. 10, , which a while was done by the meanes lified, as too sharpe and searching into the bloud of Queene Anne, till afterwards they mounthe Kings best Subjects. when the fixe Articles were made but (106) The fruite of these bloud-thirsty instiga-(106) The trutte of these broughteners of clear from the Lord Comment and death, and the by imprisoned. is Ecclesiasticke text is handled elsewhere, th vnfociable to our begunne Subject, we tafted of, he by imprisonment and death, and she by e the Reader for these matters viito the indifgrace and dinorce; having been his wife from lapaines of that worthy and ener veneranuary to June; in all which time the King refrained Fox, taken in his Acts & Monuments of the mutual knowledge of her body, for the diflike call history. hee had of her person, even at the first fight, as him-The Monasteries thus dissolved, and the fe fe cailed to witnesse the Lord C romwell then Pries thereof converted to temporall vies, soner in the Tower, for whose report hee wrote a Ex 215. y ranne in great obloquie of many for-Letter with his owne hand; and thee good Lady capas, ntates, but most especially of the Pope; no other cause alleadged, was dinorced by Parlia-Cardinall Poole infligated divers Princes adom to inuade England thus fallen from Yea, & home-borne Subiects difliking the ment, when also it was enacted that shee should no Queene Jane longer bee styled Queene. The Lord Cremwell Pailiament, was charged by the Lord Rich, and Sir George Papisticall subuersion, by secret working Throgmorton with speaking of certaine generall eprine King Hemy, and to raise vp Reywords, not excepting therein the Kinges person, nto the Regall dignity, as by their inwhich neaerthereffe were thought so sleight and inappeareth. The persons convicted, were fufficient to take away his life, that his enemies fea-Courtney Marqueffe of Excefter, & Earle red to put it to the triall of his Peeres, left he should re, the sonne of Lady Katherine, the sebee acquitted by them, as the Lord Dacres of the hter of King Edward the fourth : Henrie North not many yeeres before had beenc; wherfore Montacute, with Sir Geffrey his brother, there was a Bill drawne to attaint him of herefse and ted by Parlis vard Newill brother to the Lord of Aber-Treason, in generall words, rather then in particuhefe Pooles were the fonnes of Lady Marlar proofes, which when hee was dead, passed in telle of Salisbury, the onely daughter of both houses of Parliament with the Kinges afof Clarence: and of these Reinold Pov'e of Excesser, and now Cardinalian Rome red the onely man. (107) Howbeit Saunders that feldome speakes well of the Gospels professors, will have him to die D. Sanderi. and this forefaid Lord Marqueffe had for the breach of a Law made by himselfe, which ne in fuch fanour with King Henry, that was, that one appeached of treason, should not come into France he ordained him his Heire in the Kings presence, till he had tried himself not guilty; but besides that wee find no such Act by ough at his returne vpon graue dehberav it better policy to plucke him down him made his inditement doth not charge him with ed in serting him vp, lest in acting his treason, but with setting at liberty certain persons at infectine stage, hee put the land to committed for misprission of treason and heresie; ible as the arreared Duke Richard of for fauouring and maintaining the translation of heretical bookes into English; for bearing our potential bookes to bearing the potential bookes to bearing the bearing to be the bearing ne, after hee was ordained heire aph Title produced the Tragedy of his Barnes and other herericall Preachers; that himselfe emy the fixt, and now having him and was an heretike, and had spoken words, great words for the vpholding of his said religion, which were, vpon the advantage, the better to fee Estate, hee caused the heades of this that the King should not change it if hee would esse with the Lord Montacute, and Sir for these things he was attainted by Parliament of "to beecut off vpon Tower-hill. high Treason, and that grounded either vpon a e King then a Widdower, fince the Statute made in the fine and twenty of Edward the third, or elle by the explanation of that Act which orme death, ene lane, who departed this life two , meant to maintaine what hee had referreth the expolition of Treasons to the Parliaall opposites: which the better to efment, and so no way did Cromwel devise or make aounfell of Lord Cromwell, he fought ny law of treason, which himselfe first fell into , as the alliance of the Princes of Germathat partiall Romanist hash said. the motion for marriage with the La-(108) But most fure it is, that the Kingsaffecti. to Willsam Duke of Cleue, whose other on, altogether guided by the fairest object, found no te Duke of Saxony had espoused, a great other point in the Compasse to fixe his variable ae Gospell, and maintainer of Martin eye, besides that onely, which by his seeming was lous Preacher and professor thereof touched by the Loadstone of nature, and the same for the death of Anne Bullen, or that to be the Lady Katherine Howard, daughter to Ediference of Thomas Duke of Norfolk, against this death, me his wines fifter bestowed neerer h thing hee pretended) a great hinderwhom Cromwell standing in the defence of Queene Anne, and ving words of dislike in the Lady Kathethat match. But the Lady fent into married vnto King Henry, feemed norine, diftaffull vnto the King, was thereupon apprehended (his enemy fo working) and vpon the A.D. 1540. in his eye; which Stephen Gardiner e of Winchester perceiung, thought it twenty eight of July suffered death with the stroke or him to worke vpon, against the of the Axe vpon Tower-hill, with whom was bethe maker of the match; hee thereheaded the Lord Hungerford of Heitesberg, neither fo iealousies dayly into the Kings care, Christianly suffering, nor so quietly dying for his ofig the hatred of the Princes of Germaence committed against nature. Bbbbbb2 (100) The

MONARCHS. Monarch 58.

ther forreine parts) two in the daies of K.

779

Comp. 21 Henry VIII. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 58. (109) The fword thus vnsheathed vpon the necks These Statutes I say aswell the one as the other, 1bid. con. p 494. | this States intelligecer doth confesse) be meant to have A.D. 1541. of the Nobility; strucke off the head of Margaret brought many to their ends, which otherwise were will return againe. burned had he longer lined. For the truth is (faith hee) Countesse of Salisbury, daughter and heire vnto very good Subjects, and worthy inftruments in the (114) King Henrieby order of Parliament ha-ting affirmed the Stile and Title of King of Ireland, with the fish military for the first of the fish of the fish military for the that the Kings sickenesse and death shortly ensuing was George Duke of Clarence, and mother vnto Reynald common weale: for offending in the first, there dithe chiefe cause of her escape; and the error of the Lord Poole Cardinall, being neither arraigned nor tried. ed Bishoppe Fisher, and Sir Thomas More, besides with the submiffion of most of the Irib Nobility, confirmed by Sawiders three Chancellor Wriothesley, who let fall out of his bosome, the but condemned by Parliament as Cromwell had bin. many Abbots, Priors, and Friers, and among Sir Tourne lames his Nephew, King of Scotland, tooke it not 1201-35. H Margaret Countelle of Salubury beheaded-Kings hand and commission for carrying her to the I ower And the Lord Leonard Gray in this present yeere lost them, in Smithfield the Welsh rode fet Frier Forrest well, for that, as Lifley faith, a great part of Ireland, Same excellen (the paper found and brought her) to goe and humble her felfe to the Kingsthe principal occulon against her, was Heretical Books found in her closet, both brought especially in the North, had been in possession of the Scotishmen for many hundred of yeeres before: his head for treason, the twenty eight of June. And on fire, according to the prophecy very rife in their The Lord Cha cellor loft his the next day following Thomas Fines Lord Dacres mouthes, that this holy rode should fet a whole forcommilion. rest on fire. For the other suffered in flames, many of the South, died at Tyberne for killing a prinate These discontents conceived, King Henrie well per-& Sent her by Anne Askew, wher of the witne ses were the Lord Dagres hanman in a fray. Neither was it put vp, vntill that the heades of Queen Katherine Howard, and the Lagodly Christians, whereof Robert Barnes a reuerend ceiued; and because hee would have no ill will so Lady Herbert, Lady I ane, Lady Tyawit, and others. In-Doctor, and worthy minister of Christ, the first reneere him, that had so many enuiers abroad, he sent ducer (as M. Fox reporteth) of the Vniuerlity of Fox. Mart. deed it is true that by Gods prouidence such papers dy I ane Rochford were stricken off, the one for Avnto King lames that it would pleate him to repaire the Kings of vnto the City of Torke, where he would meethim, to scott and appoint Cambridge from rudenesse and barbarity, vnto good pap. 1363. were let fal out of the Lord Chancellors bolome condultery, the other for concealement, as was alleadteining certaine Articles against her, with a warrant literature and learning, was with the first : And Anne ged, the parties offending were Francis Dereham conferre for the wealth of both the Realmes, which to meet at York to commit her to the Tower, whereunto the Kings and Thomas Culpepper, Derekam before thee was Queene, and Culpepper after, who both were execu-Askew a Gentlewoman of an incomparable dexteriat first was granted, but vpon better aduise, vnachand was subscribed: which being found was prety one of the last, who, about the weakenesse of complished, his Counsellors mooning the dangers The Queene feeth the fea-tence of her fently brought vnto the Queene, whereof the vn-Stat in 33. of H. ted at Tiburne, the tenth of December, and the her fexe most valiantly stoode against the violence of and his Clergy the feares, left their Religion should expected content fo deepely touched her tender twelfth of February following, Mistresse Katherine bechanged to the offence of his confederates the (112) Her birth was worshipfull, and educatiheart, that foorthwith thee fell into great feares, la-Howard (for so in the Act of her Attainture shee is Pope, the Emperour, and the French King. ments, and a most heavy meiancholy, and was in called) who had beene stiled and received Queene on accordingly, bestowed in marriage, vnto Iohn story (115) The vnkindnes growing from this small A.D. 1542; fuch danger of death, that the King came to visit for the space of sixe moneths, and foure dayes, with Kyme a Gentleman in Lincolne/bire, and commended Jakel Cent. 8. Since the eight sparke, was presently kindled into great flames, for her, having not gone foorth of his Chamber of maby Bale for her rare wit, and elegant beauty; which her parts the penfill of 20, D. with his vnethe Lady I ane then widow, and late wife vnto George Commissioners being sent from both Kings, to view ny dayes before; whereat shee so reioiced, as shee Bullen, Lord Rochford, were both of them brought the limits of either Kingdome, they fell at ods about Queene Kathe uen hand (euer ouerhard to shadow the truth,) hash began to amend: and to acknowledge her like loue vnto a Scaffold railed uppon the hill within the a small peece of ground, and from that tooke occasiand duty, the next night following, repaired to the Queene Kethe-rine victor hthe King, who falleth in conference Tower, wherethey in lamentable passions suffered flanderoufly blurred and measured those graces in dy I sate Roch-ford beheaded. on of emulations and warres : to profecute which Kings Bed-chamber, accompanied onely with the her, by his owne loofe affections, and those wanton King Henry prepared an Armic, and sent them into Lady Herbert her fifter, and the Lady lane the Kings (110) Howfoeuer those times afforded such Votaries, which in the height of finne have changed Rom. 1. 26. Scotland under the Conduct of the Duke of Norneece, carrying the Candle before her, of whose prewith her about Queenes to the Kings bed, or himselfe unfortunate the naturall vie of women against nature, folke, accompanied with the Earles of Shrew/bury, into Scotland. This young befor (laith hee) shiding no yoake, a cor This young befor (laith hee) shiding no yoake, a cor dame, and of very cuill fame, left the company of Master ons by R. D. pag. Kyme, to gasde up and downe a Gospelling and Gosspsence the King seemed to be most desirous; and prein making his choife: yet many of no meane judge-Darby, Cumberland, Surrey, Hertford, Angus and Rut. fently falling in talke of Religion, began to debate ment have rather accused King Henry for his land. These passing the English Marches, did much fome question thereof with the Queene, demanding changing and variable affections, then thinke them hurt in the Kingdome of Scotland. To withstand to have her resolutions therein, but shee knowing guilty in the breach of Matrimony. Of Anne wee ping where shee might, and ought not, but especially in whom King lames gathered a power, of fine and haue seene what hath beene said, and of this Queene that his nature was not to be croft, and the foreneffe but twenty five yeers old at her death, doth easily show what no rule of Chnmay befaspected of her life, and the mysticall speeches and staming. thirty strong, and at Fallaw more meant to have bidof his legge to encrease his choller, made him anlet vs heare what shee protested after her condemden the Duke battell, which as that writer related, swere that she was a woman, accompanied with many im-perfections, but his Maiesly wise and indictions, of whom nation to Doctor White Bishoppe of winchester her last Confessor, and by him delivered to a noble Act. and Mon. Queene Kathe-reats wife answer. was not then minded to doe, but made againe into lemands of the Kings Counsell touching her departure perfections, out its Creatify wife and muticious, of whom the must learne as of her Lord and Head, for so God hath appointed you (said shee) the Supreame Head of we all, of whom next wato him I will cuer learne. Not so, by England, and passing the water T weed, sustained great young Lord of her name, and neere alliance : Her from her husband, were grounded upon somewhat, espe-cially in that shee called her selse Anne Askew alias Kyme. loffe by the couragious pursuit of the Lord Huntly. King James vpon a lusty courage meaning to repaire words were thefe: As to the Act my reverend Lord for which I stand condemned, God and his holy Angels I take Thus farre this fcandalizing man hath accused this the Scots loffes with the English spoiles, was very to wittelf epon my fouts faluation, that I die guittesse, neuer hauing so abused my Souraignes bed: what a ther summer and follies of youth I have committed, I will Saint Mary, said the King, you are become a Doctor holy Anne by the outward appearance of her youth and Anne and beauty: as holy Anna by Eli was accused of compared. forward to follow the Duke into their Borders, but Kate to instruct vs, and not to be instructed by vs as often the Scotish Nobility wisely waying the danger of The Scotish no heeretofore we have seene. Indeede (said shee) if your drunkennesse when her heart was most feruent, in warre, by no meanes would either affent, or affift blemen refuse to Maiestie haue so conceined, I have beene mistaken in my not excuse; but am affured that for these, God hath supplications to her God, and his partiall pen made him out of his owne kingdome, affirming it honour brought this punishment upon me, and will in his mercy remit them, for which I prayou, pray with me, unto his some and my Sautour Christ. meaning, who have ever held it preposterous for a woman to instruct her Lord. And whereas I have heeretofore the fanne to fift the wheate of her holy confufficient, to have forced the English backe with no uerfation to finde out some chaffe, whereof none held talke with your highnesse touching Religion, it was to is free, nor is shee to be condemned upon the ima-(116) King James discontented at his Nobles delearne of your Maiesty some excellent point which my selfe (111) As these then in case of Treasons eyther gerie of his suspicious head (who vindoubtedly nials, made towards the Borders himselfe, where, the district of the second of acted or intended, ended their lives; so others in would haue told all if any thing could have been mouing the Lord Maxewell, Lord Warden of the weft The Lord War. Borders, with many other men of special fauour and demotine Weh. Borders, with many other men of special fauour and account, to intuade England, whereunto they gaue:
their consents.

These passing the River Eske, did wissions. case of conscience (though diversly affected) came to The eath of fufound) whereas thee in the vigour of beauty and their deathes, and that by force of the Statutes enaweakenesse of her Sexe, resisted the gaine-saiers of ched under this King; whereof one was the abolithe truth with her dearest blood : teftifying from my no small benefit and comfort. And is it even so sweet beart? (quoth the King) who then, are we friends, and Stat.H.8.18.c.10 shing of the Pope, and the oath of Supremacy, the refusers of either made offenders in state of high the Prisons her faith and constancy, and from the The Counter, fome small dammage vpon the Westerne Borderers, whereof Thomas bastard Dacres, and * Iacke of Mus-Racke preached Chrift, whereon most vnhumane-ly and seeing blind the rower. The Lord Chan-cellors purpose to apprehend the Queene. * William Maf fo kiffing her, gaue her leane to depart. But the Treason, and the other in case of religion, when ly and against kind, shee was twice tormented; and grave as Hollinshed cals them, sent word to Thomas the fixe Articles enacted by Parliament, was made laftly fealed her testimonie in Smithfield through the same After bar-flames of fire: being borne to the place of herdeath ned in Smithfield. day drawne on for her apprehension, and the King Wharton , Lord Warden for the King vponthe West Herefic and death, to fuch as held or raught the condisposed to take the ayre, sent for the Queene to Marches : But the Scots comming forward, they Stat.H.8.31.6.4 trary, which Articles were thus concluded in both walke in the Garden, himselfe accompanied onely in a Chaire, her bones so dissointed by the Racke were forced to prepare for fight before the Lord the houses of Parliament with consent of the with two Gentlemen, and thee with the three forethat fhee could not goe. Wharton could come and out of their final company (113) The irreverend * N. D. whose affection Perfect as some faid Ladies. Whenas fuddenly the Lord Chancelleft a stand vpon the fide of a hill. to Christis Cofpell and loialty to the English Crowne impose, hath sufficiently slewed it selfe, to make her no Three contents. Marry, and that her life did demerit the Racke, 1 That after the words of confecration spoken lor with forty of the Guard, came into the Garden, (117) The Scots advanced forward with no lit- The millsking o The fixe bloody Articles ena-cted with purpose to haue apperhended and carried the by the Prieft, the reall and naturall body and blond tle hope, were presently danted with the fight of the Scatt. Queeneto the Tower; whose malepert approach the King greatly milliked, and sternely beholding of Christ, as hee was conceined and crucified, was these men, and verily thought that the Lord Wharin the Sacrament, and no other substance consisting. faith that the King himfelfe commanded that tor-ture to be inflicted, for infecting with her erroneous ton had affembled his Charge, or that the Duke of him, ftept alide, faluting him with the names of knaue, foole, and beaft, bidding anaunt out of prein the forme of bread and wine, besides the substance Norfolke with a great Army were come to their refof Christ God and man. doctrine, his Court, his Neeces, Suffolkes daughters, See Alt & Site cue, whereupon they began to confult what was best 2 That the communion in both kinds was not fence. The Queene feeing the King chafed, but and his Queene. Whereas the truth tels vs that the to be done, and demanding who was deputed Lieuknew not the cause, indeauoured by all meanes to necessarie vnto saluation, the flesh onely in forme of Lieutenant refusing to racke her the second time tenant by the King, Oliver Sinclere of no great parts Oliver Sincler the bread, sufficient for the Laity. pacifie his Maiestie, and intreated for the Lord was threatned by Wriothefley Lord Chancellor (who nor honorable parentage, being lifted vp vpon the Shoulders of two Souldiers, thewed forth the Kings 3 That Priefts after they have received orders Chancellour, whose fault as sheethought and allcadid it himselfe) to bee complained of to the King, might not marry by the law of God. who immediately tooke Boate and told the whole ged, was rather through milimprifion then will, and Commission, wherein himselfe was appointed their therfore, said she, I wil become an humble suiter for 4 That the vowes of chaftity either in man or wo-Tragedy; whereof King Henrie seemed to be sore Generall, and whereathowfoeuer it was written or him vnto your Highnesse. Ah prove soule (quoth the King) thou little knowest Kate how eaill he descrueth this man, ought by Gods law to be observed, and by offended, for vling a woman with such inhumane read, the Lords tooke no little difdaine that fo ma- The Scotish No. which they are exempted from other liberties of tortures. But fuch fauours had the Popes Chickins ny more worthy, honourable, and approued Cap-taines of the Field, should be lead by this his Minion, lost the fall, of the fall. Christian people. grace at the hands: of my word (fweet heart) bee hath under the faroud of the Church and wing of this 5 That private Masses was necessary for the peo-Monarch, that they feared not to follow the appeale beene towards thee a verie knase. But in following this but no Servant of Mars. In whose contempt, and tract of blood, flowed from the fountaine of the ple, and agreeable to the law of God. of death, even vpon her that flept in his owne bofor the indifcretion of their King, they fuffred them- John Liflie. fixe Articles, wee have stepped over some other 6 That auricular confession was expedient to be fome, which was Queene Katherine Parre, espouled rines life laid in. felues to bee taken Prifoners, and willingly loft the reteined, and continued in the Church of God. occurrences that happened somewhat before this vnto him fome three yeeres before, and whom (as time, vnto which with thy patience, good Reader, we (118) This victory was wonne vpon the twenty

Coap.21. Henrie VIII. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 58. fourth of November, at a place beyond Carliel, called] and Ruthwen, least Queene Mary should be conveywith the Emperials, and shewed their value in the's Solem-moffe, vpon Bellaigne, but in the meane time it to remaine vnder the English; to accomplish which peace Monnier to the English; to accomplish which peace Monnier to the Contract Section 2007 and English. Solem-moffe, where were taken Prisoners the Earles of ed into England vnto King Henry. These violent fiege of Mattrell. Caffils and Glencarne, the Lords Maxwell, Flemming, courses, caused great Emulations among the Scorish (127) The Duke of Suffolke in the meane while Peace concluded Nobility, each of them fiding as their affections Grafismiaith foure and tw Summerwell, Oliphant, and Grey, Sir Oliver Sinclere, and ftrucke downe his Standerds on the East side of Bol-Estloigne belieothers, to the number of one and twenty men of acwere fetled, but lastly agree to fet the Crowneon England; and Sir Thomas Cheynic Lord Warden of the loigne, and with many sharpe skirmishes, entred the Cinque Ports, to be the Kings Agent at the Font, for count, who were conveighed to London, and comtheir young Queenes head: prepared for the folembale Towne, which siege King Henry himselfe in nity, whereunto all the Lords came, excepting those the Baptisme of the Dolphins new borne daughter. mitted to the Tower. For griefe of which loffe, and person seconded, who having passed the Seas from (132) Notwithstanding these Complements, suspicion of his Nobility, King lames fell into a methat itood for England, and from them the Gouer- Queene Marie England, vpon the fixe & twentith of July, encamped nour with much adoe was drawne to be prefent at of Scotland crowthe fight of Bolloigne was a great fore in the French Helinfind. lancholy Paffion, which the birth of his new borne before Bolloigne on the East-side, whence his Canons menseies, insomuch that Monfieur Chatillon Captain the Coronation but that accomplished, and the state Princesse rather increased, then gave him any cofort, fo rent the Wals and Bulwarke, as their mounted affaires consulted vpon, it was agreed that the French to as hee deceased the foureteenth day of December of Mountplaister, beganne to make a new Bastilion Chastilion raisett tops lay upon the Ground and his great morter pee neere vnto the Towne, even in the very mouth of sufferent. The death of K. Kings fuite should be fauoured, and that the Earle following,foreshewing (faith Leslie) great troubles to ces were discharged with so skilfull a Compasse the River, which the Lord Grey of Wilton perceiving follow in Scotland. Arran should be Gouernour still, whereat Earle Lenthat their bullets falling downe right; beate all builnox conceined such displeasure, as he became wholy The Earle of certified the King, what inconvenience would hap-(119) Newes brought neere at one inftant, of dings downe vpon the Enemies heads. Whereby for King Hemie, & joined himselfe with the Earles of from the Queen pen if that were made strong, and the same discusthe death of King Iames, & birth of the Princesse his Job. Sleidan. (laith Sleidane) in short time he got that, which neither Angus, Glencarne, and Cafils, the Lords, Maxwel, Sum- mother. fed at the Counsell-Table, it passed with one voice daughter, King Henry intended to doe that by the his Father, nor the Kings in former times could never Amarriage in-rended betwist meruell Gray, and others that flood with the Engthat the Peace with France was not to be infringed, match of a marriage, which long had beeneaflayed winne. For thereupon the Town was jurrendred and lift for the match with Prince Edward. notwithstanding this Frenchattempt:to which end by the fword of Mars: all things to conforting as it Prince Edward, and the young Queene of Seatcleared of the French fouldiers, women and children. (123) King Henry then hearing what was done, did, he having one onely fonne, then aboue five yeres a prohibition drawne, whereunto King Henry also set (128) The King like a Conquerour with his King Henry des mandeththe and intended lent prefently into Scotland to demand his hand, that no let should be made against Chatillon of age, and Scotland no heire belide this new borne fword borne before him entred the Gate, where the the Custody of the young Queene, and that certaine young Scorish Scotish Noblemen might be appointed to guarde in his Fort. Howbeir the King commanded Sir daughter; their yeeres fuiting a confent for marriage, Duke of Suffolke presented him with the keyes of Thomas Palmer (imploied in this busines) to bid the King Bravier the whole Iland offering both the joynter and dowthe Towne, the Trumpets still sounding, and noher in England, vntill shee came to yeeres of consent, ry, and that which most moued, their chiefe Nobili-Lord Grey to impeach the new worke, and to flat his own witing, thing wanting that might applaud his fame. The so much as was raised thereof vnto the Earth. This ty in his owne hands, to be moulded for this deligne, according to Couenants formerly concluded: which Towne thus wonne, the English meant still to keep; no waies would be granted, and thereupon he preas if heaven it felfe had bid the banes. commission read with the report of Command to for the strengthening whereof, the King comman-(120) Those Prisoners therefore which had repared an Army thetherward, under the Conduct of the Contrary, the Counsell of State, thought it ded the faire Church of Saint Maries to be taken The Scotish pri-Lord Edward Seimer Earle of Hertford Lieutenant most meete to follow their instructions in writing; mained in the Tower only two daies, ypon the twendowne, and in the same place, a mount to be raised foners honous bly entertains y one of December, he fent for to Westminster, the Generall by Land, accompanied with the Earle of An Army fea least the words might either be mis-delivered or misfor the planting of Ordinance, to annoy any siege. taken. But the Lord Grey causing the messengers Earles and Lords all fuited in Gownes of blacke da-Shrewsbury, and a Fleete of two hundred faile by Sea, into Scotland. But being thus busied in Bollaignes affaires, the Emwords to be writ, and subscribed with all their hands maske, furred with Cunny, whereafter some words whereof Sir Iohn Dudley, Vicount Lifle was Adthat were prefent at the report, finddainely and vn-looked for, came to the Fort, and in four e houres perour without his knowledge or confent came to a of friendly reproofe, they were bestowed among the peace with the French King, whereat King Henrie English Nobility, who vsed them according to their (124) To the aide of the Scots the Popesholi-R. Grafton. was fore displeased, and the sooner left France, leaeitates; and the third day in Christmas were inuited neffe was very forward, who fent them the Patriarch Ion Lefte. space cast downe, what had beene in raising three stateth Chatillan uing Sir Iohn Dudley Lord Lifle , his deputy in Bolto the Courtat Greenewich, where they went before moneths before, which when the King heard off, he of Venice as his Legate, & Orator, to perswade their loigne, and landed at Doner the first day of October, the King to his Chappell, were royally feafted, and the motion then made for the establishing of peace, asked his Counsellors what they thought of this, Resolutions with whom the French Kingsent Monto his great honor and ioy of his Subjects. figur la Broche, and Monsieur Menager, to lead them to fight, and fifty thousand Crownes of the Sun, to futhat Chatillon-garden was cast downer amongst whom (129) The French King chafed with this late by the Conjunction of the two Princes, whereunto one of them answered, the doer thereof was worthy to John Serres. and great loffe, fought to trie fortune in further at-The Scotish | Sonersreleases the Scotifb were as willing as the English, & proffered ftaine the Charge; with munition worth renthouloofe his head, I had rather (faid the King) loofe a dozen of such heades as thine is, then his that had tempts, and that not onely for the recourry of Bolall forward assistance to haue it accomplished. So fand Crownes more. It feemeth by Lefly that part without Ran loigne (which with twenty thouland well appointed done the deed, and immediately fent the Lord Grey A.D. 1547. hat these Nobles were deliuered without other ranof this filter fell into the Earle Lennor his hand, and hee assaied) but also in assayling the English domifome, and richly rewarded at their departure from that therewith he made head against the Gouernor, h's pardon with many great thankes. nions, as the Ile of Wight and those parts of Suffer that lay vpon the Seas, though with losse of many but not able to match him, fent vnto King Henry for (133) But now the date of his time almost run; (121) Thefe returned into Scotland, declared aide, with proffer of his scruice against the French and he preparing towards the way of all flesh, the Isbn Lefty. Captaines and thousands of Souldiers, that neuer refide, which fo well was accepted of Henry, as he made what they had done, and so effectually followed the great and faire Church of the Gray Friers London, turned to tell him what intertainement they had a busines, that in a Parliament affembled of the three him his Nephew, by giving the Lady Margaret his fi-fters daughter to be his wife. Math, Earle of Lennox marrieth lately suppressed by himselfe, he caused againe to be as likewise in sending aidevnto Scotland, where Monopened, and to be made a Parish Church, gining the Estates, the marriage was confirmed, and a peace fleur Mungumry of the Order of France, with 5000 Lady Margares. The marriage (125) The English thus seconded with this vnproclaimed to continue betwixt the two Realmes reuenewes thereof vnto the Citie of London to-The marriage of Prince Ed-ward and Queen Marr, concluded by Parliament. firong, entred to maintaine the breach betwixt them A Roade made into Seetland. the space of tenne yeeres, which agreements were looked for Allyance, Cardinall Beton thought good | Earle Louis wards the reliefe of their poore, whercunto he gaue and K. Henry, which was so followed on both parts, to binde all to the Gouernour, who with the Authority of the Queene Dowager proclaimed Lemon an Enemy to the State. But in the meane while the fent into England by honourable Ambassadors, and fine hundred Markes yeerely of Lands for euer to as the English making a Roade towards Gedworth. there interchangeably sealed betwixt these Potent maintaine Gods dinine service and the said Churgot praise for their valour, but reproch for their Effates. But Cardinall Beton Archbishop of Saint ches reparations, within whose walles we finde this spoiles, and the Scots renowne for killing the Lord Admirall of England was entred the Frith, and at new often written, This is Christs Church founded by King Andrewes, fearing least Scotland would change the Eure, Lord warden of the East-Marches, with many Church Orders, as England had done (the Bible alrea-Hauen landed his men, where joining his, to the land Henrie the eight. Cardinall Beton other Captaines in defence of their Countrey. against the mar-riage with Esgdy read in their owne language, and the Popes viur-(134) And his ficknes increasing to the great dan-Seruice, they altogether marched thence towards (130) Hereupon an Army of twelue thouland ped power called in Question, as then it began to be, Lieth, himselfe leading the Vaward, Shrewsbury the ger of life hee prepared himselfe to make his Wil, wherein howsoeuer titles had been vnhabled in Parfirong was fent into Scotland , whereof the Earle of by the feruent preaching of Frier Guilians, to the Rereward, and the Lord Lieutenant the maine Bat- The English en-Hertford was Generall : with these he forraged the great liking of most of the Lords) made some exceptell. These comming to Lieth, spoiled the Town, liaments, he ordained his three children to succeede of his raigne, Borders before him, and burnt many Townes in the and thence to Edenbrough, burnt the City, and wations against the Earle Arraine the new chosen Goeach after others, for want of other Issue; One Middle-Marches, with Kelfey & Coldingham Abbey, the French not hastie to stay the incursion, lay still, fted the Country for seauen miles about, this done uernour, and second person in the Land, being neethousand markes he commanded to be given to the rest in blood to the young Queene. And the French they fet fire vpon Haddington, and Dunbarre, and then the whole Army returned vnto Barwicke. poore, and to twelve poore Knights at Winfere each The French King and let them (vnfought with) depart for England. King not liking this vnion with England, fought by of them twelue pence a day for euer, euery yeere a (131) But the warres removed againe into all meanes to breake the fame match: to effect which, (126) Whilft things thus paffed in Stotland, long Gowne of white cloth, the Garter imbroidered France, the Reingraue with a great power came to vihe fent the Earle of Lennex to perswade with the and the maine purpose resting in suspence, King Hen- A.D. 1544 vpon the breaft, wherein was placed the Crosse of ctuall a Fort built neere vnto Bolloigne; to impeach Saint George, and a Mantle of red cloth to bee worne Gouernour, with great proffers and promifes of afry well knew where the greatest rub did lie in his which, the Earle of Surrey, then Lieutenant of the fiftance, but finding him faithfull vnto King Henry, way, which was the French King, the chiefest Abetthereupon, ordaining for his Executors in the mi-Towne made forth, but was discomfitted in the enter of the Seets, whom he ever vpheld, to hold him tacke at home, least otherwise he should tug with presently made faction for the French, wherein hee nority of Prince Edward, these heere under named, A great loffe of terprize, and Sir Edward Poppings Captaine of a Band drew the Queene mother, the Earles Hantly, Argile, Montroffe, Menteith, and many more Pecres, the Carflaine, with fifteene other Captaines, besides many France for his owne right. And therefore having Thomas Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, Officers and Common Souldiers. These Princes dinall amongst them ever the chiefe. Thomas Wriothesley Lord Chancellor. William Paulet Knight of the Order. ioined with the Emperour against the French, sent wars in these violent proceedings, became very fear-(122) Earle Lennox thus growne into credite his Herald, Garter, King at Armes, to demand certaine couenants, which if he refuled, to proclaime defull least they would grow to the Common hurt of with the Queene mother, and made strong by her Lord Saint-Iohn Great Master of the Houshold Christendome, and therefore many other potenadherents that favoured the French, presently claifiance vnto open warres, but he not suffered to doe John Ruffell Lord prinic Scale. tates, whereof the Emperour was first, sollicited these his message to the King, returned, and Heurie prepamed to be Gouernour of Scotland, being the second Edward Seimer Earle of Hertford Lord great John Serres. Kings vnto a peace, which the fooner was heard and perion of degree in the Realme, and withall to have red an expedition into France, wherein he imploied The Queene, and Queens mother conucy Chamberlaine. imbraced, for that they were both of them old, and the cuftody of the young Queene, who with her mothe Dukes of Norfolke and Suffolke, the Earles of A-rundell, Oxford and Surrey, the Lords, Ruffell, Grey, Fer-Iohn Dudley Viscount Liste Lord high Admiral King Henry diseased in body, Commissioners therether were forthwith taken from Linlitham under the Cuthert Tunstall B, of Durham. o ed Strin fore appointed certaine articles were agreed vpon: charge of the Gouernour Arraine, and brought vnrers, Mountin, and Sainet-John, besides many other Anthonie Browne Knight Mr. of the Horse. the first thereof was, that the French King should seruiceable Knights, and Sir Iohn Dudley appointed to Strineling strongly guarded, with the continuall Iohn Sleidame 10 William Paget Knight of the Order. pay vnto King Henry, eight hundred thousand Crownes in eight yeeres space, and then to reenter presence of the Lords, Leuinston, Erskwin, Flemming, II Edmund Mountacute Chiefe iustice of the high Admirall for the Seas. Of these some soined Common-pleas, 12 Tho-

LIGHTIC VILIA

III D V C C D S I C I C I

16 Doctor Wotton Deane of Canterbury.

And for their aide and assistance in Counsell. he appointed the fe following.

I Henry Fitz-Alan Earle of Arundel. 2 William Parre Earle of Effex.

3 Thomas Cheney Knight, Treasurer of the Houfhold. 4 Iohn Gage Knight, Cotroler of the Houshold. 5 Anthony Winkefield Knight, Vice-Chamberlaine

 William Peter Knight, principall Secretary.
 Richard Rich Knight. Iohn Baker Knight. 9 Ralph Sadler Knight.

10 Thomas Seimer Knight. II Richard Southwell Knight. 12 Edmund Pecham Knight.

King Hearles

And in great penitency for his finnes, died vpon Thursday the twenty eight day of January, in the yeere of Christ Iesus 1545. when hee had raigned thirty scuen yeere, nine moneths, and fine daies, &had lived fifty five yercs, five months,& five daies, whose body with great solemnity was buried at Windfore vnder a most costly and stately Tombe begunne in Copper and guilt, but neuer finished, in the inclosures of whose Grates is curiously cast this in-Cription. HENRICUS OCTAVUS REX ANGLIAE, FRANCIAE, DOMINUS HI-BERNIAE, FIDEI DEFENSOR with what cost and state this his Monument was intended, is manifested by a Manuscript taken from the true model thereof, which I received from that industrious Herauld, Master Nicholas Charles Lancaster. and for the great magnificence is worthy heere to be

> The maner of the Tombe to be made for the Kings Grace at Windfore.

First, the pauement wherevpon the Tombe shall ftand, shall be of Orientall stone: That is to say, of Alabaster, Porsido, Serpentines, and other stones of diuers colours, as in the patterne sheweth.

Item, vpon the same Pauement shall be two great steps under all the worke of like Orientall stones. Item, the Basement of the Pillers shall be of white

Marble with Angels holding betweene them Crownes or Garlands guilt, and white Marble as more plainely sheweth in the Patterne, Item, aboue the faid Basement and Angels, shall be

all the oid Testament, that is to say, xiiij. Images in the xiiij. Casements of the same two Pillers of the Prophets, and all the Pillers which shall be xvi. shall be of stones Serpentine, Porfide and Alabaster, and other fine Orientall Rones, of fuch colours as is shewed in the Patterne; and the foote of every piller, and also the head shall be of Brasse. And energy Prophet shall have an Angell sit at his foote, with Scripture of the name of his Prophet, and aboue ouer the head of the same shall bee the story of his Prophet: in every of which Story shall bee at least

Item, about all the same Pillers shall bee another Basement of white Marble, with a partition being made of fuch fine Orientall fromes as the Pillers bee, wherein shall bee written such Scripture as please

Item, about the same Basement shall be the Story of the new Testament, that is to wit, with the Images of the Apostles, the Euangelists and the foure Doctors of the Church, and enery Image (hall have fitting at his foote a little child with a Scripture of the name of his Image, and a little Basket full of red and white Roses, which they shall shew to take in their hands, and cast them downe off the Tombe and ouer the Pauement, and the Roses that they shall cast ouer the Tombe shall bee enamelled and guilt, and the roses that they cast over the Pavements shall be of fine Orientall frones of white and red.

Item, behinde all the same Images of the new Testament round shall be made in brasse and guilt all the life of Iefus Christ from the nativity to his ascention, and it shall be so clearely and perfectly made, that the Mystery of Christs life to his ascention shall plainely appeare.

Item, about the faid new Testament and Images thereof, and aboue the faid life of Christ, shall bee a Quireofxx. Angels standing upon a Basement of white Marble, with great Candlestickes in their hands having lights in them shewing to honour and reuerence the same Tombe.

Item, all these foresaid figures, stories and ornaments shall be made to garnish and ornate the two Pillers of the Church betweene which the Tombe

Item, betweene the faid two great Pillers of the Church thus garnished, shall be a Basement of white Marble of the height of the Basement of the Pillers, and therein the Epitaph of the King and Queene, with letters of gold, of such Scriptures as yee de-Item, vpon the same Basement shall bee made two

Tombes of blacke-touch, that is to say, on either side one, and vpon the said Tombes of black Touch shall be made the Image of the King and Queene on both fides, not as death, but as persons sleeping, because to shew that famous Princes leaving behinde them great fame, their names never doe die, and shal lie in roiall Apparels after the antique maner. Item, ouer the right hand, ouer both the fides of

the same Tombe shall be an Angell which shall hold the Kings Armes, with a great Candlesticke, having as it were light on it as a Lampe, and in like manner shall be an other Angell holding the Queenes Armes on the left hand with a like Candlesticke,

Item, on the right hand and left hand on both the fides ouer the faid Images of the King and Queene, shall be two Angels shewing to the people the bodies of the King and Queene holding about their Heades veiles of gold, and the Crownes of the King and Queene on their hands. Item, betweene the faid two Tombes of blacke

Touch and the faid Angell ouer the King & Queene shall stand an high Basement like a Sepulchre, and on the fides whereof shalbe made the story of Saint George, and ouer height of the Basement shall bee made an Image of the King on Horsebacke, liuelie in Armor like a King after the Antique maner shewing in countenance and looking on the faid two Images lying on the faid Tombes.

Item on the right hand and left hand of the faid two Tombes shall bee foure Pillers of the foresaid Orientall stones, that is to say, on either side two Pillers, and vpon euery Pillar shall bee a like Basement of white Marble with partitions for Scriptures as shall be aboue the other Pillers. And on the same foure Basements of the said Pillers shall bee made foure Images, two of Saint lohn Baptist, and two of Saint George, with foure little children by them cafting roses, as is aforesaid.

Item, ouer the faid Image of the King on Horsebacke shall bee made an Arch triumphall, of white Marble wrought within, and about it, and vpon the same Arch, in maner of a Casement of white Marble garnished with like Orientall Stones of diners coours, as the pattern sheweth, and on the two sides of the faid Casement shall be made and set of brasse guilt, the story of the life of Saint Iohn Baptist, and one hight of the faid Casement shall bee made five steps, enery one more then other downeward, of like Orientall frones, as the faid Pillers shall shew.

Item, on the foure corners of the faid Casement

Chap. 21 Henry VIIJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 58. fore created Marchionesse of Pembrocke, the first of

shall be made the Images of the foure Cardinal ver-tues having such Candlestickes in their hands as is abone faid Item, on the toppe of the highest step of the said fine steps on the one side shall be an Image of the Father, having in his left hand the Soule of the King and bleffing with his right hand, with two Angels

holding abroad the Mantle of the Father on either Item, in like wife shall bee made on the other side the faid Image of the Father, having the foule of the Queene in his left hand, bleffing with his right hand with like Angels.

The height of the same worke from the Father vnto the Pauement shall be xxviii. foot.

Item the breadth and largenes of the faid worke shall be xv. foote, and the Pillers of the Church in greatnes, v. foote: and fo the largenes of the faid worke, from the vttermost part of the two great Pillars shalbe xx. foote.

Item, euery of the Images of the xiiij. Prophets, shall containe every Image V. foote in length, and the Angels shall contains two foote and a halfe in length. Item , cuery of the xx. Pillers shall containe in

length X, foot. Item, enery of the Images of the Apostles, Enan-gelists and Doctors shall containe in length V. soote

and the Angels as is abouefaid. Item in likewise euery of the xx. Angels of the quire shall containe in length two foot and a halfe, and in likewise the Images of the Children two foot

Item, the foure Images of St. Iohn Baptist and St. George and all the figures of the father and Angels on the V. steps shall be V. foote.

Item, the foure Images of the King and the Queer shall be of the Stature of a man and woman, and the foure Angels by them of the stature of a man every

Ite, the Image of the King on Horseback with his Horse shall be of the whole stature of a goodly man and large Horse. Item, there shal be a Cxxxiiij. sigures, Xliiij. Stories, and all of Braffe guilt, as in the patterne appeareth.

(135) This magnificent Monarch was of pre-fence Maiesticall, and of Personage more then ordinarily ral, faire of Complexion and Corpulent of body, very wife and very well learned, of a fudden and ready speach, in youth very prodigall, and in his age very liberall, pleasant and affable, but not to be dallyed with, bolde in attempting, and euer thirstie of potent glory: an expert Souldier, and fauouring fuch

as were active or feruiceable, according to the then vitual faying, King Henrie loues aman: and indeed fomewhat too wel the delights with women, as by his many wines heere enfuing, may well appeare.

(136) Katherine the first wife to King Henry was the daughter of Ferdinando the fixt King of Spaine, and widow dowager of Prince Arthur his elder brother, as hath beene faid : the was married vnto this King the third of June : and first of his Raigne, the yeere of faluation 1509, being folemnely crowned with him vpon the twenty fourth day of the fame, and was his wife aboue twenty yeeres, and then diuorced from him by the fentence of the Archbishop of Canterbury : lived three yeeres after by the name A.D. 1533 of Katherine Dowager. Shee deceased at Kimbalton

> and yeere of Christ 1535. and lieth interred on the North-fide of the quire in the Cathedrall Church of Peterborow under a hearfe of Blacke Saye, having a white Croffe in the middeft. (137) Anne, the second wife of King Henry, was

in the County of Huntington the eight of Ianuary,

the fecond daughter of Sir Thomas Bullen, Earle of Wilisbreand Ormand. Shee was solemnly at WindSeptember and twenty foure of his Raigne, having A.D. 1532: one thousand pound given her by yeere; to maintaine her estate. Shee was married vnto king Henry in his Closer at White-Hall, ypon the wenty his day of Ianuary, and yeere of Christ Iesus, 1533, being the foure and twentith of his Raigne, and was Crowned with all due observances, at Westminster upon Whitfunday the first of Iune, where the Crowne of Saint Edward was let vpon her head, the scepter of Gould delinered into her right hand, and the Inory rodde

with the Doue into her left. Shee was his wife three yeeres, three monthes and twenty fine daies, when being cut off by the sword the nineteenth of May, her body was buried in the Quire of the Chappell in the Tower, leaving her accused fame to bee A. D. 1536. censured as affections best pleased the vncharitable minded, and her bed to bee possess of avertuous Lady. (138) Iane, the third wife of King Henry, was the

daughter of Iohn Seimer Knight, and fifter to Lord Edward Seimer, Earle of Hertford, and Duke of Sommerset. Shee was married unto him the twentieth of May, even the next day after the beheading of Queene Anne, and the twenty eight of his Raigne. Shee was his wife one yeere, fue monthes and twenty foure daies, and died in Child-bed the fourcteenth of October, to the great griefe of the King, who not onely remoued from the place, but kept himfelfe prinate, and wore the Garment of mourning euen in the Festivall time of Christmas, her body was solemnely conneied to Windfore the eight of November following, where the was interred in the middest of the Quire of the Church within the Castell, (139) Annethe fourth wife of King Henry and fifter to William Duke of Cleue was married vnto him

the fixth of lanuary in the thirty one yeere of his Raigne, the yeere of Grace, 1540. shee was his wife A.D. 1540. fixe moneths, after which time certaine Lords of the vpper House of Parliament came into the nether, and alleaged cause for which that marriage was vnlawfuil, whereunpon thee was dinorced, and by Statute enacted, that shee should no more be taken for Queene, but should be called the Lady Anne of Cleue. See remained in England long after the Kings death, though small mention is made of her by any of our Writers, only we finde that the accompanied

the Lady Elizabeth through London at the folemnizing of Queene Maries Coronation. (140) Katherine the fifth wife of King Henry the eight, was the daughter of Edmund, and Neece vnto Thomas Howard his brother, Duke of Norfolke Shee was married vnto him the eight of August and yeere of Grace 1540. being the thirtie two of his Raigne, at Hampton Court, and continued his Queene the space of one yeere, fixe moneths and foure daies, and for her vnchafte life was attainted by Parliament, and for the same beheaded within the Tower of London the twelfth of February and her body buried in the Channcell of the Chappell

by Queene Anne Bullen. (141) Katherine the fixth and last wife of King Henry was the daughter of Sir Thomas Parre of Kendalland fifter to Lord William Parre Marquesse of Northampton, shee was first married to Iohn Neuill, Lord Latimer, and after his decease, vpon the twelfth of July maried vnto the King at Hampton Court, the yeere of Saluation, 1 5 4 3. and thirtie fine of his Raigne: Shee was his wife three yeeres, fixe months and fine daies, and furniting him, was againe married vnto Thomas Seimer Lord Admirall of England, vnto whom she bare a daughter, but died in the same Child-bed, the yeere of Grace, 1548.

His Ishe.

(142) Henrie the first sonne of King Henry by Queene Katherine his first wife, was borne at Rich. mund in Surrey vpon the first of Ianuary, and the first

(143) A sonne not named was borne vnto King Henrie by Lady Katherine his first Oucene in the month of Nouember, and the fixth yeere of his Raigne, who lived not long, and therefore no further mention of him can bee made : the deathes of these Princes King Henrie tooke as a punishment from God, for so he alleaged it in the publike Court held in Blacke-friers London, they being begot on his owne brothers wife.

(144) Marie the third childe and first daughter of King Henrie by Queene Katherine his first wife, was born at Greenewich in Kent, the eighteenth of Februarie in the yeere of Christs humanity, 1518 and the eighth of his Raigne. Shee was by the direction of her mother brought vp in her Childe-hood by the Counteffe of Salisbury her neere kinfwoman, for that as some thought, the Queene wished a marriage betwixt some of her sons and the Princesse, to strengthen her Title by that Aliance into Torke, if the King should die without iffue Male. In her yong yeeres fhee was fued to be married with the Emperour, the King of Scots, and the Duke of Orleance in France, but all the feating, and flee fucceeding her brother K Edward in the Crowne, at the age of thirtie fixe yeeres, marched with Philip King of Spaine, to the great dislike of many, and small content to her selfe. hee being imploied for the most part beyond the Seas, for griefe whereof and the loffe of Calcee, fhee lastly fell into a burning feauer, that cost her her life.
(145) Elizabeth the second daughter of King

Henrie, and first childe by Queene Anne his second wife, was borne at Greenwich, vpon Sunday the feuenth of September, the yeere of Christ Icius, 1534 and twenty fine of her Fathers Raigne, who with due folemnities was baptized the Wednesday following, Archbishop Cranner, the old Dutches of Norfolke, and the old Marchionesse of Dorset being the witnesses at the Font, and the Marchionesse of Excefter at the confirmation : Shee succeeded her sifter Queene Marie in the Monarchy of England, and was for wildome, vertue, piety, and Inflice, not onelie the Mirrour of her Sexe, but a patterne for Gonernment to al the princes in Christendome : whose name I may not mention without al dutiful remembrance, and whose memory vnto me is most deare. amongst the many thousands that received extraordinary fauours at her gracious and most liberall hand

(146) Another man childe Queene Anne bare vnto King Henry, though without life vpon the nine and twentieth of January, and twenty feuen of his Raigne, to the no little griefe of the mother, some diflike of the King, as the sequel of her accusation and death did shortly confirme.

(147) Edward the laft childe of King Henry, and first of Queene Iane his third wife, was borne at Hampton Court, the twelfth of October, the yeere of Grace, 1537. and twenty nine of the Kings Raigne, being cut out of his mothers wombe as is constantly affirmed, like as Iulius Cafar is faid to have been his Godfathers at the Font, was Thomas Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Duke of Norfolk, his fifter Lady Mary being Godmother, faith Grafton: Sixe daies after his birth he was created Prince of Wales, and at the death of his Father, succeeded him in all his Dominions, of whom more followeth heereafter.

His Naturall Issue.

(148) Henrie Fitz-Roie the natural fonne of A.D. 1519. King Henrie the eight was begotten of the Lady Talboije called Elizabeth Blant, and borne in the Mannor of Blackamoore in Effex about the tenth yeere of his Raigne; at the age of fixe yeeres he was created Earle of Notingham and in the fine and twentieth of his Fathers Raigne ypon the eighteenth of June in the Kings Pallace of Bridewell was made Duke of Richmond and Sommer fet, Lord War-den of the Eaft, West, and Middle-Marches against Scotland, and Lieutenant Generall of all the parts of England Northward, he was a Prince very forward in Marshal Activities, of Good literature and knowledge in the tongues, vnto whom the learned Anti-quary Leland dedicated a Booke; He married Marie daughter of Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolke, Earle Marshall and Lord high Treasurer of England, with whom he lived not long, but died at Saint I ames with whom he fued not long, out that a same 1 ares by wessims for the two and twentieth of Inly in the Thessians that we give the Christ Iesus, 1536, and was buried at Francisch mansatelle in the State of the State of State 1536. by westminster the two and twentieth of July in the mingham in Suffolke.

He tempestuous stormes in the Raigne of this King Henrie the eight, and the violent deluge raised against the Church-state of bis times; bare downe se many religious strong soumdations, and were the destruction of so many beautifull Monasteries, as the onely relation of their numbers and names, would have much interrupted the narration of his history Whers fore to reteine their memorials (though their walles are laid waste) as well for the reue-

rence we owe unto venerable Antiquity, as for the example of their Founders bolyzeale, we have inferred a Catalogue of their names, orders, and true valuations, as in the originall Booke thereof taken by Commission, and given vnto the King, we finde them set down, though at their dissolutions their values were fanourably and farre under rated. Some Founders, and times of foundations

wee want, the rest, Tablewise, to avoid prolinity wee have fet downe in this prefent following

Chap.21.

A CATALOGVE OF THE RELIGIOUS HOVSES VVITHIN THE REALME OF ENGLAND AND Vales, with many their Orders, Founders, and Values, most of them being sup-

pressed by King Henry the eight. Together with such other sacred places, as either then wereby him less standing, or since have been erected.

BARKESHIRE.

Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
0.	Saint Iaceb — Saint Mary. —M	SBy Queene Alfrith. SBy King Henry the first. Ciffe, King of the West-Saxons.	First Nunnes, after Blacke Monks, Cluniacenfer Blacke Monkes,	i. s. b. ab. q. 2116 03 09 00 q 2042 02 08 ab q
		Edward the Blacke Prince.	Blacke Nunnes.	
Biftleham now Biftham. Donington. Donington. Hamme.	- F	Richard de Abberbury Chevalier.	Canons. — Ordinis Santta Crucis. Blacke Nnnnes. —	0327 04 06 00 0 0020 16 06 00 0
Hurley.	Saint Mary. —M		SBlacke Monks, ?	0134 to 08 ob a
Wallingford caftle	Saint Trinity P	SThe Predecessors or Ancestors of the Ab- beste of Americanic, SEdmund sonne of Richard, King of the Romans, and Earle of Cornwall, Edward the Blacke Prince,	SBlacke Monks of Saint Albans,	9014 03 01 00 0 0071 10 07 00 0 0033 18 08 00 0

BEDFORDSHIRE.

Bedford d. Self-tord d. Self	Places.	Dedication.	Founders and Time.	Order.	Value.
Bedford, Saint Learner, H	Bedfor d	F.	Lady Margaret de Pattesball.	SFriers Minors, alig	L s. b. ab q
Biglefunde Carlos American Carlos Carl		Saint Leonard_H		Colcyments. 5	0021 00 08 00 0
Bulkemede ellus Sending per P			·	·	0007 00 00 0 0
Caldewel . S. Achiv Rapille . P The Lord Learniner Aligh John de Byddylley . Blacke Canons . 15 95 00 0 Chickfund . Shint Adart . P The Lord Learniner Aligh John de Byddylley . Shint Canons . 164 15 1 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0	Bushemede alias ?	— — M. — — P	SHugo de Bello Campo, and Roger his bro-	Canons Augustines	014; 18 03 0 0
Eaton	Caldewel	S. Iohn Baptist P Saint Mary P	The Lord Latimer Alij Iohn de Byddyfley. — Paine de Beauchamp.	Blacke Canons	0148 15 10 0 0
Futerwise skiden Coop of So o o o fleetower So o o o fleetower	Eaton — Dunftáble. —	Corporis Christi-C.		Blacke Canons.	0007 16 00 0 0
Helenflow, Northly Saint Marie — M King Herric the field and Varies Life. Herwood Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate Life. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate Life. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate Life. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate Life. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate Life. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate Life. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate Life. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate Life. Saint Marie — M King Herric the Ground Markeyate. Saint Marie Markeyate. Saint Marie Markeyate.	Fraternitas ibidem.	F		Friers Preachers. —	0004 18 04 0 0
Harewood. Saint Geter — Paramona Urranance Ferry. Saint Gutes — N Sint Gutes — N Solid Care Earlie of Glocefter and Herriford. Anno 6, 8, 1. Pi Raife the wife of Paine de Beauchampe. Canons Augustines. O047 03 01 0 0 Markeyare. Solid Gutes — N Solid Care Earlie of Glocefter and Herriford. Anno 6, 8, 1. Pi Raife the wife of Paine de Beauchampe. Canons Augustines. O043 15 05 00 00 00 05 05 00 00 00 00 00 00 00	Helenstow,	N	Indicha wife to Walsheof E. of Huntingdon	Blacke Nunnes	
Markeysze. — Saint Gdter — N Scilliert de Clare East of Gloceffer and Seventham. — P Resident he wife of Paine de Beanchampe. — Canons Augustines. — 0,41 15 05 0 0 Northyle — C Saint Marie — H King Herrie the fifth, and Walter Effect. — White Monkes. — 0,42 11 11 0 0 (Heye de Ballethe Alli Referr de Were Eule).		Saint Peter - P		Blacke Nunnes —	0047 03 01 0 0
Northyle October Octob			Hertford. Anno G. E. I.	1	
warts Whitfand. Saint Marie. M King Herrie the fitst, and Walter Eißee. White Monkes. 0442 II II 0 0	Northyle	_ P	Roise the wite of Paine de Beauchampe. —		
(Hugo de Bolbick Alij Robert de Vere Earle)	wars Whitfand,		· .	_	
	Wardon. — Voburne. —	Saint Marie - M			0442 #1 #1 0 0

_					6.9	Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.
		BVCKINGHAMSE	HRE.						
	Deducation	1 Family In	1 0.1			Ely.	S. Iobn & S.ZH Mary Magd.SH	Thomas Bishop of Ely.	
؍	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.		Anglesey	P	Kichara de Lure.	-
		1	CFriers Minorei - 12-2	l. s. b. cb. q.		P	S. Andrew.	Sir Paine Penerell, Standard - Bearer to Robert Duke of Normandy, in the Holy	1
-			Friers Minors: ali-	- 0003 02 05 0 0		Barnewell, —	S. Andrew. 3P	Warres against Infidels, in the time of	Blacke Canons
-		1 COL 12 1 CC 11C 21	- Nunnes.	0045 14 04 0 0			Saint Mary	Henry the first.	1
	aint Augustine,-	Richard King of the Romans.	- SBonorum virorum ? Eremits.	0447 18 eo sh o		Chatters	- I annexed by SN	SAlfwena a deuout woman, and her bro- ther Ednothus Abbot of Ramfey.	Blacke Nunnes
	Saint Marie	_ Mande the Empresse	- Ciftertians, -				CH.I. to Ely.)
	Saint Mary.	Manefelmus.	Black Monkes.	2091 05 11 0b 0		Denny	Saint ClareN	Maria de Santto Paulo, wife of Adomar Earle of Pembroke. Anno Domini,	Nunnes.
	Saint Mary - 3	Arnald de Bosco, A.D.1127	- Cistertiä whiteMonks.	0142 01 03 0		Saint Edmunds	1	C 1341.	
i		King Henrie 6.	Prefectus: Socy 8.67 Catores Scolares.60.			Fordham	P	King Canute.	- White Canons De ordine Simplingha
5	Saint Marie N	I John de Bedon,	White Canons.	0091 08 03 0b		Ikelington. — Marmound. —	P		- De orane sucquingue
S		Robert Earle of Leicester.	- White Canons			Soffam Bulbecke -	P		Canons Blacke Nunnes
-	M	The Ancestors of the Earls of Suffolk.		0023 17 02 0			A Comedon &	l .	Dinene Lentines, -
-	M	Dior 6 CD II	Blacke Nunnes	0037 06 11 0		Shengaye, -	Preceptoria to	Sybil daughter of Roger Mountgomery, Earle of Shrewsbury, and wife of I. de	Knights Templers
Sa	int Leonard—H	D'Oiles une Doily Iohn Peynton of Newport	Blacke Canons,	0285 15 09 0			Crusalem.	(Paines, A.D.1130.	
Š	aint Marie, —M	Walter Giffard Earle of Buckingham. A.1112	Blacke Canons.	0495 18 05 ob		Swauefey		SAlan Ia Zonch brother to the Vicount	Blacke Canons
_	P		Blacke Canons	1			Saint Mary?	Roban in the leffer Britaine. Sexwalph 2 devout man for Etemites, Ac.	
_	M	The Ancestors of Thomas Stanley of Safford,-	===	0066 13 04 0		Thorney —	≺and Saint >M	thelwold B. of Winchester for Monks, and	
-	P	Edward Baron Haftings of Loughborrow,-	=	0024 00 00 0			Bornlph. 5	King Edgar.	ı l
5	saint Marie. —P	Fulco Paganell, Alij, Domini Regis progenitor.	Poore people Blacke Monkes	0126 17 00 0		1		CARLIOL	
	H			0007 15 03 ob			1		1
s	. Margaret, —P		- I	0022 06 07 0		Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.
		CAMBRIDGESH	PE			\	L		
_		CUMPLIDGESHI	I.C.			Apelby in West-3		SLord Vefey, Lord Percy, and Lord Clif-	White Friers,
	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order,	1 71-1		morland. Armethwait in 7	F F		
		Lommer with Limits	Craer.	Value.		Cumberland, 5	- N	King William the Conquerour, Anno Reg. 7	Nunnes
		SK. Edward the first, and Sir Guy Mortimer. 2		1. s. b. ob. q.		Carliolin Cum-7 berland.	Saint Mary P	Domini Regis Progenitor.	.
_	— — F	Thomas de Hersford a great Benefactor.	White Friers			Holme Coltreyn		Dauid King of Scots, and Henry Earle of	
	F	King Edward 1.	SFriers Minors, 4- 2			in Cumberland	Saint Mary-M	/ Huntington his ionne.	
_	— - F		Zlibi, Grey Friers. Friers Augustines.	I		Lanercoft in Cumberland,	Saint Mary P	Robert de Vaulx, Lord of Gillesland.	·
-	nt Radegund-N		Blacke Friers.			f Sharpe in	1 20	Thomas the ionne of Gofpatricke, fonne of	1
)21	P		Black Nunnes.			Westmorland	IVI	Corms.	-
		-						CHESHIRE.	1
			I]			,	CHESHIKE.	
		Hugh Balsham Bishop of Ely. An. Dom. 1284.		1		Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.
•		CRich Badem and Flor Clara Countella 2		==					
		of Vister. Anno Dom. 1340. Maria de Sto. Paulo Countesse of Pem-	-	,		Chefter	Saint John; Eccl?	King Hen: y the eight.	6-1-6
-		Maria de Sto. Panlo Counteffe of Pem-	·			Chefter,	Cath.	Thomas Stadham Gentleman. A.D. 1279. —	Secular Canons
_		Societas fratrum Corporis Christi, A.D. 1346.				Chefter	F	King John.	White Friers,
		William Bateman Bishop of Norwich, 1353	.			Chefter. —	- F	5 Hugh the first of the Norman bloud that ?	
_		Edmund Goneusle and John Caius. A.1348.				Chefter. —	SSaint Were- M		Blacke Monkes
_						Chefter	The virgin Mary M	Fundator Domini Regis Progenitor.	Blacke Canons.
-		King Henry the fixth, A.D.1441.				Chefter	Beata Maria,—N (Saint IohnC?	,	Nunnes.
		Queene Margaret wife of H. 6. A.D. 1448. Robert Woodlarke. A.D. 1459.				Chefter	(Saint IohnC2 Saptist aliiHS	Fundator Domini Regu Progenitor	·
_		John Aleocke Bishop of Ely. A. D. 1497. SLady Margaret Countesse of Richmond				Birkehead. — Bunbury, alias 7	S lames, - M	Fundator Comitis Derbia Antecessor	Blacke Canons. —
_		Lady Margaret Counteffe of Richmondy				Boniface-bury (Hugh Calueley and the Egertons.	Priests
_		mother to K. Henry the seventh A. 1505. Thomas Andley Chancellor of England.				Combermere, —	- M	William de Malbedene, A.D. 1124	White Monkes
		1) A.D. 1542.				Maclesfeild,	_с		1
_		Christopher Wray Lord Chiefe Iustice of England.				Norton	Saint Mary N	Zand atterwards Archbithoppe of Torke, S William Fitz-Nigell a Norman. John Lacy Conft. to of Chefter, A.D. 1173.— King Februard the.	
		(King Henrie the eight, Anno Dom. 1546.				Stanlaw. — Valie Regalis. —		Iohn Lacy Conft. e of Chester. A.D. 1173	Monkes
-		King Henrie the eight. Anno Dom. 1546. Tho. Nenil Deane of Canterbury, the Mr.					20	and the inches	<u> </u>
		Sir Walter Mildmay Knight, 2 Councellor?	1					CORNVVALL.	
_			<u> </u>					CORREVABLE.	
		SLady Frances Counteffe of Suffex gaue fine thousand pound to build it.				Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	0:
-	i	[Audry wife to King Egfrid, placed Prieffs	1			1	- Leaventon	Townser wha I ime.	Order.
-		in it. Ethelwold Bishop of Winchester sto- red it with Monkes : King Henry 1.							
-		product with Michaels : King Henry 1.	Blacke Monks.	1701 08 02 0		Saint Anthony	— — м		SBlacke Monks of
55	Peter and	made it a Bilhops See : King Hamm o			1	l L .	1	(First by K. Adelstan, after William Warwast)	(Blacke Canons 7
₹5.	Peter and Ethelred M	in freed of the Monkes placed a Day	DIACKE MONES.	.,01 00 01 0		l Bodmin	I Caine Dat		Dische Callella
S.Et	belred SM	in freed of the Monkes placed a Dean, Prebends, and a Grammar, Schools	DIACKE MIGHES.	1,01 40 01 0		Bodmin. —	Saint Peter M	Silinop of Excepter, & confirmed by king	≺ after Grev S
S.Eth	elred SM	in freed of the Monkes placed a Day	DIACKE MODES.	1,51 55 51 5		Bodmin. — Bonury. —		Bishop of Excester, & confirmed by king stong. King Athelstan.	after Grey Friers. Blacke Canons.

	Dedication.	Founder and Time.		Order.	Value.
Crantocke					I. s. b. cb. q
Saint German, -	M				0089 15 08 00 0
Glaifoney	Saint Thomas.—C S. Iohn Baptist,—F		D.1288	-	0205 10 06 00 0
Launceston.	Saint Stephen M		11:0	Blacke Canons, Aug.	0014 07 02 0b 0
Saint Mary de 2	м			5 Blacke Monks of 2	0,92 11 2 00 q
Saint Michael ?				SBlacke Monks of 2	1
de Monte.	— —м	William Earle of Cornwall and Mor	on	the Angels.	1
Saint Michaelde S magno monte	— —м			Black Monkes	.
Sulli Ifie	Saint Nicholas- M		:	Blacke Monks	
Saint Syriace	— —	· .		Blacke Monkes, -	.
Talearn	Saint Andrew. M			Blacke Monkes, — SBlacke Monks of 2 the Angels.	
Trury	F			Blacke Friers.	.]
Tywardreth	Saint Andrew P				0151 16 01 00 0
		DARBY-SHI	RE.		
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.		Order.	Value.
					~
	Commium San-C				i. s. d. ob. q.
Darby. —	Gorum Eccl				0038 14 00 0 0
Juxta Darby. —	Collegiat, C	•			
Darby. —	SBeata Ma-7 M			<u> </u>	0018 06 02 0 0
Darby	Saint Iames - Cella Saint Marie P	Fundator Domini Rezis Progenitor.	;	Blacke Canons,	
Darby		Fundator Domini RegisProgenitor.		Blacke Monkes.——— Nunnes,	
Darby*	— —н	The Counteffe of Shrewsbury.		SEight pooremen, ?	
Bello-Capite, -	Saine Thomas 35	SRobers the fon of Ranulph L. of A	Ifreton >	Zfoure women.	
Bredfall or Brifol	Saint ThomasM	2 Canon there.			0157 10 02 00 0
Park C	— м	Fundator Antecessor Iohannis Diric Duthik Armigeri.	ke,alias }		0010 17 09 00 0
Brend in the Peake	— — —м	Sir Robert Duin Knight.	- 3		-/ 09 00 0
Chefterfeild	Saint Croffe C Saint Mary S Beata Maria M Or S. Mary. M				0010 00 00 00
Dala,	SBeata Maria?	SWilliam Fitz-Ralph Anteceffor Ge	rualu >		C019 00 00 00 0
Data	or S.Mary. 5 M	& Kingston.	* FI		0144 12 00 0
Derelege or }	Beata Maria,M			Blacke Canons.	0258 14 05 00 0
auerwell	Saint <i>Marie</i> . — N	Name of the last o	_	Blacke Nunnes.	> 14 05 00 0
Grefly	Saint GeorgeM	William de Lyons called Fizz-Nigel o	t Grefley. 5		0039 13 08 o
Repingdon, alias	Saint EdithN	SFundator Domini Regis Progenitor		Blacke Nunnes.	,
Repton.	Saint Marie,M	Aimer de Valence & Kandulph & of	Chefter	Blacke Canons	0167 18 02 0
lay and Bar-	Р				
row.	F				0107 03 08 00
law and Bare 2	Precentaria		- 1		
lay, and Bar-S	Praceptoria.		-		0093 03 04 ob o
		DEVON-SHI	RE		
-/ 1			TE.		
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.]	Order.	Valero.
xcefter	S.Peter,Epifcop.	King Athelftan.		Secular Canons.	i. s. d. ob. q
exceiter	Saint Iames. M Saint Nicholas, P			Biacke Monks	1
Excefter	Saint John - P			Black Monks Benedift. Grey Friers.	0154 12 00 00 0
Excefter	S.Nicholas, -H			Oley Friers.	0102 12 09 0 0147 21 00 0
Barnstaple	Saint Mary P	lobel, some of Ailred.			
Berdleften	р			Blacke Canons .	0129 I5 03 00 q
Buckland,	Saint Mary.	Amice Counteffe of Deuenshire.If	bolde	_ 1	
		Fortibus,& Lady of the Ifle a benef	actor Cl		0241 i6 09 ob q
	Saint Marie, —P			SWhite Monkes. 2	I
	Beate Marie M		1	Nunnes.	02 2 15 03 0
Cornworthy	N:	Almar Earle of Cornwall.	11	Blacke Canons. —	
Cowyke, -	aint Andrew P	Thomas Earle of Deuenshire.			063 03 10
redition S	.Crncis C -				140 14 5
Dunkifwel,	aint Andrew M			Diacke Monkes	
		Adelize daughter to Baldwine of C	14. 2 1		298 11 10 00
		hampton, A.D.1140.	311	White Monkes. — c	381 10 6 ob
	aint Gregory P				0127 03 04 00 q

p.21.	and I	Iospitals sometimes in England	ndand Wales	
Places	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order:	Value.
Hartland,	SS. Nectan She Sthe Martyr.	Githa Earle Goodwins wife. Richard Piëta- wensis Archdiac: and Gesfrey de Dynan	7	i. s. d. sb. q
Monte. S Molery.	- I	C Senior, & Olimer his brother benefactors.	Blacke Monkes }	0306 13 02 00 tj
Newham, alias ? Newenham. S Othery.	Saint GregoryM	SReginald Mohun, Earle of Dunfter, Anno	- Plack Manha	0231 14 04 do o
Pilton	Saint Marie. C Saint Mary P the Virgin, P	Iohn Grandisch B.of Excester, tempore Ed. 3.— King Adelston.	Blacke Monks. SBlacke Monks Benedictines.	0303 02 09 0 0
Plimpton	Saint Peter P Saint Paul P Saint Katharine, N	{ Baldwyn de Reduers, Earle of Denonshire, ¿ & Dominus de Insula, in Henry 3. time. \$		9)12 12 08 ob q
Syon, Tauyitocke,	Saint Mary? M	Ordelph the fon of Orde are, Earle of De-	{BlackeMonkes }	0170 02 03 00 q 0902 05 07 c5 q
Torre,	Saint Sautour.—M Saint Mary P	William de Briewer.	White Canons	0396 00 11 00 0
Twynham or Christ-Church Twynham.	¿ Aliens. ¿ P	Reger Newman. If theld de Fort ibus formetime Counteff of Albemarte and Deuenfoire, and Lady of the Ille founded it for William de Fortibus Earle of Albemarte, and Richard de Reduer Fartle of Deuenfoire.e.A.D.1161-	. 1 5 l his isplaced allo ₹	0124 10 02 6b 0
		DORSET-SHIRE.		
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
Dorfet,	м	The Ancestors of Sir John Chediok Knight. (A Bishops See under Adelmus the first Birshoppe thereof, A. D. 704, Sunning, another See translated to it by Hermannus Bishoppe, sumpore Ethelred	Franciscane Friers.	i. s. d. cb. դ.
Shirburne.	Saint Peter. — M	Regis. After that by the faid Hermannss translated to Salisbury, left for a retiring place to them, tempore Gulielmi Conqueftoris, the Church where the Bishops seat was, became a Monastery Robers Neuill	Black Monks Bene. dictines.	0682 14 07 cb o
Abbotesbury	Saint Peter M Saint Mary M	Bishop of Salisbury, 2 chiefe founder. 1 Orking King of Denmarke.		0485 03 05 cb q 0229 02 01 cb o
Brydport, alias 2 Birtport. S Brydport, alias 2	P			0006 co 00 00 0
Birtport. Camestrum.	Saint Iohn Bap. H S Mary Magd. N	M.Camden faith, Augustin the English Apo 2	White Nunnes.	9 oo 10 de 8coo
Cranborne. —	{Saint Peser } M	Almarus E of Dorser, or rather of Cornwal Selward a noble Gentleman. A.D.930.	Blacke Monkes,	0623 13 02 6b q
S.Iobn Baptift。— Kalendarum. — Beate Maria	H			0051 10 04 00 q
Magdalen. Saint Marke alias Le Gaunts.	— н			7112 09 09 00 0
Melcombe. — Middleton alias }	Saint Mary. M	Athelstanus Rex.	Blacke Friers Blacke Monkes o	720 04 01 0
Shafton. —	Saint Edward N	Elfgua wife to Edmand King Aelfrids ne- phewes fonne.	Beneditines.	329 01 03 0 0
Tarent. — Warham, —	S.Peter.S Adelwold	Richard Poer Bishoppe of Sarisbury. Cuthburga fister to Ina King of the West	Virgins Votaries O Blacke Monkes	235 11 10 0
Winburn Minster-	N/	Saxons, and husband to the King of Northumberland. A.D.713.	Nunnes. —	
7/		DVRHAM DIOC	ES.	
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Valew.
Durham; =	S.Cuthbert. —P	Bishop Aldwin the fift buildet William de) Carelepo B. gathered againe the dispersed Monkes. Ralph his Successor finished what he had begun. N. Fernham Bishop. Themas Mellombe Prior enlarged it. A. D 74: William Skirlam Bishop builded that part called Galitee.		l. s. b. ab. q
			Ccccc	

Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Grder.	Talue_
/	-,		~	
Durbant in Ox-	} ;	C Fundam D B D		
Onia, Chester in the	5			0115 04 04 0 0
Street,	₹. 	Anthony Bec Bishop and Patriarke of le-	A Deane and S	
Egkilon.		. Conan Earle of Brittaine, and Richmond, &?	¿ /. 11020mas.	1
-	· ·	atter by Kalph de Molton.		
Finchcale	- Ccl	R. brother vnto that rich Bishop, Hugh?		0146 19 02 00
Gateshead		1		ero9 00 04 00 0
Gretham Hartlepoole, -		H Robert Bishoppe of Durnam.		0097 06 03 ob o
	1	M Hien, a religious woman. S Abbot Ceolfrid, in the 16. yeer of K. Erfrid?		
Iarrow.	Cel	" { Antecessor Episcop. Dunelm.		0040 07 08 0 0
Keprey. Lanchester.			l	01.67 02 11 00 0
		Anthony Bee Bishop of Durham.	Dean & Prebends	0052 \$6 55 55
Monkes Were- mouth,	Saint Peters1	A Benedictus Biscop.		0053 \$5 10 00 0
mouth, Monkes Were-	2			
mouth.	Same I man			1
Neffenam.		Fundator Domini Dakers Anteceffor. ——	Nunnes.	0026 09 09 0 0
Sherborne Stanedrop			-	9135 97 9 0 0
Stampford or &			_	0126 05-10 0 0
Sampford.	Cell:	1		0036 17 0 0 0
Warmouth	Cella			0016 0 0 0
	1		1	
		ESSEX.		
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
				L s. b. ob q
Colchefter, -	S. Iohn Beptift-M	Eudo Dapifer Henrici primi.	Blacke Monkes	0 0 80 10 8000
Colchefter	 Saint Botulph.— P Sanite Crucis.— I 		Fratres Santta Crucis	0113 12 08 0 0
Colchester	S Marre 2 Mand H	Fords Davidson	Leprofi	0007 07 08 0 0
Barking, -	Saint Mary? M & S.Eadburg.		Blacke Nunnes	1084 06 02 e b q
-			Diache Hannes.	1004 00 02 6 0 q
Barking	- H	of Barking.		
Bierdon, -	P			0031 05 01 ob o
Bileigh	- M	First by Robert Mornile, after by Herney de Monte-Merenciana.		0196 06 05 0 0
Blakamore	Saint LaurenceM	Iordan de Samford.		0085 04 07 0 0
Brendwood, -	S. Thomas chap the martir S pell. Domus	Ifabel Counteffe of Bedford.	-	0005 04 07 0 0
Chelmfford, -	the martiry pett.	,	Friers Preachers.	
	Saint Peter M Saint Peter M Saint Offth		Theis Picachers.	0009 06 05 00
Chich	- Saint Peter & M	Richard B.of London, Anno Dom. 1120	Blacke Canons	0758 05 08 0 0
Coggefhall	- Saint Marie M	V Sanda Nada andre de C	White Monkes.	
Dunmowe -	- Saint Marie - P	K.Stephen, Nephew to William the Conqueror Inga a Noble Lady, A. D. 1111.		0198 08 0 0 0
Earles-coine	- Saint MerieP	Albericus de Vere.	S Blacke Monkes of ?	,, ,
Ginge-attestone.	I			0175 14 08 ob o
LT_16: 1 - C	- 1		Blacke Canons	2022 16 22 25
Hafted,	} - c	Robert Bourchier.		0023 16 05 ob
Hatfeild Regis	- P	SRobert de Vere Earle of Oxford, tempore 2	Blacke Monkes	0157 03 02 0b 0
-	1	Henrici tertij. Slohn Haukewood Knight, Iohn Öliuer Esquier, and Thomas Newenton. Es.		
Heueninghā caf:el	i P			•029 IZ IO O O
		C quier.		
Horkiflegh	м	SThe Ancestors of Sir Roger Went-	[0027 07 11 0 0
		worth, in the right of his Wife.	_	
Ilford	H P			0016 13 04 0 0
Lyghes	- P	(Richard Grauesend, Bishop of London,)	Carmelirecon 3	
Maldon.	F	and Richard Ifelham Priest, Anno >	₹ White Fri- }	0026 00 08 0 0
(Thisis alf		C Dom. 1292.	S care 7	ì
placed i	n]		1	
Hertford	- i	Í	1	
Mercy cause it i		n - m n 11		i
doubtful		Roger Fitz-Ranulph.	-	
in which	1	1	ł	. 1
of these	2			1
(it is, Newport, –	- Н			
Saint Ofithe	M	Richard B.of London, A.D. 1520.	Regular Canons.	0023 10 08 0 0
	Saint MaryP	i i		○75 8 ● 5 08 0 0
Pipewell or 3	1		Blacke Monkes. —	0194 14 03 ob o
Pritwell.		1		
Pipewell or 7 Pritwell. S Plecy. — Stanelgate. —	- C	The Predecessors of the Prior of Lewis		0139 03 10 0 0

D/4 ···	1	dospitals fometimes in Engl	and and V V ales.	79
Places,	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order. Value.	
Stratford Lang-	Saint Mary M	Gulielmus Mountfitchet primus Fundstor G postes Richardus secundus Rex Aug liesegni 20.	0573 is c6 ob	- 1
Thoby,	P	Michael de Capra Knight ; the ancestor	0075 06 10 ob	
Tiptree	M	The Ancestors of Anthony Darcy.	-	- 1
Tiltie.	Saint MurieM	Maurice the fonne of Gilbert.	- Swinteriones Ci-	0
Tremhale, alias Trenchale.			- co70 19 03 ob	- 1
Walden parua	Saint IacobM	Galfridus de Magna-villa.	Blacke Monkes. — 0406 15 11 0	
Waltham	Sancta CrucisM	King Harold the last; after by King Henry the second.	} Blacke Canons 1079 12 01 0	
		GLOVCESTER-SE	HIRE.	-
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order. Value.	-
		King Ofrick of Northumberland first made	I s. d. ob.	q.
Gloucester	Saint Peter M	it a Numerie: a free ward Aldred Archb, of Torke, and B. of Worcester, A.D. 632. Egestieda Daughter of King Elfred, fifth Founders, A.D. 632.	7 SBlacke Monker >	1
Inves Gloucester	Saint Ofwald.— P	first Foundresse, Anno Domini, 910.	Slacke Chons, alij Friers Prea- chers.	
Gloucester. — Gloucester. —	Saint Barth. H	Queene Eleanor wife to King Edward		. 0
Gloucefter	_ F	Barkley Knights.	Carmelites or white Friers.	
Gloucester. — Barkley. —	N	King Ashelftan.	Canons Augustines - Nunnes.	- 1
Bromfeild. — Cirencester. —	SS. John & S. ?		- Canons 0078 19 04 00	0
	SS. John & S. Z Laurence. S H	The Abbot of Cirencesser.	-	
Dierherst fine Z	Saint Marie. M	First the Saxons, afterward King Henry 2 the first,	Blacke Canons 1051 07 01 ob	0
Dereherit. 5		(First by King Etheldred, after by Edward Confessor, after made a Cell to S. Dennys in France, by Edward King of England, Skoger Earle of Hereford in King Henry of the seconds time.	Blacke Monkes. —	
laxeley in the correct of Dean.	— м	C Rechard Farla of Commell and Vine - CD -	. 1	- 1
Cingefwood	Saint Marie M	mans, A.D. 1246. Barkleis of Durefley.	.	- 1
Glouc.	Saint Marie, P	Milo Earle of Hereford.	White Monkes 0254 05 10 0 SBlacke Canons 2 0748 19 11 0b	- 1
anthonie parma in the Marches	Р		- Superincs	- 1
of <i>Wales</i> . S Minching-hamptó	- N	·	Nunnes.	°I
Niwetton. —	H	<u> </u>	Blacke Monks	
tanley.	Saint Leonard. M	SMandeuil Earle of Effex. King Henry the	- or37 o7 or ob	
tow,	— н	? fecond. Almare Earle of Cornwall.	0126 0 08 0	.
		COdo & Dodo, men of great power in Mer-	11	•
euxbury, !	Saint Mary. M	cia founded it at Cranborne, a fierward remoued by Robert Fitzhamon to Teux- bury, A.D., 717. made first a Priory, after an Abbey, A.D., 1102.	2 Benedictines, 5 1598 of 93 0 0	.
reflbury	- с	For Richard Duke of Torke, and Edmund	Deane and Canons, 1232 14 0 0 0	
/inchelcombe. —	Saint Mary. M	Sthe Hospitall of S. Laurence by Briston. Kennlph the Mercian King.	Blacke Monkes. — 0756 11 09 00 0	.
		HAMP-SHIRE.		-
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order. Value.	
inchester	SS. Swithin, M	Lucius the first Christian King, after by Kenelwaleb King of the West Saxons, Aelfred and Edgar circa annum 620.	i. 5. b. ob. q. Blacke Monkese — 1507 17 02 00 q	
	Saint Mary N .	Aelfwide the wife of King delfred offer ?	,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,	
inchester.		Peter of Winchellen Danie	(Cormelizer	
inchefter	F	lens in Winchester, A.D.1278.	White Friers.	
inchefter	F	C. Henry the third.	Grey-Friers.	
1-			Blacke Friers,	.1

Chap.21.

	A Catalog	ne or the Kenglous Houses,C	oneages,	D00K. 9
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
luxta Winchester.	Bènta Maria.– C	SWilliam Wickham Bishoppe of Win- }		i. s. b. ab. q. 0639 08 07 00
luxus Winchester.	— н	Henry Beauford Cardinall of Winchefter founded it, and gaue it lands to the value of 158, 13.5.4, d. And S. Ishn de Fodering bridge an Holpital was giue to it	Stwo Chaplens, Spoore Men. Spoore Men.	
ton, I e teley, alias Leto loco.	S. Edward Sm and S. Marie, SM	Henry the third, and Peter de Rupibus.	Augustine Eriers.	0160 02 e9 ob 0
InntaSoutha pp-7	Sancti Dio-	SK. Richard the first, called Corde-Lion, }	Blacke Canons	0091 09 00 0
Southampton. —	Beata Maria H Magd.	Confirmed by Pope Alexander, Anno?		0016 16 02 ob o
Apple-durwell, in the Isle of Wight.	p	Nicholas Spenser, and Margerie his wife. —		
Bade illey Bello-loco	Tracestoria. — M.	King Iohn.		0118 16 7 00 0428 06 08 00 0
Bromere,	S. Trinity. P S. Mary. P	Baldwin Earle of Rivers, and Devonshire	Blacke Canons. —	0200 05 01 00 0
Chritwynhams figure Christ church of Twynham.	- P	Is the lde Forsibus, sometime Countesse of Albemarle and Deuonjbire, and Lady of the sile sounded in sor William de Forsibus East of Albemard, and Richard de Reducry Earle of Deuonshire, A.D.1161.	SThis is placed also? in Deuonshire.	0544 06 00 00 0
in the ifte of S	S. Mary MagdP		Blacke Monks. —	
Derectord in the fle of Wight.	Săite Elizabethe.P	King Edward the third.	·	
Hamele. —	Saint AndrewP	First King Alfride, after performed by K. Edward Senior, and lastly the Monks	Grey Monks	
Hide	Saint Peter. Saint Paul. S. Grimball.	themielues removed from the old, tem-	Blacke Monkes, '	0865 or 06 op d
Mottiffount,	{Santte Trini-}P	Ranulph Flammard Bishoppe of Durham, Richard de Ripary: Earle of Deunshire, and William de Bruere, tempore Gulielms Russ.	Slacke Canons or Augustines of Berton.	0167 15 08 ob a
Portfmouth	SA Church and SHofpitalL	Peter de Rupibus.		0033 19 05:0b 0
Quarrer in the Ifle of S Wight.	S.Mary MagdM	Baldwine Earle of Denonshire, and Richard his sonne. About the time of King Scephen.	White Monkes.	0184 01 10 0 0
Redford or Red-7 bridge.	M	Was Tiles and Market Market		
Romfey. —	Saint Mary. —P	King Edgar, and Earle Almyn. William Pontlarge, size Pont-le-arch, and William Danys Normans. Also William	Nunnes. — Regular Canons. —	0528 08 10 0b 0
Tychefeild,	Saint Marie M	de Ponteys a Benefactor. Peter de Rupibus Bishop of Winchester.	Regular Callons	0314 #7 10 ob o
Whorwell	SanttaCrucis N Saint Peter SN	Queene Aelfrith.	Blacke Nunnes	0403 12 10 0 0
Wyntney, —	Saste ElizabetheC	_		0059 01 00 00 0 0112 17 04 0b 0
	Santta Crucis,—H	Henry Blois brother to King Stephen.		0084 04 02 0 0
		HEREFORD-SHIRE	'•	
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
Hereford	SS. Mary ZEpa S Ethelbert Stu.	\$ Milfrid a petty King of the Country. Reinclin Bilhop, tempore Henrici primi.	Secular Canons.	l s. d. ob. q.
Hereford. —	S.Guthlac. —F S.Peter.S Paul, _P	Henry Penbrigge. Iohn Penbrigge.	Grey Friers Blacke Monkes	0121 0 3 03 0h 0
Acornebury. — Barrone. —	S.KatherineN		VVhite Nunres. — Blacke Monks —	0075 07 05 0b 0
Clyfford. — Dore. —	Saint MarieP Saint MaryM	Robert Lord of Ewias.	Blacke Monkes. — White Mankes, -	0065 II II 800 0
Flanesford, — Kilpeke, —	M	Richard Talbot.	Regular Canons. —	0015 08 09 00 0
Ledbary. — Leomenfire. —	S Katherine, —H Saint Iacob, —P	Iohn Bishop of Hereford. Merewald a King of the Mercians, and K.?	Blacke Monks of 2	0022 05 00 00 0
Lymbroke, Wiggemore,		S Henry the first S	VVhite Nunnes	CO23 17 08 0
Wormesty. Hertford, a Cel to?	P		Blacke Canons. —	0083 10 02
S. Albans. Saint Albans. —	SSaint Alban).	S Offa King of the Mercians, Anno Dom. }	Blacke Monkes	0086 14 8
Sellit Zitoans, —	Saint Alban M Martyr, M	2795.	Blacke Monkes.	2510 06 or ob q Belu ct o

(bap.21. and Hospitals sometimes in England and VVales. 701 HERTFORD SHIRE. Places. Dedication. Founder and Time. Order. Value. Beluero, & Cel to? Saint Mary. Stob. Baptift. i s. d. ob. g. S. Albans Biacke Monkes, Bosco, neere 0135 05 to co o S.Egidius. - N Flamsteed. Nunnes. Burton. - 0046 16 01 ob o Saint Marie. -P Monkes. Binham, in Com. > Norff. A Cel to - 0160 OI CO 00 5 Henr. Rex Anglia, Domin us Hibernia, Dux Norm. Aquitan & Comes Anged confirmed Chesthunte, Sheftrehunt Moniales totam terram Dom. ten.cumpersin. sus que Canonicis de Catha-le,quos amoueri fecimus. At Wostm, 11. Aug. - 0027 06 \$ 24. Regni nostri. Chille, Blacke Nunnes. Chiltree. Chiltree,
Hatfeild Peuerel, in Com. Effex, A Cell to

Saint Mary. Blacke Nunnes. Daughter of Ingelrick, and wife to Pene-rel, in K. William the Conquerors time. SBlacke Monkes ? of Saint Albans. Hychin. K. Edward the second; John Blomuil, and) Carmelites or Adam Rouse, and Iohn Cobham. White Friers. White Friers. Preaching Friers. Langley Regis. ZAdem Keuje, and Iom Cobbam.

Short, some of Reger Helle Baron.

Franchin

Franchin

Franchin

Franchin

Militis, & ciusatem vxoriu Sororum. Langley, vide Leicestersbire. 0150 14 08 0 0 SS. He- Z P Roger Fitz-Rannipo.
Saint Mary. — P Mersey. Mirdiall. Blacke Canons. Monketon , in Dioc.S. Danids - 0113 02 e6 ob q A Cel to S. Albas New-bigging infra villam de - 6015 01 11 00 0 Нисьун. Royston, alias Eufrach de Mare Knight, Lord of Nucels, and Radulphus de Rauseffer, and others renued it. Crux Rohaytift S. Thom. > P Martyr. 0106 03 01 00 0 S.John. S.I ames H
Apoffles, S
A Free Chappel Cor Hospitall, Royston. 9005 06 10 00 0 Roweney. 0013 10 09 0 0 Saint Mary. Sopewell. Blacke Nunnes. The Abbots of Saint Albans, eo68 e8 ee ee e Thele. SA Master, 24 Chaplens. William Bishop of London. Tynmouth, in P Fundator Antecessor Ducie Norfolcia. Cel to S. Albans, osti od or ob o Ware. P The Progenitors of King Richards mother. — Richard Argenten. Wymondley. 0037 10 06 ob o HVNTINGDON-SHIRE. Places. Dedication. Founder and Time. Order. Value. i. s. v. ab. q. Huntingdon. Blacke Canons Saint Mary. Eustachius Louetot, 0232 0 00 0b Augustines. SFounded by David Earle of Huntingdon, ? Huntingdon. S.Iohn Baptist..... H Lord of Connington, tempere H.2. Swilliam Conqueror, in place of Elsely by him suppressed. 0006 07 58 00 0 Hinchingbroke. 0019 09 02 00 O S.Neot, A Cell to) Becco in Nor-P E. Aelfrie firft: Roifia de Clarafter. A.D. 1113 .- Blacke Monkes. mandy. Saint Mary ? S.Benedict. S SBlacke Monkes Ramfey. Earle Aylwin, Anno Dom. 969. 1983 15 03 00 q Benedictines. Simon 2. Earle of Huntingdon: Kinges of Scots, and Lords of Connington, in the raigne of King Scophen. SWhite Monkes Ciftertians. Saltry. Saint Mary. -- M 0199 11 08 00 0 Blacke Canons Stoneley. Mandenile Earle of Effex. 0046 00 05 ôb o Augustines. S.Yuo, A Cell ton SEarle Adelmus in the raigne of Edmund | Blacke Monkes Ramsey. Irenfide. Benedictines. KENT. Places Dedication. Founder and Time. Order. Value, L s. b. ab. a Canterbury. 2 SFaithfull beleeuing Romans, after Ethel-2 Blacke Monkes Saint Trinity-2489 64 69 60 0 Cccccc 2

		gue of the Keligious Houles, C	- Cheuges,	B00)	(.9)	16
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.		
/www.Canter- }	Saint Augu- M	King Ethelbert, and after King Edward ? the fecond.	Blacke Monkes. —	i. s. b. sb q 1412 04 07 ob q		1
wers Canter- 7	SS. Gregory, or & P	Lowffran Archbishop there.	Blacke Canons. —	0166 04 05 ob o		
bury.	Saint Sepul-?N		Black Nunnes	0038 19 07 05 0		
Canterbury. — Canterbury. —	P	King Henry the third.	Grey-Friers Poore Priefts	9010 13 08 ob o		
bury. ?	Saint LaurenceH			0031 07 10 0 0		
Canterbury extra? Muros.	Saint IacobH			0032 II e1 ob q		
Ailefford. —	F		SCarmelites or Swhite Friers.			
Afhford	_ с		Priests.			
Beigham	Saint Marie P	C SIT Kobert I normham.	White Canons. —	0152 19 04 ob		
Belfaton or Bilfington.	Saint Mary. —P	Solon Mannfell Praposition Benerlacen- fis for King Henry the third, and Elen- nor his wife.	Blacke Canons	0081 01 06 0 0		
Bradgare, —	_ с	SRobert de Bradgare, T. Ioselin Cleric and	-			
tradefoke. —	S.Radegundis-M		White Canons	0142 08 09 0 0		
loxley. —	Saint Marie M		White Monkes.	0218 19 10 00		
Combewell. —	S. Mary Magd.M	Ishn Baron Cobham.	Blacke Canons.	0128 01 09 cb 0 0080 17 5 0 q		
Paraford,	- N	SKing Edward the third, Anno Regni Ang. \\ lia 30. Francia vero 17.	Nunnes.	0400 08 00 00 0		
ouer, —	Saint Marie, D	King Henry the first.	Blacke Nunnes Blacke Monkes			
ouer, Damus ?	Saint Martin	Henricus tertisus Rex Anglie.		0232 01 05 0b 0		
Dei. 5	- "	CKing Henry the first game for William ?	amguta rempiers.	0159 18 06 ob q		
aftbridge. —	— н	his Father, quicquid Robertus Bruic dederat Ecclesia de Esteburch, & fratribus ibidem Regularibus.	1 1	0023 18 09 ob q		
Iflet. —	N	Domneua-	Nunnes.			1
euersham. —		King Stephen and Mandhis wife. Seanswide daughter to Eadbald King of	SBlacke Monkes Cluniacenfes.	0286 12 06 ob o		
olkeftone. —	S. Eanswide. —N	Kens: After Roger Segrane and Inlian his wife, and Iohn Clinton Baron. King Henry the feuenth.	Blacke Nunnes. — Observant Friers. —	9063 00 07 0 0		
reenwich	_ с	William Lambard.	SQueen Elizabeths?			1
ireenwich. —	{ Alien	[SK.Edward the third, Anno Regni 55.]	Frier Minors,			
arballdowne	— н	of Canterbury.		•109 07 02 00 0		-
forton. —	Saint Iohn P Enangelist. P		Blacke Nunnes.			
angdon	S.Thom.Martyr.M			0111 16 07 cb 0		-
cedes. —	Saint Nichelas, P	Robert Crenequeur.	SBlacke Canons SAugustines.	0056 06 09 0 0		
clines upon Thames.	S. Augustin or S. Th. Martyr. SP	SRichardde Lucie, Chiefe Iustice of Eng-	Blacke Canons.	0186 09 00 0 0		
ewesham. —	S P	Iohn Norburie.	Blacke Monkes.			
faidstone. —	Omnië Santtorë. C Saint Marie N	Boniface of Sauoy.	l	0159 07 10 00 0		
lottynden	— м	Gundulph Bishoppe of Rochester.		0245 10 02 ob 0 0060 13 00 ob 0		1
lewenden. — lorthgate. —	Saint Iohns -H	SBuilt at the charges of Sir Thomas Al- 2 buger Knight, A.D. 1241.	{Carmelites or }	.,		1
Vest Peccam,	Preseptoria	Stohannes Culpepper, Iustic. de communi &		0091 16 08 ob o		
eculuer,	Saint Andrew, _M	Balla an English Saron.	-	0063 06 08 0 0		
ochefter. —	S Bartholmew,—H	Bishop Gundulph a Norman, A.D. 1080. — King Henry the third confirmed it, and Edward the third discharged them of	Blacke Canons	5486 11 05 0 0		
tumney. —	Ş P Alien	C all laxes, laliages, &c.)				
andwich	— ғ	Henry Cowfeild an Almane, Anno Dom.	SCarmelites or SWhite Friers,			
andwich	Saint Thomas. H	Thomas Ralyng Clerke, William Swanne Clerke, John Goddard and Richard Long,				
trode or Strowde. wingfeild, —	— H — Praceptoria.	Robert Glanuile.		0052 19 10 ob o		
hepey	S. Sexbarg. N	Sexburga wife of Ercombert King of Kent er East-Angles, Anno Dom. 710.		0087 03 03 0b 0		
			·	Shepey		; ;

	1	Hospitals sometimes in Engl	land and VV ales	
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
Shepey.	Saint Marie. —	William de-la-Poole Marquette of Suffolie, by the name of William de-la-Poole Earle of Suffolke.		l. s. b. au
Tunbridge, Wingham,	1	P Riehard Clare Earle of Glocester. C Founded by Archbishop Pechane	Blacke Canons. —— Canons.	0169 10 03 0
-	100	Slobn Kempe Archbishoppe of Canterbu- rie. Sir Iohn Segrane.	Pricits	0093 02 0 Ub
		LANCA SHIRI	E .	
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
Lancaster. :	,	SIohn Earle of Morton, and confirmed by		l. s. d. ob. i
Lancaffer	Saint MarieP	England,	Monkes	-
Burficugh, Calder,	P	Fundator Antecessor Domini de Copeland. William Marshall the elder, Earle of Pem-	Monkes Aliens	0129 01 00 0
Cartmele	P	Dom 118		0113 19 07 00
Conyshed		Ranniph de Meschines.	M onks Cluniacks. —	0228 05 04 05
Holland.		SRobert Holland and Maudhis wife Alica	Monks Ciftertians.	
Horneby	Cella M	Fundator Antecessor Domini Mounteagle		0061 03 04 0
Manchester Penwortham,	- c	The Grelleyes Ancestors to Thomas West } Lord La Ware, tempore H.5.	_	
Whalley.	м м	L.Th. A C. C.	White Monkes.	0114 16 09 00
		LEICESTER-SH	IR E.	1
	1		1102.	,
Places.	Dedication			1 .
	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
Leicester,	Saint Mary. —M	Robert de Bo fu _s Earle of Leicester.	Order. SBlacke Canons or? Friers Preachers.	
Leicester, Inxta Leicester ? Cattle, S Bredon, A Cellto; S Ofwald		Robert de Bo ffu, Earle of Leicefter. Henry Duke of Lancaster. SFundator Domini stessic Prosenitor Alia 2	SBlacke Canons or? Erriers Preachers.	i. s. b. ab. q 1062 00 04 ob q
Leicester, Inxta Leicester Cattle, Bredon, A Ceilto, S. Ofwald, Bradley.	Saint Mary. —M Saint Mary. — C	Robert de 30 fin,Earle of Loicester. Henry Duke of Lancaster. SFundator Domini stegic Progenitor Alig Almar Earle of Cornwall.	SBlacke Canons or? Friers Preachers.	i. s. b. ab. q 1062 00 04 ob q
Leicester, Invita Leicester Cattle, Bredon, A Cellso, S Ofwald, Bradley, Button, Canwell, Croxton,	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — — M — — — P — — — M.	Robert de 30 fin, Earle of Leicefter. Henry Duke of Lancefter. Eundauer Demnis Regis Progenitor. Alig States Face Corresals. Almos Face of Gorennals. Moubinger Sandby a common contributi- on our all England. The Anceftors of the 1 and 1-2.	SBlacke Canons or Seriers Preachers. S	1. s. b. ab. q 1062 00 04 0b q 0023 12 11 0 0 0025 08 01 0 0 0020 15 07 00 0 0265 10 02 0 q
Leicester, Insta Leicester Cattle, Bredon, A Cell to S Ofwald, Bradley, Button, Canwell, Croxton, Castledonington, Cumbe,	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — M — — P — — M S.lobn Baptiff. — H Saint Mary. M	Robert de 30 fin,Earle of Loicester. Henry Duke of Lancaster. SFundator Domini stegic Progenitor Alig Almar Earle of Cornwall.	SBlacke Canons or Eriers Preachers. Blacke Canons, Leprofi, Pramouffratenfer.	i. s. b. ab. q 1062 00 04 ob q 0023 12 11 0 0 0025 08 01 0 0 0020 15 07 00 0
Leicefter, Instra Leicefter Cattle, Second A Ceilto S Ofwald, Bradley. Button, Canwell, Croston. Caffledonington. Cumbe, Cale, Dalby-Rothley Heyther, Second Bradley Cale, C	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — — M — — — P — — — M. S.lobn Beviif. — H	Robert de 30 fin, Earle of Leicefter. Henry Duke of Lancefter. Eundauer Demnis Regis Progenitor. Alig States Face Corresals. Almos Face of Gorennals. Moubinger Sandby a common contributi- on our all England. The Anceftors of the 1 and 1-2.	SBlacke Canons or Striers Preachers. S Blacke Canons, Blacke Canons, Legrofi. Pramouftratenfer. White Monkes, Blacke Canons,	1. s. b. ab. q 1062 00 04 ob q 0023 12 11 0 0 0025 08 01 0 0 0020 15 07 00 0 0026 10 02 o q 0025 10 02 o q 0025 10 02 o q 0025 10 02 o q 0025 10 02 o q
Leicefler, Instat Leicefler Z Cattle, Sercdon, A Cellto, S Ofwald, Braddey, Button, Canwell, Crowton, Califedonington, Cumbe, Calledonington, Cumbe, Cale, Dalby-Rothley Z Heyther, Garadon, Gracedew, eeer p2	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — — M — — — P — — — M S. Iohn Beptift. — H Saint Mary. — M Praceptoria. — M M	Rebors de 20 fin Earle of Leicester. Henry Duke of Lancaster. Fendator Domini Regis Progenitor. Alig Salmar Earle of Cortonall. Montrager Sandby a common contribution on our all England. The Ancestors of the Lord Liester. The Lord Barkleyes Ancestors.	Silacke Canons or? Sfriers Preachers. Blacke Canons, Leprof. Pranouffratenfer. White Monkes, Blacke Canons,	L s. 0. ab. q 1062 00 04 ob q 0023 12 11 0 0 0025 08 01 0 0 0020 15 07 00 0 0026 10 02 0 q 0027 10 03 00 0 0458 19 11 ob q 0003 13 04 0 0 0231 07 10 00 0
Leicefler, Instat Leicefler Cattle, Cattle, Bredon, A Cells Solfwale, Bradley, Bradley, Brutton, Canwell, Costroon Cattledonington, Cattledonington, Cattledonington, Cattledonington, Cattledonington, Garedew, Beyrher, Gartadon, Gratedew, Gratedew	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — — M — — — P — — — M S. Iohn Beptift. — H Saint Mary. — M Praceptoria. — M M	Rabers de 3º o fin Earle of Leicester. Henry Duke of Lancester. Frudater Domini Regis Progenier. Alig Allone Easte of Cornwall. Membrages Sand by a common contribution on outer all Deg And. The Ancelors of the Lord Leich The Lord Barkleyes Ancelors. Fundato: Antecessor mane Comissife Oxford. Rossa wise of Bertrans de Verdon.	Silacke Canons or? Sfriers Preachers. Blacke Canons, Leprof. Pranouffratenfer. White Monkes, Blacke Canons,	L s. b. ab. q 1062 00 04 ob q 0023 12 11 0 0 0025 08 01 0 0 0020 15 07 00 0 0216 10 02 0 0025 10 02 0 0245 10 02 0 0025 10 02 0 0025 10 03 00 0 0458 19 11 0b q 0003 13 04 0 0
Leicefter, Invez Leicefter Cattle. Schie Cattle. Schie Cattle. Schie Cattle. Schie Cattle. Schie Cattle. Schie Cattle. Schie Cattle. Button, Canwell. Croston. Cattledonington— Cattledonington— Cattle. Cattle. Schie Cattle. Cattle.	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — M — — P — — M S. Lohn Beprift. — H Saint Mary. — P Praceptoria. — P Praceptoria. — M N Saint Mary. M N Saint Mary. M P M	Robert de 20 fin, Earle of Leicefter. Henry Duke of Lancafer. Stundaur Damini Regis Progenier. Alig Manne Faite of Cerronall. Membrages Sandby a common contributi- of one one all England. The Ancellors of the Lord Lield. The Lord Barkiyes Anceltors. Fundate: Anteceffor nunc Comissife Oxford. Rossa wise of Bertrams de Verdon. Reger Belov and Anyshik wise. Reger Belov and Anyshik wise.	Silacke Canons or? Sfriers Preachers. Blacke Canons, Leprofi. Pramorification for the Monkes. Blacke Canons, Nunnes. White Monkes, White Monkes,	L s. b. ab. q 1052 00 04 ob q 0023 11 11 0 0 0023 00 10 00 0020 15 07 00 0 0020 15 07 00 0 0021 10 03 00 0 0023 10 03 04 0 0023 10 7 10 00 0 0136 15 02 0b 0 0136 75 02 0b 0
Leicefter, Instal Leicefter Cattle, Cattle, Stoffend, Soffend, Bauton, Canwell, Croxton, Calteleonington, Cumbe, Cale, Cale, Cale, Cale, Cale, Cale, Caradon, Graredon, Graredon, Graredon, Graredon, Graredon, Graredon, Graredon, Heyther, Graredon, Heyther, Landa, Langley, Langley, Langley,	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — M — — P — — — M — M S. Iohn Beptift. — H Saint Mary. — P Praceptoria. — M M Saint Mary. M Saint Mary. M M Saint Mary. M M Saint Mary. M M Saint Mary. M M M Saint Mary. M M M Saint Mary. M M M Saint Mary. M M M Saint Mary. M M M M Saint Mary. M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M	Rabers de Vo fin, Earle of Leisesfer. Henry Duke of Lancasfer. Emidator Domini Regic Progenitor. Alig & Allmar Eatle of Coronal. Membrages Sand by a common contributi- \(\) on outs all England. The Ancestors of the Lord Liest. The Lord Barkieses Ancestors. Fundato: Antecoffor nunc Comitife Oxford. Rapida wife of Bertrans de Verdon. Reger Belevi, and Anyfehis wife. Reger Belevi, and Anyfehis wife. Reger Belevi, and Anyfehis wife.	Silacke Canons or? Sfriers Preachers. Blacke Canons, Leprof. Pramouffrates fer. White Monkes, Blacke Canons, Nunnes, Blacke Canons,	L s. D. ab. q 1052 00 04 ob q 0023 13 11 0 0 0023 05 07 00 0 0020 15 07 00 0 0215 10 02 04 0 0221 10 00 00 0235 10 01 00 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0
Leicefter, Instal Leicefter Cattle. Cattle. Section, A Cell to Soffward. Soffward. Bauton. Canwell. Crotton. Caliteleonington. Calleonington. Carradyn. Carradyn. Carradyn. Carradyn. Carradyn. Carradyn. Launda. Langley. Litterworth. Noui-Operis.	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — M — M M Saint Mary. — P Pracepteria. — P M M M M M M M M M	Rabers de 20 fin, Earle of Leicesfer. Henry Duke of Lamesfer. Erndator Domini Regin Progenitor. Alig Salmar Earle of Cornwall. Membrager Sand by a common contributi- on out all England. The Ancesfors of the Lord Liela. The Lord Barkings Ancestors. Fundato: Antecesfor nunc Comitisse Oxford. Regin wish of Bertram de Verdon. Reger Belers and Anyshis wish. Reger Belers and Anyshis wish. Reger Belers and Langle Dire Lincals. Biges Mil. & einstern Varis Sera- rum.	Silacke Canons or? Sfriers Preachers. Blacke Canons, Leprofi. Pramouftratenfer. White Monkes. Blacke Canons, Nunnes. Blacke Canons. Nunnes.	L s. D. ab. q 1052 00 04 ob q 0023 12 11 0 0 0025 08 01 0 0 0020 15 07 00 0 0215 10 02 0 q 0021 10 03 00 0 025 11 05 q 0023 12 04 0 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0231 07 10 00 0 0236 07 10 00 0 0236 07 10 00 0 0236 07 00 00 00 0236 09 0 0 00
Leicefter, Janes Leicefter Gerke. Scoling. Scoling. Bradley. Burton, Canwell. Croston. Calle. Calle. Story Acadits Canwell. Croston. Calle. Cal	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C M — M M Saint Mary. — P Pracepteria. — P M M M M M M M M M	Rebers de 20 fin, Earle of Leisesfer. Henry Duke of Lancasfer. Erndator Domini Regis Progenitor. Alig & Allnar Earle of Correnal. Membrages Sand by a common contributi- on one all England. The Anecthors of the Lord Liefa. The Lord Barkieges Anecthors. Fundator. Antecosfor nunc Comitisfe Oxford. Rospia wise of Bertrans de Verdan. Rospia wise of Bertrans de Verdan. Rosper Belers, and Amsfehis wise. Rosper Belers, and Amsfehis wise. Rosper Belers, and Company Common	Silacke Canons or Seriers Preachers. S Blacke Canons, — Blacke Canons, — Leprof. — Pramoultratenfer. — White Monkes, — Blacke Canons, — Nunnes. — Blacke Canons, — Nunnes. — Blacke Canons, —	L s. D. ab. q 1052 00 04 ob q 0023 13 11 0 0 0023 08 01 0 0 0024 15 07 00 0 0025 10 02 0 q 0025 10 10 0 0 0025 11 00 q 0025 10 00 00 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0186 15 02 0b 0 0186 75 02 0b 0 0178 07 10 00 Q 0178 07 10 00 Q 0178 07 10 00 Q 0178 07 10 00 Q 0178 07 10 00 Q 0178 07 10 00 Q 0178 07 10 00 Q 0178 07 10 00 Q 0034 06 02 00 0
Leicefter, Janes Leicefter Janes Leicefter Janes Leicefter Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Sof	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — M — — P — — M — M Slobn Beptift.— H Saint Mary. — P Praceptria. — P Praceptria. — M M N Saint Mary. M Saint Mary. — M Saint lobus. — H Sint lobus. — H Sint lobus. — H Sint lobus. — H Sint lobus. — H M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M	Rabers de 3º o fin Earle of Leicester. Henry Duke of Lancester. Sendater Domini Regis Progenier. Alig Saltane Faile of Cortemall. Monbirger Sand by a common contribution on outsell begand. The Ancelors of the Lord Leich. The Lord Barkiese Ancelors. Fundate: Antecessor of the Lord Leich. Fundate: Antecessor of the Lord Leich. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Mill. O ensighted Versis Frace. Tom. Refer of Common Survey of the Common Survey. Reger Faster and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife.	Silacke Canons or Series Preachers. S Blacke Canons, Leprofi. Pramorifratenfer. White Monkes. Blacke Canons, Nunnes. White Monkes, Blacke Canons.	L s. D. ab. q 1052 00 04 ob q 0023 11 11 0 0 0023 07 00 00 0020 15 07 00 0 0020 15 07 00 0 0021 10 03 00 0 0031 10 03 00 0 0031 07 10 00 0 0136 15 02 0b 0 0136 15 02 0b 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0136 07 10 00 0 0137 07 10
Leicefter, Janes Leicefter Janes Leicefter Janes Leicefter Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Sof	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — M — — P — — — M — — M S. Isha Beptifi.— H Saint Mary. — P Preceptoria. — P M — — M Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — — M — M	Rabers de 3º o fin Earle of Leicester. Henry Duke of Lancester. Sendater Domini Regis Progenier. Alig Saltane Faile of Cortemall. Monbirger Sand by a common contribution on outsell begand. The Ancelors of the Lord Leich. The Lord Barkiese Ancelors. Fundate: Antecessor of the Lord Leich. Fundate: Antecessor of the Lord Leich. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Mill. O ensighted Versis Frace. Tom. Refer of Common Survey of the Common Survey. Reger Faster and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife.	Silacke Canons or? Sfriers Preachers. Blacke Canons, Leprofi. Pramorification for. White Monkes. Blacke Canons, Nunnes. White Monkes, Blacke Canons. Slacke Canons.	L s. b. ab. q 1052 00 04 ob q 0023 12 11 0 0 0023 15 07 00 0 0025 15 07 00 0 025 15 07 00 0 025 15 07 00 0 025 17 05 00 0 025 17 00 00 0 025 17 00 00 0 025 17 00 00 0 025 17 00 00 0 025 17 10 00
Leicefter, Janes Leicefter Janes Leicefter Janes Leicefter Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Strade, Sofinald, Sof	Saint Mary. — M Saint Mary. — C — — M — — P — — M — M Slobn Beptift.— H Saint Mary. — P Praceptria. — P Praceptria. — M M N Saint Mary. M Saint Mary. — M Saint lobus. — H Sint lobus. — H Sint lobus. — H Sint lobus. — H Sint lobus. — H M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M M	Rabers de 3º o fin Earle of Leicester. Henry Duke of Lancester. Sendater Domini Regis Progenier. Alig Saltane Faile of Cortemall. Monbirger Sand by a common contribution on outsell begand. The Ancelors of the Lord Leich. The Lord Barkiese Ancelors. Fundate: Antecessor of the Lord Leich. Fundate: Antecessor of the Lord Leich. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Mill. O ensighted Versis Frace. Tom. Refer of Common Survey of the Common Survey. Reger Faster and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife. Reger Below and Anglehis wife.	Silacke Canons or? Sfriers Preachers. Blacke Canons, Leprofi. Pramorification for. White Monkes. Blacke Canons, Nunnes. White Monkes, Blacke Canons. Slacke Canons.	L s. D. ab. q 1052 00 04 ob q 0023 12 11 0 0 0023 07 00 00 0025 15 07 00 0 0026 15 07 00 0 0026 15 07 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0251 07 10 00 0 0250 07 10 00 0 0250 07 10 00 0 0250 07 10 00 0 0250 07 10 00 0 0250 07 10 00 0 0250 07 10 00 0 0250 07 10 00 0

		T ISTO O T -					-1
		LINCOLNE	SHIRE.				_
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.		Order.	-1	Value,	
oln Epätus	- Saint Marie, N	4	Secui	r Canons		s. d. ob	q
ncolne	1	SM. Odo de Kilkenny, a Scotish man	n, A.D. 3 SCa	melites or site Friers,	3		
ncolne	Saint August	F	Friers	Eremites	2		
incolne. — «xta Lincolne	-	I John Pickering of Stampwike.	Friers	Minors			
luingham. —	1	f Authory de Pec Bifhan of Dowlesses	and Pa-2 Gilbe	tines. — ite Canons and		01 03 00	
dwatus Aqui- ?	Saint MaryI	triarch of lernfalem.		s Gilbertines.	3 0141	15 00 00	0
læ. Č		.]		-	- 0124	02 00 00	
Beauuoir.	Saint Marie	Ralph de Todeney.	\ SBla	ke Monkes	2 0120	17 05 0	.
rlinges.	м	Radul bus de Haya.		Albans.	0207	16 06 00	
lyngton	Saint Marie M		SWhi	e Canons and	2	7 09 00	
fton.	м	S. Bosolph in the Saxons time.		Gilbertines.	2	, -, 00	-
fton	F	,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,		elites or	3		
fton luxta 2		ST. Morley Knight, John Bacon Efe		te Friers.	1		
Mare. }	Saint Mary. —P	Ichn Hagon, Thomas Hoke de Shy: and Ichn Hyrd of Bofton.	nham, \	-			
fton,	Beata Maria. C			_	- 0024	00 00 00	. []
fton	Corporis Christi, C Saint Peter, - C		_	-	- 0072 0	00 00 00	
, .		S Confirmed by William de Gaunt, 1	fonne 2	-	- 6019 1	3 04 0	1 1
dney	Saint Ofwald. M	and heire of Gilbert de Gaunt, .	Anno		- 429 C	7 00 00	
nne	Blacke Canons.—		_	_	-		
ggerd. — eley, or Cat-}	— Р	Iohn Spaule Esquier.	Whit	e Canons & 7		1 00 ob	
in	Saint Marie M			Gilbertines.	0038 1	3 08 0	
ylandor ?		S Arthelbald King of the Mercians,	01	_	1		1 1
Crowland.	— м	5 It was new built at the beneuolene	e of Blacke	Monkes	1217 0	5 11 00 6	
		the whole land, gruen vpon pardo their finnes,	16,101				1 1
worth in the?	SA Conuentual >	William Dyne. SThomas Mombray Earle of Notsingh. Marthall of England		Canons, —	0083 I	7 10 00 6	
of Archalma C	House.	Marshall of England.	, , ,			4 07 ob 0	
tun.	N	Manritim de Creen Baron.	Nunnes			5 04 00	
nfordbridge 7		William Tirwhit,	Directe	Monkes	-		1
Parochia de S	- н	" ILLIAND I ITWOIT.		<u> </u>	-		
kewell. —	N	Dudon de Gronesby.	Nunnes		0019 1	8 e 6 oo i	. - -
	J	S Robert Groffed Bishoppe of Lincolne	and ? Blackel			5 01 0	
	Saint Leonard_N	I nomas Heperton Knight.	Blacke 1	Junnes	0012 0	3 07 0	1 1
nmesby	S. Augustine. ? {&S.Toloss. }	Fundator Domini Regis Progenitor	Blacke (anons			1 1
neby	- M	Herbert of Orbea or Orreby.		_	0098 0	8 04 00 0	1 1
	Saint Mary. M	Alexander Bishoppe of Lincolne	White	Canons, & ? Gilbertines, }		05 00 0	
ings. —	COURT A June N					3 04 00 0	1 1
umberston.	S.Peter.	Fundator Domini Regis Progenitor				03 00 0	1 1
a	M	Hugh Britay.	1376		914 12	oa ob o	
ie	M	Philip de Valisby.	White A	lonkes.	0338 13	11 ob c	1
		Iobn Gifford Clerke. Robert Fitz: Gilbert,			1	09 00 0	
hparke.!	Saint M. ry M		White M	onkes,	0057 13	05 ob 0	
keby	P				0163 17	° 06 0b 0	
	- M		CWhite	Canons the	0115 11	08 0 0	
vhouse. —	S. Marijall	Peter de Gaulia.	firft k	onse of the	}		1 1
		J	· 9 strate	Premon- nses in Eng			11
mersby, or 3			land.	ر	1		
-ormesby.	P		SWhite	Canons & Z	0098 00	00 60 0	1 1
viom	— м		Crans	netriucs 2	1	04 ob 0	
sansford.	м	=======================================	Gilberti	es,	0042 01	•	
cholme.	P				1	-	
on or Nec- 2	S.Mary Magd. M	Robert D'Arcie.			0055 11	08 00 0	
	, ,			anons.	0052 19	02 ob o	
neyes.	Saint Mary. P			Canons and ?	0046 17	07 00 0	
	Saint AugustinC		Blacke (anons,	1 ' '	,	
							1 1

793

	e of the Kengious Houles, C	5,		0008.9	bap.21.	1	T C. I		
Places. Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.	-	. Dap.21.	and I	lospitals sometimes in Engla	nd and VV ales.	
Si Si	Iohn Earle of Warcester, made it a fraterni-		i. s. d. ob q				NORFFOLKE.		
Parking Chappel. Our Lady.	ty. King Richard the third made it a Colledge of Priettes, and reedified it.]	-	Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
	without the VVals, in the				Norwich produced fro				L s. b. ob
Westminster. M Saint Peter. — Saint Stephen. — S	Sebert King of the Eaft-Saxons, Dunftan B. of London, K Edward Confesior. King Stephen: after by King Edward the	Backe Monkes Secular Canons	3977 06 04 0b q		the Abbey of Feschamp in Normandy.		Elbert de Lofing. Bishop Herbert of Therford, Anno Dom. 1096, in the raige of King William Rusus.	Black Monks, Bene-	} 1061 14 03 ob
Westminster in?	third. S		0100 00 00 00 0		Norwich. — Norwich. — Norwich, —	F	SPhilip Comgate Citizen & Maior of Nor. wich, A.D. 1268. John Heftynford.	SCarmelites or White Friers. Grey Friers.	}
Westiminster, -H Saint Iames, Th Westiminster?	he Citizens of London.				Norwich. — I	Saint Egidine.	Remigie, or the King.	Blacke Friers Austine Friers	0090 12 00 00
Rounciuall in Vanarre	ono 15.Edward4.				Linne. — 1 Linne. — 1 Linne. — 1 Linne. — 1		Lord Bardoif, Lord Scales, and Sir Iohn Wignhall, Anno Dom; 1269, Thomas Gedney, The Felsham,	Carmelites or white Friers. Blacke Friers. White Friers.	} 0001 15 08 0d
the fields. 3	teene Matilde, wife to King H.1. A.D.1117	<u> </u>			Attilburgh. — C Beefton. — I Blakburgh. — N	2	Robert Mortimer.	Nunnes,	- 0007 06 11 0 - 0021 16 00 eb
The Sauoy. SH Saut 1000 Bap Kin in Fleetsfreet See Our Lady SFe	ounded by themselves in the raigne of Alerry the second.	Knights Templers. —	0529 15 07 ob o		Blakeney. — I Bokenham, ali- as Bukkenham S	Saint Incob.	SLord Rolle, Sir Robert Bacon, and S. Iohn Bret Knights, A.D. 1321.	Carmelites or White Friers.	0076 03 09 ob
in Flechtreet. — Rich	thard Grey of Codnor. A.D. 1241. Henricus Rex Anglia primus, fundanie Ec-7	VVhite Friers	0063 II 04 0 0		Bromhall in Windfor Forrest.		Edward the Blacke Prince.	Blacke Canons.	- 0131 TI 00 00
n Smithfield. H S. Bartholmen Rah	After by Rabere first Prior of the same, S Anno Dom. 1102. bere 2 Prior, A.D. 1102.	€ €anons Regular. S	0305 06 07 00 0		Bromholme. I	S.Sepulchers Saint Andrew	G.Glamaile: William Glamuile,	Blacke Monkes Cluniacenfes Benedictines	0144 i9 00 ob
in Saint Johns 2 D Saint John of 2 Saint	Sir Walter Many of Cambrey Knight, A. ? D.1340.011371. orden Brifes Baron and Muriel his wife. ?	Carthufians.	0736 02 07 00 0		Budham. — N	Saint Mary	Sir Ralph Hempuall, and Sir William Cal- throp, Anno Dom. 1241.	Carmelites or S white Friers. S Blacke Canons.	0001 05 04 00
inter, 5 6 termpaters, 5 2	A.D. 1100. orden Briset Baron, the sonne of Ralph,	Black Numbes.	0282 16 05 00 0		Carbroke. — C Caftell-acre. — M Crobbehouse.—N	S. Iohn Ierusalem, Saint Marie,	King Stephen.	Blacke Nunnes. Black Monks Clunic. Nunnes.	- 0084 i2 or ob 0065 02 09 ob 0324 17 05 ob 0031 i6 07 oo
Saint Giles (15	Matildis Regina, Henrici secundi A-7				Flytham, A Cel to Walfin- gham.	SOur Lady and?		Nunnes.	0062 to e6 ob
JalywellN S. lohn Baprift AB	ng Henry the fift. Biflioppe of London.	SOfthe French SOrder. SBlacke Nunnes.	0347 OI O3 OO O		Heringby. C Hilderlands. H	Saint Stephen.	Riebard Ward Chanon here.		0039 00 09 00 0023 06 05 00 0000 14 00 0
gate, New- P Beata Maria, — { Hospitall.	Valter Brunne and Roifis his wife, A.D., 1235. Lanch Queene of Nanarre, and her huf-	Canons Regular. —	0557 14 10 ob		HorssehamP	Saint Fidis	Robert Fitz-Walter. King Kanute the Dane After K. Edward } Confessor.	SBlacke Monkes Benedittines. Blacke Monkes.	0193 02 03 ob
a Eaft Smith-	& Darby, brother to K.E.1.1292.21.E.1.	Nunnes Minors.	0342 05 10 ob 0		Hyckelyng. — P Kockelforth, or Cokelford.} M		Sir William Cheyney Knight.	Blacke Canens.	0677 09 08 00 0137 00 01 0b 0153 07 01 00
ield neere the M SS. Marie S Gracis. S K	King Edward the third, Anno regni cisus	{White Monkes Ciffertians. }	0602 II 10 cb 0		Langley. — M		Fundator Antecessor vxoris Francisci Bigot Militis, & ciusdem vxorus Serorum. Vide Herts, & Leicest.	Nunnes	0128 19 09 ob o
veer the lower. H S.Katherine	Matilda wife to King Stephen, and after by Aelioner, wife to King Edward the first.	S3. Chaplens. 3. Sifters. 18. poore women.	0315 14 02 0 0		Markham Bar-} M			White Nuns Gilbert	0013 06 01 0b 0
	Middlefez.	C6. poore Clerks.			Wormegay. M Rufhworth. C Shuldeham. —P	S.Mary Magd.— Sanita Crucis 2	Reginald de Warenna. Sir Robert Wingfeild Knight.	Blacke Canons. — White Nunnes Gilbertines.	0085 15 00 ob
wate Prainford E SEcclefia function 3 SI			<u>'</u>			Z&S.Marie.	(Bishoppe Arfast of Elmbam, in the	[Gilbertines, }	0171 06 08 00 0
ylborne. N Saint Mary		Nunnes: —	0086 076 00 0080 1500 0b0			Sancta Trinitatis,-	raigne of King Edward Confessor, made it a Bishoppes See. After Henry Duke of Lancaster, made a Society of Preachers.	Friers Preachers. —	
ranes. — P — Ralp	pb Stafferd.	Nuns or white 2	.,		Therford. —P	S.Sepultur. S.Mary,& S.Iohn— Saint Gregory.	Iohn of Gaunt, Duke of Lancafter. The Earle of Warren. Roger Bigod Earle of Norffolke.	Augustine Friers. Blacke Friers. Blacke Canons. Blacke Nunnes.	0049 18 01 60 6
yon. —M — — §K	g Henry the second. King Henry the fift, Ann. 2. of his? raigne.	Monkes. S CNuns & Priefts Augustines.	0121 16 00 00 0 1944 11 08 0 q		Thetford, —M Thetford, —C	Saint Andrew. —	Hugh Biged Steward to King Henry.	Blacke Monkes Clunicenfes.	0050 09 08 0 0 0418 06 03 0b 0 0109 00 07 00 0
zbridge M Saint Mary Hu	up Romfe.				Tomeston, -C	SS.Mary Magd,? &S.Iohn Bap. S	Iobn Warren Earle of Surrey. SThomas de Shardelow, and Iobn his brother? A.23, E.3.	6.Chaplens.	0052 IS 07 ob
			NOR-		Wabburne P Walfingham M	Saint Marie —	{ Edmund Earle of March, and Elizabeth }	Blacke Canons Friers Minors, }	0028 07 02 00 0 0446 14 04 0b q
				1	WendlingF Weftacre, P	S. Mary & alSaints	William de Wendling Priest.	Austine Friers. Blacke Canons.	0055 18 04 ob q 0308 19 11 ob q West

Book. 9

A Catalogue of the Keligious Houles, Colledges,

Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	0	1
	- Leancation.	rounder and 1 ime.	Order.	Value.
Vestdereham, M	ı		VVhite Canons,	L s. b. ob q
Veybridge or > 1 Vexbridge, > 1	Saint Margaret.	SRobert Oliver, Thomas Munday, Iohn P.	4-1	0252 12 11 ob o
Vickbridge, 5 * Vickbridge, 5 *	VVinewald. —	mar and Iohn Barford.	3 N AL	2007 13 04 00 0
Vymondham, -	Saint Marie	William D' Albiney, Butler to King Hem	Black Can os demarri	
•		the first. King Edward the first, Anno Domini; 2 1278	S S. Albans.	0072 05 04 00 0
armouth F		Z 1278		
armouth F		Galfridge Dilamin and Thomas T. A. 16.	Blacke Eriers.	
ext. Yar-	1	Six William Gerbrigge. C First Robert de Castre, after by John F.	Grey Friers.	
mouth in SC Castresleg, S	S. Iohn Baptist. —	- Stoffe Elquier, father to Sir John Fa-		
	:	¿ stolfe.	CBlacks Manher 2	
-		.[SBlacke Monkes ? Of Saint Albans.	0074 02 07 16 0
—F	= =		Friers Preachers	0000 18 00 0 0
			Auftine Friers	0001 04 06 00 0
	7	100 CILLLIAN CON	= =====	
	I	NORTHAMPTON	I-SHIRE.	
Places	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
	~ ~ ~~			
orthamptonM	Saint Iacob		Blacke Canons.	l. s. b. sb. q
orthampton. P	Saint Andrew S.Mary de pra-?	Simon de Santto Licio, first E of Northampto. Simon de Santto Licio second Earle of	" Blacke Monkes	0334 13 07 00 0
on. '519	tie, or de la prey	Northampton.	Nunnes. —	0119 09 07 00 q
rthampton.—F		·	SFriers Minorson ?	- 1
rthampton.—F			Grey Friers.	0006 17 04 0 0
rthampton.—F		Simon Mountfort, and Sir T. Chitwood	? Carmelites or ?	0005 07 10 00 0
rthampton N	Saint Mary.	Knights. A. D. 1271.	1) white Friers.	0010 10 00 00 0
rthampton,F		Iohn de Glanuile.	Blacke Nunnes. — Augustine Friers. —	´ II
esbyN	S.Tho.& S. Mary.		-	0127 19 00 00 0
cum P		William Knowles. Sir Hngh Awresey.	- Nuns of Sempringham.	0145 00 06 00 0
therstoke. — C		Iohn Gifford Clerke, A.22. E.3.	_	0093 06 03 ob o
intreeP	Saint Austin. 3	Fundator Domini Regis Progenitor.	- { Blacke Monkes } Clunicenfes. }	0236 07 06 00 0
			¿ Ciunicemes.	1230 0/ 55 55 1
n Maries CM	S.Mary the Virgin	Richard Engaigne.	1	
iell.		Lichtin Lightyn.	-	0052 16 00 00 0
- 1	1	- Tland I. T make Dake of Yel. 12.	1 1	
eringhay. C		Edmund de Langley Duke of Torke. King H.4 and Queen Ioan his wife, an. 13, laftly,	?	
eN.S	S.Mary Magd_	H.5. and Edward Duke of Torke.	31	0419 11 10 ob o
nam-Ferrars. C			Blacke Nunnes. —	.
kley. C -	<u>-</u> :	Henry Chicheles Archbishop of Canterbury. The L. Zouches.		0156 02 07 ob o
KingesthorpH S		Iohn Pool.	- ADean & 6.Clerks o	0064 12 10 ob o
rborough, M S		SWolpherus. Scip. SReitani		0024 06 00 00 0
1			Blacke Monks 1	1972 07 00 ob q
	Saint Mary	William Bosenillei, & Robert Bosenillei, & Ranulph Earle of Chefter. A. H.2.	SWhite Monkes Ciffertians	9347 08 00 ob o
ewell. —N s		1	[]	0010 10 04 00 0
et-Dauy, P	Saint 2 rinity, 2		- Blacke Canons	7010 10 04 00 0
	Mary Magd,		l	
fordN -				018 11 02 00 0
yM S	aint Mary.		Nunnes.	
orpe, -M	= = = = = = = = = = = = = = = = = = = =			305 08 05 0b 0
H.S	aint Leonard.		Blacke Monkes	
H S	Saint Iohns			010 00 00 00 0
PS	Michael,		00	025 06 02 00 q 001 19 04 00 0
			Blacke Monkes	
				NOT
				NOT-
				1 1

Chap.21. and Hospitals sometimes in England and VVales.

795

0013 04 08 00 0

0511 04 01 ob o

OXFORD

DDDDDD

NOTTINGHAM-SHIRE. Places. Dedication. Founder and Time. Order. Value. i. s. b. ab. g. SSir Reginald Grey of Wilton, and I. Shir-Nottingham. White Friers. Nottingham. King Henry the third. Grev Friers. Nottingham, Iohn Plomtree. Bawtice. 0006 66 08 00 o Confirmed by Edward the third, Anno 19. Carthulians Bella vaila. C227 08 00 00 0 Ciflertians, Anglia, & 6. Francia. Bingham. Beata Maria. Plythe. 0040 11 00 00 0 Roger Busty, and Foulk de Lisieurs. Saint Mary. - Blacke Monkes. 0126 08 02 ob o Blythe, Brodham. 0008 14 00 0 0 PC __ Clyfton. 0016 05 02 00 0 0020 02 06 00 0 (Fundator Antecessor Ishannis Chough Felley. M Our Lady. Militis. Blacke Monkes. Ziohn Talbot Earle of Shrewsbury. - 0061 04 08 00 0 SWilliam Penerell the base some of King Lenton P | Sancta Trinitatie In Marisco, apud Capell Cel-Santis Tho-Sla. & Black Monks, Clu-? William the Conquerour. 0417 19 03 00 0 0063 65 08 0 0 me Ebor. Matterfey Fundator Antecessor Edwardi Thirland. Newfleed, or - 0061 17 07 00 0 Nono-Loco in Our Lady. King Henry the fecond. Shirwood, - 0219 18 e8 ob o Rufford. S Dominus Beaumount Anteceffor Domini? Norreys.
Ralph Hanfelin: H Norris Anteceffor. White Monkes. Shelford. - 0254 06 08 00 0 Southwell. 0111 14 01 00 0 Paulinus the first Archbishop of Torke.

Sir Ralph D'eincourt, and confirmed per 0039 os o6 ob o Thurgarton. P | Saint Peter. Regem. SThe Lord Fitz-Hugh, Ancester to the L. Blacke Canons. 0359 15 10 00 Wallingwells, Nunnes. Datres. 00087 11 06 0 0 Datres. Fundator Antecessor Episcopi Eliensis. Tho Welbeck. Saint Mary of Sa Saint lames. Blacke Canons. 0298 04 08 00 0 Workefope. Blacke Canons. 0302 of io oo o NORTHV MBERLAND. Places. Dedication. Founder and Time. Order. Value Alba-Launda, or Blanche-M l. s. d. ob. q [Fundator Antecess. Comitis Westmorlandia. lohn de Torington a Benefactor. K. lohn confirmed it. Anno 16. Ciftertians. land. 0044 09 01 0b o Iohn Lord Vefcy (Anteceffor Countis Nor-thumbria) brought this Order first in-Alnewicke or 2 Carmelites or Holne. to England. A.D.1240. 194 07 00 00 0 White Friers. Barwicke, Carmelites or - Sir Iohn Grey, Anno Dom. 1270. White Friers. William Bartram the elder, father to Roger? Brekenbourne, P Bartram, tempore Regis Iohannis. 9077 00 00 00 0 Frameland, Ferne-Eland, Sta. 0012 17 08 00 0 Hexham. Fundator Anteceffor Archiep Eboracensis. -Holifcombe. N 0138 01 09 00 0 Nuns. Infula-facra-Cella 0015 10 08 0 0 I amblev. -N -The Lucies. 0060 05 00 00 0 Nunnes. Newcaffle. Newcastle. Grey Friers. N -Nunnes. 0037 04 02 00 0 Newcastle. King Edward the first. Carmelites or White Friers, Newcastle. H S. Mary, Magd New-Mona-fterv.alias ZM 0009 II 04 00 D ftery,alias NewMinfter. Fundator Antecessor Domini Dakers. - 0140 10 04 00 0

Fundator Antecessor Ducis Norfolcia.

Ouingham Cella de Hexam,

Tynmouth. a

Cell to Saint

Albans in

Hertford-

fhire.

	A Catalog	ue of the Keligious Houles, Co	olledges,	Ba	<u> </u>	bap.21.	and	Hospitals sometimes in Engl	and and UV also	
		OXFORD-SHIR	E.			Places.	Dedication.			1
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.		Goring. N Lidmore, alias?	Saint Marie		Order.	
cford, Eccle-2 Cathedralis, S				i. s. b. ob. q		Littlemore, 51		Fundator Domini Regis Progenitor.	Blacke Nunnes. Blacke Nunnes.	- 0060 - 0033
_	P S.Fridefwid	King Henry the eight. SFrideswide filie Algeri, Restaurator Ethel-	SNuns, afterwards			Nortonp	·	Obmini Regis Progenitor. Reginald Earl of Boloigne gaue 108. Acres to it.	Blacke Canons,	_ "
ford	F	Z redus Rex & Dom, Regis Progenstores. S Richard Cary.	Blacke Canons, 5	0224 04 08 9		Stodeley. N	Janut 202 Aury.	Peter Corbizen and William de Courteles	Blacke Canons	_
ford,:		Henricus Rex.	SFriers Minors, or 2 Grey Friers. S			1	Saint Mary	{ Alexander Bishoppe of Lincolne, the great builder of Castles.	White Monkes.	0102
ford.	F -	K. Edward the second, Anno 11. Edwards 2.	Blacke Friers.			Wroxton, P	Saint Mary	Master Michael Bylet, for Herney Bylet his Father, and confirmed by K. John.	Canons.	0078
ford.	A S. Mary Ofney.	King Henry the third. S. Rob. the sonne of Niele, brother of Rob. \ D. Oily a Norman, A.D. 1129.	Augustine Friers. — Blacke Canons. —	0755 18 of ob	-		,	RICHMOND-SI	HRE.	
	SLOCIU Regalis, 3		Monkes Ciffertians	0174 03 00 00 0		Places	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	1	1
he Colledges in Oxford.									Order.	
-		CFirft King Aelfred of an William And In 3				Richmend, M	Saint Agath	Roaldus Constable of Richmond, and Gra- cian shis wife. Fundator Antecessor.	3	1.
inerfity Colledge isol Colledge		SFirst King Aelfred, after William Archdea- 2 con of Durham. Slohn Baliol Father of John Baliol King of					Saint Nicholas,	First founded at Swaynsie by Halwisa		- 0016
rton Colledge		Walter Merton B. of Rochefter, Anno D. 3224		·		Couerham, ali- as Somerham M		Raiph Lord of Midleham, but remove		,
seter Colledge.	- =	anter Staptean Billiop of Excepter, tem-				Cander. M Ellerton, N	Saint Mary.	C tied after to Conerbans, A.D. 1182.	monstratenses,	0207
rts Hall. — sgs, now 0- 7 L. Colledge. 5	-	Walter Stapledon Bishop of Excesser, sem-					*	William Fitz-Pier. (First, Stephen Earle of Bolleyn, Anno	Nunnes,	- 0064 - 001
Iaries Hall.—		King Edward the second.		,		Furnesse. M	Saint Mary.	Dom. 1127. After William de Mon- bray gaue lands to it, which lands hee had of Richard Mornill, and Amie his	VVhite Monkes	- 0966
eens Colledge. – dmunds Hall – sterbury now?	= =	Queene Philip wife K. Edward the third				Fountaines. M. Gilling. N	Saint Mary.	wife. King Henry the 1.confirmed it. Thurstm Archbishoppe of Torke. A D. 1132.	3	1
edge.	<u> </u>	After Cardinall Wolfey, and K. Hen-				Gilling. N	— ´ —	Stephen Earle of Britaine and Richmond.	White Monkes. Nunnes. SWhite Monkes	1173
Mary, alias ?	<u> </u>	Swilliam Wiccam Bishoppe of Winche-2	l i			Neere Knaref 2			Ciffertians.	0455
cester Colledge bam, now ity Colledge.}		Beneditine Monkes.				brough. SF S Maryke. N	aint Robert.	Richard King of Romains, Earle of Corn- wall, A.D. 1218, Askes.	Friers.	0006
olne Colledge., Solne Colledge, Soans Hall,		After in our time, Sir Thomas Pope knight? Richard Fleming Bishop of Lincolne.			-	Middleham, or Barnards Caftle.	: <u>-</u> -	Richard Duke of Torke.	Nunnes,	0064
dgate Hall So viles Col-?	<u> </u>	SHenry Chichley Archbilhop of Canterbury?		1		Nun-Munketon.N - Ryblefton, Com-		Fundator Antecessor Gall.Gasaoign Militia.	Nunnes.	
dge. S		¿ tempore H.5.		1	7 1	Rypon Eccles				0207
bn Baptiff 2		Henry Chicheley, Archbishop of Canter-		1		Rypon. H S	Mary Magd_			0035
ledge. S i lohannis iitale, now?		Zizinzior Or Dimini,				Seton. N	John Baptift	Fundator Antecessor Henrici Kirkeby.		0024 0010
olledge.	- ' -	SFundator Henricus Rex, Afterward Willi-Zam Wainflet B. of Wincheffer,		1	-	welles. H/S.	Michael	Ralph Lord Nenill. A.D. 1367.	Numes.	0013
dalen Hal.— en Nose Col \		William Pasten, alias Wainflet. (William Smith Bishop of Lincolne, tempo-						RVTLAND-SH	IRE.	
ge. 5		Panal Dean of Panies,				Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	
lledge. 5		Richard Fox B.of VV inchefter, Hugh Ol- dam B. of Exsefter, Benefactor. Hugh Price Doctor of the Lawes.				Occham, under			- Vruero	L s
ury. H	Saint Iohn,	Wadham, an Esquier, and his wife.	}		F F	ne custodie of a	Saint Iohn 2 ul	Filliam Dalby of Exton.	22 Chaplens,	
ury. C	Beate Marie. — Slint Mart. —			0015 OI 10 Ob 0	fi ti	ree.	Eurngelist. 5 El	unam Dalby of Exton.	S12 poore, each S	
n. M		Nicholas Baffet. SGilbert Baffet, and Egelina Courtney his ?	Slacke Canons	124 10 10 00 0	В	Brooke S.A	Mary the Virg.P			
deter.		wife_tempore Henrici Secundi.	-	167 02 10 00 0				SHROPSHIRE.	1,	0043 1
ng Norton?	Santt i Leonardi.			013 06 96 00 0		Places.	Dedication.			
s. P	1.	C. Birrium also As-101 - C.1	1	034 19 11 00 0				Founder and Time.	Order.	
netici. na	Saint Peter and Saint Paul.	District the Apolitie of the Welt-Saxons,		219 12 00 00 0	Sh	mewsbury. M ≺S	aint Peter, 3	Roger Earle of Mountgemery. Anno 7	,	i s.
me, or w Elme. S H	;	Villiam de la Pole Duke of Suffolke	1	20000	SE	brewsbury,		Dom. 1081.	lacke Monkes o	615 04
owby0xf.N	Saint Marie	Softhelmara Nobleman King Aethelred ?	Blacke Monkes	421 16 01 00 0	Sh	Collegiat. Surewsburg Fee 1	nt Chadds			014 14
J. DyOzjak	aint Mary I	Dame Ida 2 rich Widow Repaired by K. John. B		19 18 08 00 0		Colleg. Sair	nt Mary		1	013 0

1 .	1	t strong to do a 1 To dates,	Coneages,	Book	('9	Chap.21.	and	Hospitals sometimes in Englar	don de rez i	
Plac	ces. Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.				1 Lingian	dand V V ales.	
Shrewsbury			S Carmelites or	1. 5. h. ch				SOMERSET-SHIR	E.	
Shrewsbury Shrewsbury	z. E:	Gefrey Lord of Powis.	Blacke Friers.	3		Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	1	1
Abberbury,	2 P	Gegrey Lord of Power.	Grey Friers.	-				3	Order.	Value.
Soules in Oxford by the King. Battlefield.	Sen	Fundator Domini Regis Progenitor. —				Briflow, M	Saint Augustine.	King Henry the second, and Lord Robert the sonne of Harding, the King of Demarker sonne. In our time King	Blacke Canana	i. s. d. ab.
Battlefield. Bildewas.	C M Saint Marie	King Henry the fourth.		0054 01 01 00 0		1	Saint Iacob	Church, Church	{Blacke Canons }	0767 is 03 00
Brewood.	M	Roger Bishop of Chefter.	Black Monkes Ciffertians	0129 05 10 00 0		Briftow: p	Saint Incob or Saint Inmes,	SRobert Earle of Gloucester, the base sonne of K. Henry the first.	{ Blacke Monkes }	
Bridgenorth,	}F	Colon Earle of Shrewsbury, Colon and Heire to Ralph Strange Origin Founder.	all V Comer.	0031 01 04 00 0		Briftow, F. F. Briftow, Eccl. Colleg.now a		King Edward the first. A.D. 1267.	White Friers.	
Brumfeild. Chirbury.	P		Blacke Monkes	_		Hospitall.	Saint Peter, 7	Citizen Carre a wealthy	Orphanes.	
Halifowen.	м	King Iohn. Peter de Rupibus Bishoppe of Wines ster.	be-}	- 087 07 e4 00 o		Bathe, M	Saint Paul.	Afterward John Bishop of Welles made	Blacke Monkes	0695 06 01 ob
Haughmond.	M Saint Mary, & 2	William Fitz-Alane.	3)	0337 15 06 ob o				C King Ing built the Chinal	<u> </u>	0022 16 09 ob
Ludlow,	F	Sir Laurence Ludlow Knight, An Don	SCarmelites or SWhite Friers.	0294 12 90 00 0		Welles. M	Ss. Iohn Bap.or Saint Andrew.S	ons, An. 766. King Edward Course	Secular Canons	
Ludlow. Ludlow. Lylefhull.	H Saint John	S Edmundus de Pontibus, siue Briggman- Benefactor.	Augustine Friers.			Welles, H		Richard and Butt Col	24.Poore,	004i 03 06 0b
Srone.	P Saint Michael B	eaumeis Family.	Blacke Canons. Blacke Monkes.	0017 03 03 0 0		Glastenbery. M	Saint Marie	Nicholas Bahwith Bihop. Nicholas Bahwith Bihop. Seph of Arimathea, Deni Bihoppe of S. Danids, Twelue Northerne men.	·	
Tonge. Wenlöcke.	C Saint Barthol- } Saint Milburg E	Isabel wise of Fulke de Penbridge Cheua lier.	<u>-</u>	0022 08 OI OO O	-			King Ina. Dunstane changed these Monkes into Beneditines: this Order continued 600, yeeres.	Blacke Monkes. —	3508 13 04 0 b
Womebridge. Wygmore.	- I	arle Roger of Montgomerie. A. D.108		0434 00 DI 00 0 0072 I5 08 00 0			Saint Peter, S. Athelwin.	King Alfred	Blacke Monks,	0209 03 00 00 0
	. 1		White Canons.	0302 I2 03 ob o		Brarwe, N Bridgewater, P	S.Mary.S.Edwin.	Fety-places.	Blacke Nunnes.	0098 14 08 ob
		STAFFORD.SH	IIRE.			Duckland. P	Saint Iohn	Amice Counteffe of Desonfrire	Grey Friers,	0120 19 01 ob o
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.			North-Cad-SC c	aint Mary	1 he Mobuns there entombed. 5 Elizabeth Botreaux and her forme Williams	Senedictines.	0223 07 04 0b 0 0480 17 02 00 0
ichefeild Ecclef.	2	Say King of Northumberland made it 2	-	Ualue.		Cliue, M			7 Chaplaines.	
Cath. ichefeild.	3	an Archbishops See	Grey Friers, and lately Canons.	2. 2. 2. q.		Dunkeiwel Pi _	aint Marie.) Lincolne.		0155 09 05 00
ichefeild. I	Saint John.	er B. of Couentree and Lichefeild.		0008 15 00 00 0		Dunster, P Fareley, P Henton,	Mary, Magd	Iohn de Mohun de Dunfter. Humfrey Bohun.		0039 I5 08 00 0
afford. (C Sain: M.ru.	shop of Chefter.	Augustines.	0141 13 02 00 0		Keynsham. M S	aint Mary.	Ela Countesse of Salisbury.	arthufians.	262 12 00 00 0
iver ie. I	P Saint Marie		Blacke Monkes	1035 13 10 00 0		Moundroy. C	Saint Paul. 5	SEarle Moriton brother by the mothers Z Side to K.W. Conqueror, confirmed by H. 1	Blacke Monkes	945° 03° 06° 00° 0 9524° II 08° 0b° 0
Trent. }	D S Mare Caire	icke Sprot Earle of Mercia.	White Nunnes.			Muchelney. M Sa Mynchinbarrow.P Stoke vnder 2	int Peter.	King Athelftane B		o11 18 08 00 0 498 16 03 00 q
netwood. F	CIO	on Chermand Cl. 11	Blacke Nunnes,	356 16 03 0P 0		Hamden. Sc Sa	int Andrew (Gornays. — B	acke Monkes	029 05 08 ob o
oxden. P	P Baro	Pars n of Godyngton.				Temple-Combe 2		SWilliam Giffurd and Henry de Blois Bishop Cof Winchester.	acke Nunneso	438 09 10 00 0
be Priorie	Rann	he the third of that name E.of Chefter.	0:	103 06 07 00 0		Westbury. C Worspring. P		Villiam Canings Major of Briston.	o:	107 16 11 ob o
Wenlocke.	Saint Mary.	n the sonne and heire of Iohn late Ba-}	Blacke Monkes.			Wytham S	aint Mary. 2	ing Vernal at 1	- 0	110 18 04 ob q
lton. M		ancestors of the Lord Andley.	Blacke Nunnes.	950 00 00 00 0		1	All-Saints.		1	27 °I 08 00 e
rivall — C			Blacke Monkes.	76 14 10 ob o		Iuell.	{	lohn Woborne Petty Canon of Paules, and Richard Hewes.		21 15 08 00 0
ceter. — P		Voels Ancestors of Sir Simon Harecourt.		99 14 10 00 0				SVFFOLKE.		
neworthN	- Edith		Blacke Conon	11 13 07 00 0 19 14 11 00 0		Places. Z	Dedication.	Founder and Time.		
Ta Tame-	- Marm	sions of Normandy.	Sus or Nus.						Order.	Value.
ntham, p	- Ralph	Earle of Chester.		3 06 08 00 0		Ipfwich. M \{\Sa}	int Peter and	de Lacrand Alica him Thomas ? Place	accanons eo8	5. D. ab. q.
bury. — P	Saint Mary SHem	ry de Ferrarsa Nobleman of Norman-	Sleeke M. J.	06 03 10 00 0		Ipfwich. F	\{\}	Henry de Manesby, Henry Redred, and Hen?	s Preachers	8 06 10 00 0
ller-hamptonC	SCIem	then the raigne of William Conqueror. \ Franche Franche Franche Frank	PIECKE Monks. — 024	4 16 08 o a		Ipfwich. F -		Sir Rob. Norton knights. A.D. 1279.	armelites or }	Ì
	1	- 3		SOMER-		pfwich. F	- Kol	Mares gaue ground to build their house Black	Friers.	
				-	£ . T			(larger, D	ddddd	Blyburgh

		1	8	ineages,		D00K.0		t b.sp.21.	and I	Tofaire Com		
	Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.			Places.		Tospitals sometimes in Engla	ridand VV ales	
	Plul and		(King Henry the first.		L s. b. ob q			7	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Valew.
	Blyborgh, Brifere, —	P Saint Leonard. —	Richard Beluois, O. Beauuots Bishop cf	Blacke Canons. Blacke Canons.	- 004S oS o9 oo			Reygate. 1 Shene, 1	CHALLE CYRCIS	SWilliam Warren first Earle of Surrey, and Zafter John Mowbray,	Augustines.	i. s. d. cb.
	1	N	Roger Glanuil and Gundreda his Wife, Alig, the Ancestors of The Brotherton,	Nunnes.	- 0052 02 01 00 0				Santte Marie)	King Henry the fifth. (First by Sweether, a noble Dome of as by	1	0078 16 08 00 c
	Burfl yerd or ? Brufyed. }	м	C Earle of Norffolke.	_	0056 02 01 0			Southwarke, M	Urrginis, de	a maiden called Mary, and after con- uerted to a Colledge of Priefts, by William Pont-le-Arch Canons first in-		-
	Butley. Campley.	P Saint Marie	Ralph de Glamuile.	Blacke Canons.	_ 0318 17 02 ob q			Southwarke, H	1		3	- 0656 10 00 op 0
	Clars or Stoke.	\ Virginis. S	Henry Earle of Effex, and Ifabel his }	Blacke Monkes or ?				Tanrigge. M Wauerley. N		Richard Prior of Bermondsey, Anno Dom. 2 1213.		0266 17 11 00 0
	or Burgh-	3 _	SFurfer a Scotish man. Also Sineberem >	Austine Friers.	•					William Gifford Bishop of Winshester.	White Monkes.	0078 15 10 ob q
-	Caffell, Denfton, Dodnash,	M Saint Mary	Z King of the East Angles.		- 0022 08 00 00 0					SVSSEX.		
	Dunwich, -	M Saint Mary	The Ancestors of the Duke of Norffolke	-	0042 18 08 ob o							
	Sedes Épiseo- palis, S.Edmundsbury,N		the East-Angles againe vnto the chri-		-			Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.
	Saint Edwards		King Canute.	Blacke Monkes.	2336 16 00 00 0			Chichefter	(Radulphus Episcopus, primo suo ipsius sump-		1 s. d. ob. q.
	place, fine Edwards- frow.		Peter Bishoppe of Winehester.		-			Epätus.	Saint Trinity.	tn, deinde munificentia Henrici primi, postea Seffridus fecandus eius nominis Episcopus tempore Regis Richardi pri-	Secular Canons.	
	Eye. M. Flyxton. M. Heringflete. M		Robert Malet Lord of Eye. Roger the fonne of Osbert.	Blacke Monkes.	oces of or oh a		DE CONTRACTOR DE	Cinchester. E	Saint Peter .		Grey Friers.	
	Hoxon. M	= =	S 1 Ralph Glanuile	Canons Regular,	0049 11 07 00 0			fter. Infra Chichefter. H	{ Saint Iacob. S.Mary Mag. } -		Blacke Friers	
	Letheringham, P Liteburch, P		2 Six Robert Ufford,	? Tramonstratenses \$	0181 17 01 ab 0			Arundel, P	Saint Trinuty T	Thomas Earle of Arundel, & Beatrix his wife-	Pauperes.	0004 03 09 co o
	Mettingham, C	SBeate Marie?	SSir John de Norwich, Lord of Messin-	Blacke Canons	0202 07 05 0b o			Barrell .	Saint Peter	in a service of stranger,	Blacke Monkes. —— Blacke Monks. ——	0168 00 07 ob o
	Rafford, M Ratisford, H Redlingfeild, M	Saint Iohn	Robert Billiop or Earle of Lincolne.		0053 10 00 00 0			Bidlington, H Bofenham, or M Bofeham, M	.Mary Magd. — _	Ficul 2 Scorish Monke.	Blacke Monkes.	0987 00 11 0b q
	Rumbuthe. P	Saint Michael	Manasses de Guies. 5 William Martill, Alij, Domini Regis ?	Blacke Nunnes. — Blacke Monkes. —	0082 02 05 ob o			Boxgraue.	zint Mary _ S		SBlacke Monkes Benedictines.	
	Snapes, P Stocke, C	Saint Marie	Progenitor.	{ Blacke Monkes }	0099 01 00 11 0b			Durfford. M S	John Baptift		White Canone 5	0145 10 02 ob o
	Suthbery. P	Saint Bartholms	Simon Sudbiry Archbishoppe of Canterbu-	SHacke Monks	0324 04 01 0b 0			1	aint Trinity 5	Founded by John Pelham Knight, when a	Pramonstratenses,	0108 13 09 00 0 0047 03 00 00 0
		Saint Mary	William Cheiney, or de Canero.	Preachers. Blacke Monkes Ciffertians.	0250 15 07 ob o	.		Lewis. P S		dation of the Sea.	Black Monks, Clu-7	0057 19 00 0 0
		S.Falicis	- -	SBlacke Monkes & Rochefter.				Lullmenster. N S Michelham	Mary Magd		lack- N.	1091 09 06 ob q
	Wangsford. P Wingefeild. C	_	Ansered of France.	Blacke Monkes Clumiacenses.	0030 09 05 00 0			Remfted, N S.	Mary Magd.		mic Canons,	0191 19 03 00 0
	wykes.	Saint Mary	Domini Regis Progenitor.	= =	0069 14 05 00 0 0050 03 05 0b 0 0092 12 03 0b 0			Briggs. >M Sa	int Mary. — {	Aluredus de Sancto Martino, tempore Hen?	White Monkee 7	0232 09 08 00 0
	Ykefworth or & P	- Saidi Bennet.	Gilbert Blund.		0280 09 05 00 0			Selfey. Sedes E-	* .	g Cedwall.	acke Nunnes.	003 <i>9</i> 13 0 7 00 0
1				I	,			Shulbred. P — Southmalling. C —				
			SVRREY.					Stenings S.c.	Mary Magd.	See Months of the fecond and the Lord 3 3	Culos Comercia	079 15 06 00 0 045 12 05 0b q
	Places	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.			Tortyng. P S.	Mary Magd.		Carmelites or Swhite Friers.	
	Barmondfey, M	S.Sanionts.	Almyn Childe Citizen of London, Ann.D.?		1. s. b. ob. q			Winchelfea, F	King		rs Preachers.	101 04 01 00 0
	i .	D.DRAIGHTS.	1081. Monkes introduced., A.D. 1087. SFrithwald a Petty Regent of Surry, Anno 7	SBlacke Monks S Cluniacenses.	0548 02 05 ob q			M Ox	r Lady. — {	illiam de Buckingham, confirmed by K		1
		Saint Peter, S.Crucis,	(Dom. 666.	— — — Preaching Friers. —	0744 13 06 ob g							
	ļ	S.Fidis.	Mary Saint Paul founded in Ali. 3	Backe Friers			,			-		
		١. ا	Robert Fitz-walter and his fonnes.									1
	Marton, P	. —	man, John Arderne, and John Bay-		0075 00 00 00 0							
	Newarke, vel 2 p	Saint Mary 2		- 1	1039 05 03 00 0	ĺ						VVAR-
]_	Loco.	CMartyr.	No. at a line		0258 II II ob o Reygate							, , , , , , ,
					- Jane			1				

798

Offaking of the Mercians.

Offa, A.D. 700.

Egwin Bishoppe of VVorcester, first Ab-

bot there with king Kenred the fonne

of Wolpher king of the Mercians and K.

White Monkes,

White Nunnes.

Blacke Canons,

Blacke Monkes

Dddddda

0392 08 06 00 0

-- 0034 15 11 00 0

- 1268 09 09 00 0

Brodefey.

Cokehill.

Euefham.

Elnecester.

Saint Mary.

S. Mary, & S. Laburg.

Piaces.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value
		\ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \		->
Narwicke, P	Saint Sepulchers.	_ Richard Neuill Earle of Warwicke		- 0049 13 05 00
Varwicke. P		Peter de Mountford.	Blacke Canons,	13 05 00
Varwicke. F		_{	Friers Preachers.	0004 I8 c6 oo
Varwicke. 2				
Ecclef. Colleg.	; 			- 0247 I3 00 ob
	1			1 - 47 23 00 00
Varwicke. H	Saint Michael			- 0010 01 10 00
Varwicke. H	Sanite Baptiste.			- 0019 03 07 00
		Robert de Denebr, William Russell .	and 7	, , , ,
				1
Varwicke	Saint George	and Anne the Queene. Michael	de AFraternity.	-1
	1	and Anne the Queene. Michael la Poole, and all their Brethren, a	and \	
		Sifters, and for Enne Prince of Wale	. الم	
Varwicke. 2	1		1	1
Hongingate, S		Thomas Beauchampe Earle of Warwicke.	_	
Varwicke, H		l ·	1	f
	Saint Iohn	Thomas Beauchampe,		-1
ouentree. P	Saint Anne	Frier Iohn of Northerbury 2 Carthuft	an Carthufians	0251 05 09 0
			()	-10-21 05 09 0
ouentree, P	Saint Mary	King Canute and Leofricke Earle of Me	Blacke Monkes	_
_		Cians, A.D. 1043.	3 0	. [
ouentree. F		Sir Iohn Poultney Knight, Anno Don	**Mini* Carmelites or White Friers.	2 0007 13 04 00
ouentree. H	S. Iohn Baptift	2 1332	wnite Friers.	
		·		0083 03 03 00
Alnecefter.	S. Iohn Baptist		Blacke Monkes.	0101 14 00 00
		-		
deley. C		Thomas Lord Aftley.	Deane and Secular	3 0079 10 06 00
herston. F		-	Augustine Friers,	3
iecater ?		1 \	xiaguidite Friers,	000I IO 02 00 C
Cell to Mal-			1	1
rne Priorie P			I_ ·	1
Worcester-		1	-	- 0034 08 00 00 0
re.		1	1	1
belacke. C			-	- 0045 6 008 00
deflege, M	Beate Marie,		White Monkes	- 10045 0 000 00
		The Ancestors of Sir Ralph Botelar knig		-1 '.
dbury				
mbe. M				`
	Saint Mary	Camuils and Mombraies.	White Monkes,	- 0343 00 05 00 0
rdebury.				0122 08 06 00 0
dscliffe. C		Richard Earle of Warwicke.		. 0122 00 00 00 0
wood. N	Saint Margares-	Cethelbarne de la Laund.		1 '.
		SGeffrey Clinton Chamberlaine vnto Kin	Nunnes.	. 00,21 02 00 ob o
elworth, M		Henry the first.	Blacke Canons	- 0643 14 09 ob o
gefwood. N	-	C many the mit.		1, 1, 1, 1, 0, 0, 0
olle, C	_	Elizabeth wife to John Lord Clinton,	Blacke Nunnes,	
xstocke, P	_ :			0018 05 06 00 0
	Saint Mary	Robert Ferrars. A.I.H 2.	White Monkes.	0129 II 08 ob o
neaton. N		Amice wife to Robert Rolly Farle of I.		0303 10 00 00 0
IN IN		cefter.	7'-} Nuns	0290 I5 00 ob o
lefworth. N	Saint Edith	Modwena an Irish Virgin Renaired by E		!
	Euro	Marmion a Nobleman. Repaired by A	Blacke Nunnes	0023 08 06 00 0
iley. N			Nuns.	0027 14 07 00 0
neley. M		K.Henry the second.	White Monkes	0578 02 05 00 0
thord super 7		77 00 4 1 1 1 1		1
lleg. Eccles.		Iohn of Stratford Archbishop of Canterbury	r	0123 II 09 00 0
icley. P				1
, -			Blacke Canons	0 00 00 03 06 00
lford -		The Lucies Knights.	Poore folke and	1
shall. N	God, and Saint	=	Pilgrimes. }	0023 10 00 00 0
oxhall. N	Leonard }	Hugh de Hatton.	Blacke Nunnes.	0000 10
`			-meneralines	0078 10 et ob o
		VVESTMORLAN	VD.	}
Places.	Dedication.		1	Value.
		Founder and Time.	Order.	Cuiuc.
. 1.	.1		¬	i. s. b. cb.
rpe. M _	!	SThomas the fonne of Gospatricke, fonne o	£."	1
		Ormes.	*}	0166 10 06 ob e
	E .			

2001 9

VVILT-

	1	3	8-0,	DOOK	19	(bap.21.	and
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Valew.		Places	Dedication.
		SPeter de Rupibus Bissiop of Winchester.		1. s. b. eb. q			
rfalcioven. 3	1,— _	/ Ally, King John.	\$	0283 13 04 00 0		Fossegate. H	_
Malnerne major]	? Saint Merie _	Almyn a Monke, first augmented by Edm.	Blacke Monkes Benedictines.			Gromount, er } P	i
1.		Cloceline and Edred two brothers both re-	21	3/7 -5 55 GS Q		Gysborne, M	
Malucrae minorI	Saint Egiding	ligious men there:augmented by Wil- liam Bloys B. of Worcester, A.D. 1171.	Blacke Monks	0102 10 09 00 0		Haltemprice. M	
Penwortham	100	- Domini Regis Procenitor		- 0099 05 03 00 0		Hampall, N	
Peril ore. M	() -/± ADBT 9.	Egelward Duke of Dorfee in King Edgars }	Blacke Monkes	0666 13 00 00 0		Grundale, or N	
Weffword, N			Blacke Nunnes	0078 08 00 00 0		Helagh-Parke. P Henyngburgh: 7	
Whifton Inxta?	· -	-		0056 03 07 00 0		Ecclej.	_
Wotton-Wauin. P	Saint Ofwald.	The Countesse of Stafford.	-			Collegias . S	1
1 "	Jame Ojwaia.	_		0013 14 04 00 0		Hull. F	I—
		1	<u>'</u>			Hull. F	
		YORKESHIRE.				1 1	Saint Michael.
-1						Hull. H	Saint Trinity.
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.	Order.	Value.		Hyrft, in the	Jame Timity.
Yorke,				1 s. b. ob. q.		iste of Ax-	
Ecclefis }	Saint Peter.	SUlphus Toraldi filius. A Constantio Episcopali sede ornatum. Domini Re-				Keldon, N	
Cathedralis, S		C gis Provenitor.				Keling, or Nunkelynge.	
Yorke. M	Saint Trinity	A house of Canons destroyed by the Con-	Blacke Monkes.	0196 17 02 00 0		Kyrkeham Kyrkleys. N	
	,	Kalph Paynell.	Diacke Monkes	0190 17 63 60 6		Kirkftall, M	Saint Mary.
Yorkeextra 3 M	S.Maries.	William Rufus, and after Alan the third? Earle of little Britaine in Armorica, and	Blacke Monkes.	2085 or 05 ob q			S.Mary Magd.
	Saint Andrew	of Richmond.		> or o2 on d		Melfa, or	Saint Mary.
IuxtaYorke. P	the Apostle }			0057 05 09 0 0		Morton on 3	Saint Mary.
Yorke, F		SLord Vefcy, and Lord Percy, Anno Dom.	{Carmelites or } White Friers. }			Marton.	
Yorke. F		The Lord Screope.	Augustine Friers.			Mollesby, or S N	
- 1			(A Maiter.			1 1	
-			12.Brethren.			Montegrace, M .	
orke. H	Saint Leonard	King William the second.	4. Secular Piefts. 8. Sifters.	0362 II oI ob o		Munckbret-7	
l			30.Chorifters.			ton, alias M S	S.Mary Magd
1			206.Beadmen.	1		Neder- Aca-7	Saint Mary.
pulton, or 2 N		Antecessor Comitis Northumbria.	6. Seruitors.	2082 02 22 2		Aulcaster, S	S.Iohn Bapt.
rden. N		Domini Regis Progenitor	Nunnes	0083 05 09 00 0		Newburgh, P. Newland, 7	
thington. N			Nunnes.	0019 00 00 00 0		Praceptoria. 5	
Bamburgh, a Coll to Saint Ofwald.		King Henry the first,		0124 15 07 00 0	A-1	Newton. H	
				1, 1, 1, 100		Northallerton, F_	
Burton,	Saint Mary	Adam Swaynfon.	Blacke Monkes	ļ		Northaluerton, H S	aint Iacob.
aint Bees Cel-		Domini Regis Progenitor.		0740 70 06		Noffell. M S	Saint Ofwald.
and,				0149 19 06 00 0		Nunuerholme, N _	_
ella-launda, vulgo, Bi- M	Saint Mary.	Acarius first, & Rob. Mowbray, & Gunnora	SWhite Monkes 7	D295 OF O4 00 0		Old-Malton. M	
laund.	-	& after remoued it to Bella-launda. 1138.	Ciftertians.	0295 05 04 00 0		1 1	
Praceptoria,	Saint Iohn Io-		السند سند	0164 10 00 00 0		1 1	John Enangelijf
	aint Iohn.	Slohn Bishop of Yorke, and restored by King \ Athelstan, A.D.629.	51 Monkes, 7			Pontefract. C S	aint Trinity.
į.		CFirst William Lybeton & Honey wielel	2 Canons,	0109 08 08 09 0			aint Martins
cuerley. F		and after restored by John Hothom Knight, Anno Dom, 1287.	Friers Augustines	1		Rippon, M -	
olton m		Iohn de Higthmede.	Friers Minors.	1		Riuans. — Sa Rofedale. P	aint Mary.
Cranen. CF S		Lord Grey of Codner.	Carmelizes or				_
wthome, H -		King Athelfan.		0102 09 03 00 0		Rotherham. C -	
	aint Mary	King Athelstan. Walter de Gaunt, and Iordan Paganel, 2-5 bout the Conquerors time.		0682 13 09 00 0		Pour de	
efedale. N -		Antecellor Kadulphi Euers militis.	Nunnes.				ur Lady
oncaster, F -		Slohn Duke of Lansafter, and l. Nighbro-Z	J Carmelites or 2	0021 19 04 00 0		Rythall, or	_
rax. P		Sir V Villiam Painel Ancestor of Marma- ?	vvinte rriers.			Salley Sa	int Marie,
	1	CWilliam Fitz-Piers and she have	Canons. — o	121 18 03 ob o		Scarbrough, F -	
1	int Mary		Nunnes.	078 00 10 00 0		Scarbrough, F -	
cholt. N -		The Ancefor of Christian water		1	ž.		int Germans,
reby, or North-Fere. P		The Ancestors of the Earle of Cumberland.	O	019 00 00 00 0		1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	
by.	-1			095 II 07 0b 0		Sempringham, M	S. Gilbert and } S.Mary Wotto. }
	·			Fosfegate		Smythywaite, or Senning- thwaite.	
					~ ***	thwaire	_

and Hospitals sometimes in England and VVales. Founder and Time. Order. Value. i. s. d. ob q 0006 13 04 00 0 erns de Malo-lacu, Ancestor of Francis Bigot, aud George Saluayne. ert de Brus A.D.1119. --- 0014 02 08 00 0 - 0712 06 06 00 0 bomas Holand Earle of Kent. Alig The Ancestors of the Duke of Richmond - 0178 00 10 00 0 Ancestor of Geruais Clifton. Nunnes. --- 0085 06 11 00 0 he Ancestor of the Earle of Northum-3 Nuns. berland. ---- 0020 07 08 00 Di ancettor of the Earle of Northumberland - 0086 05 09 00 0 €036 co 07 co o First, Edward the first, and after Sir Robert Onghered, and Richard de la Poole, Ann. Carmelites or 13.Edw.primi. alfride de Huthom. A.D.1330 White Friers. Augustine Friers, __ William de la Poole, and Katherine his 3 Carthufian Monkes-0231 17 63 00 0 wife, A.D.1377. 0010 60 00 0 Iowbray Earle of Nottingham. 0007 II 08.00 O he Ancestors of the Earl of Westmorland. Nunnes. 0029 06 or co o he Kings Ancestors. Nuns. 0050 17 02 00 0 Valter Espec, A.D. 1122. Augustines. 0300 15 06 00 0 Nunnes. 0020 07 08 00 0 Henry Lacy the first, A.D. 1147. White Monkes. 0512 13 04 00 0 0026 01 03 00 0 Swilliam le Grosse Earle of Albemarle. A- | White Monkes | Ly King Henry the first. A.D. 1150. | Cistertians. 0445 10 05 00 0 Katherine de Browmere. 0183 02 04 00 0 The Kings Ancesters. Alig, the Earle of \ Nunnes. 00;2 06 02 00 0 (Thomas Holand Duke of Surrey, Earle of Kent, and L. of Wake, and Io. Ingilby Esquier.1 401. 0382 of 11 ob o Adam Fitz-Owen, Monkes. 0323 08 02 00 0 Robert Earle of Leicester. -- 0027 13 04 00 Robert Mowbray, A.D.1127. Canons Augustines,---0457 13 05 00 0 0129 14 11 ob o SKing Edward the third, and Thomas Hat-Z field Bishop of Durham, A.D.1354. 0021 00 C2 00 Q SCarmelites or White Friers. First founded by Robert Lacy Earle of Lin-0056 02 02 00 0 Canons. Henry the first reedified it. -- 0606 09 03 00 0 The Ancestors of the Lord Dacres. Nunnes. 0010 03 03 00 0 SEuftach Fitz-Iohn-Monoculi, in the raign of king Stephen. 0257 07 00 00 o Robert Lacy Earle of Lincolne, Blacke Monkes Cluniacenfes. 0472 16 10 ob o - Sir Robert Knolles and Conftance his wife. -For poore people. 0182 13 07 00 0 The kings Ancestors. 0047 16 00 00 o - Wilfride Bissioppe of Torke. - Walter Especk.

The kings Progenitors. White Monkes. 0041 13 08 00 0 Schooles. Writing. Thomas Rotheram Archbishop of Torke. Grammar. . and Muficke. 0058 of 09 ob q The Ancestors of the Cliffords Earles of } 0271 19 04 0 0 - 0351 14 05 co o William the fonne of Henry de Percy. White Monkes, ____ 0221 15 08 00 0 King Edward the second, A.D.1319. White Friers. Sir Adam Sage. Friers Preachers. Henry Percie Earle of Northumberland Blacke Friers. King William the first, A.D. 1078. Blacke Monkes
Benedictines 0819 02 06 00 S. Gilbert the beginner of the Order, and Agnes de Chefter. Gilbertines. 0066 13 c4 00 0 The Ancestors of the Earle of Northumberl .-Nunnes, - 0062 05-00 00 0

and Holpitals Ionietimesin England and VVales.

103

		1			
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.		Order.	Valero.
Bafingwerke 2					i. s. b. ob. s
Bafingwerke M		 			9157 15 02 00 9
Conway, or		1			1-1,7 1, 02 00 0
	Saint Marie	SKenelme fonne of Gernaise, once	Prince 2		0750 00 00
		2 of North-Wales.	5		0179 20 10 00 0
Hawston Com-		1		1	
) dario		1	-		0160 14 10 00 0
Lanllugensor Wanligan, in Montgomere					1
Strata-Marcel 3	-			Nunnes.	0022 13 08 00
2 OF Street	1	Owen the fonne of Gryffin, and o	onfir	1	
marghill, in M	:-	med by his fonne Wemmowen.	Anno }	-	0073 07 06 00
	1	C Dom. 1202.	د	1	
Valla de Cruce in Denbigh.	١.	1			
fbire.	_			<u> </u>	0214 03 05 00
_	1	1			1
		BANGOR DIC	100		1 .
		BANGOR DIC	JUE	S•	
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.		Order.	Value.
Bangor, F					1 s. b. sb. g
Bardefey in 🤿	_			Blacke Friers.	,
Carnaruon- M	Saint Mary				0058 06 02 0 01
Beaumarys in ? "					
Anglesey. 5 P. Bethaylhert. M				Grey Friers.	
					0069 03 08 00 0
Ecclesia Collegiat.		 =			0024 00 00 00 0
Holyhead in?					1 .
Anglesey. S Kynnerin					l
Mersonoth- > M	Saint Mary,	Lewellyne the fonne of Germais	===		
fhire. S		,			0058 15 04 00 0
Siriolis. M					0040 17 09 ob o
	`				0047 15 03 00 0
		D	1		1
	<u>S.</u>	DAVIDS DIO	JES.		
Places.	Dedication.	Founder and Time.		Order.	Value.
Aberguylly. C	Ϊ_ ΄			· ————————————————————————————————————	i. s. b. ob. q
lba-launda, >	Γ –		-		0042 00 00 00 0
in Carmar- > M					0153 17 02 00 0
densbire. D Brechon. P	S.Euangelift				
Cardiganin 3 P				_	0134 11'04 00 0
armarden.in2 -			-	_	0013 04 09 00 0
armaruenjo.				Grey Friers, —	0174 00 98 00 0
wxta S.Dauids C					0024 19 04 00 o
n Pemorogein.	Saint Mary. —	Ichn Duke of Lantafter.			oto6 o3 o6 oo o
Denbigh in F		Iohn Sninmere, Anno Domini, 1339	1	SCarmelites or S White Friers, S	
aint Dogma- 7		Martinus de Turonibus Lord of I after by William Valence, ten	Cemys: >	Cvvnite Friers. 5	
ells in Pens- M		2 after by William Valence, ten	more {		o oo do 10 8000
frekshire.		≥ H. 3.	اد		
west in Pem_ P					0135 06 02 00 0

Saint Teleas. Saint				,	5",		200
Section of the content of the cont	Places	Dedication.	Founder and Time.		Order.		Value.
Landgries Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin Property Martin	Kydwelly in? Cel	-[
Carsensilly F Part Par	Curmardějh, Çla.				-		0029 10 00 00 0
Fally Street St	Carmardelb. C					-	0057 05 04 00 0
Bentiere Capto Carlo C	Pulia. T			_	- Auftine Friers.		0052 02 05 00 0
Strateflorid Magnetic Control State of C	Bembrock- Scepto						1 -
OSESTATIONS STATES Gradinatus Tyronenic. Similary Gradinatus Tyronenic. Saint Mary Sales And Solid Mary Soli	Strateflorida	1					0104 10 11 05 8
Stant Above and Lapus French Bilhops. Saint Telean	or Stratflow-		Griffith Rhese and Meredith.	_			0122 06 03 00 0
Talleis. M Sant Mary. Sand S. Lohn Rept. Sobert Martin, tempure Hen. LANDAFFE DIOCES. Places. Places. Dedication. Founder and Time. Corder. Value. L. s. b. cb. q German and Lupus French Bilhops. Cetter Bar-Cord. Cetter Bar-Cord. Cetter Bar-Cord. Founder and Time. Order. Value. L. s. b. cb. q German and Lupus French Bilhops. Cetter Bar-Cord. Cetter Bar-Cord. Earles of Herrford, in the raigne of Hat. Short Fall. Blacke Friers. Grey Priers. Blacke Friers. Grey Priers. Blacke Friers. Oo32 e4 00 00 0 Oo32 e4 00 00 0 Oo32 e4 00 00 0 Oo32 e4 00 00 0 Oo32 e4 00 00 0 Oo32 e4 00 00 0 Oo4 04 00 0 Oo4 04 00 0 Oo5 oo4 04 00 0 Oo5 oo6 04 08 00 0 Oo71 o3 02 00 0 Oo71 o3 0			1				
Tyronenic, Robert Mariin, tempore Hen. LANDAFFE DIOCES. Places, Dedication. Founder and Time. Order. Value. L. s. b. ab. q Lendaffe, Ecclef. Cath. Abergeuenny Force. Seath Telean. Saint Telean. Saint Telean. Serman and Luque French Bishops. Cath. Abergeuenny Force. Earles of Hereford, in the raigne of H.1. S Blacke Friers. Blacke Friers. Blacke Friers. Blacke Friers. Blacke Friers. Blacke Friers. Blacke Friers. Coost of the Amount of the	1	Saint Mary. 7	7.4		,	-	
LANDAFFE DIOCES. Places. Dedication. Founder and Time. Order. Value. L. s. b. ob. q Scalef. Cath. Cath. Cath. Cath. Secked. Cath. Secked. Cath. Secked. Cath. Secked. Cath. Secked. Cath. Secked. Cath. Secked. Secked. Cath. Secked. Secked. Cath. Secked. Secked. Cath. Secked. Secked. Cath. Secked. Secked. Secked. Cath. Secked. S	1	S.Iohn Berpt. S			- -		0153 01 04 00 0
Places, Landaffe, Cath. Saint Telean. Saint Telean. Saint Telean. Saint Telean. Saint Telean. Saint Telean. Secundary Se	Tyroneme, -		Rovert Martin, tempore Hen.	_	-		
Landaffe, Cecif. Continuents C			LAN DAFFE I	010	CES.	1	
Landaffe, Cecif. Continuents C	Places	Dedication	Founder and Time		1 01		,
Saint Telean. German and Lapus French Bishops. Cath Abergescapy Cath Abergescapy Cath Bishops. Cat		~			Oraer.		
Abergecentry Described by Police Sectiones Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Sections Program Section S	Landaffe. ?	Saint Telean.	German and Lupus French Bishops.				1. s. b. eb. q
Seckencke S S. Ichn Enang. S. Ichn E	Abergeuenny			_	l		
Celtie Pate F S. John Eurorg. Earles of Herriford, in the raigne of Hat. S Landiffe. F S. John Eurorg. Earles of Herriford, in the raigne of Hat. S Landiffe. F S. John Eurorg. S Landiffe. F S. John Eurorg. S Landiffe. F S. John Eurorg. S Landiffe. F S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe. S S Landiffe.	Shire.			-		-	0059 04 00 00 0
Cardiff. Faridiff. Fineplow, it and i	a Celito Bate F	S.Iohn Euang. —	SBarnard de Newmarch: (Miles ar Earles of Hereford in the raigne	nd Roger \ of H. I. \	Blacke Friers.		
hichitoving Mammarish Mamm	Cardiffe, Fl.			_	Grey Friers.		
Adammatify Marmatify Projection Proj	Chepitow, in Monmouth 7 M				Blacke Friers,		
demonship. P Chendas, Coos of a co	Gods-grace S	SReates Maria				-	0032 04 00 00 0
Nymaccy P	bire.	Virginis.			- :		0019 04 04 00 0
anternais Mainstail Mainst	Goldcliffe,in? P.		Chandos,		_	-	
anternais Mainstail Mainst	with a Chap- P		 ;	=	_	_].	2009 24 29 22 2
All parts All	Lanterno in 5						5008 04 08 00 8
te liner of States losmouthin P Saint Florences Sorgan in State CMerics William Eatle of Gloucefter. Solomouthin M State CMerics Verginis. Waltern filius Richerds, Comitis de Ogis Fractor Gilberts Comitis Pembrochie. The control of the	Malpas. 6r				=	-10	0071 03 02 00 0
Commouting p SainteFirences SainteFirences SainteFirences SainteFirences William Eatle of Gloucoffer. Bette CMaris Internation Manuarity Manuar	the hiner of (la.					_ •	014 09 11 00 0
Continued Cont	Monmouth in?	5 S.Katherine 8:7		_	Blacke Monkes.	_ _	056 07 00 0
Comment of the Comm			William Earle of Gloucester				
Constant of the content of the con	(34	Beate Marie				- 1	1
2 Trater Giberts Commits Pembrachia. 5 — 0256 11 06 0b 0 is it in it is in it	Tinterna in	Virginia. S	(Walterus filius Richards, Comitis	de Ogi, 2		- 0	150 04 09 00 0
	Vske in 2		5 frater Gilberti Comitis Pembroi	bie. S		- 0	256 11 06 ob o
The	Monmoust:sh.5				-:	- 0	069 09 08 ob o
The	,					-	
The							
The							
The							
The							Ì
The							
1 ne							The
							1 110

Chap.21.

203 801



The Totall Number and Valevy of these

and all the Promotions Spirituall certified at the Taxation in King Henry the eight his time of the first Fruites and Tenthes, are by the Record, as followeth.

Promotions.	 Nűber particular	Number totall.	Value totali.
Archbishoprickes and Bishoprickes, Deaneries, Archdeaconries; Dignities and Prebends in Cathedrall Churches, Benefices, Renefices, Hospitals, Colleges, Chaustries and free Chappels,	 21. 11. 60. 394. 8803. 605. 110. 96.	1 24 7 4.1.	l. s. 320180. io.

Takenfrom the posseffion of the Clergy by *Homythe eight, and conserted to temporall vies out of the former furnme, for 100d, 9-47, dt q. Since in this precedent Table, wee hase laide to the Readers view a grear part of this Kings ill, the waste of 16 much of Cods reseneeve (howfoeuer absided) let him not holde it in cutiosity, out of teason, fine of it may in charity fall well in squence by fetting downer the Churches either created, or restored by him, or by him (which is the now state of our Clergy) continued, to redeem his memory blemished by the former error, from the vulgar at perion of sacrilegious impierie. This King after the dissolution of the Religious house, creeked these fixe Bishoprickes, to write, Westmister, Schoffer, Pettrboungs, bost of the Table And Glauesser, whereof the fixe last act in 18st, and at the same time he receded also these Cathedral Churches hereafter mentioned, wherein he founded a Deane, and the number of Petbends followine vize.

Canterbury. - 1-2 |Gloucefter. Winchester. Worcester. Chefter. Peterborough. 6 Rochester. Oxford. Norwich.

The yearely value of which Cathedrall Churches so newly by him erected, with the Collegiats of windsfor, its sliminsfor, and wokerchampton, ouer and besides the Petti-Cannons, and other inseriour Ministers amounted by elimination of \$9.42.1.8. s. 2d.

The Promotions Ecclestaticall, which for the most part, except a little pared, see preserved entire, are in a generall estimate by the Shires, wherein they stand in the ensuing Table expressed.

The prefent Number and Value of the Spirituall Promotions in England and Wales!

 men	giand an	d Wales!		
Counties.		Promot	ions.	Value.
\$ Barkefhire. Bedfordfilie. Bedfordfilie. Buckinghamthire. Cambridgefhire. The Town of Callis, and the Marches Chelaire. Cornwall. Camberland and Weftmorland. Darby. Deuonfhire. Davideflie. The Bidhopricke of Durbans in the Co of Northamberland. Effer. Giofterfhire.	ounty?	139. 116. 172. 151. 26. 68. 161. 63. 106. 374. 248. 118. 378. 440.		L. s. ab. q. 2053 of oo ob o 1506 of oo ob o 1236 oo oo o q 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oq 1236 oo oo oo 1236 oo oo oo 1236 oo oo oo 1237 oo oo oo 1247 oo oo oo oo 1247 oo oo oo oo 1247 oo oo oo oo 1247 oo oo oo oo 1247 oo oo oo oo 1247 oo oo oo

Number totall of | Value totall of the Bethe Benefices in nefices in England, England, 8501. 16772.1.5.5.2.

in England and landand Wales.
Wales, 9407. 113 270.1.14 s.1.d.

Promotions.

The Bishopricke of Saint Assaph, The Bishopricke of Bassgor. The Bishopricke of Landasse, The Bishopricke of Saint Davids.		1536 18 07 0b 1125 05 08 00 0 1204 11 10 0b 0 12531 12 09 00 0
	Number totall the Benefices Wales. 905.	of Value totall of the in Benefices in Wales, 6498.1, 8.5.1 1.
		fal Value totall of all the

The scuerall Dioces of Wales.

The value of these inferior Promotions in England which have cure of Soules, I have suited into severall Proportions as they are rated in Record, and distinguished the Vicaradges from Parsonages in the Table following.

Liuings vnder tenne pound. — 4543	Vicarages.
Liuings of tenne pound, and vnder ?	Perfonages. ——— 905.
	Vicarages. 540
Liuings of twenty Markes, and vnder	Personages 1134.
ewenty pound,	Vicarages. 0490
Liuings of twenty pound, and vnder os 24	Personages 0414.
	Vicarages 0179.
Liuings of twenty fixe pound, and 2 0206.	Perfonages, — 0163.
Thust thirty pound.	Vicarages. — 0043
Littings of thirty pound, and vnder?	Personages 0188
Torry pound.	Vicarages 0060
Liuings of forty pound and vp- 2	Personages. —— oit 5.
wards, O144	Vicarages0029

To preuent any missaking in the Reader, I have thought it not vnsitte to conclude this Table with the discourrie of my meaning by certaine letters before vsed.viz.

Monastery. F. Prioric. N. Frienie. | C. Nunnery | H. **EDVVARD** Chap.22. | Edward VJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 59.



Edward VI. EDVVARD THE SIXT OF THAT NAME, KING OF ENGLAND, FRANCE

AND IRELAND, DEFENDER OF THE FAITH, &c. THE FIFTIE NINTH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISH, HIS LIFE, ACTS,



R Graften.

Edward created Prince of Waler prefently after his birth,

DWARD the fixt of that Name, and onely fonne liuing vnto King Henry the eight, was borne at his Mannor of Hampton-Court in Middlesex, the twelfth of October, and yeere of faluation, 1537. and fixe dayes after being

the eighteenth of the same moneth, hee was created Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and Earle of Chefter: his birth was joyfull vnto the King and Commons; but the death of his mother, the vertuous Queen Iane, brought immediat forow vnto both, whole womb was cut (as fome haue affirmed) to the fauing of his, but loffe of her owne life, vpon whose death these elegant verfes were writ;

Phanix I ana iacet nato Phanice, dolendum S.ecula Phænices nulla tulisse duas.

> Here lies the Phenix Lady Inne, whose death a Phenix bare, O griefe,two Phenixs at one time, together neuer were.

(2) Nineyecres and od monethes hee was vertuoully trained up in the life of his father, and at his death appointed the first of his heires, and for want of filtue (filt fothamed). Mary, and shee failing, E. et life and the filture of the filture Salomon was blame-worthy for women, fo left hee but one sonne and two daughters, as the other in Scripture is said to have done: Salomon had Rehoboam a fooleand unfortunate, his daughters, but in their finnes obscure, and both of them Subicets; but Henry and in their Isac. E e e c e e

Alluding to the Creft wher father a Phoenix

in flames within 2 Crowne,

	was more happy in Edward his fonne, who proued another young Salomon himfelfe, and his fifters both	of the Fleete was appointed to Sea, and Sir Willia Woodhouse made his Vice-admirall: these meeting	m	1	Edward VJ. ENGLANDS M	ment at London affembled, all Colledges, Free-Chap
	Sougraignes of an Imperial Crowne	Paralist Co Count in the death of the confecting	at:		the Scotish intended, and that now no skirmish but	pels, and Chanteries, were given to the King, where
546.	(3) He beganne his raigne the twenty eight of			1 1	a Battell must be vndergone fell to Consultation, be-	in was repealed the Statute formerly made, and
		fers of peace to all fuch of that Nation accounts.	1 made process	1	ing mounted in their fadles, where with fuch refolu-	COmmonly called the five articles which had been
	of that moneth was proclaimed King of England	uance the marriage betwixt their two Princes acco	TION IN Scotlan		tions they departed afunder, that Iohn Earle of War-	the cause of many Marryrs deathes, in the daics of
		ding to Couenants already concluded whom		1 1	wicke, Lord Marthall of the field, defired the Prote-	I king hemy his rather, as also other chacted by Kins
	preme Gouernour of thefe Churches with other	(a) The Congruence of Seatland Land		1	ctor to be good vnto his wife and Children, if on his	Richard the lecond and Henry the fift for the fun
		of many Caffles ingrender and ingration and com-			part things went not well with him. By this time	preffion of Scriptures in English, and other point
		daily encreasing by anomented reports		The name of this field is not a-	the Armies were at point to joine battel, in the place	held, in their daies accounted hereticall, at which
	ing Sinoue-Sunday, was Crowned at Weltminiter			greed yoon, wee	called Edmonastone-edge neere vnto Muskelborough,	time also injunctions went forth to cleanse the
£		through all the parte of the Poolena and all a		call it Mushle.	where the Master of the English Ordinance had	Church of all Images, and Commissioners sent with
ide iy	(4) His Counsellors were appointed by his	to be bothe wherelocuer they came a Cultomain	74		mounted two Canons necreynto the top of the hill.	authority to pull them downe, who first began at the
y	ficke Father as we have faid, and Protector over his				The Scotish came forward, faster then an ordinary	Cathedrall Church of Saint Panles in London, and
	Minoritie and Realmes (by confent of the Nobles)	tuenatter this manner . two hre Brands for a Croff	. 1	field : Vareskkeld Willsford field.	Marche, their pikemen thicke ranged together, bea- ring broad Bucklers in their left hands.	thence proceeded cafting downe those Idols, i
	was ordained his Vncle Edward Lord Seymer Earle of Hereford and Duke of Sommerfet, brother vnto	were carried vpon the point of a speare, with Pro	Wil. Patter.	Sec. Malter Patten.	(15) At the first encounter Captain Shelley Lieu-	all the Churches throughout England and Wale
	Offeene Lees tabo choroman an act act 16:			Major Panta.	tenant of the band of Bulleners : Captaine Ratliffe	Whereof great stirres presently happened and in Cornwall the first.
	the Order of Knight-hood, and the King im-			1 1	brother to the Lord Fitzmater, with many Gentle-	(19) For the Kings Commission being put i
- 1	mediately did the like vnto the Lord Maior of			1 1	men of name and account were flaine and the Lord	practife, and these gay golden Images cast down
	London.	Crone let vo for certaine dates in the Field	F1		Grey of Wilton General of the Horsemen, dangerous-	broken and burnt, their Priests accounted the A
- 1	(5) His first busines was to establish Gods ser-	that Bareny, whereunto the aide should come : and	1	flaine and the Lord Grey hure,	ly hurtin the mouth with a Pike: and indeed such	facrilegious, and one of them as Baals for zeak
- 1	lice, who had eltablished him in the Throne and and	those that refused, being about fixeteene, and vide	r		was the fury of the Scots first encounter, that the	fought to make his factifice with blood, but sparin
- 1	another Jojian in godly zeale, deltroied Idolarry by	fixty were accounted traitours, and their Land con- ficated to the King. This ancient muster the Goner	-1		English horsemen were forced backe, and in retiring	his owne, fheathed his knife in the heart of Maste
		I HOUT commanded appointing them a James 1	Musiclebuteb.	1	ranne through, and bare downe a part of their owne	Body a Commissioner, imploied about the same bu
- 1	day did the Altars of Basim, fought the Salverion of 1	"Multillerat in defence of their liberal-	71.1.4.	T-10	foote-men, to their great hurt : when their Kines	fines: which fact was fo favoured among the rura
g pas				The Kings Stans	Standard(borne by Sir Andrew Flammoch) was laid	Commons of Cornwall, and Deuonshire (who end
72=	the people, as lolish did the Leutes the teachers of	their hearts, that thicker they from who found be	1	dard in danger to be loft.	fast hold on by the Scotish, and had not that Knights	gaue voice for the papall continuance) that in
		first, and pitched their Standards even in the face of		1 1	ftrength beene the more, and his horse the better	rebellious manner they combined together again
- 1	knowne language to be read in the Church as he	the Enemie.	1	1	himselse had beene slaine, and the Standard loft,	the King.
- 1	did the Arkeinto the Lemple of the Lord common.	(10) Many warlike enterprises were attempted		1	which not with it and ing was grafped to fast, that the	(20) Their chiefe Captaines were Humfrey of rundell, Gouernour of the Mount, with fixe other
	ded the ancient and true vie of the Sacrament in 1	Detwixt them, many prijoners raken, and from Soul	1		Scots bare away the Nether end of the staffe to the	rundell, Gouernour of the Mount, with fixe other
		I diers flaine . vnon the Seatt part that I and zr	E-to-to-		burrell.	Gentlemen of name, neither were the Priefts back
- 1	to be kild and celebrated in Ierufalem, and in al things	2 Tall from his horse lost his life & his same with	I done before the	The battell of	(16) The Canons from the hill, plaied fore vp-	ward in lo bada worke, whereof Robert Bocham, an
- 1				Musicaburgh.	on the Scotish, and so did the Ordinance out of the	featien others were the forwardest men; accompan
- 1	(6) And as Edward was busied in setting forth	Of the English were hart Henry Vane and Restauill a	loughts		English Fleete, whose terrible noise and smoake, fil-	ed with no lessethen ten thousand tall Souldier
- 1.	Gods glorie, fo the Protector and Councell were			1	led the Armies with furious Cries, and darkened the	who all fought to vidoe those points of religion
- 13	arefull for the State of the Realme, and especially	taines of the light horelemen were raken priloners.			day as with the Clouds of night. The retreat of the	which the King by law and act of Parliament ha
- 12	or their Kings marriage with Mary the yong Queen		1	1	Protectors Horsemen, disordering their fellowes (as	ordained to be observed : Whereupon they besie
- li	of Scotland, vnto which a Parliament at Edenburgh nad consented in Anno 1543, and for confirmation	/ ten-		1 1	is faid) gaue fignes vnto the Seets of a prefent victo-	ged the City of Excefler, and with many sharpe at
- 17	hereof had fent into England, William Earle of Glan-	(11) Whilft these things proceeded, and either	1	1	ry, who now vpon a forward Courage diffranked themselues for hast, and fell vpon the disbanded	faults fought the possession thereof, twife firing th
- 12	arn, Sir George Dowglas, Str William Hamilton, and Sir	Dart Dialed voon the advantage Forly transfer of		1 }	English, who presently by their leaders were brought	Gates, and leaving nothing vndone that either w
- 15	ames Leirmound, Scotish Knights, Ambassadors, vn-			1 1	into Array, and fiercely prefled forward upon the	or warre would afford to obtaine : for they brough
12	o King Henry deceased, betwixt whom the contracts	/ Total of with property of Compare, cither twenty	Cour chall-	1	vantgard of the enemie, their aduantage the more,	the Citizens to fuch distresse that they forced ther
1,	vere sealed interchangeably as we have said.			1 1	for that the Scots wanted thot to answere their vio-	to mould vp branne for their bread, working it i
-	(7) And now by the Counsell of England was	man to man, which furely was honorable, the Scots		1 1	lence; which caused them in hast confusedly to re-	Cloathes, for otherwise could they not bring it incorporate together: their daintiest flesh was the
ŀ	hought most fit to be fought after and confirment	having advantage for number, and Charitable for]	The Scots dif-	tire towards their great Battell; and those misdee-	owne horfes, and those slaine were distributed aswel
le- C	ed, for the wealth and peace of the whole Iland:	the fauing of Christian blood; but their persons		comfitted.	ming the day had beene loft, turned their backes	to the poore as rich; for which their loyalty and mod
i. V		vnequall in regard of his place; that demand was de-		1 1	and fled the chafe was followed almost five miles	faithfull fernice King Edward did both highly e
1	an Epiltle lent to the Scorish Nobilitie directed	nied and proffers made for the battell: which happe-		1	wherein the Lord Fleming with fundry men of note were flaine: Bifloop Lestie recordeth nine by	freemethem, and richly reward them by confirma
١,	IN THE LOTE Protector: wherein they were	ned even the next day following, being the tenth of September and the last of the weeke.		1	note were flaine : Bilhop Leflie recordeth nine by	tion of the Cities Charters, inlarging the liberties
- 1 1	emembred of the many incomform	(12) The place where the English lay encamped,		The number of Scots fizine,	name, belides ten thouland of their fouldiers that	augmenting the reuenewes and giving vnto the Ci
- 11	DOLLES.COMMITTED and done upon airl on Vin-1	was you the Bankes of Edenbrough Frith, wherein	1	3COLI DELICO	therein lost their lives, and prisonerstaken, about a	tizens the mannor of Exilond, as the fignet of hi
nt t			1	1 1	thousand persons, the chiefe whereof was the Earle	loue for their feruice to the Crowne, to be had in re
			1	1 1	of Huntly, Chancellour of Scotland, the Lord refter.	membrance of their loialty for euer. Meane while
l a	nd conditions of the Nations; inhabiting the fame	elenche, hafted thetherward betimes in the morning;	Bishop Roffe.	1 1	Hobby, Hamilton Captaine of Dunhagre the Mafter	the Rebels robbed the Country, vnto whom al
					of Sanpoole, the Lord Wimmes and a brother of the	things was common that came vnto hand.
111	to be delegated from one and the fame Originally			1 1	Earle of Cassis: fuch was the fuccesse of the English.	(21) The Rebels thus peftering those parts
1,	rging Gods prouidence, that had raken away all		The Seasonir	1 1	and loffe of the Scotish.	with their riotous attempts, looked and well hoped
				Holinfied p.989.	(17) Lieth they facked and fet on fire, tooke the	that others would have joined to their aide, but
I a	aughter; and in England, onely one fonne unto King		defigues.		Hand Saint Colmes , Broughtierag , Rockesburgh , Humes	therein deceined, they lastly fell to Consultation
14	com y announce this many wines. I heir Princes them.		- 1	1	Castle, and others: so that many Gentlemen in	what was to be done, and in fine concluded for the
12	clues for yeeres, qualities, and magnificence, firly or-	my other of the Scottle Nobility.	. 1	1	Tiuidall, and the Meres, came to the Protector	best pollicy to article with the King, which how to
1 4	differ to contract the vision of Peace - allegging that I	(13) Theleesper of fooile and filled with to	- 1	1	and entred into termes and conditions of Peace. In	be fet downe, bred likewise much trouble and di
- 15	ingland fought neither the preheminece nor the co-	naired furiously forward, without all feare or any	. 1		the meane while by the working of the Gouernour,	flurbance with their confused cries for these rude
12	uest of Scotland, but rather desired an equality both		1		and Queene Dowager, the young Queene was fud-	and vnexperienced Counsellors made their owns
1."	a flate and gouernment; and to that end offred to	Killer Eske Drenenring thereby the arms O	- 1	1 1	dainely conveyed from Striueling, vnto the Ile, and	conceiued opinions the fundamental matters for
15	the the name of Britaines indifferent to both,		- 1	1	Abbay of Michmahomo, as to a place of more fecuri-	redresse, some would have this, and other some that
- [nough dishonorable to themselves, in bereauing	" All Freeze Irom the K oade let treely fly among a wing	1		ty, and shortly after into France to be married vnto	but none would be gainelaid of his will or demand.
1,	neir Nation of the glorie archieued, in many of		.	Queene Mary	the Dolphine, thee then being of age betwirt five and	holding his voice as worthy of hearing in this Court
14	ich victories. I fiele norwithitanding the Sco. 1	to the reft, as hardly could they be gotten for to goe forward, which indangered them more. The Scottle Armie thereupon removed formewhat Southward	A wing of the I-	Opeene Mary conneyed into France.	fixe: whereat the English so kormed, as they deter-	of affembly, as his body an aide to support the Acti
	th perfifted to bestow their young Queene another	torward, which indangered them more. The Scotish	tith fore galled		mined and threatned the Conquest of Scotland.	on, fo that long it was ere they could light on their
1"	(8) Wheremon the Bross Continue of	Armie thereupon remoued somewhat South-ward	LOS ENG MEETE.	1 1	But God who is the disposer of Kingdomes, and	owne discontents, and longer ere they could agree
- E	(8) Whereupon the Protector in person, vnder-	leeking to get the higher ground with advantage	1	1.	hath the hearts of Princes in his owne hand, in his	what they would have reformed, onely still constant
1 "	oke all expedition into scattand, accompanied	both of Sunne and winde, the delire whereof confed	1	1	vnsearchable decrees, saw it not time to vnite as yet,	in variable viconstancy, for some would have no
G	ith the Earle of Warwicke, the Lords Dacres, and	from little to regard the helps of hours 1 c	Rich, Graften.	1	the whole Iland vnder one Crowne, to which end he	Inflices, others no Gentlemen, Parkes must be Pa-
1,	rey of Wilton, many Knights, and a most warlike ar- y of Souldiers. Edward Lord Clinton Admirall		.	1 1	fuffered the French to affift the Scots, and England	Rures, and Insoloures must downe, the Priefts ever
1"	Januara Lord Cunton Admirall	by maine itrength of men.	1	1	to be burthened with her owne citill broyles.	pulling the beli rope to ring the Mane into Englana
4		(14) The	1	j !	(18) For the Protector returned, and a Parlia-	and to towll Cardinall Poole from Rome, and with
				- 1	1	much

termed, the Oake of Reformation, whence likewise

fometimes Sermons were deliuered to the people,

and once by the Reuerent Doctor Parker, which

(37) To these the Kings generall Pardon was

publikely pronounced by an Herald at Arms, but

to farre off from embracing, as the Rebels from the

height of the hill, shor at the Citie, which doing lite

tle harme, they removed their Ordinance to the

walles, and without great refiftance entred the town,

where they became Masters of al the munitions, and

emprisoned the Maior, and many other Citi-

(38) These times thus troublesome, the King Ffffff

lower ground, and thence beganne to batter the Norwich wonne

The Kings par-

had almost cost him his life.

mons, next at Wimonbam, where by the inftigation

of Iohn Flowerden they cast downe the sences of

nclofures , belonging to Robert Ket a Tanner in the

same Towne; who to bee even with Flowerdew

brought them to Hetherfet, and fer them on worke

to pull downe both hedge and ditch of his pasture

grounds inclosed: to which worke hee gaue such

desperate incouragements, that these varulies pre-

fently chose him for their ringleader, who with

them passed to Bomthrope, laying all leuel where they

(32) Their number encreasing, and doings

outragious, Sir Edmand Windam Knight, at that time

high Shiriffe of the Shire, made proclamation among

Iohn Flowerd and Robert Ket

the cauters of

Ket made Cap

mine of the

lastly tooke to their neeles and left the field : the

chaie a while followed, and the fouldiers scattered,

a fearefull crie suddainely arose, that all the Com-

Lord Grey of Wilton, having in pay Spiniola an Itali-

(26) The Lord Ruffels forces augmented, his

greatest care was to releeve the City Excesser, whi-

ther vponthethird of August he hasted from Honi-

ton being athousand strong; and passing ouer the

Downes toward Woodbury, lodged his Campe that night neere to the Wind-Mill, whereof the Rebels

hauing intelligence, railed themselues from Saint

an Captaine with three hundred short,

mons were vp, which caused the Lord Generall to And againe put

returne voto Honiton : whether shortly came the to sight,

ilaliz Bud.

Referention

married.

The fixe Artis

The Kings an-

The second arti-

The third atticle

Their other ob

they account no profit in Common bread, besides

the nourishment of their natural Bodies: but this

bleifed bread to be the food of their foules vnto eter-

nall life. And as you are seduced in these (saith the

admonition) lo in confirmation also they carrie your

fimplicities captine, for the truth teacheth no other-

wise then themselues beleeue, namely, that a Child

baptized, and dying before confirmation is nethe-

lesse in state of Grace, else are themselues causers of

their childrens damnation : so the service of God

brought from an vnknowne tongue, cannot furely

offend any reasonable man, which is onely to make

him vuderstand that, which before he knew not, and

000		ESSION OF Monarch 59	Book.	9 Cb	ьар.22.	Edward VI. ENGLANDS	MONARCHS. Monarch 59.	
	fought to quiet, and to that end fent the L. William	despairing of any good, counseiled the Earle to b			•	1 (47) The day following For the Control	Monarch 59.	หือต
1	Parr, Marques of Northampton, with fifteen hundred horiemen vnto Norwich, accompanied with the	gone. But so farre was he from such staine of he)-			(47) The day following, Ket the Captaine of this fedition, crept into a Barne of one M. Riches of	mulation and disdaine, banded each against others	.!
Aide fent vnto	Lords Sheffeild, and Westworth, besides many	nour, that drawing forth his owne fword, comma ded other to doe the like, and with an interchanger ble kiffe confirmed the refolution of his hold on	I- Thomas I	Rafe	ertKetappre-	Swanington, was by two of his feruants apprehended,		
Normich.	Knights; who at his first comming thither, sum-	ble life confirmed the reclinic an interchange	lution of the	i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i	aca,	With 20, horiemen conneted to Normich where o		
1	moned the City to yeeld; the Magistrates whereof	ble kiffe confirmed the resolution of his bold courage, a Custome indeed ysed in greatest danger of		6		of the chiefelt Rebels had indgement of death, and		
l	as willingly obeyed, and repairing to his Standard,	warre. And thereupon determining another wa	ef			Were all of them hanged upon the Oaks of Defen	the first paid their offences with their lines: they both were the brethren of Oncene Line the King	The Protector
1	yeelded up their Cities iword unto him; declaring	to worke, fought to frop the passage from all conuo	У	The	coake of Re-	mation, which not till then, had the true note of	both were the brethren of Queene Lane the Kings mother decealed, the elder to de Tane the Kings	S the Admirall
1	themselues true Subjects to the King, though some	of victuall; which the Rebels perceiving, fer fir	7	toro	mation is de the rree of		mother deceased, the elder Lord Edward Duke of	f ods.
	of the baser fort had favoured Kets doing, and with	on their Cabbins, and with enlignes displayed, er	c	Reto	ormation	vnto London, and thence backe agains into Norfolke		
Lord Marqueffe enters Nerwick,	them immediately the Lord Marqueffe entred the	trenched themselves at the foote of the Hill, in th	-	inde	ked,	WHELE WILLIAM ACTINE VOIDORE was banged upon		
Citters agricus.	City, which the same night was assaulted by the Re-	valley called Dusin-dale, partly upon vaine Prophe	-				Sadley the younger, high Admirall of England, both worthy persons, had they known their own worths	1
	bels, whom hee manfully refifted, and flew three			Ket	and his bro-	the Arch-Rebell in chaines your the Castell of War-	for fo long frood they in lafety of life and true honor	4
	hundred of their riotous rout.	Who gave forth that Discouling the	*1	ther	cxecuted.		as the bounds of brotherhood and nature flood vn-	4
	(39) The next day following these bloud-hounds		The vaine pro-			Of their delinery with no lefte joy then the levine did	uiolated betwixt them, but that once broken, their	-1
1	vnkennelled by troupes, and entring the City by the	of Dusin-Dale with the bodies of the dead.	Rebels-	Ette	# 9.17.	when they had escaped the sword of wicked Ha-	lines lay open to dishonour and death.	1
The L. Sheiffeild	Hospitall, beganne a most cruell fight, wherein the	(43) The next day being the featier and sman	.)			man.	(C2) The vonneer brother I and ertain that	4
flaine,	Lord Sheffield by the fal of his horse into a ditch was	tieth of August, the Lord Generall prepared for	-	A.I	D. 1549.	(48) These hazards set in the South, West, and	married Queene Katherine Parre, the laft of the ma.	-1
	butcheriy flaine by a Butcher, as he fought to re-	DEUT. Daning newly received a (upply of former-	- 1		Northerns to rebellion.	East, the North likewise among them would come	in wides of hing Henry the eight who undoubted	1_1
1	couer himselfe, and the rebeis now fleshed with this	nungred Lances. But before that Marchanideri	-1		te renettion.	in for a caft as forward and able to undergoe rebel-		
The L.Mar-	their fortunate chance, followed the chase with such	institutingth by tword he tent unto them a General	I The F. Ochetat	Relig	igion euer	lion, and their zeale as hote as any others, the oc-	metucitate of name of a Lowsger Oneone - should	hlance e
queffe forced out	flaughter and cry, that they forced the Lord Mar- queffe to forfake the City, and therein tooke Sir			mad	igion euer de the caufe commotion.	casion conceined, was, the Papail Religion aboli-		
queffe forced out of Namich.	Thomas Cornwallis prisoner, whom they straitly kept	tiley had againe vitterly rejected, he ranged his horsel	il -	100	Continuotion.	fied by Law, whose tottering toppe they meant to make steady by maine strength of Armes, not-	lity. And the Durchelle of Commer/et march ad suith	the deathes o
1	in durance till their last ouerthrow. Norwich they					withfranding the word formales, not-	the greatest recirc in the Land, held her State conal	111
i	ranfackt and fet on fire, whose ashes as yet fill wppe	order, where in the fore-ranke all the Gentlemen	1			withflanding the very foundations were fo fhrewdly undermined. The place where this canker		
1	their ruines, and more had been made, had not God					beganne was Seimer in the North-riding in Tarkflura	dency, as report hath digulated, the lamentable tra-	-
I	quenched these flames by showres from Hea-					Ipreading it felfe further into the Eath-riding also &		
1	uen.	gets were doubled, and themselves exposed to death aswell by their friends, as by their enemies.	1			the first broachers of this giddy heady wine were	110W In acting prought whom the Grane at once their	÷
1 .	(40) The Lord Marquesse returned, and the	(44) But before the change and I	.1			perions no better then William Ombler a Yeoman	ownedentiactions, the lands rehelitons and the	o l
1	Rebels holding Norwich, it was more then time to	Miles a most skilfull Ganner among the bearing	The	16.LO	Ombler.	Thomas Dale a Parrish Clerke, and one Steenenson the	guetes of ede good voltno King into a fatall and	I ue autt of ail-
1	looke to the maine chance; and therefore those for-	Miles a most skilfull Gunner amongst them made shot at the Kings Standard, and strucke the Bearer	Standard Struck			Post, imployed to blanch forth these businesses be-	dearh.	5
1	ces that were gathered to inuade others, were now	thereof in the thigh, and his borfe through the			1	twixt them.	(54) So fubric is the old Serpent, and fo ready es	.1
The Lord Dud-	thought the fitteft to fecure our felues, ouer whom	Houlder, which io moned the Farlethan he can led a	1			(49) Their pretences were faire, as to restore the	uer to fow taresamong wheate, that hee diffurbed	:1
tellagaint the	was appointed the Lord Iohn Dudley, the warlike	Whole volly of Artillery to be dicharded assist	1			Church her right, and to disburden the land of all		
rall against the Rebels of	Earle of Warwicke: hee comming to Cambridge pre-	them, when Captaine Drary with his owne hand	I .			grieuances impoled, this firing ener founding that !	l at one time tirit ferting marries of different Landing	. 1
Warfolke.	pared for the enemy, whither reforted the foresaide		1			the Pope was the Man, that King Edward was an	them, by fcandalizing tongues, then icaloufies of	M.Fox in Adia
1	Lord Marquelle, the Lords Willoughby, Powes, and	their Battell, whereby most of the Captine Gentle	1		- 1	Intruder, if not a meere heretike, that the Church		
1 :	Gray, his fonnes Ambrofe and Robert, with many	Inch clouded away. When which branche Earles			- 1	HAU HIC DOWCE OF DOER the IWORDS, which now vo. !	to geath. Intomuch that the Drove Gor Gordon Line	Lord Thomas
1	of the Norfolke men, and the twenty three of Au-			Vpen	ablind	ona blind prophelie they presupposed should bee		
1	guft shewed himselfe vpon the plaine before Nor-	I gaue backe and field and with the form of P.L.	The Rebele dif.	Proph	hefie the hem Com-	drawne against the King & his Nobles, whose times		
1	wich, whence to fauethe effusion of bloud, hee fent			modo	oners rely.	(as they beleeved) (hould bee no more, but that the		
1	Norrey and a Trumpet to fummon the City, and to					land should beeruled by foure gouernours, when		
1	offer a generall pardon; which being againe refu- fed, hee caused his Ordinance to bee planted against	with the naughter of three thousand and fine han-				the Commons should meete in a Parliament affembled from the source winds, which they inter-		
1	S. Steuens gate, and his Pioners to breake open the	dred rebels.	ł		- 1	preted from the foure Coasts of England, whereof		
1	brafen gate, whereat many made entry, and divers	(45) Their battell thus broken, and the most			- 1	themselves now made the last.		Ecclef.4.12.
	were flaine.	part fled: those notwithstanding that kept about the			- 1	(50) First therefore to raise men, and to bring al	Tatte to fold tall the Anchor whereho the thinne.	i
1 1	(41) S. Stevens gate forced open by Canon shot.	Ordinance, determined to die like men, and inclo-			1	into confusion, they fired their Beacons, whence		Į.
1	the Earle of Warmicke entred the City, and with	fing themselves among the Carts and Carriages,	J			the ingrees of feducion were carried amains. famel - 1	(15) The Lord Admirals indirement was, that hee had pitriofed to defroy the young King	The Ladminds
1 1	fmall refiftance came into the Market place, where	had the advantage of a Trench and certaine flakes	1			rudest alwayes vnwilling to labour, and the fittest	hee had purposed to destroy the young King, and	inditement.
The Earle en- treth the City	threescore Rebels were incontinently executed by	flucke against the horsemen, whereby they stoode more resolutely at defence. The Noble Earle pi-	1	Theid	dle and	fewell to breake into flame, flocked together on		
No wice and	Marshall law, But the Earles carriages passing tho-	tying their case, and loath to loofe so many braue	The compassion	fixed	to broach	heapes, each one hauing a Common-wealth in his		Ex Statu.Record,
No wice, and executeth 60.	rough the City, were surprised and taken by the c-	men, fent Norrey King at Armes vnto them, with	of the L. Gene-	mıfcha	icíe, j	head, and all of them difliking the reformation of 1		
rebel- by Mar- shall law.	nemy, wherein was great store of powder and shor,		rall,		11	citgion that the King had commanded. A man-	death vpon the To ver-hill; which as many sup-	
	which with triumph they conuaied to their Campe,	and returne to obedience, otherwise they well saw,			- 1	thele, the most seditious had ever a voice which	posed that it was the Dutches of sommer sets doings;	
1 1	and tooke it a figne of further fuccesse, their want		i		11	arew content to forward the Action, and checially 1	fo the wifer fort feared, fit would bee the ruine of her husband the Duke, the experiment whereof had	
1 1	confifting most in those provisions, whereupon they	that they were free borne English men who didde			i t	o beare downerherich whereof they made shair	often beene approved and indeed whereof had	
1	manned the streets of that City, and slew very ma-		1	Rosh H		iritaliay vpon white a Gentleman, Sanagea Mar.	often beene approued, and indeed was too fatally linked as it chanced in these two brethren.	
1	ny of the Kings friends; but the showers of arrowes	were appointed, and barrels of ropes brought into					(56) Forthe Admirall being made assets	
	and thot from the kinges Subjects to rained amongst	the field (as they were informed) to ffrance them			10	hered, and dispoiling them of their apparrell left	der of law, tile glody Commons without either of 1	
	them that they were forced backe to take sheiter in	10 that if they must needed die they chose he man					der, or iaw, role vp in their Informations as bash	
1 1	Monshold their hole of refuge.	ly deathes of Souldiers, nor truffing the fugred			1.	hence passing forward from Towne to Town,	Deen laid: And the Lords returned from their Ga-	٠,
Alexander Meul.	(42) The Earle of Warwicke thus mastring the	Productor turprize, add then to be trulled vp like			10	ooke many away that were vnwilling to goe, and		
1	City, shutall the Gates, them onely excepted that	dogs.			4	(51) Their number now increased vnto three		
1 .	gaue way toward Monfhold, and those hee planted	(46) Their answere returned, and compassion	The noble ad	The Kir	nges par- ri	houland, the Country beganne to grow in great		. 1
j i	with his great Artillery. The Rebels perceiving	This working in the Lord Generals breaft even when	and one of the	dan duf	nges par- ti	eare, especially the Gentlemen, and the richer sort,	O'com gouernment: 2. the lotte of the kings Deere !	Articles astain#
1 1	what he went about, juddainely made downeto- wards the Gate, and with great courage and confu-	hee had fet his whole Army against them both of	- Generali*	the Coa	amotion.	eing their lives and substance thus thirsted for and		he L. Protector,
1 1	fed cries, fell with fuch violence vpon theiratten-	horse and soote; and the signe of battell ready to			110	Dught after: but prefently downe came the kines !		- 1
1	dants, that they gaue backe and fled, leaving their				I P	ardon with proffers of life, which fo willingly mae		1
The great-Ordi-	Ordinance to the will of the Rebels, who prefently	know if they would believe and embrace their par-			C	mbraced, that Ombler & Dale were quireforfalen		. 1
nance wonne by the Rebels.	disposed them amongst their owne, so that the Earle	don, if hee came in person to declare it to them him- selfe; whereinto they answered, that they knew him		Ombler	ed.	almost left alone, who with Wright, Peacocke Wes-	Was no lengthen a Trainer. Against whom they do 1	I
the Rebels.	Ropped likewise those passages, and imploied all	to be honourable, and would from his mouth most			t t	serell, and Buttry were worthis executed at Yorke		1
1	his endeuour to defend the City, which notwith-	thankefully receive it : thereupon has repayred an		Exallin	i#dicii, v	pon the one and twenty of September follow-	King, to all which seventeene Counsellers subscribe	1
1 1	standing he could not the Rebels making incursions	to them, and cauling against heir pardon to be read,		Ge.	10	ig.	(22) Thefa Specifician Ct. 12	1
1 1	ouer the river from their well flored Campe: and	confirmed the same with such effect and the same with such effect and the same with such effect and the same with such as the same w	The Rebels		1.	(52) As the Commons by these tumultuous re-	(57) These Statists in consultation dayly at Zon- don, and the Protector residing still with the King,	i
1 1	letting the streetes in many places on fire, whose at-	to them, and cauling agains their pardon to be read, confirmed the fame with fuch effectuall words, as they all cast away their weapons, and with one voice cried. God faw Kins Februard	yeeld and re-		100	cilions greatly dilduieted the peace of the land (a.)		}
i 1	tempts so continued and prospered to enill as some	cried, God faue King Edward.	pardon.		{ th	te chiefelt Lords did difturb the Court of the your		
11		(47) The			K	ing, where the greatest Counsellors through e-	and received, whereof two, from either part one, and be even at one instant were sent vnto the Lord Maior L	off voto the
		(4/) The	'			-8	Land Maior L	ondoners.
							1 and	
								177
				100				

THE SACCESSION OF and Citizens of London, requiring their aide in these their opposite quarrels, and surely in their assembly the talk of the Lords by the Recorder was so wel

+George Stredtolde, as had not a graue *Citizen stept vp betimes. the common Councell had granted aid against their King, whose wisdome and loyalty, in regarde my selse a Citizen, would haue it recorded to his euerlafting memory, and an example and moriue for our obedient loue and duety toward our Soueraignes, I

will infert as I find them vttered and spoken. George Stradion (58) In this case (said hee) good it is to thinke on things past, to avoide the danger of thinges to *come; for I remember aftory written by Fabian "in his Chronicles of the warres betwixt the King "and his Barons, who even then as our Lords doe now, demanded aid of the Maior and Commons " of London, against their Soueraingne King Henry "the third, and that in a cause rightfull, and good for the Common-weale, which was the execution

of certain wholesome lawes, somwhat derogating from his princely prerogatine, which hee would not permit. The aide was granted, and quarrell came vnto battell, wherein the Lords prenailed, "and tooke the King and his sonne prisoners. But they againe reftored to liberty, among other conditions this was one, that the King should not "onely grant his free pardon to the Lords, but also " vnto the Citizens of London; which was done, yea and the same confirmed by Parliament. But what of followed? was it forgotten: no furely, nor ne-" uer forgiuen during the Kings life: for the liberties of the City were taken away, ftrangers appoin-"ted to bee our heads and Gouernours, the Citiet zens giuen away both body and goods, and from one perfecution to another, were most milerably "afflicted : fuch it is to enter the wrath of a Prince, which(as Salomon faith) is death : Wherfore, for-

"almuch as this aide is required of the Kings Maiefe fly, whose voice (being our high Shepheard) wee ought to obey, rather then to hearken to the "Lords, whom neverthelesse I wish not to bee vtterly cast off; my counsell is, that they with vs, "and wee with them, become humble Petitioners vnto his Highnesse, that it would please him to "heare such complaints against the Lord Protector,
"as may be justly alleadged and proued, and I doubt not but this matter will be so pacified, that neither "fhall the King, nor yet the Lordes have cause to "seeke for further aide, neither we to offend any of (59) These words well weighed, and the Councel dissoluted, fine hundred Londoners were prepared

in a readinesse: for Sir Philip Hobby being sent from the Lords to the King, so delinered their minds, that the Lord Protector was commanded out of presence, and the next day being the twelfth of October, the Lords of the Councell reforted to Windfor, where they so wrought with the King, as his vncle was deliucred into their hands, whom the same night they imprisoned in Beauchamps Tower in the same Castel, and the next day strongly attended, brought him to London, whence the streetes were guarded onely by housholders, the Aldermentaking the charge of the busines, and so to the great griefe and wondering of

Ioan Ston

M.Fex in Alle

Mas,

the people hee was conveyed to the Tower, and The L.Prote-ctor committee to the Tower. (60) Whither shortly after the Lords themselves

repaired, and charged the Protector with these 20. Articles as followeth. I That at his entry into that waighty office, hee against the Lord Protector. was exprelly prohibited to doe any thing in Stare

without the affent of the last Kings Executors. 2 That hee had contrariwise vpon his owne authority both subucreed lawes, and stated instice, as well by letters, as commandement.

3 That he had deliuered divers perfons arrefted. and committed to prison for felonie, manslaughter, murther and treason, contrary to the lawes and statutes of the Realme.

4 That hee had made Captains and Lieutenants ouer waighty affaires under his owne Scale and Writing. 5 That hee had alone communicated with forraine Ambassadors about most weighty State af-

faires. 6 That hee had checked divers of the Kings Priny

Monarch 59.

Councell, speaking for the good of the State, year and threatned to displace them if they consented not

7 That hee had against law erected a Court of Requests in his owne house, whither were enforced diners of the Kings Subjects to answere for their Free-holds.

8 That he had for money disposed Offices in the Kinges gifte, money, leafes, and Wardes, and ginen presentations of Benefices, and Bishoprickes, yea and medled with fale of the Kinges lands, which by office hee could not, without con-

fent of the major voice of the Councell. 9 That hee had commanded multiplication by Alcumistric to the abuse of the Kings coine.

10 That against the King and Councels will, hee had fet forth a Proclamation against inclosures, which had caused daungerous insurrections in the land, wherein divers of the Kings liege Subjects have beene spoiled, and many a worthy man therein flaine. 11 That to the same end hee had given commisfion with Articles annexed concerning inclosures of Commons, high wayes, and decayed Cottages, gi-uing the Commissioners authority to heare and determine the same causes, contrary to the lawes and

statutes of the Realme. 12 That hee had fuffered Rebels and traitours to affemble, and lie in Campe and Armour, against the King, his Nobles,& Gentlemen, without any speedy suppressing of them.

13 That by his gifts in money, with promifes of Fees, rewards and feruices, he had encouraged many of the faid rebels. 14 That in fauour of them contrary to law he had

caused a Proclamation to bee made, that none of the faid Rebels, or Traitors should be sued, or vexed for any of their offences committed in the faid Rebel-15 That hee had liked well of these rebellions, and had faid that the conetousnesse of the Gentry

gaue the occasion, affirming that it was better for the Commons to die, then to perish for lacke of li-16 That hee had reported the Lords of the Parliament were loath to reform themselues for the reformation of Inclosures, and therefore the people had good cause to reforme the thinges themselves.

17 That vpon the report of the defaultes and lackes of Bulloigne nothing was there amended. 18 That the Forts of Newhauen and Blackneffe flanding in want of men and victuall, whereof bee was informed, were suffered notwithstanding still to want, to the great encouragement of the French, and

dishonour of the English. 19 That he had vntruly published, that the Lords at London minded to destroy the King, which hee instantly defired hee would never forget, and to that end instigated many young Lords, whereby sedition

and discord was made among the Nobles. 20 Laftly, that whereas the Lords affembled at London, onely to confult vpon a charitable communication to be had with the Protector for his milgonernment of the King and Realme, hee contrariwife fent letters of credence to many places and per-fons, that the faid Lords were no leffe then high Traitors to the King, and great disturbers of the

whole realme. All these accusations notwithstanding (the young King so labouring it) he was released from the Tower the fixt of February following vnto his free liberty, though not vnto his former authority, and fo

Chap.22. Edward VJ. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 59. fuch a lamentable flate; and dishonourable compo-

remained vntouched for the space of two yeeres and i two dayes. (61) Whilest these his and other troubles were commencing in England, the Lord Grey of Wilton left Lieutenant of the North, remained in Scotland, where many feates of warre were vndergone, and many Forts fortified, and some taken, such were Londen, Hadington, and Yester, at whose assault certaine opprobrious specches in most contemptuous manner were vttered by a Seotifb man against King Edward of England, whereat the Lord Grey was so offended, as vpon composition for the deliverie of the Castell,

Vipian Fulocii.

all were let goe with life, onely that person excepted, and his name knowne to bee Newton, was apfought betweene two Scottishmen before the Lord pointed to die for the same; but hee denying the words, imposed them vpon one Hamilton, a man valorous inough, and wrongfully touched, who denied the accusation, and challenged Newton the combat, which hee accepted, and in performance flew Hamilton, though more at disaduantage then for lacke either of courage or strength: The victor was rewarded with a great chaine of gold, and the gowne that the Lord Grey ware at the present, though many maligned and accused him still to bee the veterer of those base words. (62) The English keeping foot still in Scotland, burnt Dawketh and Muskelburgh, and fortified Ha-

> cing of Garrisons, as if they meant there to remaine and abide: but their young Queene being conuaied into France, and the Scots aided with the affistance of the French, fo quit themselues, that they voided their land of the English, and recoursed of them all they had lost. In which times of variable successe, the King but a child, the Nobles at variances, and the combustuous Commons obedient to neither, the French fought to recouer the holds that the English had in their Country, and first by flealth meant to surprise the fortresse of Bulloignberg, unto which enterprise seuen thousand were chosen,

dington both with munition and men, spoyling the

Country, faith Bishoppe Lefty, all about Edenburgh,

Lowthian and Mers: repairing of Forts, and pla-

The French intend to furprile

vnder the conduct of Monsieur Chatillon, (63) These secretly marching in the night with ladders and furniture meete for the enterprize, approached within a quarter of a mile vnto Bullingberg fort, amongst whom was an English Souldier discharged out of their pay, for that he had taken a French woman to wife. This Carter for so was his name got entertainement vnder Chatillon, and now vnderftanding whereabout they went, haltily made from The good fer-uice of Carter an English sould:er. his Company, and gaue the Alarum to his Countrimen within the Fort; where Sir Nicholas Arnalt Captaine of the peece, caused him to bee drawne vp betwixt two pikes to the height of the wall, vnto whom hee declared the attempt in hand, & among them flood so valiantly in defence of the fort, that

hee gaue many a wound, and received fome himfelf: by him and this meanes the Pecce was quit from A great flaugh-ter of the French. furprifall, and the flaughter of the French fo great that fifteene Wagons went laden away with dead

> Pecres, who acquitted him of treason, but found in those parts of their Maine, the French sought to tric fortune for their Isles in the Seas, namely Garwas commaunded away, whereat the shout of the nesey and Iersey, possest and subject to King Edward people shewed the great affection that was borne Crowne, their preparations were great, and their to the Duke: little mistrusting that the fentence of Marshallists many; which notwithstanding with death was pronounced against him, or that the kings fuch losse were beaten backe from their bankes, as a uncle should die as a fellon; neither did the Statute thousand men at Armes were slaine in the attempt, intend any such thing as some are of opinion, but ra-& the successe so vnfortunate, as the French for feare ther was purposely made for the suppression of reof further discouragement forbad the report, and

(64) This loffe fultained, and the Englift masters

(65) Neuerthelesse the French King ceased not his defired purposes, till hee had got by surrender Bolloigue vpon composition des livered to the Hambletowne, Blacknesse, Bulloignberg, and the town of Bulloigne it felfe, though bought at a deare rate, and deliuered with great griefe to the English; vnto

of that iourney.

made an inhibition, not to mention the expedition

ons of his vnruly Commons; after which calamities a great and mortall difease followed, namely the sweating sicknesse, that raged extreamely through the land, wherein died the two fonnes of Charles A.D. 1550 Brandon, both of them Dukes of Suffolke, besides an infinite number of men in their beit strengths, which The sweating followed onely Englishmen in forraine Countrey, no other people infected therewith, wherby they were both feared and fhunned in all places where they

fition was the good King Edward brought, by the

bandings of his great Counsellors, and insurrecti-

(66) And to fill up the dolours of these dolefull times, the good Duke of Sommerfet was againe apprehended, euen when the least suspition was of any vndirect workings: for vpon his first releasement, to element. A fained record linke a firme lone betwixt him and the potent Earle of Warwicke, his most malignant; a marriage was contracted betwixt the Lord Life his eldest sonne & heire, and the Lady the Earles eldest daughter, which was folemnized with great ioy at Sheene, in presence of the young King; this amity was out-

wardly carried with all faire showes for a time, thogh inward hatred lay secretly hid, as by the sequell incontinentlie appeared: for after a folernine creation of many Estates, wherein the Earle of Warwicke had his style raised to bee Duke of Northamberland, vnto whole rayes at that time most of the Courtiers caft their eyes: the sparkes of emulation began prefently to breake forth; where the simplicity of the one gaue advantage to the other, to compasse that

which long had beene fought: (67) The Duke of Sommerfet not well aduised, and yeelding too much vnto Sycophant flatteries, was put in feare of some sodaine attempt intended against him, and therefore counselled to weare vnder his garmenta coate of defence; which hee accordingly did, and being so armed came vnto the Councell Table, supposing no man had known of any fuch thing; but his bosome being opened and the Armour perceived, hee was forthwith apprehended, as intending the death of some Counsellor, and by Northumberland fo vehemently taxed (who Rich. Groffon, in Counsell was ener the principall man) that hee The Duke of was forthwith attached, and fent to the Tower, vp-on the fixteenth of October with the Lord Grey of to the Tower.

Pembrèke: where after many mild answeres to these

matters objected, he put himselfe to be tried by his

bellions, and vnlawfull affemblies, wherein fuch as

should seeke or procure the death of any Counsellor

should be guilty as in case of fellonie. But such was

the pleasure of the all ordering power, that he which

knew no theft should die for that sinne; so that nei-

ther himselse, nor his wisest Counsellors demaun-

ued his life if it had been erequired. Fiffff2

Pollaxes a great number.

Wilton, Sir Michael Stanhop, Sir Thomas Arundel, Sir

Ralph Vane, and Sir Miles Partridge, and the next day the Dutchesse his wife was likewise committed; all A.D. 1551

of them for suspition of treason and fellonic; and he flanding fo indited upon the *fecond of December fifth. following, was arraigned at Westminster, attended

with the Axe of the Tower, Billes, Halberds, and (68) His inditement was for treason and fellony,

The Duke of Sommerfels in-ditement. and the same vrged vnto extremity, with many amplifications, and bitter invectives, especially that hee had sought and pretended the deathes of the Duke of Northumberland, the Lord Marquesse, and

"Of Winchefter

the inditement of fellonie; when prefently the Axe demand of fellon

ded the benefite of his Clergy which would have fa-

Chap.22. Edward VI. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 9. most Princes, and vices so few, that none can be taxbee so carelesse of you as mee bee prounked. And therfored with leffe, very learned (according to his yeeres) meaning your weale, and therewith toyning a care not to he was in the Latine and Greek tongues, the French, be found guilt, in our own conscience to God, having cause Spanish, and Italian, yea (and faith Hieronymus Cardanus) he was adorned with the skill of Logicke, natuto require for givene fe that wee bane jo ong for respect of loue towards you omitted our bounde ducty we do fendat rall Philosophie, and Musicke, and for Astronomy (laith this present our right trusty & right weiheloued Counselhe) my selfe had experience, whom he learnedly opposed lor the L.Rich, our Chancellor of England, our trujiy and of the cause and course of Comets: for Humanity, he is right well beloned Counsellor Sir Anthony Wingfield

(81) The fruites of which Religion this godly

King shewed by his workes of compassion towardes

the poore,& that especially vpon the foundation of

Christs Hospitall, the late suppressed place of the

GreyFriers in London, and that vpon occation as fol-

loweth, it chanced the reuerend Bilhop Doctor Rid-

unto the poore, and to that end amplified the words

of the Text against the mercilesse rich, and the neg-

ligence of such as were in great place. The Sermon

ended, and the King set to dinner, hee sent to the

Bifloop, commanding him not to depart the Court,

before he knew his further pleasure, and thereupon

causing two Chaires to be set in the Gallery, all o-

thers avoided, hee compelled the Bishoppe to fit

downe by his lide, and in no wife would admitte

(32) Where entring conference, he first gaue him

heartie thankes for his Sermon, repeating vnto him

the chiefe points thereof, and coming to his exhorta-

Lord you speake to them in authority, whereof under God

am the chiefe, and must first make answere to him if I

be negligent, and therefore I thinkeyou principally meant

me: Gods commandement I know most expresy mioineth

us to have compassion of his poore members, for whom we

must make account; and truly my Lord I am most willing

may make account, and u my my tor a can may wrung to travell that way, not doubting but that your long appro-ued learning and wildome, whose zeeds ight as wishesh them helpe, but that also you had conference with others what is helf berein to be done, which I am also desirous to

(83) The mouer vnto these pious considerations

little looking for fuch questions of the Prince, fate a

while filent, ouerioyed at his words, and laftly vn-

prepared of any present instructions, told the King

that the Citizens of London were best able to direct

the plot, whose great Charity, and well ordered go-

ucrnement, befides their dayly charges, being oucr-

burdened with poore, had sufficient experience, and

if it would please his Maiestie to direct his letters

vnto them himfelfe, he would be very ready to fur-

ther this godly refolution to far as his meanes might

conferre about this bufinesse, which hee wished

(84) The Bilhoppe as ready as the King was de-

firous, posted apace to the Lord Major of London,

Aldermen, and twenty foure Commoners agreede

vpon three degrees of the poore, and them divided

(85) The Booke thus drawne, and presented to

the King, he thereupon defired to be accounted the

chiefe Founder of their reliefe, and forthwith gaue

might be accomplished with all expedition,

againe into nine.

know, and therefore I pray fay freely your mind.

tion for the poore, he then told him that he thought himselfe first touched in the speech; for saide he, my

him to bee vncouered.

ley to preach before his Maiesty at Westminster, wher- D.Ridieles fer-

in hee Christianlike exhorted the rich to be merciful mon before king Edward.

the very Image of Morality, and in princely grave
Maiefty best beseeming a King: briefly, hee may well
seeme to be a miracle in Nature: nor doe I speake thus Knight, Comptroler of our Houlbold, and Sir Will Peter Knight, one of our two principall Secretaries in message to you touching the order of your house, willing you to give the Rhetorically to amplific things, or to make them more then truth is, for the truth is more then I do otter: and in this firme credite in those things they shal say to you from os, do therein our name. Teouen whaler our Signet at the Caffle hee was most admirable, that hee could tell and reof Windfor the cite all the Ports, Hauens, and Creekes, not within yeare of our Raigne, 1556. his owne Realme onely, but also in Scotland, and

> any wife extend: whereupon the King prefently commanded his letters to be writ, and would not fuffer the Bishoppe to depart before himselfe had K.Edwards great thereto set his hand and signet, desiring him to deli-ner the same to the Lord Maior, and with him to

irons, polted apace to the Lord Maior of London, where delinering the letter, offered his affiltance to knee delinered forward the worke, and they together with fome to the L. Maior,

vato the City S. Bartholmewes Hospitall by Smith- The Kings great field, and the Grey-Friers Church neere adioyning, historisky for the with poore in London. ly house of Bridewell, anciently the Mansion of ma-

ny English Kings, wherein also their Courts of Iu-

flice had beene kept, & sumptuously new built by King Henry the eight for the receit of the Emperour,

he gaue to the L. Maior and Citizens to be a house of correction for lewde and diffolute liners, and to fet

on worke the idle and loitering vagabonds, whose

maintenance with the new reedified Hospitall of S.

Thomas in Southwarke, hee gaue feuen hundred

Markes by yeere out of the rents of the Hospitall of Saint lohn Baptist or Sausy, with all the beds, bed-

ding, and other furniture thereto belonging, where-

by the poore thus diffinguished, were by his godly

(86) The Kinges charitable giftes confirmed by Charter, and a Petition exhibited for liberty to

Fatherles Children Christs be/pitat
Aged, Bind, Lame S. Thom. HofDifeafed perions,

Wounded Souldiers, 7 S. Thom. Hot

Visited & fick perios, Christs bespital

Riototts fpenders, Vagabond loiterers , Idle Strumpers.

furtherance thus prouided for.

THE Pow by cafeelty,

The Kings great liberality for the

poore in Landon.

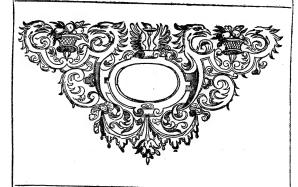
Regi.7.

Monarch 59.

take in Mortmaine of lands to a yeerely value with out further licence, a place being left in the Parent to containe the fumme, King Edward prefently called for penne and inke, and with his owne hand filled uppe the space with these words, foure thousand Markes by yeere: which done, hee burst forth and faid; Lord God I yeelde thee most heartie thankes, that thou hast given me life thus long to finish this worke to the glory of thy name.

(87) Now as this godly King was carefull in re-deeming the time, so likewise to take as it were an account of himselfe, hee kept a journall booke or Record written with his owne hand, how all things proceeded with him, and with the State, even from the first day of his raigne vnto his death: whose many vertues as they were inferior to none of his worthy Progenitors, and zeale little short to the best Kings of Iudah; so was hee soone mist of all his loyall Subjects, when the bosome of Gods Saints were opened to the perfecutors iwords.

(89) He died at Greenwich wpon Thursday the fixt day of July, the yeare of Christ Iesus, one thousand fiue hundred fifty three, and the seuenteenth of his age, when hee had raighed fixe yeeres five months, and nine daies, and was buried upon the ninth of August following, in the Chappell of S. Peters Church at wessimpser, neere unto his Grandsather King Henrie the feuenth.

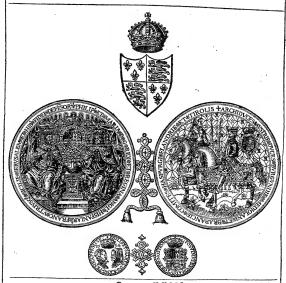


MARY

(bap. 23 | Queene Marie. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 60.)

MARIE QVEENE OF ENGLAND, Monarch 56 FRANCE AND IRELAND, DEFEN-

DER OF THE FAITH, &c. THE SIXTIETH MONARCH OF THE ENGLISH, HER RAIGNE, MARIAGE, ACTS, AND DEATH.



CHAPTER X X I I I.



ING EDWARDS life ended by his lingring disease, and the Statesme intending to establish his will; for the space of two daies his death was kept ccret, and much consultation among the Nobility had of the businesse; all of

them affecting the ciection of Iane, left Mary should vadoe what Edward had done ; to support which purpose, many proiects were cast, and many opinions given how to proceed, yet alliointlie light in this point, that Lon-don was the hand which must reach I ane the Crowne: whose Citizensassistance if they might bee got, the greatest difficulty (as they held it) was halfe vnder-

gone. And therefore to mould them for I ane, and to

marre them for Mary, the Councell sent for the L. Maior of London, sixe Aldermen, and twelve Commoners Marchants.

(2) These comming to the Court, were secretile certified of King Edward his death, where his Will declared, and Letters Patents shewed for the disinheriting of his two lifters, and the railing of Suffolkes daughter vnto the Crowne; whose religion was so zealous, and vertues fo many (as in truth no Princesse was possessed with more) were so well fet forth by these grave Counsellors, that the Lord Major and and Citizens tooke their oathes for Lady lane, vnt from to Lady

whose obedience they promised to secure the City, less. (3) Lady Marie at Honefdon hearing thefe news. presentlie removed to her Mannor of Keningall is Norfolke: from whence thee wrote her letters vntc Norfolke: from whence thee wrote her letters vntc the Lords of the Councell, wherein shee maruelleti centre the Lords that her brothers death should so long be kept from

Ececee 2

London the furefi ftry in time of

the disposing of the Crowne.

TITOTIAI CII OO. | DOORS her: that shee being the Princesse next in blood, orwords spoken to that purpose, one Gilbert Pota serdained by act of Parliament, and King Henries Teuant Vintner, vpon the Pillory loft both his eares. stament to succeede, her right enrowled in the Re-Vnto the aide of Lady Marie came the Earles of Sulcords, by the authority of her Father and brother, fex, Bath and Oxford the Lord Wentworth, Sir Thotheir owne knowledge and prescription to her most mas Cornwallis, Sir Henrie Ierningham, Sir William walrightfull Titles, yet now in confultation to vndoe grave, with divers others of Norfolke and Suffolke; mea come to yea and the Citizens of Norwich themselves, having these provisions both against God and natural alleageance; shee could not but maruell, and rather certaine knowledge of King Edwards death, foorthwould construe for some politicke consideration, with proclaimed Marie for Queene, and prefently and take them in the best part, then to possesse the fent her aide both of men and munition. The Lords least thought of any disloialty in them; and therethen hearing of great preparations, meant by times fore willed them vpon the receite of her letters to to ouermatch her in power, and thereupon agreed Stary Proclaiproclaime her Queene, and gouernour of the that Henrie Duke of Suffelke their new Queenes Fa-ther should with an Army repaire into Norfelke. Realme, in the Citie of London, and in other publike ther should with an Army repaire into Norfolke, places, as in such cause apperraineth, with all due obwhich thing was fo greenous vnto Lody lane his fernances, as they tendred her displeasure and their daughter, that with flouds of teares shee obtained owne safeties: this letter was signed at the Mannor of Keningall under her Signet the ninth of July (7) None then was held fitter to undergoe this | The Duke of great businesse, then was the Duke of Northumber-Vnto which letters the Lords foorthwith land, young Gilfords Father, (who befides his fonnes Lieu madeanswere; first signifying that by good warrant of ancient Lawes of the Land, besides the will of dignity vnto whom this new Queene was wife) his Queenelane. valiant parts and fufficiency to marshall an Army in their last King, confirmed under his hand and broad Field had been often experienced in Scotland, & but Seale, in the presence of the most part of the Nolately among these people with whom hee was now bles, Counsellors, Judges and other graue persona-ges, assenting and subscribing to the same, that Lato deale. The Duke thus appointed, began as it should seeme, to mistrust the worst, and thereupon dy Iane daughter to Henry Duke of Suffelke should freely vttered his minde to the Lords; willing them bee inuested and succeed him in the Emperiali to be carefull at home, as hee would bee venturous Crowne: vnto whom therefore, and vnto none oabroad, for their cause was common, and all for ther, they must give their loyall subjection, where the Queene. Hee with his (hee faid) went now to also they put her in minde of the volawfull marriage venture their bodies to the bloody strokes of warre. and dinorse of her mother, her owne illegitimation, their Families and Children left to the dispose of ovncapable of Crowne, or rule of Dominions, wilthers, whom as he told them if they meant not faire The feare of the ling her further to delift from any such claime, and plaie, he could not avoide as wel as any : thus much Duke of Norios. to submit her selfe vnto Queene Lane now her Soneand more spoken to the like purpose, one of the Lords replied, and said: Your Grace (as I indge) raigne, so would they hold amity with her, els should shee proone greenous vnto them and her doth cast this doubt ouer farre, for which of vs selfe, which letters were sent from the Tower of all, can wash our hands cleane of this businesse, London the ninth of July 1553, and subscribed by therefore it behoueth vs to bee resolute, as much as the hands of fuch as follow. it doth you, and among them Arundel wished that he might goe with him. Thomas Canterbury Archbishop. Thomas Elie, Chauncellour. William Winchester, Marquesse. Iohn Bedford, Earle. (8) All things in a readinesse, and his commission confirmed under the broad Seale of England; upon the 14 of Iuly the Duke with fixe hundred men, accompanied with the Lord Grey, and others, fet Henrie Suffolke Duke. foorth of London, and tooke his way through Shor- Holings. Francis Shrewesbury, Earle. dieh where beholding the countenances of the peo-ple, he spake to the Lord Grey and said. The people, Iohn Northumberland, Duke. Many preffe, but William Pembrooke, Earle. my Lord, preafe fill to fee vs, but not one of them bids succife, as God freede: the fame day likewise Sir Iohn Gates wentatier the Dule bosh och Thomas Darcie Lord Chamberlaine. Cobham William Peter. went after the Duke, both of them making for New Rich. William Cecill market, whither further supplies were promised to Huntington. Iohn Clerke Darcie. The Lord Wind Iohn Mason. (9) In the meane time the Lord Windfore, Sir for Proclaimed Edmund Peckham, Sir Robert Drury, and Sir Edward Queene May. Cheyney. Edward North. Iohn Gates. Robert Bowes. Hastings raised the Commons of Buckinghamsbire, proclaiming Queene Marie ever as they went, the (5) These Letters received, and the Lords like did Sir Iohn Williams of Tame, and Sir Leonard mindes therein made knowne, thee forthwith remo-Chamberlaine in Oxfordshire, and so did Sir Thomas ued to Fremingham Castle, standing more safe from Trejbam in the County of Norhampton: these with inualion or easie accesse, vnto whom the Suffolke many more made forward toward Norfolke, vnto men were the first that resorted, offering their ser-uicevnto her rightfull cause, with condition they whom many more joined in the way: and as God and good hap brought it to passe, fixe tall Ships well might ftill imbrace the Gospell in the same manner as King Edward had established it, to which she conmanned that were appointed before Yarmouth to haue taken Lady Marie if thee had fled; were by discended, though afterwards wearing the Diademe, foule weather drinen into the Hauen, where mafter and petitioned vnto for promile, shee both puni-Iermingham was railing for her, and taking a Boate Six Shipstaken to halle them, the Sea-fouldiers demanded what he would have his affirm was their Capanina what he would have his affirm was their Capanina when he fied the Writer and answered their expectations, that they should one day well know, they being but memwould haue, his answer was their Captaines, wherebers (hould not direct her their Head. unto the Souldiers confented, threatning to throw (6) The Lords at London to fet their enterprise them into the Sea, if they refused to serue Queene vpon foot, by proclamation made knowne in most Marie: the Shippes thus gotten and their number The Lords in the parts of the City, the death of King Edward, and augmented, their terror grew fearefull to the Lords that by Will, hee had bequeathed his Crowne and in the Tower: whose Tenants began then likewise Dominions, to the vertuous great Princesse, Lady to draw backe, and deny them their aide: fo that Tane, daughter to Henrie Duke of Suffolke (as wee certaine of them would faine haue beene gone, if by Ishu Sum. haue faid) and so was shee proclaimed by the name any meanes they could have escaped the Tower, of Queene Iane, though many of the Commons which the Lord Treasurer assaicd, but was brought wished it had beene Queene Mary; and for some acke againe about midnight. (10) The

The Lords an-fwer to Lady Maries Letter,

Mary remoned

toFremingham Caftle.

M. Fox Act.

The Suffolke

came to side

Iane Proclain

A.D. 1553.

were released Thomas Duke of Norfolke, who had | Priloners releafeare as any, tooke ftill his flations according to his laine there from the last of King Henry the eight, | Priloners relet Commission, sending still to the Lords for their Edward Lord Courtney whom thee forthwith advanpromifed supplies, betwirt whom were such posting of letters, such speeding to and fro, such outward ced Earle of Deuonshire, Cuibers I unstall Bishop of Durham, and Stephen Gardiner late Bilhop of Winchefaire promises, such inward printe practises, such talfler, by her then made Lord Chancellor of England, king of the Souldiers, and fuch heart-burning of the From the Marshal-sca was freed Edmund Bonner Bipeople, as it was a world to fee: and the rumonr of shop of Lordon, and now againe restored by the de-Souldiers from all quarters daily reforting vnto poling of Doctor Risker, who for his Sermon lately made, was committed to the Tower; so likewise Queene Marie, made the turmoile much the more. To leave therefore nothing vnaffaied that Doctor Seorie gaue place vnto Daye, in the Bishopmight support their newe made Queene Jane, rike of Chichester, Miles Couerdale voto Weste, in the Bishops remoted the Councell commanded Doctor Ridley Bilhop of Bishopricke of Excesser, and John Hooper vnto Heath, their Scenplaced London, to maintaine her cause in his Sermon made The Bithon of in the Bishopricke of Worcester; who forthwith was at Pauls Croffe, which hee did vpon Sunday the fix-Landon deten-deth Lanes Tirle committed to the Fleet, and Archbishop Cranmer, teenth of July, but that neither working, nor the into the Tower; so roughly she began with the rein a Sermon. Queene Stary Proclaimed in peoples affection drawne from the rightfull Succesformed Clergy, (how milde focuer her other profor, the Lords fell from the Duke, who then was in ceedings were) in whose difgrace, Doctor Bourne

A Dagger
Chaplaine to Bonner, made a Sermon at Pauls Croffe
Renner Burie; and in London proclaimed Lady Mary which so offended his Hearers, that a Dagger was August. 13. (11) This fudden alteration brought many fudthrowne at him, to his great danger, and fuch threats den feares into the Dukes breaft, whose onlie way, muttered by the people, as had not Master Bradford as he well faw, was to follow the treame, and now ftepped vp in his roome, and periwaded the people returning to Cambridge his Souldiers began to turne thepped up in nis roome, and periwaved the people when his Pauls of figure vito quietnesse, surely it had cost the Preacher his Pauls of figure definite the most of the Samuel. The Duke of Northumberlands Sottldiers forfake in affection, most of them for laking his company, a few onely excepted, whose perils were deepely enbee gaurded by the Queenes Guard, whilft the Preagaged with his, where to shew his forwardnesse for cher spake there to the people.
(16) This moued Queene Marie to put forth the advancement of Marie, wanting both Trumpet and Herauld at hand, himselfe accompanied with Proclamation against those Preachers, and printed the Maior, and the Marquesse of Northampton, in the bookes; which any wife pointed towards the dif-grace of the Papall See, the teinture whereof had The Duke bir Marketplace proclaimed her Queene: which done felf Proclaimer Queune Mary, in token of ioy, hee threw vp his owne Cap. And fuck in her own breath euer fince her infancie; and fo thus the right reverted to whom it belonged, wee much was shee denoted to that of Rome, as being will now addresse our stile to her dreadfull Raigne, often mooued by King Edward, her brother, to imwherein the Kingdomes ftory may seeme to be writ brace the Gospel according to Lawes in his time erather with blood then with inke, and the nursing stablished, with promise of her advancement, by Isai. 49.33. mother, (as Queenes by the Prophet are termed matching her in Marriage with Don Lewis the broand called) to forget the natural affection due to her Reported in a ther of Partingall, her answer was, shee had rather Letter of confe-Subjects which in some fort may bee compared to to forgoe all earthly preferments, and to loofe all her the children of her wombe. rence with her had by the Lord Chancelfor and Lands, and other Lieings, then to change her recei-(12) Yet were her beginnings both milde and The milde he ued opinion of her fure ferled Religion. gentle, pardoning all offenders in case of Lady I ane; (17) Her entrance thus standing, and State noexcepting the Duke of Northumberland, the onely thing safe (as sheethought) whilest the Duke of Northumberland (a Protestant) and other his Comdoer, and Sir Iohn Gates, Captaine of the Guard, who was in Armes against her, with some few opliers (for the most per in durance) were aliue, their thers that worthily suffered for that offence. The arraignement were hastened, and deaths not long af-Duke (as is faid) laying downe weapon, and himfelfe proclaiming Queene Mary, was neuertheleffe ar-refted with Francis Earle of Huntington in the Kings ter lingred, which they suffered upon the Scaffold on Tower-hill, where the Duke hauing promife of life, if he would recant his profession, Dastard-like with Peter, forsooke his master, and exhorted the College at Cambrige by a Seargeant at Armes, but letters being then fent from the Counsell, that every people to the Romish profession : which his man should be dismissed without further trouble, people to the Komun protession: which his death Sermonafterwards by authority, came foorth beheaded. the Duke among them was alforeleased. in Print. With him fuffered Sir Iohn Gates, and Sir (13) The next morning Henrie Fitz-Alan Earle Thomas Palmer much more constant as appeared by of Arundel, came into Cambridge from the Queene, their speech. M Fox Acts and who entring his Chamber, the Duke at his feet (18) The way (faith Mafter Foxe) thus made by A.D. 1554 fell vpon his knees, desiring him for Gods loue to blood, Queene Marie passed through London vnto Queene May considier his case, that had done nothing without Westminster to receive the Crowne, which was fowarrant of him, and the Councell; my Lord, faid lemnly set on her Head by Gardiner Bishop of Win-chester, for that both the Archbishops were priso.

Rob Holgate Took
Head to Grander

Land Rob Holgate Took
Head to Grander

Land Rob Holgate Took
Head to Grander

Land Rob Holgate Took
Head to Grander

Land Rob Holgate Took
Head to Grander

Land Rob Holgate Took
Head to Grander

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holgate Took

Land Rob Holg The Duke of Arundell, I am sent hither from the Queene to arrest you, and I, said the Duke, obey your arrest, ners in the Tower: when a pardon was also publiyet I befeech your Lordship to vse mercy towards fhed for many offences, which notwithstanding him whose Acts have beene no more then was were so followed by them in Commission, as some enioyned by commission, that sooner should you were fined, some lost their Fees, some cast into Prihaue fought for, faid the Earle, and thereupon comfon, and fome depriued of all their estates. mitted him to guard, and left him to the mercy of (19) The next that felt the calamities of those the Queene. imes, were the Lady Inneand the Lord Gilford Dud-ley her Husband, both innocent persons in that (14) The Duke then with his three sonnes lohn. R.Grafton. The Duke and Ambrose and Henrie, the Earle of Huntington, Sir which their Fathers had done: Shee doubtleffe was Andrew Dudley, the two Gates, John and Henrie, Sir a Lady of admirable gifts both in learning, religion, fig. Thomas Palmer, and Doctor Sandes were conucied towards London, and brought to the Tower, where and humane knowledge, as by her conference with Fecknam, letters to an Apostata, exhortation to her the Lord Gilford Dudley, and the Lady I ane his wife, Sifter, and praiers by her made in most feeling manfrom the high Title of Soueraignety were made subner, doe euidently appeare, and that shee was coniect to deiected Prisoners miseries. strained to consent to the things done is manifest (15) Queene Marie from Fremingham repaired by a letter sent to her father a little before her death: towards London, being all the way faluted without wherein, after a holy and dutifull exhortation vnto any mislikes, saving that many men feared the altepatience, fhee vieth this Speech. My deare Father Lady Jane in ter ring of Religion : at her entrance into the Tower (if I may without offence reioice in mine owne miffe-haps) Letter fent e

Chap.22. Queene Marie ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 60. (10) The Duke of Northumberland in as great

Fax AR. & Mon.

London. Iulic 19+

Holinfred.

1		PER INTO INTO INTO INTO INTO INTO INTO INTO	D008.0				Monarch 6	o. 819
i	me seemes in this I may account my selfe blessed, that wa-				West commen	Proclamation against the Queenes marriage, allea	- I broade our it is	20 013
1	thing my hands with the imprense of my first		*)		to Kechefler.		breafts, euen with his owne hands: in which ente	r-1
	it is thought of the before the Lord, mercie wereig tathe	"little of the Law, and much leffe of Titles to the Crowne. But touching the procurement and de	ic		į		prize two of his men were flaine, and wyat after for	nel
i		fire thereof by mee, or on my behalfe, I doe wat						1-
1			n i		İ	where they forthwith brake down	end, where hee with his men were lodged the	at
	offsiled, in taking upon me, I seemed to consent, and there- in offended the Queene and her Lawes: yet doe I assa-	"the face of you all this day : And therewith for	1				(24) The many 1	
1	in offended the Queene and her Lames ; yet doe I a Cue.	wrung her hands wherein she had a Booke. I pray yo			i	(29) In the meane-while Sir Henry Isleie, Anth	(34) The next day hee came vnto Dariford whither reforted Sir Edward Hassings Master of the Horse, and Sir Thomas Comments.	d, Two privie
		"all good Christian people (said shee) to bear	"		1		ft Horse, and cir Thomas Hallings Malter of th	ic Countilles
}	is it is that being in ordial citate at I make meine inform	" mee witneffe that I die a true Christian woman	c		- 1		them being prints Community Knights, both o	of curvito myat.
l		"and that I looke to be faued by none other meane	2	N. Carlotte	1	nough) to take part with Was, for at Milton, Chr.	Their comming Garde Counteriors to the Queene	ė. }
	· (20) I of multithe Law for to great an offence	"but onely by the mercy of God, in the blood o	S				taine Gentleman C. Sir I nomas ly yat with cer	r- j
Lady Issteand Lord Guilford		"his onely fonne Icfus Chrift, and I confesse tha	[]				f fomewhat marching because them, 1994	it
condemned.	and now milerable Lady, was brought into Guild.	"when I did know the word of God, I neglected the	1		1		in his hand at who Come the reft with a partizar	n Sir Edward He
Fox Act. and		" 13III C.3III (Olice my felte and the world and these	/ 1		i		alighted and foak curren him. C. ii	1 Junes menage to
Monuments,	Archbilhop Cranmer, and the Lord Ambrole Dudley	"fore this plague and punishment is justly and wor	-1 1		1		(35) be Queenec Mai: 0	Holler Ib.
	were arraigned and condemned. But Crammer (20)					of Kent, with the Lord Aburgauenny and others, vp	frand the true canto when to vider	-
	Fox lattil) was acquired 1 region, and frood onely in	"Inanke God of his goodnesse that hee bath gives	. 1		Ì		red in Armes her liege many with the you have gathe	-
	the cale of Doctrine, which then was accounted Heat	"me a time and refpite to repent. And now good	1		1.	exhorted the hearers from fach feditions enterpri-	the part of a Trainer I The Same let, willen !	5
	rene, and to againe were returned to the Tower for	"me a time and respite to repent. And now good "people while I am aliue, I pray you assist me with			Zanu.27.		ons you call your felfe a true Subject, both which	c l
	whom great lamentations were made, especially for	your prairies.	1 1		V 13-11-11	proclaimed the faid Lord, the Sheriffe and their ad-	are cannot fland together. I am no Traitour (quot	1
		(25) Then kneeled than down and find in T.			Kent dinided i	he rents, Traitors to Godand the Crowne. Thus	Wyat) and the cause why I have affembled the people, is to defend the Realmond.	Sir Thomas nyas
	lette to pittled , as that thee had the liberty	min the litty one Plaime: and againe flanding up	1 1			was Kent divided, and preparations made to maine	ple, is to defend the Realme from danger of being	aniwere.
Ioha Store.	of the lower to walke in the Ongetter Con	gade her booke to Maller Bridges, then I tentenant			Į	taine the faction, according as the Gentlemen flood diversly affected.	Ouerrunne by Cenameron 1:13 danger of Dellig	5
	QCD, and on the Hill: and intelly had mon Law rall	of the Lower: then vntving her Gowne the evecu-			i	(20) The Lord of diameters 11 to an in-	if the marriagetake place. Why faid the Counfellors	?
		HORE Offered to helpe whom thee defined to for	1 1		1		there is no franger yet come, either for power or	21
	Had beene (as was thought) hardoned of life	beare, and to turning to her two Gentlewomen mae	1 1		1		number whom you need to supped, therefore if that	1
The Duke of		uniobed of that and her other Attires This done	1		1	meant their March voto Rochester, to ioine with Wy-	thing onely be the quarrell, will you that diflike the	3 .
Suffoller ferrerh himfe fe against	Queene Mary had a purpose to marry with the	the Headiman kneeled downe and askt her forging.]		The Duke of		marriage, come to communication touching the	.1
Queene Maries			1 1		Warfolks genes rall for the		cause, and the Queene is content you shall be heard.	1
marriage,		and I doe; and I pray thee diffratch mee quickely	1		Queene.		To that I yeeld faid Sir Thomas Wyat; but for my	.1
	Well INODIES 25 Offices dilliked the March fearing		1				further furety, I will rather bee trufted then truft,	
	not only the change of Religion, wherunto many of them flood very wel affected, but even of the Lands	1 lyc downe : hee aniwered, no Madam. Then the	1		1		and thereupon demanded (as fome haue written	1
	ferring do water from the Lands		1				faith Hollinsted) the Custody of the Tower and her	.1
	feruitude vnto strangers, as was likely to happen,	Diockelaid, where is it, where is it ? laftly laving her	1		1		Grace within it, as alfo the displacing of some Counfel- lors about her, and to place other in their Bounder-	1
	both in the Husband and Iffue. To preuent which	INCCKEVDORTHE Jame Stretched foorth han Ladin and	1 1		1		lors about her, and to place other in their Roomes: To	1 1
	this Henry Duke of Suffolke but lately pardoned of life, fecretly departed vnto Leicesfer and Warwicke-		1 1		}		"which the Master of the Horse replied : Wyat, be-) (
нейрую.	fbires, making Proclamations for the abandoning of	1 It's WHICH Was ICarlely vifered before thee second	1		-		"forethou shalt have thy traiterous demand gran-	1 1
	Strangers, and infligated the People to withfland		}		1		"ted, thou shall die and twenty thousand with thee, and so these Agents departed thousand with thee,	1 1
	the Queenes marriage agreed vpon with Philip.	inte of this charte, innocent, and most vertuous I a.			The feditions	(31) The Queenes friends thus defeated more in	and forthese Agents departed to the Court, and	February z,
i	(22) These stirres thus abroach, the Earle of				put to flight.		Wyat forthwith came vnto Deepeford by Greene-	1 1
	Huntington was lent into those pages	luaged accordingly, yet was her death much lamen-			1	Henry, of the two Knewete before show and a con-	wich.	: 1
- 1					1		(36) At whose approach so neere London, such	. 1
		gaue the fentence of the fame, euen Iudge Morgan,			1 :		feares were possessed, that besides those in the Court	. 1
					1		(who inftigated the Queene to remove into the Tower) the Lord Major Ald	4
		uings continually cryed, take away the Ladie Iane	1			of 11th files into Hampintre . and others into a	Tower) the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and most of the Citizens were in Armour, and the Sergeants and Lawyers at Wessimilier Hall pleaded their canges	Great feares #.
Monomeore	acropood, ICID alling in Albeley Parke who acroin G also	from me, and in that nortor thorrivended his life				ther parts, a few elcaping to lovne with their Con-	Language and Armour, and the Sergeants and	mong the peo-
1		I will not auouch that shee was with childe at the day	Mafter Fox in Acts and Mon-				Lawyers at Westminster Hall pleaded their causes in Harnesse at which time in Harnesse at which time in Harnesse at which time in Harnesse at which time in Harnesse at which time in the Harnesse at the Harn	pic.
		of her death, though it was fo reported, but rather	pag. 2132.			(32) The beginning thus vnfortunate, made ma-	in Harnesse, at which time it was no need to bid the	1
			1				Spanish Ambassadors be gone, who no more standing to woo for their master, made accounts	- 1
ended.		great a person, though the time (as we well know) proued very bloody.	1		()		to woo for their mafter, made away by water as falt	1
ſ			Henry Duke of				as they could: and yet fome comfort was conceined	i
		(26) Eleuen daies after her death, her Father Henry Duke of Suffilke, was executed upon the Tower thill, euen the twenty three of February where hee most Christianly made profession of his Faith, and with breeze measurements.	Suffolie and L		1 1	Captaine Of the guard . Ser Famara Reas cin	by the certaine newes of the discomfiture of the Ca-	1
i	thence was brought Priloner to London	er hill energherment at a care of Tow-	Thomas Grey be-				rews and Gibs, that were making head in the West	1
	123) I DIS (I IAV) (remed to ballon she deast - C	most Christianis made and Constitution of the	neaded.				Londanypon Contlined: which was proclaimed in	- 1
1	thoic innocents, whom their Farhers had doubles!	with great repentance of his fact received the stroke					London vpon Candlemas Eue: vpon the day of that feast Queene Mary to make the Circle Control of the care of the ca	The feditions in
		of death ; and the three and amount of A . 116 !					came voto the Guill to Il	Conwall dilcome
he Lord Guil.	Knowing their Oucene could have no onier whileft	of death; and the three and twenty of Aprill following, his brother the Lord Thomas Grey suffered	1		, ,	u dy utilit: Wilcreat fore attented and thening change	Courriers whichen ill and accompanied with many	sted.
		death in the same place.	al.		1 1	it law Captaille Bref. and the hand of white Coasse	Major the Alderson and I were allembled the Lord	- 1
	beit pointy to take them away, whereinon the	(27) That the intended marriage with n/: ti- (į				Liveries : the Oneen being plant of Childrens in their	1
		Spaine, was the can'e of their last in Green inc.	ļ		1 1:	Englishmen: which suddaine conspiracy caused the	ding her pleasure with were and an men atten-	
			1				well vttered, thee spake in effect as heere in-	1
		uer had beene deliuered by Stephen Gardiner, Lord					freth freth in check as heere in-	1
i	nancie chucu his lite: Whole body all bloody laid		!				6 (28) In my annual C	- 1
		Prefence, fetting forth the honour, the riches, and	1				(a) In my owne person I am come vnto you cotell you that, which your selucs already doe see	ucene Marics
1	Was prought into the Channell within the Tower		Oucene Maries				and know I mount I	ration
			marciage diffaf-				"number of the Kentish Robert of the Courtous	1
		tileli Stomackes, in io much that combinations were i	tive to many of		1 1	nate before in all his warres, you this diffasture im- pressed such dolour of mind, that for verie griefe	"against vs and you. Their pretence (as they say)	- 1
auj zaer be-	ner own part next to be after the Seems of how The	made against the processe, and many in many places			1 1	hereof he lived not long after.	of Spains of all their please we ind the Frince	1
		vp in Armes: whereof Sir Thomas Wyat of Kent, was	i		1		"of Spaine, of all their plots, pretended quarrels, and equil contributed Articles, you here the	- 1
1	wherein being incunited with a cheerefull counter:	the first, and that vpon this occasion.			1 1	(33) Wyat, and his affociates greatly incouraged	euill contribud Articles, you have beene made	i
1		(28) Among many diffikers of the Openor	Sir Thomas 183-		1 .12	by this new supply, with eight brasse Peeces taken fthe Queencs, besides other of their owne, marched	"prinie. Since which time, our Councell haue refor-	1
1	contraincy the Ipake at that prefent.	I Marriage it chanced one for tome or how off	mis 100126-		1	he next morning unto Combine Colling	"ted to the Rebels, demanding the cause of their	i
he speech of ady lane at her					Job Stow	the next morning vnto Conling Castle, where the	"continued enterprize, by whose answeres the mar-	1
ady lane at her	Law Lam condemned to the fame my offence as		. 1		of lanuarie.	gainst the Gare brake is open with their ?		1
-					Wast affaileth II	gainst the Gate, brake it open with their shot, and nade entrance for their men. The Lord Cobham		
1	the to the define of others, which now is deemed	apon he put himicite in action before the enterprise !	An.D.1553.		Cowing Caffle P	ght valiantly relified their doings, and bestowed		For.
1			lanuary 25.		1	reely such small munition as he had, against their	"mer Articles, they now manifeftly bewray the in-	
1	counsell of those who should seeme to have fur-	ifleie, and others, at Maidfione in Kent, published a	1		1 1"	, against their	made a reason of their nearts, most arroganely de.	- 1
		Pro-	1				Gggggg "man	i
		Pro-					eeeb5 "man-l	
						*		
						•		

manding the ponemon or our perion, the keeping	"doe not; and will leave with you my Lord Hower	, ,		. ,		THE OTTER OTTO, INTOMMENT 00.	821
"of our Tower, and not onely the placing and dif-	"and my Lord Treasurer to bee Affistant with m	5			downe the old lane directly towards Saint Iames,		
" placing of our Counsellors : but also to vie them	Lord Major for the fafegard of the City from	n l			whence Captaine Vanahan with two Enfignes tooke	vnto the Court, whence in the afternoone, they with	1
"and vs at their pleasures; what I am louing Sub-	"Spoile & sackage, which is the only scope of this re				towards westminster, and wyat along the causey lea-	the two Mantels, and Alexander Bret, were com-	-
"iccts, you right well know, your Queene to whom	i * bellions (omnany	1			ding to Charing-Crosse, the Lord Generals Horse-	mitted to the Tower, Sir Thomas Wyat wearing a	1
"at my Coronation, when I was wedded to the	(37) The Oration ended, and the Citizens wel	1/_			men, hitherto itood houering aloofe, vntill the ene-	fhirt of Male vnder a veluet Caffocke, and the wind-	.1
Realme, and to the Lawes of the fame (the from	plealed, Queene Marie with good content returned	The Earle of			my was passed, all but the taile, voon which they	lace of his Dagge hanging about his necke. The next	1
" fall ring whereof I haue on my finger, which neuer	(37) The Oration ended, and the Citizens well plealed, Queene Marie with good content returned to the Court, where conferring with her Councel shee ordained the Lord William Herbert Earle of Pem	Lord Generall.			violentile let, and feuered from the reft, the maine	day eleuen Gentlemen more of name and account,	, rebr. s.
Difficito was, nor hereafter that he lett off) we pro	thee ordained the Lord William Herbert Earle of Pem	R.Grafton.			neuer looking backe to releeue their diftreffe.	were likewise committed to the Tower. In London about fifty persons were hanged for Wyats conspira-	1
" miled your alleageance, and obedience vnto mee.	brooke generall of the Field, and gaue forth by Pro-	- 1			 (42) From the higher ground, and along the l 		
And that 12m the right, and true inheritor to the	ciamation, that wholoener could bring What either	- 1		Ishu Store.	high way the great Ordinance plaied, and Wrats a-		
English Crowne, I not onely take all Christen-	quicke or dead should be rewarded with on hun	1			gaineaniwered the like, though with (mall hurt to l	in the Tilt-yard they were all pardoned by the	doned by the Queene
"dome to witnes, but also your Acts of parliaments	dreth pound Lands by vecre, to him and his pofferi.	.			either, onely one from the Hill flew three of Wrats	Queene, pronouncing her mercy from the Gallerie	Queene.
"confirming the same. My Father (as you all know)	ty for euer.	,			men in a rancke, and stracke through the Brickewall 1	1 about	
"possessed the regall estate by right of inheritance,	(38) Wyat in Depford, and knowing what was	1			into the Parke. Wrat paffing forward by the barrell!	(46) But the Capitall offender Sir Thomas Wyat	
which now by the same right is descended vnto	done, with foureteene Enlignes, and foure thouland	Stow Barfin but			of footmen without any impeachement, came to	attraigned at the items witer voon calc of high Trouton	Manakas
mee: to him you alwaies shewed your selues both					Charing Croife, where the Lord Chamberlaine and	contelled the inditement and had judgement of	Fl
"faithfull and louing Subjects, as to your liege "Lord and King, and therefore I doubt not but	ched rowards London, at whose approach, the white	fouldiers,			Sir Iohn Gage, stood ready to relist him : but Kentish	. Geath accordingly, which he intered whom the Scaf	Sir The West
Lord and King, and therefore I doubt not but	Tower hauing him in dager shot off her Ordinance				Souldiers rushing violently into the streets, forced	fold on Tower-hill the eleventh of April following.	
"you will shew your selues so to me his daughter; which if you doe, then may you not suffer any	but did miffe their marke, some leuelling too farre	: [them into the gates of White-hall which presentlie	his words to the people were thele, " Good peo-	-1
"rebell to vsurpe the Gouernment of our Person,					were flut, and a report in the Court that the Lord	" Die I am come bithet prefently to die being thore	. 1
or interpole our eftate, especially so presumptu	to Southwarke was peaceable and without all relif-	into Southwarke,			Generall was revolted to Wyat, all fo diffracted that	"to lawfully and worthily condemned, for I haue	2 Fysts words at
"ous a traitor as this wyat hath shewed himselfe		1 1			none durft truft others, and no other voice therein		
to be: who most certainely, as he hath abused our	flowed to withfland his comming, who contrary to	1 1		Fyet commeth .	heard, but Treason, Treason. Meane while Wyat	"fty; I trust God hath forgiven mee, and will take	=
" ignorant Subjects, to be adherents to his traiterous	truft, ioyned with the Kentifb, and then to winnethe			to Ludgate.	with fuch finall company as hee had, hafted through Fleet freet, and came vnto Ludgate, where hee knoc-	I mercy voonme : I beteech the Oneenes mately	,)
"quarrell; fo doth he intend by the colour of the	hearts of the people, he presently made Proclamati-	1			ked to have entrance, and well hoped of further assi-	"also of forgiuenesse (shee hath forgiuen you quoth	4
ce fame, to subdue the lawes to his will, and to give	on that no Souldier should take away anie thing without due payment, and the parties consent: not-				france, but was farre deceived, the gate being guar-	Doctor Welton) let euerie man beware how hee ra-	-!
"ICODE to the raicall and forforme perfore to make	withflanding Winelester house some felt the contra-				ded against him, with a number of true Citizens and	"keth any thing in hand against the higher powers,	,
generall hauocke and spoile of vour goods And	rie, whose goods were ransacked, the Bookes in the	The rebels (poile			bands of the Queenes friends.	"vnlesse God be prosperable to his purpose, it will	4
"this I lay further vinto you in the word of a	Librarie cut and defaced, and not a lock left vpon	Washejter house,			(43) But those straglers that had taken into	" neuer take good effect or jucceffe, whereof you	A
Prince, I cannot tell how naturally a mother lo-	the doores : fuch ipoiles infurrections euer ayme				Westminster, whereof Kneuet was Captaine, seeking	"may now learne by mc, and I pray God I may be	
" ueth her children, for I was neuer the mother of a-	at, how faire some they foyle the glasse to the	1			to recouer their companions, came before the Court		
1" BV: but certainely if a Prince and Concernous man	fight.	1			gates, and there made their fland, which being shutte	"and noised abroad, that I should accuse the Lady	.1.
as naturally loue the Subjects, as the mother dorh	(39) The Suburbs thus his; he affured himfelfe				against them shot many of their arrowes into the	"Elizabeth and the Lord Courtney, it is not fo, good copeople: For I affure you, neither they, nor any o-	-
ner child, then allure your lelues that I being	the City likewise shortly would be hur comming to	1 1			Garden, yea and into the windowes of White-hall,	ther now yonder in hold was printe to my rifing	.1
your Soueraigne, Lady, and Queene, doe as ear-	the Bridge, he found the Gates fast shut, neither any	1 1		:	though without any hurt : from the Court that	"before I began, as I have declared no leffe to the	4
neftly and tenderly loue and fauour you. And I	In fall to open them for him, therefore making a	1 1			guarded against them, they foorthwith departed,	"Queenes Councell, and that is most true. Then	. 1
thus louing you, cannot but think, that you as har-		Wyat fortifieth			meaning to follow Wyas their Leader into London.	faid Doctor Weston, marke heere my masters, he saith	1
tily & faithfully loue me again. & fo this loue boud	Ordinance against the Gate: At Saint Georges Church	Southwarke,			and marching forward, were met with at Charing-	that, that which he hath shewed to the Councell in	.l
" together in the knot of concord, wee shall be able		Southwarke, Iohn Stowa		- 1	Crosse, by Sir Henry Termingham, Captaine of the	writing of them, is most true. Whereupon Wyat put	.1
"I doubt not, to give these rebels a short and speedy	Barmondfey ftreete, and the fift towards the Bifton of	1 1			Guard, Sir Edward Bray Master of the Ordinance.	off his Gowne, his dublet, and wastcoate, and knit-	ı
"ouerthrow. Now as concerning my intended		ł 1			and Sir Philip Paris Knights, fent thither by order of	ting a kercheife ouer his eies with most feruent prai-	1
" marriage, you shall understand that I entred not	(40) Within the City the Lord Maior, and Lord	1 1			the Lord Generall, with a band of Archers, and	ers, received the ftroke of the Axe.	1
"into the treaty thereof, without the aduice of our	William Howard, cauled the draw bridge to become	1 1		I	certaine Field peeces to fecure the Court, their Ar-	(47) Alexander Bret, and twenty two Kentish	İ
"prmy Councel, yea and by affent of those, to whom	downs, and making forrifications for shair defen-	1 1			tillery discharged, they presently ioine fight with the	perions belides, were executed in diners parts of that	1
"my father committed his truft, who have so consi-	I placed oreat Ordinance against the engrance	1 1		The conflict at Charing-Croffe.	Rebels at pulhe of the Pike, who a while stucke to	County:others were likewise arraigned for the same	1
"dered the great commodities that may thereof en-		1 1		COMMING-CIONE.	it manfully; in which conflict was the triall of the	Conspiracy, as Sir Nicholas Throckmorton and Sir	Sir Nich. Throch-
" fue , as they not onely have thought it very hono-	1 iome rew rollowers through the Porters lodge unto			-	day: but as their quarrell was traiterous, so their	James Croft the one quit by his Inquest the other par-	morten and Sir
" rable, but alio expedient, both for the Wealth of		London fortified		i	hearts were soone quelled, each one saving himselfe		raigned.
"our Realme, and alfo of our louing Subjects. But	the paliage too difficult to have friendly accesse.			.	by flight, wherein about twenty of those bemired	luipected as aiders viito Wrat, and his enterprile, a.	
"as touching my felfe (I affure you) I am not fo de- "firous of wedding, neither am fo precifely wedded		1 1		1	Souldiers were flaine, and no other crie heard, but	mong whom the Lord Courtney, and the Princeffe E-	Lady Elizabeshs
to my will, that either for mine owne pleafure I wil	hot forvs. Belides the Tower began to be topped	1 1		l l	downe with the Daggletailes.	#Zabeth, lifter to the Oncone were not the least and	troubles.
"choose where I lust, or elsso amorous, as needs I	With Ordinance - Icanen Culnerings and Demis	1		Fiat returneth	(44) Wist returned from Ludgate, sate downe	therefore both of them committed to the Tower:	
" must have one : for I thanke God (to whome be	Cannons, leuelled against the Bridgefoote, the Ste-			rom Ludgate.	vpon a stall against the common Inne called Belfa-	of which Ladies troubles, innocency, and truth.	. 1
15 the praise 1 I have highered lined a Vissing and	ples of Saint Olives, and Saint Mary Overies, all the	Stam.			mage, where he beganne (2s it should seeme) to ex- postulate what his heady rashnesse had done, and	thus we find related.	
"doubt not but with Gods grace to bee able to	White Tower laden with her peeces, three fauconers			1	the vaine hopes hee had conceined of the Citizens	(48) These Virgine Princes were not so neerely	. 1
" liuc fo ftill. But if(as my Progenitors hane done	ouer the water-Gate, and a double Culucring vpon	The Tower for-		1	abetments, who feldome tooke part against the	linked in blood and nature, as they were separated	. 1
"before,) it might please God that I might leave	Diuelling Tower: and all these were turned and fear- fully charged vpon the Borough of southwarke,	at.		- 1	Crowne: he then despairing of further successe, re-	afunder in affecting Religion, and that being the	. 1
"Iome fruit of my body to be your Gonernour I	which feene, the Inhabitants with great lamentati-			į.	tired backe towards the Court, and was not fraied	. printecame for which there commotions were rat-	- 1
"trust you would not onely rejoyce thereat, but also	ons came vnro Wyat, and complained, that for his			- 1	vntill hee came to Temple-Barre, where certaine	fed, Queene Mary much suspected her sister to bee	
1 " I know it would be to your great comformed and	cause they were like to be atterly and one; who struc-			1	Horsemen comming from the field, met him full in	a principall moouer therein. The ielousie whereof, Gardiner of Winehester did further inflame, by blow-	Lady Elizabeth
"tainly if I either did know or thinke, that this mar-	ken with pittie and remorfe of fo many, prefently			- 1	the face, betwixt whom began some bickering, till	ing Coniectures into her care : so that needes the	
" riage inouid either turne to the danger or loffe of	remoued his Armie towards King fon vpon Thames,	1		1	laftly Clarentius King at Armes came to him and faid:	Princesse must be sent for, then lying sicke at her	for,
"any of you my louing Subjects, or to the detriment	where finding the Bridge broken downe, with Lad-	Febr. 6. being	i i	1.	Mafter Wyat you fee the day is gone against you; and	Mannour of Ashridge, cuen the next day after that	- 1
"of any part of the roial Estate of this English Realm		Shronetufeday.		1:	in relifting you can doe no good, but hazard the	Wyat role. The messengers were, Sir Iohn Williams.	- 1
"I would neuer consent thereunto ,neither would I	the riuer the same night, came to Braineford before	Wyar paffeth the Thames at Korg-		- 1.	death of your Souldiers, and your felfe, to the great	Sir Edward Hastings, and Sir Tohmas Cornwalles, all	M.Fax Acts and
"cuer matry whilft I liued. And in the word of a	ince was deletted by the Oneenes-Scoutes the nerves	Thames at King-		1.	perill of your foule. My countell is, that you were		Monuments.
"Queene, I promise and assure you, that if it shall	Whereof fore frombled the Court Waste homes	gen.		41	best to yeelde, and perchance you may finde the	men in number two hundred and fifty.	1238.
"not probablic appeare before the Nobility and	were to have imprized the Citie voon the fuddaine	ĺ		1	Queene mercifull, if you flay from further blood-	(49) These comming to Albridge at tenne in the	- 1
1" Commons in the high Court of Darliamons, short	and the ctore made such half as he did, but being			1:	shed.	Bight-luggenly alcended into her Printe Chamber	1
"this marriage shalbe for the singular benefit and	hindred by a Peece of great Ordinance that wife	Richard Grefton.		1	(45) Wyat heereat somewhat astonied, seeing	and making it knowne they came from the Oucene	1
["Commoditie of the whole Realme that then I will	dilmounted from the carriage, came not vnto	1	#	yst yeelderin 1 imfelfe.	now his whole defignes defeated (though his few		. 1
"abstaine not onely from this marriage, but also		- 1			Souldiers were bent still to fight, answered the He-	the faid Lady lay very fore ficke: their first falutations were, that they were forry to see her in that e-	The conference
1 Trom any otner. Vy neretore good Subjects placke	(41) In the same morning the Earle of Pembroke	February		1	rauld, VVell then, If I must needes yeeld, I will yeeld	ons were, that they were forry to fee her in that e- fe	cliors with La-
"vp your hearts, and like true men fland fast with					o a Gentleman : to whom Sir Maurice Barkley came	Itare, and I am not glad faid the, to lee you here ar 1 %	y Elizabeth.
"your lawful! Prince against these Rebels, both ours		armicia Saint		Į.	presently and bad him mount his Horse behinde, in	this time of the night; Madame, quoth they, our	1
"and yours, and feare them not, for (I affire you)I	way forelaid both with foote and horsemen, turned	emode) II Cid.			ike manner another tooke vp Sir Thomas Cobham,	Mellage requires halte, and the Oucenes pleasure is	I
 1	downe	į.		12	and the third Thomas Kneuet, and so carried them	that you shall bee at London the seuenth of this mo-	1
						neth	1
	•						

where the content has been considered to the course from the c	s, & Sir John William Land Tame was ioined in Commiliation in the state of the stat
you't flucts hereifee. Indeed (faid they) for that we lee, we are hearthy forry, but our commission is in that we bring you to Londoneither quicke or dead, whereas the being greatly award, for ownfully faid the well hoped their commission was nothing for train, but they calling for two Dockros of Philickee demanded whicher fiber might be removed with hife, and that being reloued, bad her prepare against the next morning and folder this innoceme Princife very fore perplexed the rest of the finish. (3) The next morning approched, and she in no bettere pight, nonwithstading was led forth more like a Prilore then a Prince, which the people in early loves a painter commisted to the Court. (3) The next morning approched, and she in no bettere pight, nonwithstading was led forth more like a Prilore then a Prince, which the people in early loves to the Court. (4) The next morning approched, and she in no bettere pight, nonwithstading was led forth more like a Prilore then a Prince, which the people in early loves the whole the control of the count	s, & Sir John William Land Tame was ioined in Commiliation in the state of the stat
tee, we'care interruly forry, but our commission is, that we bring you to London chier quicke or dead, whereas the being greatly amazed, forrowfully said, the well hoped their commission was nothing for first, but they calling for two Doctors of Philicke demanded whether the might be removed with life, and that being resoluted, bad her prepare against the next morning and lose first innocent Princess the resonance of the Closers and that being resoluted, bad her prepare against the next morning and lose first innocent Princess the resonance of the Closers	to the first sight feet was brought in commiss. Little state in the first sight feet was brought vno zero-most, where all her owne ferrants were remound freely stated in the prefence, and the racial Soulders fet to much doubted that her dayes were nere fence, and in that place her lite must take end: wheteupon calling together her freenants defired them to pray for her, for this night (faid thee) I thinke I must die, which lamentable wordes drew fountaines of cares one of their yets; and thereupon her Gentleman V flort went down even to the Lord Take in the Court, defring him verlainedly to fliew, whether his Lady and Midfrelle than night were in danger of deathywhereby himselfe and fellowes might take the first harara God would appoint. Mary God for-
that we fring you to London either quicke or dead, whereas the being greatly awards, forwering in fight and the being greatly awards, forwering in fight and the head on the foreight two Noble menabour nine of the Clocke repaired not of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke repaired not one of the Clocke r	mend, where all her owne fervants were remound from her prefence, and the tracall Souldiers for to attend the prefons by which feuere beginnings the much doubted that her dayes were nere ipent, and in that place her like mult take end: whereupon calling together her leruants defired them to pray for her, for this night, faid thee? I thinke I mult die, which lamentable wordes derived them to pray for the control of the cont
whereas the being greatly amazed, forrowfully faid, the well hoped their commission was nothing for first, but they calling for two Doctors of Philicked emanded witcher the emight be removed with life, and that being refolued, bad her prepare against the next morning and lose first innocent Princesse very fore perplexed the rest of the night. (50) The next morning and foel cith is innocent Princesse very fore perplexed the rest of the night. (51) The next morning and foel in this innocent Princesse very fore perplexed the rest of the night. (52) The next morning approched and first in no better plight, nonvithstading was led forth more like a Prince or take Barges, flee can first over the state of the case of the Cuerces and places as a princesse connected to the connected to the connected to the dore, which the people in the form of the connected to the dore, which the people in the form of the connected to the dore, which the people in the form of the connected the dore, which the people in the form of the connected the dore, which the people in the form of the connected the dore, which the rest of the connected the dore, which were for four-excended the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the dore, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and streams of the connected the connected the dore when the large and a make the co	from her preferee, and the ratical Soulders for to a continuous many person by which fewere beginnings the much doubted that her dayes were near lepent, and in that place her lite must take end: whereupon colling together her termans defired them to pray for her, for this night (faid thee) I thinke I must take which amenable wordes dewe footnations of cares out of their yets; and thereupon her Gentleman V flort word down even to the Lord Take in the Court, defiring him verlainedly to fliew, whether his La flort were in danger of death whereby himselfe and fellowes might take for the control of the c
but they calling for two Doctors of Philicke demanded whether file might be removed with life, and the being refolued, bad her prepare against the next morning and foll either in mocent Princife very force perplexed the rest of the night. (19) The next morning approched, and she in no better pight, not with hidding was led forth more its and contented: leeing it is no better pight, not with hidding was led forth more its and contented to the core with the people in over pights and the principle very force for the rest, came into the Tower; so where so for fired, but that allo failing, the fighted and find, I was a fired the continued without light of fired, a the Queene or any Lords, those onely excepted that attended the dores, which were the Lord Chamberlain, and fired with the people in the fired with the property of the fired with the property of the fired that was made to the barge, and a morting of the continued without light of fired, a the Queene or any Lords, those onely excepted that attended the dores, which were the Lord Chamberlain, and fired was made to the barge, and a morting of the continued without light of fired, and the purpole, might line, my Lords of the continued without light of fired, and the continued	attend her persons by which seurce beginnings she up to the selection of the seurce beginnings she anappear of the seurce beginnings she in that place her lite must take end: whereupon colling together her ternans defired them to pray for her, for this night (slid shee) I thinke I must die, which I amentable wordes drew sountaines of cares out of their eyes and the reupon her Gentleman Wher went downe vinto the Lord Tame in the Court, defring him versioned by the court of the court, defring him versioned by the selection of death, whereby himselfe and fellowes might take such as the selection of the selection o
ficulty for the state of the fires and the being refolted, bad her prepare againft the next morning and fole firths innocent Principle very fore perplexed the reft of the night. (30) The next morning approched, and fine in no better pight, no contributed it and comming into the Guerre prepared the reft of the night. (30) The next morning approched, and fine in no better pight, no contributed it length is an applicable and including as a led forth more like a Principle the properties of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the state of the fine of the	much doubled that her days were generally in an interpretable of the first must rake end: whereupon calling together her feruants defired them to pray for the first might (fail files) in the first might (fail files) in the first might (fail files) in the first might (fail files) in the first might were found first might were found first might were find anger of death, whereby himfelfe and fellowes might take fifsh parara God would appoint. Mary God for-
that being refoliced, bad her prepare against the next morning and folies the first is innocent Princest feet and the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is deed one I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is deed of the talk seeing admit and contented in the Lords will be done I am contented: seeing it is deed of the talks seeing a	in that place her life must take end: whereupon control of the place her life must take end: whereupon control of the place her life must take end: whereupon control of the place her life her
morning and lo left this innocen Princele symptoms of the common the common than the loods will be done I am contended: feeing it is the Cogenes mind and comming into the Garty Princer Expected the reflect of the night. (30) The next morning approched, and fher in no better pight, nonwithflading was led forth more like a Princer which the people in curry place as the patient, and through guarded, was for connected view the World and the Nordist means to fail failing, the flight and find, I was a princer counted to the control where the fourcement disc a princer date in the process of the part of the princer of th	calling together her fernants defired them to pray fore for her, fert this night (faid thee) I thinke I must die, which lamentable wordes drew fountaines of the cares out of their ryes; and thereupon her Gentleman Wher went down error the Lord Take in the Court, defiring him vafainedly to finew, whether his Lady and Mittrelle than night were in danger of death, whereby him left and fellowes might take life, hyarras God would appoint. Mary God for-
be perplicted the reft of the night. (5) The next morning approched, and fine in the course with the people in the course plight, notwith this did much lament, and throught to the course the people in the same transfer connected to the course. List, Rights and the process of the course of the	for her, for this night (faid fine) I thinke I mult with a mentable wordes drew fountaines of teares out of their yets; and thereupon ther Gentleman V flert went downer who the Lord Tame in the Court, defring him valending to flow, whether his Lady and Miltrelle that night were in danger of death, whereby himselfer and fellowes might take further than the court of th
(9) The next morning approched, and fine in the prince of the case in the case	die, which lamentable wordes drew fountaines of the court, defining him volainelity to firew, whether his Lady and Mittrelle that night were in danger of death, whereby him left and fellowes might take life hparras God would appoint. Mary God for-
better pighe, no with the people in like a Printer then a Prince, which the people in like a Printer then a Prince, which the people in careful printer then a Prince, which the people in careful printer then a Prince, which the people in careful printer then a Prince, which the people in careful printer then a Prince, which the People in careful printer the printer printer printer against the Nobilty measure printer for the printer pr	ceares out of their eyes; and thereupon her Gentle- man Viher went downe vnro the Lord Tame in the Court, defring him valanchly to flew, whether his Lady and Miltreffe that night were in danger of death, whereby himfelfe and fellowes might take further are a God would appoint. Mary God for-
It a Priloner then a Pince, which the popule in enterty place as the particular to t	man Viher went downe vnto the Lord Tame in the Court, defring him verfainedly to flue, whether the his Lady and Miftreffer that night were in danger of death whereby himfelte and fellowes might take fifth paras God would appoint. Mary God for-
Lady Richeths sarptimes are considered to the control of the contr	his Lady and Miltrefle that night werein danger of death, whereby himfelfe and fellowes might take fuch part as God would appoint. Mary God for-
where for four exemples we have a continued without light of friend, the Queene or any Lords, the following the four exemples with the fall of the water at the dores, which werethe Lord Chamberlaine, and for fully come in, the fall of the water at the fall of the water a	on, death, whereby himselfe and fellowes might rake fuch part as God would appoint. Mary God for-
Court. State to indure cent charge place, the comfortelfic continued without light of friends, the Queene or any Lords, thoic onely: excepted that attended the dores, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and Sir library Lords, thoic onely: excepted that attended the dores, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and Sir library Lords (and the continued with the Lord of Lamberlaine, and Sir library Lords, thoic onely: excepted that attended the dores, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and Sir library Lords (and the Councell, care in other preferce, and there charged the Councell, which in no wife wold stream, care into the preferce, and there charged the board with Pysix Configuracy, and the fitters lately made in the Lord of Lamberlaine, and the fitters lately made in the Lord of Lamberlaine, and so give the lately and the Lord of Lamberlaine, and the library lately made in the Lord of Lamberlaine, and the lately lately made in the Lord of Lamberlaine, and you Sir laters Creft can, myl what is site to the purpole, might leno, myl and not fully come in, the fall of the water at the Bridge was log even in the later water at the Bridge was log even in the Lord of Lamberlaine, and the library later water at the Bridge was log even in the Lord of Lamberlaine, and the library later the Lord of Lamberlaine, and the library later the Lord of Lamberlaine, and the Lamberlaine, and the Lamberlaine, and the Lamberlaine, and the Lamberlaine, and the Lamberlaine, and you Sir laters Creft can myl core of Lamberlaine, and you Sir laters Creft can myl core of Lamberlaine, and you Sir laters Creft can myl core of Lamberlaine, and you Sir laters Creft can myl core of Lamberlaine, and you Sir laters Creft can myl core of Lamberlaine, and you Sir laters Creft can myl core of Lamberlaine, and you Sir laters Creft can myl core and you Sir laters Creft can myl core and you Sir laters Creft can myl core and you Sir laters Creft can myl core and you Sir laters Creft can myl core and you Sir laters Creft can myl core and you Sir laters Creft can	fuch part as God would appoint. Mary God for-
continued without light of friend, the Queene or any Lords, those onely excepted that attended the dores, which were the Lord Chamberlaine and Sir the fall of the water at the dores, which were the Lord Chamberlaine and Sir the fall of the water at the same of Wintheffers, and nine more of the Councell, earning the summer of wintheffers, and nine more of the Councell, earning the summer were more leastly, which in no wife wold be heard: wheteupon they palled the Arren with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately made with Wyats Conspiracy, and the fitters lately water to the base, and are under the cycles of the fall of the water at the the fall of the water at the the cycles water the the cycles of the constant water that the fall of the water at the the fall of the water at the the fall of the water at the fitters lately water the fall of the water at the fitters lately water that the fall of the water at the fitters lately water the fall of the water at the fall of the water at the fitters lately water that the fall of the water at the fitters lately water that the fall of the water at the fitters lately wa	luch part as God would appoint. Mary God for-
any Lords, those onely excepted that attended the dores, which were the Lord Chamberlaine, and Sir this Gage. (11) You Finday before Palme Sunday, Garden of Winderfor, and nine more of the Councell, came into the preferee, and there charged the board of the carmined struction. (21) You Finday before Palme Sunday, Garden of Winderfor, and nine more of the Councell, came into the preferee, and there charged the both with Wyats Configuracy, and the fitters lately made in the configuracy of the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the configuracy of the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the fitters lately made in the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the configuracy and the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the configuracy and the fitters lately made in the configuracy and the configuracy	
ottes, which were the Lord of Lyrandell kneeling downe, and the Lord of Lyrandell kneeling downe, and the there are did truth, and that himselfe we feared to passe the examined between the examined with Wystr Conspiracy, and the stirred state of the control of	and ductivitie Lord 1 ame, that any luch wicked-
Item Gage. (51) You Friday before Palme Sunday, Gardered to paffe thereunder, and motioned a flay till the thream were more lendle, which in no wife wold before seamined with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and the there are the heard with which in no wife wold before the seamined with Wyars Confipracy, and the there are the heard with everyon they paffed the Arch with with Wyars Confipracy, and the there are the heard with with Wyars Confipracy, and the there are the heard with with Wyars Confipracy, and the there are the heard with with Wyars Confipracy, and the there are the heard with with Wyars Confipracy, and the there are the heard with with Wyars Confipracy, and the there are the heard with with Wyars Confipracy, and the there are the heard with which in no wife wold because the heard with with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confipracy, and there charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her both with Wyars Confirmacy and the charged her	
(1) y point create better. Palme Sunday, Gardiner of Wischeffer, and him emore of the Councell, edition to write wind in no write wold in the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level, which is the firesance were more level,	be- Co-
Prince 25g and nine more of the Councell, the beamined stream. Came into the prefence, and there charged her both stream. Six of the canning the configuration of the council, the canning the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, and the fitters larged merchant of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, and the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council, the configuration of the council of the counci	
ten examined with Winter presence and there charged her both stream, with Part Configure, and the fitter start	on Francis control proceeded the to-
whom i pray to forgine you all.	med him) cuer carrying fo hard an hand in his Com-
	miffion: for the people that with teamer and day
which there must confirm the reason and others, take land without fleeping into the work and second of the federe sad	meet her in the passage, and with prayers saluted her
from they fold ber it moved to driver but in concin-	in most louing manner he both threatned St deane
	Uacke, calling them I raitors and R chole against the
	Queene and her Lawes, and whereas in certaine vil-
of which dolefull prison strucke deeper to her heart. I rush (said shee) her Maicsty will be farre more granter the end of the struck of the	lages bels were rung as thee paffed for toy as they used of Lady
	Conceiled it of her delillerance. Sir Henry Remidelde Etrabelies
coust then to commit to that place a true and most innocent woman, that neuer had offended her in thought, worde not dead to the Queenes Gentlewomen thought, worde not dead to the Queenes Gentlewomen to the place of the Queenes Gentlewomen to the	tooke the matter fo diffaftfull, that hee commanded definerance
	the beisto jurceale, and let the ringers thereof in the
thought of the control of the contro	
the Queene; which tome of them promifed, and kneeling down as the panel, the poore men had to wake in the other priloners commanded not formuch as	to Gin-Ci -
the Garden. Jooke into the place while her Grace remains the Garden. Jooke into the place while her Grace remains the Garden.	fhing friends, Tangaam ouis, as a five pe to the flaugh- ter, fo am I lead: And furely had not the L. Tame bin
therein.	
(55) Then paffing (or with a charge (55) Then paffing (55) Then pa	Princeffe, her spirite of hopes had been spent be-
the Tresform, the Strand and Suffer: with a charge to ditcharge her of all attendants, fauing onely her Gentleman V ther, three Gentlewomen, and, two Growness the Chen. Gentlewomen, and two Growness the Chen. Gentlewomen, and two Growness the Chen. Gentlewomen, and two Growness the Chen. Gentlewomen and two Growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two Growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Chen. Gentlewomen and two growness that the Growness th	a fore the conduction of her person had beene ac-
Groomes of her Chamber and two from, and two from, to whom M. Bridges the Lightenana and two from the Tower) in whole pretty prat	g complified
warde in the next recovery great pleasure; his vie was to bring	(62) Neitherin Waad Raikawaa hat likaata
	chiarged, nor rearesany lette: thee being included in land.
men to watch in the Hall, and two hundred Northerne white Parket, and two hundred Northerne white Coates in the Garden, thus all was middliften and the hundred hundred with the standard of the hundred hundred with the standard of the hundred hund	
made fure, and the kept from the was and the kept from the control of the last and the kept from the control of the kept from the kept fro	and night, and although thee had leave into
	her walke and her lodgings, and all made fast after
to name nerro the Tower show some discount of the Tower show some discount of the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows and the Tower shows a show a s	
her Grace: which normith francing the norm her Grace; which normith francing the normith fran	The state of the s
heedid, but the dore being four, and her neers	Dadi Chic
through a hole, cried ynto her. Miltreffe Lean be	Darling of Bishoppe Gardiners came to Eladenbridge Lady Elizabeth
you no more flowers now.	mon in prime Come of 1 C:
no man thould have any and the mext ride, which as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the best of the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the relative to be such as the well no man thould have any and the relative to be such as the well not the relative to be such as the well not the relative to the relativ	The state of the s
one of them being more further to the loss of them being more further to the loss of them being more further to the loss of them being more further to the loss of them being more further to the loss of them being more further to the loss of them being more further to the loss of th	narchulinelle: but Sir Henry ber Kunner
from the other fleshward in this Committee and bolts, was directed for the pref	
	sharmone (hould have a wife to his blother,
defired thee might write to the Owner and her tew fermants about her, thee feel wree	turne, though they came from the Council
	Queene her feife. Whereby that defione was han-
The hopeurable studgement was it convenient; but the other more blade of the forthwish varied was a local to the local to the local to the local to the local to the local to	1 DIVIOIL What his citand was I will not determine 1
Parts of the Indicate Which was the Forle of Cult. Many to Miles and Indian might not	but others have conceived it was for no good.
the displace told her thanker the foundation and the second the se	
tord net that her Grace should have liberty to write her mind: swearings a shee was a true man, himselfe would deliver it in a thought of the mind: we would deliver it in a thought of the mind: we would deliver it in a thought of the mind. The mind is said to toun action. Meanewhile the their ignorant of any such warrant, blamed the dot warrant war	
would deduce it into the Queenes hand, and bring most needfull (her keep to be propounded, that it was	1 1to the danger of her life; for on the lodgin her lodgin
her the answers, what foeter came of it: which how so ever the nourable permission was then most thankefully ta- the nourable permission was the nourable perm	gings were on fire, which beganne to kindle betwixt
nourable permiffion was then most thankefully ta- ken, and affirmated and his strength and finding guard fet to watch her dore; against which ken, and affirmated and his strength and finding the Lord Sussessing the Lord Susses	General and and and and and and and and and and
District Grant Country of the state beed and the state been also been as the state been a	The Country that died to be pur-
Princely fauours towards that honourable manybut in writing this letter or petition to the Queene, the in the control of the c	ning, drew the diffressed Princes into many passi-
Tidament and the forme let me G dealers of the let me	ons, wherefone is reported, that fine fitting folira-
	ry at her Prison-window, chanced to see a Maide of
take the aduantage of the next, which with better adultiment we defined do, whether the Scaffold whe	I I Wood Gocke in the Parke milking of Kine and ac theat
make the advantage of the next, which with better advisement was against deferred, for that it fell a-loop midnight better the Scaffold with board midnight better the Scaffold with the Tower, and Lady Line further the Scaffold with the Tower, and Lady Line furt	fate, merily to fing ouer her Pale, which strucke this
bee forceably taken from them before finee came to that end two of her yeomen were seed for that end two of her yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that the yeomen was some that yeomen was some that yeomen was some that yeomen was some that yeomen was some that yeomen was some that y	I terring the Maides fortunes farre above her owne
the Tower: and so with great promidence was that affigure the Prief which we can write a promident to a finite the control of	and heartily wished that her selfe were a Milke-maid, presented about into such distresse was her princely birth brought, in a princely capture, which comfortests through the princely capture, we will a think the such as the princely capture.
	into such distresse was her princely birth brought, in a princely cap-
answere the Prieft, which was as wellingly done as	which comfortelle threstome was will a will a
(61) The nineteenth of May her Grace w	
(61) The ninereguth of May her Grace w	leaue her,& return to speak of matters in the Court.
(61) The nineteenth of May her Grace w	
(61) The nineteenth of May her Grace w	leaue her,& return to speak of matters in the Court.
(61) The nineteenth of May her Grace w	leaue her,& return to speak of matters in the Court.
(61) The nineteenth of May her Grace w	leaue her,& return to speak of matters in the Court.

(65) Queene Mary being now chiefe Pilot A.D.1553. all things thus ordered, and Philip in a readines took her felfe, and fet at the helme of all Soueraign pow-Barke at Corone in Galizia, and with a Nauie of an cr, fleered the flerne of her zealous affections, accorhundred and fifty faile directed his course for his ding to her owne liking, when presently vpon her Coronation beganne a Parliament at Westminster, & Oftob.18. (70) Vpon Friday the twentieth of July, hee ara Connocation in the Cathedrall Church of Saint rined at Southampten, and was the first man of that Paules in London, where shee commanded a free dis-Fleet that fet foot on the shore, which no sooner don, ueth in England. putation for Religion, without any danger of ofbut he drew his Sword, and so bare it naked in his fence. The Questions to bee controueried, were hand as hee went. The Earle of Arundell L. Stewconcerning a Catechisme set forth in King Edwards ard of the Queenes house, presented to his Highdayes, and the presence of Christ in the Sacrament nesse the George and Garter; and the Maior of Souof his Supper For Popish Transubstantiation stood thampton the Keyes of the Towne: thither was fent Disputers Doctor Moreman, Doctor Wasson, Doctor Disputers Doctor Materian, Doctor Watfon, Doctor Chadfey, Maker Harpfield, and Mafter Margan, D. Wefton Dean of Weftonian apointed for Prolocutor: For Christs piritual prefence were M. Haddom, M. Zimar, M. Cheyney, M. Pilipar, and Mafter Perme, these meeting 6 several dates disputed only upon the the Lord Chancellor from the Queene, and hee a-A difputation for Religion. gaine sent of his Nobles vnto her, who was on the way vnto Winchester, to welcome him herselfe: to wards which City vpon Munday following, hee fet forth, being accompanied with the Marquesse of Winchester, the Earles of Arundell, Darby, Worsester. last question: but with such disagreement, as lastly Bedford, Ruthard, Pembroke, and Surrey, the Lordes Clinton, Cobham, Willaughby, Darey, Marreney, Tal-bot, Strange, Fitzwaren, and North: besides many Q. Mary commanded Boner to diffolue the affembly, without any Subscriptions to the affertions pre-Decemb.13. mifed. Knights and gallant Gentlemen. His Spanish train (66) And not long after Thomas Cranmer Arch-bishoppe of Canterbury, Nicholas Ridley Bishoppe of London, and High Latimer sometimes Bishoppe of were the Dukes of Alua, and Medina coli, the Admi-

The honourable two Princes.

Helisfb 9.1118.

worcefter, were fent from the Tower of London vnto oxford, to dispute vpon the saide Argument against Doctor Tresham, Doctor Cole, Doctor, Oglethorpe Doctor Pie, Master Harpsfeild, and Master Feeknam. all Oxford men, vnto whom from Cambridge were ioyned Doctor Yonge, Doctor Glinne, Doctor Seton, Doctor Watfon, Doctor Sedgewicke, and Doctor Atkinson, Doctor Weston again being Prolocutor: the A.D. 1554. disputation beganne upon the sixteenth of sprill, and ended the twentieth of the same moneth, with the sentence of those three Bishoppes deaths, which through fire gaue testimony of their faithes, a yeere

They are barned.

and fixe moneths after in the Towne Ditch of oxford: whose disputations, letters, and last endes, are largely fet down by M. Iohn Fox in his Acts and Monuments of the Church, vnto whom I refer the

desirous Reader, left by enlarging of the, the course of our temporall Story should bee our much interrupted with matters Ecclesiasticall of those sorrow-(67) Queene Mary intending her marriage with Spaine, great feares were conceined that many calamities would follow, aswell to the Church, efor-

med from abuses, as for the politicke proceedings of the Kingdomes affaires; which as some tooke Fox AE. & Mon. was prognofticated even from heaven it felfe, by a Raine-bow reuersed, the bow turned downward, & the two ends standing vpward, as also by two Suns fhining at one time, and a good distance asunder in the Skies, both which fights appeared in London the fifteenth of February. (68) In which City a Parliament to that purpose was assembled, wherein by Statute the marriage was confirmed, though with no leffe liking of those times observers, then was the marriage desired

of Queen Mary, which is fained of the Sunne : to hinder whose pur pose, the world is said to have made suite vnto Ingiter, lest having more Sunnes then one, the whole frame of the Globe should bee set on fire. These distastiue stomackes Queene Mary well perceived, therefore to give them content, thee wrote her let-In her letters ters into the West, and to Wales, charging the Lord fent them figned with her President, the Bishoppes of oxford and Salisbury, to intimate the benefite thereof to the whole land, as much as might bee; neither was London forgotten, whose Lord Major and Commons were sent for to the Court, and there by the Lord Chancellor tolde how by this match all the Realm would bee enriched, but especially London by their trade and trafficke with Spaine.

(69) Vnto Spaine were fent the Earle of Bedford,

and the L. Fitzwaters to conduct K. Philip into Eng-

land; the Lord Admirall with twenty eight shippes

fecuring the feas the space of three moneths before:

trimony. 3 That for Dowry shee should receive yeerely threescore thousand pound Flemish, if in case she ouerliued King Philip her husband.

4 That the Islue proceeding of this marriage either male or female in the right of their mothers inheritance, in the Kingdomes either of England, or other Dominions depending, should succeed in them

rall of Castilla, the Marquesses of Bergues, Piscara;

Saria, Valli, Aguillar, the Earles of Egmund, Harne,

Feria, Chinchon, Olivares, Saldana, Modica, Euente-

Salida, Landriano, Castellar, the Bishoppe of Cuenca, and others: so that more honourable attendants

(71) And furely the Conenants were as honou-rable for England that were agreede vpon betwixt

them, which were branched into tenne Propo-

I First was, that Philip should bee stiled King of England during the Matrimony, and should assist

his Queene in gouernement, but not dispose of any

Lands, Offices, Benefices, or Reuenewes in the

2 That Mary by vertue of this marriage, should bee admitted Queene of the Realmes and Domini-

ons of Spaine already possessed, as of all others, that

were appropriated vinto the same, during the Ma-

had feldome beene feene.

Realme.

according to the lawes, flatutes, and customes of the 5 That if it chanced Charles Duke of Austrich, the Infant of Spaine to die without Issue, then the eldest fonne of this Matrimony should succeed in all the Dukedomes, Earledomes, Dominions and Patrimoniali lands, belonging vnto Charles the Emperour, father to the Prince of Spaine, aswell in Burgoign

as in the low Countries, in the Dukedomes of Bra-bant, Luxenburgh, Gelderland, Zutphane, Freefeland, in the Countries of Flanders, Artois, Holland, Zeland Namure, and the land beyond the Hes. 6 That the Dominions of the low Country, and of Burgundy should be excluded from the Patrimoniall descent of the said Lord Charles, notwithstanding his liffue remained, and should bee enloyed by the eldest borne of this marriage without further claime to any other Dominions belonging vnto Spaine: and the reft of the Children thereof proceeding to have convenient portions and Dowry assigned them aswell out of

those Countries, as out of England and the others adjoined. 7 That if no iffue male were borne of this marriage then the Eldest female should possesse those Dominions, provided that the shold marry a nobleman. either of the Low Countrey or of the Realm of England, otherwise the right of the Succession should remaine in the Lord Charles, yet not so cut'off, but

Comp. 23 Odeche Warie. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 60; that she with the other daughters begot in this mar-riage should be endowed of their fathers Lands and fage through London; where English cies beheld Philip, after the affections of their owne hearts, some possessions, aswell in Spaine as in the Low Countries. reioicing as Ifrael, that Ieroboams golden calues 8 That for want of Issue by the Lord Charles,

should be againe erected, and some forrowing as I#and of heire male procreated by this Marriage in that case the Eldest daughter of K. Philip and Q. Madah, that the Bralen Serpent was not broken, all of them affured, that this Solomons sufferance and his rie should succeed both, in the Territories of the wines zeale, would build againe the Altars that had Low Countries, as also in the Realmes of England, beene cast downe. Spaine, and the rest, after the nature, lawes and cu-(75) The experience whereof Queene Marie stomes of the same. herselfe had ginen, euen before shee was crowned, 9 That who so succeeded, either he or shee, yet in causing the Latine Service agains to bee said, in should the seuerall Dominions be gouerned by the displacing the reformed Bishops, and in publishing a Natines borne in the Realmes, wholly and intirely most straight prohibition against preaching, and printed English Bookes: to all which some timeafter the priniledges, rites and accustomed manner formerly vied. feruing Church-men gaue their confents, scanda-10 Thata fincere fraternity, vnitie and peace; lizing not onelie the lives of the ministers, but alshould be confirmed for ever betwixt these Nations to the Scriptures translation, and the just proceeso as they should mutually aide each other in all dings of King Edwards time; against all which, Ma-

things according to the strength, forme and effect treated of at Westminster, and subscribed vnto at Vte-(72) As these were agreed upon for the General, so other particulars were articuled with the King

himfelfe, which were as followeth. I That he should not bestow the administration of offices or benefices in the Realme of England, to any stranger or person nor borne vnto the English subjection. 2 That his Court should be replenished with

Gentlemen and Yeomen the Natiues of the 3 That hee should make no invasion of state against the Lawes and Customes of the Realme, neither violate the Priviledges thereto belonging.

4 That hee should not carry the Queene out of her owne Dominions, without her speciall desire, nor none of her Children without consent of her 5 That if shee should die issulesse hee should

Challenge no right in the Kingdome, but should fuffer the fuccession to come to her next. 6 That he should not carry or suffer to be carried out of the Realme, either Iewels, or other things of

especiall estimation, but should faithfully keepe them for the profit of the English Crowne. 7 That hee should not suffer any ships, gunnes,

Ordinance and other municion of warre to be conueied out of the Realme, but should see all the Forts and Frontiers of the Land kept, and the same sufficiently ftored for their defence. 8 That neither directly nor indirectly, the Realme of England should bee intangled with the warres of his father, and the French King, neither

that his God was gotten away and could neuer after that himselfe should give any cause for the breach of peace betwixt the two Realmes. (73) Things thus ordered, with confent of all parties, the marriage with great flate was folemnized the Londoners; as too much fauouring of King Edat Winchester, vpon Wednesday being the 25. of Iuwards reformation, for which cause Bonner comly and Saint Iames day, where the Emperours Emmanded all Scriptures printings vpon their Churches walles, to bee blotted out; and many other baffadors presently pronounced, that in consideration of this marriage, their mafter had given vnto his sonne Philip, the Kingdomes of Naples and Ierusainiunctions to be inquired after. But from these vain trifles let vs returne to more ferious matters in the lem, where wpon their Titles by Garter King at

Armes, was folemnely proclaimed with these stiles

Philip and Marie by the Grace of God, King and

Queene of England, France, Naples, Ierufa-

The large file of King Philip and Queene Mary. lem, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, Princes of Spaine and Cicil, Archdukes of Austrich, Dukes of Millan, Burgundie and Brabant, Counties of Haspurge, Flanders and Troll.

as followeth.

(74) And according to the stiles, so was the Maiefty of their proceedings, having two Swords Philip and Mery in great cliste palle through Leader, borne before them as they went from the Church; with other Emperiall Ensignes of their great Magnificence, which nothing was leffened in their pal-

enfuing Historie.

ouer, so many dependances of story relying vp-George Duke of Clarence, fecond brother vnto King Poole.

(79) Hee was the sonne of Margaret Countesse of Salisbury, the second childe, and onely daughter of Edward the fourth: whose youth was spent in litterature at Magdalen Colledge in Oxford; and flate increased by King Henrie his kinsman, in bestowing

The life and Ro

1. King. 11.

A dagger thrown

fter Bourne in a publicke Sermon made at Pauls- Ann. 1553:

peratly discharged against him : vnto such ha- A gun dischar-

tred their Doctrine did drive them, and vnto ged sgainst the

taught a Maide fo to speake in a wall, as her hearers beleened it was the voice of an Angell, being none o-

Crosse (in the presence of the Lord Major and Bon-

ner his Mafter) so liberally inneighed, as that one of

his Auditors with more diffrafte then discretion, and

to his great danger, and no lesse feare.

more zeale then Religon, threw a Dagger at him

(76) And againe the like offence was con-

ceited against Doctor Pendleton, who in the next yeere after, and in the same place had a gunne def- Ann. 1554.

fuch finne the ouer-feruent affectioned lay many

rimes exposed: And no leffe was that Diaboli-

call denile of certaine giddie reformers, who had

ther, but most seditions speeches, against the Queens

proceedings, the Prince of Spaine, the Masse, and

Confession. In mockage whereof also a Cat was Confession. In mockage whereof also a Cat was A Cat hanged hanged on a gallowes neere vnto the Crosse in Chespe.

Cheape, her head shorn and wearing a vesture fashio-

ned like vnto a Cope, her fore-feet tyed with around

paper betwixe, like vnto the papificall confectated bread; and in that maner the eight of April was shew-

ed by the Preacher at Pauls-Croffe both to the offece

and content of the Spectators; and to deride the ri-

diculous Idolatries of the time then in vie, vpon Ea-

fter day the same yeere, and in the same Cheape, as the Priest of Saint Panerasse came to celebrate the

refurrection, and after the accustomed manner put

his hand into the Sepulchre for the Crucifix (there-

in purposely bestowed) when he vsed the words of

the Enangelist very denoutly: Surrexit non est his.

He is risen and not heere : found it so indeed, for

Queene, and bishops, to conceine an enill opinion of

(78) Queene Marie erecting the Maffe, and lea-

ning the title of Supremacy to the Pope, fent for her kinsman Cardinall Poole to bee her director in

those great businesses, who had beene a long time in

forraigne parts, and ever a favourite vnto the See of

Rome, whose life vntill this time, we wil briefly run

(77) These things (saith Fox) caused both the Acts and Monny

voon him the Deanty of Excefter. Then trauelled he into Italy, and at Padna studied seuen yeeres, in

1	which time the King haning abolished the Pope, hee	(SA) Barelo E		, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , ,	3 MONAKCHS. Monarch 6	0. 827
1	was lent for into England, but refusing to returne.	Prelate intended found devices to hold him havened			La way vnto Well a Towns print day to the	1 7
1	was proclaimed Traitor, and his Deanery giuen to	1 Jeas - Vittil the match was concluded between		led Sacrament of his supper.		
	another : which his loffe was prefently repaid by	1 Queens Mary and his Sonne And his harry at 12	Defter See			
Poste made C	his holy Father, in making him Cardinal, & imploy- ing him in many Ambaffages, both to the Emperor	Posts appliated by the Pope, became now to enter!	Conor. Holling.p.i		Broad toth, made the way more deepe, in which	
	& French King, with whom he cuer dealt against K.	Into his frowne, for being in England and Archb.	Math.13,2		is two let dants ne lent to leeke fome relie	
1		thop of Canterbury: his old aculer, the forelaid Caraf-			l militaria (the lurer on 1001) bare the child	
1	triendhip and obedience, which his doing brought	fa, had in the meane while obtained the Papacy vnder the name of Paul the fourth: when as preiently he	Isla 10. 3		attitude to eate nim carried his Kapiera	nd
1	many into danger, and for which laftly his own mo-		2,Tim.3.17.		d (91) Thus passing thereas mine die	.
- 1	ther lost her Head.				n night, about fenen of the Clocke all	kc
1	(78) Then was he made Legate of Viterbion,		Rick.Grafi R.Hallinforg	were these excusable by their Aduersaries restimo		rd
1	where he determined to have led a more quiet life:	bad rest to enter the land, vittle a reconciliation was	Job. Fox. M.		and thee his woman no be	
i	but Pope Paul the third summoning the obtruded Councell of Trent, appointed Poole with two others	made betwise the Pope and Cardinal Peals have			ter then naught, could get no entertainement, the	he
1	to be his Vicegerents: Though indeed this Cardia	kinsman. Which man as hath beene faide, for fol- liciting Potent Princes against King Henry, in the			I migue they had not, the childe cried pirrifull	
ì	nall was none of the forwardeft in the matter of in-	quarrell of Rome, had runne in great displeature				Durcheffe.
1	itification, vnto whole opinion therein he drew one	With the English, whereby some Acts of Parliament		hath the two edged fword in his mouth, at the grea day of triall declare, to whose indgement and mercis	broken. In this diffresse the Church and	
1	Morreua learned Spaniard, who of purpose was sent				thought vpon to throwde them from raine, and	- 1
Prote elected	to dispute the Popes Doctrine in that Councell. (79) But this Holy father leaving his Chaire			(8a) Siyan fanisa	i that chief watter barry lent his two iernants to but	
Pope, Goedwin	empty by death, a faction fell among the Electors,				Coales and maw; but repairing towards this h	rie 1
-{ '	fome for the French, and fome for the Emperous	Petition, to bee received against into the bosome of A.D. 1553		macteene perinted in prion. and were buried in	The me met with two boyes that videritor	
ı	Which fall light upon Page & choole him Co. D.					rs
1	Fie altogether imperial, delired a more orderly ele-	(85) The fuit eafily granted, and abiolution gi- uen, all things proceeded at the deuotion of the		were released, and faued by the happy entrance of peaceable Elizabeth and many fled the Land in those	where he fupped. His name was Perufell and he	
1	I CION IUDDOUNG nimielte la gratique in the gree of		The story of	Ka daics of diffreste, amongst whom most memorable is	beene in England, where, of the Dutches he had n	o. l
I	most that the same would be continued to his greater praise.		therine Dutch		default with courteffe, and now at Wefell imploied h	
1	(80) But the French faction working vpon the	1 mes and old at the Celebration of their Maller	or sayante.	Dang Kichard Bartie Flouire whole Secured		
1	2 aduantage, but the reft in minde of the Con-				the Dutches was ned out of England, and that at Sas	
1	lacking of Rome, the imprisonment and lefts than		,	(SX) This I adult at	ton shee lived nothing safe, had procured for their abode in wefell, without making knowne who their	a-
1		Altars furnished with Fictures, Costly Courrings, & the Crucifix thereon folemnly placed vnto whom			English were saue onely vnto the chiefe Magistrae	a-1
1	nais Electors, whole voices they knew nor werend			by, and of Eresty; and the last wife of Charles Bran- don Duke of Suffolke lately deceased, in whose time	(92) Mafter Barty defiring to fneake with the	a l
1					ividiater, he presently came downe, who seeing th	
1	gainst Poole the elected, charging him (as Passaill likewisedid) with incontinency of body, as also of				Dutches to diiguiled in apparel, and bemired in dur	
1	Herefie, for aroning your a inflifting four in al				could not ipeake vnto her for teares, and bringin	or l
1	Herefie, for arguing vpon a infiffying faith in the Councell of Trent, for frequenting the company		The Dutchel			7
Poole accused by		faying, that shee set more by the saluation of her owne Holizafied, soile, then shee did by tenne Kingdomes: A worthy purple.	no faucurer o		cheffe with his wife, and their childs with ab	
Cardinali Ca-	lince he was Legate, that he neuer had punished that		gien.	told him it was well with the Lambes now the wolfe was that vp. These stucke fore vpon the Bishops sto-	childe of the houle; and thus were they comforted	4
1-9	doctrine with death.			macke, who being now rifen to bee Lord Chancel-	by this good Preachers meanes.	4
1	(81) Butthese accusations, were rather to shrub off his faire top, that Caraffa himselfe might more	this cale doe rather mulicil the mouth of the O		four or England, and the in diferace with the Onecne	(93) Heere they seated not long, but that a sud	-
1		that it ductiff out their Corne, then inferinch as		Tot ties match in marrying Matter Fartes man roo in	daine watchword was sent them from Sir Iohn Ma- Jon, Queene Maries Ambassador in Netherland, that	The Dutcheffe
1	1 De their faireit marke: wherein his politicke avnaga			reriour for her high citate, he thought it a firtume	the Lord Paget had fained an arrant to the Spaw, and	foughtafter to be impeached,
1		(86) And furely fo well inclined was Mary of		and occasion to require, and to that end fent for Ma-		
1	10 cleered himielfo, that the French Caraffa received	the felfe, that had not the zeale of her religion, and the authority of Churchmen oner fivaired her owne difficultion, the flames of their confiuming fires had in her owne difficultion that the flame of their confiuming fires had in her owne difficulties.		fter Bartie her husband, charging him to be indebted foure thousand pound to the Queene, which was	Would patte by Welell for the fernice of . Audula:	- 1
i	diligrace, and all their voices went for Paglagues at a	disposition, the flames of their confirming fires had in her owne dif-			gainst the French King, by whom the Dutchesse and her husband should be intercepted and deliue-	·
Pasts againe chofan Pope.	fame night, which he againe seemed to dislike of, saying, that his election should not be a worke of	not mounted fo high. But woe to the procurer of		Suffoke vinto whom thee was Executive but this was	red vnto the Lord Paget.	-
chofan Pope.				Uncly the trayne of a faile fire, and the Dutchelle ve	(94) From hence therfore in hafte they removed	
1	tect vpon the next day: inch affirmance had his home.			ligion the marke he aumed as for whom Man n		
1				tie lo wifely wrought, as himfelfe was appointed to	reacculi the Palleranes Dominions, where by his	
ł	miorced to let the Papail Crowne voon hie	wete againe put in practize, eipecially two, the one of them touching life, and the other losse of goods;		be her perswader, and so inwardly grew with the Lord Chancellor, that by his meanes he obtained li-		
1	ricag.		ì			
1	(82) But whether it were his double delay, or his neglecting to firike when the yron was hot, the			his Dutchelle by the Emperour.		
1	Electors change their determination and choolests		TheDutcheffe	(89) Bartie being some, and Lady Katherina Co.	At which very inflant (God fo mouing the hearts of his]Princes) the Palatine of Vilua, and the King of Pole hearing of their diffress, cent them a fafe con-	God doth helpe
ı			Suffice floath the Land.	cretly to follow, vpon the first of Ianuarie with foure	Pole hearing of their diffresse, sent them a safe con-	faile
1				men, two women, and her young daughter, her selfe apparrelled like a Merchants wife, from Lyon Key in	duct, under the Palatines feale with affarance of	1
1	his Dackwardnes, enforced Caraffa to aske him for	of lesse then four eyeeres continuance, there died no lawer of Queen lesse, for the testimonial of their conscience in this 34sq.		London departed the morning years miles - 11	manifedance if they would come unto those parts.	
1	glucies before they departed the Carelana, Pasta			ilicart traught with leare ; for no fooner was free!	(95) From Winchesta therefore they forthwish	
1	thus disappointed of the Papall Chaire, retired him-	fons without regard of degree, fexe or age.			departed, and in Wagon tooke towards Franckford, but by the Langraues Captaine were intercepted	1
1	felfe vnto Verona, where in a Monastery of S. Bennets (which order he had assumed and was the Patron) he					1
1	made his Kendence, as delirous to leade a more con-	Gentlemen aid one and twenty Dinines, eight of Glo Re. Farrar.		Darke could attaine to the place : where being	Was forced to stand at defence submain at a Committee	
1		med fine Bishops, one and twenty Dinines, eight of Glara-Farer. Gentlemen, eighty foure Artificets, one hundred Laf S. Da. Nieb. husbandmen fernants and labourages. Research Relians, 8, 15 to 15.		shrowded by a Marchant under the name of his daughter, shee escaped to Sea; but twice her shippe		
1	(83) But scarcely was he settled before he heard	husbandmen feruants and labourers, twenty fixe Ridge, 8. of Los, wines, twenty widowes nine Victims and Mugh Latimer 8.		with contrary windes was driven to the fame shoate,		
		and two Infants, one of them whipped to death be men drift of		to her great danger and no little griefe - ver laftly		' 1
	Queene Marie (who had beene brought vp vnder the Countesses to Mother) for his returne into England.	wines, twenty widowes, nine Virgins, two boyes, and two Infants, one of them whipped to death by B. Benner, & the other fpringing out of his mother wombe from the flake as they have a better the wombe from the flake as they have a better the second of th		The arrived in Brabant where thee mer with her buc	fled amaine, but was so eagerly followed vpon opi- nion of murther, that hee hardly escaped with life,	į
	Her affection towards him, he knew was very great	wombe from the stake as shee burned, was by the		band: whence (being clad like a froc) they came in-		1
Cardinall Peole		barbarana amala againe into the fire: Which		to Cleueland, and at Santon seated themselues, til fur- ther provision could be made.	norably entertained untill the death of Ouern Mary	- 1
fent for by Queene Mary.		barbarous cruelty, howfocuer the Author of Eng-		(90) But the Townsmen suspecting they were	whose mem the meane while let vs returne to re-	1
Queene Mary.		lands three Conucrinos, would excuse, as worthy of death; deprausing the sufferers, of learning, religion, civil manners, and heard, of the sufference of th		not the Personsthey went for, and the Bishoppe of	Hare.	1
1		citill manners and honoring of life		Arras hearing that they were Protestants, purposed	(96) The November next following her mariage,	A.D. 1554.
1		Charitable of his owner and and profession 1		with the Magistrate to impeach their liberties, which		
-1	get a dispensation, to lay off the Hat, and to put on a	tie tile Tptti ng of to much Christian bloods be ores.	U 1114	Bartie hearing of, with his Froe and daughter, at-	with child, for ioy whereof Te Deum was comanded folemnly to be fung, and Processions, and Praiers,	eith Childe.
3		test point of no greater sinne, then to beleeue Christs		tended onely with two feruants fuddenly made a-	made for her fafe deliuerance. The Queene tooke	1
		[piritual t	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·		Hhhhhh 2 her	1
		The state of the s				

	1.0		Dook.9
1	her Chamber, the Court was full of Midwines, and	all diligent fearch was laid for the Connerfeit : an	d William Faller
1	Gentiewomen attendants, Rockers were proni- ded, the Cradle prepared, and all made so certain,		
So called by Si	that some were purphed for making doubt of the	1 22 ampton Court nee Was Dreiently connaind when	D CHAMINE
a Knight of the			
house An. 1 8c.	that if God fhould take away Ouenes Marie . shie	as a transicke, and lent to the Marthall See for a l n	- I
remp.eronen			
1		terfeite king · (whose Crowne was a paper inscribe	d
1		with his fault) was brought vnto Wessminster, and	d
1	and Gouernour of the Kealmes vestil shair	from thence whippped vnto Smithfield, whence he was banished into the North, and without further	e
ĺ .	Trince of Finicene mould come to able veeree	punishment was so released. But this Fetherster	Fether for execu-
All & Ston.			
p.1643.b.			
l	mit chitalice, lice had the hall dore of his Court	he was again apprehended, condemned of Treaton	3
(continually Rept linut, neither any inffered to enter		
The feares of K.	vinetie his buffnes was first made known; the Jorde	(101) Now the expeded sime of Queme see	
Philip.	Hauring reade to depart London, had first comman,		
	dement to fend all their harnesse and Artillerie to		
	the Tower; which was done, in regard of the ma-		
	ligners of this marriage: yea and somewhat doubt-		
Lord Pages,	full hee was also of those, who in shew bare him a	detailed the beauty of that goodly hove and gives	t The BarCan as C
	faire face; the rather for that a Noble man in con-		
	fuitation, had given his counfell to cut off Lady E-	I INAUC DV ERE English Marchanese the Manie	Januar/Sais.
		I moles were left them from the Lady R coent-but	I IOI Q Maries
	Detter vitto initia litanger: WEO contrartwile upon (
K.Philipagrest	this ground fo laid the foundation of his true ho-	the y and mortiv into another points for the small	. 1
triend vnto Lady	nour, as it gained him loue of all true English hearts: for from that day he neuer left to solicite his Queen		
Elszweth,			
	for the delinery of that innocent Princesse her fifter, who still remained a solitary Prisoner in Woodstocke,		
	though no proofes could bee brought for any of-		
	fence.		
	(08) Ariaft his five was absenced I T.		
		was made oragion, I referre viito others that know	
Lady Elizabeta		anore:	
rought in pre-	lene the louist constitution Caves after. thee twee Cone i	(102) King Philip thus frustrate of his hope for	
Queene.		LIS FIELD VEON the tourth of Castanian and annual	A.D. 1555.
-	Clocke in the night: which the no fooner had an and		1 "
			1 1
1	let de nei Soutraigne Wizienv: proteiting her lovel	and the delic years and its moneths, to the great griefe	l l
			King Philip ab- fent from the
	ipoken of integrated to the contrary. Untourhow		Queencà veere
- 1	the One one open has how also Gid at	of no iche. Dut now returning to Dayer has more be-	and tix moneths.
	flourely vpon your truth; I pray God your truth may [0 fall our: I francouch the Distance of the content of the	and brought through	A.D.1557.
- 1	floutely vpon your truth; I pray God your truth	Longon accompanied with many Dogge of L.	March 18.
		Realme, as in triumph against a Coronation.	
		(103) In whole absence many Conspiracies had	
			1 - 1
		I serry extragalated before the fire could buelt into	
			1 .
		this attempt were Henry Peckham, John Daniel, Ri-	
		chard V dall, John Throckmorton, John Dethicke, Wil-	
			. 1
1.	and to thinke thee your true Anbieck which from	the renealer of the same intendments. These all	. 1
		excepting White, were at fundy times executed, and Sir Anthony Kingfton apprehended for the same, died	l
		on the way vnto London.	1
		(104) The like firtes were arrenneed by	1
11	departed; a.r stip as is thought transfing behind the		
1.			
1.	(99) Some feuen dayes after, her Grace was dif-		Conspiracies in
dy Mi zebetb			Norfoike.
		Armes, and to free the land of wrongs done by	1
			1
		(105) Solikewife Thomas Staffard Good Com	1
			Thomas Stafford
			litreth tebellion
1.	Elizabeth enery day more affectionatelie re-	1 or old the Seas; from whence afternoring (till to	
1		broach their Rebellions, they fent certaine bookes	
page to Sia	(100) About this time, William Conftable, alias	and letters written and printed, full of most flands	1
page to Sir			1
		into England, anuited by iome English and Grangers	-
			j
	gerous or likely to bee beleeued. Notwithstanding	fire, where hee published a most shamefull procla-	1
j°			

1	mation against the Queene, traiterously affirmi that shee was neither rightfull, nor worthy of raig	Rhemes by Clarenceaux King at Armes. The French	
1		King loth to heare of these warres made his answere	A defiance fen
1	greatest and strongest holds of the land. But byt	and preparations accordingly: and Queene Mary	into France.
1	proweffe of Thomas Pearley (prefently created East	contrary to promife, entangling her fubicetes with	
Thomas Sta	of Northumberland) hee was furprised, fent to Lo	the quarrels of the Spaniards, with found of Trum-	
beheaded.	don, and there made florter by the head. All the	pet in London proclaimed warres against France. To	
1	firres quieted, new troubles were rather fought for then ministred and more left.	profecute which, King Philip her husband paffed o-	
1	then ministred, and more losse followed to England	made provision to ensemble Call, where hee	ta.t. 6
	dishonour, then glory had beene gained by this Spinish great Match.	- Queene fent a thought after whom the	luly 6.
1	(106) Foreba Eman	footmen, and two thousand Dis-	An Army fent
1	(106) For the Emperour ouer-worne with the affaires of the world, and weared with the trouble of turmoiling wars, or rather and the trouble of turmoiling wars.	of Pembroke was appointed Constitution of Pembroke was appointed Constitution	nto France.
1	of turmoiling ware carried with the trouble	der whom in fenerall places formed VI	
	of confeience for the infei	tacute the I Green of without I T	Lieutenant. Lord Martha!
Grimfton in t	him vpon Florence, Naples, Sicilie, Tuscane, Elbe		Lord Marina;
French Hifto	and Calabria, being perfivaded that these mournful		Coronel of
_	iarres of Christian Princes had given to the Turke		oct. M. of the Or-
pag.563.	aduantage vpon divers parts of Europe, hee called		inance,
Charles the En	his sonne King Philip of England vnto Braxels (as it		
perour refign	faid) where, by authenticke letters bearing date	(111) These passing the Seas, ioined with King	
	the fine and twentieth of October, hee refigned all		
K.[bil/p.	his Realmes vnto him, commanding all his effaces		
	lawfull King; and among many other instructions		•
	and most wife exhortations, gaue him charge chiefly		
	to hold amity with the French, left otherwise the		
	Christendome.		
	(107) King Philip indeed was much inclined to		
	peace, and Queene Mary his wife at that time much		
	more, both to hold him with her at home, & to sup-	himselfe was both hurt & taken prisoner with eight Noblemen more, all of them Knightes of the	
	port the Religion which shee had raised, by restoring the Ciercie their wonred		
	ring the Clergietheir wonted possessions, whereof	his English came to the flege, by whole manly prow-	
	much was then held in the Noblemens hands, from	effe Saint Quintins was taken, for ioy whereof great	
	whole hard-hold, hardly could any thing bee wre-	triumphes were made in England, which long lafted S.	
	fted; but those in her owne, shee freely resigned by Parliament, with this most Christian resolution, and		Quintimetaker the English.
	princely faying: that shee set more by the saluati-		uguit, 20.
		both negligent and carelesse, so that the Towne of	
		Callis, and the Forts thereabout for defence, were	
			T- 1:0
		supply to those peeces, the Souldiers thinking alout	English neg- nt after Saint
		of danger, flood gazing at the fladow till the fub-	rateat Mas .
		france was fost: for the French being netled, that S.	ine.
		Quintins was Philips, let slippe no occasion wherin	
		was aduantage: and the Duke of Guize imploying	
		the Conflables place, determined to put in proofe an	
		beene purposed vpon.	
		(113) This danger fore-feene, intelligence ther-	
Danah C.		first the Master of the Ouding	
e Pope belie- i, lendeth to uses for helpe,		Councell, and fecondly followed to the 106mg	Hiefeild.
use for helpe,		the Castell himselfe, but either by wilfull negligence	
		or lacke of credite with the Queene and Councell,	sph Cham-
n Sicidon.	reactly Sword, and thereppon had focuse her el-		
		vntill the supply was altogether too late. For the	- 1
	But the French decreasing for want of pay, and the Spaniard still raising their Trophees of victory, the	Duke of Gaize with a maruellous celerity approached the English Francier under a security approach	- 1
		ed the English Frontier, vnder a colour to victuall Forts	nglith
		Boloigne and Ard, and vpon a little forry platte of Guize.	loft to the
1		ground, intrenched at Sandgate, and thence dividing land	ary I,
- 1			y 1,
1			- 1
}			- 1
1	any ministred by him for the breach of peace. Her		mbridge
1			- 1
Stow Annals		against Reebanke, being abandoned by the Eng- lish Souldiers, and left to the Guize and his dif-	- 1
		pole and his dif-	1
			ı
		(114) Then were Canons mounted against Cal-	1
			1
1	for accounting of Stafford, and his rebellione com-	dayes together, a breach made in the wall, not farre from the Water-gate, but yet vnaffaultable, the Eng-	- 1
	nees, for functing his Pyrats to molel her Cene 2. 1	lish within so maintained the defence: this then a	- 1
		traine of falle fire (for the Franch - and this then a) callies be	effeged
			uke of
- 1	headged, were supported by him.	acceffe that way) whileft all attended to make good the breach, the Duke had planted fifteene double canons againft the Caffell which come double	- 1
• 7. J	(110) I field things premiled a defiance mas Compl		7
- 1	nto France, and was pronounced vnto Henry at	the Callizians knowing their refistance to weake, sto-	- 1
		red	İ

(bap. 23 | Queene Marie. ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 60.

red Barrels of Gun powder within the Keepe, meaning to blow up the French if they there entred, but that denife failed; having waded through the ditch their clothes dropping wet, disabled the traine of powder to take fire, fo that the French gotte the Caitle with the death of Sir Anthony Ager Marshall of the Towne, his ionne and heire and fourescore Englifb belides.

(117) The Lord Wentworth then Deputie of the Callis furrende-Towne feeing all in like danger if meanes were delayed, sent vnto the Castle to have a Parlee for composition, which the French foorthwith accepted, and fent out two Gentlemen for pledges whilest John Herfield Master of the Ordinance, and Edward Hall Constable of the Castle, concluded vpon these difhonourable Articles, as followeth:

1 That the Towne, the great Artillery, Victuals and munition should bee yeelded freely to the

2 That the lines of all the inhabitants should bee faued, and haue their fafe conduct to depart.

commanded into the Churches of our Lady, and

3 That the Lord Deputy with fifty others whom the Duke would appoint, should remaine prisoners and be put to their ranfome. (116) Thingsthus ordered, the English were

The hard viage of the English.

ism the Con-

Vahonourable

Saint Nicholas, where they remained that whole day, the night following, and until the next day in the afternoone, without either meate or drinke, in which time the Duke of Gaize commanded by Proclamation that all Iewels, Plate and Money to the value of a groate should bee laid upon the Altar, and that vpon paine of death, a forrowfull offertory towards the English, and a great enrichment varo the French. Then was the Towne voided of fine hundred ordinary Souldiers (a fmall Garrison indeed to man fuch a place) of Townsmen women and children, fourethousand two hundred; the Lord Wentworth Deputy, Sir Ralphe Chamberlaine Cap-taine of Rietbankle, Nicholas Alexander Captaine of Newsambridge, Edward Grimflen, John Rogers, and others, to the number of fifty were fent prifoners into France vntill ransome were paid : And thus the Town & Forts that were won by the victorious querour, wann K. Edwardthe third, & that by no leffe then eleuen

moneths leige, having now beene possessed by the English the space of two hundred and eleuen yeeres,

was in the compas of eight daies belieged, surprized

and wonne in the depth of Winter to the worlds wonder, and great suspition of treachery, which happened the seuenteenth day of Ianuary, and in the same moneth were surrendred the strong forts of Guizes, and Hames, whereby all the English footing was loft in the Continent of France. (117) This winning of Callis & the other ftrong holds as they were loyous to the French, and with Te

Deum & Bonefires celebrated with no leffe folemnity, then was that for the recourry of the County oye, & the fort won from the English in An. 1347.10 was r greenous vnto the English Nobility, and most of al vnto Queene Marie her felfe. Insomuch as thee ceafed not to trauell with the King and Councel how to couerthe dishonour of her Raigne, by this losse of Callis; and albeit some affairs were made against Breeft, and Mountienr Thermes the new Captaine of Callistaken prisoner by County Egmont General for King Philip in the Low Countries, yet the maine was neglected, and could not be recovered for any composition, which stroke so deepe a melancholy into Queene Maries minde, as shee letted not to say, Queene Maries that the losse of Callis was written in her heart, and might sayings for the therein bee read when her body should bee opened. In which passions she continued the rest of her Raigne, which neuer had beene very prosperous, nor greatly pleasurable vnto her selfe, after shee had abolished the Gospell, reftored the Popes Supremacy, and ma-

ried a stranger, who was vnto her a stranger indeede.

raging, hurr done by thunders from heaven, and by

fire in the royall Nauie, forraigne losses, Callis surren-

dered, and King Philips keeping from Court, daily augmented Queene Maries melancholy, which laft-lie increasing to a burning seauer made an end of her life, at her Mannor of S. I ames neere Westminster, the

7.of Nonemand yeere of Christs incurnation 1558.

whe fhe had raigned fine yeers foure moneths, & ele-

uen daies, and lived forty two yeeres nine moneths

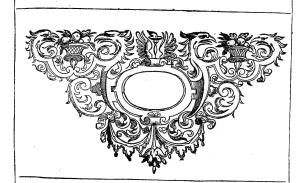
and fixe daies, whose body lyeth interred in a Chappell in the Minster of Saint Peters at Westminster.

without any monument or other remembrance.

(118) Of al fince the Conquest her Raigne was

the shortest, only excepting that of Richard the Tyrant, but much more bloudy then was his, and more blood foilt in that short time of her Raigne, then had Queene Main beene shed for case of Christianity, in any Kings time Raigne most bloody.

Cheene she shed for case of Christianity, in any Kings time Raigne most bloody. Realme. Her conceptions failing, extreame dearths



ELIZABETH

Chap.24. Queene Elizabeth ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 61. | 831



ELIZABETH QVEENE OF ENG-Moharch 61 LAND, FRANCE AND IRELAND, DEFEN-

DER OF THE FAITH, &c. THE SIXTIE ONE MONARCH

OF THE ENGLISH CROVVNE SINCE HINGIST THE FIRST SAXON, AND THE LAST BEFORE THE V-NION OF THE VVHOLE ILAND, HER GLORIOVS RAIGNE, LIFE AND ACTS, VVITH THE TREA-SONS AND INVASIONS ATTEMPTED

AGAINST HER PERSON AND STATE.



An.D. 1558

had beene hoped) presently dispelled all foggy

HE Cloud thus set, that threatned more stormes, and a quiet calme happening when the rage was at highest, that wished Sunne then ascended our Horizon, whose rayes (as

Mists from Englands faire Skie; which was, the most milde Princesse Lady Elizabeth, another Debora, and nurjing mother of Gods Saints, who being then at Haffield in Hert-

fordshire, was there first saluted Queene, and the same day, with great joy and full consent of both the Houses of Parliament (ar that time affembled) was solemnly proclaimed Queene of England, with all other stiles rightly belonging to that Imperiall (2) Shee entred her Gouernment voon Thurs-

day the seauenteenth of Nouember, the same day that her fister Queene Mary died, the yeer of Christs affuming our flesh, 1558 and of her own age, twenty foure yeeres, two moneths and ten dayes. From Hatfeild a fieremoued vnto Charterhouse in London; Nouembas. from whence thee was royally attended wnto the * Nourmb.18.

Gggggg2

the originall, is thus translated.

promised, and doth promise as well in his owne name, as

answerable, promising that hee will take care of and effect

ratifieit, within two moneths after the date of this treaty,

(hallpresently without delay, relinquish, deliuer, and re-

flore, or cause to be delivered, and restored to the faid

most noble Prince Elizabeth, Queene of England, her

heires, and jucce fors, or to those that should bee thereunto

D. Sands. M.Horne, M.Geft.

The Defendors of M. Whitehead. those Assertions M. Grindall, M.Elmer. M. Jewell

These being solemnly set with many Honourable Counsellors among them, before the Conference could well beginne, it was finally ended, and all through the default of the Bishops (as Stow hath alleadged) who, first pleaded a mistaking of their directions, and in the next fitting, veterly refused either to write their owne, or to reade the others reasons, whereby all was vindone that was intended, and whereof a part was * imprinted as is yet to bee (6) During the time of this Parliament a Petiti-

on was made vnto her Maiesty for the hope of roiali

Iffue, to moue her vnto marriage; vnto which e-

loquent Oration deliuered by the Speaker, shee re-

merly offered her by her Prince, nor the grieuan-

ces sustained by her, whiles shee lived among

"those enemies, whose indignation was death, had

hitherto beene able to divert her: but whether

"her .yeeres and answere could concord together

in their indicious minds; the certainely knew not;

out of kind, and proue vngracious. And there-

fore to leave behind her a more lasting and grate-

a Queene hadraigned, lived, and dyeda Virgen: and

so with many thankes dismissed the assembly. How

the first was accomplished, weethat lived under her

raigne haue seene; but how insufficient that one

Rone is to containe, & continuate the remembrance

of hervertuous, pious, and glorious gouernment, the whole world doth at this day, and shall to all suc-

eeding ages witnesse, whilest the Earth rests in the

(7) For the cause of Religion shee sent into Ger-

Center, and the Heavens have restlesse movings.

full remembrance, thee held it sufficient, that a Quarebether

Marble-stone should declare to posterities, that the Parliament

'plyed with great thankes for their louing care for

ended almost as

By Rich Lugge

her, and their owne Country: but as touching Q. Elezabeth her

their request, shee answered, that from the time, ee when first shee considered herselfe to bee borne a mariage. feruitor of God, shee happily did choose, and in truth best liked a Virgins life, from which, neither "Ambition of high marriages, which had been for-

and that for the publike good, if occasion were ministred speem ould spend her dearest bloud. (4) The fifteenth of I answery (being Sunday) the Coronation was folemnely performed, and the Imperiall Crowne fet on her head by Doctor owen eglethorpe Bishoppe of Carlile, the Archiepiscopal See of Canterbury being vacant euer since her entrance, by the death of Cardinall Poole, who died the

Tower, and all complements prepared for her Coro-

nation. In which time Proclamations came forth . mation touching forbidding any man to preach but by appointment,

or to alter any Ceremonies, but according to the

ritesin her owne Chappell, as also that the Letanie, the

Epifiles and Gofpels should bee read in all Churches in

(3) All things in a readines upon the fourteenth

of lanuary, with great triumphes and sumptuous Her pastage of Ianuary, with great triumphes and iumptuous through London towards West-

minster to receive the Imperial Crown; but before

face entred her Chariot in the Tower, acknowledging

that the feat was Gods into which fhee was to enter,

and the his Ficegerent to weild the English Scepter; in

that royall affembly with eyes and hands elevated

to heaven vpon her knees, shee praied for his affi-

stance, as Salomon did for wisdome when hee tooke

the like charge; with a thankefull remembrance vn-

to God for his continued preferuation, who had

brought her through great dangers vnto that pre-

fent dignity. In which triumphail State as shee

paffed through the streetes of London, when the

Booke of God was presented unto her at the little Con-

duit in Cheape, shee received the same with both her

hands, and kiffing it, laid it to her breaft faying, that

the same had euer beene her chiefest delight, and should

bee the rule by which (be meant to frame her gouernment.

And to testifie her benigne acceptance of the Lord Maior, and Citizens approved loves, she assured them

that shee lacked no will, nor (as shee hoped) power to bee

to them as gratious a Prince as ever raigned in the Land

the English tongue.

Queene Eliza-

The Bible pre-fented to Queen

Elizabeth.

The religious

care of Queene

Her Coronation

Cardinall Pools

and Q. Mary died both in one

Stat.prim. Eliza.

The Propolition to bee discussed.

Job. Stow p. 1084

The Disputants

'yet this shee assured them, that as then shee stood lo affected, and if that affection changed, her choise fame day that Queene Mary did. 'should bee onely of such a one, as should bee as (5) Presently there followed a Parliament, whercarefull, fhee would not say, as her selfe, (because in the Title of Supremacy was againe reftored to the cap.i. In the I tile of Supremay was against tenored to the The Regall Su- Crowne, with the furth fruits, and Tenths of all Ecclessian fhee knew her felfe best) but as any of them for the Realmes good, and yet withall shee considered, afticall livings, and the Booke of Common Prager ratifithat although her felfe, for their welfare (if neede were) would not shunne death, yet might her Iffue, (as often hapneth to the best parents) grow

ed for an vniforme celebration of Gods divine feruice in the English Churches; as also those Acts re-Queene Maries Acts repealed. pealed, that were enacted by Queen Marie, in fauor of the Romish Religion. Things thus established, and liberty giuen to the Gospell, many that had fled the Realm in case of conscience, returned, and were prouided for according to their worthes, and that Gods Truth might be established, (which thing her princely heart chiefly fought after) a conference was com-Conference at [manded and begunne at westminster the last of

touching Religio March, concerning certain Articles to be discussed amongst the Diuines. The Propositions were three. I It is against the worde of God, and custome of the ancient Church, to vie a tongue wnknowne to the people, in common Prayer, and the Administration of the Sa-

> 2 Every Church bath authority to appoint, take away, and change Ceremonies, and Ecclefiafticall rites, fo the (ame be to edification.

3 It cannot bee proved by the word of God, that

there is in the Masse offered up a sacrifice propitiatory for the quicke and the dead. The Bishop of Winchester, The Bishoppe of Liebstield,
The Bishoppe of Carlile,
the Assertions The Bishoppe of Lincolne,

D.Cole. D. Harpsfeild. D. Langdall, D.Chedsey.

many touching a league defensive, the Pope troubling the waters of that cleare fountaine, and difabling her Title with the calumnie of illegitimation. Ex Montfeript. In the meane while a peace being on foot betwixt Hem.Killigew. the Kings of France and Spaine, Queene Elizabeth alfo interpoled for England, wherein the restoring of Callis was a maine point, whereupon her Highnesse flood, which was thus. (8) For the Earle of Arundell, the Bishoppe of E.

ly, and Doctor Wotton Deane of Canterbury remaining Commissioners in France at the death of Queen Mary, vpon composition for the regaining of Callis, The instructions & other peeces lost in the cause of K. Philip: her Maiesty sent them instructions to continue their demands, and certain fore grounds wheron they might worke. The first was that the quarrell of war was not Englands, but Philips of Spaine, in whose fauour Queene Mary his wife against the will of her Councell, fent him aid of her Subiects And if in case the

She claimeth

the Crowne of France, to that they should answere, that there were many Signiories and places in Proofes that Cal-France, wherunto the English might make their iust luwas Englands. claime, and some in possession since Callis was English, which Towne was not onely Lawfully granted, and affured from the French themselues vnto the Crowne of England, but was also allowed by Articles of all treatiles of peace, for the space of two hundred yeeres and more, this euermore specially provided, that Callis should remaine in the quiet possession of the English. And the better to impresse the delivery of Callis, in the mould of the French, they were to demand cer-

the faid most Christian King his beers and successors shall leave the possession of all the Said places, and depart from it, and wholly for sake the same. So that the most noble Lady Queene Elizabeth, her herres and successors may peaceably entoy, and quietly bold the possession of them, with al the rights, priviledges, preeminences, superiorities; recognitions, and all other authorities in the like manner, flate, condition and nature in which the Kings of England taine arrerages, wherein their King and Realme had have held them, and possessed them before the beginning of this last warre. Provided notwithstanding, and exfallen for great summes of monies and debts accruing to the English Crowne: aswell by the acknowpresty couenanted, that the said most Christian King, his ledgement of the mother of King Francis then being heires and successors shall not be bound to resione or deli-Regent of France, and judgement thereupon giuen; uer the Townes and Fortresses, and places aforesaid, o asalfo by the treaty of More, de Dato, 1525. The therwise then in the same state, manner, and condition, in treaty of perpetuall peace, de Dato, 1527. and the which now at this prefent they are, and beercafter shall be late treaty betweene King Henry the eight, and King strengthened and fortified by them, during the laid terme, Francis, for the delinery of Bullein, de dato, 1546.by ail which appeareth, that there was two Millions of yet so not withstanding as neither in the time of such restitution nor before, that there be not any thing done of fet Crownesdue, and very little thereof yet paid, the purpose, whereby the former state of the strengthes, and copies of which treatifes and confession, the faid fortifications which now it is in, or which heereafter ad-Commissioners have with them. Also another debt of an hundred thouland crownes, as appeareth by a ded, by them, bee in any wife minished, broken, or ouer Bill of King Francis hand. And where also there is throwne, but that all things without fraude, bee restored one perpetuall pension of fiftie thousand crownes intire and vnimpaired, in maner aforefaid. Alfoit is covenanted and agreed, that during the terme

deputed by her, or her heires and successors, the said towne

of Callis, wish the appertinances and appendices aforefaid,

and all other and fingular places aforefaid, and also the

Towers, Castles, and fortresses what joeuer in the afore-

Said parts, and also the places now of use builded, for sified,

or reedified aring the faid terms of eight yeeres; and

due, as appeareth by the treatic of perpetuall peace, of the (aid eight yeeres, it shall neither bee lawfull for the and one other pension of Salt, as appeareth by the Said Christian King, nor for the laid most fortunate King fame treatie. All which notwithstanding, rather and Queene of Scots, nor for the faid most happy Queene then the French should retaine Callis, her maiesty of England to innovate, attempt, or enterprise by warre any thing against each other or for any one of them against was contented to remit the whole debt and arrerages: but without that in no wise shee held it conthe other, or against the Kingdomes, proper dominiuenient to conclude peace with France, and that obons, and Subjects of each other, either directly or indiretained, shee remitted the other Articles to the disetly, to the presidence of this present reasise. One. And likewise if anything shall bee so innovated and attempted cretion of the Commissioners. But the English Queene was no more desirous to haue Callis, then by the Said most Christian King, and most happy King the French King vnwilling to let it goe. Whereupon and Queen of Scots, or the subjects of them, by the anlastly it was thus concluded, That Callis should remaine French, the tearme of eight yeeres, and those thority, commandement, and approbation of them, or any of them. Then the faid most Christian King, and King expired, should returne to the English vpon forfei Daulphin, their heires and successors, by such kinde of inture of fine hundred thousand crownes; the branch nouation attempted, opon the deed done, shall bee bound of which agreement, from the Latine, and that from and obliged to leave and depart from the possession and occupation of the faid Towne of Callis, and of all other pla-(9) It is covenanted, agreed, and conclude d, that the Said most noble Lady Queene of England, Shall Suffer and ces aforesaid on this side the sea, taken of late from the English, by the said most Christian King. And all those permit the fore said most Christian King of France, his hetres and successors, to hold, possess, and peaceably entry, things they shall deliner and restore without any delay to from the day of the date of this present treaty, untill the the faid most worthy Queene of England, in the fame materme of eight yeeres following, the Towns of Callis, with the appertinances and appendices belonging to the same, ner and forme, in which at the faid terme of eight yeeres, they were promised and covenanted to be restored : which the approximance ame approximate to surgest a to jume, and also the port or hauen of the said Towne, with the Tower of Raylbank, and also the Towers, Lordhips, villeges, and places of Rewnainbridge, Merke, Oye, restitution if it shall not be so made, the said Merchants and pledges shall be bound to pay the said penalty of fine hundred thousand Crowns to the said most worthy Queen of England, and the covenant not with flanding of resto-Hams, Sandgate, the Tower and Towne of Guifnes, and ring the said Towne shall neverthele se remaine in force. all the rest of that County taken in this last warre, and all Angeoner if any of the Subsects of any of the Princes a-forefaid, of their owne authority, shall endeauour or atother Townes, Castles, Villages, Lands, Dominions, Territories, Waters, Rivers, Hauens, Defences, Forts and tempt any thing against the subjects of either of the said Shores, and generally all places what soeuer scituate unto Princes in presudice of this Treatife, he fall be punished them by the fea, which the faid most Christian King hath as an infringer of the peace, according to the quality of the gotten in this last warre, and taken by force of Armes, in the raigne of the most noble Lady Mary, late Queene of England. And the faid most Christian King, hath

These conenants notwithstanding they were sealed and sworne vnto, yet were neuer performed at the yecres of expiration, though Marchants were bound, and hoftages assigned to remaine in England till the money were paid.

promises, and auto promise aspect in mis owne name, as in the name of the King Daulphin his some, his better, and successors, for which Daulphin, the said most Christian King hath made himselfe, and doth make himselfe. (9) So suspicionally had this Towns of Callis beene recourred from the English, that the Lord that the faid King Daulphin shall approve this treaty, and Wentworth (the Deputic) was indited in Queene Maries daies, and now arraigned at westminster; the which faid terme of eight yeeres being complete and en-ded, the faid most Christian King his heires and successors Marquesse of Northampton being his ludge, and Lord Chiefe Steward of England for that day; but that Nobleman so nobly defended himselfe, that he was acquitted by his Peeres, and wan a most houourable opinion for his many and faithfull services. (10) Her Highnesse having thus elected the

CESSION OF Monarch 61, Book 9 Eng. ish aire from all Papall infection, and effablithereupon they began to put the same in execution, thed Peace, the greatest benefit for the Subject; on commanding all that had charge of foules to fit the foureteenth of May, being thhis unday, Divine themselues to their functions, otherwise to looke for Service began to be celebrated in the English tongue, celebrated in th no fauour from deprivation, after the terme of fixe English tongue. whereby Gods Trumpet might bee heard in a permoneths. Which was (faith the fame Author) the Many Scotish moneths. Which was (lath the tame Author) the many scotting principall earle, that a great number of young Abbots, Sec. advance feet found, and the praiers of the Congregation vitered with an understanding heart. To the end there-Priors, Deacons, and beneficed men, aid asift the enter- true Religion. fore that the Clergy, the Teachers of others, thould prize, and practifed deuises for the ouershrow of the Ca-The oath of Sunot be infected themselves, the Oath of Supremasy, tholike Religion. with other Articles, was offered unto them, the re-(15) True it is, that at the preaching of John Stirres in Scotfusers whereof were forthwith deprined, and others Knoxe, and other Ministers affecting reformation, land tailed by furrogated that were more locally affected. In place not onely the Images, Altars, and other like things fome heady pro of Poole deccased, Doctor Parker was consecrated of abuse, were cast downe and burnt, but also the Archbishop of Canterbury, and of Torke, Doctor Charterhouse of the Friers at Perth destroied, which Younge in fteade of Heth, who refused the Oath; and was the fairest Abbey in the Realme of Scotland; fo of some others : then went foorth Commissioners then followed the ouerthrow of the Monasteries of to suppresse those Monasteries restored by Queene Saint Andrewes, of Stone, of Striueling, and of Linlit-Marte, and to cast out those Images set up in Churhaw; which ouerheady proceedings caused such ches, whole fight having heated the blinde zeale of firres in the Land, that the Lords of the Combination forces into Sent. many poore ignorant people in places of Oratory, were now themselves in the streets consumed in the French (who came into Seotland to impeach their fire, at whose flames might be said, as in I satab tou-ching pecces of like stuffe, had been esaid: I am purposes) had not the trauels of some Noblemen prevailed on either part, warme, I have beene at the fire. (16) The French King, thus ouer-busie about Scot-(11) After the reducing of this purer worthip Land fine, was our carleffe of his own, when a wind in the matriages of his daughter and fifter) her would need be a Challanger at Till, feconded by the Saint-Mine of Challes & Forton 4, which triumphant toy, was the first many than the manifest on the Saint-Mine of Challes & Forton 4, which triumphant toy, was into Gods Church, the next care the Good Queene tooke, was to enrich her Realme, by reducing her Coynes into fine and pure Sterling, and debasing of Coppermonies: causing likewise great store of fodenly clowded with a lad Cataltropne. For to Duke of Sung. Tunne his laft (and indeed his laft) courfe in fauour of Duke of Sung. Duke of Su fodenly clowded with a fad Catastrophe. For to and Phillipert Munition, Armour and Powder to be brought into the Land, and laid vp in a readines as occasion should his Queene, he senta Lance to the Earle of Monigo- lobs Serra. ferue, that nothing might be wanting either for the wealth or fafety of the fubiect. mery, with a command to have him enter the Tilt; but hee excusing himselte from running against this Bur these her bleffed beginnings in England were Maicftie, alleaged, that fortune the day before, afforlittle as it feemeth to the liking of the French King, ded him not to breake one staffe, and that now (as Whose hope (laith Leslie) by certaine acts of Parliamen he feared) she would put him to a second shame; but made by Queene Marie against her sister the Lady Elizathe King, destiny so enforcing, and his date fully beth to debarre her from the Succession of the Crowne, was to establish Queene Marie of Scotland, who had runne, feathim a fecond command, which Mont-King Merris of runne, teathim a second command, which Montgomery very vnwillingly obeyed, and breaking his
Tiling. lately married Prince Dolphine his sonne, laying her title Lance vpon the Kings Cuirasse, a splinter thereof, from Margaret the eldest daughter of King Henrie the his Beauer being somewhat open, stroke him so (cuenth, linked in Marriage with lames the fourth King deepe in the eie, that thereupon shortly hee ended of that name, shee being the daughter of King Iames the fifth his sonne. And therefore as the neerest in blood, (17) After whose death, Francis his sonne, and and lawfull heire to the Crowne of England, he caused by fecond of that name, at the age of fixteene yeeres Francis the fe Proclamation in Paris her Stile to bee published under Succeeded him in the Crowne of France; having by the marriage of Lucene Mary, the Title of Scotland the name of Mary Queene of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and canfed the Armes of England to bee annexed to his others. He hearing of the troubles raifed there, in case of Religion, sent en connifeer de to Scotland. ioined with Scotland and France, which the Dolphine and shee did impale, both in their Seales, Plate, Tapistrie, and la Broche to strengthen the Field, and the Bishop of other adornements; which caused great troubles (faith Ameans to affift the Queene Regent, with his farre hee) betwixt the Kingdomes of England, France, and reaching and infeeing counfell. Surely the preparation to withstand them was great, and the combina-(13) In Scotland Religion (a Ex land had emtors many that frood for Reformation, as namely, braced it) beganne to be practifed; Preachers spake one Duke, foureteene Earles, and eleuen Lords, beboldly, and bookes were daily brought thither, fides other of name and account; but knowing which nothing at all commended the Pope, and by their Aduersaries forces, and seeing those strangers which the things and commenced the tops, and a fethern (laith the Bishop) the people were moued to a fedition, which to predent, the "Queene Regent cansed an assembly of the Bishops and Barons, vnto whom to possessed diners of their Townes and Forts, to the The Steriff No oppressing of the Kingdome under forraigne subicctio, they were enforced to become Petitioners vnto Detene Elice beth affiliance, the Ministers presented these Articles. Queene Elizabeth, for aide to expell the French, who Helinfied. I That their divine praier and publicke administrasought the subuersion of the Realmesstate. tion of the Sacraments (hould be in the English tongue. (18) The Magnanimous Queene, nothing fea. Queene Effect 2 That Bishoprickes and other Ecclesiasticall benefices ring the threats of that potent Nation, nor liking Statifulords. Should be bestowed open qualified men. such neighbours as formerly professed to rob her of 3 That such persons enioping the profits, (bould perher right, and now under precence of suppressing forme their duties and preach the word to the people. the Scots, were not vnlikely to attempt an inualion 4 That none should be admitted in time to come, invpon her Realme; (for so the Almanes hired by the to the Ministry, unlesse his life and learning were an-French were told they should doe) gaue them asi- 16th Lefter. swerable to that excellent calling. stance vpon Articles affured; whereof one was, that (14) To the two first, the Bishops alleaging the they should hold faithfull concurrence with England customes of the Romane Church, would in no wife during the life of the French King, and one yeere afconsent, leaning enery man at liberty prinately to ter. For the performance whereof, fine young Genpray in what language he best liked; and the election tlemen were fent into England; and the Duke of of their Bishops to the prescription of the Canon Norfolke into the North, who from Barwicke dispatched the Lord Gray of Wilton for Generall into Scot-Law, and to the appointment of their Queene. For the two latter, they affirmed, no better order could land, accompanied with many worthy Captaines, Englifo.,

fixe thousand foot, and one thousand two hundred

and fifty horsemen; these comming to Salt-Presson

Diuine feruice

1. 607. 14

Superflitious I.

mages caff out of Churches.

Ifaiab 44. 16.

Purer Coine

Martiall prouifi

The French Kins

maligneth Queene Eliza-

beils quiet.

10bs Lefly Bifho
of Koffe.

Queene Marie of Scotland her

dricent.

Herelaime to the English

The Title and

Armes of Eng-land given to h

The first feedes

of heart-burn

betwixt those two great

Queenes of England and

The Progresse

of Religion in

Bithop of Reffe.

Mars daughte

to the Duke of

Articles propoti

The ScotiG Bi

be preicribed then that of their Common Law, which

imposeth vpon them, asmuch as was required; and

ded to Scariff

Bithops and

brough: in.

(hap. 24 Queene Elizabeth. ENGLANDS MONAR CHS. Monarch 61. were joyfully receiped of the Scotish Lords, who therein Councell decreed what was to be done. her Principall Secretary, with Doctor Wotton Deane of Canterbury, one of her facred Councell, eminent Commissiones (19) From thence they marched toward Lefte-The Queene Regent defires for his fingular prudence, and formerly imployed of England and rike, where a Trumpet from the Queene Regent met them with a fafe conduct for Sir I ames Croft, (24) These falling in conference concluded and for Sir George Howard, with fixe other Gentlefinallie vpon certaine Articles, whereof those that men to accompany them vnto her presence in the Castell of Elenborough; vnto which the Generall and concerned England were these: That neither the King of France nor his Queene of Scotland, should the Scotish Lords agreed, with an abstinence from thenceforth vie the Armes or titles of England or Armes during the conference. But the French (the The French di-Ireland, and that all letters fealed with those Armes meane while) under the command of Monsieur Doishould bee called in within fixe monethes space fell issued foorth of Leith, and in good array took the field, which when the Lord Gray perceived, he sent that both the English and French should depart Scotland, some few excepted, employed vpon occasions, an Harold vnto them, willing them to depart till and that a generall pardon should bee enacted by the Englith were returned, according to the order Parliament concerning all luch as had beene in these betwixt their Regent and him; but they returned him ftirres. Which Parliament was affembled at Edenanswer, they were on their Mistresses ground, which brough in August following. These things accomthey meant to make good, and therupon discharged plished, an Ambassage of thankes was solemnly ad- of thankes to Q. a whole volley of shot vpon the English Army. dreffed vnto Queen Elizabeih by the Earles of Mor- Elizabeih (20) The Allarum thus given when least it was ton, Glenearne, and the young Laird of Lethington, with proffer that the Earle of Arran, the greatest The French and English encounexpected, a cruell skirmish beganne, wherein died of the French about seauenscore persons, the rest Lord in account among them, should be at her diswere enforced backe into Leith, and many of the pole for marriage, which (as they well hoped) wold English both hurt and slaine. Whereupon they inbe to her felfe. trenched the Crag, and planted their Ordinance a-(25) With the like conceined hope the yeere gainst Leith, vpon whose Steeples the French had before, John Duke of Finland, second sonne to Gumounted their great Canons, whence their Bullets Stabus King of Sweden, was fent to her by his father, the King of Sweden was fent to her by his father, flew amaine; and ere long a bold attempt was vnto treate a marriage for his elder brother Ericus, who was most honourably entertained, but dismissed streets. dertaken by them, who with fiftie horsemen and fine hundred Harquebusiers issued out of Leith, and without all hope of his suite. Notwithstanding, Gustabus being dead, Ericus now raigning King of Swede being dead, Ericus now raigning King of Swede being Mosferaffailed the English new trenches with such valour. as they entred, & a while possessed the same; where den, hauing imprisoned his brother John, folicited 1889. they tooke Maurice Barkeley prisoner, wonne his enher Maiefly the second time, but to his dishonour figne, cloved the touch-holes of three great pecces, as it fell out, for his fuite reiected in the English and flew no small numbers of their resisters. Court, hee attempted to match with the youngest (21) The English by this time had armed themdaughter of Philip Lantgrane of Hasia, who hearing selues(for this assault was vnexpectedly given) and that hee had twice received denial in England, denied Captaine Vaughan with his, brauely entred the him also with some disgrace, giving his daughter vn-to Adolfe Duke of Holft, vncle vnto Fredericke Trench, who being seconded by Captaine Sommerset, Reade, and Arthur Grey, recovered the same King of Denmarke, at that time enemy to Eriwith some slaughter of men, the Ordinance from Leith discharging vpon them to the great annoy-(26) The Peace scarsely was concluded betwixt ance of their honourable service; and now being Englandand France, when Francis the young King Masters of what was late lost, they cleared the great was taken away by death, and another pupil King An.D.1560 Ordinance which the French had stopped, and cast crowned, euch Charles his younger prother, and ninth of that name, who was guided altogether by France the young proches King a new Trench along by the old Chappell, whence with their great Peeces they beate downe the Sreethe Regency of the Queene mother, and molested dieth. ples of Saint Anthony and Saint Nicholas in Leith, and with the civill differtions betwixt those Princes of difmounted the .Pecces that therein lay leuelled a-Guize and Conde. For whose reconciliation Queene brother. lucceeded his Elizabeth sent Sir Henry Sidney Lord President of (22) In the full course of which differtions, the Wales; vnto which her endeanours, howfocuer the Q Elizabeth Queene mother, Regent of Scotland (a Lady of exlaboureth to fet-tle peace in French gaue countenance in Court, yet on the Seas cellent endowmentes of minde) confumed with they tooke her Merchants shippes, imprisoned the thoughts, displeasures and Melancholy, departed men, and feized their goods, no other cause alleaged feize on English this life in Edenbrough Castell: the Lords waxing but that they were Hugonets. stronger, and Leith much weaker through extremity (27) These mildemeanors, Englands great Queen offamine, and the French King, (the onely pillar tooke not well; yet did shee not so much blame, as on whome their strength did confist) not able to sitty the young and ouerruled King, brought to affift them. Who being brought daily into feares fuch a straight, that hee was neither able to defend through new tumnits arifing, and increased in his the authority of his owne lawes, nor to vohold the owne Country of Amboife, was forced (faith Leflie) leagues made with other Princes. But most especito yeeld up all the Dominions, both of France, and ally the cause of Religion (the one y pretended mo-tiue of all these disturbances) together with the soli-lish, of Scotland, vnto Pope Pius the fourth, to beeat his command and defence; but his Holinesse fearing citations of the French themselves (as from Roan, his owne tottering cftate, like a wife man, that Deip and Newhauen) moued her Maiesty first to set meant to warpe no more then he could well weave, forth her greenances publikely in print and next to fuffered king Francis to feek for other redreffe, which fend aide vnto Monfieur Vidame Captaine of New- France. hee did from her, that was more willing and better hauen, against such as sought to subuert both religion able to giue him content. and the Estate. (23) For sending his Ambassadors vnto Queen (28) These landing in Normandy were with great ioy received into the Townes of Newhauen, Roan, Elizabeth, whose noble spirit himselfe had first pro-An.D. 1562 uoked, defired her peace to bee had with Scotland, and Deep, which were willingly furrendred into the in Septemb. & that Commissioners might be appointed to meet English Queenes possession (the onely Cloud-pillar with his in that Realme; alleadging that it was vnthat stood betwixt Gods cholen Israel, & the bloudfitting to a Soueraigne to fue to his Subjects, as hee feeking Amalchites in this wildernesse of Sin,) with was ouer them by his marriage with their onelie this referuation by the Queene her selfe inserted, no Queene. Her princely mind euer forward to affift way to presudice the Kings Soueraigne authority, nor the Ich de Serres the afflicted, and now delirous to faue Christian estate of the Realme; so vpright was she, not with stanbloud, dispatched into Scotland, Sir William Cecill ding their late vniust intruding vpon her right and

conference.

The French af-

The Faglith re-

Paul Aemyl. The Queene Regent dieth.

The French

King veelds out his Dominions

to the Popes

Holin fb.Hift.p.

The Pope vnable to assist

the French King

The French king

feekes for peace withQ.Elizabeth

3734

with many wounds hacked Shan O-Neale to death,

a few of his followers escaping their swords by flight

by whose death vister recourred their wished peace

then his owne life, neither could that lawfully bee

done without the confent of the Nobles of Vifter,

Shan O Nedle

the shelter of Shan O Neale, to shrowde themselnes

from the obedience of Queene Elizabethes gouern-

The State of Religion in France.

The faire thew

made to chaffil-

lately fled and dyed in England, treates with him fa-

him and the

Trional Cit Ois after a greeuous distasture of oppression and warres, to assist the French in that enterprise, when these in which let vs a while leaue them, and returne to the Almanes according to their nature loth to take Seas, affaires of England. and defirous to know whither their feruice inten-(47) The time now expired for retention of Callis so forethirsted after, and so thirstingly kept; A.D. 1567. ded, were told, they should no further then Scotland, and to the Land adioyning, which was plentifull of gold, filuer, and all kind of wealth, and where no Al-Queene Elizabeth presently sent vnto Charles the Callis demanded of the French French King, to demand the deliuery according to mane Souldier had made spoile for the space of an King. April 28, 1567. coucnants. He fet in estate, accompanied with the hundred yeeres before, and to some of them in plain Queene mother and others, the English Embassatermes it was told, that they should into England; dors had audience, and the Title controuerfed awhich was likewise fignified vnto her Maiesty, both mong them as followeth. The Queenes Letters read from her neighbour Princes, warning her highnesse and attendance given what would more be faid : Sir to take good heede unto her felfe, as alfo by letters Thomas Smith (for he was the man) demanded in her intercepted, that declared their intents ; whereof Maiestes name, the Towne of Calls, the Fores, and face did not onely admonish Mounsteur de Seure then The French churother the appurtenances, the Castle and Towne of Ambassador in England for France; but also by her Ambassador to the French King, praying him to de-Guize, and generally all fuch Castles, Townes, and places as had beene taken by his Father Henry, the fift from such attempts so preindiciall to her Highlate French King in his last warres, from Marie late nesse, and so directly against the treaty of Peace. To Queenc of England, her Maiesties fister : which in a colour which matter the faid de Seure made a Pro-Treatie of peace made at Cafeau in Cabrefis the yeere testation in print, the answer whereunto is likewife of Christ, 1559. was agreed vpon, that his Soueprinted in English, French, Italian, and Latine, whereraign, Queen Elizabeth should permit the said French in may appeare the History of that time. And fince King and his successors to possesse, and peaceably to her Maiesty hath had a more manifest proofe by eniov the faid Townes, Castles, and places, the space men which are yet aliue. For when the most part of of 8. yeeres, and those expired the said K. Henry couethe French power was arrived in Scotland, the Queene nanted for himselfe and Successors to deliner the Mother, Monsieur de Oisell, and Monsieur de Martigues same intirely vnto the English, which being compleat called the Seatif Lords with their Forces vnto Aiand ended the second of that present moneth spril. mouth besides Barwicke; where they declared that himselfe with Sir Henry Norris her Maiesties Ambastheir minde was to invade England; and to give to named in her name the possession of the fame month de-manded in her name the possession thereof accor-note space with. the King and Queene the pollettion of the English Crowne ; of which they now had the Titles and Armories. But the Lords of Scotland vpon confultation, made answer, That they had often attempted Lords too wife with Lieutenant or Gouernour. Whereupon they were inforced to make repaire to his maieffy, whom to inuade England, but they never got any good to be led by the hee doubted not but would accomplish the perforthereby; further affirming, it was against the peace French. mance, and likewife keepe perpetual amity with his Sourraigne Lady and Miftreffe. newly concluded and fworne : fo neere was it to execution. Vpon this therefollowed a treaty of (48) King Charles but young, and altogether gopeace at Edenborough, wherein the numbers of uerned by the Queene-mother, having well learned French Souldiers were to be leffened; the Stile and his leffon, made prefentanswer, That Callis was his, Armes of England left downe, and the treaty of Caand that none had right thereunto but himfelfe, neither feas renewed and confirmed : all which may apshould any deliver it to any other, and that the Treaty peare by the hands of them which were Commissionamed by the English Ambassador, did wholly give ners, authorized by the French King under his Great it him. Whereunto Sir Thomas replied, That nei-Seale: which treaty when it was figned with all the ther her Maiesty nor Counsell did so rake it, nor in Commissioners hands, the Queene my Soueraigne for deed could, the words of the Treaty being so plaine the love of peace being contented to scale and swear; and manifest. Why. Master Smith, quoth the Queenethe faid King Francis did refuse the both, sith which mother, I maruell the Queene your Mistresse would now refusal her Matefy doth, and hath alwaies taken TheFresch King fend for fuch a purpole, and especially you, who knoweth none better, how all things have passed; you know that your Queene hath forfeited Callis, and all her rights in that the right of Callis both propriety and possession to the peace. was devolued vnto her by reason of the attempt, and hath demanded it divers times, yet was content those places divers waies. As first, by invading the Kings to stay the time of composition; which now being Subjects in Scotland, then most manifestly at New-haclearely expired, it must needs bee hers, and cannot uen, where the King, my fonne, was faine with an whole inftly be denied. Army to reconcrit; and in the faid Treaty was an Arts (50) Why (faid the Queene) all this while you have cle as hath beene disputed; that if the Queene of England Queene-mother. faid nothing against the King my sonne, why he should for-Should inuade any part of my somes Dominions, she should fait it ; hee hath done nothing : and is the bearing of your foorthwith lofe ner right in Callis. Armes fo great a matter with you? you beare the Arms (49) Madame, said Sir Thomas : King Henrie and stile of ours, and so domany, beare others Armes also and his successors were bound to lose Callis, if they NoMadam faid Sir Thomas Smith, the bearing of the Sit Thomas Smith inuaded England, and yet did King Francis brother to Armes is not fo great a matter, but that with other the King heere, doe it by the way of Scotland, as is things doe declare the intent, and the attempt mamost manifest, after the said Treaty at Castean, not keth the right forfeited by the treaty. And though onely in assuming the Armes and Title of England and the King your sonne did not forfeit it, yet the right Ireland, but contrary to the Article of Peace, which being once lost from France, and accrewed to the concluded that both English and French should de-Queene of England, how should it goe from her again? part Scotland: which incontinently her Maiesty All this while (laid the Queene Mother) you feake but | Queene mother performed, in renoking thence her Lieutenant, Capof the King of Scotland, who did it in his wives right. taines, and Souldiers : whereas contrariwise Monfiand there you must aske your amends, and not here, you eur D'oifell their Chieftaine abode therein still, and heare what my sonne saith, and every man feeth the the French power daily augmented under the conright is his, your Queene hathforfeited it, and therefore duct of Monfieur de Martigues, and de la-Broffe, and I maruell my good fifter will fland in it, or fend to dealfo by an other great Commander, whose Nauie was mand it. This is the answere faid Sir Thomas which disperied by tempest, and whose strength his ship-I shal carry to the Queene my Soueraigne. That ? Nay, wracke did testifie, in Holland, Zeland, Norway and Said the King, I will talke with my Councell, and then Denmarke, by the loffe of Armour, Men and Munishall you have a resolute answere. Then were the Engtaken cut of a former treatile tion: to let passe * Britaigne and Normandy, then in lish Ambassadors desired to absent themselves a preparing to inuade England; and Lantzknights while, and within an howreafter werefent for awritten by Sir Thomas Smith. ikewise hired in Saxony, and the Land of Lunenburge (SI) The

King Charles speech to the Ambasisdors.

Ohic Bions 24

An Addition

The coule for Mother, the Dukes of Anion, Manfon, Monpencier, Au-But sit said he (speaking to the King) to say the truth Coundebated be-fore the French male, and Neuers, the Cardinals of Bourbon and Cha-I have no commission, nor any commandement to argue the tribe stillon, the Bishops of Orleance and Lymoges, Monsieur or authority to dispute or answere in these matters, but to demand but onely to demand Callicand the other fartresse. de Valence and others, the Ambassadors of England were but onely to demand Callis and the other fortresses, placed in the middeft: vnto whom the Queene fake and places according to the Treaty, which is fo plain, and said, Monsieur L' Ambassador I pray you say that to mine opinion there neede bee no controueryour minde before the King and his Councell here affie. And if there bee any doubt, now the time ex-Sembled : which Sir Thomas Smith presently did in pired doth put it out of all doubt. But because you the same forme as hee had done before, adding with and the Queene have charged mee that I know to all, that this demand was grounded vpon the laple much of the matter, as I cannot deny fomewhat I of the time, by which without all controuer sie after doe, as having beene at the doing of a great deale & eight yeeres Callis was due to the Queene of England, the dispute; Somwhat I must, and may say for my and that by right, both the propriety, and the pofselfe lest it should bee thought that there were nosession thereof was inuested vnto her long ago, by thing to beefaid. Marry as I faid, as Commissioner Call is forfeited the forfeiture made by the attempt in Scotland, by from the Queene my Soueraigne, I have nothing to fay, but the demands onely, the matter being plain the commandement and consent of Francis the second to inuade England, seeing the King did not ratiand in right judgement, without controucifie, and fie the treatie made at Edenborough. alfo that I fee no person here but such as be parties, The Constable. (52) Monsieur de V alesce Said the Queene Mother, and no competent person to bee judge of the con-I pray you answere that, whereupon he standing op Saide, trouersie. Whereunto the Constable replyed and saide, my selfewas sent to that treaty of peace, and am glad to Who should bee judge of that which is the Kings but heare Monsieur L' Ambassador confesse that the beahimselfer it is his, and none could take or give it to any oring of the English Armories was but a small matter, & ther but himselfe: with that the Queene mother asked yet was that the chiefest thing imputed by their side, as for Monsieur Chancelier, why hee did not speake. the men of warre, they were not about fine thousand at (54) Who after some pause beganne a long and the most, sent indeed because of a rebellion of or so must 1 well composed oration, the sum wherof was this; Montieur Chantearmer it in plaine tearmes) then rifen there. But the That the prefent Kings right to Callis was long before ciller. English men were aboue fifteen thousand that came aany claime could be made thereunto by the English, which gainst them at Petty-Lith. There was sent thither also was not much about two hundred yeeres, and then was it the Bishappe of Amiens with the Popes Bulles, to reduce got by the fortune of warre; but more anciently, that The Romane re-ligion a chicfe cause of these them againe to the Religion Romane. And as touching it had beene the inheritance of France none can dery, as these matters I spake with your Queene as I came through seing upon the Continent thereof, and not upon any England, and offered her as much at the first as was done English ground. King Edward (quoth he) wee grant K. Ed.3. the first wanit, and your father noble King rewanne it to his that won (allu. in that Treaty, if shee would breake the League betwirt Crown. But the English wil say they have posse sed and enher and the Scotish Lords, which were Rebels. But shee Said shee could not. Now for the ratification and confirtoyedit many yeeres: Why fo they did Aquitaine, Gafmation of that Treaty which was signed with my hand coigne, and Guyen, and other dominions besides, which they claimed by our Elioner, the repudiate of the King and others: there should have come into France certain of France, who was inheritrix unto it: indeed some ti-Scotish Lords to have agreede and sworne to certain Artles they had, yet fo as they held them of the Crowne of ticles which did deferre to come till the King was fore sicke, and could not attend them, who shortly after died, and so the Treaty was not ratified. And he being dead France: for the whole which is Gallia appertainesh to you fir our King : and so doth Callis which is of no great the King that now is, had nothing to doe to ratifiest: for antiquity that I canvead of: for Countie Boloigne was the first that did incloseit, being afore but a Eurgard, the matters therein touched Scotland, and their Queens in the trip and an anounce of the Townes of France then were. At the battell of Cross, dolorous to vs, King Edward of What Callis had doings and titles, which appertained nothing at all unto England after nine monethes siege by composition had it (53) To whom Sir Thomas replied and faid, I am not ignorant that the Article faith, Armis innosurrendred, the poor inhabitants pardoned of life at the great fait of his good Queene, elfe had they died enery uare, attentare aut moliri, and doe not take Armis to fignifie Armories. But the Armes that I meant to mothers sonne, and so with white wands in their hands were expelled the towne: To whom the King of France weigh the most, and the attempt with them done was former ciful, that hee commanded of every thing va-cant, they (bould beethe first provided for And I thinke was the Armed men, and the good Captaines whom I named D'Oifel, Broffe, Martigues, and others, their when your Father King Henry tooke it the English were Ensignes and Companies, marry the Armories and Ti-The French tles did disclose the intent and meaning. And if there likewise so served. These claime two hundred yeers pos-Kings compafsession, the others before them, about five hundred yeares: had beene none other but them which the Bishop expulled of Jeguarys no estats octyve tream, unouse pure munus caycerts. Ituss Goddabt to punifib, or 10 essay his ferants. And although the English claimed Cascoigne, and Cayen, by succession of Eliomer, although Normandy by one williams brought, and none other munition but the Popes Bulles; Queene Elizabeth faculd not have needed to have armed so many Shippes, not sent so many and Poutieur by a Dowry of their mother, daughter of Souldiers to hane let their enterprise, nor would ever Philip de Bel. Yet to Callis they had no right, but onely haue complained of it: but it was farre otherwise as I haue declared. As for the league you speake by Armes, and by Armes your Father againe recovered The Scotish Lords scandaliit. But some will say, by the peace at Bretigny, they of with the Rebels of Scotland, I thinke there was none, and the enent did flew what Rebels they have right; I fay no; for every man knowes what exceptions were taken at that peace: and some, that so long a were. Butthis I thinke they were as weary to have so many of youthere, as wee were weary to have possession makes a prescription; I sayno for Prescription
is among private men, but among Princes prescription
cannot fland and account them. you so neere vs. And therein I thinke the Queenes cannot stand, and get theirs was not much about two Maiesty and they did agree. And to excuse the refuse hundred, ours aboue eight hundred yeeres. But to you of the ratification, by the not comming in of the Monsteur L' Ambassador, I will say, that at the Scotish Lords, hath small reason to beare it: for the peace of Troes in Champaign, were your selfe and Mon-Treaty made betwixt the French King then, and seur Throgmorton, both of you most able in such affairs, the Queene of England might have been ratified norand nothing therein done I doubt not without the Queen withstanding, whatsoeuer was betwixt him and the and Councels consent: no one word was spoken of Callis, Scotifb Lords his Subjects: for our fact and peace which chiefly was the cause of the warre; so that all fandid not fland vpon their doings; which Treaty bedethelear for al which was then talked upon, and is a plain cause it was norratified, I say, the Queene my Soueconfission, that they did acquit their right thereunto. This A prety deuise to raignes title to the possession of Callis, by reason of Article I fayis translatious in the peace of Cafteau in that attempt flandeth whole and entire vnto her. Cambresis, and is no more but such as forgetfulnesse, or Kkkkkk

MONARCHS. Monarch &t.

(51) The King set in Councell with the Queen

	because all small things cannot bee mentioned in confe-	Antifirophon, and turneth a great deale better vpon,	
	rence. But Callis was the chiefe point, which being o-	you. For it because our talke was of our right to	
	mitted, I say by meaning it was acquited. But now to	Callis, by reason of the attempt in Scotland, you of	
	your reasons Monsieur L'Ambassador, the Article	the forfeiture of it by reason of the descent to New-	
	for the losse of Callis at that treaty was forced in by you	hauen, neither condifcending to other, and not con-	
	the English, who of all nations bee the most wary and circumspect in making their peaces. Whereupon the	cluding thereupon, wee did agree vpon that Peace	
	circum(pect in making their peaces, Whereupon the	And if that Peace doth make novationem, then the	
	Queene of Engla na layeth to vs a suspition, a realousie,	forfeiture of our right by keeping Newhauen, which	
	a consecture, a gesse, that a King of France would have	you impute to vs is wiped away, nouated and clen-	
	inusded Fauland Ruteuers Suspition must not make	fed by this Peace, and our right which was not yet in	
	inuaded England. But every suspition must not make a breake: for so when soever any Prince should arme his	ese, cuius dies nondum venit, remaineth ftill. So as it	
	were control of and the second of the second	toucheth you rather then vs; and by this meanes	
	men vpon tust occasion, his neighbours might say it was	have you meeting as Gu and Dy this meanes	
The French and rather make	against him: And so doe you English lay gesses against	haue you nothing to fay against vs, but wee still our	
	the late King Francis the second. But the Queene of	right against you. But the truth is, as Monsieur	
auits,	England with open face inuaded the Kings Realme, with	Le Connestable here can tell, who was part the occasi-	ļ
	a goodly pretence to keepe the townes to the Kings vse,	on that weecame to it; for when this was conten-	
	ret when alwas reduced into their due obedience, she wold	ded, that Callis was already due vnto vs, you, that	The French th
	keep the town of Newhauen as a pledge for Callis, by which	wet had forfaited it, so that wee could enter into no	cause that Calla
	deed shee hath lost all her right in Callis, God indeed hath	other Article of peace; why faid you, have not wee	ned in the pear
	made a naturall separation betwixt you and vs, a sure wal	the witto make a peace and make no mention of	
	of defence, Et penitus toto divisos orbe Britannos. So	Callis? neither to speake of it one way, nor other:	
4	that naturally you ought to have nothing but peace and	your time is not yet come to askit, let vs line in peace	
	amity with ours. But doe not thinke Monsseur L	in the meane while, and let each Prince have right	
	Amba sador that I say this as fearing what you can doe:	fuch as it is, referred; whereupon you Monsteur	
faireshew to	for the service of th	I'dente (survivore one of the End that come of the	
kar the English.	for there was never any King of France since Charle-	L'Ambespine were one of the first that came with	
1	man so great as the King is now, had so many men of	vs, and you know what paffed.	I
J	warre, so ready, and so good Souldiers : and yet his High-	(56) Yea (faith he) but wee would never grant that	1
1	ne se doth desire the amity of the Queene of England and	it should bee put in , that you should have Cailes : you say	
	the love of that nation: of which there is the more hope if	true (faid Sir Thomas) nor wee that the Queenes Ma-	ł
	the love of that nation: of which there is the more hope if all these pretences and demaunds were cancelled, and	iefly should acquit it, nor the hostages neither. But	
allu a continua l	Calles forgotten, which hath beene the continual picke-	in the end when it came to the Conclusion, as the	
icke-quarreli.	quarrell between these two Realmes. You never read	Bilhoppe of orleans, and Monfieur Bourdin can tell,	
	Monsieur Smith, that the French euer inuaded England	it was agreed that expresly the right bee reserued,	
	I speake it not to your dispraise which are English, but to	aswell to that, as to any other thing, not expressie	
	your praise; yet this I thinke, had there not beene so easie	there mentioned. omnes alia petitiones & demanda	The conditions
	a discent, so convenient a place, and so ready, for you to	& similiter exceptiones & defensiones as appeareth by	reserved.
	make warre here, yee would not (as I suppose) have come	the Treaty. And as touching Newhauen, Monsieur	
	bither Confeen and troubled our Country was the swite	Chancelier, note in it two things. The one, the first	
	hither so often, and troubled our Country, nor the amity betwixt you and vs; And I dare boldly affirm and gage	entrie, the other, the keeping after the peace a-	
1	any thing, that the Queene of England shall gaine more	greed vpon amongst your selues. As for the first	
ζε.	by continua! peace with vs, then shee shall doe by Callis, 6	corrie I donn short an entre Correct International	
	of continual peace with os, then joee pattage by Cattes, Or	entrie, I deny that our men of watre made any in-	No hoftile at-
	therefore your Queene must leave off these demands and	nation or came by force. But being requested and	tempt in entrin
- 1	quarrels, and come to a perfect peace with vs, which shalbe	defired aide of a grear number of Noblemen, and	2\corbauen.
	more profitable for both the Realmes, and this I dare af-	other who were in perill and danger. And whether	
1	fare you, here is no Councellor among vs.that dare once	did they like inuaders (I askeforall the time that they were not affayled) spoile any, or robbe any?	
	open his mouth to render you Callis, for my part I will not	they were not affayled) (poile any, or robbe any ?	
The Confiable,	be one to move or affent thereunto. Nor I faid the Confta-	no, they tooke not an henne or an egge, but they	
ne Contabre.	ble, and so all the rest.	paide for it : I , if any complaine I offer to pay it :	
-	(55) Then quoth Sir Thomas Smith, Monsieur	This is no inuation, nor no hostility: but the act of	
	Chancelier, mee thinkes you fetch your Title very	a friend, and at their requests and pursuits: whose	
ir Tho Smith.	farre to haue Callis, and howfoeuer the poffeffi-	doings fir, alwell for matter of Armes, as for other	
	on was comeby, by and by the right is his in possessi-	things done in that rumult won hane declared by	
	on, then by your reason all our disputation is in	things done in that tumult, you have declared by Edict to have beenedone a bon finet pour vostre ser- nice, which may truly becaud, for by their means	
	vaine, and it maketh no matter, benane an mala fide	erce which may reply her faid for hysterismans	
	valle, and that the tring and in a forther as male pie	and defende a sweet sumb on a farmer and Cabin Co	
	possideat, the King once in possession as a thing ire-	and defence a great number of your good Subjects,	
	turning to his primier estate postliminio or gotten	alwell men as women, afwell Captaines as Souldiers,	The benefite a
Photosom to the	of the enemy, yee admit no contract, or latter trea.	of whom Monfieur le Chancellier did now boaft, as of	cruing vato
The Frence all for themselves	ty, so as it doth appeare, yee open that which was	other not Souldiers, are faned now to doe you fer-	cruing vnto the French by the side of the Eng
wharformer them	thought of some men, and alwayes spoken, that	uice: which elfe should have been a prey and spoile	aide of the Eng
aid.	what promise soener was made, the French would	to them which fought but the raine of halfe or third	lift.
	neuer render Callis agains to the English, but keepe	part at the least of your Realme. For the conser-	
	it still, per ius, nefasque: this reasoning passeth all an-	nation of whom, yee in part may thanke the Queen	}
	fwere, for what soener the Queen of England had done	my Miftreffe. And this for the first discent of our	t
	quam fancte fo cuer shee had kept her treaty of this	men. Now where Monsieur Chancellier faith that	
	cight yeeres, though ye could obiect nothing against	the Queene my Mistresse changed herpretence, I still	1
	her, yet the should never have had Callis restored; to	doe fay shee kept her first protestation. That she	I
	this kind of reasoning and to that, that no man dare	would appropriate no Land, Towne, nor Fortresse of	
		the Kingsto her norther did name dain - 37	1
	moue the King to render it being due, I cannot an-	the Kings to her, nor shee did neser claime New-	l
	fwere; but to this that toucheth my fact in the	hauen as hers, but comming peaceably into it, ha-	1
	making of the Peace in Champaigne, where I must confesse, and am not ashamed, that I was a Minister,	uing beene at great charge and cost, it was both	1
•		wildome and reason all other being satisfied and	I
	I doe not yet acknowledge that either I am worthy	content, shee should at the least hanc some reason	İ
	to bee accounted so wise as you would make mee,	offered her in her right to Calles. And otherwise she	ł
	nor our Nations alwayes fo circumfpect in making	did not hold Newhauen, which thing was manifest-	I
	Trestiles with you, your owne Writers auerring o-	ly declared at Gallion, where Articles were drawn not	1
	therwise, and give you the prayse therein against	voreasonable, and the matter so farre forward that	i
	vs. But for the point wherein you touch vs, that	they were figned with my hand and tarried has	Ī
Philip Comin.	the peace at Troes should be nonatio contraction, and	they were figured with my hand, and tarried but for power and Commission to affirme them. But	1
		the morreline and positiones grouping to access in	1
i	wee should thereby acquit our right of Callie, it is	the mortality and pestilence growing so great in	1
	1	Newhauen,	-
		• .	

Chap. 24 Queene Enizabeth. ENGLANDS MONAR CHS. Monarch 61. Newhauen, gaue too much aduantage, which was vpon the vertuous King and Queene themselues,

him they shamefully murdered in a most barbarous

(61) Mary Queene of Scotland having imbarked

zabeth both pittied and fought to redreffe; writing in

which indeede were intollerable to roiall authoritie.

and fuch, as other Princes could not but feeke to re-

dreffe, and reuenge; notwithstanding such was the distasture of those distempered Lords, or the

frownes of those farall times, that in England the re-

(62) As the icloufies grew great betwirt these two great Queenes, Elizabeth and Mary, by the wor-

king instruments of the Pope and forraine Princes; so

den to have surprized the Earle of Suffex, the Queens

Lieutenant of the North, in his house at Cawood; but

therein preuented, they were enforced to keepe fecrettheir intents, till some fit occasion should chance

to be ministred. They had in readinesse against their

(64) The nest thus broken before the birds

could well flye, he departed to Branspeth, where hee met with Charles Nenill Earle of westmorland, and

his following conforts; who ioining in Counfell,

made no conscience to vndoe many true subjects,

Realme.

by the like meanes, were the like discontents bred and nourished in some of the greatest English Peeres, towards their Soueraigne, whole Peace, vnder pre-

mained euer after during her life.

her behalf vnto the Regent of scotland, and blaming the Scotland, the Lords of the many wrongs done to their Queen, Bathasib. 19.

text of Religion, they irreligiously disturbed A. in the English to mong these, the sirst in ranke, time and dissolute; wards merson were the two Earles of Northumberland and West. The Earles of Northumberland and West.

morland, who with Leonard Dacres, Reuil, Norton, and Welmorland

Tempest, Danby, and others, purposed on the sud- in Rebellion,

rifing, certaine Englife Pricits, Morton, and others, Morton a Popill

manner, and her they tooke priloner, forced her to nutriered.

TheKing of Scall

Queene slice-

bethfolicitech the Sees in her

taken; and the reasonable dealings in this matter broke off, other meaning her Matetry had none.

(57) No faid the Constable, what meant such preparts for fuccour. But knowing that this Subiect is paration, and promision ? I cannot skill of things; but in that arte wherein I have been brought op and exercifed all my life, I can skill a little. There was fuch a number of to be writ with a farre more noble pen, and our ex-Horse harnesse for the carte: such a number of Artillery, tant relations from vecertaine and inspected re-Such provisions of Gamons of Bacon, Cheefe and other ports; we will furcease to intermeddle in the particulars of that Queenes affaires, excepting onely in things, and about five thoufand men, that am I fure went out of it, besides all those that were dead: can you make fuch intercourses of State, as are wouen in ours, and me beleeue that all this was for Newhauen alone? No cannot otherwise be avoided without maine of Hi Monsieur (said he) I know what belongeth to a Towne ftory; this onely in generall. of Warre. Yea, faid another, and the Ships also that came: Nay said the Constable they came too late. Why, said the her selfe for France, where shee well hoped to finde many friends; by contrary windes (accompanied in England, Queene-mother smiling, will you make vs beleeve that all with fixeteene persons) landed at Werkinton in Cumberland, and from thence was conucied to Carlile, to (18) Wildome would, Madam, quoth Sir Tho-Bolton Caftle, and laftly to the custody of the Earle of Shrewesburie. Whose troubles and missortune, Q. Eli-

that preparation was for Newhauen a one? mas Smith, because the sea and winde doe not serue at all times, that there should be good store of all manner of provision. No, no (faid shee) there was a further

meaning, but as you have quitted Rewhauen, so must you quit Callis, and let ws be friends; nener talkemore of these demands , nor of the sums of money for which yee had Hostages. All is gone from you quite. Your Queene in comming to Newhauen hath quitted all. Shee must forget that matter cleane, and let us be friends fill. The King my some doth offer as much friendship as need to bee, but as for Callis ye must never speake of st. It is hard, Madame, faid Sir Thomas Smith, for a man to forgethis right, or not to remember a wrong offered. Nay, no wrong, faid (bee, you have heard what Monsieur Le Chan

cellier hath faid, and what all these of my somes Counsell doe sey. Madame (quoth he) it is for the most part seene that men be partiall in their owne causes, I doe affure you, that the Queene my Soueraigne doth thinke that the hath as good right to Callis as to any Towne in England : and fo doe all her Counfell: and whatfocuer yee have heard, I am able to fay for her right even out of hand, but they a great deale more. But Sir, quoth Sir Thomas, is this the finall anfwer I shall have? Yea, faid the King. That yee will not render Callis vnto her Maiefty, according to the Trea: y, nor pay the fine hundred thousand Crowns which is for the peine. (59) No said the King, I will keepe them both accoring to the Treaty: well then faid Sir Thomas I have no more to fay, but to bring this report to her Maie fie, which I shall be sorrie to doe : and thereupon him-

with Bullerand infitruments of ablolution, reconci-liation, and taking of Oarhes to the Pope and his doctrines which was not fo feeredly done, but that Bullerand infitruments of the Popel and his with Papill Queene Elizabeths vigilant Counfellors had an inkfelfe, and Sir Hemie Norris, rolevp to depart, doing their obeisance But you take not your leave, Monsieur ling thereof. L'amba sadors for altogether said the Queene. Yes for-(63) Thomas Percie, (so was Northumberlands Earle named) lying at his Castle of Topelife in Torke. An.D. 1569 footh faid Sir Thomas, Doe you intend to come no more thire, had gone so farre in his intended purposes, as fire, had gone fo farre in his intended purposes, as the could not returne; who being sent for vnro the conformal and the could not returne; who being sent for vnro the conformal and the could not return the conformal and the could not return the conformal and the could not return at Court? No Madame, except the Kings Maiesty doe command me. But I am forry to carry this answere he could not returne; who being tent tor vino the Court, froke a great amazement and sudden feare continued to the court, from so precise; and that there is so little regard of the into the other conspirators hearts : and his own guil-Notem, 14, Queene my Souer aignes right. No right, Said the Queen, Sacen my some agent agunt of grown, was the ween, for if there were any, the King my some, would be took to offer her any wrong: yee have heard all the reasons, r manuell that you will take vpon you, you that are learned, to defend so with a cause. Ah Madame (said he) I see ty minde was much more diffracted, vpon notice that some forces were approching for his apprehenfion; whereupon all affrighted, he rose from his bed, and caused the Bels to bee rung in a most confused manner, fo that the Townesmen raised, all sought well, it is true on your part, that men bee blinde in their owne causes and advantages. Surely (quoth sbe) to defend and follow him their chiefe Lord.

Swade her. I Madame, against her right? You must not say so, I pray you commend me hartily to the Queene my good fifter, and defire her to keepe the amity and loue which is betwixt her and my sonne, and I shall bee ready to doe her what service or pleasure I can quoth the Queen and so said the King. Thus this conference ended, and Callis kept still by the French. (60) Now as these distastures fell betwixt Englandand France, and these broken Couenants minifired occasions to set each against others: So at the same time, the affaires of Scotland was carried with so

the Queene (my good sister) (hall have more advantage thus as it is, then to demand Callis. And I prayyou per-

violenta motion as set the Lords at differtions, and the land in civil sedicion; so as not onely outrages were committed vpon the best Subjects, but even

and innocent men : For abusing the Queenes name in their Proclamations and Commissions, they commanded the Countrey to follow them in Armes; fometimes pretending the fafety of her Maiefties the Rebels, person, in danger (they said) by Treasons in working; and sometimes in case of Conscience for refloring their former Religion, which if them-

selues should neglecte orher forraigne Princes (said they) would doe, to the no little perill of the (65) In this zeale they hasted to Durham, with

as forward an intent as Ierobsam did to Bethel, to fet 1. King. 12. 33.

tho'e rebels.

The Earle of

His Holineffe

promifeth trea-fure to advance the Rebellion.

The Rebels def-

The chiefe Re-bels flye into scotland,

An.D. 1570

Februar. 22.

The Rebeis em-battell them-telucs.

ded vnto them: which fortunate entrance did so animate their rebellious conceits, as that in their letters fent to their fauourers, they daigned their Soue-The Rebels (au raigne no better stile, then Elizabeth the late Queene, cineffe toward pretended Queene, and no Queene indeede : as like-wife did the Countesse of Northumberland in her their Sourraign M.S. of Parliament. * The Dutchesse of Farers, &c. Letter fent vnto Stuckley, and * others of the faction, in far worse termes, (67) These things disulged, and their rebelli-They are procla med Traitors.

ons ftill going on, Proclamations came forth denouncing them Traitors to their Queene and Countrey and the Lord Scroope Warden of the West-Marches. with the affiftance of the Earle of Cumberland, and other Gentlemen of the Countrey, kept the Castle of Carlile, while Sir Iohn Foster warden of the Middle-Marches, accompanied with Sir Henry Percie, exercifed their manlie refistance against these proud Re-(68) To withstand their still-growing out-rage, Thomas Earle of Suffex (her Maiesties Lieute-

nant Generall of the North) gathered some forces; whose Licutenant for the footmen was Edward Earle of Rutland, and for the Horsemen, was Henry Lord Hunsdon, Lord Warden of the East-Marches William Lord Eure leading the rereward. These followed the enemy to North-Allerton, Croftbridge, Akle, Durham, Newcastle and Hexam, even close at their heeles; whose power was so weake, and purse to empty, (being defrauded of an hundred thousand Crownes, promised them by the Pope, to maintaine

the Rebellion) as that those Rebellious heads entred conference with Edward Dacres at Naworth, of

their desperate estate, being both monilesse and po-

werlesse to withstand the puissance of the Lord Generall, now on their backes, as also the Earles of w arwicke, and Lincolne, the Lords Ferrers, Willowbie. and Howard, approching very neere them, even at Borrow-briggs. No other succour their consultations could pitch on, then by flight into Scotland, vnto those Lords that there stood out for the Romish. (69) So the Night following they put it in pra-

ctife, not bidding their intrapped traine once farewell, which as Sheepe without a Shepheard, food gazing at their owne destructions, whilest Suffex surprized them without any relistance. Vpon whose ringleaders, Iustice so seized, that at Durham died. by Marshall Law, an Alderman, a Priest, and fixtie fixe Constables; and in the Country for a great Cir-

cuit, a great number of such as were forwardest in (70) Not warned by these successes (which vsu-Leonard Danes remuch the Re-bellion. ally proue vnhappy, in fuch difloiall attempts) Leonard Darres of Harlesey began to gather head againe; whole aiders were the more refolute, in reuenge of their friends executed; and women also became

stoute Souldiers in quarrell of their husbands, all forward enough, and too forward to mischief. These vpon a More neere vnto Naworth, to impeach the Lord Hunfdon that made thitherward, had fet downe their battell in a triangle forme, where they continued a long and most desperate conflict, but in the end were forced to gine backe, and Dacres to flie from his flaine, wounde , and scattered people, towards factions, fome of them fought to conceale, and fome to apprehend these guilty Earles; so that Westmorland, was shifted away into Flaunders, but Northum- Northumberland berland, taken by the Regent, and committed to Cu-fent into England and beheaded. flody, was afterwards fent into England, where ha-

uing beene attainted by Parliament, upon the twentie two of August was beheaded at Yorke : vsing liberty of speeches, in anowing the Popes Supremacy, denying subjection vnto his Soueraigne Queene, af-

Westmorland his confort, a person veterly wasted by Execution of Iuloosenesse of life, euen by Gods inst judgement, in fice, &ce.

the time of his Rebellion, was bereaued of children, west morlands and afterwards wandring in forraigne parts, had his end.

to enspirit and enslame such traiterous dispositions (72) Richolas Mooreton an Englishman, made frumens & en. Bishop by Pius Quintus, that Pontificall and furlie deauours to ru-Pope of Rome, who now having turned the key of Elizabeth. his Confistorie, and set wide open the dores vnto

gainst Queene Elizabeth before Pope im-Pine

to goare her Maiefie like to those of Bashan, that en- Pfilm. 22.12,

holders) shall fland for ever as a Pillar of Salt, and Moholders) that mand for cuer as a 1 mar of companies. The batter of comment of fhame to that Man of finne; the transfeript whereof, taken from the original it felfe, is as followed throse Queene Elizabeth.

> Pij Papa 5. Pontificis Maximi Sententia declaratoria contra Elizabetham, pratensam Anglia Reginam, & ei adharentes H areticos. Qui etiam declarantur absoluti omnes subditi à suramento fidelitatis, & quocunque alio de-bito, & deinceps obedientes Anathemate il-

Scotland, the then-Refuge of Traiterous transfu-

(71) Scotland thus harbouring those dissolid English, and their owne Lords divided into severall

firming the Realme to be in a Schi/me, and her obe-

dient Subjects no better then Heretickes. Charles

body eaten with vicers of lewde causes, as is most

constantly reported. But from these temporall pro-

ceedings (being the Domesticke effects of a forraign

cause) let vs a while behold the spirituall flourish

of the Popes leaden Sword, vnsheathed at Rome,

the complaints of his Clergy, against those Christi-

an Princes, that vrged subjection to their positive

Lawes (a Note indeed ill founding in the eares of his

fonnes) amongst others, this puppet Bishop, com-

menced a feined suite and plea against Queene Eliza-

beth, whom thereupon Pius (like a transcendent Iudge)

depriued from all Princely authoritie, as one vnca-

pable either of Crown, or Gonernment, and with

the curse of his impious mouth, sent foorth his Bull

compassed Dauid; the tessour whereof (if the words

corrupt not the aire, and the inke the eies of the be-

against Englands Queene.

		****	٠.			
Tibldabe classes	Herein was Saint Peter pictured out with a key in his right hand, with his left hand he pointeth to a City, and hath a long gatment, &c is bare footed.	3	Herein the Popes croffe keres, caff im- ro a knot, 82 a Canopy fer vpon a staffe, brauely fer out, 82c.	Vat Bleffionir,	Heerein is Saint Paul fer out, in his right hand two fwords, in his left a Bocke, with a long gar- ment, and bare footed, and a piller fer before him, &ce.	Calendary Contract Contraction

Pius Epilcopus feruus feruorum Dei, ad futuram rei memoriam.

(73) Regnans in Excelsis, cui data est omnis in celo G in terra potestas vnam sanct am Catholicam & Apostolicam Ecclesiam, extra quam nulla el salus, vni soli in terris, videlicet, Apostolorum Principi Petro, Petrig, successori Romano Pontifici, in potestatis plenitudine tradidit gubernandam. Hunc vnum super omnes gentes & omnia regna principem constituit, qui euellat, destruat, disipet, disperdat plantet & adificet, vt fidelem populum matua charitatis nexu constrictum, in onitate spiritus contineat, saluumų, & incolumem suo exhibeat Saluatori. Quo quidem in munere obeundo, nos ad pradict a Ecclesia guernacula Des benignitate vocati, nullum laborem inQueene Enizabeth ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 61.

termittimus, omni operà contendentes, vi ipse vnitas & Catholica Religio (quam illius Author, ad probandam quam ipsa prasentes facerent, si essent exhibita vel ossenfuorum filem & correctionem nostram, tantis procellis Ja. Datum Rome apud S. Petrum. Anno incarnationic Domini, 1569. Quinto Calend. Alariy, Pontificatus conflict ari permissit) integra conservetur. Sed impiorum numerus tantum potentiainualuit, ot nullus tam in orbe nostri Anno quinto. locus sit relictus, quem illi pessima dottrina corrampere non tentarint, adnitente (inter cateros) flagitiorum Serua Elizabetha, pretensa e Anglia Regina, ad quam veluii ad Afjlum omnium infestissimi profugium inuenerunt. Has cadem, Regnooccupato, Suprem Ecclefie capitis locum in omni Anglia, cius que pracipuam authoritatem at.

que insissación monstruos estri vsurpans, Regnis psum, iam tunc ad fidem Catholicam & bonam frugem reductum, rursus in miserum exitium reuscauit. Vsu nama, vera Religionis, quam ab illius defertore Hemico ottano olim euer sam, clar a memoria Maria Regina legitima huius sedis presidio reparameras, potents manu inhibito, secutis se amplexis hareticorum erroribus, Regium Conciliamex Anlgica Nobilitate confectum direme, illudo obseuris hominibus hareticis compleuit, Catholica fider organes momentos cartuas compount, canouca pur-cultores opposits, improbos concionatores astá impietatum administros reposut. Missa, sarrigicum, preest, ieu-ma, ciboram delectum, calibatum ritus a Catholicos abo-

leuit. Libros manifestam haresim consinentes toto Regno proponi impia misteria & instituta ad Caluini prascriptum à se suscepta & observata, etiam à subditis servari tum a se jascepa Cooseman, anum w jmores, & dies mandauti. Esiscopos Ecclessamm, Releves, & dies Sacerdotes Carholicos, suis Ecclessa Beneficiy ciscos, ac de illis & alijs rebue Ecclessiticis, in hareticos homines disponere, deg. Ecclesia causis decernere ausa, Pralatis, Clero Populo ne Romanam Ecclesiam agnoscerent, neue

eius praceptis sanctionibus à canonicis obtemperarent, interdixit; plerosque in nefarias suas leges venire; Romani Pontificis authoritatem atque obedentiam abiurare, seque solam in temporalibus & spiritualibus Domi-Tate și eque jouure o sempou aucou & pertimaumo sems-aam egosfere iureiurando coegit și pernac & supplicia în eoi qui dicto non esfent audientes impossit, easfam ab jis qui în vnitate fidet & predicta obedientia per seurarunt, exegit ; Catholicos Antistites & Ecclesiarum

runt. Que omnia cum apud omnes nationes perspicua & notoria sint, & graussimo quamplurmorum testimonio ita comprobata, ot nullus omnino locus excusationis, desensionis, aut terginersationis relinquatur; Nos, multiplicantibus alijs atque alijs super alias impietatibus & faci-noribus, & pratereasidelium persecutione, Religionis que afflictione, impulsu & opera dicta Elizabetha quotidie mugus ingrauescente, quoniam illius animum ita obsumatum atque induratum intelligimus, vt non modo pias Catholico um Principum de fanitate & conversione preces,

ferit, ad arma I ustitia contra cam de necessitate conversi, dolorem lenire non possumus, quod adducamar in vnam animaduertere cuius maiores de Republica Christiana tantoperè meruère. Illius itaque authoritate suffuiti, qui nos in hoc supremo Iustitie Throno, licet tanto oneri impares, voluit collocare, de Apostolica posestatis plenisudi-ne declaramus pradictam Elizabetham hareticam, & hareticorum fautricem, eique adharentes in predictis, Anathematis sententiam incurrisse, esseque à Christi corporis omitate pracisos. Quinetiam ipsam pratenso Regni pradicti iure, nec non omni & quocunque Dominio, dignitate prinilegioque prinatam, & item Proceres, subditos & populos dictiregni, ac cateros omnes, qui illi quomodocunque iur averunt, à iur amento huiu/modi, ac omni pror sus Dominy, fidelitatis & obsequy debito perpetuo absolutos, prout nos illos prasentiŭ authoritate absoluimus. & priuamus;eandem Elizabethampraten (o iure Regni, alij [4, om-

nibus supradictis. Praci; imusque & interdicimus vniuersis & singulis proceribus, subditis, populis, & alis pradictis, neilli eiusue monitis, mandatis, & legibus audeant obedire. Qui secus egerint, eos simili anathematis sententia innodamus. Quia verò difficile nimis esfet prasentes quocunque illis opus erit perferre, volumus vi carum exempla, Notary pub ici manu, & Pralati Eccless-

The fame in English.

The declaratorie sentence of the Vniuerfall Bilhop, Pope Pius the fift, against Elizabeth the pretended Queene of England, and against the Heretikes that take her

Wherein also all her subjects are declared to be absolued from the Oath of Allegiance and any other dutie what soener, and befides they that doe obey her are pronounced accurled.

Pins the feruant of the feruants of God for remembrance hereof in time to come.

(74) Hethat raigneth aboue, to whom is given all power in Heaven and Earth, hath committed in fulnesse of power to be gouerned, one holy Catholike and Apostolike Church (where-out is no saluation) to one onely in Earth, namely, Peter the Prince of the Apostels, and to the Romane Bishop the Successor of Peter. And him alone hath he made Chiefe ouer all Nations and Kingdomes, who may roote out; deffroy, featter, waste, plant and build: that the faithfull people knit rogether with the band of mutual Charity, might be kept in the unity of the Spirit, and presented in health and safety unto their Sautour. For the vindergoing of which office we being called by the goodnesse of God to the gouernment of the said Church, doe refuse and omit no paines, labouring by all meanes that this vnity and Catholike Religion (which the Author thereof for the triall of the Faith of those that be his and for our Rectores in vincula coniecit, vbi multi diuturno languore correction and amendment, harh suffered to bee tof-& tristitia confecti, extremum vita diem misere fin efed with so great afflictions) might bee preserved whole and entire: But the number of the wicked hath so much increased in power, that now there is no place in the world left, which they have not attempted to corrupt by most wicked doctrine; a-mong therest, Elizabeth the servant of sinsulnesse, the pretenfed and valawful Queene of England, with whom, as in a Sanctuary the most wicked persons of all doe finde a refuge. This Queene, ruling the Kingdome, and monstrously vsurping to her selfe the place of the Supreme Head of the Church throughmonitione que contempferit, sed ne huius quidem sedis ad out al England, and the chief authority & jurisdiction ip/am hae de causa Nuncios; in Angliam trajecte permiof the same, hath renoked againe to miterable ruine this very Kingdome which was in a maner recovered againe to the Catholike faith and good denotion. For the vie of the true Religion (which the most lawfull Queene, Mary of famous memory by the helpe of this Seate, had repaired, being be-fore by the Apostata, Henry the eight, ouerthrown) now by stronge hand restrained, and the errors of heretickes embraced and followed; shee hath remoued the Councell of State that confished of the English Nobility, and fild the same with obscure hereticall fellowes; the hath opprefied the Profeffors of the Catholike faith, and hath fet vp wicked Preachers and Ministers of impieties. Shee hath abolished the Sacrifice of the Masse, Praiers, Almes, difference of meate, fingle life, and Gatholike rites. Shee hath commanded bookes to be let foorth containing manifest Herefie, and her felfe v sing and ob. feruing wicked Rites and Inflitutions, according to Caluins prescription; hath also commanded them to be observed by her subjects. Shee hath presumed to cast our, Bishops of Churches, Rectors, and other Catholike Priefts, from their Churches and Benefices, and to dispose of them and other Ecclesiasticall linings among Hereticall men; presuming also to astici, ciusue Curia sigillo obsignata candem illam pror sus iudge of Church matters; shee hath forbidden the fidem in iudicio, & ex tra illud, vhique gentium faciant, Prelates, the Church and people, that they should Kkkkk 2 not

(bap. 24 Queene Elizabeth. ENGLANDS MONAR CHS. Monarch 61.

(85) To which end faculties were granted to Ro-

Petatur à Summo Domino nostro, explicatio, &c.

or meaning of an unamental fact as do adhere or obey her: fifth against Elizabeth, and such as do adhere or obey her: Which Bull the Catholikes defire to bee under stood in this

bind, as matters doe now stand or be, till hereafter, when

the publike execution of that Bull may be e had or made. And in the Conclusion thus, The highest Pontisse

of Justice, and drew his last threed in the Triangle of

Tyborne. After whom others, as some likewise

before them, ploughing with the same Heiser, and

fowing the furrowes with the fame feed, reaped their

haruest with no better increase then tares or darnell

Agnus Dei, and an old Copie for a new Iubile, with

some other Writings, maintaining the authority of

Rome, diffwaded the naturall subjects from their due

could yeeld, as was feene by their fucceffes.

Cocke-sure, hasted to execute his Commission himindemnity of the State. To Ihrowdethemselues and felfe, where with lookes very bigge vpon the poore Mariners, each Cabbin, Cheft and Corner, aboue their Disciples from that daunger of law, at the E.Reg. 27. Story taken in his borde were searched, & some things found to draw fuire of Campion, Persons, Haywood, and Hart, a Adispensation Introor Campton, Forjons, Lagueva, alle Lare, differentiation was given to the Camelion Catholikes, obtained from the rigororus extent of the forefaid Bull. To the rigororus extent of the forefaid Bull. him further on; fo that the hatches must bee opened, which seemed to bee vnwillingly done, and that most of these Seminaries imploied for England, great signes of feare was shewed by their faces. This cast off their Serpentine Skinnes, and shewed themdrew on the Doctor to descend into the hould felues abroad in the attire of Gallants, the more fafewhere now in the trap, the moule might well gnawe, ly to vent their enuenomed drugges, and to keepe their Coules from preaching at the Gallowes.

arraigned and condemned of high Treasou, and ac-

cordingly was executed at Tiborne, as he had well de-

(81) To the like end came Sherwin, Campion,

Kirly, with others feditious trumpetters of this in-

famous Bull, and Sanders the Irith Legate, and grea-

test maintainer of his goring authority, though hee

escaped the Barre of instice, yet was found our by

a rauing Phrensie, as he wandred succourlesse in the

waste mountaines of Ireland, wherein lastly he mise-

rably died. But to leave these poisonous tongue-

men and libellous pen-men to register their owne

shame, and seare their consciences with the brand of

finne; let vs discouer those other daring and swor-

ding Monsters, who actually imploied themselues,

to lay, either violent hands vpon her Maiesties per-

(82) The first of them (or first manifested) was

Iohn Sommeruile of Elstowe in Warwickeshire, a furi-

ous young man, who like a tempest that threatned

destruction, came ragingly forward towards the

Court, with intent to murther the Queene; the

progresse of which attempt summarily was thus.

Keeping his Whit fontid with Arden (his wives father)

he was there fo wrought by Halla Seminary Priest, as

hee conceined a desperate rage against her Maiesty, holding it a matter (seeing there was no hope of al-teration during the life of the Queene) meritorious

to make her away; to which bloody refolution, he

was further instigated by his wicked wife. Where-

upon returning home, hee grew much perplexed, having many feares and conflicts in himselfe, which

caused his wife to write vnto Hall, to come and

firengthen the man with firmer resolutions. But

he, bufied elfewhere with the like purpofes, by let-

ter excused his not comming, yet therein aduited

him to goo forward, promifing he would assit him with his praiers to God for his good successe.

(8.) This letter received, hee grew fully refol

ued to actuate the deligne, and halted his journey a-

mayne towards London; who no fooner departed,

but that his wife fent Halles letter vnto her mother,

and shee presently made it knowne to Arden her

husband, which letter hee caused to bee burnt as

soone as himselfe was called in question. But So-

meruile discoucred by the way, was indited in War-

wicke, and those his Affociates condemned of high

Treason in London; Someraile confessing his intent said, that hee had been emoued thereunto by his

wicked spirit, and by the inticements of certain se-

fon, or the Land open to forreine inualions.

His arraignment but could not get out; for the hatches went downe and the failes hoifed vp, which with a merrie gale were blowne into England, where ere long hee was

bedience.

dirious persons, his Kinsimen and Allies, together (88) But Iohn Paine a Priest stepped yet som what further, in practising the death of her Maiesty, who offices perions, in admining and miles, rogether with the often reading of pernicious bookes, published against her Maierly. This desperate Ruffian committed to Newgate after his condemnation, with fifty Refolutes, furnished at the Popes charge, was appointed violently to assayle her, being slenmost desperately strangled himselfe to death;an exderly guarded as shee tooke her recreation abroad ample of Gods scuerity against such sonnes of diso-These and such others are the men that are made Martyrs in the Popes Bead-rolle, as chosen vessels to fuffer for the Romifb cause, of which number Sanders

Allen hee had done.

(84) Of which litter in the dayes of this bleffed Deborah, not so few as one hundred and twenty of knowne Iesuites and Seminaries scrawled like frogs, through her faire foile, croaking, and spawning their doctrine to recall obedience to the Pope, and diffwading the Subjects from the allegiance vnto their Queene: Of this number fifty three with

pardon of life were banished the land, and the rest

as Traitors died for conspiracy against her person, and breach of the law in that cale enacted for the To the Right Worshipfull M. Doctor Allem Iesus, S. P. in Domino.

was not worthy to be, as himfelf Doctor-like fignifi-

ed in his letter vnto Allen, which here I infert, accor-

ding to the Original, to shew what honest hearts he &

his Mates did beare towards their Natiue Country

(89) Yours of the seventh of lune came to my handes Sanders voto M.

(85) To which end raculties were granted to abbert Perfons and Edmand Campion, vncill they could make their party firong in England; which faculties to his adherent.

Let there be defired of our most high Lord an explication tune to the Pope or meaning of the Bull declaratory, made by Pius the

manner, that the same Bull shall alwayes ound her and the Heretikes, but the Catholikes it shall by no meanes

granted thefe forefaid Graces to Father Robert Persons, The Popergram and Edmund Campion, who are now to take their way inand advanced amplion, woo are now with the reference of the England the foureteenth day of Aprill, in the yeere of our Lord 1,80 heing prefent, the Father Olinerius, Manarke afsifiant. And though the one of these spidere sponne his Webbe so in corners, as hee could not be found, yet was the other swept downe by the hand

(c6) Wherein Cuthert Mayne in Cornwall had A. D. 1577. (before this time) borne a part, who armed with an Treasons,

obedience, deliuering diuers holy Graines (as he tearmed them) by which, hee that had fuch thould bee holy Graines.

knowne to bee fure of that fide, and thereby to bee defended in the bloody day, as by his inditement staderh vpon Record, and coteffed under his own hand. Nelfen and other

(87) Nelson, Hanse, Lacies, Briant, Cotam, and infirmments of a great number of others, were all of them imploied, to draw the hearts of the Subjectes from their Soneraigne, and to prepare way to an intended in-uation. And left maffing Priefts (hould bee wan-

ting to make easie the scrues of their winding devifes, when their Cobwebs were wouen, Thom-Jen brought Holy Oyle to befineare their sha-uen Crownes; Homford a dispensation of Pius Unitus his Bull, not to extend to the Catholikes,

until oportunity serued; and Haydocke was doubly Haydock. imployed, both to prepare aides to affift the enter-prife, and to note the firtest landing places, for for-

raine forces, which himselfe sent word to Doctor

The Popes holy

A Letter of

	to greater comfort, then the successe that followed could	Remanized Gentlemen of cuery Shire, and the Ha-	
- 1	maintaine. O pittifull change of things, the more need	uens for landing of forraigne power, were therein	
1	of peace within, to withstand such troublesome persecu-	found: with certaine Petigrees touching the title	
)	tions as you there have suffered. I am not worthy to	to the English Crowne, and some infamous libels	
	partake them: they are for more chosen vessels. God	published beyond seas against her Maiestics person-	
	grant you all there to know your owne blessing, and to	But a certaine Casket couered with greene veluct,	
	thanke God of it. I had as much before my eyes long be-	was cunningly contained from under a bed, and car-	
eret Charage	fore, and fill thinke that wee shall have no steady com- fort but from God: a x A A, not 0 x. There-	ried to the Spanish Ambassador, wherein many things	
srs.		lay hid that neuer after came to light; as also a ict-	
	of Spaine is as fearefull of warre, as a Child of fire: and	ter which himselfe was then writing in Ciphers, hee	Threemerton con-
	all his endeauours is to avoid all fuch occasions. A will	conuaied from the fight of the fearchers: all which himfelfe confessed, and with his owne penne wrote	feilech the whole confpiracie.
A. Seemeth to gaify the Pope.	give two thousand when you there shall bee content with	the whole Conspiracy, for which, after judgement	compilacie.
jany enerope.	them. If they doe not ferue to goe to England, at the	hee most worthily died.	
	least they will serve to goe into Treland I thanke you	(94) Not warned by these, William Parry (as he	4.70 -
	hartily for the fauour you have shewed to Gibbons brother, it seemeth to be a blessed brood for Gods sake continue your	named himfelfe) a man of a profuse wastfulnesse; ri-	A.D. 1.584.
	it seemeth to be a blessed brood for Gods sake continue your	ot, and produgality, having confirmed two wid-	LEFFIE TICALOR.
	Janour still that way, albeit I feare mee your Seminarie	dows wealthes, and wounded his Creditor, by com-	M. Hugh Hart in
	will againe fall to dispersion. I have none other thing in	mitting Burglarie, was for the fact condemned to	the Temple.
	this world so at the heart as to bee with you: nor can I	die, but sued and obtained his pardon of life by the	
	get leave to depart hence. Therefore if it so fall that it be	compaisioned mercy of Queene Elizabers, which he,	Parry formerly had his late by
	no hinder ance for you to come hither loofe not the occasion.	vngratefull man, fought to requite, by yowing her	had his life by the Queenes
	Vale in Christo Ielu viscera mea, ego te fruar in Do-	death, that faued him from his. For trauelling into	pardon.
	mino, qui te in æternum tueatur, From Madrid the 6.	fortaine parts, and there obtaining the ritle of a	
	of November, 1577.	Ciulian Doctor, he fell from his natural alleagiance	
,	(90) By this wee see, what plottes were inten- ded for the subuersion of England, and what fruits	(as riotous Malecontents viually doe) and reconci-	
6. 43. b. 7. 16.	thole Italianate Fugitiues brought forth, but as men	led himselfe vnto the See of Rome, then having fre-	
b. 7. 16.	cannot gather grapes from the Thornes, neither do	quent acquaintance and conference with certaine	
1	finde the figges on the Thiftle: fo let these brambles	lefuiticali Priefts, was finally inspired with a hellish resolution to kill her who had given him life.	
	bring forth their owne berries, and let their bandes	(95) Whereunto hee was further infligated by	
long conful-	be prickt that leeke to plucke them; as indeed they	Benedicto Palmio a father leivite, Christofero de Sala-	
nabout an fion draw-	did theirs, of whom wee are to write; wherof Fran-	sar, Secretary to the Catholike King, and Thomas	The infligaters of his distellish
owards an	cis Throgmorton a Gentleman well educated and of	Morgan an English Fugitiue, Anniball a Codreto his	attempt.
	a good witte was one; who weary of longer delay,		
nortens uns.	after to many yeeres plotting and confulting of an	Regazzenithe Popes Nuntio, promiting that this	
	Inualion, refolued to be the man himselfe, to bring		
	the matter to an iffue.	Altar. Two things were yet wanting, to ftrike vo	
0.1583.	(91) This man follicited by Barnardine Mendo-	this Cataltrophe, which were the Popes approbari.	
e Difeer.of	ze, the Spanish Leager-Ambassador lying in Lon-	on, and his Abiolution from all his finnes : to pro-	
	don, vndertooke a most dangerous designe against	cure which, Cardinall Como was imployed, who for	Cardinall Come
	his dread Soueraigne, and natine Country, which	effectually followed the businesse, that both were	foliciteth the Pope for the ex-
ofigne and outson of it.	was, to bring in a forraigne Army, and to alter Religi- on, with alienation of the Crowne and State, His	inortly procured, and ient him into England with a	plost,
ł	imploiment was to found the hauens for entrance,	warrant to proceed in his Holinesse name.	
i	and to collect a Catalogue of the names of such	(96) Thusarmed from Rome, his promifes on	
- 1	great men in enery County of England as frond for	earth, and his vowes in heauen, the worke feemes	1
s Paget.	the Papall cause, vnro whom Charles Paget (masked	meritorious, and the Queene must die: to effect which, no fitter way could bee found, then to fain	
	vnder the names of More and Spring) was jouned	nimicité à falle i raitor indeed. For haning primere	i
Englefield.	for an affiltant. Sir Francis Englefeild in the Low-	accesse to her presence, was heard at large, that hee	Parry treatne-
1	Countries, and others cliewhere had vehemently	was the man who had vidertaken ber death, which	roully contesseth
- 1	foilicited the King of Spaine to attempt Fuelands	to lound the deepe waters, and to heare fails with	Trainor.
- 1	inuation, and the Duke of Guize, viidertooke to bee	the tairest hee promised to doe, with no intent ac	l
	the principal leader, conditionally that Rome and	lice contraintly aftirmed, to act that imposed charge	1
i	Spaine, would beare the charge of the warre.	but onely to discover those who laid for her lefe	1
1	(92) For compassing this plotte, Throgmorton		1
- 1	(for his part) had plotted a chard of the hauens and	not early blinded or beguiled with words learned !	- 1
1	harbours of England, and gathered his Catalogue of	to doubtrainy to interpret his contelled tack which i	
1	Catholike aiders, which hee presented vnto Men-	Verince kept lecret from her nearest Compatitudes	. 1
of the har-	doza. In this his Suruey no place was held fitter	that he in great teare departed; as how can a confei-	!
ppointed ding.	to land these forraine powers, then was Arundellin Suffex, both for the neere cutte from those parts of		Parry fleweth the QueeneCar-
surg.	France, where the Guize meant to muster his men.	If Off Como nee incwed : which forming all an L !	dinail Comoes
- 1	as also for the opportunity of affured persons, to	I helic checiniculated his full to De Mr. of Ct Katheriner	Letter.
- 1	give them affiftance, as they did presume. The		Parry incenfed with denial of
1	want was onely Money; for which, mellengers	intion to kit nerrandorten haume weapon prefence	bis fuir for Saint
	were employed vnto Rome and to Spaine, whole re-	place & oportunity, purposely thought to performe	Katherines.
	turne was daily expected with bagges and Bile of	it, but ever was daunted when he beheld the glory	Themaiefty of
- 1	Exchange, as they wished and well hoped, which	of her presence, and Maiesty in her face, wherein to his seeming the Image of God, in her his Vice-gerent,	bethi prefence
áme Men-	confidently was allured by Barnardine Mendeza, DIO-	was portraied, commanding him obedience, and	often dashed Parries attempt,
ļ	miling that the King his Master would beare halfe	threatning destruction to those who intend vio-	· wither attempt.
- 1	the charge of the enterprize.	lence against his holy annointed.	
	(93) The treason thus forwarded and ready for	(97) This Sinons part thus fayling, he fought to	
,	execution, the Watchman of Israel, who ener waked	vndermine the walles yet another way; his vowes	
1	for the defence of his Annothted, and walled her	rening in heaven were holy morines (forforth) and	
	vineyara with his owne protection, shooke out the	this hellish act, and Allens bookeredoubling his for-	
- 1	truite of this ill-conceived feed from the huske, be-	met retorations (wherein euery word was a warrant	Perrie animated by Allem books.
gmorten ap-	fore it was ripe. For Throgmorton fodainely ap-	for his prepared minde, and enery ingranghe than	,
	prehended, and his study searched, the Catalogue of	Kings might bee depriued, excommunicated, and	
nded.	r		

Tribilates of

2000/10

(b.p. 24 Queene Elizabeth. ENGLANDS MONAR CHS. Monarch 61. violently deposed, in case of the religion of Rome) vpon these spurres hee posted to a worthy Gentle-man, whom he supposed as discontented as himself, and had judgement of a Traitor. Which accordingly was executed in the Palace at Westminster, vpon the m. Particexeopening his Treations for the bringing in of forreine fecond of March following; where (whether for suted inuaders folliciting his assistance, and threatning feare of preiadicing and discrediting the Romanists with dagge or dagger to kill the Queene.

(98) The Gentleman, loathing this horrible canie, or by whatlocuer other periwation) he impudently denied, that he ener had an intent to kill the Parries Treason intent, renealed the Treason vnto two principall Queene, norwithstanding all his owne former con-Prinie Counfellers, and they vnto her Maiefty, who fellions, witnesse of the fact, and other cleare eniden-Sir Francia mal. committed his examination vnto Sir Francis Walfingces of truth;amongst which, the letter received from ham her principall Secretarie, a man of exquilir indgement, integrity and industry in all state affaires Cardinall Como is not vnworthy to be here annexed, whose translation from the originall, written in the for intelligences of Stare.

Parries Treafons
confelled under and intelligences; the Treasons then found out, and Italian tongue, is as followeth. confessed by himselfe, were disulged by his volunta-(101) Sir, his Holinesse hath seene your letter of the Cardinall (one for fi , with the affur ance included, and cannot but commend buseaucto rie pen, and subscribed vnto, with his owne hand, his ownehand with many other circumflances vaknowne before, the good disposition and resolution, which you write to Parie. and againe were seconded by another letter, written hould towards the service and benefit publike : wherein to the Lords of the Counsell, which heere out of the his Holinesse doth exhort you to perseuere, with cansing to bee brought to effect that which you pro-Originall, I have inferred. (99) My Lords, now that the conspiracy is discouemise. And to the end you may be so much the more holpen Parries letter to red, the fault confessed, my conscience cleared, and minde by that good spirit which hath moned you thereunto, his Tension, and consequently no consecutations and minute prepared patienth to suffer paints due for le hainous a crime: I hope it shall not offend you, if crying, Milicera with the poore Publicane, I leave to despaire with curfed holinesse doth grant you plenary indulgence, and remission of all your simmes, according to your request. Assuring you that besides the merite that you shall receive therefore in Came. My case is rare, and strange, and for any thing heauen, his Holinesse will further make himselfe debtor I can remember singular: anaturall Subtett solemnly to vowe the death of his naturall Queene, (b borne, so to acknowledge and requite your deservings, by all the best meaneshemay. And that so much the more in that you knowne, and so taken by all men) for the reliefe of the afvse the more modesty in not pretending any thing. Pat flicted Catholike, andrestitution of Religion. The mattherefore to effect your holy and honorable determinations, ter forst conceined in V enice, the service (in general words) and attendyour health. And to conclude, I offer my selfe onto you hartily, and wish all good and happy successe. presented to the Pope, continued and undertaken in Paris, andlastly, commended and warranted by his holinesse; di From Rome, the xxx. of lanuary, 1584. gested and resolved in England, if it had not beene prevented by accusation, or by her Maiesties greater lenity and Atyourdisposing more grations vsage of her Catholike Subjects. This is my first and last off ence conceived against my Prince, or Coun-N. Card. of Como. trey, and doth (I cannot deny) containe all other faults (102) Had not then her Maiesty iust cause to what soeuer. It is now to bee punished by death, or most gracionly (beyond all common expectation) to be pardocomplaine, as flee did? when in the honourable Ex Parls, in Az. ned. Death I doe confesse to have deserved : life I doe affembly of Parliament, the openly professed, that The hazards and affembly of Parliament, she openly protested, that she nezaros and she was no creature breathing, whose life stood housely standard from the action of the she was no creature breathing, whose life stood housely standard from the she was no creature breathing. (with all humilise) crave, if it may stand with the Queens Honour, and policie of the time. To leave fo great a in more perill then her owne; and that even at the first en-Treason unpunished, were strange; to drawe it by my trance into her estate, the entred into infinite dangers of death, in example, were dangerous. A sworne seruant to take upon him such an enterprize, upon such a ground and life, as one that had to wrestle with many and mighty enemies, Andyer, in confidence of her celescial Promed forwwhat too remife and neglective in the edgement false and its as a possess. by such a warrant, hath not beene seene in England. To indite him, arraigne him, bring him to the Saffold, and to publish his offence, can doe no good. To hope that hee hath care of her selfe and life as appeared manifestic by more to discouer then is confessed, or that at his execution her proceedings with this last Traitor, in keeping his conference of that importance, from the knowledge of her Counsellers, and often admitting prinately his he will onfay any thing he hath written, is in vaine, To conclude, that it is impossible for him in time to make Some part of amends, were very hard and against foraccesse, though he had tolde her, he was the man apmer experiences. The question then is whether it be betpointed to worke her death. And indeed such was this Princesse Magnanimity, that in an apparant ter to kill him, or (left the matter be mistaken) wpon hope of his amendment to pardon him. For mine owne opinidanger, as great, though not fo traiterous as this, the on (though partiall) I will deliveryou my conscience. The shewed a resolution of courage farre aboue her sexe: when being in her Barge vpon Thames to take the cafeis good Queene Elizabeths; the offence is committed against her sacred person; and shee may (of her aire, accompanied with the French Ambassador, the mercy) pardon it without presudice to any. Then this ! Earle of Lincolne, and others, a Seruingman in the Court with his Caliner discharged a Bullet, and shot Thomas Applered say, in few words, as a man more desirous to discharge his troubled conscience, then to line. Pardon poore Parthe Waterman, within fixe foote of her feate, (the fefhortheQueence cond to her Bales) through both the armes; where- July 17. tie, and releeue him: for life without living is not fit for him. If this may not be, or be thought dangerous or difat all other being amazed, and the man abundantly honourable to the Queenes Maiefly (as by your fauours I thinke it full of honour and mercy) then I befeech your bleeding, the threw him her fearffe, and with words of comfort bad him be of good cheere, he should not want, for the bullet was aimed at her, though it hit Lordships (and no other) once to heare me before I be endicted, and afterwards, if I must die, humbly to enhim; and with such resolute courage bare it out, as him and with nontrebonde coolings base to only all prefent, admired. Neither fo onely, but knowing afterwards that it was done casually at randome, the treat the Queenes Maiesty to hasten my triall and execution : which I pray God, with all my heart, may proone as honourable to ber, as I hope, it shall be happy to me. who will, while I line (as I have done alwaies) pray to lesus both pardoned the partie of his life, when he was to der. die, and commanded his Master to retaine him a-Christ for her Maiesties long and prosperous raigne. From gaine into his feruice. (103) And indeed, of so fingular elemency, and the Tower the 18, of February. 1584. inbread lenity was this Lady, that shee neuer heard Her finguler elemention of the capitall (though neuer fo deferued) of coders. W. Parry. punishment of offenders, euen of such as had sought Febru. 25. her owne death, but it breda kinde of horror and (100) And according to this his last request, his forrow in her; whereby, had not her Counsellers inditement was framed, and arraignement perforearnessly inculcated the necessity of such exemplary medat Westminster, where he pleaded himselfe guilty Iuftice, many dangerous attepters had escaped their Iii iii 2

CO1 (C. C.)	due punishment. Which moued her to say, being once questioning with a * great Divine of oxford, a-	ward Iones Elquires, Iohn Sanige, Robert Barnewell	3			tiues in other forreigne parts; especially to the	DS MONARCHS.Monarch
ford.	bout bookes meetest for Princes to study on, that	Henrie Dun, John Trauerse, John Charnocke, and Ri	-1	A:05.	e.9 5. es Francis	luits, who carrief as parts; especially to the	le- least forcested rold him has much -
- 1	ker Reading of Seneca de Clementia, had done her much	chard Gage, Gentlemen, and Iohn Ballard a Semina	:	23 ues	es Francis.		
1	good, but some would per swade her, it had done her State	rie Priest; for can there be any conspiracies hatched	l : Baldinaran larran			Jaques Frances a perfidious Traitor, and bale Land	
- 14	as much harme. But for her loue to her people in geal	without them? The plot was the more dangerous by how much the more secretly carried, and the par	Prayagina secret	rioce	cceding a. oft Transors.	dreffe fonne, feeing the Catholicks thus cast down	
	nerall, and tender care ouer the poorer fort, or any	ties resolute to venture therein vitto death, whereo	c			and their case desperate, if treasons were thus preue	
- 1	waies oppressed, it was incomparable; whose cares	fixe vndertooke to murther the Queene, and Sasag				ted and punished, pronounced this maxime out of his vinwashed mouth, that the State of England the was, and would be for fault the State of England the	fo commanded him by the Queene: yea marry fa
icus	WEIGHOLOBIY ODER at all times to their complaints					his vinwaihed mouth, that the State of Fueland the	
erall (and her hands ready to receive their peririons : but	1 Too The Chemmus Land O 1 Com				was, and would be fo fetled, as vnleffe Miffris Else.	it pleafe your honor faid Lope : a purge Mafter D
4.4	her manner was also to commend their canse voto	tanes, whose chiefe or * head in the Low Country	Their pretenies.			beth (for so he termed his dread Soueraigne) were such	der fäid the Lord Treasurer, I thinke I must becom
11	her Countelland Judges, giving these and the like	1 ROLORGIV threatned (as was presented) the defen-	coller	Statily	is.	denly taken away, all the Diucls in Hell would no	a Physician to purge you, and thereupon he appr hended him for a Trattor, who stood so perplex with feare, that his presure was sometiment
ft com-	carden charges; Hauecare of my people, you have my	ction of all Romish Catholikes, but also to vsurpe			,	be able to prevaile against, or shake it. And Stanle	with ferra shart a trattor, who floud to perplexe
	place: do you to them that which I ought to do: they are my	the Crowne from the Queene; and therefore for			1	that transfugous Champion for Spaine and Rome, imparient was of these very spaine and Rome, imparient was of these very spaine and Rome, in the spaine	with feare, that his presence was scarce tollerable stilled, for to examine the inpresence was called, for to examine the inpresence were
- 17	people, yet every man oppresseth and spoileth them without	I the iccurity of both they were thus enforced to	. ?	ļ		impatient was of these vaprospered proceedings	called for to obtain Doctors of Phylicke wer
- 1:	mercy. Themselves can verther helpe themselves may ve			A D	che Cullen. D. 1592.	that he hired Patrick Cullen, an Irish Fencer and Ruf	called, for to examine the ingredients, who easily found that the potton was position, for which hee was indicted and arraigned as R.
1	uenge their quarrell: See onto them, I pray you, fee onto	many, as Babington believed, who wrote that the West parts, the North parts, all Wales, the Counties of	einarions	n.D	J. 1592.	fian, to vindertake the death of the Queene; which	
14	them, for they are my charge, them therefore I charge you	West parts, the North parts, all Wales, the Counties of	which Traitors		- 1	he did for the fumme of thirty pounds, but had no	not onilar, and his are all barre, where he pleade
į.	with, euen as God hath committed them unto me. I care	Lancafter, Darby, and Stafford, were in orear for	haue of Abetter's		i	more for his money then the report of a Traitor	not guilty, and his two Conforts by long circumstan ces sought to save their lines, yet their former confe- lions subscribed with their yet their former confe-
1	not for my selfe, my life is not deare unto mee, my care is	wardnesse, and had given fidelity to give aide to the	and mends.	Crofinal	els Philo-		
- 1	for my people; I pray Godmy Successor bee as carefull for	enterprize. That Lord Percy could doe much in the	. l	pater.	1	(113) To accompany and fecond these treasons of Cullen Cresseral the Lorier Lessian	
1	them; and furely they which might know my cares for	North, Arundel in the South, and the Lord Paget in				of Cullen, Cressevell the Legier Iesuite in Spaine, writt	ent testimony of their guilts, for which at Tyburn
1	ms people, may likewife conceine, that I take no great ioy	the heart of the Land, though two of them were	.)		- 13	his traiterous booke vnder the name of Philopater,	vpon the featurnth of Hine they fuffered death.
17	n wearing the Crowne.			AD		as after him Cowback alias Parsons, another lesuite,	
- 1	(104) What heart then could conceine so great	was of a Nobleman to leade them, whereof they were		Ren Per	1594.	and Rector at Rome, did the like, under the name of	
- 47	milchiefe, or hand could bee to barbaronfly vio.		1 .		,	Doleman, concerning titles of the Crowne, both fo	of fome Froliff freetiments, vpon the resolution
- 1	ent, as to worke the destruction of so louing a nur-	Weltmorland, and be out of the Realme	1				of some English fugitines; among whom none were held more fit then Edmand Torke, and Richard Williams, souldiers by profession, and michard Williams.
1/	ing Mother, but onely those obdurate and menemous!	(109) Their forreine assisters were many and				the Authors be vinamed,) who focuer looketh on	
- 17	ripers, which eat forth the way from the wombe of					the brats, will eafily know their Fathers by the re-	Champions for the proteining, and two delperate
1	heir owne conceptions? Or rather those sting-tai-	I he Fores were appointed where the Innaders	1	A.D.	1594.	(rra) This is	Champions for the quarrell of Rome; vnto whom
11	ed Locuits, spiling with force (markefrom the box	1 should land; and once landed, thould be leconded	1		7,54	(114) This desperate designe failing, another	thewed an officered, and Spanish Pensioner,
1	omlesse pit, who to reare up their Dagon or great	from al parts by the Italianated English as they wain.	1	Lopez hi	aistrea. F	is diuelifh was affaid to bee practized, wherein, no	of foure thousand Crownes to bee given them for to
14	wife Abaaaon, Call COWING Princes with the wings of t	If hoped; the Statists (prorized which held not for		fon.	11	English man was yet knowne to haue had any hand,	murder their Queene; and for affurance that the
11	heir warre, and execute their damnable doctrine in	Kome - the faith reffered that had been shand and .	1			he Actors being onely Spaniards and Portugals, the	
10	he murthers of the Lords annointed; whereas Da-	and the vigrping Competitor (for for they termed	1		11	one folliciting by promifes of great rewards, the ober undertaking to morte the desired from the control of the	deliuered in Deposito, to Host an English sessite, who producing the Sacrament and kissing it, tooke solemne Oath to pay the money associated
	nd durft not touch Saul, though he was abiected by				120	her undertaking to worke the death of the Queene;	Droducing the Sagraman 11: 6
- 10	God.	themiciues the onely men marked (if ener) now ro	1		b	which was contriued, that poison should be given	lemne Oath to pay the money affoone as the fact
85.	(105) Those Proselites to vacessantly, yeere by	redecine the Land, from the terminde and bondage	ł	1	100	er in Phylicke a deligne indeed most fezible and in-	was done
55. J	cere, profecuted the Romane cause, that many of	Which rietelle had brought with the lotte of them	1		be	nitable, had not that hellish hand beene staid by a	(110) Toforward ships
E of t	hem thereby deferuedly came to their deaths; a-	lands of Soules. Thele were their glores your Pe	•		A	equenly. Rodericke Lopez was the Phylitian, a Do-	
P.	nongst whom was Henry Percie Earle of Northumber-	180 Zumius his alicaged I ext. and the faire milarde			efr	for of that profession and a Portugal by birth, in	as President, and William Stanley Proffer for this di-
14	und, gone so farre in such dissolall enterprizes, as be-	that hid their foule faces; whom God him felte vnmaC		Ì		peciall trust and practise for the state of her	
12	ng vpon suspition of Treason committed to the	Ked to their following theme		i i		(Us) Hone Coing	ple, to be constantly refolited, as a man ordained for
-47	ower of London, he laid violent hands vpo his own	(110) For Ballard being fentto Mendors to Go	Relland a Sausta	His first ba	. Inc	(115) Hee a fit instrument to act without suf- ct, received for an earness, a sewell of gold, of good lew, garnished with a garness.	
127	fe, by discharging a Dagge, charged with three bul-		narie,	. His inflian	arore val	less gorniford with	ed in attempting the Act, yet that it was meritorious
				Christophero	ro de Ru	this from Chair all agreat Diamond, and a large	
144	cart, and presently dying, was by a furic round	ded; and part of the confpiracy disconcred Where-	Rehivetone dinel.	More.	(c1)	lor of the King of a Choro, a special Coun-	Moodie, Charles Paget, Henry Owen, Edmund Garret,
13	unity of his owne death. The Treaton laid against		lift refolution.		his	seies as the prodice, whole futtre to dazelled	Moodie, Charles Paget, Henry Owen, Edmund Garret, and the two divine Doctors, Gifford and Worthington,
Re- In	im (belides the former of the infurrection in the	new reloiution, which was immediately to kill the			hea	art, and upon farther payment of fifty thouland	Were principall (peakers in 1
3 4	iorth, by himselfe confessed, and by the Court fi-	Queene, whereas of their bonney it had beene orde			Cra	ownes, hee couenanted to take away her Maiesties	all of them eager to egge on the two vndertakers, and
n	ed at five thousand Markes) was, that he had been	red before, that thee thould line warill the Inneffer			life	in a portion cianted to take away her Maieffies	to ioyne to them a third man, named Toung, whose
P	riuy to the Plots of Throgmorton, for the bringing	which was appointed to bee in September following			For	; in a potion giuen her vpon pretence of health. r the affurance of which money, Mannel Andrada,	taske should be to kill the greatest Counsellors, as
1.0	of Forreine powers, to the destruction of the Queen	But being intercented before he well wife he was		Manuel And	drada the	bringer of the Iewel, conferred with the Conde de	foone as the Queene should be dead. The last that
la la	nd Realme; which truth being reuealed by other	committed to Cuitody, yet fo as hee went abroad		Comác de Fue	Bentes. Fue	enter at Callie and Sand	fpake was Hölt the Prefident, who after he had mini-
10	onspirators, he so deepely apprehended, as in that		Inly.		fo	del likewife bu language Ferrera, a Portugallal-	
19	esperate manner hee prevented his further judge-		7.		Kin	igs Secretary at Bruvels to mal at S	menaced to take from the English this high and ac-
l b	nent.	intinicité like a Labouring man . Ifaining with mall		3 .	Lope	ez himfelfe afforing show at a lame readie:	ceptable feruice, and to employ therein Strangers,
1.	(106) In the same place (though after the Spa-	I interior reades his nands and face, which (badowed)			don	himselfe assuring to make the lame readie:	who were farre more worthy and fo fent the two
"	if attempt for Inualion Anno 1583. which pur-	I Delener his thame nor time patchagues 131 . 1			proj	miled and daily are a Carl which daily was	former into England with his bleffing, which neuer-
of P	ofely we yet paffe ouer, to auoide interrupting of	I multiform the eve that called him to account, for L.		} -	ded	was, that King Philip did not well like, that so base	theleffe could not faue them from the Gallowes:
in I	articular mens Treasons and designes) Philip Earle			1	a pe	erfon as Andrada was, should be emploied in fo	their purposes were to get entertainement of some
10	f Arundel, and Sir Iohn Perat late Lord Deputy of	with caries of the people committed to the Tower		1	waio	ghtva canie	
ras j	reland, both of them condemned of high Treason, by course of nature ended their lines; the one, see-	whence he could not to eatily mart.		Stepbana Payr	mara C	(16) Whereines w	ded, and to feeme men of fome note for intelligence,
- 15	y courie of nature ended their lines; the one, icc-	(111) The other conspirators, hearing of these			with	the King, received bils of exchange for the mo-	fent from Callis to procure their pasport, but the vigi-
- 17	ing to cscape the Land, was first fined at ten thou-	their contederates incesse different them (alone and			nev.	, deliuered by the Counte Fuentes, and from the	lant eye of the English state had found out their trea-
	and pounds, and afterwards found guilty of a			i i			fons before, & bringing them afterwards to their trea-
89 1	higher offence, had fentence of death : the other	and prought to their tryals, all of them confession	. 1		fentl	ly fent into England to conferre with Ferrara,	als, they were found gilty, judged, & died liketraitors.
11	kewile, for plotting with Spaine, to open their way in			. 1	and t	they both with Lengt and to Conferre with Ferrara,	(120) The last publike attempter, that atlaid the
92.	o Ireland, gaue way to the Law to take hold on his	raignement (perfuading themselves belike that	1				Queenes death, was Edward Squire, a Scriuener of The
11	(rom) Naishannan t C	i what they did by papall warrant, con'd not be call	i	1	villar	nie At which were informe to performe the	Greenewich, who by deputation had emploiment of
1.	(107) Neither were these great ones drawne a	icu i realon, i they bleaded nor outley which the	1		bring	gtolightthe configuration about did	a Purueyer in the Stable, but being in witteaboue
- 11	one into the confederacie of Romes irreligious pur-	1 111 y vpon manifest proofes finding otherwise they	- 1	Queene Eliza- beibs most cho	vigila	ancy of fome I orde of the Continuall	his vocation, and carrying his failes aboue his
- 11	oles, but others allo, thirling for Englands defiru-		1	Counfellors,			fortunes, put himfelfe in action for Scain the laft
- 1	tion, of leffe quality or place, had parts appointed to	Cordingly in Lincolnes Inne fields . even in the place	The Trainers				voiage of Sir Francis Drake made into the Indies.
86.	be actors in the Scene: which parties themselues shall	i which they had offencomented for the execution of	executed.		had.	Tourdent, and experienced Sages, then Shee	Embarked he was in a small strippe, called the Fran-
nd bis	nowenter the Stage, cuen foureteene in number;	their treatone	i	1_	1 /11	17) And so make any control of	ses, who looling the Flecte about Gasdalipe, was ta-
nd his	whereof Anthony Babington Elquire, was the prin-	(112) The neft of confpirators thus broken in		I sper put to t	tri- men	17) And to make experiment of his intend-	ken by five Spanish Frigors, and with other brought
- 1	apall, the others were Chiaioke Tichhorne Charles		ļ	***		sylopes was appointed to give the Queen Phy-	
- 1	Tilney, Edward Abingson, Thomas Salesbury, and Ed-	craftily laid, was a forecorfine to the English fugi-	1	I	, and the	who made ready the potion, and brought it to	with Richard Walpoole an English fugitive by order a
	. 1	tines	1	3	Tree Dr	refence. But her Maiesty knowing what hee	lesuite, in great credit, and vicar Generall to Parfons, luite,
		11126					

in his absence, was by him observed to be of more capacity then commonly was found in a man of his quality or education; for yeeres, mature, and paffed his middle age; for carriage well aduited, and refolute enough, if not too much, in not apprehending his eminent danger. (121) Vpon him Walpeole therefore meant to worke, conceining for his purpose two special ad-Squier a fit fubuantages : the one, that comming into Spaine a Prifoner, and not a fugitine, hisrcturne into England would be without suspect; the other, that squire had beene emploied in the Queenes Stable, and therefore had liberty of free accesse: But the more to involve what hee intended, hee subtilly caused Squier to be apprehended by the Inquisition, and put

> treffe, hee got his heart into his hands, fo that of a Neuter he became a fixed Romanist. (122) This first assay prouing effectuall, for an introduction to his further intendments, he fell into the old fong, whose burden was the tyrannies vsed, and the perfecutions exercised in England against the poore Catholikes; vpon how few persons the Engish State did stand, and how easily those props were to be remooued, if any denoted would put to their hands . Squire who wanted no wit to perceive whereat he aymed; first, gaue some slight signification, and after a more ferious proteflation, that hee was the man, that would facrifice himselfe and

prisoner into the boly House: where mollified by dis-

his seruice in the cause. (123) The good Father having thus got him into the circle, began then the charme: It were (faid Walpsole projects the killing of the Earle of Effex, he)no doubt a worke meritorious to kill the Earle of Effex; but vnum necessarium, one thing is necessary: And then tould him plainely, that he meant to put a feruice vpon him of great worth, and reward; which he might accomplish without any euident perill of life, becanse it was to bee done not immediately vpon her person , nor in her presence, neither yet in doing it (though hee were seene) should be endangered, being acted as hee would prescribe; and that

was, to impoy fon the pommell of the Queenes faddle, at such time as shee should ride abroade, the to poyfon the Queenes Saddle. Pommell being the place, whereon shee would rest her hand, and her hand not vnlikely to touch her mouth or nostrils, would give accesse to the forcible poison. This, said he, might casily be performed, he having familiar acquaintance in the Quirry, yea and that very safely; but if otherwise, and immediate death happened, he should be assured, that for the exchange of this prefent and transitory life, to ensoye the state of a Glorious Sainct in Heaven.

(124) Which Syrens fong ended, and Squire inveigled; confessions, vowes, promises, receite of the Sacrament, and all, confirmed the resolution of the disclish attempt; and to present varying from this Center , Walpoole tould him , that now he flood in the flate of damnation, if hee did not his ottermost endeuour to performe his vow, bidding him remember, how that the sime of backlyding did seldome obtaine pardon; and if he did but once make doubt of the law fulnesse or merit of the act, tiwas enough to cast him head-long downe into hell; and if he did conceine any difficulties, he wished him to confider what it availed a man, to win the whole

world, and to loofe his owne foule. (125) Squier thus armed (though not with that complete Armour of the Apostle) fell downe in confession before this Iesuites feete; whom he lifted up, hugd him about the necke, with his left arme (fuch were Squires owne words) and croffing him with his other hand, mumbled a few words in Latine, and then distinctly in English spake thus; His fatherly Be God bie fe thee, and give thee firength my some; bee of good coursee, I pawne my soule for thine, and thou shalt have my praiers deed and aline. Thereupon delivering vnto him the poyfon, directed how it should be

vsed, and shewed him the nature of the confection;

which was, to bee put into a double bladder, and

when it was to bee employed, to be pricked full of

The vie & fore

holes, and so pressed out upon the pommeli of the Queenes saddle; the operation whereof was such, that vpon his hand hee must have a thicke double gloue, least the poyson thercof should in feet himself; whose vigour also was such, as neither continuance of time, nor subtilty of ayre could checke or vn-vertuate the strength : And that the matter might be carried without all suspect, an exchange was accepted of two Spanish prisoners in England, for Kowles and Squire, to be released from Spaine. (126) Thus himselfe poyloned in heart, and squiers arriving

Monarch 61.

minding to poylon others, being monied by the le- in Esgland. fune, arrived in England, not long before the expedition for Cadiz; which action (as he thought) fitted him well, and thereupon made fuite and obtained it, to attend the Earle of Effex in his owne thip; afwel to be absent when the poyson should worke on her Maiesty (which he meant to bestow before his departure) as to haue opportunity thereby, to poylon the Earle himselfe. Occasion being given by the Queenes riding abroad, and her Horic made ready and attending in the Stable-yard, thether squier re-paired, full of euil spirits; and laying his hand vpon the pommel of her Saddle, bruifed out the poyfon in the bladder, saying cheerefully, God faue the Queen; with no better affection then loab bare to Amafa; when with his hand he works him better to Amafa; when he when with his hand he tooke him to kiffe him, but with his fword ftrock him to the heart. His part thus of her. plaide, Gods wonted and wonderfull protection beganne,

who vnder his Canopy or wings of mercy had euer shadowed her from the stroake of daunger; for albeit the * season was hot, and the veines open to receiue any maligne tainture, yet her body fels no di-ftemperature, nor her hand fels no more hurt, then Pauls did, when hee shooke of the Viper into the fire. (127) The deed thus done, without all mistrust, Squier taking the remaine of the poyfon, within fixe

daies after departed to the Sea, and had his entertainment in the Earle of Effex his owne Ship, where feeking to finish his dinelish designe betwixt Faialand Saint Michaels bestowed his confection, vpon the pommels of a wodden chaire, wherein the Earle viually fate at meales : which in like manner (the Lord going to Carlie, fo working)tooke not effect, to the no little admiration of Squier, though very well fatisfied, that the default was not his, but rather in the poylon it selfe; and his vow now discharged (as he thought) he slept the more quiet.

(128) Walpoole the Issuite over-tickled with loye | Squires Tresson of his hoped successe, and not able longer to keepe fecrecy, imparted his treasons to his companions in Spaine, who together with him daily expected the issue thereof, but all things silent, and no newes of the Catastrophe, they chaunged their opinions, and held Squire for a fall-brother, when as also their longing hearts beganne to feare , least the maine cause would bee mard, being cast into so bad a mould. Whereupon a consultation was called, and the Sicophant condemned in the highest degree, whose end must be speedily wrought, or else those Catholike proceedings would furely come to wracke; for that he knowing much, would (as was feared) reueale much more; and therefore it was politikely concluded, that one should be let slip from them into Eng-

land, to gine information of Squires treasons. (129) This man to have the more credit brought two letters in his budget, the one he affirmed, himself from the letuis had stolne out of a Tefuits study, & the other brought from another person, both which indeed were found to be counterfeit, and squire for the present reputed an honest man. Yet because the matter was tender, and touched nere the quicke, Squire was sent for, and examined ; at first he denies all, but comming to circumstances, something was found hould taken, and the Traitor committed to Prifonwho left alone, began to bethinke him how farre his Confessors Confession might extend, and therefore by good Counsell (the truth withall working)

66ap.24- Queene Elizabeth ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarch 61. he disclosed the Treason, and how farre he had thereing, and then was removed to the Charter-Houfe Releafedout of

their claime.

by Str Henry Cheiney.

in gon, which indeed no man had knowledge of but himselfe, and this confessed at the Tower, without torture, and at the Barre with remorfe of conscience, he had his sentence of death, which he accordingly suffered. (130) Had not then the wife Statists of the Land, The just morin cause to enact such Lawes as they did; to set the shacause to enact finch. Lawes as they did; to fet the share represent Trest king sword in the entrance of this faire Eden, and to stoppe out the wilde Bore that would lay the vine-

.S4M.10.2.

and death? So that inftly in a conference of Parliament, for meanes to be had against the many con-

So many and So fome ftrange attempt.

> minded Profelites, that reputed her bloud as an acceptable facrifice, which many times they fought to offer vnto their God : but hers and our God, the Oher visio tient Goo! out uses and Goo, see Watchman of frael, neither flumbred nor flept in protecting her Perfon as the apple of his eye; whose wild see her innocency, and their bloudy guilts, have often

* In Inly.

Squiers endeue

his treafon.

yard wask their Queene and lamp of Glory, haning thus often and narrowly ecaped extinguishing, by as many hands of murchering Priests and leguine, as Dasid had pursuers of his life, when to Ionathan hee complained that there was but a fleppe betwirt him

spirators, daily lenelling at her royall heart, one of good repute, having experience of their desperate designes, in the open assembly, with a feeling assection on, thus vitered his minde : that every night when bee continually were awaked, her feared to heare fome newes of desperate mif-

chiefe, and protested before God, hee never faw the light of the day, but that he feared before the Sun fet, to heare of (131) For as the Pope had denounced under his Buls, an absolutio to him that wold dethroan Elizabeth Englands faire Queen so were there many foule

divulged to the whole world, neuer any Prince efcaping to many dangers, as this most milde and mayden Queene in her daies had done, and many more no doubt were put in practice, which lay groueling in darkenesse, and nener came to light, and as the worker of darkeneffe, fo let them lie, and let vs haften to our former, and farre more pleasing Subject. Hauing therefore from the yeere 1 570. made our digreffion, for the closer relation of all those treacheries toge-

ther; let vs thence purfue the enfuing occurrents of her raigne and life. (132) The troubles of Scotland were about that The affaires of time, great and many, and much the more by the Fra: Thin. death of the new Regent, who was flaine by the hand

of Treason, with the shot of an Harquebusse, as he rode through Lithquo, mistrusting no danger, at which time a Roade was made into England, by such Suffex General of forces into Scotland, as little regarded the peace. Wherevpon Suffex the Earle Generall, accompanied with the Lord Hunfdon, Gouernour of Barwicke, in Hoffile manner entered that kingdome; and in Tinidale did much hurt to the Inhabitants. (133) New troubles then arising for the death of the Regent, and the Land full of factions, threat-

ning civill broiles, the English Queenes aide was sent for, by some of the Lords, who with their helps, preuailed in winning and demolishing many strong and faire Castles. And the Earle of Lennox fent into The Earle of Lenson Regent of Scotland Scotland by her Maiefty , was first made Lord Governor, and after L. Regent, by the election of their three estates, who afterwards was as trayter outly murthered, as the other before him had beene, which caused great troubles in Scotland; yea and some Nobles of England were not exempted from the same.

(134) For Lord Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolke, intending some fauours for the Scottish cause proceeded so farre therein, as the letter of the Law took advantage of his life, to the great forrow and laments of very many. For being a man filled with The good e-ficeme of the Duke. fanour, both of his Prince, and of the People, for-

tune at length made him a Ball for her banding

who first from Burnam besides Windfore was brough to Westminster, and thence by water was left prisoner in the Tower, where he remained from the elementh of ottober, vinto the fourth of August follow-

necre Smithfield, where he abode thirteene moneths the Tover. Tower, where, vpon the hill and Ordinary Scaffold, The Dokesend. he penitently suffered death; being the first vnfor- Iune 2. tunate English Noble that for offence lost life fince A.D. 1572. Queene Elizabeth came to the Crowne.

(135) About which time, a strange case (which Duestor combat we will infert, rather to frem the course of Infice and for the of Land. mercy of the Queene, then for any other great vie in Story) happened at the Common-law barre: where Simon Lowe, and Iohn Kyme were Plaintifes , for a certaine Manor and demaines in the Isle of Harty, adioyning to that of Sheppey in Kent, wrongfully possess (as they alleaged) by Thomas Paramour, against

downe his Gantlet as Challenger, to instiffe Paramours right, which was taken up by Henry Nailor Master

of defence, a man proper and flender, and not very sall, who appeared for Lone and Kyme, to make good

(136) The place appointed for Combat was in

twenty yards square, was doubly rayled, and with-

out the West-square a stage set for the Judges, repre-

fenting the Court of Common Pleas, behind the which

two Tents were pitched, the one for Thorne, and the other for Nailor, the field with Scaffolds on eue-

ry side for people to see: All things thus ready and

the day drawing on , her Maiefty , (who ever abhor-

red all bloodshead,) tooke the matter into her owne

hands, and gaue command and directions for the

parties agrement, with a furcease from all further

fuite, which could not well be, vnleffe the Champi-

came to the barre, and there held vp his Shield. Then

was Thorne brought into the lifts by Sir Henry Chei-

ney and with like reuerence hee held up his Sheild.

Whereupon an oth was ministred to the approver,

the Diuels power increased: and that my appeale is true;

Jo belpeme God and his Saints, and by this Booke.
(138) Then was Proclamation made in her Ma-

giue any token or figne, by countenance, speech, or

language, either to the proper, or to the defender,

whereby the one of them may take aduantage of

the other : and no person to remooue, but keepe

ftill his place : and enery person to keepe their staues

and their weapons to themselues ; and suffernei-

ther the faid prouer, nor defender to take any of their

weapons, or any other thing that may stand either

to the laid prouer or defender any auaile, vpon

paine of forfeiture of Lands, Tenements, Goods,

Chattels, and imprisonment of their bodies, and

making fine and ransome arthe Queenes pleasure.

whom they brought a writ of right: the defendant offered to maintaine his title by Combat, which the laintifes accepted, and brought their Champions before the Iudges to the Barre. For Paramour was George Thorne, of a bigge and broad fet, who caft

Tuttle fields, where a plot of ground of one and Com The place of

ons appeared in field; who altogether ignorant of June 13. what was determined, vpon the day affigued appea- A.D. 1571.

red in place. Thorne was there first who was brought to his Tentby Sir Ierome Bowes; then came Nailor, haning the Gauntletborne before him vpon a

hading the Camiltonia before him you a flwords point, a truncheon (taper-wife) tipt with horne, about an elle long, and a fineld of hard leather carried after him; and fo was connected to his Tent (137) The Court fet, and the Combatters called, Naylor entred the lists, being led by the hand by Sir Ierome Bowes , where making his obeisance, hee

the tenor whereof he spake as followeth . Heare this The oth minithe time where the place is stoned in the state that you ladge, the lame this day neither cate, drawle, nor base upon me citier bone, flowe, me graff, or any enchantment, forcer, or which crift, where shrough the power of the word of God might bee intended or disminified and

iesties name, that no person of what sourcestate, The Law and degree, or condition there present, bee so hardy to

But when all these Ceremonies were ended, the Lord Chiefe Iuitice ftood vp, and forbad the pro- endedbefore The Combaz ceedings alorting Paramonr the Lands with the begunne.

farisfying

	(farisfying of the Name)		· DOOR	.9	Couper	4 Queene Elizabeth. EN (11. A N	DS MONAR CHS. Monarch 6	
	fatisfying of the plaintifes, and thereupon commanded Nailor to give Thorn againe his Gauntlet, which	Courfe South-West from thence, and came to an	1-1	-				51. 853
	he vinwillingly did; and fo the Combate being on	chor 33. degrees from the line, where the King of that Countrey presented vnto him his network					the Country should shortly know wherefore the	
‡	Ged, we may have leave to proceed.	Crowne of many coloured fearbase and a Con-]			
AD. 157	(139) Peace flourishing in Fueland to no organ	I LICIEWILL IIIS OCCDER OF COHERDENE WATER has de			- 1			es pretro be fole
i	ir the Recent of Section demand and Continued	Botton, his people to admiring our men that they fa			1		I V to become the fole King of T. I. I	
. <u>I</u>	it: the Regent of Seotland craued aide of her Maie- ftie, for the defence of theyoung King, and the Coun-	Crinced vinto them, as to their Gods. This place fe			- 1			ha-
		dingro house and a ne named Nona Albion accord			- 1	our acceptation of his present; but we would not allow his petition, but had fully determined againe to send our Arms		
The Queene lends aid to t	las tender in her affection, as ne directoll in his alles	red a Monument to wirneffamban al 1. 11			1			el-
Regent of Sest	geance, tent film titteene hundred men wheref Cie	done, which was a place of her (for first in any					come these papals with such entertainement as h	nis
land.	William Drury Knight Marshall of Berwicke was Ge-				į.	himselfe, and signifying that be did assift your excellency.	mactail twold would allow. Arthur Lord Gues Poss	
	nerall. These comming to Edenborough laid battery to the Caftle, with no lesse then thirty Canons, and				i		foto Del-Ore where he had at a con C of	10 Deputy of Ire.
1					I	when as the Pinal of the computes of Polonia; now	anct that all the Coming to the state of the	11-1
	want of item water, and no aide to hee expected	trance, and of the lands delivered and a live			}		withstanding their bragging brauadoes yeelded the	eir l
Edmborough C					1		and vpon the points	of The Spenish
flefurendred	opinion, Lord Peterse being let downe from the				ı		the aduerfaries died without mercy, the Captaine Coronell, Secretary and few more referred for rat	S, flaine by the
1	walle, by composition the Castle was surrendered, to the vie of the young King, whereupon the English re-				1	executive to whom we once all favours and homen are	forme. The Fort they had flored with many D	
1					1		ket, Bacon, Oile and wine, furficient to hold out the	L _
ł.	(140) Thistime of Elizabethe like ware there of	from thence he came wroto the Iles of Celebees, to laus			1	that the faid factious wicked persons and Casakes should be found out and fully punished, but if on the behalfe of your Maielly alongs here the second second		
1	Augustus, when the Temple of Langu Good (for the						fhot, and armour fufficiently for two thousand men	. 1
		Could be desired, whence crothing agains the line L.	_}		1	for the King of Poland, we would not by any meanes have	and Defendation with as well women as men died	i All the Irifh al-
i	to be most magnificently repaired, and with many stately edifices adorned; among which for beauty and				1	LEAGUE THE DIM HAT ONLY AT YOUR PROME I MAN LAND	and Definional driven into extreeme want, fearing the prick of enery thorne, and the shadow of enery bull notwithstanding he was arrived with the dear of the shadow.	
1	commodious vie, none is more famous chan al-				l	sured this grace to the said King and his subjects, and	notwithflanding he was armed with an Agnus De	Del Orc.
The Royall Ex		Saination 1580, after he had beeneat Sea with fuch fortunate fuccesse the space of three yeeres lacking			1	fith our familiarity is mutual and perpetuall, we thinke it convenient that your Maiely ioining your selfe with the		
1	Founder was Sir Thomas Greiham Knighe Access to				1			
1		Table voyage was performed, was at her Maishing	30 Fra. DTATES		1		his traiterous head upon his fhoulders; when like wolfe wandering in the woods for his pray, was in	
	of Merchants, whose Traffikes were great, and in these times of peace, extended their Nauigations in-				I	"Sally 70%; and if your Mateity he not original to mails		
1	to the farthest (and till then, vnsearched) parts of				i			-1
j	the work.	great fame, vnto this day; and the worthy Generall honoured with Knighthood, being the first that by			1	Omnipotent Creator, that all necessary things shall bee on our part finished and ordered, that aspeedy dispatch may he made into Society with the many the made into Society with the many the m		
English renow-	(141) For the fearthing and valatisfied fpirits		1		1		ther lan and reland, cipecially thole parts of Vifter	, mon Souldier.
ned natigations	of the English to the great glorie of our Nation, could				1		that lay most remote from England. (149) And whereunto, Walter Earle of Effex, accompanied with the Lord Rich, and others, had for	
	not bee conteined within the banckes of the Medi- terranean or Leuant Seas, but that they paffed farre,		Trade with				companied with the Lord Rich, and others, had for	A.D. 1573.
: 1		ganto trade with the Mofconits, and Turkes, whose primiledge for Traffishe the Great Saltan fent them,	Turkes and Mu		Sader.	fus, 1 5 90. and of our Prophet Mahomet, 998. in the moneth called Sadele, the xij.	merly made an emadicion of all	Walter Earle of
Ser Martin Fur-		confirmed under his P coult Cast Saltan lent them,	countes,			1		
where name are	the fearch of whose passage, that worthy Sea-captain Six Martin Furbusher, made Saile into the North				1	But from these farre trauels, long, and chargeable		
	East-Seas, farre further then any man before him had				i		to the knowledge of Christ, whom they most ignorantly worshipped. But the death of this Noble	1 1
Queen: Eliza-	cuer done, giving to these parts the name of Queene				1	ceedings vnder the Gouernment of our prudent		
ocibs foreland.	Litzabethsforeland.	who had beene Deputy A La C. I			1	Queene Shepa.	complined lettinar to be to lowed by others which	1 1
, i	(142) The next yeere hee attempted thirtie	ple, I have here inferted, translated word for word,	Mr.1.54.		A.D. 1583	Hout turning man of Rome-Sceing Pone Ping his share		
, ,	leagues further, when finding gould One (as followeth.			1		(150) The troubles of which Prouince we have partly touched vnto the death of Shan O-Neale,	1 1
i i	thought) and taking a man, woman, and Child, of the Sauage Catayaes, he returned into England; but as his	77. 0			1	were aimed, thought it necessary to raise that brown	Whole legiones by Parliament more involved in	, ,
1		The Sultan Muraht his letters to her Maiethie				foundation (though with ill burnt bricke, and bad tempred mortar) as that his mounted Canons from	the Queenes hands, and a Law enacted that from	i t
)					1			
1		(145) Mass glorious and in brightnes most splen- dent woman, and of women the chiefest Prince of the mighty followers of less. Queene of the most same Kingdome of England, most excellent Elizabeth, most layint Governelle of all the officers of the			Pope Gregory in	THET had left: I o which numofe her follicited pla	of O-Neale. After which some small blastes of peace breathed vpon those parts; till shortly Tur-	tle of O X cale for.
1		dent woman, and of women the chiefest Prince of the			of Spaine against England,			bidden.
•	west by Englishmen being lately descried, to bee Seas more sate, and the passage of same better	mighty followers of lefus. Queene of the most famous			Engine,	Portugall Anno 1582 to vndertake warre against	i lattice of this Shan, by a popular election tooks that I	
í	nope.	Arigame of England, most excellent Elizabeth, most fapient Gastraffe of all the offaires of the people, and familie of the Nazarice, the most pleasant Spring of brightnesse and spring of the three thomas to be broad to the counter the most proposal to the counter the most proposal to the counter the most proposal to the counter the most proposal to the counter the most proposal to the counter the co			1	Queene Elizabeth either directly or vnderhand, in fa- uour of the Irish Rebels, vnto which charge he offe-		1
Sir Francis Drakes voluge,	(143) Among these Sea-worthies our famous Vlif-	milie of the Nazarices, the most pleasant Seminar				fied not only his noty Diethno and Internal exactive	made him more quiet, and much the rather for feare	
'A.D. 1577.	fes, Sir Francis Drake is the first in the rancke, who	brightnesse and glorie, the most acceptable cloude			Spanish History.	I but allo to acquir nim of the fruites of the areal.	of Shan O-Neales sonnes, but especially of Hugh Ba- ron of Dungannon the sonne of bastard Mathem, vnto	
Sico.Haklayt in	the yeere of Christ Jesus 1577 and fifteenth of No- uember set saile from Plimmouth in a Fleete of fine	originatele and lione; the must acceptable cloude freet howevers the hierard Lady of perpetual happi- messe, and biessedings, of the must summar king dame of England, to whom all distressed fairters doe slocke for re- liese. We william from God the hierarchy and the summar liese. We william from God the hierarchy and the summar happing and th			1	[[DOPTICKE OF T 01240. IONG retained in his hands while I	I Whom he had given his danohrer in Marriage and	1
. Englin vonges,	10:125, and one numbered lixty former men unho have a	Fine and ble fednesse, of the most famous Kingdome of			1	the Archbishop remained suspended, and the King received some millions of Crownes, which the Pope		
		liefe. Wee wishing from God the mighty Creatour a most	- 1		1	claimed to belong vnto the See of Rome. But Phi-		1
		fortunate increase of all the officers of			1	1 4/ HOL VCL ICAGV to attempt your Feetend inimal	ferniceable to Queene Elizabeth, stirring no troubles to the English, though to his neighbours the	Tarlogh a tytans
	26. degree corred the Riner Plets				1	With him for the Cononell of rud1 c		bours.
					The Pope and	ding like nundred men under the command of The	i quieted the Scots of the Illands he moleded and in	
tin the		loweth with finance december (i. see that which fol-			King of Speine fent supply vnto the Irah rebels,	mas Stukeley, whom he had lately filled Marqueffe of Ireland, (a profuse and defamed person throughout	an incounter new Alexander Opethe layer of chan	- 1
+ += Sz#.		loweth with fingular decentnesse: We give you to under stand most friendly, that certaine yeeres passed we had con-	1				U-Neate 3 and indeed became to fearefull, that his	- 1
	and the Mariegola tolled from her Generall after		- 1			Piracies, and now imploied to follow the confecra- ted Standard of the Church;) the other, bearing all	fonne in law Hugh, lay hid from him in his owne Country, and lastly escaped his handsinto England:	i
	passage, was no more scene; but the other whereof Master Iohn Winter was Captaine, shaken also off by		ı		Tho. Stubeley and a band of Spaine	ted Standard of the Church;) the other, bearing all	where to raile himselfe from his obscure effore and	
;	tempert, returned infoligh the firstree and recone		- 1					Baron Dengamen
The 12 of Fe-		the confirm did and other wicked per fons lurking in	- 1			ards; fending money with them to wage foure thou- fand men more; and the more to kindle the flames	With a Deniton Of a thousand marked by warms Co I	of the Queene.
frager they came	Admirall held on her confe to Chile Comment of		1		1	of Rebellions, Doctor Sanders (the Arch. Rebell and	the Queenc. Whose service against the Rebelli- ous Desmand, was so well performed and accepted.	- 1
degree 11.50.mi			1			English Fugitine) was sent from the Popes holy	that he obtained the place and title of Farle of Tire	Į.
1A.D.: 578	the passed the line the first day of March, and so forth will he came to the Latitude 47. thinking by those		1			lide.	Oes , picading the Letters parent of King Henry the	je is madeEarle
1	TWIN SEAS TO HAUC TOURD DAMAGE TO Feeled Roal					(147) These landing in Ireland and Countie of Kerry, vpona Promontory shooting it selfe into the	scight granted to his Grand-father and his house of	THE OM.
1	fogs, frofts and cold windes forced him to turne his	Greece our Army being wined, and sent with our charge by a Prince of Tartaria, in the yeere last passed, a part of	- 1		The Spaniards	Welt Sea, railed their confecrated frandard built their	males, whereof himselfe was the sonne of Mathew created Baron of Dungannen by the same King. Thus	
		The same of the sa			fortify in Ireland	Fort Del-Ore, and with many threats gaue forth that	growne unto greatnesse, old Turlogh upon certaine	- 1
		The	'			, ,	conditions	}
							·	
						•		
				20				

ì	conditions religned vnto him the Gouernment of	I formation of the first transfer of the fir			Coup.2	* Queene Elizabeth ENGLAN	DS MONARCHEN
. J	Vifter where thorry cobining him felfe with the man	fence of their professed religion, and the prescruation of their distressed Countries, vnable of them-				terpoling himselfe in the Scotish affaires, yea, as	DS MONARCHS.Monarch 61. 855
-	of most might, they together associated their streeths	Leides (25 Was alleaged) long to detend themie has	1		-	by the deftrn Aion of Queen The Later, yea, an	id baffadour promifing back at 1 City
1	to defend the Komish religion, for that was the man- tle that euer couered their hatched rebellions.	and therefore it was thought fitteff to choose them a					
Max Guyre.	(152) The first Champion that sounded the Ale	Protector.					behalfes Harangon shair the King of Wallarre in their
Contact Guyre.	rum was Mac-Gurre a man of a turbulous Gille	(156) This passing for current among the	The Emperour		1	ted Monarch left the Crowne of England where gloriously stood, and laid his owne head in the grain	it to England with full Committee Troustrators were lent in-
- 1	I thruit forward by Guerana Priest whom Pers ver	Counsellors of estate, three were in name, the Emperour, the French King, and the Queene of England; for they were reast all hope of any assurance with they were reast all hope of any assurance with the second se	the Queene of		il		1 annees actife Queenes picature
ł	bane the second had ordained Primate of Ireland, commanding him in the name of God to fight there	they were past all hope of any affurance with Spaine.	on tot defence.		John de Serr page, 685.		, (10)) Fier Councell then affembled to conform
Gueran bought				· \			1- monefithers were and waiguty confiderations a-
his primacy at	Walfall , Of most fortunate proceedings and happy	the Empire was alleaged the diversiries of religion	Objections 2.			tries engagements, that the wife Statists of	of that her Maiefly ought to accept of the offer. The
1	successed: But see how this great Propher was de- ceiucd; for by the valour of St. Richard Bingham,	ther fafe nor convenient to be yeelded vnto. Against the Empire was alleaged the diversities of religion, the small vnion of those Germane Princes, and ha- ning their bonds. Geller L.	En:peror.		1		d defence of Gods Gospel was the first motive she being the nursing mother of Christ children of Sainer. Confiderations
1	Mac Guyre was discomfitted, and the primate Priest						Spanish Inquigrion at a state field Saints : The way it behoued
1	llaine in the field.	would bee the leffe able to alsoft with helpe abroad. The French (they feared) had wasted their money the onely meanes for warre) with their conservations.			1	feafts, in maskes, and in small of State; i	f to be rollered a Riving A new to cared to be rollered a Riving A new to cared to be rollered a Riving A new to cared to be rollered a Riving A new to care t
1	(153) The Confederacy thus broken, Mac-	the onely meanes for warre) with their owne civil	Obiedio against			dances, dallied out both day and night in vnmealing	to be tollerated : Philips Army with Avina and all
Tir-Oeu good	Guyre set himselfe for open rebellion; whom Tir- Oen in shew of his dutifull obedience pursueth, and						I made upon him but
fertuce against	was to forward in fernice, that hee received a wound	Fralend then more the Diller -	1				England bewraied their interes and left at a land and
1	In his thigh to his no little honour Wherennen	England then was the Pillar to which they must leane, their Queene the greatest of all Christian Princes, their Nanythe Commander (Leof the Sentence)				with Bels, Bookes, and Beads, founded forth the zeale of his religious piety in the eares of their audi	and the cital was to bee expected for England if the Constitutions,
- 1	he became of greater respect in the English Court, and more enhanned in his owne esteeme; so that	ces, their Nauy the Commandrelle of the Seas, and	Queene Eliza.		1		Spaniar as leated in thele neere Netherland Provinces
Tir-Oca grown very bold.	I lice leared not to exhibite (omniainte againfleha l		be the defender,		1		was to be preuented. These important reasons for her owne State, and pitty of theirs, mooned her
10,000	Lord Deputy St. William Fitz-Williams, the Marshall	it was allegged that the Resigner of D			The States o	pleasures with the in his owne necke, notabridging his	Majelly to become their Defenden by
1	Whole litter hee had married and at a Camican I				France formew daunted at Q Els.greatnessi		wife take the Title of Soueraigne Lady thereof, which
	fouldiers that garded those parts. But the Deputy recalled, and Sr. William Russel appointed in his				El.greamelli		they would have conterred whom Her and her Garage
Sir W. Ruffel L. Deputy.			Ellzabeth their gouernor,				(166) And thereupon Aminton Low Countries.
1						in France; the mariage motioned nine yeeres be- fore, betwixt their Kings brother Francis Valois	
1	an humble submission vpon his knees, wherein hee dolefully expressed his inward griefe, in that her	was the third of that name. Earle of Hensult and Dal			A matiage fol		
Tir-Ores diffi-		anna, did warrant it.				was againe folicited in hope by this match to make	tained at her Maisties near during English, all re-
1		(157) Thus then concluded, the States were fent vnto England, and made the end of their com-	The States of the		A.D. 158	1. 8. 6. a. C	
1			ient to the		Anno Reg.		
1	what excused by the hard measure (as he alleaged) of the late Deputy, and Matshall that were com-	into what a Labirinth fine should enter, sought ra-			1	uer in perion to wood her him felfa a hair 1	Jordan to the Moneth, according to the Contract
1	bined for his deftruction. Hee acknowledged that	ther the fafety of her lower, then to confent to their motion; for Spaine she well knew would storme at	1		Francis Valois comes into		
1			- 1		England	to the Commons, as (among to other appearances) was made knowne by a booke written against it; for	
1	dignity and great liuings, and himselfe vnworthy of any, butrather dishonour and ruine, if he should be-				with the Cases		
1			1		* Wil-Stubi.		guft in Anno 1585.
1		ments with thanker foresh in C	- 1		1	her Maiesty affected not marriage, or disliked the man, or elle out of her tender care not to give the	(167) This Protection: understand to
I	meaning, hee possest the Counsell of Ireland, that albeit St. Henry Bagnall the Marshall was present,		- 1		i		
1	1 and charged him with many inhornerions of		- 1	278	His departure.		holy Eather as was the med in a by the Pope his
-1	Guyre the Primate, the beleeve of Inic Kellin and a		į			him depart without any promise of a nuptiall	sified against her: where amongst other things, shee
1	tucis, nee was by them dimiled and fent home to	(158) Long after this; Lewis the Gouernour liued not, whom Don John of Austrias (base brother to	Dow Zohn made		1	(162) The fame of this Duly me	
1	the great discontent of the Queene and disquiet- nesse of the Land, as afterward followed, and in		he Low Coltries		l	incu and much the more by the Fraish Original C.	
ĺ	counte of time and frory thall be declared		1		Ed: Grimften	product, that the difference united Dec.	life, and that treacheroully fine had fought the death of the Prince of Parms the prefent Gouernour in
Edward Grimben		See of Rome Neither would be Apoltolicall	- [pag.726. K.Philip adiudg.	uinces, after they had declared Philip of Austria (then King of Spaine) by his too violent Gouernment a-	
Edward Grimften in hift, Netheri lib.10	tempts against the Oncere the broad of 1.00		1		ed enemy to the	Educat their Driviledges (wherenote hea had Guerra)	dent flanders shee made answere in a booke printed both in English and French, thereings the flame of the Printed by (bri.
10.10			1	•	Mosafitus cho-		warrach of shefe in a Control the wing the shamefull Ropher Barker.
The Spenish ho-		was norroft.	1		fen Protector of the Scates	fore vpon breach of couenants to haue fallen from his interest among them, chose this hopefull Mon-	that led her to affift those poore diffroffed Server A.D. 1585.
Ergland.	Netherlanders can be a processing faith was in the	(150) The Company of the Company					whereof these were a part,
1		fue vnto her Maiesty, that by her meanes, with a peace they might enjoy theancient Priviledges of	gainst to the		Series page 793. See the Hiftory of Fance and Netherland.		lying directly opposes as Toy of those Countries,
		peace they might enjoy the ancient Priviledges of their Provinces, and the freedome of their own configures against the I	Queene.		Netherland	French treacheries there, let Serres and Petit report	
Des Lewis fent to haue the We-			1		F-50013.	(102) He duing in France (nanisana and C	
therlanders banu-	faid King, sent his Agent vnto Queene Elizabeth, de- siring her to banish such of them as repaired to Eng-		he Oreana		The Priote of Orange murche-	Tull for what hee had done and will: can or	
Oct out of Eng-					red.	1 mice of Orange DV an Edict from Chains procise	haue beene, by inter-marriages, and reduced vinder the Gouernments of the Lords that fucceeded in
		extremities from the diffrested Bare Post	se States.			med a Traitor, his Lands and goods given to them that could bring him either dead or alive, with a fur-	
I I	(155) Her answere was short and nothing acceptable, that she held it vnworthy the Maiesty of		di Grimflen		Ed: Grim, Hift. Nether, p.764	tuci reward of twenty fine thoniand Crowner or	Englifb Kings, hath beene a continual league, as also
1		fpicious intents, Elizabeth began to looke to the					both of commerce for Montage Both Countries
1		maine, fending the King word, finee liked not that his Souldiers should bee her bad neighbours, and the				with a Pittoli, and at last murthered with the like there	
			1			by the base hand of an odious traitor at his Court in Delse in Holland : whereupon the oppressed Pro-	
	Spanish tyranny, exercised onely in case of their consciences. And yet she forbad some men of specially no seals of the se		1		The Prouinces	unces once more jued for reliefe, both to her age.	
1 1					again fue for help	sejty of England, as also vinto Henry the French Kinn	course and firaite amity of ancient times; as betwixt King Henry the fixth; and Philip the Second Duke
		thousand pound feeling promised (in part of an hundred			j	(164) Shee much disliking the cruelties of Spaine, whose hands were thus dipt in the bloud of	
	as had fled to the Society Break Other Rebels		6:2		Earle of Darby	tills Prince, commended their cante unto King Brand	
				1	ambaliador into	"J by all ilonorable" Amballage. But hee finding!	King Edmard the Fourth and a wargaret, fifter to
	parts, the Prince of Orange entred conference with				Tance.	himielte opermaftered at home, and in danger of	
radutation.	the States of Holland and Zeland, touching the de-	(160) This moved Don John to fuch conceits, that he intended to doe wonders in England, by in-	: Grim, lib. 10.		1	the Guize and the league; himselfe without forces, and their growne very strong; recommended their	
'		terpofing			į	distresses with very mong; recommended their	
		poning		-			24th, Emperouror Atmane, Father to Philip now
		•					Mmmmm King

		King of Spaine. In all which treatifes it was at al	III 1 () mi	- 00/16	9:	Carles	TI CHECHELIZADETH. ENGLAP	NDS MONARCHS.Monarch 61.	
	į			and Town					
	1	intural people and Subjects of either fide thould	d and goods were excelled in Co.		f.	Stanley and			
		thew mutuall fauours and duties one to the other But now Philip of Spaine departing the Low-Countries and appearance of the conference and appearance of the conference and appearance of the conference of the co				Torge traitere fly fell their Towner.	Of Determer and Sconce at Zuthhan profile (al.	de ned as indeed the formall on were better ripe	e-
			become men or warre on the Seas, where			I owner.		of this prepared and the little product, the terror	
			wayes the Spaniard, wholoeuer wanne, went to t			i	his departure. There things depart there	ards tearmed it) spreading it selfe wide, and mena-	
				:ld		1			
		customes, who your ambition and for	fent him a confectated fword with a hatte, and	Sword fent to		1			
1		customes, who vpon ambition, and for privatelu- cre have violently broken the Liberties, as the peo-		ith Prince Parme.		An.D. 158	87 (178) Incorration that monadate from 1 C	Protectreffe proposed shain thankeful men to their	Ir The Dutch pre-
- 1			the Cathern that should die in the Cathern the Cathern the Cathern than the Cathern than the Cathern t	10-		1		in fifther Maichty, and pressed a thousand failers of the	Spaniard
1			(172) Another fearure 1	_		į	of that great Princelle a start Once of S	Netherlanders for her feruice on feas,	ie -
- 1		included mail and and principal par	therlanders cares, which fore rrounised them thene	al. i		Fabruan *		(184) During this brute of the Spanish process	ا - ا
1			Without all canfe , for it was died to the line			February 8.		of conferences conditions of an out of England to	8871.D.A.
- 1		testine warres, made the Country in a manner de- solate by famine, sword, and other exactions. So that	reports, that Oneen Elizabeth meant to make peac			*Yet Sanders		with the Duke Parma, Licutenant for the Vine of	Feb.24.
1		the people are forced for the fafery of their linears	without either mention of				griefe thee conceived and his repeople, by th	ie Spaine, who for that purpole came to Oftend For her	130
1		ite at the protection of other forming I and or to	Shee touched in honour miner of the	s.		Anglic.)impu- dently forgeth	tooke againg the forward & A On dipleature the	Maicity were affigued Henry Earle of Derly William	
-			lous, wrote her letters to Drings Barne in C			that the Queen	him into the Tower of Lendon, and never admiris	S Lord Commercial of the Cinque-ports, with	
1		of some mighty Monarch, as not onely by the ancient laws of their Countries they may, but even by	or mis that had mentioned the lame, and to the			triumphanely drawne with he		5 on lances Croft, and others. For King Philip were	
1						white Coach		Il Werne Monfieur Richardat Drofidana of and	
1			trary, both which were dated from Richmond vpor one and the same day.	n !) hories.	the Cathedrall Church of Peterborow, where it ye remaineth vnder a hearse of blacke veluet.	Counfellor of State befides other Civillian The	Character
. 1			(174) Now Leicelle non libing as 11 011			"Secretary Danison,		may cuat bruges, and by meliages too and fro much	
. 1		mer homages, and at liberty to make choise of any other to be their Prince and head.	doe nothing, made his preparation for Zatphen,	4		1		time was ipent for precedency of place, where they	
. 1		(160) Besides these reasons				1		anound micer, and what norrages mould bee given for	
1			ma fought to supply, to intercept which, Sir Islan	A.D. 1586.		-		priority and the place was Often	•
٠. ا,	trnaråvn Mes					1	Dreuent which a Countail for Canal	(185) The demand of the Queene was to	, l
1 4	oze the Spanis	h of the difference of Francis Thromwaten contrined	ner, Sir William Stanley and Singst Bir Philip Syd-	-		Maurice Nasjau	Dunhage where Marries No Constitute was affembled at	haue a furcease of Armes, with a present and under	
Ē	ieger Ambaí- dor practifeth	Englands estate it was not one la beld				cholen gouer- nour of the Low		layed truce, miftrufting the Kinges preparation at	
	n inualion.	picty to defend these diffressed Christians but also				Countries.	nor and the Propinces (worn ware him with a well	oca, the lending away or forfaine Souldiers out of	
				1				on of fuch fummes of money as the Owen had less	. 1
. 1						1	the Lord Buckburg was Gone inco VIII	vnto the Estates, which the King had promised by	
1		these idangerous affigues. And how ioyous her	(175) The day being darke through great fog- gy miffs, the Spaniard whileft their Wagons made forward from the land whileft their Wagons made	4 .1		1	doings Leiceffer tooks offense housed; at whole	his Edict made at Brufels, that the Netherlanders	3 6
] 12	he ioy concei- d at <i>Elizabeth</i>	Flushing with the Castell of Bankling of	forward flaved in a place of administration made					might enloy their ancient aberties and priniledges,	
P	otection.	Sidner and the Reill unto sin Them Sir Philip				Sir Iobn Norm		Prince that the Religion might be a Natiue	1
						fent into Ireland.	. I recalled and lent into Ireland	two yeeres at least; and lastly, that the Articles of	1 1
.		action by the letters of Prince Maurice himself				July 6.	(180) Leicester the Lord Generall hoping to re-		
			they operthren a corner of bord and the skirmills, that	:		1-	gallantly accompanied where he made a factory	bee observed: and these being concluded, the	
.			er the Captaine thereof priform and tooke Creffi-	1 1	100	ļ	I mew or great territors but inch was the incease share	Townes mee ponelled hould bee deliuered vpon	
.		(170) Things ordered thus among the				Sluce furrendred,	I state was intrendred, and the occasion thereof pare	delireatorable conditions, as all the world fhould I	English Queenes
. 1						1	I IV implifed to him a when also become	with the field tooke them not to her owne vic. or	.
TI	e Earle of	the man, whom the Queene appointed to bee her	that the worthy Sir Philip Staney as he	Thot with a muf-		1	Ctious abettings betwitt the Effares and his Event	afforance.	1
1 Lei		the man, whom the Queene appointed to bee her Deputy Generall, honourable by birth, being the	left knee, which to thingred the think have the	ded,		Ed Gri m.lift.	lency, so that some Townes vtterly rejected his go- uernment, and hee againe sought to seize vpon some	(186) To these the Spaniards replied that	
Co	the Low astrics.		Bullet conference bear resourced - C. Link that the			Neiberl.	other.	touching their preparation for Sea, they did affure	The Spanish shefts and un-
. 1		Ous in the eye of his Sonersians and G.C.		1 1		Pag.979.	(181) The care of prenenting further mischiefes,	their Souldiers, their King could not refolte away	weres,
. 1	1	forted with all courtly complement inflicientlie		i [1 1	moued her Maieity herenpon to recall the Farla of	that the Metherlanders had Gil	1
				(1 1	Letteller IIItO England, well knowing that a Kingdom	VIIIO NIM: COncerning their printledges is as	1
.	1		could bee required or residing in men	1		Leisefter dischar-	divided could not long fland: who on his returne, fhee commanded to refigne his government of the		1
. 1.		honourably convoied was and thence was		()		ged of his go- nernment in the		predictibe to the King a law: and to farre was head	1
A		where hee was enfailed and at C.		,		Low-Countries	william was performed by actilizated under his hand	from tolerating Religion, that hee would not heare thereof, otherwise then hee had allowed vnto o-	1
- 1	,.,.	their oath to the Queene, which no fooner was ac-		<i>i</i>			and left viito them; which relignation received 1	ther I owns that had indmitted unto his chediences	1
	1	complimed, that a lighted necessity arife. ve	Offer Deventer Sin Williams St.	4		()	to the end that energy man make her a him of the	and the like answere made they for the pacification	1
.	i		contents of the Efferent formal y, to the great dif-			1 ;	to the end that every man might know himfelfe dif- charged of his oath to the Earle of Leiceller	Of Gant,	1
. 1	1	(171) The States having drawne inftructions		ley made gouer-			charged of his oath to the Earle of Leicester. (182) Now Philip King of spaine elpying these	(187) The propositions further viged, and an-	The Pepes Bull
		of Counfell for their Countries affaires, presented the same to their new made Gouernour, whose an-	had ferued the Spaniard. Other grieuances also	ley made gouer- nots of townes,					the Pepes Bull ent forth againft logland.
. 1		fwere was that fuch indan O						uing well the time among other healts fent forth his	rgland.
. 1				1				Bull to thunder out bolts against Fuglande Onesna	1
i Neth	er/			1		1	milt ouer her Maiefries eyes and to drive all include	confirming the Excommunications of his two pro-	
Pag.			gaine.	1		1 1:	lies out of her head, hee importuned by all manner.		1
Ine	otates mi-	and suffered him to choose his Councillary	(172) The Searce Coulding Co. 1	1				ly dignity; for whole finall dispossession, hee then ordained his Catholike sonne Philip of Spaine, come	1
fices	ride.	frare, and to frame his own A Countellors of E-	greened, that they were not dealt with according to custome, degrees or defert, (as that the Sergeant should be aduanced to be Ensigne, the Ensigne Ser	Grudees and		1 10	ces by ner owne true-meaning and peaceful diffe.		1
ı			to custome, degrees or defert, (as that the Sergeant	gricuances at				(oh tearetail bagge-beare) to aid and office-bearen	1
1			fhould be aduanced to be Enligne, the Enligne Ser-	eitekta aomia-			fuspition of any snake to be hid in so floury a gar- den; and therefore sent to the Estates to vnder-	nonic, and Inunciale Armie. Drepared to that and	1
-			liues to winne repression And " Curring their	j					
1	li	had veelded ware in the Dayler interested or that the		1		. 1	thing that if they stood out, shee would withdraw her	Allen an Englishman, an eager Trumperor to this	1
1	li	had granted to bee their address where her felfe		-		· V	whole forces from thence.	Pope(to flew his Holineffe affection to the English Card	rdinall Allens iterous libell
1	1	graunt to bee the Sourraigne of those Coun		1		The Low Coun-	(183) They, like themselves answered with a	Nation) would not lie idle, but for himfelfe on work	erous libell.
1	į.	ries.		1			bold deniall, neither thought they that shee could have any peace with him that was head of the bely	to write a Booke exhortatory to the Nobilitie of	ł
-	:		which are engainemity tooke, as being his	1		to haue peace h	League, and perfecuted the exercise of the reformed	England and Ireland, to rouze them up to the evecu-	1
i			vnequali		į	1	The state of the second	tion of the Popes sentence against their Soueraign,	1
jı.								Hig.	
jı.			x						*
					1				

in affilting K. Philip, who was made the whip in his Holinesse hand, & the Duke of Parma appointed the chiefe Commander in that action, which Booke fraught with all impudency of divelish slanders against her facred person) was printed at Antwert in *₄nno* 158≾. (188) This Bull and Booke comming to the The Queene fent to Prince Parma, Queenes knowledge; the fent vnto Parmat who had

The Spanish purpose made knowneby themistues.

and the Flagges, Streamers, and Enfignes, to spread in the winde, that they seemed to darken even the Sunne, which put the English Commissioners in gained the reputation of some Princely vertues) to some suspicion and feare, having no hostages for deale plainly with her; if so, then meant she no lontheir fafe returne. ger to continue the treaty of peace: but he with ma-(189) This Inuincible Nauy long in preparing, ny Court-like complements denied his authority, and now in a readinesse, was furnished with all neither had seene (as hee faid) any such prescripts. provisions of warres, and with many brava-Moreouer the English Commissioners pressed the does spread their failes for Englands invasion, guiconditions, purposely to finde some footsteps of ded by the Provinciall Generals, whose names, the this close-carried deligne, when at last it burst forth numbers of Veffels, Ordinances, Sailers, Souldiers, in these termes , that the King of Spaine had kept fifty and Slaues, as I finde them recorded, in this enfuing thousand men in pay almost a whole yeere to lie still and Table are inferred.

doe nothing; to his great charge by the meanes of that

treaty. At which very instant, these their hidden traps and toyles apparantly shewed themselues,

when the Seas were turretted with fuch a Nauv of

ships; as her swelling wates could hardly be seene,

A Table contayning the provisions of the Spanish Armado.

Leaders.	Prouinces.	Galliafers Gallions.	Ships, G Hulks	Pinases G Caruals	Great Ordinance.	Sailers.	Souldiers.	Gally Slaves.	
Duke Medina Sidonia.	Portugal.	Io.	2.		300.	1300.	3300.		ļ
Diego de Mandrana.	Portugal.	4.		1	20.	360.		888.	
Iohn Martinez de Richald.	Bifcai.	10.	1	4	250.	700.	2000.	,	
Michael de Oquendo.	Сиури со.	10.		4-	310.	700.	2000.	<u> </u>	
Pedro de Valdez.	Andolozia	10.		ı.	280.	800.	2400.		
Martin de Vertendona.	Italy.	Io.			310.	800.	2000.		Rich H.
Diego Floris de Valdez.	Caftil.	14.	l	2.	380.	1700.	2400.		
Iohn Lopez åz Medina.	Med ina.	1	23:	i	400.	700.	3200.		
Hugo de Moncado.	Naples.	4.	Ì		200.	460.	870.	1200.	
Antonio Buccado.	Mendoza.		22.		193.	574	488.		

The wonderfull

Spaniard that England should pay the whole shot, that no cost of any thing was at all spared; of bullets for great shot were two hundred and twenty thousand; of powder foure thousand and two hundred kintals, euery kintall containing a hundred waight; of lead for bullets one thousand kintals; and one thoufand and two hundred kintals of match; seuen thousand muskets and caliners; tenne thousand partizans and halberts; with murthering peeces, double Canons, and field peeces for campe; with store of furniture for carriages, Mules and Horses, so that they were sufficiently prouided both for sea and land. Bread and bisket was baked and wine laide aboord for fixe monthes prouision; fixe thoufand and fine hundred kintals of bacon; three thousand of cheese, besides flesh, rice, beanes, pease, oyle and vineger, with twelve thousand pipes of fresh water, store they had of torches, lanthornes, and lampes, canuas, hides and lead to stop leakes, whips, and butcherly kniues; for what vie wee may imagine. In a word by the report of Don Diego Piementell, the army was two and thirty thousand frong and cost the King of Spaine thirty thousand ducats euery day. (191) In this army were fine regiments of old

Spanish souldiers, of the Terties, of Naples, Sierly, and

the Terceraes, commanded by fine Mafters Del Cam-

po; the first was Don Diego de Piementel a Knight of

of this mighty Armado, and so confident was the

(190) Admirable (as yee see) was the prouision | the order of St. Iohn, brother to the Marquesse of Taueras, and consento the Earle of Beneuent and Calui : the second Colonel was Don Francisco de

Toledo brother to the Earle of Organ : the third, Don Alonzo de Luzon: the fourth Don Nicholas de Isla or Patritio Anselmo: and the fifth was Augastin Mexia brother to the Marquesse de la Garda who was afterwards made Gouernour of Antwerp; each company hauing in his regiment two and thirty companies, besides the Castilians and Portugals bands, each of them having their peculiar gonerners, captaines, officers, colours and weapons

(192) The Generall of this mighty army was Their General Don Lodonieus Perez. Duke of Medina Sidonia, Baron f Saint Lucas, of the Order of the Golde Fleece. The Admirall was Don John Martinez de Richald, the The Admirall Marshall Don Francisco Bonadille: and the chiefe Marshall and Counsellers for the warre were Diego Piementell, Floris de V sidea, Pedro de V aldez, Michael O quendo, Don Alanzo de Lieua, Don Diego Maldonado, and Don Georgio Manriquez. Don Martin Aloreon was ordained Vicar Generall for the holy Inquisition, in whose the Inquisition. traine were a hundred Monkes and Ichuits: and Car-

Sixtus his Bull into English , that it might bee the

sooner published upon the arrivall of the Spanish

Fleete into that Kingdome. Of voluntary aduen-

turers were an hundred twenty foure Noble men,

dinall Allen was appointed the Superintendent of all

Their great

Coup. 24. Queene Elizabeth ENGLANDS MONARCHS. Monarchoi.

and Gentlemen of great account; all of them furnished at their owne charges: among whome was The volumeries of Pennefel, the Marquelle de Ganes, the Marquelle of Pennefel, the Marquelle de Ganes, the Marquelle de Barlango, the Count de Paredes, the Count de Yelmas, and divers other Marqueffes and Earles of Honourable Families of Mendoza, Toledo; Pathieto

The Duke of Parma his pre

Cordonas, Guzma, and Manricques, neither was there any Noble house of Spaine, but had a sonne, brotheror Nephew in the voyage, in hope of renenews and riches in England. (193) Neither was the Duke of Parma flacke in the bulinesse, who lying in readinesse to joyne his forces with this Nauie, let many thoulands on work to build ships, to digge and deepen rivers for saile from Antwerpeto Gunt, and to Bruges, lading three hundred small boates with munition and victuals; as also prepared scanenty others flat bottomde, eucry one able to beare thirty horses for transpor-

tation, with Bridges ready made to shippe and vnshippethem. Two hundred more were made of the like fashion, though not so bigge, and lay ready in the Hauen of Newport; at Dunkirke lay thirtie feauen shippes of warre, wherin store of pyles were bestowed, sharpened at the end with yron pykes, to pile vp the mouthes of rivers; and at Graveling hee had prouided twenty thousand empty Casks, with Cords and other furniture fitte to make floating Bridges to stoppe vp the Hauens. He likewise had shipped great abundance of Saddles, Bridles, with all other furniture for horse; and horses also for

carriage, with Ordinance, and other prouisions of (194) Neere vnto Newport hee had lying vnder the command of Camillo, thirty Companies of Italians, two of Wallons, and eight of Burguinois, enery Company being an hundred men. At Dyxmew he mustered fourscore Companies of Netherlanders, threefcore of Spaniards, threefcore of high Dutch, and seauen of rebellious fugitine English whereof Sir William Stanley was Generall; at Corricke also were foure thousand lodged, and at 18 atene nine The Noblemen

hundred horse, over whom the Marquesse of Guasse was Commander. And to this Land-service came imployed in this the Duke of Pastrana, supposed to bee the Spanish Kings bale-sonne : the Marquesse of Bourgon, one of the Archduke Ferdinands sonnes, Don Vespasian Gonfagua of the house of Mantua, a great Souldier,

who had beene Viceroy of Spaine, Don Iohn de Me-dices Bastard of Florence, Don Amedess bastard of Sasoy, with many others of the like estate. (195) Neither must you think that Sixtus Quin tus the Pope of Rome, did in any wise neglect his diligence and denotion to this intended inuation; whose helping hand was shewed in sending forth his Crusado (as hath beene vsed against the Turkes) and publishing a safe pasport for his Philippians to enter into England. Who also for the furtherance of the enterprise, vndertooke to contribute a million of gold, the halfe presently, and the other when

any notable Hauen in that land should bee wonne;

with this prouise notwithstanding (most wisely in-

ferred) that hee should hold the English Crowne as

feudatorie vnto the See of Rome; in earnest whereof,

hee bestowed vpon him his Apostolicali benedicti-on, and the Title of the Defendour of the Faith, so li-

berall was hee, both in his temporall and spirituall

largefles, and fo forward was Philip to catch at E-

lizabeths ftill flourishing Crowne: but her vndan-

ted heart in this present danger, as another Eze-

kish, fought vnto the Lord, whose annointed ser-

pant shee was, and who ener had beene her onelie

defendant. And for preventing those long

threatned ftormes, thee fent Charles Howard Lord

Baron of Effingham, high Admirall of England, vano the seas, where the Lord Henry Seymer

kept betwixt Callis and Douer, seconded by

the Ships of the vnited Provinces, in league with

the Queene,

Ecclefiafficall matters throughout England; who Cardinall Alen. fearing to bee ouertaken with time, translated Pope

(196) The French King who euer honoured & The French Ming admired Queen Elizabeth great and gracious verifications in the special state of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the control of the preparation. great preparation was made against England, gatte speedy & secret notice therof to her Maiesty, whereupon thee commanded the generall torces of the Realme in their seuerall shires to bee mustred, trained, and put in readincffe for the defence of the whole; which accordingly was done, and whereof the Lord Robert Dudley Earle of Leicefter, and Steward of her Houshold was appointed Lientenant: The Queenes Tilbury in Effex was the place for the Campe, wher-

unto were appointed 1 500. horsemen, and twenty two thousand of foot, and to guard her Maiefiles person, out of the severall Counties of the West, East, and South parts of England, were selected two thousand, three hundred, fifty two horsemen, and thirty foure thousand and fifty of foor, her selfe in courage farre surmounting her sexe, as another Zenobia, or rather Deborah, lead forth the Lordes hoast against this great sifera, and her fouldiers valiant for warre, and apt for battell, men skilfull to handle speare and shield, both for courage and quicke dispatch, might well be compared vnto those Gadites that came to aide Danid, whose

faces were like to the faces of Lions, and were compared to Roes in the mountaines for swiftnes. (197) The Innincible Nauie, and terrour of Europe, as the Papals both tearmed, and tooke it to bee, having all things prepared, loofed Anchor from Lisbon vpon the nineteenth of May, and made A. D. 1588. vnto the Groine in Galicia, it being the neerest Hauen to England, whence hoyling tayles with great hope and pride, bent their course thitherward: but fuddenly the heavens hating fuch hostile actions; powred downe reuenge, by a fore and vnexpected tempeft, which draue the Duke of Medina, the chiefe Generall backe againe into the Greine; eight other fletth the inof their fhippes being disperfed on leas, their males broken and blowne ouer-boord; besides three Por-

tingall Gallies which fell vpon the Coast of Bayon in France, and were fet vpon by their owne flaues, whereof David Gwyn an Englishman was the first, who with his fellowes both French and Turks freed themselues by the slaughter of many Spaniards, among whome Don Diego de Mandrana was (198) Charles Howard Lord Admirall hearing Sir Fronce Brake for certaine that their Fleet was ready to hoise vp Vice-Admirall of their failes, had fent the worthy Sir Francis Drake, the English. who was conflituted his Vice-Admirall, vnto the

bout, and brought them to the Groine, where the rest

(199) Intelligence spreading that the Spaniards

were in want; their great shippes dispersed, the rest

forme-shaken, and their men by multitudes slaine

with the plague; the Lord Admirall meant to vie

came about the eight day of July, and bare his fayle

almost within sight of Spaine, when suddenly it

changing into the South, and he wilely forefeeing,

that the enemy might passe without his discouerie,

that the Seas might bee stormy, and his Fleet wind-

bound, and that whilest they thus lay abroad, their Mmmmmm 2

the advantage upon the first North wind, which fuly 1.

lay in harbour.

West parts, with fifty six shippes well appointed, whither himselfe also following with speed, and loyning his Fleete, their number amounted to one hun-

dred shippes, whereof fifteene were Victuallers, and nine Voluntaries of Deuonshire Gentlemen; many a serviceable man returning backe for lacke of imploiment or place. These from Phymouth resoluting and * affaying to put forth to feas, were fo met with | * May 30.

which had beene likewife diffressed by the stormes; but before these could bee haled, the wind came a

at Sea had descryed some sayles of the Spaniards,

and companies; where lying at Anker, the scours

the wind, that past the syllies they could not attain.

and thence also were forced by tempest into the Ha-uen from whence they lanched to refresh their ships

her therefore prefendly returned, and ankered his filter in the Hauson of Pymowthis inferring his men to command them to yeelde, otherwise his Bullettes filter in the Hauson of Pymowthis inferring his men to collect themseliates on land. (200) But the Spaniards thips new rigged, and their wants supplyed, their King full hore con his former bundled and firty fromgs, that himselfe was their wants supplyed, their King full hore con his former bundled and firty fromgs, that himselfe was the control on his former bundled and firty fromgs, that himselfe was the control on his former bundled and firty fromgs, that himselfe was the control on his former bundled and firty fromgs, that himselfe was the control on his former bundled and firty fromgs, that himselfe was the control of the whole of the property was the control of the whole of the property was the control of the whole of the property was the control of the whole of the property was the control of the whole of the property was the control of the whole of the whole of the property was the control of the whole of the property was the control of the whole of the whole of the property was the property was at the property was the control of the whole of the property was the property was at the property was at the property was the property was at the property was at the property was the property was at the property wa	-			DOOR.	9	1 ban	24 Oues Eli		
(2.0) But of yoursest days now right, and the control of the contr		feruice much better might be employed at home,	espying this lagging Gallion, sent forth a Pinnasse	01	_	Comp.	24 Queene Elizabeth. ENGL	ANDEMON	
(2.0) But of yoursest days now right, and the control of the contr	;	hee therefore prefently returned, and ankered his	Commaund them to yeelde otherwise his Bullion				ards were arrived again that and	MONAR CHS. Monarch	6. 1 04
(1.00) Early dependent player group, and support and the state of the		relieve themselves on land	thoughtorce them without from a fam	. 1		į .	a terrible encounter, each thooring the wight, wh		
The reserving people, and that Taight Baller on the first of the control of the c	1	(200) But the Spaniarde thins new rigged and	fourth and and a few saliwered, that they we	·c		1			vp-i
personations, before a proposation of personations of the control	The Fernical		Om Pedra and frond on his harmony it	s		1	other; till at length the English so harroad the	on the langed bust - F	le af
singly such active proceed formulated light, springing and collisions for Complete and the Section of Complete and the Section of Complete and Section	again fet forth,	mer resolutions, instantly vrged and hastened his	propounding certains conditions. Burche Knight	n		1	to General Turrets, that they were forced once	(211) This City	1 -
mit dilations for consequences in some final and substitute of the consequences of the	1	Chiefetaines to put againe to Sea, which accor-	lent his reply, that hee had not leafned to market	c					ne- A Galliafferal
and fallers orbey may an instruct Charter of the same where where they are also and an individual charters are also and the same where the sa		dingly was done upon the eleuenth of July, waying	hee would yeeld intelegrily doesn't from hearth and	11			flict that the I and A if Date the interiors in the	scons I and I present release of the Prince of	vali-
starter de supérim drug al sales, molétiquentes le subject de la company	1	their Ankersat the Groin, where with braue shews			1		Knight hood Dellowed the Or	der of lat - and Amias Preston gave fo hereagn of	nle l
commended planefactors and the planefactor and the planefactors are continued as a final with the planefactors are continued as a final with the planefactors are continued as a final with the planefactors and the planefactors are continued as a final with the	1	and full tailes they came into the Chanels of the	reare nearing that it was the fiery Drake (energer	Don Fears yeet.	-		Malter Take TT.	Galliaffe borded with a buller, and	thel
injustic care with the relation is compared for the circuit. The circuit control cont	1	certains final pinns for years and Dales of B					And yet (bush o Freeling)	thers. Isine and a milerein was many a Spanie	ard
in the the man of the Kaguo she made and a long or claims whether the power years of the control	}	fignific their arrivall and readings, and to command	thinner and an Collowers came on boord Sir Francis h	s)			spread in France, that England was whole	I Was Sea more Jan	the l
For the factor. It for th		him in the name of the King to forward his charge	reflect that hee and all his worse and leading the pro-	-{			by the Spaniard.	ICICO 2 principall Car.	er l
the region of the property of the property of the control of t		for that feruice.	fence, had they not failer under his	-	1	Ioly 27.	(208) Their Fleete making forward about		
the manner of the control of the con		(201) The English Fleet beeing in harbour, and					Dome and all of the same moneth a came an	of this now vincible Nauv. This burn R	nes
the descript for extend of the right of the control		many men on shore, Captain Thomas Fleming (some	tune leemed to attend him in his attempte. Sombot				for Dawbart at	ding it i is toute numbered ionidiere and it	10,
He haltenippe Paramel, made relationshare of the control of admiring the reason is more flared admiring the reason is more flared admiring the research in the property of the control of the property of the control of the property of the control of the property of the control of the property of the control of the property of the control of the property of the control of the property of the control of the property of the control of the property of the control of the property	their approch.	lay a Pyrate) discried the Spaniard vpon the point of					his forces wish The will the Duke of P.	true I all in nerallo fifty thought D	ec l
south Local Administ, the same of many forces having re- infort for the vast foldings, the Queen having re- infort for the vast foldings of the vast and in- mask would not connected that years, the same of the second of the connected that th		the Lizard, the wind being then South and by West:	beene experienced, enen of his oregreft foce. Si	-1			doe nothing Til The well law they co	ould ring the Emplish Chings treature, a booty well for	ir_ l
End, for the two findings, the Queme house, reconstructing from the control gives are control entitions for the part of the	1	rothe Lord Admirall the news area					hard upon show a state including	vp ranfacked all and C affections; who have	nα
citized intelligence for certains, that the gear a server and the collection composition from the indicated for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great a year which and report (club databased for great year which and report (club databased for great year which and report (club databased for great year which and report (club databased for great year which and report (club databased for great year which and report (club databased for great year which and report (club databased for great year which and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (club databased for great year) and report (1	full for that it was fodging the Onesne having to	Table and intentional first and in at his own	1			within Culuering fhot. Where the Land	lay rable fortons I	e-
soung to disjurcted submitted of their warms and the second continued regions of the second continued and paid dependences to the second continued and paid dependences to the second continued and paid dependences to the second continued and paid paid dependences to the second continued and paid paid dependences to the second continued and paid paid the second continued to the second cont	1	ceiued intelligence for certaine, that this orear are	refidue of the company and Cabbin. The				Segmer vnited his to the Lord Admirals fin	tines on fire har as a coler that vehell of Emi	o- l
is ideallie fo grant, you which not report to deal grant programs are a face-affeiting, consideration was a construction of the program of th	1	made would not come forth that yeere, their bulkes	where they remained eighteen manager will all				meane-while the Duke of Medena fent unto Per	of Callis, fearing fome danger to the Tourney	Dr
genomenter in Sarva-Sarv	ļ	being to dispersed and brusted and their wants and					with which made.	res. Dut discharged his one	2-1
the first for four off bert fallet royal highest, the composition of the person were stay fine changed a person where the person highest the person has been been been been been been been bee	1	lickneffe to great, vpon which rafh reports (adan-					I marde were an I	Da.	
to be throught against van Catana-later Linderge of the control of		gerous matter in State-affaires. Maconfident the upge	muppe, wherein were nity time thousand Drong	1			of Afcelirhe Vin-1 CC	ace han ranging after this their milerable	.
The principle was proposed differency burdered that purpole, and all principles was proposed the proposed principles was proposed the proposed principles was proposed to the proposed principles was proposed	1	that ince ient for foure of her tallest royall shippes,					hipping charters, who lo well liked	his Droched order against against into order, they an	-1
Significant the state of the st	1	vnexpected discovery hindred the account of	I he lame day Miehael de Oquendo Admirall to the	1			thore wherein	m the English gering at where once against	: 1
the winde blooming harder, and has been proposed to allow, fellindering votes of the proposed to the proposed	They fer foorth	hands were fet on work to warne out the Shinner	A MAGRON CHIPPICE ARE VICE-Admiral to the whole				Gallion was one amount of the forthand	is thereby deprined of winge, the Spanish were	1.
farm. (20) The near day about moon, this errolls and the period three period of the period three period of the period three period of the period three period three period to the period of the period three period to the period of the period three period three period to the period of the period three period to the period to	from Punouto.	the winde blowing harde and hindering the	of the greatest Callians fill Galder whole thip being one				returned to falute Spaine.	roade and bear C.	Luly 29.
the state of the s	1	iame.	Appet part of the thippe and med of the						
seed with claim for read and pure and management of the charactery and the company of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the whole the first of the first of the first of the first of the whole the first of the first	1	(202) The next day about noone, this terrible	therein confumed howbeit the Connowder in the	1			whose hone all things ready that lay in his chare	Notwithstanding they were forced to passe by	1
they made for Famoush. Bour whether their Commission were colorwing for their their dy wheth the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Potential System of the Commission of the Com	Inly 20.	Fleet was descrived by the English who with a South					that the climation and tot Englands Conque	ft and the English, that their thing dicher	1 1
inflipse ser otherwise for tractically as the Especial inflipse out of the doubt, they are the season of the country of the co	1	west windcame forward amaine, and (as seemed)	marks with the bulke brought into Plemouth to the				head daraled 1: The Von Queene Elizabet		
infinite present of the large o	1	they made for Plimouth. But whether their Com-		i i			Cardinal an	thereing ones Call the innincible Armado : for	1 1
words c'alle, well hoping about those canditive street with and efficions guest them chains a processing of the present of the state of	1	life thinner out of the barbara at any of the Engal	(205) Vpon Tuesday the twenty third of July,				crowned at a	taines thereof en amaid: Bricay perished, the Cap-	1 1
with Prince Farmacky whole walling that way the Package of the was a coloring of the wind and deficious gratherm, the control of the package	1	wards Callis well hoping about these seasons a	the Spaniaras approaching right against Partland	1419 23.			Spaine flould to the who, from the Pope an	d valorone de C adold ignominy, or to be accounted	1 1
English get the wind and efform gaste them challes are connected where the final shall and form the state of	1	with Prince Parma by whose waffing that way the	heavilled as femiliar to the North, as fit as could			1	Wherefore thinking his Coroner of the I am Coroner		
adassange thereof from the Spasses In and continue content and the committee there were mellingen of the content and the content of the content and the content of the cont	The English	English got the wind and effsons gane them chase	lift agill and foreforing all beautiful the Eng-			- 1	tries Gouernment, would but trouble the English		
emerchanged-bream plants of past past plants and emerchanged bream them, were mediagness of each other small. (20) The next day the two Electes fought with Market flow, where the English Andrew of the theory for the theory of the the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the theory of the the theory of t	affaile the	and encounter, where fire, fmoake and ecchoing	aduantage thereof from the coming de and and	(- 1	bead he and both too weighty tobeworn voor on	Gallions, were fo torn with thot, their racklings G.	1
state state of the control of the state of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the control of the state of the st	spaniin.	Canons beganne the parley and bullers most freelie				- 1:	feild the Elden The Charge VINO Count Man	all Games and the water entred in on	
(20.5) The next day the two Flexes fought with Maket flow, where the English Admirall of space, at which preferent they all perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited the perceited their own consecting the perceited their own consecting the perceited the perc	1	enterchanged betwirt them, were medlengers of ech				1.	Mary of Hall in II.	lede hair io i totaler of which, was Francis de Ta	- 1
within Maker flox, where the Eighth Administic flow in the day to the Carlon with the Carlon of the	1		WHICH IOICCU INCIN FOR Engir tupther latery to me				lefferhen a King D and all conceit no	taking his sound C	- 1
greated in most backly on the Vice Administration of the performance o	Inly at.	(203) The next day the two Fleetes fought				1 1	was evaluate of his raions	last of the Coast of Flanders at -	1
which prefer they well procused their ownscoring specific control whereas powerful to defend, but not offend, of fand but not to mouse, and therefore fare value for single to make it is a specific control whereas powerful to defend, but not defined and the most example and the fight of first the most offen and the same examing and nevers of the hard for the state of the fight was notely between the feature of the fight was notely between the fight and the fight was not the fight was noted between the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was noted between the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the fight was not the	1 1	full most bosels on the View Admirall	greatest thins transfer without & Committee to			1	hallow ebbe; for the day following into a Low	themselves to the Shifts and others, committing	- 1
and thefrost fare voils for sight in the form convergence of the special states of the s	1 1	which prefent they well perceived their amount				t	owards Dunkerke hee heard the thundring of		- 1
for their enemies nimble and ready at all fider of an another, the fight was onely between the four early the fight was onely between the four great Galliaffes, and the fighth flips, the Spanisrd, they gathered themselbase close in one of a half-the Moont, and flacknoch their failes, that their whole for matter the for great Galliaffes, and the fighth flips, the Spanisrd, and our failes with the fight was onely between the four enemy with change, their being from gather demonstrations close in one of a half-the Moont, and flacknoch their failes, that their whole for matter the found where of the fill flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with an other flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with an other flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with an other flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with an other flower with the fill flower wit	1	fights: their great shippes (like Castles) powerful	formed:wherein beings other remarkeable barme		}	10	ance ring the passing peale of his file and side	gers. gers.	1
for their enemies nimble and ready at all fider of an another, the fight was onely between the four early the fight was onely between the four great Galliaffes, and the fighth flips, the Spanisrd, they gathered themselbase close in one of a half-the Moont, and flacknoch their failes, that their whole for matter the for great Galliaffes, and the fighth flips, the Spanisrd, and our failes with the fight was onely between the four enemy with change, their being from gather demonstrations close in one of a half-the Moont, and flacknoch their failes, that their whole for matter the found where of the fill flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with an other flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with an other flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with an other flower with the fill flower with the fill flower with an other flower with the fill flower wit	1	to defend, but not offend to fland but not to mone.				la la	of a feet ame eneming had newes of the hard five	(213) In the Saint Mathem was embarbed a	
annoy them, and as apt to depoct have the members of the position of the posit	1	and therfore farre vnfit for fight in those narrow	(206) The force and events day of this and	1		la	reamed formards, the hoped advancers of his	Diego Pimentelli, Campe-mailter, and Colonel alle	1
by being low bull, and easily shot over. Therefore the grant continue colour forme of a battle being three deliantings, the process of the calme, which not grant delianting the ediatom of the calme, which not grant delianting the ediatom of the calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which not calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which not part part of the calme, which not part part of the calme, which not part part of the calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which not part part of the calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which he many with the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which he many that were detered for distriction. But many the calment of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calme, which were conditioned the feet part of the calmed the feet part of the calmed the feet part of the calmed the feet part of the calmed the feet part of the calmed the feet part of the calmed the feet part of the calmed the feet part of the calmed the feet part of the cal	1 1	icas: their enemies numble, and ready ar all fides to		Luly 24	The Co		(210) Then being 1 "	from two bands; whose Shippe, though yerr	1
is a large the doubt, and carry into ouer. Therefore they gathered themefuses dolin for forme of a haling the adonatage, theirs being, rowed, and our they formed to hold, by reason of the calme, which nor with anding they fore galled the enemy with charge one of their great Gallions, wherein was Due 12-do on of their great Gallions, wherein was Due 12-do on of their great Gallions, wherein was Due 12-do on of their great Gallions, wherein was Due 12-do on of their great Gallions, wherein was Due 12-do of 12-do on of their great Gallions, wherein was Due 12-do of their great Gallions, and their great Gallions, and their great Gal	1 1	annov them and acoustic elegans have a show Classic			anchored	d from th	neir Dowers with B anker nere Callis to ioyn		- 1
is the special experimental content forms of a halte. Moone, and flackned their failers, that their wholes, that their wholes for the clame, which no no of their great Galions, wherein was Does have in the failed the enemy with is desired. States, Handward Sayas, and the fire of the special states, Handward Sayas, and the fire of the special states, Handward Sayas, and their boulkes special states, Handward Sayas, and their mails and conditing whereof thee feel flowe you not not their finely, and content hippe, and the fire of the special states of their special states of the fire of the fire of the special states of the fire of the special states of the fire of the special states of the fire of the special sta	1 4	by being low built, and eatily flot ouer. Therefore			Calluby	itrata- Do	olitike Granes were forced thence by a	(Medius fone his diff. C. allowife, the Duke of	1
Solido and the first whole serving and tacket of the serving serving and the serving serving and the serving s		Moone and flackned their feiler about			Perm	l Di	itched in the Con I I I I I Ships, as Caffies	to fane them falour f	- 1
A Callon one of their great Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat de Sinas, Alionea de Spas, and conclude on the Hipper, and the fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein was Done Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein the Spassing of the Perdu de Fallet, prigreat Gallions, wherein the Spassing of the Spass		Fleete might keepe together Normithan				1 101	ith grees have been bulkes to plancked	But he whom a Carrier of them intent danger	1
wanting powder, which of freely dep plat plems, they in their mails and tackling; where they and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the count of the plates and the plates and the count of the plates and the plates and the count of the plates and the plates and the plates and the count of the plates and the plates and the count of the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the count of the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the plates and the	A Gallion	one of their great Gallions, wherein was From Po-				Itte	cke, but never paffe through, fo that live and	laying each way to free himfelfe like a forthing	1
is the fine is anothing whereoffhee fell fowle you another flippe, and ere fleecould be ecleared, had her fore-mait broken off, which to hindred her failed, where from the foreward two wars, was met with, and remained from the free mait broken off, which to hindred her failed in the fleeth of the flower of the found they war was the tokepe way with the Fleet, nor they of courge for fuccours feel Lords, but left Lords, but left Lords, but left with you not complete the fine of the fine of the fleeth of the fine of the fleeth of the fine of the fleeth of the fine of the fleeth of the fine of the fleeth of the fle	- Carrier	dro de Valdez, Valques de Silua, Alonzo de Savas and		1		the	eir med and Canon, except onely in playing on	not able to keepe faile with the Fleete, he forthwist	- 1
med dilikes (fino fidipinos) to many, that wee factorise the condition of the process of the condition of the process of the condition of the process of the condition of the process of the condition of the process of	ŧ .	other Noblemen, war fore harrand har also Face		'		f ittic	adnife and and are some and are	fried by Cart the coast of Flanders, where being a	· 1
hould this want vpon our ownecoals. In which her fore-mail broken off, which for bindered her falle, that the was vanible to keepe way with the Fleet, that the was vanible to keepe way with the Fleet, that the was vanible to keepe way with the Fleet, that the was vanible to keepe way with the Fleet, that the was vanible to keepe way with the Fleet, that the was vanible to keepe way with the Fleet, that the was vanible to keepe way with the Fleet, that the was vanible to keepe way with the Fleet, that the fleet which von sunday, and the fleet which von Sunday, the fleet which von Sunday the eight and twenty of Iuly, at two of the dock after mid-night, were let draw with winde and tide among the Spanish Fleete, whole Pilors teturing, and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore, the fleete which will be spanish fleete, who Pilors teturing, and their traines taking fire, fleet and twenty of Iuly, at two of the dock after mid-night, were let draw with winde and tide among the Spanish Fleete, who Pilors teturing, and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore daming and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore daming and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore daming and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore daming and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore daming and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore daming and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore daming and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore daming and their traines taking fire, fleet burden coading all to for Flore daming and their traines the west in the Reasegle del the flore day to the dad of the ingress and work of the winder produced the flore daming fire flore training and their traines the west in the Reasegle del the flore day to the dad of their training and their training flore, who fire produced the flore daming flore,	1	lish shot, in anoiding whereof shee fell fowle voon				f fbir	he were dica I come to the English	united to weeld -tit to a was met with, and re-	1
Interimal consecution, which to interim a Consecula was called, wherein it was decreed that the was visible to keepe way with the Fleet, so where the contract of course to fuccour the Ce Lords, but letted to the finglish Fleet finded and willowed the finglish Fleet finded from the Court of Court of the Court of Court of the Court of Court of the Court of	1 :	an other mappe, and ere meconid hereleared had:		1		DO	nydon _i_ t See of men and miled with ann	Peter Pandand Captaine	- 1
that the was valided to keepe way with the Fleet, in the was valided to keepe way with the Fleet, in the third, and committed to found the found the found the found the found the found the found the financial that would be found the financial that would be found the	1 .	ner rore-man broken off, which fo hindred her faile,		i	Tul o	ma	tter : their Online , and other combustible	where for a man Line Carried nim into Zeland	i
in grand them, in this fidden and vinloked for dithreffe. But night comming on, and fine lagging behind, the Lord Admirall lith posting either men nor Mariners to be left within board, and fearing to look fight of the Spanish, path by, and for the feed of the fight, were firsten into was the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which beet open to the great the Landstorne, which being ladd, were found to be Easterling, at the Landstorne, which being ladd, were found to be Easterling, at the Landstorne, which being ladd, were found to be Easterling, at the Landstorne, which being ladd, were found to be Easterling, at the Lingstor landstorne, which being ladd, were found to be Easterling, at the Lingstorne, and their crains and free with winde and tide among the Spanish Fleets, whole length of a fine with winde and tide among the Spanish Fleets, whole Plot in the damong the Spanish Fleets, whole Plot in the same with winde and tide among the Spanish Fleets, whole Plot in the Landstorne, who length of the Cart Stands and the cord for Landstorne, and there with winde and tide among the Spanish Fleets, whole Plot is a monther Ship of left before danted and the among the Spanish Fleets, whole Plot is a monther Ship of left before danted and the among the Spanish Fleets, whole Plot is a monther Ship of left before danted and the among the Spanish Fleets, whole Plot is a monther Ship of left before danted and the among the Spanish Fleets, which Plot is a monther Ship of left before danted and the among the Spanish Fleets, where Plot is a monther Ship of left before danted and the same of the lands of the lands and the war of the lands of the lands	1	nor they of courage to Greene way with the Fleet,		1	1thy 13,	ftor	nes chaines and it is charged with bullets.	whinthe Church Ca 11 100 y 31118 Danner was bang	1
for diffireft. But night comming on, and fine leaging behind, the Lord Admirall impossing neither men nor Mariners to be left within boord, and feeling period was chiefe, Sir Francis Drake in the Arke Regular Was chiefe, Sir Francis Drake, but that renowned Knight, but the Transit Drake, but that renowned Knight, but deep on the Control of the Mariner of the Marin	i li	both shippe and them, in this sudden and and and and		1		l the	cight and amount of which voon Sunday.	reached from at	- 1
sing behind, the Lord Admirall supposing neither men nor Mariners to be left within board, and featuring tro loofs fight of the Spanish path by and followed the Lanchtorne, which here cooker to be borne by Sir Frantis Drake, but that renowned Kinghi, but in the Limst, the trong walker portioned the lanchtorne, which beer cooker to be borne by Sir Frantis Drake, but that renowned Kinghi, but in the Limst, the trong of the Cooker to be borne, but in the Limst, the trong of the Cooker to be stated in the Limst, the trong of the Cooker to be stated in the Limst, the trong of the Cooker to be stated in the Limst, the trong of the Cooker to the Cooker to be stated in the Limst, the trong of the Cooker to the Cook				i		afte	r mid-night, were let drine with winde and side	another Ship of leffe burden coaffing allo fee	- 1
then no trainers to go letter within board, and feating refusible, path by, and followed the Lanthorne, which here too keet be be been by fir Francis Drake, were content in the Elizabetic Innex, Captain which being bald, were found to be Eastlerlings, a the Honourable Lord Thomas there were in the Elizabetic Innex, Captain being too for the which perfect midiculties consoid, in great peoples, which perfect midiculties consoid, in great peoples, which perfect midiculties consoid, in great peoples, which perfect midiculties consoid, in great peoples, which perfect midiculties consoid, in great peoples, which perfect midiculties consoid, in great peoples, which perfect midiculties consoid, in great peoples, which perfect midiculties consoid, in great peoples, which people which perfect midiculties consoid, in great peoples, which peoples affails their indicate comming to the Sankbard in the Elizabetic Innex, Captain being too floorers weight up their ankers; and hold fing their failes did drive at random elimin to be seas, and which haft and confusion the greatest of their the Captain for	1 11	ging behind, the Lord Admirall supposing neither		1		and	the Spanish Fleere, whose Pilots returning	aers, was caltaway on the fands.	1
ing to look ignt of the Spainers, pathby, and followed the Landstone, which beer cooker obe born belowed the Landstone, which beer cooker obe born below that renowned Knight, buffed you fine great hulks, purfied them manin, which being haled, were found to be Easterings, & Rebert Swathwell in the Euro-Kst. Swathwell			kinsthe third, and Capraine Frabiles the Country	1		l der-	clan was a such a modaine thun-		- 1
tower the Laumonre, which here tooker to be borne by Sir Francis Drake, but that renowned Knight their filippes flowlide beef fired by their, but for the preference of the preference of the state of t	1 (1	ring to loose fight of the Spaniards, past by and fol-	ther most valiant Captaines there were in her Ma	}		the	dead of the mint.	expected were content that other then they	1
which begreat hilks purified them same, builted youn fine great pulkes, purified them same, builted youn fine great hilks purified them same, which being haled, were found to be Easterlings, it is satisfied in the Einstein found. Same found to be Easterlings, it is satisfied in the Einstein found to be Easterlings, it is satisfied in the Einstein found to be Easterlings, it is satisfied in the Einstein found to be Easterlings, it is satisfied in the Einstein found to the Same found play your address the Einstein found to the Globert found to the Glo		lowed the Lanthorne, which hee tooke to be borne	ietties Shippes, as the Honourable Lord Thomas	1		l feare	e least all the single, were stricken into a horrible	together nor feeling as Couch their fleete close	
outlet you not great nuises purtied them amain, which being baled, were found to be Eatherings, which being baled, were found to be Eatherings, the property of the property o	1 11	DV Str Francis Drake but that vanous of Valaba	Howard in the Lion, the Lord Sheffield in the Dame	1		l whic	th prefere with the read by their	the winds commission and analic but to detend; and	1
Lay 1. (204) The next day following, Sir Francis Drake (207) The fine and twenty of Iuly, the Spanic (207) The fin	1 1	which being haled were found as h. Tag.	Str Robert Southmell in the Fler shoth town Commit	1		ty.t	her hafted to meet -	order poffed by a le cue South-west, in the same	1
Lily 1. (204) The next day following, Sir Francis Drake (207) The fine and twenty of Iuly, the Spani. (207) The fine and twenty of Iuly, the Spani. (207) The fine and twenty of Iuly, the Spani. (207) The fine and twenty of Iuly, the Spani. (207) The fine and twenty of Iuly 25. (207) The fine and t	1 1	thermon freed from his further harmer	BAKET ID THE VICTORY I AND LADISING George Farmer in			beeir	ng too fhort to weigh yo their ankers and the	followed . But least Parma (hould play no	1
Galliaffes fell fonle vpon another fibip, and loft her which there kept watch vnder the conduct of funders, to fecond those subject the coaft of Funders, to fecond those subject the coaft of Funders, to fecond those subject the coaft of Funders, to fecond those subject to the coaft of Funders, to fecond the funders subject to the coaft of Funders, to fecond the funders subject to the funders subj	Inly 21.	(204) The next day following the Exercises 1		-		ingt	their failes did drine at randome into the Con-	mantage, the Lord Admirall difratched the Land	Į.
ards: Coality Planders, to fecond those Hollanders which there kept watch vnder the conduct of	1		(20/) I he nue and twenty of July, the Spani.	uly 25.		Galli.	nich hait and confusion the greatest of their	Henry Segmer, with his Squadron of final thing was	1
appe water vinder the conduct of			ards		1	Galli	aues tell toule vpon another thip, and loft her	which above the flanders, to fecond those Hollanders	7
Inflio						<u> </u>		which there kept watch vader the conduct of	1
								Tuftin	ĵ
									 ,
			•						

ine Hullanders	[Iu/tin Na/[au their Admiral] : whole Nauy confilted	tor his Welcome, hee was deposed from all his autho-	I be Dake of		_	which gares live I		, 004
aides.	of thirty fine shippes, furnished with most skilfull				i	which accordingly was done vpon Sunday the eight	At Tu; cui venti, cui totum militat Acquor,	
4	Mariners and old experienced fouldiers, whereof	rity, forbidden to come at the Court, and comman- ded to be private. Neither could hee thus give fa-	ced for his luc-		1		Regine, O Mundi totius ones decine	ĺ
	watered and old experienced founders, whereof	ded to be private. Neither could nee ring give la-	cellene letuice.		1		Sicregnare Dea perge Ambitione amont	1.
1	twelue hundred were Musketiers, whom the	tisfaction for his bad fuccesses, albeithe imputed it	1		1		Prodiga sie opibus pergeiuuare Pios; Vt te Angli longum longum Anglis ipsa fruaris;	ſ
1	States had culled out of the Garrisons. Their charge was, to stop all entrance into their Hauens,	to the treachery of his mariners, their ignorance,					Vite Angli langing language to divisi C.	
		and small experience of those Northern Seas, the			1	passes deliterance: a linew no doubt more accepta-	Quam dilecta Bonis, tam metuenda Malis.	1
i	or entercourse with Dunkerke, whither Duke Parma	want of fuccors from the Prince of Parma, the tem-					Domas, sam metmenda tradits.	
	intended; though his men were vnwilling, hearing	petts, shipwrackes, and ill fortune, but not a word of			ı	Jour tile pride of their thinnee threatning the bland	Spaines King with Nauics buge the Seas bestrewde,	1
1	how their friends were welcome at the fea, onely	the indgements of God vpon this Gyantlike attempt	Isha Serres		i		To anomenial Tinte a	1
English fuzi-	the English fugitiues, about seuen hundred, vinder	to enflaue all England to the mountaines of Grenada,	hist, France,				To augment with English Crowne his Spanish swaye. Aske yee, what caused this proud attempt? i was lewed	1
times prooue the	the command of that treacherous Knight Sir wil-	or to the mines of Peru.	The 6		1	Contribution, there raise flagges were intend upon	Ambition drone, and Anarice led the way	ì
most desperate	liam Stanley, were very forward to bee the first that	(219) The relidue of his ships, about forty in	forme frins on		1	London-bridge to the great invotthe beholders and	te emell. A minima ruarice lea the way.	[
encuries.	fhould affault England.	(219) The residue of his ships, about forty in number, sell neerer with the coast of Ireland, inten-	the lith coafts.		1	eternal memory of Spanish porposes as irreligione	It's well; Ambitions windy puffe ues drownd	1
į.	(215) But the Armado, being now paffed the	I ding for Cate Clave , where they well hoped to wa-	. 1		ı	as vinproliperous. But the folemne day offered as	By winds, and swelling hearts, by swelling waves.	ł
	place of their expected supply, and having gotten	ter; but the windes contrary, and tempests storming			1	be well not throspout the land was the winesteamen	It's well; those Spaniards who the Worlds wast Round	1
	more Sea-roome for their huge bodied bulkes,	I VDOR those dangerous Seas . many of their thins	: 1		1	of the most being I nelday, which accordingly man	Deuourde, denouring fea most instly craues.	1
* Iuly 30.	* spread their maine sailes, and made away as fast as	perished upon the hoares of Ireland, and among o-	. [1		But Thou, O Queen, for whom Winds, Seas, do warre	i
i i	winde and water would give them leave, more fea-	ther a great Galliaffe, wherein Michael de Oquendo	1		1	being no iche for our delinerance, then une chae	O Thou, Sole Glory of this Worlds wide Maffe:	1
	ring the small Fleete and forces of the English,	was a commander, and two other of Venice, both			Efter. 9.26.	Parim for the Iewes, which they inflitted to be kept	So saigne to God ftill, from Ambition farre,	1
	(though nothing in number like vnto them) then	fhips of great burthen, besides thirty eight more,			1	holy throughout their generations.	So still with bounteous aides the Good embrace;	1
	standing upon termes of honour , either of their	together with most of the Spaniards conteined	1		1	(223) Oneene Flerabeth thomason on health	That Thou, England long, long may England Thee into Thou, Terrour of all Bad, thou Good mens 1 oy.	ř!
1	chieftaines or Inuincible Many. Butfurely, if they	within them. Those that got cleare of the danger.	1		1	felfe an example vnto others, vpon the Sunday fol-	Thou, Terrour of all Bad, thou Good mens 1 oy.	1
1	had knowne the want of powder that ours fuffai-	put forth to Sea, whereof some with aftrong West			1	lowing, being the foure and twentieth of Nouem-		1
Ì	ned, (a fault vnexcufable vpon our owne coafts,)	winde were driven into the chanell of England	.1	•	1	ber, repayred from the Pallace of White-Hall in	(226) The thunderclappe of this Spanish Ar-	:1
1	they no doubt would have stood longer to their	where part of them were taken by the English, o-	1	1	1	Westminster, through the streetes of London in great	inado thus part, and the inameible vanguilbed acche	il
1	tacklings; but God in this, as the reft, would have	thers by men of Rochel in France, and some arrived	1		1	Estate: and came accompanied with her Nobilitie		
į.	vs to acknowledge, that we were onely delinered by	at Newhaven in Normandy. In so much, that of one	.1	i 13	1 .	varo the Carbedrall Character of Carine and Nobilitie	10 the due confideration thereof time rooted in all	il
1	his owne gracious prouidence and Arme, and not	hundred thirty foure Ihips, which had fet faile out of	- The fam of the		Q Elizabeth	vnro the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul, where		
1	by any policy or power of our owne.	Lishone, onely fifty three returned to Spaine: of the	Spaniards loffe,		commeth to	dismounting from her Chariot at the West-dore, shee humbled her selfe vpon her knees, and with		
1	(216) The Vincible Armado holding on their	foure Galliasses of Naples, but one : of the foure			Paules Church,	orest denotion andible pro-	course was at length thought fittest, that the proud	Spaine,
	way, the English Admiral followed, least they should	Gallies of Portugall, but one: and of the ninety one	.1		1	great denotion audibly praised God, acknowledging	Caftilian should bee required upon his owne coasts	l .
1	affay to put into Scotland; but the winde comming	Gallions, and great Hulkes from divers Provinces	1		1	him her onely Defendor, who had thus delivered	And first it was determined to aide Day our distant	. 1
	faire, and feare of more encounters, with all their	only thirty three returned, fifty eight beeing loft; in	4		ì	the land from the rage of the enemy. And after	expanded King of Partnerall surbole sinks de	
	failes spread they betooke themselues to flight, lea-	briefe, there were miffing of their whole fleet foure-			Ì	the Sermon ended, wherein none other Argument		ot Pertugall
The Spanish Armado flieth	uing Scotland on the West, and bending toward Nor-	Good and an aufful and of the thing of their whole neet foure-	1		1	was handled, but onely of prayle and glory to bee	Of Staggers for treland: both which Kingdom school	mycha to Quece
	may; il aduised (but that necessity vrged, & God had	foore and one veffels, and of the thirty thousand fouldiers, thirteene thousand, fine hundred and	1		1	rendred vnto God; her Maiesty herselse with most		Elizabethi pro-
1	infarrated their connolls) to pur shoir fedom and	louidiers, thirteene thousand, nue hundred and	1		I	princely and Christian speeches exhorted all the		
1	infatuated their counfells) to put their shaken and battered bottomes into those blacke and dangerous	odde. Of prisoners taken in England; Ireland and	1		i	people to their due performance of those religious	douring to repaire his dillionour by renging his	Four preparett
1 1	Seas; neither was the Climate healthfull for the	the Low-Countries were two thousand and more. In	· .		1		Fleet and Forces for a new expedition against Eng-	Philip preparett
	crazed bodies of the Spaniards, oner-beaten and ty-	England, Don Pedro de Valdez, Don Vasquez de Sylua	•		į		land	dition,
1	red with wants, being now entred the degree of La-	and Don Alonzo de Sayes and others were kept for	1		The Zelanders	to reade a Memorial of their no lefte graningero	(227) This Don Antonio among other Compe-	1
1	titude. 57. from whence the Lord Admirall retur-	their ransome s in Zeland, Don Diego de Piementeli.			thankefulnes to			ļ
August 1.	med leaving Come Courses de Comed sin Comedian Comedian	and in treland, Don Alonzo de Lucon, Roderigo de Lasse	;}		O04.	liew come of littler to beettamped, having on the	Ceale of King Henry as forming from Vine Fine hit	Don Antonio his
1	ned leaving some Scouts to descry their successe.	and others of great account to conclude, there was	1		l	out nucture sarmer of their Connery engranen with		Title,
	(217) The Spaniards now cleared from those	no famous or worthy family in all spaine, which	rt .		1	this inicription, Glory to God alone, and on the other	Philippians to have been his Baftard. Against which	
The Spanish confultation.	their haunting spirits, consulted most seriously	in this expedition loft not a fonne, a brother, or a	ıİ.		1	tide the portracts of great things under filed The	acculation Den Antonio had fentence for his legiti-	1
Communication.	what was to be done: the Popes credite was to bee	kiniman.	1		1	Spanish Fleet, and in the circumference It ranks most	marion bush a Pichana and lentence for his legiti-	1
1	respected, who had predicted this voyage to fortu-	(220) Thus were these Sea-services effected:as	;}		1		mation by the Bishoppe of Angra, and every way	
	nate successe; the wrath of King Philip was to be fea-	for the Land, preparations were made throughout	:]				fought to rubbe off that feandalous imputation. His	
1 1	red, his great expenses thus lost; the aduenturors	the Kingdome, but the maine forces lying encamped	(1		*1 came,I faw, I	haue seene also excellently described in denise where	conditions were fuch as well befitted a Crown, he	His conditions.
1	loofers if the voyage should bee left; the glory of	at Tilbury vnder the command of the Earle of Lei-	.1	i illi		Ou the one nice, the Spanib Fleet had interihed ment	being a Prince of greater spirit then person and yet	ama committees,
	the Spaniards laid in the fuds, the Inuincible Nauy	cefter, thither her Maiesty in person vpon the ninth	.1		1	the Summe (the eye of the whole world) vidi, and the	of rare modefly and humility, featoned with a dif-	
	in the ebbe of her fame; and England still England,	of August repaired , full of Princely resolution, and	I		1	English Nauy, vici. In other coines also were stam-		
	not lorded by the Spaniard, if they thus without fur-	more then teminine courage, whose lonely presence	. }		1	ped thips fleeting, & finking, and in the reuerfe, Sup-	Came to occin faire Detter fanour and effeeme sheet	
	ther attempt should returne into Spaine. But with-	and imperial speeches, as shee passed like some A-]		I	plicants vpon their knees, with this Motto, Man pro-		
1	all, fine thousand of their souldiers were slaine; mul-	mazonian Emprelle through all her Army, were for	.1		1	poleth, God dipaleth, 1588. To the like effect alla	Defender of the Realme by the Gouernours, and	
1	titudes of ficke and maimed lay on their hands;	acceptable and gratious, that Her fouldiers, full-		*	1	the Hollanders flamped the remembrance of this		
	twelve of their greatest ships were sunke, lost, and	fraught with manly spirit, yet received an accesse of	1		I	Armago in their monies, after the example of the	he was in a manner enforced, feeing himfelie endiro-	
	taken; their Cables, Masts and Sailes, cut, rent, and	hardinetle from to alactions a patterne in their Man-	Į.		1	Ancient, whole vie was to inscribe their victories vp-	I find with many drawn twords in midit of a furious	
1	broken, with the English shot, their ankers left.	den Queene : and both they perceined so well the			1	on their Coines, of which kind were those with Spa-	i montage.	
1	where the fired Hulkes forced them, their victuals	loue of their Prince, and thee faw what it was to have	1			nish Shippes, having this Word, Impius fugit nemine	(228) But Philip as more ambitious, so more	
	failing, and fresh-water all spent, their enemies no	the love of her subjects, that the harmony of both	1		1	leagente		
1	leffe fierce and vindauntable, then fortunate: and	their affections was admirable, both of them pro-			1	(225) Neither did the Dutch alone participate	tugall, and by his Generall, Duke Alba, put this new	
	their long expected friend, the Duke of Parma,	feffing resolution, and willing to facrifice their lines			i			K.Philipse-
	though euer preparing, yet still forestalled by the	in that most rightfull quarrel. But the God of House	1		1	Nations also congratulated the fame, which united	Portugall, where hee proclaimed eight hundred thou-	tempts the Crowne of
	Dutch, most firme Allies vnto the Queene: these	having now prevented their forwardnesse without	1			fall ioy being excellently expressed in this ensuing		Crowne of
l i	circumftances wifely ballanced, the voice went cur-	loffe of English blond, eft-fooner the Campanne	1			Ode, by a * Stranger of eminent Piety and Learning		Portugall,
1	rant for speeding into Spaine.	diffolued : and not long after Leicester ended his	Earle of Fele		*Thesdorm Beza An. 1588 and in his Epiftle be-	and translated into all the chiefe Languages of Chri-	I VELO LOIS VOIOTURATE Prince that eight migrature i	
	(218) But knowing that Scotland (whose Religi-	daies having beene a Peere of great effate, but lyable	Bers death.		bic Foifile bea	flendome; we will here annexe the fame, as the Close		1
l i	ous King was fast-knit in affection, and blood vnto	to the common deftiny of most Great-mee whom all	ł			and Epilogue of this Tragico-Comedy, to bee perpe-	On and conference with many, yet was never berry	1
The Spaniards	Queene Elizabeth) would veeld them no comfort.	men magnifie in their life time, but few speake well	1		ment on Iob.	tuated vnto all enfuing posterities.		I
caft their horfes	and hopeleffe also that Normay would give them a-	of after their death.	ł		A.D. 1589.	An ememb Potterities,		[
into the fea.	ny fupply, they cast all their Mules and Horses o-	(221) The Land thus delivered by the arme of	ł			Strauerat innumeria Hispanus Classibus aquor		Peringali poffef
	uer-boord for sparing of their fresh-water: then fra-	the Omnipotent, and the Bore put back that fought			1	Regnus innerturus Sceptra Britanna fuis.	ting their milerable eftate, left the Spaniard (who	ud.
1	ming their course to faile about Cathenes and the	to lay Englands faire vine-yard wafte, Queene Fixa-			1	Tanti buius rogitas que Motus caufa? Superbos	then gaped for nothing but kingdomes) to policife	
1	coafts of Ireland, so proceeded between the Orgades		l		1 1	Impulit Ambitio, vexit Auaritia.	the Gouernment of Partugali	1
l i	and Ifles of Farr vnto the 61. degree Northward;	but especially towards her Almighty protectous) commanded folemne Thankes-guing to bee cele- brated ynto the Land God of Hosts, arthe Cashedra	O MARIO TELE		, 1	Quem hone to Ambitio must	(229) Antonio's kingly stile thus ended, before	1
1	whence the Duke of Medina, with his best stored	commanded folemne Thankes gining to 1	beths thankful-		j	Quam benéte, Ambitio,merfit van Ssma ventus : Et tumida tumidos vos superasius aque:		1
	hippestooke Westward ouer the maine Ocean to-	brated vnto the Lord God of Hofts, at the Cathedra	nesse to God.		, 1	Onem hand Protest Collinston II	loftered him aute, and in such fort as somether for	4
1	wards Bifcay, and fo arrined fafely in Spaine, where	Church of Saint Paules in Her chiefe City of London,			1 1	Quambené Raptores Orbis totius Iberos		1
1	, , ,					Mersit mexhausti iusta vorago Maris!	whom Katherma Dutchelle of Bragan a was one vea]
-		which	<u> </u>				Lilliz and	1
						<i>r</i>		
I								

. 1	and Pope Gregorie himselfe, who had hitherto sided	ther not long before. All which (hee contelled)				1 (214) Thu	Do Monarch 6	865
1	with Den Antonio, the Prior of Crate, knowing it was	were for a new voyage against England. And in-	1		1	(235) Thus returning vnto the Groine, an	whereof the enemy having advertisement in a	
	fureft to hold with the ftrongest, sent Philip his A-	deed such store of wines was there found, as the English Souldiers vsing little moderation in drin-			34-0	wanting Cannons to batter the walles, the English fired the Base-Towne, embarked from thence, and	acad of the hight lathed out of the Lown, and ma	
!	postolicall allowance, the better to put on his New- gotten Crowne; exhorting him to thankefulnesse,	king did not onely lay themselves open to danger	The Groine		May 8.	put againe to Sea. But the windes being contrary		
1	for these his prosperities, and moving him earnestly				1		on Colonell Brets Quarters, who being at reft	
	to make warre against England, with proffers of affi-	inflamed and infected their bloud, that it caused a	through intem-		f	UCTING Burings, to which passage nature E1-	ci i with white with was not	
	france as we have faid.	from the vpper Towne, but by differmerature to inflamed and infected their bloud, that it caused a greate mortality and infection in the whole Army.	perate drinking		The Earle of E		ly made head that heaves deins in Armes, & lothroug	h-
1	(230) Don Antonio thus driven out of his King-		or witer		fex commeth to the Fleet. May 13.		taine Carre with the like refiger	
	dome, for succour repaired vnto the Court of	(233) The Base-Townethus gotten, a sudden rescue of two thousand men so resolutely came to			May 13.		ded his life : Captaine Car Grand and Valour el	
King Antonie feckes aid from	France; where, of the Queene Mother, a pretended					nion of the world, or well-liking of the Queene, fee- med vuto the Sager fort to hazard his fortunes; but		
! France.	Competitor for the Portugall Crowne, he was both	the very Gates, as though no contraty power could possibly keepe them from entrance, but in the first	to flight.				I touted not tried attempts to eatie. but were pur to	
His loffes at fea.	fauoured and aided at Seas for the Isles of Terceres: but such was his definy in his Sea-sights also (the	brunt of resistance, they were content to make their			Corn.Tacitae.		rudualite and toule retreate; inlomuch as the Far	
His logies at tea.	Peruan gold being no leffe powerful then the Spanish	heeles the fafe-guardians of their heades, of who me					of Egex (tull of high ipirite, and hote youthly bloud	the enemy to the
1	Canons) that eight of the tallest French Ships were	yet many were cut short by the English pursuers.				The state was sauce the TV IF TOWNERSTON of his future	had them in chale to the very gates of the high town and (as it was truly reported) the enemies loffe di	<i>r</i> .
l i	loft. & two thougand men flaine: among whom was l	With the like feare the shippes in the Roade were	l'					d .
	the Lord Philip Tross the Generall, whose death was so taken, and the expedition so censured, as the	fraught, whole Souldiers ouercharging the great				(236) The Fleete thus encreased, they landed in Portugall, even under shot of the Castle of Peniche.		
	was fo taken, and the expedition to centured, as the	Ordinance of a great Gallion, abandoned her bord, and let her on fire, which for the space of two daies	1				(239) Mean while Generall Drake with his who	e
1	Portugall Captaines were reputed for Cowards, im- prisoned in France, and many of them charged with	burned in most terrible wife, so that of fifty great					(239) Mean while Generall Drake with his who Fleete was come to Caseau, and possessed the town	Drake furprifeth
i i	corruption and treason; so that all his hopes were	perces but fixteene were found whole, the reft					WILHOUT 20V I CHILDING . for the inhabitrance of rf	اا
	now in the wane, and no further affiliance could bee	broken and melted, and so brought away by the				Thentes that the command: who with fine Comman	discourry of his Nauie, fledde with bagge and bag	
	expected of the French.	English: but the higher townestrong both by si-	1				gage into the mountaines, which the Generall pecciuing, fent vinto them a Portugall Pilote, to offer	
1	(221) The pore Prince thus dejected in France,	tuation and fufficiency for relitance rejolutely held	1 1			Hade their approach close to the Sea Gdood and		
E. Antonio re-	knowing the vninerfall report of Queene Blizabeths	out, onely intreated by Parley to have faire Warres.	1			on the Earle of Effex with Sir Roger Williams divided	cottof their rightfull King, and minister necessarie	el I
paires for aide to Q.Elizabeth,	great fame, obtained leaue of her Maiefty for accelle	And being built for the most part on a hard rocke, one place was found mineable, where the Generali	1			their men into two Troupes, the one keeping the Sands along the Shoare, and the other ouer the	to the rainty which dee had propert. Which of	÷1 {
	vnto her facred prefence, whose Court had ever been a famoused Sanctuary to all oppressed Princes, or di-	the fourth day of this (see fee men on worke, who	i 1				fer they loyfully embraced, and prefently fent twee	51 1
	itreffed Estates: where thewing his right to the Por-	bedded their powder formwhat too fhort of the wal,	} 1			chemy icenia united to the encounter and arms	chiefe men of the Towne, to signific their loyalti to Don Antonio, and their honest affection to his Ar	ا ا
	tugall Crowne, and clearing the objections touching	wherby that defigne tooks not the supposed effect.	1		The enemy put to flight.	Autought, cuch within bum of page: but were to	my, whereupon sar Francis immediately landed his	
1	his Baltardy (which imputation in lundry languages)	But this error reduced, another as great was com-			- Barr		Companies but not without peril of all Call	
	hee refuted in Print to the publike view of the	mitted, for the Miners againe feton worke, came right under the Wall but formwhat wide of agreet	t i			fently turned their backes, and fled further then the English had reason to follow. The Towne they	Which being guarded by the Spaniards held one	1 1
	world) received now comfort to bee fet in his	Towerthereupon built, fo that when the blaft of	1 . 1	#	Perichein Darra.	lett vinderended, to that it was entred without our	gainst him for their King. (240) At Lisbone the Portugals had promised to	1 1
	Kingdome, England having fourt an occasion to war against Spaine. Among whom once more he	powder brake forth, it ouerthrew but a part of the	1		Peniche in Pertu. gell taken.	Tentrance and the Carrie immoned the fame night.	(240) At Lisbone the Portugals had promifed to	
Specours are afforded him.	affaned to trie the fanour of Fortune his Petition	fame, and lefethe other standing correring and sha-	1			the Captaine whereof was Antonio de Aurel a Dorne	aid Antonio with three thousand horse, belides othe	1
afforded him.	to the Queene being onely this, that the would but	ken, which being not reparted in the heat of affault.	1 1			[gall-who demanding, and being fariefied, show the	supplies from the Duke of Bragansa, Don Francisco de Toledo, and others, at a day prefixed, and now altoge	
	land him late in his Country, and among it his own i	fell suddenly vpon the English and sew Captaine Sydenham with thirty Souldiers besides, to the great				Antonio was present, gaue vp the peece, with the munition therein. Vnto this place some Fryers &		
1	People, of whose assured loue and readinesse to re-	aftonishment of the rest there employed not know-				other poore of the Country, came to welcome their	ares having chiefe command in all places, they were	
li l	ceine him as their King, and thence forward to de- fend him and his inft Title, hee nothing doubted So	ing the cause whereof it came, but rather suspecting				King, promiting him (in the name of the reft) a fuf-	areis hauing chiefe command in all places, they were vnable by any meanes to make head. Whereupon) 1
ì	honest and reasonable a suit could not but finde fa-	ir a Strategome of the Towner and the reft of the	E))			ficient supply both of horse and foor, which nor-	the vniorthate Anionio leeing the time expired 23	1 1
	nonewith fo gracious a Queene: whereupon pro-	rubbish lay so loose under foor, that the Assaulters	4 1			ficient supply both of horse and foot, which not- withstanding was neuer performed.	but forty horse come, nor of foot sufficient to fur- nish two Engines, grew almost hopelesse, yet assa-	1 1
1	uision being made for the Portugall voyage, he em-	could have no fure francing to make their light.	1 1			(237) Hereit was thought fitte that the woring	cd hee to perswade a flay before Lisbon for o. dayes	1
145	harked at Plemouth in Aprill, whence fixe of the	(234) Whilesthesethings were in doing, the	4	t t		ded and licke thould remaine with inflicient provi		1 1
A.D. 1589 The Portugall	Queenes shippes, and ewenty more of warre (besides	Generall had certaine notice that the Conde de Art	3	i i	The attempt for Lisborne.	fion, and feuen companies of foot to guard the hips	initial declining (for there was the first apparant their	1
The country	many other ordained for transportation) [preadtheir]	drada had affembled an Army of eight thousand	1		1	and Castle; and the maine Army to march ouer land vnto Lisbon, the Metropolitane of Portugall, ac-	of nexuette among them) the Porthogals backward	1
	Sailes vnder the conduct of the ener-feared Sir	firong, which was but the beginning of another more firong, leuied under the Conde de Alternia	1 1	S	panish history.	counted the firongest Fort in the World, and who	and of bale relolutions, ready to obey any forhem.	1
	Francis Drake, and the most valorous Sir Iohn Norris Generall for the land service, with eleven thousand fol-	the former, not passing fixe miles off, and both of	E) /		1		felues may be rich: and the Generall having alrea-	
Ant. Workfeild.	diers, and twents five hundred Mariners. These *lan-			1	1	against the mightiest Monarch in the Farth-whicher	dy done more then was promifed, left they fhould hazard the honour which hitherto had beene gotte,	
#April 20.	ding in a Bay of Galicia, neere vitto the Grome, in	uent which, Sir Iohn Norris with nine Regiments	*May 6				denied his request, and gave present order to return	1
1	their March were met and encountred within halfe	*met them, and prefently fell to a hote skirmith,	1			uice)promiled to come, if the injury of weather did	to Calcan himselfe, the Farle of Files and Sir Peges	1
	a mile of the Towne, but their enemies were soone	whole brunt the enemy not able to endure took of uer a Bridge, built vpon a Creeke of the Sea, at the		t t	1	not hinder him. The March vndertaken, Tarres redras made some shew of relistance, but presently	Williams remaining with the fland, that was made in	
	forced to retire vnto their Gates.	further foor whereof their Campe lay very firong					the nigh fireet, till the whole Army was drawn into	1
	(232) The next day General North having view- ed the advantage, refolued to attempt the place by	ly entrenched. Sir Edward Norris, Colonell Syd-	4		. 1	abandoned and lett to the policition of Don's Ames	the field: at which time, the King (euen herein of kingly disposition towards his Natives) made re-	
	a scalado, and to land some Artillery, to beate the	ly entrenched. Sir Edward Norrie, Colonell Syd- ney, the Captaines Hinder, Falford, and Barton en	-				queft to faue the Suburbes from spoile, which if the	Day ditteria bia
1	thins and Gallies which did play voon their troopes,	tred the Bridge, whole further end was barricaded	1		1	uniking the whole would it and for his claime, but	English had ransacked, they had beene the richest	princely com.
i i	which was effectually performed; and the Gallies	with Barrels, where comming to push of pike and	1		1	therein was not a little deceived; for yichtuals grow- ing scarse in the Army, the Country did not sup-	Armie that cuer returned to England, But now rea-	Patition.
1	forced to abandon the Roade, the Bale-Town was	fword, Sir Edward was grieuoully hurrin the head Captaine Hinder received five wounds in the head	2					1:
1	furprized, and in three feuerall places entred, where	and face by the Sword; Captaine Fulford hurt in	3		- 10	any of thrength. Notwithflanding the Frotish A.	of his Martiall bloud, ranne his speare and brake it	ł
1	the Inhabitants with a great cry tooke into the high Towne, but some presented, escaping the fury of	the left arme with a fhor, and Captaine Barton har	e e				against the Gates of that City: demanding alowde, if any Spaniard mewed therein, durst aduenture	1
	the fword fledde to the Rockes, where they were	in the eye. Notwithflanding, the Generall fo fe	-			Lores, and lodged the fit day as Aluelana three miles	forth in tauour of his Militreffe to break a flaffe with	ſ
1	found and flaine to the number of fine hundred. A-	conded the encounter as the Guard was ouer			11	from Liston, where many of their Souldiers perified	I dim Butthole (raliants thought in Garage and annual)	j.
	mong these so hid, Don luan de Luna, a man of great	throwne, and the whole Army put into route, o	The English are			by drinking in two places of poiloned flanding wa-	their Ladies with amorous discourses, then to have	ļ
į.	command, was one, who the next morning came	whom our men had the Chafe fully three miles in fourefundry wayes. What the flaughter was it	The English are victorious.		· 1	ters, as also in eating of honey, purposely left in the houses, and spiced with posson, as it was thought.	their loues written on their breafts with the point	1
1.	forth, and yeelded himselfe to the Generals deuo-	vacertaine, but supposed to bee great; besides o		т	he Engliffs	(238) The fine and twentieth of May the Free !	of his English Speare.	- 1
1	tion; I nan de Vera, a Commissary of victuals, was likewise taken, who confessed that there was in the	there that were found hid in Vineyeards and hed	-1	ap	proch Lisbon. 1	and Paring Came vinto Lashon, whole Suburbes were	(241) Being now come to Cafeau, intelligence was brought by a Fryer, that the enemy was marched	1:
1	Towne three hundred thousand Ducate of filmer, and	ges and two hundred put to fword that had take	n f		1.4	Outil 403 II doned, houses of propertion for corne &	vnto Saint Iulian with a ftrong power to encounter	1
1	order onen for the baking of three hundred thou-	into a Clother. In this fernice the Kings Standard	di i		11	victuals fired, and none left to defend but a fort of	vnto Saint Iulian with a ftrong power to encounter the English, vnto whose Generall, the Generall	ł.
1	fand of Bisket, that the Towne was stored with two	was taken, some plate and rich apparrell found in	1		10	olde folkes and beggars, crying in the streetes, Viual Rej Don Antonio; and about midnight they with-	Norry lent a 1 rumbet, promiting to meete him the	ı
	thousand Pipes of wine, a thousand larres of Oyle,	their Campe and the Country for three Milescom palle let on flaming fire; the General making his re			i	n the Towne let fire on their houles that flood	next morning if hee durft abide his comming and	- 1
1	three thousand Kintals of Beefe, a great quantitie	patie let on flaming the; the General making his re- treat with the Kings Colours and Armes displayed	1		Į v	within vpon the wall. The English wearied with the	withall gaue him the lie: the Earle of Effex also sent him a particular Cartell, offering himselfe against	1
1	of Beanes, Peafe, Wheat and Fish, and of Match and Harqueboizes three Barkes were brought thi-	before him, to the greathonour of the English.			11	IX dats march, want of victual, the laft nights warch	any of theirs, if they had any of his qualitie, or elfe	}
1	and residue porces trace parkes were prouding erre	(235) Thu	s t		a	and many of them weake, were defirous of reft;	fixe, eight or tenne, to trie fingle combate, wher-	1
	!			1			at	
						,	441	
						*		

mostb.
* Iune az.

The State of

* Heny 3.

in France.,

The Guizinus practules.

The Calile of

Sixty Spanish Hulkes taken, Cables, Copper, and Waxe, beeing the Spanish Kings prouision were taken going to Lisbon.

(242) The English having thus farre proceeded, put againe to Sea, when, vnlooked for, and in a great calme, nine Gallies fell in the winde of their Fleete, and so plaied upon a stragling Barke of Plimouth, that Captaine Caluerley, his Lieutenant, the Mafter, and some of the Mariners, abandoning the veffell, betooke them to their Boates, whereof one, (in which the Captaine and Mafter were) was ouerrunne by the Gallies, and they both drowned. Two

other Hulkes also stragling from the Fleete, were fet upon by the Spanis ds, in one of which, Captaine Minshow fought to the last, and very valiantly after his ship was on fire; but whether fired by himfelfe or the enemy, could not be judged; the calme being so ftill, as no succour could bee sent from the fleete, to their great griefe. (243) Thus continuing seventeene daies on board, many of the dead Souldiers were cast into the

Sea and the whole now confifted of two thousand men, who comming to Vigo, found every ftreete fencod with a strong Barricadoe, and but only one man in the Towne, the Inhabitants making toward Bayon as fast as they could drive; then was both the Town The English ar and all the Country for feuen miles compaffe fet on a flame . Which seruice thus performed , Sir Franeis Drake with the Queenes ships fafely *arrived at Plitmouth, and vpon the second of July following arriued Sir Iohn Noris, having both of them performed the parts of worthy Generals. (244) Whilft these Realms were at variance each against others, the French were not quiet among themselues, the King somewhat voluptuous, but ex-

ceffinely prodigall rowards his fauorites 5the Nobi-lity ambitions, mistrustfull, and disloyall; the Clergy turbulent, and vidutiful, bending all their force and thoughts against the plantation of the truth. To vnite friendship therefore some league had beene made, for confirmation whereof the three Estates were affembled at Blogs. For the Clergy appeared An.D. 1588 one hundred thirty foure deputies, among whom were Octob.17. foure Arch-bishops one and twenty Bishops, and two Generals of Orders; for the Nobility came one hundred and foure score gentlemen; and for the third Effate an hundred foure score and cleuen Deputies, all of them Lawyers and Merchants. Vpon the first fitting, and before these best wits of France, King * Henry made a folemne Oration to perswade vnion, full of linely affection, true magnanimity, and pregnant reasons, delinered with such an admirable eloquence and grace, as it rauished the cares of all present, besides the opening of the propositions; the which, Mantelon, the keeper of the Scale, for him further profecuted ; after him Reynauld de Beaulme, Archbishop of Bourges, Patriarke and primate of Aquitaine, spake in the same argument; and lastly, Michell Marteau, Pronoft and President for the third Effare, confirmed, and confented to all that had beene faid. Whereupon an oth of V nion was taken, Anoth of Vnio to binde the King, them, and all their posterities, the

fundamental Lawes and liberties of France onely re-(245) This notwithflanding, the Leaguers, to hit the marke whereat they aimed, daily divulged and buzzed the French Kings difgraces, and al to install the Guize in his Throne; the Papists wrongs were greenously expostulated, their Churches

7	the French and United Estates; and to make his af-	countries : Wee doe for the liquidation of this doubt ear-					1 and Emeinth D. T.	DO MORAR CHS. Monarch 6	51. 850
Callis furprifed.	faves hee first became with Callis a thing long be-	nestly in Gods name, require and charge all persons, that					her Majesties Tienten with South of them toint	le within the point of Maine land O 21	
ļ	fore projected by others in his place; that Towne	are not the faid Kings naturall Subsects, and yet that							
	being a Sea-port of great importance, as the Eng-	have given him aide with their shippes, victuall and muni-		'			Thomas Howard, shipped in the Miranore, and the		to
	lish found it whilst it was theirs, and the losse there-	tionas is abone said, to withdraw all their said ships pre- pared for the warre, and all their provisions of hostilitie			-				er-
	ofgreat, as Queene Mary and her wife Statists both	out of any Hauens of Spaine or Portugall, or from the				The Dutch	and for the States was Admirall, In Van Dunennoor		"
1	tooke it, and felt it. (260) At this time the Garrison was small, and	company and serutce of the Kings shippes against our Na-			9	Commander.			ad
1	the Gouernour negligent, undiffereet, and unfortu-	my; and therewith to returne either to their owne Coun-					dred Tunnes, and accordingly the whole Fleet wa		Ot-
	nate, though having notice from Netherland that	tries, or if they shall like to come to our Nauie, to whome,					divided into five fquadrons, with a commandement	the Lord Thomas Countries determined, th	nat
1	the Spaniard meant her fiege; fo that Richbanke left	in the reverend name of our Soueraion Lady the Queens			1	he Vice-Admi	that every fquadron should attend his Admirall,	Francis Ware Cin Co	Sir The Nauslinghe
1 .	vnmanned and in orear ruine, was entred vpon by	Maiesty, wee doe promise all security, both for their per-			r.	als	Of the first was Six not a vice-Admiral affigned	mell with Come I Starte, and Sit Robert Sout	th- at Cadiz.
	the Cardinall, and fuch as refifted driven into the	Jons and goods, to bee weed and defended as friends, and			1		the frond Sir Francist Southwell in the Lion; o	Low-Country thippes thould be squadron of the	he
A.D. 1596	Towne; where, with the Inhabitants hee grew to a	to suffer all their Shippes and provisions, that were ta-					Sir Robert Dudley attending the Lord Thomas How	which was most valiantly attempted, maintained,	8,
,,,,	composition for the surrender, Vylaolless the Go-	ken by the King of Spaine, or intended for his scruice, or					ard, in the Non-Pareile; the fourth, Robert Croffe fol-		
ı	uernour neuer interpoling therein.	that shall be by the Owners withdrawne from his aide, to					lowing Sir Walter Rawleigh in the Swift-fure; and		
0 = 5	(261) Callis thus turning Spanish, and the Spa-	remaine in their free dispositions, so as the same bee vsed in all forts as friends, and not as enemies to the Queenes						(270) In the heate whereof, the Earle of Effe	x.
Queen Elizabeth offereth aid to		Maiesty, and to us her Generals: and if any shall upon					Hollanders.		
recouer Callin.	the French king, & proffered her aid for recourry of that Peece, but hee empouerified by warre, fought	knowledge of this her Maiesties most honourable Order			0	ficers for	(265) For the Land-service besides the Generals,		
1	to regaine his lofles rather by some faire conditions	and of our promise (to observe the same as favourably as			L	und ferufces:			and 1
1	of peace, then to depend vpon the dependencies &	wee may) willingly and manifestly refuse to accept this					field Campe-mafter Generall: Sir Coniers Clifford		LAdmirall,
}	hazard of Armies; at which resolution our Noble	our offer, and shall not endeuour themselves to performe					Sergeant Maior, Sir George Carem, Mafter of the		le,
1	Senobia was nothing well pleased, and therefore to	this reasonable request, tending to their good and li-					Lambert Organica Marihall: Oliver	the Gallies were affailed by circular trickers	
1	preuent the practifes of Spaine, began to make good	berty; wee shall then bee instly moned, as by the law of					tary The Colone la - f all And Koger Aftley, Secre-	with his fmall thippes to hanfalled shair Gd.	
1	against them, and prepared another expedition to	Armes weemay, to take and we all fuch so refusing this		1			Suffex. Sir Christopher Plant Si		
1	Sea. But dealing more prince-like then Philip had	our offer, as manifest aiders of the King of Spaine with					Richard Winbfaild and sing! homes Gerrat, Sir	ont paffare arch a D.: J.	1
1	done by her (who made faireft pretence of peace,	forces to inuade her Maiesties Dominions, and so mani-					Voluntaries, and for the Dutch, was the Count Lodo-		
1	when hee was hotest in preparing warre) shee cau-	fest enemies : and in such case of that refusall, if any					wicke, in all about ten thousand men. The private	at the faireft Marke, which indeed was the Philip	
1	fed to bee published and printed a Decleration of the	harme shall happen by any attempt against their Persons,					Counsell for this expedition being selected, certain instructions were sent selected to men. The private		
1	inst causes mouing her to set forth her Nauy for the	Shippes and goods, by any our Nauce, for the aiding of					instructions were sent sealed to every shippe, with a	ger, and give over fight; whose souldiers seeking	g fire.
1	defence of her R calme, the Tenor wherof we thinke	the faid King: there shall bee no inst canse for them here-					commandement to the Captain, not to break them		
	not vnfit to bee here inferted.	after to complaine, or to procure their Naturall Princes and Lords to sollicite resitutions or amenas for the same.				1	open, till fuch time as they came to the South-		
1	(262) To all Christian people to whom this Declara- tion shall come to bee read or heard, greeting; Wee Ro-	and for the more notification hereof, wee have thought		1				the saint Thomas, another of Spaines Apostles die the like, least the English should leade them in tri	d
The Declarati-		good to have the Originall hereof to be signed with our		j				umph of their victory. The rest of the Spanis Fleet	
on roughing the fetting forth of a Nauy."	Ferrers of Chartley, Bourchier, and Louaine, &c. and	hands and with our Seales, to bee fent by any that will				- 1			
a Nauy."	Charles Lord Howard, Baron of Effingham, Lord	require to reade or fee the fame : And likewife wee			The	voyage to	(266) Thus ready for Seas, vpon the first of Iune a warning Peece being shot off, all weyed Anchors, and with a collection		il i
1	High Admirall of Fingland Sec having the charge of a	haue put the fame in Print, in French, Italian, Dutch and		1	Cad				
1	Royall Nauie of Shippes, prepared and fent to the Seas,	Spanish, and have also caused the same to be distributed		1	-			(271) Thefe fermines about 5	
1	by the most Excellent Princesse the Lad Azabeth,	into as many Ports of Spaine and Portugall as conue-			i i				
1	Queene of England, France and Irelanc : CC. doe give	niently might be for the better knowledge to be had in the						Puntall, about a mile westward from Cadiz, whence	on land.
	all men knowledge that the faid Nanie vi our charge	Said Ports, as also in all other Portes under his subie-					the winde came about, and with a profesous Gale		
	is by her Maiesty prepared, and sent to fers in the Seas,	ction.			l !-			the Bridge on the West of the Iland, to impeach all	1 1
1	for defence of her Maseflies Realmes, Do sions, and	R, ESSEX. C. HOWARD.			Inne	18.	rifb Barke was mette with from Cadiz, which figni-		
1	Subjects, against such mighty Forces as mee are adver- tised from all partes of Christendome, to be ready prepa-	C. HOWARD.	4					which service were sent sir Christopher Blunt, Sir Thomas Gerrard (now Lord Gerrard) and Sir Coniers	1 1
Ì	red by the King of Spaine, and by further provisions of	(263) These things premised, seucnteene of her			1				1 1
!	men and suppes daily sent for, are to bee mightly in-	Maiefties Ships Royall, three of the Lord Admirals,	1 D						1 1
1	creased, toinuade her Maiesties Realmes, as heretofore	foure and twenty of the States (bippes, Marchants,	n.D. 1,55		The				1 1
1	in theyeere of our Lord, 1588. was attempted (euen	Men of Warre, and Victualers about one hundred,		i	Apol	les, but far 1 Chrifts,	'all doubtlessethe somes of Thunder) two great Gal- iasses, three Frigats, three Argosies, twenty Bis- caines, the rest went Mendy and the same states.	Sir George Carem (now Lord Carem) and others took	1 1
1	when there was a Treaty continued by both their Com-	in all to the number of one hundred and fifty Saile, in		i	Aurige	Christs,	saines; the reft were Merchants shippes, rich, and of		1 1
1	missioners for a Peace) with a greater Army then euer be- fore in his time was set to Seas: though by Gods goodnes	the beginning of May met at Planouth, where such		İ	Ther			(372) The side of their entrance was fortified	1 1
1	fore in his time was fet to Seas: though by Gods goodnes	lawes were ordained for the true feruice of God and	Lawes ordained for the Army.		of the	Spanish C	oyle, wine, waxe, filke, cloth of gold, and quicke-fil-		The affault on
1	and the valiance and wildome of her Noble and faithfull	Iustice in the Army, as it seemed rather a Regiment	,		Ships				1
1	Subjects, the same was notably made frustrate. And be-	of Civill Academians, then a Rendeuou of Souldi-							1 1
1	cause her Maiesty hath good intelligence of persect ami-	ers : and her Maiesty likewise in the Court, as Heze-							
1	ty with all Kings and Princes of Christendome, sauing	kiab in the Temple, opened her heart vnto the Lord in this wife.	2.King. 29.19.	1				enemy having also an advantage from the higher as cent, played fore vpon the English to their great	
1	with the King of Spaine, who hath this many yeeres most viniustly professed openly great enmity by divers actions,	Most omnipotent Maker, and Guider of the Worlds	1	1					1
1	both against her royall person and her people, and coun-	Masse, that onely searchest and fadomest the bottome of							1
1	tries, without any inst cause first given on her Maiesties	our hearts conseits, and in them seeft the true Originals	A Prayer made			ld	ne Seas going high, their purpose was hin-		- 1
1	part: Therefore wee the faid Earle, and Lord Admir all	of all our actions intended: thou that by the forelight do-	for the prolpe,		į į	-	(267) May I relate with home C		
1	doe ascertaine all persons, that wee are most straitly co-	est truly descerne how no malice of yourne nor quittance	ring of her Nam						ŧ
1	manded by her excellent Maiefty, to forbeare from of-	est truly discerne how no malice of revenge nor quittance of iniurie, nor desire of bloud-shed, nor greedinesse of lu-	ł						1
	funding in this our morage of any manner of persons of	cre; hath bred the resolution of our now-set out Army but	Į.		Afortu				i
1	what Nation soener, except the saide Kings Naturall	a heedfull care and wary watch, that no neplect of force	1		prefage				
ı	Subiects, or fuch other borne Strangers, as shall give to	nor ouer-surety of hauen might breed either danger to us.	l						Cadiz Surpriled.
	the faid King manifest aide with men, shippes, artillery,	or glory to them: these being the grounds wherewith thou						Towne thus surprised, the Lord Admiral shafted to	j
1	victuall, and other warlike provisions for invasion of her	doest inspire the mind; wee humbly beseech thee with	ł			154	zing, but no man juffered to parme here as alfa	fecond the charge, when a hote encounter enfued;	1.
1	Maiesty. Which her Maiesties commandement we meane	bended knees, prosper the worke, and with best fore-	}		1	1 411	can day of their departure thence another paral	for the streets were very narrow, so as but two could march on breast, and from their flat roofed houses,	- 1
1	dutifully to observe, and do therefore give strait charge	winds guide the iourney, speed the victory, and make the	1	}		1 Dr	Cleffed her left in the fame Order and in at a C		1
1	to all persons, that shall serve in this Nauy underneath	returne the advancement of thy glory, the triumph of their	l			rh.	ppe,growing wonderfully tame and familiar with		- 1
· ·	vs, whon pain of extreme punishment to observe the same; yet to avoide all occasions that may breede question, who	fame, and surety to she Realme, with the least losse of the English bloud. To these deuout petitions Lord give thou	į.			1 440	e men, and so continued with them till they came		1
1	they are, being not the King of Spaines Subjects, that shal	thy bleffed Grant,	į	1		1	(268) The day following at all and a state of the state o		I
1	be charged by vs, to bee manifelt aiders for the furnishing	(264) The whole Fleet was commanded by	l			the	e first of the weeke, the Spanish ships in the road,		f
1	and strengthming of the laid Kings Forces, provided either	Charles Lord Howard, High Admirall, shipped in the	The English					loope-note of the Cattle into the head and preferely, I st	r tohu Wat-
1	by land or sea, to attempt any inuasion of her Maiesties	Arke-Reyall, and Lord Robert Denereux Earle of Effex	Commanders is the Fleet.		*Diego S	ete. by	the aduite of their * Admirall, thor with the tide		HA HEIDE.
1	1 y and a second	and	the Ficet.	- 1		1	, and the tide	(273) But the Towne and Castle surrendred, a	1
-					1			Procla-	
	*			1					

Inne 30.

The English depart from Cadic

a Towne in Algarua; where the Earle desirous to doe some further exploite vpon the terra firma of

Spaine, landed his men (the Lord Admirall on board fecuring the feas) and marching to Fare hee found it empty of men, the Inhabitants being fledde with much of their lubitance, and the Towne left deftirute of victuall: vet in the Nunnery and in the Bishoppes Palace, some goods were found, and in the Library Bookes valued at a thousand Markes; and among other prizes of note, the fairest Culucrin the King of Spaine had, was there found, and seafed vpon; the English forraged the Country for 3.leagues about, and burnt the towne Lotha without any with more then an ordinary Grace. (282) Whose tenour was filled with blasts of dif-

content, conceived by his potent Mafter the King of Polonia, and caused by the greenances of his Marchants, who not onely were deprised of some prisi- Oracion. ledges in England, but the fea which is made free by the Omnipotent stopped, and the trades of his Marchants into Spaine by her Highnes Edicts debarred, cotrary to the law both of Nature & of Nations: that his Mafter as he could not be moued to diminish any part of his loue towards her Maiesty, so yet could

hee not but relieue his owne fubicets; and the rather

for that it touched all his Nobility, whose revenews

confifted chiefly vpon the Trade of Marchandizing.

That hee had hitherto forborne all meanes of re-

The futume of

if the King thy Master were present, that hee would

fay so much: but if peraduenture he hath committed any fuch thing to thy charge (which farely I do much doubt) it is to be imputed vnto him, that where the King is of yeers varipe, and not by bloud, but by election (yearand but newly advanced) hee dorh not so perfectly understand the course of negotiating these kind of affaires with other Princes,

thou feemest to mee to have read many Bookes, but

not to have peruled the Bookes of Princes affaires,

but vtterly to bee ignorant what is conucnient a-

mongst Kings. And whereas thou makest menti-

which either his Ancestors have observed with vs or perhaps others will obserue, who afterwardes shall succeede him. As touching thy selfe, indeede

stayed, and that vpon iust proofe thereof made, a redresse shall bee ordained, to the full satisfaction of the King, and content of his Subjects. 4 Lastly, hee was to returne the Gartar, (wherewith her Maiesty had honnured the late deceased King) as the manner is of forraine Princes to doe, which hee with great reuerence there delivered;

3 His third request was, if it stood with her Ma-

iesties good liking, to permit open traffique, that

the Marchants of Denmarke might transport their

goods into Spain without danger on the narrow feas

as heretofore some of them had sustained to their

great loffe. Her Maiesties answere was, that it was

to her vnknowne, that any of his Masters good

Sabiects were in any wife molested, or their goods

-	THE LANGE CONTRACT CO	thousand pound promised in Dowry with his lister,	
- 1	Which her Maiesty accepting; yet rold him, shee was right forry to receive it, for thereby shee was	whom Tir-Oenhad married, and who was now de-	
1	put in mind of the loffe of a most Noble Brother, &	ceased. Others likewise laid out their greeuances	
1	a most louing friend. But howfoeuer the Danish	conceined; such were O-Donell, Brian Mac-Hugh- Oge, Mac Mahun, and Euer Mac-Conley, who	
	Marchants now complained of loffe, the English	received most reasonable answeres to all their de-	
- 1	Marchandize were arrested in the Sound, for release whereof, Ambassadors were sent into Denmarke,	mands.	
1	where a restitution was made by the King, with	(292) But vnto them the Commissioners like-	
- 1	fuch honour and bounty, as well fatisfied her Maie-	wife proposed certain Articles: as, That they should	Proposition made to th
	fty, and contented her Marchants.	forthwith lay downe their Armes, difperie their Forces, acknowledge submiffiuely their disloialties,	Rebels.
ebelii-	(288) But a more dangerous Agent, working for	admir the Oucenes officers in their Gouernments,	
	Spaine, was the Irish Tir-Oen, who serpent-like lay lurking upon his advantage to raise the Standard of	reedifie the Forts they had defaced, suffer the Gar- risons to line without disturbance, make restituti-	
	Rome, and to divert subjection from the English	rifons to line without diffurbance, make restituti-	
	Crowne. This mans fortunes wee haue formerlie	ons of spoiles taken, confesse vpon their oath how	
,	declared, how being the fonne of a Bastard, or a ba-	farre they had dealt with forraine Princes, and fi- nallie to renounce all forraine aide. But their pro-	
axd.	nished fugitiue, he was raised by her Maicsties*meer bounty to the dignitie of an Earle, and stood in au-	politions not plealing the palate of those Rebels,	
- 4	thority ranked with the best; nor so onely; but be-	they departed with a relolution to maintaine then	
	ing twice in danger of the capitali crimes (once for a	ownedemands. Which moued Norris the Gene-	
	murther, next for vsurping the Title of O-Neale)vp-	rall aided with the Lord Deputy to march with his	Preparation
	on better hopes, of her princely elemency, twice got pardon for his life. The times now dangerous, and	Army vnto Armagh; whose approch (euerdreadful to his enemies) when Tir-Oen heard of, in great	
	Ireland too ready to receive forraine powers, it was	perplexity hee for fooke the Fort of Blacke-Water,	
mis	thought convenient to imploy Sir John Norris (that	fer on fire the villages about, and plucked downe	
eland.	famous Warriour) into those parts, with thirteene	the Towne of Danganon, with part of his owne	
	hundled of the Netherland old Souldiers, newly re-	house, bewailing his effate to bee past recourry, & was so much dejected in mind, as hee sought no-	Į.
-	tired from the wars in Britaine. (289) Hingh Baron of Dungannon, now Earle of	thing else but where to hide his rebellious	İ
flying	Tir-Oen, fearing leaft the English would make their	head.	
	nefts, where himfelfe meant to build, namely in some	(293) The Country now wasted, and no victu-	
	Castle, at the mouth of Lough-Earne, sodainly assat-	als to bee had, Norris fet a Garrison in the Church of Armagh, strengthned Monahan, and proclaimed	-
	led the fort of Blacke-Water, by which the entry lay	Tir-Oen Traitor in his owne territories. Which	
sthe wite-	into his Country, and got it by surrender. Which done, he wrote to Kildere, to side with him against	done hee flaved in Viller without any great deeds	l
	this wrongs receiped of the Lord Lebuty; yea and at	of martiall importance, onely Tir-Oen to gaine time presented vnto him a fained submission, signed with	1
	the same instant, to Sir Iohn Norris (appointed Lord Generall) that hee might be mildly dealt with, and	his owne hand, cast himselfe downe (arare and vn-	1
	not be driven headlong vpon the dangerous rockes	couth ceremony) at the Queenes pictures feet, vn.	1
	of difloialty.	girt his fword, and craned pardon vpon his knees: and yet in the meane time dealt he for aides out of	
	(290) But how his loyalty flood affected vnto	and yet in the meane time dealt he for aides out of	1
	her Maiesty (his raiser) was well perceived by the	Spaine, and so far prevailed, as that Messengers were sent from King Philip, with capitulations that the	
	powers which hee retained about him, being alwaies guarded with a thouland horsemen, and fixe thou-	King of Spainear a time prefixed should fend them a	1
	fand two hundred and fourescore foot of Vister, be-	competent Army to loine with the ithin, that are	1
	fides two thousand three hudred of Conaught, which	conditions of peace with the English should be re-	- }
	euer lay ready at his command; whereupon all of	iected, and that the Rebels should bee furnished with munition from Spaine.	1
is ad- rocla- rocs.	them being proclaimed Traiters; the flames of re- bellion beganne more violently to burft forth, which	(294) Hereupon (though there was a cellation	
tors.	for a long time, and not without loffe of much	from Armes) nee tell to narry and wait the Coun-	1
	bloud could hardly bee quenched: for though the	try, to burne villages, to drine away boones, and	
	Lord Generall were not inferior in strength of men, yet the advantages of the enemy were such, that the	having done what hee could or would, as it were pricked in conscience, hee once againe put on the vi-	
	time was rather spent in taking of booties, and friuo-	zard of ilmulation and fued for pardon and peace	1
	lous Parlies, then in any memorable exploit; the one	which the better to effect, hee lent the letters of king	5 '
	part waiting for fitter opportunities, and the other	Philips promifes who the L. Deputy with the causes	:
	looking enery day for his promifed fuccours from	what he did And forely fuch was his dexteritie, or	1
	Spaine. (291) But to spare the effusion of Christian bloud	of his owne diffontents, which moued him to dot what he did. And furely fuch was his dexteritie, or his Deftiny, or the English no lesse dangerous, then	1
	One on Flir sheth who ever minded Mercy more then	trequent tecuritie, negagence and confidence, or the	
w:Rog	Iuflice, caused her Treasurer & Chiefe Iufliciar of that	Sparing of money by the grand disbursers, or the in-	:1
Garden	Kingdome, as her commissioners to conter with this	bred lenity of the too-clement Queen, that his faire wordes were euer beleeued, and his foule offence	
	discontented Earle, and others his adherents, before whom, Tir-Oen complained of wrongs offered him	pardoned : but whole fault locuer, most of Con	- 1
	by Sir Henry Bagnall Marcichall, aswell to the preiu-	maught was now renolted, all Vifter rebellious, onely	']
	dice of his estate, as of his esteeme with the Queene,	feuen Castles kept for the Queane.	ıl.
	the Lord Deputy, Lord Generall, and others, and	(295) In which desperate estate, Thomas Lord Burrough, a man full of courage, was sent Lord De	
	therupon exhibited a Petition in humble maner con-	putrinto Ireland: who no looner arrived, our Torri	3 [
	taining these requests. That himselfe and all his fol- lowers might bee pardoned of their crimes, and bee	either croffed by fome higher-twaving Powers, O	Γ; ,
	reflored to their former citates; that they might free-	by his fortune in these his proceedings (the service there being farre different from those his others, in	s
	ly exercise their Romish Religion without molesta-	other parts imployed) through griefe & discontent	1
	tion; that no Garrison Souldiers, Shiriffe, or other Officer should interdeale within the jurisdiction of	(the too viuall guerdon of many a Noble Seruitor	í
	his Earledomesthat the Company of fifty horsemen	as was thought ended his life.	1
	with the Queenes pay might bee reftored to him, in	(206) The Lord Deputy no looner had received	
	the same State as formerly hee had lead them; that	the fword, and taken the charge of the Kingdome of Ireland, but hee made forward to meete with th	-
	the spoiles of his Country, and people might be pu- nished, and that Sir Henry Bagnass should pay him a	Rebels holding it good policy to cut off delayes	, I
	numed and make out 22 cm J Bagnass modele pay mint a	whice whice	h *

Tir-Ocas rei on in Jrelan

Tiroens fis ft !

He and hi

which commonly increase the abilities of the enemie. Tir-oen on the other fide 1 as boldly made his refiftance, and in a dangerous feruice encountered him at the Morry, where the Lord Burrough by his valour made the way, and most valiantly wanne the Fort of Blackewater, (repaired and reenforced by the Rebels) the only ftrength (besides Woods) that the Tir-oen had. To rescue this Peece, imme-

diately the enemie shewed himselfe: against whom Henry Earl of Kildare presently marching with a Cotonet of horse, and certaine voluntaries, (gentlemen of the better fort) where he discomfitted the enemy, though with loffe of some men of note; as of Francis Vaughan, brother to the Lord Deputies wife, Robert Turner Sergeant Maior, and the two Fosterbrethren of the Earle Kildere, whose deaths hee so tooke, as within few daies after himfelfe died for very gricfe. (297) The Fort reenforced with men and munition, and the Lord Deputy vpon feruice in o-Sheekwater again ther parts ; Tir-oen now wavering betweene hope feare, and shame, thought best to assay it by siege as the place of greatest importance to further his defignes; for that loft, hee faw his fortunes must

A.D. 1598

The English foi-led at Blackwater

downe, and thereupon with his ftrongest power. he beleaguered it. The Lord Deputy hearing thereof, prepared straightway to rescue the place, and marching with full pace and affurance of victoric whether through too forward a minde, diftemperature of body, aire, or of bogges, arrefted hee was with ficknesse, and violently cut off, by vntimely death, leaving to her Maicsty a misse in her Irifb Estate, and a further security to the ranging (298) The government of Ireland was then committed to the Earle of Ormand under the Ti-

tle of Lieutenant Generall of the Armie, and vnmond Lord Lieu- to the Lord Chanceller Sir Robert Gardiner; vinto whom Tir-oen (after his accustomed manner) in a long letter recapitulated his great gricuances, leauing not out the leaft offence of the Souldiers, or actions of the Sheriffes; his breach of couenants with Sir Iohn Norris hee coldly excufeth, and laid

his complaints against his enemies (the English)

who had intercepted and suppressed his submission

to the Queene, that they had raifed intolerable impositions upon the Nobles, and Commons;

and that the revenues of Ireland was shared among

Counselers, Lawyers, Souldiers, and Notaries:

by which and other like ouertures, it was manifest

that hee intended to extirpate the English quite out

(299) All this while his Siege lay before the Fort of Blackewater; for the railing whereof, Sir

Henry Baguall (the bitterest enemy that Tir-oen euer

had) with fourteene Enfignes of the choifest troopes

were fent, whom the Earle met necre vnto Armagh,

and beeing egged on with a fretfull defire of re-

uenge, bentall his force against the Marshall, where

beganne a bloudy conflict, and was continued with

the death of that worthy Souldier (fighting amongit the thickest) whereby Tir-oen obtained

not onely a loyous triumph ouer his private enemy, but withall went away with a glorious victory ouer

the English, who never fince they first set footing

in Ireland received so great an overthrow : for

therein thirteene valiant Captaines lofttheir lives, fifteenchundred common Souldiers were rowted

and put to shamefull flight, disparkled and cut in peeces. Vponthis disaster the Garrison Souldiers (ha-

uing with loyall hearts and weapons in hand, vnto

extreame famine and exceeding diffresse, held out to

the last) lastly surrendred the Peece of Blackwater

vnto the Rebels; by which ouerthrow and furrender, the triff became furnished with armour and

munition to maintaine their warres, and Tir-oen re-

nowned all the Realme over, as their onely Hora-

trus, and founder of their freedome. (300) Himselfe ouer-ioyed with these gotten vi.

of Ireland.

Queene Elizabeth chose Robert Earle of Effex , to Robert Earle of bee Lord Lieutenant and Gouernor Generall thereof a Peere in regard of his approoued wildome, fortitude, and fidelity, thought fittest to repaire the detriments and loffes therein fuftained, and in fuch deere efteeme with his Soucraigne, and intire loue of the people, as the heavens feemed to have framed him for the delight of man. In whom flined all sparkles of true Nobility and Martiall graces had made. His commission was large, and

with the Spanift King.

honor, had not fortune marred all that the other authority, and led no leffe then twenty thousand complet Souldiers, whereof sixteene thousand were foot, and the rest horse-men, so well furnished and pronided, as the like had never beene feene before n Ireland. (302) Thus honourably accompanied with the flower of English Gallants, and well-wishing acclamations of the people, with a strange thunderclap in a cleere Sunne-shine day, hee set forward from London, and arriving in Ireland received the Sword; where (toward the end of March) falling

ctories, swelled aboue measure with an haughty ar-

rogancy, commanding all things as fole Monarch

of ireland. Into Mounster hee fent Ouny Mac-

Rory-Og-O-More with foure thousand preying

rogues, to forrage the Countrey, and the rable that

daily reforted vnto them, burned the houses of the

English, ransacked their substance and killed very

many; Iames Fitz-Thomas one of the family of

the Desmonds they let vp as Earle of Desmond, yet

fo, that hee should hold as Tenant in Fee of the o-

Neale, (the Earle of Tir-een) and thus after a

moneth, when they had kindled this fire and fet

Mounster in a slame, they returned laden with rich booties and spoile. Tir-oen in the meane time had

fent his letters to King Philip of Spaine, wherein

he founded his victories with a full trumpe, affuring

him that he would heare of no peace with the Eng-

lift, were the conditions neuer fo indifferent, and

would for his part inviolately keepe his promifes

(301) In this desperate estate stood Ireland when

in counsell touching his affaires, it was thought fittest by wife Statists, that Mounster should bee cleared of those petty Rebels lying neerer, and of more validity then the remote Visiter, of small wealth and leffe account. Whereupon, contrary to his owne opinion formerly deligered (whiles hee was in England) and his directions from her Maicftie, in Ireland hee made first into Mounster, and became terrible vnto the Rebelles of those parts, chasing them before him into the woods, and so cleared that Prouince, with more expence of time, and loffe of men, then was heere well liked by the State. (303) Hence he made into Leinster, against the

O-Conors and O-Moiles, who had gathered head and taken Armes against their obedience; whom in light skirmishes he fortunately vanquished; whence helent Sir Compets Clifford Gouernour of Consught one way toward the, whilst hee hindlest cooke an other way, for distract the force of Tir-oen. Sir Conyers with a power of fifteene hundred strong, marched ouer the Mountaines of Curlew, where O Roirke and his Rebels suddenly assailed them, being out-wearied with trauell, and their powder necre fpent; in which conflict, amongst many other flaine, Sir Compers Clifford himfelfe, as also Sir A

lexander Rateliffe, fealed the testimony of their valours with the loffe of their lines. (304) The Lord Generall hearing of this ouerthrow, made towards Pifter, and came into the frontiers as farre as Louth, where Tir-oen, on the Septem. 13: Branado. But falling into his wonted vaine of diffimulation, defired a parley with the Lord Lieute-

nant, which he altogether reiccting, answered, that if the Earle would conferre with him, hee should iected.

find him the next morning in the head of his troops.

Tir.ora fueth for

on which day, when dater and is could to be compared to the co			1	land, in whom (as he faid) he neuer found either		
that the Earle was not willing to fight, but to pariety yon peace with the Lord General; it tests agains denied him. But the next day, as the Lord Leuterane was in his March forward, one detail the Leuterane was in his March forward, one details for the control of the Leuterane was in his March forward, one details for the control handly developed the control handly developed the Lord filippe would be pleated to afford him addrine, which if the would grant, then would her with all recurrence attend him at the Foord of the Ruser not first from Leuth. [375] The his ladly the Lord Litureant affert of the Control of the Ruser not first from Leuth. [376] The state of the Ruser of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant and Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of Lord Litureant affert of the Lord Litureant affert of the Lord	1	on which day, when after a light skirmish, a horie-		General And thereupon prefuming voon		
paried vyo on peace with the Lord General 1 it was agained denich tim. But the next day, and the Licuterant was in his March tourward, one digital four from Tro-ma, me thin, and deciated that the Lord Licuterant was in his March tourward, one digital four from Tro-ma, me thin, and deciated that the Lord Licuterant was in his March tourward, one digital four from Tro-ma, me thin, and deciated that the Lord Licuterant was in his March tourward, one digital four from Tro-man, me the Food of the Rise (and extra confirmed from Lords). Great Tro-man and the Control of the Control of the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult of the Control of the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult on the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult on the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult to the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult to the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult to the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult to the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult to the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult to the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult to the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult to the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor difficult to the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor and the Lord Licuterant affecting and fentor and the Lord Licuterant affecting and the Lord Licuterant affecting and the Lord Licuterant affecting and the Lord Licuterant affecting and the Lord Licuterant principal men major be admitted to a conference, where the Lord Licuterants pleasing a conference would not there to conference, where the Lord Licuterants pleasing a conference would not there to conference, after the Lord Licuterants pleasing a conference would not there to conference, after the Lord Licuterants pleasing and the Lord Licuterants pleasing and the Lord Licuterants pleasing and the Lord Licuterants pleasing and the Lord Licuterants pleasing and the Lord Licuterants pleasing and the Lord Licuterant pleasing and the Lord Licuterants	1	man of Tir-cens troopes, with a found voice cried,	1	Course and civing it forth that there would bee	i	
intercent was in his March forward, one of stages that from Thesas, met him, and decidered that the Earle most hamby defired to beau the Cyclestic mercy and peace, and within life of him addings, which he would grant, then would he with all many different form Land. (303) To this failty the Lord Lieuxenst affects within the would grant, then would he with all more recent read from Land. (303) To this failty the Lord Lieuxenst affects within the would grant, then would he with all recent recent the face of an addient of discours the place, and bellowing a roope of hord working the there will be a stage of the Land forward to the there was a stage of the Land forward to the there was a stage of the stage of the Land forward to the there was a stage of the content of the content of the content of the life of the land of the	i	that the Earle was not willing to ngnt, but to	1	Chamber elegation in England : he lends O Denell		
Leutenant was in his March forward, one Hagas (intrinor Tir-sea, meth, and declared that the Earle most humbly defired to have the Queenes mercy and peace, and within Beforght; that his Lordishy would be pleated to afford him adented within the would game, then would be considered that the Lordishy would be pleated to afford him adented within the would game, then would be considered that the Lordishy would be pleated to afford the Ruter and Town in the would game, then would be considered in the Lordishy would be pleated to afford the Ruter and Town in the Would be pleated to afford the Ruter and Town in the Would be pleated to afford the Ruter and Town in the Would be pleated to afford the Ruter and Town in the Would be pleated to a the Ruter and Town in the Would be pleated to the Ruter and Town in the Ruter and Town alone were the Ruter; The-sea strending on the other the Ruter of Ruter, The-sea strending on the other the Ruter of Ruter, The-sea strending on the other the Ruter of Ruter and Town alone were the Ruter; The-sea strending on the Lord Ruter and the Ruter and Town alone were the Ruter; The-sea strending on the Lord Ruter and Town in the Ruter and Town in the Ruter and Town alone were the Ruter; The-sea strending on the Lord Ruter and Town Indiances of a durinal repect, which return the Ruter and Town Indiances of a durinal repect, which return the Ruter and Town Indiances and the Ruter and Town Indiances and the Ruter and Town Indiances and the Ruter and Town Indiances and T	1	parley upon peace with the Lord Generall; it was		inne Consult receiveth rumulmous perions frence		
ican from Triesa, met him, and declared that the Earle on thumbly defired to have the Queness mercy and peace, and withall befought, that his Lordifip would be pleated to afford him and direct recreases mercy and peace, and withall befought, that his Lordifip would be pleated to afford him and direct, which if he would grant, then would he with all recrease aread him at the Foot of he River not Face. The Triesa at Ending and the content of the Park and the Content of		againe denied him. But the next day, as the Lord	- 1	Into Consugni, receive and comforters the districtfull	1	
the ancear Religion, and hiberty of treinal, and mercy and prace, and withal befought, that his Lordinja would be pleated to another him adelence, which if he would grant, then would he with all recurrence artend him at the Foord of the Ruiernost from Land. (303) To this five Lord Literatural affertor from Land. (303) To this promoth, but lead the transmitted from Land. (304) The proposed of hord to prothe heart Hill, and down alone wrote the Ruier, a Theorem candidate, and whi all femblances of a durifull repete, but returned all emblances of a durifull repete, but returned alone when the Ruier is to the Baddie, and whi all femblances of an hour, rejo both the mention of the companies. But of Theorem, inflantly interesting his factors are more than the confidence of the companies. But of Theorem, inflantly interesting his factors are more than the confidence of the companies. But of Theorem, inflantly interesting his factors are more proposed to the companies. The Theorem is a confidence of the companies. The Theorem is a confidence of the companies of the companies of the companies of the companies of the companies of the companies. The proposed of the companies of the com		Lieutenant was in his March forward, one Hagan		theneth the weake, and comforted the data ditting,		
Earle mosh humbly delired to have the Queeness mercy and peace, and with all before, it that is Lordiship would be pleated to assert him as the Food of the Rusernor which she would grant, then would be a with all compared to the theory of the state of the recovered that at the Food of the Rusernor which she would grant, then would be a state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the Rusernor to the state of the Rusernor to the Rusernor		fent from Tir-oen, met him, and declared that the		giorying enery where that he would remore against		
mercy and peace, and withall befought, than his Lording would be peaced to canoth mis audience, which if he would grant, then would her with all refrequence aread hum at the Foot of the River nor feering. The foot of the River nor feering and the restriction of the River nor feering. The foot of the River nor feering and the restriction of the River nor feering and feering of the River to the Bed nor feering at the restriction of the River nor feering and the other fide, no footer faw his approach, but forthwith roads his horfe into the River ty to the ledder, and with all femblances of a duritual reject, must read with all femblances of a duritual reject, must read with all femblances of a duritual reject, must read with all femblances of a duritual reject, must read with all femblances of a duritual reject, must read the restriction of the River nor feet feet feet feet, feet, feet, as des foot foot fertility and with all femblances of a duritual reject, must read the restriction of the River nor feet feet feet feet, feet, feet, as des foot foot foot feet feet feet feet feet		Earle most humbly defired to haue the Queenes		the ancient Religion, and liberty of Ireana, and	i	
Lordilips would be pleated to alroyd him audience, which the would grant, then would he with all recurrence arread him at the Food of the Riture not from Land. The from Land		mercy and peace, and withall befought, that his	- 1	expell the English from thence; to which end,	:	
which if he wooldgrant, then woold he wish all reverence attend him at the Foord of the Ruternor firre from Louth. Spans, with Nanagement from the plant of the Control of the Special Baoory (the Prope Rut him a plant of the Control of Paccels, and Gentro discourt the place, and behoving a control of Paccels, and Gentro discourt the place, and behoving the plant of the Control of Paccels, and Gentro discourt the place, and behoving the plant of the Control of Paccels, and the control of the Paccels of the Control of Paccels, and the control of the Paccels of the Control of Paccels, and the control of the Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of the Control of Paccels of Paccel	1	Lord thin would be pleated to afford him audience,	- 1	fome money and munition were lent him from	1	
recoreca carend him at the Foord of the Riura root from Leath. (30) To this lattly the Lord Lieurennataffer from Leath. (30) To this lattly the Lord Lieurennataffer at least from Leath. (30) To this lattly the Lord Lieurennataffer a least from Leath. (30) To this lattly the Lord Lieurennataffer a least from Leath. (30) To this lattly the Lord Lieurennataffer a least from Leath and the alone were the Riura to the least from the Leath and the least from the Leath and the least from the Leath and the least from the Leath and the least from the Leath and the least from the Leath and the least from the Leath and the Leath an		which if hee would grant, then would hee with all	- 1	Spaine, with Indulgences from Rome; and (for an	1	
for the from Leads. (3) To this fully the Lord Lieutenant affected, and dent to discouer the place, and bethowing an a Takey, and the content of the conten		reverence arrend him at the Foord of the River not	-	especiall fauour) the Pope fent him a plume of	The Popes pre-	
(29). To this fally the Lord Lieutenant afferting and fettor of discort the place, and bethowing a troope of horfe wpon the next Hill, came down or hor Rieur; 17-10-18 attended in the title of the control of the cont				Phenix feathers, for a trophey of his victories, as	lent bestowed on	
tread and fent to discouer the place, and bellowing the property of the group of horse you he have the disc, and one alone who the River's protein fadding and the cheristic, no some similary to the fadding and with all femblaness of a durifull replect, most received in the control of the fact of the control of the contr				Prhan long before him fent a Coronet of Peacocks	Tueen,	
a troops of horfe upon the next fill, came down of the vertor the Ritics of 17-15-15-15 are attending on the other tide, no foomer faw his approach, but forthwith rode this horfe into the Ritics by	x and Tir-oca	(305) To this lattly the Lord Lieutenantanen		railes unto King John, when hee was first innested		
alone woo the Ruer 1, Tis-son actending on the other die, no foom the winsapproach, but forthwith road this not file, no foom the winsapproach put of the wins one proide and greatmelies and with all femblaness of a durfull trepleck, multi-rend wins the conformation of the properties of the words. Confo of Christ, rend with all femblaness of an hours, they both returned winto their companies. There followed the Earle of Elifox, Care, a land found their companies. There followed the Earle of Elifox, Care, a land from the Tis-ren, intant-ly interesting in his fathers name, that certaine principall men might be admitted to a conference, where the company is the standard livinglesh, and Sir William Confided, were to the Foord, where Tis-ren with his broader Cennes, Asia Compan, MacGuir, Earr macConfor, Herry Oungton, and to-2gm, as tended their comming. And falling in conference, it was considered that certaine of much against the conformation of the confor	t in Parley.	ted; and lent to discouer the place, and bellowing			i	
ther tide, no foomer faw his approach, but forthwith roade his horfs into the Rizery por the didde, and with all femblances of a durifull refpect, modification and the street of the street of the femblances of a durifull refpect, modification and the conference the figace of an hours, they both returnance to the companies. There followed the Earle of Effec, Com, a bate fonus of Tir-ora, inflantly increating in his fathers name, that certain principall men might be admitted to a conference, where the control his honour condition and the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the fembrance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street of the femblance of the street	- 1	a troope of horse vpon the next Hill, came down	.	() Time and the foothered for a higher flight	1	
ther title, no toolted aw in a rode in storie into the Ruery to the faddie, and rode in shorte into the Ruery to the faddie, and rode in shorte into the Ruery to the faddie, and with all femblances of the port they have the configuration of the fact of the faddie and with all femblances of the port they are the configuration of the faddie and with all femblances of the faddie, and with all femblances of the faddie, and with all femblances of the faddie, and with a faddie and the fa		alone vnro the River; Tir-oen attending on the o-		(309) The best thus teathered for a higher might,		
with all femblances of a durifull reped, molitrue; now with all femblances of a flower, they both return ned wint of Effect, 600, a bate forms of Triesonitanic, in the conference the face of a flower, they both return ned wint of Effect, 600, a bate forms of Triesonitanic, in the conference of the form of Triesonitanic, in the conference of the conference of the conference of the conference of the conference of the conference of the conference, where the conference of the con		ther ilde no looneriaw hisapproach, but to the king		Peacocke like to linew his owner pride and greatheric		
with all femblances of a dutifull respect, motified tends to face the place of all morth place with a confidence the space of an hours, they both returned to the confidence the space of an hours, they both return to the fort of Essen, Con, a bate some of Tri-ons, instantly intreasing in his fathers name, that certaine principal men might be admitted to a conference, where the must his honour considerated. (2.96) And taking with him the Earle of Southempton, Sir Gorge Beardine, Sir Waham Sr-Leger, Sir Henry Damers, Sir Essen went to the Foord, where Tri-one with his brother Comme, Asia Genny, Mac gird, Essen with his brother Comming, And falling in conference, it was concluded that certaine Commissioners should the next day meet for arreaty of peace, and in the first office of the confidence o		rode his horse into the Kiner vp to the laddle, and		by his perionali presence, vider a rengious presext		
rentyl falteed his Lorddhippe: where, hasting had conference the face of an houre, they both returned vinto their companies. There followed the care of Eleys, Com, a bate fonne of Tre-ora, inflantly intreating in his fathers name, that certaine principal interacting in his fathers name, that certaine principal interacting in his fathers name, that certaine principal interacting in his fathers name, that certaine principal interacting in his fathers name, that certaine principal interacting in his fathers name, that certaine for suthampton, Six George Bourcher, Six Wahum StLeger, Six Warmy Damers, Six Enteral Warpfald, and Six William Conflable, went to the Foord, where Treson with his brother cormone, And Caling in conference, it was concluded that certaine Committions of the work, and the meant care and the meant incent there should be a certaint on of warres, for four week, so for weeks, and in the meant incent in the first of May: yet so, as it might bee free on both sides, would not thereto consent, to be profected arther fourteen dealers would not thereto consent, to be profected arther fourteen dealers would not thereto consent, to be profected at the Lord Lieutenants pleasance. 2.0.1599- 1.2.1599- 1.2.1599- 1.2.1599- 1.2.1599- 1.2.250 (20) But howborder these his proceedings pleased the Marshaliths, yet was her Maistle highly intended to state the control of the state of		with all femblances of a durifull respect, most reue-		to worthip a peece of the wodden Crotle of Christ,		
conference the figace of an houre, they both return of control two their companies. There followed the Earle of Effer, Con., a bate fonne of Tir-one, inflantly interesting in his fathers name, that certain principal men might be admitted to a conference, where the properties of the		tentio falated his Lordinance: where, nauling naul		reputed to bee kept in the Monaltery of the holy		
ned wnto their companies. There followed the Earl of Effect, Com, Jubic founce of Trees, inflantly intreating in his fathers name, that certain principal imme might be admirted to a conference, where unto his honour condificended. (3.60) And taking with him the Earl of Sauth-Amplom, Six Goorge Bourcher, Six Warham St-Leger, Sx Henry Damers, Six Enteral Winglad, and Six William Conflable, went to the Foord, where trieses with his brother Comme, And Calling in conference, it was concluded that certaine Commissioners should the next day meet for a travery of peace, and in the meant time there should be a certaint on of wares, for some wares, for so		conference the frace of an hours they both retur-		Croffe in Tipperary, in the mid-winter would thither		
Earle of \$1/6x, Com, a baie fonne of Tir-om, inflantly internang in his fathers name, that accratine priming the internal priming the bad mitted to a conference, where the his honour conditionedd. (2.96) And taking with him the Earle of Sauthampton, Sir Genge Bourchie, Sir Wham StLeger met, and at the first race with his brother Cormoc, what Gramp, Mac Gampton, Mac-Conf. Through the body, and was by within the brother Cormoc, Mac Gampton, Mac-Conf. Through the body, and was by within Brother Cormoc, Mac Gampton, Mac-Conf. Through the body, and was by within Brother Cormoc, Mac Gampton, Mac-Conf. Earr mac Carley, Harry Ounzyman, and O-Sain, a tended their comming. And falling in constreance, it was concluded that certain to Commissions of Wards and the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of pe	rther confe-	their companies. There followed the		on Pilorimage : whence hee fent out Alac-Guir		
ly intreating in his fathers name, that certaine principal and might be admirted to a conference, where the his honour condificended. (200) And taking with him the Earle of Suttlemplon, Sir Genge Bourchies, Sir Warkson St. Leger. Sir Herry Damers, Sir Ehard Wingfeld, and Sir William Conflable, went to the Foord, where Times on with his brother Corme, Mac Genge, Mac Genge, Autority. Euer mac Conloy, Henry Osseph, Mac Genge, acted their comming. A falling in conference, it was concluded that certaine Commissioners flouds the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the next day meet for the day for the day of the second of the second day of the configuration of the second of the second day of the configuration of the second day of the configuration of the second of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of the second day of the land of	c.	ned vinto their companies. There tonowed the		with a number of rifeling robbers to defnoile and		
into his honour conditioned. (200) And taking with him the Earle of Sauthmopton, Sir George Bourdies, Sir Wehm St-Leger. Sir Hemy Damars, Sir Edward Wenghal, and Sir William Confields, went to the Foord, where Trices with his brother Cormos, Mac Gemys, Mac Guir, Euer mac Cently, Hemy Ounglan, and Calling in conference, it was concluded that certaine Commissioners in loud the next day meet for at treat of Beace, and in the mean either should be a ceflation of warres, from fixe wecks to fixe weeks, vanill the first of May: yet fo, as it might bee free on both files, after fourteen daise warning guten, to redume hofility afterh. And if any of Tir seas confederates would not thereto confent, to be profectured at the Lord Lieutenants pleafure. 207) But howfocuer these his proceedings pleased the Marshaliffs, yet was her Maissilic highly intended, that first charge it get his the means the Rebels were encounged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to be to fit Which his defaults (for the twe vere apprehended) were (as he conceined) much aggratured, by some that were hard against him, in her attenuive care; yopon which furnize Her Maissilies flarpe letters received (though her had excelled his service by others whom himself: entant the fame feelon) for our than were whom himself: entant the fame feelon for our prelifed his troubled thoughts, a gleating his change to be managed by others, he was fent, that by this managed by others, he whom himself entant Engload well hoping to pacific his Scholering and for a feel of those for the work of the Lord General laid at hazard to be to fit. Which his defaults of the horizon of the service of the Lord General laid at hazard to be to fit when the service of the horizon of the Lord General laid with the service of the horizon of the Lord General laid and the present of the latter of the Lord General laid at hazard to be to fit when the service of the latter of the lord of the latter of the Lord General laid the latter of the latter of the latter of the latter of the l		Earle of Ellex, Con, a bale lonne of 1 tr-oen, lineant-		with a humber of file ingresses, to as posterior		
unto his honour conditioneded. (366) And caking with him the Earle of Susticempton, Sir Gentze Bourchier, Sir Wurkum St. Legar, Sir Herry Damers, Sir Edward Wingfeld, and Sir William Confidele, went to the Foord, where Times with his brother Carmes, Mas Genty, Mas Genty, Euro mas Convented their comming. And falling in conference, it was concluded that certaine Commissioners floud the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the menetion there should be eace flation of warres, from fixe cockes to fixe wockes, vanil the first of the menetion there should be eace flation of warres, from fixe cockes to fixe wockes, vanil the first of the street of the survey of the street of the survey of the street of the survey of the street of the survey of the		ly intreating in his fathers name, that certaine prin-		prey on the peaceable lubicus; with wholh sa	1	
unto his bonour conditioneded. (306) And caking with him the Earle of Southerpoor, Sir Genge Bourchies, Sir Wards and St. Leger, Sir Herry Damers, Sir Edward Wingfald, and Sir Williams Conflable, went to the Foord, where Tries with his brother Carmee, Mac Genge, Mac Genge, and rended their comming. And falling in conference, it was concluded that certaine Commissions, alloud the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the meane time there should bee a cellation of warres, for six weekes to fix weekes, vanil the first of May; yer so, as it might bee free on both fides, and of the concentration of the continuents, the fast of the continuents of May; yer so, as it might bee free on both fides, and of the concentration of the continuents, the fast of the continuents of the Marthalists, yew was her Maicht highly incensed, that such expeditions had been made without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumne, were spreaked without cloning that for which he was kent; that by this meanes the Rebels were encouraged, and the Kingdome of treland laid at a hazard to be lost. Which his defaults (for so they were apprehended) were (as he conceimed) much agranated, by some that were hard against him, in her attentive care; yoon which furmized Hern Malestial and the part of the summer of the summ		cipall men might be admitted to a conference, wher-		Warham St. Leger met, and at the first race with his		
(206) Andraking with him the Earle of Sauth- ampton, Sir George Spacetien, Sir Wahman St-Legar, Sir Horry Dausers, Sir Edward Wingfield, and Sir William Conflable, went to the Foord, where tri- one with his brother Cormon, Mac Gennys, Mac Gurs, Eurr mac Confloy, Henry Oungen, and O-Suja, as- tended their comming. And falling in conference, it was concluded that certain Commissioners flouds the next day meer for arreaty of peace, and in the meane time there should be a cellation of warres, would not thereto conflow, to be profectured arther the Lord Lieutenants pleature. The Lord Lieutenant General imo Irreland, who with final port and little Gelemity, entered vyon the ment does not fisse weeks to rise weeks, will the first of May: yet fo, as it might be free on both files, after fourteen claic warning gluon, to retime ho- fillity afresh. And if any of Tin-sens confederates would not thereto confloat, to be profectured arthe Lord Lieutenants pleature. The Lord Messer, would not thereto confloat, to be profectured at the Lord Lieutenants pleature. The Lord Messer, with the Courtie lying desported visited, and the Courtie lying desported visited, and the treat of that Countrie lying desported visited, and the treat of the Countrie lying desported visited, and the purp me the fast of that Countrie lying desported visited, and there are would not thereto confeat, to be profectured at the Lord Lieutenants pleature. The Lord Messer, when the Courtie lying desported visited, the fast of the Countrie lying desported visited, and the confeature would not thereto confeat, to be profectured as the Lord Lieutenants pleature. The Lord Messer, when the Misser desponsible the first of the Mary is yet for a treat of the Lord Countrie lying desported visited, and the treat of the Lord Lieutenants pleature. The Lord Messer, when the Countrie lying desported visited, and and the countrie of the Countrie lying desported visited, and the treat of the Countrie lying desported visited, and assert the Lord Lieutenants pleature.		unto his honour conditionded.		Lanceranne Mac. Gur through the body, and was		
smylom, Sir Genege Bourchier, Sir Waham St-Leger, Sir Herry Dameurs, Sir Edward Wingfleid, and Sir William Conflable, went to the Foord, where Trines with his brother Comme, Mac Genny, Mac Gain, actended their comming. And Gallingin conference, it was concluded that certaine Commissioners floud the next day meet for a treasy of peace, and in the meane time there should bee a cession of warres, for six weekes, vanil the first of May: yer fo, as it might bee free on both sides, and the conference of the conference of May: yer fo, as it might bee free on both sides, and the conference of the conference of May: yer fo, as it might bee free on both sides, and the conference of the conference of May: yer fo, as it might bee free on both sides, and the conference of the conference of May: yer fo, as it might bee free on both sides, and the conference of the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, that side is the managed by a state of the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, that side experiences would not theretoe conference, to be prosecuted at the Lord Linear state of the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, that side the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, that side the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, that side the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, the side of the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, the side of the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, the side of the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, the Marialitis, yet was her Macketic highly incensed, the Marialitis, yet was her Marialitis highly incensed, the Marialitis was strained to the conference of the Marialitis, which her are the season of the marialitis was strained to the conference of the Marialitis was strained to the conference of the Marialitis was strained to the conference of the Marialitis was strained to the conference of the Marialitis was strained to the conference		(206) And taking with him the Earle of South-		by him runne through himielte. Whereupon Tir-		i
Figure 1. Specified the respective of the first plant of the first pla		ampton Sir George Bourchier, Sir Warham St-Leger,		gen fearing more blowes, made ready to returne		1
is with his brother Carmen, Mas Garis, 3. An ended their comming. And falling in conference, it was concluded that certains Cammifficances floud the next day meet for a treax of peace, and in the final port and little follemity, entred upon the next day meet for a treax of peace, and in the final port and little follemity, entred upon the ment either thould been actifation of warres, from fine weeks to fix weeks, vnill the firl of the first of the continuent, and the first of the same of the first of the continuent, and the first of		Sir Hames Dameses Sir Farmerd Winofield and Sir		from Mountler fooner then was expected, or him-		
me with his brother Germen, Mac Germys, Mac Garny, Eur mas Comby, Henry Osington, and O-2gin, as tended their comming. And failing in conference, it was concluded that certaine Commissioners in food the next day meet for at reavy of peace, and in the mean tener there should be a cellation of warres, from size weeks to fix weeks to wall the first of May: yet 6, as it might bee free on both files, after fourteen edies warning giuen, to refume hothility a fresh. And if any of 7 m-seas confederates would not thereto confent, to be profecured at the Lord Lieutenants pleasure. **Septiona-a and sight his according pleasure of the Comming, hearing that Tir-son was to depart the Lord Lieutenants pleasure. **Septiona-a and sight his according pleasure of the Comming, hearing that Tir-son was to depart the Lord Lieutenants pleasure. **Septiona-a and sight his proceedings pleased the Marshalish, yet was her Maiesthi highly intended, that for expeditions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were specified, without doing that for which he was fent; that by this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the means the Rebels were encouraged, and the means the Rebels were encouraged, and the means the Rebels were encouraged, and the means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the this means the Rebels were encouraged, and the serve that against him, in her attentive care, voo and which surmany the surmany that the surmany that the surmany that the surmany that the surmany that the surmany that the surmany that the		Trillian Confide work on the Econd where The		felfe meant.		1
tended their comming. And Gallingin conference, it was concluded that certains Commissioners should the next day meet for a treasy of peace, and in the next day meet for a treasy of peace, and in the next day meet for a treasy of peace, and in the next day meet for a treasy of peace, and in the next day meet for a treasy of peace, and in the near time there should be ea cellation of warres, for six weekes, roull the first of May; yer 60, as it might bee free on both fides, first fourteen daies warning giuen, to refume homeometric fourteen daies warning giuen, to refume homeometric fourteen daies warning giuen, to refume homeometric fourteen daies warning giuen, to refume homeometric fourteen daies warning discussions. (307) But howforcure these his proceedings without her directions, beeting informed that the Spring, Summer, and Arumme,were spent without femily the same of the sam		William Constable, went to the Poord, where 211-		(a) a) An ship sime Charles Blunt I and Mont-		
tended their comming. And falling in contrence, it was concluded that certaine. Commissioners should the next day meet for a trax of peace, and in the next day meet for a trax of peace, and in the next day meet for a trax of peace, and in the meane time there should be eacestation of warres, for size weeks to fix weeks, will the first of May: yet so, as it might be free on both sides, and of the first fourteen easies warning giuen, to refume hoth silling a fresh. And if any of Tin-sens considerates would not thereto conselnat, to be profectured arther Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Service of the weeks, will the first of May: yet so, as it might be free on both sides, to distinct the Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Lieutenants pleasure. Lord Lieutenants manuelle state of the Country. As this first comming, hearing state of the Lord Lieutenants manuelle pleasure between the Lord Lieutenants manuelle plants to the Lord Lieutenants manuelle state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the country and the state of the lieutenants of the country and the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the lieutenants of the country and the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the lieutenants of the state of the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the peace of the state of the state of the lieutenant density of the comments of the state		oen with his brother Cormoe, Mac Gennys, Mac Guir,	1	: Coffeended Control Dans Circa V Was	The Lord Meet-	1
tended their comming. And falling in conterence, it was concluded that certaine Commissioners floud the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the mean time there found be a ceffician of warres, from fixe weekes to fixe weekes, vinill the first of May 1 yes fo, as it might bee free on both fides, after fourteene daies warning given, to refume holistic for the fides of the format of the fides of the format of the fides of the fides of the fides of the fides of the format of the fides of the fides of the fides of the fides of the fides of the format of the fides of the format of the fides of the format of the fides of the fides of the fides of the fides of the fides of the fides of the format of the fides of		Euer mac Cowley, Henry Ouington, and O-Quin, at-		toy (atterwards created Earle of Denon-June) was	ioy Lord Lieure.	
ik was concluded that certaine Commissioners floud the next ady meter for a treasy of peace, and in the meane time there should be eaces and in the meane time there should be eaces and in the meane time there should be eaces and in the meane time there should be eaces and in the solution of the meane time there should be eaces and in the solution of the meane time there should be eaces and in the solution of the meane time there should be eaces and in the solution of the meane should be solution of the meane time there should be eaces and in the solution of the same to should be		tended their comming. And falling in conference,	1	lent Lord Lieutenant Generall into Ireiana, who	nant of Ireland.	
the next day meet for attrary of peace, and in the ment day meet for attrary of peace, and in the ment day meet for attrary of peace, and in the ment day the continued of the c		it was concluded that certaine Commissioners should		with small port and little solemnity, entred vpon	4 D .c.	
mene time there thould beer aceflation of warres, for fixe weeks to fixe weeks, will the firt of May; yer fo, as it might bee free on both fides, fire fourteen ediate warning giuen, to refume ho. filling a fresh. And if any of tweeks confederates would not thereto confent, to be profecured at the Lord Lieutenants pleafure. Spring, Summer, and Arumme,were fpent without for directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Arumme,were fpent without four directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Arumme,were fpent without from the Arch-rebeil, that ther mon were diminifiled, and large fummes of money continued, without doing that for which he was feat; a that by this meanes the Rebeis were encouraged, and the Kingdome of treafus liaid at hazard to be loft: Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much agarmated, by forme that were hard againft him, in her attentioe care; you which firmized Hern Attended to be loft: Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as hee conceined) much agarmated, by forme that were hard againft him, in her attentioe care; you which firmized Hern Attended to be loft: Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much agarmated, by forme that were hard againft him, in her attentioe care; you which firmized Hern Attended to be loft with the Cord Lieutenant was heart, that by the search of the former of the former of t		the next day meet for a treaty of peace, and in the		the Gouernment, the flate of that Countrie lying		1
bremb. 8. The managed by others, he managed		memorime there should be a cessation of warres.		desperately diseased, and almost past recourry. At	In February.	
May: yet 6, as it might be free on both fides, for fourcemed are warning giune, to refume ho. filling a fresh. And if any of 7 in-seas confederates would not thereto confent, to be profecured arther Lord Lieutenants pleafure. Ago; Bur howfourer theich his proceedings pleafed the Marshalfish, yet was her Maiethe highly meetined, that fach expeditions had been made without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were figner without of minister, and large flummes of money confirmed, without doing that for which he was fen; that by this meanes the Rebeis were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Irstael laid at hazard to be loft: Which his definalits (for 60 they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much agranated, by fourch where fire and the fame featon) outperfield his troubled thoughts, agleaning his charge to be managed by others, he who his lifter fent and he fame featon) fource prefield his troubled thoughts, agleaning his charge to be managed by others, he what a feeling to prefer the featon for the featon of the fea	ntemb 8	Gram Gran weeker to five weeker world the first of		his first comming, hearing that Tir-oen was to de-		
after fourteene daies warning giuen, to refume hofility after. And wif any of \$\textit{fireses confederates}\$ would not thereto confeat, to be profecuted at the Lord Lieutenants pledine. (207) But howfocuer these his proceedings pledied the Marthaliths, yet was her Mariethe highly intended, without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were figure without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were figure without for fertice you in the Arch-tebel, that her men were diminished, and large flummes of money considered, without doing that for which he was fent; that by this meanesthe Rebels were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to be lost: Which his defaults (for 6 they were apprehended) were (as he conceived) much aggrauated, by 6 me that were hard against him, in her attentive care; upon which furmize Her Maichies sharpe letters; recited (though her had excelled his feature by others whom himself ent at the same feation) ourperselffelhis troubled thoughts, agaiening his charge to be managed by others, her mental the same feating to the same and foone after was committed to the custody of the Lord Carellon of the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating him, in her the feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that the same applies that the same feating that	Premo. o.	from the weeks to the weeks, value the fide		part Mounter her halfned to ftoppe his paffage in		
fullity a fresh. And if any of Tin-sess confederates would not thereto confient, to be profecured art the Lord Lieutenants pleafure. (207) But howfourer their his proceedings pleafed the Marshalifts, yet was her Maiethi highly incensed, that the chexpeditions had been made without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were figure that the Great of the emice you nite Arch-trebel, that her one were diministled, and large lummes of money consumed, without doing that for which he was fent; shat by this meanes the Rebeis were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to be loft: Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much agranuated, by form that were hard against him, in her attentive care; you which furnise Her Maiethies sharpe letters receited (though hee had excused his femice by chers whom himself fe nat the fame fealom) outperfield his troubled thoughts, as leasting the self-to-make her was committed to the custody of the Lord Lieutenaut was committed to the custody of the Lord Commanded to his chamber 3 and foone after was committed to the custody of the Lord Commanded to the chamber and foone after was committed to the first of the forward or her enurance of Meyery three mistakes. (318) No fooner almost was fent, to charge him with reach of promife; but he five-field, you whom Sir William Warres was fent, to charge him with reach of promife; but he five-field with the configured to	n.D. 1 coc.	May: yet to, as it might bee nee on both ides,		Ferral and there to give him Barrell, which the Earle		
would not thereto conleat, to be protectifed at the form fails, which will be the services of the Marshiffs, yet was her Maiethie highly incended, that fach expeditions had beene made without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without fed irections, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without fed irections, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without fed irections, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without fed irections, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without fed into the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without fed into the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without feminated at hazard to be lost: Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much aggrauated, by some that were hard against him, in her attentive care; upon which streams the same fealous) outpersed white similar to the stream of the series		after fourteene dates warning given, to returne no-		Perent, and there to give man batter, which the batter		1
would not rhereto conlear, to be protecticat the Lord Lieuranas pleafure. (307) But howfoeuer these his proceedings pleafure Marshallthy, et was her Maictise highly incented, that such expeditions had beene made without hed incentions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without end circulous, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without course on the Arch-ebell, that her men were diminished, and large summes of money consumed, without hed incession, which he was it was that by this meanest the Rebels were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to be lost: Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much aggrauated, by some that were hard sagnish him, in her attentive care; yopon which stremize Her Maictities sharpe letters received (though hee had excussed his fertile by others whom himself ence at the same sealous) outperficts in troubled thoughts, agaleauing his charge to be managed by others, he made into England, well hoping to partie his 504, signes displeating with farifiation from his own mouth, and at Non-seas had accessed to the preferoe, where after a short welcome, hee was comminded to his chamber; and some after was committed to the custody of the Lord Keeper. (308) No soner almost was the Lord Generall depared reland, but that Tripens (nowthing and the winter washer beguines that a surface of the farminist well and the surface of the farminist well and the surface of the farminist well and the surface of the farminist well and the surface of the farminist was a sent, to charge him with breach of promise; but he felvelling in price, and his cause in the farminist was made more by the remaining the cellation from warre) drawing his forces together, addedled himselfe for the Field, wound have the conding to courant, having given warring before, and this cause in the farminist was a sent to the surface. The surface of refuge and receit of all the Rebelles in dispression with himself the calculation		fillity a fresh. And it any of Tir-sens confederates		predented by taking another way, having meen-		1
(307) But howfocuer these his proceedings leaded the Marshalffith, yet was her Maistelia highly minered. that such expeditions had beene made without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without four service you make the such that her men were diministled, and large summers of money consumed, without doing that for which he was sent start by this meanes the Rebeis were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to bee lost: Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much aggrauated, by some that were hard against him, in her attentive care; you which surrous the had excused his fertice by others whom himselfs entar the same sealous journey presented throughs, againing his care; you which surrous the had excused his fertice by others whom himselfs entar the same sealous journey presented its troubled thoughts, againing his charge to be managed by others, he decinto England, well hoping to passife his \$5 displayed, well hoping to passife his \$5 displayed in the conceined with surrous and some after was committed to the custody of the lepton. AD. 1599: AD. 1599: AD. 1690: A		would not thereto confent, to be profecuted at the		gence of the Lord Generals delignes, but the Spring		
(307) But howfoeuer these his proceedings placed the Marshalffish, ever was her Maistelic highly incented, that such expeditions had beene made without hed incessions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without certain the Arch-sebel, that her men were diminished, and large summers of money consumed, without doing that for which he was sent; that by this meanest the Rebels were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to be lost: Which his defaults (for fo they were aprehended) were (as he conceined) much aggrauated, by some that were hard sagnish him, in her attentive care; yopon which stremize Her Maistlies sharpe letters; receited (though hee had excelled his seruice by others whom himself the mate had he selected to be managed by others, he made into England, well hoping to patie his 56 disguing his charge to be managed by others, he made into England, well hoping to patie his 56 disguing his charge to be managed by others, he made into England, well hoping to patie his 50 disguing his charge to be managed by others, he made the best were seen in those parts. And although in the conceined, well the server of the forward to the cuthody of the latter of the cuthody of t		Lord Lieutenants pleasure.		drawing on, the Deputy put himlelte on his March	In May.	1
pelafed the Marthalifth, yet was her Maielthe highly intended, that fich expeditions had been made without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were figner without ferriter you nit he Arch-stell, that her men were diminified, and large flummes of money confirmed, without doing that for which he was fent; hat by this meanes the Rebeis were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Irland laid at hazard to bee loft: Which his defaults (for for they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much agenuated, by form that were hard againft him, in her attentive earcy you which furnise Her Maielifes harpe letters received (though hee had excaled his fertice by others whom himfleff enrant the fame felsom) to outperfied his troubled thoughs, agleaning his charge to be managed by others, had selicitor England, well hopingto pacific his Scappings of dipleature with hardiaridation from his own mouth, and at Nome which the Colome, hee was commanded to his chamber; and flow with the Colome, hee was commanded to his hamber and for more hardened perfect of related by the their tireout (notwithfianding the ceffation from warre) drawing his forces together, addeffeld himfleff for the Field, vno whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he felvelling in price, and his cause in the Inguland, youn whole honout was seen, to charge him with breach of promife; but he felvelling in price, and his cause in the Inguland, youn whole honout was seen, to charge him with reach of promife; but he felvelling in price, and his cause in the Inguland, youn whole honout was seen, to charge him with reach of promife; but he felvelling in price, and his cause in the Inguland, youn whole honout was seen, to charge him with reach of promife; but he felvelling in price, and his cause in the Inguland, youn whole honout was seen, to charge him with reached promife; but he thereigh of the Inguland which have been an early well and the work of the the Minguland with hadded with the Condition to the wo	centions a.	(207) But howfoeuer thefe his proceedings	1	towards Vifter, with purpole to drive the Earle to a	222	1
without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumneswere frem without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumneswere from without feering women to the feering without doing that for which he was frust that by this meanes the Rebeis were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to be loft; Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much agranated, by forme that were hard againft him, in her attenture care; yopon which furnize Her Maletifes harpe letters; receited (though hee had excufed his fertice by others whom himfelf fent at the fame fealon) loo users. The Lord Generall likewise held the Report of the other street of all the Revote, for the new of the control into Ores. The Lord Lieutenant then carred into Despite the street of the land of the control into Ores. The Lord Lieutenant was commanded to his families by the place of refuge and receit of all the Revote, for the state for the place with a deceler to be managed by others, has delitied beginning to be managed by others, have delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, and the winter weather begunner in the commentation of the fent of the fent of the fent of the fent of the fent of the fent of	inft effex bis	wheeled the Marshalists wer was her Maiestie highly	1	fland whiles Sir Henry Docrera at Lough foile, and	ì	
without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumneswere frem without her directions, beeing informed that the Spring, Summer, and Autumneswere from without feering women to the feering without doing that for which he was frust that by this meanes the Rebeis were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to be loft; Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much agranated, by forme that were hard againft him, in her attenture care; yopon which furnize Her Maletifes harpe letters; receited (though hee had excufed his fertice by others whom himfelf fent at the fame fealon) loo users. The Lord Generall likewise held the Report of the other street of all the Revote, for the new of the control into Ores. The Lord Lieutenant then carred into Despite the street of the land of the control into Ores. The Lord Lieutenant was commanded to his families by the place of refuge and receit of all the Revote, for the state for the place with a deceler to be managed by others, has delitied beginning to be managed by others, have delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, has delited beginner to be managed by others, and the winter weather begunner in the commentation of the fent of the fent of the fent of the fent of the fent of the fent of	ruices.	bigaied the Marinaines, yet was not Marine anguly	i	Sir , Matthew Morean at Balolhanon planted the	}	
Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were spent without course over the surface of the summer of more you funded, without doing that for which he was sent, that by this meanes the Rebels were neconsuged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to be solf: Which his defaults (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much aggrauated, by some that were hard against him, in he attentive care; you which straints Her Maietites sharpe letters; receited (though hee had excussed his fertitive by their who himself the selection his foldies of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potters whom himself the selection ship of the potter whith strainfaltion from his own mouth, and at Non-selection ship of the potters who himself the selection ship of the potters who himself the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the potters when the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of the selection ship of th		incensed, that iden expeditions had been wade		Carrifons swhich they with small adoe effected,		
our feruice ypon the Arch-rebeil, that her men were diminified, and large flummes of money confirmed, without doing that for which he was fent that by this meanes the Rebeis were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to bee loft: Which his defaults (for for they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much aggrauated, by fome that were hard againfi him, in her attentive care; upon which furmize Her Maieflies fharpe letters; received (chough hee had exceld his feruice by octobers whom himselffe fent at the fame fealon) bo overpressed in the standard of the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating to be managed by others, has declared being the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating which had accessed to the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating which had accessed to the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating which had accessed to the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating which had accessed to the standard of the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating which had accessed to the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating which had accessed to the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating which had accessed to the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating which had accessed to the standard well hopingto pacific his Samignes displeating which had accessed to the samignes of the feather which had been successed to the samignes of the feather was been successed to the samignes of the feather was been successed to the samignes of the feather was been successed to the samignes of the feather was been successed to the samignes of the feather was been successed to the samignes of the feather was been successed to the samignes which as the samignes of the feather was been successed to the samignes which as the samignes of the feather was been successed to the samignes which as the samignes of the feather was been successed to the samignes which as the samignes of th		without her directions, beeing informed that the	}	and Granneffed the Rebelles in diners oner-	1	ł
our feruice ypon the Arch-rebel, that her men were diminified, and large flummes of money confirmed, without doing that for which he was fent that by this meanes the Rebels were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to bee loft: Which his defaults (for for they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much aggrauated, by fome that were hard againf him, in her attentive care; you which furmize Her Maieflies fharpe letters; receined (though her had excued his fertite by objectives whom himfelfe fent at the fame fealon) loour-preffeelhis troubled thoughts, agleaing his charge to be managed by others, had adinot prefer his troubled thoughts, agleaing his charge to be managed by others, had adinot prefer his difficult with his statistical from his own mouth, and at Name to were fent and the statistical form his own mouth, and at Name to which her forward to the entrance of Moyery three middle with the Tirene (nowwithlanding the cellation from warre) drawing his forces together, addefeld himfelf for the Field, wno whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he felvelling in price, and his caule inft, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, youn whole honour warms before, and his caule inft, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, youn whole honour her exposed his whole chart; a nother would hee her expended his whole chart; in either would hee her expended his whole chart; in either would hee her expended his whole chart; in either would hee her expended his whole chart; in either works and the more by the middle of the mid-fer end of the mid-fer e		Spring, Summer, and Autumme, were ipent with-	1	and suppressed the Rebelles in diders outer	}	1
diminifled, and large fummes of money contemed, without doing that for which he was fent; that by this meanes the Rebeis were encouraged, and the kingdome of treland laid at hazard to be loft: Which his defaults (for 6 they were apprehended) were (as he concented) much agranated, by former than were hard againft him, in her attentive eare; upon which formize Her Maiefties fharpe letters received (though her had excaled his fertice by others whom himfelff ener at the fame fealon) to our-prefield his troubled thoughts, agleuing his charge to be managed by others, has a definite England, well hopingto pacifie his 5G assigned silvers with fairfaction from his own mouth, and at Non-letters. A.D. 1599. A.D. 1599. A.D. 1690. A.D. 1		out seruice vpon the Arch-rebell, that her men were				1
without doing that for which he was fent, that by this meanes the Rebels were encouraged, and the Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to be eloft: Which his defunits (for fo they were apprehended) were (as he conceined) much aggranated, by fome that were hard againf him, in her attentive care; you which furmize Her Maichtes fharpe letters; treetied (though her had excueld his fertice by others whom himself em at the fame featon) loo uerperficelh is troubled thoughts, ackening his charge to be managed by others, he ded into England, well hoping to pacifie his Sea signes displeature with his proposed profile his Sea signes displeature with his decline of the sea signes displeature with his decline of the sea signes displeature with his decline of the sea signes displeature with his decline of the sea signes displeature with his decline of the fent was committed to the cuthody of the Lord Keeper. (308) No fooner almost was the Lord Generall depared Ireland, but that Tirpen (nowthillanding the cessarious and his cause in the Tirpen (nowthillanding the cessarious and his cause in the Tirpen (nowthillanding the cessarious and his cause in the first of the sea of th		diminished, and large summes of money consumed,	1	(311) The Lord Generall likewile held I ir-oen		į
this meanes the Rebels were encouraged, and the Kingdome of tradeal laid at hazard to be lold: Which his defaults (for other were apprehended) were (as he conceived) much agenuared, by fome that were hard againft him, in her attentive care; yoon which formize Her Mariethes flarpe letters received (though her had excalled his feruice by others whom himfelf's fent at the same fealons) to our-preside his torolated thoughts, agleauing his charge to be managed by others, he was defined. Physical well hoping to pacifie his Sodwaizing his charge to be managed by others, he was defined to England, well hoping to pacifie his Sodwaizing his charge to be managed by others, he was defined to England, well hoping to pacifie his Sodwaizing shift have with farisfation from his own mouth, and at Non-letter with farisfation from his own mouth, and at Non-letter with farisfation from his own mouth, and at Non-letter with farisfation from his own mouth, and at Non-letter with farisfation from his own mouth, and at Non-letter with farisfation from his own mouth, and at Non-letter would have the late of the O-Mores (a Bloudy, bold, and defiperate yong man: and fochafed out were seen in those parts. And although in the commenting of their failings of the failing of th		wirhout doing that for which he was fent; that by		very hard, and with light skirmishes euer put him to		1
Kingdome of Ireland laid at hazard to bee loft: Which his defaults (for for they were apprehended) Were (as he conceined) much aggrauated, by fome that were hard againf him, in her attentive care; vpon which firmize Her Maieflies fharpe letters received (though hee had exacted his fertice by one which firmize Her Maieflies fharpe letters received (though hee had exacted his fertice by one there whom himelife fent at the fame fealon) to our-prefied his troubled thoughts, a leaning his charge to be managed by others, had cliented by the had exceft to her any low of the service of the family of the O-Marse; a bloudy, bold, and delegenate yong man: and forhaddout the reft of thothe his rakehels, as than neuer fince they were feren in those parts. And although in the commenting of the affaires the Equinox was pain, which had except to the cuthody of the Lock Keeper. (308) No fooner and more thank that Tirpens (notwithlanding the ceffation from warre) drawing his forces together, addrelded himself for the Field, wno whom Sir William Warras was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he felvelling in price, percentage of the family of the O-Marse; And although in the commenting of the affaires the Equinox was pain. (312) The padiage into Vilta: severy where nawly cumberione, and this way made more by the Rebels; who had fortified and blocked up the remarks, where a first although the promote of the promote of the part of the wind the work of the family of the O-Marse, have the one many former was fent, to charge him with handled in the commenting of the affaires the Equinox was pain. (312) The padiage into Vilta: severy where na with fent of the vilta of the wind the work of the commenting of the affaires the Equinox was pain. (313) The padiage into Vilta: severy where na comment was committed in England, you who had homed the vilta of the wind the work of the commenting of the fathers the Equinox was fent, to charge him wind the work of the wind the work of the wind the work of the fathers the Equinox was		this meanes the Rebels were encouraged, and the	1.	the worfe. to that hee now perceiving his fortune	i	1
were (as he conceined) much agranated, by fome that were hard againft him, in her attentive care; you which furnize Her Maichiefs harpe letters; you which furnize Her Maichiefs harpe letters; you which furnize Her Maichiefs harpe letters; you which furnize Her Maichiefs harpe letters; you which furnize Her Maichiefs harpe letters; you which furnize Her Maichiefs harpe letters; you him furnize then Maichief hard the secondary prefedhis troubled thoughts, sajeaning his charge to be managed by others, har fame fealon] ho ourperfedhis troubled thoughts, sajeaning his charge to be managed by others, har fame fealon] ho ourperfedhis troubled thoughts, sajeaning his charge to be managed by others, har fame fealon] hourselves with fatisfation from his own mouth, and at None-with fatisfation from his own mouth fatisfation from his own mouth, and at None-with fatisfat		Winedome of Ireland laid at hazard to hee loft :	1	to goe bake, withdrew himfelfe backe into his old	1	1
were (as he conceined) much aggrauated, by fome that were hard againf him, in her attentive care; you which furmize Her Maichies fharpe letters receited (though hee had excueld his feruice by one which furmize Her Maichies fharpe letters receited (though hee had excueld his feruice by one there whom himfelf fem at the fame fealon) lo our-prefiled his roubled thoughts, altesting his charge to be managed by others, he ded into England, well hoping to pacific his Salasinges displeature with hardiafaction from his own mouth, and at Now-with feathers and fonce after was commanded to his chamber; and fonce after was commanded to his chamber; and fonce after was committed to the cuthody of the Lord Keeper. (308) No foncer almost was the Lord Generall departed Ireland, but that Tirpen (notwithflanding the celfation from warre) drawing his forces together, address the field, with whom Sir William Warres was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he felvelling in price, permaporally answered, that his doings were according to outcans, having since may making before, and thus the England, youn whose honour was committed in England, youn whose honour her reposed his whole cflate; in circle would hee here were from the fruger and for the forward to the entrance of Meyery three miles beyond Demadalle. (312) The passage into Vifer is every where navel frugers and for the forward to the entrance of Meyery three miles beyond Demadalle. (313) The passage into Vifer is every where navel frugers in the forward to the entrance of Meyery three miles beyond Demadalle. (313) The passage into Vifer is every where navel frugers in the forward to the entrance of Meyery three miles beyond Demadalle. (313) The passage into Vifer is every where navel frugers in the forward to the entrance of Meyery three miles beyond Demadalle. (313) The passage into Vifer is every where navel frugers in the forward to the entrance of Meyery three miles beyond Demadalle. (313) The passage into Vifer is every where navel frugers in the forwar		Aingoonie of Treated laid at hazard to be lou .		corners The Lord Lieutenant then entred into	1	1
that were hard againth him, in her attentioc care; who which furnize Her Maichte Barpe letters receited (though hee had excufed his fertice byothers whom himfelfe femat the fame featon) looure, prefield his troubled thoughts, a leaving his charge to be managed by others, he die into England, well hoping to pacifie his Scalinger diplicating with flatisfation from his own mouth, and at Nonzeletter with flatisfation from his own mouth and near the flatist of the flatisfation from his own mouth and near th			1	r. C. the place of refine and receir of all the Re-	1	i
vpon which furmize Her Maiethies fharpe letters receited (chough her had excude his fertice by others whom himselfe sent are fame sealons) ouerpressed his troubled thoughts, as dealing his charge to be managed by others, had assemble and the sent and t		were (as ne conceined) much aggravated, by tome		hale in Tringer where he flow Over Mar. Down On	1	1
receited (though hee had exculed his fertite byothers whom him fielic femat the fame featon) loo under whom him fielic femat the fame featon) loo under the reflect his troubled thoughts, askeaning his charge to be managed by others, have deep to be managed by others, have deep to be managed by others, have deep to be managed by others, have deep to be managed by others, have deep to be managed by others, have deep to be managed by others, have deep to be managed by others, and the proposed by the featon form his own mouth, and at November 1990. A.D. 1599: A.D. 1599: A.D. 1599: A.D. 1699: A.D. 1690: A.D. 1		that were hard against him, in her attentioe care;	1	Dels in Langer, where he new ony-onac-kny-og,	ł	1
receited (though hee had exculed his lettuce byothers whom himfleft femt arthe faire feeland) to outer prefied his troubled thoughs, agleating his charge to be managed by others, had selection England, well hoping to pacific his Softwagers displeating with hartistation from his own mouth, and at Name had a color of the his makes the parts. And although in the commendation his man to make the parts and the winter weather begunnes in the reliend to the forward to the entrance of Meyery three mids by one after was committed to the cuflody of the Lock Keeper. (308) No fooner almost was the Lord Generall departed Ireland, but that Tirepar (notwithflanding the cellation from warre) drawing his forces together, addeficed himfleff for the Field, vno whom Sir William Warres was fent, to charge him with reach of promife; but he felvelling in price, permptonity answered, that his doings were according to counsant, shaining gitten warming before, and the said in the promise by the felvelling in price, and his cause in the England, ynon whole honout was committed in England, ynon whole honout was committed in England, ynon whole for the parts of the mid-five state of the price of the price of the price of the price of the felve of the felve of the price of the price of the felve of t		vpon which furmize Her Maiefties sharpe letters	i	chiefe of the family of the o-mores a bloudy,	I	ţ
thers whom himfelfe femat the fame featonil to our- prefield his troubled thoughts, agleuing his charge to be managed by others, he definto England, well hoping to pacifie his 56d, singues dipleating with fainfaction from his own mouth, and at Non- seth had acceffe to her prefience, where after a flour- with fainfaction from his own mouth, and at Non- seth had acceffe to her prefience, where after a flour- well come, hee was commanded to his chamber; and foone after was committed to the cultody of the Lord Keeper. (308) No fooner almost was the Lord Generall departed Treinal, but that Tripens (nowithflan- dingthe celfation from warre) drawing his forces together, address the history of the Field, vuo whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fewling in price, peremptorily answered, that his doings were ac- cording to couchant, having given warning before, and his cause inst, for that the Lord Lieuenaut was committed in England, youn whose honous her expected his whole cflate; in circher would hee have a triple of the proposed of the most of the mid- times from a state of the control of the proposed of the state of the control of the proposed of the state of the state of the control of the proposed of the state of the control of the proposed of the state of the control of the proposed of the state of the control of the proposed of the control of the proposed of the control of the proposed of the proposed of the control of the cont		received (though hee had exculed his lettrice by o-	i i	bold, and desperate youg man : and to chaled out	ı	1
prefied his troubled thoughts, as leauing his charge to be managed by others, he made die time England, well hoping to pacific his Sociations England, well hoping to pacific his Sociations and the winter weather begunne in that climate, yet with fatisfation from his own mouth, and at None-to-to-to-to-to-to-to-to-to-to-to-to-to-		there whom himfelfe fent at the fame featon) to ouer-	1	the reft of those his rakehels, as that never lince they	1	1
be managed by others, he may be more than the point of the managed by others, he managed by others, he managed by others, and the more by the managed by other after a floor with fairfaction from his own mouth, and at Namerica and the managed by t		pressed his troubled thoughts, as leaving his charge	!	were feene in those parts. And although in the	I	ł
with farisfaction from his own mouth, and at None- potton. 23. by the dia cueffet of the prefence, where after a flort. selection the prefence where after a flort. selection the prefence where after a flort. selection the prefence where a flort with the flort of the prefence where a flort week flort with the flort of the flo		to be managed by others bearing einto Facland	1 -	commenting of these affaires the Equinox was past,	1	1
with farisfaction from his own mouth, and at None- person. 28. who had acceffe to the prefence, where after a flort. Selection is the prefence of the prefen		1) be managed by others, in Science diffeleafure		and the winter weather begunne in that climate, yet		1
M.D. 1599. ## had acceffe to her prefence, where after a thort welcome, hee was comminted to the cultody of the Lord Keeper. (308) No fooner almost was the Lord Generall departed I reland, but that Tinens (notwithstanding the cession from ware) of awaing his forces together, addressed himselfe for the Field, vnto whom Sir William Warzen was sen, to charge him with breach of promise; but he swelling in price, permptonly answered, that his doings were according to coucants, having given warning before, and his caste suffer for the the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, youn whose home the reposed his whole cflate; in either would hee have anything to do with the Confession of the miles from Amail. Navis: but to omit many other skirmlishes in his returner, that at Camplefay and was most famous, where the enemies affembled toof topope his way, were all of them dif-		Well hopingto pacific his semangites displeature	1	merched he forward to the entrance of Movery three		1
welcome, hee was commanded to his chamber; and foone after was committed to the cuftody of the Lord Keeper. (308) No fooner almost was the Lord Generall departed reland, but that Tityens (notwithfialding the cellation from warre) drawing his forces together, addressed this histolican between the live was found, to charge him with breach of promise; but he fewelling in price, percenpotily answered, that his doings were according to couchant, having given warning before, and his cause institute the Lord Lieuenaut was committed in England, youn whose honous hee reposed his whole chare; in either would hee have any thing to do with the Confession of the manner than and the confession of the committed on the work of the confession of the confession of the confession of the confession of the confession of the confession of the confession of the maintenance of the confession of the maintenance of the confession of the conf				miles beyond Dandelke	I	i
October 2- October 3- October 3- October 4- October 3- October 4-		with had accelle to her prefence, where after a thort	1	The pollage into Viller is enery where no	1	1
October 2- October 3- October 4-	eptem. 28.	welcome, hee was commanded to his chamber; and	1	(312) The panage into viter is enery where has	1	1
Lord Keeper. (308) No fooner almost was the Lord Generall departed I reland, but that Tinyene (notwithstandingthe cessition from ware) of lawing his forces together, addressed himselfe for the Field, who whom Sir William Warren was sent, to charge him with breach of promise; but he swelling in price, perempoorily answered, that his doings were according to councants, basing signer warning before, and his cause sufficient to the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, who my whose honour her exposed his whole classe; in either would hee have with his more strength of Soulders: notwithstanding, the England break through those Pallyladers, and beating the enemies with the proposed his whole classe; in cited would hee have a with the more strength of the standard was sometimed in the strength of the stre	-	I foone after was committed to the custody of the	1	turally cumberiome, and this way made more by	1	1
(308) No fooner almoft was the Lord Generall departed Ireland, but that Tingen (notwithflandingthe ceffacion from warre) clawing his forces together, addreffed himselfe for the Field, vnto whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, peremporily answered, that his doings were according to conceants, having ginen warning before, and his cause full, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, you whose honour her exposed his whole clatte; neither would hee have anything no do with the Contillegrous full results. The Committee was most famous, where the enemies affembled cot footpe his way, were all of them different was most famous, where the enemies affembled to footpe his way, were all of them different was most famous, where the enemies affembled to footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way, were all of them different footpe his way.	ictober 2.	Lord Keeper.		the Rebels, who had fortified and blocked up the	1	1
depared Ireland, but that Tirenen (notwithflanding the cefflation from ware) of awaing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, who whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fetelling in price, peremprorily answered, that his doings were according to councants, hauting given wanting before, and his cause just for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, whom whose home would hee have within a now with the Convollence of the Committee		(208) No fooner almost was the Lord Generall	li	entrance with fences of stakes stucke in the ground,	1	1
ding the cellation from warre) drawing his forces to gether, addrelfeld minelle for the Field, vno whom Sir Wilkam Warren was fent, to charge him with reach of promife; but he feelling in price, peremporally answered, that his doings were according to contains, having gione warring before, and his catle inft, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, whom whose honour her exposed his whole clints; inciter would hee have within a now with the Convollence of the feeling of the feeling was most famous, where the enemies have a proposed to the continuous control of the feeling for the feeling was most famous, where the enemies affembled cut forope his way, were all of them different feeling was most famous, where the enemies affembled cut forope his way, were all of them different feeling was most famous, where the enemies affembled cut forope his way, were all of them different feeling was most famous, where the enemies affembled cut for the place with a number of souldiers; not with through the place with a number of souldiers; not with through the place with a number of souldiers; not with the place with a number of souldiers; not with through the place with a number of souldiers; not with through the place with a number of souldiers; not with the place with a number of souldiers; not with through the place with a number of souldiers; not with through the place with a number of souldiers; not with the place with a number of souldiers; not with through the place with a number of souldiers; not with the place with a number of souldiers; not with the place with a number of souldiers; not with the place with a number of souldiers; not with the place with a number of souldiers in the place with a number of souldiers; not with the place with a number of souldiers in the place with a number of souldiers in the place with a number of souldiers in the place with a number of souldiers in the place with a number of souldiers in the place with a number of souldiers in the place with a number of souldiers in the				with hardles joyned together, and itones in the	1	1
together, addreffed himselfe for the Field, vnto whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, peremptorily aniwered, that his doings were according to countant, hauing gitter wanting before, and his cause in the fart the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, you whole honour her reposed his whole cflate; neither would hee have such in the country of the state of the country of the state of the country of the state of the country of the state of the st		departed Ireland, but that Timen I notwithfran-	1	midft with turffes of earth laid betwitt hils, woods,	1	1
whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him whiterach of promife; but he flevelling in price, being the wording to contempt, bating size ording to contempt, bating size ording to contempt, bating size ording to contempt, bating size ording to contempt, bating size ording to contempt, bating size ording to contempt, bating size ording to contempt, bating size ording to contempt, bating the size of the size o		departed Ireland, but that Tirtoen (notwithitan-		1 1.1 - land with a mamba	1	1
with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, perempronily anivered, that his doings were according to couenants having given warning before, and his cause just, for that the Lord Leutenaut was committed in England, youn whose honor her exposed his whole clate; nichter would hee hone authing no do with the Countillors of Ire-twinsferd was most famous, where the enemies the most account of the country of		departed Ireland, but that Tirtoen (notwithitan- dingthe ceffation from warre) drawing his forces		and hoppes, and manned the blace with a number		5
with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, pieces, and his cause in the face of the fire of the	-	departed Ireland, but that Tirtoen (notwithitan- dingthe ceffation from warre) drawing his forces together, addreffed himselfe for the Field, vnto		of Souldiers : norwithflanding the Fnolish brake	-1	
beef, peremporally answered, that his doings were according to councants, having gione warning before, and his cause just, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, you whole honour her reposed his whole classe; neither would her have anything no downth the Councillors of Ire-through the same withing no downth the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Councillors of Ire-through the Ire-	-	departed Ireland, but that Tinyon (notwithilan- dingthe ceffation from warre) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vnto whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him		of Souldiers: notwithstanding, the English Drake	1	į
cording to couenants, having given warning before, and his cause suff, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, youn whose honour her exposed his whole claste; neither would hee honour there are the properties of the sufficient was committed to comit many other skirmisses in his returne, that at the properties of the sufficient was not famous, where the enemies affembled to stoppe his way, were all of them dis-	iroen againg	departed treland, but that Tingen (notwithlan- dingthe cellation from warre) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vnto whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price,		of Souldiers: notwithstanding, the English brakes		
and his cause just, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, you whole chonor her reposed his whole clints; nichter would her have suy thing in do with the Countillors of Ire-there was most famous, where the encuise affembleded to floope his way, were all of them dif-	iroen againg	departed treland, but that Tingen (notwithlan- dingthe cellation from warre) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vnto whom Sir William Warren was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price,		of Souldiers: notwithlianding, the English Brake through those Pallifadoes, and beating the enemies backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Garrison eight	-	
was committed in England, youn whole honour her repoled his whole clate; neither would he hangany thing to doe with the Counfellors of Ize-land and the land of the counfellors of Ize-land and the land of the la	irees againg	departed Ireland, but that Tripen (notwithitan- dingthe ceffation from warte) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vnto whom Sir William Warrawas fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, peremporily aniwered, that his doings were ac-		of Souldiers: notwithHanding, the English brake through those Pallifadoes, and beating the enemies backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Garrison eight wiles from Armesh where in memory of Six 1 of the control of Six 1 of the co	-	
hee reposed his whole estate; neither would hee have anything to doe with the Counsellors of Ize- affembled to stoppe his way, were all of them dif-	firees againg	departed Ireland, but that Tripen (notwithlian- dingthe cellation from warre) drawing his forces together, addressed himselfe for the Field, vuto whom Sir William Warren was sent, to charge him with breach of promise; but he swelling in price, peremptorily answered, that his doings were ac- ording to coupenants, hauting gitten warning before,		of Souldiers: notwithstanding, the English Disakt through those Pallifaders, and beating the centile backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Garrison eight miles from & Fringsh, where in memory of Sir I of the Narris, hee named the Fort Mount-Norris: but to	-	
have any thing to doc with the Counfellors of Ire- affembled to ftoppe his way, were all of them di-	firees againg	deparced *reland*, but that *Timpon* (notwithliam-dingthe celliation Irom ware*) drawing his forces together, addreffled himfelfe for the Field*, vato whom Sir William Warrow sase first, to charge him with breach of promile; but he fwelling in pride, peremptorily answered, that his doings were according to couenants, hauting ginen warning before, and his caule in the 1 orthogram of the country		of Souldiers: notwithtanding, the BBjajlb Diakt through those Pallifades, and beating the enemics backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Gartifon eight miles from Armagh, where in memory of Sir Ioha Norris, hee named the Fort Mount-Norris: but to omit many other skirmishes in his returne, that a	-	The second second second
naue any truing to doc with the Counteriors of 176-	Tires againg	departed Treland, but that Timpen (notwithliam- dingthe ceffizion Irom ware) of dawing his forces together, addreffled himfelfe for the Field, vano whom Sir William Warens was fent, no charge him with breach of promife; but he swelling in pride, peremptorily answered, that his doings were ac- cording to concenants, hatting ginen warning before, and his cause inst, for that the Lord Lieutenaur was committed in England, ypon whose honour		of Souldiers: notwithtanding, the BBjajlb Diakt through those Pallifades, and beating the enemics backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Gartifon eight miles from Armagh, where in memory of Sir Ioha Norris, hee named the Fort Mount-Norris: but to omit many other skirmishes in his returne, that a	-	The second second second
Comments	Tires againg	departed Treland, but that Tirspen (notwithlian- dingthe cefficion from ware) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vator whom Sir William Warran was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, peremponily answered, that his doings were ac- cording to concenants, having ginen warning before, and his cause inst, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, ypon whose honour her reposed his whole chate; neither would hee		of Souldiers: notwithHanding, the Ebgiglo Disk through those Pallylader, and beating the enemies backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Garrifon eight miles from Armagh, where in memory of Sir Iohn Norris, he named the Fort Mount-Norris: but to omit many other skirmilles in his returne, that at Cartinsferd was most famous, where the enemie:	-	Complementary of the Late of the Complement
	firees againg	departed Treland, but that Tirspen (notwithlian- dingthe cefficion from ware) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vator whom Sir William Warran was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, peremponily answered, that his doings were ac- cording to concenants, having ginen warning before, and his cause inst, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, ypon whose honour her reposed his whole chate; neither would hee		of Souldiers: notwithtanding, the Begillo Patk through those Pallylader, and beating the enemies backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Carrilon eight miles from e-frangle, where in memory of Sir Iohn Norrii, her named the Fort Mann-Norrii - but to omit many other skirmiliers in his returner, thatia Carlingford was most famous, where the enemies affembled to floope his way, were all of them dif-	-	The second second second second second
	firees againg	departed Treland, but that Tirspen (notwithlian- dingthe cefficion from ware) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vator whom Sir William Warran was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, peremponily answered, that his doings were ac- cording to concenants, having ginen warning before, and his cause inst, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, ypon whose honour her reposed his whole chate; neither would hee		of Souldiers: notwithtanding, the Begillo Patk through those Pallylader, and beating the enemies backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Carrilon eight miles from e-frangle, where in memory of Sir Iohn Norrii, her named the Fort Mann-Norrii - but to omit many other skirmiliers in his returner, thatia Carlingford was most famous, where the enemies affembled to floope his way, were all of them dif-	-	A CONTRACTOR OF THE PARTY OF TH
	iroes againg	departed Treland, but that Tirspen (notwithlian- dingthe cefficion from ware) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vator whom Sir William Warran was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, peremponily answered, that his doings were ac- cording to concenants, having ginen warning before, and his cause inst, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, ypon whose honour her reposed his whole chate; neither would hee		of Souldiers: notwithtanding, the Begillo Patk through those Pallylader, and beating the enemies backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Carrilon eight miles from e-frangle, where in memory of Sir Iohn Norrii, her named the Fort Mann-Norrii - but to omit many other skirmiliers in his returner, thatia Carlingford was most famous, where the enemies affembled to floope his way, were all of them dif-	-	A CONTRACTOR OF A SECURE AND A SECURE ASSESSMENT OF A SECURE ASSESSM
	irees againg	departed Treland, but that Tirspen (notwithlian- dingthe cefficion from ware) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vator whom Sir William Warran was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, peremponily answered, that his doings were ac- cording to concenants, having ginen warning before, and his cause inst, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, ypon whose honour her reposed his whole chate; neither would hee		of Souldiers: notwithtanding, the Begillo Patk through those Pallylader, and beating the enemies backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Carrilon eight miles from e-frangle, where in memory of Sir Iohn Norrii, her named the Fort Mann-Norrii - but to omit many other skirmiliers in his returner, thatia Carlingford was most famous, where the enemies affembled to floope his way, were all of them dif-	-	A STATE OF THE PERSON NAMED IN COLUMN TWO IS NOT THE OWNER, THE OW
	irees againg	departed Treland, but that Tirspen (notwithlian- dingthe cefficion from ware) drawing his forces together, addreffed himfelfe for the Field, vator whom Sir William Warran was fent, to charge him with breach of promife; but he fwelling in price, peremponily answered, that his doings were ac- cording to concenants, having ginen warning before, and his cause inst, for that the Lord Lieutenaut was committed in England, ypon whose honour her reposed his whole chate; neither would hee		of Souldiers: notwithtanding, the Begillo Patk through those Pallylader, and beating the enemies backe, the Lord Deputy placed a Carrilon eight miles from e-frangle, where in memory of Sir Iohn Norrii, her named the Fort Mann-Norrii - but to omit many other skirmiliers in his returner, thatia Carlingford was most famous, where the enemies affembled to floope his way, were all of them dif-	-	Company of the last of the las

he to Fereall, and draue Tirell, the most approound warrier of all the Rebels, from his faftneffe,(that is his bogges and bushes,) into Vister; the Territory of Fernes he laid waste, spoiled Fues, and in Breamy placed a Garrison, receiving such into mercic as deliuered vp hostages. Which done, and the Spring approching, he marched to Vifter, fortified Armagh, and went to farre forward, that he removued Tir-een from the Fort of Blackewater, who had very artificially encamped himfelfe (314) As the Lord Generall was thus busied to reduce Ireland to obedience, so the Pope and Spaine studied to hold up Tir-oen, and to mainetaine the rebellions ; their Agents were a Spaniard, elected by the Pope, Arch-Bishop of Deblin, the The Pope and Syme Sadded to the Control of the Cont Generall Don Iohn D'Aquila, a man of a conceited hope that all would bee his, as confident of much Dan Iohn DeAqui. la fent into Ireland. aid from the titular Earle Defmond, and from Florence Mac-Carty, a rebell of great might; where-in hee was decemed; for Sir George Caren, Lord

October Vlt.

writing, wherein hee gloriously stiled himselfe with this Title, Master Generall, and Captaine of the Catholike King in the warres of God, for holding and keeping the faith in Ireland; indeauouring to make

they were kept fure.

comfitted, and put to fearefull flight,

The Gimes elec-redof Rebels. ceptacle of the Rebels, where he brought into fub-

(313) In the midft of Winter hee entred the

glinnes, that is, the vallies of Leinster, a secure re-

iection Donel Spanish, Phelin Mac-Feogh; and the O-

Tooles, of whom hee tooke hostages. Then went

the world believe, that Queene Elizabeth, by the definitive sentences of the Popes, was deprived of her Kingdomes, and her subjects absolued and freed from their Oath of allegiance, and that hee was come to deliner them out of the Diuels lawes. and the English tyrannie, vpon which suggestions many distempered and wicked persons begannes bandy on his fide. (316) The Lord Deputy gathering his Companies, hasted to Kinfale and encamped neere vnto

President of Mounster, had prevented that de-

figne, and fent them prisoners to England, where

(315) Don D'Aquila with two thousand Spani-

ards, all of them old trained Souldiers, with cer-

taine Irifb Fugitiues, landed at Kinfale in Mounster. the last of October, and straightwaies published a

the Towne on the Land fide, whiles Sir Richard Leuison with two of the Queenes Shippes inclosed the Hauen, to forbidde all accesse to the Spaniard; when from both fides, the thundering Capon played vpon the Towne; but newes beeing brought that two thousand Spaniards more were arrived at Bere-hauen, Baltimore, and Castle-hauen, Sir Richard was imployed vpon them, in which feruice he funke fiue of their Ships. (317) Vnto these new landed Spaniards, whose

paired; vnicene of the English; and a few daies after

Tir-oen himselfe, with O-Roscke, Raimand Burke.

by night into Kinfale, as by letters intercepted from

Mac-Mahun, Randall Mac-Surley, Tirrell the Batron of Lixnaw, and the most selected choice of all the Rebels came vnto them, who mustered together made fixe thouland foot, and five hundred horse; all confident of victory, as being fresh, strong, and exceeding in number, where, the English were outwearied through winter fiege, with scarsity of victuail, and their horse weake with sore trauell. (318) In this hope, Tir-oen, vpon an Hill not a mile from the English Campe, made a Brauado Tir-sens braua-

A new supply of Leader was Asphonso-O-Campo, O-Donell ouer the Spannards vades ice, by speedy journies and vnknowen by-waies re-

ilphanfo O Campo

two daies together, intending to have put these new supplies of Spaniards, with eight hundred Irish,

which he held in the Kingdome of Ireland, aswell in the Towne of Kinfale, as the Forts and Caffle of John Ston. Baltimore, Berehauen, and Castle-hauen; and should Conclusions of deliuer them vato the Lord Deputy, or to whom pesse.

trouble enough.

he fhould appoint.

Articles whereof were these.

2 That Don D' Aquila and his Spariards should depart with armes, money, munition, and banners

O00000 2

Don D' Aquilà did appeare. Which to prevent; the

Lord Deputy appointed eight Enfignes to keepe

watch, and himselfe with the President of Mounster,

and the Marshall, at the foot of the Hill, chose out

a convenient plot to give the Earle battell, who the

next morning feeing the English fe torward, by his

bag-pipers founded the retreat, whom the Lord

Generall followed, and forced them to stand in the

difordered and rowted by the Earle of Clan-Ri-

(319) The maine battell then wavering in feare.

was violently charged by the Lord Deputy him-

felfe, who in his directions discharged the part of a

worthy Commander, and in fighting, the office of

a valiant Souldier; for the Rebels not able to withftand his fury, brake their arraies, and in diforder confusedly fled, in whose pursuite many of them

felt the revenging edge of the English (word. Trr-

oen, O-Donell, and the rest flung away their weapons,

Loth quelled the pride of the intruding Spaniards,

and exceedingly datinted the hearts of the difloyall

Irifb; so that Tir-oen was forced into his starting

places, where their best succour was to play least

(320) The Lord Generall, returning to the

fiege of Kinfale, beganne to raise rampires, and to

mount his Canons necrer the Towne, wherein fixe

daies were spent without any impeach from the Spa-

miard, whole courage being cut by the loffe of their

fellowes, fought rather how to gette cleare and bee

gone, then to aduenture reliftance against such a warlike opposer. D'Aquila hereupon, sent his let-ters by his Drumme Maior, to the Lord Deputy,

clined, and to that end fent thither Sir William Go-

(321) Vato whom D'Aquila fignified, that hee had found the Lord Deputy, though his eager enemy, yet an honour able person; the triss of no valor, rude, and concinil, yea and (that which hee fore feared) person and sale; That hee was sent from the King

of Spaine his Master to aid two Earles, and now hee

much doubted whether there were any fuch in Rerum

natura, considering that one tempestuous puffe of warre

had blowen the one of them into Spaine, and the other

into the North, so as they were no more to bee seene:

willing therefore hee was to treate about a Peace, that might bee good for the English, and not hurtfull to the

Spaniards : albeit hee wanted nothing requisite to the

holding out of the Siege, and expected enery day out of Spaine fresh supplies to finde the English worke and

(322) The matter thus proposed, and the Eng-

I That Iohn D'Aquila should quitte the places

the Lord Deputy consented to an agreement, the January 2.

lifb weake and weary through a long Winters fiege

wherein he craued, that some Gentleman of credit sue for peace. might be sent into the Towne, with whom he might Parley for a peace. Whereunto his Lordship in-

and faued their lives by flight; but Alphonso O-Campo, with three other Spanish Captaines, and

fixe-Enfigne-bearers, were taken prifoners, nine of their Enlignes borne away by the English, and twelne bundred of his Spaniards flaine; fuch welcome found these new guests in Ireland. This victory obtained,

holes in Vifter, O-Donell driven into Spaine, and the The rebels difrest of that rebellious rabble scattered into obscure | Parkled.

brincke of a bogge, where there horfemen were The rebels rem-

difplaied: the Souldiers not with standing to beare no armes against the Queene of England, till such

time as they were vnshipped in some part of

3 That

3 That Shippes and victuals should be granted vnto them in their departure, for their money and at such reasonable prises as the Countrey could

4 That if contrary winds inforced them into any other Port of Ireland, or elfe into England, they might be intreated as friends with fafety of harbor, and prouisions necessary for their money to further their departure. That a ceffation should be from warre, a fe-

curity from iniuries, and victuall granted at reafonable rates, whiles they remained in preparing for

6 That the Ships in which they should bee imbarked might freely passe by other English Shippes without molestation; and the Shippes arrived in Spaine, might fately returne backe without any impeachment of the Spaniards : for security whereof, the faid D' Aquila should deliuer for hostages, fuch three of their Captaines as the Lord Deputy would chuse. Vnto these Articles Don Iohn so-

lemnly swore on the behalfe of the Catholike King his Master, and with his hand subscribed his name, Don Iohn D Aquila. (323) The troublesome cloude of most likely dangers, thus dissoluted in Mounsters faire Aire, the coasts of Ireland were shortly cleared of those

forraine intruders, who notwithstanding their former great bragges, with shame and dishonour embarked themselves for home, their companies being much empaired, and proud spirits brought downe. And now the Ben-badad Tir-oen, who had I.King.20. boafted all Ireland was his, with fearefull flights and by-waies recourred his lurking holes in plfter: after he had loft moff of his men, whom the fwelling and violently-running Riuers, by reason of Winter floods, had swallowed vppe; where his traitors head, burdened with the dreads of his owne deferts, could take no reft, no not so much as to breath without feare, distrusting enery shadow that hee faw, and shifting out of one by-corner before he well knew where to find another. (324) Meane whiles, the Lord Deputy refre-

flied his weary and winter beaten Souldiers, repayred ithe decaies, and renewed the Garrisons in Mounster ; which done, hee departed for Dublin, where wearing out the winterstormes, towards the fpring, by a gentle and easie march, well appointed, hee returned into Vifter, meaning to belay the Rebell on euery fide, by planting his Forts, for take-him in his toile. Thus beeing approached vnto Blackewater, hee transported his Armie ouer the Foord vpon floates, vpon whose banke, beneath the old Fort, he erected a * new, to such terror of the Arch-rebell, as hee fet on fire his owne house at Dunganon, and got himselfe further from danger; whether the Lord Deputy immediately marched, and made spoile without any spare; the corne fields

were destroied, the Villages fired, and booties brought in on every side. The Forts in Logh, Crem,

Lough Reogh , and Mogher Lecound , were yeelded

vp, and Garritons placed in Lough Eaugh or Sydney, and in Monaghan, whence with their continuall fallies, they so crossed the enemies, that seeing themsclues inuironed about, and no way open for escape, like wilde beafts they hid their heads in the thickets, forrests, and woods, muttering complaints against their late magnified Tir-oen; exclaiming he had engaged the ruine of the whole Nation, for his The Rebeisexclaime against the Arch-rebell. owne private discontents, and that these warres, howfocuer beneficiall to him, yet were they most pernicious vnto them, whereupon changing their mindes with their fortunes, beganne a vie, who should be first in shewing their alteration, by com-

Great spoiles

ming in to the Deputy. (325) The Earle not ignorant how their affections declined, his owne forces shaken, and the fidelity of his followers more and more suspected, hee once more determined to preuent the worst, by

his fubmiffion, which in humble letters he fent to the Queene , wherein with praiers and teaces hee craued pardon of his faults: to fuch an ebbe was the swelling tides of his rebellious heart brought. Her Maiesty (whose Nature was Mercy) euer distaffine of blond, gaue the Lord Deputy authority to pardon his life, though hardly drawen to remit his offences, they beeing fo many and great : His friends that affected him, and Mac Baron his brother, daily folicited the Deputy for his peace,

which laftly, vpon an absolute promise, to put

his life and reuenewes, without any condition, to

the will of the Queene, was granted; and at Mel-

lifont, accompanied with two persons and no more,

had accesse into the Chamber of Presence, where the

Lord Deputy fate in a Chaire of Estate, most of

(326) Tir-oen, in base and poore array, with a

dejected countenance, at the very entrance fell down

vpon his knees, and so rested till hee was comman-

ded to arise, and come neerer; when stepping for-

ward a few paces, hee fell againe proftrate, and

like a most humble Supplicant, in words well

couched (as cunning hee was both in speech and

action) acknowledged his finnes against God, and

fault vnto her Maicity; and thus beganne his fub-

In the royall clemency of my dread Soueraigne and most gracious Queene, I doe onely lay the hope and rest

of my now remaining estate; unto whose pleasure I ab-

folutely remit my life, and whole reuenewes; and doe most submissuely deplore mine owne misery, beseeching

againe her mercy, whose bountifull fauours I have heere

againe permetey, unpoje bountiful jaunist content to tofore, and mighty powers now of late bush felt and found, and well hope, that the fountaine of her euer-thowing graces are not drawen dry. Let mee (I pray)

bee the subject, whereon her mercy may worke, and an

example for ever of her mild elemency, both to divulge

her Princelie lenity, and to redeeme in some part the bo-

nor I have loft. For age I am not fo unferniceable nor

of body so unable, neither incourage so desected, but that my fatthfull service in her behalfe, may expiate

and make some measure of satisfaction, for these my many and most disloyall rebellions. And yet I may inst-

ly complaine, that through the malitious enuy of some, I have beene hardly and unfriendly dealt with, which

may somewhat extenuate my crime and offence; for-

But as he was enforcing this point further, the Lord

Deputy interrupted his speech, and with a fewe

words delinered with great authority, (which in a

Marshallist stands in stead of Elequence) told him, that there was no excuse to be heard, his crimes were

too great; and thereupon commanded him to de-

part the Presence: which he did with a countenance

his Marshallists standing about him.

mission to the Lord Generall.

feeming very heavy and fad. The next day departing for Dublin, hee tooke Tir-oen thither, meaning to transport him for England, had not the death of the Oueene hindered his designe. These things premiled, and Ireland thus recourred that was in hazard to be loft, let vs returne to our English affaires, from whence these Irish bogges have detained vs too (327) On what tearmes the Earle of Effex left Ireland we have already heard, and to what lamentable successe the height of his rife brought him, is now to bee related; wherein hee may be the example of fortunes daliance, and of the vnftayed felicity had in this life; a man indeede filled with the affection of his Prince & the people, & fraught with honourable habilities to purchase both, vntill by his owne vnaduisednesse (for so it must needs be censured) he clouded his honour, wifdome, and loyalty, with the shadowes of his ownediscontents. Whether his Soueraignes fauours were the wings of his

ambitions, or the dependancies of men of warre, the pillars of his high hopes, I doe not censure; but that some secret under-workings gave fire to his pasfionate discontents, I doubt not, having seene his owne letters penned in that behalfe. How soeuer,

MONAR CHS. Monarch 61. fure it is, the Eie of selousie now lastly attended

worthy a member, who hath so often and so valiantly him, and his doings were more noted, then was quailed and danted them. You for fake your Countrey, made shew of : wherefore, being yet in Ireland with when it hath most neede of your counsell or helpe. Ana an eminentauthority, followed with the flower and lastly, you faile in that indissoluble duty which you owe chiefest men of warre, and suspected to be too well to your most gracious Soueraigne. A duty imposed uprespected by the Arch-rebell Tir-oen, it was held good policy (vpon another pretended occasion) to on you, not by nature or policy onely, but by that religimuster forces, and to make a Lord Lieutenant Generall of all England, which was, the right honorable Charles Howard Earle of Nottingham Lord high (328) The shew of this preparation was a preuenting prouidence (as was pretended) against a Spanish Nauy in new rigging for the Seas; and in-

deed such preparation in that Summer was made, as the like had not beene in England since Queene Elizabeth came to the Crowne. For London was allotted to furnish sixteene Ships to the Seas, and six thousand Souldiers for the Land service, whereof three thousand were to rest euer in a readinesse, and the other three thousand (all of them householders) to attend and gard her Maiesties royall Person. And out of many Countries adioyning, such numbers of braue horse and horsemen were gathered, as neuer till then had beene seene; the same whereof was so farre spred, as neither Spaine, nor any other, could have any heart to make attempt this way. (329) But the Earle of Effex arriving in England not onely peaceably, but also very prinately and vnaccompanied (as hath beene faide) and now remaining in the Lord Keepers custody, was often and ferioufly dealt with, by that truly honourable and provident Statist (of whom hee was intirely affected) formewhat to decline his lofty foaring, left in mounting too high, he should melt his waxen wings against the hot Sunne, and not to suffer the sore to fester till it were past cure; to which purpose also he afterward wrote him a letter of pithy and sapient perswasions, out of the abundance of his well-wifhing heart; the coppy whereof we held worthy to bee heere prefented.

The Lord Keeper to the Earle of Essex Iulie 18. An. 1598.

a stander by seeth more then hee that playeth the game; and for the most part every man in his owne cause, standeth in his sure-light, and seeth not so cleerely as hee should. Your Lordshippe hath dealt in other mens causes, and in greate and weighty affaires with great wisdome and judgement; now your owne is in hand, you are not to contemne or refuse the adule of any that loueth you, how simple soeuer. In this order I range my selfe; of those that love you none more simple, and none that lovely you with more true and honest affection: which shall pleade mine excuse, if you shall either mistake, or misconster's morals or meaning; But in your Lord-ships honorable wisdome I neither doubt nor suspect the one or other. I will not presume to aduise you, but I will shoot my bolt, and tell you what I thinke. The beginning and too-long continuing of this unseasonable discontent you have seene and prooued, by which you may aime at the end. If you hold still this courfe (which hi-

therto you finde to bee worse and worse, and the longer you goe, the farther out of the way) there is little hope or likelyhood that the end will bee better. You are not yet so farre gone, but you may well returne; the returneis safe, the progresse dangerous and desperate. In this course you hold, if you have any enemies, you also that for them which they could never doe for themselues. Your friends you leave open to scorne and contempt; you for sake your selfe, and overthrow your fortunes, and ruinate your honour and reputation. You give that courage and comfort to the forreine enemies, as greater they cannot have. For what can bee more welcome, or more pleasing newes unto them, then to heare that her Maiesty and the Realme are maymed of so

ous and facred band, wherein the divine Maieff; of almighty God hath by the rule of Christianitie obliged For the foure first, your constant resolution may per haps moone you to effeeme them as light; but beeing well weighed they are not light, nor lightly to bee regar. ded. And for the two last, it may bee that the cleerenesseof your inward conscience; may seeme to content your felfe. But that is not enough; thefe duties stand not

onely in contemplation, or in inward meditation : their effects bee externall action, and when that fatleth, the Substance faileth. This beeing your present state and condition, what is to bee done? what is the remedy? My good Lord 1 lacke wisdome and judgement to adulfe you; but I will neuer lacke an honest true heart to wish well, nor (beeing warranted by a good conscience) will seare to speake what I thinke.

I have begunne plainely, but not offended if I pro-ceede fo. Bene cedit, qui cedit tempori. Seneca faith well, Lex si nocentem punit, cedendam est institiæ; si innocentem, cedendum est fortunæ. The medicine and remedie is, not to contend and striue, but huntbly to yeelde and fubmit. Haue you given a cause, and yet take a scandall onto you? then all you can doe, is too little to make satisfaction. Is cause of scandall given onto you? per policy, daty, and religion, enforce you so sue, yeelde, and submit, to your Souraigne, betweene whom and you there can been o proportion of daty. When God requires it as a principall daty and service to himselfe; and when it is evident, that great good may enfue of it to your friends, your selfe, your Country, and your Soueraigne, and extreame harme by the contrary: there can bee no dishonour or hart to yeelde, but in not doing of it, is di-

The difficulty (my good Lord) isto conquere your felfe, whichis the height of true valour and fortitude; whereant all your honorable actions have intended. Doe

it in this, and God will bee pleased, her Maiestie (I doubt

not) well satisfied : your Country will take good, and your friends take comfort by it; and your selfe (I men-(330) My very good Lord. It is often feene, that tionyou last, for I know that of all these, you esteeme your selfe least) shall receive honour, and your enemies (if you have any) shall be disappointed of their bitter-sweete I have delivered what I thinke, fimply and truly; and leave you to determine according to your wisdome. If I have erred, it is Error amoris, not, Amor erroris. Construe and accept it (I be feech you) as I meane it; not as an aduife, but as an opinion, to bee allowed or cancelled at your pleasure. If I might conveniently have conferred with your felfe in person, I would not have troubled you with so many idle blots. What sower you judge of this mine opinion, yet bee affured my defire is to further all good meanes that may tend to your good, and fo wishing you all honourable happinesse, I rest your Lordshippes most ready and faithfull, though unable, poore

The Earles Answere. (331) My very good Lord. Though there is not the man this day living, whom I would sooner make a Iudge of any question that did concerne mee, then your felfe : yet you must give me leave to tell you, that in some cases I must appeale from all earthly Iudges; and if in any, then surely in this, when the highest sudge on earth hath imposed upon mee the heaviest punishment, without triall or hearing. Since then I must either answere your Lordships arguments, or for sake mine ownei ust defence, I will force mine aking head to doe mee service for an I must first deny my discouragement, which was forced.

to be an humerous discontentment, and in that it was onfeafonable, and is too long continuing, your Lord bippe Should rather condole with me then expossulate. Naturall (easons are expected here below, but violent and onfeaso nable Kormes come from aboue: there is no tempelt to the passionate indignation of a Prince, nor that at any time so unseasonable, as when it lighteth on these that might expect an haruest of their painefull and carefull labours. Hee that is once wounded must feele smart till his hurt is cured, or the part senselesse; but cure I expect none, her Maiesties heart being obdurate; and be without sense I cannot. But then (704 (ay) I may aime at the end. I doc more then aime, for I fee an end of all my fortunes and have set an end to all my desires. In this course doe

any thing for mine enemies? when I was present, I found them absolute, and therefore I had rather they foould triumph alone, then have mee attendant upon their Chariot. Or doe I leaue my friends? when I was a Courtier, I could reeld them no fruit of my loue to them; now I am an Heremite, they shall beare no enuie for their loue to me. Or doe I forfake my selfe, because I doe enion my selfe? Or doe louerthrow my fortunes, because I build not a fortune of paper walles, which every puffe of winde blowes downe? Or doe I ruinate mine honor because I leave following the pursuit, or wearing the falle marke of the Chadow of honour? Doe I give courage or comfort to the

forraine enemies, because I reserve my selfe to encounter them, or because I keepe mine heart from basenesse, though I cannot keepe my fortune from declining? No, no, I give enery one of these considerations his due right, and the more I weigh them, the more I finde my felfe instifted from offending in any of them. As for the two last obtections, that I for sake my Country when it hath most need of me, and faile in that indiffoluble duty which I owe to my Souer aigne: I answere, that if my Country had at this timenced of my publike service, her Maiestie that pouernes it would not have driven me to a private life. I am tied to my Country by two bands; one publike, to discharge carefully faithfully, and industriously that trust that is committed unto me; and the other private to fa-

crifice for it my life and carkafe which have beene nouri-Ibed init. of the first I am free, being dismissed or disabled by her Maiesty. Of the other nothing can free me but death, and therefore no occasion of performance shall offer it feife, but I will meete it halfe way. The indisso-luble duety which I owe to her Maiesty, is the duetic of alleagiance which I will neaer, nor can faile in; the duetie of attendance is no indisoluble duety. I owe her Majesty Service of an Earle and of a Mariball of England. I have beene contented to doe her the feruice of a Clerke but can neuer serue her as a villaine, as a flaue. But yet (you say) I must give way to time : So I doe, for now I fee the storme come. I have put my selfcinto the harbour. Seneca faith wee must give way to fortune, I know that fortune is blind and from and therefore I goe as farre out of the way as I can. You fay the remedy is not to striue, I neither striue nor feeke for remedy , but I must yeeld and submit : I can neuer yeeld my felfe to bee guilty, or this imposition lately laide upon me, to be inft : I owe formuch to the Author of truth, as I can never yeeld truth to be failhood, or fallbood to be truth.Haue I giuen canfe (you toke) and take a feandall? No, I gave not cause to take up so much as Fimbrius his complaint, for I did totum telum corpore accipere. I patiently beare all and fenfibly feele all that I then received. When this foundall was given mee, nay, when the vilest of all indignities are done unto mee, doth Religion enforce me to ferue? doth God require it? is it implety not to doe it? why? cannot Princes erre? cannot subjects receive vorong? is an earthly power or authority infinite? Pardon me, pardon mee my Lord, I can neuer subscribe to these principles: but Salomons foole laughes when he is stricken: Let these that mean to

make their profite by Princes faults. Shew to have no feare

of Princes injuries. Let them ecknowledge an infinite ab-

folutenes in earth, that doe not beleeve in an absolute in-

finitenes in beauen. As for me, I have received wrong,

l feele it, my cause is good I know it. And what soeuer

come, all the powers on earth can never (bew more strength

and constancy in oppressing, then I can show in suffering,

what soener shall be imposed upon me.

Your Lordship in the beginning of your letter made your felfe a looker on, and mee a player of mine owne game; fo roumay sce more then I: but you must give mee leave to tell you in the end of mine, that since you but see and I suffer, I must of necessity feele more then you. I must crave your Lordships patience, to give him that hath a crabbed fortune leave to ve a crabbed stile. But what some my Rile is there is no heart more humble, nor more affected towards your Lordsbip, then that of your Lordsbips poore R. Essex.

(332) The diftempered humor discouring it felfe in this letter, argueth both the depth of his fetled discontent, and the danger of gining way to violent passions, which not onely deprine the wifest of the vie of their owne understanding, but also blinde their eyes that they cannot see, nor apprehend the benefite of other mens faithfull counsels. Notwithstanding, it pleased her gracious Highnesse (whom he so censureth as wronging him, for lending a more attentine eare to his enemies fuggestions, then to Effer commanhis owne facisfactions) first, to remitte his durance house. to his owne house, and then loth to looke into his faults but with her princely eye of fauour to proceed vntosome moderate censure of his actions, to the end hee might fee his owne errors, and shee so limit

his power 2s her owne might be secured.

(333) To which end shee assigned certain of her

Priny Councell to convent him concerning the

breaking of his former instructions for the North-

Irish prosecution, and the manner of his treating

with Tir-Oen, his comming from Ireland, and lea-

uing that Kingdome contrary to her Maiesties expresse commandement, signed under the Royall Hand and Signet. Whereunto his answere was that the State of Warre held it a Maxime, to make good the Stand before the Remove, and that it was onething at Table to direct, but another thing in field to effect, especially in Ireland, whose war was with Boggs and Woods, aswell as with Men. And to he rest of the objections hee answered with such obedient discretion, and loyall submission, as hee well fatisfied the Honourable prefence, onely a fufpension from the exercise of some of his offices was decreed, vntill her Maiesties pleasure should other wise order it. Shortly after hee was set at full liberty; the Queene fending him word that shee well hoped his furest guard would now bee his ownedif-

(334) But seeing his wonted greatnesse restrained. though the scope of his liberty was thus farre enlarged, he presently mounted higher with the winges of discontent: for deprined of Offices, neglected in Court, and all his forraine feruices powred into her Maiesties lappe, was now (as he imagined) there wrapped vp, and laide in oblinion, Neither were their his grieuances lessened by his minary followers, who dayly watted these ill set plants with their exasperated complaints, till they were sprung to some height, and still to nourish their sappe, many projects were cast, and conferences held how to lop off other branches, which as they feared would hinder their growth, til lastly at Drury house they agreed at Drury house, on the manner (O had it withered before it had blowmed, or died in the graffing before it tooke sappe) which was by violent hand to bring the Earle into her Maiesties presence, and to remone from her fuch as they deemed his opposites.

(335) The frequent affembly vnto Effex house by Noblemen, Knights, Captaines, and others. was presently observed by the Statists in Court, to stoppe the current of which confluence before it grew to a floud, Secretary Herbert was fent from her Maiesty to require him to repaire before the Lords of her Councell, then affembled at Salisbury Court, which hee excufing with ficknesse, neglected to do, and the same night vpon some sinister reports

fer a double watch about him, pretending fome danger to bee meant to his perion. For whose de-Febr 3. fence the next morning (being Sunday) many repaired vnto his house, among whom, as chiefe were the Earles of Rutland and Southampton, the Lord Sandes and Monteagle, accompanied with a Troupe of gallant Gentlemen their followers.

foure of her Counced vito

(336) Her Maiefty hearing of these disorderlie proceedings, in her princely wildomethought to cast water vpon this begunne fire, before it brake forth into flame, and thereupon fent foure men of much honour vnto his place, to offer him suffice for any gricles, and to command the affembly to depart. The persons sent were the L. Keeper of the great Seale, the Earle of Worcefter, Sir Francis Knowles his vncle, and the Lord Chiefe Instace of England, all of them in high honour and fauour with the Earle him-

(3;7) These comming to his house without Temple-barre, were received in themselves, but scarse any of their feruants fuffered to follow, excepting the Bearer of the Purse and Seale, where finding the Court full of those his followers, the Lord Keeper putting off his hatte, tolde them that they were fent by her Maiesty to understand the cause of this their assembly and to let them know, that if they had any particular cause of griefe against any person whatso-euer, they should have hearing and instice. The Earle of

Effex answered that his life was fought after, and that

hee had beene perfidiously dealt withall. To which

the Lord Chiefe Iustice replyed, that if any such mar-

The Earles an-

ter was attempted, it was fitte for him to declare it, affuring him of a faithfull relation, and that her Maiesty would doe him instice. Which promises the Lord Keeper seconded, and desired the Earle to declare his griefes, if not openly, yet in private, and he doubted not but to procure him full fatisfaction, & then turning towards the multitude, with a louder voice said; I do command you all uponyour alleagea nce to lay down your Weapons, and to depart. Whereupon the Earle himselfe went into his Booke-chamber, these foure Councellors following him in hope ofprinate conference; but so farre off was hee from hearing them further, or answering to their de mands, that leaving them there vnder fure custody, hee returned to his other attendants.

the house of a * supposed friend (then one of the

Shiriffes) who feeing the multitude, auoided him-

felfe out at a backe-dore, when prefently in divers

parts of the City Effex was proclaimed a Traitor, to

the no leffe griefe of the Citizens, then feares of his

followers, and thence returning with a Halbert in

his hand, and a Table-napkin about his necke, came

(338) With whom in tumultuous manner, hee A.D. 1600. made into London, his followers crying, that the Sunday, Earle of Effex should have beene murthered by Feb. 8. Cobham, Cecill and Rawley, all men amased what this did meane. Thus past he from Ludgate through Cheapeside, into Fan-church street, where hee entred

*Thom Smit's.

into Gracious street, where a while hee made his stand, (the Lord Major and others being affembled at the vpper end towards Leaden-hall) no one Citizen or feruant shewing him any signe of assistance. The case fo desperate, one of the principal offenders contri-ued how by redceming harault, to saue his owne life; who hastening into the Strand to Effex-house, and comming to Sir John Dans, as being fent from the Earle, gat release of the foure Counsellors, vnder whose guard they had beene hitherto kept.

(339) Effex now dispairing of all succours in Londen, law it was booteleffe there to make his abode. & therefore retired agains towards Paules, meaning to paffe Ludeate the way that he came, but being relisted by a company of Pikemen, and other forces, made by that front and noble Prelate, the then Lord Bishoppe of London, hee was put backe, Sir Christopher Blunt forchurt, and young Tracy flaine; besides some others on the Queenes part, bimselfe

narrowly escaping, being thrust through the hatte

with a pyke. So hence againe returning at Queene Hiue hee tooke boate, bidding the City and his fortunes adue.

(340) His enterprise thus frustrate, with a mind Taketh bost and diffracted hee rowed up the river, and landed at the form their Water-gate of his owne house, which hee presently house in strand, fortified; and the Lord Admirall affaulted furfering notwithstanding the Countesse of Eyex, the Lady Rich and their Gentlewomen to depart, which done hee forced the Garden cuen to the wal es of the house. Some resistance was made, and some perfons slaine vpon either part, which the Earle perceiuing, prefently yeelded, defiring onely that hee might bee ciuilly vied, and that hee might have an honourable trialisand to being first brought to Lambeth-house, where an howre or two he remained with the Lord Archbishoppe (his euer most louing, but then most mournefull friend) was thence with fome other Lords and Gentlemen conuaied by water to the Tower, about tenne of the clocke the fame night: having then experience, that vaine is the love of the Commons to a Subject (how great focuer) when

it is counterballanced with the dutiful obedience unto their

in the Tower, rendring his foule to God with a

most penitent and Christian constancie, whose last

ched finner, and that my finnes in number ex-

speeches were to this effect,

(341) Vpon the nincteenth of the same moneth, the Earle of Effex and Southampton were arraigned at Westminster, the Lord Buckburst Lord high and condemned Treasurer of England beeing made Lord Steward for the day, where the great refolution of the one, contemning death, and the tweet temper of the other well deferring life, did breed most compassionate affections in all men, hearing the sentence of law to paffe vpon them. The one of them remained prifoner in the Tower during the raigne of the Oucene, and by the gracious clemency of our Soucraigne Lord King James at his comming to the Crowne; had pardon of life, and restauration of bloud, the other (Effex) the fine and twentith of February be-

ing Ahmedne day, fuffered vpon the Greene with- Is executed.

(342) "My Lords and Christian brethren, who are present witnesses of my just punishment, I death, confesse (to Gods glory) my selfe a most wret-

ceed the haires of my head; that good which I would have done, that did I not, and the euill which I would not, that did I. For all which I befeech my Saujour Christ to bee a Mediator to his Father my God, especially for this my last "finne, this great, this crying, this bloudy, this infectious finne, wherein, through love of mee, so many have beene drawen to offend God, their Soueraigne, and the world. I befeech God, her Maiesty, and the State, to forgivevs; and I befeech him to bleffe her with a prosperous raigne, with a wife and understanding heart, to blesse the Nobles and Ministers of the Church and State. "I likewife befeech you, and all the world, to hold a charitable opinion of mee, for my intention towards her Maiesty, whose death (I protest) I neuer meant, nor any violence towards her Perfon. I thanke God, I neuer was Atheift, in not beleening the Scriptures : neither Papift, trufting in my owne merits; but am affured to bee faued by the mercies and merits of Christ Iesus my Saujour. This faith I was brought up in, and heerein I am now ready to dye; befeeching you all to ioyne your foules with mee in praier, that "my foule may bee lifted up by faith, aboue all "earthly things; and first I defire forgiuenesse of all the world, euen as freely, as from my heart I forgine all the world.

(343) And then kneeling downe faide, I hanc

beene divers times in places of danger, where death

was neither to prefent nor to certaine, and yet euen

then I felt the weaknesse of my slesh, and therefore now in this last and great conflict, I desire Gods as-Nnnnnn2

is forced from Ludgate.

fiftance by his preferring Spirit. And fo with *a * See this his most heavenly praier, and faithfull constancy, (as principal othe if his foule were then already in heavenly fruition) his speeches at hee humbled himfelfe to the blocke, and foreading abroad his armes (the figne that he had given to his heads-man) his head was with three strokes of the Axe seuered from his body, the great heatinesse of all men, appearing as well by their countenances, as spleene against his Executioner, who was in danger of his life at his returne, had not the Sheriffes affifted (344) For accessaries and chiefe Counselors in

this offence, died at Tyborne, Sir Gilliam Merricke Others executed Knight, and Henry Cuffe (for his exquisite learning much bewailed of all men) and five daies after them, vponthe Scaffold on Tower Hill, were beheaded Sir Charles Dauers and Sir Christopher Blunt Knights. And before any of these, Thomas Lee a Captaine was executed, for words spoken touching the Earle of Esex his delinerance, to moone, or rather to inforce the Queene thereunto, as his words were construed, who neuerthelesse confidently tooke his death, that hee neuer had thought of any violent at-(345) As the death of this Noble-man was

The griefe co Earle of Effex his death.

wards him was io ingrafted, as I thinke, I may well fay, neuer subject had more,) so her Maiesty likewise, hauing fuch a Starre fallen from her firmament, was inwardly mooued, and outwardly oftentimes would show passions of her griefe, even till the time of her approching end, when two yeeres after shee laide downe her Head in the Graue, as the most resplendent Sunne setteth at last in a Westerne cloud. (346) The state of which Great Queene through out the whole course of her most flourishing raigne

much lamented by the subjects. (whose lone to-

was (as in part you have seene shadowed already) so A'bricfe shadow beautified and strengthened with all honorable perof Queene Eli-zabeths due prailes. fections, both of Peace, and Warre, as neuer any Monarch raigned with greater observance of her owne, nor ruled with a more observed magnanimity toward forraine Nations : infomuch, as if her incomparable vertues and praifes were truly and exactly described (a worke worthy some noble spirit and penne) wee are verily perswaded, that future ages will somewhat stagger and doubt, whether such celebration of her, were not rather affectionately Poeticall, then faithfully Hiftoricall,

Her freav and forraine Coun

(347) For, the great affaires of Europe mainely epended upon her directions, who fitting at the Helme of the Shippe (as Fronto spake of Antoninus the Emperour) arbitrated and guided their Estates both in peace and warre : Spaine, feeking to ouerflow all, was beaten backe, and scarcely able to maintaine her owne bankes : In France, the house of Valoys under-propped by her counfell; that of Bourbons, aduanced by her countenance, forces, and treafure; Scotland relected by her lone; Neatherlands by her power; Portingals King by her bounty; Poland by her commiseration; likewise Germany, Denmarke, Sueueland, often tooke vp and laide downe Armes at her becke and dispose. Neither could the vtmoft bounds of Europe, (the Russians and Tartars) containe the limits and extent of her great fame; but that the same pierced further into the remoter parts of Asia, Africa, America, among the Turkes, (whose great Emperour, in honour of so great a Mediatreffe, granted peace vnto the Polomans outworne with warres,) among the Persians, Barbarians, Indians, and where not? In most of whose Dominions to the great enriching of her Kingdome, shee tetled commerce for encrease of merchandize, and got large priviledges for encouragement of her Merchants, whom the cherished as a most necessary and

Her Princely

important part of her Weale Publike. (348) Who, for her royall actions and Princey qualities of Minde (feated also in such a Body as for state, stature, beauty, and Maiesty, best besitted an Empresse,) may be singled out for an Idea of an absolute Prince, her Sex onely excepted, which yet made her vertues more remarkable, as beeing (and foreputed by Strangers) of all the Princes of her time, the most exact observer (both for Action and Ceremon,) of true Regall deportment and magnificence. For her enterprizes as fortunate as Cafar, for life, loue, wisdome, and magnanimity, another Augustus; by her peaceable raigne shutting the Temple of Warre in England (whiles all Nations round about her felt the miferies of warre) as hee did the doores of Janus in Rome. And yet had thee Warriers like vnto the Worthies of David; her for- Her Military raine imployments, Nauigations, and Discoueries, Prouidince, having bred fuch numbers of most renowned Capraines, both for Sca and Land, as none of our former Princes hath feene the like. With which necesfary kinde of noble Seruitors, that her owne Kingdome might becalwaies munified (as foreseeing the vncertainties and fudden changes in the Peace-pretending amities of forraine Princes,) shee ever imploied many of her Gentry and others, in the warres of Princes abroad, so to perfect them for all occurrents of their Country at home; which also induced her (some Statists have thought) to fuffer that long lingring protraction of her Irifo warres, the rather, to keepe in vre and exercise, the

skill and valour of her English. By which meanes, the spreading same and * extent of her Empire was fuch, that thee might feeme a fecond Train, who fuch, that shee might seeme a second Traian, who laide the circuite of the Romans the largest; having Guiana, oc. not onely so powerfull a Nauv still in readinesse, as whereby shee attained the Soueraignety of the Sea, but fo famous Sca-men alfo, as that, under her aufpicions Raigne, * twice was the whole Globe of the

(349) Neitherlesse was her renowne for those

Terrestriall World sailed round about.

other vertues which are the attendants of Peace; her Clemency, Iustice, and * Temperance: touching the last of which, as in one kind (of her diet and priuate life,) King Edward her brother viually called call her, his Lady her, his Lady Temper : so of another kinde of temperance in this learnedelt of Queenes, the * learnedft of Kings hath given this memorable testimony, that when as France (part of her Royall Title) was in citill warres, Spaine (her mortall Enemie) enfeebled both in power and purse, Netherland ambitious of her gouernment, and Scotland ruled by an Infant, yet in fuch abundance both of meanes, opportunities, and prouocations, so superabundant was her moderation and temper, that shee ever religiously abiteined from all ambitious delire of encrochment. on the rights or territories of any her neighbour Princes. Beeing in this, and those other her vertuous actions, fuch, as of whom that which was fooken of Antoninus Pius may more truly bee verified, that scarcely, in youth shee did any thing rashly, or in her age indifcreeily; scarcely, I say: for as a Creature, wee cannot exempt her from all frailties, as a Woman, from passions, or as a Prince, from all errors, whereinto, cuen against her owne naturall inclination, the might be drawen, either on milinformation. or on opinion of necessity in the State. For her Her Cours. Court, it was not onely a frequent Academie, of as Honourable Councellors, Illustrious Peeres, Gallant Courtiers, Learned Prof. fors, Intelligent Statifts, as euerattended any Christian Prince; but also a Nurfery, where yougue Nobles and others might bee trained up to the managing of greatest affaires, and a Her Councell. Sanctuary where the meanest might finde releefe against the mightiest; because as the Wisest in her Counsell were content to learne wisdome from her directions, so the Greatest were drawen to practise Equity, both by her example and command. Yea, which is more admirable in her Sex, so reserved was fhee from giving any man too-much interest, or being lead and ouerswaied by any of her Great-ones about her, that they all flood in a renerent awe of her Her awe. very presence and aspect; but much more of her least frowne or checke, wherewith some of them,

* By Drake and Her Vertues

praceable.
King Edward

King Ismerina fpeech to the Parliament,

hane bene lo suddenly daunted and Planet-Stricken, that they could not lay downe their griefe thereof but in their graues. A thing so much the stranger. Her Meckneile. confidering otherwise her incomparable meeknesse and gracious countenance and demeanours towards her people, who never fatiated with her fight and presence, were no otherwise affected with joy and Her loue swondering thereat, (though they beheld her neuer fo often) then if they had beheld fome Angelicall

who thought they might best presume of her fauor,

(550) These Soueraigne Arts of Maiesticall rule, were maruelloufly polified and perfected by her exquifite learning, and infight in the Arts Liberall : for

esplinu, rarifima omnibus (coulis ex

welerum Scriptorum tum Grace-rum, tum Latino-

rum libros confue-

t: velutare, &-

Beza Ep. prafix. Comment in Iob.

Her Languages. Her fauor to the Learned.

which if the Emperour Hadrian bee so highly commended, much more must this learned Empresse, who further to perfect her folid knowledge, read enery Author in his owne Originall, and answered most Nations Ambassadours in their owne languages. Yea, to farre was thee denoted to learning and the professors thereof, that in honour of it, and them, thee purposely went to the Vniuersity of Oxford twice, and once to Cambridge, at each time there spending many whole daies together, at the Academicall Exercises, and disputations of their chiefest learned men in all faculties. In both which noble

Academies, shee left not onely the deare remem-

brances of her gracious loue, deliuered to them

publikely in her Princely and Eloquent Orations,

but much more testified in her Princely bounty, by

enacting a law for the doubling (almost) of the

For which purpose every day all other affaires laide

away, shee let apart some howres, either to reade, or

yeerely reuenewes of all their noble foundations. Thus spent shee her time & cares in cherishing wisdome in others, and like Sabaes Queene feeking to encrease it in her selfe, esteeming a day spent otherwife (as Titus was wont to fay of himfelfe) quite loft.

heare her learned Readers; one of which number, (a * man of excellent learning) . professed, that her ram Regina Oxo-

Instructers as oft as they came to her presence about fuch employments, received fuch admirable documents from her, that they feemed rather to learne of her, then to bring learning to her; and that the lear-

nedest Anthors, as Dinine Plato, and the like, were made more divine by the learned Commentaries which shee wrote vponthem. In which respects, both of noble actions and arts, well may she bee paralelled with that cuer-renowned Zenobia, who hauing both perfectly read the Roman Story in Greek and also herselfe abridged the Alexandrian, and all the Orientall history, thereby attained to so high a

pitch of wildome and authority, that thee not one-

ly insulted upon the Romans, but held the Arabians,

Sarazens, Armenians, and other fierce and intracta-

efteeme, nor last in her readings: the pious fruites

whereof fhined brightly throughout the whole

course aswell of her private life, as publike actions.

In her Prinate; Picty, Sobriety, Purity, Charity, and

ble people in such obedience, that they neuer durst ftirre against her. (351) But amongst her volumes (which were ve ry many and choifest) the Booke of God was first in her

Publike.

Her Pictie.

'4 nc.

Chaftity (maugre the venemious tongues of all Hellborne Slanderers) were her unseparable Companions, neuer suffering any Lady to approach her sacred pre-sence, of whose staine she had but the least suspicion. For the Publike, the diffressed sheereleeved, the oppreffed thee foccoured, the ouer-borne Princes thee aided, the proud shee amated, and alwayes ouermaftered to her lasting memory, and Englands glory. But most especially shined her zeale to God (on whose onely Providence and reflexe of her owne vnstained Conscience, theereposed against all affronts of the world) in preferuing his true Church and worship, both from the pollutions of Idolatry, and frenzies of Nouelists; her Kingdome being a receptacle, and Court a Sanctuary for the banished Protestants as was the Pallace of Constantius (the husband of our Helena) for the perfecuted Christians, when hee fate Emperour of the West in this Hand of Britaine. Whereby as in her life time shee attained to be *sty led by forraine Churches; fo at her death was thee Sectin Sp. prafix by them generally lamented, as the Nursing mother of the French, Dutch, Italian, Exiles for Chrisis name, & the unconquered Defendereffe of the whole true Christian

worthy Prelates emploied about her: manifesting

(euen when filence oppressed her tongue) by liuely

fignes at their praiers and speeches, how she reioy-

ced with the Apostle, that she had fought a good fight,

finished her course, and kept the fasth, hoping for the

Iudge had laid up for her against that great day. And so her Soule departed this flesh (the earthen vessell

wherein fo many heavenly endowments had beene

treasured) beeing borne up by the Angels unto the

fruitions of endlesse blisse, the twentie fourth of

and of her glorious Raigne the fourty fourth yeere,

foure moneths, and feuenth day; as well beloued

and as much lamented as eyer was Prince; admired;

fauoured, and feared, as the worlds wonder and hea-

uens darling : being the last in order of those Mo-

narchs who had long raigned ouer the South-part of

this Island, and the greatest in same that ever ruled

before her, as if all their vertues had made a conflu-

ence in her, that so glorious a Monarchy might not

(353) Her body was embalmed, wrapped in

(her Statue beeing made according to life, in her

Parliament Robes with a Crowne on the Head

and Scepter in the Hand) it was voon Thursday

the twenty eight of Aprill, carried in a Charriot

(drawen by foure Horfes)couered with Purple Vel-

uct, attended upon by the Nobility, and with fo-

lemnities befitting fo great a Prince, brought into

the Collegiate Church of St. Peters at Westminster,

was there enterred in the Vault of her Grand-father

Henry the Seventh, in his most magnificent and beau-

tifull Chappell; where our renowned Soueraigne.

King James, in admiration of Her rare vertues and

excellencies, hath built Her (neere the place of her

Sifter Queene Maries Buriall) a Princely Monu-

haue end but with fo glorious a period.

(352) Thus shee liued, raigned, and dyed, in Peace, and full of glorie, celebrated by the tongues and pennes of the rarest spirits of all Nations (yea euenenemies) of her time : till laftly the God of Peace called her to a farre higher glory, by his vapartiall messenger death, who seized on her at her Manour of Richmond. Her fickenesse was accompanied with a deepe melancholy, wherein, as thee Her decise. gaue fignes of death voto the learned Physicians.

to great affurance of her eternall life, vnto all the

Thongs I make of Carchelter. Crowne of righteoufnesse, that the Lord the righteous D. Part now

March, the yeere of Saluation 1602. of her owne Her Age. age, fixty nine, fixe moneths, and fenenteene daies, Her Raigne

lead, and brought vnto White-Hall, from whence Her Funerals.

ment, inscribed with these ensuing Epitaphes of her Greatnesse, and the Actions of her Raigne, to the propagating of her renowne vnto all fueceeding

Memoriæ Sacrum. RELIGIONE AD PRIMAEVAM SINCERITA-NETA AD IVSTVM VALOREM REDVCTA, RE-BELLIONE DOMESTICA VINDICATA; GALLIA MALIS INTESTINIS PRAECIPITI SYBLEVATA BELGIO SUSTENTATO, HISPANICA CLASSE PROFLIGATA, HIBERNIA PVLSIS HISPANIS, ET REBELLIEVS AD DEDITIONEM COACTIS PA-CATA, REDITIEVS VTRIVSOVE ACADEMIAS LEGE ANNONARIA PLURIMUM ADAVCTIS, To-

TA DENIQUE ANGLIA DITATA, PRUDENTIS-

SIME QUE ANNOS XLV. ADMINISTRATA ELIZA-BETHA REGINA VICTRIX, TRIVMPHATRIX, PI-ETATIS STUDIOSISSIMA, FOELICISSIMA, PLA-CIDA MORTE SEPTVAGENARIA SOLVTA, MOR-TALES RELIQUIAS DVM CHRISTO IVBENTE RESURGANT IMMORTALES, IN HAC ECCLESIA CELESERRIMA AB IPSA CONSERVATA, ET DENVO FUNDATA, DEPOSUIT-

Obut xxiii. Marti, Anno falutis MDC II. Regni X LV. Etatis LXX.

Memoriæ Æternæ.

C LIZABETHAE ANGLIAE, FRANCIAE, ET HI-BERNIAE REGINAE, R. HENRICI VIII. FI-LIAB, R. HEN. VII. NEPTI, R. Ed. IIIL PRO-NEPTI, PATRIAE PARENTI, RELIGIONIS ET BO NARVM ARTIVM ALTRICI, PLVRIMARVM LIN GVARVM PERITIA, PRAECLARIS TVM ANIMI TVM CORPORIS DOTIEVS REGILS Q VE VIRTY-TIBVS SVPRA SEXVM

PRINCIPI INCOMPARABILI

IACOBYS MAGNAE BRITANNIAE, FRAN-CIAE, ET HIBERNIAE REX, VIRTUTUM, ET REGNORUM HARRES, BENE MERENTI PIE

REGNO CONSORTES ET VRNA, HIC OBDOR-MIMUS, ELIZABETHA ET MARIA SORORES, IN SPE RESVERECTIONIS.

Sacred vnto Memorie.

D ELIGION TO ITS PRIMITIVE SINCERITIE RESTORED : PEACE THROUGHLY SETLED; Coine to the TRVE VALVE REFINED; Re-BELLION AT HOME EXTINGUISHED; FRANCE, NEERE RVINE BY INTESTINE MISCHIEFES, RE-LEBVED : NETHERLAND SUPPORTED ; SPAINES ARMADO VANOVISHED ; IRELAND, WITH Spaniards expulsion and Traitors co-ERCION, QUIETED; BOTH VNIVERSITIES REVENEVVES, BY A LAVY OF PROVISION, EX-CEEDINGLY AVGMENTED; FINALLY, ALL ENGLAND ENRICHED, AND XLV. YEERES MOST PRVDENTLY GOVERNED : ELIZABETH, A QUEENE, A CONQUERESSE, A TRIVMPHER, THE MOST DEVOTED TO PIETY, THE MOST HAPPY, AFTER LXX, YEERES OF HER LIFE, QVIETLY BY DEATH DEPARTING, HATH LEFT HERE (IN THIS MOST FAMOUS COLLE-GIAT CHURCH, WHICH BY HER WAS ESTA-BLISHED AND RE-FOUNDED) THESE REMAINES OF HER MORTALITY, VATILL AT CHRISTS CALL THEY SHALL AGAINS RISE IMMOR-

She died xxiiij. of March, the yeere of Saluation M DC II. of her Raigne X LV . of her Age LXX.

For an Eternall Memoriall.

VNTO ELIZABETH, QUEENE OF ENGLAND, FRANCE, AND IRELAND & DAVINTER OF KING HENRY THE VIIL GRANDCHILD TO K. HEN. THE VIL GREAT-GRANDCHILD TO K. ED. THE DE. THE MOTHER OF THIS HER COVN-TREY; THE NURSE OF RELIGION, AND LEAR-NING; FOR PERFECT SKILL OF VERY MANY LAN-GVAGES, FOR GLORIOVS ENDOVEMENTS AS WELL OF MIND AS BODY, AND FOR REGALL VERTUES BEYOND HER SEX.

A PRINCE INCOMPARABLE:

IAMES OF GREAT BRITAINE, FRANCE, AND IREL AND KING, INHERITOR BOTH OF HER VER-TVES AND KINGDOMES, TO HER SO WELL DE-SERVING. PIOYSLY HATH THIS ERECTED.

Consorts BOTH IN THRONE, AND IN GRAVE, HERRE REST WE TWO SISTERS, ELI-ZABETH AND MARIE, IN HOPE OF OVE RE-



IAMES.

IAMES, OF THA NAME THE FIRST, AND FIRST

MONARCH OF THE VVHOLE ILAND OF

GREAT BRITAINE, VNITING VNDER ONE, AND THE SAME HIS MOST GLORIOVS CROVVNE, THE KINGDOMES OF ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, FRANCE, AND IRELAND. GODS IMMEDIATE VICEGERENT, SYPREAME HEAD OF ALL PERSONS, AND DEFENDER OF THE ANCIENT AND TRVE CHRISTIAN FAITH IN THESE HIS EMPIRE AND DOMINI-ONS. HIS PEACEABLE ENTRANCE, AND MOST HAPPIE BEGVN

RAIGNE The Tenth Booke.





A.D. 1602.

Efore the conceined forrowes, for the death of the late renowned Queen could fully be diffolued into teares, or those get passage from the heart to the eyes, the conduit was stopped with a fodaine iov, and all faces cleared. ore that sad pensiuenesse had therein set her full

that of Iudah, wherin the foundation of the fecond Temple was laid, whose ancient men mourned, as | Ezra. 3.12. doubting the glory thereof could not be answerable to that of Salemens; but as they were comforted by a Prophet from God, THAT THE GLORIE OF THE LATER SHOVED SVRMOVNT Hag. 2.4. THE FORMER, fo all English hearts by a divine bleffing from God were presently chered, when they Scouth Kings law their morning flarre arise in the North, whole

print. The flate of England flading that day, like ynto

I he joy of the English for the

Pppppp

	<u></u>			
	Pole with His attractive power, long before had		dient Catholike fonne; but this not working to theh]	
- 1	dra ne the Needle of the Southerne Compasse vnto		wished effect, and He now solemnly proclaimed with	
1			an vnineriall applante, loue and peace, their hopes	
- 1	that One point.		beganne to grow cold, and no fuccours from Spaine	
	(2) Immediately upon the death of the Queene,		Deganne to grow cold, and nord course from spanne	
24.	the Lords of the Land gaue full fatisfaction vnto the		being now to bee expected, Garnet the Superiour to	
	people, in proclaiming I A MES THE SIXT, King		auoid further dangers, facrificed thefe hunger-ftar-	
	of Scotland, by the name of I AMESTHE FIRST		ued Buls to Valcan the fiery God.	
- 1	KING OF ENGLAND, FRANCE AND		(5) King Iames in Scotland receiving intelligence	A.D. 1603.
- 1	IRELAND, DEFENDER OF THE FAITH		of the most plausible passages to this entargement	King Ismes com-
1	&c. to the ynfpeakcable comfort of all true Eng-		of his Stile and Dominions, prepared himselfe hi-	meth to Lessen
	&c. to the vn peakeable comfort of all true Eng- lish, aswell for his vn questionable claime, as for	ŀ	therward, and vpon the fixt of Aprill came to Bar-	
id.	that hee professed the same true Religion (whose		micke, thence to Wytherington, Newcastle, Durham,	His progresse and places of
	preservation was their tender care) as also for his		York, Dancaster, Newarke, Burleigh, Roiston, Theobalds,	and places of
	Garages Instrument and aversiones whereby her		and thence to London vpon the feuenth of May. In	entertamment,
	fingular learning and experience, whereby hee		all which places her was profit rotally and involve	
	was accomplished to undergoe the managing of		all which places hee was most royally and ioyously	
	fo great an Empire, having now attained to thirty		received, with all demonstrations of truest loyalty,	
	fixe yeeres, nine monethes, and fine dayes, exercised		loue and obedience, which was no leffe benignely	
	altogether in the practife of Kingly governement,	2	accepted of by his Maiesty, who the better to ma-	
	from the very first dayes of his infancy.	1	nifest his royall disposition, in all such places as hee	
- 1	(3) That his Title was most just, no man can de-		nifest his royall disposition, in all such places as hee came, where Gaioles for offenders were kept, out of	His mercy ex- tended to the
es his	ny, being sprung from the vnited Roses of Lanca-		his clemency most graciously set free the Prisoners	prifoners,
o the	fter and Yorke, King Henry the Schenth, and Queene Eli-		(those onely excepted, who lay for treason, murther,	•
of Eng.	zabeth his wife: whose Issue by the Male failing in		or Romish disloyalty) disbursing also large summes	
1	the land described Owen Elizabeth of clorions ma		of money for release of many others from their cre-	
	the late deceased Queen Elizabeth of glorious me-		ditors.	
i	mory, the offpring of Margaret their eldest daughter,			
1	was the next heire, which Lady married vnto Iames		(6) In all which progresse, admirable was the	
- 1	the fourth King of Scotland; by him had iffue King		confluence of people, which with halte to meete	The loy that was conceined
	Iames the fift, whose onely Daughter Queene Mary	1	him, feemedrather to flie then to runne, and fuch	was conceined
- 1	was Mother of this our mighty Monarch. Let Dole-	1	were their shoutes of ioy, that the hils resounded	at the fight of his Maiesty.
	man therfore dote vpon his own dreames, and other	l	the Eccho thereof, even up to the heavens, which]	in pinchy.
	like Traitors fashion their barres vponthe Popes	1	had beene so propitious, as to bestow on them so	
	forge; yet hath God & his right let him on the throne	1	good a King, which most abundantly appeared the	
et ap- y God the two	of his most lawfull inheritance, so to vnite the two	ŧ	day that his Maiefty removed from Theobalds to	
the two			London, when at Stanford-hill, neer vnto Totnam-high	
p3.	Crowns into one: Gods omnipotent arme bringing		Croffe in Middlefex, the City of London (represen-	
1	at last that to passe, which had often beene affay-	1	ted in the Lord Maior, the Aldermen, with five	
	ed, but could not bee effected by any power of man.	1		
	For, did not Edward our first, the terror of Spris, and	l	hundred choice Citizens, all in chaines of gold, &	
	Edward the fixt our godly Iofice, both of them di-		very well mounted) met his Maiesty, and with all	
	streffe scotland with their warres, only to have made	1	folemne observance attended Him vnto the Charter-	His Maichies
	an union by the marriages of the next heire, and of	[house neere Smithfield, which was most sumpruou-	Comming to
- 1	their Queene? But the time being not come, and	1	fly furnished for his royall entertainement. On	
1	all other preceeding Princes failing of their purpo-	ı	which very day, a Proclamation came forth against	His Malesties first proceedings
	fes, the peaceable vnion of those two Kingdomes,	1	ail griping Monopolies that hindred commerce,	first proceedings
1	England and Scotland, as also of two other, France	1	and Protections that stopped the due proceedings of	to maintaine
	and realered was referred for Him who is a nate	1	law, as also against other abuses in other inseriour	merce,
	and Ireland was referred for Him, who is a pat- terne of all princely Learning and Piety, vnto	1	carriages. All which were so acceptable to the	
	terne or an opinicely Learning and Fiety, vitto		People and Common weelth (which had beene too	
	all other Monarches uppon the furface of the	1	People and Common-wealth (which had beene too much eaten out with fuch Locusts & Caterpillers)	1
	Earth.	İ	much eaten-out with their Locuits of Caterphiers)	
	(4) But these calme proceedings without any		as neuer any King wanne himselfe more loue : these	
a tol-	oppugnancy, as they were most toyfull to the	ĺ	being accepted as the auspicious beginnings, pro-	
n Reli	English so were they admirable vitto other forrame		miling most happie sequels. So that His entrance	
	Nations, yea, and enuied at of some, especially, such		was as another Constantine, whose person every man	•
	as hoped for an alteration, or at least wife a tolerari-		prayed for and defired to fee: and for Peace ano-	
	on of Religion. And so much the rather, for that	1	ther Octanias having ruled peaceably aftout firring	
	Pope Clement the eight, had fent the yeere before	1	Nation, even from his yonger yeeres, and hard in	
Inferiți.	vnto Henry Garnet, Superiour of the Ichites in Eng-	1	peace with all the Princes and Kings of the earth: in	
ngs a- raitots.	land, two Bulles to the contrary; one to the Clergy,	1	which peace now laftly hec brought the Crown and	
remora.	int air air and the Friend The risk of the former	1	Kingdome of scotland to augment the glory, cir-	
	and the other to the Lattie. The title of the former		cuit and strength of this Realme of England, in whose	1
	was, Dilectis filijs Archipresbytero, & reliquo Clero	1	vnited body, as a faire branched tree, eucnat the first	
es Buls	Anglicano, &c. the later, Dilectis filis, Principibus,	4	Villed body, as a faire branche diecyclicitat tije in t	
armet.	& Nobilibus, Catholicis Anglicanis, Salutem & Apo-		hee beganne to engraft the Syences of his princely	
ice fuc-	folicam Benedictionem: the fumme of both thus. To	4	vertues, which by the sappe and Sunne-shine of his	
Ca-	our beloued sonnes, the Archpriest and the Clergy, the		iust gouernement still spredde more and more, like	
-	Peeres and Nobles, Catholikes of England, greeting, and		vnto the Cedars that grow vpon Lebanon.	٠,
	Apostolicall Benediction, Ge. The tenor was, that af-	-	vnto the Cedars that grow vpon Lebanon. (7) The English Empire these peaceably established, both by, and vnto, this peaceable Monarch:	ł
	ter the death of her Maiesty, whether by course of	E)	blished, both by, and vnto, this peaceable Monarch:	1
	Nature, or other wife : Whofoeuer should lay claime or	-1	from fundry fortaine Princes were left Almballa-	ì
uld not	title to the Crowne of England, though never fo directly	.	dors, to congratulate his entrance; as namely, from the Pals-graue of the Rheine, one of the Princes	Diuers Ambaffa
of the	I In interest Taller discourt Charlet met he admitted	3	from the Pals-grave of the Rheine, one of the Princes	dors came into England to con
ce be- ethren :	and neerely interessed by discent, should not be admitted	2	Electors for the Emperour of the Komars : from the	gratulate his
will a-	unto the thrones unle fe he would first tolerate the Romis	1	French King, Mounsier de Rosuy, Great Treasurer	corrance.
right.	Religion, and by all his best endeuours promote the Ca	1	of France: from the Spanish King, Don Ishn de Taf-	1
	tholike cause, unto which, by a solemne and sacred Oath	?	C. Com the States of Helland and Zaland . from	i
	hee should religiously subscribe, after the death of tha Miserable woman, for so it pleased his Holiness	7	fis: from the States of Holland and Zeland: from	ŧ
	Miserable woman, for so it pleased his Holiness	e	the Archduke of Austria: from the Seigniory of Ve-	L
	to tearme Elizabeth, that most great and happy Queen		nice: from the Duke of Florence, and from o-	1
	In Commence to the second	y	thers.	
	By vertue of which Buls, (if vertue may be in any			I Treate brought
	fuch vicious Libels) the Ichaites diffwaded the Ro	-	(8) But among an new-commers, none was	into England
	To tearme Elizabeth, that most great and happy Queen By vertue of which Buls, (if vertue may be in any such vicious Libels) the Icsuites dissayed the Ro milh-mined Subject from yeelding (in any wise	5	(8) But among all new-commers, none was more admired nor gazed on, then was Hugh Oneal,	
	By vertue of which Buls, (in vertue may be in any fuch vicious Libels) the Ichites diffwaded the Ro milh-minded Subicets from yeelding (in any wife obedience vnto King Iames, as being not an obe		(8) But among all the was more admired nor gazed on, then was Hugh Oneal, Earle of Tir-een, that perfidious, (but very valiant) fubtle	
			Earle of Tir-oen, that perfidious, (but very valiant)	

March 2

Crowne o

King fame:

kingdome

The Rom

hopes for a leration in

Ex Libro I

The Popes

tholike.

Christ won

inheritano

his Vicar w

BIGHT MINS EMPIKE. Monarch I. fubric, and fmooth-tongued Traitor, and Boutefest of inthronization, did bleffedly receive, with the of Ireland, that had beene the death of many a worperson of his Maiesty, the full accomplishment also thy man; who having (as wee have shewed) yeelof that Propheticall prediction of this His comming Choire brought ded himselfe to the Lord Generall Mountiey in the to the Crowne, which Antiquity hath recorded to hern is a flore sickenesse of the late Queene, was now by him haue beene therein inscribed thus, brought vnto Englands Court, to the Generals great C3 led Serum La coss, faid to be of honour, and Tir-cens great good, if hee could have Ni fallat Fatum Scoti hunc quocung locatum had grace to conteine himselfe. For not onely With the Scotz, Inuenient Lapidem, regnare tenentur ibidem. was he taken upon his lowly submission into fauour with his dread Soueraigne, and restored to his for-If Fates goe right, this Stone, where e're 'tis pight, mer estate and dignity, (a very great fauour to so The Stat Shall find, and there his Raigne asignid. great an offender) but a Proclamation was also made in his behalfe, and for his fecurity, that hee should For even there now the facted Oile was powred vpof all men bee honourably vsed (a grace, seldome on the royall Persons of King lames and Queene showed a Traitor) because as it seemed, his guilty Anne, by the most reverend Prelate, John Whitgift conscience surcharged with bloud, feared the hand Lord Arch-Bishoppe of Canterbury, the Princesse and Peeres wearing their Robes and Coronets, the Offiof enery man that beheld his face; and indeed many a woman , enraged for loffe of their husbands And hated. cers giving attendance in their places, and the Lord or fonnes, furioufly defired and affayed to quench their hatred with his bloud: in which perplexity Major of London in a Gowne of Crimson Veluet. with the Aldermen in Scarlet: twelue principal wee will leave him for a reftleffe Rebell, who laftly Citizens were admitted to attend them, all other forlike a fugitine left againe both his loyalty and his bidden because of the plague. owne Country. (11) As the great folitude of the City of Lon-(9) In the meane while the folemnities for the Trophees fet vp don by reason of this infection, and the retirednesses Coronation were prepared, and many flately Tro-phies (no leffe due to the confernation of Peace, longvafinified both of his Maiefly and all his Nobles, gave fome hopes to the fore-mentioned Priests and their Abetthen to the atchieuings of Warre) in London streets tots, for the easier accomplishing their plots: so was fer vp, which by reason of the great sicknesse in that it also some occasion of the delay of Justice on them Citie then cruelly raging, flood a long time rather after their treasonous designes were now fully like the ruines of some old decay, then the Princely brought to light: Wherefore, London continuing Pageants of a new Triumph. For before the ap still unfit for such a triall, and requisite concourse of The confpira pointed day of Coronation (which was the twenty tors conucied to Peeres and people, Winchester, the Tearme beeing there kept, was the place designed for their arraignefifth of Iuly beeing the feast day of Saint Iames the Apostle) a Proclamation came forth, that no ment, whither they were all conneyed under ftrong Londoner should presume to approach to the Court, gard. The first who there * came to their triall, the City having buried that weeke aboue a thouwere George Brooke, brother to the Lord Cobham, Nouem.15 fand of the plague. But yet a greater plague to the Conspiracies in-tended and re-treated, Sir Griffith Markham, and Sir Edward Parham, Brock Land then this, was intended some weekes before, sby, Copley, Wasfon, and Clarke; whose inditement had not the prouidence of a good God preuented was, that they had conspired; first, to destroy the the designes of mercilesse men. For, certaine Ita-King, secondly, to raise Rebellion; thirdly, to alter lianated Priests, boyling in reuengefull rancor, be-Religion; fourthly, to subuert the State; and lastly, cause their plots and hopes (which they vainely to procure forreine Inualion. That these their inpromifed themselves for advancement of their Retents they had made knowne vnto the Lord Gray, Their Inditeligion) were now past all appearance of possibility whom they meant should have bene Earle Marshall ments and conor successe, and combining with some other of betof England, Watfon Lord Chancellor, George Brooke ter Ranke and Note, whom private discontents had Lord Treasurer, and Sir Griffin Markham Secretary. whetted on to a publike mischiefe; contriued toge-That with the King, the Lords also should be surprither a desperate designe, for surprize of the Kings zed in their chambers at Greenwich, and the Lord Person and Prince Heavy his sonne. Of forces to Maior and Aldermen of London should bee sent for, effect it, they made no doubt, meaning to retaine and so be shut vp in the Tower. Islan Stown them prisoners in the Tower, and with the Trea-(12) George Brooke hecrounto answered (with Mr. George Prop fures therein to mainetaine their intent, or, if the a colour and pretext as leude as the attempt,) that Tower were impugnable, then to carry them to he had Commission from the King to doe what hee Douer Castle, and there by violence either to obtaine did, onely to try faithfull Subjects; which commit their owne pardons, a toleration in Religion, and a fron hee could not produce. Sir Griffin Markham (excepting onely the imputation of bloud) confecremoonall of some Counsellors of the State, or else to put some further project in execution. To consed his offence very penitently, alledging it was ceale this Treason, Watson the Priest denised Oaths through a discontented mind, and defired the Lords for secrecy, and himselfe with Clarke (another Priest to bee a meane to the King for mercy. Watfon and alfo) raught, that the act was lawfull, beeing done Clark (the former of which confessed he had drawen before the Coronation, for that the King was no all those Gentlemen into these plots) did vainely King, before he was annointed, and the Crowne fofitting fuch De-ctors. and ignorantly auerre, that they held the King no

King, vntill hee was Crowned, and that therefore it

could not be Treason : alledging, that Saul was not

King vntill he was chosen in Mizpeh, though he had

beene annointed in Ramah by Samuell the Prophet;

neither Ieroboam, who in the daies of salomon, had

beene confirmed by the Prophet to raigne over If-

rael, vntill the people made him King vpon the foo-lish answeres of Rehoboams. Thus these great Rab-

God to be his Vice-gerents in fully-established Com-

mon-weales, and those Kings which himselfe extra-

ordinarilie aduanced, and crected to be the whips in

his hand; as the first manifestly proued, when they

had cast off Samuel, and the latter allotted to no o-

therend, as by the Prophet is apparent, where God inhim faith, I gave them a King in mine anger, and I Hofta 13.11.

bies made no difference betwirt the mediate and apply Scriptures

ordinary fuccession of lawfull Princes, ordeined by Treasen,

lemnely fer on his head.

of the King and

July 25.

(10) The other persons whose loyalty was

likewise called into question, as involved in the at-

tempt, were Henry Brooke Lord Cobham and Lord

Warden of the Cinque Ports, Thomas Lord Gray of

Wilton, Sir Walter Raughley Lord Warden of the Stan-

neries, Sir Griffin Markham, and Sir Edward Parham

knights, George Brooke, and Bartholmew Brookshy Ef-

quires, and Anthony Copley 2 Gentleman ; all which

parties beeing apprehended, were committed some

to the Gatchouse at Westminster, others to the Tow-

er of London. Meane while (notwithstanding the

raging ficknesse) the day for the Coronation (being

the feast of Saint lames) was celebriously kept, with

all solempe performance and ancient Rites of the

English Kings, in the Collegiate Church of St. Peter

in Westminster. Where, the antique Regall Chaire

	tooke him away in my wrath; but the more learned	George Brooke, that vaire the principall plotteries and			1-20	LITTED ENTITIVE, INTONATCH I.	- 887
	enformed them, that in England is no Inter-regnum,	intifairs of all the rest, to the embracing of the saidis trea-			Christ-Church, Worcester, Westminster, Paulis, Chester,	moued two especiall considerations; the one of th	101
1	because the King neuer dieth, and that the Corona-	fonabill Machinations, wee thairfore (being refoluid to		-	and Windfor, with Doctor Field, & Doctor King, the		
	tion is but a Ceremony to shew the King to the	mixe Clemency with Iustice) aire contented, and by these			now Lord Bishoppe of London. To deliuer the Plan- tiffes desires, were summoned, and appeared Doctor	to oce pronounced voon cuery leight cante the o	
1	people.	Presentis command you, our present Sheriffe of Hamp- Shire to superseid the Execution of the saidis two Noble			Reynolds and Doctor Sparkes of Oxford, M. Knew-	the Otthe Perions, Why Las-menus Chancellors &	∂ {
Nonember 17.	(13) Two daies after was Sir Walter Raughley brought to the Barre, beeing indited for combi-	men and to take thaim backe to thair prison againe, quhile	1 i		Subs, and M. Chaderton of Cambridge.	Committatics, and not rather the Deane and Chan	. i 1
Sit Walter Raugh	ning with the Lord Cobham (his accuser) in the	our further pleasure bee knowin. And since we will not			(19) The first sitting was your Sarurday, the	ter, or other graue Ministers and Chaplaines should bee assumed by the Bishops for their assistants there	d
for arraigned and	foresaid designes. Whereunto he pleaded not guil-	have our Lawis to have respect to persons in spairing the				in. The last which was touching a sufficient Mini-	
	ty, and so stood for his purgation, as he heldargu-	great, and strikking the meaner fort; It is our pleasure,	1		ber at Hampton-Court, whereinto the Church-Court	fteric in Ireland, his Maiefly referred to another	
1	ment from morning till night, to the hearers no lit-	that the like cour fe be also taken with Marckham, beeing	1 !		mounts official period admirred by his Maieffiee com-	i day.	1 1
	tle admiration, that a man of so exquisite vaderstan-	forry from our hairt, that such is, not onely the heynous	l i		maund) in the presence of his Priny Conneell, he made a most godly and princely declaration of his entent,	(21) But his Maiesty received full satisfaction &	The Prelates fa-
1	ding and experience should give consent vnto such	nature of the saidis condemnid personis crime, but even the corruption is so great of their naturall disposition, as	1	His Maieftie	in fummoning this Affembly, in effect, thus; That	contentment by the icucrall answeres to all his de-	tistaction to nis
	a plot, no leffe foule, then foolish. Yet in fine hee	the care ve have for the safety and quiet of our State, and	1	O-ation vm the Clergy.	"this his proceeding was no nouell deuife, but ac-		
1	was found guilty, and had fentence of death. (14) The like judgement, a few daies after, paf-	good Subsection, will not permit us to use that Clemency				of England held it no effentiall part of the Sacrament of Baptisme, but a * practife of the Primitive Church	
The Lords Cob-	fed vpon the Lords, Cobham and Gray, arraigned on	towardis thaim, quhich in our owin naturall inclination,	l i		"who in the commencement of their raignes, while-	yea of the * Apofles, (as * Calsin himselfe expound	S Hieron aduces
raigned and con-	two feuerall daies. The former being indited, for co-	vee micht very easily be persuadit vnto.	1	1		their meaning, who also wished the restitution there-	Luciferian.
demneo.	bining with Sir Walter Raughley and George Brooke, to	(17) This Letter thus framed, the delivery there-	The Kings mer-		"Church both for doctrine and policy, to which	of in fuch Churches where it had been abolished	*Heb.6. v. 2.
	procure forces from the King of Spaine and the	of his Maiefly committed vnto one Iohr Gibb a Scot-	cifull reprine of the Pritoners rea-		"the very Heathen themselves had relation in this "their Proucrbe à Ioue Principum. And particu-	and for Impolition of hands on children warranged	d Caram mare.
	Arch-Duke, for an Inualion, &c. The other for	tifh Gentleman, a discreet person, and free from de-	dy to dy	i Manyalterat	" larly in this land, King Henry the eight, towards the	by *Christ himselfe, a Custome still retained in ou	IF df. c 8.0.27.
	ioyning with the forefaid Priests, Knights, and Gen- tlemen, in their fore-mentioned conspiracies. The	pendancy of any Noble man or Counsellor, nei- ther was he of any extraordinary ranke, as well that	10,000	ons in the chi fince K. Henr	70. Circl of his raight; after him King Edwardthe five	Church, as very godly and necessary for those ve	- Mat.19.13
1	Lord Chancellor of England, beeing Lord Steward	the by-ftanders should not observe any alteration	1 1		who altered more; after him Oueene Mary, who	ry reasons and vies, which his Maiesty had mentioned, and truly observed. Touching Absolution, is	
1 1	for that feruice, fate vnder a Cloth of Estate in the vp-	for the execution, as the delinquents themselues) ["reperied all; and the laft Oneen of famous memo-	was answered, that as Christ desired nor the death	Of Abfolation.
1 1	per end of the Hall, the Nobles fitting (as their	take any apprehension by his presence, to the end) {		"ry, who letled the Church flate as now ir flan-	of illiners, to nee fight given power and commande	-1
	Peeres and Judges) on benches voon both fides.	that each of them feuerally should prepare to breath	1			ment to his Ministers, to pronounce his mercy with	hi I
1	Those at the Barre he willed to bee bold, and to an-	out their last breath, with a true confession of their	1		"happier then they, in that they were faine to alter "thole things which they found established, where-	remilion of linnes vnto all Penitents, that the pra-	-ì (
1	fwere without feare: the Kings learned Counfell he	fecret confciences. The time approaching, Sir Grif-	1 1		as himielte law yet no caufe, fo much to change a-	Ctife hereof in the English Church, is so farre from	1 .
1	intreated not to confound the memory of the prifo- ners with vnnecessary matters: and the Peeres.	fin Markham brought to the Scaffold, (to that end erected on the Castle Greene) made himselfe ready	1 1		"ny thing, as to confirme that which He found fo	Popery, as that the Reformed Churches of Augusta. Boheme, and Saxony, do both allow it, and retaine it.) ']
1	though vnfworne, hee aduited to try indifferently	for the froke of the Axe, when secretly Master Gibb	1 1			yea, and Calain himselfe approves it. Of Prinate	2
	betwixt the King and the arraigned; who both plea-	deliuered vnto the high * Sheriffe of the Shire the	l 1		"Royall heart, that it pleased him, both to enter in	Baptifme it was aniwered, that though the words fee	الشييحاء
1 1	ding not guilty, were yet found otherwise by the	Kings Warrant to the contrary, who soone percei-	*Sir Be Tubbern.			med formwhat doubtfull vet the practife of the Ene	tilme.
	Court, and received indgement of death.	uing his Maiesties intent tooke backe the prisoner,	1		"he put off his hat) for bringing him into the land of Promise, where Religion was purely professed,	lith Church did contradict all administration of a	it l
Wasfon and Clark	(15) Of all these arraigned, Sir Edward Par-	(as if he were first to confront the two Lords in the	1		"where he fate among graue, learned, and reuerend	by Laickes and Women, in censuring them in tha	ut
vpon the 29. of Nouember,	ham only was acquitted by the Iury, and of all the rest onely three died, which were waten. Clarke.	Hall vpon some service to the King,) from the Scaf- fold, and brought him into the Castle Hall. Then	S'at Griffin Mark.		Diames, who better knew what belonged to the	cale: whereupon it was concluded, that a lawful Minister only should be imployed in times of neces	1
1	and Malter George Brooke: the former of which, ha-	was the Lord Gray brought forth, who having pow-	from the Scaffold		State of a King, to the honor and order of a king.	fity, when the Infant was in danger of life; yet fo vn	-1
Mr. George Brook	uing at large laied open in Print, the Treasons and	red out his praiers vnto God, at length kneeling	1		"dom, then some other Nations did, and withall to	derftood, that the person was in no wise to bee repu	
December being	vnfufferable machinations of the Iefuiticall Order,	red out his praiers vnto God, at length kneeling downe for the stroke of death, the Sheriffe bad stay,	1 1		"affure the Prelacy there present, that Hee inten-		
Tuelday.	left this suspition on them at his death, that they, in	telling the Lord that some further service was expe-	1 1		"ded not any Innouation, acknowledging the Go- uernement Ecclefiasticall to haue beene approued	for Excommunication, it was there resolved, that the	e OfEscommir.
Ioka Staw.	reuenge, had cunningly and couertly drawen him	cted of him, and thereupon likewife lead him againe			"by manifold bleffings from God himfelfe, both for	abuses (if any luch there were) being removed and	- ucation,
1 1	into this Action, which brought him to this shame-	into the Castle. The Lord Cobham then was brought	The Lord Cab-		"the encrease of the Gospell and with a most bonny	amended, that facred censure should retaine its ne-	- 1
1	full end. After whose death, his Maiesty then at	to the Scaffold, who being in praiers and preparation for death, the Lord Gray and Sir Griffin were	bam Lord Gray	No State with	"and plorious peace. Ver because nothing could	ceffary vigour in the Church; and to for that day his Maieft; difmiffed the Affemby of his Prelates.	3
	Wilton, (hauing commanded his Lords, to deliuer the true natration vnto him of the whole procee-	brought backe againe, where the prisoners all three	and Sit Griffin	our corrupti	be to ablolutely ordered, but that fomewhat might	(22) Vpon Munday following, being the fix-	
1	ding in the arraignements and answeres of all the	appearing together on the Scaffold, the Sheriffe no-	ued,		" Dec added, and many State as in the hody of man	teenth of I anuary, those other Doctors, who were	The other Do-
}	rest) signedalso a warrant for the execution of the	tified his Maiesties Warrant for the stay of their Ex-	1 1		Corruptions like il humors might infensibly grow	to relate the diflikes of the Opposites, were called	before his Ma-
1	Lords Cobham and Gray, as also Markbam, to be per-	ecutions, and that as then they should not dy. Vp-	1		ceither through time or persons; his purpose was, cafter the example of a good Phisitian, to make	likewise into the Priny Chamber, where in presence	e letty.
1 1	formed the Friday following before ten of the clock	on which rare Clemency, vnexpected both of prifo-	1 1		e fearch into the supposed diseases, and to examine	of his Prelates and Peeres his Maiesty delinered vn-	-
1 4	in the morning. Notwithstanding his Maiesty more	ners and spectators, arose such shouts of the people,	ì I		1 "the complaints, loto remove the occasions there-	to them, a pithy & princely declaration of his mind, "That He intended not to innovate the governe-	1
	mooued to milde mercy, then the high straine of	as was wonderfull, crying God faue the King, and the	1 1		"of, if they proue scandalous, or to cure them, if	fr ment now established which by long experience	The Kings Reff.
	Inflice, of his Princely and free elemencie, gaue life vnto those persons, expecting present death, and	condemned ouercome with his Clemency, wished they might facrifice their lines to redeeme their own	1		they were dangerous or if but frigology verto take	er ment now sestablished, which by long experience	to them.
	thus with his owne hand wrote to counterchecke his	faults and to repurchase so merciful a Princes	1 1		"knowledge of them, thereby at once both to cast a	"fings of God forty five yeeres, as that no Church	
1	former Warrant.	loue.	1		" foppe into the mouth of Cerberus, and of all facti-	"vpon the face of the earth hath more flourished	1) [
The Kings Let-	(16) Although it bee true, that all vell governid and	(18) This businesse thus transacted, for the safe-	The Ministers		"quiet and sober minded men.	"then this of England. But rather his meaning; and	1) [
the Execution.	floorishing Kingdomes and Common vealthis aire esta-	ty of the Kings Person and whole Kingdome; his	petition to the		(20) His Maiefly concluding this his general ad-	"earnest desire was, first to settle vniformity through the whole, for the more quiet and slourishing e-	1 1
die precinon.	blished by Instice, and that these tue Noblemen by birth,	ty of the Kings Person and whole Kingdome; his Maiefty, (who well confidered, that the quiet of a	booke of Com-	His Maiestics	uertifement, entred more particular discourse with	"flate thereof: fecondly, to plant unity for the fup-] 1
1	that aire now open the point of execution, aire for their	Weale-Publike cannot possiblie subsistions, without the peaceand well-managed government of the	mon Praier.	demands tour ing fome fup	the Bilhops (for his owne prinate information) con.	"preflion of Papifts and enemies of R eligion shird.	
ł	treasonable practises condemnid by the Law, and adjud- git voorthy of the execution their cost, to the exemple and	Church,) having among many other Petitions which		ing loate tupp fed abufes.	cerning the Booke of Common Prayer, Excommunica-	"ly to amend, abuses as incident to Bodies politike.	
1	terror of otheris: The one of thorn having filbile tra-	were presented to Himat his first entrance, received	1		tion in the Ecclefiasticall Courts, and the provision	as the hadow to the body Naturall; which once	
1	terror of otheris: The one of thatm having filshily pra- Etifed the ouerthrom of the quhole Kingdome, and the	one from certaine persons of vinquiet spirits, against	1		of fitte and able Ministers for Ireland. Touching matters in the saide Booke, hee desired satisfaction;	getting entrance, hold on as a Wheele doch his	1 1
1	other for the surprise of our owin Personne: yet in re-	the established Gouernment and Liturgy in the Eng-	.}	Confirmation	First, for Confirmation, which if it were held and so cal-	"motion, when it is once fet on going. Among the	1
1	gair à that this is the first yere of our Raigne in this King-	Lifb Church, refolued now by his Princely judge-	1 1		led, as if the Sacrament of Baptime were therby con-	"complaints therefore of many greeuances made in fine his entrance into England, none was more	1 1
	dome, and that never King was fo farre obleishid to his	ment, as another Hezekiah to breake the Brazen-	2.King.18.		firmed, & were inualidous without it, then was it in		l
1	People as ve have beene to this, by our entry here with fo	Serpent, if Idolatry were thereunto committed, and like a second <i>Iosiah</i> , to reade the law of the Lord him			his judgement blasphemous: but if it were only that	"amend, then fuch as might concerne the flare of	willing to smend
ì	hairty and generall an applause of all sortes. Among quhom all the kinne, freindis, and allies of the saidis con-	felfe · wherenpon by Proclamation hee commanded	1 S		Children, who at their Baptisme made profession of	"the Church, if the same did in any wise decline	abules,
1	demnid personis, vaire as forduart and duetifull as any	an affembly of selected Divines, such as could best deliuer the minds of both parts, to appeare in his	for a conference		their faith by the mouthes of others, might before the Bishoppes professe it in their owne persons, and	"from the ancient and Apostolicall rule. For which	
1	other our good Subjectis, as also that at the very time of	deliuer the minds of both parts, to appeare in his	to bee held at		foreceine Episcopall Benediction by prayer, and	ce cause he had sent for them, whom hee vnderstood to bee graue, learned, & modest Divines, to heare	
1	thair Arrainement none did more freely and readily give	Royall presence, at his Mannor of Hampton-Court:	+ On Thuriday		imposition of hands, then was it of very sacred vse in	"by them those greenances, and severall objections	
1	thair affent to thair conniction, and to deliver thaim into	whither the firmmoned accordingly repayred for	Ianuary 12.		Gods Church. Secondly, for Absolution, which his	"at large, and defired them boldly to declare the	
1	the handis of Iustice, then so many of thair neerest Kins-	the maintained Church-state, were the Lord Arch- bishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Dur-	The persons form	Abfaintion.	Maiesty had heard compared to the Popes pardons.	" fame,	
1	men and Allies (as being Peeris) vatere vpon thair Iury; as likeusifein regard that I uffice hath in some fort gottin	ham, Winchester, Worcester, Saint Dauds, Chichester	moned.	Private Baptifu	Thirdly, for Private Baptifme, which hee veterly di-	(23) Wherupon Doctor Reinolds, a very learned	}
1 .	course already, by the execution of the two Priestis, and	Carliel and Peterboron: the Deanes of the Chappel,		Excommunica	fliked to bee administred, but by a lawfull Minister. His second point was Excommunication, wherein hee	man, after a preamble grarulatory (vpon his knees)	D. Romaldine
}	compounding of the extension of the two 1716/115, and	Christ-		нод	1113 Iccolia politi was Excommunication, wherein nee	with acknowledgement of Gods mercy in giuing vs	Speaker for the Complainance
					·	Qqqqq 601	I

	logodly, so learned, so carefull a King, reduced all	ges and learning being imployed, after long confe-			0 1	11 Same OKEVI DV	I I AINS EMPIRE. Monarch 1.	1 000
1	matters, either desired or disliked amongst the weake	rence, much reading, and diligent comparing of al			-			889
	Brethren (whose Spokesman hee protested hee would	translations with the ancient originals it is now made	. 1		1			.1
	nor haue been, but onely voon his Maiesties man-	exactly and happily published, as a witnesse to the	. (1	horene gracioully accepted, then most louing		
1	datory Summons) vnto those four cheades. I. for	WOIIG DOING CONTAIN PROMISE that Hea	. 1		1		on the dearh of F G	·
1	prescruation of true doctrine. 2, for placing of good	uen and Earth Ibould Derill, but his word thould never	· 1		1	(29) Neitherlesse was his Maiesties desire to re		
į.	Pastors, 3. for fincere administration of the church	and allo of the Kellgious care of this his Vice gerent	*				Drofecure which had - C 1	1
Į.	gouernement; 4. for explanation of some clauses	in feeking euen at the first, the first thing that man is	}		I		f father Cremell the Lainer Tolais	
i	in the Common-prayer Booke. It would be here	commanded to feeke after, whose praise shall stand	1		1	Marchandizing and Nauigations of trafficke, by rea fon of the long continued breach betwixt England		
1	too impertinent, to farce an historicall Narration	for euer in the Record of that godly worke, and the	1		1		a great Countellor to the king	1
1	with those Theologicall particulars, which vpon those seuerall points were then produced, and are	worke shall instifie it selfe against all gaine-sayers to Gods eternall glory, and many soules great com-	1			tranquilitie, endeauoured to falue againe those		1
*The Confe	*eliewhere to be found exactly related. Yet as wee	fort.	1		Pfal.141.00			ĺ
rence at Howa-	cannot but commend the judgement of these foure	(26) His fecond facred project was, that as now	}		1		Profitche would bee very gratefull to their me	1 .
to Court, printed	Digities (as collecting the third point) in their hading							
1	no inference to the Episcopall Hierarchie of our Church, in no one word they impugned or disap-	therne parts, true Religion (which Hee there anowed to	cond religious		1			
1	Church, in no one word they impugned or difap-	Dec the onety band of true obedience might be through-	Centerence		The two king-	(30) Both Domeflicke and forraine affaires thus		
1	proued the lame; to much more mult we celebrate	ly planted. Which religious purpole He lo zealoufly			domes vnited vnder the name		wen in Wales was hold forma	
1	the admirable dexterity, judgement and learning of	projection, cipecially for the North and all Sent.	. 1		of Great Britaine		like complors. Winter all that furnmen followed at	sara,
1	his facred Maiefty, joyned with so rare industry and	land, as that He held it not sufficient to have joyned			ĺ		King in his Progresse and lesslig had an Grosse but	
1	patience, whose owne accurate search and exquisite	thele two Kingdomes into one Temporal Monar-	. [1	files under the name of one entire Empire, and the two Nations into a joint bleffed unity; Hee cau-	Count Miranda, that his King would be flow a hun-	1
1	expositions of Scriptures, Fathers, and primitive	chy, vnlesse He might see them both vnited also in	-		1	fed himfelfe by Proclamation to be enflited King of		
i	practiles, did there both breed wonder & aftonifh.	the Doctrine, Regiment and Rites of one [piritual]	1					fwere and offer
*Then all ma	ment in that noble and learned audience, and also	Hierarchy. Neither was his princely wisdome for			-		the felt in the next Spring, when (at the farthest)	1
*They all pro- mifed of edience,	giue fingular satisfaction (euen to the *agents for the Opposites) touching all the exceptions taken to the	the meanes leffe conspicuous then his zeale in	1		1		incant to let foot in England; on whole be-	
and Doctor Searle write	Church-ftate; which his Maiefty now found to bee	the intendment, in making so heedfull choise of such English Divines, aswere (not long after) in			1			
Sparke writ a booke to per- fwade vnto	no other then the phantaimes of a ferupulous in-	this imployment fent into Scotland; the very first,	1]	1			1
fwade vnto	discretion.	in which Apostolike Ambassage for establishing	i		1			1
conformity.	(24) The Wednesday following, being the 18:	those Neighbour-Churches was he, whose eminen-	1				fired their continual aduertifements, if in the mean time it chanced the old Queene to die.	
The conclusion	of Ianuary (appointed for the next meeting)	cy both for Place and Piety, is now worthily for-	ł		1		(35) Winter thus laden with hopes, returneth	
of the Confe-	his Maiesty againe, with most of the Lords of his	moft in guiding our owne; and whose blessed tra-	The new Lord		lefuires and	(31) Two other Proclamations afterwards came		The hopes of
rence.	Priny Councell, entred the Chamber: where the	uels in that feruice, as they were acceptable to God.	Canterbury(D.		Seminary prieffs banished.		of Garnet, Catesby, and Tresham, and they vnto o-	the English Ca-
1	Reverend Prelates with fuch others onely as the L.	his Maiesty, and that Nation; so are they a docu-	George Abbot)	. 7	1			-11-11-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1-1
1	Archbishoppe appointed, (for so his Maiesty co-	ment to others, how powerful & admirably fucceffe-	Gentione Cost		1	confirme the Ecclefiasticall gouernment, and Booke of Common Prager, in the same forme and estate, as	i tuny, latisfied, expecting the day. But before the t	
	manded) being admitted to his Royal prefence, after	ful true Learning is, where it is onided with true Pru-	land.	and the same of th	1	Queene Elizabeth left them; to the no little griefe	DDFING-time was fully approached at a law law	
1 1	iome conference about the High Commission court	dence, and where Fiety and love of Gods glory is lin-			1	of the workers for Rome, whole designes began now		
	Subscription, Oathex officio and the like, his Maiesty	ked with Charity, and zeale of mans good.			1	to lucke in luch povion, as in the venting whereof		
1 1	(cauling the other foure Diuines to beethen called in)was pleafed to declare what formerly had, paft;	(27) This great businesse and conference so roi- ally accomplished his Maiesties next care was sherein						
1 1	and for a conclusion, thut vp all with a godly ex-	also as another Constantine) to perpetuate the main-			1			
1 1	"hortation, like another Constantine, perswading	tenance of this flourishing Church (whose peaceable	,	3	1	ftonied and confounded, to give those Serpents the	fignifie whose death Christopher Wright was from Catesby and others sent into Spaine, and Guy Farrkes	
1	"cuery man to unity, and to a diligent discharge of	eftate hee had thus prouided for) with the reuenues	A Parliament		Ier. 2, 12. The treason con-	fronied and confounded, to give those Serpents the breath or benefit of aire. Vnto which bloudy, hor-	likewife was posted thirtee from Francis le	Christopher
1 .1	their duties, their in feueral places, the fuperiors to	of her ancient foundations; as also to establish salu-	The Church		Ceived against the State.	Libic and odious act to God and man my Crile much	Cates by and others fent into Spaine, and Gay Farykes likewife was posted thither from Bruxels by Sit Williams Stanley, both of them to prosecute the former negotiation, assuring the Spanish King, that King	Wright fent into
	"gouerne without violence, the interiors to obey	tary lawes for the peaceable government of his peo-	lands not to bee alienated.		the State.	now turne: a matter indeed to diffailing for mee to	negotiation, affuring the Spanish King, that King	the death of thi
1	"without murmuring, and all of them to builde	ple; to which purpose a Parliament was affem-			1	remember, or to write of that it abhorres my very	1 I drives meant for ninne the tame course and a.	Queene,
1 1	"Gods Temple without found of discord; desi-	bled at Westminster, the 19. of March, wherein, for	1		1	foule to fill the penne with inke, or to blotte the pa- per with these far blacker spots of darknes, and de-		
1 1	"ring and commanding all prefent, not only them-	the Church it was enacted, that neither Archbi-			1	formers of Englands faire face.		
1 1	felues to labour that way, but to be a meanes to	thoppe nor Bishoppe should alienate, affure, give,	Ex Parliament.		1 1	(22) The plotte wife to undamine al. D. 1		
	"draw on all others vnto a peaceable conformity,	grant demile, or in any fort conney, no, nor to the	Lucus primas		1	ment house, and with Gunpowder to blow vp the	IDORECO VIIIO CMENTOTA-HAMEN where the Domin.	
1 1	"the matters being no other (as now hee faw plaine-	King himfelfe, his Heires or Successors, any of the	ĺ		The heathenith		minucu would bee forward to affift them baning in	
1 1	"ly) but of meere weakeneffe: wherein persons	Honors, Castles, Manors, Lands, Tenements or	1		Gunpowder Treason.	burgelies, the very confluence of all the flower of	areadinesse two thousand horse furnished for the	Proceedings a-
1	"difereet would doubtlesse bee easily henceforward ereclaimed, and for the vidifereet & reluctant, their	Hereditaments, being parcell of the possessions of				Glory, Piety, Learning, Prodence Authority in the		gainst Trainors.
1 1	"roomes were more behougfull then their feruices:	his Archbishopricke or Bishopricke, and if any so were, to be extrerly voide and of none effect, nor-	İ		1 1	land; lathers, tonnes, prothers, allvee friends	great difference betwire States in boshituy, and of kings raigning in friendshippe, in no wife would listen to insude tengland, or further to proceed in a supportible enterposite.	1-5-1
()	"by their fruitestherefore He should discerne and	withflanding any former law, flatute, act, or ordi-	1				Kings raigning in friendshippe in no wife would it	King Philip
i 1	"iudge them; Obedience and Humility being the	nance to the contrary.					ften to inuade England, or further to proceed in a ft	tile attempre
1 1	"markes of honest and good men, which thence-	(28) Foure dayes before this Parliament com-	1			lowes of deliruction, tainioned in the force of the		gainst England.
1	"torth hee would expect from as highly as would	menced, it pleased his Maiesty, with the most noble	March 15.		-	bottomlesse pitte, put in practile in a vault of dark-	(36) In the meane while the Iesuites had been	1
1	"be held well affected to his Majetty and his State.	Queene Anne, and the most illustrious Prince Hen-	The Kines tri-		1 1	nesse, and forwarded by him that is the father of darkenesse, and in darkenesse I could wish it might	tampering to diffwade the acceptance of King James	
	Which princely exhortation (deliuered with much	ry, attended with glorious troupes of great Peeres.	umphant paffage through Landon.		4. 11	cuer dwell, whole like was never renegled to the	Into England, Viging It for a Maxime, that death	
	more feeling words, and mouing earnestnes) was	Prelates, and Courtiers, to ride in triumph through			The Tranters	light of the Sunne Their intent when they art	was to bee indured, rather then to admit an heretike	
)	so piercing as it fetched teares from some of both	the City of London to Westminster, the houses beau-			1 11	gious atchieuement had beene performed war to	(fo it pleased them to tearme the Lords annointed)	- 1
1	fides, and all vnanimonfly protested their most du-	tified with rich hangings, the ftreets adorned with	1		1 11	in prize the remainder of the Kings Hine to alterre.	and those that gaue him consent they held lyable to Excommunication by the censure of Pope Clement	ł
1	tifull obedience to those his Royall commands.	goodly Trophees and Pageantes, of senerall na-	1		1 31	ligion and the State, and to bring in forgane power	the eight, who had liberally bestowed upon his sa-	
1	(25) Belides this maine fruit of this famous con-	tions inhabiting, the rayles on both fides conered	Į .		Proceedings a.	Sir Edmund Ramaman arrainted person (who Quad	cred person the names of a Puritan, an Heretike, a	1
1	ference, the fetling of the Church-peace, fundry o- ther important matters (not here to be pretermit-	with blew cloth, the feuerall Companies honoura-			ganat I taitors.	himielte Prince of the damned Crew)was fent unto	Caluinift, a Perfection of Protestants, and another	- 1
		bly addressed, and ranked vnder the displayed En- fignes and Armes of their seuerall Trades and Sci-			Alexan appoint	the Pope as hee was a temporal Prince to acquaine 1	Inuan Apopata.	- 1
1	were therein also projected, and by his Maicsties e-	ences; the one shewing the wealth and state of the	· ·		red the Poft. Pag 133.	him with the Gunpowder-treason; a fitte Poste in-	(37) The Romaniks thus loofened from their	1
1 1		City; the other, the body of the Citizens and go-				deed to bee imployed betwixt the Pope and the	Ankor-hold of Spaine, and left by that Dilote to	- 1
	after-times brought the birthes to perfection. The	uernement, and all making manifest the vnsp cake-			1		init for themselves, now perceiped their owne er-	- 1
	httl(hoth in due tanke and use) was his forest Do	able toy they conceived to receive their great So-	1		Winter fentinto	(33) This treason was first set on foot in the last cree of the late Queenes raigne, when Henry Gar-	FOR IN CITIONS EXPECTATION. That change of Coast 1	- 1
The translation	cree for a new Translation of the holy Scriptures	ucraigne into this His City and Imperial Chamber.	[Spaine.	tet the Superiour of the Iefuites, Catesby and others	would change Religion: but shee now gone, whose	1
of the Bible	vpolia princely and pious care of Gods eternall	In pledge of which their excessive toy, vnfained	Sir Heary Stone		l î	ent Thomas Winter into Spaine to negociate with	I life they had often laid for, and her godly Success I	. 1
intended and commanded.	Truth according to the Originals, as also for an vni-	loue, and vowed fidelity, the Resorder at the Croffe	tague. * See Jahn Stemes		i i	Sing Philip in the name of the English Catholikes;	for no whit inferior to her for advancing the Gof-	
1	forme reading thereof in the Churches. To which	in Cheape, both gratulated his Maiesty with a * pi-	* See Ishn Stemes Annales		į t	irst, to send an army vinto them, who now were in a	pell: their hopes grew desperate(as these desperates alleadged) and no other meanes now left them but	į
1.	end three selected Companies from Geford, Cam-	thy peech in the name of the City, and wishing him			re	cadinesse to joyne their Forces with his; se-	I onely to kill the King whom they fully ani: 1 They	despetate
1	bridge and in London, most judicious in the langua-	agolden raigne, presented his Greatnesse with a	1		0	ondly, to grant some pensions vnto fundry per-	ated to hane broken his promife for a toleration in Papill	mpes of the
		cuppe	<u></u>				Religi-	ire j
			-				Kengi- i	·
						· ·	•	
						e e		
						•		

						THE PERSON			
1	Religion, as Watfon and Percy had disulged among	upon Winter (hopelesse that way) returned for Eng-	1	1	•	Tin prouding	for a house wherein they might beginne their work,	to guard and secure the heire apparant.	I
į	them; yea, and a fraudulent message was sent to the	land, bringing with him the forciaid Famkes, a fitte				how and above	to which purpose, no place was held fitterthen a	(48) Then it was discussed, what Lords they	į l
	Pope by the Scotish Secretary, that K. James would	instrument for so divelish a designe, and comming to				to begione the hourstle treaton,	certaine edifice adioyning to the wall of the Parli-	should saue from the Parliament; where it was an	1
King I mer fean-	become his obedient sonne. But how farre his re-	Lambeth told Catesby that the Constable was not				i ionisse memora	ament house, which served for withdrawing roomes	greed, that they should keepe thence as many as they	
dalized by the Papits.	ligious heart was from these aspersions, appea-	the man what soeuer were his words, and that all now		3			for the affembled Lords; and out of Parliament was	could that were Catholikes, or that way fauouring :	
rapins.	red both by Watfon himselfe, who condemned to	in these parts were bent for a conclusion of Peace;		ā			at the dispose of the Keeper of the place and Ward-	all others to feele the fmart, and the imputation of	1
i	die, tooke it upon the faluation of his foule, that hee could	which founded so harshly in his ill-tuned eares, that				1	robe thereunto belonging. These did Percie hire	the Treason to be cast upon the Puritanes, to make	i
	not draw the [mallest comfort from the King for a tole-	his braines became more buffed about his impious	1]	for his lodgings, entertaining Fawkes (as most vn-	them more odious to the world.	}
	ration of the Catholikes, but that him elfe had imparted	Project, and his mind in continual trauell to bring	1				knowne by face) for his man, who changing his name	(49) Next it was controuerfed what forraine	77. (
	his wordes in a milder tune then his Maiely meant them,	forth that finne, which hee had most vnnaturally				Famies changed	into Iohnson, had the Keyes and keeping of the	princes shold be made pring to shele their purpoles.	cemed to oven
		conceined.	1	1 1		his name into	rooms. Neither was this enough, but a house must	for to enjoyne them to lecrefic, or to oblige them by	the treatons to
	only to keepe (as he excused the matter) the Catholiks in	(41) Robert Catesby, John Wright, Thomas Win-	1					oath, was not in their power: & to affay their likes	forraine Princes
	love and duty onto the King: and fince by the Lord	ter, and Guy Fawkes holding a community in their	}	-			be also had to supply Percies lodgings for prouision	ordiflikes, would proue dangerous. For if any of	
	of Balmerinoth (Secretary to the King in Scotland)	ter, and Guy Famkes holding a community in their	Percies Speach to				of Powder,& to frame and fit wood for the carriage		
	who acknowledging his offence, hath beene arraig-	mischiefes still about London; about the middest of		1		1.	of the Mine, which Catesby prouided at Lambeth, &	them approued the delign, their preparation might	
Biff op of Lincoln	ned and found guilticof death, for deuiling letters,	Easter-Terme, Thomas Percy as hote as the Hotspur		1			fware Robert Keyes into their Conspiracies, making	beget inspirion: if not then the scares of discourry	
page 194. Letters figned	and fending them to Rome, which himfelfe cunning-	himselfe to forward Rebellion, came puffing to	1				him the Keeper of those his provisions, who in the	would extinguish the enterptise, no man daring to	
by the Kinga-	ly got figned in shufling them amongst others, his	Catesbies lodging in Lambeth, and the first word hee	1			1	night as occasion ferued, conuaied the same vnto the	proceed further therein. Spaine was held the fitted	
camfithe Kings knowledge.	Maiesty being veterly ignorant of the Contents.	spake was this: What Gentlemen shall wee alwaies be	1	1 9			custody of Fawkes.	to fecond their attempts, but hee was too flow in his	•
E RIOWIEL DES	(38) Vpon which falle suggestions, the Athei-	talking, and neuer doe any thing? you perceive(I know)				1	(44) The appointed day for the Parliament being	preparations,& France too neere and too dangerous	1
	flical position of Catesby was grounded, who	how things doe proceed. To whom Catesby answered,				1	the 7 of February, in October before it was thought	to be dealt with, and how Holland stood affected to	
	helde it for an Axiome as father Parsons had	that something was resolved upon, but first an Oath for	1	1		Persyes house imployed by the Scottih Lotds.	fitte to beginne the worke, whereupon Fankes re-	England they ti very well knew. But in the midfl	The Parliametre
	taught: That the whole Schoole both of Di-	Secresie was to beeministred. For which purpose they	1			i uployed by the	turning forth of the Country found Percies rooms	of these turmoiles and minings vnder-ground, the Parliament was againe adjourned till the fift of Oc-	againe proco-
1	vines and Lawyers make it a position certain, and to	appointed to meet some three daies after behind S.	The conference	. 9		Scotin Lotes.	appointed for the Scotish Lords to meet in, there to	Parliament was againe adjourned till the fift of Oc-	gued.
	bee undoubtedly beleeved, That if any Christian	Clements Church without Temb!c-barre, where	of the Confpira-				conferre touching the Vmos of the two Kingdoms:	tober enfuing. V pon which Proclamatio they brake	:1
in his Booke	prince what soener, shall manifestly turne from the Ca-	being met, and falling in Conference, Catesby allea-	rors behind S.	1		[fo that they feared (for that prefent) to iniate their	off both discourse and worke till the feast of Saint	:
Philopater, Sect.2	tholike Religion, and defire or feeke to reclaime other	ged that this last Parliament had left the Catho-	Clements Church			f ·	attempt. But that honourable affembly diffolued,	Maries Purification. At which time they laide in	1
	men from the same, he presently falleth from all princely	likes in as much danger as they stood before, & that		1		1	vpon the eleventh of December late in the night,	powder and other prouisions, and then beganne a-	-
	power and dignity and that also by vertue and power of	now the peace with Spaine was rather a meane for	ł	. 1	•		they entred into their Worke of Darkenes, and begun	gaine to worke, hauing taken into their company	,
	the Law it selfe both divine and humane, even before a-	harder lawes to proceed, then those in force against	}	1 1		1	their Mine: having tooles prepared, and baked	Christopher Wright and Robert Winter, both of them	Robert Winter
	ny sentence pronounced against him by the supreme Pa-	them to bee abrogated; fo that the ancient Romish	1	. 3			meates prouided, the better to auoid suspition by	Christopher Wright and Robert Winter, both of them sworne, and receiving the Sacrament for secretic. The	Christopher Wrig
1 1	for and Judge. And that his Subjects of what effate	Religion, & the Catholike professors thereof must					fending abroad.		
1	or condition focuer are freed from all bond of oarh	now bee enforced to bid England adue, if Gentle-		3			(45) The Molesthat first underwent these vn-	great labour they wrought halfe through, Fanker	The worke again
(of Alleagiance which at any time they had made	men of power and repute should thus give way to	•	9		Robert Catesby Tosmas Percy.	der-minings, were Robert Catesby Esquier, the mo-	being their Centinell to give warning when any	begun.
	vnto him as to their lawfull Prince. Nay, that they	the contrary proceedings, or thus make nice how to	1	1 3		Thomas Winter.	uing Arch-traitor, and ruine of his name, Thomas	came necre, that the noise in digging might not be	
	both may and ought (prouided they have compe-	helpe, or where to beginne : at which speech Percy				John Weight.	Percy Equier, kinfman and attendant vpon the Earle	heard.	
	tent strength and force) cast out such a man from	made present answere, himselfe was the man that wold		1		Guy Fawies. Thomas Bates.	of Marthamberland Thomas Winter John Weight	(50) The labourers thus working into the wal	1
1 1	bearing rule among Christians, as an Apostata, an	undergoethe Catholike cause, were it with the slaughter	i .	, 3		1	of Northumberland, Thomas Winter, Iohn Wright and Guy Fawkes Gentlemen, and Thomas Bates,	were fuddenly furprifed with a great feare, and ca	The feare of the
	Heretike, a Backe-suder, and Revolter from our Lord	of the King, which hee was there ready to undertake		- 4		l	Catesbyes man, all of them grounded schollers	fling from them their digging tooles, tooke to their	r i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i i
1	Ielus Christand an enemy to his owne State and	and doe.	and diuchih an-	3		1	of the Romish Schoole, and such earnest labou-	weapons, having sufficient of thot and powder in	:1
	Common-wealth, lest perhaps hee might infect o-	(42) No Tom (faid Catesby) thou shalt not aduen-	1	1		1	rers in this their Vault of Villany, that by Christmas	the house, being fully resolued, rather to die in the	:1
	thers, or by his example or command turne them	ture thy felfe to fo finall purpose, if thou wilt bee a	The Gunpowder	3		1		place, then to yeeld or be taken. The cause of their	:}
] }	from the faith. Yea; one steppe further eliewhere	Traitor, there is a plot to greater aduantage, and		. 3		1	Euc(which very day might haue remembred them of more Christian workes) they had brought the	feare was a noyfe they heard in a roome vnder the	1
De officio Princi-	is stood vpon, that if any Prince shall but fauour or	fuch a one as can neuer bee discouered; and there-	mong the Con-			1	or more Christian workes) they had brought the	Parliament house, vnder which they meant to have	
p:s Christiani.	fhew countenance to an Heretike, hee presently loo-		· Persona	9		(worke vnder an entry, vnto the wall of the Parlia-		
Casp.5.	feth his Kingdome. And thus they conclude, that	upon all of them taking the Oath of Secretie, hearing the Masse and receiving the Sacrament, Cates by told	1	1 3		-	ment-house, underpropping still as they went the earth with their framed Timber, nor till that day	mined, directly under the Chaire of Estate. But a	-11
	for Hereste a Prince is to bee deposed, and his king-	the maje and receiving the sacrament, cates by told	l	1		i	earth with their framed Limber, nor the that day	now at a fland, & their countenance cast each vpor	41
	dome to bee bestowed at the pleasure of the Pope	them his diuelish denise, which was by Mine and					were they feene abroad of any man.	other, as doubtfull what would bee the iffue of this	5).
1	Come to bee beltowed at the pleasure of the Pope,	Gunpowder to blow up the Parliament house, and	ſ			1	(46) During this vndermining, much confulta-	their enterprise: Famkes scowted forth to discry	()
1	for whom the People vpon paine of damnation are	at one firoke with the defiruction of many, effect	1	1 1		The Traitors con	tion was had how to fashion the rest of the busines,	(if hee could) what was done abroad; and finding all	1)
i	to take part and fight: out of which detestable conclusions arose the first smoake of the Gunpow-	that et once, which had beene many yeeres in at-	l			ference how to proceed after sheir treatons.	after the deed should bee accomplished, and many	fafe and free from suspect, returned and told them	,}
1		tempting. A matter eafily performed (as he vrged)	1			sheir treasons.	questions propounded and argued at full, before	the noyle was onely a remonall of coales there now	/
1 1	der Treaton.	if men of resolution would thereunto bestow their	Ì	1 1		†	they could pitch on a fetled-resolution. The first was	vpon fale, and that the Cellar was to bee let, which	1
1 1	(39) For the Parliament diffolued the feuenth	purse and their paines; and most sure from suspiri-	ļ			1	how to furprize the next heire to the Crowne; for	would bee more commodious to their purpose, and	1}
1 1	of July, and proroged vntill the feuenth of February	on of discouery, the defigne being so estranged from		1		1	though they doubted not, but Prince Henry would	would also spare the labour in the Mine. Where-	-
Thomas Winters	following, Catesby being at Lambeth, fent for The-	the conceit of man: wherein he also observed that		1		1	accompany his Father, & take his lot with him, yet	upon Thomas Percy vnder pretence for stowage of	F)
Confession.	mas Winter, who before had beene imployed into	religious Iustice was thirity of reuenge, euen vpon				1	they feared left D.Charles (being absent, as too yong	his winter prouision of wood and coales, went and	i į
1 1	Spane, and brake with him then for blowing vp of	the same persons, and in the same place, whence shee	Inflies	1 3		1	to attend at Parliament) would escape their train, and	hired the Cellar, which done, a new conference was	s
1 1	the Parliament house: who readily apprehending	first received the vniust lawes enacted against her. For	1 .		•		perchance be to carefully guarded and attended up-	had.	ŧ l
1 1	it, faid, that (indeede) firake at the roote: onely thefe	case of conscience to kill the Innocent with the no-	į.	1			on at Court, that hee would hardly bee gotten into	(51) Wherein Catesby found the weight of the	:1
1 1	helpes were wanting, a house for residence, and a	cent, hee told them it was warrantable by the au-	j.			1	their hands. Of which first rub in their way, Percie	whole too heavy for himselfe alone to support; for	ri
. 1	man of skill to carry the Mine; but the first Catesby	thority of Garnet himfelfe, the Superior of the Eng-	I	1			offered himselfe to bee the first remouer, and shew-	besides the maintenance of so many persons, and	i į
	affured him was eafily to bee got, and for the man	lish lesuites, and of Gerrard, and Telmond (Iesuitical)	l	9	ê i	1	ed his meanes, which was, that with fome other	the seuerall houses for seuerall vies, hired and payde	: [
1 1	hee commended Guy Fawkes, a sufficient souldier,	Priests likewise) who by their Apostolical power did	I			Duke Charles intended to be	Gentlemen, hee would enter the Dukes Chamber,	for by him, the Gunpowder and other prouifions	
	and a most forward Catholike. But fir ft (quoth hee)	absolue and commend the fact, which for the ad-	1			farprifed.	which by reason of his acquaintance hee very well	would rife to a very great fumme, and indeede too)
Ti on as Winter	because no peaceable way shall be ontrod, you shall over to	uantage of the Catholikes was to bee executed they	l	1		1	might doe without any fulpition: and others of his	much for one mans purfe. Therefore he defired that	:
Countries.	the Constable, and entreate him to sollicite his Maiestie at	(laid)though with the death of lome Innocents, ra-	Proceedings	1		1	like acquaintance should bee placed at seueral dores	himselfe, Percy, and some one more might call in	1
See the Booke	his comming into England, that the penall lawes may here	ther then the feruice should quaile, the necessity of	against Traisors.	24		1	in the Court: fo that when the blow was ginen, and	fuch others as they thought fit to helpe to maintain	1
instruled. A dif-	be repealed, and the Catholikes tolerated and ranked with	time and occasion fo requiring it. The Oath was	I	1		1	all men in a maze, then would hee carry away the	the charge, alleadging that they knew men of	f)
intended Trea-	his other Subjects.	giuen them by the faid Gerrard (the Diuels Atturney	ł	1		1	Duke, which hee prefumed would be eafily done.	worth and wealth, that would willingly affift	, {
-2	(40) Winter thus posted to negotiate with the	in this bulinesse) the forme whereof was as follow-	1 .	1		1	the most of the Court being then absent, & the pre-	but were not willing their names should bee known	1
	Constable, found him at Bergen neere Dunkirke, and	eth.	1) og		1	fent altogether unprouided for tolmake relistance.	to the reft. This his request they approued as ne-	-
	by the meanes of owen the fugitive Traitor, deli-	You fall sweare by the bleffed Trinitie, and by the	l	997		1	(47) For the furprize of the Lady Elizabeth, it	ceffary, and withall furcealing further to digge in the	:\
Sec IV inters	ucred his mellage; whose answere was that he had	Sacrament you now purpose to receive never to	The Oath of fe-	. 91			was held a matter of farre leffe difficulty, the remai-	Vault, knowing the Cellar would be of better vie	:
Constitues.	a strict command from his Master to doe all and offices	disclose directly nor indirectly, by word or cir-	crefic ministred			The Lady Eliza.	the transfer of the transfer o	for their delignes, they removed twenty Barrels of	E)
The Conflable	tor the Catholikes and for his owner new has Count I him	cumstance, the matter that shall be proposed to you	to the Traitors,	1 3		be taken from	house)neer viito her, whether viider a shew of Hun-	Gunpowder into that roome, which they couered	
ditiembleth,	selfe bound in conscience not to omit any oned occasion	to keepe secret. nor desist from the execution	!	1 3		the L.Harrington	ting; divers Catholikes should bee gathered, who	with a thousand of Billets, and fluc hundred of fag-	.
The great defire	inal might forward their caule: although indeed hee!	thereof, untill the rest shall gineyon leane.	l .	1		1	having the advantage in knowing for what purpose	gots, fo that now the lodging roomes were cleared	i l
the Spaniards	did but temporize as Sir William Stanley told Win-	,,	l	1		}	hauing the advantagein knowing for what purpose they were assembled, had the full liberty of that di-	of all fuspitious prouisions, and freely might bee	
had of Peace.	ter, for the great defire which the Spaniards had	(43) The project thus farre passed, the practise	Į.	1 3		1	firacted time, to provide money horses, armour and	entred without danger of descry.	
i	that the Peace might proceed with England. Wher-	was to proceed; and the first thing lought after was	ł	1 200	B	1	other abiliments of war, vnder pretente of strength	(52) But the Parliament being againe pro-	.1
l /!		for	i			ł	Orner administrator war, studer brefente or thought	Qqqqq2 rogue	a'
		TOF		39		1	<u> </u>	· <u> </u>	
				Ž.			* *		
				3					
				1					
				ä					
				2					

rogued until the fift of Nouember following, these foresaid underminers of our State and happinesse thought fitte they should againe (for a while) disperse themielues (matters being already in so good forwardnes) and that Guy Fawkes should go ouer to acquaint Sir Willia Stanley, & M. Hugh Owen with these their proceedings, yet to as the oath of fecrefie should be taken of them. For their policy was to have Sir William Stanleys prefence to foone as the difinal blow thould bee given, to beea leader to their intended stratagems, whereof (as they thought) they should haue great need, & that Owen should remain where hee was, to hold correspondency with forrain Princes, to allay(asmuch as hee might) the odiousnes of the fact, or to impute the Treason to the Puritanes

(53) Fawkes comming into Flanders found Owen, vnto whom, after the oath, hee declared the plotte, which hee very well approued. But Sir William Stanley (at that time in Spane) Owen faid would be hardly drawne into the businesses, for that hee had suites in the English Court himselfe, yet hee promised to forward him in all that hee could, and to fend him into England with the first, when their proiect had taken effect. Whereupon Famkes to avoid further fuspition, kept stil in Flanders vntill the beginning of September, and then returning, received the keyes of the Cellar, and laid in more powder, billers and fagots; which done, hee retired into the Country, and there kept till the end of O&ober.

(54) In the meane while Catesby and Percy meeting at the Bathe, it was there concluded, because their number were but few, that Catesby himselfe fhould have power to call in whome hee would to aide their defigne : by which authority he tooke in Sir Euerard Digby of Rutlandsbire knight, and Francis Tresham of Northamptonsbire Esquier, both of them of sufficient estate and wealth, had they not abused both to their owne destruction : for Sir Euerard offered fifteene hundred pounds to forward the action, and Trefbam two thousand. But Percy diffaining that any should outrun him in euill, promised foure thousand pounds out of the Earle of Northumberlands rents, and tenne horses of speed to steed them when the blow was paft. Against which time to prouide munition, Catesby likewise tooke in Ambrofe Rookewood and John Grant two Recufant Gentlemen, and vidoubtedly others were written in the same Roll, had these two grand Electors beene apprehended aline, whose owne tongues only could vnfold their Catalogues Record.

(55) The businessethus forwarded by their complices abroad, their Immates did not neglect the supplies at home. For Percy, Winter and Fankes had stored the Cellar with thirty fixe Barrels of Gunpowder, and vpon them bestowed (in steed of shot) Barres of Iron, logges of timber, maffic frones, Iron Crowes, Picke-axes, and all their working tooles; and (to couer all) great store of Billets and fagots fo that nothing was wanting but tall in a readinesse, attending that great and terrible day. Neither were the lesuiticall Priests slacke on their parts, who viually concluded their Masses and oblatory Sacrifices, with their prayers for the good successe of their expected hopes, as by these verses, made and vied by

Gentem auferte perfidam credentium de finibus, Vt Christo laudes debitas persoluamus alacriter.

And others thus, Profper Lord their paines that labour in thy cause day and night, let Heresie vanish away like moste, let their memory periferates acrache, like the ruine and fall of a broken house: Allusions idoubtelfle to the labours in the Vault, the mounting smoake of powder, and the sail of the Parliament house, which if it had hapned, they might have faid to have bin Prophetically foretold by their high Priefts for that yeere.

(56) But the Lord that neuer flipt the deliuerance of his elect, kept this his I frael as the Apple of his own eye, & this pit digged for the destruction of others, they fell into themselues : so that we may | Pial. 124 wellay, If the Lord had not bin on our sides when me roje up against us, they had swallowed us up quicke, when their wrath was kindled against vs; but praised bee the Lord which hath not given us a pray unto their teeth:our foule is escaped even as a birdout of the snare of the foroler, the Inare is broken, and wee are delivered. For this Cockatrice egge hatched by themselues proued a Serpent onely to themselues, and themselues (by Gods hand) made the only Instruments to breake the shell of their owne treaton.

(57) For vpon Thursday in the cuening, tenne dayes before the intended Parliament, a letter dire-Ged to the Lord Mounteagle was delivered by an vnknowne perfon vnto his footman in the streete, with a straightscharge given, to give it into his Lords owne hand, which accordingly hee did. The letter was without date and subscription, and somewhat vnlegible, so as the Nobleman called for one of his feruants to affift him therein, the frrange contents whereof much perplexed the true construction, as whether writ by some Pasquill to scarre him from attendance, or as matter of confequence from aduife of some friend. How soeuer, though it were supper time, and the night as darke as the purport of the letter; yet to discharge his loyall duty, hee forthwith repaired to the Kings Palaceat Whitehal, where he imparted the letter to the Earle of Salisbury, Principall Secretary, and they both prefently acquainted the L. Chamberlaine therewith, who deemed the matter not a little to concern himfelf, the charge of his office being to ouerfee all places whether his Maiefty was to repaire, these two Counsellors shewed the same letter to the Earles of Worcester and Northampton, who together concluded (how fleight focuer the contents formed to appeare, as proceeding from some surmises of an idle and light braine) to acquaint the King himfelfe with the same, which accordingly was done, and was as followeth.

My Lord, out of the love I beare to some of your friends, I have a care of your preservation. Therefore I to the Lord spould adulte you, as you tender your life, to desife some Moniegie. excuse to shift off your attendance at this Parliament. For God and man haue concurred to punish the wickednesse of this time. And thinke not sleightly of this advertisement, but retire your felfe into your Country, where you may expect the enent in fafety. For though there bee no appearance of any stirre, yet I say they shall receive a terribie b'ow this Parliament, and yet they shall not see who burts them. This counsell is not to be contemped because it may doe you good, and can doe you no harme, for the danger is past so some as you have burnt the letter. And I hope Godwill give you the grace to make good wfe of it: to whofe holy protection's commend you.

(58) His Maiefty a while pauling,& then re-reading the letter, deliuered his judgement, that the file thereof was too quicke and pythy to bee a libell bred from the superfluities of an idle braine, and on the instant didapprehend by these words; that they should receive a terrible blow at this Parliament. get should not see who hart them, that a sodaine danger by blast of Gunpowder should be intended by some base villaine in a corner, no insurrection, rebellion or desperate attempt appearing. And therefore wifhed that the vnder rooms of the Parliament house might bee throughly fearched, before himfelfe, or Peeres should fit therein. To which purpose it was then concluded, that the L. Chamberlaine should (according to his office and place) view all the rooms aboue and below: but aswell to stay idle rumors, as to let things ripen to reucale their own mysteries, this his fearch should bee deferred vntill Munday, the day immediately before the Parliament, & then to bee with a feeming flight eye, to avoid suspect.

(59) The Earle of Suffolke, Lord Chamberlaine.

according to the conclusion, vpon Munday in the Nauember 4

afternoone(being accompanied with the L. Montegle, who still thirsted to see the issue) repaired vnto those vnder-roomes, and finding the Sellar so sufficiently flored with wood and coales, demanded of Fankes (the counterfeit Iohnson, who stood there attending as a feruant of finall repute) who owed the place; his answere was, that the lodgings belonged to M. Thomas Percy, and the Sellar likewife, to lay in his winter prouision, himselfe being the Keeper and M. Percies servant. Whereunto the Earle as void of any other suspition, presently replied, that his Master was well prouided against VVinters blafts : but being come forth, the Lord Montegle told him, that hee did much suspect Percy to bee the indirer of the letter, knowing his affection in religion, and the friendship betwixt them professed, fo as his heart gaue him (hee faid) when hee heard Percy named, that his hand was in the act.

(60) The Lord Chamberlaine returning, related to the King in presence of some Counsellors, what hee had feene; and the fuspition that the Lord Montegle had of Perey, and himselfe of lohnson his man; which presently encreased his Maiesties apprehenfion and lealousie, whereupon hee insisted, that a narrow fearch should be made, and those billets and coales should be turned to the bottome, which as he confidently supposed was the couering of some notable intended treason. But some moued the doubt how this fearch should be made: for albeit no caution could be too much in so great a danger, yet the inducement thereunto, being no more then a nameleffe inscript, shusled no man knew whence, and might wel be the enaporation of an idle brain, wold feeme (if nothing were found) fome scandall vnto the State, to bee ouer suspitious of so friuolous a toy, and withall might leave some sad imputation on a great counsellor of the land. Notwithstanding, his Maiefty still persisting in his former opinion, willed that the fearch should be throughly made, and no possibility of danger left vnexamined, vnlesse they meant to goe to the Parliament, and leave the hazard to the euent, which hee thought they in conscience were loth to doe. Whereupon it was concluded, that the fearch should be made; but vnder color of fearthing for certaine hangings belonging to

the house which were missing, and conused away. (61) Sir Thomas Kneuet, (now Lord Kneuet, then a Gentleman of his Maiestics Priny-Chamber) was imployed herein, and about midnight (before the very morning when the Parliament was to beginne) went vnto the place with a small but well affected company. At the dore of entrance into the Cellar, finding one (which was Guy Fawkes) at fo vnfeafonable a time, cloaked and booted, hee thought fitte to apprehend him, and entring the place, ouerturned the billets and coales, when presently hee found the Serpents neft, flored with thirty fixe barrels (fmall and great) of gunpowder, then fearthing the villaine that should have hatched these egges, found about him a darke lanterne, three matches and other inftruments for blowing vp the powder: who no whit daunted, instantly confessed his guiltines, and was fo farre from contrition or repentance, as hee vowed, that had hee been found within the house (as indeed hee was then but immediately come foorth from his worker) hee certainely would have blowne up the house with himselfe, and them all : & was so obdurate in his Romish resolution, that being brought before the Lords of the Councell, hee lamented nothing so much, as that the deed had not been done, saying, that the Dinell and not God was

the discouerer of the plot. (62) As desperate were Catesby, Percy, and the reft, who having notice that the L. Montegles letter did giue some ouercure of suspition, yet would they stay to fee the successe, and forfooke not London vnrill the fame day wherein the deed should have beene done: Catesby, Percy, Rookewood, both the Wrights, and Thomas Winter, posted all into Warwicksbire.

where Grant and his affociates had taken certaine great horfesour of a stable, to forward their hoped greatday. These meeting at Dunchurch, where Six Euerard Digby had made a match for a fet hunting, not with hounds for the hare(which was only the colour)but with Nimred for bloud, and jurprize of the most vertuous young Princesse Lady Elizabeth, were told(by the escaped) of their certaine discouery, and presently scarred with report of purfuit; when strucke with terror, not knowing where to make ftay, or whither to ftir, they desperately beganne an open rebellion, pretending the cause was Religion, and affirming for truth, that all the Catholikes throates were appointed to be cut. And lo trouping together, wandred through Warwickshire, the edges of Worcester, and borders of Stafford Shires, their feruants and aiders being about fourescore men,&thofe euer ready to steale away from them, more care was in keeping, then truft reposed either in their faith or defence. Yet thus ranging, and finding no relitance, they rifled the Lord windfors house of all the Armour, shot, powder, and other warlike provisions, but the weather rainy, and the waters fomewhat high, the powder in carriage took wet, and thereby became more vnferuiceable, God in his inflice fo ordering the fuccesses, that the element of water, and accident of fire fought against them, as the stars in their courses did against Sifera. Iudge 5,20. (63) For their last fort of refuge, being Hoibach

in Staffordfbire (the house of Stephen Littleton) whi-

ther Sir Richard Walfb (high Shiriffe of Worsefterflore) purfued them, who thinking the stirre no greater (though so great enough) then some fray or riot, sent his Trumpet vnto them, commanding to render themselues ynto him his Maiesties Minister, with promise of his best meanes (if they so did) to allay the offence. But their owne consciences witnesfing what the Shiriffe knew not, told them the fault was too waighty to leave them any hope of fauour: and thereupon returned answere, that hee had neede of greater assistance then of those few numbers that were with him before hee could be able to command or controll them. So preparing for reliftance, they made ready their weapons, and having laid two pound of the faid powder in a platter to drie in the chimney, one (a Millar) comming to amend the fire, threw in a billet, wherewith a sparke flying out, chanced to fall Fire-working on the powder, whose sodaine blast was to violent, fled by fitt. that (though being of so small a quantity) it blew vp the roofe of the house, and scortched the bodies and faces of Catesb , Rookewood and Grant, with some others, whose consciences then strucken with the guilt of their finne, made them fee Gods fearching iuffice in punishing like with like. Thus being deice &cd with the accident, and now knowing that all was loft, like desperatemen, they there resolued to die together, let open the gate, suffered the Shiriffes followers to rush in among them, and by valour (as they tearmed it) fought for their owne destruction; for both the Wrights were therein shot downe dead, Ambrofe Rookwood, & Thomas Winter were very fore wounded; and laftly, Catesby and Percy refolutely fighting, backeto backe, were both of them flaine

with one bullet of musket-shot, (64) Thus these high aspiring spirites, deceived with the spirit of illusion, under opinion of religion, and dreaming of no leffe then destruction of King, Princes and people, with alterations of kingdomes, Church and State, were miferably defeated, not by humane prouidence, but divine mercy. Some prefently flainein heate of Rebellion, others deadly wounded were taken aline, the rest either whole or but lightly hurt, were led prisoners to London, and to other places, all the way gazed at, reuiled and dete-Red by the common people, as some strange Mon-sters of the world, for this their helliss and horrible Treason; and lastly condemned & executed as they most worthily deferued; whose inditemets, arraignments and confessions, I refer to be read in the true

Relations already printed thereof, with fundry o-ther weighty matters thereto incident, in that learned difcourte, written by the most honourable Lord Henry Howard, Earle of Northampton, now Lord Priny Scale. (65) In memory of which great deliuerance, the fifth of November (the day appointed for mercileffe

An.D.1605.

Ier.19.7.

defiruction) was by authority of the fame Parliament ena ted to be for euer celebrated with thankfgiving, prayfe and prayers vnto our heavenly Preferuer, and to bee kept holy vnto the Lord through our generations, which we wish may bee obserued, with no leffe acknowledgement of Gods infinite mercies to vs-ward, then was among the Iewes, the institution of their Purim, for their deliuerance from the practife of wicked Haman, that fo our Temples being thus freed from their prophane idolatry, wee may cuer make this day as the feaft of our dedication, like to the Maccabees, who in the same moneth did institute theirs, by cleansing Gods Temple of heathenish pollutions. So shall Christ with his spiritual approch beautishe this Church of ours, as with his humane presence in the Temple at Ierusalem he celebrated that VV inters feast of theirs: wherin hee taught that himfelfe was the true fon of God, and the only dore by which all must enter. Through which therefore let vs with Ierem approch his Altar to make supplications for the Kings peace: and with Baruch to pray for the Kings life, and life of his fonne, that their dayes may be upon the earth as the

dayes of heauen, their branches as the beauteous Oliue, & their roots fallacd as the Cedars of Lebanon, 110/2.14 (67) In offering of which Sacrifice my felfe(his Maiesties loyali seruant) hold vp my handes towardes Heauen, for His continuall preferuation, His noble Queenes felicity, their Royall Issues prosperity, our Churches Peace, and Great Britaines euer flourithing State:and doe at this place (as of most note & eminency) end my many yeeres trauels, higherto purposely continued, that this last foule blor of infamy, though it cannot veterly bee wiped away, yet may it bee somewhat vailed, and lie obscured in this hindermost frame of our now finished Theatre.that fo, when any more noble, and more enabled (pirit and penne, shall attempt to continue and enlarge the life and raigne of this mighty Monarch, our learned and wife Salomen, hee may adorne the frontispice of so glorious a worke, with some porch and entrance of more pleasing aspect. For my part, I haue here onely pointed at His Maicsties hist entrance and acts, rather to thew a liberty of writing the kingdomes affaires, which never is permitted fauing vnder good Princes, then by my vnable performance to enter into that which requires the pen of some judicious Tacitus, or eloquent Zenophon, and conclude with the aduise of Ammianus Marcellinus the famous Historian : Let other men for experience cap. 17 mere sufficient, and for learning better known write the rest, whom, if it shall please them to enter thereupon, 1 admist to frame their penness unto an higher Stile.



The Circumferences of these ancient Monies being divers and different, wee have in this Sculpture observed, by shewing three Diameters, whose Circles import the bignesse of their Mintage and their figures compared with these, direct their proportions to be of the same as thou sees.







A fummary Conclusion of the vyhole.





Y the affiftance of the All-Sufficient (the onely defence and Preferuer of man) my infufficient abi-lities, haue attained the end of this worke, and my weake vnable Perfon brought to a Period

this large Edifice of GREAT BRI-TAINS THEATRE. How acceptable to others, I know not; but with what paines and tranaile to my felfe, my decaied ftrength too manifeftly hath felt, and with what care of truth, the Authorities alleaged through the whole Processe, are my witnesses; whose lines have beene the measures, and Antiquities the matter, that hath raifed the Fabrick vnto this height. The attempt was great, and farre whit (I must consesse) for me to undergoe; which, euen at the first entrance was so censured by the Iudicious, and in the continuance hath to proued: that now it being finished, as the Silkeworme endeth her life in her long wrought clew, fo I in this Theatre have built my owne Graue; whole Architecture howfocuer defective it may be faid to be, yet the project is good: and the cost great, though my selfe hane freely bestowed this paines to the Presse, without preffing a penny from any mans purse. For me to shew the vtilitie of History, were to light a dimme candle before the bright Sunne; or to prescribe a methode for their vics, were, with Phormio to reade a Lecture of Chevalrie vnto great Hannibal, warres experienced Conductor: Bur, as our owne concerneth vs neerest (wherein my pen hath taken the freest accesses) fo let me abridge the whole in a small Circle, and incompasse that briefly, which hath beene related in a farre wider circumference.

(2) Our Land, peopled from Isphet the first sonne of Ayesh, fell vanto those sonners of Genera, who inhatiants of the sonners of Engrey, who simulated the parts of Engrey, whose sittle were most far mouthly knowne by the name of Britaines, At first, naked, rude, and ignorant of the true God; yet no fooner were frequented with the civill Romanes, but that they covered their Cut-painted bodies with Garments ; and shortly imitated them even in their most civilized actions; yea, scarcely was Christ taken down from his Croff but they became Christians; Christianicy, (the greatest glory of any Nation) and among them the Goffell had her first progresse by established authority. Their Gouernment was vnder Kings, and thole of as honourable a respect, as were any other in these West-parts of the World, both in training their Subjects vnto due obedience, and ministring of Lawes for the maintainance of estate. Their warres Warren domesticke and forraine were so managed with Policie and valour, as in the one they valiantly defended themselues against their assaults, and in the other steeded the Romanes in most of their Conquests: which cost them lastly their owne subuersions, when their warriers and virgins were confumed and transported into other parts, whilst their native Land lay exposed to the will of Inuaders.

(3) The glory-thirfting Romans (from a crew of Their first Co lawlesse Shepheards now lately become Lords of queron. the World) were the first that set foot, with displaied Ensigne, for the Conquest of Britaine, and the same

first affared by Julius Cafar from the Coasts of Gallia.Which his attempt was so honourable in esteeme of their Emperors, that Claudies (the fifth in Inccel-Hon)holding the Triumph but bale, that attends vp-Their Triumphs. on authority without action of Price, made choile of Britaine to adorne his triumphant Chariot, that this Iland (fited, as was thought, in another World, and but part thereof shewed by Cafar to the Romans) might adde remembrance of name to his forgetfull Person: and to that end, having made hither himselfe, stamped his Conquest upon his Coines thus, DE BRITANN: and voon his aged knees crept up the steps of the Capitoll, to give thankes of victory ento his gods on the day of his Triumph; which, though for a small part of this Ilands subjection, was yet accomplished with more then ordinaric magnificence, and the shewes greater then vsually had beene seene, for the Conquests of farre larger and better knowne Kingdomes. And with as great a care was it kept, whilft the Romans kept their owne greatnes. But when their high-mounted Pillar ouerswayed her owne Base, and the farre-spread boughes were growne too weighty for the tiemme, many hands at once grafped at the Emperiall Crowne, and all of them together tare the Branches from the Body of that faire Tree. By whom also the faire and flourishing Cedars of Britain were

shaken, and left naked both of fruite, and leafe. So that now the glory of the one declined, and the beauty of the other vtterly defaced, and neither of them able any longer to support their owne standings, gaue place vnto defliny that would now have both downe; whereby the Iewell fo much defired, and which had beene kept with fuch care, was now laid at flake to them that could winne it, and Britain abandoned by the Romans, without further claime, after they had beene Lords thereof the space of fine hundred vecres. Inuaded by Sag-(4) The next Actors vpon Britaines faire Stage

were the Saxons, a people of Germany, fierce, bold and irreligious, as, for the most part, the rest of Natious in those daies were. These infesting with Piracies the Coasts of Britaine and Gallia, grew both feare full and famous in profession of military services. In France they seized vpon the Country of * Bato casses; in Germany by intrusion they unscated the Sueuians; in Holland and Friesland, they incroached vpon the Batauians, and Cimbrica Cherfonessus (now a continent of Denmarke) they made the place of their aboad. From whence they often affailed the Coasts of this Iland, even whilst the Romans held it for theirs, and were often put backe by Stilicho and others, whose praises the Poet Claudian chaunted aloud. But the Romans departed, and Britaine left bare of men, their land wasted by famine, tumultuous vprores, and by bandings of Great-ones who By Pith & Scots. should be greatest; the Scots and Picts (ancient Enemies to their Peace) tooke the advantage, and continually made bloody incursions into their Land,

And albeit a frone-wall was raifed athwart the whole Continent, to impeach their inroades, yet that auailed little, their affaults were fo great. Whereupon the Saxons were lent for, and in their first service freed the Britaines from those raging Picts; The Lands defence then they vndertooke, and the Inhabitants confented to maintaine the charge; which whillt it was in giuing was thankefully received, but once received was vngratefully forgot. And they (like the Rauens of Arabia, who fo long as they are full, yeeld a pleasant noise, but being empty make a horrible crie) emptied faster then the Britains could fill, and ener complained they had not inough, till laftly by furprize they got all into their owne clawes, Then deuided they among themselves the best of the Land, and droue their Receivers into the worst and waste mountaines of Wales, every of their Captaines tharing a part to himfelfe, and of one Emperiall Crowne made seauen Diadems to adorne their owne heads; which long were not worne, without intestine wartes, each of them striuing to inlarge his owne, vpon his next, till God and deftiny againe The Heptarchie fently attempted, but neuer intermitted any bloody cruelties that could forward the same, till they had fet it on their owne Helmets; and their Saxons worne The Saxons con out with reliftance, gaue place to the Danes, when time had worne out fue hundred fixtie three yeeres of their Government. (5) Thefe Danes thus fucceeding (though with The Danes intru

no better right to enioy)were a flout flurdy Nation whose many Piracies both France and Bretaigne had many times felt, before they attained the end of this their Goale. For these, multiplying like Bees in the Hiue, the land of their owne nativitie was too little for each to haue a part : vpon which occasion a cufrome was practifed to banifu fome that the rest might haue roome. These Exiles therefore (chiefcly confifting of their youth) fell voon other Landes with no leffe danger, then the falling of a fword out of the sheath, and greenously wounded wheresoeuer they fell but no where more deadly then in England Which for two hundred and eighteene vecres con- Their coming tinuance, they vnceffantly affaulted; fometimes har- ance here, rowing the Countrey before them, and carrying away great Booties to their Ships: fometimes impoucrishing the People, by exacting great summes of Their deuastati money for composition of Peace : sometimes expel-ons here. ling the Inhabitants, and feating themselues in their places: and fometimes sharing the Country with their Kings, and taking vnto themselues none of the worst; but not as other Conquerors to build, fow. and plant, but to lay waft, cast downe, and destroy paring neither Erections for civill vie, nor places of Oratory dedicated to divine. Yet the Garland once gotten by their King Canut, was worne with great glory, and by three of those Danish Kings, Englands Their three Crowne was enioied. The first of them Potent , reli- Kings. gious, wife and inst. The second, illegitimate, an vsurper very agill, but idle : And the third a Tyrant, a Taxe-raiser, lascinious and a glutton, in which exceffe at Lambeth he fuddainely ended his life, when the Land became cleared of the Danes fore oppression ons, after they had a long time attempted, and their Kings for fine and twenty yeeres space worne the royall diademe of this Realme,

(6) These foure Nations fulfilling their times by Heauens affignement, in gaining, keeping, and a-gaine loofing, the rich Garland of GREAT BRITAINES gouernment: a fift, inferiour to none, made thereunto a double claime, and by a Therr title to third(more fure then both) which was, their conque- England. ring fword, got it. These last (which I pray may be last) were the Normans, a people fierce and valorous. whose many Sea-aduentures were so great, in the daies of Charles the Great, as that he went to forfee the harmes they would doe to his in France, which proued so many that Charles the Bald (his Grand- Their attempts Child) was forced to part with the Earledome of and featings of Charters unto Hasting a Norman; Charles the Grosse France. with the County Newstria, vnto Godfrey their Chief-taine: and Charles the Simple with all the Countreys which lay betwixt the River Seine and Loyre, vnto Rollo their Leader, whereof he became Duke, and that Dutchie from him named Normandy, Whence William the Bastard the seventh in discent, in a bloodie field at Battell in Suffex, wan the English Crowne querors victory. from King Harold that held it; when, by changing of Lawes, differiting of Nobles, and bestowing the Lands Revenewes vpon his, he laid the foundation of a glorious Monarchie. At first, somewhat bloodie, (as Conquests commonly proue) and the viduely lwated Crowne'

(as what will not the delire of a Diademe doe?) the two yonger brethren successively wearing it, to the * Robert Cartoceje. The Plantage-ners fueccifion. Fine Princes of that firmame, Comin,lib,'4 CID. IO. The Crowne re

right, but fuch as Intruders pretend. But Henrie Plantagenet placed on the Throne, and three hundred thirty one yeeres taken vp in the Raignes of foureteene Kings of his line, their Acts afforde matter of more Princely consequence, their Dominions spread wider, themselves being the lawfull Inheritors to the third part of France, and to the Whole by the Title of their third Edward, and by the Conquest of their fifth Henry. And surely had northectuill diffentions of Lancaster and Torke spent their weapons in the woundes of themselves, those Kings and their Successours undoubtedly had beene double crowned euento this day. But these Roses pluckt off by diffentious hands, and their Branches torne downe in home-bred broyles, their roiall rootes lay as it were dead in the Earth , till Teuder of Lancaffer with Plantagenet of Yorke, gaue them vigor and sappe, by binding both together in wedlockes goulden band. Whereby also the long dead Remme of the auncient British Kings beganne againe to bud forth, and fine renowned Princes of that Sirname succeeded in Englands Throne. The first of them, the richeft, and wifeft King of this Westerne-World: The Second, the forest wounder of the Papall authority; The third, the forwardest in all pious actions. The fourth the feruentest for the Religion of Rome; And the fifth a Mayden-Queene, the most famously re-nowned among the Worlds Monarkes, vnder whole raignes one hundred and fixteene yeeres were fully complete and run. And were it not that the English taine to her olde British Empire after the Saxons and Normans , should returne againe to her auncient Stocke and Name. Norwithstanding Truth bids vs acknowledge, how farre God hath accomplished both these in the royall Person of our now-Soueraigne, the one by his discent from the loines of that Roiall Tuder King Henry the Seventh; and the other, by his Edict, in reftoring to the Iland her auncient Name, Britannia: himfelfe being the first Monarch of the two Kingdomes Vnion, and the greatest of Command, since Cannine the Dane. The Cordes of whole Royall Tents, we pray hand of his Sonne, and Sonne Sonnes, folong as the Sunne and Moone endurerh. (7) These then (worthy Reader) are the Heads. whence have iffued fuch plentifull Springs, that now met together in one Body the Streame is grown very bigge, which thing I ever feared, but could neyeeres labour hath alone trauelled, aswell in the reuiewing of the Geographicall parts of the Land, as in the compiling of the succeeding History, though far vnable to perfect either, according to their owne worths. But left the waight of the whole should rest vpon fo flender a proppe as mysfelfe: I haue laid my buildings vpo far stronger arches, as by the many al leaged authorities may appeare. For first, the Chards for the most past traced by others, and most of them disulged vnto view, were the foundations of my begunne paines; in supplying their wants with my many additions, and dimensions of the Shire-

haruest. For the body of the Historie, many were the manuscripts, notes, and Records, wherewith my honored and learned friends supplied me; but none more (or fo many) as did the worthy repairer of eating times ruines, the learned Sir Robert Cotten Knight Baronet, another Philadelphus in preserving old Monuments, and ancient Records: whose Cabinets were valocked, and Library continually fer open to my free accesse: & from whence the chiefest garnishments of this worke haue beene enlarged and brought: such as are the antique altars, & Trophies in Stone, by him preserved from perishing oblinion; The Coines of gold, filuer, alcumy, and copper, of the Britaines, Romans, Saxons, Danes, and English, with the Broade Seales of those Kings since the same were in vie : all of them so followed from the original moddles, and moneyes, by the most exquisit and curious hand of our age, as any eye may witnes they are the true prints from those stamps. The like most acceptable helpes, both of Bookes and Collections, ripecially in matters remoter from our times) I continually received from that worthy Divine, Master John Barkham, a gentleman.composed of Learning, Vertue, & Curteste, as being no lesse ingenuously willing, then learnedly able, to advance and forward all vertuous endeuours. Befides these, some other supply I have had : for my disease growne dangerous, and life held in suspence; it behoued him who had towards the publishing bestowed so great cost, to forward the finshing; and to that end hee procured mee to his further charges an *affi- * M.Ed. &.L. ftant in the lines of our middle English Kings: whose Stories and raignes (by the Iudicious) may by their stiles bee knowne to bee writ with another penne. Lastly for the matters of Herauldrie, the willing and ready paines of Master William Smith, Rough Dragon, (an Officer 2t armes) was euer at hand: and by these hands this building is mounted to fuch an height as thou feeft: which thus now finished, this scanced Epitome, may well ferue thy foote-steppes, as staires to ascend these fine national Stories alreadie finished, and leade thee into the fixth now most happile begunne. Where from those mounted heights. thou maist behold, how Time hath squared the Scones of these buildings : how Fortune hath varied in contrining the Worke : and how the Fates have erected, polished, and puld downe, the Supporting Pillars of GREAT BRITAINES THEATRE. From whose Tarras with Dauid cast not thy lusting eie vpon vnlawfull delights : Nor with Babels King boaft, that this was built by thy owne might: But with Moss confesse that from a fmall stocke (as a graft of the Lords planting) thou art now growne into a great Nation, mighty, and ful of people. And with Salomon make supplication 2. Chro. 6. vnto thy great Iehouah, that the Arke of his Brength may euer rest in this House, & his eies be euer open thereon day and night. With the Prophet pray that this building may be as beauteous as his, the Foundations laid with Saphires, her Windowes with the Emerauds, and her Gates with the Carbuncles. That the defarts of this chefen Zion may be as Eden, and her Hish 51. 3. wildernes like the Garden of God. Her Government Peace, her People the Saints of Saluation, & her Kings the Signets on Gods right hand, successively to fit on this Royall Throne, till Christ the King of Kings shall come in the Clowdes, and from the Raine-Bow the Throne of his Maiesty pronounce vs blessed, and make vs heires with himselfe of that Kingdome which never shall have end. Fato which CHRIST. with his FATHER, and HOLY SPIRIT, three in Per-Sons but ONE GOD eternall, ondsuideable in Deity, be ascribed all Praise, Honour, Glorie, Wisdome, Power and Might for euermore. Amen.

learned Cambden, whole often fowed feedes in that

Soile hath laftly brought forth a most plenteous

L. Har. Ciril. Saxten. Isha Norden. Wil. Waite.

FIN IS.

brought all vnto One, cuen to great Egbert, who forbade the Ilands old Name, and commanded thefe now united Provinces to be called Anglia. Yet no British Gell mafooner was this accomplished, with affured hopes med England, conceived, that the Saxons glory should thence forward ascend and spread forth with peace, but that a fauage nation, as fierce as the Seythians, cast their cies of defire vpon that beautifull Crowne, and pre-

The Normans,

prejudice of their * Elder, and Stephen having no

Crowne banded for, among brethren and kindred

are taxed to be ouer-much addicted vnto vaine Prophelies, and that Merlins was prohibited by decree of Counfell, I might alledge his, and that of Aquila at Shaftesbury, both of them foreshewing that the

may be further extended, that those naked Firgini-ans may be coursed under the Curtaines of his most Christian Gouernment; and that the Scepter of his Peace may bud, as Aarons Rod in his hand, and in the

ner prenent; offending rather with the Niggard who thinketh enery mire too-much, then finning with the Produgall in superfluous excesse; so plenteous is our Story, and so largely requires it to bee writ. Through all which my weake body with many

townes, and Cities true platformes. The further descriptions of fundry prouinces, I have gleaned from the famous workes of the most worthy and

Their mine.

Abandonedby

Baicon.

on the Land. Their dividing the Land into a



MIMPRINTED AT LONDON BY WILLIAM HALL AND IOHN BEALE, FOR

Fohn Sudbury and George Humble, and are to be fold at the figne of the White Horse in Popes-head Alley, neere the ROYALL EXCHANGE.

CVM PRIVILEGIO.





THE SECOND INDEX, OR ALPHABETICALL TABLECONTAL NING THE PRINCIPALL MATTERS FN THFS HISTORY.

The first Number noting the Page, the second the Section.

Α

Britaine, 206. 19 the law, what time.

Abbey of Saint Albans guelded by King William Conqueror.

Abbot of S. Albans his answer to Lewis of France demaundinghomage. . ding homage. 509.4 Abbot of Hales haged, 620,46

George Abbox (after Archbi-fhop of Canterbury) the first Preacher fent into Scorland, for an voion in the Hierarchy.

Abbot of Lewis with others ta-

Abfolution by the Minister, howallowable. 887.11 887.11 Academies or Vriuerfities in Britaine. 168 8. Acon or Acres, the fame that Ptolemais. 475.30.542.3 Befieged by Christian Prin-

ces. 476.31 Rendred vnto the Christians, and facked. and facked. 476.32 Deliucred from the fiege of

the Sultan of Babylon, 542.3 Idam d'Orlton or Torleton Bishop of Hereford, sideth with Queene Ifabel against the 561.6 His æquiuocating writ for the death of King Edward the 2.

Adda King of Bernicia. 302. 2 Agreement betweene King Ri. Alice, third daughter of William Conqueror. 445 I Adela, Adelicia, Adeliza, 01 A-44< I

lice, daughter of leffrey Duke of Louaine, second wife to K. Henry the first. 440-42 Remarried to William Daube ney Earle of Arundel,422 61 Adelme a rebel, vanquished by King Cuthred. 200.12

King Cathred.
His victory and restoring to ibidem.

Being banished flieth to C4ligula Cafar. 192.3 Ælsanus an vlutper of the Ro-Fol.Sett. mane Empire.

> Astphegus Archbishoppe of Canterbury martyred by the **Emilianus**

the Gorbs. 243.5 Is made Emperour. ibidem. His descent His descent 243.1 Murdred by his fouldiers.

His short raign. Ibidem C. Iulius Emilianus his coine. Æquinollium what it is 185.16

888.26 Efar, left in the name of Ca-Abbot of Lewis with othersta-ken prisoners by the French. Ethelgida King Seberts wife 593.4 where entombed. 301.3 301.3 Winchester.

> under Valentinian the third Sent vato from the Britaines

Out-law, both parents to Edgar Etheling. 384
Agincourt, See Azincourt. Agreement betweene King Stephen, and Henry Fitz-Empreffe.

preffe. 453-47 Agreement betweene Richard 1. King of England, and Philip King of France, at the letting forth to the Holy-land. 474.

chard the first, and King Tunered of Sicilie. Iul. Agricola made Britaine 2 Pronince Foundit to bee an Iland, ibid Iul. Agricola Lieutenant vnder the Romans in Britain.211.10 He vanquisheth the Ordonices

Not vainglorious. 211.12 Good to the poore. ibid. Cureth blind and lame mira-Adminius 2 King of the Britans his coinc. 175.2 ful. Agricola enlarged the Roman Empire. 212.5 His opinion of Ireland, 213.4 He fercheth out the limits of Winneth the field against Gal-

gacus. 215.12 Receiueth triumphall orna-215.12 ments. 215.16 Agrippina wife to Claudius Cear, worketh his death. 196.2 A monster of the femall fexe,

Aidan 2 Christian Bishoppe in Amerie de Valenceputteth king Robert Bruce to flight, 550.51 Alane D. of Britaigne in France fideth with K. Stephen. 449.25 His description. ibid.
Alaricus a valiant Goth the

scourge of Rome. Albane Martyr in Britain, 206, Beheaded. Canonized a Saint. 345.11 Saint Albans Monaftery builte.

Founded by king Offa.307.12 Battell at S. Albans, the first. Battell at S. Albans the fecond. Duke of Albanie offereth bat-

tell to the Earle of Surrey with all currefie all curtefie. 760.49. His answere to the Scotillo Nobility, disliwading offenfiue warre, 761.51
Albemarle Earle fideth with K. Stephen, 249.25
Albertus Cardinall, 2nd Arch-Dake of Austria, Gouernour in the Low-Countries, 367.

Albigenses what maner of Heretikes. 514.21 Warred vpon by King Lemis Albina the beautifull daughter of Dioclesian. 158.4 Clod. Albinus Lieutenant in Britaine. Entituled Cafar. ib.227. 3.

His Coines. 279. 8.227.3 Made fucceifor in the Em-His death plotted, 228, 2 Proclaimed Traitor. ibid. Vanquished by Septim. Sene-A valiant Captaine,

Saint Albins battell in France. 73 4-24 Albinus the Abbot an Historiographer. #63.15
Albion a name of Britaine, imposed by the Gracians. 158.4 Whereof io called. ibid.

A name of long continuance, Albion whence deriued, ibidem Alcaren of Mahomet.

Alcibiades, faire, being olde. flructer to Charles the Great.

Aldred Archbishop of Torke, Aldulfe King of the East-Ang-His Coine.

His coine. His raigne. Alettui his trecherie. 255.8 ibid. Slaine. Alen Cardinall his traiterous

dictines, heartneth King John against Pope Innecentius, 497 Depriued by the Pope. ibid. Alexander Bishop of Chester cleareth himselse of disloyal-

ty, 520.45 K. Alexander the Great, whither he came into Britsine,

His picture in Gades. 183.1 Alexander K. of Scots a peacemaker betwint Henry the 2. King of England, and his LL.

Alexander the third, King of Scots, espouseth Margaret. daughter of Henry the third, King of England, 530 79 His witty infinuation to K. Henry the third, in the behalfe of Philip Lonel. 530 79 He with his Queene highly entertained in England, 533

Alexander Seuerus made Emperour of Rome. perour of Rome. 235.1 His parentage and breeding

Alouer of Liberal! Sciences, and a fauourer of christias ib.

His littlife. iridin 3 Alkfrid King of Northumber-II smarttell proveile ibidem land an excellent Philosopher. His bounty. His Coinc. 2;6.4 Iffuc. Murdered, Murdered, 236.4 fille. ibidem.

His raigne and age. ibidem Alphon what it fignifieth. 158.4 ilexander King of Scots dieth Alphonfo K. of Galicia first foun-Alexander King of Scots dieth of a fal from his horfe. 345.18 rieth the Lady Joan, fifter to Alphonfo, O- Campo leader of Henry the third Henry the third. 511.12 of Tarke, removed from king Richard the second, 604.77 Alexander the 5 Pope, chosen in lieu of the 2. Antipapes. 620.47 Alexander Prince of Scotland knighted by Iohn King of England. 498-45 Alexander Seton flaine by Edward Railiel ₹68.24 Alexianus, Cafar to Heliogaba-235. 1 Named afterwards Alexander Senerus. ibidem Alfonfus or Alphonfus, fon of King Edward the first, his death and buriall. 52.60
Alfonfe King of Spain claimeth Gascoigne. 531.82 He quitteth his claime. ibid.

Alice Sec Adela.

Her Iffine.

Ambition and emulation of the ancient States of Britain. His good aduife to K. Hen-Ambresbury Abbey founded ry the third. 531.83 Alfwald King of Northumber-372.17 Ambresbury, whence it tooks land murdred. land murdred. 305.21 His raigne and Issue ibidem the name. 315 Saint Ambrose Bishoppe of Algithathe wife of King Ed-Millaine excommunicateth mund Ironside 383.20
Alfoina wife of King Canutus and absolueth Theodofiss the Emperour. 275.8

America first discouered, 746 barren, vet seemed fruitfull. Prince Alfred, King Canute Amitie folemnely made betweene William King of the Scots, and John King of Enghis fonne, right heire to the Crowne of England, entrap-ped by fraud, bereft of his

ped by fraud, bereft of his land. 488.14 eyes, and cruelly tormented The fame renewed by two crofle marriages, 497-41 395.6.7 crosse marriages, 497.41

Algar, Leofriks sonne banished Amicy, betweene King Philip Algith, widdow of Graffith of France, and King John of Algith, widdow of Graffith
Ap-Lienetin, King of North
Maley, King Harolds wise
Mater, King Harolds wise
After Harold was flaine, lived
On the Ching of France, you
what conditions. 641,72 in Westchester private, ibidem Amond a King of the Danes. Amphibalus a Martyr, Saint Al-Alice daughter to King William bansteacher. 206.19.255.11 the Conqueror 426-74 Anarchie in France. 582.20 ibidem At last a professed Nunne, ib. Ancalites where feated. 173.,4 Alice daughter of Lewis King of France, married to Rich-ard King Henry the second An Anchorits counfell to the British Bishops and Doctors

touching Austin the Monke, his forne 467.85

Alice fifter to Philip King of

France, contracted to Rich. 230.11 Andares Goddeffe of victorie 167.8 Andragathis a murderer drow ard the first, King of England. 475.22 eneth mitelfe. 273. 7
Supposed to hauc had a child S. Andrewes Church in Welles by his Father King Henry the founded. 299.15 Androgorius, is Mandrubacius, ibidem 22 Restored to her brother. 172.5 Angiers wonne by a stratagem. 480.62

Married to Iohn Earle of 493.28 Pontif, or Ponthiew. 483 Alice daughter of King Edward Rained. Ruined. 484 4
Angle-lond. I. England, whence thefirst 552.66 Dame Alice Piers, abuseth the the name is deriued, imposed first by Egbert. 160.9
Angles, what nation, 284.6
Angles inuaded, and the inhabitats cruelly vsed. 431.29 old age of King Edward the third, as his Concubine, 588.148 A most insolent woman, ib. 149 Anglia, whence it tookename. 285,10.11 28e.20

Alice Piers banished, 591.1 Alipius Lieutenant under the Old Anglia, Romans in Britaine, 265. 4 Anlase, sonne of Danish Gur-Interrupted by scareful fires mo baptized. 266.3 in reeditying of Ierusalem, Anlase Sithricks sonne chased 265.4 into Ireland.

Called by Writers King of | Anthuna Dake of the South-3647 | sbid. the Irith. ibidem 304.12 235.1 His life, raigne, death, and His firstagem His fouldiers fidelity ibidem His Coine. 364,9 Called out of Ireland, to bee King of the Danes in Northumberland, 365.2 Baptized, 366.3 Bent backe againe into Ireder of Portugal much renow-367.3 Anlafe King of Norway bapti-

276. 9 Taken prisoner, ibid. 319 zed. Anlafe a leader of the Dancs . Alpion. 158. 4 Alricke King of Kent, the last 378.23 Anne Dutchesse of Britain marin lineal fuccession. 294.14 His raigne and death. 295.14 ried by Proxie, with what Ce-An Altar stone portrayed. 239 remonies. 736.28 Queene Anne wife to King Ri-Altar to the Goddeffe Suria. chard the fecond dieth, with 222. 4 To Goddeffe Fortuna.222.4 many other great Ladies,605.

Alured, alias Alfred converteth Buried in Westminster 610.19 the Danes to Christianity. Queene Anne, King Richard the 3. his wife dieth, 722.42 205.17 Alured, murdreth his Soue-12igne, and becommeth king of Northumberland, 205,20 Her buriall Her patentage, and double His descent and iffue, ibidem Expelled out of his Kingmarriage, 72661 Anne Alkew burned in Smith-

field for Religion 780.112 Put on the racke. Her tormenting displeased King Henry the 8, 780, 113 Her commendable partes, 780.11.12. Scandalized, and flandred by a Romanift Writer, 780.

nne Bullen fecond wife to K. Henry the eight, her defects.
.770.80.785,137
Her Religion.
.770,81
Inuested Marchionesse of Pembroch. 770.82.785.137 Married to King Henry the Crowned Queene of Eng-A great lotter of the Gospel.

771.86 Deliuered of a dead childe. Charged with high Treafon, and fent to the Tower. 771.87 Defended. 771.88 Condemned for adultery, &

incest, and beheaded, 771.89 Thought to die guiltleffe of the crime. 772.92 Her penancy Her godly life, ihid Where enterred, 785.137 nne of Cleue married to King Henry the eight 779.105
Anne of Clene vpon diflike only divorced from King Henry the eight. 779.21.785.139 Her parentage. 785.139 Her parentage. 785.139 The fourth wife of K. Henry the eight. thidem

No more to be stiled Queen Anne. 779.108 Annibalizarus his Coine. 262

Archers English how forcible

Angelme Archbishop of Carrior in times past 616,28 420.19 Held guilty of high Treason Recalled home. 432-33

Recalled home. 435-5 He flandeth against married Priefts. 436,13 bury goeth to Rome. 436, 13 His death. 438-29
Anna King of the East Angles.

210.7 His raigne, iffue and buriall.

296.4 Saxons Antioches Primacy before Romes 514.60 Antona a river in Britan 194.15 M. Antonie his gouernment, o. uer what Provinces. 188.2 Proclaimed enemy to the State. Discomfited. Don Antonio the expulsed King of Poringall, jeeketh Queen Elizabeths protection, 863 225.864,232

His title to Portugall, 863.227 Antoninus a gracious name among the Romans. 231-1 The name abolished, 235,6 Antoninus Caracalla, the fame that Baffanus the Emperour, He feeketh to Aftrologers, 232.7 Is murdered.

His coinc together with his brother Gera 231.1 His natural properties 232.5 His incest with Inlia his fathers wife, 232.6 His time of raigne 232.8 Slaine 212.7.8 Inteninus Pius Emperor 220, 1 His Coine ibid Hisbirth and commendatiihidem A great defender of the chri-His Edict for their protection

His Apophthegm 221,5 Hisperionage, & commendable parts ihidem 6 His death, age and raigne, ib. Anzazim an Affaine traireterously woundeth Prince Edward, after King Edward the first the first 2, fabulous Wri-

ter Twelue Apostles of the King of Spaine 269.266 Apprentise of the Law, what heis 610.21 Apulder Caftle built by the 358,20 Don John D' Aquila sent out of

Spaine into Ireland 875,314 Aquitane how large a Dutchie 666.60 Revolteth from the English.

588,147 L, Arbella her parétage. 756,75 Arbogastes a traiterous murde-rer of Valentinian the yonger

Emperour. 273.10 He killeth himfelfe. 274.5 Arcadius and Honorius Emperours.Their Coines 276 Arcadius fellow Emperor with his father Theodofius 272.4 Arcadus Emperour in the East 274.6

His death and raign 277, 24 Arch of victory on a Coin, 192 in times paft 616,28 Arifides a Philosopher of Athens, fauoureth Christianity.

Ariesta, the mother of K. William the Conquerour, meanly descended Armes of King Arthur, 648 85 Armes of the Dukes of Branch

fina King of the East Angles, wick 259,6,470,108
flaine in battell by Penda, Armes of Bruttus and the KK.of Troy Troy 163,13 Armes of England fet before ibidem those of France at first. 572.52

Armes of Hengil, and Horfa, 289.5 Armes of the Princes & Dukes of Sausy, 218,2,290.5 Armenia the fountain Region of all Nations. 102,6 Armorica,i. Little Britaign in France Giuen to British Souldiers, 140.6 279,8,9 Conquered, Armorica, a Province described The Division thereof ibidem It retaineth the British Dialect 280,9 | Earle of Arraine, Lord Gouer, nour of Scotland, 782, 121 Arrianifine impugned by Chriftian Bishops 206,10

Arrius Aper murdereth Numb-Fianus, Executed 253, 4 lames or laques d' Arteuile, a Burger of Gaunt, supporteth King Edward the third his quarrell in France. 570.41 See more in Inques. Arthur King of the Britaines, begotten of dame /grem, by Vier Pendragon, Fier Pendragon. 316 His battels against the Saxibidem His Acts. 201.16 A benefactor to Glastenbury Abbey, ibidem. 207. 21 Of Roman bloud ibidem Slaine by Mordred. 317

His raigne. His buriall His body found interred, ih. His Monument 218 His Enfigne or Armes, 206 20.207.21.316.1 Arzhur fonne of Geffrey, fourth

fonne of King Henry the fecond, heire apparant to king Richard 1. 470.105 Supposed to be mad: away Danes. by King Iohn his vncle.

Arthur Nephew to King Richard the first, Duke of Britain, 478.44

Aftrologers what kind of peo-Arthur Duke of Britzigne, and Iohn competitors for the Crowne of England 484,2 Thomas Aftwood executed. Arthur his adherents, ibid. 3 Athanasius Bishop banished by Committed by his mother. Constantius. Constantius. 264. 9 Recalled from exile by Ioniato the protection of Philip King of France. 484.3 nns. 268.4 Reconciled to King John, King Athelftan his file.157.13

Hee flieth from him for fear. Athelft an, See Gormond.

Athenr kingdome of what ibid. continuance. Committed to firsie cufto- Atrius a Gouernous under Indie in the Caffle of Roan,

lius Cafar. Analon.1.Glastenbury. 490 I Ś 490.19.20 Audentius refuseth to bec Em-Arthur Earle of Richmond, perour. made Constable of France Augusta. L. London. 653.10 Arthur Lord Lifte, Base sonne Augustus Cafar his raigne. to King Edward the fourth. His vertues.

Dieth of an excessive ioy. His fault. His deuotion euen towardes Christ. Arthur eldest some of King Hisstature and endowments of Henry the feuenth, Prince of body. Wales, weddeth Katherine of | His death,

747.63 See more in Octanian. A Prince of great towardnes. Ibid. | called.

His death, bookes and lear-ning. | Lear-ibid. | Casted. 190.7 | Augustines Arm at Couchiree Whether he did confummate Whether he did confummate at an high price. 392-14.

Augustines or Austines Oke. wife Katherine. 447. 63

Duke Also of Cornnall, and Scemorein Austen. Earle of Chefter.

751 Anitall cuftomes maintained.

His birth. 731.11 | Aumbelliers a Castle in Nor-Life, death and place of burieefburi- mandiewonne. 636.42 751.72 Sir John Aunstey Knight, en-Articles of attonment betwixt treth combat with Katring-Iohn K. of England, and Philip ton, and is victor. 598.44 King of France. 486.8 Articles of peace betweene K. M. Aurelius Emperour. 221.1 His 'Coinc. Edward the third, and Lewis Aurelius Ambrosius 2 valiant captaine of the Britans. 291. of France. 510.8 Articles agreed vpon by the Rebels in Cornwall, fent vnto King Edward the fixt: 806.22 Dieth of poifon. Answere of the King to them. His raigne. Enterred in Stoneheng, ibid.

Aurelius Conanus King of the
Britans. 806 22 Sir Robert D' Artais foliciteth K. Edward the third to claime Britans. the crown of France. 570.37

Britans. 319. 7 Reproued by Gildas. ibidem. Aurelius Viltorinus and his son Armiragus a famous British King. 177.14 He weddeth Claudius the Emviurpers, Murthered. perour his daughter. 177-14 His coine. ib. 216 his Coine. King Aruiragus in the time of Domitian, His parentage. 194.12 His Coine. His rifing, ibidem Named Sword-bearer, ibid. Hee refifteth the Romans proceedings, ibid. Thomas Arundel Archbilhop of His employments. Canterbury persecuteth Wick-

His valour. His coine. lifians. 625.12 Histrange death. 626.14 His indulgence to Christians. homas Arundel Bishop of Elv. Becomes a persecutor of chrifloutly maintaineth Bishops flians. temporalties. 600.57 Earle of Arundel flaine.657.22 Scared with a thunderbolt. Albdon field in Effex loft by the His person & seuerity. 249.9 English against the Danes. Aurestus viurpeth in Illyria 382.13 Robert Aske Generall in the

202.5

186.3

202.2

233. 2

270.4

190.7.

ibidem

Austin or Augustine the Monke Tork Shire Infurrection.773.96 fent into England 207.20 His haughty spirit His letters. Saint Austins Church and Mo-Executed with others vpon nastery in Canterbury. 330 a second infurrection of his. His questions to the Pope, Affafines a fect of Sarazens in

See more in Augustine. the East. 477-43-542-5
Affendon field won against the An Ayde granted for marriage of Mande to Henry the Danes. 355.8 Aspar a Captaine under Ua-4.Emperour. 438.33 Azincourt alias Agincourt batlentinian the third Emperour. tell 633.60 He flew lohn the viurper, ib.

В

B.No first radicall letter in any British word. 158. 6 Babel-Tower the cause of suns dry languages, and dispersion of people, 161. 2 Babila Martyr, 266.5 Anthony Babington, principall of a traiterous confpiracie.

with others executed. 848. Rob Bacon a Preacher. 518. 37 His frank fermons & speech to King Henry the third,ib. Roger Bacon his errouras touching Iulius Cafar his perfpectiue glaffes

Roger Baconhis witty Apophthegme. 518.37 Badge of the Earle of Warwick 682,55 Badge of Richard Duke of Glocefter, the white Bore, 725.59 Lord Baddlesmere executed at Canterbury.

547.27

Sir Henry Bagnall Marshall in Ireland Caine valiantly fighting. 873.299

Iohn Barliol crowned King of 873.299 August the moneth why so Scotland. Scotland, 546,23 Doth homage to Edward the first, King of England for the Kingdome of Scotland, ihidee Diflovall to King Edward

the first. He renounceth his homage,

Refigneth the Crowne of Scotland to King Edward the first. 547-30 Sent to the Tower of Lenthe first. 547-3 I Deliuered to the Popes nun-See more in Marons, cios. 548-38 Edward Bailiol Conne of John Bailiol and his heire, claimeth the Crowne of Scotland against David, 2. son to Robert Bruce Robert Bruce 568,24 Edward Bailiol invadeth Scotland. . 463.24 His two victories against

Danid 2 King of Scots. 568 Crowned King of Scotland at Scone. 568.26 Established in the Kingdom Marcus Anrelius Emperour, of Scotland of Scotland 569. 31 He submitteth to Edward 220. Aurelianus Emperour. 248. 1 the third King of England Hee conneverh his Title to

the Crowne of Scotland vnto King Edward the third, John Ball a Priest, Chaplaine to 249.6 Wat Tiler, and Iacke Straw. ihidem 2 Balbinus See Clod. Balbinus

Roger Baldock Bishoppe of Normich, and L Chancellour, with Spenfers rule all,361.51 Walter Baldocke Prior of Laund drawne and hanged, 616,26 Roger alias Robert Baldocke, L.

Roger alias Kopert Balaocke, L. Chancellor put into Newgate where he died. 363.68 Baldred last King of Kent, 295 Forced out of his kingdome

Baldwin fust Earle of Flanders,

Baldwine de Redners relifteth King Stephen. Differited and expulsed the land. land, ibid. aldwine Fitz-Gilbert his speech before battaile, 450

Baldwin fonne of King Stephen, his birth, death, and buriall, Baldwine Archbishop of Canterbury crowneth King Richard the first. ard the first. 473 5 Dieth in Palestine, in the ho-

ly voyage. 473.8

Iohn Ballard a Seminary prieft
executed for treason, 848.111 Lord of Balmerinoth found guilty of death, for deuising letters in King Iamer his name, and sending them to Rome. Rome. 89 38 Bambrough Castle built 302 Ban, alias Bag & Ban, 2 place in Irelad, what it fignifieth 463,554 Banner of Constantine against Banner of confiantine against
Maxentius, &c. 260,5
Banner with a golden Dragon,
lost by Ethelbald. 342.2
Banchor, alias Bancor in Wales,

the first Monastery in the world 206,20 Founded by King Lucius, 207,20.303.7 The mother of all other

Bangor or Bancher Monastery. and the Monks there described. Humfrey Banister betraveth his Lord and Mafter, Hemy D. 546.25

of Buckingham, 720.35

his pallace at Oxford, 442. Iohn L. Beaumont, high Cou-Stable of England. 062. 41 Thomas Becket Chancellor of England. 456,3 His birth, profession, rising, and advancement 457,11 Reputed a Martyr. sbidem Britaine, 229.6 His difloyalty, 220-10 Reputed a Martyr. Archbishoppe of Canterbn-Surnained Antonius, and ry vpon the death of Theo. made Emperour. 229.14 Styled Brittanicus Maxi-Debate betweene Thomas Surnamed Caracalla, 231.1 Becket, and King Henry the fecond, your what occasi-His Coine. Baffianus the yonger, furnamed ons. 457-12 He opposeth and contesteth Heliogabalus Emperor, 234. with the King, and claimeth 457.13 Battell at Basing on the Danes regalities, What points he would not fide, 355.9 Battel, or Battell field between vceld vnto, 457,15

Promifeth to obserue the Kingslawes, bona fide, ctc, 458,19 Hee relapfeth from his pro-

458,20 mifes. He sweares in verbo Sacerdotali, to keepe constitutiones anitas 458.21 He would not subscribe, ib. Called to account, and fundry waves molefied,458,23 Adjudged of perjury and treafon 458,459,23 He difguiferh himfelf vnder the name of Dereman, and goeth into Flanders ibidem All his kindred benifhed the Realme, 459,26 He excommunicateth Gilbert Bishop of London, 406

An accord treated betwist the King and Thomas Becket 461,:4 Thomas Becker publisheth the Popes letters of fuspenfion, against Roger Archbifhop of Torke, and Hugh Bishoppe of Durham. 461 Murdered in the Church of

Canterbury by foure knights Cenfured after his death diuerfly. 461.42.43 His murderers flie. 461.44 Thomas Becket caponized 2 Saint by Pope Alexander.

His rich thrine defaced. 778. 100 eda his hiftorie 163.15 What he was His story dedicated to king Ceolnulph Beda a Saxon Monke writeth partially. 322 Sir Simon de Bedford hanged with Roger Mortimer, 568.23

Bedford Caftle forced by fiege, and demolished. He perswadeth war against Beech trees grow plentifully in Britaine.
Beleos Cimbros. 161. pawne of King Henry the Beleus the King his habergeon. ihidem Belga I Welles.

207.21 Robert Beliafme against King Henry the first. 436.12 He and his affociates abiure the land. A bloudy and vnuaturall wretch. 438.30 Taken and emprisoned. ibid.

Robert Bellenap his faying when he fubscribed to humor king Richard the fecond, against the popular and reforming Robert Belknap with other Iudges and chiefe Lawyers ar-

refled young the Bench, and fent to the Tower. 604 78 Sir Walter de Bendley his fortunate seruice in little Britainc. 481.11 Saint Bennets Abbey in Norfolke. 392,14 Sir Henry Bennifield Lieutenat

of the Tower, a straite Izyler to Lady Elizabeth. 823 Bearn King of the Eaft-Angles 277.12

Beorn Bocadors wife, in the cafe of Lucretia 387.24 Himfelf allied vnto the Danish royall bloud. 386,6 Berengaria daughter of Sanches

the fourth King of Nauarre,

her descent. Married to King Richard the first Her loue to him, and her other vertues. 479-54
Berengaria daughter to King

Edward the first 552.65 Berenice the beautifull Queene 212. 4 of lewry 212. 4 Bericus a British fugitiuc.193.3 Bericke his murther & falshood to his Prince. 388.7.8 Saint Berin, an Italian Diuinc,

Bishoppe of Dorchester, bid. Berking Abbey built. 310.7. Bernardus Andreas of Tholous a Poet Laureat. 728.4 Intiructer to Prince Arthur, King Henry the feuenth his eldest sonne. ibidem. Bernicia a Prouince in the

Kingdome of Northumber-202 I Bernulph King of Mercia by 308.16 viurpation His coine. Slaine in skirmish. ib. 348.7 Berofus a Writer late com forth

fuspected and rejected, 158.2 A forged Author 162.9

Berta a vertuous Christian Lady espoused to King Etbel-329,3 Whereburied Bertfrid a fonne of King Edred

368,7 Berthulfe King of Mercia, as 308.19 tributary. ibiden Berthun a Duke of the South-Saxons flaine 296.4 Bertrem de Gleanin,or Glesanin a braue warriour 585,123 Faileth the English, 587.140

Made Conftable of France, 587.143 Marshall of France taken prisoner by Sir Iohn Chan-584.128 Bertramde Gardon killeth King

Richard the first 481,69 Fleyed quicke and hanged Peregrine Bertu. L. Willowahby. General of the aids for Hen ry king of Nanarre in France

867.255 Berwick wonne by the English, 546 26 Recourred by the Scots, 559

Loft and regained by Henry Percy Eatle of Northum-

perland. 598.45 Surprifed and regained by the Scots 581.112 Burnt and difmanteled, ibid. Deliuered up to the English

680.111 Surprised by the Scots, and recourred within o. daves.

Berblem a Monastery erected, 643.83 Betan Archbilhon of S. Andrew e 282.121 John of Benerley a godly prea-cher of Wicklift doctrine,

626,15 Executed as an Herctike, ib Bible in English commanded to be read in Churches, 778

Bible presented to Queene Elizabeth, and graciously receined 8 3 2 . 3 Bible torne by the Rebels of 842,65

THE TABLE.

English intended, and commatided by Iames King of Great Britaine, &c. 888.25 The fame published. 888.25 Bibroces what inhabitants. Hugh Bigot or Bigod Earle of Norfolke fideth with King Henry the younger, against King Henry the seconds his Hugh Bigod, or Bigot chiefe Iu thiciar of England 535.63 Hugh Bigot or Bigod holdeth the Castle of Normich against

New translation of the Bible in

all but King Stephen. 446. 8 Sideth with King Stephen, & is described 449.25 Francis Bigot in the Yorkelbir Commotion, or holy Pilgrimage. 774-97 Hush Bigod or Bigot Duke of

Norfolke, rendreth vp his Castle to King Henry the 2. 456.7 Bisheps and Archbishops erected in England, 206.18 Archbishoppe of Bourges his proud speech in Ambasse to King Henry the 5. 628.27 Bishops remoued, and others in their Sees placed. \$17.15 Bishops how they were buried 487.11 Bishops temporalities reftored.

600.57 Bifhop an additament of honour in the Romane Emperours file Bithrike or Brithicke, King of West-Saxons his Coinc. 200

Poifoned vawittingly by his owne wife. Blacke Crosse of Scotland, a Iewell, 567.13 Blacke Prince, See in Edward. Blacke-Heath-field. 742.47 Blackelow a place where Pier.

Gaueston lost his head. 556 Blanch Queene mother of France her policy to hinder the English defignes. 514. Blanch daughter to King Ed. ward the first 552,70 Blanch Taque a fourd in the riuer of Some. 575.85 Blazing starre, 373,2 Walter Blewet executed, 746.6

His birth. Rime barrell. 668,72 Bloudy-toure in the Tower of A mighty drinker ibidem He hangeth himfelfe, ibidem London, why fo called, 691. Doctor Borne affaulted with a dagger at Paules Croffe,817, Charles Blunt Lord Monties Lord Lieutenant Generall of Bofworth field,

Ireland. Ireland. 874-310 His exploites in Vifter, and 874.311 Leafe. In the Glinnes. 1575-312 See more in Monting. Sir Christopher Blunt beheaded on Tower-hill. 889.244 Boadicea or Bondscea, Queene of the Icenians. Body a Commissioner for pul-

715,16 Sir *Nicholas Brambre* late L. ling downe Images, killed. Major of London plotterhito destroy Thomas of Woodstock 805,19 Boduo, i. Boadicea Queen of the Duke of Glocester, 602.68 Duke of New Troy executed Iceni. 176.13 Wife to Prafulagus, King of of the Iceni, 198.9,176.13 Chofen leader of the Iceni. Charles Brandon Duke of Suf-

folke marrieth Queen Mary, 198.13 widdow to King Lewis the Surprifeth the Colonie, Ca-12.0f France 756.22 His two tonnes died of the 198.14 Putteth Petilius Cerealis to English swet 811.605 See more in Charles Brandon

Slew seuenty thousand Ro- | Sir William Brandon Standardmane Citizens, and Propinciall confederates together 198.16.176.12

Surueieth in person the troupes of her Army, 199 Queene Baadices, or Radus her Her fpeech to her Army, 199

Her victory of the Romans, 176.13

Poifonethher felfe. 177, 200,21 ibidem. Her Coine. Bodotria, 1. Edenburgh Frith. 212.6 Bodani yeeld to Plautists, 193,5 Bohemians lament the death of lohn Hus, and lerome of

Prage, 630.36 Humfrey de Boban Earle of He-reford taken priloner, and recovered by exchange, 558 Slain by a Welfhman, 559.39 Boier Major of Bodminhanged

Lancastrians,

Bouines battell.

Bradney monastery in Lincoln

nant of the Tower, denieth

to murther King Edward the

fifth, and his brother Richard

Rochford beheaded 771.89

menes in Landon builderh on

the toppe of Harrow hill,
-Wherefore 771.82

15.825.75

725,58

502.55

Bolton Prior of Saint Barthol-

by Martialllaw. 807.28 Bologne or Bullen, befieged by King Henry the feuenth.737 Six Thomas Beleine or Rullen. Viscount Rochford, Earle of of Wilesbire, &c. his descent.

Six Godfrey Boleine or Bullen, Lord Major of London, 770 His wife raileth vpon King

His grauestone Boleins or Bulinns, an ancient family in Norfolke, ibidem Her ftrange present to the Queene, King Iohns wife, His charity ibidem
Sir Godfrey Bolein ancestor to 159.5 Bridewell an house of correcti-Queen Anne Bolein, and to Queene Elizabeth of famous

on, giuen to the City of Lonmemory. 667,69 Hee keepeth London quiet, 814.85 Bridgenorth, more truly Brugenotwithflanding the great troupes of Yorkifts, and M. Bridges Lieutenant of the Tower, his fauour to the La-George Bolein or Bullen Lord

die Elizabeth 822,60 Brigants what people 220.3 They make an Infurrection, Subdued by Petilius Cerealis 2118

Wineretore 771,83

Bonifacius Archbishoppe of Brightned flaine by the Danes, Ganterbury. 525.62 Bononia, 1. Enloigne, 263,6 Bonossu rebelleth against Pro-370.7 Brightwold, Monke of Glasten bury his vision. 398.2 Brigit an holy maid, canonized 252.6 a Saint 620,25 Briget or Brigit a Monastery e-

rected: 648.33 Bristow a fugitive maintaineth Pins Quintus his Bull against Queene Elszabeth. 844-76 Brit or Brith 159.7 the original radix, or primitive of Britanie. What it fignifieth. Sir Robert Brakenbury Lieute-

Britaine Admirall of the feas, Store-house of profite, ibid. Lady of all other Hands, ib. Another world 155.2 The great Hand, Compared to a difh, or two headed axe, ICC.3 Discouered to bee an Iland ibidem

Thought to have been one continent with France.155.4 The bounds thereof. 155.5 The bredth 156.5 The fite of Britaine, 156.6 and by what preachers.207.2 The aire and foile. 156,6,7, Sfffff

British feas warme. 156.5 bearer to Henry Earle of British Seawinds Richmond, flaine by King British feas fit for trafficke.

Richard the thirde, 725, Raineld Bray, employed about the marriage of Henry Earle forts of graine. 156. 9 The fear of Queene Ceres of Richmond, with Elizabeth daughter to King Edward the fourth. the fourth. 718,28 He maketh a faction against Well flored with timber, ib. King Richard the third.719. A Paradise of pleasure, ibid.

Henryde Braybreoke, Iusticiar Itinerant, imprisoned in Bed-ford Caftle. 513.18 Nicholas Breinbre, alias Bram-In Britaine the nightes nor voide of light. 156.10 bre , Alderman of London, Knighted, and endowed with

lands. Brennus a Britaine or Cimbrian Suffained eleuen Kings, 157 162.5 Falcasine, alias Foulke de Brent, British Empirelimited with viurpeth Earledomes, and holdeth Caffles., 511.11 the Orcades and Pyrenean mountaines. Britaines first names and in-His outrage and rebellion.

A Norman, his birth and rifing 513.18 Vpon submission pardoned & banished, Lieutenant of Bedford Caftle.

or Gaule. 162.6 Britaine so named, first by Taken and hanged, the Grecians Why so named. 158.5 Bretta a Spanish word. 150.6 Britaine first mentioned, by William de Bruse, disloyall to K. John, flieth into France, 497 what Greeke Writers,160,7 Peopled before Noahs floud

161.1 Divided into three kingdomes. 160.9 Britaine Sea coafts peopled out of Belgia and Gallia, 162

The commodities thereof,

Britaine aboundeth with all

Britaine first discouered to

Britaine full of mettal mines

Taken from the fortunate I-

habitants not discouered,

How anciently flamped, 158

First peopled from the Galls

be an Hand.

itidem

172.5

ihideni

106 77

157:1:

Conquered by the Romans and reduced to a Monarchy 177. 15 Without forrain garrison, and gouernment in Tiberius Ce-

fars dayes. 191.4 Britaine eaten by her owne vinett 100.20 vipers 159.20 Britaine the fairest plume in the Romane Diadem, 280,13 Exhausted of her Natiues, & very flowre, 280.11
Britaigne or Britaine in France. annexed to the Crowne of

France, 735.25 Britain or Bretaign in France, defended by King Henry the feuenth against the French. Britaines downefall. 735.25

Britaine abandoned of Roman Garrifons. 281.1 Conuerted her Conquerors to the faith of Christ. 205.14 The first Province that by publicke ordinance received the faith. 205.18.222.6 Wholy difcouered by Iulius Agricola. 285.15

Britannus the father of Celtice, 159.0 Britanes affifted the Galles against Cefer 162.8 Their multiplicity, and communion of wines. More given to warre then to husbandry. 300.22 Their Diet Their Diet 167. 7 Slaine to the number of 80 thousandmen 200.20 Professed Christianity, before it came from Rome. 207:12 Their bailey drinke. 167.7

Conuerted many Countries

Vaskilfall

Vnskilfull inmaking cheefe, British gouernement in olde 167.7 time. Not meere Monarchicall Civilized by Iul. Agricola. fomewhat Aristocraticall. 216.12 Their persons. British States submit to Cafar, Britans the first Converts, 204 182.3 186.9. British women valourous in Their cunomes and manners 166,167 fight. 160.1 in old time. Britans fore infefted by Scots British Nobility maffacred and Pitts 279.6 285, Forfaken quite of the Romans British women faire,& of good feature, 167.3 British Writers vary from Caihidem Britaines fl e into Wales, and fars reports. 187.12 British companies serving Cathere remaine. 321.10 Transported out of the Ilands to the Roman warres . 279.8 far in the warres, 280,11 British Princes that withfrood Their Religion and Learning the Saxons from Vertigern, 167.8 Sent into Armorica, 280.9 to Cadwallader 312 Raiph Briton Treasurer of the Flie into Armorica. 280: 10 Flie diners wayes, and are op-Kings Chamber displaced. preffed with famine 282.3.4 517.31 Their commerce and trafficke 140.0 169.10 Britona a Nimph 159.7 Truffing in God, vanquishe Britons in France, came from the Britaines 159.6 Britons diflike of the French Irish and Picts. Their shipping. 160 11 In time of plenty, multiply kings gouernment, 594.9 George Brooke executed for 282-4-5 finnes. Their manner of warre, 169. treason. 886.15 Sir George Browne beheaded. Britans debarred passing ouer 720.36
Robert Bruce or Brule, maketh Britans liued long head against King Edward 2. Purposeth to make himselfe fitions. Their domesticke matters, King of Scots 550.49 His escape and stratageme. Britans driven into the West-Angle of the Ifle. 298. 9 Their townes and manner of He killeth Cumin. 550.49 Crowned King of Scotland, building. 167,5 Their Ambassage and speech ihiden Purro flight Hismisery rathe Savons 282.7 Abandon the land, 290.12 His magnanimity, 551.51 He maketh head againe bid. They died, and painted their bare bodies, and wore no His modest and deuous cargarments. 167.2 Britans and Galls like in mariage against the battell, ny respects. 1628 He inuadeth Northumber-They colored themselus with 1 < 9.7 The offpring of Gomer. 162.6 Their ornaments. 167. 2 Some Britans clad in leather, His worthy praife Britans submission to Cefar,

557-18 Hee dieth of the Leprie. Illiam de Brufe or Brausia intercepted by the Welfh. generally pretended by a Hanged by Llewelin, and fecond Ambaffage. 184,7 Their haire. 167,3 wherefore ibid, homas Broughton an abetter They wauer in performance, 184.9 to Lambert against K. Henry They reuolt. the feuenth. the feuenth. 732.18 Slain in battell at Stoke. 733 Their complexions #67,3 Their manner of fight. 185.13 Erune supposed to bee the first Theirwit They affemble a great power progenitor of those in Brif-184.14 Their horses: footmen and Brute after fome, gaue name to armour. 169.13 Leaue the field, and retire in-Britaine.

Bruse descended from Impiter. to their feuerall prouince, 162.11 rute the imaginary Stockefa-They fweare fealty to Auguther of the Britaines, neuer fins Cafar, and become fubraigned in this world, 164 icet to the Romans. 189. Pay tolls and cuftoms to the His conquest of Britain co-Roman flate. ihidem futed. 165.20 Detaine tribute and repolt, He with his Troians suppofed to have conquered Bri-Take heart againe 162,11 ibidem taine. Rebell in Nerves time. 198. Bruti, a rouing people in Italy. 159.6 Britans wall, the Sea. 195.16 Henry Duke of Bucking ham re-fuleth to come to K. Richard Britan house in Holland, 192.3 Britbicke or Bitbricke King of the 3 719.32 His forward affection to Rithe West Saxons his coine. chard Duke of Glocester. Brithin a drinke.

149.6

Falleth in diflike of him being King 716.21 The occasions thereof. 716 Prepareth war against king Richard third He is beheaded. 719.33 Henry Duke of Buckingham his Oration in the Guild hal to the Com mons of London

the onely Dadalus and raifer of King Richard the 3. 710 Bulloigne befreged and won by King Henry the eight himfelfe in person. 783.128
Bulloigne with other townes furrendred to the French. Charles Duke of Burbon his desperate attempt. 761.53 Slaine before Rome. ibid. Baftard of Burbon taken prifo-

At Bardenux astratagem against the French the French 573-55
Burdeaux deliuered to the Eng-666 6 Thomas Burdet Efquier beheaded for words wrested. 688, 103.706.56 Burdred the last Mercian King. He flieth the land, and lieth buried at Rome, His Coine.

Surgenhild King Kenwolfes daughter. 347-8 Hubert de Burgh, the mirror of confrant loyalty 509.3 Gouernour of K. Henry the third his person, and chiefe Iusticiar of England 511.11 He weddeth Margares fi-fter to Alexander King of Scots 511-12 Jubert de Burgo, or Burgh, Earle of Kent, incurreth the enuy of the Barons, 515.24 In the Kings displeasure, 515

53

716.21

His fall 516,30 He taketh a Church, is refcued by his friends, & conuziedinto Wales. 519.39 Reconciled to the King. 520 48 Huber : de Burgh Earle, put fró his place of chiefe Iusticiar,

Called to a strict account.ib Articled against in points of treason,&c. 517.32.33 le taketh Sachuary, 517.33.34 Haled out of Sanchuary, reflored to Sanctuary, 518.35 Yeeldeth himfelfe prifoner. and is committed to the Tower. His treasure delivered to K. Henry thethird 518.35 In free prifon, at the Caffle of Denifes. ibidem ot Denifer, ibidems
Duke of Burgundy fends for
aide to King Henry the 4.againft the Duke of Orleance.

620.48 Duke of Burgoigne of Burgun-dy doeth homage to Sigif-mund the Emperor for Flanders, and Arthois, 635.39 He taketh truce with King Henry the 5. 635.39 Hee maketh a league with France contrary to his oath. 626.29 Charles Duke of Burgundy follicited by King Edward the 4.for aid. 68x.56 Diffwaded by the Duke of

Charles Duke of Burguna temporizeth with King Edward the fourth and with Edmond Duke of Sommerles 682 57 Vnderhand he helpeth King Edward the fourth ibidem Burgundians fent to inhabite Restains

Buriall first allowed within the walles of Cities. 299.13 Thomas Lird Burrough, Lord Deputy of Ireland. 872-295 His death. 873-257 Henry Burwash Bishoppe of Lincolne iovneth with Qa Ifabel against the Spenfers;

Piers Butler, L. of Ofory, made L. Deputy of Ireland. 762. Elianor Butler supposed to haue beene contracted to King Edward the fourth-712.3

Strucken out of Cafars

 name by lightning, what it portended 749.70 ke Cade rebelleth 664.50 Stiled Iohn Amend-all, by the contrary, i. Marre-all, alio Captaine of Kent. ibid. His demands. ihid His demands. 101d. Hee entreth London, 664-52 His behauiour there, 101dem. Profcribed and killedby Alexander Eden 664.53 Cadiz voyage, 864.266 Cadiz affaulted and furprifed. 860.272 Cadwallader last King of the Britans. His Armes Diethat Rome in religious habite There buried. Cadwallador a valiant and victorious Prince. 323 ibidem His raigne, Cadwallader Prince of Wales. when he raigned. 164.6 His flory doubtfull, ibidem. Cadwallo or Cadwallin King of the Britans, 222 Ioyned in amity with Penda King of the Mercians, 123 A most wicked Prince, ibid. Slaine in barrell. 322 ihidem Buried in London. His cast-image of brasse vpon Ludgare, ibidem Throwne downe by Egbert Cadwan King or Ruler of the Britans in Wales. His raigne

sen in Normandy wonne by

Emperours Crowne to the

Calestine Scholar to Pelagine

Cafar a glorious name. 190.7

See more in Iulius.

Inline Cefar first enterer, but

not conquerour of Britaine,

Calabria fometimes named

Calau belieged by K. Edward

Calais a Colonie of English

Yeelded to King Edward 3,

474.24

277.10

159,6

179.102

580.108

580.108

Refiere

King Henry the 5.636.43 Calestine the Pope dashed the

ground,

Prytania

thethird

planted.

English. Caledonians craue peace. puissant 213.5 C. Caligula Cafar his parents, His Coines. lerrere His vile actions His death how complotted. Calpurnius of Calphurnius Agricola his infcription vpon the Picts wall Lieutenant in Britain,221,5 Callis claimed by Queene Elizaheth Callais surprised & turns Spa-See morein Calais. Camalodunum. i. Maldon in Effex. 174 Surprised by Clandius Cafar Made a Colony of Romane Citizens. ibidem Cambria, Wales the partition thereof, ibidem Cambridge Vniuerfity suppofed to be founded by Sigeberr King of the East Angles Goeth beyonde all other Schooles Laurence Campeius Cardinal.in Commission with Cardinall Wolfey, about the diuorce betweene King Henry the 8 and Katherine of Spain.767. He flayeth sentence of dinorce and departeth 768.74 Suspected of theeuery and fearched 768.74 Cardinall Campeins fent into England as Legate from Pore Lee the tenth 757.31 His honourable receiving, and stately riding to London 758.31 His treasures shewed with shame in Cheapside 758-32 Campobachi Earles in the Kingdom of Naples, whence defcended, 507.70 Cangi a people in Britain. 195,

Befieged by Philip Duke of First Canons Regular in Eng- | Cardigan field lost by the Eng-Burgundy. 659.30 The fregerafedby Humfrey Canterbury given to Auffen Duke of Giocefter. 659.30 the Monke Calais harboreth the Yor-Canutus King of Denmark and 664.76 Enghand. England. 379.32 Winnerh the loue of the Calais befieged by the Duke of Gnize. 829.114 Surrendred to the French English. Dilmembreth the English with great dishonour of the 830.117 See more in Callais or Call Calamities in England during William Conqueror his raign Caledonians a German descent, Regall Crowne Rebel, and are maffacred by 220. 11 Calcdonians in Britain most extortions his flatterers His ridiculous expedition & His humility. 174.7 His prodigality 191.1 His contrary conditions. ib. He was cruel and libidinous Religion. His glorious vanity, 192.3 He deludeth the Senate.ibid. He intended to inuade Bri-107.2 His warre with the Sea, 192. His ridiculous victory, ibid. wore. 205.17 His ambition and crueltie, anutus the Dane, Monarch of England. Hated after death. 192,6 His good lawes. 222. 5 Sir William Capell Alderman o 822.7 868,260

London, commanded to the Tower of London, by Edmund Dudley a Promoter 750.70 Caraltacus a renowned Prince of the Silures, his Coine, 19e 13.17 His manner of encamping, ib. His refolution, and animating of his Souldiers. 195,13 Put to flight. 195.14 His wife, daughter and brethren taken prisoners, 194.14. Resisted the Romans nine yeeres. thidem Betrayed by Queene Cartismandua, ibidem. 176 Led in triumph. ibid. His habite and attire, ibidem His vndaunted spirit, thid. His oration to Claudius Ce. far. 195.15 Pardoned by Claudius Cafar, 195.16 Caraffa Cardinall accuseth Cardinall Poole, and asketh him forgiuenes, 826.80, 82 Pope by the name of Paul the fourth Caraufius a Britaine rebelleth. His coin. ib.255.8 His parentage. 254.5 His policy to become rich, ib.

Viurpeth and enioyeth the Empire 7. yeeres 255.7 Maketh peace with Maximianus. 255, 8 His good government in Bri-

ibidem. Murdered perfidiously by A

379-34 Carentine in Normandy burnt to ashes by king Edward the 390. 4

hostages 374-34 Canutus with Harold, inuade England, and compound for a tribute, 379.35.36 Espouseth Queene Emma Hee refuseth to weare the Regall Crowne 456.9 His Pilgrimage to Rome. 391 Slaine Carled reedified. His letters from Rome to the Bishops and Nobles of Eng-Carleil in the Scots hand.446,7 391.12

Complaineth of the Popes Carlingford skismish disaste-391, 12 His Apothegme to contince 392.15 392.75.15 Canusus his care of inflice and 391.12 His Munificence, 292, 12 His buildings. 392.13.14 His bounty to Monasteries, Brigantes. His descent and pedigree, His raigne, death and feoul-Her adultery, difloyalty and treachery Carnil a King in Kent. Hee crowneth the Crucifixe Carns Emperour with Carinus, and Numerianus. 253.2 with the Crowne that hee His birth.

Their Coines. His Armes and coine, ibid. Killed with a thunderbolt, Crowned at London, 390.2 Cascais Castle in Portugal sur prized by Sir Francis Drake His expedition into Scot-864.220 land against King Malcolme Caffan king of Tartars gives the 391-11 Turkes a great ouerthrow. and is banrized 549.41 Caifians what Country they in-

catus

Cassibelan a British Prince, 173. His Seignory and Coine, il 186.5,183 Brother to King Lud, thid 6 General! of the war against Iulsus Cafar Cassibelan besieged in Verolam, 186.0 Hee repulsed Cafar twice.

His Coine. 186 -Cassius Posthumus an viurper in the Romane Empire. 146. 2 His death and his sonnes, ib. Lord of Caftel a Briton, burnt Plimmouth, and is flaine by the people of Desconshire. 618.40 Castles rased by King Henry 2.

Castles cast down, Caftles generally both raifed. and razed in England 446, 4 Caftra Exploratorum, i.old Carleil. 238. 2
Catacratus, the fonne of Kim. beline, or Cunobeline, taken prifoner. 193,5 Lead Captine in Rome. 175.8 A Catalogue of pecuniary aids in 28. yeers space of K. Henry the third. the third. 526.68 Sir William Catesby a Coun-

fellor to King Richard the 2. beheaded. 725,58 Catesby a deepe Lawyer and diffembler, to William I . Hafings Lord Chamberlaine,

Set to found the L. Haftings. lish against the Weish. 446.6 Cardinals z, fent from Pope False to the Lord Hastings his Benedict the 12, to treate afounder. bout a peace between France Caresby a Confpirator & chiefe and England, but in vaine. plotter of the Gunpowder treason. 890. Catharine, See Katharine. Cardinals Hat delivered to Car dinall Wolfey in great pompe Cathari what heretickes, 206, Cardinals not wel learned.440

Catti in Germany from whence the Saxens should come, 28 c Catus See Decianus. Caurfini, certaine Roman V-furers in England 521.52 Caufeys or high-wayes in Tri-taine made by Traianns, 218 Carinus, Cafar and Augustus with his father Carus, 252.2 ihiden

890.41

Carled reedified, 429.18
Endowed with priviledges, Cautionary townes and forts in the Low-Countries delivered into Queen Elezabeths hands. 855.166 rous to the Irifh Rebels, 874 Ceadwall, or Ceadwald,2 glorious King of the West-Saxons

Carrucage what it is, 526.68 Carter his good fernice at Bul-His descent and exploits, tb. loigneberg. \$11.63 Carthage when built by Dide His yow to God. drid His bloudfhed in Kent. 208 Cartifmandua Queene of the Ceadwal his repentace, baptism death, buriall and Epitaph. Falleth in loue with Vello. He killeth Editwach 293.6 196.20

Cearlick or Cearliek king of the 176.12 West-Saxons his raigne. 173.2 Ceaulin or Cheaulin King of the West-Saxons dispossessed, and flaine. Ceaulin or Cheulin Monarch of ibidem the English. 328. His Armes

His victories. ibidens Flieth out of the field ibidem His raigne and death in exile His issue.

Cecilio daughter of William Conquerour, a vailed Nunne, and Abbeffe of Caen Nunne-173.2 rie. 426.72 Celts and Gaules our fathers. Celta whence so called, 159,6

Cenimagnes, a people where they dwelt, 172.2 Ceolnothus Archbishoppe of Canterbury his Coin,365.14 Ceolaulph King of Northumberland, a peaceable and victo. rious Prince. rious Prince. 305.16 Became a Monke in Lindelfern Isle, or holy Iland. ibid. Ceolwolph the last lineall King

of the Mercians 308.15 Expelled out of his kingdom Ceorl King of the Mercians Charemon Bishoppe of Nilus,

Chaire of marble translated out of Scotland voto Wellminster minster 547.21 The prophesic of it now fulfilled. ib:dem.88 5.10 Chaluz castle wonne by King Richard the first, 421.69 Cham his offpring seated in Africa. 161.2 His posterity vntruly sup-posed to have conquered & inhabited Britaine, 162.10

Sir John Chandois an expert Captaineflaine. 587.143 Chardford a Towne why fo cal-Chariot fight vsed by Britans, 160.12

His Armes

Charles K. of Sicilie, perisheth ar Sea. £42.2 Charles de Blois taken Prisoner 580.106 Charles Earle of Blois, a titler for the Dukedome of Bretaigne Armorica,flaine. 584 129 His claime vnto that Duchy 574.69 Charles the Daulphin, Regent of France whiles King John his Father, was prisoner in

England 583-122 Charles the Daulphin, difabled for fuccession to the crowne of France 643.54. 644.56 645.52 His complots to vphold himikid Enfliled King of Berry. 651.2 Charles, a third sonne of Ma-them Earle of Lennox, by Margaret daughter of Archibald Duglas, and father of the Lady Arbella.752-75 Charles Duke of Burbon, king Henry the eight his Champion and Captaine generall, against Francis the French 758.35 Condemned in France of trea-761.54

Charles Brandon Duke of Suffolke, entreth France in ho-fulity, and winneth divers places 760.48 See more in *Brandon*. places Charles the fon of Philip duke of Burgundy promileth to fide with King Henry the His hote speech vnto K.Edward the fourth. 687.94 Slaine at the battle of Maury Charles Duke of Burgundy

weddeth Magaret fifter to Edward the fourth King of 678,27 Bends himfelf against Richard Neuil Ea. of Warwick, 680,42 Seemore in Burgundy at the letter B.

Charles Duke of Orleance long time prisoner in England Set at liberty for a ranfome. His inlargement opposed by

Repelled with loffe from Bulleignberg 811 62 Sir Geffrey Chaucer, our Laure-Humfrey Duke of Gloceft ibid. Charles the fifth, E nperour, his greatnesse and many Domiat Poet 589,154, 590 When he liued 589 154 When he lived 589 154 Chedwal or Ceadwal the most nions 764.61 He pretendeth marriage with the Lady Mary K. Henry 8. famous King of the Westhis Daughter. 764.62 Saxons 297 7 Cheirbrugh in Normandy mot-He with the Queene of Artagaged to King Richard the gon commeth into England to breake peace with France. Chelred K. of Mercia and Mo-758.33 He commeth into England 3narch of the English. 341 6

gaine & affianceth Lady Ma-His wife, raigne, and death ry K. Henry the 8. his daugh-758.27 He departeth out of England & faileth for Spaine. 760,42 Sore aggreened at the Popes Captivity. 761.54 Chelwelf King of the Welt-Sax-

furnamed the wife, his cunning practifes against the English. 58c.12c He quarrelleth with Edward the fecond K. of England 561.49 Hee Summonerh Edward the blacke Prince to Paris 586.136

His Genealogie. 320 Cherdick Shore Charles the fixth K. of France Cherdickeford now Chardford a young, foolish, and vaine glorious prince, intendeth Chesline King of West-Saxons the inuation of England.599 & Monarch of the English, 328 612.9 His Armes Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Stricken into a Lunacy. 617. Canterbury, a Hout Championagainst Wickliff: doctrine Vpon what occasion and how 626 17

640.44,45 &c. He feeth a spectre in forrest of His pollicy to divert the King and flate from looking into Meaux. 640.46 the Cleargie 626.19 His Death Chichefter built by King Ciffs barles the feuenth crowned King of France 655, 17 His dishonorable association 326.7 296. 2 Children, Martyrs 242, 37 Chilham Caftle in Kent , by with Philip duke of Burgunwhom built 507-74 die. 657-24 Charles the eighth K. of France Chinen befreged and furprised practifeth to ioine Britaigne

Chifbury a fort-founded 296.2 Christiustred death in Tiberius Calarction Armorica to his Crowne. 724-24 734-24
He pretendeth marriage with
Margaret daughter of Maximilian the Emperour, but Cefers time Christian Bishops Christians sinnes, cause of their miferies intendeth to marry Anna Christianissimus, the French Dutcheffe and heire of Bri King his title fent vnto King Lewis the 12. from Pope Iulius taigne 736, 28 He marrieth Anne dutchesse of Britaigne and annexeth it to the Crowne of France the fecond 756.20 briftian King of Denmarke

harles Cardinall of Burben with his Queene come into England 760.47 proclaimed Lieurenant go-Christ detected and executed Charlestherenth 867, 200 by immuration 512, 13 barles-Mount, a Fort erected Christiana, daughter of Edward in Vifter, by Charles Blownt, the outlaw, a Nunne in Ram-fey in Hamphire 584-21 Christian and Turkish captines Lord Montiny 876.324 Magna Charta confirmed.572 476 35 Confirmed twelve times by Christian Religion groweth vp at Rome in Nerves court

King Edward 3. 584 126 Charsa de foresta confirmed. ib. Christians perfecuted by Nero Charter of William Conqueror to Norman hunter 424-59 Charter of London by K. William

424.6

513.13

836 35

782 122

307 9. 342 2

307 9 ibid.

Conquerour

wounded

murdered

His armes

His buriall

He fighteth a battel with Inas

harrers and Liberties gran-

ted by King Henry the third

Reuoked and cancelled, 514

Treacheroufly & barbaroufly

Monnsieur Chastillion raiseth a

baftilion before Bulloiene

Chistians obtaineraine by prai-221 2 Chrysanthus Lieutenant of Britaine, made Bishop of Confragiamle 277.10 Chryfanthus a Christian British professor. Church lands withholde bring Chaftilion Admirall of France, a curse to the withholders

528 71 Church-lands not to be alienated 888 27
Cimbrica Cherfone sus 161 6 The original of the English The wombe that brought footh Nations that conquered vs 4113 Cimbri or Combri, 2 Colony

led into Italy 161 Cimbri or Cameri, 2 name common to Brstans and their neighbours 159 Sincia, Cynthia, or Scientia, fi-

fler to king Henry the third, his wife 526 67 Married most sumptuously to Richard Earle of Cornwall. 526,67 Cingetorix a king in Kent 173

Taken prisoner 186 A. Coma murdered by Titus Emperour 2124 Ciffs king of the South Sexons 295 2

ons, his raigne and death | His raigne Ciftersian Abbots denie aide to King Iohn 487 II Cits-Cotiboufe, Catigerne his 290 9 monument

29761

Cherdick entreth Britaine 326

xons ibid. 296 I His raigne,iffue, and death.ib.

Civilis Lieutenant of Britaine The first King of the West-Sa-270 9 Ciuill warre betweene Torke and Lancafter, reviued by occasion of a fray 668 70 John Clapham his stratageme

Clerendon Councell in Wilefbire 458 18 Clarence and Clarentieux, titles whence they come 589.158 Duke of Clarence flaine in fight

by the Scots 646 67
Richard Claringdon, reputed
base son of Edward the black 616 26 Prince 616 26 Hanged for his affection to his brother king Richrad the fecond Dutchesse of Clarence, deliuered of child vpon shipboord

Clarke a Priest condemned for Treason, executed 886.15 Clafficianns the Receiver, and Suctoning the Generall at odds in Britaine 200 23 Claudius Drufus Cafar 193 His parentage and right to the Empire

ibid. 194,5 His Coines Entreth Britaine in person, with a great Army 175 His clemency to Tritans 194

Honoured of the Britanes as a God Entreth Rome in triumph of Britaine Claudius Cafar his words, occafion of his death 196. 22 He dieth of poison His endowment of Body.ibid. His imperfections ihid

First Conquerour of the Britanes 106 24 His triumph for the Conquest of Britanes Claudius Emperour. See

Tarirus. Claudia Rufina, a Lady that embraced the Faith. 203 7 The fame that Saint Paul, and the Poet Martiall doe speake (leber a Schoolemaster, raiseth

rebellion in Norfollke, 828 Clemens Maximus rebelleth & is filled Emperour 273 5 His coine He is beheaded Clement the Pope with his Cardinals, befieged in the Ca-

file of S. Angello Pope Clemens the eighth his Balles to prohibit fuccession in the Crowne of England to any after the death of Queene Elizabeth, vnleffe hee werea Catholicke 844.4 Burned by Garnet . ibib. Saint Clemets Danes, a Church without Temple Barre why

fo called Cleopatra Queene of Egyp. Clergy vntrue to King Edmund and fweare fealty to Cans. 28T 1 ****

Clergy-men Cómotioners executed 778.99 Clergy mens diffolute life and impunity, in king Henry the fecond his time. 457-12.13.

THE TABLE.

Clergy men degenerate, as | Iohn Comin Lord of Strabogie, well as tame foule become wild in William Conguerous histime alergies exceffe complained of in Parliament, 626,18 Clergy giuen to fleshly de 432.35 Lord Clifford flaine with an headleffe arrow 675,6 Walter Clifford forceth an officer to eate his Writ,&c. 539, Sir Roger Clifford beheaded for attempting against King Rechard the third. 720,26 Robert de Cisford Quinc at Bannocksburne. 558.25 Sir Robert Clifford ioineth with

the Dutches of Burguedie, in fetting vp Perkin Warbecke. 743.50 Clite. an Addition proper to the Kings fonnes of England. 553.6 Cledius Balbinus Emperor with

Pupienus Max. ibidem.2 His descent. Cl. Balbins his Coine. 237 Clothworkers, and Cloth-mamaking in England, much efteemed of by King Edward the 3. 571.43 Lord Cobham affailed by Wian in Cowling Castle. 819.33 Henry Brooke Lord Cobham, ar-

raigned and condemned for 886.4 ibidem, 17 Reprined Captaine Cobler a Priest execured. 718.90 Cochricus a King of the Danes

flaine. Coggefhall Abbey founded.454 Cogidums, a British King. 175

He raigned ouer certain Cities in Britaine, ibib. 194.4 Coify a Bilhop deftroyeth idols Altars,&cc. 334-7 Coilus 2 British King. 217-3

Coines of Britains By what forme knowne, 280.12 Coiners of false money . how punished. 425.4

Coines made purer. 834-11 Coines first stamped in Britain, 180.6 William Collingbosene cruelly executed for making a 720.37

Colman his speechas touching the celebration of Easter. 33 I Colonie English the first in Ire-462.55 Colonies of Romans the feede

plots of all our Cities. 232. Christopher Columbus discouereth America. 746.62 Columnes or pillars fet vpon the Caufeis in Britain, 218. Combat betweene Iohn Voton

and Iohn Down in Smithfield. 655.19 John Cumberton, alias Cumbe towne. See Iohn Northamp 598.43 Combri. See Cimbri. A Comet or blazing flarre for

thirty dayes in England 571. A Cometor blazing star. 667

Comets prodigious, 294.1 A Comet in King Harolds time

fubmitteth to King Edward the first

Philip Comines Sent fro Charles Duke of Burgundy vnto Ca-lais to found Vauclere, 682.

Comius of Arras his Coine. 172 1 The first in Britain.ib. 182.2 King of the Atrebate in Bricommodus Emperour, 224. 1

His Coine. His qualiries 2 24.2 His death plotted, ibidens, 2 Murdered by his wife and o rhers. 225.8 His raigne and age ibiden Hienortraich. ibid.9.

Hisportraic. Styled Hoft is humani generis ibidem Commons spared in the Subfidie Commetion in Cornwall

Commotions for Enclosures. Commotion in Norffolke for

Enclosures vnder Ker,ib. 31 Cardinall Come his letter Parry, confirming him in his intended treason, 840. Scotland 547-27

They submit to the award of King Edward the 1. 546 Composition between Saxons and Britans. 289.2 Between Robert Curthou,&

King Henry the first his brother. 435-5 Composition treated of at Ar-

ras, betweene French, Englifh, and Burgognians. 657 Computation of yeeres by the

Scripture most certain, 166 different in Writers.165, 23

Con-Oneal a right Irifh.837.38 Submitteth to King Henry Slaine. the eight 837.39 Surnamed Bacca, wherefore 837.38 King of Conseglet rebelleth, & is taked priloner. 516.28 Conference of Divines about gouernment of the Church,

and the Liturgy. 876. 18 Conference as touching point of Religion. Confirmation of children how allowable 887-20

Sir Coniers Clifford Gouernour of Conaught, flaine in fight. 873-303 Coniers a Chaplain in Kers re-

bellion. 807-34 Sir Iohn Coniers rebelleth against King Edward the 4. Conan planteth Armorica with Britons. 280.9

Conquest 2 Castle in Normandie won. 635.42 Conrad a Marquesse murdered at Tyre, wherefore. 477 43 Conspiracy against K. Iames of Emperour with Galerina a Great Britain reuealed. 885.9 Confpiracy for the deliuery of King Richard the fecond deposed begun. 613.12 Chiefe Conspirators who

they were. ibid.13 Discoursed by whom, ibid.

Conspirators against K. James who they were, 885.10 Endited and condemned,

Constance wife to Geffrey, fon to King i. enry the second,

Confrance daughter of William Conqueror. 426.73 Wife to Ranulph Earle of Chefter, leaves her husband. and is maried to one Guide Conftant the fonne of one Con-

fantine, of a Monke became Emperour. Slaine ibidem.7 Conftans his part of the Em-262.2 pire. ultantine fonne of Cador, K.

of the Britans. His wicked life described by 219 Slaine, Constantine the Great, Empc-

maintenance of Popery.805 FOUR 259.1 The first Christian Emperour,a Britaine. Constantine the Great, Cesa to his father Constantius

Chlorus. His birth and parentage. 249.9.259.2 His Attributes. His affaires in Britain, 260.9 His fword. 364.12

His Coine. He altereth the forme of gonernment. 260 17 Die drew the Prouinces forces to Constantinople,261.14

Hee established Christianity 261.19 His Baptifine. 261 1 His death and fepulture, 261

His 3. fonnes, fucceffors 261 18 Their Coines. 262

Conftantinople built by Conftan-tine the Great, 261.12 Loft by a Conftantine. 261.13 Constantine the yonger his fon what part hee had in the

Empire. . 262.1 Constantine of a common fouldier for names fake made Emperour. 276,6 Allowed by Honorius, ibid. 7 Emperour.

Reheaded Beheaded ibiden
Conftantises Conne of Conftan tine the Great, was 1 had in the Empire. 262.1 ibidem, 2 Sole Emperour. 267.4 Disquieted with an apparition

His death, age & raign. 264 He fauoureth Arrians.ibiden His vertues and vices, ibid. Hisperionage The place of his buriall. ibid.

Constantine the yonger. Constans. Constantius the vonger Their Comes. Constantins Chlorus, Cafar to Maximianus Emperour. 2544 His Coine.

257.1 Why called Chlorus 257.3 His vertues His fmall port and frugality. His policy to trie true Chri-258.6 ftians. SIIIII z

death bed. 258.11 His raigne and death. ibidem He permitted the protestion of the Gospell in Britaine. House of Converts, now the

His speech at Torke upon his

Rolls in Chancery lane in London founded. don founded. 519,42 Converts what they were, ibid. ohn Conland Figurer, taketh prisoner Danid the 2. king of Coare 580.104 Made Knight Baneret. 580.

He rendreth his prifoner K. Danid to Queen Philip, wife to King Edward the third

Cornelius Agrippa a great learned man, Cornelius Bishop of Rome Martvr.

Cornish men rebell vnder L. Audley. 741 44* Vnder Perkin Warbeck -743,50 Cornwall Dukedome inuefted vpon the Kings eldett fonne

at his Natiuity. 673.95 Richard de Cornwall flaine in Berwicke. 546 Sir Thomas Cornwallic taken prisoner by Ker, &c. 808.39 Coronation of King Richard the second, with all the com-

plements and circumstances thereof. cor. 2 thereof. 591.2 Corporation of Cities, if not first instituted, vet fet forward by King lohn, 506.63 Corpus Christi Colledge in Ox-

ford founded 721.40 Corraghs a kind of thips, 169

Sir Robert Cotton of Cunington aftorer of Antiquities. 169 At Conentree a Parliament 66 9

The Councell fit in the Tower about Edward the fifth his Coronation. 702.42 Councell of the States of England held at Oxford 448.17 Councell or Ariminum in fauour of the Arrians. 264.9 Councell at Sardies against Arrians. Courtes of Iustice removed

backe from Torke to London. 550.46
Iohn Constney Earle of Denonfbire flaine in the battell at Tempsbury. 684 71 William de Courtney Archbishop of Canterbury and the Cler-

gy, giue voluntary to the King a Tenth, 600.59 Edw. Lord Courtney made Earle of Desconshire. 817.15 Henry Courtney Marquesse of Excefter, and Earle of Denonthire with others beheaded.

779.104 Ordained heire apparant by King Henry the 8. William Courtney Earle of De-wouthire troubled for Edmond de la Pole, Earle of Suffolke.

Court factions in England. 653 Appealed at Leicefter 653.11 Counte-few, called Curfew, first instituted. 417.13

Cowilfus a Danish King flaine, The Cranmer Archb. of Can-

terbury burnt in Ox-

hill

night.

Infidels

learned Clergy and inftru-

cters of Britaines 168.8

808.41

of George Duke of Cl. rence, 824,66 Thomas Cranmer disableth the 682.53 Bishop of Romes authority , Crucifixion forbidden by Conagainst the word of God. 769 fantine the Great, 512.12 Henry Cuffe executed at Tiborn Graced by the Pope with the Thomas Culpepper hanged at Tiburne for adultery with 880,344 office of Penitentiarship. 769.79 Cranmere Caftle erected by Queene Katherine Heward. King Stephen. 453-43 78c.109 Petie-Craon King Charles the Cumbra 2 faithfull Counfello fixth his Minion, makes deto King Sigebert, murdered bare betweene the Duke of byhim 299.14 Orleance and his Dutcheffe. Cumbri.i. Welfhmen. Rob. Cumin with his Normans 640.44 flaine in Durhams. 417,15 Dismissed the Court, flieth John Cumin Earle of Bucquhan, into Bretaigne, ibidem, Credington, 2lias Cridington, 2 Governous of Scotland vinder King Edward the ferond Bishops See remoued to Ex-557. 18 ibidem, celter 401.25 Vanquished, Cardinall Cremenfis the Popes Legate restraineth Priests of Chosen of the Scots their marriage. 440.46 Himfelf taken with a whore, 440.46 Gouernour. 549.42 Cuneglasius a Prince of the Briihidene tans. 321 Described by Gildas, ibidem Returneth homewith shame ibiden Cunobelin or Kimbeline King Crescy battell 577-87-84c. of the Trinobantes, 139,6 Crefwell a lefuite his traiterous His Coines. 174 In his time Iesus Christ our Rooke 849.112 Crids first King of the Merci-Saujourborne. ans his descent, raigne and ohn Curry Earle of Vilter. his rough and rnde speech to K. Crifus, Conftantine the Great Ichn of England. 492.28 A mighty firong Champion. his base sonne put to death, 260. S 492,26 After long imprisonment fer at liberty by King Ichn. His Coine. ihidem Sir Iames Croft arraigned for Wists conspiracy, and pardo 492.26 He neuer could recouer 821.47 Cromer, high Shiriffe beheaded by Effex Rebels. 664.53 land though oft attempted 492.26 Thomas Lord Crommel his rier fat alias I facius Emperour of the Griffons, a Tyrant, fing. 772.94 A Blacke-Smithes fonne, sib. spoileth King Richard the Thomas Cromwell makesh she first of his shippes. 475.26 His inhumane demeanor to marriage between K. Henry the eight, and Anne of Cleue. Queene Berengaria and other Ladies. 775.100 Lord Cromwell emprisoned, Put into fetters of filuer &c gold, with his onely daugh-779.106. After his death attainted in ter, and led into Captivity Parliament. 779.166 Himfelfe made an act, occaby King Richard the first, ikidem 27 Sent to Tripolis in Syria, ib. fion of his owne death, 779 ibid.108 Beheaded Caufe of his death, his diffike of Katharine Howard and defence of Anne of Clene, 779 Edmunds. Croffes of fundry colours, bad.

His Imperiall Standerd offered up by K. Richard the firft, at the Abbey of Saint Edmands. 479-55 Sis Robert Curfon Captaine of the Caftle of Hammes neere Calais, like a Synon-betrayges of Christ his Souldiers. eth Edmond de la Pole Earl 469.95 The Croffe in Decentius his of Suffolke. 748.67 Cultomes called Anice. 458.18 time 263,3 The Croffe what forme it had. Cuth a valiant warriour. 297,4 259.4 Croffes erected in honour of ushburga King Ofricks wife Queene Elianor, King Edbecommeth a Nunne, 299, ward the 1.his wife, \$45.16 Croffe, the first erected in Eng. Cuthburga King Ofreds wife, 226.2 The Croffe at Winchester of great value 392.19 Croffebacke, or Croleshed, His Coine whee it came. 285.8.539.107 Crowched or Croffed Friers,

304.13 Cushred King of West-Saxons. 299.17 His raigne, death and Iffue. why fo called Cuthred King of Kent. 295.16 285.8 Crowland Monastery founded. Cuthwin fonne of Cheanlin, 229 307.10.343.4 Crowne-lands in the polletion Combertue pras the Ifle, with fome proof the Barons, how K. Henry uinces of Syria, fubdued by King Richard the first. 157. the third recourred. 512.16 Crownes of England and Ire-475.20. land entailed by Parliament ipres committed in halte to Richard de Camuile, and Daniel Bishop of West-Saxons
Robert de Turnbun, K. Richwpon King Henry the 6, his heires males lawfully be-681.53 ard his Viceroys. 475. Daniels Prophesie fulfilled. 256 In remainder vp o the heires

Sir Thomas Dagworth his valiant exploits in Little Bretaigne 580.106 Slaine by Richard Raoul de Cahors. 580.106 Damianus, alias Dinianus, a great Clerke. 206.18 Danes compound with the Eng-357.8 Sue to Elfred for peace. 357 ftirF arrivall in Britaine, 300

Baptized 357.16 Inuade and infest this Iland. 308.19.311.15 Arrived vpon the coast of Kent in King Ethelred his 375-3 They doe much harme in ibidem Discomfite the English.349 Inuade fundry partes of

England at once. 376.7 Sent out of the land by King Canatus Haue money paid at divers 378 Maffacred. 377.16 Vanquished by King Egbert, They take and fire divers

The Danes fifth Invation, 350 They take Elphegus Archbishoppe of Canterbary, and

flay 900. Monks. 378 Their maner of Tithing men to flaughter. Destroy Monasteries, and murder all in them. 354. 5 Possessed of the Crowne of England. 384-23 Discomfited in fundry pla-350.4.5 From whence descended. 385.4

378,20,239,12 To what fumme it arofe. 389.13 Remitted. Danes whence deriued. 386.6 Giuen to Piracies from the first. first. 386.8 Therefore called Wiccingi. Named alfo Pagans, Denif-

can, and Heathen men. shid. heirancient Religion, or fuperstition 286.0 anes first arrived at Teigne. menth in Denonshire. 387.1 Danes, vpon what motines first they attempted England 38. 5,6 Their murderous facts at fundrytimes 189.12

Cafneered and difabled from raigning any more. 399.3 Dane of great valour. 405 Danes converted first to Chriflianity heere in Britaine 205.17

inuade England in William Conqueronrs daies 417.16

Danes with English fugitiues

William Danhener beheaded for Perkin Warbecke his confpiracy Danciones, Supposed ancestors

of the Danes 385.4 Sir Philip d' Arcy alias Dercy appeacheth St. Henry de Bash a bribing ludge, of Treason

530. 78 Sir Charles Dauers beheaded on Tower hill 880.344 David King of Scots invadeth England 446.7 Winnerh Carleil and Newca

Reinuadeth Northamberland 447-11.4-His Soldiers inhumane cruelihed

Scots taketh part against K. Henry the 2. 465.65 David Prince of Wales, inuadeth the English Marches

of the yoake, from the King of England \$26,67 Danid Prince Llewelins brother furpriseth Hawardin Castle

red 545. 15 Danid Brafe King of Scotland, while he was Prince, married Ions, daughter to King Edmard the second 267.13 his Queene fly into France

Calais is belieged by the English r80.162

the Tower of London 580.105 Set at liberty upon a ranfome <82.110

and freed by leauing his fon fidelity and honefty. 594.11

ford Earle of Leicester, and

thet and fonne 241.3 Perfecuterh Christians ibiden

24.2-4 giuen to Charles the fifth Emperour, vpon what occa-

wherefore 759-39 Deification of Roman Empe TOURS

Michael De la Pole, Lord Cha-

739-37

el at the Pale

founded

Dauid brother to the King of

Seeketh to draw his head out

544, 12 Hanged, headed, and quarte

Cities and Townes. 378.24 King David the fecond with

They returne into England He inuadeth England, whiles

Vanquished and taken prifo-Lodged vnder fure guarde in

From King Dasid vnto Zedechiah what time. 278-2 Earle of Deane taken prisoner

hoftage 593.7 Earle of Desnes forme his rare Dearth and Death in Cudwalladers time

Dearth and mortality. 376.5 Debate between Simon Mont-Richard Earle of Glocester

528 TT2 Decentius Cafar hangeth himfelfe 262. 2 Decimus his oppression in Brs

Fliethinto Gallia ibid. Is Decises murderech Philips Fa-His birth

Decise enforced to bee Empe-His ignoble death Defender of the Church, a title

fion 759. 39 Defender of the Faith, a title giuen to King Henry the 8

Daira, a Province in the king-

dome of Northumberland

Seale taken from him. 602. Dieth in exile at Paris. 604

By-named in fcorne, Micha-See more in lerrer P

Delmatius, alias Dalmatius Anmbaltanus his coine. 256.

Delphi spoyled by Brennus. Saint Denis Abbey at Wilson,

Den-mare, whence it tooke the name and original 385. 5 Deposition of K. Iohn of England decreed by Pope Inno Francis Dereham dieth at Ti. borne for adultery with Ka-

tharine H.ward before shee was Queene. 780,109
Dermot Mac-Murrgh King of
Leinster secretly stole away

king Rothericks wife 46: Purfued by Rothericke, ibid, 50 Flieth for fuccour to K. Hen, 17 the 2. His perswafine oration to Ri-

chard Strongbow, for to aide 462.53 He dieth at Fernis Earle of Defmond well hoped tobe King of Ireland 853

Reheaded ibid.148 Dencalidones, Westerne Pitts,

Deuenter traiteroufly fold to the Spaniard. 857-177 Iohn Deuerel Esquire executed with Roger Mortimer. 568

Walter Deuereux flaine before Roan 867 256 Robert Desereux Earle of Effe.c Comander in a Fleet against 868.264 Robert Denereux Eatle of Effex.

Lord Lieutenant and gouernour Generall of Ireland 872.201 Heentreth Monuster & cleereth it of Rebels. ibid 262 He vanquisherh O-Coners & O-Moiles in Leinster ibid.

303 He entreth Vifter ibid.304 Hee and Tir-Oen meete in Parley. 874.305 His proceedings in Ireland. distasted at home in England

ibidens 307 Hee returneth into England Committed to the custody of

Sir Thomas Egerson L. Keeper His discontent bewraied in a

aletter to the Lord Keeper 877.331 Suspended from exercise of his offices ibid. 333. He detaineth 4. of the Coun-

cell under fure Cuftody in awne house 879 337 Heentreth tumultuoully into London 879,228 Proclaimed Traitor in Lonibid.

Refifted by Richard Bancrofs the fout Bishop of London ibid,239 Fortifieth his house in the

Strand ibid. 340 Conneied to the Tower London thid.

cellour difgraced, and the | Arraigned at Westminster and | Archimbald or Archibald Down condemned to death ibi.341 Beheaded His speach at his death ibid.

Denil appearing in the habite of a Frier Minorite, 616.12 Dinifes Caftle, fortified against king Stephen 448,17

By whom built Accounted the goodlieft Caftle in Europe 448. 18
Denonshire men & women behaue themfelges valiantly against the French at Dort-

mourh 618.4 Diadumenus Casar sonne to Macrinus proclaimed Emperour

Put to death Diffator Perpetuus the highest title of honour in Rome, 189

A. Didius Lieutenant in Britaine 196.19 buieth the Empire

227.2 His Coine 226 Slaine by his Souldiers. 227.5 Iohn Dighton one of the mur-

Sir Francis Drake Vice-Admirall of the English against derers of King Edward the 5. the Inuincible Armado of and his brother 715.18 Sir Thomas Dimocke beheaded the Spaniard 859. 198 reames prefaging King Hen-77 the first his death 441.53

680. 39 Diocletian, Emperor. 253 5.254 Dromond.i. a great Argofe His Coine, of Saracens conquered by K. His parentage. Richard the first, 475-30 Druides in Britaine the onely Killeth Arrive Aper with his

owne hands His tyrannicall edicts.256.15 Refigneth up the Empire.ibid.

Poisoneth himselfe ibid.19 Diffembling betweene Richard L. Protector and the Duke

of Buckingham 708.59 Diuine Seruice in the English His difcent and quality.754-3 tongue 834 10 Distincts governed part of Gaule and of Britaine, 162.7

See more in Empfon.

she Dudley Earle of Warwick Dobuni yeeld to the Romans entreth Norwich against Ket and the Rebels of Norfolke, Robert D'oily father of Henry D'oily by Edith widow of Robert the fourth naturall His noble heart and loue,

808.45.46 Created Duke of Northumfonne of King Henry the first 443.69 berland. Doleman, alias Parsons. Appointed L. Lieutenant for 649

Queene lane against Ladie Domesday, or Domus Dei Book Marie. Arrested in Cambridge by a Domitian Emperour his youth Serieant at Armes 817.12

Arrefted by Henry Fitz-Alen Earle of Arundel. 817.13 Escapezh murdering Dedicateth a Temple to Iupi-He with others committed to the Tower. His ambition He recanted, and was behea-His vaine mispending of time ded

Ambrose Dudley Earle of War-Enuieth Agricola his Victorie wicke, Generall of the English at Newhauen 836.29
Robert Dudley Earle of Leice-His vaineglory and other vi-215.17 fter, Deputy Generall in the By whom murdered. 216,19 Low-Countries enstalled at His personage Dunhage,

His age and raigne, ibid His proud carriage mittrufted His Coine. by the States. 856.171 His doings moue grudges & Domneua, Dompneua, or Dom new foundresse of Minster greeuances in the States. Abbay in Thanes 332-19 First Abbesse of Minster 294-8 Hee returneth into England

Doryphorus 2 youth Nero his for what cause 857.178 Discharged of his governe-ment of the Low Countries Doue presaging good fucceffe in the Admirals fhip at Cadiz voyage 869.267 Douer Castle shut against king

Henry the third, and his bro-8 49.196 ther Richard by the Barons. His death. 862,210 Duel or combat intended be-

tweene Paramour. Defengialle with other Nobies of dant, and Low and Kyme orland flaine at Hallydonhill 509.28 Raifeth spoiles in England ibi.

Plaintiffes. 851.135 Deel or fingle fight offered by a French man, who would not Taken priioner. ibid Archibald Douglasse prisoner fland to it. 492.26 Between Newton and Hamilwithout ranfome, hath Berton about words. wicke allotted voto him after a coceited victory. 617-3

Duel or combat between John Sir lames Donglaffe his reio-Welfb Efquier, English, and lute attempt vpon K. Edward Martiler a Gentleman Nathe third his paullion in the uarrois. Dukes place in London within 556.11 Villiam Dowglasse taken pri-Algate. See Priory of the foner by the English, 568,26 Trinity.

Sir William Douglasse flaine by Dulcitius a renowned Captain Henry Piercy alias Hotfpurre Dunbar Castle yeelded to King 6c4.79 Dragon-Gules the Standard Edward the first.

Edward the first. 547.28 Dunmaile King of Cumberland of king Edward the third at the batter of Crefey, 578. 92. Dünstan Abbot of Glastenburg Oragon in Standards against 316

had a great hand ouer King Six Francis Drake his voyage Endred. 367.5 Banished by King Edwy . 368 852.143

His ship kept as a monume His jugling miracles and delufions. 1374-4 His Prophesie. Dussin-Dale, a valley where

Ker and his rebels entrenched themselues.

Adred Monarch of England His Armes and Coine. ibid.

Priviledged in Britane. 168.8 His lenity and inflice. sbid.5. Allowed no Images nor vifi-His works 368.6 His death and sepulture. ib. ble forme of the Godhead 204-10 His Islue, ibid.7 204-10 -Edmond Dudley Esquire, an in-Eagle the Romans maine En-

ftrument for King Henry the 184.5 feuenth his auarice. 750.70 Eanfled King Edwins daughter

Firstbaptized in Northumberland. 334. 5 Eanfrith or Eanfrid King of Bernicia 303.9 An Apostata. 222. Slaine ib.304 Earthquakes 421.46.432,39

Easter when it should be cele-811.66 brated, breedeth a long diffention. 331-11.12. &c. The question argued to and 816.7 fro. East Angles kingdom with the

The Armes of it. 309. i East-Saxons kingdom and cir-East-Saxons neither affected cuir 817.14

nor attained to the Monar-817-17 Eston Colledge founded, 685 Ebbe, Abbesse of Coldingham

diffigured her felfe, wher-Ebiffa a Saxon Captaine fent for by Hengist. 290,7 Eclipse of the sunne. 238. 6 856.170 Eclipses strange of Sunne and Moone

Eclipse of the sunne a little be-856.177 fore King Henry the first his death 442.55 Edanade King of Scots envieth Eshelfred.

Is ouerthrowne Edbald King of Kent 293,6 Lieutenant of the English Refuseth Christianity, and forces at Tilbury Campe. marrieth his fathers wife.

ibidem Often plagued. Connerted.

Liberall to the Church. ib. Edward the elder, 363, 27 His Islue, raigne, death and Edgina wife to King Edward theelder boriall. Edburga Abbelle of Minfter in Her death Edhild daughter to King Edthe Ifle of Thanet. 332.19 ward the elder 362,21 Edilwach, See Ethelwolfe, Edburga daughter of King Edward the elder, loueth good bookes, and leadeth a Mo-nafticall life, 863,26 Edelingley Monastery builte. Edituald or Mollo King of Northumberland flaine, 305 359.25 Edith Swanf-halfe, or Swanf-ing El-necke,king Harold his fweet heart before hee was King. Edeling for 11e where King Elfred abode. 357.11 Edenburgh burnt by the Eng-Editha or Egitha wife to King lish 782.123 Edward Confessor, Earle Goodwins daughter, 402.25 to the English for K. Iames Herburiall the fixth his vie. 852-139 Saint Edith the Chaft, begotten Edenburgh rendred to king Edward the first. 547.29 by King Edgar. 370,11
Edfrid King Edwins some mur- Edith, alias Beatrice daughter of King Edward the elder. dred by Penda. 335-14 Edgar Monarch of England his Foundeth a Nunnery at Armes and his Coine. 369. Sonne of King Edmund, ib. Edmund fonne of King Edward 157 the elder, King of the West-Surnamed the peaceable. Saxons, and Monarch of Eng-370.3 Fauorable to Monkish proland, his Armes and Coine. 365 Edmond a third fonne of Ethelfession, 370,3 An enemy to maried Clerks. dred the vnready 380,44 Commonly called Ironfide, ibidem To Drunkennesse To Drunkennesse 370.4 Fauourable to Danes sisidem his Armes and Coine, 381 His Nauy Royall, and fcowdmend fonne of Edmend Ironring of the feas, ibid.6 His gifts in Winter, and cir-384,22 Edmund or Edmond King of the cuits through the Countrie for executio of Justice. 370,7 He bindeth diners Princes to nis Alleagiance. 370.8 His Magnanimity and Dethe Danes uotion. 370.9.10 Howmany Monafferies hee built and repayred ibid. His cruelty & incontinency. Deceived with a maidleruant brought into his bed. 371.13 His perion, raign and buri-372.15 Edgera 6, fon of King Ethelared 380.57
Edger Atheling, or Etheling leaueth England, 417-11
Set vp against William Conquerous. 418.2 Courteously vsed by King Willia the Conqueror. 419.33 Heire apparant to the crown of England 339.10 Edgar Erbeling Englands darling. 415. 2 He with the Bishops and others, yeeld to William of Normandy 415.23 Edgar Etheling his parentage.

thelmold

Her buriall

ward the elder.

Saint Edmondsbury given by him to the Monkes there 366,4 His vntimely and vnfortunate death 266, His Iffue, Saint Edmondsbury why fo called 311.15 i. Edmondsbury Church built Burnt by the Danes Reedified and enriched by K. Canutus thib.
Saint Edmends Dicth 360.4
Edmend second sonne of King Edgar 372-19 Edmond, second sonne of King Edward the first : his marri-284.21 Edgith a daughter of Algar, age and iffue. 553-72
Farle of Kent ibid. wife to King Harold 404,10 Earle of Kent Edeith a daughter of King E-Beheaded Edmund Creschbacks Earle of theired the vnready, married to Edrick's Traitor, 380.49 284,8 Edmund Crouchbacks why so Edgith the naturall or bale termed bid. 539.107 daughter of King Edgar. Titular King of Sicilia and A-372.21 A veiled Nunne, beautifull pulia and chaft. ibid. Her answere to Bishoppe E-His other honours, His wives and iffue Henry the third his second ihidem 532.85 shiden fonne His broad Seale Fdaith a daughter to King Ed-Deluded by the Pope ibid. 86 362.21 Edgith alias Edith King Egberts Edmund the 2. for of K. Henry daughter died, and buried at the 3. commended to the Parliament from his Father Pollesworth, 349,20 Saint Edgithes of Edithes of ishes of 534-91
ibidem Edmund Crouch-backe, the ori-Edging the 11. daughter of K. ginall of the contention be-

tweene Torke and Lancoffer | Edrick the Dane murdered. His death and buriall, shid. Not deformed 534.91 Edmand Earle of Arundei, bo headed with others to fatif. fie Roger Mortimer. 562.66 Edmund Earle of Kent, halfe vncle to King Edward the third,opposing the Queene Dowager and Mortimer, beheaded, 567.19
Edmond of Langler created Earle of Cambridge, & Duke of Torke. 590,600.56 Sent with an Army into Portugall. 594.17
Edmond Archbishoppe of Canterbury dealeth with King
Henry the third, about redrefling of the State, 520 45 A Saint, and dieth in volunta-362-15 ry exile 525.62 Edmund Earle of March detecteth a confpiracy of Richard Earle of Cambridge & Edmand Beaufort Duke of Somerfettaken forth of Sanctuary at Temkesbury, 684-72 Edmond Beaufors Duke of So-merfet arrested of high Treafon, and fent to the Tower. 666.61 Fdmond Reaufort Duke of Somerfet, a vigilant Counfellor to king Henry the 6 and true to his Country. 665.54 Regent of English and France, fide liueth private in Exile. East-Angles, 311,15 Most cruelly put to death by 661.39 ibidem.354,6 Commanded prifoner to his owne house. 665.57 Accuseth Richard Duke of 665.57 His Raigne, ibid. Edmund sonne of King Edmard the elder, Monarch of Eng-Torke of treason. land 362,24,365 He vangusheth the rebellious Flyeth from Barnet field into 683.65 Wales, Slaine at the battell of Saint Danes, and ioyneth Northiberland to his Dominions, · Albans 667.64 mond Ironfide Monarch of Hislawestranslated into La-England, his Coine. 381 He profereth king Counte fintine by Lambert 366,4 gle fight 382. 2 He putteth Danes to flight, Edmund and Canute at fingle fight. 383.16 Murdred by Edricke. 383.17 His raigne and buriall. 383,18 His personage and valour, ib. Edmond Earle of Kent Wouns ded to death at the fiege of Briant in Little Bretaigne, 620.46 Edmund sonne of King Harold from out of Ireland inuadeth England. 417.13 Edmond Prince, King Ethel-dreds ionne, punisheth Reuolters 280,27 Edmund de la Pole, Earle or Duke of Suffelke, excommunicate by a Bull from Pope Alexander the 6. 749.69 Delivered up to the Tower of Landon. London. 749,70 See more in Pat de la Pole dmond third fonne of King Henry the seuenth, Duke of

Somerfet, his birth, death and

Etheldred the vaready. 380,

262.25

raifetha power against Si-

mon Montfort 538.103

Edred fonne to King Edward

Edred another fonne, his Arms

Edrick King of Kens. 294.10.

theelder

and Coine

Slaine.

place of buriall 751.74 Edrea's fourth fonne of King

Edrick Sylvanicus taketh Arms with the Welflumen, against King William Conquerour. Edrick the Kings fonne, reuol-teth to the Danes. 379.36 Earle Edrich, furnamed Streron for his auarice 377-17 His traiterous stratageme. His wicked counfell. ibidem Surnamed alfo Streena.416.9 Beheaded as a traitor, and his head fet on the highest gate in London 383,18 An yntrufly Counfellor to his 377 20 ibidem 25 Sourraigne. His treachery Hee goeth to the enemy, 382 Edfine Archbishop of Canterbury. 399,5 Edward the elder, Monarch of the English His Armes and Coine. ibidem His Humility, 361.7 Taketh a Votaresseto wife 361.7 · bidem 2 His death and Iffue 261-10 King Edward the Confessor his death, buriall and raigne. 401,25.402.25 His personage ibidem Called Saint Edward. 399.6 Monarch of England 298 His Seale. Coinc. and Armes. Vaine predictions of his raign His lawes the fountain of our common lawes in England. His lawes reuiued. 399. 7 His lawes reuiued. 435 4 His troubles by forminers, & domefticke enemies. 299. 11 His raign troubled with calamities of the land, 400.20 He refraineth from the bed of his vertuous wife. 400.21 Vakind and cruell to his wife and mother. 401.22.24 Edward Out-Law dieth. 399. Sonne of Edmond Ironfide liueth prinate in exile, 384 22 Edward the feuenth fonne of K Ethelredthe vnready. 381.52 King Edward the Martyr Monarch of England, narch of England, 373 His Armes and Coine, ibidem Murdered by his stepmother Flfrida His buriall King Edward the first his birth 526.65 Edward Prince, after K. Edward the first, marjeth Elianor, Alphonfus the King of Spain his fifter 532,84 His estate which the King gaue him prefently, ibidem Hee holdeth with the Barons againft his father 536.98 rince Edward revenged of the I andoners for abuse to the Queene his mother, 527. Prince Edward, after King Edward the first, taken prisoner by Simon Montfort, and imprisoned in Doner. 538.102 Remoued to Hereford Castle 538.102 Escapeth out of prilon, and

Wounded and healed by his wines tongue. 542. 5 King Edward the first his Arms, Broad Scale and Coin. 541. Why named Long Shanke. 439. his Campe. His valour and refolution, His fingle fight being Prince with Sir Add Gourdon.442,4 He forroweth more for his fathers death then his fons , His wonderfull strength of body 543. 7 His honorable paffage homeward from the Holy-Land. Homager to Philip King of France for territories in France. Crowned King at Westminster Discomfitted by the Welsh. view. Edward of Caernaruon borne. King Edward the 1. claimeth Soucraignery ouer Seat-Land Dispossessed of Gascoigne, 446,24 Intendeth the Conquest of ward Scotland. 546.25 Purpofeth to vnice Scotland Scotland. He refigneth it. to the Crowne of England Taketh truce with France, 547.21 548,33 Weddeth Margaret the French Kings Sifter, 548,26 He granteth Charters and Liberties to his fubiects. 548.36 Renounceth his graunt, 551 Edward of Caernaruon made Prince of Wales, and Earle of Cheffer First Prince of royal race, 552, bee void. King Edward the first cast from his horse had two ribs broken broken 548.34 One of our greatest English Monarches Monarches 550.48 Wholy possessed of Seatland Duke of Aquitaine ibiden His commendation His last speeches on his death bed to Prince Edward, 551 Sicke of a defenterie, or blos dy fluxe, whereof he died, His commendation, ibid. His wives and Iffue, ibidem. King Edward the fecond, his Armes, Broad-Seale, and Coine. Hetaketh reuenge of Walter Langton Bishoppe of Chetriumph fter 555,3 Weddeth Ifabel daughter of Philip the Faire, King of He with his Queen crowned, Edward of Windsor, after King Edward the third, borne. Made high Keeper or Warden of England in his fathers dayes, 562.63 Duke of Aquirane, and Earle of Ponties 561, 52 Enfured by the Queene to

for the Holy Land, 539,105 He killeth an Affafine, \$42.5 ther fer the Dukedome of Spaine, in the quarrell of Pe-Poiscned in his journey of Spaine. 585.134 He demandeth a fowage at a Parliament in Gascoigne.585 His death and commendation 585.150.

King Edward the fecond deposed, and committed to 2. mercileffe Knights 566,5 Murdered by his two Kee-566.6 His murderers outlawed, and brought to confusion. 566.8 His musdered Corps laide to 161. 9 His repentance and reformation of life after his depoting King Edward the fecond prifoner at Kenelworth Caftle. 562.60 Sollicited to resigne vp the Crowne vnto his sonne Ed-His Issue. 564.78
Edward the third, his Armes Broad-Seale and Coine. 565 Crowned by Walter Archb. of Canterbury 566.3 Prouideth for the publike peace of the Realme. 566.2 For warres with Scotland 566,3 He besiegeth Berwicke. 568 He reputeth the Acts and releafes to the Scots at Northampton in his Minority to Warreth vpon Scotland on what ground. ibidens Edward the Blacke Prince born at Woodstocke 507.19 Why by-named Blacke Prince Created Prince of Wales. 574 The first Duke of Cornwal created 673.95 In great danger at the battell of Crefci 578.94 Saileth into France to take poffession of the Dukedonie of Aquitaine 581-112 His high atchiuements in France 581. 114 His commendable behauiour vpon the victorie at the bat-tell of Poilisers. 583.117 Returneth into England in Hee doth homage to his F4ter King of Castile diffeized ofhiskingdome 285 134 Sitteth performally in the Kings Bench court, shid, 17. His projects for a marriage

He with his brother Edmond Philip daughter to Iohn Ea. Enterred, with a Monument and others take the Croffe i of Henault of Henault 561,57 Crowned King by the name of Edward the third 564, 78 K.Edward the second entreth Scotland with a puiffant Army 557.19 The diffolute behaviour in ibid.21 He and his power defeated by Rob.Brace \$57-22.23 Hee vobraideth bitterly the death of Thomas Earle of Lancafter. 560.46
Flyeth into Wales vnto the Abbey of Neath. 562.61 Recalled by Proclamation. K. Edward 3. lieth with a puiffant Army before Paris His Hoaft much hurt by tempeft, 5 His crue!ty in France He yeeldeth to a peace ibid. His death. His Epitaph. His works of denotion, ibid. His iffue. His iffue. 589.8cc. His raigne and age 589.154 Edward Earle of March and Duke of Torke sheweth his right to the Crowne. 674. 1 Aquitaine. 584. 125
King Edward the fourth, his
He passeth with an Army into
Armes, Seale, and Coine Proclaimed King 675. 2 He denieth repaiment of money borrowed of the Staplers Merchants 675. Crowned King in Westminste

in Canterbury His Issue ibidem His Islue 589.156 Edward the third doth Homage to Philip de Valois for the Dutchy of Gafcoigne. 567 His ouerture for the holy Land Entreth with an Army into 569.33 Scotland to side K Edward Bailiol 569-34-35 Createth fundry great States Hee supporteth the Bailiols poffession of Scatland against the Bruce His claime to the crowne of France instified 570.40 How he fortified himselfe, for Popes foot His broad Seale Daloie his treasure

Leaueth England and fetteth faile toward Burgundy, 681 the conquest of France. 570 King Edward the fourth, in His manner of doing homage Parliament declared Traitor for the Duchy of Aquitane to his countrey, and an V-571-47 furper : and his goods to be Saileth to Anwerpfor France conficate 681.53 He landerh with a power at 572.48 Constituted Vicegerent vnto Rattenftur in Yorkshire, 682 Lewis the Emperour ibid. Why hee refused to kiffe the Sweareth to bee true to King 572-49 Henry the fixth. ibidem Encampeth necre to Conen-Hee publisheth his title to tree against Richard Neuill France. ibidem 53 His victory at Sca, against the Earle of V Varwicke, and chalengeth him to battell. 682, French 5.73-57
His puiffant Army ibid. 57 Encountreth George Duke of His challenge fent to Philip de Clarence his brother, and are both reconciled 682 60 ibid.59 He is at a default for want of Marcheth towards Barnet, to Treasure 574.63 Hee punisheth officers about Gladmore-Heath with King Henry the fixth in his traine, his treature ibid, 64 His answere to Lewis of Ra-His victory and triumph for surrethe Emperour his re-Barnes field. nocatory lines ibid. 67 Saileth againe into France Offerethhis Bannerin Saint Paules Church. for the conquest thereof His reply to Charles Duke of King Edward the third his re-Burgundy who married his folute valour at the fourd He fendeth into Bretaigne for Blanche Taque 577.85 His answer, when the Blacke Iasper Earle of Pembroch, & Henry Earleof Richmont, 686 Prince was in danger, 578.95 His victory at the battel of His expedition into France a-Crescy 579.97 His Charity to the poore of gainst Lewis the French King, 689,91 Sendeth defiance to Lewis Calais by him befreged, 570 king of France ibidem He loueth his Subicets, and His denout thankfgining to God for victory 582.118
Hee inuadeth France againe is beloued againe. 688.101 582.121

593.122

582 122

589.154

589.8cc.

626.11

Referen

Sendeth for the Lord Major, and Aldermen of London to his huntings. ibidem Wantonly giuen.ibidem. 102 His ficknesse and speeches at his death 690.113.114 His Apophthegme of his 3. Concubines 688, 102 His death, raigne and state of buriall 690.115 King Edward the fourth his perionage, feature and other parts. 691.116 His iffue by Elizabeth his wife 691.18.&c. His concubines 161.129 His naturall iffue His naturall iffue 150 His care to fet peace between his owne kindred and the Queenes Queenes 699.9 His children made ballards by Richard his brother, Lord Protector, and Doctor Shaa his Chaplaine, vpon what colour 705-53 Himlelfe with his brother George Duke of Clarence made ballards by their brother Richard, Lord Prote-

Enamoured vpon Daine Eli-

zaherh Gret. 677,21 Diffawded by his mother,

Duches of Torke, but in

vaine, from that marriage

with Elizabeth Grey 677.

He marrieth Dame Elizabeth

Grey 678. 24 Taken prisoner by Richard

Neurl Earle of Warwicke

Comitted prisoner to George

Newill Archbishop of Torke

Hee esapeth from his keepers

sbid 37

683.66

683.66

687,95

Became a Monke.

His Istine.

His exploites

vnreadv

shankes.

His Armes

Herpraise

Canterbury.

Her Iffue

lour

height,

band

Egbert sonne of Withred King

of Kent, his raigne and

294.12

death.

Ioan at Acon.

Westminster.

wife, her marriages, and

the elder.

Inuadeth the Irish.

to George Duke of Clarence | Egbert King of Northumber-His ift we held Baffardy 712.3 689.107 King Edward the fourth accubeheaded. Edward Earle of Warwicke in fed to have been contracted to Dame Butler before his the Tower, as a new Titler to the Crowne 745-59
Edward Duke of Buckingham
plotteth with Richard Duke marriage with Elizabeth Grey 712-3 Edward Bruce crowneth him-712.2 of Glocester to remove from felfe King of Scotland, and is King Edward the fifth, the flaine in battel 558.33 King Edward the fifth, his arms Queene mothers friendes. 695.12 Edward Plantagener Earle of March, after King Edward and feele Attended by his mothers friends repaireth towards the fourth his victory at London vpon his fathers Mortimers Croffe. 672.92 695.10 Met by the Citizens of Lon-Hee with Richard Neud the Hour Earle of Warwicke haden and accompanied into the Sten to London 674.t Edward, Sonne to King Richard Citie 607.24 Smothered to death with his the third, made heire appabrother in the Toure 709.65 rant by Parliament. 713. 4 His short raigne, without Crown, Scepter or Ball, 709 Created Earle of Salisbury & Prince of Wales 726.62 Edward Duke of Torke flaine 65. 714.715. 19 What hee faid when he heard at the battell of Agmount that his vncle was crowned 715.18 His body and his brothers where first buried. 715.19 Enterred in the Colledge at Fathring-hay 634.30 Edward Seymer Eatle of Hert-King Edward the fifth his body ford, and Duke of Somerfet with his brothers, taken vp ordained Lord Protector. and buried againe no man during the Minority of King knoweth where. 715.19 Laward the 6. 804.4 His expedition into Scotland Henry the eight, when borne Created Prince of Wales ibid. Hee and his brother Thomas Seimer Lord Admirall at He is King of England vnder 809.52 ods the name of King Edward See more in Seimer the firth Edward Lord Stafford Duke of His Armes, broad Seale, and ibid. Buckingham beheaded for Coine. The beginning of his raigne treation. The beginning or in stage and Coronation. So4-3 Compared to King Iofab in So4-5 Seduced by a Monke, 771-05 Edward the elder his fonce caffeth himself into the force of the stage of the st His marriage with Queene the feafor forrow. 362.17 Mary of Scotland defired of Edwin the valiant Prince of Deira King of Northumber 804-7 the English. 804-7 Falleth licke of a cough and land Of his preferuation aftrange confumption of the lungs 812.73 ftory His death and raigne. ibidem His praier at the point of Edwin King of Churles, fon death. 812.76 of King Ethelred banished His death. His vertues 812.77.812 His learning and memory Edwin the great Monarch of Fnelifhmen. His care and mercy His Armes. Hee renounceth his Edichs. His zeale to the Gospell ibid. 334-5 His letter to the Lady Mary His magnificent Port. 224.8 Slaine in Hethfield battell his fifter. His workes of mercy. ibidem His raigne, buriall, wives and His liberality to the poore Tiline. Edwin and Morear Rebels reof Lendon 813.85 Hisage, raigne and place of fift the Normans. 417.11 8148 They affect the Crowne of Prince Edward first sonne of Prince Edward first sonne of England 407-44
King Henry the fixth, born, Edwin Earle of Yorkeshire slaine by his owne Souldiers. 419. 666,60 Prince Edward, King Henry the fixt his fonne apprehen-ded after Tenksburg fielde. Edwy Monarch of England his Armes and his Coine 368 Sonne to King Edmund, ibid. 684.73. An enemy to Monkish orders Prince of Wales. 672.95 therefore by them noted for His flour answere to K. Fd. vicious life. ward the fourth, ibidem His raigne, death and buriall. Shamefully flaine by Richard 369.3 Edwy a fifth fonne of Ethelred Duke of Glocester. 684. 73 672.95 380 46 ibidem A Prince of great hope, 672 the vnready Murdered Hee had beene contracted 10 Egbert King of Kent. 294. 8 Lady Anne, daughter to Murdereth his Nephewes. ib. Richard Nenil Earle of War-His raigne, death and Issue. ihidem 673.95.680.44

His Corps meanely buried at

ewkesbury 673.59 ward Earle of Warwicke, fon

Her death and burial. 532.63 Eleanor, daughter to K.Edward 305.17 the first, and Margaret his ihid From Egbert the first Monarch wife,her buriall 553-73 leaner or Elener discorded vnto King Edward the Confeffor what time, 278.2 Egbert King of the Weft-Saxfrom Lodowicke King of France. 453.42 Elenor King Henry the second ons, his Armes and Coine his wife, conspireth against the King 465.65 With her two yonger fonnes The first absolute Monarch of England. 305.24 His Armes and Coine. 248 taketh part with Henry, the young King against the huf-His descent, personage, raign, sepulture, Epitaph, and Islue band and father. ihid. 466.77 In fafe cuftody Ber descent 470.101 She is the cause of warres and Egbert Archbishoppe of Torke erecteth a Library. 305.17 Egbert fonne of Ethelbert the troubles betwixt France & ihidem England Kept in long Cat tiuity by her husband, and released by King Richard her sonne. F. selvine Bishoppe of Durban hungersterued 419:29 Egfride King of Northumber-472.2 Eleger called the Damofell of 304.11 ibidem Bretnigne, daughter to Geffrey King Henry the fecond Slaine by the Picts, or Redhis fonne 470.105 ofreds King of Mercia, and Henry the fecond married to Monarch of the English, Alphonse the good King of Castile and Spaine. 470.109 307.12 His short raigne and buriall, Her Islae. 475.109 Queen Eleanor or Elenor King lohns mother, a wife Princefle ofride King Offa his only fon, 490,19 Monarch of England. 345 Eleanor, Alphonfo the King of Spaine his fifter. 532.85 His short raigne and buriall. Eleanor Cobham , Dutchesse of Glocester arranged of Egitha the vertuous wife of K. Edward the Confessor, 401 forcerie and treaton, 661 40 Put to publike penance, and Eglesine a Politicke and stout in perpetuall prison 662.41 Abbot of Saint Auftin in Elener daughter to K. Edward the fecond, wedded to Rei-nald fecond Earle of Gelder, Sir Iohn Egremond rebelleth, 735.26 Flieth to the Dutcheffe of and after Duke of Gelder. Eleanor wife of King Henry 3. Burgundie. 735.26 Egricke king of the East Angles her death and buriall, 539 flaine in battell. 310.6 Equina daughter of King Ed-Election of the Emperous in ward the elder wife to Charles Probus his time 251.1 Elephants first brought into the simple King of France, 362.19 ibidem Their late found bones, ibid. Eguina wife to King Edward Eleutherius Bishoppe of Rome his originall Epistle to King Ela daughter of William Con-Lucius. . 222.8 This Epiftle auerred against querour contracted to Ha-rold, after King of England, Papifts objections ibib. 9 Elfgina alias Elfledafirst wife Elappea King of Bernicia, 302, to King Embelred the vnrea-380,40 Elfrine King Edmonds wife, a Eldol Duke of Glocester his vavertuous Lady, and reputed 290.12 Fleazar a lew of an huge a Saint. Elfgine the wife of King Ed-226.1 Eleonor or Eleanor, or Elenor my separated from him. King Edward the first his Elfrine daughter of King Ewife, while hee was Prince, deliuered of her daughter theired the vnready, married to Vtredthe Bold 281.50 Elfgina or Elgina a daughter of Shee landeth at Doner. . 532 King Edward the elder, 362 Her rare affection to her hus-hand band bid, Fifteda King Elfred or Alfred his daughter, Dutchesse or Gouernesse of Mercia, 359 Dieth at Lincolne 545,18 Her Corps how conducted to Another Zenebia. 261.8 Her death and Tombe. 551 Elfleda winneth Brecknocke and Darby 361.8 Mer death and buriall, ibidem Eleanor the fecond daughter of King Iohn, her marriage, Iffue, death and buriall, Elfleda wife of King Edward the clder 361.10.11

Elfieda daughter of King Edward the clder, Abbelle of
Ramfer in the Countie or 507.70 Eleanor daughter to King Ed-ward the first, and Elenor his

362.18

Fiffeda

Southampton

Elfleds Abelle of Streanshall, Elfleda King Offishis daughter land, his Armes and Coine, 356 Styled first absolute Monarch Danes His care of iustice. His good studies. Hee difguiseth himselfe in Edeling sey Isle. 357-12 His care of the Clergy, Orphanes,&.widdowes,ibidem His fratagems against the His loue to learning, ibibem. Surprifeth the Danes Campe, 257.12 His buildings. 359-25 His Kingdome how confined 16.16 His iffine. 359.28 His death, raigne and vertues Elfred, fonne of King Eadred Elfred fonne of King Edward the elder, crowned in his fathers time. 262.14 Elfred a Nobleman, but aper jured traitor, fell fodainely downe and fo died. 262.2 Elfred the 8.fonne of King Etheired the vnready, betray-ed by King Harold, Hare-foote, and deprined of his cye-fight, His buriall, 381 Elfride a beatifull Lady espoufed to Etheibert, voweth chastity 311.14 Elfrida Duke Ordgars daugh-Her difloialty to her husband Frhehmald Second wife to King Edgar Elfride daughter of king Offa forroweth for the death of her spouse King Ethelbert Elfrida stepmother to king Ed ward the Martyr mudereth him. 374.8 Shee repenteth of her fact, ibi. Her buriall Elfrike Earle of Mercia, a trai-Elfride daughter of King Elfride
359
Elfride Abbeffe of Stranshalch Fligina Ser Flaina Elie Abbev founded 304-11 Elie Isle besieged 538.104 Elie Monkes sue for mercy to William Conquerour and betray the Ifle 419.20 Hardly intreated by William Conquerour ibidem 30 Sir Thomas Eliot a learned Knight 159 Elizabeth the seuenth naturall daughter of King Henrie the first, her difcent by the Mothers fide thers fide. 444-79 Elizabeth Barton, the holy maid of Kent. 770.83

Detected by Cranmer, Cromwel and Latimer 345.17 Elfred forme of Ethelwelfe ali-Elizabeth Queene of Spaine, as Alfred Monarch of Eng-His noble vertues, 356.2, How he employed the houres of the day Naturall, ibidem How he divided his Kingdom Hardly diffressed and almost turned out of all by the in Sanctuary ward the fourth Court Her manifold feares Coine. Hercoronation riage, by way of Petition Her reply deliuered vnto it Claimeth reflitution of Callis

wife to Ferdinando troubled by a counterfect Inheretrix Lady Elizabeth Grev. widow to Sir John Grey, her behauiour to King Edward the 4. Her discent, and her kindred highly advanced 678.25 Crowned Queene at Westmin-Queene Dowager to King Edward the fourth, escapeth out of the Tower, and taketh Sactuary at Westmanster with her Sonne the Duke of Torke 681.11. 696,19 Deliuered of Prince Edward Condemned to forfeit all her lands and goods 7:1.15 Shee and her mother flandered of witchcraft 7:1.3 Confined to a Monaftery 731 691.117 Her meane life in Bermondfer Monastery, her death and place of buriall lizabeth Lucy concubine to King Edward the fourth. 601 140 Dame Elizabeth Lucy, fuppofed to be wife to king Edward the fourth 706.54 Lizabeth cidest daughter to king Edward the fourth, her commendable parts 729.8 Her chafte meditation about Marriage 729.8 Wife to K. Henry the feuenth, Crowned Queene, 734-23 751.71 Her death and buriall 747.65 Elizabeth daughter to king Edward the fourth, vpon a contract with the Dauloin of France, called Madame the Daulphin. 689.108 Lady ELIZ ABETH, after Queene and Monarch of England, borne 771.85 786.145 The wonder of her Sexe, 170 The fecond daughter of king Henry the eight. 786.145 Succedeth Queene after her fifter Queene Mary ibid. Lady Elizabeth fent to the Tower 821. 47 822.52 Conuaied as a prisoner to the 822.50 822 In danger to be murdered at
Woodstocke 822.60 Brought in presence of Qu.

Mary her fifter 826.98 Discharged of emprisonment 826.99 Lady Elizabeth proclaimed Queene and Monarch of En-8:11 Her Armes, broad Scale, and ihid The beginning of her raigne 821 2 Her zealous denotion 832.2 Moued in Parliament, to marrues ches

A counterfeit oracle, ibid, 1 Affifteth the Scotish Lords against the French 834-18 ibid Laboreth for peace in France betweene Guise and Conde Shee demandeth Callis of Charles the 9, the French King according to couenants 383-47 Shee folliciteth the Scots in behalfe of Mary their Queene, fled, and landed in England 845.61 The Maiestie of Queene Eli-England zabeths presence, often dafhed Parries attempt to kill her 846.06 Her vndaunted confidence 847.102 Her fingular clemency to offenders 847.103 Her gracious loue to her people in generall 848, 103 Qu. Elizab, foreland852, 141 Shee moueth Philip 2 King of Spaine for the Low Coun-854.159 She vndertaketh the protectio of the Low-Countreis.855.166 The motiues and reasons of her Protection. 855468 Her answer to printed libels againsthe: 855.168 Her magnanimity and courage at Tilbury Camp 862.220 Her folemne thankefgiuing for defeating the Spanish inuincible Armado 862-221 Her praier for prospering her Fleete fet forth against Spaine Her answer in Latine to the Polonian Embaffadors mef-871.284 Her viuall oath in anger 871 In passion for the death of Robert Deuereux Earle of 880,345 Her praifes in briefe ibidem 446, &c. Her fway in forraine parts Her Princely qualities ibid. Her feature and lineaments of hody ibid, 348 Her Military providence.ibid. Her Nauy, and maintenance of Nauigation Her peaceable vertues ibidem Named Lady Temperance, or Temper, by her brother king Edward the 6. Her moderation ihid 880.349 ibid. Her Court Her Councell Her awe ouer her Courtiers, Hermeekeneffe 881.349 Her loue among her Subjects Her learning ibid. 350 Her languages Her fauour to the learned Her fludiousnesse Paralleled with Queen Zeno-Her godlinesse and piety. ibid-Her private and politike ver-

Her funerals Her Monument Her Epitaphes. 881. &c. Ella Monarch of Englishmen, His descent, issue and raigne His armes Ellethe first King of the South-Saxons 295.1 ibid. His armes His raigne and death bidem Ella the first King of Deira or Northumberland 302.1 302.1 His armes ibidem
His raigne and iffue ibidem Elle-croft why fo called 305.24 Elnothus Archbishop of Canterbury Elphegus Archbishop of Can-terbury stoned to death by the Danes Danes

Elswine flaine in battell 228 Elfwith wife to King Elfred Elfwolfe King of the East-Angles 310 Eluanus Analonsus, i.of Glastenbury a learned Dinine 207.21 Elward alias Ethelward, a diligent fearcher of Antiquities 163. 16 When he lived Elfward the sonne of King Edmard the elder 362.16 Embaffage out of France, how answered by Chicheles Archbishop of Canterbury 618. From King Iohn to Philip king of France 492.25
To Iames the third King of Scotland, for fetling of Peace Out of Denmarke vnto Queene Elizabeth 871,280 Out of Scotland demanding Elizabeth the Lady Margaret King Heary the feuenth his daughter for James the fourth 74, Emerita Martir 206 18 Queene Emma tried for adul-287.6.401.23 A very prudent Lady 391.4, Wife to Ethelred the vnready and king Canutus 393,20 Emma called also Elfgine 393 Also the floure of Normandy 380,41 Encomium Emma a Booke in praise of Queene Emma, Banished the Realme 391,4 Emperors of Rome many die violent deaths 256. 14 Diuers at one time chosen 227.3 Emperors of Rome, how elected after Nero 2CI. I Empire of Rome declineth, 273.9 In Part Sale 227.2 Richard Empfon an Instrument for king Henry the 7. his auarice 750. 70 His descent and quality 754.3 Empfon and Dudley, their wicked courfes & practifes to impouerish the people 750.70 Sent to the Toure and attainted of Treason 754.2 Hermaitenance of true Reli-Beheaded gion. ibidem How filled by forraine Chur-Encon rebelletin against Rees ap Temder 420.16 England whence it tooke name Her sicknesse and death, shid 285.10 When first so named 349.10

ib dem

ibid.

All English footing lost in France in a fhort space 830 Englishmens Christian and periods honorable deportement as the winning of Cadez 870 Englishmen of oid, expert warriours 360.5 Their modeli and denout bebanious after their victory at Crefcy 579.98 English-Pale in France how flarres limited 536.97 Scriptures red by Authoritie men in English Hisarmes in English 343.4 Englishmen proceed from Cimbrica Cherfone fus 161.4
They fashion themselues like reigne to Strangers 416. 10
English voluntaries their valor His buriall in forreine parts 584.129 Sir Francis Englefield an Engwith his father glith fugitiue and Traitour His wines 846.91 His Iffine Engleen a part of Denmarke 100.0 Enterulew betweene Philip land. King of France and K. lohn Vitions Repentance

Mercian

Endeth in diffcord

of Armes

Entrails of beafts and men pee-

Enfter, a Goddeffe of the Sax-

Faster Moneth i. April ibidem

Erchenwine or Erkenwine king of the East-Saxons his shield

First King of East-Saxons 25

feedary to the Kings of Kent

205 8

red into by Britaines, 168.8

His descent Ercombert K. of Kent a religious Prince. 299. His iffue, raigne and death ihid Ericse Prince, and after King of Sweden, feeketh twice for marriage with Queene Elizabeth Erkenwald Abbot of Cherefide and Bishop of London 310.7 Earle of Ponerty 779.96 Erminheld king Wolfehers wife Became a Nun in Ely 307.6 An Eremites prophetic of king Iohn 499-45
Fraestus Archduke of Austria Gouernour in the Low. Countries 367,258 rpenwald King of the East-Angles 309.4 ibid. 1 His Armes The first of this Province that publikely professed Christi-Murdered therefore, ibid. Eschage, what it is \$26.68 Esk the sonne of Hengist raiggeth fecond king of Kent. 291. 16 Esk and Ocla Saxons flaine by Pendragon in battell 316 Esk his raigne and death-293.2 Esketel, a King of the Danes Eskings who they are 29:2 Eskwin King of the West-San 298.8 Filex Rebels Encamped on Mileend by T.ondon Henry de Essex, leaueth King Henry the second his stan-456.8 derd Vanquisht in combate. ibid. Shorne a Moncke, and dieth. Essus an Abbot. Estates and Monarchies within what time they have their Estridge or Ostrich feather, liuery of Prince Edward king Herry the fixth his found 682.58 Ethelard king of the West Sax-ons, his Coine and discent 200.12 Terrified with two blafing . ibio Ethelbald Monarch of English-His loofe life, remorfe, and 343 Murdred at Secondon 343, 5 Ethelbald the fonne of Ethelwolfe rebelleth and raigneth 351.7 ibidem 11.12 Ethelbald King of the Mercians and Monarch of Eng-307.10

ry yet ftanding A great furtherer of Christis anity 332.4 Affiffant to king Sebers in the Westminster His raigne death and buriall Hisiffue ibid.353.5.&c. Ethelbert king of Kent enlar-The first Christian Saxon king His wives and iffue Hisraine, death, buriall and Epitaph Hisvices Ethilbert Prenking of Kent by viumation King Anaes daughter 310.7 Ethelburga King Offaes daughhabite of a Nun. Dieth in mifery. die lishmen His Armes Kenred Becomes a Monke Professed a Nunne in Coldingham Abbey ibidem Abbesse of Ely Monastery, ib. Entombed there Commonly called Saint Au-Queene Etheldred, or Au drees tombe 310 5 Etheldred or Etheldrid K. Edwins daughter, 335.17 Eshelflede the White, abused by King Edger. 370.12 Daughter of Odmer, Duke of the East-Angles. 372.15 King Edwars first wife, ibidem Ethelfrid king of Northumber-Thirfly of fame Surnamed the Wild. 303.7 ihid Maketh flaughter of Britans Slaine in battel His ragne and buriall ibid, at Caer-legion, & of Monks Eshelbers king of the East-Anat Bangor gles murdered by Offse the His raigne and iffue. ibidem 311.14 Buried at Merden and tran-Ethelgeda King Elfrids daugh-ter, a votary in Shaftsbury Nunnery her buriall, ibidem flated to Hereford ibid. Ethelbert Monarch of the Eng-His Armes and Coine thid.
Maintaineth Anflin the monke gles slaine worthily. 310.8

300.1 and his company 330.7 Ethelbild daughter of king Edibidem 2 Ethelberts Tower in Canterbu- word the chiler 262.20 ihid, o Ethelme, Jonne of King Edwin. Ethelred 3. fonne of King Ed-Monarch of England, building of S. Pauls Church His Coine. in London and S. Peters in Surnamed vnready ibid, 12 His life malitioufly taxed by Dunstan and the Monkes. 252.4 Hee compoundeth with the geth his kingdome. 293.5 Dancs. His Oration to the English, Forfaketh his Nation, 379.3 Returneth into England ibid. His death, raigne and tomb. His perfonage & good qua-Feheired murdered by Esbert. 294.15 reputed a Martyr. 294.9 Ethelred the voready, K. Ed-Taken Prisoner and is depogars fonne, his Armes and Coine 375.11 Ethelbert murdred by Egbert and reputed a Martyr. 294.9 Ethelred fonne of Mollo, K. Ethelburga wife to King Ina, of Northumberland. 305. 21 Abbelle of Berking 299.11 Fled his Country. ibidem Reftored to his Crowne ibid. ter wife to K. Bithricke poi-Putteth away his wife Elfleda foneth her husband vnwitwithout caule. 305.23 Slaine by his Subjects. ibshem tingly 299.16 345.16 Committeeh adultery in the Ethelred King of the East An-299.16 gles his long raigne. 3 1 1, 1 3, Ethebred sonne of Pende, King Ethelburga Tace wife to Ed-winking of Northumberland of the Mercians. 307.7 His Armes, 341 Became a Monkein Bradney . 332.18 Diethin 2 Nunnery. 335.12 Monastery. ibidem. His wife, death and Issue, ib A Christian and vertuous La-Ethildred Muchel, i. great Earle Ethelred ionne of King Ethels of the Mercians 359.28 Esheldred Monarch of the Engwolph Monarch of England. Slaine by the Danet.355. 12. 340 His Armes His battels against the Danes. His remorfe and good works His Tombe, Epitaph, Arms Refigneth vp his Crowne to and Issue ibid.12 Ethelricke King of Northum-341.4 341.4 Etheldred or Ethilred King of herland. Slaine. the East-Angles his long His raigne and Iffue. raigne. 311.13 Etheldrede, wife to Egfrid yet Ethelfran fonne of King Ethelred the vnready. 380.42 continued a virgine, 304.11 210.7

elder his fonne Knighted by

gles flame worthily. 310.8

372.30 375 shid. 378.30 280.29 355-11 302 6 King Ethehreds daughters, flaine. 280.48 tiaine. Ethelifane aliase Ædelifan Monarch of England, crowned with great folemnity, his Armes and Coine. 363.1 Maketh Wales tributary, 364 Confineth the Britaines, ib. His dominion large, and fame great with forraine Princes. 364.12 Ethelstane, alias + Ædelstane cófenteth to the death of his brother Edwin. ibid. 3 His repentance ibidem His Cup-bearer worthily by himpur to death. 364,3 Constraineth Anlafe and Godfrey Sitbricks fonne to fubmit, and refforeth them. His Apothegme. Hardly escapeth killing, ib.8
Ioyneth Northumberland to
his owne Monarchy.ibid. 10. Heereceiueth prefents from fundry princes. 364.12 Frhelfan King Edward the THE TABLE

Danes

his father 361.13 | Excefter holderh out against | His Armes and Coine. 363 King Ethelftan his benificence to the Church and to Cities. His personage and vertues, ib. His raigne, death and buriall Edward the elder. wife, Ethelwolfe, alias Edilwach, or Athelwold king of the South Saxons First Christian King of that name. Slaine His raigné. Ethstwolfe or Edelwolfe Monarch of England. His Armes and Coine.ibia Ethelwelfe a Deacon first eleof Winchester. 350.1 King of the West-Saxons, His Armes and Coine, ibiden He goeth to Rome. 351.6 He weddeth Indith the Faire. daughter of Charles the Bald King of France. 351.7 His raigne and death, ibidem. Ethelfwith, K. Burthred his wife in her latter dayes a Nunne. Eucham battell 528.102 Eufeme or Eupheme, daughter of King Henry the first, 443 Eugenius a Grammarian, one that murrlered Valentinian the younger Viurpeth the Empire. 274. His Coine. shiden Beheaded 274. Beheaded East Marches, flaine by the Scots. 783.129 Eurgains, fifter of logenh of Arimathia wedded to a Britain 203. 4 Enflace King Stephens fecond fonne, Duke of Normandie Sodainely franticke dieth His wife and buriall. 454-52 Eustace Earle of Mortaigne, and Boloigne maketh a frey in Canterbury. 399,12 Eustace the Ruffianly Apostata defeated at sea, and beheaded. 510.8 Exceffer a great part razed by the Danes 377.17 Excester besieged by William

Conquerour yeeldeth. 417.

Befieged by Cornish Rebels

Loyall to the king, and there-

fore highly efteemed. ibid.

805.20

Ethelftane fonne of King Egbert repelleth the Danes, 249.19 Ethelwald King Ofwalds fonne ancient Britons. Ethelwald Clito flaine. 353.6 Ethelwald rebelleth against K. 360.2 Created the Danes King. 360 Eshelward King Elfrids sonne a great Philosopher. 359.28 Slaine, ibidem Ethelwold dealeth double in wooing Elfrida Ordears daughter , for King Edgar, 371.14 His speech to her, his owne ihidem Slaine by King Edgar sbidem Pertinax furrendred Deliuered vp Henry the 5. Famine cted, & confecrated Bishop ibidem. ton in the West. Baftard Fauconbridge, Thomas Neuill, Admirall to the Earle of Warwicke, Richard Nesill Captaine of the Lancaftrians, roueth at fea, 684 272.10 Heaflayleth London, and is withstood 685,76 He fireth London, and is forced to his ships 687,77 Knighted by Edward the 4. and made Vice-Admirall, 686,85 Fausta wife to Constantine the great,a good Lady 259,7 Put to death 260.8 Faustus the sonne of Vortiger by his owne daughter. 313 His vertuous and denout life. ibid Felons aboue 1 2. yeeres of age, and Felonie stealing about

twelue nence

Iohn

Ferdinand Earle of Flanders, a-

gainst king Philips intrusion for the Crowne of England

A true confederate to king

Ferdinando king of Spaine his

parentage and noble actes

Surnamed the Catholike king

Fernham battell loft by the

364.4

500 50

746.62

His descent

Tttttt

His vertues

PerkinWarbsche 743.50 Exchequer of Queene Mary fideth with young King in danger to be robbed, 828 1. enry against his father. 103 Excommunication, how farre Burneth and facketh North forth allowable. gham, and killeth the townf-Executions for Edmond de la men men William Fetherston 2lias Consta-Pole, the Earle of Suffolker ble, a counterfeit Edward the 748,61 Excommunication among the fixth, Hanged at Tiburn i68 Feuer sham Monaftery founded. Fight at fea between the Spanish inuincible Nauy, and PAbianus Bishoppe of Rome converteth Int. Philip Emthe English Thomas Fines Lord Dacres experour 240.2 Suffereth Martyrdome. ibid.3 ecuted at Tiburne, for killing of a man in a fray. Factions betweene the Dukes of Burgundy and Orleance, Fiorentinus the Popes Legate how they arose 620.48
Factions in Scotland raised by in England nick-named Ferentinus the French King 782,121

Faganus alias Fagatius, or Fugatius a great Clerke, 206,18 Firre-trees for Mafts, grow plentifully in the Northweft of Scotland Falco conspireth the death of Fish not eaten by Britans. 167.7 226.5 Iohn Fisher Bishoppe of Roche-fier agreeth not to the di-Fallais-towne in Normandy besieged by King Henry the uorce of King Henry the 8. 637,50 from Queene Katherine of Vpon what conditions to bee Spaine ihidem Executed 628.00 Constantine Fitz-Arnuloh his Fallais Caffle vpon what con-ditions rendred vp to king feditious proclamation and rebellion 638,51 Hee with others hanged, 512 296. Famine in England 558,27,29 Fitz Geralds or Giralds whence Famine in king Henry the third descended histime, 521,50 Famine at Castle Galiard, 491 descended 493.72 Maurice Fitz Gerald with others faile into Ireland. 462 Fastidius a learned British Bi-Robert Fitz Hamon affisteth Eshop 206.19,277,10 Lord Fauconbridge his strateneon against Rees ap Tewdor, Obtaineth to himfelfe, and geme at the battell of Ten-Earle of Kenta great supporter of king Edward the fourth Waler his Crowne 684.79 Baftard Fauconbridge proclai-meth Henry the fixth, king Elles 681,49

William de Fortibus Earle of his followers possessions in His followers names ibidem William Fitz Petre agent for king Iohn created Earle of Esfex 485.5 Fitz-Stephens whence descenned ded 442.72 Icrusulem Robert Fitzstephen ot Stephanides, ioyneth with Dermot Mac-Murgh. Mac-Murgh. 462.52 He with a power faileth into Ireland Ireland 463.54
Iames Fitz-Thomas is fet uppe
Eatle of Defmond by the Re-Henry the 7 bels vnder Tir-Oen. 373.300 Aduanced by him ibidemi Robert Fitzwalter a ftout Rebel and Marshall of Gods Armie. Hee claimeth the cuftody of Hereford Castle howanswe. red by Lewis of France.509.4 Councell. Lord Fitzwalter a conspirator about Perkin Warbecke beheaded, betweene lames the fourth The Lord Fitzwalter flame. King of Scotland, and Lady 675.5 Margares eldeft daughter of Flamins and Archflamins pur King Henry the feuenth. downe in Britaine, 206.18 France in a combustion vyon 747.64 Conuerted into Bishops and

> Guize and the Cardinall.867 Frace annexed to the kingdom of England 157-13 rance, whence, and when it tooke that name. 279.5 rance with the Crown thereof, how devolued vpon king Edward the third.467.15 &c. France alloweth the right of

Robert Ferrers Earle of Darby His letter to the Senate ibid e H.s victory ouer the Galles. He dieth a naturall death, ibid.

His personage and qualities. His honour after death, ibidem Flaunders under interdict by Pope Benedill the 12. 574

466.73

Flanders offered to king Richard the second 598.46 Flemings planted in Wales. 437

They doe King Henry the first good feruice ibidem. Flemings mercenary Souldiers driven out of the Realme, Attempt by treacherle to fur-

prife Henry Fitz-Empresse. 454.48 Flemings in league with King Edward the third against France. Flemish Nauy vanquished at fea by the English. 587-145 Flodden field Florentins of Worcester an, Hifloriographer, when hee lined

Florianus vsurpeth the Em-767.70 pire of Rome His death 251.1 His Coine. ihidem Floures de-lis, or Lilies of Frace \$12.14 how borne in King Edward

the third his time, 572.51 Fogge reconciled to K, Richard the third. 713.16 Frier Forest burnt 780.111 Miles Forest one of the murderers of Edward the fift, and the Duke of Torke his bro-

ther 715.18 He dieth miserably 716.20 Fort-dil-Orein Ireland. 853.

Aumarle manneth the Caftle of Biham, and entreth rebelliously into Rotots 511.11 He with his complices pardoibidem Foulke Earle of Anion, King of 441.49

Fowage what imposition it was 586.136 Foway in Denonshire burnt by the French 667.67 Richard Fox Doctor of Divinity in great fattour with king 721.40

Founder of Corpus Christs Colledge in Oxford, ibidem A great preseruer of Antiquities. 721.40 L. Priuy Seale & of the Priuy Councell. 729.10 Richard Fox Bishoppe of Durham agent for a marriage

Archbishops 223.10
Thomas Flamockea Captaine of the death of the Duke of Cornish Rebels.

741.44 Executed. Sir Andrew Flamock the Kings Standard-bearer at Muskle brough field his valour. 804 Flanius Claudius Emperour.

247.2 ihidem that Kingdome, derived from 482.71

804-9

201. 1 His pollicy to make Nero

201.3

257.

214.7

214.8

2.11

ihid

ibid.

246.4

158.5

161.0

242.2

242-3

243

Inl. Frontinus fubdueth the

Silures in Britaine. 211.9
Fulco a French Priest how hee

402-71 Ralph de Fulgiers hauing taken

part against Henry the fe-

cond, compoundeth for his

Furnishe Abbey founded 454

Dreadfull Fire in Southwarch

and vpon London-bridge

The Fire-Croffe in Scotland

Alba proclaimed Empe-

Trour by Vindex, 200.25

He gat the Empire before hee

His oration to his Souldiers

Heepurpofeth to refigne vp

the Emperiall Diademe

His person described. 202.

His vices, age and raigne ibid

Talgacus, generall of the Bri-

taines against Agricola.

His oration to the Britaines

A valiant Prince of the Cale

donians 177. 4 His supposed coines ibid. 6

A Galliaffe of Naples taken.861

Galienns chosen Emperour in

His owne, his wines, and fons

Hestaieth the persecution of

Christians 245.3 His troublesome times fore

thewood by Saint John in the

AGallio of Bifcay take 861.212

Gallio sent to aide the Britaines

Galls or Gaules why fo called

againft Scots & Picts. 270.0

Named before time Cimbri as

descended from the Gome-

Trebonianus Gallus by treaton

becommeth Emperor.242.1

His carelesse and cruel go-

An vakind forme

His vanities

Coines.

Apocalyps

His birth

He is murdered.

ranfome.

what it was.

His coine.

looked for it

more odious

He is murdered

Rantius Chlorus

His Coine.

His Coine

reprougth King Richard the

Francis 2, King of France fendeth forces into Scotland against the Protestants. 834, Yeeldeth vo his Dominions to the Pope Saint Francis for his 5 wounds canonized a Saint at Rome,

Franciscan Frie s their 4 orders pernicious to the Clergy of England 583.120 How mighty they were elfewhere 583.121
Frankners vanquished by Conflantine the Great 260-5 Free the wife of Woden. 285. Freemen in the State of Rome,

what they were 200,23 Fredericke Emperour deposed from his Empire by the Pope 516.29 Fremond his death and buriall. 246.19 French Armory first quartered with the English. 572,50 The French prepare to inuade England. 599.48 The French affaile the life of

Wight, and the Coafts of Suf-783.129 The French commanded out of England 628.29 Frethericke Abbot of Saint Albansa frout and politicke Pre-

His descent. His good speeches to William Conquerour ill taken. 418,25 Freshulfe King of Bernicia. Friday whence it tooke name,

Friers diffasted and odious throughout all England in King Richard the fecondhis 610.117 daves Friers of the 5. Orders, their great Reuenewes in Eng. land 778.101 AFrier Carmelite for accusing

Ichn of Gaunt Duke of Lansafter, committed and mur-597,40 A Frier Minor drawne and hanged for a franke speech, in the behalfe of K. Richard the fecond. 616.26 Friers Minorits, or Franciscans

in number 8, hanged and headed for fauouring the cause of King Richard the fecond, 616 26 Frise an Idoll of the Saxons,

uernment how portrayed 4888 His Coine Frise the supposed Author of He banisheth christians243.4 Gallus and his for flaine, 243-5 the Friflanders Saint Friswids Church in Ox-His life and raigne ibid.
Gallus, Cafar to Conft. 263.7 ford, a Sanctuary, burnt with Danes in it, by the English Licentious and cruel Executed Repaired by K. Ethelred ibid.

Stephen Gardiner fetteth for-SIT Martin Frobiber, or Furbiraine Princes against King fher his Nauigations into Henry the eight 779.105

Bishop of Winchester & Lord Chancellor examineth Lady Elizabeth in the Tower

Henry Garnet Superiour of the Icluits in England Order of the Garter founded 576.79 ihid

The Motiues and occasion thereof Ceremonies belonging to 467.79 this Order 576.81 The first 26 founders of this Order who they were : Map of Barkeshire

Garter principal King at Armes first instituted 648.83 Garter King at Armes sent from King Henrie the 8, with defiance into France 782.126 Gascoigne lost by the English

662 45 Galcoione theweth hope to bee recovered. 666.60 Gascosgnes become good subiects to K. Hemy the third 532.83 Sir Iohn Gates executed, 817

Gauesbed, See Blacklow, Robert de Gaugi defendeth the Castle of Newarke against K. Henry the third his Army 511.10 Geffrey ap Arthur 163-12 Galerius Maximinus to Cefar Disclesian, 254.4 Galerine Emperous with Con-

Geffery of Monmouth when he lived Geffrey, a younger fonne of K. Henry the fecond rifeth a-gainst his father 465.65 He is Duke of Bretaine. 468

Called a childe of perdition

His miferable ende. 469.93 Geffrey the fourth fon of king Henry the 2. by his wife, is Duke of Britaine Duke of Britaine 470 His death, buriall, and iffue 470.105 Geffrer a base son of King Henrie the fecond by Rosamuna his Concubine. 471.112

His rifing advancement, buriall and iffue 471 112 Geffrey Archbishop of Torke difioiali vnto his brothe King John 486.9 Teffery Archdeacon of Norwich leaueth king Ichn and obeieth the Pope 407.41 His punishment Geffrey Fitz-Roy, base some of

King Iohn 507.73 Genissa the daughter of Claudius Cafar 194 12 The Gentlemen murdered by Rebels in the North 800,50 George-Owen-Harry, his booke Saint Georges Chappel in Wind-for Castle Long vnknowen to Historiofor Castle 576.81 George Duke of Clarence ingraphers 1614 Galloglasses in Ireland, why so called. 285.8 clineth to his brother, king Edward the 4. 681.46 Attaint of high Treason and

committed to the Tower 689.IC4 He endeuoureth to reconcile Richard Neuil Earle of Warwicke to his brother K. Edthe fourth. 683.60 Emprisoned by his brother K. Edward the fourth 689,106 Githa mother of Harold the 2. George the good Duke of Clarence, a futor vnto Mary

daughter to the Duke of Glaftenbury Abbey built. 298, Burgandy 689.105 Conuict and attaint, of high 689.105 Treason, and so hi melfand rich ornaments, ibidem.

his iffue difabled for inheriting the Crowne 712.4 Drowned in a But of Malme-

His issue. Germans, Pagans, take their names from beafts, 280.5 Saint Germans in Cornewal, a Bishops See annexed to that of Excester 368.6 Saint German, assisteth the

Britaines against Pelagian Scors and Pilts. 281.1 Germanus and Lupus, two Bishops assist the Britanes 2gaintl Pelagians and Saxons 290.13 Geruale, a naturali fonne of K. Stephen, Abbot of Westmin-

fer 454-57 He lieth ther within the Cloi-Gesforiacum, is Beleigne or Bullein in Picardy 2546 Septimius Gesa tuleth part of Rritaine 229.9

Emperour with his brother Ballianus Caracalla 221.1 Slaine by his brother Caracalla euen in his mothers armes Giants progeny in Britaine is

ridiculous 158.4 Gilbert the 5. base sonne of K. Henrie the first 443.70 Gilbert, brother to Richard Earle Marshall, bath his brothers lands and possessions

520.48 Gilbert Earle of Glosefter flaine infight 557.25 Gildis the British Historiographer 163.15 When he lived and died. ibid.

He declareth the Britanes wofull calamites 281.2 Gildo or Gildus Gouernour of Africke 274.6 Rebelleth and is beheaded

275.2 Saint Giles brotherhood without Creple gate in London erefled 648.82 Gilla the wife of Rollo, her de-

fcent 413.19 Gillamare King of Ireland 313.4 GiraldFitz-GiraldEarle of Kil-

dare at variance with Piers Butler Earle of Oforie, 762 55 Lord Deputy of Ireland, ibid.

Accused by the Earle of Oforie of many mildemeaihidem. nors His answere to Cardinal Wolfey his accusations, in the behalfe of Piers Butler Earle of

Oforie 762.57,58 Committed to prison by Cardinall Wolfey Sent to the Tower 763.58 In danger of being beheaded

His noble Courage 763-59 Received into Dublin with procellion ihidem Girch brother to King Harold.

diffwadeth him from the field 466.32 Ar Gifare a famous victory archieued by King Richard the firft. 48 x 60

4038 Glase in British is blew. 159.7

Sumptuously endowed with

THE TABLE.

Glaftenbury first receiveth the ! His Coine His Coine 237- 4
Gordianus the third fonce to Gospell 202.2 Burnt 207.21 old Gordianus his daughter Re-built ibiden Cefar to Pupienus and Ba!-Glastenbury Abbey poorely built at firft, by what Princes Elected Emperour. bidem raifed to great glory 207.21 His speech to the Souldiers, With what Titles termed, bid. 239.9 Glastur is Wood Glastun is Wood 159-7 Glocester built by Claudius Ca-Deposed Becommeth a Captaine under Philip nis Præfect A title fatal to the Dukes ther. Is flaine 710,1 Gordianus the third, Emperour, Counteffe of Glocefter taken his monument prisoner in Tunbridge Caftle, His vertues Gorlois Duke of Cornwall. 315. \$37.99 Set at large by King Hen Goths inuade Roman prouinces Glorie from the people, a buble They inuade the Empire. 247. Gotbred claiming the Crowne Glota, 1. Dunbritton Frith. of Scotland, vanquished and hanged by K. Iohn. 498.45 212.6 Goda refistern the Danes, and is flaine Gotmund in Gaham 3347 Mathew Gough 2 Worthy War-Goda daughter to King Ethelred the vnready 381.51 Doctor Godard at Paules Crosle riour, flaine in conflict with lacke Cado declareth King Henry the 6. Hugh Gournay his valour in de-tence of the Castle Galigra, true heire to the English Crowne 681.49 Godfrey de Bolein refufeth to His ingratitude and infidelity weare his Crown of gold in otherwise ibidems Gracians inhabited all the Iernfalem 456.0 He recouereth lerusalem. 469 coalts wel neer of the world Godfrey Duke of Loraine with Granada City described & renother Captains in the Holy dred to Ferdinando King of Voiage Spaine 746.62 Granada Kingdome recoursed Godfrey the Norman, feized of part of Neustria. from the Moores 746.62 Godfrey, Subricks sonne chased Grantcester an ancient City into Scotland decayed Affisted by Conftantine King 310.5 Gratianus Generall in Britain. of Scotland, and Howel, alias 263.4 Ludwal King of Wales, ibide His firength ibiden
Surnamed Funarius ibiden Sir Godfrey de Crancomb knight apprehenderh Hubert de Flanins Gratianus Emperour Burgh, and barbaroufly en with his father Valentinian Godstone Nunnery by Oxford His Coine founded Colleague with his brother 506,62 Gog and Magog Valentinian in the Empire, Gold threescore thousand oun ces giuen by Tancred King of Defeated by Clemens Mari Sicilie to Richard the first, K mus, and treacherously murof England dred Gomer gaue name to the Gratian a Britaine made Emmerians and Cimbri. 161.4 perourand murdered.ibidem Goodwin Earle of Kent, putterl Sir Henry Green Counsellor to the Vandales to flight 391. king Riebard the fecond, be-headed at Briftel 608,108 Affecteth the Crown of Eng. land Gregory afterwards Pope, ta-ketha liking to the Angles His divelish policy 297.7 His gifts to the King, ibide at Rome at Rome 329.5 Pope Gregory, otherwise na-med Hildebrand, his impiety He and his fonnes moleft K Edward the Confessor in his 300.11 Hee seeketh to bee popular. Pope Gregory the 11.laboureth to vnite King Edward the 2. He bandeth against the King and the French King against 400.13.14 the common enemy of Chri-He and his fine fonnes baniftendome Pope Gregory the 13. inciteth Philip the second King of 400.10 Proclaimed Outlawes ibiden Spaine against England 853. They become Pirates, 400.16 He returneth into the Kinger fauour Sir Thomas Gresham founder Dieth fodainely at Winchester of the Royall Exchange in ihides London 852.140 Iohn Grey Bishoppe of Nor-Goodwin King Harolds fonne, from out of Ireland inuadeth wich, enthronized Archbi-England 417.14 Goodwins fands why so called. thop of Canterbury. 49431 Deputed Gouernour of Irelandby King Iohn 497 43 Walter Grey Archbishoppe of 432.2 Gordianus elected Emperour, and his fonne Cefar 236,4 Torbe. Lord Grey of Ruthen, quit his Gordianus the father strangleth . himfelfe place at the Battell of Nar. 237.5 Gordianus the yonger flaine. thampton, and fledde to the Yorkifts 237.5

Sir Ralph Grey Knight, in whar I manner degraded, and then beheaded. Sit Thomas Grey Marquesse Dorses, seeketh to escape from Henry Earle of Richmont in France Lord Leonard Grey beheaded fortreason 780 109 Lord Grey raseth Chastellon Garde a Bastillon seer to Bulloigne, a prohibition to the contrary, vnder King Henry the 8. his hand notwithstan-Pardoned therefore with mamy thanks my thanks 783.132 ord Grey of Wilton Licutenant of the North, winneth and fortifieth many holds in Scotland Henry Lord Grey Duke of Suf. folke pardoned. 818.22 His fecond offence, for which he after died Apprehended and fent to the Tower Beheaded Thomas Lord Grey suffereth Arthur Lord Grey of Wilson, General of the English forces fent into Scotland to expell the French Deputy of Ireland 853,148 Vanquisheth and killeth both Spanish and Irish in the Fort
Del-Ore 853,148
Thomas Lord Grey of Wilton, arraigned and condemned of treason Reprined 886.17 Lady lane Grey her commendable parts 817.10 Her letter fent to her father ibider Condemned 818 20 at her death 818.24. Grey-Friers Church in London lately suppressed, made a pa-

Her speech vpon the Scaffold rish Church 783-133 Endowed and maintained with fine hundred Markes yeerely of lands 783.133 Griffith alias Gruffith King of South-Wales inteffeth England 399.11 Griffith or Gruffith ap.Llhews-

lin, Prince of Northwales Spoileth Hereford, 6,403.3 Beheaded Griffith of Graffith elder brother to Danid Prince of Wales, breaketh prifon, and flicketh by the necke, \$26.67 The Groine surprised by the Enclifb. Robert Grofthead the Maule of

Rome, his setter to the Pope, His death and prophefie, Grotes and halfe Grotes of filner coined by King Edward

thethird 581.110 Guarana Priest, ordained Primate of Ireland , by Pope Vrbanethe second 854.152 Guard of the Kings person first infligured instituted 729 9 Guardians appointed for the gouernement of London.

Guafco de Biern rebelleth, and vpon his appeale condemned in Law, fet at liberty by K.

676.15 lerufalem, poffeffed of Cypras for relignation of leru-Guide husband to Constantine, and mother to Arthur king Ichns brother, in league with king Iohn and the English. Lord Guilford Dudley wedneth Iane Grey eldest daughter to Henry Lord Grey Duke of Suffolke Condemned Beheaded Guliam a Frier in Scotland preacheth feruently against the Pope 782.121 Guillomar King of Ireland tri-811.61 butary to Arthur Duke of

Britaigne 468.9 Guimundus his prety reproof of King Henry the first 438.31 Preferred therefore ibidem. 818.21 Queene Guineuers body found 818.22 interred with her husband 818.23,26 king Arthur 317,218 Gunnes when first vsed in Eng-818.26 land 619.44 Gundred daughter to king William Conquerour, her Issue and buriall 426.73 Lady Gunbilda with her bus-834.18 band both Christians flaine,

377.16
Gunhilde daughter of king Canute, wife to the Emperour Henry the third, of surpassing beauty, suspected of inconti-nency, & cleared by combat. 886.14 Gun-powder treason plotted, to what intent. 889,32

Guerong Earle of Kens dispos-fessed by Hengist. 200.8 Guymo or Gurmand how entirely hee loued his fonne Canure Gurchrum, alias Gurmand a king of the Danes.

ido de Lusignian late King of

477-40

812. 74

818.20

ibid 25

3564 Bantized Named at the Font, Athelstan by Elfred Made Gouernor of the Eaft Angles Angles 358.19 His death and buriall, thidem. Guta, Sec lutes.

Guthurs king of the Danes couerted to the faith of Christ here in Britaine 205.17
Guy de Beanchampe Earle of Warwicke Surptifeth Piers Gaueston Died not without suspition of poyson 557.17
Guy the bastard of Flaunders ouerthrowne, and flaine by the English Guido or Guy Famker fent into

Spaine to negotiate the in-uation of Great Britaine, Duke of Guize aimeth at the Crowne of France | 866,245 The Guizians practifes, ib. The Duke of Guize being forewarned of his owne death,

neglecteth it 866.249 Duke of Gaize and the Cardinall flain by the French king Henry the third, his commandement, 867. 605.89

Prayfed after his death publikely by the Papifts. 16.253.

Edward the first 543.8 H Adrian de Castello lear-Guide King of Ierusalem taken hed and eloquent, ad-

uanced by Henry the 7. 535.26 Made a Cardinall, feeketh to be Pope Hadrian his wall 735-27 Fortified 220.2 His politicke gouernment He came in person into Britain 218.5 Hee fauoureth Christians. His birth and descent 218.1 Hee forbiddeth perfecution of Christians. ibidens His wonderfull memory . Hisdeath 219.9 His skill and knowledge, 218.2 His personage, raigne and age His Coines 218.219.5 Hadrian the fixth Pope. 735 Haire worne long by men, anfwerable to that of women . Sir Iames Hales, alias Halles, refused to subscribe vnto K. Edwards differiting of the Ladies Mary and Elizabeth his fifters. 812.75 Sir Robert Hales Prior of St 812.75 Iohns, &c. beheaded by Re-595.19 Halla Seminary Prieft, animateth Somerwile to kill Queen 845.82 Halden a king of the Danes 356.5 Hallidowne Hill battell, and victory on the English side 616.28 Hamilton flaine by Newton in combat 811.61 Hammes belieged by the garri-Hannibal whether he warred in Britaine 168.9 Harflew belieged and affaulted by King Henry the fifth. 630.39 Deliuered vp to him. 630.40 Peopled with the English, 630 Harflew belieged by the French

Harflew recoursed from the French by the Duke of Somerfet 660.35 Harald or Herald the first King of Norway facrificeth his Children 288:8 Harald fonne of Radulph, anceftor to the Barons of Sudley 381.51 Hardi-Cannte sonne of Cannte Monarch of England, 393 Hardi-Canute King of England his Coine 396 Abuseth the dead Corps of Harold Harefoot his halfe brother 396,3 His respective care of his mother Emma, and brother prince Edward 396.4

Sit Ichn de Harleston Captaine

of Cheirburgh a valiant War-

riour 599.9 Harold Harefoot base sonne of

Canutus why so called, 393

our in Italie

Florence.

His Statue

605,90

His Coine Monarch of England, ibiden His raigne and death, 395, 10 Harold Harfager King of Nor way entreth league with K. Harold Harfager King of Denmarke claimeth the Crowne of England
Why so called way to called 405.20 He rogether with Tofto inuade Both flaine Harold the fecond, Earle Good wins sonne, Monarch of Eng-His Coine His vertues 403.1 He taketh part with his father His vertues against the King 403.2 His marshali exploites before he was King 403,3,4,9 Taken prifoner in France, & presented to William the Duke of Normandy, 403.6 Affianceth Adeliza Duke Williams daughter Referreth the Crown of England for Duke William vpon a condition ibidem His lineall descent 402.8 He crowneth himfelfe King, His Answere to Duke William Ambassage. 404.15 K. Harold the second flaine in battell. in battell. 407.39 His dead corps discoursed by Edish Swanshalfe 408.50 King Harold the second his buriall and Epitaph. 408.50 Enterred in Waltham in Ellex. His commendation 408.51 in of Calais Hamilton pure the third His Ifiue 408.54 Hamilton pured of Theetues by King Hears the third Hastings a towne burnt by the Hafting a Norman Arch-pyrat obtaineth the Earledome of Chartiers at the French kings Hasting of Norway entreth England Periured, and loyneth with the Danes William Lord Haftings, Lord Chamberlain held in jealoufie by Queene Elizabeth wife to King Edward the fourth, 694.9 Arefled in the Councel chamber within the Towre. 703 Hastilie beheaded within the Tower Familiar with Shores wife in King Edward the 4.his daies, and after 703.46 His description Sir Edward Hastings his mesfage to Wist 819.35 Harwaker Ancestor to the Dukes of Saxonie, 3243 Robert Hawlee a valiant Efquier murdered in Sanctuary by the meanes of loba Duke of Hards-Canuse an Epicure. 396. Lancafter 593.7 Enterred in Westminster Abbey His death and raigne. 377.10. Church ihidem lohn Haweut Hawkwood, alias

8.2 Healadine a Danish King flain. Nobles for to winne them, ides Hands annexed to the 457. 20 Breaketh promife to his Peers Crowne of Northumberland by king Edwin 334-2 Hegeley-Moore skirmish 676 428.27 Goeth to fecure Normandy, Wounded in battell, & braue-14 Helena mother of Constantine the great, a British Lady ly acquitteth himfelfe, 439, 205.13. 258.8 Marching against the Welfli. Hercoine The la wfull wife of Constanftrucken with an arrow, and tius Chlorus the Emperour his Company fore affailed,& hurt 440-43 Hee inuadeth France 441,51 Her birth and vertues ibid. Shee built a Church in the Vieth means to disturbe Flore place where Christ suffered ders against his NephewWilihidem tiam 441.51 His death in Normandy, 442. Why called Stabularia, ibid. Helena Queene of Adiabena, 2 convert and vertuous Lady King Henry the first his corps wrapped in a Bulles hide to Her femilehre auoide extraordinary flinch Helias de Branssield alloweth 442.57 ibid. not the election of Langton, Enterred at Reading Hisprehemmence and vices. Archbishoppe of Canterbury 442,58 Helias Confull of Cenomania, His personage ibidem,59 His inflitution and learning. his couragious answere to King William Rufus. 431. His workes of denotion, Put to death by King Henry the first Heliogabalus or Elagabalus His Issue legitimate 442.62 what it fignifieth 233. 4, His Naturall or illegitimate Iffue 443.66.8cc. He had three Natural daugh-Heliogabalus the Emperour his Coine and fuperfeription. ters (befide the rest) not na-Henry the fon of Geffrey Plan-His excessive wickednesse. tagenet, and Mand the Emibidem 2 His exceeding fumptuoufnes prefie 441,53. Henry Fitz-Empreffe, arriveth 234.3.4.5. Histroubled confcience.ibid. and commeth to his mother His age and raigne 235. 7

Hongilt and Honfa brethen,
when and with what power into England 452.39 He goeth into Normandy, ib. Returneth into England with they entred Britaine 280 7 an Army an Army 453. 41 Goeth againe into Norman-What their names fignifie, Marieth Eleanor Dutcheffe of Hengift poffessed of Kent, 289 Guien and Aquitaine. 453, Hee feafteth King Vortiger, Duke of Normandy, Anion, Aquitaine and Guien, 453 His Country and parentage, First King of Kent 293.1 Hengist the first Monarch of the English Nation. 324 Returneth into England, 453 Adonted by King Stephen, 28 his Sonne and Successor, 453 Hengift his Armes. Hengift flame 201.16 His death otherwise related. Henry the second, king of Eng-Land, his Atmes, Broad Scale His raigne, and Coine Henning a leader of the Danes His entrance and Coronation Henry fonne to Robert Curtois His graue and wife Councell hanged in New-Forrest, of State 456.3 King Henry the second assu-Henry fonne to William Conreth the fuccession to the querour his education, 425. Crowne voon his two fons. 456,4 Doeth homage to King Lewis Surnamed Beauclerke 426.71 Oppugned by both his brethof France for his Dukedoms in France ren, William Rufus, and Rob. Curroife 429.13 Henry the first, king of England He entreth amity with Malcolme King of Scots 456.7 His Standard against the Wellb why called Beancherke. 434. abandoned by Heary d' His Armes, Broad-Seale, and Effex Crowned in three feueral pla-Coine, shid, His coronation ces. 456,9 Hee and his Queene Eleanor He reformeth the Court first. refuse to weare their regall Crownes 456.9 His Mortification and Pietie, Hareferobd a famous warrito the English bloud,435,5 He allureth the Normans to 584.229 Sir Iohn Hawkwood dieth in fide with him 436.17 He taketh Cane in Normandy

His fmooth Oration to his His affaires in Normandy after

he was King. 456.10 At variance with Lowin the

436.17

zesle zeale 457.13 Willing to have Justice indif-He aimeth at a free Empire or Sendeth an Embassage to Rome against Thomas Bec-He goeth about to forfake the Pope, and ioyne with the Antipape. 460 His Edict to match the Popes Interdi& The loffe of his best shippe with his friends and followers. 460,37 He forreweth for the murder of Thom. Becker 461.44 King Hemy the 2. his projects for the Conquest of Ireland. 462.45 His motiues and inducements for the Gonquest of Ireland, Hee is icalous of Richard Strong-bow and other Captaines scated in Ireland 464 His Edict for recalling home the English ibidem. Pacified with Strongbow and other Conquerours in Ireland vpon termes ibidem. He arriveth with his forces Hee keepeth a royall Christ-mas in Dublin 464.40 mas in Dublin 464.40 His purgation and absolution for the death of Thomas Becket His penances ibid 466-75 His rebellious enemies in England ouercome in his absence 465,70 Hispartakers against K, Henry the yonger his fon. 465,70 He embarketh from Normandy for England 466.74 His faying and prayer when he taketh the fea ibidem His fœlicity Hee is compared with Salo-How many Ambassadors in his pallace at once. 466.78 He mourneth for his fonne. He meeteth William King of Scots at Yorke 467.83 He refuleth the Kingdome of Ierufalow. 468. 88 His resolution for the holy 160 00 How hee left it of. 469.97 The place of his Natinity. Hee curfeth his fonnes. ikid. King Howy the second accepteth vnequall conditions of Philip King of France, 469.98 His death Hisraigneandage 469.100 His Islue, 470.102 &c. the fecond crowned King of England in his Fathers time. 460.36-479.103 His vnnatural behauiour and fpeech to his father 460.37 He conspireth against his fa-His Seale.

French King, but reconci- 1 Henry eldest sonne to K. Henry the second, marrieth Margaret, Lewis the French Kings daughter bidem. King Henry the second his wildome, constancy and and coine. ferently executed. 457- 13 absolute Monarchie,458,17 460.35 Pronince marriage. Poitton Iewels dy, frustrate English His great debts France fling in France corporate Another Protess He faileth into France to demand Normandy 536.97 Hee quitteth his claime to Normandy , Anion, and other parts, to the French King. Hee abridgeth his file and

His maintenance encreased 467.85 His death. 468,86 470,102 Hee disclaimeth his former His repentance at his death oathat Oxford, 536.98 He taken the Tower of Lonfor his disobedience &c. 468.87 Henry the third, eldest sonne don and standeth upon his guard, 556.98 He feifeth the ancient flocke of King Iohn : his feale, ftile, of the Ctowne His childhood, how fuccou-Taken prisoner by Simon Montfort, Earle of Leicester 508.1 His first coronation, 509. 3 and led about with him 537 His fecond coronatio 511.11 His inducements and motives Like to have beene flaine at for war with France, 514.22 the battel of Euesha.538.103 He raifeth money of his Sub-His long reigne sects and lofeth their hearts He transporteth into Bretaign His buriall His wife & iffue 539.106.&c. wich a full Army. 516.27 His humility and charity. ibid Henry of Bolingbroke, Earle of Derby, feekes aduentures in Hee returneth without effect forreine parts forreine parts 605. 87 Created first Duke of Lanca. His wants how repaired, 516 Arr fter 581, 111 Earle of Darby and of Lanca-He fitteth perfonally in judge fter his fortunate feruice in ment vpon Peter de Rinaliss and others &c. 521.49 He marrieth Eleanor daugh-Gascoigne & Guien 580.107 His honourable and liberall viage of a Souldrour ynder ter to Raimund Earle of him. him.

Henry of Bölingbroke, created

Duke of Hereford 607, 112

Banished first, for ten yeeres: The stately solemnity of this Hee is much addicted to the afterward for 6. 608.103 Reproued therfore by Richard
Earle of Cornwall ibid
In danger of Hee enreth againe into Eng He challengeth the Crown & Realme of England, 609,114 Elected King of England in land 608.108 In danger of being murdred \$24.59 He attempteth the recouery of the Parliament house 609 Much fauouring those of Crowned King, by the name Poilton and Promince 529.77 Burdenous to his Subjects, &c of King Henry the fourth to the lewer especially. 526. Drinen for want to sell his His Armes, broad Seale, and Coine, this. His Ambassages into forraine 529.75 His base parcimony. 529.77 parts, for inftifying his acti-Hee fitteth in the Couent of Winchester and preacheth ons in taking the Crown of England His death, and of the Prince vnto them \$29.76 His hope to recouer Norman his fon complotted.613.14 He entreth Northwales with dy, frustrate 531.80 In small credit with his owne an Army against Owen Glen-Subjects, for wafting the Treasure of the Realme, ibid. dowro Indanger to be flaine, and in 614.22 Thought to have no valor, & fore wounded in his head therfore leffe regarded ibid. Hee folemnely fweareth to maintaine all liberties, and 615.24 He taketh to wife lane of Nauarre, widow of Ishn Mont-ford Duke of Bretaigne 616 to rule by law 531.82 His clemency to Traitours 531.82 His victory at Shrewsbury, 618 strangers, and rigour to the His wife and Christian answer 532.84 Honourably entertained in to the Duke of Burgundie requeft 620,48 His charity to the poore, 532 Hee forfaketh the Duke of Burgundy and aideth the Duke of Orleance 621.49 His magnificent port and fea-Hee falleth ficke and dieth Hee with the Pepe grinde the 621.50 people 532.86 Hee fitteth personally in the King Herrie the 4. his charge vnto Prince Henry his fonne Exchequer against Sheriffes and Bailiffes of Townes inat his death 621.51 His wittes and iffue. .621 522.87 52. Rrc. His excellent memory 534.90 Henry of Munmouth eldeft fon His lauish expenses 534-92 to Henry the fourth, Prince of Wales, after King of Eng-Hee feareth Simon Montfort 612.6 Earle of Leicester more then King Henry the fifth compared thunder and lightning. 535 to the Emperour Titm Vefpafiamus 623.1 His Armes, broad Seale and

Coine.

V V V V V

changeth his broad Seale | Prince Henry his youthfull Pranckes. 6245.6 Remoued from being prefident of the Kings Counfell His behaulour at the Kings Bench to the Lord Chiefe Inflice lers thidem France

His demeanour to the King his father 625.10 King Henry the fifth his Coro-His choise of good Counsel-625.11 His denotion and zeale to Religion His justice ibiden His passionate and tender affection to the dead corps of King Richard the fecond How hee claimeth his title for France. 627.20.21. He demandeth the Dutchies of Normandy, Aquitane, etc. What meanes were prefented vato him for the warres of 628 26 Hee conbarketh for France, 629.33 His care that Churches should not be spoiled 631.4 His noble victory at Agin 631.4 Court field 133.58.80 He returneth into England 122.48.8c. Received into London. His three aduantages for the Conquest of France 636.
His second expedition into France for Conquest 6:6 He folliciteth Pope Martin to confirme him K of France He goeth in person to Troy in Campaigne, to affiance the Lady Katharin of France Stiled and proclaimed Regent of France, during the life of Charles the fixth, and declared fucceffor in the Kingdome 643 He marrieth the Lady Katharine of France 643.53 His oration to the States of 643.54 Taxed for cruelry. Taxed for cruelry. 644.56 His fingle fight with Barbajon 644.57 His prophetie of Prince Hen ru his fonne, after King of England 646.74 He with his Queen Katharine 646.74 fit Crowned in their royall Robes in Paris. 647.77 ing Henry the fifth his laft speech on his death-bedde vnto his Nobles 687.31 His death 648.82 His works of denotion, 648. His vertues and commendaria His dead Corps in what manner brought into England, 648.84 ibid 85 When enterred His Epitaph. 640.8 His wife and Iffue, 640.86. Henry of Windfor crowned by the name of King Henry the 6. with two Crownes, 648. His birth and mother, 623.2 His Armes, Broad-Scale and Whiles he was Prince, woun-Coine 650 Borneat Windfor. 646.74 ded at the battel of Shrewf-6244 He contracteth marriage with

624.7

His parentage.

by law

By the femall line descended

from the Beauforts, vncapa.

ble of successió to the crown

The description of his minde

tingham 732.19 His speech vnto his Nobles

before the bartell of Stoke,

732.19

737-31

748.66

Church by three Popes.

and qualities, 720.3 Theportraict of his body.728 rireth into the North, 672. Being disguised, hee retur-His entrance into London, neth into England, is apprehended, and committed prisoner to the Tower of
London 676. 16 His Coronation Hemarrieth Elizabeth eldeft His wife and Iffue, 672, 94 daughter of King Edward the fourth The marriage folemnized. Proclaimed King of England, and of France 651.4. Hee receiveth Knighthoode, He prepareth against Lambert Symnel and his Complices. Crowned in Paris King of What Nobles and Captaines France 655.20 Henry the 6, with his Queene repaired vato him at Not-

flie to Kenelworth 664.51

Wounded and taken in battel

by Richard Duke of Torke.

and the Torkifts 667.64 735-31 He entrethinto London tri-His pious affection to compose factions in his Realme, umphantly. 734-23 Hee aideth the Duke of Bre-Taken prisoner at Northamptaigne with men and money against Charles King of 670.80 His and the Lancastrians title France 734-25.
Drawne perforce to Watte. how maintained against that of Torke 671.87 He with his soppe Prince Ed-Winneth Londoners by pomar disherited by Parliapularity ibidem. Entred their brother in the ment 676.11 Entred their province.

Marchant-Tailors Compaibidem By the States hee is taken out of the Tower, and goeth folemnly crowned to His voyage with an Army in-Paules Church, 679.52 Taken prifoner agains by K. to France 736.29 Hee returnes into England, Edward the fourth, and fent to the Tower, 683.61 Murdered in the Tower by His denotion. His delight in building. ibid.

Crooke-backe Richard Duke The two last scenes of his life. of Glocester 685.78 His lawes abrogated in Parliihiden His courfes taken with his 686.90 wines kindred, branches of ament His body carried bare-faced the family of Torke, and the through the streetes of Lon-Plantagenets 748.66 Ginen ouermuch to gather don, twice bled fresh againe Enterred in the Abbey of ibidem, 685.79 money 748.66,70 Hee falleth ficke of a pining Chertfey ibidem Translated to Windsor ibidem diferse 750.70 His compunction of heart & His Saint-like vertues, and remorfe for his auarice, and feature of body. 685.80.

Henry the fixth like to haue polling the people. 750.7 His death 751.70 His faire buildings and founbeene canonized a Saint. 685.80 dations His red hat supposed to heale His age and raigne the head-ach 68c.80 His good parts ibidem Saluted defender of Christes His remembrance honoured

by King Henry the feuenth.

751.70 His will taketh order for refti-751.70 Henry Earle of Richmond flyeth into Bretaigne 687.84 tution of monies, vniuftly Sought after by King Edward leuted by his officers. 751. the fourth 688.99 He taketh Sanctuary at Saint Hiewife ibidem.72.8.c. Malor His Tilue Heire to the house of Lauca-His buriall His buriall 752.71

Henry fonne to King Henry fer. 718.27 Attainted by Parliament. the feuenth, afterward King Henry the eight, Created 720-37 He hardly escapeth apprehen-Prince of Wales, Earle of Chefion 721.39 Arriveth at Milford basen. fter, and of Flint 747.65 He spouseth Lady Katherine His order of battell 724.55 wife to his brother Arthur, Henry the eighth king of Eng-His oration to his Souldiers

724-56 Proclaimed and crowned in land, his Armes, broad Seale and Coine 753 His birth, education, and Cothe field King Hearythe 7. ronation with his wife Ka-725.59 King Henry the feuenth his therine of Spaine ibid, I Armes Broad Scale & Coin What Councell hee chose,

754.2 Hisiuffice and Charity. ibid.4 His goodly shape of body & ffrength 754-4 He by an Herald demandeth France and the Crown therof, of Lewis the twelfth,

Elected Caput federis Italici, 754-5 He entreth league with many Princes, and Pope Iulius the He entreth France His meeting with Francis the French King 758.34 rain States, relating wrongs done by the French vnto the

ibidem.36 His booke against Martin L-zher 759.35 He falleth from the Emperor Charles the fifth 761 53 Likewise from Francis the French King 762.64 Vpon what causes ibidem His marriage with Katherine of Spaine called in question

764.66

Katharine of Spaine, whiles he was Prince ibidem 67 He refuseth Queen Katharins His marriage with her condened vnder the Seales of di-uers Vniuerfities 7642766 His diuorce from Katharine of Spaine wrought by Car-dinall Wolfey 766 His speech to the Nobles and Iudges, as touching his wife Katharine of Spain ibidem

His marriage with her debated of here in England. 767. 68.69.70 King Herry the 8. and Queen Katharine summoned to appeare personally in the Court at the Blacke Friers 767 Hismarriage with Lady Kasharine of Spaine diffolued

by Act of Parliament 770. Hee weddeth Lady Anne Bullen Bullen 770.82 His complaint of the Pope to the French King, ibidem Hee marrieth Lane Seimor the morrow after Queen Annes beheading 772.91 His answere to the demands of the Yorkifts Rebels 776 His free pardon of the Nor-therne Rebels by prodamation tion 777
Het marrieth Anne of Cleue.

He divorceth her \$1.105 He marrieth the Lady Katharine Howard 779.108 He espoused Katharine Parr 780.113 His conference with his Q. Katharine Parre about reli-781,113

He affumeth the name of king

of Ireland. His expedition into Scotland 781.115 He fickneth 783 133 ibid, 134 HisWill His three children ordained to fucceede in the holding of the Crowne 783.134 He dieth penitent 784 ibidem Buried at Windfar His Tombe vnfinished, how

iumptuous it frould have

His description for personage and qualities 783.135 His wines 785.136 &c. His legitimate Islue 785 142 His naturall Iffue. 786.148 King Henry the eight, and K. Salomon in forme points co-The first King that qualled,& vncrowned the Pope, 205.

Henry of Huntingdon when 162-12 Henry a fewenth naturall fonne of King Henry the first. 443. Slaine in batrell

His Iffue thiden Henry Bishop of Winchester, agent for his brother Stephen Earle of Mortaigne, to attaine the Crowne of Eng-He entrappeth the Nobles. Land

448.22 Hee curleth the opposite of Mand the Empresse, 451.30 He recalleth his curfe. 451. He disclaimeth contract with

He zquiuocateth with Mand the Empreile ibid.35
Henry Bishoppe of Winchester fireth Winchester vpon Mand the Empresse the Empresse 452.35 He entrappeth the Empresse. Henry of Newburg! Lift Earle

of Warwicke fince the Conquest 434 2 Henry Prince of Scotland 2bandoneth the field against the English Created Earle of Huntingdon. 448.14

448.16 In danger at the siege of the Castie of Ludlow, and recouered by King Stephen, ibid. Henry the fourth Emperour. fupposed to have beene an Eremite in his latter dayes.

And to change his name into Godfcall ibid. Buried at Spire Hemy the Emperour, and his Empresse Constantia receive the Imperiall Crowne from the Popes feet 475.24 Punished for the wrongs done to King Richard the first, K. of England of England 479,53 Hee dieth at Messana, excommunicated for King Richards cause His body lyeth aboue ground vnburied Henry Archbishoppe of Dublin alloweth not King Johns Submission to the Pope. 500.48 L. Henry sonne to Richard King

Henry fecond fonne to K Edward the first, his death and buriall 551. 561.59
Henry Hothware his fortunes againft the Scots 616, 28 His dangerous rebellion, 617

of Romans, imprisoned in

Doner by Simon Montford

The causes pretended of his rebellion , published 617

Hee is flaine at the battell of Shrewsbury 618.37 His dead corps first buried, afterwards, drawne beheaded and quartered. 618.38 Henrie baftard brother to Peter King

THE TABLE

mone Natiuity buriall France his eloquent and pi-thie Oration for vnion in France Hee giueth notice to Queen Elizabeth of the Spanish Inuinc.ble Armada 859.196 Henry king of Scots shamefully murdered 841.60 Henry of Surbon Prince of Nawarre, marrieth the Lady Margaret de valois, Charles the 9. king of France his fifter. 836.35 Being King of Nanarre, difabled by the Leagues and Gnizians for the Crowne of France Henry King of Nassarre, proclaimed King of France by the Army against Charles Cadinali of Burbon. 867.255 Sueth to Elizabeth Queene of England for aide Forfaketh his religion, and is ihia crowned King of France, by the name of Henry the 4. 876.257 Heptarchy of the Saxons 15 201.18 Heracliames Lieutenant generall in Britaine 228.2 Heracline Patriarch of Ierufa. Soliciteth King Henry the fecond to accept the King-He departeth home discontented. 468.90
Iafter Herbert Earle of Pembroch created Duke of Bed-Lord Herbert Earle of Pembroch, marcheth against Sir Iohn Comers, and the Rebels in the North 679-32 He with his brotherSir Richard

Crowned King of Spaine He murdereth his brother Peter with his owne hands Henry Le Spenfer, the fout Bifhop of Norwich, his good feruice against lohn Littestar a Rebel, King of the Commons 596.27 He leadeth forces into Flanders for Pope Vrban, against Degraded, hanged, drawne, and quartered for Treason Clement the Antipape 597 Henrie Lord Darley or Darnley Hercules supposed to have bin eldeit fon to Mathew Earle in Britaine of Lennox by Margaret of Lenn ox Dy Margares daughter of Archibald Dug-lasse and Margares eldest daughter to Henrie the 7. their fecond fonne, his perfonage, and marriage with Mary Queene of Scats, 752 Ely Henry Fitz-roy naturall fonne brians 367.3 Herthum i. the Mother Earth of King Henry the eighth 786.148 worshipped 284.6
Herthus a Goddesse of the heathen Saxons 287.7 Herucius de Monte Marisco. Mediator to King Hemy the fecond in the behalf of Earle Henry 2. the French King quar-Stronghow &c. 464.59 Hethfield or Heathenfield bar-\$29,100 Hexamfield 676.15 Hide Monastery which had Henry the third King of 866.244 coniecturall. and how it came vp. 397.11 Holie maide of Kent fhore of Kent ibid. Lord Iohn Holland killeth the Ctuary Iohn Holland being also Duke

taken by the Rebels and beheaded headed 679.34 Lord William Herbert Earle of Pembroch Lord Generall in the field against Wist. 820 Andrew de Herckley Captaine of Carleil taketh Thomas Earle of Lancaster prisoner

Created Earle of Carled thid

King of Caffile, chosen and

His grave and Epitaph, ibidem Henrie L. Darley or Darnley

His Mother, time and place of His dignities his death, and

relled with by Queene Ma-Defiance fent vnto him ibid.

Wounded to death in tilting

beene before at Winehester 362.14 Hierome or lerome of Prage, Martyr burnt 613.30 Hilds, the famous, learned, & vertuous Abbeffe of Stream . Juste 310.8 335.14 Hisdigerdus, Tutor to young Theodosius Theodofine 277.11 Histories of the first time, meere coniecturall. 161.3 Hostide or Hoxtide what it is

Executed with 7. of her difciples for treason, ibid. Hollanders new Coine vpon occasion of the Inuincible Nauy defeated. 863.224 Henry Hollend Duke of Exce-

fer and Earle of Huntingdon his high descent, aliance, & miscrable state. 686.86
Vikindly vsed by his Lady
Anne, fifter to King Edward
the 4. 686.37 the 4. 686.87 His body found dead on the

> L. Stafford and taketh San-Earle of Huntingdon, taken and brought to Playlie or Plefly in Effex and beheaded

of Excester, drawne out of Sanduary and conneied to Pomfret Castle by the Yor-Lift. kifts 667.65 Suspected for the murder of Humfrey Duke of Glocefter

614.17 66349. Iohn Holland Duke of Excefter left for dead at Barnes field, recouereth, and taketh San-Ctuary at Westminster .68366 homas Holland Earle of Kent Herbert valiently fighting, beheaded at Circefter by the

Homers Ilias written in a Dragons guts 261.1 Honorius Emperorin the West his raigne and death 74.6

Horesh i. Anguse: orland Robet Horne, a worthy Alder-man of London perswadeth

refiftance of lacke Cade. 664 Horfa and Carigerne, Slame in fingle fight 290.0 560.48 Horsemen well appointed 40000. shewed at Blacke-162:10

beath field before King Ri-Hereford Cathedrall Church chard the second. 596:28 built in memoriall of Ethel-Horstead the place of Horsa birth murdred 311.14
Herefwich wife to Ethelbers his Monument 290.9 Knights Hoffstaliers of the King of the East Saxons Rhods or S. Iohn of Ierufale, Hereward, his hallowed fword aduanced by the fall of the Templers.

Hothure. See Perer Hereward a Castle in the Isle of Howards Dukes of Norfolke, whence descended. 553,71 Lord Thomas Howard Earle of Hericus King of the Northson-Surrey inuadeth Scotland,743 Lord Thomas Howard Earle of

Surrey, and high Admirall of England winneth Morleis in France 760.43 Hee inuadeth and spoileth France 760.44 Made Lieutenant of the North

760.46
His rough answer to the Duke of Albany 761.49
He is made Lord Lieutenant of Ireland of Ireland 762.55
Hee vanquisherh the Rebels there ibidem Thomas Howard Duke of Nor-

folke, Lieutenant Generala. gainst the Rebels in Torke-Thomas Howard late Duke of Norfolkehis troubles and death. 851.134 Philip Lord Howard Earle of

Arundel condemned of high treason 848.106 Charles Lord Howard Baron of Charles Lord Flowers Baron or Effinghem, high Admirall a-gainfithe innincible Nauy of Spains 859.195 Commander of a Fleet fee out against Spaine 868.264
Made L. Lieutenant General

of all England 877.327 John Lord Howard Duke of Norffolke flaine Norffolke flaine 725,58 Thomas Howard D. of Norffelke with other prisoners releafed out of the Tower. 817.15

Lord General for Queen Marie against Wise 819 He dieth for dolour of heart, 819.32 Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey prisoner in the Tower. Hubba and Hungar leaders of

the Danes inuade England 354-2-311.15
Hubbs and Inguar Lotbbrooks
fonnes leaders of the Danes
inuade England 388.9
Hubert de Burgh Earle of Kene in a general defection of the Nobles adhereth to King Henry the third 523.58 Troubled by the King vpon

an action of trespasse in the Kings Bench. 52 .61 Huber: de Burgh, or Burgo L. Chamberlaine of England

Hubers Archbishop of Canterbury meeteth King Richard the first most joy fully. 478.

Hubert Archbishop of Canter. fury his Sophisticall oration against the Coronation of His forecast to bridle K John.

Made Lord high Chancellor Habert Walteri Archbishop of Canterbury his hollow heart

to King John 487.12.488 He outbraues King John.

Hubert Archbishop of Torke his death 493,31 Hubert de S, Clare faueth King Henry the second his life by his owne death 456.4 Hubblestone, who so called 357

Hugh or Hugo Bishoppe of Co-mentries default of appearance adjudged punishable

Hugh Bishop of Lincolns royally buried. 48 .11

Hugh Le Brun, Earle of March conspireth against King John

Hugo de Neuile flew 2 Lion in the holy Land 482.71 Hugh Lupus Earle of Chefter taketh part with Henry the

young King, against King Hony the second, the father 465.65 Taken prifoner

Hugh Baron of Dungannon, 853.151 Flieth from his wives Father Turlogh, into England 853

Emploied by Queene Eliza. His feruice against the Earle of Defmonda Rebell ibid. Made Earle of Tir-Oen. ibid Complaineth of Sir William Fitz William the Lord Depury, and others 854-153 His diffimulations ibid.

Hugh, Baron of Dungannon & Earle of Tir-Oen, getteth the fort of Blackwater 872 He and his adherents proclai-

med Traitors 872.290 His Victorie ouer the English in Ireland, necre to Armagb 873.300 Sueth for Parley and is reie-

cted 873-304 Receiueth a Plume of Phenix Feathers as a present from the Pope 874-308 He goeth on Pilgrimage to the Croffe at Tipperaray. 874

He with the Irish Rebells and auxiliary Spaniards put toflight 875.319 He fueth to the Lord Lieutenant or Deputy for pardon & peace 876325 Brought into England by Charles Bluns Lord Mont-

885.8 A valiant Warriour, but a perfidious, subtile, and smoothtongued Traitor. obsert Huldern Captaine of a Commotion about Torke

Beheaded.

Found dead His praites Protector of England marrieth Iaqueline, during Iohn Duke of Brabant her hufbands life 6 < 2.9 He challengeth combate of Philip Duke of Burgundy 12king part against him with Iohn Duke of Brabant. 653.9 He marrieth Eleanor daughter to Reginald Lord Cob-653.9 He accuseth Henry Beaufort Bishop of Winchester, 653.9 Declared to have been a true Subject 667.64 Humfrey Lhuyda learned fearcher of Antiquities. 158.4. Hungar. See Hubba Lord Hungarford beheaded for his offence in abusing Na-Hunstanton Toure

fion

chrift.

of England

Hee commeth to London

His mercy to Prisoners, ibid-

Paralleled with Conftantine the great and Octavian Au-

sbidem.

ibid 20

888.28

889. 30

His triumphant passage tho-row London to Westminster

Henry, &c. 888.28 Enfliled folemnly King of

with Queene Anne, Prince

Great Britaine, France, and

Scandalized and flandered by

Papifts 690.37 690.37

and bounty at the battell of

Poictiers. 582.116 lames alias laques d' Artenile,2

potent man in Flanders.

570.41 Confedered with Edward the

Westing times ¢97.34 Iohn Huffe Martyr burned, 620,25 Peter Hyalus Embassador from Spaine procureth a truce betweene England and Scot-743-49

Hunstanton Toure 311.14 Hunsingdon Earledome besto-

of Scots

Scotland

wed vpon Alexander King

Helde by Henry Prince of

533.86

446.7

His Coronation and Queene
Annes his wife. 885.10
His gracious Letter for flay Acke Straw, his rebellion, his execution and confession Inche Cade. See Cade of execution of Traitors codemned His speech to the Prelates and Iacke Sharpe of Wigmorf-land an Arch-rebell headed and Church-gouernours before quartered. 656.20

Iames the first King of Scots Conference about matter of Liturgy, and Gouernement prisoner in England, and en-larged, marrieth I and daugh of Church. His demands voto the Prelacie, as touching Confirmation of Children Baptized, &c. ter to John Beaufort Earle of Somerfet 652.8 Murdred by the Scot: 659 His speech voto Dinines as-He entended Hostility to Eng fembled for the faid conference

Crowned with a Crowne of red hot yron. 660.34 Iames the 2. King of Scots befiegeth Roxborough against the Yorkifts 670.82 Slaine there with the shiuer of a great peece of Ordinance James the third K. of Scots banitherh Alexander King of Albany his second brother. 680,110

Lamer the third King of Scotland caufeth lobs Earle of Marre his brother to bleed to death Slaine in battell by his owne Subjects 735.27 Iames the fourth King of Scots contracteth marriage with

third against France ibidem, See Arteuile. ene or Ioan base daughter to King John, married to Lewin Prince of Wales 507.72 Her louing kindnesse to her Margares eldest daughter to King Henry the seuenth Father 747.64

He entertaineth Perkin War- | Ianede Valois intreateth for a truce between King Edward becke 741.43 He together with Perkin Warthe third, and Philip de Vabecke inuade Norshumberlois the French King. 573.

land 741.43 Slaine at Floden Field 755. Inne alias Ionn wife to David the fecond King of Scots dieth in England 584.127

Inne the third wife of K. Henry His valour in fight 755.16 His body supposed to have beene Embalmed and enthe 8. 785.138 Her parentage, when married terred in Shine or Shene.756 her death and buriall, ibidem Her wombe ript for King Ed-He is yet imagined to have efward the fixth his birth. caped out of the field and fled to Ierusalem ibid. James the fifth King of Scots Queene Inne dieth. 779.105

Inne Grey made Successor to the Crowne of England by dieth of a Melancholike pa 782.119 King Edward the fixth in his ames Clement a Iacobin Prier 812.75 killeth the French King Hen-Proclaimed Queene of Engrie the 3. 866.25. Himfelfe stabbed to death. 866.254 816, 16 ihid Her parentage 812.75 Beheaded with the L. Guilford Tames the fixth King of Scots, 818.23 after Monarch of great Bri

Her speech at her death, ibidem tane, the first King that by his penne depended Anti-Ianus Temple in Rome opened. 201.12 His lineall descent, from King 239 The fame shut Henry the feuenth King of Laphers Progenie peopled Ess-England, & James the fourth rope, 161.2 Inques Van Arsenile flaine in a King of Scotland 748.65

AMES the first Monarch

of Great Britaine beginneth his raigne 883 Proclaimed King of England, France, and Ireland. &c. mutinie 577.78 See more in lames D' Artenile in Artenile. laques Francis a perfidioustraitor 949.112 Ingges in Churches to bear during the first of Bedford, mother to Elizabeth, Ed. Images or Idols (inspect) 884 2 His iust title to the Crowne 884-3 ward the fourth his wife flandred for Witchcraft, 711,3 lafter Earle of Pembroch fiveth into Bretaigne, 687.84
Icenu Persu thought to bee 184.1

cenians withstand Offerine 194 His entrance to the Crowne of England congratulated Ouerthrowne by forraine Embassadors 195.12 Oppressed by Roman officers rebell 108.11 ibid. 7 Ide first King of Bernicia.301 His raigne

Ide daughter of the Lady Ma-886.16 ry King Stephens daughter, married 459.55 459.55 Idols, See Images Idols worshipped by Britains 887.19 167,168 Idols 1, Counterfeit Princes erected to dethrone the right an old stratagem. 736,13

Ieffrey Chancer, See in Chau-Ieffrey Plantagener Sonne of Foulke, Earle of Anion.441 He marrieth Mande the Emprefie He dieth 452,42 leffreybrother to King He the fecond put to a yeerely pension His death

Iernfalem loft 469,94.468.99 lerufalem wonne by Titus, 212.3 Raced to the ground. 210.7 New built, and named Elia. ihiden Not reconerable by warre. 757.30 Wonne by Godfrey of Lorain

and his confederates, 437 Iestin Lord of Glamorgan, fideth against Rhees up Theo-der Prince of South-Wales. 429.19

Issures by proclamation banished Iefus Christ our Sautor inwhose raigne borne Iewes reuolt vpon a prophesie

210.4. They warre vpon the Gen-217. 3 Slaughtered by Traign, 217.2 Rebell in Hadrians time. 218

Iewes Clippers of the Kinges Coin 529,75 Not permitted to looke toward Ierufalem 219. 7 Iewes banished the Realme. Iewes flaine at King Richard

the first his Coronation. Ionaff alias Iago, Prince of Northwales payeth tribute in Wolues, 370.5 Ignatius suffereth martyrdom. Igren Duke Gorlow Wife.

Ilands feparated from the main by the great deluge. 155,4 They bee ornaments and of vie to the Maine. ibid. Ilands belonging to Britaine

had their feuerall Kinges, 157.13 Hands or Mes of the Gentiles, are those of Europe. 161. 2

Parliament 778,100 Abolifhed Images superstitious cast out of Churches and burnt. 834,16 Imericke fourth King of Kent.

His Iffue and raigne ibidem Immanuenting flame by Calli-173.186 hilan Immuration a kind of Death

Indies not heard of by the Romans before king Ine his rime 277.2 Ine king of the West Saxons,

298-11. His victories His Lawes translated into English. ibiden His zeale to Religion; ibidem. His voluntary pouerty. 299

Ingilram de Concy died a threefold death 527.69
Inguar the Dane, Lothbrokes fonne fendeth defiance to king Edmund 288.0 Hee with his brother Hubba put king Edmond to death.

ngulphus when he lived and 162 16 Init-wen a name of Britaine. 1584 nis Witrin. 1. Glastenburie.

ihidem

Pope Innocent the fourth, makerh fuite to fee England, 157 ope Innocentise being Vmpi-

er, playeth falle 495.36 His prefent and letter to King Iohn 495.38 His three strange lawes. 499.

He interdicteth England for many yeeres. 496.40 He interpofeth between king Ichn & Philip king of France 491.34 THE TABLE

Pope Innocentius his curse denounced vpon King Iohn. He absolueth King Ishas peoden ple from Alleagrance ibidem Infala Floren I. Britaine 1608

Infala Ceruli, a name of Bri-Infurrection at Abingdon in Oxford bire Infurrection of the Nobles, against King Stephen. 447.

The pretended reasons therof ibidem.14. Interdict of the Pope what it is Interdiction of England for many yeeres. 496.40 Interdiction of England in K. Iohn his time releafed. 503.

Interregram in the Empire for eight yeeres Interreguum not allowed in government of England, Interniew of Iobn king of Eng-

land, and William K. of Scots 485.10 Interview betweene Iohn King of England, and K. Philip of France ibid. 16
Inuation of England plotted by the Catholikes. 489.34 Inueffiture of Prelates in what

manner it was 436.13 Claimed by the King and by the Pope ibid. 14 In uincible Nauy of Spaine prepared against England, 857.

The furniture and prouifion thereof 858.189.00 Flieth before the English. 858.189.00 862.216 Ioachine an Abbot auouchech

the Pope to bee Antichrift. Ioun daughter of King Edward thefirst Her marriages; Issue, death &

buriall Ioan widow of Lord Thoma Holland, remaried to Edward the Blacke Prince. 589.156. Shee dieth for forrow and griefe, being denied a par-don for her fon Iohn Hol-

She was named the faire maid of Kent, and was married to Sir Thomas Holland Earle Kent, and mother to Thoma and Iohn Holland Duke of Surrey, and Earle of Hun-Mother by Edward of Wood-Stocke the Blacke Prince, to

King Richard the fecond. Ioan daughter to King Edward the fecond, wedded to Dauid, Prince, and after King of Scotland, by the name of David the fecond. \$64.

Her death and buriallibidem Called by the Scots in skorne Ioan or Ione Make-peace. Ioan eldest daughter to King Ichn,married to Alexander the fecond, King of Scots 507.67

Ioan daughter to King Ioh maried to Lewelis Prince of North-Wales Queen loss committed vnto

prison for forcery. 637.49

Isan of Lorsine 2 marshal maiden 654.14 Herletterto VVilliam de la

Pole Earle of Suffolks. 654. Shee is called Ioanla Pucelle de Dieu 654.16 Betrayed and raken prifoner 655.18

Burnt for a Witch at Ross. Ioan third daughter of K. Henrie the second by Queene E. leanor his wife. 471.110 Her husband and Iffue.

Ioan daughter of King Henry the fecond, married to William King of Sicilie. 474.19. Joan Butcher an Hereticke, 812.78 Saint Iohn the Euangelist banifhed by the Emperour Domitian

His Reuelatio in the Isle Pat-77625 Compared with Daniels visions. Returneth from exile out of Pathmos Iohn an viurper of the Romane Empire, flaine. His Coine

Iohn of Oxford a great Clerke 458.22 Hee writeth a Bobke against Thomas Becket 459.27 He was Bishoppe of Norwich.

King Heary the second his fonne Why fo named Entituled King of Ireland Iohn the last fonne of K. Henry

the fecond, knighted, and ient into Ireland. 469.92 His file in the Seale of Ire-First styled Lord of Ireland 470.107.483 What Earledomes and Seig-

nories hee held in King Richard the first his brothers time time 473.9 His attempts during his brother King Richards captiui-

ty 478.44 For want of appearance, ad-iudged to forfaite all his Eftate in England. 479.55 Hee is reconciled to King Ri. chard the first his brother.

becommeth most faith full vn to him ibidens His challenge fent to the French Court, in defence of his loyaltie to king Richard the first his brother. 481

Iohn king of England his Arms. Broad Scale, and Coine His tragicall raigne, and the principall actions therein.

His meanes and title to the His Agents in England ibidem King John of England crow ned Duke of Normandie

Hee purfues king Philip of France from place to place. He dinorceth Hamilia his wife and eipoufeth Ifabel Heritrice of Ailmar, Earle of Crowned againe at Queene Ifabels Coronation 486-9 He offereth a golden Chalice in Lincoln Cathedral church on Saint Iohns Altar, 486

Red Abbey

tion

thethird

of highest treason. 597-39

Withdraweth himselfe vpon

King lohn his works of deuo.

His orders for government,

507.64.65.66

507.67

588.150

ibidem 152

506.62

and Weale-publike 506.63 Compared to Marina. 507. Hee arriveth in Normandie, His wines. Summoned by Philip the His Iffue His children extraordinarily French king to appeare per-fonally at Paris 489.16 aduanced. aduanced, 521.51 John the French King raken fonally at Paris 489.16 His victorie at Mirabean. prifoner, aftera yeere fet at

ibidem. 17 liberty 583.122 Iobn of Gaunt Duke of Lan-His clemency to his Nephew Arthur 480.18 Cleared of his death, 490.

caster gouerneth England, under his father K. Edward Cited by king Philip vpon treason for Arthurs death. A protector of Iobn Wickliffe. His Armories reuerfed by the ihidem Condemned and adjudged an Londoners ibidem He procureth the Major and enemy to the French State, ibidem.

Aldermen of London to bee He loofeth many Seignories thrust from their places, beyond fea, through his own His wines and iffue. 589,152. negligence, & his captains His death and Tombe. 590 treachery 490.22 Enchanted with the love of He claimeth the Crowne of Caffile and Leon 594.17 Accused by a Carmelite Frier

his wife I fabel his wife I fabel 491,23 How much hee was diffressed. ib. 24 His letter to Pope Innocentius

land

fealty.

Langton

Lincolnesbire

His buriall

and death

oath

He fubdueth Wales

He offereth wel to the Clergy

but his offers are rejected.

Enformed of a great confpi-

racy, and treaton of his No-

In danger to bee vn crowned.

His preparation against Thi-

his preparation against **Imitip king of France. ibid. 48. He yeeldeth vp his Crowne &c. to the Pope, and fweareth vnto him homage and

Hee is absolued by Stephen

Entrapped by a guilefull

ihiden

17,107

501.52

Forfaken of his Nobles, and his guard, and is reconciled to King Richard the fecond, debarred or inhibited his by meanes of Princes Ioan voyage into Normandie by the Kings mother 599 47 He marrieth Constance eldest Hubert Archbishoppe of Canterbury. 493.29 What wrongs were offered daughter of Peter K. of Ca-

589.172. to him 496.38 Hee entreth France With 2 He with Dame Alice Peers, & others remoued from King great Armie 494,33 ing John winneth Mont Al-Edward the third his person 588.149 ban, and recouereth Angi.

Suspected of King Richard 2. He commandeth dinine fer-His noble Army for the conuice to bee celebrated in S. quest of Spaine 600.59 He arriveth at the PortCorone 600.59 Albans, notwithstanding the Popes interdiction 496.40 or Groine 601.61 Excommunicated and ac-His proceedings and fucceffe curfed by name from Rome.

about the kingdoms of Cafile and Leon. 694 83 .84. Hee fetleth the State in Ire-He inuadeth France, 586-139 His Broad Seale for Ireiand He calleth vpon God in his before he was king 498.43.

diftreffe, and is heard. 605. He returneth into England, & doeth good offices.605. 86 Made Duke of Agnitaine,

605.87 Enstileth himselse King of Caftile and of Leen, in right of Constance. 587,145 He marrieth Katharine Swin. ford his old loue. 606.94 His children begotten of her before marriage made legitimate Hee departeth this life, 608

His goods feized by the king Iohn fonne of King Edward the first his death and tomb.

By a new Charter Subjected to Lord Iohn of Elsham fecond the Pope 503.54. He is become a petty king afonne to King Edward the mong his Barons. 503.56 first, proclaimed Cufter of Lo-Hee loofeth his treasure and 562.60 carriages on the fands by Heis Earle of Cornwall. 564

505.55 His deadly ficknoffe, 505.61 His death His death and repentance. Iohn the French King taken prisoner by Edward the :506.61 506.61 Blacke Prince 582.115 The occasion of his ficknesse He dieth in England 584,127 506.62 Entombed at Saint Denis. King Iohn poyloned at SwenHe espouseth Anne fifter of

Wales

H is death

Rritaine

His death

Wie Caine

His Coine

Is Slain

and vices.

rer his treason

Ireland had 5. Kings in it at

ibidem 12

Philip Duke of Burgundie, 651.6 Irish petty Kings doe homage Hee marrieth Lady laquet to King Henrie the fecond. daughter to Peter of Lutzen. 464.60 Irish Rebels in King Henry the burg, Earle of Saint Paul, third his dayes 516.28 Hee dieth in Paris. 659.25 His commendation, flile and Ifabella alias Hawifia, or Anis, tombe 658.25
King Lewis princely testimofecond wife to King Iohn dinorced 507.65 Remarried to Ieffrey Mandeny of him 658.26 Ishn Duke of Burgoigne fulpemill Earle of Effex, also to Hubert de Burgo Earle of eted to affect the Crowne of 640.48 Kens Slaine as hee kneeled before

Ifabel third wife to King Iohn Charles the Daulphin. 641. her parentage, fecond mariag and Hive 507.66 Ifabel daughter to King John His death revenged 644.56. married to Fredericke the fe-His body honourably intercond Emperour 507.71 Her Islue and death ibidem. Ifabel Queene Dowager of red in Dijon 644,56 Sir Iohn Mortimer arraigned England, married to the Earle for treasonable speeches. of March in France 511.12 652.8 Drawne hanged and headed Practifeth for her fonne King for treason 652.8

Inha Duke of Bretagin Arma-Henry the third against the French. 515.26 Falfly charged to have fought ricke, forfaketh the English, and turneth to Charles the by poylon to make away K. French King, : 573.10 Iohn & Chamber, raifeth a tu-Ifabela base daughter of King Richard the first 482

mult in the North, against the Duke of Northumber-Richard the first 482
[[abel King Henry the third his 725.26 fifter, married to Fredericke Taken prisoner and executed. the Emperour 521. 50
The marriage confummate by thiden Iohn de Vere Earle of Oxford. calculation of flarres. 521. flyeth from Barnes field into (Tabel Oneene Dowager, King 682.65 Don Iohn of Austria base bro-Henry the third his mother. another lexabel 526.66
[abel Counteffe of Arundell.

ther to Philip the second K. of Spaine, Gouernour of the Low-Countries 854.158 a widow, her bold reproofe 855.160 of King Henry the third. Saint Johns Hospitall in Ox-531 81 Queene Isabel a mediatrix for ford founded 519.142
Iones come from Issue 162.6 peace between her husband king Edward the second and Is forb of Arimathia brought the Christian faith first into the Lords
Denied one nights lodging as
ibiden 207.3 Buried in Glastenbury ibidem Michael Ioseph the Blacke-Smith his rebellion & death. Setteth her heart against the Lords, and feeketh reuenge.

741-44-742-147
Ionianus mominated Emperor, Her discontentment with the Spensers 561.50 Negotiateth the King her husbands affaires in France. His picty and Christian Religion 268.2 Maketh peace with the Perfiibidem Shee and Prince Edward of ihidem Windfor proclaimed enemies His personage, raigne, vertues, to the State 561.51 Shee with the Prince and Roger Morsimer goe into Helouismus a Roman Enfign-bea-561.56 With forraine forces and o-268.2 ominus viurpeth the Empire. thers thee entreth England, 277.11.

562.57 Her forces encrease against

the King her husband. 562.

Her parentage, widowhoode, yeeres, death and buriall. By whome it first received English lawes and officers. 506.62 Shee forbeareth to company with King Edward the fecond her husband.

Tabel Queene mother suppofed to bee with childe by By what right & title it came Mertimer 568.21 Her great dower abated to a to King Edward the fecond 468.91 Ireland in civil differtion. fmall rare hidem Ifabel Queene Dowager, mo-ther to King Edward the 462.46 Irish voluntaries aide against third dieth. third dieth. 582.120 Queene Ifabel of France robbed of her Iewels and plate by the Daulphin. 639,60 Committed to prison, 620, The Irish enter Severne, 399

Queene Ifabel of France escapeth out of prison by the meanes of the Duke of Burgoigne, 640.41 Made Regent of France, 640.41 Her parentage and dispositio. She inciteth the King to dif-

herite the Daulphin and adopt Henry the fifth King of England Sabel Countesse of Warwicke, dieth of poyfon 689.107 fabel Queene of Spaine, he descent . 746.62 Her vertue and denotion,747

Queene Ifabel daughter to Charles the 6.K.of France, affianced to Richard the fecond King of England, and remaineth a virgine during his raigne 610.120 Sent after a princely manner home into France a virgin as thee came Married to Charles Duke of Orleance. Orleance 615.23
Ifacini, See Curfac
Ifis a Goddeffe of the Saxons. 615.23

288.7 From Ifraels departure out of Egypt vnto Salomons tem-ple, what time 278.2 Italy compared to an oaken leafe 155 Italy tooke name from Italia

157.2 Itun i. Solwer Frith. Inbilee of King Edward the 3. Indith wife to Father and fon, rauified by Baldwine, Forre-fler of Arden in France. Islis the Empresse how thee

reproued a British woman, and how shee was answered mother in law of Caracalla Iulian a a third natural daugh-

ter of Henry the first, King of Fuoland of England 443.75 Didns Iulianus buieth the Empire of the Souldiers 277.2 His emploiments and rifing lis Coine. ibid Inlianus Cafar 263.6. Elected Emperour and con-

fort with Conftantius ibidens His parentage His proportion and feature of body. His education ibid 2 Hee became a Deacon, and

professed holy life His temperance and chaftity

Vaine glorious, vnconftant, and full of words ihid His inflice His clemency and charity His popularity ihid A great fecret perfecutor of Christians 26 c. 4 His wordly pollicy Ouer feuere and wnthankeful Hee goeth about to recdifie

His open perfecution of the Christians 265. 8 265. 5 His skoffing at Christians His prudence and learning. Islian the Emperour his fuperflitions Religion

His Come Hisfortitude His exploits and victories. ib. His apparitions and prefages Deluded by a Pythonift, 267 He projecteth the conquest of

Perfia ibidem
His excelline facrifices, ibid. His huge Army into Persia Stricken with a Dart, ibid. His death and buriall shid. His age and raigne. 267.8 His vertues and vices ibid Inlie the moneth, whence it tooke name

Iulius a Martyr in Britaine 206 Iuliu Cafar, the first Roman attempter of Britaine 182.2

His coine Vpon what occasion hee attempted it. Hee complotteth to attaine the Empire ibid. 1
The first Roman that affailed Germany ibid Hee gouerneth Gallia tenne

yceres Vpon what causes and pretenfes he inuaded Britains Hee cometh in person against

Britaine His fust landing in Britaine Hee putteth the Britanes to ibid. = His fleete dispersed ibid.8.

His Fleet in harbour distressed Sodainly affailed by the Bri-

tanes ibid. Honoured with the grant of a supplication or procession for 20. daies His fecond landing in Bri-His Nauy empaired by tem-

He draweth his thips on land He imposeth a tribute vpon Caffibelan 187 1 # Hee would bee stiled and ranged among the gods. 187,

He feeketh to be King 137.11 He gat nothing in Britaine but the fight of the Courrey ibid. 12

His death ibid 11 The first that had his owne image in Coine. 160

THE TABLE

Iulius Cafar, forewarned of his death by Prodigies 187.13 By Sparing the Dininor 187.14 By a brasen table in Capus By Dreames. By Beafts entrals and Birde His personage neffe His qualities his enemies His military vertues warres, His offices of flate His triumphes Inl-Laber aplace Infliciars Itintrant first inflituted in England. For corruption punished, 545 Iustina mother to Valentinian the younger, Emperour Of incomparable feature and beauty. ibid Ima, or Inter, a Tribe of the Saxons Iuta, called also Gutes i. Goths or Vites. 2850 VV Illiam de Kahames, 2-lias Kains taketh king Stephen prisoner. 450.28 Lady Katharines picture sent to Henry the fifth lying be-QueeneKatharme, wife to king Henry the fifth, Crowned at Weltminster Westminster 645,64 Queene Katharine late wife of King Henry the fifth, and now Queene Dowager palfeth royally through Londen with K. Henry the fixth her fonne an Infant in her lappe. 651.: Remarried to Owen Theudo. ofWales 649.86, 659.32 Her Issue by him Herdeath Her Coffine neuer buried, ibid Lady Katharine or Katherine Gordon the vnfortunate wife of Perkin Warbecke 743.49 Her beauty and amiable prefence Honourably vsed by K. Henry the feuenth the seuenth . 744.51 Katharine or Katherine of Spaine daughter of Ferdinan-do and Ifabella, alias Elizabeth, King and Queene of Spaine, first wife to K. Henry the cight. 745.60. 785.136 Her speech about the death of the yong Earle of Warwicke in King Henry the feuenth his dates Shee arriveth at Plimmouth 746.62 Her marriage, Coronation, diuorce, decease and buriall 784.136 Her commendation delivered by her husband King Henry

the eight

Her speech to the King her

husband in open Court 767

She departeth the Court, ibid.

187.14 He wore alwaies the Lawrell garland to couer his bald-188.14 Easie to bee reconciled voto His moderate carriage. ibid. His fortunate fuccession in ons. His barrels

wedded to King Henry the Beheaded for Adultery 780 ibid After condemnation the protesteth to her Confessor, her vnguiltinesse of the Crime for which thee died 780 Her parentage, marriage, be-IIa heading and buriall. 735 Katharine or Katherine Parre the 6. of wife K. Henry the eighr 780.113. 785.141 Her Parentage Thrice married ibid Her death In danger to be apprehended & committed to the Tower for supposed herefie. 781 Her life laid for 780 112 Fallen ficke, vifited by King Henry the eight her husband Katharine or Katherine Durcheffe of Suffolke, with her husband Richard Bartue fly-

Called Princesse Dowager.

eth the Land 827.37.89 Her descent ibid X No fauourer of Popish Religion itid. Her dangerous escapes, arsiuall and trauel beyond Seas 827.00 Her abode and her husbands in Paland in Poland 827.95 atrington, alias Carton Efquier, defendant, in Combat vanquished, dieth fran-

His raign tike 598.44 Lord Keepers Letter to Rober Kennulph king of Mercia Denereux Earle of Effex.877 His descent, raigne and buriali Kenelme King of Mercia, Mur-Kenwulfe Monarch of the Engdred by the meanes of Quenlifhmen drid his fifter His Armes and his Coine, How his corps was found, 308 His vertues His body afterwards transla-

Hee taketh prisoner Prenne Kenelwarth Caftle befreged and king of Kent Hee fetteth him free yeelded. emuniph king of the Eastyeelded. Semed killeth Ofred his Sour-Angleshis raigne. 311,14 raigne, and is King of Nor-Robert Ket his commotion and shumberland 304.17 Kenred Wulfheres fonne King Rebellion in Norffolke 807 Hee and his Rebels put to flight 808.44 of the Mercians, and Monarch of England, became a

His raigne and death. Apprehended Hee with his brother Williams Kenred Monarch of the Eng-Ker hanged, one wpon Wilifhmen, his Armes, ibidem. mundham high Steeple: the other vpon Normich Castle, Refigneth vp his regal crown for a Monkes Coule 342.2 in Chaines 809.47
Henry Earle of Kildare digith Kenrich King of the Weft-Saxof griefe, for the death of his

His raigne and iffue, ibidens Kenricke founc of Cushred flain Kilkenny in Ireland, 2 City late crected. 520.47 Kimbeline. See Cunobeline Kenricke sonne of Cherdicke, Kineburge wife to King Alfrith
an Abbesse 201.12 Monarch of the Englishmer Kineburge wife to King Ofwald His Armes His raigne and Issue. ibidem. Kent divided into Parishes.

a Nun

founded.

boue 600. yeeres.

294.7 Kent kingdome The Circuit of it. The beginning, continuance, and end thereof. 295.17 Kent inuaded during the Anar-

Hard at worke with her maichie of 6, yeeres. 294.10 Three Kingrat once vifit King Kent divided into factions 2- Edward the third 584.127 Edward the third 584.127 The Kings-enill cured by king bout Queene Maries mar-770.80 Katharine or Katherine Howard riage with K. Philip the 2.of Edward the Confessor and Spaine Kentish Britaines most Civil his fucceffors Kingils King of the West-Sax-167-4 Foure Kentifb kings refift Ca-

Kenwald King of the West Sax-

The first Christian King of the 286.9 West-Saxons His raigne and issue. Kentish mens policy against ibid ibid King William Conquerour. King fron upon Thames, the or-416.7 dinary place for Coronation Kentishmen true to K. Stephen, of Saxon Kings in his captiuity 450,29 Kentish Rebels under the conor Saxon Kings 368.&c.

Kinfale held by the Spaniards.

duct of Wat Tiler, and Inche 875.315 Knightes 400, at one time Straw embautell on Blackemade by King Edward the 965.19 Their outrages about Lonthird 583. 122
Twelu poore Knights at Windfor inftituted. 783.134
Sir Robert Knolles fent into Kentish Rebels led by Jacke Cade 664.50 France with an Armie. 587. Kentish commotions in time of Anarchie, doe much hurt a-Accused by Sir John Meller bout Landan 681.51 worsh

587.240 A fitte Parallell to Bertram de

Ante Parallell to Derivato de Glefquin Sidem 146 A brave Captaine 620.49 He built Rochefter Stonebridge Driven out of his Kingdome, VVon to Christianity, 298.8 Restored to his kingdome. Iohn Knez a hote Minister, &c ouerheady reformer in Seot-His raigne and death. ibidem Kenwin king of the VVett-834.15 Kyrton in Denensimre a Bishops Saxons A fcourge of the Britaines,

See, annexed to Excepter. 368,6 His raign, ibidem Kenulph of Mercia taketh E-thelbers Pren prisoner, 295.

Veene Laberius flaine by Kenwalph king of West-Saxons the Britaines his descent and victories. 186.6 biense vnder Gouernor of Gaula byrinth at woldstocke built by Henry the second for Ro. Camond. Jamend 471.11. acedemonians flate from Ly-207,12 curgus to Alexander the Great, of what continuance

Robert de Lacey Constable of Chefter, his fidelity, and va-lorous feruice at Caftle Rock Andeley Taken prisoner.

491.32 ibidem Robers Lacey furprifed in Chi-Walter and Hugh Lacey the fon of Hugh, flie out of Ireland, into France, and are reconciled againe to King Ishn,

Lelianus Lieutenant Generall in Britaine, murdered.452.8 Arl. Letus, one that conspired Commedus his death 226.2 Latus 2 traitor to Septemus Senerus put to the Iworde

228. Laity of England Seeke to disfeize the Clergy of their te**poralties** poralties 600.55 anfranke Archbishoppe of two Fosterbrethren, flaine Canterbury 418.21 Gouernor of England whiles William Conquerour was in Normandy 4:035 tephen Langton commended by Pope Innacentius to bee Archbishoppe of Canterbury a vertuous Lady 337.8 Kinefwith, King Offa his wife 496.27 Elected and confectated at

2 Nun 301.12* Kings Colledge in Cambridge Viterbium ibidem He with others ifollicite the 685.82 Pope for deposition of King Kingdomes period not much a-Hee arriveth in England with 178 Kings become Monkes 305 other exiled persons,501.51 A very English Pope 501.52

thority 504.57 Simon Langton elect Archbishoppe of Torke made by the Pope incapable of Episcopal dignity 504-57 Hugh Latimer Bishop of Worcefter burnt in Oxford. 834.66 Lauatra, Bowes under Stanemer in Richmondshire. 218.4. Saint Laurence broiled on a Gredyron 242,3 Laurence Archbishop of Canterbury 294.6 English lawes abroged by Wil-418.10 Icam Conqueror Lawes for the English written in the Norman tongue.416. Lawyers fent for to make trea-Rob, Laund knighted and en-dowed with lands by king

Richard the fecond 596,25 Les river divided and made nauigable by King Elfred. Learned and lewde.i.wicked 619.42 Learning by heart 168.8
Thomas Lee a Captaine executed for words. 880,344 municate Doctor Lee Bishoppe of Che fter, Conentree and Lichfield. The Lightning Legion of the Christians. 221.4 Legionary Souldiers called Milites grauis armatura.187 Their Armour. Teiden Caftle in Helland begun

foner by the Normans.413 by Hengift 296.11 Leides Castle wonne by King Bound to hard conditions, Edward the second 559.36 The Captaine and all within put to thamefull death. 559 He entreth Normandy with an Army 439-38 Lewis Daulphin of France, pre-Leids Castle in Scotland won pareth for the Crowne of 448.16 England 505.59
He entreth London, and be-Earle of Lannox Regent of Scotland traiteroufly murfloweth offices of State.ibid. dered Leo King of Armenia bounti-fully fent away by King Richard the fecond. 600. Hee besiegeth Dosser Castie His followers and abetters Pope Lee the tenth his Bull pronounced euery Sunday and holyday accurft and exfent vnto King Henry the communicate - 509.4 eighth 759.41 Leofricke Earle of Cheffer.399 Lewis Daulphin of France gaineth Hertford Cattle 509.4 Hee ftuffeth many Cattles in Freeth Conentree of Impositi-England with French Garri-

ons 400,15 13. King of East-Angles. Lewisians that were English. returne to their true obedi-Leolin alias Llewelin Prince of Lewis goeth into France, and looleth many English mens Wales doth homage to King Edward the elder 361.7 Lecline or Llewelin Prince of affections. His Army of French raskals. Wales his speech of King Henry the third his Almes-Hee and his followers accurdeedes 599-42 Hee doth voluntary homage fed a fecond time by VValto the king of England, 523 His outrage and excommunication

510.6 Lewifians defeited 510,7 Lewis the faire why fo called. 516.28 ihidem Leolin of Llewelin ap Gruffith, Lewis absolued, and driven out of England 510.8 He had no money at his deleader of the Welfh discomfired Prince Edward and the

509.5

Lewis King of France denieth restitution of Normandy, &c. 513.17 He inuadeth Poiston and Xain-

toing against King Henry the 513,17 Taking the Croffe, and warring vpon the Albigenfes at Aninion, was croffed by fundry plagues 514 21 Leglin or Liewelin Prince of Corris the French King offereth Wales maketh hispeace with faire voto King Henry the King Edward the first vpon third, but is not accepted. what conditions 544-11 His head fet vpon London-525.63 moft Christian, just and vali-544-14 Lealin or Llewelin Bren and his two fonnes taken prifoners.

526.65 558.28 Leonard Dacres of Harlefey gi-Of a tender conscience, 530, ueth battell to Henry Lord King Lewis of France dieth at the fiege of Tunis 541.2 Flieth toward Scetland ibidem Leoneue supposed daughter of King Ethelstan, wife to Rein-Lewis King of France dealeth with Garter King at Armes, burne Earle of Warwicke.205 about peace with King Edward the fourth 687.92 Don Lewis Gouernour of the Leopold or Limpold, Archduke Low Countries, defireth to of Offrich, his cause of mahaue the Netherlanders ba-

lice to King Richard the first. nished out of England, 854. 477.42 The reason of his deteining Lewis the 12. King of France King Richard shid.43 Punished grieuously for his 1b:d.43 marrieth the Lady Mary K.
Henry the eight his lifter. wrongs done to King Ri-chard the first 478.41 756.21 Dieth vpon an hurt excom-Lewis of Banaria Emperor, re-479.52 uoketh the Vicarihip of the Empire, granted to Edward pidas ruleth Africa 188.3 the third King of England,

Lether tanned, ferueth for Ar-574.66 Lewis of Luxenburgh King of 720.13 Sir Richard Leuison his good Bohemia, his Apotherm of the English, at the battel of Crefferuice at Sea about Kin 875.316 abn Lowie reformer of the 578.92 His high refolution & death. British history 164 19 Lewis king of France taken pri-

Lewis a Physician employed about the marriage of Henry Earle of Richmont, and the Lady Elizabeth [719.29] Lewis battel 537.101 Lhogger or Lhoegrie what part of Britaine 323.13 Vader the Archbishoppe of London 206. 18 Liberties granted by K. Henry 435,4

ich field why fo called 206.19 Lichfields armes ibidem.255.12 Another Golgotha Liebfield Cathedrall Church founded 338.7 Licinius Prifeus Lieutenant of Britaine. 219.6 Liciniu Cafar to Constantine 2 . 9.2 His viurpation of fourraign-

Library in Conftantinople. 261

Their Coines ikidena He persecuteth the Christians. put to death 260,7 John Lidgate Monke of Bury deniseth speeches gratula-tory at King Honry the fixth his wives entrance into Lon-661.27

Leith in Scotland won & Spoiled by the English...783.125. Light forbidden by William Conquerour called Courfew restored by his sonne King Henry.

parture giuen for compositi- Lightning doing much harme.

Lille a faithfull feruant to Edwin King of Northweber-Land Limoges in Limofin wonne by force, burnt and put to the fword 587.142 Linne for faithfull feruice enfranchised largely and graced by King Iohn, 505.59 Iohn Lincolne executed for ill May-dayes worke. 757,28 Lincolneskine Commons rise Lincolne befreged by King Ste-

ant Prince 525.64 Lincolne neuer entred by King,
Magnanimous & bounteous, before King Stephen 452.40 before King Stephen 452.40 Lionel Dake of Clarence borne. Why fo entituled, 589.658 His marriages & Iffue ibidens. Sir William de Lifle Knight par-533.86 doned

L iteratorum Iuramentum what oath \$13.10 Iohn Littiffar a Dier in Norwich faled himfelfe King of the Commons 595.20 Hanged drawne and headed as an Arch-Rebell, 596.27 Liningus Elstan Archbishop of Lyningus Bishoppe of Winchefter 399.5 Locusta a woman skilfull in 196.22 poisoning 196.22 odowicke alias Lewis King of France, caffeth the Popes Bull into the fire 453.43 He inuadeth Normady, because his daughter Margaret was not crowned with her hufhand 460, 28 Befiegeth Vermile in person, & raiseth his fiege for feare of King Henry the fecond. 465

Lodonicus Perez Duke of Medina Sidonia, Generall of the Army in the inuincible Armado of Spaine .858.192 In difgrace at home for his ill fucceffe 862,218 Lolards why fo tearmed, 488.

Lolards, i. Wielinists encrease, & by law to bee burned as heretikes 614.23 Lolling Vrbicus Lieutenant in Reitaine Surnamed Britanicus, 220,3 His Coine or portraiture, London a famous City in Nero

the Emperour his daies. 198. Recourred from the Danes, and restored to Liberty.

Much defaced by fire. 375.5 Befieged by Smaine, or Sueno King of the Danes 375.5 The beauty thereof from

Ludgare westward. ibidem Besieged by Swaine King of Denmarke 378.27 Submitteth to the Danes. 279

Faithfull to K. Ethelred, 379 True to Edmod iron lide. 381.1 Befieged by K. Canute. 381.2 Londoners fue to Mand the Empresse, for easement of hardlawes,& that king Edwards lawes might bee reuiued, and in force, 451.22 Londoners conspire against THE TABLE.

Maud the Empresse.451.33 725.58 London interdicted by the Pope Slaine at Stoke-field 733-22 Lucius a Britaine first Christian for difloyalty to king Iohn. 504.58 King in the world Londoners in diffrace with King Richard the fecond, 605.80 They loofe their liberties and proper gouernment, ibidem They deny him loane of one thousand pounds, ibidens all London failing with the fairer winde, receiveth king Edward the fourth againe. 683

Landon Armories augmented with the weapon in the Dexter Canton, and whereupon. Landoners large contributions

toking Henry the feuenth, for his warres in France.736 London belieged by William
Marshall Earle of Pembroch

Londoners Engroffe Corne in time of Dearth 534.92 London vpon her guard 535.93 Ioineth with the Barons to redreffe the state of the kingdome

They villanously abuse the Queen,king Henry the third his wife. his wife. 537.98 London Charters, feifed inco. k. Henry the third his hands 528,102 Taken by the Earle of Glones

fter 539.104 London fortified against Wist 820.40 Lord Major of London, and Citizens fworne to Lady Iane Grey. 815.3 Doctor Longland Bishoppe of

conscience of Henry the 8. about marriage with Kathe. rine of Spaine 765.65.767 Iohn Long ftrother Prious of St. Iohns, beheaded at Towks-

Loof-coate fielde at Stanford Rodericke Lopez a Physician. hired to poison Queene Elizaheth Found guilty, and at Tiburne with his conforts executed

Lothair viurpeth the Kingdom ofKeer 294.9 Slaine Hisraigne and sepulture. ibid. Lothbrooke, alias Letherbreech a noble Dane

a noble Dane 357.14 Murdered by Berricke King Edmunds Faulconer 388.7 A Loue-day folemnely celebrathe Emperour ted betweene the Torkifts and Lancastrians 668.69 Philip Louell King Henry the third his Treasurer reconci-

led vnto him. He with many other Officers of the Exchequer remooned by the Barons for abuses. Lord Lowell rebelleth against

Mahomet his doctrine, his be-King Henry the feuenth Louers, a Cafile in Normandy

Francis Lord Vicount Lonell 2 fauorite of King Richard the third, taketh Sanctuary.

205 222. 6 Apostie to the Basarians Lucius Lener Maur King of Britaine, the fame. 222.6

His raigne and place of buri-Dame Elizabeth Lucy instiga-222.11 ted to clame marriage of K. Edward the fourth 677.24 Luderan King of the Mercians

His raigne and death this udlow Caffle wonne by King Stephen 448.16 wallow the Rendez-yous of the Torkifts 668.73 Spoiled to the bare walles for

harbouring the Torkifts. 669.75 Luke Archbishop of Dublin, true friend to Hubert de Burgh in his troubles 517

LL. Lumleis a noble family whence descended 692. 151 Whence descended to the cold name of 263.6 Lupicinus, Deputy in Britain

Martin Luther outlawed by Charles the fifth Emperous Lutherans against King Henry the 8. his denorfe Junning Nunnery built, 335

M

Octor Longland Bishoppe of Lincolne, first toucheth the Method rebellion in defence of the Romijh Reli-854.151 Slaine by Sir Warham Saint-Leger. 874-309 Macrianus, and his two fonnes the fixth 730-13

Mants in Mains yeeldeth to elected Emperous by the Souldiere Subdued and flaine. 245 I ibid Earle of March in France be-Macrinus with Martial, murder Antonine Caracella. Appealed of treason, and challenged to Combate, 525 222.7 Is elected Emperour. 233,2 Put to death 233. 5 ibid.

His raigne ina. Mary Magdalen a counterfeit, Unip. Marcellus a man of great vertues immured to death 512.13 Lieutenant in Britaine. 224.4 Magike highly honoured a-Marcus Lieutenant in Britain mong the Britanes 168.8 elected Emperour by the Magna Charta confirmed and Armies there established Murthered. Procureth King Heary the 3. Marcus Aurelius the Emperor mony from his Subjects his parentage, and honoura-521.82 bletitles Magnetius murdereth Conftans

Why called Taporus Hee vsurpeth the Empire-Saint Margaret King Mal-colmer wife, dieth of griefe for her husbands death. 430 His Coine. He killeth himfelfe. Magnus an Anchorite, his Épitaph 458.56 Magnus King of Norway meaneth to inuade England,

ginning and rifing. 322 Hisherefies His death A Maiden , embaffadour to George Duke of Clarence.

680 46 King of Majorica flaine at the battell of (refer. 579.100 | Doctor Makarell a Monke, author of an inturrection in Lincolnsbire Nameth himfelfe Captaine Cobler

Her quality Queen Margaret, wife to king Henry the fixth, obtaineth Malcolme Can More king of Scots weddeth Margares lifter to Edgar Esheling 417 Her victory at Saint Albans, where shee recourresh the He invadeth England 427.44 He with his fonne Prince Ed-Her parentage Taken prisoner out of a Reli-

wardslaine 430.21.23 Malgerius Archbishop of Roan degraded by William Conquerour 444.62 Malgo Canous ot Conamu king of the Britans, person, and sinnefull life.

Malmesbury Abbey founded 298.8. 365.13 Malmesbury Caftle befreged by king Stephen Mammaa mother of Alexander Senerus 2 good woman

the person of king Edwara

the English vpon conditions

traieth king Henry the third

See more in Aurelina.

Tttttt 2

kept streightly in Worcester Murdred with hir fonne ibid, Lady Magaret fifter to James Geffery de Mandeuil, keeper the third king of Scots, prothe Tower of Landon under

mifed in marriage to Prince Mande the Empresse 450 Edward, sonne of king Henrie the fixth 29 Surrendreth it to king*Stephen* rie the fixth 675.10 Margaret Dutchesse of Burgun Mandubrace or Mandrubace, 2 die an implacable effemie to king Henry the feuenth, 734 Prince of the Trunbantes

For what cause. For what cause, 737-33 Margaret Countesse of Salif-Craueth Int. Cafars affiftance bury the onely Daughter of George Duke of Clarence, Manethon the Historian 165 Manlius Valens Encountreth

779.103.689.107 Beheaded.689. 780.107.109 the Britanes with ill fucceffe Margaret Countelle of Richmund fole-Heire to Iohn D. Sir John Manfell, a discreet of Somerfet 718.26
Margaret Counteffe of Oxford Counfellor, 530.78
Mantell executed in Queene Elizabeths daies, for affuming

Margares daughter of Renate

victory at the battell of

king out of the hands of the

gious house, and ransomed

by her father duke Rainer

672.99. 685.82 Shee with Prince Edward her

fonne hindred by tempest

for comming into England

Shee landeth at Weimouth, and

Cerne Abbey 683.67 Taken foorth of Sanctuary &

withdraweth het felfe to

the fixth

Wakefield

alias Reiner king of Simile

&c. married to king Henry

601.37

671.89

672.42

684.74

not permitted to come to her husband 686 Put to shift for her living

Margaret eldeft daughter of K. Henry the fewenth contra-cted to I mes the fourth K. of Scots of Scots 747.64
Accompanied roially into
Scotland 747.65
Maried to king James the 4. in Edenborough 748.65 The happy effects and confe-

quence of this marriage Her two marriages and iffue Margaret daughter of Archi-

bald Dowglasse, espoused vnto Mathew Earle of Lenihidem nox Margaret daughter to Edward 223.82 His death, age and praise, 224 the Outlaw, fole heise to the Saxon Monarchie, married Vnhappy in his fonne, ibid. to Malcolme Can More king of Scotland; whence K. James of Great Britaine is lineally descended 384 21
Margares daughter of William

Conquerous by his wife Margaret, the daughter of Le-Manda Maude 426.77 Married Priests placed by King wie the yonger K. of France wife to King Henry the yon-Edwy in Malmesbury and ger of England, remaried to Glastenbury. 368.2 Bela King of Hungary 470 Marriages three in one day, tending all to alter the fuc-

Margares, second wife to king cession of the Crowne. 812. Edward the first, her death and burist! Margaret, daughter to king Edward the fift, her marriage and iffue.

with Katharine of Spaine, whether lawfull or no? debated in Court by Lawyers

THE TABLE.

Saint Mary Oterse in Deuonfhire founded 401.25 counterfeite, immured to death 512.13 Marie daughter of King Stephen, Abbesse of Rumseynunnery in Hamplbire 454-55 Became a wife divorced, returneth to her Monastery, her child Mary daughter to King Edward the first, made a Nun. Maria de Padilla concubine to Peter king of Castile, pra-Shee perfecuteth Queene Rigardeto death thee hecommeth King Peters wife, 585.172 Her Islue ilidem.132 Mary younger daughter of K. Henry the feuenth, affured by Contract vnto Charles King of Spains 750.71
May third daughter of King
Henry the feuenth, married
to Lewis the 12. K. of France and to Charles Brandon D. of Suffolke. 4752.77.756.21 She falleth in love with Charls Duke of Suffolke 757.28 Marie Queene of Scots borne. 782,122 Crowned 782.122 Demanded by King Henry 8. Chofen Emperour 2.

Markader Captaine of the Bra in marriage with Prince Ed-782.122 ward Conucied into France to bee married ento the Daulphin Genrdon 481.69 Sit Griffin Markham condem-805.17 Maried vnto the Prince Daulphin 834-12. Her claime to the English Crown ibidems
Taken prisoner by her owne fubiects, and forced to refigne her regall gouerne-ment and to flie 841.60 By contrary winds driven to land in England. 841.61 Her vnforsunate end at Fo-Vanquished by Offs 345.8 Marshals 5 Earles of Pembrock theringlesy Cattle 857.178 Her body enterred at Peterborough 847.178 Marie Queene mother and Regent of Scotland, dieth of grief & Melancholie,835,23 Queene Marie of England her birth, marriage with King Philip the 2. of Spaine, her Epitaph death. His loyalty and prudent care Her Armes, Broad-Seale and Coine Shee remoueth to Keningall in Norffolke 815-3 Her letters to the Councell, and their answere. 806.3.4 She remoueth to Freming be Caffle William Marfball Agent for King Iohn, created Earle of Pembrocke 485.5 Her answere to Suffolke men, requiring her promife to be performed Prochimed Queene of Eng-Land in Buckinghamsbire, and elfewhere 816.9 Proclaimed Queene in Lon-817.10 Proclaimed in Cambridge by John Duke of Northumber 817.11 232.7 Martian a British professor, Denoted to Popifh Religion, 81718 Shee meeteth with King Phi-824.70

Mariage commended between

Prince Edward and Queene

Mary of Scotland. 782.121

couenants

reunion

doctrine

Guardian of King Henry the

third his person, and Vice-

Regent; of the Kingdome.

Marria the concubine of Com-

modes the Emperour. 224.2 Fauourable to the Christians

Martials Epigrams fent into

Martial murdereth Caracalla,

Martilet 2 Gentleman Nauar-

rois, foyled in Combat, af-

509.3

234.2

204.7

406.10

Her marriage concluded with King Philip vpon what 598.44 Martinus Deputy in Britaine Married to King Philip. 823. Seabberh himfelfe Crowned Queene 817.18 Saint Martins in Canterbury an Her Oration in Guild-hall in ancient Church built by Christian Romans, 330.8 819.28 Reftoreth Ecclefiafficall liaint Martins le grand in London printledged 425.65
Pope Marsin the fifth how eleded 6:0.25 uings affumed to the crown Her worthy Apophthegme 826.85 Martyrs how many fuffered Thoght to be conceived with death in Queen Maries raign. 826.86 827,96 Martyrs in England before Martin Luthers time 779. Reported to bee delivered of

child 818.101 Her melancholy for the loffe Maffacre of the French Proteof Calair and other peeces in France 830.117 Her faying for the loffe of Car flants in Paris 836.36
Maftelzeriss behesdeth his brother Gildus the Traitor. Lair ihidam Shee fickned of a burning feauer, and dieth ibidem, 118 Hee is beheaded himfelfe, Her body enterred without Mathew Earle of Boloigne a-gainst king Henry the second in the behalfe of the young monument or remembrance

Heracls in favour of the Ro-King his fonne mish Religion repealed. Mathew Paris honoured by 832.5 Marimu proclaimeth himfelfe King Henry the third, 534 Emperour 241-4 Mathew Earle of Lenex clai-Villiam de Marifeo fendeth en to murder King Henry the meth to bee Lord Gouer-nour of Scotland 282,122 third Hee and his complices pu ibiden 524-59 Falleth from Queen mother. Marrieth Lady Margaret King Marine the Roman killed by a Cimbrian,i, a Galle 161.

Henry the eighth his fifters Marine a British King 217-3 daughter 782.434 Proclaimed Traitor to the fizze of Scotland 782.225 Mand wife of William Conquebanters Rutters 480.62 How he executed Bertram de rour her death and huriall Mande daughter to Mary king

ned of high Treason, repri-Stephens daughter, wedded to Henry Duke of Loreine. Marlborough Statutes enacted Maud daughter to King Henry 539-105 Marle, for manuring of ground the fecond, married to Hen-7 furnamed the Lion, Duke Marmodius a Welfh King, 344

of Saxony, her Iffue, 470. Mand the wife of King Henry Hee breaketh downe Offices Ditch, or Claudh Offa. 345. the first, before a Votarie. 442.60.435 Her descent, vertues, death & buria!!

buriall 442.60.443.63 Her death and commendatio die fucceffiuely iffueleffe. 528 Mand King Herry the first his Villiam Marshal Earle of Pemdaughter, espoused to Hen-ry the sourth, Emperour. 438. brecke his piety and wildom 511.10 His death, iffue,monument &

Married to him at Menta, ibidem.22 Whence descended 352,5. for King and Country, 508. Mand the Empresse vpon the His freech to the Lords for 2 509.2

Emperors death, ordained Heire apparant (for want of King Henry the furth his heires Males) of the Crown of England 441.48
Mand the Empresse of good repute and efteem 441.48 Het Islue 443 63 Being wedded to Geffrey Platagener shee departeth from

him 441 53 Reconciled againe ibidem Shee bare him a fonne-named Henry Henry 441.53 She arrives in England against King Stephen 448.18.19 Her politicke excuse to 2uoide danger 448.20
Maud and her brother befieged in Wallingford Caftle,

terwards drawen and han- ; Mand the Empresse absolute Gouerneffe of England,450

Her Broad Scale Her Broad Seale 451.29 Shee had the regall Crowne of England delivered to her, ibidem, 20 Received with flare into London ibiden. Carried in a Coffin as a dead Corps Corps 452,36
Besieged in Oxfordibidem.38
Her shift to escape out of Ox-

ford voto Walling ford Caffic. ihiden Shee goeth into Normandy to her husband 452.40 Her Epitaph 470 IOI Mand a naturall daughter of King Henry the first, Coun-443.73 Her Mite Drowned in the fea with her brechren Mande a second base daughter ofKing Henry the first, her Mande Abbesse of Quedlingburg 355,12

Mande the wife of K. Stephen

Her descent, death and buriall 454.50 Mande daughter of K.Stephen, her death and buriall ibidem Iohn Mandler, alias Mandlen, a counterfeit King Richard 2.

fueth for her husbands liber-

614.14 Drawne, hanged and quartered at London 614.16 Maundy Thursdayes folemnity inflireted first by King Edward the third, in his yeere of Inbilee e84.126 Manne taken and facked by King John 484.3 Saint Maurice his banner, 364.

Maurice Firz Thomas flain at the battell of Stoke. 733.22 Richard de Saint Maurice 2 deformed elfe, challengeth and obraineththe wife of Thomas the great Earle of Lancafter

Maxentine on viurner and Ramulas his fonne their Coines 259-3

He truffeth to Sorcerers 260,5 His ouerthrow, and the memoriall thereof Maximianu confort in the Empire with Disclesian.

He refigneth it in a madmood 256.18 Hee hangeth himfelfe. 556.

Maximianus Emperour, and Romalus his Cafar their Coines 259.23 Put to death by Constantius. 259.3 Maximilian Emperour ferueth

under King Henry the eight, wearing the Croffe of Saint George, and the Rofe King Henries badge 754.8 Махітіни Emperor His rifing wppe of nothing. His Giant-like flature.236.1 237-7 Hee perfecuteth Christians. 336.2 His fundry names and titles.

His death attempted, 236.4

ihidem

THE TABLE.

His intemperate Diet. 237,7. | Mildred or Mildrith Abbeffe of Hee and his fonne flaine. Their Coines 227.6 226 Maximinas the Emperour his age and raigne 237.7 Cuthbert Maine in Cornwal diffwadeth fubiccts from their obedience to Queene Eli-652.145 Meares prohibited Means straitely befreged by K. Henry the fixth, and delinered vpon hard conditions, Medes come from Madai. 162.6. Medeshamsteed, now Peterborough Meduinus de Belga, i. of Welles a learned Divine. 206. 18 ibidem.19 Meeting of two Kings, Lewis of France, and Edward the fourth of England, in where manner at Picquigni.688.98, Robert Mallent fideth with king Stephen His description 499.29 At Melun a treaty of peace between Charles the French King, and King Henry the 5,

629.58 Melan befieged and affaulted, Rendered vpon composition, 644.57 Bernardine Mendoza the Spa-

nish Ambassador in England practifeth to bring in a forraine Army, and to alter Religion 846.91.856.169 Sir Iohn Mensterworth 2 Train tor put to death 587,140 Mente fet on fire 469.90 Mercian Kingdome the circuit thereof Merkham Lord Chiefe Infriciar left his office rather th en affent to the judgement of Burdet, beheaded for a word misconstrued 705,56

Morlin a Wizard His bookes inhibited Whether begotten of an Incubus or no His propheties verefied in K His propheties of the Moulde warpe, Dragon and Wolfe, 617.33

Sir Gilliam Mericke executed 880.344 Merton Field won by the Danes 355.10 Mercon Abbey in Surrey. 522

Merson Statutes why so called. Meffuling a monfter of the fcemail fexe 100.10 Messana in Sicilie the Rendez uow of King Richard the first, and King Philip of

Menian Islands, See Hebrides. Mich Abbey at Abington built first, and repaired by whom. Michael de la Pole made Earle of Suffolke 600.56 Slaine at the battell of Agins 623.61

Where enterred, Michelneffe Monastery founded the fifth vpon composition. Middleham Colledge founded 726.60

Middleton Abbey founded. 362.17

from King Edward the 4. & Minfer Minster 332. 394.8 Miles 2 skilfull Gunner in Kets Campe Miletus Bishop of London. 301

cended Montachieraifed by King Ed-wardthethird to bee Earle AMilners man hanged for his Master, by Sir Anthony King-

Mile alias Miles high Constable to King Stephen revolveth from him 447.12 Created Earle of Hereford maintaineth the Empresse at

his owne charges 451-34 Minster Abbey in Kent foun ded Mintage allowed in ditters Mirabeau wonne by Arthur, & recovered by King Iohn vncle

Missishess Tutor and Counfellor to Gordianus the third, dieth, Misopogen or Antiochensis, an inucchine of Intianus Apo-

Stata 266. Mifoxenie, or hatred to ftrangers, 2 quality appropriate to English, euen of old. 522. Medewine an holy Lady in Ire. land 349.20 Adam Malins Bishoppe of Chi-

chefter, Lord Pring Scale, murdered by the procure-ment of Richard Duke of Torke 663.46 Nucholas de Molie giueth the King of Newarre an ouer-\$27.60 Mollo inuadeth Kent, and is burne to death. 294,10. Mona is Anglesey
Invaded 197.7.

Conquered Brought vnder fubication by Iulius Agricola 211.11 Monarchies periods not much about fine hundred yeeres Monarches fucceffinely ingreat

21 Euesham ibid. Simon de Montford weddeth E-Britain in the Romans time. leaner widow of Will, Mar-183.8cc Monasteries dissolued causeth King Henry the eighth to-

103 Hugh de Moncado a commander in the Insincible Armathird doflaine 862.211 Monks live prophanely 430.19 pel ftrangers · 535-92 They contemne the Popes ex-Monkes of Banger lived by the iabour of their owne handes. communication. 538.102 Sir Simon Montford beheaded

Maffacred by Ethelfride the Wilde Monke Cheffer ibidem. racy 739-37 Simon Monfort falleth at de-421.44 Monks of Canterbury in King Johns time, feedmen of Englands troubles, 493-31. Monkish flanders of King John. 505.62 Monopolies by Proclamation

prohibited. 884,6 Monfieur Valois Duke of Auion commeth into England about marriage with Queen ficged Elizabeth Chosen Protector of the Low Countries ibid 162 He dieth penitent ibid 163 Monfireau towne and Caftle furrendred to King Henry

Mont Alban assaulted by king Iehn, and wonne 495-34
Marquesse Montacnie reuolteth

Marquesse Montacnie reuolteth

Marquesse Montacnie reuolteth

cleaueth to King Henry the 6 Sir Thomas More beheaded Vic. Montacnte whence def-More Maiorum what it was

226.26 Morgan a naturall fonne of K. Henry the fecond 471.113 He refuseth the Bishopricke of Salisbury for what defert. William Montacute Earle of Saof Durham rather then hee will renounce his father. 471 lisbury taken prisoner by the French

780.111

King of Man his death, 575. 573.5 Morins yeeld obedience to Ca-Sar Whothey were, Thomas Monta-ute Earle of In the margin.

Morley in Bretaigns Armerica

wonne by the English, 760 Salisbury his valiant feruice in France Slaine in Orleance 651.5

Sir Henry Montague Recorder Mortality & Murraine valuer of London, his pithy and gra-tulatory speech in the name of the City vnto King James fally throughout the world Mortality in England 558.27 Hugh Mortimer rebellioufly King of Great Britaine &c.

Mont-forts Castle betraied to fortifieth against king Hen-7 the second. 456.4. the French 491.32 Mont-forts Family in France. lieutenant of Ireland, flaine whence descended 907.70 Mont-forts in Tuskane whence by Obrin. 608,10c Rogers, the Mortimers, appredescended hended and committed to Guy Mons-fort excommunicat, the Tower of London, 559. Hee murdreth Henry of Al-

Roger Mortimer the younger maine, fonne to Richard king escapeth out of the Tower of Romans into France. Taken and flaine 561.54 Roger Mortimer growne ouer-Henry de Montfort flaine. 507 familiar with Queene Ifabel John de Mont-fert claimeth the

Edmond Mortimer Earle of Dutchy of Bretaigne. 573. March true heire to the Crowne of England, after Hee returnes into his Dutchy King Richard the second. of Bretaigne with the sides of the English 594.12.13 Robert de Mont-fors vanqui-616.29

His Birth-night noted for a flrange prodigie ibid. Entituled to the Crowne of fheth Henry d'Effex in Combate, 456.8 Simon Montfors Earle of Leice-England 642.8 His name vied by Iacke Cade fer his parentage and Iffue

664.52.53 Taken prisoner by Owen Glen-Hee with Henry his fon flaine 616.27. Morsimers croffe battel 672. Roger Mortimer with other

leaner Widow of West, Mar-hall Earle of Kent \$23.58 imon Montfort Earle of Leice-fter another Sinon to the Lords make head against Simon Montfort and the Re-Gascoignes 520.80 Hee with other Barons com-Roger Mortimer of Wigmore oserruleth all and worketh bine against King Henry the the deposition of King Edward the second 564.76 Hee keepeth the Queene in a. They feeke to exclude and ex-

dultery 566.5 Roger Mortimer with Geffrey his fonne and others, furprifed by King Edward the for Perkin Warbecks confpithird and fent to the Tower of London 568.21 How he was furprifed at No. bate with the Earle of Glatingham Mortimers hole. ibid.22 chid

538.102 Slaine at Eucsbam . 538.103 Roger Mersimer condemned in Simon Montfort the yo nger Parliament at Westminster liueth in exile. 538.104 vpon what causes ibid,23 Hugh Montgomery Hanged ignominiously at Ticruelly mangleth the Welfb and is burne gallowes called the killed in the eie. 431.20 Montforel in Leicestershire be-Fines 568.22 carntes of Marsmaine first ena-Acd S43. 10

Iohn Morton Bilhop of Elicens Morca: Earle of Cheffer relea-

fed out of prison 427.1 Morear and Edwin brethren of prisoned in the Tower, for not confenting to disherite Queene Egitha affect the Crowne of England 407-44 King Edward the fourth his Iffue His place of birth and rifing ibid. Earle Morear imprisoned wrongfully, released 423.55

Mordred incountreth K. Ar-His release sued for by the vthur, is flaine. niucrity of Oxford. 713.8 Released out of the Tower,& committed to the keeping

of Henry Duke of Bucking 71410 716.22 His Story A fast friend vnto the Lanca-Hrians 716.23 Woodd ynto King Edward the fourth his fide, Hee first devised the vnion of Yorke and Lancaster, ibid. Iohn Morton Bishop of Ely made Archbishop of Can-terbury, Lord Chancellour and Cardinall 716 23 His wildome and deepe pollicy ihid a Conference betweene him & Henry Duke of Buckingham 717.24.25 &c. He perfwadeth the Duke to take vpon him the Crowne He escapeth from Brecknocke difguifed and faileth into Flaunders. 718.23 Made of the Priny counfell 729.10 Nicholas Morton a Popish priest aduanceth the rebellion of Northumberland and Weltmorland Earles 841,62 Commenceth fuit against Qu. Elizaheth 845.86 Mount Morancy Ea, in France, whence descended, 443,78 Rob. Mowbray Earle of Northi berland committed to pri-430.21 He there dieth. 430.23
Roger Mombray against King
Henry the second, in the behalfe of King Henry the yonger 465.65 Mowbraies Dukes of Norfolke whence descended. 553.71 Thomas Mombrar Earle of Notineham created Duke of Norfolke . 607.102 Banished for euer 608. 103 Mombray Earle Marshall, confpireth against King Henry the fourth, is betraied by the Earle of Westmorland and lofeth his head. 619.43 Mount-Norris a fort in Ireland in memorial of Sir Iohn Nor-

808.42 Merraght or Amerath the Great Sultan his letter to Queene Elizabeth 852.145 Muskleborough field wonne by the English Mutterel belieged by the En-783.125

ris 874 312 Moulhold the Strength or place

where Ker and the Rebels

with him encamped. 807.33

H Emy Nailor a Champion for Simon Low and John 841-124. Kime Names of Ancient Inhabitants and their Countries in Britaine according to Ptolomes Will, of Naslan, Prince of Orenge proclaimed Traitor by an Edict from Spaine, mur-

dered. 855.163 Maurice de Nasfau chosen go uernor of the Low Countries Se7.170 Natan-Lood 2 British Prince flaine. 297. 2. 326 Nations had the first names of their owne, 159.7 Nations peopled from Nations

neere bordering 162.6 Naturall fonne, a terme in old time, bearing no flaine of Baffardy, as fince it hath done 600.2 Naual fight at Cadie 869.269 Navarre Kings whence descen-443.73 King of Nauerre flaine at Roan

Irreligious

He fireth Rome.

836.29 Queene of Nanarre dieth, 816 ANauy English fee foorth by Queene Elizabeth againit 867.262 Neitaridini (laize Neitaridius (laine 296.3 Nenion Cassibilans brother.

winnethCafars fword in fingle fight 187.12 Neot 2 great Clearke and one of the first Readers of Diuinity in Oxford. 351.16 Saint Needs or Saint Needs,2 towne, before time Anuland King Edward the fourth phesbury 352.16 Neos-Stoke 2 Monastery in 352.16 Correpall

201.1

678.26

680.4

666.61

ihidem 6

668.72

His wicked life laid open.

Nerse the Emperour, 2 prudent

Nerna Lauoured the Britanes &

Christian Religion 217.4 His death, age, and reigne.

Ralph Neuil Chancellour to K.

Henry the third, elected

Archbishop of Canterbury

by the Monkes 516.29 Tobn Neuil Lord Montacute, his

victory at the battel of Hex

bam 676.19 Hauing beene Earle of Nor-

thumberland, is created Mar-

Taken into Edward the fourth

Slaine at Barnet field, 682-69

Richard Neuil Farle of Salis-

bury, in right of Alice his

Made Lord Chancellor, 667

Her feekerh to revenge the

wrongs done to his fonne

Richard Earle of Warwicke

Wounded and taken prisoner

at Wakefield. 672.90 Beheaded by the Common

people, and his head fet vpon

Gate in Torke, together

with Richards, duke of Torke

Prince

queffe

his fauour

Deprined of it.

Nere assumeth the Empire. fixth, spon what occasion Bloody and libidinous. ibid. He plotteth the deposition of King Edward the fourth, 678

Odious to God and man, 200 Seeketh to five into Egyp Hideth himfelfe and 18 appre hended 200.26 He killeth himfelfe ibid. His skill in Muficke ibid.27 His lineaments of body. ibid His loue of Horfe-riding ibid His laush expense in appare wicks and building. ibid. His rangue and age. ibid. The last of Cafars progeny &

Normandy

Wandreth in forraine parts vnto-his miferable ende,842

New-Castle vponTine founded New-firrest made by William Conquerour, fatall to his two fonnes and nephew, 421,46 Vew-houen with other pieces furrendred into Queene Elibeths hands \$35.28 Loft by the English. \$36.30 Venton'a victour in Combate rewarded St 1.61

Nicene Councell Nicene Councell the fecond. 345.9 Written against by Alcaine or Albine 345.9 Saint Nicholas Priory in Excefer founded 425.65 Nieholas the Popes Legate

Niding, a word of reproch.

Beauchamp Duke of War- | Ninus 2 Writer. wicke. Captaine of Calais 667.65 Affailed by the Kings feruants hardly escapeth to Calais 668.71

Richard Neuil Earle of Warwicke rubbeth Merchants fhips at Sea ibid. Relected by King Lewis of 680.42. Evauce Hee failethinto Ireland 669

He taketh into Conentree 682 His flour answer and resolution to George Duke of Claconciliation with King Edwardthe fourth. 683.60 His housekeeping 577. 19 He foliciteth a marriage between the Lady Bona daugh-ter to Lewis Duke of Sanoy,

679.19.20,&c. Discontented with King Edward the fourth, he affecteth the cause of King Henry the

He complometh and confpi ret completten and conspireth with George Duke of Clarence, against King Edward the fourth 678.28 Affinity contracted by a mariage between George Duke of Clarence and the Lady Ifabel eldeft daughter to Ri-chard Nesill Earle of Waribid. 29 Slaine at Barnes field. 682.65

George Neuil Bishop of Exce-fer deprined, for being Lord Chancellour 678.26 Sir Henry Neuil Knight cruelly flaine after hee had yeelded himselfe prisoner 679.33 George Newil Archbishop of Torke his goods and lands feized vpon vnkindly by K. Edward the 4. 686.88 Emprisoned at Hames in

Charles Neud Earle of Westmorland, in rebellion. 841 Fiveth into Seotland 842.68

> Norway Pirats infeft & annov Cheshire commeth into England 502 fire in a tumult.

261.16

while Action and the Great, Earl Notificians while Coine 26:18.

Richard Novil the Great, Earl Notificians while Coine 26:18.

Richard Novil the Great, Earl Notificians while Coine 26:18.

Richard Novil the Great, Earl Notificians while Coine 26:18.

Richard Novil the Picts Novil the Picts Novil the Picts Novil the American Condition Religion. 20:49.

Richard Novil the Picts Novi 354 4 Novatian

Natocris Empresse of Babylon 100 10 Nacht floud 161.2 Noahs Arke landed at the hauen of Mount Ararat, ibid. Nobles of England fortify Caftles against king Stephen

Non obstante, a detestable Clause 529.77
Nonnius Philippus Lieutenant
generall in Britaine 238.2 Normans, whence they tooke name, and first came. 411.2 Great Pirats 411 4 Prayed publikely against by the French, in Charles the Greathistime Normanny or Normandy what Countrey, and why fo cal-

Wonne to the Crown of Eng. land 437.22 Normandy Dukes, the Kings eldeft fonnes of England. 438.84 493.28 Normandy & other Seigniories in France demanded of king

Lewis, by king Henry the 512.15 Normans their outrages and villanies at Winchelfen, 583

In Normandy, the Commons rebell against the English. 657.22 In Normandy many Townes & Castles wonne by the English

639. 57.60 Normandy loft by occasion of breaking truce 662,44 From Normans Conquest to the death of Queene Elizabeth what time. beth what time. 278.2 Sir John Norris Lord Generall

intrhe Low-Countries vnder Queene Elizabeth. 855.

Sir Iohn Norris recalled out of the Netherlands and fent into ireland 857.179 His valiant femice in Galicia at the Groine 864.231.232

His valour and victory ouer the Spaniards. 864.234.
Lord Generall of the Forces in Ireland against the Earle of Tir-Oen and other Trai-872,100 His death 872-295 Northampton taken by K. Henrie the 3.
Northampton battell 537.99 670.79

Iohn Northampton, alias Cumberton, fometime Major of London, arraigned, confined and confilcated 598.43 See more in Iohn Combreson Northumberland Kingdome & the circuit thereof. 202. I

Diuided into two Prouinces Their Kings descent, ibidem, The continuance thereof. 305

Norwich taken and spoyled by Hugh Biger and others. 469 Norwich Priory Church fet on

< 29.10 Norwich wonne by Ker and Numerianus Cafar and Augu flus with his father Carne, Murdered Nunnes incontinent 343-3 Nuns of Coldingham disfigure and deforme themselves to auoide the Danes pollutions

O Conor-Dun. See Roths-Olfa, a Saxon Captaine, fent for into England by Hengist Offa, the sonne of Eske thirde King of Kent, his raigne. Octanian the Emperour against Inlius Cafars murderers and Anthonic T88 T Gouerneth the West parts of Europe 188.2

Hee prepareth for Britaine 3. 188.3,4 See more in Augustus Offanine or Offanian a Gouernour in Britaine 262.3. Slaine Odenatus viurpeth the Empire in the East 245.1 Odin-Char a Philosopher and a

Dane, conuerteth forraine Countries to the faith, 391.8 Odo King William the Conque. rors brother, an Earle, affecleth the Papacy 422.43 His oppressions of the English

taxed by Williams the Con-Querour 423.50 Histreacheries His wealth His imprisonment Released 418.4

His emulation against Lan-Conspireth against King William Rufus Odo Bishoppe of Baieux banifhed England

428.8 Emprisoned by King William ibidem raifed Off King of the East-Saxons. 201.12 His personage and Coine. ib. Shornea Monke, and so died,

ibidem Offs, Monarch of Englishmen. miffioners His Coine ibidem. His parents and former name.

A Prince of an high ftomacke, Conquered Kent, & with his owne hand flew King Alricke 3444 He discomfiteth King Kenwolfe and the West-Saxons.

344.5 Offser Ditch 344.6 Hee had entercourse for flare and Church, with Charles the Great King of France.

He putteth the Danes toflight Hee went to Rome 345-11. His Armes His repentance and bountie to Church and poore, 345

Of-Church why so called ibid. Of-ley a towne taketh Offa his name. 345,13

Noustien Herotikes. See Ca- Offa his Islue 345.15,&c. thari 206.19 Offa King of the Mercians, & Monarch of the English His descent, raigne, wife, Issue and buriall ibidem. Offa Heire to the Kingdom of East-Angles adopteth Ed-

> Offrid flaine with his father Edwin King of Northm land
> Offride wife of King Ethelred, killed Alexander Oge killeth Shan O

Neale 862, 161. Slaine by Tarlogh Leinogh. 853.151. Baftard Ogle ouercommeth Q.

Margarets French Forces. 676 12 Oily-flame what banner, 578. The Oke or Tree of Reforma-807.36

Olafemartyr, King of Norway 282-21 Olanus King of Sweiden flaine. Sir Iohn Oldcastle, Lord Cob-

ham perfected by Arandell Archbishoppe of Canterbury for Wickliffer doctrine, 625. Pronounced an Heretike.620

Accused of treason ibid. 15 He defaceththe faces of faints Taken and fore wounded by the Lord Powis in Wales, 637

Hanged and burne hanging What crimes were denifed a gainst him. ihidem Olinaca is Hekeley in Tork foire

218 William Ombler a yeoman with others, make rebellion in the North for Papall Religio Executed with other Rebels

Ofwin King of Deira murde at Yorke ibid.5 O-Neals family in Ireland how red by Ofwy 304.9
Ofwin Kingof Deira 337.2
Betrayed into the hands of ibid.c1 raifed 837.38

O-Neale a title forbidden in Of 338.3 His vertues and humility ef-Ireland. 853.150 Oppression by Poictouins and pecially ibidem Ofwald King of Northumberother petty Tyrants in Eng-land, enquired after by Com-

missioners 535-94 Ordalism what kind of triall. feruants. Ofmy King of Bernicia first, 401.22 Order of Burgundie, the golden

Fleece 682.50 Ordgar Duke of Denonshire 682.56 berLand berland 304 10 His raigne and death, ibidens father of fair Elfrida. 371.14 Ofmy King of Northumberland Ordonices, North-Wales. 195 holdeth a Synode as touching Eafter

Saint Orduffes Abbey. 376. 11, Ori-flame, See Oilystame Of my monarch of the English-Origen converteth Philip the Obtaineth victory against Emperour 240.2 Suffererh Martyrdome. 242.3 Penda His Issue Originall names of Countries His death and raigne

assumed first from their posicflors of Berking 301.8 Oth of fecrefic ministred to the 157.2 Orleance belieged by Thomas Montacute Earle of Salisbury and the English, 653,

Duke of Orleance fendeth to King Henry the fourth for Othmus See Woden 620.49 Offereth the Dutchie of A. His originall Concurrent with Vitelling for

quitaine vnto him ibid.
Osbrighs flaine by the Danes, 354-3

Osbright a Northumbrian Vice Roy forceth Beer-Bocader his Lady Slaine by Inguar and Hubba Osburg wife to king Eshelwolfe

Ofred King of Northumberland a wicked Prince 304.13 Slaine Ofred fonne of King Alwed, or Alefride King of Northson-berland depoled, 305.23 Ofricke murdereth his Soue-

raigne, and is King of Nor-chumberland 304.15 His raigne and death shidow Ofrick King of Deira of Northumberland 202.0 An Apostara

Slaine Oftorius Scapula fucceeded Plantius as Lord Deputy in Britaine Adorned with triumphant ho-194-12 Othe or Otto the Popes Legate His fortunes decline ibidem.

in England, his good offices His death 166.15 Ofwald King of Northamber-Commanded to depart out o land Slaine by Penda the Mercian England England 525.61 He calleth a National Coun-His raigne and burial, ibid.

Naserfield

powder treason

208.2

his death

the Empire Xxxxxx

For a large contribution de-Ofwald the second King of Northumberland 28.dayes. parteth out of England with out effect out effect 513.20 In danger to bee murdered at Ofwald monarch of the Eng-Oxford lifhmen Ouerthrow of Scots at Fam. A religious Prince kirke He vanquished & slew Cad-wallo in battell isbidem.

Owen Ap-Theodor, or Teder marrieth Katharine Queene His right hand neuer confu-Dowager, widdow of King Henry the fifth 650.22 med,and therefore worship-659.32 337.6 His commendation and def-Hee is mercifull to the poore cent ibidem

cell

Seeketh to Vitellius for a co-

His Oration to his Souldiers,

His person and habite ibidem

Otho the Emperour fendeth

a present to King Ethelifan.

ry Duke of Saxanie, & Mand daughter of King Henry the

Othe the fourth Emperour is

at variance with K. Philiplof

France, and thereby encur-

reth the malice betweene

King Philip and King Iohn.

Royally entertained by King

Iohn in London 495:35 Defeated by King Philip of

France in the battell at Bo-

208.5

208 6

264.12 Othe the fou. :h forme of Hen-

523-57

522.57

524.59

polition

He killeth blmfelfe

His age and raigne.

388.9

Their Iffue Ofwaldstrea towne, before time Owen Glendower his open re-Naferfield 337,6 Ofwald where flaine, and barbellion and hostility. 615.

baroufly torne in peeces. His beginning and rifing, ibid. The occasion of his breaking His monument in Glocester Cathedrall Church 337-7 forth He taketh the Lord Grey of Ruthen prifoner He with his Welfh wafte the Marches 618.40

Aided with a Fleet of French fhine 619.44 Oxen 600 eaten at one meale Oxford Vniuerfity founded by

land murdered by his own King Elfred 359.25 The fecond Vniuerfity in Christendome 527.59 Interdicted by Othe or Otte Afterwards of all Northwaythe Popes Legate ibidem. Oxford Students absolued vpon penance ibidem. Discharged of 15000. Students at King Henry the 3. 331,12 his comming thither 537.

337,1 Oxford Students take part with the Barons at North 228.6 empton, and arme against the King ibidem Oxford flored with 30000. Saint Ofwyth Queene, Abbeffe Students, Students, 583.120 Oxford City chiefly ruled by the Chancellor of the Vni-

Conspirators in the Gunneuerfity 589.154
Oxford yeeldeth to King Ste-589.154 890.42 Oth of Supremacy offered, 834 phen 452.39
Waford mafters complaine to King Henry the third of the Saluins Otho conspireth Galba Bishop of Lincoln 534,90. 201,9

lins for Pacatianas Vicegerent in

buile

fetteth Thomas Wolfey in the

French Fleet

Scots and King Stephen. 448

England and Philip Duke of

betweene Lewis K.of France

of England by their Com

Peace concluded between

737-31

567.13

605.85

millioners

lifh and French States in K. Richard the 2. his raigne. 601.62 Pardó of life forfeited for treafon, ftrangely tendered.662 Sir Edward Parham endited of treason and acquit. 886.15 Paris yeelded up to K. Henry Loft from the English 658. Parifians conspire to disposfeffe the English ibidem Parisians practife with Charles the fenench to deliner Perio into his hands Woodstocke Parke made by king Henry the first 442-59 Of Courtes of Parliament the foundation laid Parliament at Northampton Parliament at Oxford, 535. 93 Parliament at *Conentree* called

Ket and the Rebels. 208.

A Parallelization of the Eng-

Lacke-Learning Parliament 619.42 The Great Parliament, 607, The Good Parliament, 588. Parley berwixt King Stephen & Hen. Fitz Empresse. 453.44.45 A Parley intended betweene the Queene mother Regent of Scotland, and Queen Elizabeths Agents. 835,19 The same disturbed by the William Parry his treason, 845 Hee woundeth Hugh Hare his Creditor . 846.04 Confesseth his treason, 846 96.98 His Letter to the Lords of the

England and France. 783. Connecti 847.99 Arraigned, condemned, and the first and France 548,36 Peace dishonou able with the executed 847,100 Prince of Parma opposeth a-Scots at the Parliament of gainst England 759,193 Prince of Parms hath a con-Northampton eace concluded between the fecrated fword and hatte King of Spaine, and John D. fent vato him from Pope of Lancaster Peace betweene Great Britain 8 < 6 . 172 Hee aspireth to bee King of and Spain proclaimed in Law.

England Parfons alias Dolman a Iefuite, 849,113 Parthians giue the Romans great ouerthrow 197.6 great ouerthrow 197.0 fentius Vortigern his sonne, contriueth the poisoning of Aurelius Ambrosus, 314 Paffeline detected of plotting the ruine of Richard Earle of

Pembrocke, taketh Sanctuary 521.49 Patricke Cullen vndertakethto kill Queene Elizabeth.849. His End Pearles in the British Seas. 156 Executed at Tibarne ibiden

Patricke the Irish Apostle preacheth in Wales Saint Paul the apoffle preached in Britaine Reheaded 197,5 Condemned by Innocenting, Pope Paul the fourth belieged in Rame 829.108

Saint Paules Church in London Aforetime,the Temple of Di-Britaine by Agricula, 200 Paules Crosse guarded in Sermon time 817.15 Sir Amias, alias Iames Paules 817.15

Stockes, and repentethit af-Paulinus conuerteth Edwin K Slaine by Ofwy Doctor Pendleson preaching at Paules Croffe had a Gunne of Northamberland. 334.7 Archbishop of Torke ibidem Paulinus, See Suetonius discharged at him. 825.76 Pentarchie in Ireland 462.47 Sit Iohn Perat condemned of Paulus a Notarie, fubtile, and 263.5 Called Catena, wherefore

at Sea discomfiteth the Slaine 510.7 Thomas Percy 2 Conspirator 620.45 Iohn Payne 2 Prieft with other Resolutes appointed to kill der treason Queene Elizabeth. 844.88 Peace concluded between Don name 430.23 Henry Lord Percie furnamed

Iohn D' Aquila, and Charles Lord Montiey, Lieutenant Hatspurre fent to Calais . Generall of Ireland, 875. **€01.6**1 Taken prisoner. Peacethroughout the World Redemeth himfelfe, and is 174 188,6 Peace between David King of made Lord Warden of the

Peace concluded between England and Scotland, 782 Peace betweene England and berty,&c. 618,28 fully reftored France 758.33.
Peace for a timeconcluded betweene Charles the 6,king of France, Henry the S. King of

shain by the shifting of 1 orga-fhire, and his head fer on London Bridge 620.46 Henry L. Percy Earle of Nor-shamberland in Queene Eli-Burgeigne 641,50 zabeshes dayes, committed to the Tower ypon sufpition and Edward the fourth King of Treafon 848.105 He killeth himfelfe. ibidem 687.96 Sir Raife Percy a valiant, and missioners 687,96
Peace concluded with great
ioy of the French ibidem.
Peace between French & Englift, costly to the French. faithfull Knight flaine. 676.

Thomas Lord Percy Earle of at Shrewsbury. 617-35 Taken prifoner and beheaded 618.38

Northumberland rebelleth. 841.62 Flieth into Scotland, 842.68 Sent backe againe into Eng-Land and is beheaded. 844

Peremius agreat man vades the Emperour Commodus, 224.

Peace fetled in England betweene King Henry the 3. and his Barons 539.105 Peace pretended and treated vpon between Spaine, Eng-

land and the Low-Countries 847.182 Peacockes fethers Crowne fent from the Pope to King John Lord of Ireland 497.43 Penda first Christian king of the Mercians 306.5.307,5

Dox Petro de Valdez veeldeth to Sir Francis Drage, 860. elagisu the Heretike a Bri-277.10

His Opinions and Doctrines Pelagianisme brought into

enda King of the Mercians. His raigneand Issue, ibiden His nature and manners.

high Treason 848.106
Earle of Perch the French Ge-Henry de Pay a braue Warrion nerall vnder Prince Lewis

drawne into the Gunpow-Percies whence they had the

Marches against Scotland. 60r 88 Purfued by King Henry the 4. flyeth into Scotland, 619. 44. Earle of Northumberland pardoned of life, abridged of li-

618,40 Slain by the Shiriffe of Torke-

His faying at his death. ibidem Worcester, cause of the battell

homas Lord Percy Earle of

Deliuered to the British Souldiers to bee put to death,

225.6 William de Perepound a great Aftrologer <14.21 Perkin Warbecke a counterfeite Richard Plantagenes Duke of Torke, Suborned against King Henry the feuenth by Margaret Dutchesse Dowager of Burgandy 737-32 Vpon the Coast of Kent. 740 He faileth into Irelad, 740.14 He faileth into Scotland , ibid, Hee marrieth into the bloudroyall of Scotland 741.43 His parentage 737-32

Reputed the yonger fonne of K.Edward the fourth 714.14 Perkin Warbecke his Proclamation 741-75 He flieth and taketh Sanctuarie at Beauffen 744 51. Hee yeeldeth himfelfe to K. Henry the feuenth 744.52 Conucied through London on horseback with shame,744-51 He maketh an escape 744. 52 Set in a paire of Stockes, all a day vpon a Scaffold before Westm. Hall gate. 745.53 Alfo in Cheapefide He readeth openly his confes-

745.53 His place of birth parentage and education. 745.54.8.c. Committed to the Towre, ib. Condemned vpon a New Conspiracy, and executed. Perfecution of Christians the

fecond 215.17 Perfecution of Christians the third. 2772 erfecution the fourth of Chri-22 T 2 erfecution of Christians the fifth 220.15 Perfecution of Christians the fixth Perfecution of Christians the feuenth 241.1 Persecution of Christians the

eighth Perfecution of Christians the pinth 249.8 Perfecution of Christians the 254.12. Perfian and Saxon tongues a-

gree in many words, 284.3 Heluius Pertmax Lieutenant in Britaine Opposed by the Pretorian

Souldiers Helsing Pertinax Emperour his Coine. ibid His meane parentage. His rifing from low degree

225.2 His speech to his Souldiers about to kill him. Murdered by them His raigne and age His personage and qualities

Pescentisu Niger chosen Emperour in Syria His Coine, His Coine to good hope, ibid. Why furnamed Niger ibid.

His feature and coplexion.ib. Put downe and killed by Sep-timus Seuerus ibid. Peffilence in England through fearcity of foode. 535.82

Pefulence vniuerfall through out the world. Pestilence in Rome PeffiTHE TABLE

Pestilence in London 746.61 299.11 Called Eleemofyne i. Peter-pence promised by King Henry the fecond out of Ire Land to the Pope 462.48
Peter-pence, alias Rome-scot. 345.11 Saint Peter the Apostle crucifi-Hee preached the Gospellin 203.6 Saint Peters Church in Cornehill founded by King Lucius Saint Peters Church in Thorney built

built 300.3 Sometimes the Temple of A-Saint Poters Church in Westminster built by K. Edward the Confessour, and endowed by him. Peter Bafily. See Bartram

de Gordon Peter an Eremite, leader of an Army to the Holy-Land, is flaine, 431.30
Peter of Pomfreit an Eremite and Prophet 499.4.
Peter de Rupibus Bishop of Win 499-45 chefter, predominant in K.

Henrie the third his daies,

517.31 518.36 Peter,Bishop of Winchester gonernour of King Henry the third 511.11 Hee with others remoued from his Counfell 520.46 Peter de Rupibus Bilhop of Winchester his plot detected against Richard Earle of

Pembrocke, and Earle Marfhall He taketh Santhary ibid, His commendation 522 PeterDuke of Bretaigne, wherfore by-named Man-Clerke

or Mal-duit is Male do-Etus 515.23 Peter de Riuallis, detected of 2 practife against Rich, Earle of Pembroch and Earle Mar-

fhall, taketh Sanctuary. 522 Taken into the Kings fauour againe 522.54 Peterde Rinallis Treasurer to King Henry the third, in difgrace, 520,46
Peter King of Castile and of Leon, driven out of his king-

484.120 His bloudy tyranny. 584.131 Set in the throne of Spain by Edward the black Prince. 585.133 His ingratitude to the Prince

Peter de la Mare, speaker in the good Parliament condemned to perpetuall prifon, at the fuit of Dame A. 588.150

Peter Warbecke. See Perkin Warbeche. Peterborough Church, founded by Penda. 307.5 Peterborough Monastery foun-307.6

Set at Liberty.

Finished also by him. 339.3 Petilim Cerealis L. Deputy in Britaine 211.8 arriveth at Southampton, 824 Frier Pere, alias Peito or Paito, confecrated by Pope Paul the fourth Bishop of Sarum 326.84

Forbidden to enter England.

A Petition exhibited to Richard Hee passech the seas, & is ab - 1 Duke of Glocefter Lord protectour to accept of the Crowne of Engand 711.2
Petronus Turpilianus Lieutenant Generall in Britaine

His disposition. Slaine Philip Earle of Flanders fideth with Henry the yong king against his father King Henthe fecond rie the fecond 465,65 Philip, the fifth fonne of Henry Philip Duke of Burgoigne or

470.106 Philip King of France, vpon enuie leaueth King Richard thefirst, and the voiage to the Holy Land Defeited fundry times by K Richard the first 480.481 In danger to be drowned in his flight from King Richard

King of Denmarks fifter, and presently putteth her away He breaketh amity with King

Pleased with Treason, but ha teth Traitors, 491.22 His demands implying his de fire to the Crowne of Eng-

Chosen by the Pope, King of England, vpothe deposition of King John 499.46 He prepareth a mighty army against England, shid. He setteth forth with his nauy against Fernanda Farle o

His nauy defeated by the Englifb. 501.5 He dieth 512 1 Philip de Valois how hee clai med the Crowne of France

His motiues to refift King Ed ward the third claiming the Crowne of France. 571.46

The iustification of his reli ftance His mighty Army against K Edward the third. 572.58 Philip de Valois the French king tyransifeth ouerhis Noble

ibid.7 His horse flaine vn der him at the battell of Crefcy, and his flight. flight. 578.96
Philip de Valois the French kins dieth 581.110

the French King, furnamed the Hardy. 582.115 Queene Philip wife to king Edward the 3. her Princel demeanour in her husbands ablence 180.10

Her praifes, death and tombe 589.155 Philip a base some of King Richard the first Philip the first King of Spaine cast upon the coast of Eng. Kindly entertained by dire ction from King Henry the feuenth feuenth 749-70

Philip the second king of Spain

His Stile ioined with Queene Maries 827. 73 A great friend to the Lady Flirabeth 828.97

meeteth with Queen Mary, 200,2 Declared enemy to the State of the Low-Countries, 855 He contriues war against the English, under the false proffers of peace 857,182

the fecond King of England Burgundy a friend to the Eng-lish Soucraignety in France. Philip Duke of Burgundy breakethamity with the English. and cleaueth to Charles the feuenth and the French,657. Iulius Philippus Przefect to

Gordianus the third, his treathe first. chericto Gordianne 239. 4 the first. 481.64 Philip K. of France, marrieth the His parentage Slewhis leige Lord Gordia-Made Emperour Philip the fonne his Cafar

Iohn, and vieth hoftslity. ihidem 489.16 His Coine Inlins Philippus the Emperous repentant, and is baptized with his fonne and Wife.

Philip both father and fonne murdered for their Christian profession. Philip the fonne Cafar, neuer feene to laugh 241.5 Inline Philippus his raigne,

at once.

name

fo called

His description

ons.

land

Philopater a Tefuito, Sec Crefwell
Iohn Philps: knighted, and endowed with lands by King Riebard the second. 596.

Sir Iohn Philpot mans out a Fleet to fkowre the feas.

His fortunate feruice, ibidem Phoenes feathers in a plume fet tor entreateth for the Chrifrom the Pope to High Earle of Tir-Oen 874,308. flians Henry Picard Lord Major of London feasted 4. Kings

Protector, and the Duke of 582.118 Buckingham Picards whence they tooke 702. 40 Poitturs battel 28c 8 Paiston loft Picts a Nation in Britaine why Poilton recourred by K. John.

Pointouins commanded to de-Picts divided into two Nati-269.4 part the Realme of England Piers alias Peter de Gaueston banished 551,54555.4 Reentertained 555.4 520.46 Votrue to King Henry the 3.

They flie out of the land. 555.5 His fcoffing misbehanior to ward the great peeres of the Earle of Cornwall banished

for euer 555.8 Aboue measure powerfull Dela Pole family how it was 555.8 first raised, 600,56 William de la Pole of a Marchat with King Edward the fe-555-7 He misleadeth the King. 556 Renoked out of exile. 556 Made Principall Secretary, Taken by Gay Earle of War-

wicke, and beheaded. 556. kedly murdered 662.49 Michael de Pole, See in de la His funerals celebrated. 458. Pale Pontius Pulate being banished, killeth himfelfe

great deserts 66: 49

Iohn de la Polo Earle of Lin-

The holy Pilgrimage, or Re-bellion of Torkesbire, 773 fent from Queene Mary 2 yeere and fixe monethes. \$28 107 Their demands

He returneth to Doner, and Pinker a Frier prouinciall, and a flattering preacher, 705. Pifo Licinianus chosen by Galba his Cafar and Successor 201.4

Slaine Pius Quintus the pope his Bul to dethrone Queene Eliza-842.72,73 His Bull hanged vp at the Bithop of Londons gate. 844.

Plucidia taken prifoner by Alarieus, and married to Athanlphus King of the Gothes 279. 4 Plague in London, 581.109.

885.9 Plague in Newhauen forcadeth from thence into Engla d. 836.30 Plaifie Colledge in Effex foun-240.6 Richard Plantagenet Duke of

Torke weddeth Anne Mortimer his vnckles daughter, Edward the last Male Plantagener, Earle of Warwicke arraigned, condemned and beheaded

headed 746.61 Heire to George Duke of Clas tence, impriloned 729.6 Ruined by Perkin Warbeckes Conspiracy, /46.61 Plantins or Plotins set by Clandius Cafar against the Britans

His Souldiers first vnwilling, were encouraged by a figne from heauen from heauen 193.4 The first Lord Deputy in Britaine 194.12

A fortunate Conquerour in Britaine Pleas in law made in English. 584.126 Plinius secundus, Traians Tu-

Plotting betweene Richard Duke of Glocester, Lord 582 116

526.66

Sir Edward Poinings with many other flain neere Bulloign

made Knight Baneret. ibid. William de la Pole Marquesse of Suffolke made Duke. 662 43 Committed prisoner to the Tower & enlarged, 663.46 Accused by the Commons in Parliament 663.47
Going into banishment is wic-

William dela Pole his noble and 192.4

question

forwords

Edward the fourth his death.

Prelates of England ready to

Normandy 415.2 Prelates against their prince

detelled euen by Monkes,

A prefage to King Stephen,

rifdiction

His Testament

Nobles

London

Wat Tyler

His descent

Iulius Cafar!

A Prieft of Ware drawne and

Priests marriage inhibited b

Pope Gregorie. 422.48 Primate of the Druides, 168.8

Principality of Wales downe-

falling from the Welfh line.

Priore of the Trinity within

Aldgate in London founded.

Prior thereof, is Alderman of

London 454-51 Priory of S. Martins in Doner

founded 294.1 Priory of Saint *Johns* withour

Smithfield butnt by the Re

belsvnder Iacke Cade, and

Probus elected Emperour-

Compared with Annibal and

His fingle fights and Enfignes

544.11

£95, 10

251.1 ibidem, 2

252.2

fubmit to Duke William of

164.18

535,93

Portfmosth how it took name. He with Lambert the Idoll, advanceth in battell array a gainst King Henry the feuenth 733.20 Slaine at the battell of Stoke, Pottier his words vpon King ibid.22 William de la Pale in trouble for his brother Edmund, 748 66.67.844 D. Powell a British Writer. Edmund de la Pole, Earle or Duke of Suffolke, his wilfull killing of a man 748.66 the Barons 535.94Pardoned, yet flyeth out of Precedency of place in women

England twice 748.66 He bringeth many into troubles and to confusion. 74%. Putteth himfelf into the protection of Philip the 1. king ot Spaine 749.69 See more in Edmuna. Pelleswerth Nunnery before

time at Tamworth. 362,15 Polybiss an ancient Greeke hystorian 160.7.157.1.
Polycletus sent to reconcile Glafficianus and Suetonius, 200.23 Polydor Vergil taxed for partiall writing. 486.9

Pomponia Gracina, the wife of A.Plantins, firft L.Lieutenant in Britaine became a Christi-204.8 Panthies revolted from the Fnelifh 586.136 ibid.136 The reason why ibid. 136
Pontois besieged by Charles
the seuenth King of France,

Wonne by him at a fecond fiege 660. 26.
Pontou or Ponthou furprised and wonne by the English.

Pooles in England, a family of what descent 779.103 Henry Poole Lord Montacute

with others beheaded, 779. Reginald Poole Cardinall about to be fet vp King of England. ibid.103. His death the same day that

Q. Mary died 832.4 Reginald Poole fent for home, by Queene Mary . 826.82. Made Archbishoppe of Canterbury 826.84 See more in Reginald.

Poore of three forts, 814.8e The Popes abfurd collections out of the Scripture 223.9. The Pope disposeth of Crownes

Popes of Rome two at once, Pope to bee Antichrift, no new opinion, 475.24 The Pope denied entrance in-

to England and France, \$27, 70, Denied any more contributions in England 528. Flieth from Rome for feare of

Fredericke Emperonr.529.76 The Popes exactions and extortions repelled in England

of victory 556.50 His exploits 252.2,3.&c. Popes of Rome three at once, Hee flayeth in one battell, 400000.Germans. ibidem 629.34

His Sepulchre Proclamation made to publish The Popes authority called in William the Lord Hastings treafors ihidem Procopius an viurper beheaded. Pert or Porth 2 Saxon, 292.2

260.2 His Coine Port-Trusslensu i, Richberow. Proculm a Rebell against Pro-252.6 215.15 A vaffall to Uenus Portugall voiage 864-231 Gilbers Port loofeth his eares His death Prodigious and presaging ap-816.6 paritions of warre betweene

Bedford and Bickleswade,616 Prodigies preceding Islian the Emperourhis dearly 267

Poyfoning suspected against Prodigies before Ionianus the Emperour his death. 268, 5. the ouerthrow of their buf-Prodigies forgoing the Danes 809. 53 inuation 388.10 Prodigies in king Brithicke, or Predictions and fignes of the Bithrickehistime 300.16 Lord Haftings death, 703; Prodigious portents in Eng-45. 46
Predictions fantasticall inhibi-608.104 Prodigies in Valentinian the ted by Act of Parliament,

Emperour his time 271,11 Prodigies dayly seene 198. 1 Prodigies strange and hideous An old prophesie in all the East parts, George Duke of Clarence.

453.44 Prefages of King William Ru-680 100 Prouinces of Rome revolt. 198. fus his death 433, 39 Prætors in provinces their iu-Statute of Provisors enacted, vpon what occasion. 575.75 218. 6 rifdiction 218. c Praiers and intercessions pub-Pratenia 159.0 like for King Edward the third his good fuccesse in Prytania whence deriued.159.

the warres of France. 574. Pryd-Cain, or Prydain, the originall name of Britaine, Prasutagus King of the Iceni. Plendo Richard in K. Henry 198, 10 Maurice de Prendergest entreth the fourth his time. 730,13 Pfeudo Nero among the Parthians ibidem, Ireland 463. 55 Whence hee tooke name, ib. Parthians Papienus Maximus Emperour His Coat of Armes, ibidem with Clodins Albums. 237.6 hanged for practifing a-gainst King Henry the fourth His parentage They entry one the 238.4 Priests maried fauoured by the

Both flaine by the Pretoriar Cohorts -Their raigne Priests marriages moue debate Putta Bishoppe of Rochester 373.4 Referred to the answere of a 341.2

> O Vadratus 2 Disciple of the Apostles 270.8 axon Queenes debarred by law from all Roialty. 300. Queenes Colledge in Cam-bridge founded 731.16 Endowed with lands by king

Richard the third 726.60 Queenes Colledge in Oxford founded ounded 731.16
Oueene of Scots wife to K. Malcolme the third, ditIwadeth William King of Scots to inuade England. 486. 9 Queenburg King Edwins wife 303.8.335.11.

cent brother K. Kenelm 3 08 Dieth for forrow Procureth the murder of king Ethelbert her fonne in Law 211.14 Ouendred alias Petronilla, wife

345, 14

to King Offa

Her Coine Her treacherie ibidem. Quendred as one would fay, Queene Drida 345.14 Quinchelinus affociate with his father in the West-Saxon

Kingdome of the West-Saxons, plotteth the murther of King Edwin King of Northumberland Quintilius chosen Emperous

Hee letteth himfelfe bloud to 248.2 His short raigne ibidem. Saint Duntins taken by King Philip and the English, 829.

R Adagofius King of the Gothes maketh hauoeke of the Roman Empire, 276

Ragman Rowle, an euidence deliuered upp to the Scots, Raimund Earle of Tholouz, maried Ioan King Richard the first his fifter Queene of Cici-

Raimund le Groffe leader of forces into Ireland 463.56 Raimund Earle of Pronince his foure daughters all Queens

Rainehome resterfed feene at London 824.67 Rainold a third naturall fonne of Henry the first, Earle of Cornewall &c. his iffue, 443

Ralph Bishop of Durham. Generall of the field against the Scots, winneth the day.448 Imprisoned 434.2

Breaketh prison. 435.7 Ralph Archbishop of Canterhu-Breaketh prifon. rie a paralyticke, but cholericke Prelate. 240.42 Edward Randolpha braue warriour flaine in fight against Shan O-Neale 837-45 Frier Randolph Confessor to 2. Isan , wounded to death.

637-49 Ranulph alias Randal, Earle of Chefter against king Stephen He ioineth with Earle Robert and both of them encampe neere Lincolne against King His Oration vnto his confe derates before the battel. ib

Surprised by King Stephen 413 40 Saueth Hubert de Burgh his

life. 516.27 Sir Richard Ratcliffe, the Pro-tector of Richard Duke of Glocefter, his Instrument to doe villany 705.51 Robert Rateliffe beheaded about Perkin Warbecke. 739

Sir Walter Rawleigh condem ned for treason 886:13. Reading Abbey founded. 492,

Reafanthe Danes Banner taker 357-14 Rebels executed to the number of 1500, vpon the Commotion of Wat Tyler and oTHE TABLE.

& ouerthrown thrice, 806. 25.807.27 Their last & vtter ouerthrow at Saint Mary-Clift, 807. Rebels of Norffolke, under the conduct of Ker, yeeld and receive the Kings pardon. 808.40 Rebellion in the North for maintenance of Papall religion 809 48 Rebellió breaking out at *Harl* Stone faire in Norffolke. 844. Rebellious traitors executed.

Reconciliation between three Brethren, William Conquerors former 439.14 Reaburg the wife of K. Egbert Redwald king of the East Ang les, and Monarch of Kent, affifteth Edwin 303.7-309.3.
Redwald Monarch of the Englilbraca His Coine His raigne and iffue 333.5.7 Redmore, alias Bosworth field.

Rees alias Rhees ap Temdo prince of South-Wales flaine Regeacy of the English in France how far it extended.

Regent of Scotland flaine by thot, as hee rode in Lithquo 851.132 Reginaldalias Reiner enftalled Metropolitan by the Monks of Canterbury at Midnight,

He forgoeth his new dignity Reginald Earle of Bullsigne adhereth to King Iohn 501.50. Reginald Poole his life & flory Deane of Exceller

Cardinall 826.77 Legate of Viterbium, ibid, 78 826.77 Chosen Poperwice ib. 79 See more in Poole. Register bookes of Christnings and burials kept in Churches 778.100 Reinhere king Redwalds fontte ches

flaine 33 Reinburne Earle of Warn his Combat with Colbrand the Dane the Dane 365. 16
Reinold fonne of the Danish Gurmo baptized 366.3 Reinold Earle of Cornwall 2ffi

fleth Maude the Empresse. Doctor Reinold Speaker before King lames for the complainants, about Reformation is the Church and Leiturgie.

887.22 Religion Christian when first planted in Britain 202.1 About Religion 2 free difputa-tion in Paules Church, 824.

In Oxford alfo Religion proceedeth and is aduancedin Scotland, 834.13

Religious houses what a number in England now suppres-Religious houses ouerthrowne in Scotland 834.15 Renate Duke of Loraine, and of Barre taken prisoner.656.21

Saxons Saxons 339. 2 Reese alias Rhese the Welshman flaine and beheaded ibidem.

106.10 Reth a Souldier his moderate behauiour in the battell of Brigerac Reuley Abbey founded, 507 Rhese alias Rees ap Gruffish

Prince of South-Wales, refuleth to vifite King Richard the first for want of som complementall feruice on his Rhutupi i. Ribchefter of Rich. borow 263.6 Ricebanke abandoned by the English for fear of the Duke

of Guize and the French. 829.113 Rice alias Rhees ap Thomas, fi deth with Henry Earle of Richmons Richard the Hardy, third Duke

of Normandy 413.22 His wives and Issue ibidene Richard the second, or the good fourth Duke of Normandy His wines and Iffue ibid. 24.

Richard the third, fifth Duke of Normandy thought to bee poyfoned poyfoned 413.25. Richard alegitimate fonne of King Henry the first. 443.

Richard a second sonne to King Henry the fecond, contra And to Alice the French Kings daughter.457.10.475 Riebard 2 yonger fonne ofking

Henry the fecond fideth 2gainst his Father 466.66 Humbleth himfelfe, and is re-

ceiued into fauour 466.79 Richard a second Naturall or base sonne of King Henry the first, thoght to be drow ned with his brother William am neere Barbfleet 443.67 Richard a younger fonne of K. Henry the fecond, fortifieth againfthis father 469 93

Coine

Hee forgiues the author of his death. ibid.69
His last Will and Testament Commethin Hee hath remorfe for his vnnaturall behaulour to his fa-His death ther 470.100 Richard a third fonne of King How hee bequeathed or be-

flowed his body 481.70 His prefent resolution like to Henry the fecond afrenware King Riebard the first, furthat of William Rufus, 479. named Cueur de Lion, wherfore 470.104.482.70 He is flyled King Richard the first, and is wholy denoted K. Righard the first his wines and Hine His 3. Metaphoricall daughso recouer Christianity, 472. ters His Broad Scale, Armes and

ichard William Conquerous His choice of friends and fer his sonne, goared by a Deer. uants 421.46 His Monument in Winchester His Coronation and oath at Westminster. 473.5 He puruaieth treasure for his 424,69. Richard second sonne of King pilgrimage or voiage to the Iohn, crowned king of Re

holy land 473. 7 How hee setled the state of his mans and of Almain, his death and buriall 507.68 His wives and Iffue ibidens, Kingdome during the pilgrimage 473.9 King Richard the first and king Richard a naturall fonne of K. Ioin 507-74 Richard Earle of Cornwall fen: Philip of France fet forward to the Holy-Land 474.15 He refuseth to visit the Popes with a power into Gascoign

Holmeffe ibid 16 Author of the Barons rebel-His mighty power and forces at Mefana. ibidem. lion in K. Henry the third his

Rebels of Cornwal put to flight | Remaild King of the Wett- | His voluntary and ferious re-He conferreth with Josephon a learned Abbot 475-24 Hemarieth Berengaria daugh-

Ofrich

Crowned again at Winchells

His pleasant question to the

His noble valour performed

in his owne person 481.65 His couetousnesse and want

of mercy punished by God.

VVounded to death at the

Castle of Chalms, or Galiard

481.68

482.70

daily exercises

Pope

from King Henry the third ter to Santine King of Na-\$23.58 Richard Earle of Cernwall ele-His Nauy royall towards the cted King of Romans accepted thereof Holy-Land 475.26 King Richard the first and K. 523.89 How rich hee was in Coine -534.80 Philip of France competitors of glory at the fiege of Acon. Crowned King of Romans in

Appealed and fatisfied by the

Hee with the Barons reuolt

Aquifgrane His Broad-Seale He winneth the rich Conuov He dareth not come strong in or Caranan of the Saladine, to England 436. of Sweareth to affift the Barons His exploites in Palestine for reformation of the Stare

Forfaken by the Duke of Bur shid-m Richard King of Romans taken prisoner by Simon Mont-Trauailing difguifed like fort at the battell of Lawis, Marchant in Germany, he is and emprisoned in the Towdiscourred & veeldeth to Le er of London er of London 537.101 Richard E. of Glocester thouse pold or Limpold Archduke of

to bee poyloned 535:94 Imprisonedby Henry the Em-Richard of Burdeaux afterward perour ibidem
His liberty procured vpon
what Articles 478.46 King Richard the second Made Prince of Wales, & the what Articles 478.46 Crowned King of Province Nobles fworn to his fuccef. fion 588.151 Made Knight of the Garter. Set at liberty by the Archbi thoppe of Ments and Co-

789.153 Richard the second his Coroteine 478.48 He landeth in England sbidem nation, his Armes, Broade-Seale and Coine Taketh to wife, Anne the daughter of Charles the 4. 479,56 His new Broad Seale, ibidem Emperour 597-33 By enriching Bohemians, and 597-33

His regall Armes 479.57 He forgiues his brother Iohn. strangers, growne distatiful 480.59 His victories against Philip to the State to the State 597-37. Hee affembleth an Army of 300000 English to ouer-King of France, ibid 60 His amendment of life and runne Scotland 599-49

A friend to the Clergy. 600. Declareth himfelfe to bee of age, and taketh the gouernment vpon him A great spender in hope to be

Emperor 607.96.
Richard the second creates himfelf Earle of Chefter 607 He addeth to his escuchion Roial, the Armories of S.Edward K.and Confessor ibid. His deposition from the crowne 609.113

His government vniverfally hated 608.10 Hee offereth to refigne his crowne vpon conditions 609,110 His iourney to Ireland with a

nauv of 200 faile 60% 107 His refignation of the crown 609.111 His friendes disenabled after his deposition 612.7 Articles published against

609.112

619.41

His death at Pomfrast Caftle 614-18 Thought to bee sterued to death for hunger ibid, His dead corps shewed open-Conucied to Langley, and translated afterwards to Well-614.19 Being dead oftentimes voi-

him,

ced aline

Reuiued againe by the Scots 513,19 K. Richard the fecond a counterfeit, flieth to Robert K. of Scotland 515.24

614.18

qualities

Duke of Clarence his bro-

Hee forecasteth to be King in

his brother K. Edward the

His deepe policy to attaine

the Crowne 694-7 He with the Duke of Buckin-694.7

gham imprisoneth the Lord

Riners, at Northampton 696

Made procedour of K. Edward

the fifth and of the Realme

Intreated to accept of the

Santh, Nay, and would have in

fourth his rime

694-7

607.24

709.60

713.5

709.63 Richard Duke of Glosefter 20 cepteth of the Crowne 705 Richard the third beginned his raigne 710 His armes and broad feale ib. His title to the Crowne from Compared to Galba the Em-Edmund Mortimer Extle of March. 6e2.8 A bad fubiect, but a good 652.8 Richard Earle of Cambridge knighted and created Duke His Clemency and affability of Torke 652.11 in the beginning of his raign Made Constable of England His coronation in great Stat Made regent of France 658.28 Employed in Ireland 662.45 He goeth with an armie into 714-12 His progresse towards Glocefter 714.15 He plotteth the death of his France 659.29 Taketh armes openly vpon pretenfe to reforme, but in-Nephewes Edward and Ri-chard K. Edward the fourth deede to gaine the Crowne his fonnes 715.15 He maketh peace with Scot-665.55 Made Regentagaine 660,37 His pedigree & claime thereby to the Crowne 670,671 Richard Duke of Yorke practifeeb and reachesh at the

gares 672.90 His younger fonne Earle of

Lord Clifford 672.89 Richard Duke of Torkelecond

fon to K. Edward the fourth.

conveied with his brother

Edward to the Toure 701.

Rutland a childe flain by the

672.80

His vaquiet confcience for murthering his Nephewes He refraineth Queene Ann Crowne of England 662.42 his wifes hed 621.42 Hee courteth the Lady Eliza His olemn oth to be true to K. Henry the fixth 605.58 He causeth Edmund Duke of beth , daughter to King Edward the fourth his brother Somerfee to be arrested and Marcheth in order of battaile practifeth his ouerthrow 665.55,9.666.61 Createth himfelfe Protectour to Leicester 723-48
His manner of embattailing to Leicefter of the Realme 667.65 Discharged from it ibid.66 in the field 723.23.53 His Oration to his Soldiour He pursueth Q. Margaret and the Prince into the North 671 Slaine in battaile valiantly Richard Duke of Yorke returfighting 725.57 Being dead attainted in Parli neth out of Ireland, & openly in Parliament claimeth the Crowne of England 670.84 Richard Duke of Yorke flaine at the battaile of Wakefield 671 His head crowned with a paper, fent to Queene Mar-

ther Hemy 437.22 His valour & rathueffe.43732 ament 729.9 His dead body how yied and enterred 725.55 His flone coffin made a drinking trough for horfes 725 His description His workes of devotion 726 His iffue 726.62 Richard a name ominous to the Kings of England 710.1 Kings of England 710.1 Richard de Saint Albains re-nounceth Christianity, and turneth to the Sultan of Bapteth to make William, Ro-bert Cartoife his fonne, Duke

Richard Neuil Earle of War-Richmond Earledome first erewicke, with George Duke of Clarence , proclaime Henry Richmond the Kings house the fixt King againe 681.47 built out of the after of He is made governour of the Shene, or Shine 746.61.751

Realme during citill trou-Nicholas Ridley Bishop of Loxbles, with George Duke of don burnt in Oxford 824-66 Clarence 1682.53 Richard Duke of Glocester in-Nicholas Ridley Bishop of Lon. don defendeth Queen Janes uadeth Scotland 689.111 His differention for person & title in a Sermon 817.10 See Towne fired and rifled by 694.5.6 He killeth K. Henry the fixth ord Rivers King Edward the with his owne hands ibid. Caufeth the death of George

fifth his vncle, with others fent to Pomfrais Castle, with the Lord Richard Grey Edward the fift his half brother 705.51 Beheaded ther without order of Law, at the very inflant when the Lord Haltings was beheaded in the Toure of

London 696.19.705.51 Room true to King Richard the first 478.45
Euer true to the English CTOWE Beleiged by the French King Philip 492.27 Loft 493.27 Reas diffmanteled of her wals

493.28 Befeiged and affaulted by the English. 638.5 Vpon what Articles to be redred to the English 638-56 Won by them 629 57 obert furnamed Curtoife Wi am Conquerours fonne, clai-meth Normandy and warreth against his father 420,39. Why fo furnamed 425.68 Imprisoned and bereft of his

fight, by his brother Henry, 425.68 Poffessed of Normandy 427.3 His gentle dispossion 428.3. He relecueth his brother Newrie an enemie 429.14 He mortgageth land for fupply of money, to gaine the kingdome of England, 428. Conftrained to make peace with his brother William Ru-

Mortgageth Normandy to his He goeth to Ierufalem, to the Returneth into Normady 435.7 Attempteth the Crowne obern Curtoile remitteth his yearely pay out of England

Sueth fubmiffinely to his brother King Henry for peace Not regarded of him ibid. Prepareth for warre 437.22 Taken prifoner by his bro-

Escapeth out of prison, is ta-ken seaine and bereft of his 417.24 Dyeth in prifon vpon forrov Buried in Gloceffer Robert the fixt Duke of Normandie, magnanimious and 413.26 Marrieth Arlessa His death in pilgrimage ibid.
Robert Earle of Mellent attem-

of Normandie of Normandie 440.44 Both taken priloners by Tanberule kerule 440.45 Robers, the third base sonne of

King Henry the first, his It-fue, death and buriall. 443. Robert the fourth base sonne of King Henry ibid, 69 Robert Earle of Glocester halfe brother to Mande the Empresse rifeth against king

447.12 He flieth into France, 447.12 He denounceth Stephen an open enemy to the state, and foresworne. 447,12. bold attempt for the crowne of England 484.19 He spoileth Worcester, 448.

His speech before battell.449 True to Mande the Empresse,

taken prifoner 452.36 He and King Stephen redeeme one another. 452.37
Robert Earle of Glosefter dieth. Robert Earle of Leicester fideth with young king Henry against his father 465,65 He affronteth his foueraigne diffoially Vanquished in fight and taken

Prifoner.

Prisoner. 465,68.70 Robert de Artois, Earle of Richmondflaine 575.74 Sir Robert Rous, a braue warriour his exploits 594.9
Robers of Riddifdele Captaine of Northerne Rebels.679.35 Robin of Ridifdale the leader of Northerne Souldiers against the Coronation of Richard the third 713.7 Robert Descreex Earle of Esfex fens into France to side Henrie the fourth King of

France. 867.256. His answer to the Lord Keepers letter 877.231 Robert Deureux Earle of Effex his valiant feruice at Lisbon

865.228.240 See more in Demenz. Rochel belieged by the French.

587.145 Manfully defended, continueth English.

Rockel remaineth true to the English Rochel in Xantoigs taken from the English by Lewis the French King 513.17 Rochefter Cathedrall Church 332.13 Inne Rochford, widow to George

Bullen Lord Rochford beheaded for concealing adultery 780.109 Rodoricke king of the Pi#s con-780.109 quered by Marm 2 British King. 217-3 Roger Bishop of Salisbury and

other prelates come to a Councel armed. 428.17 Hee with the reft refuse to yeeld up their Caftles to King Ssephen 428.18
He with Alexander Bishop of
Lincolne apprehended, ibid.
Roger yeeldeth vp Denizes and
Sherburne Cattles, with 2

great fumme of money to King Stephen, ibid. Roger Morimer opposeth Simon Montford and the rebellious Barons 538.103 THE TABLE.

Roi Croffe, a Meere markebe-tweene England and Scot. Consught filleth himselfe inhabitor of Brit une. 1573. Rollo the Dane discomfitted in England, paffeth into France His aduentures and descent the fecond. 411.5.6 His dreame The fame expounded, ibid & He sendeth an Embassage to Alftan alias Athelftane king of England 412.0 He commeth to King Alftans Court. 412.10 He entreth into league with King Alftane ibid. 13 His faith to King Alftane, ibid. Rolls the first Duke of Normandie how hee did homage to King Charles the Simple. Romania i. Britaine. 413.19 Romane Writers best directors for the Antiquity of Britain, and the Britanes. 157.1 Romans downefall cause of many kingdomes rifing, 160.9 Romanes neuer descended of the Troisus 166.25. Romanes long vnknowne to Historiographers 169.9 The Romans base Original 170 Charters Charters 503.56 Sir Iohn Ruffell Lord Pring Romans second possessours of Britaine, 183.1 Roman Souldiours die of ficknesse in Britaine 229.6
Roman Empire diuided 257.1 Roman Monarchie of what continuance Romans state from Tarquinius vnto Ini, Cafar of what con-278.2 Roman Empires diffipation. Romans vnable to defend their owne. owne. 279,8
Romans giue Britaine a finall farewell.

> 284.2 Sir Warbam Saint Leger killeth Mac-Guer, and is killed by him. 874.100 Sasfen Seaxen and Seaxes what persons 285.8 dueth the Christians.469.96 Winneth Ierufalem from the Christians Christians 468.90 Put to flight by King Richard thefirft 476.35 thefirit 476-35 Saliche Law 567-17-571-47 Saliche Law for the Kingdome of France, impugned Chi-cheley Archbishop of Canterbury 626.19 How farre it extendeth, 626.19 Claime of the Crowne in France by the Law Salicke, howbadly it fped, and what fuccesse the Viurpers had.

reliques restored in England, Rome-Scot. See Peterpence
Road of Grace, or of Boxley in
Kent, broken in peeces. 778 Bifhop of Salisbary murdred Rofamund, daughter of Walter

Lord Clifford, Paramore to

King Henry the second. 471 Her Tombe and Epitaph, ibid. Red-Rose, badge of the Lanca-Frian house 682.59 White-Rose, badge of Yorke Family sbid.
Rotheram Archbishop of Can-

terbury. 721.42

King and Monarch of Ire- Sanctuary printledges, debated land 462.46 He doth homage to K. Henry in Councell Sanctuaries deuifed the fecond time

the fecond, 464.60 Received into king Henry the fecond his protection, becommeth Tributary, 467.83
Round Table erected a: Windfor Round Table erected in France, 575.76

Rowena alias Roxena, Hengifts daughter 289.4. 225 Roxburgh or Roxborough Castle Wonne.

Wonne, Roxborough rased by the Queen of Scotland in revenge of her husbands death, 670.83 Fyred by the Scots Royall exchange in London built. 852.140 Ruffims fellow marryr with

Wulfald Wulfald 340.8
Ruffinus Gouernor of Contrantinople 274. His Ambition 275. Slaine and beheaded 276 Rufus marrieth Claudia the Britilb Lady. 203. He is furnamed Pudens, ibid His death Runing-Mend Councell and

Seale his valiant feruice against the Cornisto Rebels. Rustandus the Popes Agent in England, his fetch to gather money 535.86
Rathlan Caltle in Northwales

> 480.93 ned

> > aduenturous.

The Saxons Tribes 284.6

The Saxons answer to the Bri

Saxons Superstitious

Their names and customes.

taine Embaffadors. 283.7

tinuance

nate

recovered by King Henry the fecond. the fecond. 456.8
Ratters or Rosts what they be

SAbrina i. Seuerne, a Riuer in Britaine. 194.12 Saca, apeople in Afia thought Roman Empire ouergreat, 188. King of Romans, a title aquius to give name vato the Saxlent to Cafar, in the time of

the late Emperours of Rome Romes birth-day folemnized

Rome facked by Gothes and Vandale Rome taken and facked againe. 761.54 New Rome built

Romans the Originall of the Old Romans 166.25 Romanifts infolency and opprefion in England, caufeth infurrection 516.29
Roman ftrangers or Popelings,
in England, infeft the Realme
much in King Henry the 3. Romifb rites, and Idolarrone

Earle of Salisbury depriued of his Lord Chauncellourship

> by his owne tenants,663,48
> Saluffus Lucullus succeedeth Became Christians firft, in Britaine Agricola in Britaine. 275.17 Famous for Piracies. Put to death by Domitian for Saxons apparell 286. what offence. 216.18 Salutes a Coine of king Henry 216.18 & incontinency 287.0 the fifth in France: 643.63 Paulus Samofatenus the Here-ticke banished 640 8 and iurifdiction Valorous,

627.22.22

mothes, the first name of Rei Their weapons Their weapons 287.5 Saxons of Germany thirsted af-158.3

Their manner of warre and

Their resolute courage, ibide Saxons Empire in Englanden. Sanders maintaineth Queene deth 408.5 I Saxons vanquished in battell. Elizabeths deprivation, 844 and driven out of Thanet, His letter to Doctor Allen

Sanders the Irifb Legate his Saxons and Britans treaty and agreement vpon Salisbury miserable ende Sandwich taken by the French They murder the Britaines. Saxonie Dukes their descent Sanguelac, alias Senlac, the

place where William of Nor-\$25,64.325 Saxonie Dukedome whence in Sapor or Sapores the bloody K. came, came. 285.8 Saxum Iacobi a ftone of high or Tirant of Persia. 244.5 Submitteth to Theodosius the effeeme among the Scots 884.10 Emperour Lord Say beheaded at the co-272.4 Saracens whence they came. mandement of Iacke Cade.

663.48 Scens a bolde Britaine and fir-Safones a people where feated gitiue 184.5 Lord Scales murdered by the Saturninus elected Emperor against his will 252. fide of the Earle of Warwicke 670.8. Schifme vpholden by Frederick

ter the Conquelt of Britains

200.10

290.12

battell

Emperour against Pope A-lexander the third 458.18 Sluce surrendred 857.180 Sauary de Malleon deputed Lieutenant in Aquitaine vn-der King Henry the third. Scotia and Scotland whence Ouerthrowne in battel by K. they tooke name 160.9 The partition thereof, ibidem. Lewis of France 513.17 He turneth Franch ibid. cotish men more Ancient Christians than any other Britans 204.0

Sausy an Hospitall founded. Scots in derifion thime vpon King Edward the first 546.26 751.70 Burnt by Rebels Saxo, the supposed Stockfather They inuade the Borders of 284.2 England England Scotland under Interdict, 560 Saxons, the word whence der Saxons enter into Germany Abfolued Their originall

Scots inuade the North parts of England. of England.
Enuironed by King Edward The Saxons Prophecy, to poffeffe Britaine 300. yeeres the third, escape by the trea-fon of Roger Mortimer, 566 They picke quarrels with the

They inuade England in king axons in old time valiant and Henry the fifth his absence 285.8 636.44 Discomfited.

Fearefull to the Romanes, Inuade Northumberland, 667 Saxons Heptarchy of what cor Scotish Noblemen taken atSo-Saxons Monarchy of what conlem-Moff-fielde, delivered tinuance. ibid wirhout ranfome, and richly rewarded at their departure. friendes, proue enemies. 281.1 Great warriours and fortu-

782,120 Scotlandand England United by King James the fixth of Scot-land, and first of Great Britaine 884.3 Sereeg and Halden leaders of Danes, entrench at Reading

They do good feruice at their first comming. ibid
Their first arrivall 282.8 \$55.7 Sir Richard Scroope Chancel-Saxons in Britaine conceale all lor of England furrendreth vp his Broad-Seale to king victories against themselves Richard the second. 597.35.
Richard to Scroope Archbishop of Canterbury, for a confpi-racy loofeth his head. 610.

Sir William Scroop knight Earle (of Wilshire beheaded at Bri-205.16 612.6 Henry Scroope Lord Treasurer 620.47 Sie Iohn Scudemore his two

fons beheaded by the Earle of March, vpon the battell, and victorie at Mersmers Croffe Scythians whence they tooke

301-4 lizabeth mother of King Ed-Sergeants at Law, and Lawyers plead in Westminster-Hall 607.72 242.3 Sebba King of the East-Saxons. 819.36 armed Sergius a Monke instructech

Mahomer 322

Serlo a fauourite of King Rich-Giueth ouer his royall roabes, and becommeth professed. ard the fecond, fpreadeth the Imposture of his being alive.

His death and tombe ibidem The miracle of his coffin or 619.41 Drawen from Pomfrait and tombe Sebby or Sebba King of the hanged at London 619.40 Services at Coronation accor-Faft-Savons entombed, 380. ding to fundry Tenures. 591. Sebert King of the Eaft-Saxons Iulius Seuerus fent to suppreffe Conuerted to Christianity.

Great Scale delinered vnto E

wardthes.

Seauen Sleepers

Commotions in Britaine. 218.4 His raigne, iffue and buriall, Lord General of the forces in Britaine Sebred King of the Eaft-Sax-225.8 Septim. Seversu Cafar to Gale-301.13 257.2 Septim. Seneras chosen Empe-Histoigne Segburga King Kenwalds widrour in Germany 227-3 He wageth warre for the Emdow ruleth ouer the West-298.8 ibid. 5 Saxons pire *ibid. 5* He banisheth the souldiers for Abbeffe of Ely. Segfrid King of East-Saxons betraying Perinax 227.7 His description 2:0.17 Commeth into Britaine in 201.11

Segonar a King in Kent. 173.3 Segontians where feated, 172. person with his sonnes Baffamus and Geta 228. 4 Stephen de Segraue Lord chiefe Iusticiar, taketh Sanctuary for practifing against Ri-chard Earle Marshall. 521 His good parts 230.17 Defirous of glory 228.6 Confecrated to God. 231.2 Surnamed Britannicus Maxi-His Coines 327.329.9 Falleth ficke in Torke 219,

Received againe into favour. John Lord Segrane Cuftes of His freech to his Counfell & Scotland Scotland 549.42 Thomas Seimer Lord Admirali Captains. marrieth Queene Katharine His death. Parr Dowager 809.53 Thomas Seimer Lord Admirall Hisbirth His vertues and vices æqually beheaded 809.54.55 ibidem. His enditement Hisraigne and age. 230.17 Edward Seimer Lord Protector

Seuerus his porch 332.2 Sexburga Abbelle of Elia. 310 articled against by the Lords 809.56 Edmond Shan Lord Major of In what points 809.60 Emprisoned in Beauchampes London of Counfell to Ri-Towre at Windfor, & thence chard Duke of Glocester, & Lord Protector 705.53 Iohn Shaa Clerke (brother to fent to the Towre of London 810.50 Released out of the Towre. the forefaid Edmand Shas)

Doctor of Dininity, a flatte-ring preacher, made for Ri-Privily armed, commeth to the Councell-Table,811.67 chard Lord Protector, 705 Sent to the Towre ibidem Arraigned of treason, and of He dierh for very shame of a felonie fermon 705.53.706.55 His shamelesse affertions at 811.67 Condemned of felony, ibid. Paules Crosse 706.54 Shan-O-Neal his forces broke. His speech vpon the Scaffold.

812.79 837-45 Beheaded Slaine by Alexander Oge and Selber Abbey, or Saint Germans 827.46 his brother Shan-O Neal raifeth rebellion Abbey founded 435,65 Some progenie planted in Afia in Ireland 8:6-27 His parentage; and vnnatural Semiamyra mother of Heliogacruelty Histitle to Viller. 837-40 827.42

balse 232.8 Slaine and dragged with him, He tyrannizeth in Fifter. 827. Seminary Priefts banished by His outrages 837-43 Proclamation out of Great His manner how hee was inaugurated O Neal 872.41 880.21

beth 827-44 Doeth good feruice in Ireland ibidem. He falleth off againe ibidem

Sheepe of Cottefwold transported into Spaine, hurtfull to 676.17 England Lord Sheffeild flaine at Nor-808.29 wich Shene or Shine, now Richmond, burnt 746.61 Shiriffes of Shires, their extortions and practifes looked

into by the Barons 535.95 Shipwracke of Prince William his brethren fifter, and other Gallants 439.40.41 Ships of Britaine 169.11 Shirburne an Episcopall See.

Pride in Shooes reformed 626 (Iane) Shores wife, spoyled of all that shee had by the Shiriffes of London 704.49.
Shee doth penance ibidem. Her description ibid.co. Her qualities 705,50 When shee died 704.55 Her poore estate Shoreham in Suffex why to called 226,5

Shrewsbury battel 617.26 Sierclos a Britaine marrieth Eurgaine fifter to Joseph of Sicilie one Continent with Ita-155.4. lie Cains Sidins Geta his valour. 194.3

Sir Henry Sidney Lord Deput of Ireland 827.45 Sir Philip Sidney flaine neer to Zutchen 8 . 6. 175 Sigebert a denout and learned King of the East-Angles.309

He promoteth Religion and learning 31 Becommeth a Monke, ibi 310.5 Hisraigne Sigebert King of West-Saxons 320.I4 299.14 Giuen to viciouines, and op-230.16

preffion Killed ibiden His raign Sigebert King of Eaft-Saxons, 332.2 201.0 Sigibert King of East-Saxons.

Restored the Christian faith, & was baptized He is murdered ibidens His Raigne and iffue ibidens Sigeforth and Morcar brethren murdred by Edrick, 383.20.

Sigeherd King of East-Saxons. His Coine Siger de Courtney fideth with K. Edward the third against France 570. 41 Sighere King of the East-Saxons becommeth an Apostara Reclaimed againe Sigifmund King of Polonia his Embassadour to Queene Eli-

zabeth 870. 281 His mellage Sigifmund Emperor trauelleth into England for to make peace betweene France and England 634-31 Honourably entertained and stalled Knight of the Garrer 634.33

Submitteth to Queen Elizas | He entreth a league with England youngericles 625.25.20 Signes prefaging the end of K. Henry the fixth his raigne and translation of the Crowne.

671 88 Silures descended from Spaine. 162.7

Silures inthose of Southwales withfland the Romans. 195.13 They become the more refolute vpon Claud. Cafars rhrears 706 18 Simon Zelotes martired in Briteine Simon Earle of Hampton taketh

part with King Stephen 449. His description Simen a Monke of Swinstead Abbey poiloneth King Ichn. Is poisoned himselfe there-

with, 506.62 Richard Simon Architect of Lambert Symnel, the Idols conspiracy Another Sinon taken prifoner at Stokefield 722.22 Condemned to a Dungeon and perpetuall shackles 733.

Simon Tibald Archbishoppe of Canterbury beheaded by Rebels 595.10 Simonie losse of patronage for 467.82 cuer imonie in the Popes. 474.16 Simon Montfort Farle of Leice-

fer refuicth great honour in France, to avoide fufpition of difloialty. 531,82 Reconciled to king Henry the third. ibid 83 Poffeffed of King Henry the third, Richard King of Romans, and their two eldest

fonnes See more in Montfort Olinere Sinclere Lieutenant General of Iames the fourth king of Scotland his forces, inuadeth England 781.117 Disdained of the Nobles, loc-

feth the Field. Siricins Archbishop of Canterbury perfwadeth compofition with the Danes

Sithricke 2 Danish King of Northumberland. 364.4 His fonne Godfrey and Anlaf disquiet the English. 364.

Pope Sixtue the fourth his Bull against Elizabeth Queene of England 857.187 Sextus Quintus the Pope, his Crusado 856.195 856.195 His contribution to the inua

ding of England. 856.195 Six Articles denifed by Stephen 779.105 Enacted. What they were. ihiden Repealed Sec. 18 In some fort repealed in king Henry the eighth his time : revived and executed by Q. 826.86 Mary 826.86 Slaughter of the Scots at Dap-

line or the water of Erne, 168 24.25 Slidda king of the East-Saxon his marriage, death and iffue

Marke Smeton confesseth'against Queene Anne Bullen, and his owne conferences, yet was executed. 771.88 THE TABLE.

ned

tilb.

Degraded

in Britaine

A Smiths francke speech in the [behalfe of Hubert de Burgh Earle of Kent Sir Thomas Smith Embaffado into France to demand Calais according to couenants. Hispleading for Calais be fore King Charles the ninth, the Queene mother &c. fitting in flate. 838.819 840.84 Sociall warres, what it is, and the Law or right therof. 468 Solem-Moffe Field, 782,118

Iohn Lord Somerfet flaine at Temkesbury Fielde, 684-71 Iobn Someraile 2 Traitor firangleth himfelfe in Newgate. Sophes termed Senethors 162.9 A Sophistical aquiuocation denifed for the killing of K. Edward the second 568.7 Soules immortall. Southampton burnt by the French. 571.44 South-Saxons kingdome the circuit of it. 205 1 The end thereof. Spaine so named of Hifpalus, Compared to an Oxe-Hide.

Spalding a Traitor betraieth

Berwicke to King Robert

Bruce and by him was put to death Spaniards long vnknowne to Historiographers 169.9 Spaniards in Ireland discomfited and flaine 875.319 Spaniards rather die then yeeld ₹81.110 Spanish fleete vanquished by K. Edward the third. 581.110 Hugh de Spenfer both father & Sonne in high fauour with King Edward the 2, banj-

155.

Both renoked out of exile, Hugh Spenfer the elder cruelly cut vp aliue and quartered 562,62 fubiccts Hugh de Spencer the yonger another Piers Gauesten 559

Hanged on a Gallowes fifty trance foote high, headed & quartered 502.67 Hugh Spenfer the elder created Earle of Winchester 560.47 Spenfers fell the Kings fauour

and pardon at a high rate Hee buieth his elder brother Theobald his title to Norman 561.ct A Spirit speaking in the Walle by and England for money 825.76 Sporms a youth, Neroes wife. Hee compoundeth also with 201.

Edward Squire his treason and execution. 849.120 Sir Humfey Stafford slaine by Inche Cade, 664-51 Thomas Stafford with others His viual! oth flirre rebellion 828,109

Beheaded. 829.105 His great valour in fight, 450 Sir Humfrey Stafford rebelleth against King Henry the 7. Taken prisoner in battle450,28 730-1 He taketh Sanctuary, and is

executed at Tiburne, ibid Humfrey Lord Stafford Earle of be a Monke or Pilgrime ibid. Denonsbire repelled by Sir Loden with yrons &c.451.33 John Coniers & the rebeis of King Stephen his death 454.49 the North Hee and the L. Herbert Earle 679.32 His commendation

His deeds of denotion, ibidem of Pembroke fall out for their Inne in Bambury. 679 death

Hee leaueth with his archers | Sterling money who first coithe Earle of Pembrock, 579.33 Beheaded at Bridgewater, ibid.

Stamboli, sometime Conftanti-A Standard or Measure first ordained, Lord Stanley wounded at the Councell Table 703.44 His fearefull dreame ibid. 45 Lord Stanley fet at liberty out of the Towre of the Towre 713.7
Thomas Stanley Earle of Darks husband to Margaret Gou-tesse of Richmond suspected of Richard the third. 722 Hee and other Prelates depriued, in fanour of the Normans

He refuseth to come vnto K. Richard the third and his an fwere vnto him 723.52 Sir William Stanley LordChamberlaine to King Henry the

feuenth accused for conspiracy with Perkin Warbecke 739-3 Beheaded Stanley a fugitiue, plotteth Q.
Elizabeths death 849.112

citecteth nought 688.99 Stoke bartaile 733-22.23 Stoner Vorsimers monument Sir Willam Stanley made Captaine of Denenter 856.176 Traiteroufly felleth it to the A precious Stone hauing virtue Spaniards 857.177 Staple of wooll translated out to make one invincible, 517 857.177

of Flaunders into England, Stones Church in Staffordshire Walter Stapleton Bilhop of why fo called Stoneheng crecked by Aureline
Ambrofine 314.3
The description of it. 315 339.2 Excefter beheaded \$62.60 Strange Starres appearing

The Starre badge of the E. of Doctor Story his flory 844.79 How hee was taken in his Oxford at Barnet field. 683.64 Stephano Ibarra the King of owne grinne and executed Spame his fecretary complot-845. 80 Steure 2 Water in Britaine. teth the death of Queene Elizabeth 849.115.118
Stephen Earle of Mortaigne 186.3 George Stradlon, 2 graue Citizen of London his oration in and of Bulleigne King of Eng. the commô Councel 810.58

Land his Armes broad Seale George L. Strange pledge with and Coine. 445 King Scephen his descent shid King Richard the 2. for his father Thomas Stanley. 722 His Princely parts ibid. Fealty iworne vnto him 446.2 How he escapeth 75 Strangers advanced by His personage and good en-Henry the third dowments Henry the third 518.36 Discontenteth his Nobles Free from all exactions of his thereby His periarie ibidem Strangers commanded to de-

ihiden part the Realme 513-18 Crowned Richard Stronghow, Earle of Pembroch of Chepftow or Shi-gil follicited by T Strineling taken His Charter at his first en-Recourred of a lethargy.447-9 gil, follicited by Dermot Mac. Heentreth Normandy ibiden Murgh for Ireland 462. 52 Maketh league with Lewis the feuenth King of France Entreth Ireland with his for-

ces 463.56 Marrieth Lady Eug, Dermots daughter 464.67 He winneth Dublin 464.58 Gilbers Strongbow Earle of Strygul 438.32 Tho. Stukeley filled Marqueffe 447.10

Geffrey Earle of Anion for of Ireland money 447.10 He returneth out of Norman-Subfidie granted by the Poll of both Sexes occasion of dy into England and winneth the Castle of Bedford 447.11 mischiefe mischiefe 594. 16 Subsidie dealed to King Henry His viual oth 447.13 He fubdueth Scotland 448.16 the third

His Acts

527.60 Subfidie denied to be paid. 761 Succession of the Crowne to brother in what cafe 557.5 He defires liberty and not the Sucronius Paulinus gouerneth Crowne 451-32 He protesteth that hee would Britaine

He prepareth against Bondices Suetonine Beatus 2 noble Britaine became a Christian 204

His wife, his honours and The Sunne in his brightneffe 454- 54 badge of Edward Earle of Yyyyyy 2

197.8.80

March vpon what occasion,

506. 62

Stermoold a valiant Capitaine Suffolkemen the first that aide vnder Earle Goda 376. 6
Robert Stewart fonne of Marib Queene Mary 816.5 Summe a Towne in Position and rie Bruce daughter to King name of a Familie 483 Robert Bruce, maketh head a-gainst Edw. Ballol, in claime Two Sunnes feene at once in the Skie 824.67
Fine Sunnes or Parhelians apof the Crowne of Scotland. Stigand Archbishop of Canter peare at once in the Skie in

burie his countell to the Ken-Oath of Supremacy enacted. 518,27 416.6 A Surcoate of British Pearles 418.19 187.11 Sures a Goddeffe.

thidem Earle of Suffex his honourable Stiliche gouernour of Italie carriage toward Lady Etiafter hee had beene emploied zabeth Sathred & of East-Saxons, 301 822.51.52 274.7 He hazardeth the whole Empire 270. 4 Doctor Stinington fent in Em-Expulsed by Egbers Silver Swans the Badge of Prince Edward fon to Henbaffage to Francis Duke of

Britaigns for to haue away Henry Earle of Richmond but rie the fixth 668 77 weating fickneffe. 811.66 Whence caused. 108 Swaine Eatle Goodwins fonne for the flaughter of his brother Beern goeth in Pilgrimage to Ierufalem 400. oronell Sware flain in the bar-

tell at Stoke 733. 21 Sweyne or Swaime fonne of Canutus King of Norway conquered from Saint Oleffe. Sweyne King of Denmarke his descent

Sweyne or Swaine Kingsof Denmarke enuadeth England, 377 17.18.19 Put to flight 377.28

Sodainely ftrucken, whereof hee dieth 379.32 A Swine fet vpon the gate of Iernsalem Swithelme King of East Saxons 219.7 baptized 301.7 Saint Swithune

Saint Swythune Bishoppe of Winchester Winchester 350.2 Sylnester Givaldus Cambrensis when hee flourished 164 Lambert Symnel erected as an Idoll against King Henrie the feuenth Proclaimed and crowned K. of England at Dublin, as heir

to George Duke of Clarence 731.13.14.332.17 ambert Symnel erected as fon to King Edward the fourth. He with an Army landeth at

Fowdrey Pile IR Lancashire. He with Richard Simon taken prisoner at Stokefield, 733. Lambert Symnell condemned

to the Kings kitchen, and be. came one of the Kings Falconers. ibidem.
Synod at London in the prefence of the two kings, Henries, Father and fonne. 467.

The Canons thereof, ibidem, A Synode prouinciall holden at Oxford by Stephen Langton Archbishoppe of Canterbury A Synode at Caffile for refor-

mation of the Irish Church. 464.61 A Synode about celebration of

331

272.

374

274.6.275.0

terbury refuseth to confecrate

After fasting and prayer mi-

Theodofiss Emperour with Us

and Landen

His death

rour in the East

her auarice and base mar-

chandizing 403.9 Killed with a thunderbolt.

Thirty viurping tyrants or

Emperours at once against

Earle of Tholonz and his peo

ibidea

245-5

514.21

ibiden

605.06

607.99

559-39

Ouerbold in checking his fo

ueraine

Iohn Lord Talbot flaine with his fonne Vicount Lafle,666 His commendation, ibidem Afamous warriour 653.12 His fword Sir Gilbert Talbot iovneth with Henry Earle of Richmond. 722 47 Taliefin a Briton Poet 163.12 Tancred King of Sicilie 474.18 Tamia an addition to Countri-159.7 Given by the Greekes .ibidem Tanned leather ferueth for ar-Taniflry iaw in Ireland what it 837-42 Taporus See Magnetius
Tauestoke Abbey founded . 372 Taus Frith thoght to be Tweed Taximagul a King in Kent. 173 Teples of Mercy i. Sanctuaries.

468.89 dicated The Inscription over the dore Templers abolified throughour Christendome 556,12 Templers 54 with their great mafter burnt at Paris. 556.

Temple Church in London de-

487.II

ple hold of the Albigenies Temporizing betweene King Edward the fourth, and Richard the fourth, & Richard Thomas the Holy an English Nest the flour Earle of War Schoole in Rome rebuilt. 35 t Terab the first Recorded Idohomes of Brotherton Conne to King Edward the first 552. Terwin belieged by King Hen-His wives and iffue 553.71 ry the eighth 754-7 Wonne by the English shidem homas Earle of Lancafter the greatest subject of England in Tetricm Emperour 246.4 He commethin vnder Ameli-King Edward the second his us his protection 249.7 His wife stollen away, con-Tenksbury field Thanies River fortified with stakes sharpened, &cc. 186.

Aided by King Henry the first

feffeth her incontinency. 558 Thomas Earle of Lancaster and King Edward the second at Thanet the Iland inhabited by 558.32 Hengist and Horsa 289.1 Th. Thanie Blewbeard executed peace Censured 559.47 Called in feorne King Arthur for treaton 662.46 Thusdicess Bilhop of London and whereupon 560.4: Thomas of Woodflocke his hodriven into the deferts of Cornwall and Wales 207.20 nours and vertues Wilfull and obstinate. lafper Theodor Earle of Pemibiden Murdered at Calis broch fonne to Sir Owen The-Entombed in Westminster. 672.02 Sir Owen Theodor taken and beibiden headed Thomas of Woodstocke created Theobald Earle of Bleffis in Duke of Glocefter 600.56 Arms against Lewis the Frenh His death conspired 6e 2.69

Surprised and emprisoned, Theobald Earle of Bloys layeth claime to Normandy 447.8 bom. Earle of Lancaster ta_ Hee claimeth England alfo. 447.10 ken prifoner

Condemned of high treason, Theobald Earle of Blois holdeth and beheaded. 559.40 Thomas Ratcliffe Earle of Sullex with King Henry the fonne against King Henry the father 465.65 Theobald Archbishop of Canleadeth against the Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland being in open rebellion 842.68 Prince Enfrace the fonne of K. S. Thomas Hospitall in South-Stephen for King 453.42
Theodors the Christian Virgin warke given to the City of

London with reuenewcs, 314 242.3 Theodolius entreth into Britain Theren Idol of the Saxons. Highly commended and belo-Thored an English Duke did 270.10. good feruice against the Theodofus fellow Emperour with Valentinian the younger Danes Vanquished by the Gothes

380.40 George Thorne a Champion for Thomas Paramon 851.135 Thracians come from Tyras. raculously obtaineth victory Sir Nicholas Throgmorton atraigned for Kets conspiracy, 821.47 Francis Throgmorton his trea-847.90.91 lentinian the younger, his fons. Apprehended, confesseth his He submitteth to the Church conspiracy 846.93

How hee suppressed choler hunder in a cleare skie. 469 Ominous to Robert Denerenx His progenie, raigne and age. when hee fet forward to Ire-Theodofius the fecond, Empe-873.302 buriday whence it feemeth to Governed under the Persian bee named 288.8 Thurstan Archbishop of Yorke 278.3 King 278.3 Theodoricke King of Bernicia confecrated by Pope Calixi against King Henry the first Theodwald King of Bernicia. is command 440.42 Enftalled without fubication ibidem Theones Bishoppe of Torke, dri-uen into the deserts of Cornto Canterbury . Banifhed walland Wales. 207.20 Thirs wife to Earle Goodwin,

hursten & Feader Collectors of Tribute flaine 397.7 byre King Ethelreds da wife to Gormon King of Danes 355,12 Tiberius Cafar his parents, 190 Hee murdereth Agrippa.ibid.

His tyranny He fought to convert the nobility His Hypocrific His libidinouineffe, ibider His Epicurisme Termed Biberius Nero, ibidems Careleffe in ftate gouernment Hisraigne and death, 191 6

His person & bodily endow ments imes motions of three feueral 162-4 Timothy his herefie 277,10 556.11 Tinne plentifull in Britaine. Iohn Tiptoft Earle of Worceste Lieutenant of King Edward

the fourth in Ireland, beheaded 681.53 Tirell killeth King William Rufus in New-forrest 433.40 Iames Tirel King Richard the third his inffrument to mur ther King Edward the fourth 715.16 his fonnes 714.17 His parts Knighted for feeing King Edward the fifth and his bro-

ther murdered Executed at Towre-hill for treason 716.20 Triulus king of the East-Angles his raigne 309-2 Titus Velpalian made Emperor without all contradiction. 212.1 The darling and delight of

Mankind

His heroicall vertues ikidem His youth how employed 212-2 213.2

His faults 211.4 His repentance at his death-His government. His vertues His ageraigne and death by poylon ogodummus a British Prince

saine in a bloudy battell 175.9-194.8 Compris the valiant Scythian Queene 240,100,10 Tofto deprined of the Earldom of Northumberland, 403.7 Cruel to his brother Harolds feruants 403.7 He affaileth the coafts of Eng-

land 405.19 Iames Touchet Lord Audler flaine 668.72 ames Touchet alias Tnichet L: Awdler Captain of the Cornish in rebellion. 742.46 Executed Tower of London founded 420

VValled about The battel at Towton on Palm. Sonday 675.7 Traige Emperour. His Coine His descent and praise, 271

Hee raifed the Romans Empire to the highest glorie. Persecuteth Christians ibidem

Maffacreth the lewes 217.3 His death Hisportraiture and descripti-217.5 Traile-Bafton Infliciars what they were

Tranflation of the New Teftament into English by Tin dal 771.86 Traitors executed 844.78 Cu Trebelous Lieurenant in Bri-218 : taine

Trebellim Maximus Lieutenat Generall in Britaine 200.24 He fiderh with Vitellius, 208,2 Trinobantes fubmit to Cafar 186.8 Robert Trifilian Lord Chiefe

Iusticiar of England, 598.47 Executed at Tiburne. 604. 78 Triumph in London, and about

for defeating the Spanish inuincible Armado 863. 222.

Triumpicare ereded between M. Antonius, Emilius Lepidue and Officularus, 188.2 Trimmuirs of England three Richards, Torke, Warnicke and Salisbury 668.72 Andrew Trolope 2 valiant captaine drawne to be a Yorkift 658 72

He abandoneth the Torkills 669.74 Trophees in London erected, flood long vafinished, by reason of the plague, 885. Truce betweene England and

Scotland spon what points. 783.43 Frace for 18 monerhs between England and France 601. 29 Truce betweene the Kings of

England and of Scotland. 559. Truce between Philip de Valor THE TABLE.

A Christian.

His defects.

King Edward the third, in the question of little Britaine Truce betweene King Stephen and Prince Henry Fitz Em-Truce or peace between Lema the French King, and the two KK Henries of England, father and fonne Articles thereof Truce betweene King Richard the first and the Saladine for three yeeres. Truce ber ene Philip the French king and Henry the third King of England. 511 Truce for three yeeres between England & France in K. Hen-

ry the third his time \$16.29 Truce betweene England and France concluded at Burges, preiudiciall to the English 588.148 Trumpetter commanded to found before King Offs and his fucceffors Sir William Truffel a Iudge, in 345.8 behalfe of the Realme renounceth all homage and allegeance to King Edward the fecond 564-74 Tufe what it is Tufa or Thunfthe Roman Standard Iames Tuichet. See Touchet. A Tunne of Tenis balles fent from the Dolphin of France to Henry the fifth King of England 628.25 How it was promifed to bee repaied

Tank in Africke built out of of the ruines of Carthage Befreged by King Lewis of The seige raised vpon Capitu-543.2 The Turkifb Enfigne. 479. 57 Turkes come from Togorma. 1606

V Aldenfes. See Albigenfes,

pire with Valentinian

His death

Put to dearn

Valens parener in the Em-

Turkish Empire of a meane be-Vetturiones Eaftern Pitts. 260 ginning 170.14
Turkil a leader of the Danes. 170.14 Vellocatus Parameur to Cartif 378.16 Protecteth the English for pay mandua. Venutius a famous King of the

379. 31,32 Brigantes rebelieth in Britaine Tarlogh Leinigh vsurpeth the title of O-Negle A tyrant to his neighbours Iohn de Vere Earle of Oxford. furprifed St. Michaels Mount Turney belieged by King Henagainst K. Edward the fourth rie the eight 755.10 Wonne by the English ibid.

271

Streightly imprisoned in The ftrength of Turney. ibid. Normandy Yeelded to King Henry the John de Vere Earle of Oxford ioineth with Henry Earle of Deliuered vpon composition Rubmond, and in great fauour to the French with him now King 721. 757.20 Tydders or Tiders after three

descents English, and fine Robert de Vere Marquelle of Princes, now vanished. 746. Dublin and the first in England 600.16 Duke of Ireland Dieth in Brabant exiled. ibid.

> Buried in Coln Priory. 606.92 Robert Vere Earle of Oxford&c. forfaketh his wife Philippa, and marrieth Lancerona. 602.

Valentia the name of Britaine 160.8, 270.0 penurie Valentine rebelleth against The-Verneil battaile in Perth. 653 270.7 Verulamium, or Verolamium Valentinian elected Emperour. famous Citie neere the place

His death age and raigne 271 Sacked by the Iceni. His birth and parentage, 269 L. Versis affociate to M. Aurelist in the Empire His Coine His personnage and vertues He persecuteth the Christians 271:1: Telpasian his rising and by what Valentinian the elder marrieth Abbettors

Fauftine during the life of Succeedeth Vitellius in the Seweza his owne wife. 272 Roman Empire. 210.1 His worth. Valentinian the yonger, Empe-His originall rour with his brother Grati-His imploiment in youth Strangled in his bed. 273.10 shid : Chosen Emperour by the Ma-His raigne and age, ibid. Valentinian the third Emperor fian Souldiers 210 € Proclaimed Emperour at Ce-

in the West faria and elexandria 211. His descent Valerianus Emperour. 244-1 His descent. ibid. 2 A great scourge of God against the lewer ibid 15 A protector of Christians at His peaceable death. His endowments of body, Taken prisoner by Sapores ibidem His vertues ibiden His miserable seruitude, ibid.

Cruelly tortured and murthered by Sapores. ibidem 4 Rescued by his sonne Titus ibid. His raigne and age Vetranio Proclaimed Emperor Vandals fent to inhabite Bri-2622 Vffa first King of the East-An-Vandals infest Denmarck in the Offines who they were absence of King Canutes, 391

Robert Ifford Ealre of Suffolke Variance betweene England taken prisoner by the French and France Varronianus a very infant de-Vicount de Melun bewraieth clared Cefar the Frenchmens intended L. Vanclere Deputie of Calla treachery under Richard Neuill Earle of Victory at Sea against the Warwicke impeacheth his lan-Victorinus. Sec Aureline.

Taxed for playing with both Victorium a Moore his Stratagem Baftard of Vaurus hanged on s Viltorinm Lieutenant in Bri tree which himfelfe had natame med Vaurus 647.76 Villa Franca facked by the Vbfola the Saxons Temple all English Iulius Vindex opposeth Nero 283.8 Vellins Bolanus Deputie in Bri.

200. 2 Firgil the Poet alludeth to the uniuerfall peace when Christ was borne 189.6 Hee alludeth to the birth of . 196. 2 Christ

irgins eleuen thousand sent with Vrfuls into Armerica. caft away at Sea, & perifhed In Virginea 2 Colony of Bri-

saines feated Virins Lapus President in Bri-Hil-Vites, i. Helmetians. 285. Vitelling how hee came to bee Emperour 208.2 Glad of Otho his death 209.1

His magnificent entrance into Rome, ibidem. 2 His descent diversly reported thid . His father in great fauor with former Emperours ibid. His excessive gluttony & expences .

death.

His person

Hisage

His banishment and death in gers. Vifter spoiled Viyles his Alter in Caledo

where St. Albans ftandeth.

178. | teth the Scots, Vnderwood betraieth his Mailer 198 the Duke of Sufforks in Aftley 221.2 Vnion treated of at Eleys for ibid the French State 865, 344

nion of England and Scotland before time actempted but effected by King James 884.3 Jashdelie King of Granada loofeth it. loofeth it. 746.62 Vodine Archbishop of London reprotech King Vortigern 290

Britaine

Parke

818. 22

It coft him his life Vologefes a Pertian Prince 197 Volusenus Inl. Casars spie in

Volufianus Emperour with his father Treb. Gallus 242.4 ibid. His Coine Vortigerne King of Britaine. 28g. i His raigne full of troubles

His valiant seruice in Britaine ibid Chofen King by the Britaines to repell the common Ene-1946 mic 282. 6 His descent ibid. 313 Sendeth for the Saxons, ibid. Why hee fent for the Saxons Giueth himfelfe to fenfuality

Enamoured of Rowens and weddeth her 289.4 He marrieth his owne daugh. ter by Rowena Deposed by the Britaines his owne fubieds.

Deposed and imprisoned Restored to the Crowne 290 214.11 Taken prifoner 290.12 He flieth into Wales 291.14

His Castle in Wales Burntwith his incestuouswife in his Caftle 313.291.15 His iffue Vortimer chosen King by the Britaines in lieu of his father

Vortigerne 290.9.313.2 Poisonedby Rowens 290.10 214 A valiant Prince. Vortimers battailes in what places fought 313.2 Versimers monument, 314 ortiporus King of the Britains

Gildas his censure of him.ibid. Vrbane the Pope raifeth warre for the Holy land. 430. 26 Pope Vrbane the fifth laboreth to vnite the Kings of England and France against the common Enemie of Christen.

dome' 587.41 skfren King Edwins fonne. Viurers called Camfini here in England England 522. 52 Viurers not knowne in London 522.53

Viurpers of the West Empire. His raigne and ignominious With their monies, 245. 246. 200.8 310.9

ibid 8

876.324

160,7, 168, 0

Vter Pendragon King of Britain Libelled against by Ast olo-His victory.

In loue with Lady Igren, ibid How hee obteined her. 316 Poyfoned & buried in Semeibid why furnamed Pendragon.

Whether he vifited Britaine 168.0 Sir Robert Vmfrevil discomfi-A valiant Captaine of the Robert Welthrome an Arch-Re-

bell in Suffelke stiled King

of the Commons there. 595.

Westminster Abbey Church

Westminster Church enlarged

the third

newly founded by K. Henry

VVBattaile of Wakefield 677. 89 A Wall in Britaine from Tine to Carleil A Wall made by Senerus from Sea to Sea. 220.8 A Wall denifed by the French for the inuation of England. Walbrook in London whence it tookename Wales ruled by English Lawes and Officers. 545.15
Wales Princes do homage vnto William Conquerer. 420. Wales by whom first fastened to the Crowne of England, 506.6 Let out to ferme. 530.78 Walker a Citizen and Grocer of Landon beheaded for words bearing a double confruction. ftruction, 675.4
William Wallace alias Wallai executed 550.47 Wallingford Castle besieged by King Stephen Wallo the Popes Legat his good feruice for expulsion of Lewis and the French 508.2 Our Lady of Walfingham and of Tpfwich with other Image 778. 100 burne Walshamin Effex named Holy-Croffe by King Harold. 409 Waltheof Earle of Northampton discouereth a conspiracie and loofeth his head 420.34 His great estate. Walter Deureux Earle of Effex his expedition vnto VI fter, and his votimely death. 853.149 Walther Bishop of Comentry, onely allowed King Edward the fecond his affection to Piers de Gaueston, 556.11 William Walworth Major of London killeth Wat Tyler 595 Knighted and endowed with Lands by King Richard the Wannes dich how called before time. 328.6 Wark Castle rased by the Q. of Scots. 670.82 Wark Castle besieged by the 761.49 Iohn de Warren Earle, Cuftos of Scotland 548.33

Iohn de Warren Earle of Survey killeth Alan le Zouch Lord Chiefe Iufticiar in Westminfter Hall, 539.105 Warren Earle taketh part with Stephen against the Nobles. VVarbams speech to the Duke of Burgundie to ouerthrow Perkin Warbeck, his feigned title. 739, 36 Warres in all parts of the Em-

pire. 269.2 Earle of Warwicke condemned

of high treason and banished

Counterfeit Earle of Warwick

607,100

in King Henry the feuenth his time hanged. 745-59 Earle of VV arwicke defigned to die. 744.60 See more in Edward Plantagenet last male of that house 746 VVilliam Wallace a leader of Ourlawee in Scotland driverh

and enriched 431.1 Westminster Hall built, 431.31 William Ormefby King Edward the first his Iustician The East part of it rebuilt. in Scotland, out of Scotland 428.71 Weltminster Statutes first ena-He putteth to flight lohn Warren Earle of Surrey, and the cted 543.10 Westminster Chappell built, English forces. Wat Tyler his rebellion 595.20 First by King Edward the 3. The Idoll of Clownes, ibid. Slaine in Smithfield 595.21 Watches of the night foure. and calarged by King Herry the 7

the 7 589.154 VVeft Saxons Kingdome, 296 ¥84 Waters or bourne burfting out The circuit thereof 297,2 Wethercock or Eagle of Pauls of the earth of the earth \$80.85 Waterford alias Porthlago wor Church blowne downe by by Richard Strongbow. 464 tempest Vhite-rose a title giuen to Ka-Watfon 2 Prieft condemned for therine Gordon Perkin Wartreafor and executed, 886. Thomas Weyland Lord Chiefe

Weare or Ware fortresse built Iustice scuerely punished by the Danes 338 23
John VV eathamfted Abbot of 545.17 Werlford in Ireland rendred & giuen to Robert Fitz-Stephe Saint Albans when he wrote, 463.56 Hee disproueth the discourse It reteineth ftill English attire and language. 463.45 or narration of Brute ibiden Wefford speech. ibid Whorwell Abbey founded. 373. Weights & measures who first ordained and fetled. 506,63

Weis Cathedrall Church fou Sir Thomas West his conspira-208.11 A Well of bloud in Barkefbire. cieand rebellion 818.28 His proclamation against Q. Sir Robert Wells, fonne to the Maries marriage with Phi-Lord Wells raifeth a Commolip the. 2. King of Spaine. tion in Lincolnelbire 680.29, 810.28 Taken and beheaded 680.40 His demands 819.35 Wellesbourne a family in Eng-How answered by Sir Edward

Hastings 819.35 Land whence descended, 507. Heemarcheth toward Lon-Lord Wells beheaded 680. 820.28 Hee and his company spoyle Welshmen come from Cim Winchester house brica Cherfonefus. Hee remoueth from South-VVelfhmen refift King Stephe warks to Kingsten vpon Thames Welfh hoftages hanged at Hee paffeth the Thames. Norting ham for their fathers difloyalty to King Iohn. Commeth to Ludgase, 821.

VVelfh Lords in Armes foon Yeeldeth to Clarentieux,821. repelled by King Henry the Beheaded on Tower-Hill. 511.11

VVelfh in Armes againe in K.

Henry the third his dayes.

Welsh rife in Armes for op-

Their refolution in defence of

Welfh voluntary aide against

VVeifihmen in Armes against

Lord Wenlocks flaine by Ed-

not following him at the bat

tell of Tentesbury. 684-7 William de Warren first Earle

Lord Wentworth late Deputy

of Callis arraigned for the

Wereburg a Nunne in Ely.307

Saint Wereburgs the Cathe-drall Church in Westchester

mund Duke of Somerfet

King Henry the first subdu-

prefion

Scatland

of Surrey

loffe of Callis

A professed virgin

liberries

\$25.25

ihidem

426.75

833.9

547.29

Wibbs King of the Mercians, his Issue,raigne and death. 533.88 Wiccingi a Company of Danes

357.17 William Wickham Bishoppe of Winchester haththe Broade Seale giuen vnto him.604. Iohn Wickliffe of Oxford the

lampe to many noble Diuines. 207.22 His doctrine foreadeth, and is embraced in England in King Richard the fecond hisrime 610.117 Approved especially by the Viruerstry of Oxford ibidem, Opposeth the church of Rome Hisfollowers called Lolards, ib IohnWickliffe calumniated &

defended 610.118
Hedieth of a palife bidem
His flanderous Epitaph deuifed by a Monke ibidem.
The principall points of his

doctrine His bookes condemned as he 630,35 Wicklinians burnt and ftrang-

626 15 led Widomere Viscount of Limores finderh an hoard of gold and 481.68 Part thereof fent by him to King Richard the first, is not wen accepted 481.68
Wight Isle surprised by the
French Wight Isle why so named.

Wigtred or Withred king of Kent hisraigne and death.294.11 Blacke-Will alias Will. Slaughter, appointed to ferue prince
Edward the 5, and his brother 715.18 Ralph Wilford a counterfeite

Earle of Warwicke in King

Henry the feuenth his time hanged 745.59 William de Wilfrd a valiant Sea-Captaine his exploites 618.39 and prizes William a promoting calumniator of great men to the king hanged 524.60 Wilfride Bishoppe of Selste. 296

His speech as touching cele bration of Eafter 331
William of Malmsbury when hee wrote -62.12 William of Newborough when hee liued 163.16 He enueigheth against Geffrey Ap-Arthur. 164-18 With what denife it is put by

William Long-Espec,2. Duke of Normandie his parentage. 213.21 After Baptifine named Robert

ibide m Murdered through the practife of Lewis the French King.

William Longe-Spee first naturall fonne of Henry the fecond by Kofamond 471.111 His marriage, Issue, death and buriall Villiam Alberle cruelly whip-ped and hanged guiltleffe.

William of Ance for confpi ring William Rufus his death berett of eyelight and virilitie 430.23
William Earle of Mortaigne

taken prisoner 437.21
William Tpres created Earle of Kent 451,35 He and his Flemings fauored of King Stephen 447-13 Embattelleth against his 450.26

William de Tyres true to King Stephen 450 20 William Long-champe Chancel lour of England for his infinite Tyrannie thrust out of the Realme by John Sans terre

Bishoppe of Ely viceroy or Prince and Prieft in Englad, in King Richard the first his

ablence 473.10
William eldest sonne to King
Henry the first, created D. of Normandy 438.34 His death and buriall. 470.

William Connect Rakert Curtwoife to be possessed of Normandr 439.36 Hec THE TABLE

Hee weddeth Sibyll daughter | His counfell to his children, of Foulke Earl of Anien. 440 Possessed of the Earledome of Flanders. 441.50 His great valour. He dieth of a small wound. ibidem William de Tracie a fixth base fonne of King Henry the I. 443.71 William a third fonne of King Stephen conspireth against Henry Fitz Empreffe. 454 Hee breaketh his legge, ibid. His wife, honors and death. William a naturall fonne of K. Stephen 454.56 Prince Villiam king Henry the first his fonne, weddeth the daughter of Forlke Earle of Anion, 439.39.
Doeth homage to King Lewis of France for Normandie. Drowned in the fea with his brethren, his fifter, and many Gallants 439.40.443.62 Hispitty to his fifter coffeth him his life William the fonne of Robert Duke of Normandy, afterwards the Conquerour, co. mitted to the tuition of Earle Gilbert and protection of Hemy the first K. of France, during his minority. 413.27

His firatageme to escape fro Henry the French King 414 Hee enjoyeth the Dukedome of Normandy 414.31 His Embassage to King Ha-rold for the Crowne of England His claime thereto

He prepareth for England. Hee is Conquerour and Monarch of England 415. His Armes, Broad Seale and Coine. Crowned at Weltminster His Scales inscription, 418,

Hee fortifieth against inuafi-Saileth ouer into Normandy.

His policy to weaken the English 417.17 His rigorous dealing with the English his Subjects 418.

τR

He putteth downe learning. Sworne to keepe K. Edward the Confessors lawes 418.23 Wounded in fight and vnhorfed by his owne fonne Ro-

bers Curtoife He oppresseth the English, & maketh their name reproch-427-43 His depopulations. 411. 46
He inuadeth France and burneth Meux, or Mauntz.

His last VVill and Testament. 422.53 His last speeches at the point of death 423.54 The whole race of his life,

portrayed by himself, ibidem King William the Conqueror his workes of Denotion,

ibidem The dispose of his Stares ecuted. His Legacy to Henry his fon 423.55

His death 424-56 His dead Corps forfaken of His Herfe abandoned of all Filton fired.

Buriall place denied him vn-Pinbarne Numery built, 304 till it was bought ibidem. Enterred with a foule ftench. Wincheomb Monastery founded His description for lineamers Winchcombe Abbay Church and qualities built. He nameth himfelfe in a char-

Wifbech Caftle built

His iffue.

Saxons a God.

and feignories

fo termed,

Kildare

France

Cardinal and Legate a latere

His pompous Embaffage into

His speech to Queene Kathe

ginneth to decline, 769. 74 The caufe thereof, ibid, 76

His greatnes and flate, ibid. 7

Found in a Premunire this

Arrested by the Earle of Nor-

Xxxxxxx 2

ihid

ter Baftardus ter Baftardus 414.61 King William Rufus fonne to King William the Conques rour why fo called 425.7. Pleasing to his father this His Broad-Seale, Armes and Coine Crowned King of England

Wine made in Britaine. 252 8 417.2 His policy to winne the Sir Iohn Wingfield or Wink field flaine in Cadiz 869, 272 Thomas Winter fent into Spain ples hearts against Robert Curtoife his brother 418.7 Compoundeth with his bifor ther Robert for the crown'o England A cunning Time feruer 428.

His loofe government and couetous grasping. 428.11 Heinuadeth Normandy, 428

Ouerthrowne in a Sally 429

He preferreth the Knight that ouerthrewhim. ibidem. Hee and Malcolme King of Scors enterleagne 429.16 In fickneffe, hee repenteth, and woweth newneffe of life, 430

He soone repenteth of his re Pentance 430.20 His exactions 430.26 &c.26 His magnanimity 431.31 King William Rufus his valoone for Mercury 288. rous refolutions in warre. 421.22 how portraied

His sonne killed in New-forest Opposeth against the Popes authority in England. 431.

Denieth allegeance to the Pope, 432-34 Denieth the Popes power Li-432-34 gandi & foluendi. 432.35 Against praying to Saints.

His pride and couetoufneffe vntruly taxed by fome Writers 432.36.37 His incontinencie. 432.38 In his time strange Accidents.

432.30 Slaine in New-forest. 433.40 Enterred in Winchester, ibiden His raigne. His person. Why named Rufus.

his workes of denotion de illiam King of Scotland a faft friend to King Richard the first. 473.13,478.44 He inuadeth and wasteth Nor. thumberland. 466. 73 Taken prisoner,

Compoundeth for his ranform 467,79,80 Sir Iohn Williams Lord Tame, ioined with Sir Henrie Benifield in commission for the keeping of Lady Elizabeth after Queene of Eng-

822.Gr 1 His dutifull loue to her ibidem Richard Williams a Traitor ex-849.119 Vilmer a notorious rouer.377.

Worceffer true to King William Rufus Filneth King Harolds fonne re-Wolues paid for tribute out of leafed out of Prison 427.1 Wales and fo deftroied. 370. Wilson Battaile won by Danes

Women emploied in warres, Women gouerne and leade armies in Britaine and elfewhere. where. 199. 19 Women inherite their fathers possessions by the Law of

In Winchefter, the terme kept. Sir Roger Woodhowse inhumanely dealt with by Kee 885.11 Winchester Cathedrall Church and his Rebels founded 198.8 Winchefter house in Southwarks ord Wooduile affifteth Francis Duke of Britaine against fpoiled by Wyat. 820, 39 Winebester sacked by Danes. Charles the French King & is flaine is flaine 734-24 Richard Woodnile Earle of Ri-353-2 Winds in London

wers espouseth the Dutcheffe Dowager of Bedford, fi-fter to the Earle of S. Paul. 659.33 Richard U Dooduile Earle of Rito negotiate with King Phi.
Ip the second to send an arwers with his fonne Anthony Woodnile taken prisoners

Hee suppresseth forty Mona-

steries for his Colledges

Wolftan a Saincled Bishop of

769.77

mie for the English Cathoat Sandwich by the Torkests. Wiphandun alias Wimbledon field Both of them furprifed by 293.5 Northerne Rebels and be-410 18 beaded Withgar-birg in the Ile of VVooll rained from heaven,

Wight 297.2 Withgith, daughter of King Weelfrane Archbishop of Tork Anna, 2 mention or minfowing fedition is emprifo. chin in Ely Abbey 210.7 ned, and released by King Vithlafe by intrution King of

Worcefter burnt 397-7 World compared to a Cloke Fithinday a writer of the Bri-Iohn Wram 2 lewd prieft, 2

sifb History 282. 7 bellowes in time of Wat Tiler, and lacke Strawes rebel-Wodens five formes their names lion 595.20 Christopher Wright sent into Spaine to signific the death of Queene Elizabeth, and 285. 13 Woden worthipped by the Sax. 288. 7 to profecute inuation of England 889.35 Priothesley Lord Chancellor Wedensday or Wedensday why forward enough to perfecute Welfhild a Nunne carnally a-Gofneilers 780.114

bused by King Edgar 370.11 Thomas Walfey King Henry Saint Wulfaldhis Colledge in Wulfald Martyr, a Christian the eight his Almoner made Bishop of Turney 755. 10 His birth and rising &c. 756 young Gentleman flain by his father Wulfhere. 340.

Wulfere or Wulphere King of Entertained in Court. 757, Mercia 2 Noble Prince. His raigne, wife, and Iffue,

Lord Chancellour of Eng-Walfhere Monarch of the Eng-Bishop of seuen Bishoprickes Lifbmen 339 Killeth hierwo fons, whiles His accufatory speech again(t they were in dinine contem-Girald Fitz-Girald Earle of

plation 339-3 Wuifbere Monarch of the Englifh, his repentance and conuerfion.
Taxed for Simonie

Excused by King Henry the eight for fuing dinorce with His raigne Fils Faigne 340.4 Wuller Hampton , alias 701. Katherine of Spaine. 767.70 frun-Hampton why fo called. 392.19 Wulpher Edilwalch his Godfahomas Wolfey Cardinall , bether Saint Wyflan 2 Martyr. 308.19

thumberland sbid.76 X Ainsts in Xamtoing, revol-His death and buriall sbid. Aceth from the English.

THE TABLE.

Y Eomen of the Guard first in-flictured. 729-9 Torke Cathedrall Church built

Divers Torkift: attaint in Par-liamet of high treason. 669.78 Torkift: fend plausible Articles into Kent to seduce the peo-ple ibidem 77 334-7.

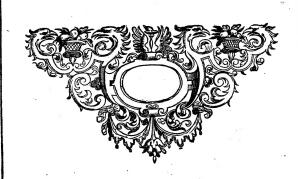
Torke burnt by the the Danes 354-3 Burnt by her owne fouldiers 417.16 Edmund Torke a Traitor execu-

ZElanders thankfulnesse to God for deseating the Spanish inuiucible Armado Spanijh municible Armado 863.213 Their new Coine and impresse you what occasion, ibid, Zenobia a famous Lady,246.4 Her wassike exploits 249.4 Her letter to Aurelius the Emperour 249.5 Vanquished and taken priso-

tues of good littera-ture. 881.350 Her high authority and re-pute ibidem Pute stidem Zifes the scourge of Papacy. Loft both his eiesyet his name terrible to his enemies, this Alsa de Zosch, Lord Chiefe Iufticiar flaine in Weftmunfter Hall. Zunphen fold by Romland York to the Spaniards 857,177

ner 249.6 Her beauty, feature and ver-

FINIS.



20	P	7 4	-	<u>Lin.</u> 67	Read Metropolitan		- 1	Colu	- (-		. i	eg	Celan	120	n. Reads
1	1		- 1	34	Solenam		8 :		1	44	I erome of Prage				162	
2	1 1:	: 15	-	39	Planetey	34			1	7	(6)			ь	41	in their rife see
1	is	. 1 -		46	Ringgard						Domitia .			5		2º Arteuile
1		1 2	- 1	53	inforcited.	1 2	8 4				Soul Soul	1 9	77	ь	46	Treaty
1	1					1 27	8 8	ь	- 1	3					52	2 thousand
1	21	10	- 1	45	Nathone			•	- 1	47	Damianus	13	88		45	Pyrenzan
	2.5	116	- 1	73	Glaftenbury						Cacricon	13	99	12	38	Who africad
Section Sect		1	- 1		Page 27. for 25	2,	8 6	•	- 1	11	Lauacrae	1 5	98	2		Sir Nicholas Brooker
20	1 33	12		57					-	13	Thracians (flanding,	10	ot	2	47	belay
1	1 tb	ь	- 1	44	Audres			:	-	18	These miseries forwith	6	07	2		Cashan
2		10	- 1	76	Geldable	1 24	4 5			29	Commended by Services				43	at Rauenfeuere
	47	15	- 1	26	Nygra Vebr	1 24	4 6		- 1	40	Iberians	16	12			William Heron To Susing
20	45	'la		11	Colchis and Egyps	124			- }	13	confusion.	16	18	a		
2	1 23				eighteene		2 A		- 1	29	Narbone	6	29	ь	46	Her greenances were row
Section	1 53		- 1	19	five	25	5 .		1	25	betweene rise mouther	10	l	. 1		
1	1 59		- 1	64	Berkley	126			- 1	**	Conftantines.	1.63	23	.	18	hue thouland, & eight hundr
	61		- 1	15	At Redmore	120			- 1		the Duke	6	41	a	21	Omit (w.s)
27 1	75			18	Swynflead	1 26	r b		- 1	75	Confiance	6	6		71	
2	75	16			thirty fire				- 1	77	Anibalianus	16	1.1		43	Predarifimus
20	77				neither the relation		. 6		- 1	18		64	8	0	3	in London
					porphyrite ftone.	16	4 2		- 1:	51	ruine Cata				19	Armies ful of version faul 2:-
Second content Seco	81		- 14	12	Hoping Hand 6th	26	5 3				Ecquis nocem effe pates	66				
1.	83	ь	١,	0 1	Binouium	126					Accusalle sufficit ?	6	6		55	
	89	3	- 1:	3	Lithanthraces						bor been a			2	2.4	that the wanton King
2	80				-{Gabroſentum.				13	9	dattaned			:	43	
1	94	Ь	15	: 1							Babylacs	1	1			Vntill the end of king Richard
		4	2	3		16	1 2		13	1	Pythenift	1.	- 1		58	Richard Earle of Warminks
Alleane Alle			1:		as in those countries		, i 6				Veduriones	165	5			Might from Youth
1.7	103	b			Alanus	270	12		13	7	Batauians	71	4			brigandines fuch as no man
10	117	ъ.	1.	7 1	Harlech						Artoys [or rather Aras]	72	3 1	. 1:	12	in Prest nomneerred
The content of the	123					287					nurfled	73	7 1			Zouch
Section Sect	120					190			1 5	6		75	٥١			of agreet fubic &
14	141		51	1	Barrow	191			1	2	hath by way	75	6 3	. !!	6	Iohn Lefley
1					Patricke				10	4	Domoneus	75	7 1	. :	3	who posted backe agains
15	145		1 85	1;		296	16		15	3	Cherdicke_Shore	76	: [:		5	and will not
15	ISI		132	120	the Portraid:	199			١.	3	Pall	1 76	8 6		9	I he beleegers
15	153	2	26	10	en elies estreneous vor	1 200					Egbert Thorny	777	Ь		2	
20	254		1,,	1	cetimere Potta ? -	200	ļь		12	a 1	Almed	781	15	3	3	fine and thirty thousand strong
15	156		127	1 2	nd ftarres.	213				!	And Abbey of Amphibility	1 282				
20	157			A	Colonie	315	5		13	1	Countries	783	12	ı,	2	There valours in the Green
2			140			324	Ь		38	1	Eldol	1-2-	1.	- 1		
20	148		49			330			1 35	11		784	12	10		of white Mark!
25 Ajricon 25	871	2				339	1.		135	1	Kenwald			1 3	ı,	not as dead
50 15 15 15 15 15 15 15	158			A	lpion	260	2		40	П	oratelle remperour	784	16	37	1 13	tem on the right hand
25	150	٠.	1 74	1	rytansa				15	1:	s Hydraes	804	12			Herdord
Acc	159		74	В	afticenia	366					at Glaftenbury	1812	ь			ind he taken awar
Signate Sign	161		74	В	cleus habergeon,	405	2			1	Saldwine well pleased	814	12			or whole maintenance
25 25 25 25 25 25 25 25						413	ь		6	10	he fift Duke	816		47	14	hrough Shordich, Where
37 Enfidements Plan 25 25 25 25 25 25 25 2	164	ь.	66	G	ordianus	416			79	12	n raiment	816	6	1 79		
25	166			IF.	Ahonine Tene Ilue	419	ě.		52	15	deremarke	1817	ь	64	16	y commission, That, feenes
20	167		130	1 20	outh is	4:8	٠,	*		10	f Conftance	818	1.			
16 16 17 18 18 18 18 18 18 18	168			C	2 routes	419	b	1		1	eftyn ;	823	:	77	15	Fhere were
150 7 verw both teine	166	Ь	22	1 St	Teet			- 1		1:	coomannia			43	1 2	nd Daulokin
1				10:	6)	441	ь	- 1	14	E	arledome	841	•			ere carried
290 201			17	W	re potit taken	448		-	49	1 E	cuites	814		1 52		
15 15 15 15 15 15 15 15	194		60	m	dal	416	ĥ	-	2.			854	ь	17		mit (for)
29 30 30 30 30 30 30 30 3	194	•	78	Az	tons, or Aufons	467		- 1	Ie	S		85A	ь	67	1 6	ulpitious intenta
196 Bottome 474 Bottome 174 Bottome 175 Bottom	195		39	Sil	ures	468	2	- 1	20	1 L	mores.	\$57		37		
195	196 1		60			468		- 1	49	\$		867		12	13	free the Dake of Guide
14 Decision 15 Decision 15 Decision 16 Decision 17 Decision 17 Decision 18 Decisio	108	Mer.	1	0	uincilius Varus	475	Ď	- 1		F	isnor			1		
24° b 74 Autonius Pius 47° 1 2 9 Coffees 106 a 9 Gentile gods 104 b 75 to free himsfelle 27° 1 2 1	198 1	•	32	D	cianus	481	a me	og	40	11	D.ITOA.				10	tur Zenobia
106 a 9 Gentile gods 504 b 72 ground. 206 b 61 Bancor 199 a 36 Also de Zouck 876 b 50 h Marcialit 209 a 36 L Section 50 b 50 h Marcialit 200 h Marcialit 200 b 50 h Marcialit 200 h Marcialit 200 h Marcialit 200 h Marcial	204		7		helbere	487	2	-	•9	10	offers	\$71			100	m infolitam tribumdem
207 la 3 Excisio St. hande Zouch 878 a 61 Fimbrishis complaine	106 :						b	- 1		T	o icresy him felie!	876	6	17	I'M	larcialife
107 (8 3 Excised (6) h c Duferson 1 1 1 Primbrishis complaine	106	,	61	B:	1038	1391	2	- [36	Si Ai	an de Zonek	376		50	lin	a Marrial A
	107 i a	1	3	Eze	kjel	551	ь	١	s	Dy	Gentery	887	•	50		imbris his complaint. hyfician

